NO MA'AM

ARCHIVE

www.TheRedArchive.com

ABOUT THIS ARCHIVE

An archive of the blog **NO MA'AM**, as held by TheRedArchive: 901 posts published between January 2001 and November 2015.

About TheRedArchive. TheRedArchive is a free, public archive of the Red Pill community, built so that none of this writing can quietly disappear. It holds **1,686,402 posts** and **38,839,914 comments** from 45 subreddits and 56 blogs. Much of it survives nowhere else — the accounts deleted, the subreddits banned, the websites long offline. All of it is free to read, search and download, and always will be, at www.TheRedArchive.com.

Support the mission. This Red Pill archive is free — no paywall, no account — but keeping it online isn't. I pay for the servers, the storage and the bandwidth myself, so that this valuable knowledge stays online. If you want to support the mission and archive, become one of the people who help keep it online at www.TheRedArchive.com/#help.

Share this file freely, and keep a copy of your own. What sits on one server can be taken down; what sits on a thousand hard drives cannot.

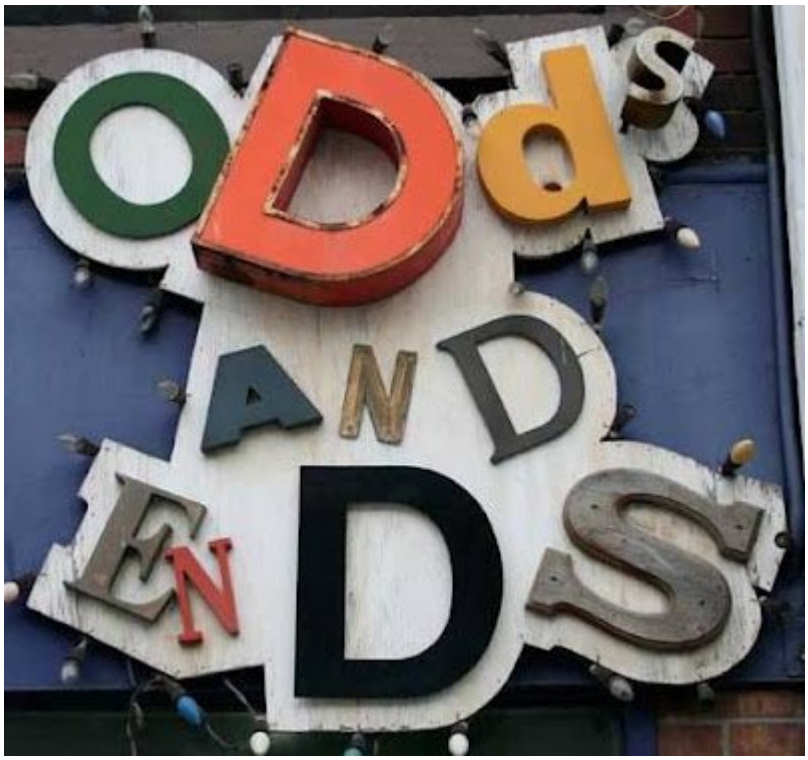
Best regards,

/u/dream-hunter

Founder of TheRedArchive
July 28, 2026

Odds and Ends

. · 1 January 2001 · Archived copy · Original



.

Declaration of Sentiments, Seneca Falls, NY (1848)

.

Republic versus Democracy?

.

One of These Statements Literally Represents Totalitarianism

.

Back In The USSR (Oh the Irony, Sir McCartney, Of Your Russian Styled Divorce)

.

Dissimulation

.

Briffault's Law

.

Gender Differences in Bullying and Other Aggressive Adolescent Behaviours

.

Crazy Cat Lady Action Figure

180 Seconds

.

Roissy's Maxims

.

Roissy's Sixteen Commandments of Poon

.

Roots of American Culture and Community in Disarray – Bill Woods

The Russian Family Code of 1926

Who Stole Our Culture? – By William S. Lind

Testosterone: Hormone of the Gods? – by Darren Blacksmith

What Is An Alpha Male?

Abolish Gender Roles For Men?

Omega Traits Are Not Alpha Traits, But Are The Proper Traits For This Society

Pair Bonding

The Mature Man's Views on "Game"

The Luckiest People On Earth

Howard Roark: In Praise of the Self – by Ayn Rand (The Fountainhead, 1943)

Rats! (Or, He Chases Her Until She Catches Him)

The Fish and The Bicycle

Elite and Underclass – F. Roger Devlin

Fitness Testing (Shit Tests) -- "The Threat" -- by Rollo Tomassi

Declaration of Sentiments - Seneca Falls, NY (1848)

. · 1 January 2001 · Archived copy · Original

When, in the course of human events, it becomes necessary for one portion of the family of man to assume among the people of the earth a position different from that which they have hitherto occupied, but one to which the laws of nature and of nature's God entitle them, a decent respect to the opinions of mankind requires that they should declare the causes that impel them to such a course.

We hold these truths to be self-evident: that all men and women are created equal; that they are endowed by their Creator with certain inalienable rights; that among these are life, liberty, and the pursuit of happiness; that to secure these rights governments are instituted, deriving their just powers from the consent of the governed. Whenever any form of government becomes destructive of these ends, it is the right of those who suffer from it to refuse allegiance to it, and to insist upon the institution of a new government, laying its foundation on such principles, and organizing its powers in such form, as to them shall seem most likely to effect their safety and happiness.

Prudence, indeed, will dictate that governments long established should not be changed for light and transient causes; and accordingly all experience hath shown that mankind are more disposed to suffer, while evils are sufferable, than to right themselves by abolishing the forms to which they are accustomed. But when a long train of abuses and usurpations, pursuing invariably the same object, evinces a design to reduce them under absolute despotism, it is their duty to throw off such government, and to provide new guards for their future security. Such has been the patient sufferance of the women under this government, and such is now the necessity which constrains them to demand the equal station to which they are entitled.

The history of mankind is a history of repeated injuries and usurpations on the part of man toward woman, having in direct object the establishment of an absolute tyranny over her. To prove this, let facts be submitted to a candid world.

Sentiments:

1 - He has never permitted her to exercise her inalienable right to the elective franchise.

2 - He has compelled her to submit to laws, in the formation of which she had no voice.

3 - He has withheld from her rights which are given to the most ignorant and degraded men - both natives and foreigners.

4 - Having deprived her of this first right as a citizen, the elective franchise, thereby leaving her without representation in the halls of legislation, he has oppressed her on all sides.

5 - He has made her, if married, in the eye of the law, civilly dead.

6 - He has taken from her all right in property, even to the wages she earns.

7 - He has made her morally, an irresponsible being, as she can commit many crimes with impunity, provided they be done in the presence of her husband. In the covenant of marriage, she is compelled to promise obedience to her husband, he becoming, to all intents and purposes, her master - the law giving him power to deprive her of her liberty, and to administer chastisement.

8 - He has so framed the laws of divorce, as to what shall be the proper causes of divorce, in case of separation, to whom the guardianship of the children shall be given; as to be wholly regardless of the happiness of the women - the law, in all cases, going upon a false supposition of the supremacy of a man, and giving all power into his hands.

9 - After depriving her of all rights as a married woman, if single and the owner of property, he has taxed her to support a government which recognizes her only when her property can be made profitable to it.

10 - He has monopolized nearly all the profitable employments, and from those she is permitted to follow, she receives but a scanty remuneration.

11 - He closes against her all the avenues to wealth and distinction, which he considers most honorable to himself. As a teacher of theology, medicine, or law, she is not known.

12 - He has denied her the facilities for obtaining a thorough education - all colleges being closed against her.

13 - He allows her in church, as well as State, but a subordinate position, claiming Apostolic authority for her exclusion from the ministry, and, with some exceptions, from any public participation in the affairs of the Church.

14 - He has created a false public sentiment by giving to the world a different code of morals for men and women, by which moral delinquencies which exclude women from society, are not only tolerated but deemed of little account in man.

15 - He has usurped the prerogative of Jehovah himself, claiming it as his right to assign for her a sphere of action, when that belongs to her conscience and her God.

16 - He has endeavored, in every way that he could to destroy her confidence in her own powers, to lessen her self-respect, and to make her willing to lead a dependent and abject life.

Now, in view of this entire disfranchisement of one-half the people of this country, their social and religious degradation—in view of the unjust laws above mentioned, and because women do feel themselves aggrieved, oppressed, and fraudulently deprived of their most sacred rights, we insist that they have immediate admission to all the rights and privileges which belong to them as citizens of these United States.

In entering upon the great work before us, we anticipate no small amount of misconception, misrepresentation, and ridicule; but we shall use every instrumentality within our power to effect our object. We shall employ agents, circulate tracts, petition the State and national Legislatures, and endeavor to enlist the pulpit and the press in our behalf. We hope this Convention will be followed by a series of Conventions, embracing every part of the country.

The Declaration of Sentiments' principle author was Elizabeth Cady Stanton. It was signed by 68 women and 32 men in 1848.

Republic versus Democracy?

. · 1 January 2001 · Archived copy · Original

I came across this speech the other day and I found it very intriguing, so I thought I would share it with my readers and see what they think of it.

Some things that stick out in my mind, while reviewing it are:

- George Orwell's being upset over realizing that democracies are bound to fail
- This statement: **“Democracy is the road to socialism.”** -- Karl Marx
- And, how does the following information affect our views of Universal Men's Suffrage in the mid-1800's and Universal Women's Suffrage in the early 1900's?

Robert Welch, from a speech at the Constitution Day luncheon of We, The People in Chicago, on September 17, 1961 (reprinted in the June 30, 1986 issue of The New American magazine):

"By the time of the American Revolution and Constitution, the meanings of the words “republic” and “democracy” had been well established and were readily understood. And most of this accepted meaning derived from the Roman and Greek experiences. The two words are not, as most of today’s Liberals would have you believe -- and as most of them probably believe themselves -- parallels in etymology, or history, or meaning. The word Democracy (in a political rather than a social sense, of course) had always referred to a type of government, as distinguished from monarchy, or autocracy, or oligarchy, or principate. The word Republic, before 1789, had designated the quality and nature of a government, rather than its structure. When Tacitus complained that “it is easier for a republican form of government to be applauded than realized,” he was living in an empire under the Caesars and knew it. But he was bemoaning the loss of that adherence to the laws and to the protections of the constitution which made the nation no longer a republic; and not to the f act that it was headed by an emperor.

The word democracy comes from the Greek and means, literally, government by the people. The word “republic” comes from the Latin, res publica, and means literally “the public affairs.” The word “commonwealth,” as once widely used, and as still used in the official title of my state, “the Commonwealth of Massachusetts,” is almost an exact translation and continuation of the original meaning of res publica. And it was only in this sense that the Greeks, such as Plato, used the term that has been translated as “republic.” Plato was writing about an imaginary “commonwealth”; and while he certainly had strong ideas about the kind of government this Utopia should have, those ideas were not conveyed nor foreshadowed by his title.

The historical development of the meaning of the word republic might be summarized as follows. The Greeks learned that, as Dr. Durant puts it, “man became free when he recognized that he was subject to law.” The Romans applied the formerly general term “republic” specifically to that system of government in which both the people and their rulers were subject to law. That meaning was recognized throughout all later history, as when the term was applied, however inappropriately in fact and optimistically in self-deception, to the “Republic of Venice” or to the “Dutch Republic.” The meaning was thoroughly understood by our Founding Fathers. As early as 1775 John Adams had pointed out that Aristotle (representing Greek thought), Livy (whom he chose to represent Roman thought), and Harington (a British statesman), all “define a republic to be a government of laws and not of men.” And it was with this full understanding that our constitution-makers proceeded to establish a government which, by its very structure, would require that both the people and their rulers obey certain basic laws -- laws which could not be changed without laborious and deliberate changes in the very structure of that government. When our Founding

Fathers established a “republic,” in the hope, as Benjamin Franklin said, that we could keep it, and when they guaranteed to every state within that “republic” a “republican form” of government, they well knew the significance of the terms they were using. And were doing all in their power to make the features of government signified by those terms as permanent as possible. They also knew very well indeed the meaning of the word democracy, and the history of democracies; and they were deliberately doing everything in their power to avoid for their own times, and to prevent for the future, the evils of a democracy.

Let's look at some of the things they said to support and clarify this purpose. On May 31, 1787, Edmund Randolph told his fellow members of the newly assembled Constitutional Con vention that the object for which the delegates had met was “to provide a cure for the evils under which the United States labored; that in tracing these evils to their origin every man had found it in the turbulence and trials of democracy....”

The delegates to the Convention were clearly in accord with this statement. At about the same time another delegate, Elbridge Gerry, said: “The evils we experience flow from the excess of democracy. The people do not want (that is, do not lack) virtue; but are the dupes of pretended patriots.” And on June 21, 1788, Alexander Hamilton made a speech in which he stated: "It had been observed that a pure democracy if it were practicable would be the most perfect government. Experience had proved that no position is more false than this. The ancient democracies in which the people themselves deliberated never possessed one good feature of government. Their very character was tyranny; their figure deformity."

At another time Hamilton said: “We are a Republican Government. Real liberty is never found in despotism or in the extremes of Democracy.” And Samuel Adams warned: “Remember, Democracy never lasts long. It soon wastes, exhausts and murders itself! There never was a democracy that ‘did not commit suicide.’”

James Madison, one of, the members of the Convention who was charged with drawing up our Constitution, wrote as follows: “...democracies have ever been spectacles of turbulence and contention; have ever been found incompatible with personal security, or the rights of property; and have in general been as short in their lives as they have been violent in their deaths.”

Madison and Hamilton and Jay and their compatriots of the Convention prepared and adopted a Constitution in which they nowhere even mentioned the word democracy, not because they were not familiar with such a form of government, but because they were. The word democracy had not occurred in the Declaration of Independence, and does not appear in the constitution of a single one of our fifty states-which constitutions are derived mainly from the thinking of the Founding Fathers of the Republic - for the same reason. They knew all about Democracies, and if they had wanted one for themselves and their posterity, they would have founded one. Look at all the elaborate system of checks and balances which they established; at the carefully worked-out protective clauses of the Constitution itself, and especially of the first ten amendments known as the Bill of Rights; at the effort, as Jefferson put it, to “bind men down from mischief by the chains of the Constitution,” and thus to solidify the rule not of men but of laws. All of these steps were taken, deliberately, to avoid and to prevent a Democracy, or any of the worst features of a Democracy, in the United States of America.

And so our republic was started on its way. And for well over a hundred years our politicians, statesmen, and people remembered that this was a republic, not a democracy, and knew what they meant when they made that distinction. Again, let's look briefly at some of the evidence.

Washington, in his first inaugural address, dedicated himself to “the preservation of the republican model of government.” Thomas Jefferson, our third president, was the founder of the Democratic Party; but in his first inaugural address, although he referred several times to the Republic or the republican form of government, he did not use the word “democracy” a single time. And John Marshall, who was Chief Justice of the Supreme Court from

1801 to 1835, said: “Between a balanced republic and a democracy, the difference is like that between order and chaos.”

Throughout all of the Nineteenth Century and the very early part of the Twentieth, while America as a republic was growing great and becoming the envy of the whole world, there were plenty of wise men, both in our country and outside of it, who pointed to the advantages of a republic, which we were enjoying, and warned against the horrors of a democracy, into which we might fall. Around the middle of that century, Herbert Spencer, the great English philosopher, wrote, in an article on The Americans: “The Republican form of government is the highest form of government; but because of this it requires the highest type of human nature -- a type nowhere at present existing.” And in truth we have not been a high enough type to preserve the republic we then had, which is exactly what he was prophesying.

Thomas Babington Macaulay said: “I have long been convinced that institutions purely democratic must, sooner or later, destroy liberty or civilization, or both.” And we certainly seem to be in a fair way today to fulfill his dire prophecy. Nor was Macaulay’s contention a mere personal opinion without intellectual roots and substance in the thought of his times. Nearly two centuries before, Dryden had already lamented that “no government had ever been, or ever can be, wherein timeservers and blockheads will not be uppermost.” And as a result, he had spoken of nations being “drawn to the dregs of a democracy.” While in 1795 Immanuel Kant had written: “Democracy is necessarily despotism.”

In 1850 Benjamin Disraeli, worried as was Herbert Spencer at what was already being foreshadowed in England, made a speech to the British House of Commons in which he said: “If you establish a democracy, you must in due time reap the fruits of a democracy. You will in due season have great impatience of public burdens, combined in due season with great increase of public expenditures You will in due season have wars entered into from passion and not from reason; and you will in due season submit to peace ignominiously sought and ignominiously obtained, which will diminish your authority and perhaps endanger your independence. You will in due season find your property is less valuable, and your freedom less complete.” Disraeli could have made that speech with even more appropriateness before a joint session of the American Congress in 1935. And in 1870 he had already come up with an epigram which is strikingly true for the United States today. “The world is weary,” he said, “of statesmen whom democracy has degraded into politicians.”

But even in Disraeli’s day there were similarly prophetic voices on this side of the Atlantic. In our own country James Russell Lowell showed that he recognized the danger of unlimited majority rule by writing:

“Democracy gives every man the right to be his own oppressor.”

W. H. Seward pointed out that “Democracies are prone to war, and war consumes them.” This is an observation certainly borne out during the past fifty years exactly to the extent that we have been becoming a democracy and fighting wars, with each trend as both a cause and an effect of the other one. And Ralph Waldo Emerson issued a most prophetic warning when he said: “Democracy becomes a government of bullies tempered by editors.” If Emerson could have looked ahead to the time when so many of the editors would themselves be a part of, or sympathetic to, the gang of bullies, as they are today, lie would have been even more disturbed. And in the 1880's Governor Seymour of New York said that the merit of our Constitution was, not that it promotes democracy, but checks it.

Across the Atlantic again, a little later, Oscar Wilde once contributed this epigram to the discussion: “Democracy means simply the bludgeoning of the people, by the people, for the people.” While on this side, and after the first World War had made the degenerative trend in our government so visible to any penetrating observer, H. L. Mencken wrote: “The most popular man under a democracy is not the most democratic man, but the most despotic

man. The common folk delight in the exactions of such a man. They like him to boss them. Their natural gait is the goosestep." While Ludwig Lewisohn observed: "Democracy, which began by liberating men politically, has developed a dangerous tendency to enslave him through the tyranny of majorities and the deadly power of their opinion."

But it was a great Englishman, G. K. Chesterton, who put his finger on the basic reasoning behind all the continued and determined efforts of the Communists to convert our republic into a democracy. "You can never have a revolution," he said, "in order to establish a democracy. You must have a democracy in order to have a revolution."

And in 1931 the Duke of Northumberland, in his booklet, The History of World Revolution, stated: "The adoption of Democracy as a form of Government by all European nations is fatal to good Government, to liberty, to law and order, to respect for authority, and to religion, and must eventually produce a state of chaos from which a new world tyranny will arise." While an even more recent analyst, Archibald E. Stevenson, summarized the situation as follows: "De Tocqueville once warned us," he wrote, "that: 'If ever the free institutions of America are destroyed, that event will arise from the unlimited tyranny of the majority.' But a majority will never be permitted to exercise such 'unlimited tyranny' so long as we cling to the American ideals of republican liberty and turn a deaf ear to the siren voices now calling us to democracy. This is not a question relating to the form of government. That can always be changed by constitutional amendment. It is one affecting the underlying philosophy of our system -- a philosophy which brought new dignity to the individual, more safety for minorities and greater justice in the administration of government. We are in grave danger of dissipating this splendid heritage through mistaking it for democracy."

And there have been plenty of other voices to warn us."

Robert Welch, from a speech at the Constitution Day luncheon of We, The People in Chicago, on September 17, 1961 (reprinted in the June 30, 1986 issue of The New American magazine)

"Were our state a pure democracy there would still be excluded from our deliberations women, who, to prevent depravation of morals and ambiguity of issues, should not mix promiscuously in gatherings of men." -- Thomas Jefferson

One of These Statements Literally Represents Totalitarianism...

. · 1 January 2001 · Archived copy · Original

"We hold these truths to be self-evident, that all men are created equal, *that they are endowed by their Creator with certain UNALIENABLE Rights;* that among these are Life, Liberty and Pursuit of Happiness. *That to secure these rights, Governments are instituted among men...*" -- United States Declaration of Independence

"The States Parties to the present Covenant recognize that, *in the enjoyment of those rights PROVIDED BY THE STATE* ... the *State* may subject such rights only to *such limitations as are determined by law.*" -- Article Four of the UN Covenant on Economic, Social and Cultural Rights.

.

The following link is an excellent read describing the difference between Individualism and Collectivism, and really is a must read. This is really where people can see how totalitarianists such as feminists, amongst other things Communist, have been slowly eroding our rights - *while not having been given the original authority to do so!*

The Chasm - The Future Is Calling - by G. Edward Griffin

http://freedom-force.org/pdf/futurecalling1.pdf

.

****

Back in the U.S.S.R. (Oh the Irony, Sir McCartney, of Your Russian Styled Divorce)

. · 1 January 2001 · Archived copy · Original

The following excerpt, from Bill Wood's statement to the Committee on Ways and Means at the US House of Representatives, illustrates how chillingly our current social structure mirrors that of the Soviet Union after the anti-family measures V.I. Lenin foisted upon his people *with the intentional purpose of completely deconstructing society*:

.

http://waysandmeans.house.gov/hearings.asp?formmode=view&id=954

.

FAMILY LAW, CHILD SUPPORT, AND WELFARE REFORM FROM MARXISM?

.

Many people would be shocked to learn that much of the current “family law” system we have today, which is at the heart of so much of our modern social upheaval and America’s “welfare state,” was born in the Soviet Union. Still more shocking would be the revelation that when the Soviet Union discovered its system was a disastrous failure, it instituted serious reforms in the early 1940’s to try to restore the family and the country. The Soviets made these changes when fatherlessness (which included children from divorced fathers) reached around 7 million children and their social welfare structure (day cares, kindergartens, state children’s facilities, etc.) was overburdened. Yet in America, some studies suggest that we are approaching 11 or 12 million such children. All the while, the social and financial costs of welfare and fatherlessness are just now gaining more widespread attention. America’s fatherlessness crisis is primarily by judicial making with the cooperation of the legions of lawyers and bureaucrats who profit from family destruction which rips America apart.

Unfortunately, the Soviet reforms came too late and never brought about the extent of social reconstruction that would have allowed recovery from its self-inflicted social destruction. It was unable to stave off its widely celebrated collapse when the Berlin wall came down. Even though the Soviets tried in vain to restore the social values they had worked so hard to eradicate, America only pays “lip service” to much-needed massive social reform. Serious social reform has been largely absent from political debate. On the other hand, the systematic deconstruction of all of the social values that had made our nation great is being pursued passionately as one of our nation's primary socio-political goals.

“Family law” is one of the key tools of the “counter-hegemony” which is used to advance the social welfare state through the promotion of the social structural collapse of America. The early Soviet system focused on personal happiness and self-centered fulfillment with its roots in class warfare. When it was determined that this type of class warfare directed at the family was a complete failure, the Soviets worked quickly to restore the traditional nuclear family in the 1940’s. Shortly after this, the NAWL (National Association of Women Lawyers) began their push for adopting these failed Soviet policies in America.[vii] America’s version of “family law” has adopted much of the early Soviet failed version of class warfare, while adopting new and more insidious Gramscian versions with gender, cultural, and social warfare components.

- When the Bolsheviki came into power in 1917 they regarded the family… with fierce hatred, and set out… to destroy it… [O]ne of the first decrees of the Soviet Government abolished the term 'illegitimate children... by equalizing the legal status of all children, whether born in wedlock or out of it… The father of a child is forced to contribute to its support, usually paying the mother a third of his salary in the event of a separation… At the same time a law was passed which made divorce [very quick]… at the request of either partner in a marriage…

- [Marriage became a game where it] was not… unusual… for a boy of twenty to have had three or four wives, or for a girl of the same age to have had three or four abortions. [T]he peasants… bitterly complained: 'Abortions cover our villages with shame. Formerly we did not even hear of them.'

- Many women… found marriage and childbearing a profitable occupation. They formed connections with the sons of well-to-do peasants and then blackmailed the father for the support of the children... The law has created still more confusion because… women can claim support for children born many years ago.

- …Both in the villages and in the cities the problem of the unmarried mother has become very acute and provides a severe and annoying test of Communist theories.

- …Another new point was that wife and husband would have an equal right to claim support from the other… The woman would have the right to demand support for her child even if she lived with several men during the period of conception; but, in contrast to previous practice, she or the court would choose one man who would be held responsible for the support. Commissar Kursky seemed especially proud of this point because it differed so much from the 'burgeois customs' of Europe and America.

- Another speaker objected to the proposed law on the ground that some women would take advantage of its liberal provisions to form connections with wealthy men and then blackmail them for alimony. [viii]

The Federal Government continues to participate by paying the states incentives encouraging them to practice these draconian Soviet style, anti-family, child destroying policies. What a frightening use of our “tax dollars at work” to undermine and destroy the social order of America. Even going so far as to pay incentives on a slightly reformed version of Article 81 of The Russian Family Code. This was promoted in the United States by Irwin Garfinkel as “The Wisconsin Model” for child support and welfare reform. “The Wisconsin Model then became a center-piece for the national child support and welfare reform movement.” [ix]

ADOPTING THE FAILED SOVIET ATTEMPT TO DESTROY THE FAMILY

.

Instead of our constitutionally guaranteed “Republican form of government,” we now have a thoroughly entrenched Marxist Communist judiciary in the civil court system masquerading as “family law.” America’s family law courts are no longer about the law, they represent complete perversions of numerous legal maxims and common law traditions that American law was founded upon. [x] These abandoned maxims represent the “hegemony” of American culture and historical tradition in civil family matters. The reprehensible evil of being rewarded for one’s wrongs, and of punishing the innocent have been firmly entrenched in the state’s family courts.

.

No-fault divorce, “the child’s best interests,” and other components of family law in America were imported from the worst of the Soviet family law system. For example from a 1975 Louisville Law School review:

- “Few members of the American legal community are aware of the fact that the Soviet Union has had, for some period of time, what can be described as a no-fault divorce legal system… [A]t a meeting with a group of Soviet lawyers in 1972, one of them asked, “Is it for a long time that you (California) have that system?” When

informed of the January 1, 1970 effective date of the California law she remarked, “I think it is the influence of our law… [T]here are a number of similarities between Soviet and California divorce laws that suggest a “borrowing” or a remarkable coincidence.” (pg 32)

- “For the Bolsheviks, with their Marxist disdain for religion, the influence of the ecclesiastical authorities over the family was an outrage. Since the family represented the major institution through which the traditions of the past were transmitted from generation to generation, the new regime had to destroy the old bourgeois notions of the family and the home. There was also a very urgent practical reason for disassociating family relations from the influence of the religious authorities… [T]he first task of the new regime in relation to the family was to break the power of the church and the husband.” (pg 33)

- “Birth alone was declared the basis of family ties, and all legal discrimination against illegitimate children was abolished... Early Soviet policy was intended to attack these evils [of “patriarchy”] and to transfer the care, education and maintenance of children from home to society. This would mean the end of the family’s socialization functions, and would remove the child from the conservative atmosphere of the patriarchal family to a setting that could be entirely controlled by the regime.” (pg 34)

- The Soviet press reported in the mid-thirties that promiscuity flourished... juvenile delinquency mounted, and statistical studies showed that the major source of delinquents was the broken or inattentive home… Additional public homes for children were established, and propaganda campaigns sought to persuade the public that a strong family was the most communistically inspired one. (pg 38, 39)

- There was also the matter of seven to nine million fatherless and homeless children, according to Russian estimates of the early twenties. In derogation of Marxist ideology, the state had been unable to assist single mothers, and there existed almost no children’s homes, nurseries or kindergartens. Because of more pressing tasks and limited personnel and material resources the state had not been able to fulfill the conditions Engels had specified for extrafamilial facilities. (pg 40)

- More seriously, anti-family policies were leading to a situation where many children in the first Soviet urban generation simply lacked the kind of socializing experience to fit them intellectually or emotionally to the new society the regime was attempting to build, with its emphasis upon self-discipline and control, perseverance, steadiness, punctuality and accuracy. While the family influence had been undermined, extrafamilial agencies had failed to provide a workable substitute, leaving the child prey to the noxious and deviant influences of “the street.” (pg 41) [xi]

The US Library of Congress Country Studies on Romania also shows direct parallels noting;

- “Family law in socialist Romania was modeled after Soviet family legislation… [I]t sought to undermine the influence of religion on family life. [Previously] the church was the center of community life, and marriage, divorce, and recording of births were matters for religious authorities. Under communism these events became affairs of the state, and legislation designed to wipe out the accumulated traditions and ancient codes was enacted. The communist regime required marriage to be legalized in a civil ceremony at the local registry prior to, or preferably instead of, the customary church wedding.

- Because of the more liberal procedures, the divorce rate grew dramatically, tripling by 1960, and the number of abortions also increased rapidly. Concern for population reproduction and future labor supplies prompted the state to revise the Romanian Family Code to foster more stable personal relationships and strengthen the family. At the end of 1966, abortion was virtually outlawed, and a new divorce decree made the dissolution of marriage

exceedingly difficult.

Read Mr. Wood's entire piece here:

http://waysandmeans.house.gov/hearings.asp?formmode=view&id=954

Dissimulation

. · 1 January 2001 · Archived copy · Original

Definition From Wikipedia:

http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Dissimulation

Dissimulation is a form of deception in which one conceals the truth. It differs from simulation, in which one exhibits false information. Dissimulation commonly takes the form of concealing one's ability in order to gain the element of surprise over an opponent.

Examples:

Dissimulation can be used as an effective form of amusement (see Candid Camera); it is also used in corporate environments for training and measurement activities (e.g. "mystery shoppers".)

Pool hustling might be seen as a form of dissimulation, because the hustler conceals their real talent. Yet it may also (or instead) be considered a form of simulation, because every pool hustle conveys false information about the hustler's abilities.

Ethical Concerns:

The practice of dissimulation raises ethical (and possibly moral) concerns, due to its use of deception as a means to an end. Examples of such consequences include entrapment, and the psychological abuse attributed to manipulation.

The perceived inherent dishonesty in the practice of [destructive] dissimulation allows it to be conflated with notion of lies. However, the dishonesty comes from the employment of ***half truths*** — which involves omission of facts essential for a full description or account. In such instances, the ethics of such conduct is considered questionable at best.

All men could do well to familiarize themselves with the definition of Dissimulation.

When one reads the writings of those who studied the differences between the sexes *before* Women's Studies existed, it was as readily accepted that dissimulation was as much of a female characteristic as overt aggression was a male characteristic.

This is where the long forgotten (due to censorship) arguments of women's *amorality* derive from. Dissimulation is a form of female power, and it is inherently dishonest.

Political Correctoids can whine all they want that "you can't say that," but, if they looked at things honestly, the women in their past who've jacked them over have most likely employed many forms of dissimulation on them - and deep down, the Political Correctoid knows this, but likely has difficulty admitting it. Dissimulation is also a *very* apt description of the Feminist Movement in general.

Throw out the beliefs about "Gender is a Social Construct" (which is dissimulation in itself for it is based on half-

truths), and one would be forced to acknowledge that dissimulation is a female behaviour characteristic which is used to counter the power of the physically superior male.

From Schopenhauer's Essay on Women:

http://etext.library.adelaide.edu.au/s/schopenhauer/arthur/essays/chapter7.html

It is because women's reasoning powers are weaker that they show more sympathy for the unfortunate than men, and consequently take a kindlier interest in them. On the other hand, women are inferior to men in matters of justice, honesty, and conscientiousness. Again, because their reasoning faculty is weak, things clearly visible and real, and belonging to the present, exercise a power over them which is rarely counteracted by abstract thoughts, fixed maxims, or firm resolutions, in general, by regard for the past and future or by consideration for what is absent and remote. Accordingly they have the first and principal qualities of virtue, but they lack the secondary qualities which are often a necessary instrument in developing it. Women may be compared in this respect to an organism that has a liver but no gall-bladder.

So that it will be found that the fundamental fault in the character of women is that they have no "sense of justice." This arises from their deficiency in the power of reasoning already referred to, and reflection, *but is also partly due to the fact that Nature has not destined them, as the weaker sex, to be dependent on strength but on cunning;* this is why they are instinctively crafty, and have an ineradicable tendency to lie. For as lions are furnished with claws and teeth, elephants with tusks, boars with fangs, bulls with horns, and the cuttlefish with its dark, inky fluid, *so Nature has provided woman for her protection and defence with the faculty of* ***dissimulation,*** *and all the power which Nature has given to man in the form of bodily strength and reason has been conferred on woman in this form. Hence,* ***dissimulation is innate in woman and almost as characteristic for the very stupid as the very clever.***

Accordingly, it is as natural for women to dissemble at every opportunity as it is for those animals to turn to their weapons when they are attacked; and they feel in doing so that in a certain measure they are only making use of their rights. Therefore a woman who is perfectly truthful and does not dissemble is perhaps an impossibility. ***This is why they see through dissimulation in others so easily; therefore it is not advisable to attempt it with them.*** From the fundamental defect that has been stated, and all that it involves, spring falseness, faithlessness, treachery, ungratefulness, and so on. In a court of justice women are more often found guilty of perjury than men. It is indeed to be generally questioned whether they should be allowed to take an oath at all. From time to time there are repeated cases everywhere of ladies, who want for nothing, secretly pocketing and taking away things from shop counters.

Gender Differences in Bullying and other Aggressive Adolescent Behaviours

. · 1 January 2001 · Archived copy · Original

Bullying styles are generally considered to fall under two categories, direct and indirect. Direct physical bullying is to, hit, shove, kick, trip, push, and pull. Direct verbal bullying can involve name-calling, insults, threatening to hurt the other. Indirect bullying, I>also known as social or relational aggression (Crick 1997) involves attacking the relationships of people and hurting the self-esteem. It is subtler and involves behaviours such as spreading nasty rumors, withholding friendships, ignoring, gossiping, or excluding a child from a small group of friends.

There is no doubt that stereotypically, males are more physical and direct in their bullying styles and females more manipulative and indirect (Olweus, 1997; Bjorkqvist, 1994; Crick & Grotpeter, 1995; Lagerspetz, Bjorkqvist & Peltonen, 1988). Boys in our Western culture are encouraged to be tough and competitive and as they maturate slower and develop social intelligence at a slower rate they will use physical aggression longer than girls (Lagerspetz, Bjorkqvist, & Peltonen, 1988; Bjorkqvist, Lagerspetz, & Kauliaien, 1992). However there is no reason to believe that females should be less hostile and less prone to get into conflicts than males (Burbank, 1987, in Bjorkqvist 1994; Crick & Grotpeter, 1995). As females are physically weaker, they develop early in life other bullying styles in order to achieve their goals. Indirect aggression in girls increases drastically at about the age of eleven years (Bjorkqvist, Lagerspetz and Kaukiainen, 1992) whereas physical aggression among boys decreases during late adolescence, to be replaced mainly by verbal, but also indirect aggression (Bjorkqvist 1994).

There is a growing body of research in gender differences of bullying and other adolescent aggressive behaviours. There are hundreds of studies dedicated to the topic, many placing the emphasis on boys or the forms of aggression, more salient to boys. Forms of aggression more salient to girls has received comparatively little attention (Crick, 1997; Crick & Grotpeter, 1995).

What is worse, the physical violence of man, or the emotional violence of woman?

Woman can only unleash her anger in imagination, and in emotion, while man can unleash anger physically, when he cannot dissolve it inside his mind with his many reasons. Consequently a woman's imagination is much more dark and vicious than man's.

In battle, men have a respect for the enemy, if the enemy are valiant in their ideals. Women, however, are brutal in their hatred and know no limits. Woman is incounsellable. She would not have a conscience about hanging anyone she did not particularly like. Yes, she is compassionate, but only to those who meet her favour.

It is interesting how we feel more strongly about a man who commits a crime of violence than a woman. She is the eternally innocent. This is probably because men traditionally act willfully, while women act in response. Man is action, woman is reaction. -- Kevin Solway

Briffault's Law

. · 1 January 2001 · Archived copy · Original

“The female, not the male, determines all the conditions of the animal family. Where the female can derive no benefit from association with the male, no such association takes place.” -- Robert Briffault, *The Mothers*, I, 191

The Rosetta Stone of Women's Behaviour

There are a few corollaries I would add:

1 - Past benefit provided by the male does not provide for continued or future association.

2 - Any agreement where the male provides a current benefit in return for a promise of future association is null and void as soon as the male has provided the benefit (see corollary 1)

3 - A promise of future benefit has limited influence on current/future association, with the influence inversely proportionate to the length of time until the benefit will be given and directly proportionate to the degree to which the female trusts the male (which is not bloody likely).

Roissy's Maxims

. · 1 January 2001 · Archived copy · Original

Maxim #1a: Women desire men of better quality than themselves.

Maxim #2: Women are turned on by displays of male power.

Maxim #3: Whenever an attractive girl tells you she hates assholes, or describes her experience in the past dating assholes and claims to avoid them now, or recites a laundry list of asshole-y things guys do that she disapproves of, you can bet your weight in gold bricks that she wants you to be an asshole to her.

Maxim #4: Never trust a woman who is missing a sense of humor.

Maxim #6: Never. Make. It. Easy. For. A. Woman.

Maxim #7: Your girl will thank you for your steadfast devotion to your belief in yourself.

Maxim #8: Always assume she is a slut. It helps kick the legs out from under the pedestal you will be tempted to put her on, and it is more often than not true.

Maxim #9: The greater the age difference between the older man and the younger woman, the tighter his game will need to be, barring compensatory attributes (money).

Maxim #10: Marriage is a social mechanism designed to exchange sex for indentured servitude.

Maxim #11: Calling a girl out on her lie accomplishes nothing.

Maxim #12: When the love is gone, women can be as cold as if they had never known you.

Maxim #13: When in doubt, game.

Maxim #14: Female cultural equality = male dating inequality. Female cultural inequality = male dating equality. Human nature says that you can‘t have it both ways.

Maxim #15: Be narcissistic. There is no greater divergence than that between a woman’s stated disapproval of male narcissism and the rapidity with which she jumps into bed with a male narcissist.

Maxim #16: The two fundamental propositions are male choosiness and female abundance. All alpha males have these two mindsets in common. Corollary: Male choosiness and female abundance do not necessarily have to be true for the strategy of behaving as if they are true to be effective at seduction.

Maxim #17: The alpha male thinks and acts more like a woman than a man in matters of seduction. He understands his adversary’s psychology, and uses it to allay her defenses.

Maxim #18: Never talk about getting into a relationship even if she says that’s what she’s looking for.

Maxim #19: Withholding sex is the tactic of a woman who has already lost. It is mutually assured destruction.

Maxim #20: If a woman says the word “sex” in conversation with you or about you, no matter the context, it means she’s thinking about having sex with you.

Maxim #21: Women are more pliable in the company of competing women.

Maxim #22: You have to make marriage an attractive alternative for MEN — not women — if you want the institution to thrive.

Maxim #23: The vagina tingle is the principal moral code to which women subscribe. All other moral considerations are secondary.

Maxim #24: When in doubt, ask yourself “WWJD?” What Would a Jerk Do? Then do that.

Maxim #25: NO girl wants to be thought she isn’t a special little snowflake.

Maxim #26: Never tell a girl how much you make, even if you’re loaded. In case of marriage, keep separate accounts.

Maxim #27: If you want a wife, stay clear of investing much in girls who constantly remind you they like to have “fun, fun, fun” and “get bored easily”.

Maxim #28: The more experience you have with women, the more you’ll know which women have experience with men: It is the inexperienced beta male who is most often in the dark about a woman’s sexual history and liable to be victimized by it.

Maxim #29: Xenophobia is good for diversity.

Maxim #30: Women will not hold it against you for trying to get into their panties on the first night. In fact, they will respect you more for your boldness and willingness to follow your manly desires.

Maxim #31: If you plan on cheating and subsequently get caught, act like a total dick who did nothing wrong. Your girlfriend will then wonder if it’s something she did.

Maxim #32: Commanding women to do your bidding will give you a bigger beta margin of error when needed.

Maxim #33: Women need to test men for their grace under pressure.

Maxim #34: If she’s hot, why would she bother with online dating?

Maxim #35: Never trust a woman’s advice on how to please women. Her advice is designed for alpha men she already finds attractive and from whom she seeks signals of attainability and commitment.

Maxim #36: A woman’s sex and relationship advice isn’t meant to help men; it’s meant to distract men from what really works to attract women.

Maxim #37: High IQ is no inoculation against beta delusion. If anything, high IQ obstructs clear thinking about women’s nature.

Maxim #38: The longer you are away from seducing new women, the harder it will be to seduce one when you

want.

Maxim #39: The worst thing to happen to women in America was women's suffrage.

Maxim #40: Men are becoming ever bigger betas in their dealings with women. Men are losing the leverage to shape and push women's child-like and selfishly amoral political opinions in logical, just and long-term oriented directions.

Maxim #41: The definition of Inner Game: Hit on every woman who excites you. Make life uncomfortable for them, not yourself.

Maxim # 42: When a girl signals that she doesn't enjoy blowjobs or sex, do not spend one second more with her. Your libido is too important to gamble on such a girl.

Maxim #43: In their sexual primes women's attraction for assholes is at its strongest. You can catch a lot of hungry flies with honey, but shit attracts the most well-fed flies.

Maxim #44: If you get sexually rejected, don't admit it to yourself, and especially don't admit it to the girl.

Maxim #45: Women will screech louder the closer your words get to damaging or exposing vulnerabilities in their sexual market value.

Maxim #46: Whenever you hear or read the words "gender", "gendered", "gendered norm", "subtle gender bias", or "increasingly egalitarian, yet there remains…" know that you are dealing with a leftwing moonbat, blank-slate believing fruitcake who cannot deal with the fact that men and women are biologically different from birth.

Maxim #47: Awareness of a woman's games is a precision-guided weapon in a man's arsenal of seduction.

Maxim #48: Respect the momentum.

Maxim #49: The rare older woman-younger man pairing is like a lab experiment gone wrong. It violates the natural order of things, and leaves its practitioners emotionally twisted and in a constant mental race to hyper-rationalize their sub-par mate choice.

Maxim #50: Marriage is no escape from the sexual market and the possibility that you may be outbid by a competitor with higher value.

Maxim #51: For most women, five minutes of alpha is worth five years of beta.

Maxim #52: Underneath the veneer of civilized discourse we act in ways that are brazenly self-interested in the short term.

Maxim #53: All kneel before the god of biomechanics, by sword or by surrender.

Maxim #54: When a woman has incentive to lie, she will choose lying over honesty EVERY SINGLE TIME.

Maxim #55: The prime directive of the alpha male is fornication. Anything which hinders the fulfillment of the prime directive is to be vanquished as a foe or excised from the mind as a cancer.

Maxim #55: Run for your Life Shit Tests:BEWARE the classic gun-to-the-head marriage pressure administered by your typical non-descript, rudderless late 20's/early 30's woman.When a woman pressures you mercilessly to marry her, bullying to the point of threatening a break up – this is the shit test of ALL shit tests. Treat it as such – If you fail this shit test, you are RUINED. FOR. LIFE.

Maxim #56: Waving a roll of benjamins at a woman will not give her tingles. In fact, it will often do the opposite.

Maxim #57: When a girl emphatically insists she is so over you, she's never been more into you.

Maxim #58: Betas pay, alphas split, super alphas profit.

Maxim #59: A woman's standards are like a house of cards: kick out one from the bottom and the whole edifice crashes down.

Maxim #60: As women's bodies age and weaken, their rationalization hamsters grow bigger and stronger. Eventually, the hamster is powerful enough to take control of all higher order consciousness.

Maxim #61: The more expensive or thoughtful the gift you give a girl, the greater the risk that she will subconsciously begin to think she is too good for you.

Corollary to Maxim #61: If you are dating out of your league, or you are dating a young hot babe in her prime, you should do the exact opposite of what everyone will tell you to do — *don't* buy her expensive gifts. Be particularly wary of advice from women. No woman in the world is capable of thinking clearly or impartially on the matter of "acceptable" levels of male provisioning. Even old, fat hausfrau hogs will expect mountains of jewels in offerings from men.

Maxim #62: Where there's incentive, there are lies.

Maxim #62: Pregnant pauses are the player's best friend.

Maxim #63: Consensual polyamory is a contrived hookup service for undesirable sexual market rejects.

Maxim #64: Use of the word "disenfranchised" or other similar nomenclature of deconstructivist post-modern pablum automatically discredits an argument for serious consideration.

Maxim #65: Chicks dig guys willing to risk an early, gruesome death. Expendability is a DHV.

180 Seconds

. · 1 January 2001 · Archived copy · Original

Women Take Three Minutes To Size-Up Mr. Right

Most women believe three minutes is all it takes to assess a potential mate, a new study says.

The average female spends 180 seconds sizing up a man's looks and fashion sense as well as appraising his scent, accent and eloquence, the Daily Mail reports.

Women are also quick to judge how a man interacts with her friends and whether or not he is appropriately successful or ambitious.

They study found women are reluctant to change their minds about a man and are likely to believe 'they are always right' in their judgements.

So too women are likely to reject men who they feel are too cocky are do not appear to earn enough.

The study was commissioned among 3000 adults to coincide with the release of a new book 'Instinct'.

"I think a lot of people believe in trusting their instincts when dating. It makes it seem more magical, like it's coming from somewhere deeper," Ben Kay, the book's author, told the Daily Mail.

"But it's surprising how quickly women make a decision. That's barely enough time to finish a drink together."

"It's interesting that so many women trust their instincts and yet still give men the opportunity to change their minds."

"Some men might think this is leading them on but I would imagine most women just want to give every bloke a fair shot."

Both men and women in the study said they rely on their instincts when making decisions with 84 per cent saying their instincts take precedence when it comes to life-changing decisions.

The study found 88 per cent of woman believe their instincts are always right and should always be trusted.

Roissy's Sixteen Commandments of Poon

. · 1 January 2001 · Archived copy · Original

I. Never say 'I Love You' first

Women want to feel like they have to overcome obstacles to win a man's heart. They crave the challenge of capturing the interest of a man who has other women competing for his attention, and eventually prevailing over his grudging reluctance to award his committed exclusivity. The man who gives his emotional world away too easily robs women of the satisfaction of earning his love. Though you may be in love with her, don't say it before she has said it. Show compassionate restraint for her need to struggle toward yin fulfillment. Inspire her to take the leap for you, and she'll return the favor a thousandfold.

II. Make her jealous

Flirt with other women in front of her. Do not dissuade other women from flirting with you. Women will never admit this but jealousy excites them. The thought of you turning on another woman will arouse her sexually. No girl wants a man that no other woman wants. The partner who harnesses the gale storm of jealousy controls the direction of the relationship.

III. You shall make your mission, not your woman, your priority

Forget all those romantic cliches of the leading man proclaiming his undying love for the woman who completes him. Despite whatever protestations to the contrary, women do not want to be "The One" or the center of a man's existence. They in fact want to subordinate themselves to a worthy man's life purpose, to help him achieve that purpose with their feminine support, and to follow the path he lays out. You must respect a woman's integrity and not lie to her that she is "your everything". She is not your everything, and if she is, she will soon not be anymore.

IV. Don't play by her rules

If you allow a woman to make the rules she will resent you with a seething contempt even a rapist cannot inspire. The strongest woman and the most strident feminist wants to be led by, and to submit to, a more powerful man. Polarity is the core of a healthy loving relationship. She does not want the prerogative to walk all over you with her capricious demands and mercurial moods. Her emotions are a hurricane, her soul a saboteur. Think of yourself as a bulwark against her tempest. When she grasps for a pillar to steady herself against the whipping winds or yearns for an authority figure to foil her worst instincts, it is you who has to be there… strong, solid, unshakeable and immovable.

V. Adhere to the golden ratio

Give your woman 2/3 of everything she gives you. For every three calls or texts, give her two back. Three declarations of love earn two in return. Three gifts; two nights out. Give her two displays of affection and stop until she has answered with three more. When she speaks, you reply with fewer words. When she emotes, you emote less. The idea behind the golden ratio is twofold — it establishes your greater value by making her chase you, and it demonstrates that you have the self-restraint to avoid getting swept up in her personal dramas. Refraining from reciprocating everything she does for you in equal measure instills in her the proper attitude of belief in your higher status. In her deepest loins it is what she truly wants.

VI. Keep her guessing

True to their inscrutable natures, women ask questions they don't really want direct answers to. Woe be the man who plays it straight — his fate is the suffering of the beta. Evade, tease, obfuscate. She thrives when she has to imagine what you're thinking about her, and withers when she knows exactly how you feel. A woman may want financial and family security, but she does not want passion security. In the same manner, when she has displeased you, punish swiftly, but when she has done you right, reward slowly. Reward her good behavior intermittently and unpredictably and she will never tire of working hard to please you.

VII. Always keep two in the kitty

Never allow yourself to be a "kept man". A man with options is a man without need. It builds confidence and encourages boldness with women if there is another woman, a safety net, to catch you in case you slip and risk a breakup, divorce, or a lost prospect, leading to loneliness and a grinding dry spell. A woman knows once she has slept with a man she has abdicated a measure of her power; when she has fallen in love with him she has surrendered nearly all of it. But love is ephemeral and with time she may rediscover her power and threaten to leave you. It is her final trump card. Withdrawing all her love and all her body in an instant will rend your soul if you are faced with contemplating the empty abyss alone. Knowing there is another you can turn to for affection will fortify your will and satisfy your manhood.

VIII. Say you're sorry only when absolutely necessary

Do not say you're sorry for every wrong thing you do. It is a posture of submission that no man should reflexively adopt, no matter how alpha he is. Apologizing increases the demand for more apologies. She will come to expect your contrition, like a cat expects its meal at a set time each day. And then your value will lower in her eyes. Instead, if you have done something wrong, you should acknowledge your guilt in a glancing way without resorting to the actual words "I'm sorry." Pull the Bill Clinton maneuver and say "Mistakes were made" or tell her you "feel bad" about what you did. You are granted two freebie "I'm sorry"s for the life of your relationship; use them wisely.

IX. Connect with her emotions

Set yourself apart from other men and connect with a woman's emotional landscape. Her mind is an alien world that requires deft navigation to reach your rendevous. Frolic in the surf of emotions rather than the arid desert of logic. Be playful. Employ all your senses. Describe in lush detail scenarios to set her heart afire. Give your feelings freedom to roam. ROAM. Yes, that is a good word. You're not on a linear path with her. You are ROAMING all over, taking her on an adventure. In this world, there is no need to finish thoughts or draw conclusions. There is only need to EXPERIENCE. You're grabbing her hand and running with her down an infinite, labyrinthine alleyway with no end, laughing and letting your fingers glide on the cobblestone walls along the way.

X. Ignore her beauty

The man who trains his mind to subdue the reward centers of his brain when reflecting upon a beautiful female face will magically transform his interactions with women. His apprehension and self-consciousness will melt away, paving the path for more honest and self-possessed interactions with the objects of his desire. This is one reason why the greatest lotharios drown in more love than they can handle — through positive experiences with so many beautiful women they lose their awe of beauty and, in turn, their powerlessness under its spell. It will help you acquire the right frame of mind to stop using the words hot, cute, gorgeous, or beautiful to describe girls who turn you on. Instead, say to yourself "she's interesting" or "she might be worth getting to know". Never compliment a girl on her looks, especially not a girl you aren't fucking. Turn off that part of your brain that wants to put them on pedestals. Further advanced training to reach this state of unawed Zen transcendence is to sleep with many MANY attractive women (try to avoid sleeping with a lot of ugly women if you don't want to regress). Soon, a Jedi lover

you will be.

XI. Be irrationally self-confident

No matter what your station in life, stride through the world without apology or excuse. It does not matter if objectively you are not the best man a woman can get; what matters is that you think and act like you are. Women have a dog's instinct for uncovering weakness in men; don't make it easy for them. Self-confidence, warranted or not, triggers submissive emotional responses in women. Irrational self-confidence will get you more pussy than rational defeatism.

XII. Maximize your strengths, minimize your weaknesses

In the betterment of ourselves as men we attract women into our orbit. To accomplish this gravitational pull as painlessly and efficiently as possible, you must identify your natural talents and shortcomings and parcel your efforts accordingly. If you are a gifted jokester, don't waste time and energy trying to raise your status in philosophical debate. If you write well but dance poorly, don't kill yourself trying to expand your manly influence on the dancefloor. Your goal should be to attract women effortlessly, so play to your strengths no matter what they are; there is a groupie for every male endeavor. Except World of Warcraft.

XIII. Err on the side of too much boldness, rather than too little

Touching a woman inappropriately on the first date will get you further with her than not touching her at all. Don't let a woman's faux indignation at your boldness sway you; they secretly love it when a man aggressively pursues what he wants and makes his sexual intentions known. You don't have to be an asshole, but if you have no choice, being an inconsiderate asshole beats being a polite beta, every time.

XIV. Fuck her good

Fuck her like it's your last fuck. And hers. Fuck her so good, so hard, so wantonly, so profligately that she is left a quivering, sparking mass of shaking flesh and sex fluids. Drain her of everything, then drain her some more. Kiss her all over, make love to her all night, and hold her close in the morning. Own her body, own her gratitude, own her love. If you don't know how, learn to give her squirting orgasms.

XV. Maintain your state control

You are an oak tree. You will not be manipulated by crying, yelling, lying, head games, sexual withdrawal, jealousy ploys, pity plays, shit tests, hot/cold/hot/cold, disappearing acts, or guilt trips. She will rain and thunder all around you and you will shelter her until her storm passes. She will not drag you into her chaos or uproot you. When you have mastery over yourself, you will have mastery over her.

XVI. Never be afraid to lose her

You must not fear. Fear is the love-killer. Fear is the ego-triumph that brings abject loneliness. You will face your fear. You will permit it to pass over and through you. And when your ego-fear is gone you will turn and face your lover, and only your heart will remain. You will walk away from her when she has violated your integrity, and you will let her walk when her heart is closed to you. She who can destroy you, controls you. Don't give her that power over yourself. Love yourself before you love her.

***

The closer you follow the letter of these commandments, the easier you will find and keep real, true unconditional love and happiness in your life.

Best,

Roissy, Your Lord and King

The Fed Prints On

. · 1 January 2001 · Archived copy · Original

I see debt pilin' up cold and deep inside
Like a dam that sprung a big break
And the stab of poverty, sharp and painful
That we may never shake
You might say I was takin' it hard
Since the bailout from Congress Hall
But don't you wager that I'll hide in metals
Instead of bankrupt my-self and bawl

(Chorus)
Now, the Fed prints on and here comes Gold in the backstretch
Silver's goin' to the inside
The Dollar is holdin' back
And tryin' not to fall
My faith's gone of the gov'ment
True wealth's scratched from another stake
The Fed prints on and it looks like Defaults
As the dollar loses all!

Some people ventured in bonds,
Never once suspectin' what the final results would be.
How they lived in fear of waking up each mornin'
And findin' the rates disappeared from thee
There's achin and pain in their hearts
For today was the one that they hated to face
Inflation rose up and broke them and they wound up in 2nd Place!

(Chorus)
Now, the Fed prints on and here comes gold in the backstretch
Silver's a goin' to the inside
The dollar is holdin' back
And tryin' not to fall
My faith's gone of the gov'ment
True wealth's scratched from another stake
The Fed prints on and it looks like defaults
As the dollar loses all!

The Russian Family Code of 1926

. · 1 January 2001 · Archived copy · Original

Gale Encyclopedia of Russian History: Family Code of 1926

"In 1926 the Soviet government affirmed a new Code on Marriage, the Family, and Guardianship to replace the 1918 version. Adopted after extensive and often heated nationwide debate, the new Code addressed several social issues: the lack of protection for women after divorce; the large number of homeless orphans (besprizorniki); the incompatibility of divorce and common property within the peasant household; and the mutual obligations of cohabiting, unmarried partners.

The new Code promoted both individual freedom and greater protection for the vulnerable. It simplified the divorce procedure in the 1918 version even further by transferring contested divorces from the courts to local statistical bureaus. Either spouse could register a divorce without the partner's consent or even knowledge. This provision removed the law's last vestige of authority over the dissolution of marriage, circumscribing both the power of law and the marital tie. The Code recognized de facto marriage (cohabitation) as the juridical equal of civil (registered) marriage, thus undercutting the need to marry "legally." It provided a definition of de facto "marriage" based on cohabitation, a joint household, mutual upbringing of children, and third party recognition. It established joint property between spouses, thus providing housewives material protection after divorce. It abolished the controversial practice of "collective" paternity featured in the 1918 Family Code. If a woman had sexual relations with several men and could not identify the father of her child, a judge would assign paternity (and future child support payments) to one man only. The Code incorporated an April 1926 decree that reversed the prohibition on adoption and encouraged peasant families to adopt homeless orphans, who were to be fully integrated into the peasant household and entitled to land. It set a time limit on alimony to one year for the disabled and provided six months of alimony for the needy or unemployed. It also created a wider circle of family obligations by expanding the base of alimony recipients to include children, parents, siblings, and grandparents."

Bibliography

Farnsworth, Beatrice. (1978). "Bolshevik Alternatives and the Soviet Family: The 1926 Marriage Law Debate." *In Women in Russia*, eds. Dorothy Atkinson, Alexander Dallin, Gail Warshovsky Lapidus. Sussex, UK: Harvester Press.

Goldman, Wendy. (1984). "Freedom and Its Consequences: The Debate on the Soviet Family Code of 1926." *Russian History* 11(4):362 - 388.

Goldman, Wendy. (1991). "Working-Class Women and the 'Withering-Away' of the Family: Popular Responses to Family Policy." *In Russia in the Era of NEP: Explorations in Soviet Society and Culture*, eds. Sheila Fitzpatrick, Alexander Rabinowitch, Richard Stites. Bloomington: Indiana University Press.

Lapidus, Gail Warshovsky. (1978). *Women in Soviet Society*. Berkeley: University of California Press.

Quigley, John. (1979). "The 1926 Soviet Family Code: Retreat from Free Love." *Soviet Union* 6(2):166 - 74.

—WENDY GOLDMAN

Related Article:

Roots of American Culture and Community in Disarray

Rats! (Or, He Chases Her Until She Catches Him)

. · 1 January 2001 · Archived copy · Original

Rats!

"According to Ogas and Gaddam, we can learn some important lessons about female sexual behaviour from observing rats in the laboratory.

They insist that if you put a male and female rat in close proximity to one another, the female will start to come on to the male, performing actions associated with sexual interest — running and then stopping to encourage the male to chase her.

But after a bit of kiss-chase, the female rat stands still, adopting a submissive stance until the male takes action. They also claim that almost every quality of dominant males — from the way they smell to the way they walk and their deep voice — triggers arousal in the female brain, while 'weaker' men, who are not taller, have higher voices or lower incomes, excite us less.

What they seem to be suggesting is that the cavemen were right all along and that what women really want is to be dragged by the hair, all the while feigning reluctance, by macho men waving clubs."

Of worthy note in regard to this study, from Wikipedia:

"...none of the research for the book was ever brought before an Institutional Review Board, which would have studied the ethics of the research protocol. The authors addressed this after publication, saying, "IRB oversight applies to human subjects research with federal funding, or that takes place at an institution with federal funding. We intentionally conducted our research outside of academia, without federal funding, in order to remain independent from the fierce tempest of ideological, social, and political pressures that besets the contemporary study of sexuality."

Hurrah!

Imagine! Real academitians! Concerned with the Truth rather than academia's bullshit political correctness! What a freakin' concept, eh?

"I must now discuss the "uniting" impulse of women, for that plays the chief, if not the sole part in her sexuality. But it must not be supposed that this is greater in one sex than the other. Any such idea comes from a confusion between the desire for a thing and the stimulus towards the active part in securing what is desired. ***Throughout the animal and plant kingdom, the male reproductive cells are the motile, active agents, which move through space to seek out the passive female cells, and this physiological difference is sometimes confused with the actual wish for, or stimulus to, sexual union. And to add to the confusion, it happens, in the animal kingdom particularly, that the male, in addition to the directly sexual stimulus, has the instinct to pursue and bodily capture the female, whilst the latter has only the passive part to be taken possession of. These differences of habit must not be mistaken for real differences of desire."*** -- Otto Weininger, *Sex and Character*, Male and Female Sexuality

---

Cary (1976) discovered that the woman, through eye contact, controlled the course of interaction with a male stranger, both in the laboratory and in singles' bars. Perper (1985) gave a detailed description of courtship, stressing an escalation-response process in which women play a key role in escalation or deescalation. The steps in this process are approach, turn, first touch, and steady development of body synchronization.

Although these reports are clearly valuable, most researchers addressed courtship very generally, and some failed to recognize the importance of the female role in the courtship process .What was needed was a more complete ethogram of women's nonverbal courtship signals. To compile such a catalog of flirting behavior exhibited by women involved in initial heterosexual interaction, more than 200 adults were observed (Moore, 1985) in field settings such as singles' bars, restaurants, and parties.

Research has shown, therefore, that the cultural myth that the man is always the sexual aggressor, pressing himself on a reluctant woman, is incorrect. -- Courtship Signaling and Adolescents: "Girls Just Wanna Have Fun"? Monica M. Moore, Ph.D.Department of behavioral and Social Sciences, Webster University

Old School MGTOW

. · 1 January 2001 · Archived copy · Original

Despite all assertions to the contrary, MGTOW (Men Going Their Own Way) was never specifically about the "marriage strike" nor of swearing off all women and subsequent society in favour of fleeing into the bush to live like Dick Proenneke.

In fact, the MGTOW Manifesto makes no mention of a marriage strike even though many also supported it; myself included to a degree. No, MGTOW was, as is stated in the manifesto, about instilling masculinity in men, femininity in women, and working toward limited government! Go ahead, read the whole manifesto. It is not long. You won't even find the word "marriage" mentioned in it. So much for MGTOW being about the marriage strike and lowly deviant "omegas" hiding out in their basements, preferring internet porn to flesh and blood sexual interactions. Many old school MGTOW's were actually married themselves, making the marriage "strike" a completely irrelevant point to identify them with.

One of the biggest underlying reasons to create MGTOW, however, was not even close to women and feminism, but rather as a response to *other men.* Yeah, yeah, women are weird and illogical, but men are only marginally better - and I really mean marginally - although our quirks are unique to ourselves.

When I started learning about men's issues several years ago now, there were very few places on the internet to go to. I believe back then there was Stand Your Ground, Men's News Daily, NiceGuy's, and one of the variations of the Don't Get Married boards which got blown up annually like the 1st of July. (Sorry, 'Mericans. The fourth is just another working day for the schlubs up here). Anti-Misandry hadn't started yet and of course, there were zero MGTOW sites going. All of these sites were "forums" and at the time, there were very few independent bloggers... Eternal Bachelor, Angry Harry, Captain Zarmband, Fred X and Gonzo's Bar and Grill were the main ones, and if I recall them correctly, that list makes up about 75% of the *total* sites available for men to go to and learn only six or seven years ago. If you listed every men's site available on the sidebar of your blog, you would be lucky to come up with fifteen links in total.

But, too few sites weren't really the heart of the problem.

The men at those sites were!

A wiZE olD owl once told me that I will find that the vast majority of men will use whatever power they gain not to benefit other men or their cause, but rather to push other men down in order to protect their positions of power. And this is exactly what happens, over and over again, within the Men's "Rights" Movement. In many ways, I suppose it is natural behaviour, but, that still doesn't make it beneficial to men.

One of the worst aspects of this, however, is that the men who rose to "own" these forums were automatically considered "leaders" within the MRM, and thus, their opinions and statements were above reproach. Many, if not most of these men, were in no way "top shelf" MRA's because of their ideas, understanding, or activism. They became "leaders" simply because they started up a free website where they invited frustrated men to "talk." Usually, in the beginning, the "cutting edge" MRA's would show up to the new but slow board, so that they could have the opportunity to relay the information and theories they had discovered. This, of course, attracted other readers, who wanted to read something different than the same old same old. But usually after a year or so, the membership would grow to such a size that the cutting edge guys weren't necessary anymore to generate traffic, and with the owner of the "free" board getting much undeserved praise for spending 10 minutes a year ago to simply start the site, leaders with very low IQ's were created who used most of their "power" to make sure other men didn't

gain any. (Sound familiar?). In fact, I even had a board owner once send me a private message "requesting" that I stop posting such lengthy and detailed pieces - not because people didn't like them, mind you, but specifically *because* they were liked. After a few months, the top three rated posts on his forum were penned and defended by myself, and this owner "requested" that I desist because *he* was the top writer on that forum, not me. (Today, he gets less hits than a newby's blog, but, at least he is the top writer there, eh?). Here is a good thread to illustrate (from a different forum) that shows exactly how difficult it was for a man to even get the most basic concepts out there to discuss. (It is long, but it illustrates so well the struggles men went through within their own ranks). 90% of the men commenting on today's MRM sites would not have lasted in such an environment... and 90% didn't. Most of the MRM back then was simply complaining that men weren't getting *their* fair share of equality. But God help you if you bad-mouthed women (a subjective term) along the way... because if you say something that offends people, mister, an 85 IQ forum owner will show up and punish you for your insolence. (I've never met an influential man in the MRM yet who bothered to start up a forum, even though lots of ill-proclaimed "leaders" have them).

So, back to *the point* of MGTOW.

Back in those days, Men Going Their Own Way meant actually going *your own* way - from the MRM, and from the boards and forums run by men with big egos but little intellectual clout to back them up. It meant, "don't think you need to be at *this* board in order to get your ideas out." There is nothing stopping you from starting up a free blog, or a free forum/board, and getting your own ideas out there.

And not only did this strategy free up the bottleneck of having too few forums managed by too politically corrected men, but it also expanded activism a great deal. You see, forums don't get picked up by Google search as much as blogs and websites do. One forum I frequented had the owner boast of 800 hits a day. That is not too bad, eh? Not great, but not bad either. However, when you take into account that there are hundreds of members on that board, and that most of them, after posting "this is the BEST article I've ever read... those women will die old with cats!" and each time they make such a post, they check in two, three, or four times to see if they have been responded to or upvoted in popularity, well, the bloom kinda comes off the rose, doesn't it? However, even with my own humble blog, I can shut it down (and have) for sometimes years at a time, and I still consistently get around 300 hits a day *from varied sources and search queries* even without posting at all... for years! This is certainly better than posting all of your work on some obscure thread on some echo chamber forum, to be buried under thousands of subsequent posts, resulting in nobody being exposed to them.

So, that was one of the main "hidden" goals of MGTOW. Activism by flooding the internet with "our message," and the way to create that impact on the internet was the concept of MGTOW, with *individual men* creating their own websites, and speaking their fricking mind without the ban-hammer being wielded above their heads. Hell, we didn't even care if you could write two words coherently. Just start up a website and link to us so our web-rankings will rise... and please, *don't* delete your blogs if you get tired and quit, because it harms the rest of us in web-rankings and internet exposure.

That was old-school MGTOW.

Had nothing to do with the marriage strike!

How 'bout that?

However, men are men as much as women are women, and after a period of time, it appears that men have again forgotten the lessons of the past. After "de-centralizing" the MRM, the MRM picked itself up, dusted itself off, and decided the best line of action was to again "centralize" everything under a big tent - a clearing house, as it were. And again, we find ourselves in the same place we were in less than a decade ago... albeit, we are slightly, and only

slightly, further down the road.

I cannot *stand* the idea of bigger government as the result of MRM whining. Anyone whose ever read this blog before knows that this has been a major theme of this blog, if not of the MGTOW movement itself (given it's prominence in the manifesto, and the research and articles of my fellow MGTOW'rs). And yet, as we *again* all agree to convene under "the big tent" and succumb to silencing peer pressure while elevating the less educated *again* as leaders over the better equipped, we are heading exactly into the same quagmire we only recently un-stuck ourselves from. The only difference this time is that men are actually paying people to run these free, or relatively free, websites - this was something that would have made you an instant pariah only a few years ago. And I agree with the sentiment. I have no desire to build "organisms" which is what monetary funding does. (You have to justify your existence to justify the money... and that just becomes a self-feeding loop, like feminism is - plus, you have "customers" and can't speak The Truth as freely as before, lest you lose your livelihood). Don't talk to me about the "time." I have spent so much "time" on this subject, free of charge, that I can't even comprehend what would be owed at half the minimum wage! *Many* men have! I do not weep for those who write without adequate financial renumeration. Sorry. Welcome to the club.

But, as it sits, all I can really observe in the MRM over the past years has been a sleeping, an awakening from MGTOW, and a drift back to sleep by accepting the same premise as the pre-MGTOW MRM did. Aside from the MRM being bigger than before, I think it has come full circle back to where it started. We are back to the ridiculous "big tent" ideology, and further, although lots of men talk about restricting government, it is half-baked, as at the same time they also believe the government ought to solve many of their problems with *more* government - shared parenting being my absolute number one pet peeve about this.

I am a Man Going His Own Way (MGHOW). I agree with MGTOW in its original form. I don't agree with the premise put forward by the "full circle MRM."

I will elaborate in future articles, of course. But as a Man Going His Own Way, as I have always been, which has not always been congruent with the mainstream MRM. And thank God!

Coincidence Theory

. · 2 January 2001 · Archived copy · Original

I had to laugh the other day while reading Dalrock's blog. Someone was ranting against the stupidity of those tinfoil hat conspiracy theorists again, which is nothing new, but a reply from another commenter was fantastic when he queried, "So, you're a coincidence theorist then?"

I laughed out loud.

But seriously, this is actually something I have pondered about before, so it was kind of a smug laugh.

Now, I don't want to get into a whole lot of 9/11 technical crapola, but I would simply like to point out some basic maths. Most of us have probably heard the riddle, "If I flip a coin and nine times in a row it lands on heads, what are the odds it lands on heads the tenth time?" The answer to this is, of course, 50%. The same as it was each and every time you flipped the coin, and on the tenth flip, the odds are still 50/50 that it will be heads or tails. Oooh, so smart is the mathematician with his fancy degree! But, a bookie in Vegas wouldn't give you 50/50 odds that someone could flip a coin and have it land heads 10 times in a row, would he? No, he would use maths by saying 1/2 x 1/2 x 1/2 x 1/2 x 1/2 x 1/2 x 1/2 x 1/2 x 1/2 x 1/2 = 0.0976525% - So, approximately 1 to 100 odds, and then he would take the vig.

(In other words, on one flip there is a 50/50 chance it lands on heads, in two flips there is a 25% chance it lands on heads *both* times, 3 flips is 12.5%, 4 is 6.25%, 5 is 3.125%, 6 is 1.5625%, 7 is 0.78125%, 8 is 0.390625%, 9 is 0.1953625% and for one to flip heads ten times in a row, there is only a 0.0976525% chance, or in other words, there is just less than a one percent chance that someone could flip a coin ten times in a row and have it land on heads each time, even though on that last flip, the odds are still 50/50 it will land on heads on the tenth flip - The odds of getting that far though, are less than 2%).

Now think about 9/11 objectively for a moment. In all of aviation history, how many times has an airliner crashed without leaving virtually any trace of wreckage and survivors? Not very many. In fact, last I heard, not once. Even when France had an airliner crash over one of the deepest parts of the ocean a few years back, they retrieved bodies and wreckage. But on 9/11? There were *four* planes in *three* different locations that destructed with absolutely *zero* evidence left afterwards that a plane was even there. This would be an odd coincidence of events for even just *one* plane, but for four airliner crashes to happen one after the other with the same result is well, astronomical in its own right! Multiply that factor on top of the fact that skyscrapers catching on fire has never caused a collapse in the way that three buildings collapsed on 9/11, one right after the other, under two differing circumstances, and we have gone from out of this world odds and into the astronomical. When you consider how many times a year the military practices terrorist drills simulating airliner attacks on skyscrapers per year, and then just add that "coincidence" to the equation... I mean, come on folks, this isn't just flipping a coin ten times in a row and having it land on heads. This is a One in Gazillion chance that this is "the right story" - if you are a coincidence theorist.

And it seems odd to me that coincidence theorists would mock conspiracy theorists, given the mathematical odds of each being correct. For example, in the past century alone, false flag conspiracies have been involved with US involvement in The Great War (The Lusitania), World War Two (Hitler dressing dead soldiers in opposing uniforms and claiming Poland attacked first, AND, the USA's knowledge of the Pearl Harbor attack beforehand, but allowing its devastation to unify the nation), and the Vietnam War (Gulf of Tonkin). The only of the wars the USA was involved in during the past century that *didn't* involve a false flag event was the Korean War. So, compared to the One in a Billion (or Trillion) odds that the events of 9/11 happened the way were told, or if opposingly there were elements of nefarious activities behind the scenes (1 in 4 odds), I would say that the

conspiracy theorists are on the right side of the bet compared to the coincidence theorists. All thoughout history people have "conspired" to make history. Bismarck "conspired" to villify the French and start the Franco-Prussian War, Canada became a confederated country because after the US Civil War it was discovered that US War Hawks were conspiring to manipulate war with Canada in order to maintain the size of their military complex, and Britain figured it would be more damaging for the Americans in International Politics to attack a newly formed nation than to attack a colony of Britain, thus, Canuckistan now stands as the True North Strong and Free. Conspiracy theories are found far, far, FAR more often in history than one in a gazillion coincidence theories. Et Tu, Brute?

So, if I were to bet on which side is right, I would estimate my odds being so substantially higher siding with the conspiracy theorists than coincidence theorists, that I would be a buffoon to side with a coincidence theorist, given that compared to their opponents they have a statistical probability of being right at around one in million (or trillion), while conspiracy theorists claiming there are strings "behind" the scenes being pulled, would probably be batting at least .500, if not higher, according to the history of the world.

"But, but, but," the coincidence theorists protest, "It is so unbelievable!"

Not really.

The biggest mistake that coincidence theorists undertake is when they believe everything related has to be some grand nefarious scheme. This is complete nonsense. The world is chaotic enough (something that "coincidence" theorists cannot deny by the very *nature* of their argument), and over any given decade in human history, I can point out earthquakes, famines, tsunamis, economic crises, that all led to government increasing their power. The coincidence theorist would like to discredit his opponents by pointing out the tin-foil hatters claiming that, say, Hurricane Katrina was affirmed by some to be a conspiracy theory of the US government using HAARP to attack its own people.

I don't know the answer to that, but I suspect it is more simple. If I were to start a conspiracy theory, i would just *keep it simple!* I would simply say to my nefarious colleagues that we need *not* figure out how to use HAARP to make Katrina happen. All we simply have to do is *wait* for Katrina to happen. Tragedies happen all the time, and in a decade long period, we can expect probably three major earthquakes, one economic crisis, one ill-attempted war from a despotic country, and so on and so on. We don't need to conspire to *make* those things happen, like all the coincidence theorists are claiming we do, All we need to do is know that there will be, on average, 10 major events over the next decade, and each time one of them happens, we have to push for the same response (and results) uniformly.

I mean, DUH!

Why would you go through all the trouble to orchestrate such nonsense when so many events happen naturally anyways?

All you really need to do is have a ready-made response to any and all events that happen in the future, like, "the solution to this crisis is world government!" Thus, you don't need to crash planes into towers, or use HAARP to make earthquakes and tsunamis, and so on. All you need to do is respond to the natural crises of the world with a uniform response, which always leads into the same direction.

Fitness Testing (Shit Tests)

. · 2 January 2001 · Archived copy · Original

Pinched from the Rational Male - by Rollo Tomassi

Nothing is more threatening yet simultaneously attractive to a woman than a man who is aware of his own value to women.

My use of the word "threat" here isn't to imply malice. I'm sure more simplistic associations with violence or conflict is the natural one, but a "threat" is a challenge – how one deals with it is what's at issue. As I stated in the Three Strikes thread,

> Women's sexual strategy is very schizophrenic – ideally women want a Man that other women want to fuck, but in order to assess his sexual market value to other women he's got to have exercisable options for her to compete against, or at least display indirect social proof to that effect. So, she needs to limit his options while simultaneously determining he has those options.

This internal conflict between a want for security and provisioning, and a need for the 'gina tingles that only the excitement indignation, drama and Alpha dominance can stimulate is the fundamental root for women's shit tests. From Plate Theory VI:

> Essentially a shit test is used by women to determine one, or a combination of these factors:
> a.) Confidence – first and foremost
> b.) Options – is this guy really into me because I'm 'special' or am I his only option?
> c.) Security – is this guy capable of providing me with long term security?

Women's shit testing is a psychologically evolved, hard-wired survival mechanism. **Women will shit test men as autonomously and subconsciously as a men will stare at a woman's big boobs.** They cannot help it, and often enough, just like men staring at a nice rack or a great ass, even when they're aware of doing it they'll still do it. Men want to verify sexual availability to the same degree women want to verify a masculine dominance / confidence.

For a woman, to encounter a man with a healthy awareness of his own value to women, this constitutes a threat. Here is a man for whom's attention women will demonstrably compete for, AND he knows this. This is the most basic affront to the feminine imperative; to be unplugged, of high SMP value and to derive confidence from it. Therefore, in order to actualize her own sexual strategy, his self-confidence MUST be put into self-doubt, because if such a man were to use this knowledge to his own benefit he may not select her from a pool of better prospective women. Thus she must ask "*Are* you really sure of yourself? You think you're so great? Maybe you're just egotist? Don't tempt fate."

In this example we can see the conflict inherent in women's sexual strategy; she wants the Alpha dominance of a confident Man, but not *so* confident that he can exercise his options with other women well enough to make an accurate estimation of her own SMV.

Ambiguity in men's assessment of a woman's true sexual market value is the primary tool of the feminine imperative.

The same characteristics that give him his confidence and acknowledged sense of worth are exactly the same things that women want to be associated with. Even the most controlling, domineering wife still wants to tell her friends that the AFC she married is a "real Man", and even after privately berating him, will defend him as such because

anything less is a reflection on her own self-image. She wants to be with a Man that other men want to be, and other women want to fuck, because it confirms for her that she's of an equal or higher value to attract such a Man.

Women don't want a man to cheat, but they love a Man who *could* cheat.

That is the threat and the attraction. Women want a Man that has confidence in his own value; that's sexy, but the more he self-realizes this the greater the anxiety is that she'll be found wanting as he better understands his options. So it becomes necessary to develop social contrivances that are standardized across the feminine gender that limit the full recognition of masculine self-value. Thus masculinity is ridiculed, men become characterized as slaves to their sexuality, and masculinity becomes doubted by virtue of itself. In a global sense, the feminine imperative relies on the same ambiguity women will individually employ to confuse the efforts of men to assess their true SMV. By means of social conventions, psychologically force him to doubt his own SMV and women become the arbiters of it.

Race to Awareness

Because of women's relatively short window of peak sexual viability it is imperative that men be as unaware of their slower, but progressively increasing SMV for as long as possible in order for them to achieve the prime directive of female hypergamy; realize the best genetic options and the best provisioning options she has the capacity to attract in that peak window. If Men become aware of their SMV before a woman can consolidate on her options with monogamous commitment her sexual strategy is defeated.

The mistake (and the binary retort) is to think this need for contrivances was concocted in whole as some grand sisterhood conspiracy. This just proves an ignorance of social constructs. For a social contrivance to be such, it necessitates being repeated by society WITHOUT a formal conception – meaning we learn the contrivance from seeing it, internalizing it and repeating it ourselves without forethought. The best social contrivances are inconspicuous and rarely questioned because they've been learned without having been formally taught. This is why I think encouraging men NOT to bother trying to understand women is in itself a social convention. Don't look at that man behind the curtain, just accept it for what it is, enjoy the show, you're better off that way, the Mighty Oz has spoken.

This is the threat that Game represents to the feminine imperative. Widely shared, objective assessments of Men's SMV and how it develops is the antithesis of the female sexual strategy. Women's greatest fear is that they could become the 'selected' instead of the 'selectors'.

Pinched from the Rational Male - by Rollo Tomassi

Why I Like "The Book of Bonecrcker"

. · 2 January 2001 · Archived copy · Original

Since coming across The Book of Bonecrcker on NiceGuy's forum back in 2006, I have read it probably every six months or so. There's something about Bonecrcker's style and insights that "sit right" with me. He is obviously well schooled in "game" while not being a slave to it. He was trained with a Ph D in Psychology and later rebuffed the profession, choosing Chiropractic instead, once he realized that Psychology is no longer about that which it was originally intended to be about (treating mental illness). This training in Psychology, however, affords him some meaningful insights into human nature. When he posted these bits and pieces on NiceGuy's forum, he was not particularly arguing with anyone, but rather, he showed up and posted like mad for a few weeks and then disappeared, as if he had a purpose of sharing his information with others and once his mission was accomplished, he could leave and move on to other pursuits. Perhaps he was also clarifying his own thoughts and experiences by writing them out. Needless to say, I find reading Bonecrcker "comforting," which is why I read it so often. To say that I am a fan is an understatement.

While Bonecrcker is definitely out for number one and makes no "bones" about it, his views on being out for number one also includes living by a healthy moral code. - something I find the game community lacks glaringly. One thing you will notice as you go through his posts, is that he has a different view on the "Alpha-Beta" paradigm. His version differs from that of online game-guru Roissy. While I have a lot of respect for many of Roissy's insights and his writing ability, I don't believe all of his "male classifications" are correct. Roissy simply views "Alpha" as whatever it is that makes a man sexually attractive to women and considers them all universally "Alpha." "Beta" is a weak-willed schmuck who get ruthlessly manipulated by women, and "Omegas" are sexually deviant losers who barely ever get laid except by the fat BBW dregs of women that nobody else would touch with a barge pole. Bonecrcker, however, bases "Alpha" on high mating survival value, "Beta" as *most* men (ie. normal people), "Omega" as the criminal-scum class into which also falls the sexual deviants who seek out multiple sex partners and can't form stable relationships, and finally Bonecrcker includes a fourth class of men called "Zeta", which is the weak-willed man who rarely gets laid – and when he does, he is ruthlessly manipulated by women.

I have several times tried to discuss the differences between Roissy's views and Bonecrcker's views, but almost instantly a coterie of Roissy's followers (who are in their own parlance, Beta boys for blindly following Roissy's Alpha stance rather than thinking for themselves) will begin to moan and wail about shoving moral values down their throats. The thing what I find kind of ironic is that I don't really talk about "moral values" when I try to bring up that there seems to be two kinds of men that women are attracted to – for different reasons – but simply that there seems to be two classes of men that are sexually attractive. As soon as it is pointed it, it must become clear to many in the game community that this would imply moral values still exist, and that we might not be justified in screwing like monkeys, cuckolding each other ruthlessly, and encouraging a highly violent male hierarchy, like chimps have. It appears to me that many men are only too happy to throw all semblance of moral values out the window and base a man's worth solely upon the number of pussies he manages to plunder.

Bonecrcker's views match up better with my own life experiences in that I know some truly Alpha men who get "the best" chick and they tend to stick together, and I know – and have been close friends with – about three high number-count men who have each slept with 250 to 450 women each. These guys would be Alpha by Roissy's description, but Omega by Bonecrcker's in that they are sexually deviant, have no ability to form stable relationships (not only with women, but also with men), and are far more from the criminal/scum class rather than a high survival male Alpha. My high number-count "friends" are no longer friends because over time I have observed they have stabbed *everyone* in the back. They also were extremely tough – they had to be, since so many other guys wanted to kick the shit out of them. They got little co-operation from other males after time, often got into 3 to 5 fist fights a year, two did stints in prison, and they tended over time to become transitory, as after time too many

enemies meant it was “time to move on.” They sure got laid a lot though! Contrast this to a couple of friends of mine who I view as true Alphas in the Bonecrcker sense, wherein they were dominant men – with both men and women, but they were highly popular (had lots of male co-operation), and they dated *the best* chick and she stuck around and beat off the other chicks with a stick.

Think of it in male terms as what a guy finds sexually attractive in females. Sure, you can argue it is all based upon sex, and I wouldn’t disagree with that… but are all chicks attractive to a guy simply for the same sexual reasons? For example, when you are out on the hunt as a young guy looking for some pussy without much commitment, would you go for that “girl next-door” who is a “nine” and has only had one or two boyfriends in her life, or would you go for that chick you know is sexually loose, has had many boyfriends, is a “seven,” and you heard can suck the chrome off a trailer hitch? Well, if I were just out for some short term fun, I might value the slut over the prude. However, if I were out for starting a family, I would value the prude over the slut. Both are sexually attractive, in some ways the same, but vastly different in others. This is the same thing what I believe is going on with women. They are attracted to both high mate-value “Alphas” and low mate-value “Omegas,” (or criminal-scum-sexually deviant men). Both attract them, but for different reasons. That women end up settling for “Betas” to marry rather than high value Alphas is no different than a man who has spent his youth banging pretty sluts who are “nines” but settles upon a virginal “seven” to marry – choosing other “Beta” traits such a loyalty and fidelity over the looks scale - same goes for a woman who settles for a less sexually attractive male to settle down with. However, just as a man “settles” for a seven with higher survival value, the man would still choose a “nine” with the same survival value, as women would rather marry an “alpha” than a beta. Most men can’t marry “nines” any better than women can.

Now, this does not mean that Bonecrcker morally preaches at you to be an upright, proper “Alpha.” Just the opposite. In fact, he outright recommends adopting several “Omega” traits – such as not forming stable relationships (anti-survival) in order that men’s needs are met in a severely fucked up society that is hostile to males. However, you can tell from reading him, that imitating these traits does not need to entail *becoming* a dirt-bag piece of scum. One can recognize the differences, and choose to live a decent moral life, while protecting oneself from the dangers of our matriarchal society *without* actually being an evil scumbag who screws over all other men he encounters in life. I find this to be a significant difference between between Bonecrcker and others discussing game for the single man. I believe men (and even women) are more than mere monkeys, incapable of living higher than our hindbrains, so I prefer Bonecrcker’s route. It also more closely resembles what I have personally witnessed in human behaviour throughout my life.

On to The Book of Bonecrcker

What Is An Alpha Male?

. · 2 January 2001 · Archived copy · Original

Bonecrcker #23 – Bad Boys vs. Alphas

"Badbys" are pussies, not alpha males. The easiest way to tell if a man is alpha is to observe if he has the respect and cooperation of other men, especially other men in general (i.e. he has power and respect in society, not just socially). You very rarely see a "badboy" meet these criteria. When you do, it's usually an alpha fooling around to get laid.

Alpha males don't usually get the chicks. They get the *best* chick and she tends to stick around and beat the shit out of any other girls who come around.

The multiple sex partner thing is the omega male's gig. You usually see all sorts of deviant behavior going on in addition to this. Although he is getting laid, he is powerless in relationships as well as every other aspect of his life. No one respects him, not even the psycho chicks who screw him.

Alpha's get snapped up quickly. Beta males screw a lot early in life while women are competing over them, and then settle down. Omegas can't form stable relationships. And Zeta males rarely get laid. Most people are betas.

Humans aren't apes. We have a different mating strategy than them. Women compete for the best man they can get (at a very young age) and then stick with him for life. He sometimes cheats, but not to reproduce. She never cheats. Everyone pairs up. Whenever you see people straying from this paradigm, fucked-upness starts to happen. This is what is happening with women. They are becoming more and more omega. Their clustering around these men is not a normal thing, which is why it is so fucked up in all other ways.

Bonecrcker #28 – Women Ignoring Good Men and Choosing Thugs/Losers

The sad fact of the matter is most women lead sad, pathetic little lives. Their life choices leave them intensely unhappy failures... and feeling very unloved. Many completely screw up their lives creating a hopeless situation of intense suffering. A lot of the more vindictive behavior on their part is to punish someone else for the pain they are feeling. Large numbers end up alone in their later years. Half of women over 40 haven't even been laid in the last year. As far as making sense from an evolutionary POV, they are hardly picking up good genes. Originally, their behavior did make sense. They exhibited clustering around the men with the good genes (ie, intelligent, powerful men with resources got laid like fiends, especially the leaders). This ensured that the alpha males paired off with the alpha females and the beta males paired off with the beta females. Everyone else just sorta whored around. Unlike primates, humans exhibit pair-bonding. Most everyone mates and bears children, except the small number of losers and deviants and most of the structure and resources go towards the more valuable members of society. You had occasionally breeding on the sly, but usually only on the lower rungs of the pecking order, for variation. Cuckolding was punishable by death when it involved alphas or the more valuable betas. Humans also engaged in staggering. This means that all men want the younger, child bearing women, except when they are paired off. When a man's woman croaks, he takes another, but not of the same age as him... only from child bearing age. This made sense too. It forced women to pair off when they were fertile... or miss the boat so to speak.

Today, westernized women act completely different than in normal cultures and how women have acted for most of our species' history. They still exhibit clustering, but they do it now around the guys with bad genes! They ignore

the guys with the good, survival oriented genes.... strength, intelligence, virility, family orientation etc. Now, it's the omega male (criminal) and to a lesser extent the zeta male (weak loser) who are sought after. The former to indulge perversions, the latter to exploit for money. Also, women resist pair bonding (lol, while men still exhibit staggering) and child birth, putting it off until the end of their reproductive cycle. Often, they end up with nothing and no one. The results of this crap are plain for everyone to see... feral children who are quite frankly, genetically weak and inferior in various ways, growing up without fathers and few resources. Divorced women with no partner and no chance of getting one ever again. The whole situation is sick and unnatural and is slowly weakening us as a people.

That is the whole point of the feminist agenda. Most of those women are nuts and also inferior. They tend to be ugly, combat boot wearing deviants on the very bottom of the pecking order. Their hope is that by weakening us all, their position will rise. It just ain't gonna happen. The only way to rise in the pecking order is to be more important to society... to provide something, preferably something rare. The assholes provide nothing and take quite a bit. They are unworthy of respect in every way. One day, people will wake up to this fact and put them in their place. Not yet. But, it's getting there.

First, since the Alpha & Beta terms have been so horribly abused, and now made even further confusing by Vox's ridiculous notion of creating terms out of thin air like Delta & Gamma & Sigma, here is brief definition of what I am talking:

Alpha: The top male. He does not get laid like a fiend, although he could get many women. He gets the best chick and she beats off all the other chicks with a stick. The Alpha is the "10″, once the chick has the ten, who does she hypergamously "trade up" for? He gets social proofing not by screwing dozens of chicks, but rather from dating the best chick. All women know who the best chick is, and should the Alpha become available, all the other girls will rush to be his new girl because that means she will then rise to the social position of "best chick."

Beta: Most males. They are not weak-willed losers, but they are merely the men who are not number one. There can be only one. When younger, Beta males usually get more sex than alphas, as they sort themselves within the socio-sexual hierarchy, and date and break up serially before they settle down of suitable socio-sexual status. You can't have twenty-five star quarterbacks. One alpha will always rise above the rest, who become betas. The best PUA you know would quickly become a third-place beta if he hung out in Brad Pitt & George Clooney's social circle.

Omega: The criminal and scum class. Evil men, drug dealers, bad-boys, gangsters, scoundrels, sexual deviants, cads, have multiple sex partners, can't form stable relationships…

Zeta: The weak-willed male. He rarely gets laid and when he does he gets viciously exploited by females.

In game circles, where only the false binary terms of Alpha & Beta are used, Alpha & Omega traits are often confused/lumped into one, and Beta & Zeta traits are similarly confused.

Refuting the Declaration of Sentiments: Point One

. · 2 January 2001 · Archived copy · Original

1 – He has never permitted her to exercise her inalienable right to the elective franchise. -- Elizabeth Cady Stanton, The Declaration of Sentiments , 1848

The vote! The vote! The vote! Why, good gob-bejesuz, this is the epitome of oppression! It's such an important facet of freedom and western culture that in the last several federal elections here in Canada, for example, around 40% of the eligible population has chosen *not* to participate in voting… and guess what, their lives are just as secure and satisfying as those who actually did vote. As well, refugees, landed immigrants and those under the age of majority were not permitted to vote, and low and behold, their rights are still magically protected under the documents our nation has furnished to protect *inalienable rights,* of which voting has certainly *never* been one.

That modern society has little idea of "inalienable rights" is one thing, as our basic rights and our original systems of government have been brainwashed out of us by the removal of civics classes in our schools. However, for Elizabeth Cady Stanton, an influential and presumably educated woman in the day of 1848, to make such a boldly false statement about the "inalienable right to the elective franchise," there is simply no excuse and she must be characterized as a willful charlatan. She starts as a fraud and finishes as a fraud with her female screed. She was the daughter of was a federalist attorney who later served a term as a congressman, and eventually went on to be a circuit court judge and ultimately was appointed as a New York Supreme Justice. If anyone had an insight into the workings of the social justice systems of the day, it was certainly Elizabeth Cady Stanton, rather than the schlub males who were pounding spikes into the trans-continental railroads of the day… and who according to Canton's outrageous screed, lived a privileged life compared to the miserable existence she managed to wrench out as a poor woman suffering the fate of being born to a congressman and supreme court justice.

And, as per the vote, just the other day I was reading about the history of my province of British Columbia. In the 1850's, Vancouver Island was a crown colony of Britain, while the vast mainland area of the present day province was a hinterland populated only by around 100 white people, of whom virtually all were employees, or families of employees, of the Hudson Bay Company and who inhabited various fur-trading posts throughout the region. The crown colony of Vancouver Island was the first place in BC to be colonized and, the first to receive a form of government… and back then in the 1850's, a scant two years after Elizabeth Cady Stanton wrote the Declaration of Sentiments, the only people who could vote in the Crown Colony of Vancouver Island were those who owned over 25 acres of land, of which very few people qualified for. The vast majority of people had absolutely no vote at all… but low and behold, just because they couldn't vote, *did not* mean they no longer had their "inalienable rights." Of course they did! The idea of "inalienable rights" is that nobody can take them away from you, *not even if the majority of voters decide to vote your rights away!* That's kinda the point of them being called "inalienable." Not the

government, not the king, not the pope, and not even the majority of voters, can take away your inalienable rights. That is sorta the meaning of the term, after all. What did you think it meant?

In fact, one of the facets of *free* nations is **always** the declaration somewhere in the beginning of their founding articles/constitutions that the people's rights are endowed to them by The Creator. The reason why our rights are granted to us by The Creator is *not* because of our past as a civilization being based upon Christianity, but rather, because "The Creator" is out of the reach of man, and what the Creator gives (in this case, our rights), *only* the Creator can take away.

Here is the difference between the constitutions of the United States and the United Nations, which is based on an almost direct knock-off of the old constitution of the Soviet Union:

"We hold these truths to be self-evident, that all men are created equal, that they are endowed by their *Creator* with certain unalienable rights; that among these are Life, Liberty and Pursuit of Happiness. That to secure these rights, Governments are instituted among men..." -- United States Declaration of Independence

versus

"The States Parties to the present Covenant recognize that, in the enjoyment of *those rights provided by the state* ... the State may subject such rights only to such limitations as are determined by law." -- Article Four of the UN Covenant on Economic, Social and Cultural Rights

And on a slight side-note, to address the usual arguments that arise when simple secular-based arguments try to defend Christianity continuing to exist in our society: All atheist protestations and flagrant insults about the "flying spaghetti monster" aside, I can think of *nothing* that proves the *illogic* of atheists more than the instant insulting they resort to at the mention of the word God, or Creator, or Christianity, or religion. If they *really* don't believe in God, but understood the mechanics of the constitutions of free nations, they would be *overjoyed* that our rights are given to us by God/The Creator, as since he does not exist in their minds, there is 0% possibility that someone will try to take away their rights! Christians, however, believing in God, must also believe that it is possible for their rights to be taken away by God. The logical conclusion would be that atheists should be more comfortable with their rights coming The Creator than Christians. However, they are not. They are downright insulted about it. And yet, not a mention of replacing "The Creator" with another fictional character of their minds, like Santa Claus or the Easter Bunny being the one who grants us our rights instead. Nope. They downright demand to be Soviet Suckholes, and insist only some other human being should have the power to decide whether they have the *right* to enjoy Life, Liberty and Pursuit of Happiness. Maybe you too want your neighbours to have a say in your pursuit Life, Liberty and Pursuit of Happiness, but not me. I'd choose the Easter Bunny or even a flying spaghetti monster in a heartbeat over my neighbours Marcy and Jefferson D'Arcy.

Why wouldn't you?

But regardless, Elizabeth Cady Stanton was simply another bold-faced feminist liar when she tried to claim, in her opening point, that *men* have never permitted her to have the *inalienable right* to the elective franchise. Voting was *never* a right – let alone an inalienable one. And nowhere in the founding articles of Canada, the USA, Britain, and presumably Australia and New Zealand (as they are based on the same system as the rest) will you find a declaration of the *inalienable* right to vote. You can see this quite readily even today in the rights children possess. A child has the right to many things – like freedom of association, freedom of speech, the right to pursue life, liberty and happiness and so forth… but they *do not* have the *inalienable* right to the vote. They are restricted from it because of their age. Plain and simple, it is not an inalienable right, and anyone claiming it is, is either a doofus or is trying

to be subversive. Neither camp deserves the *privilege* of voting, and good on the original founders for trying to prevent them from screwing us over with it, which is the inevitable result of universal democracy.

Elizabeth Cady Stanton was liar.

Plain and simple.

And she has no excuses. All she had to do was ask her father, an expert in government and the law. She was no Laura Ingalls Wilder living in the Little House on the Prairie (who, btw, seemed to understand the nature of government and society, despite her impoverished upbringing). No, Elizabeth Cady Stanton was one of *the* most privileged women in the US of A, who likely had *mounds* of access to top quality libraries as well as the *ear* of various extremely powerful men in society to guide her along. She had no excuses to lie or embellish, and yet she *blatantly* did.

That lying bitch.

But, she was a suffragette!

How noble she was for being *that.*

May God have burned her soul.

Thrice!

Abolish Gender Roles For Men?

. · 3 January 2001 · Archived copy · Original

Quote: "The guys that wish for a change to the laws or some sort of return to the "old ways" are basically only arguing for slightly improved prison conditions. What still amazes me is the fact that so many men fool themselves into believing the nonsense about being a protector and provider for a woman is something natural or hard wired into men. And then proceed to get royally shafted as a thank you for being a wage slave pack horse cannon fodder white knight doormat. (Sexploytation and the slaves happiness) gives a perfect example of this."

This is something I struggle with quite a bit – the concept of it all. I think that naturally these kinds of things occur, and if the human race goes on, which it will, it will revert back to that "old way" in the same as gravity is a natural law.

Should the economy & subsequent civilization of the West crumble and we lose our wealthy ways of living, would things not revert back to the "old fashioned ways" of living? If there were no state paid blue suited thugs with guns, would not the male again take the role of protector? If we lost our technology, would not men and women revert back to the old roles of the men plowing the fields with the oxen while the woman is inside the log cabin, churning butter, baking, and tending to the children? Isn't that the natural, and most effecient division of labor?

And if the welfare state were to disappear, and women had the choice of being loyal to a man, in exchange for his providership, or of being a sexually unchaste whore who sleeps under a bridge with her thug spawn… well, would women continue to screw bad-boys that left them after sex? All living organisms are survival oriented, and normally this is what also leads the sex-drive. It has been skewed of late because of State involvement cushioning women's bad choices. The way women are screwing around now would fast lead to their extinction, and ours too, of course, and so in many regards we have to acknowledge that "game" is only a viable option because the state prevents women who choose to ride the cock-carousel from dying, or from living a very bleak existence at best.

Humans still exhibit pair-bonding – we are not monkeys. And wether we would like it or not, men and women are always going to be having sex. The question comes with how they go about getting it.

In no way do I see "game" as perfectly natural, because it allows for women to take on an anti-survival strategy of mating. Can anyone point out an organism that chooses extinction as its mating strategy?

Also, I see this from time to time – the MRM wanting to "end gender roles." Isn't that the same disease that started all of this crap in the first place? Isn't that what feminists have been shoving down everyone's throats from the beginning? What makes anyone think that males "ending their gender role" will work any better for men than it did for the feminists? I mean, if someone has a plan for how it can work better, it would certainly be worth while looking at, but I suspect that any plan that would actually work, would still resemble an awful lot of the gender roles that existed in the past.

Isn't even the study of game, a lot of support for traditional gender roles?

Btw, this is once in a while why I try to point out that the terms "Alpha" and "Beta" are not being properly used, and thus closes off the mind to proper human reproduction, the kind without state interference. It needs to be "Alpha, Beta, Omega & Zeta," in order to fully acknowledge the survival focus of sexuality.

Alpha: The top male. He does not get laid like a fiend, although he could get many women. He gets the best chick

and she beats off all the other chicks with a stick. The Alpha is the “10″, once the chick has the ten, who does she hypergamously “trade up” for? He gets social proofing not by screwing dozens of chicks, but rather from dating the best chick. All women know who the best chick is, and should the Alpha become available, all the other girls will rush to be his new girl because that means she will then rise to the social position of “best chick.”

Beta: Most males. They are not weak-willed losers, but they are merely the men who are not number one. When younger, Beta males usually get more sex than alphas, as they sort themselves out within the socio-sexual hierarchy, and date and break up serially before they settle down with a female of suitable socio-sexual status.

Omega: The criminal and scum class. Evil men, drug dealers, bad-boys, gangsters, scoundrels, sexual deviants, cads, have multiple sex partners, can’t form stable relationships…

Zeta: The weak-willed male. He rarely gets laid and when he does he gets viciously exploited by females.

Female sexual behaviour used to make sense throughout most of human history – otherwise we would not be here. Women exhibited clustering around men with good genes and survival qualities such as resources and the social respect and co-operation of the society around them (Alphas). Sure, while single, the Alpha males got laid like the dickens… until he paired off (usually very young) with an Alpha female, and the Beta Males paired off with their properly matched Beta females. Everyone else just kinda whored it up.

But, humans exhibit pair-bonding, and they mate and have children – all except for the small amounts of deviants. Most of the resources are created, and also go to the most valuable members of society – the Alphas & the more valuable Betas. Cuckolding by the Omegas used to be punished by death.

Today, women are still clustering, but they are clustering around the Omegas – with very low survival quality for the woman and her thug spawn. Women are also resisting pair-bonding, which again, is an evolutionary dead end for her and her offspring.

If the government simply were not involved in any part of family life – the cause of women being able to choose non-survival strategies for mating, what makes anyone think that we would wind up with anything different than what we’ve had since the begining of our history? How could we “end male gender roles” unless we advocated for complete control by the state?

Omega Traits Are Not Alpha Traits, But Are The Proper Traits For This Society

. · 4 January 2001 · Archived copy · Original

MGTOW/not marrying, and withdrawing from a society that is out to harm men is the proper response to our false sexual economy.

Also, I think a lot of guys into game are put off whenever I try to point out that what women are really attracted in this false-market society are Omega traits, not Alpha traits. But, there is no getting around it – number one, humans naturally pair bond and this has natural survival purposes, and number two, getting pumped and dumped by a man who won't stick around after sex usually meant death for the woman, so it's a little facetious to claim that women naturally seek out pump & dumpers.

It is only because of state interference that women are able to engage with the Omega class – and they are doing it do satisfy their perversions.

Women are still clustering, but not around Alphas with high survival value for them, but instead they are clustering around Omegas.

And that said, I understand and practice game, and am not promoting marriage/pair-bonding in the current state we live in. I am merely pointing out it is anti-survival, and so can't be completely natural for women to be more attracted to Omega cads or criminals than socially powerful Alphas with resources to ensure her survival – it is on the same level as a man expending his resources on a prostitute is not a good survival strategy for his genes either. Men might do it in our society to get laid and satisfy an itch, but it would not be a good survival strategy to expend valuable resouces on a whore.

That women are currently attracted to Omega traits in our society, means that men must immitate Omega behavior to get their sexual needs met, and refuse to get trapped legally in any way with the types of low-survival sluts that are attracted to them… but it is not natural.

And here comes the problem with all this stuff too – the pack (males) is hierarchal, and they will start killing eachother over Omega behavior. Look at the ghetto – or for a smaller sample, look at Pitcairn Island and how they all started pole-axing eachother (lol, while the women banded together and tried to kill a couple of the men as herd creatures). Roissy had a post the other day about women sharing an "alpha" male… and if you go through the comments, you will find there are quite a few guys in there who openly promote cuckolding the "stupid betas," and lol, I even seen some comments that betas are now worthless to society and so no-one should care what happens to them (I know that doesn't represent the whole gamosphere)… but again, that is NOT alpha behavior, it is Omega behavior. Alphas have the respect and co-operation of Betas. That kind of Omega behavior also leads to violence, and in the past, often death. It is about dominating other men through sex with women (and thus, kinda homo-erotic). Omega behavior is amoral – just like female behavior. There is a reason so many of them were killed. It is again, only through state interference, that such Omega behavior is not punished severely. Normally, "the pack" would take care of that.

The binary "alpha & beta" paradigm is incomplete, and much Omega behavior is being called Alpha, and much Zeta behavior is called Beta.

Also, as for "gender roles," it seems to me that "game" plays upon gender roles very much. What does "ending

gender roles" mean? Does it mean that men can be Kitchen Bitches if they want, and we will try to "evolve" women into finding Kitchen Bitches sexy? That'll work about as well as feminists trying to "evolve" men into liking ugly fat chicks over thin sexy chicks – ain't gonna happen. Game seems to me to quite advise to reassert your gender role – but it makes Omega adaptions by refusing to pair bond, by keeping enough women "in reserve" to make sure it doesn't hurt too much when of your love interests buggers off on you. Also, being as disreputable as possible (Omega behavior) gets attraction – but again, this is anti-survival for females, and a perversion they can only maintain because of the State.

I think there is quite often some confusion about "oppressive" gender roles, as men generally look into the 19th Century for reference. But, keep in mind, the 19th Century was fucked-up central – especially sexually – but also with the rise of women into the political sphere backing it up. If you go older in history, you will find there often was societal acceptance of human sexuality – and the acknowledgement that men needed to be protected from female sexuality, instead of the other way around.

If I were shipwrecked on an island with a woman, I think we would fast revert back to the age old gender roles in order to survive, because our gender roles are the best division of power and labor resources to ensure survival. I suspect it has always been this way, and always will revert back to it, once the state is no longer involved.

Pair Bonding

. · 5 January 2001 · Archived copy · Original

I have read before that low-testosterone men are more prone to outbursts than high-testosterone men, and the thinking behind it is that testosterone helps men remain more clear-headed in an emergency situation. In this way, it is the low testosterone man that, in the face of say a fist fight with another man, would flail about uselessly, letting his emotions inefficiently drive his actions – whereas a high testosterone man, in the face of danger, would be able to think more clearly, enabling him to either defuse the situation before violence, or, even if his emotions do get the better of him, to still enable him to "think" while behaving in a violent manner – like a fighter that can still think clearly enough to land effective and decisive blows. Here is an interesting article on testosterone: Testosterone: Hormone of the Gods?

I don't know if I agree with your anti-pair bonding thesis, and further, as I said before, *humans are not monkeys.* All I should have to do to prove this to you is ask you if *you personally* acknowledge a strong bond with your children? Male primates typically play no real role in parenting their offspring, however, human males *definitely* form strong bonds with their children.

This article shows that the belief in humans forming a pair-bond between males and females, is what moved us *away* from being monkeys, and allowed us to recognize our kinship:

The finding corroborates an influential new view of early human origins advanced by Bernard Chapais, a primatologist at the University of Montreal, in his book "Primeval Kinship" (2008). Dr. Chapais showed how a simple development, the emergence of a pair bond between male and female, would have allowed people to recognize their relatives, something chimps can do only to a limited extent. When family members dispersed to other bands, they would be recognized and neighboring bands would cooperate instead of fighting to the death as chimp groups do.

Humans are not monkeys.

Also, keep in mind that human children take a looooong time to develop – especially to develop our most important "tool," our minds. In fact, this is one of the underlying beneficial factors of "Patriarchy," in that while females are usually only able to raise children effectively during pre-puberty, it is the role of fatherhood that *extends childhood* and allows our minds to develop even further. But, even without Patriarchy, a mother would be fairly hard pressed to raise a child alone.

I believe there is something to Rotating Polyandry, where humans mate and pair-bond for short periods of time – around 4 years, based upon female prerogative – in order that she meets a male, pair-bonds with him, gets pregnant and gives birth while relying on his protection, and then during the child's most vulnerable stages in infancy, the pair-bond stays strong enough that the male sticks around and provides for both mother and infant during their most vulnerable. Once the child is more or less self sufficient at around 2 or 3 years old – when it can walk, talk, and feed itself – the female loses her pair-bond with the male, and wanders off to find new sperm to impregnate her, and she starts the whole pair-bond off again with a new male. In this way she gets genetic diversity for her offspring. The male, however, does not lose his pair-bond to the female, because there is no advantage in nature for this to occur. The most efficient way for nature to operate would be for the male to maintain a strong bond to the female until she is "finished with him." The same principle works with children and their parents. The parents maintain a strong bond to the children, while the children lose their bond to the parents so that they may "leave the nest."

Males are not "less emotional" than women. Males have *fewer* emotions, but their emotions run *deeper.* Women

have more *kinds* of emotions than men that sway them, but they do not run as deeply. One of the reasons for women to have this many emotions is because infants communicate mostly through emotion alone, and so women are more tuned in emotionally so as to be able to care for children. However, men's *deeper* emotions are what solidly pair-bond him to the mother and child, and motivate him to fight to the death to protect them.

Again, it is Patriarchal marriage that pair-bonds humans for probably longer than is natural – so that human children have more of a timeframe for their minds to be developed. Females have a very hard time maintaining control over children once they reach puberty, and this would coincide with how most other species operate as well – as soon as sexual maturity is reached, the mother and child separate. This also accounts for why the teenager is so rebellious to their parents. They are sexually mature by that stage, and patriarchy creates the artificial construct that lengthens childhood and allows our brains to mature even more than naturally.

I would say that serial monogamy is probably more natural for humans than no pair-bonding at all.

By the way, "one-itis" in game is another word for pair-bonding, and all game practitioners would acknowledge it exists, which is why they take measures to ensure that pair-bonding does not occur. I believe that females pair-bond as well, but as with the bond between child and parent where the parents bonds are stronger than the child's, between men and women it is also the man's bonds that are stronger than the females, and it is this way for natural, reproductive/survival purposes.

The "Mature Man's" Views on "Game"

. · 6 January 2001 · Archived copy · Original

I think that men who are “mature” haven’t forgotten what it is like to be a young 20 year old, who is desperate to get laid. I would say that it works the opposite to forgetting. Men who are 30, 40, 50, 60 etc. have a lot more experience actually knowing how a 20 year old thinks than a 20 year old knows how a 30, 40, 50 or 60 year old man thinks.

Think about it.

Also, while sex is certainly a prime driver of humanity – right after survival – keep in mind that sexuality is only the prime driver for 1/3 of our lifespans. As much as young guys can’t think of anything but pussy, 2/3 of our time on this planet are spent without pussy being the prime directive.

“I cannot conceal from myself that for a dozen years or more I have ceased to be under the spell of sex; I know too well the defects and weaknesses of the idol. I had set it too high, to the detriment of the virile man; I have liked women and sought their company too much. At last impartiality has come. It is never too late to be wise. If I continue to feel a slight preference for the more loving sex, I am less naive, less blind, less credulous, less admiring than before. The veil of Maya has worn thin, and illusion is less necessary to me. My camaraderie has enabled to see truly. I can look at them as they look at one another, as their mothers, fathers and brothers look at them, as the doctor sees them, that is, in all the ways other than the amorous and illusioned way. I am sensitive to their charm, without overrating them; I am touched, moved, grateful, attracted, without being deceived. This is the state I prefer." — Henri Amiel, Sept 17, 1880 (59yrs old)

I have no problem at all with “game” as a tool in a young man’s arsenal. I don’t think any “mature” men do – in fact just the opposite. The problem what I have with game is the tendency to practice it amorally. It is like learning the martial arts – there is nothing inherently wrong with learning it, and in fact, the benefits of learning it are enormous. However, if you do not couple the martial arts with moral values, it quickly becomes something that people abuse ruthlessly.

“With great power comes great responsibility.”

Learning game is learning “power.” Now comes the moral connundrum – should I use my power for good, or for evil?

Too many in the gamosphere propose using game with zero morality whatsoever, and in doing so are embracing the worst of masculinity as an excuse to counter the normative of feminity. Yes, game is a “tool.” However, when compared to the Martial Arts, most reputable Martial Arts proponents will also try to infuse a great deal of morality within their teaching of the “violent arts.” The vast majority of the gamosphere, on the other hand, proposes survival of the fittest, and if you can can cuckold another man’s wife, you should bareback the bitch and knock her up. Serves the dumb cuck right, for being such a beta. This is the same as a guy learning to be a black belt in Karate, and just walking up and down the street, beating the shit out of people, and saying, “Serves the dumb wimp right, for not learning Karate like me.”

Too many in the gamosphere advocate fucking over other men – and in reality, since women are like monkeys that “don’t let go of one branch until they’ve gotten hold of another,” it pretty much comes down to that any time one man “scores”, another man loses.

Somewhere along the line, men fucking over other men in probably the most primal way except for basic survival, is going to come and bite us all on the ass.

Should you know how to deal with women?

Yes!

Should you abuse your power, and just write it off as “only a dumb beta got hurt?”

No.

Morality is the sphere of *men*, not women. Women are amoral – just like children. Men are not.

Related:

Bonecrcker #64 – On Players

Testosterone: Hormone Of The Gods? -- by Darren Blacksmith

. · 6 January 2001 · Archived copy · Original

Testosterone has a bad reputation. The public image of it is closely linked to the idea of dumb aggression, to the caveman. But this is a far from complete image. In recent years new research is starting to show that it would be more accurate to associate this much maligned hormone with Newton, Da Vinci, Einstein and Edison than the rough and brutal Neanderthal. Testosterone, it seems, could be the true driver of our civilisations.

Satoshi Kanazawa at the University of Canterbury, New Zealand, studied the biographies of 280 scientists and plotted their intellectual achievements against their ages. He discovered something extremely revealing: the curves of age-achievement in scientists was not only repeated in jazz musicians, painters and authors, but mirrored the curves of age-criminal activity in criminals. Furthermore, both criminal activity and intellectual achievement seemed to drop off when the scientist or crock got married and started a family.

Interesting, don't you think?

Criminal and high-level intellectual activity have the same underlying motor according to Kanazawa: testosterone.

This would also explain why most criminal and high level intellectual activities are carried out by the male of the species.

Testosterone is a hormone that males produce in far greater quantity than females. It begins production while the individual is still in the womb, and effects brain development. Testosterone levels tend to peak in the early twenties, and by middle age drop off dramatically.

High levels of testosterone have been reported to be correlated with dominant behaviour. This dominance does not necessarily express itself aggressively. It is more of a general competitive response. Also, interestingly, the relationship between testosterone levels and behaviour works both ways: taking part in competitive activity can raise levels of testosterone; furthermore, winning can increase it, losing can make it decrease.

Kanazawa's paper is not absolute proof that testosterone is the key driver of exceptional male behaviour, but it is an elegant and persuasive argument. Should it really be such a surprise that males have historically had a monopoly on both criminal activity and genius-level accomplishments? Are we really to believe that this is all a co-incidence, and the true reason for male behaviour is the 'Patriarchy', as feminists and political correctoids would have us believe?

A related area to testosterone's drive for dominance is the sex-drive.

Sex-drive is an elusive concept. It is hard to measure because it can only really be objectively measured by activity (i.e. amount of sexual activity one indulges in). However, this measurement is a vector. A vector is a combination of two factors (in this case: opportunity to have sex + drive to have sex; or lack of willpower to refrain from sex x drive to have sex) therefore we cannot resolve out these two factors and determine whether the person has a high sex drive or merely has lots of opportunities to have sex OR a low willpower to resist their drive.

Nevertheless, even if we can't always measure the sex-drive of a person objectively, that does not mean it doesn't exist. And sometimes things that one cannot measure objectively can simply be observed or perceived through common sense. Men certainly, at least historically, have had a greater expression of sex drive than women. Particularly young men, who are often in a frenzy to sleep with as many females as possible.

Sexual desire – like water – can be managed and channelled, but it is much harder to eliminate. Rather, you should seek to give it other channels of expression.

Maybe sex-drive is another way to measure achievement, or rather the sublimation of sex drive into purposeful goal-driven behaviour.

Leaders are readers, and one book stands out more than any other in history as a bible of the wealthy: 'Think and grow rich' by Napoleon Hill. Mr Hill spent years studying the rich and working out what made them that way. He then wrote many books on the subject, of which the most famous is 'Think and grow rich'. Chapter 10 of the book is entitled 'The mystery of sex transmutation'.

Here are a few interesting quotations from this chapter:

"Destroy the sex glands, whether in man or beast, and you have removed the major source of action. For proof of this, observe what happens to any animal after it has been castrated. A bull becomes as docile as a cow."

"A teacher who has trained and directed the efforts of more than 30,000 salespeople, made the astounding discovery that highly sexed men are the most efficient salesmen. The explanation is, that the factor of personality known as "personal magnetism" is nothing more nor less than sex energy."

And here is the most important quote:

"I have discovered, from the analysis of over 25,000 people, that men who succeed in an outstanding way, seldom do so before the age of forty, and more often they do not strike their real pace until they are well beyond the age of fifty.

The major reason why the majority of men who succeed do not begin to do so before the age of forty to fifty is their tendency to dissipate their energies through over-indulgence in physical expression of the emotion of sex.

The majority of men never learn that the urge of sex has other possibilities, which far transcend in importance that of mere physical expression. The majority of those who those who make this discovery, do so after having wasted many years at a period when the sex energy is at its height, prior to the age of forty-five to fifty. This is usually followed by noteworthy achievement.

Biographies of American industrialists and financiers are filled with evidence that the period from forty to sixty is the most productive age of man."

Well, there you have it. When young men chase women for sex, they are throwing their wild oats into the wind. They are dissipating their energies, short-circuiting their currents to get a quick spark of pleasure which then leaves them in darkness. In order to get a continuous light-source there needs to be an element of resistance (called the filament in a light-bulb). Resistance builds strength.

We undoubtedly live in a sexually charged time. Sex is used constantly by advertisers and marketers to entice men to buy things. Also, women and girls today routinely dress in extremely provocative clothes, even in the workplace. All this adds up to more invitations to think about sex today than men suffered in the past. If it were not for my hatred of the language of victimology I would call this is a form of sexual harassment of men.

This plays brilliantly into the hands of women, who obviously would like nothing more than to 'bump up' the market value of their sexual favours. Indeed, this relationship between the need to increase their sexual market

value and the increasing 'sexiness' of women's appearance can be observed in society. As women have become more harsh and less feminine in some of their behaviours (thus depleting the attractiveness of their personalities to men) they have had to compensate by turning up the volume of their physical appeal: shorter skirts, lower-cut tops, exposing their stomachs etc. This ends up harming them though, as they are only wanted for sex, and not their personality.

A more temperate attitude towards sex would be healthier for both men and women. It would allow men to concentrate on more important things, and it might allow women to develop their personalities and not just their looks.

Science references:

'Why productivity fades with age: The crime–genius connection', Kanazawa, S., Journal of Research in Personality 37 (2003) 257–272

'Testosterone and dominance in men', Mazur,A. and Booth, A., Behavioral and Brain Sciences (1998) 21, 353–397

Related:

An Epidemic of Low Testosterone – Stares at the World

The Testosterone Guide -- Roissy

Sexual Freedom vs. Political Freedom

. · 7 January 2001 · Archived copy · Original

"As political and economic freedom diminishes, sexual freedom tends correspondingly to increase. And the dictator will do well to encourage that freedom...it will help to reconcile his subjects to the servitude which is their fate." -- Aldous Huxley in the Preface to *Brave New World*

George Washington Farewell Address

Howard Roark: In Praise of the Self -- by Ayn Rand (The Fountainhead, 1943)

. · 8 January 2001 · Archived copy · Original

Note: This is the speech of Howard Roark, the architect in Ayn Rand's novel, defending the primacy of the human being against all the external powers that want to crush him in the name of demeaning self-sacrifice and corruptive altruism. It is a powerful plea against the terrible myth of selflessness that, as the word implies, denies the self and, by implication, personal choice and individual responsibility in favour of mass identity and collective servility.

Thousands of years ago, the first man discovered how to make fire. He was probably burned at the stake he had taught his brothers to light. He was considered an evildoer who had dealt with a demon mankind dreaded. But thereafter men had fire to keep them warm, to cook their food, to light their caves. He had left them a gift they had not conceived and he had lifted darkness off the earth. Centuries later, the first man invented the wheel. He was probably torn on the rack he had taught his brothers to build. He was considered a transgressor who ventured into forbidden territory. But thereafter, men could travel past any horizon. He had left them a gift they had not conceived and he had opened the roads of the world.

That man, the unsubmissive and first, stands in the opening chapter of every legend mankind has recorded about its beginning. Prometheus was chained to a rock and torn by vultures - because he had stolen the fire of the gods. Adam was condemned to suffer - because he had eaten the fruit of the tree of knowledge. Whatever the legend, somewhere in the shadows of its memory mankind knew that its glory began with one and that that one paid for his courage.

Throughout the centuries there were men who took first steps down new roads armed with nothing but their own vision. Their goals differed, but they all had this in common: that the step was first, the road new, the vision unborrowed, and the response they received - hatred. The great creators - the thinkers, the artists, the scientists, the inventors - stood alone against the men of their time. Every great new thought was opposed. Every great new invention was denounced. The first motor was considered foolish. The airplane was considered impossible. The power loom was considered vicious. Anesthesia was considered sinful. But the men of unborrowed vision went ahead. They fought, they suffered and they paid. But they won.

No creator was prompted by a desire to serve his brothers, for his brothers rejected the gift he offered and that gift destroyed the slothful routine of their lives. His truth was his only motive. His own truth, and his own work to achieve it in his own way. A symphony, a book, an engine, a philosophy, an airplane or a building - that was his goal and his life. Not those who heard, read, operated, believed, flew or inhabited the thing he had created. The creation, not its users. The creation, not the benefits others derived from it. The creation which gave form to his truth. He held his truth above all things and against all men.

His vision, his strength, his courage came from his own spirit. A man's spirit, however, is his self. That entity which is his consciousness. To think, to feel, to judge, to act are functions of the ego.

The creators were not selfless. It is the whole secret of their power - that it was self-sufficient, self-motivated, self-generated. A first cause, a fount of energy, a life force, a Prime Mover. The creator served nothing and no one. He lived for himself.

And only by living for himself was he able to achieve the things which are the glory of mankind. Such is the nature of achievement.

Man cannot survive except through his mind. He comes on earth unarmed. His brain is his only weapon. Animals obtain food by force. Man has no claws, no fangs, no horns, no great strength of muscle. He must plant his food or hunt it. To plant, he needs a process of thought. To hunt, he needs weapons, and to make weapons - a process of thought. From this simplest necessity to the highest religious abstraction, from the wheel to the skyscraper, everything we are and everything we have comes from a single attribute of man - the function of his reasoning mind.

But the mind is an attribute of the individual. There is no such thing as a collective brain. There is no such thing as a collective thought. An agreement reached by a group of men is only a compromise or an average drawn upon many individual thoughts. It is a secondary consequence. The primary act - the process of reason - must be performed by each man alone. We can divide a meal among many men. We cannot digest it in a collective stomach. No man can use his lungs to breathe for another man. No man can use his brain to think for another. All the functions of body and spirit are private. They cannot be shared or transferred.

We inherit the products of the thought of other men. We inherit the wheel. We make a cart. The cart becomes an automobile. The automobile becomes an airplane. But all through the process what we receive from others is only the end product of their thinking. The moving force is the creative faculty which takes this product as material, uses it and originates the next step. This creative faculty cannot be given or received, shared or borrowed. It belongs to single, individual men. That which it creates is the property of the creator. Men learn from one another. But all learning is only the exchange of material. No man can give another the capacity to think. Yet that capacity is our only means of survival.

Nothing is given to man on earth. Everything he needs has to be produced. And here man faces his basic alternative: he can survive in only one of two ways - by the independent work of his own mind or as a parasite fed by the minds of others. The creator originates. The parasite borrows. The creator faces nature alone. The parasite faces nature through an intermediary.

The creator’s concern is the conquest of nature. The parasite’s concern is the conquest of men.

The creator lives for his work. He needs no other men. His primary goal is within himself. The parasite lives second-hand. He needs others. Others become his prime motive.

The basic need of the creator is independence. The reasoning mind cannot work under any form of compulsion. It cannot be curbed, sacrificed or subordinated to any consideration whatsoever. It demands total independence in function and in motive. To a creator, all relations with men are secondary.

The basic need of the second-hander is to secure his ties with men in order to be fed. He places relations first. He declares that man exists in order to serve others. He preaches altruism.

Altruism is the doctrine which demands that man live for others and place others above self.

No man can live for another. He cannot share his spirit just as he cannot share his body. But the second-hander has used altruism as a weapon of exploitation and reversed the base of mankind’s moral principles. Men have been taught every precept that destroys the creator. Men have been taught dependence as a virtue.

The man who attempts to live for others is a dependent. He is a parasite in motive and makes parasites of those he serves. The relationship produces nothing but mutual corruption. It is impossible in concept. The nearest approach to it in reality - the man who lives to serve others - is the slave. If physical slavery is repulsive, how much more repulsive is the concept of servility of the spirit? The conquered slave has a vestige of honor. He has the merit of

having resisted and of considering his condition evil. But the man who enslaves himself voluntarily in the name of love is the basest of creatures. He degrades the dignity of man and he degrades the conception of love. But this is the essence of altruism.

Men have been taught that the highest virtue is not to achieve, but to give. Yet one cannot give that which has not been created. Creation comes before distribution - or there will be nothing to distribute. The need of the creator comes before the need of any possible beneficiary. Yet we are taught to admire the second-hander who dispenses gifts he has not produced above the man who made the gifts possible. We praise an act of charity. We shrug at an act of achievement.

Men have been taught that their first concern is to relieve the sufferings of others. But suffering is a disease. Should one come upon it, one tries to give relief and assistance. To make that the highest test of virtue is to make suffering the most important part of life. Then man must wish to see others suffer - in order that he may be virtuous. Such is the nature of altruism. The creator is not concerned with disease, but with life. Yet the work of the creators has eliminated one form of disease after another, in man's body and spirit, and brought more relief from suffering than any altruist could ever conceive.

Men have been taught that it is a virtue to agree with others. But the creator is the man who disagrees. Men have been taught that it is a virtue to swim with the current. But the creator is the man who goes against the current. Men have been taught that it is a virtue to stand together. But the creator is the man who stands alone.

Men have been taught that the ego is the synonym of evil, and selflessness the ideal of virtue. But the creator is the egotist in the absolute sense, and the selfless man is the one who does not think, feel, judge or act. These are functions of the self.

Here the basic reversal is most deadly. The issue has been perverted and man has been left no alternative - and no freedom. As poles of good and evil, he was offered two conceptions: egotism and altruism. Egotism was held to mean the sacrifice of others to self. Altruism - the sacrifice of self to others. This tied man irrevocably to other men and left him nothing but a choice of pain: his own pain borne for the sake of others or pain inflicted upon others for the sake of self. When it was added that man must find joy in self-immolation, the trap was closed. Man was forced to accept masochism as his ideal - under the threat that sadism was his only alternative. This was the greatest fraud ever perpetrated on mankind.

This was the device by which dependence and suffering were perpetuated as fundamentals of life.

The choice is not self-sacrifice or domination. The choice is independence or dependence. The code of the creator or the code of the second-hander. This is the basic issue. It rests upon the alternative of life or death. The code of the creator is built on the needs of the reasoning mind which allows man to survive. The code of the second-hander is built on the needs of a mind incapable of survival. All that which proceeds from man's independent ego is good. All that which proceeds from man's dependence upon men is evil.

The egotist is the absolute sense is not the man who sacrifices others. He is the man who stands above the need of using others in any manner. He does not function through them. He is not concerned with them in any primary matter. Not in his aim, not in his motive, not in his thinking, not in his desires, not in the source of his energy. He does not exist for any other man - and he asks no other man to exist for him. This is the only form of brotherhood and mutual respect possible between men.

Degrees of ability vary, but the basic principle remains the same: the degree of a man's independence, initiative and personal love for his work determines his talent as a worker and his worth as a man. Independence is the only gauge

of human virtue and value. What a man is and makes of himself; not what he has or hasn't done for others. There is no substitute for personal dignity. There is no standard of personal dignity except independence.

In all proper relationships there is no sacrifice of anyone to anyone. An architect needs clients, but he does not subordinate his work to their wishes. They need him, but they do not order a house just to give him a commission. Men exchange their work by free, mutual consent to mutual advantage when their personal interests agree and they both desire the exchange. If they do not desire it, they are not forced to deal with each other. They seek further. This is the only possible form of relationship between equals. Anything else is a relation of slave to master, or victim to executioner.

No work is ever done collectively, by a majority decision. Every creative job is achieved under the guidance of a single individual thought. An architect requires a great many men to erect his building. But he does not ask them to vote on his design. They work together by free agreement and each is free in his proper function. An architect uses steel, glass, concrete, produced by others. But the materials remain just so much steel, glass and concrete until he touches them. What he does with them is his individual product and his individual property. This is the only pattern for proper co-operation among men.

The first right on earth is the right of the ego. Man's first duty is to himself. His moral law is never to place his prime goal within the persons of others. His moral obligation is to do what he wishes, provided his wish does not depend primarily upon other men. This includes the whole sphere of his creative faculty, his thinking, his work. But it does not include the sphere of the gangster, the altruist and the dictator.

A man thinks and works alone. A man cannot rob, exploit or rule-alone. Robbery, exploitation and ruling presuppose victims. They imply dependence. They are the province of the second-hander.

Rulers of men are not egotists. They create nothing. They exist entirely through the persons of others. Their goal is in their subjects, in the activity of enslaving. They are as dependent as the beggar, the social worker and the bandit. The form of dependence does not matter.

But men were taught to regard second-handers - tyrants, emperors, dictators - as exponents of egotism. By this fraud they were made to destroy the ego, themselves and others. The purpose of the fraud was to destroy the creators. Or to harness them. Which is a synonym.

From the beginning of history, the two antagonists have stood face to face: the creator and the second-hander. When the first creator invented the wheel, the first second-hander responded. He invented altruism.

The creator - denied, opposed, persecuted, exploited - went on, moved forward and carried all humanity along on his energy. The second-hander contributed nothing to the process except the impediments. The contest has another name: the individual against the collective.

The 'common good' of a collective - a race, a class, a state - was the claim and justification of every tyranny ever established over men. Every major horror of history was committed in the name of an altruistic motive. Has any act of selfishness ever equaled the carnage perpetrated by disciples of altruism? Does the fault lie in men's hypocrisy or in the nature of the principle? The most dreadful butchers were the most sincere. They believed in the perfect society reached through the guillotine and the firing squad. Nobody questioned their right to murder since they were murdering for an altruistic purpose. It was accepted that man must be sacrificed for other men. Actors change, but the course of the tragedy remains the same. A humanitarian who starts with declarations of love for mankind and ends with a sea of blood. It goes on and will go on so long as men believe that an action is good if it is unselfish. That permits the altruist to act and forces his victims to bear it. The leaders of collectivist movements ask nothing

for themselves. But observe the results.

The only good which men can do to one another and the only statement of their proper relationship is - Hands off!

Now observe the results of a society built on the principle of individualism. This, our country. The noblest country in the history of men. The country of greatest achievement, greatest prosperity, greatest freedom. This country was not based on selfless service, sacrifice, renunciation or any precept of altruism. It was based on a man's right to the pursuit of happiness. His own happiness. Not anyone else's. A private, personal, selfish motive. Look at the results. Look into your own conscience.

It is an ancient conflict. Men have come close to the truth, but it was destroyed each time and one civilization fell after another. Civilization is the progress toward a society of privacy. The savage's whole existence is public, ruled by the laws of his tribe. Civilization is the process of setting man free from men.

Now, in our age, collectivism, the rule of the second-hander and second-rater, the ancient monster, has broken loose and is running amuck. It has brought men to a level of intellectual indecency never equaled on earth. It has reached a scale of horror without precedent. It has poisoned every mind. It has swallowed most of Europe. It is engulfing our country.

I am an architect. I know what is to come by the principle on which it is built. We are approaching a world in which I cannot permit myself to live.

Now you know why I dynamited Cortlandt.

I designed Cortlandt. I gave it to you. I destroyed it.

I destroyed it because I did not choose to let it exist. It was a double monster. In form and in implication. I had to blast both. The form was mutilated by two second-handers who assumed the right to improve upon that which they had not made and could not equal. They were permitted to do it by the general implication that the altruistic purpose of the building superseded all rights and that I had no claim to stand against it.

I agreed to design Cortlandt for the purpose of seeing it erected as I designed it and for no other reason. That was the price I set for my work. I was not paid.

I do not blame Peter Keating. He was helpless. He had a contract with his employers. It was ignored. He had a promise that the structure he offered would be built as designed. The promise was broken. The love of a man for the integrity of his work and his right to preserve it are now considered a vague intangible and an inessential. You have heard the prosecutor say that. Why was the building disfigured? For no reason. Such acts never have any reason, unless it's the vanity of some second-handers who feel they have a right to anyone's property, spiritual or material. Who permitted them to do it? No particular man among the dozens in authority. No one cared to permit it or to stop it. No one was responsible. No one can be held to account. Such is the nature of all collective action.

I did not receive the payment I asked. But the owners of Cortlandt got what they needed from me. They wanted a scheme devised to build a structure as cheaply as possible. They found no one else who could do it to their satisfaction. I could and did. They took the benefit of my work and made me contribute it as a gift. But I am not an altruist. I do not contribute gifts of this nature.

It is said that I have destroyed the home of the destitute. It is forgotten that but for me the destitute could not have had this particular home. Those who were concerned with the poor had to come to me, who have never been

concerned, in order to help the poor. It is believed that the poverty of the future tenants gave them the right to my work. That their need constituted a claim on my life. That it was my duty to contribute anything demanded of me. This is the second-hander's credo now swallowing the world.

I came here to say that I do not recognize anyone's right to one minute of my life. Nor to any part of my energy. Nor to any achievement of mine. No matter who makes the claim, how large their number or how great their need.

I wished to come here and say that I am a man who does not exist for others.

It had to be said. The world is perishing from an orgy of self-sacrificing.

I wished to come here and say that the integrity of a man's creative work is of greater importance than any charitable endeavor. Those of you who do not understand this are the men who're destroying the world.

I wished to come here and state my terms. I do not care to exist on any others.

I recognize no obligations toward men except one: to respect their freedom and to take no part in a slave society.

Men Going Their Own Way (MGTOW)

. · 30 January 2001 · Archived copy · Original

A measure of sadness washes over me when I reflect upon the changed meaning of MGTOW, which now seems to stand for the marriage strike and curtailing any influence a woman may have over a man's life. It's not that I disagree with men on the marriage strike (I myself am not married and have zero intention of ending my bachelor status) nor do I disagree that men ought to have their spidey-senses tingling at all times to limit the harm women can inflict in our gynocentric society. No, the sadness is over the lost meaning behind MGTOW, which was and still is the most beautiful "solution" to men's problems within our culture. The key to MGTOW's philosophy is in its simplicity, which can be evidenced in The Men Going Their Own Way Manifesto.

The goal is to instill masculinity in men, femininity in women, and work toward limited government!

By instilling masculinity in men, we make men self-reliant, proud, and independent.

By instilling femininity in women, we make them nurturing, supporting, and responsible.

By working for a limited government, we are working for freedom and justice.

Women having "other qualities" is not interesting to men because we don't need them! Femininity will be the price women pay for enjoying masculinity in men!

This is the aim of "Men Going Their Own Way".

By holding this point of view, we are helping other men and, more importantly, we are helping boys grow up to become men.

This goal is to take away everyone's "right" to vote on other people's affairs thus rendering it impossible for political organisms and ideologies to impose their personal will on everyone else. It is not about reinstalling patriarchy or revoking female voting rights or making socialism illegal. It might have this as a side effect - but not directly and not as a political ideology. Only the future will show what happens and by going our own way we are preparing men and boys for that future.

It really is pretty simple, isn't it?

It is not concerned with "ending gender roles" if it is about instilling masculinity in men and femininity in women. Just the opposite. This plays beautifully into the whole bio-mechanics and social-dynamics sphere that many refer to as "game," a term I hate, but a subject that is key to understanding the issues with any real clarity. As Pook tells us, women are attracted to masculine qualities, not feminine ones, just as the reverse is true of men being attracted to feminine qualities. In our culture, propaganda has been force-fed down boys throats almost since birth that for boys to emulate feminine qualities is "good" while their masculine qualities are "bad." This carries on further into relationships and marriage, where men have been brainwashed into believing that if they "embraced their feminine side" that it would make them more endearing to women, and thus be able to get along with them better.

Of course, this is the exact opposite of what actually works. If men embrace their masculinity and wear it proudly, their relationships with women will improve as well. The same goes the other way, that if women embrace their feminine strengths, rather than competing to see if she can be a better man than her husband, many other problems will begin to solve themselves. As many in the game community will attest to, it is not the masculine alpha male

that gets charged with domestic violence, but rather it is usually the SNAGS (Sensitive New Age Guys) who've embraced their feminine side and in doing so repulsed their woman to such a degree that she begins to hate him, and then starts leveling domestic violence charges against them as she enters into a destructive spiral, intent on destroying her family. Instilling masculinity in men and femininity in women may not be the solution to everything, but it is the lubrication which makes the solutions work better.

Working for limited government is, I believe, the ultimate solution. The less the government is involved in our personal lives, the more we will be forced to make our personal lives work for ourselves.

Think of two people, a man and a woman, alone out in the woods. They will soon come to depend upon each other willingly and along with willing dependence, so will come the effort to make the relationship itself work. A cabin will be built and they will both enter into the roles they are best suited for just out of necessity, as was always the case in the history of the world. If one betrays the other and leaves, they will both suffer. I firmly believe that if relationships are to work over the long run, a certain level of co-dependency will do more good than a gajillion psychologists giving more of their sage advice. The closer we can get to that idea of a man and a woman alone in the woods depending on each other for their given talents, the better off everyone's relationships will be.

MGTOW is not about raising money to fund lobby groups. Lobby groups exist to pressure the government to create more laws, and to force others to do that which they would not choose to do of their own accord. That is growing government, not limiting it.

I love watching Ron Paul in debates because of his simplicity. Whenever someone tries to challenge the guy, he stops and says, "Well, what would the Constitution say?" and then he goes with that, and his answer is pretty much bang-on every time. The same idea can be applied to the issues of relationships simply by asking, "Is there a way to do this with less government rather than more? And if so, is it simpler?" If the answer to those questions are yes then it is almost assuredly the better solution.

For example, much of the Men's Rights Movement (MRM) is focused on the plight of divorced fathers and the shrieks for shared-parenting are deafening. Shared-parenting though, is pretty much asking for the government courts to take 100% custody of the child and then dole out baby-sitting duties to the parents on this day and that day. If one parent loses a job and needs to move across the country to find employment, he will have to beg the court for permission to relinquish his duties to shared-parenting. Such a person has thus surrendered their right to move freely about the country. What if the two parents decide to follow vastly different religions? Well, the court will decide whether the child is to be Jewish or Muslim, not the parents.

Furthermore, when shared-parenting becomes the norm, a woman's only way to get on the current alimony/child-support gravy train will be to claim abuse as the reason for her getting sole custody, and the amount of men falsely accused of abuse will rise. While I don't have statistical evidence of this (yet), I have had a phone conversation about shared-parenting with someone involved in the movement a year or so ago, and he did admit to me that in places where shared-parenting was becoming the norm, false accusations of abuse are also rising. It only makes sense that if you offer financial incentives - windfalls, actually - for making false accusations, that false accusations will increase and men will pay the price. Whatever the government touches, it turns to shit, just like Midas - minus the gold.

So, is there an easier solution than shared-parenting?

Yup! There sure is! It is called marriage 1.0, or patriarchy. Although, it *doesn't* need to be *called* that in order for it to work. It could be called the "Tooth Fairy Surrogacy Contract" for all I care, so long as it resembles the characteristics of marriage 1.0. In other words, the children of a *marriage* (or a Tooth Fairy Surrogacy Contract)

are the property, or are under the custody, of the husband. No ifs, ands or buts. If the woman wants to leave, nobody will stop her, but the children stay with the husband. If women don't like that idea, then they are more than welcome to revel in their single-motherhood, and get knocked up by a thug at the local biker bar. In marriage 1.0, children of a marriage were the property of the husband, and children born out of wedlock were the property of the woman. No government mandated child-support, no nothing. Just basic, simple property/custody rights. Were they married? The kids are his. They weren't married, the kids are hers. The "owner" assumes all liability and expenses. End of story. No need for much of government at all except for a court to determine whether they were married or not, and thus deciding upon "property" or custody rights. (Hey, that's just how the Founding Fathers wanted things!).

And do we know that this minimal government system of child custody will work? Yup again! In fact, there are thousands of years of evidence for it right in our very own culture, up until around the 1860's when the divorce rate was less than 2%. (Custody laws changed in favour of women in the 1870's and by the 1920's, the divorce rate had sky-rocketed 700% to around 15% of marriages ending in divorce. It has only risen about 300% since then - think about that.) In this situation, both men and women have the ability to *meaningfully* have children, and also, it would do wonders to lower the divorce rates, as the discussion about who has presumed custody (what kind of "marriage" you want to have with princess) will reveal a lot to both parties before, not after. And if a man goes ahead and signs up for being a Kitchen Bitch in Marriage 2.0, I have little sympathy for him. He knew the risks, took them, and if he loses I will cry about as hard for him as for those who lost at the casino. They weren't robbed, just willfully stupid.

The best solution is always the one with the least amount of "government touch."

I'd like to discuss MGTOW more in the future, as well as touching upon how the "philosophy" of MGTOW is also the perfect solution to stopping the Marxist Dialectic. There is so much "good" about MGTOW that it is a shame that its meaning has changed and these other aspects have been forgotten.

In the meantime, here is the rest of the MGTOW Manifesto for you to read. I challenge you to find even the word marriage in there, let alone "marriage strike." I can find no fault with the philosophy in it. It truly embodies what I believe.

It is important for men to have a practical approach to implementing our strategies.

PRIME STRATEGIES FOR ACHIEVING OUR GOALS

We have 3 main strategies:

1. Instilling masculinity in men by:

- Demanding respect for men
- Serving as good male role models
- Living independent lives
- Fighting chivalry

2. Instilling femininity in women

- We will hold women equally accountable to men and ignore and shun those who refuse to take any responsibility for their own circumstances. Thus we induce women to take a complementary position with

men instead of a competitive position, as is now the case.

Feminine qualities we want from women:
- Nurturing
- Supportive
- Responsibility
- Respectfulness
- Honesty

3. Limited government

In order to be independent of society, and live within it, while at the same time work for limiting governmental influence upon our daily lives, men will:
- Go Their Own Way
- Support other men
- Legally reduce any taxpaying
- Truthfully act out any duties in accordance with their conscience
- Use any rights to the benefit of other men as well as themselves

It is those 3 strategies that come together in one.

MEN GOING THEIR OWN WAY
This is the logo:

Every man supporting this idea is welcome to use the logo in this or similar contexts.

What we do as activism or the way we behave personally are the main tactics.

- Use of a logo which symbolizes the strategy.
- Run one or many web-sites and fora that promotes this.
- Run one or more web-sites which tells the truth about feminism.
- Provide stickers, T-shirts, etc., with various statements such as "Chivalry is dead!".
- Writing articles supporting our product.
- Producing music promoting our product.
- Hold international events and local meetings.
- Establishing men's clubs.
- Boycotting certain products.

You will basically be alone doing this. There is no organization supporting you. You just go your own way

and do what you believe is right. You are never obligated beyond your own conscience. True masculinity is also about accepting the rights of other men and not letting them down for any short term personal benefits.

The men's movement does actually cover a much larger picture. By instilling masculinity in others, as well as yourself, you will actually be improving the lives of everyone, including women and children.

IF IT'S NOT RIGHT, GO YOUR OWN WAY!

Take care brother!

The MGTOW logos and the MGTOW Manifesto are public domain, explicitly designated so by their creators (the men of MGTOW) to be used by anyone for the purpose of promoting MGTOW. May 1, 2006

Index Next

MGTOW History and Philosophy

. · 1 February 2001 · Archived copy · Original

MGTOW Manifesto

.

Ghost Nation

.

Zenpriest #28 – Ethical Sociopaths

.

Zenpriest #56 – MGTOW's Trademark Copyright Philosophy

.

The History of MGTOW

.

Zenpriest #55 – Now Please Explain to Me, What the Hell Men Need a "Movement" For?

.

Zenpriest #58 – The MRM's Perpetual War With Itself

.

Zenpriest #60 - Why There Never Has Been a Coherent Men's Movement and Why There Never Will Be

.

A Leading Philosophy Rather Than A Leader

.

MGTOW is also Men Going The Right Way

.

MGTOW as a Form of "Cultural Game"

.

Ghost Nation

. · 2 February 2001 · Archived copy · Original

.

There is a generation of men fading from view. This is a global phenomenon but it is particularly noticeable (if this is not a contradiction in terms) in the feminist countries.

Men, who have been pushed to the margins in so many ways have simply elected to disappear. I would imagine that as many as one million men have disappeared either partially or completely from view in the United Kingdom alone- meaning one in twenty or so of the native born male population. For the most part this disappearance has occurred without anyone noticing particularly because it has consisted of a gradual fading from view rather than a dramatic exodus from the mainstream.

I call these men the Ghost Nation and would like to introduce the term to common use. How does one become a citizen of the ghost nation? It occurs in many ways, very few of them are pleasant.

First of all one may become a member of the ghost nation by virtue of coming from a broken home. They have never seen either parent work and are told daily that men and boys are useless. As a result they never get the habit of work and drift around the edges of crime. Women coming from the same background have an option that is not available to men and this is to become pregnant. This ensures the basics of life and gives purpose.

Young men have no anchor whatever, other than the gangs they may belong to and other groups of men they may hate. He is how young men come to religious fundamentalism, political extremism and violence- a life has to be about something and these men's lives are about nothing at all.

These men are among the most dangerous beings upon the face of the earth. These are the men who make revolutions, a barbarian army within the city walls. They may create or destroy and have no place in the existing order of things and no loyalty to it.

I call these men the ghost army simply because they have no dealings with wider society and are thus invisible to it. They rarely vote and own nothing. At present their anger is purely destructive and tribal in nature- directed against other races and other subcultures such as followers of other music.

Older men are joining the ghost nation more consciously and for other reasons. We (for this is my group) have clearer moral guidelines and have rejected crime and parasitism. Nevertheless we have no place in the existing order of things. Some of us have lost everything through divorce and realised that marrying in the feminist world is simple slavery. We know that no matter how honest we may be the courts and legal system will punish every good deed.

Therefore we work at things that interest us. We become harder to control because we are no longer willing to work inhuman hours for a woman's approval.

Gradually we extricate ourselves from everything we have been brainwashed to believe is normal. This includes consumer credit, expensive chemical sludge pretending to be food and that strange 19th century invention, the career.

Gradually we eliminate, point by point everything that ties us to the feminist state. This takes both economic and emotional form. Rather than let the media form our opinions for us because we are too tired to do anything else, we form our views actively on the internet.

Gradually, gradually we fade from view. We cannot even talk to people who are still within the system because most of them can only talk about their work.

The third group is those who are nearing retirement. They know they will be rich almost anywhere other than the feminist nations and therefore become free at the moment they are no longer needed by feminist society.

Have you seen yourself in these three groups?

Are you a citizen of the ghost nation?

MGTOW Manifesto

. · 3 February 2001 · Archived copy · Original

MEN GOING THEIR OWN WAY (MGTOW)

The goal is to instill masculinity in men, femininity in women, and work toward limited government!

By instilling masculinity in men, we make men self-reliant, proud, and independent.

By instilling femininity in women, we make them nurturing, supporting, and responsible.

By working for a limited government, we are working for freedom and justice.

Women having "other qualities" is not interesting to men because we don't need them! Femininity will be the price women pay for enjoying masculinity in men!

This is the aim of "Men Going Their Own Way".

By holding this point of view, we are helping other men and, more importantly, we are helping boys grow up to become men.

This goal is to take away everyone's "right" to vote on other people's affairs thus rendering it impossible for political organisms and ideologies to impose their personal will on everyone else. It is not about reinstalling patriarchy or revoking female voting rights or making socialism illegal. It might have this as a side effect - but not directly and not as a political ideology. Only the future will show what happens and by going our own way we are preparing men and boys for that future.

It is important for men to have a practical approach to implementing our strategies.

PRIME STRATEGIES FOR ACHIEVING OUR GOALS

We have 3 main strategies:

1. Instilling masculinity in men by:

- Demanding respect for men
- Serving as good male role models
- Living independent lives
- Fighting chivalry

2. Instilling femininity in women

- We will hold women equally accountable to men and ignore and shun those who refuse to take any responsibility for their own circumstances. Thus we induce women to take a complementary position with men instead of a competitive position, as is now the case.

Feminine qualities we want from women:
- Nurturing

- Supportive
- Responsibility
- Respectfulness
- Honesty

3. Limited government

In order to be independent of society, and live within it, while at the same time work for limiting governmental influence upon our daily lives, men will:
- Go Their Own Way
- Support other men
- Legally reduce any taxpaying
- Truthfully act out any duties in accordance with their conscience
- Use any rights to the benefit of other men as well as themselves

It is those 3 strategies that come together in one.

MEN GOING THEIR OWN WAY

This is the logo:
.

.
Every man supporting this idea is welcome to use the logo in this or similar contexts.

What we do as activism or the way we behave personally are the main tactics.

- Use of a logo which symbolizes the strategy.
- Run one or many web-sites and fora that promotes this.
- Run one or more web-sites which tells the truth about feminism.
- Provide stickers, T-shirts, etc., with various statements such as "Chivalry is dead!".
- Writing articles supporting our product.
- Producing music promoting our product.
- Hold international events and local meetings.
- Establishing men's clubs.
- Boycotting certain products.

You will basically be alone doing this. There is no organization supporting you. You just go your own way and do what you believe is right. You are never obligated beyond your own conscience. True masculinity is also about

accepting the rights of other men and not letting them down for any short term personal benefits.

The men's movement does actually cover a much larger picture. By instilling masculinity in others, as well as yourself, you will actually be improving the lives of everyone, including women and children.

IF IT'S NOT RIGHT, GO YOUR OWN WAY!

Take care brother!

The MGTOW logos and the MGTOW Manifesto are public domain, explicitly designated so by their creators (the men of MGTOW) to be used by anyone for the purpose of promoting MGTOW. May 1, 2006

The Salesman and the Pick-Up Artist

. · 26 February 2001 · Archived copy · Original

(This post comes from No Ma'am Capital)

If there ever were two unsavory characters our society likes to portray as dishonest scumbags, it has to be the used-car salesman and his social contemporary, the pick-up artist (PUA). The relationship deepens when I see high profile PUA bloggers sometime make the connection between "the game" and sales as well - often falsely concluding that sales is now being influenced by "game" rather than sales influencing the PUA's "game."

Before I begin, I have a dirty secret to confess. I sold cars for eleven years. I was not a "used" car salesman, but worked at a new car dealership which, of course, also involved selling used trade-ins... so, lol, I can't claim to never have been a "used" car salesman either. But, I did this job for a long time and learned an awful lot about human nature along the way. I also see that both salesmen and PUA's are often thought of as unsavory and manipulative, but that at the end of the day, what the successful salesmen and PUA's are giving to their "customers" is exactly what they wanted.

The best salesmen are the ones who have properly "sold" their customers on the product. This was clearly evidenced to me over and over again, as the customers who paid *higher* prices would regularly report significantly better customer satisfaction with their experience than customers who paid a lower price and arguably got a better deal. The difference was that the first customer *believed* the cost of the car matched or exceeded his perceptions of "value" while the second was *not* convinced he was getting good value for his dollar. The *actual* dollar amount was not the deciding factor in whether this was a good deal or not - the subjective *perception* of whether value was met or not was the deciding factor. In other words, it was the salesman's ability to create value and "sell" the customer that decided their satisfaction more than any other factor. This is not much different than in the "game-o-sphere" where it is often acknowledged that women who have been properly seduced (and believe they are having sex with a high value man) are the least likely ones to become abusive, or to falsely claim abuse, or whatever other host of things women try to do to make men miserable. The "gamed" woman is a happy woman in the same way that a "sold" customer is happy customer who *believes* he got great value, regardless of the actual price. It is his *perception* of value met that creates satisfaction.

By the way, when I walk into a car dealership today, I ask for the *top* salesman and only deal with him. It is far more satisfying to simply start off with the guy who makes the most customers happy. Most customers have already decided to buy a car when they come in and are now looking for the *right* salesman - they aren't really being "sold" anything, which is not much different than women in the dating game. So, your experience will most likely be best with the top salesman, just like women are far more likely to feel satisfied by sleeping with a man who properly seduced them, but bitter and resentful towards a man who begs, pleads and cajoles them into bed while at the same time reducing his value in her eyes.

The similarities between sales and game are so numerous that it is obvious that they are both doing the same thing, merely with a different product. The product of a PUA is "selling himself" as a sexualized male and recognizing what values he has to portray about himself to the consumer (women).

An example of this is what PUA's called "congruence." Basically, it is about subtly taking charge of the situation and "leading" the customer to the conclusion you both wanted, rather than being led around by a customer's endless psychological protests. Most often this is done simply by which words you choose to use, which limit the negative responses available while making it very easy to be positive.

The first time I heard of this was in the early 1990's, while reading a sales book written in the 1950's or 60's. The anecdote used was of the greatest "make-out artist" the author had ever seen who used the principle of congruence to pick up girls in the bar. As the story loosely went, this fellow would go to a bar or a club and simply start giving orders to the women he met. His questions were carefully designed to eliminate (or make-it-difficult to give) yes or no answers while making it very easy to follow the guy's lead. He would walk up to a woman and instead of asking "Can I buy you a drink?" (which leads reflexively to a "yes" or a "no" answer - more often no than yes), he would say, "What are you drinking?" After she answered he would *state* to her, "Wait here, I'll be right back." Off he would go to get a drink and if she was still there when he returned, he just kept stating orders to her and *assumed* that she wanted to progress further. Instead of *asking* "Would you like to come sit with me at my table?" he would simply state, "Come sit with me at my table," and walk over to his table without waiting for a response. In 90% of cases, she will follow. If she objects, so be it - if you can overcome her objection, do it, - if not, you don't need to waste your time either. But no matter if she does object because a *significantly* higher amount of women won't object and you will double, if not triple or quadruple the amount of women you progress from initial meeting to landing her at your table for furthering your goal of getting together with her. (It's harder to get to home plate from first base than from second or third, right? One step at a time, trooper!) This guy would simply tell her, in a nice way, to do what he wanted, and the more she complied the more she started following his lead. At the end of the night, after regaling her with stories of his stamp collection, he would ask a simple question he knew the answer to such as, "Did you bring a jacket?" and when she answered "Yes," he would respond with an order, "Go get it and meet me at the front door. I'll take you home to see my stamps and..." (and he rounds second base on his way to third!)

It works in PUA game and in the selling game.

As a car salesman, you want to have the customer take a test-drive. In fact, it is ridiculous to waste any time discussing "prices" on various cars beyond a range of MSRP's until the customer has decided on a specific car - so that the *exact* costs and "deals" can be evaluated. Until the customer has actually decided that, "Yes, that exact model *there* is the one I want," there really isn't much point in going further on prices. And, if a customer does not drive the $30,000 car they are supposedly serious about, there is no way you ought take them seriously. However, if you as a salesman walk out there and meet the customer, show it to them, and spend time with them - and then *ask* them, "Would'ya liket'a take a test drive?" the majority of people will *reflexively* say no and come up with some excuse or objection, just like a woman shit-testing. It's human nature, especially when nervous. However, if you realized 95% of your sales only come from people who have actually driven the car first, you will begin to understand the importance of getting that test drive out of the way before prices are discussed beyond various ranges.

When I changed my routine and the way words were said, the amount of my test drives drastically increased, and so did my subsequent sales. Instead of asking, "Would you like to take test drive?" after I finished my initial demonstration of a vehicle, I started simply stating to the customers, "Wait here. I'll be right back." and I would walk inside and get a demonstration plate, return to the car and put it on. I opened the door for them and let them into the passenger seat while I went around to the other side and began our demonstration drive - I assumed they wanted to... why wouldn't I? The amount of people who objected to this were minimal - in the 5% range - and my sales went dramatically higher as I moved far more people further along in the buying cycle than I did before. The words I chose had a *significant* impact on the people I interacted with and once I realized that, it was pretty simple to choose the words that furthered both theirs and my goal of having them drive my car home. This does not mean slick routines, though. It merely means choosing words and actions that lead to success rather than failure - in the same way that PUA's often talk about "anti-game" and how guys would do dramatically better with girls if they just *stopped* doing certain things - something which certainly is not "manipulative" at all.

I see hundreds of examples like this between salesmanship and the game of romance & seduction. I have taken an

extensive number of sales courses over the years and even though I haven't been involved in that industry for well over a decade now, I still remember many of the principles quite clearly and the similarities are too close to ignore. If you are one of those who finds "game" to be fundamentally dishonest and manipulative, I can understand that. It comes across that way, and just like in car sales the people who stand out are the bad ones who don't give good value to their customers. But, many PUA techniques are based in solid sales-tested techniques which were developed over decades, if not centuries. There are good salesmen and bad salesmen, just as there are good men who are seductive and bad men who are seductive. The basic underlying principles that makes both game and sales successful are almost identical, and they are based upon real human psychological traits and emotional responses that are not widely recognized by the average lay-person who doesn't take the time to study them.

There are more similarities between sales and "the game" than I can list in one post, but I think this will be a theme I return to from time to time. The reason I believe so much in the general principles of game is mostly because I so strongly believe in salesmanship principles, which have been proven to me through experience as the correct ones that underlie the "surface issues" which falsely lead most people astray

---

Related:

Bonecrcker #64 - "On Players"

Zenpriest #33 - Salesmanship 101

Zenpriest #1 - Women Raised Without Fathers

. · 1 January 2002 · Archived copy · Original

There is a longitudinal study which started back before 1920 which found at all ages women who grew up without a father had significantly more relationship and emotional problems than women who had a father. Such girls miss out on the primary and prototype NON-sexual relationship with a man. All the lies and hysteria about fathers "abusing" daughters to the contrary, most men consider their own daughters the ultimate of "off-limits" and also try to protect them from destructive relationships with other men ("NO! You are not going to marry the bongo player, nor are you going out of the house with your butt-crack showing!!")

Without this example of how to relate to men non-sexually, and compounded by the fact that she sees her primary role model - dear old "mom" - relating to a series of men purely and only in a sexual manner, these girls simply do not develop ordinary social skills and clobber every male "nail" with their hammer of seductiveness. Their approach to men is fundamentally dishonest and manipulative, and they draw in predatory men who are equally dishonest and manipulative, then turn around and blast ALL men for their poor choices.

As the years go by, the cumulative failures of their dishonest strategies lead them to become bitter and hate-filled toward the entire male sex. No self-respecting man would put up with their gauntlets of emotional barbed-wire in order to get close to them, so they end up locking themselves into prisons of their own creation.

Then, they get jobs as "wimmins's studdees" professors.

The problem I see is that thousands of years of oral tradition of teaching kids how to live within a family and get along, have been virtually completely destroyed in a couple of generations. As we all well know, it is easier for a camel to pass through the eye of a needle than to get a woman to acknowledge the responsibility of her own actions and choices in the results she gets - so most of these women are going to go to their graves without ever wising up.

Divorce seems to function like an infectious disease - once the parents get it, they pass it along to generation after generation of children. The divorce rate among children of divorce is much higher than the average for the population, which points to the obvious fact that for children of intact families it is much lower.

> Here are some of the observed effects of removing a father to the position of a visitor in a child`s life. "Based on our clinical experience with a number of latency aged and adolescent girls whose parents divorced during their oedipal years, we postulate that particular coping patterns emerge in response to the absence of the father, which may complicate the consolidation of positive feminine identification in many female children, and is observable during the latency years. We illustrate both the existence of these phenomena and

implications for treatment:
1. intensified separation anxiety
2. denial and avoidance of feelings associated with loss of father
3. identification with the lost object
4. object hunger for males."
"In an earlier study by Kalter and Rembar at [Children's Psychiatric Hospital, University of Michigan], a sample of 144 child and adolesce atients, whose parents had divorced, presented [for evaluation and treatment] with three most commonly occurring problems:
63% Subjective psychological problem (defined as anxiety, sadness, pronounced moodiness, phobias, and depression)
56% Poor grades or grades substantially below ability and/or recent past performance
43% Aggression toward parents Important features of the subgroup of 32 latency aged girls were in the same order:
69% indicating subjective psychological distress 47% academic problems 41% aggression toward pa ts.
Clinical Observations on Interferences of Early Father Absence in the Achievement of Femininity by R. Lohr, C. g, A. Mendell and B. Riemer, Clinical Social Work Journal, V. 17, #4, Winter, 1989
Excerpt from Baskerville, S. Taken into Custody: The War Against Fatherhood, Marriage, and the Family. Nashville: Cumberland House Publishing, 2007

"Virtually every major social pathology of our time: violent crime, drug and alcohol abuse, truancy and scholastic failure, unwed pregnancy, suicide and other psychological disorders – all these correlate more strongly to fatherlessness than to any other single factor.[1] According to the National Fatherhood Initiative, "Children who live absent their biological fathers are, on average, at least two to three times more likely to be poor, to use drugs, to experience educational, health, emotional, and behavioral problems, to be victims of child abuse, and to engage in criminal behavior than those who live with their married, biological (or adoptive) parents."[2] The overwhelming majority of prisoners, juvenile detention inmates, high school dropouts, pregnant teenagers, adolescent murderers, and rapists all come from fatherless homes. Children from affluent but separated families are much more likely to get into trouble than children from poor but intact ones, and white children from separated families are at higher risk than black children in intact families. The connection between single parent households and crime erases the relationship between race and crime and between low income and crime[3]."

[1] Attempts to attribute these behaviors to poverty or racial discrimination have been refuted by studies that control for these variables. See Urie Bronfenbrenner, "Discovering What Families Do," in David Blankenhorn, et al. (eds.), Rebuilding the Nest: A New Commitment to the American Family (Milwaukee: Family Service America, 1990), p. 34; Ronald Angel and Jacqueline Angel, Painful Inheritance: Health and the New Generation of Fatherless Children (Madison: University of Wisconsin Press, 1993), p. 188. Even left-wing scholars concur: Norman Dennis and George Erdos, Families Without Fatherhood (London: Civitas, 2000).

[2] Horn and Sylvester, Father Facts, p. 15.

[3] Elaine Ciulla Kamarck and William Galston, Putting Children First (Washington: Progressive Policy Institute, 1990), p. 14.

Wisdom of Zenpriest Index Next

Zenpriest # 2 - You Can't Change a Pickle Back Into a Cucumber

. · 2 January 2002 · Archived copy · Original

This is a very important principle which is invariably dis-understood when I try to explain it. Not misunderstood, but disunderstood - as in the same difference between misinformation and disinformation. Feminism and women have been proceeding on the unshakable belief that men are still going to want and care about them no matter how awful they get. Then, when a man reaches a state of complete indifference, they insist that it is temporary and is only because he is angry and that he will get over it.

It is more like a state of emotional numbness akin to what happens physically with scar tissue. Scar tissue has little if any feeling to it. It is simply the body's repair material doesn't replace the original tissue's full function - it is nothing but patch. After years of women having such fun ripping into my guts, there is nothing left but emotional scar tissue.

Or, using another body analogy - if a guy steps on a land mine and gets his leg blown off, it never grows back. The deep, overwhelming, all-consuming love that a young man is capable of feeling for a woman is only possible from a state of innocence and the ability to trust absolutely. Once a man has had that love used one too many times to exploit him and f**k him over, he loses his ability to trust in it. Use something as a weapon against a man too many times, and he will find a way to disarm you.

I think women have #$%#@# up something beautiful and wonderful, and it is very sad that they don't think so - but they obviously don't. Once men have turned against them, it will take an entire new generation of innocents for men's ability to love women to be reborn. You can't change a pickle back into a cucumber, and men my age have become so pickled in women's hatred that our revenge will be to watch them grow old and die alone.

Previous Wisdom of Zenpriest Index Next

Zenpriest #3 - Repressing Sexuality

. · 3 January 2002 · Archived copy · Original

There is a huge wide gap between loudly and publicly proclaiming something - like the Vagina Monologues with the shouts of "CUNTCUNTCUNTCUNTCUNTCUNTCUNTCUNTCUNTCUNTCUNTCUNT" and the mortification and shaming of young men because they feel sexual desire and think "impure thoughts." During one year in the late 1800s, there were more patents issued for anti-masturbatory devices than for any other type.

My overall theory is that many if not most of the worst truly foul excesses of human behavior are due to extreme measures of sexual repression. The mating instinct is part of life - and life is persistent enough that sexual desire is going to persist no matter what is done to try to stamp it out.

The fossil record indicates that at the dawn of Homo Sapiens, the average life span was about 8 years and about 80% of the population died before reaching reproductive maturity. This means that 20% of females had to do the job of reproducing for the entire species - which they did by spending most of their life spans after reproductive maturity either pregnant or nursing. That level of sex urge is built into our genetics and a few decades of modern medicine have done nothing to change that.

With the advent of death control - first through the stabilization of the food supply via agriculture a few thousand years ago and next through modern medicine, birth control became inevitable in order to keep humans from running into the yeast problem and being poisoned by their own excrement. (Rhetorical - the problem is both waste and shortage of food)

The first means of birth control was obviously abstinence from sexual intercourse, which also served the purpose of the ruling elites of giving them a tool to use to control average men by controlling their access to female sexuality. What was the reward offered to the 19 male hijackers on 9/11? Not just one, nor even one dozen, but 72, six dozen, virgins.

Since reproduction is the only real meaning of "life" any deal up to death in exchange for it is acceptable to our genes, and those who controlled the hijackers even found a way to get around that.

It takes a lot of effort to control access to women's sexuality via supervision and outside controls, so the next step was to make women so neurotic and #$%#@# up about sex that they would hate it. And, since the consequences of unprotected sex with a man who isn't bound in some way to stick around and support her fell disproportionately on the female, that played right into it as well.

Anthropologist Marvin Harris has an interesting theory that only religious shaming is a powerful enough force to prevent people from engaging in some kinds of hedonistic and self-gratifying behaviors - like eating pork in desert climates and unrestrained sexual activity. Thus, shaming people into neurotic craziness about their sexual desires is the original form of birth control.

I believe that overcoming sexual shaming is key to men regaining their own power. The sex drive is as natural as breathing and as much a part of life as eating. As long as a man carries around shame for his desires, he is easy prey to women who can use that shame to play the game that they have done him a huge favor by sleeping with him - as illustrated by the phrase "getting lucky."

Obnoxious women like spitfire who come in here flaunting their sexuality - whether it be by bragging about the size of her tits, or how great her sex life with her husband is - are playing the DeBeers game - keeping demand up by

advertising at the same time "supply" is kept artificially low.

I don't think that men need to brag about jerking off, but neither do I believe they need to be ashamed of it and feel like they are somehow less "manly" because they do. Eating grub worms may be a poor second to eating sirloin steak, but if you are hungry enough you do what you gotta do. And, that is what sex is - a hunger.

As part of the original sexual revolution, I would not call a woman a "slut" simply because she owns her own sexuality and chooses who she is going to share it with and doesn't play $%#@$#%@ faux-virginal games with it. However, I would also have no problem at all calling a woman a "whore" who uses her sexuality purely for the purposes of extracting something from men - whether it be money or attention.

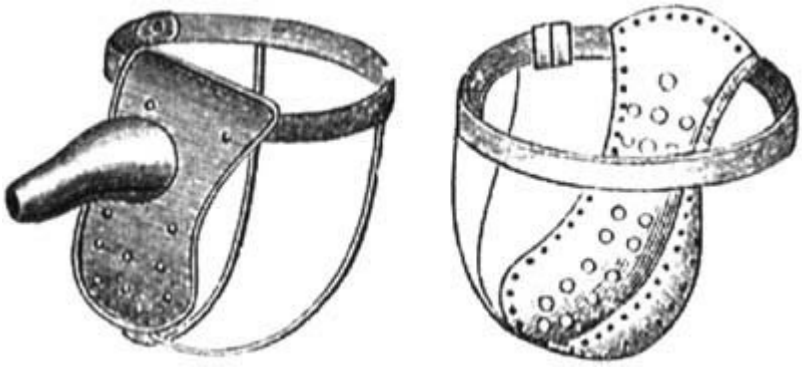
My preference is for honest relationships conducted with integrity, and beyond that I do not have many strong feelings about how people "should" behave. But, the guys who are indirectly bragging about how big their dicks are by way of bragging about how many women they have lied into bed - bore the $#$% out of me and disgust me.

.

19th Century Anti-Masturbation Devices

"Masturbation or what was termed the "solitary vice" or "onanism" emerged as a veritable epidemic, especially amongst children. This forms the core around which the modern child becomes engulfed in what might termed the sexualisation of modern society. A medical and moral campaign was waged around the sexuality of children. Parents, educators, doctors were all alerted to hunt out any traces of child sexuality through a myriad of surveillance techniques and upon discovery subject to a seemingly inexhaustible array of corrective measures. One nineteenth century doctor invented a device which administered electric shocks to a sleeping boy's penis upon erection.

.



.

The insane, pale, quivering masturbator along with the lascivious barren prostitute emerge as creatures spreading contagion and weakening the modern social body. The masturbator and the prostitute both disrupted the boundaries surrounding the emergent bourgeois family. Prostitution because it directed sexuality outside the family to non-reproductive ends and masturbation because it turned sexuality inwards to the core of the family - the child and solitary adult. Sexuality in general becomes dominated by men's fear concerning women's sexuality, expressed as a threat to public rational masculinity."

.

.

Medicalized circumcision began during the 1800's to prevent masturbation, which was believed to cause disease.

.

.

Q: Why do you think male circumcision exists?
A: To reduce male libido, or as Rambam (the most famous Jewish Rabbi) wrote:

.

"Similarly with regard to circumcision, one of the reasons for it is, in my opinion, the wish to bring about a decrease in sexual intercourse and a weakening of the organ in question, so that this activity be diminished and the organ be in as quiet a state as possible.

.

It has been thought that circumcision perfects what is defective congenitally. This gave the possibility to everyone to raise an objection and to say: How can natural things be defective so that they need to be perfected from outside, all the more because we know how useful the foreskin is for that member?

.

In fact this commandment has not been prescribed with a view to perfecting what is defective congenitally, but to perfecting what is defective morally.

.

The bodily pain caused to that member is the real purpose of circumcision. None of the activities necessary for the preservation of the individual is harmed thereby, nor is procreation rendered impossible, but violent concupiscence and lust that goes beyond what is needed are diminished.

.

The fact that circumcision weakens the faculty of sexual excitement and sometimes perhaps diminishes the pleasure is indubitable.

.

For if at birth this member has been made to bleed and has had its covering taken away from it, it must indubitably be weakened. The Sages, may their memory be blessed, have explicitly stated: It is hard for a woman with whom an uncircumcised man has had sexual intercourse to separate from him. In my opinion this is the strongest of the reasons for circumcision."

.

.

"Dr. John Gordon, a professor of English at Connecticut College, says that in the 1800s anti-male novels and anti-male tracts - thousands of them - "were part of a campaign to represent men as barbarians whose urges had to be leashed in by the forces of decency - meaning women - if civilization were to survive." -- Jack Kammer, If Men Have All The Power, How Come Women Make The Rules? p30

"Pre-Nineteenth century Western culture assumed that women, not men, were the insatiable sexual aggressors, with men as vulnerable creatures in need of protection." -- Historian Peter N. Stearns in his 1990 book *Be a Man: Males in Modern Society*

.

Re: Women viewed as insatiable sexual aggressors:
Women and Lechery -- from *The Lamentations of Matheolus*, 1295

.

.

Further Reading:

.

EOTM: Sexual Psychology – Part 2 – Puberty to 40

.

.

Previous Zenpriest Index Next

.

Zenpriest #4 - The Two Faces of Masculinity

. · 4 January 2002 · Archived copy · Original

Masculinity, like every other force and characteristic in the world, has two sides - a dark side to that force and a light side. What I "hear" [people] talking about is defending the honor of masculinity, particularly the positive side of it.

We've all heard about the heroics of the firefighters and police on 9/11. That's the heroic side of masculinity. The guy who listens to his wife nag and berate and wear him down day after day and doesn't black both her eyes is also being "heroic", simply because he doen't knock the $#$% out of her. And, when the day used to come that he fought back and did knock the $#$% out of her and let her know where the limits were - that was being masculine too.

Marc LePine and the boys at Columbine HS were acting in a masculine manner - they were fighting back against a culture out to destroy them in any way they knew how. They were POWs in the gender war, brainwashed and tortured. They didn't cave in - they attacked back.

There is an aspect of masculinity that I can best summarize as: "Hit me in the face, I will break your nose. Hit me in the chest, I will break your ribs. Leave me alone, and we can live in peace."

Women really do need to start standing up for masculinity - not because men need them to defend it, but because the relentless attacks on it are only going to destroy the heroic side of it and push all its energy and power into the dark side.

You may remember Alicia's statement on SYG about how she got groped one night by a drunk in a bar and bunch of guys came to her rescue. She tossed a bit of lip service at the guys "Hey, keep on rescuing us, we really do appreciate it, even if we say we don't." My response to her was "too little, too late."

You're right, christianj, that force of masculinity can never be stamped out because it is born again in every new generation of boys. But in order for it to be the positive force you describe, it must be channeled, shaped, guided,

by older men. We know how to bring a boy's masculinity out as a positive force, not try to beat it down and suppress it until it explodes in a destructive outburst. I have no doubt that Gary Ridgeway was raised by either a single mom or an overbearing mother in the presence of a weak father. Two dozen corpses of pretty young females later - the rage he still feels at the attacks on the core of his being is a danger to all women.

It would have been "nice" if women had had the sense to call off their attacks on us before men started to turn against them, and to really step up to the defense of men and masculinity - but they didn't, and you are seeing the price that their daughters and granddaughters are going to pay for that &%^&*&^% in the attitudes of young men here. Some guys here still like women a little bit, and are willing to try to love them. As NK put it, he loves the hell out of women, but he doesn't like them.

A whole 'nother group here no longer either loves or likes women, and are not even willing to f**k them. What they are doing is taking their masculinity away from those who would destroy it and them, and away from those who stood idly by and let the femin$%#@!# try.

.

.

"In their book *Raising Cain*, psychologists Dan Klindon and Michael Thompson point out that the Bible story of Cain and Abel is about a man who kills his sibling because he feels his parents love, respect, and appreciate his sibling more than they do him.

If females can be thought of as males' siblings, males have a lot of reason to feel like Cain these days. And that's not good for anyone." – Jack Kammer in If Men Have All The Power How Come Women Make The Rules? p89

.

Previous Zenpriest Index Next

Zenpriest #5 - Addicted to Attention

. · 5 January 2002 · Archived copy · Original

At some point, previously purposeful behavior which gained a reward simply becomes habit. Take for example the phenomenon of obesity. Eating is purposeful behavior. Because we have to do it in order to survive, there are both physical and psychological rewards. Even in the case where there is no real physical need, the purely sensual and psychological rewards are still there, thus people continue to engage in that behavior even there is no physical need.

It appears to me that there is assumption embedded in your question that once "empty attention got old" that women would cease seeking it. But the realities and mechanics of human behavior in a host of other examples don't work that way. People continue to engage in all sorts of behaviors long after the reward which initially resulted from that behavior ceases to exist.

Probably the simplest example of this is addiction. At first, drugs like heroin and cocaine produce an intense rush of euphoria. But very quickly the body begins to habituate and requires increasing dosages to produce decreasing effects. Over time, the baseline physical/emotional condition changes so that instead of beginning from a state of "normal" and being moved to a state of euphoria, the lack of the drug produces withdrawal symptoms which are uncomfortable and fit perfectly within the operational definition of "pain". Thus, the drug becomes necessary to avoid that "pain."

I really should draw a diagram to illustrate this (I think much more visually than verbally) but let me try to describe it in graphical terms. Imagine an ordinary XY graph with the Y axis representing emotional state. And, let's simply define zero on the Y axis as the normal emotional state of most human beings most of the time - neither euphoric nor painful. (this point will become very significant in a moment).

Starting at zero, a person takes a euphoriant and is moved to a +5. When the drug wears off, the state returns to 0. They do it again, and the process of habituation starts. There is no way to objectively quantify or measure emotional states, so every person judges their own emotional status by comparison to their other emotional experiences. They don't measure their emotional state against an objective yardstick, but compare it to how they felt before. At the pre-conscious level, the mind is saying "Wow, a little while ago I felt GREAT, but I don't feel nearly so good now." Thus, even though an outside observer would say that they are back at zero, their subjective experience puts them at -.1. Each iteration of that cycle moves their perception of their state further below their previous baseline: -.2, -.3, -.4, and so on.

Eventually they reach the condition where the non-drug state instead of being zero on the scale has reached -5. A jolt of the drug still produces the same movement of +5 on the emotional scale, but due to their progressively depressing baseline the subjective result is that they now take the drug to reach the state of zero.

So, it might be more accurate to replace the term "attention whores" that is used here with "attention addicts." Women literally are attention addicts, because without it they cannot feel normal and feel a state of emotional deficit. Thus, like any addict as soon as they get their last fix they go start looking for their next one.

The differences between men and women are due to their different baselines. From the male baseline, the state that women live in looks like a +5, so we can't understand what the hell they are bitching about. From the female baseline, the state that males live in feels like a -5 and is painful as hell to them.

The creation of this difference in baselines begins at birth. There are numerous studies out there which show that baby girls get picked up and comforted when they are crying much more quickly than boy babies. The toughening

of males begins the moment they leave the womb.

If you can for a moment imagine and crawl into the consciousness of a neonate, they are learning about the world and that learning shapes their developing nervous systems. It literally occurs at the level of developing neural connections and powerfully shapes the neural structures which develop.

The moment babies start to cry they are developing internal benchmarks for "crying work I have to do in order to get my needs met." Picking arbitrary numbers simply to illustrate the principle, let's say that the girl infant gets picked up and comforted after one minute of crying work while the boy infant has to cry for a full five minutes in order to get his needs attended to.

Thus, if a baby of each sex starts to cry at the same time, after one minute the girl will get her reward while the boy still has 4 more minutes of crying work to do until he gets his needs met.

You are sharp enough that I probably don't need to use a cluebat to point out the obvious parallels between this scenario and what happens in the adult workplace.

Now, let's look very closely at the infants at the one minute mark. The girl baby is thinking "HEY! I've done my my work, WHERE'S MY REWARD?!?!?" while the boy baby knows he is just getting warmed up and has 4 more minutes of crying work to do before he gets HIS needs met. At the 2 minute mark, the infantile female is starting to get seriously pissed, while the little boy is just hitting his stride. She has already had to do twice as much crying work to get her reward as she is used to having to do, while he has only done 40%. By the 3 minute mark, the infantile female is approaching a state of rage - "HEY! THERE'S A GODDAMNED 'GLASS CRYING CEILING' IN HERE SOMEWHERE!", while the boy baby now has his eyes on the prize and knows he is in the home stretch. At 4 minutes, the infantile female is beginning to lose hope - "$#$%, I'm never going to get what I want!" - and actually begins to give up and develop a sense of helplessness. Many of them simply quit before they reach the male benchmark, and thus never end up with the reward that a male who is used to that benchmark achieves.

Again, do I even need to point out the parallels between this and "wimmins's STILL only make 75 cents for every $1 a man makes"?

Males are conditioned from birth on wards to expect fewer rewards, and to expect to have to work harder for the ones they do get, than females. The lives of most males are so far outside of the female experience that most females cannot even imagine it.

Now, the reason's for biomech's observation that younger and older women get it, while women in between do not, is that neural development continues up until about age 21. There are reasons why this particular age shows up throughout history as the point at which people have been allowed to take on adult responsibilities and privileges.

Prior to that, neural structures - which literally determine the way we think - are still flexible and new information can lead to new perspectives. Once these are fixed, however, it takes years of failure of one's developed paradigm in order to force the person to acknowledge its failure.

When this whole eek-wallet-ee nonsense started, a lot of guys signed on because it sounded great to them that they would be able to share in the easier rewards that women were accustomed to. But, we were young and $#%@ and naive and totally underestimated the impact of both biology and thousands of years of social tradition. Life is inherently a challenge because it is through surviving and overcoming challenges that living things remain strong, resilient, and viable. Culture is simply not prepared to make the reward system for males any easier.

It was also a mistake for boomer males to assume that women would ever be held to the same standards as males. We just assumed that it was obvious to everyone how much work was required to gain the rewards we got, and expected women to work as hard as we did if they wanted those same level of rewards.

Culture is at a fork in the road. Having completely destroyed the old merit/earning/reward connection for males, it either has to face the fact that males are going to quit doing the $#$% work which keeps the culture going - like initiating relationships - or force women to take on their share of that $#$%-work.

Individual males who are not in positions of power can do nothing to affect what happens at the policy level, but we can go on strike against the $#$%-work and force women to do it if they want it done, because we now refuse to do it without any reward for doing it.

"Only 14 percent of female middle managers aspire to be CEO; the figure is 45 percent for middle managers who are male." -- Newsletter of the Women's Freedom Network, Spring 1997

Related: Pook #45 - Attention Whores

Previous Zenpriest Index Next

Zenpriest #6 - The Death of Marriage

. · 6 January 2002 · Archived copy · Original

The so-called "Heterosexual family" is a horse so dead that flogging it a bit more is not going to be noticed by anyone, least of all the horse.

.

.

I truly do not understand men who are adamant about defending an institution which has a 2 in 5 rate of destroying their lives through divorce and god only knows what percentage of the other 3 simply stick it out no matter how bad it is due to their values.

Marriage was long ago redefined as a temporary contractual arrangement which existed only for the purpose and gratification of the adults involved and was only binding on the male and only existed at the pleasure of the female. The average marriage today lasts 12 years.

Keep in mind that what is being discussed is not just homosexual marriage, but same-sex marriage. Marital rape laws have eliminated any requirement that there be an actual sexual relationship between the partners (along with the radfem's hatred of male sexuality) so the legalization of same-sex marriage will simply knock down the last of the hollow shell which marriage has become.

Personally, I think that embracing same-sex marriage and fully exploiting the benefits of it is one of the best ways to scare the $#$% out of American females and finally mobilize them to stop riding along on the coattails of their feminist sisters and sucking everything they can out of men. Give 2 heterosexual men the right to pool resources, share work benefits, and the same rights as gay men to engage surrogate mothers to bear children for them, and the only thing American women will have left to offer which is unique to them will be sex.

American women have gotten a free ride for far too long - being able to take anything they want from men, including their jobs - while men steadfastly stuck up for the rights of those women to take men to the cleaners. They have done so secure in the belief that men wanted relationships more than women did - because they fell for the whole line of feminist $%#@$#%@.

Same-sex marriages will bust wide open the cult of the moral mother and the presumption of female custody, and force courts to contend with issues other than whose sperm fertilized the egg when awarding child support. Brain-dead judges will no longer be able to sleep-walk to work and check their crib sheet for every case which tells them to "rule in favor of the woman and against the man."

As more and more women assume the traditional male role of the breadwinner, more and more men are going to become "primary caregivers" and they are going to be able to use precedents set in same-sex divorces to force the

court to evaluate custody issues on something other than genitalia.

If men play this right, it can turn out for us about the old joke about 2 warring gangs/armies - one side started throwing sticks of dynamite at the other, and the 2nd group started lighting them and throwing them back.

If women had a lick of damn sense they would be in the streets in numbers many times the recent marches for abortion, screaming their heads off against the imminent destruction of their traditional meal tickets.

But, we all know that women don't.

I think [there is a] generational divide at work here. This is why I keep saying that the "save marriage" people are at least 30 years too late.

I am of the generation to whom "marriage" was "for richer or poorer, for better or worse, in sickness and in health, as long as we both shall live." The term discussed in another thread - "starter marriage" - was as nonsensical as "temporary homicide." The marriage vow for men also included "with all my worldly goods, I thee endow." Marriage was a lifelong partnership in which both parties were bound by common interest and mutual interdependence. Most enforcement was social rather than legal, and while it did have some overtones of being a "contract", the biggest thing which made marriages work is they improved surivival and did create the best environment for all members of the family to thrive.

No amount of top-down enforcement can replace that. There is an old joke about why people in small towns lock their cars - to keep their neighbors from filling them with zucchini and tomatoes (in season.) Among people whose value system simply precludes lying and theft, enforcement never enters the picture. By the time it has, social disintegration is so advanced that enforcement fails as often (or more often) as it succeeds.

Real "marriage" is an all-or-none deal. It is like pregnancy - you either are or you are not. The second you go into a partnership of that nature reserving some portion of your resources against the chance of failure, you starve the marriage of what it needs to survive. Marriage boils down to "I give you all of me, in exchange for all of you." And, you never argue about who is getting the better deal because you both value each other and yourselves.

As a practical matter, in this day and age it is virtually impossible to trust another person based solely on their word.

And, all of us are much the poorer for it.

Previous Zenpriest Index Next

Zenpriest #7 - Women's Aggression

. · 7 January 2002 · Archived copy · Original

Ever hear the old saying "Hell hath no fury like a woman scorned"? A guy might get disgruntled and a bit pissed off when a woman he wants to sleep with turns him down, but turn down a woman who wants to have sex with you (for whatever convoluted reasons) and she will absolutely hate your guts.

During my freshman year in college, my Residence Hall Assistant (upperclassman with light admin duties for the floor and the general purpose of helping kids adjust to college life) was a guy who was 6'8". For part of that year he "dated" or hung out with a woman who was 4'10". One day I heard terrible crashing sounds coming from the hallway and poked my head out to see her kicking the $#$% out of his door. "He's not there" I said. "YES HE IS" she shouted back at me. She kicked the door a few more times and I said "If he was in there, he would surely come out to see who was trying to kick down his door and why."

I invited her into my room to sit down and calm down. She was babbling on about how she knew he was in there and was just afraid to come out and face her. Now there is a fascinating concept which shows the lie in all the feminist drivel about Domestic Violence. At 6'8", the guy weighed about 250 lbs even though he was skinny as hell. This "little woman" weighed maybe 90 lbs, if that. Yet, she was totally convinced that he was afraid of her. Why? For the same reason that a badger or wolverine can drive a bear many times its size off a kill - pure, raw, unbridled aggression unrestrained by any decency or civil/interpersonal values.

Now, the really interesting part is just why she was so pissed off. "Do you want to hear the lame-assed excuse he gave me for not sleeping with me?" she asked. "No." I responded. "First of all, I am not the least bit interested in his sex life. Second, he has a right to his privacy."

Men apologize to women because if they don't women will continue to attack them viciously, relentlessly, in any way they can until the guy does apologize. The guy could have batted her away like an annoying pup if he had chosen, but he was restrained by a value system which limited his aggression and the level of his attacks, while she suffered from no such limitations of civility and decency. Women throughout this culture are given social permission to go as psychotic as they feel like and they know it will be excused by the cultural perception of women's uncontrollable emotionality. Look at all the people who jumped to the defense of Andrea Yates for killing her kids or Clara Harris for killing her husband while his own daughter watched.

Over the years, the most vicious attacks I have endured from women have come as a result of refusing to sleep with them. Flying into a screaming hysterical rage is one of the favourite tactics of women to take men off guard and manipulate their reflexes to throw them into the fight or flight arousal complex. Because men are so socially conditioned that they should "never hit a woman" under any circumstances, the option of fighting is unavailable to them so they flee the emotional battleground by admitting guilt and apologizing. It is the equivalent of waving the white flag of surrender.

.

Most of the women I have observed over the years are emotional terrorists. It is so acceptable in this culture that women can proudly wear "Bitch!" t-shirts etc, and also love the saying "if mom isn't happy, then NOBODY is happy." Men apologize because women wear them down with these tactics and most men are worn out enough from trying to make a living that they will give away just about anything for a little peace and quiet when they get home. I just saw a post (I think it was here on NG's site) to the effect of "A guy gets up at 7:00 so he can make it to the work battlefield by 8:00, why the hell would he rush home so he can get to that battlefield by 5:30?"

This is just one of many areas in which women quite successfully play both ends against the middle. They have the cultural fiction behind them that women want relationships more than they want sex, and more than men want relationships. But, they count on the fact that the man actually wants emotional intimacy and closeness more than they do so they can use that as a weapon against men and hold the relationship hostage to their whims - "you'd better do what I want, or I will 'break' the positive feelings between us!"

Men are always going to lose this game of emotional brinkmanship unless and until they learn how to play it and become willing to play it. When a woman says "I want you to leave" or sets your stuff by the door, say "OK" and be outta there. It won't be 24 hours before she is calling you begging for you to come back and playing all sorts of sweetness and seductive games to try to lure you back within her range.

The following quotes were taken from If Men Have All The Power How Come Women Make The Rules pp. 43-44

"In studying female aggression, Dr. [Wendy] Craig [a professor of developmental psychology at Queen's University in Kingston, Ontario] found that girls are just as aggressive as boys. Unlike male aggression, which is physical, female social aggression is covert and, therefore, hard to detect. 'Girl aggression tends to be social in nature -- that is, emotionally rejecting, dismissive, and verbally abusive,' she says. 'This kind of aggression has as many negative consequences as physical aggression. The victims of social aggression become anxious, depressed, fearful, and have a lower self concept.' The implication is that, as future parents, socially aggressive females have the potential to inflict great harm, which can go undetected by society." -- Queen's University Press Release, March 18, 1997

"[Women] bully in more or less the same way [as men] with the exception that females are actually much better at it, they're much more devious, much more manipulative, much more subtle about it and they leave a lot less evidence as well - and they often do it with a smile." -- Tim Field, who established Britain's National

Workplace Bullying Line in 1996. *The Australian*, July 12, 1999

"[T]he central organizing principle of primate social life is competition between females and especially female lineages... Females should be, if anything, more competitive than males, not less, although the manner in with females compete may be less direct, less boisterous, and hence, more difficult to measure... We are not yet equipped to measure the elaborations upon old themes that our fabulously inventive, and devious, species create daily." -- Sarah Blaffer Hrdr, Ph D., in her 1981 book, *The Woman That Never Evolved*

"Most of the damage women do is indirect. If she only bats her eyes to induce a guy into a fight, nobody's going to blame her. Women do a lot of things that provoke and trigger responses in men. But nobody seems able to see that." -- Herb Goldberg, Ph D., author of *The Hazards of Being Male*, in an interview with Jack Kammer, December 2, 1990

From the MGTOW Library:

“Bullying styles are generally considered to fall under two categories, direct and indirect. Direct physical bullying is to, hit, shove, kick, trip, push, and pull. Direct verbal bullying can involve name-calling, insults, threatening to hurt the other. Indirect bullying, also known as social or relational aggression (Crick 1997) involves attacking the relationships of people and hurting the self-esteem. It is subtler and involves behaviours such as spreading nasty rumors, withholding friendships, ignoring, gossiping, or excluding a child from a small group of friends.

There is no doubt that *stereotypically*, males are more physical and direct in their bullying styles and females more manipulative and indirect (Olweus, 1997; Bjorkqvist, 1994; Crick & Grotpeter, 1995; Lagerspetz, Bjorkqvist & Peltonen, 1988). Boys in our Western culture are encouraged to be tough and competitive and as they maturate slower and develop social intelligence at a slower rate they will use physical aggression longer than girls (Lagerspetz, Bjorkqvist, & Peltonen, 1988; Bjorkqvist, Lagerspetz, & Kauliaien, 1992). However there is no reason to believe that females should be less hostile and less prone to get into conflicts than males (Burbank, 1987, in Bjorkqvist 1994; Crick & Grotpeter, 1995). As females are physically weaker, they develop early in life other bullying styles in order to achieve their goals. Indirect aggression in girls increases drastically at about the age of eleven years (Bjorkqvist, Lagerspetz and Kaukiainen, 1992) whereas physical aggression among boys decreases during late adolescence, to be replaced mainly by verbal, but also indirect aggression (Bjorkqvist 1994).

There is a growing body of research in gender differences of bullying and other adolescent aggressive behaviours. There are hundreds of studies dedicated to the topic, many placing the emphasis on boys or the forms of aggression, more salient to boys. Forms of aggression more salient to girls has received comparatively little attention (Crick, 1997; Crick & Grotpeter, 1995).”

"Those who have experienced dismissals by the junior high school girl's clique could hardly, with a straight face, claim generosity and nurture as a natural attribute of women." -- Elizabeth Fox-Genovese in her 1991 book *Feminism Without Illusions*

Zenpriest #8 - The Big Truth

. · 8 January 2002 · Archived copy · Original

While a lot of the guys on this board are planning on getting out of Dodge and abandoning the US, there are some of us who for various reasons have chosen to make our stand here and slug it out with the feminidiots to the bitter end.

The baffling lack of unity and cohesiveness among men which has kept us from mustering a coherent response to feminidiocy has been sad and frustrating, but at this point must simply be considered a condition of the environment in which we have to fight this war. What I see emerging is a relatively spontaneous, not at all organized, generalized change in the behavior and choices of men - the marriage boycott being one example, the boycott of institutions of higher Indoctrination being another.

It is too bad that the whole Hitler/Nazi analogy has been so overused, because next to Machiavelli, Hitler probably understood the mechanisms of power better than anyone else in history.

The fundamental strategy was "telling the BIG LIE" - something outrageously untrue, but repeated enough times that people either begin to believe it, or at least become afraid to let anyone know that they don't.

Feminists have told millions of "BIG LIES" about men - about Domestic Violence, Rape, "Glass Ceilings", "the Patriarchy", etc, etc, etc, yadda, yadda, yadda, ad nauseum.

"Political Correctness" has made it a near crime to even challenge the BIG LIES™.

Men have lost as much ground as they have in this war because they were intimidated into silence by the millions of fembots and their near-male syncophants screaming the BIG LIE in unison.

The fundamental weakness of the BIG LIE strategy is that it only works when it IS a lie. If men had ever hated women as much as the feminidiots claim men have, the femdroids would have never gotten to first base. It is has been men's desire to maintain some social honor that led to them being silenced by accusations that any criticism of feminism equated to "hating women."

There is a principle of ceremonial magic that one only has to speak a spell 3 times to make it binding and make it become true. Women have spoken the "you hate women" spell many more times than that, and it is beginning to come true.

The feminidiots have thrown away their most powerful weapon by overuse - when they try to silence a man by saying "well, you must hate women" and he responds "you are right, I do" - they have no "plan B."

So, now freed from the fear of being called "woman haters" which silenced them for so long, men must now begin to speak the BIG TRUTH!

The illusion that women are "the kinder, more caring, fairer sex" has allowed them to get away with murder, literally. But, it is now being swept away by images of Lynndie England, cigarette hanging out of her skankish mouth, grinning at her power to humiliate men. It is being swept away by by news stories of gangs of girls stomping other girls into comas or even to death. It is being swept away by story after story of mothers killing and horribly abusing their children.

It is now time for millions of men's voices to start being heard, screaming the BIG TRUTH at the top of their lungs.

Screw the assholes who want to copyright it and put their names on it so they can sell their books and fill their seminars and make a buck off the pain and confusion of other men.

I got a real chuckle out of Verlch's recent mining of my site. He is using my writing exactly as I wanted men to use it - to spread the BIG TRUTH without regard to what clever asshole first wrote it down, to say it and spread it and speak it any and every time the opportunity arises.

My words are yours to use to OUR benefit, guys. I am an above-average word monger, but I put my words out in the public domain for men to pick up and use as their own swords in the battle against the BIG LIE.

If what I write resonates with any man, he has blanket permission to use anything I have ever written as his own words that he would have come up with if he had had the time.

I believe that most men know the truth - in their guts. They feel it in their guts, and it is only when people fuck with their heads that they lose that knowing.

We need millions of men screaming the BIG TRUTH from the rooftops.

"The great masses of the people ... will more easily fall victims to a big lie than to a small one." -- Adolf Hitler

"The size of the lie is a definite factor in causing it to be believed, for the vast masses of a nation are in the depths of their hearts more easily deceived than they are consciously and intentionally bad. The primitive simplicity of their minds renders them a more easy prey to a big lie than a small one, for they themselves often tell little lies, but would be ashamed to tell big lies." -- Adolf Hitler

“I use emotion for the many and reserve reason for the few” -- Adolf Hitler

"The more we do to you, the less you seem to believe we are doing it." -- Dr. Joseph Mengele

---

Further Reading:

Zenpriest #56 – MGTOW’s Trademark Copyright Philosophy

Previous Zenpriest Index Next

Zenpriest #9 - The 90's were the Make It or Break It Decade and I Don't Think We Made It

. · 9 January 2002 · Archived copy · Original

Looking back, I regarded the 90s as the "make or break" decade - the time when men and women either successfully negotiated a changing and rebalancing of male and female roles, or didn't. I don't think we made it.

.

But, I think we would have except for the efforts of two women - who I would dearly love to see publicly hanged for crimes against humanity: Susan Faludi and Naomi Wolf.

.

Coming out of the 80s, the Reagan years, people were beginning to adjust to a lot of the changes in roles. Most men had good naturedly made room for women to take their places next to men with their noses to the grindstone and shoulders to the wheel trying to climb up the career success ladder - except those men at the top whose purpose in life had always been to make it as difficult as they possibly could for those below them to advance, so they could retain their positions at the top.

.

I'm sure that if real social research could have been done, that women who really did work hard and well really did advance as quickly as their male counterparts. There were just proportionally fewer of them and they started later, so naturally there were fewer of them at the highest rungs of the income ladder. This was the way that business worked then.

.

We stupid men assumed that women would realize what it took to be really successful, and that we would benefit from their appreciation of the fact that "careers" were not as much fun as they looked from the outside, and that men who were successful were actually sacrificing a huge amount for the sake of their families. What fools we were.

.

Faludi single-handedly turned this natural process into "The Backlash" and ignited the fire of victimhood in women's minds. Even at the time the public was aware that feminism was dying. There weren't any real causes any more, men and women were getting on with their lives as men and women always have, and even the rape hysteria being cooked up by Mary Koss and the witches as MS was getting a "ho-hum" reception from most women.

.

But, Faludi re-ignited the fires of righteous indignation and female rage by replacing her stupid victim-centered view of the world for the evolutionary "achieve and earn" one. Then Wolf added her part of the 1-2 punch, by blaming men for the fact that women want to and try to attract them, with her "Beauty Myth."

.

From then on, "feminism" became about "women are weak, women are helpless, women are stupid, women need to be rescued from men, all men are rapists and abusers, all men are jerks, all the evils of the world are due to men."

.

Oprah, Jerry Springer, Jenny Jones, and all their clones, Anita Hill, Lorena Bobbit, and the Duluth Model dumped millions of gallons of gasoline on the blaze, and the entire culture erupted in flames.

.

In the late 90s, that queen-bitch Susan Faludi came out with a companion book to her screed that kicked the gender cold war into a full-fledged shooting war. Her second book was called "Stiffed: The Betrayal of the American Male."

The entire premise on which millions of middle class men were convinced to move over and give women equal space on the wheels and grindstones to place their shoulders and noses, was that the entire structure of gender roles would be redistributed. The lie was that when women were allowed to make their own money and have success in their own careers, that they would become less obsessed with male success as criteria for a partner, not to mention that they would become more sexually open and giving and less inclined to use and withhold sex as a bargaining chip for power in a relationship.

And, if you believe that, as the old saying goes, I have a really fine bridge for sale in Manhattan.
What women actually did was not change their expectations in the slightest. They still only considered men "eligible" if the man made more than she did, so they simply raised the bar and shrunk their pool of "acceptable" mates.

The wannabe-princesses never once lowered their gaze from "prince" Charming, and considered "mechanic" Charming, or "fry cook" Charming, but instead continued to focus exclusively on the top 10% of all men.
Think about this the next time some bitch says that there are "no good men" left. Tell her there are plenty of good men, but that all she shows them is nose hair.

“Looking at how easy it is for women to treat men in cruel ways is oddly liberating.” – Naomi Wolf, in her 1993 book *Fire With Fire*

"I personally am livid... Have you considered castration as an option?" -- NBC co-anchor Katie Couric to a bride who was left standing at the altar, *The Today Show*, November 25, 1997

"The more famous I get, the more power I have to hurt men." -- Sharon Stone

---

Previous Zenpriest Index Next

Zenpriest #10 - When Men's Trust Is Gone

. · 10 January 2002 · Archived copy · Original

No fault divorce, paternity fraud, false allegations, the DV Gestapo and the fact that a woman can have a man turned into a criminal with one phone call - the list of reasons why men are absolute fools to trust any woman today just goes on and on. Sure, there are "exceptions", but that argument by itself pisses me off because it fails to recognize the personal devastation that so many men have been through and any man who embarks on a personal relationship with a woman risks these days.

As I frequently point out - only one out of six chambers of the gun is loaded in Russian Roulette, but you still don't see everyone playing it. The 16.67% of getting your brains blown out is still far better than the approximately 40% chance a man has of having his life destroyed by a relationship with a woman.

Men today are hyper-aware and hyper-critical. Because the law provides men absolutely no protections whatsoever, men have to protect themselves. Thus, any and every misstep by a woman, every tantrum, every irrational argument, portends the day he will be facing her in court - either in a divorce proceeding or defending himself against charges of rape.

Pay attention here, MNIK - women today are under such an extreme level of scrutiny by men, looking for any sign of the crazy bitch lurking inside and hiding and waiting to come out until she has the guy over a legal barrel, that no human being can pass the test. Men are like the soldiers who sit watching the radar screens trying to catch the nuclear missiles coming over the pole in time to shoot them out of the sky before they leave nothing but a crater where his life used to be.

Women have really fucked themselves, and all other women by this process.

"It's tough to trust a person who holds a club behind her back and says, "A club? What club? I don't have a club." -- Jack Kammer in If Men Have All The Power, How Come Women Make The Rules?, p29

Previous Zenpriest Index Next

Zenpriest #11 - Emotional Deficit

. · 11 January 2002 · Archived copy · Original

Think of things like "compassion" and "understanding" as being like commodities which are not in unlimited supply - like a holding tank full of water. If a man gives some of his compassion to a woman, the level in his tank drops. If a woman gives some back to him, the level goes back up.

Throughout the whole victim hysteria, women have demanded and consumed more and more compassion and understanding from men, and have actually used both against men, and given absolutely nothing back. A woman accuses a man of "rape" or "I'm afraid of him" and the jackals howl for his head. Deadbeat dads go to prison, "rapists" get castrated.

For some of us, the compassion well has run dry. We really don't give a shit any more. The old fable of the boy who cried wolf is coming into reality. When a woman cries "victim" today, I do not feel compassion, I feel rage. When she cries "victim" **I ASSUME IT IS A LIE!!.**

I do not believe women. I do not feel sorry for them. I do not help them.

Your initial posts, and those of some other females, came off sounding like "c'mon, guys, get back out there and give another ameriskank a chance to ruin what you have left of your life that none of the skanks so far have gotten the chance to ruin."

The answer to that is "no." And, no really does mean no - **when a man says it.**

I'm in my early 50s, I've gone through male change of life - which I call "horny-pause" to correspond with female "meno-pause", and unlike some of the younger horn-dogs here, consider the sexual demands of women my age a **HUGE** annoyance rather than something positive.

GDaddy is my age, and still trying. Good for him. But, he is not going to try with another ameriskank. Even better for him.

So, the point is that I have lived through the part of my life where it mattered to me whether a woman was one of the "exceptions" or she wasn't. I am no longer even interested in one of the exceptions.

Boomer women are going to learn the hard way that their sexual power over men does not last forever. They live in a comfortable little fantasy world that there will always be more men who want them than they want.

But, that mean, ugly, and evil game they have been playing of using our desire for them as the weapon to jerk us around, is coming to an end. Any sports fan knows that a game only lasts a certain number of periods, then the scoreboard is shut down, the lights are turned off, and everyone goes home.

And, my goal is to see that as many women as possible my age go home - alone. The post I quoted in the marriage strike thread has one of the most eloquent expressions and summaries of it I have ever seen -

Quote: *"Ok, women win. I confess. You proved you don't need us men more than we don't need you. Now go away and don't need us somewhere else."*

Yeah. Go away, and don't need us somewhere else.

Previous Zenpriest Index Next

Zenpriest #12 - Happiness

. · 12 January 2002 · Archived copy · Original

Am I "happy"? - compared to just about every man I know, deliriously happy. "Happy" is not an absolute state, but a relative one. Just think about your friend [who committed suicide after divorce]. Would he be alive today if he had not had that woman in his life?

When I go to the dentist and have a horribly painful throbbing tooth removed, I am "happier" with it gone than I was with it.

Other than restricted by the demands of work, I go where I want, when I want. I answer to and am accountable to no one but myself. I only have to pay bills which I generate, so I am not trapped into any particular job or income level. If my boss pisses me off too much, I don't have to "suck it up and take it" (like a man), I can do the Johnny Paycheck thing of "You can take this job and shove it."

A few years ago, I decided to take some time off from the corporate world of wage slavery, and spent a total of 3 months riding around the entire western US on my motorcycle. It was the most glorious feeling of freedom I have ever had. In 3 months, I spent only about 14-15 nights with a roof over my head.

I can't remember a time in my life I have ever been happier.

Certainly, all those times I was being emotionally punished by a woman for not getting her the "right" birthday/Valentine's/xmas present weren't any happier. The silent treatments for what I had no clue about, were not what I would call "happy." The arguments where I would get things I said in the most tender and vulnerable moments between us twisted around and thrown back in my face in the ugliest most hurtful fashion possible, were not "happy."

What happened was that the feminidiots brainwashed women into believing that doing **ANYTHING** kind or loving toward a man was being "under a man's thumb." So, in order to prove how "strong" they were, women devolved into hateful, hurtful, demanding, cruel bitches.

Pulling them out of my life has been like having a horribly infected, inflamed, and painful tooth pulled. I am ecstatically happy with the result - the pain is gone.

Lonely? I know lots of people I can call up if I want company - people that I can actually have a 2-way conversation with, instead of just being an audience for the ceaseless yammering of women like the one Dietra told about, or KJC's grandmother. Most of them are male.

For years, men have been talking about how truly horrible women have become, and just about every time a man says anything - just as predictable as the sun coming up, someone will say "but, not all women are like that", as though that means something.

Well, tell your friend that "not all women are like" the one who made his life such hell that he killed himself.

And, in order to understand what I am trying to get across, ask yourself how much "happier" he would be today - still alive - if that woman had never come into his life.

Can you imagine that? Can you imagine your friend still alive? Can you imagine him wanting to be alive more than he wanted to die as "happiness"?

Can you imagine how **NOT** having such a woman in my life, really is happiness to me?

Zen and the art of motorcycle maintenance

Motorcycles do put one into a zen state. There is something about their marvelous simplicity. So much that what we thought was essential turns out to be excess baggage. Our lives depend on being totally aware in the moment and clearing our minds of things which are not significant at the present time.

Previous Zenpriest Index Next

Zenpriest #13 - Prove to Me You Aren't a Bad Guy!

. · 13 January 2002 · Archived copy · Original

Quote: *I feel that in order to prove to other women that men are not inherently evil, women have to know that not all men will dick them over. And if you intelligent men don't realize this about women, what makes you think an emotional women realizes this about men?*

That is the nebulous fog which men have been chasing for decades. It is not possible to "prove" anything to someone who bases belief on emotion. Emotions change from one moment to the next, and if beliefs follow them the world becomes an eternal fog in which nothing can be accomplished.

There is something at work here that I call the "responsibility transfer." - "Prove to me you are not a bad guy." It starts from the presupposition that I have something to gain from you believing that I am not a bad guy. In the case of being falsely accused of something, there certainly is a benefit. But, in all other cases it comes down to who has more to gain or lose from which belief.

Up to this point in time, the entire game has been based on the public fiction that men want relationships with women more than women want relationships with men, and that men benefit more from those relationships than women do.

I think that 40 years ago, things were pretty much balanced, but that today men have very little to gain from having a relationship and a great deal to lose.

Take the following scenario. I, who own a house and some other properties, marry a woman who has kept more abreast of consumer culture and has basically no assets. Five years down the road, she decides that the marriage is "stifling" her, or that she "deserves more". In the meantime, she's gotten pregnant and has one kid. The marital property gets divided, and she gains half the assets accumulated from nearly 30 years of savings, without herself having to contribute anything. I lose half of everything I have worked all my life for, plus have the additional burden of monthly child-support, backed up by the threat of incarceration.

So, going back to just prior to the marriage - which belief of hers do I stand to gain more from and which one do I stand to lose more from?

If she believes I am a "good guy", one of the kind she wants to marry, I lose half my life's work - let's say 15 years of my life - plus my freedom, because I am now basically under control of the criminal justice system for child-support obligations.

If she believes I am a "bad guy", she doesn't marry me, and I save a couple of hundred thousand $$ as well as retaining my freedom. So, having her think I am a "bad guy", creates the best possible outcome for me, while having her think I am a "good guy" creates the worst possible outcome.

Now, if you emotional women cannot understand how much more it is to your advantage to view us as "good guys", I can't see any reason to shoot off my own foot to convince you otherwise.

"Women invent rules, manipulate men to obey them, and in this way dominate men - but in no way apply the rules to themselves." -- Esther Vilar in her 1972 book *The Manipulated Man*

“It is an amazing thing to see in our city the wife of a shoemaker, or a butcher, or a porter dressed in silk with chains of gold at the throat, with pearls and a ring of good value… and then in contrast to see her husband cutting the meat, all smeared with cow’s blood, poorly dressed, or burdened like an ass, clothed with the stuff from which sacks are made… but whoever considers this carefully will find it reasonable, because it is necessary that the lady, even if low born and humble, be draped with such clothes for her natural excellence and dignity, and that the man [be] less adorned as if a slave, or a little ass, born to her service.” – Lucrezia Marinella of Venice, Italy, 1600, *The Nobility and Excellence of Women Together With the Defects and Deficiencies of Men*

Previous Zenpriest Index Next

Zenpriest #14 - If a Man Speaks in the Forest, and There is No Woman There to Correct Him, Is He Still Wrong?

. · 14 January 2002 · Archived copy · Original

Quote: "*Thank you for the compliment-just one thing-if I said anything like this to my female friends they would get offended, and wouldn't want to BE my friends anymore. It's been my experience that women don't mind if you speak unfavorably about men in general-but you can't do the same thing if the topic is women-they're very touchy. I think though that it's pretty clear that the men here that are severely disappointed with women aren't just sexually frustrated, though, because that's something that's easily remedied by other means-that part in the Bible that calls woman man's "helpmeet" is accurate, I think-man is the main actor, and woman is the assistant-the best name for it is "consort". Being the consort of someone I consider a very fine man gives me great satisfaction."*

You remind me a bit of my sister, whom I idealize because she has so much sense.

Yes, women certainly don't mind blasting men all to hell, but let a man (and perhaps even a woman, as you indicate) say one tiny critical thing about any woman, and every woman within earshot will pulverize him in defense of womanhood in general.

You are also one of the first women I've ever heard "get it" when it comes to what men really want and need from women. I absolutely hate the stereotype of men as unrestrainedly horny beasts in a perpetual state of rut. It bites us both ways. First, any sexual accusation toward us is automatically believed. And, second, a whole lot of women have totally lost track of the connection between their part of the mating dance and men's response. Thus we get women playing turn-on games with no intention whatsoever of following through - so that they can play the victim - at the same time we have women who really do deal with us as though we were flesh and blood vibrators who should "turn on" just because they show up and want us turned on.

I still have a lot of the egalitarian idealism in me, and I have no particular desire to be "head" and would be perfectly happy with a fair and equal relationship - if such a thing were possible. One difficulty is that someone does to have the tie-breaking vote in cases of sincere disagreement.

However the larger and more poisonous issue is wonderfully illustrated by the joke: "If a man speaks in the forest, and there is no woman there to correct him, is he still wrong?"

What I have noticed among women since my college days is that they are so paranoid about being "dominated" that they react with an obsessive-compulsive need to argue with every word which comes out of a man's mouth. It is totally tiresome and completely destructive because it destroys any real communication or cooperation, and turns dealing with women into an exhausting ordeal.

The result of this is that all the emotional needs that men used to get met through sex - the intimacy and connection - no longer get met in any way. Sex has become very mechanical and impersonal, and sex toys and vibrators have really urged that along. Sex a lot of the time turns out to feel mostly like masturbation with an accomplice, who turns out to be someone you really don't like all that much.

The convergence of the problems you pointed out - the fact that women don't seem to start to get things figured out until about age 35, coincides quite tragically with the time that male ardor begins to significantly cool. Under the old structure of marriage, a couple would have had about 15 years by then to become friends and partners, and that would begin to pay dividends as they matured.

Under the new timetable of "career first, then children, husband optional" by the time a man has had 15-20 years of complete female self absorption, he has grown some very thick calluses over those emotional parts of himself where bonding takes place.

Women don't seem to have a clue about the way that all the clobbering they do of men fundamentally changes men's ability to feel about them in certain ways. Those changes are not reversible - as I've said many times, you cannot change a pickle back into a cucumber. The innocent crushes which young men have on women which can mature into deep long-term caring love, make men terribly vulnerable to women's ability to use men's feelings to manipulate them. Men have to protect themselves, so they become jaded and cynical and lose the ability to experience those feelings. Often, by the mid-30s which has become the target age for marriage, men have simply been jerked around enough by women that living alone looks like the better option.

Feminism really has left a horrible legacy for young women. Sadly, most of them are so brainwashed that when you try to tell them to lose the attitude, all it does is cause them to intensify it.

"Men like to please women and gain their approval, so they give their power away. Men are incredibly afraid of women; they have tremendous fear of women if they feel that the woman is going to criticize them. Frequently when he expresses himself, she says, 'Oh, don't be so ridiculous; I can't believe you're saying that!' or 'Why don't you ever talk about your feelings?' Then when the guy talks about his feelings, she'll often say, 'That's stupid!' or 'You can't really feel that way!' So the way he sees it is never right. And so the guy shuts down, and he refuses to talk. That's what I see in my practice over and over. The guy wonders, 'Why should I open my mouth, when every time I do, she tells me it's wrong?'" -- therapist Laurie Ingraham, in *Good Will Towards Men* by Jack Kammer

The Lamentations of Matheolus: Dominating Clock, 1295

This female clock is really driving me mad, for her quarrelsome din doesn't stop for a moment. The tongue of a quarrelsome woman never tires of chiming in. She even drowns out the sound of the church bell. A nagging wife couldn't care less whether her words are wise or foolish, provided that the sound of her own voice can be heard. She simply pursues her own ends; there's not a grain of sense in what she says; in fact she finds it impossible to have a decent thought. She doesn't want her husband to be the boss and finds fault with everything he does. Rightly or wrongly, the husband has no choice: he has to put up with the situation and keep his mouth shut if he wants to remain in one piece. No man, however self disciplined or clear-sighted he may be, can protect himself adequately against this. A husband has to like what the wife likes, and disapprove of what she hates and criticize what she criticizes so that her opinions appear to be right. So anyone who wishes to immolate himself on the altar of marriage will have a lot to put up with. Fifteen times, both day and night, he will suffer without respite and he will be sorely tormented. Indeed, I believe that this torture is worse than the torments of hell, with its chains, fire, and iron.

Further Reading:

Bonecrker #3 – Shaming Language

Previous Zenpriest Index Next

Zenpriest #15 - Regarding the Marriage Strike

. · 15 January 2002 · Archived copy · Original

Regarding the "Marriage Strike" - I think there is a great deal of deep and subtle meaning in choices of words. Simply calling it a "strike" as opposed to some other term says a lot about the fundamental concepts which people use to construct this larger concept called "marriage." One goes on strike against a "job", therefore if men are on a marriage strike, marriage must be a job. That fits in completely with my experience of the past 20 years or so that first dates tend to turn out like long, unpleasant, job interviews that I pay for the privilege of having.

As a first stage in developing a more powerful thinking/emotional position, I would prefer to term what is happening as a marriage "boycott." One goes on "strike" with a job, and a job is something most of us have to have. But, is a marriage something we really have to have? And a strike basically always has to end at some time, once the workers demands are met. So, what are our "demands" and who is doing the negotiating for us?

A "boycott", on the other hand, connotes being against some sort of consumer goods, which are optional. A boycott can go on for a very long time, even forever. I have been boycotting TV since 1974, and I can't imagine ever stopping my boycott.

So, is marriage our "job" which we will return to once our demands are met? Or is marriage something we "purchase" and are deciding not to purchase at the present time? And, during the time we are refusing to purchase, might our consuming habits not change, and even if the product start to be of better quality, we have learned that we can live just fine without it?

So, in terms of strategic psychological bargaining position, I'd like to see guys start calling it a marriage boycott. The owners of the means of (re)production can just try shutting down the factory until the strike funds run out and the strikers start to get hungry. But, the producers of the boycotted item see their cash flow dry up and fear the risk of losing brand loyalty.

However, I think what is really happening is something else - I think some core social concepts are changing at a very fundamental level. In the past, men were more or less forced into marriage - because someone had to support women and children - mostly by social pressure. The only "safe" role for men was "husband and father" and single men were very suspect. Only those single men who were financially successful and involved in the community were able to escape the taint of pariah-hood which came from not being married. And that came about because a lot of men followed the path of building a career and then getting married about age 40. If a man reached 40, and had a successful career, he could get by with that. But, non-successful single men were always pushed to the fringes of society and regarded with great suspicion.

By destroying the role of "husband and father", women have actually knocked down the walls of men's prisons. Where before, men were trapped by social censure into the role of specialized beast of burden bred for the purpose of dragging around a financially and emotionally dependent wife and family, men were forced to find alternative means of getting validation and largely learned to self-validate. I don't really think the "strike" will ever be over. I don't even think that the commodity of marriage will ever get back the market share it has lost during the boycott. I can't imagine myself ever getting married. Not even one of the single men that I know has any desire at all to be married.

I think the net long-term effect will be that women get trapped in the jobs they were so anxious to take from us, and that men will end up being quite happy to have been relieved of the burdens of supporting a family's consuming habits. Someone has the sig line that a woman will spend $1 for a $2 item she doesn't need, where a man will spend

$2 for a $1 item he does need. Men don't have the same need to consume and spend money, so when we only have to cover our own consuming habits we can work less hours at more fun jobs, enjoy life more, and probably end up living longer.

So, to return to the language you used, or close to it, I think we have several related mutations in the memes related to pair bonding and family structure. The first actually began back early in the century with the advent of mass produced manufactured goods which transferred the functions previously performed mostly by human labor, into commodities for which "labor saving devices" were purchased. With a washer, dryer, microwave, and no kids, I really don't need a wife that much.

The massive explosion of consumer goods after WWII led to several major inter-related effects. First, the cost of essential items like food and shelter decreased as a percentage of family expenditures. The amount left over for discretionary spending, or "disposable" income created many new or expanded markets - entertainment for example and the explosion of consumer electronics starting with music. Then, when women entered the workforce in massive numbers, service industries which performed the functions previously performed by stay at home spouses grew.

In effect, the family had been "outsourced." Everything which 75 years before had taken two people working as a team to accomplish, could now be had in the marketplace.

Lacking any real role or significance any more, women searched around for the meaning of life and decided "Let's take over men's." This threw men into free-fall basically having no ideological meme by which to define themselves.

Men who grew up under the old value system really floundered. Someone who had grown up and spent all his life shoeing horses, didn't immediately adapt to being an auto mechanic. But, the next generation was born with the technology and embraced it.

Likewise, younger men were born into a world in which the old male role was obsolete but there was not yet any substitute. Of course, the feminist fantasy was that men and women would just switch places and lots of men become house husbands. The reason that didn't work is because feminism is fundamentally wrong about female psychology. Even as women crowded men out of their old roles, those same women still wanted the men to fulfill them.

Thus, we had the Kobiashi Maroo.

So, men changed the rules of the simulation. I think the reason that the new meme is so virulent is because it is a survival adaptation. You cannot put pressure on every part of a system indefinitely and expect it to continue functioning and not break. The system became terminally broken when the old male roles got redefined from being "good" into being "evil" - when supporting a woman and children became "oppression" and when wiping one's own ass became "unpaid work."

Where you and I might differ in our formulations, I think is mostly due to the perspective of age and awareness of history. I liken your situation to the convicts hauled down to Australia, dumped out on the beach and told to "survive." The virulence and intensity which you describe as a feeling from the inside out, I think comes from the survival instinct and the need of men to survive emotionally and psychologically in a culture which seemed determined to pound them into dust. And, the anger and rage so many men feel toward that culture and women comes from the sensation that they were both out to destroy men and maleness.

Innovation has always come from men, and I would sum up by saying that I think we essentially agree, and that you are the first generation of men to have come up with the adaptation to the post-modern world.

None for me, thanks. I doubt that marriage will be the norm for people born after some time in the 80s. Social values and expectations are notoriously slow to catch up with the reality of what is going on in the culture. Future women are groomed to be such total consumers that the first thing they are going to consume is any man they can get their hooks into. The social and emotional value of marriage is already dead.

Previous Zenpriest Index Next

Zenpriest #16 - The Gender War

. · 16 January 2002 · Archived copy · Original

I think this is the saddest outcome of the gender war. [Previously it was mentioned] that one role of a woman was to inspire her man to better things (paraphrased). Now we have a situation where both sexes are pointing at the excesses of the other to justify the excesses of their own.

This is a bloody god-damned war in which a whole lot of women are the enemy and younger men need to learn the tricks of a wiley old coyote like me in order to survive. More than 15,000 men kill themselves in the US every year because they cannot sort out and resolve all the mixed cultural messages they are getting and either take on the failure as their own, or just give up because they can't stand it any more.

I [previously commented] about the massive rise in female violence which we have seen over the past few years. This is the pond that many men on this list will end up fishing in, and they need to be warned and prepared for the great white sharks they are going to encounter.

This is a war that can have no leaders. There is no field of a gender Falkirk where a gender William Wallace can lead a group of rag-tag men to victory over a cruel and brutal tyrant. This war is fought every day in bedrooms and board rooms and restaurants and dance clubs and online dating sites. It is millions of individual wars of one man against a cultural zeitgeist that hates and devalues him simply because he is male.

The biggest mistake men have made is in being gentlemen toward women who were most decidedly **NOT** "ladies."

The majority of western women today are emotionally abusive. They have fallen in love with ”THE BITCH” as their only model of female strength. Western men are collectively in an abusive relationship with western women collectively. Few women will pass up the chance to manufacture an opportunity to belittle an individual man and all men.

.

.

I am speaking less to you than I am with you. You have already learned what is important - it is the bewildered and confused young men attacked and brainwashed since birth with undeserved guilt and shame for their crime of having made the mistake to be born male, who need to hear what we both have to say.

Most of the men here really are gentlemen - **gentle men** - nice guys. What women have forgotten is that there is a vast difference between gentleness, or kindness, and weakness.

Gentleness is the force which controls the hand which can break your neck, but instead caresses it. Gentleness is not male or female, but human. I am a gentleman, you are a gentlewoman - a lady. What young men have to realize is that women in general have lost **ALL** gentleness.

They see it as weakness, both in themselves and in men. Female violence is skyrocketing as the moral character of women heads for the ground in a power dive. Emboldened by men's passive acceptance of being attacked verbally and emotionally, women are now escalating those attacks to physical. They now see force as a viable means to get their way, and count on men's hands being tied by chivalry and the legal system to keep men from fighting back. They are killing men by the thousands, and so far have managed to keep that from being realized by a combination of outright lies and major mind games.

No one is going to help men. There is no one to help us. Men rescue women. They rescue children. They do not rescue other men.

The karate kid was challenged to a blood match. He asked his sensei, Miyagi, "Who is going to referee?" Miyagi laughs and says "No one." Well, how do you know who won?" the kk asks. "The one who isn't dead when it is over" Miyagi replies.

Hardly a week goes by that I don't hear about some book or study that it is all over for "men." "The future, if there is one, is female" "The decline of males" "The death of the Y chromosome" The culture is very clearly and very literally trying to stamp out maleness - to completely destroy it.

Men today are fighting not just for their own personal survival, but for the very right to survive of the male spirit itself. In order to "win", we must not be dead when it is over.

Instead of the term "leader", I prefer the term "teacher", sensei. I can teach younger men how to value themselves and, perhaps more importantly, **why** to value themselves, but when the match starts I cannot be in the ring with them - that is where they must prevail on their own.

Yeah, war sucks all the way around. But, I have to ask the men here, if your own lives and honor are not worth you fighting for, what could make them worth anyone else fighting for?

.

.

“Among the low-income couples we observed, the battle between the sexes often looks more like outright war, and many women say that they regard men simply as ‘children,’ ‘no good,’ or ‘low-down dirty dogs.’” – Researcher Kathryn Edin, as reported in *The American Prospect*, January 3, 2000

Previous Zenpriest Index Next

Zenpriest #17 - "e-kwuhl pay fer e-kwuhl werk"

. · 17 January 2002 · Archived copy · Original

> *ZenPriest said:* "Those social values required a social environment which no longer exists. They relied on clearly defined and largely separated sex roles. They cannot exist in a climate where the collective financial success of a lot of individual men - who then used that success to benefit the women in their lives, and their children - is being cast as a way that women are victimized at the cultural level by being paid less."
>
> *A Harpie said:* What about all the men who abandon their wives and children-I think this has something to do with why women want equal pay for equal work, because many of them support families. I've seen more than a few traditional-type women (they stayed home while he worked and took care of the house and kids) who then got left by their husbands

What about them? Destroying the social value system which supported, constrained, and rewarded men into the protector provider roles actually makes it easier for men to abandon families, not harder.

I really don't think anyone in the world is truly against "e-kwuhl pay fer e-kwuhl werk", the issue all boils down to an argument over what is equal. The feminists are pushing for equality of outcomes regardless of effort, which men do not see as having anything to do with real equality.

When someone takes time out from advancing their career, for whatever reason, that career is not going to advance as far and as fast as someone who dedicates more than full time and effort on it. A few years ago, a popular buzz phrase was "giving 110%". As much as that is complete nonsense, it could be literally looked at as comparing those people who work 40 hours per week with those who work 44 hours. Whether you are making widgets or commissioned sales, the person who puts in more time and effort is going to produce more results for their employer and be of more value, and thus earn any higher compensation they receive.

Someone who excercises for half an hour 3 days per week, when they feel like it, and often takes a week or few off, is not going to be in the same physical condition as someone who trains 2 hours per day every day and the fact that they are not has nothing to do with "discrimination" and is just simply the way things work.

In a basketball game, points get put on the scoreboard for getting the ball into the basket, not for "trying", not for "intending to put it in", but for actually **accomplishing** something.

Women can scream for "wage parity" all they like, and it ain't never gonna happen until they start being under the same pressures to earn money that men are, start putting in those extra hours to get those extra widgets or sales made, and start really accomplishing something like getting the goddamned ball **into** the basket.

And, that is going to happen because all this blather about "wage-parity" has convinced people that the men who actually did go out and put in the extra effort required to get results, so they could turn around and use that money to provide a better life for their wives and children, are actually proof that women have been victimized throughout history so the jobs are now being handed to women regardless of whether they can do them or not, simply because they have the primary qualification which is a noticable absence of anything dangling between their legs.

Everything, and I do mean **everything** which used to motivate men to make that extra money and stand by their family has been destroyed. It used to be that a man who would abandon his family experienced a sort of social death and became a complete outcast and pariah. But women are the ones who initiate 80% of the divorces in the US - so it is the female side who is pulling men's families away from them and making it damn near impossible for

men to stay involved.

Previous Zenpriest Index Next

Zenpriest #18 - The Designated Initiator

. · 18 January 2002 · Archived copy · Original

This one point is probably the sorest spot in the whole battle of the sexes right now, and one of the most poisonous parts of the legacy of feminism and consumer culture. The age differences here create a staggering difference in experience. When I was a teenager, we had not yet been bombarded with quite so many media images intended to brainwash us into what was "beautiful" and what was "average."

The mating instinct is so powerful that at a distance of 10 feet or less, a woman at her peak of reproductive ripeness - from about age 14-15 to about age 25-26 - has to work really hard to not be "attractive" in the sense of pure animal magnetism. Sex is about reproduction and a woman who is reproductively ripe is sexually attractive at the purely instinctual level.

However, the multiple layers of social bullshit which have been laid down in the past few decades have attempted to completely deny that we are biological beings and force the entire mating game into a purely mental structure. At that point it ceases to be anything about real animal attraction and becomes entirely a contest for status.

You would be absolutely astonished how easy it used to be for men and women to meet and get to know each other in contexts other than the pressure cooker called "a DATE". There were all kinds of social mechanisms, many of them quite simply and accurately called "mixers", where men and women could interact and get through all the first levels of getting acquainted without the sense of it being judged like an Olympic performance.

Today, the entire process is so obnoxious and demeaning that when a guy works up the intestinal fortitude to give it a go, he figures he might as well "go for the gold" - ie. the most socially desirable woman in his field of vision.

This is the area which men feel that women have most severely stiffed us on the promises of feminism. The "designated initiator" job sucks, and men who are non-players generally hate the shit work of having to be the ones to make the first obvious move and take all the rejection that is required to move a relationship to intimacy. Studies have shown that a man must overcome 150 rejections on the average between first contact and intimacy.

So, knowing in advance that he is going to have to endure that kind of gauntlet, one of two conditions are necessary to motivate him to take his beating - either extreme loneliness and hornyness, or the woman is so staggeringly beautiful that he goes after her as a trophy.

As long as women absolutely refuse to give up their power position of the passive role of making men do the asking, 10s are going to get asked out more often than 5s or 6s.

And, the strangest paradox of all, I have found that the 5s or 6s are the ones with the most need to feed their egos by some really cruel forms of rejection. The 10s know they are good looking, the 5s & 6s get to pretend they are 10s by turning guys down.

People used to understand that flirting was a dance that involved 2 people, the recent notion that a woman is totally passive in the face of a ravening male beast has only really taken over since the mid 1970s. Granted, women were often subtle about the ways they attracted men's attention - dropping a handkerchief was the quaint old classic - but everyone in the damned world knew what mini-skirts were for. This recent insanity of "we should be able to wear anything we want and you shouldn't notice unless we want you to notice" could only happen in a world ruled by feminidiocy.

The most beautiful women are not the most cruel ones. They get enough attention that they have learned a certain grace about receiving it. It is the butt-ugly ones who are mad as hell at the beautiful girls for all the sexual power they have, and mad as hell at men because they won't give her the same kind of power over them, that are really sub-human.

It is more a case of not wanting to have to compete with all the other jackals circling - some of whom are majorly aggressive. Actually, the most cruel women I have known in my life have actually been some of the ugliest ones as well. Ugly women envy beautiful women, and deeply hate men for being attracted to beautiful women, because they covet the same power over men that a beautiful woman has. Exhibit A - Andrea Dworkin.

"Women chat happily, send sexually explicit signals and encourage the man's attention, even if they have absolutely no interest in him. This gives a woman time to assess a man, says [Karl Grammer of the Ludwig Boltzmann Institute of Urban Ethology in Vienna, who studied 45 male-female pairs of strangers in their teens and early twenties]… Importantly, the women also seemed to control the encounter – what the women did had a direct effect on what the men did next. 'You can predict male behaviour from female behaviour but not the other way around,' says Grammer" – *New Scientist Magazine* (London), February 14, 2001

Cary (1976) discovered that the woman, through eye contact, controlled the course of interaction with a male stranger, both in the laboratory and in singles' bars. Perper (1985) gave a detailed description of courtship, stressing an escalation-response process in which women play a key role in escalation or deescalation. The steps in this process are approach, turn, first touch, and steady development of body synchronization.

Although these reports are clearly valuable, most researchers addressed courtship very generally, and some failed to recognize the importance of the female role in the courtship process .What was needed was a more complete ethogram of women's nonverbal courtship signals. To compile such a catalog of flirting behavior exhibited by women involved in initial heterosexual interaction, more than 200 adults were observed (Moore, 1985) in field settings such as singles' bars, restaurants, and parties.

Research has shown, therefore, that the cultural myth that the man is always the sexual aggressor, pressing himself on a reluctant woman, is incorrect. *-- Courtship Signaling and Adolescents: "Girls Just Wanna Have Fun"?*
Monica M. Moore, Ph.D.Department of behavioral and Social Sciences, Webster University

---

Related:

Bonecrcker #48 – Sexes Approaching Eachother

Philalethes #29 - They Can Do It Because They Really Believe It!

Previous Zenpriest Index Next

Zenpriest #19 - How Women Keep Score

. · 19 January 2002 · Archived copy · Original

Quote: *Zen,I don't follow. Since when did the supermodels ever act relatively decently compared to their less physically attractive sisters? Are you telling me that I'm better off asking out the Stereotypical Babe than an okay looking woman "in my league"? I don't get it.*

I know it is pretty subtle, but follow me here because it really does make the female enigma a bit easier to sort out. I'm talking averages and probabilities here, individual instances may have a lot of variation.

And, let's leave the category of "supermodels" out of the picture - they aren't real women, they are mutants with serious mental disorders. Look at how screwed up Michael Jackson is as a result of living his entire life from the time he was a child under the microscope. The Olson twins will never be able to live normal lives, and any poor fool who gets tied up with them probably deserves the mind-fucking he is going to get. Paris Hilton is famous, not pretty. I wouldn't fuck her with your penis.

I'm talking about your average, garden variety, babe next door.

I don't think they have high school dances any more like they did when I was a teenager, but I'm going to use a hypothetical scenario of one of them to illustrate something. The girls stood on one side of the gym waiting for guys to approach them, the guys stood on the other side screwing up the courage to make the journey across the floor and ask one of the girls to dance.

Of course, the first guys to venture out into the wilderness were the most confident most aggressive males - the football stars, etc. And, not surprisingly they headed straight for the social queen bees - the cheerleaders and gonna-be prom queens. Then, after the supermodels of both sexes paired off, the real mating dynamic kicked in. The less aggressive non-prom-kings eventually worked up their courage, and of course went for the most attractive woman left. Thus, people were sorted into their positions on the ladder - women based on looks and men based on level of confidence and aggression.

Now, you gotta get inside the heads of the women in order to really understand how the whole process works. They were trapped in the passive role and really did have to just stand there until they attracted a man's attention enough for him to ask her out. The longer it took and the further down the female's "ladder" the male who finally did ask her was, the angrier she had gotten about the whole thing.

When Brad Pitt set out on his trek from the male side, the Roseanne Barrs wanted him every bit as much as the Jennifer Anniston's. And, when he of course gravitated toward Anniston, Roseanne began to hate them both. She still wanted Brad, but she hated him for picking Anniston over her, and she just hated Anniston for being so damn pretty and having her pick of men.

So, instead of being "grateful" or "appreciative" when a man finally does ask her out, "average" women are more often than not seething with buried rage. And, because it is buried there will be a fake smile covering it. It will never come out clearly and honestly, but will seep out as passive/aggressive bullshit that is totally confusing to men.

Keep in mind that women keep score and hold grudges. Believe me, guys, an average woman today is going to punish you for every time a prettier girl was asked to dance 10-20 years ago. (I know someone has posted a link to the recent book about the hidden culture of aggression among girls.)

You need to understand the scorekeeping system, and realize that men and women keep score completely differently. Most men won't even bother with anything less than about 20 points - they blow it off because it is too much trouble to keep track of. A woman scores every action, no matter how tiny, and calculate fractions of a point based on things most men don't notice.

Ok, so every time a Brad asks a Jenn to dance, Jenn gives men at least one and usually 2 points - one for asking her to dance (assuming she wants to) and one for raising her status based on her desirability among the other women present.

Roseanne, on the other hand, is adding up negative points for men every time. She really doesn't want to dance, so that point is irrelevant, but she really does want to be **asked,** so every time Brad asks someone else to dance, men get a -1.

So, at the end of 5 dances, Jenn is glowing, feeling great about herself and great toward men and has a mental attitude score toward men of +10.

Roseanne, on the other hand, is seething behind her fake smile, resentful as hell, and has a mental attitude score toward men of -5.

Women really can't grasp the concept of "teams" so they are constantly covertly competing with other women. In Roseanne's book, Jenn has a +5, while she herself has zero. What happens next has absolutely nothing at all to do with the male, and has everything to do with the competition between women.

Because she wants Brad so badly, while he isn't even aware that she exists, he really does have a lot of "power" where she is concerned. So, in her little pea-brain, she equates the ability to reject with having power. She decides to give women 5 points for being asked and turning the guy down. That will show those assholes for not asking her!

Ok, the 6th dance starts, and all the Brad-types are elbowing their way to the front of the line waiting to ask Jenn to dance. Whoever gets there first has a virtually 100% chance of getting yes for an answer. Why the hell not - she gets another point up on the women who aren't getting asked.

Meanwhile, Mr Average Niceguy has finally haired up to make the trek across the gym floor. He started late, so he doesn't want to try to elbow his way to the front of the line of prom-kings, so he veers toward Rosanne. "Hey, she is a nice average girl and no one has asked her to dance yet, so she will probably appreciate being asked and say yes" - he thinks.

Men really do not understand women.

Roseanne sees this as a chance to even the score with Jenn. She will get one point for being asked, and give herself 5 points for turning the guy down. She may even give herself bonus points for being extra creative in her cruelty.

Jenn is out there dancing away on her 6th being-asked-to-dance point, and Roseanne books one point for being asked, 5 points for turning the guy down, and gives herself a bonus point for being extra creative in how cruelly she does it.

Now the score is Jenn-6, Roseanne-7 -- she has just catapulted herself into the lead by rejecting rather than accepting you! She is now "better" than Jenn because she is so "superior" now that she has had a chance to pretend that she is too good to dance with an "average" guy.

Exactly the opposite of what a lot of people think, beautiful women never feel the need to elevate themselves by putting everyone else down - but "average" and less attractive women do.

.

.

Further Reading:

.

Bonecrker #39 – Fat Bottom Girls

.

Bonecrker #57 – Approaching Fat/Ugly Chicks is Harmful to Your Self Esteem

---

Previous Zenpriest Index Next

Zenpriest #20 - There Is Nothing More Lonely Than Being With Someone You Cannot Talk To

. · 20 January 2002 · Archived copy · Original

QUOTE: *When you go home and shut that door your spouse will be there for you. I am not telling this for the victim spin, just driving home the point that you can rely on your spouse in a different way than friends.*

Yeah, right. And I have a great bridge for sale.

While that is the ideal of marriage - the "for richer or poorer, better or worse, sickness or health" thing - fewer things could be farther from today's reality.

Being one of the original marriage strikers gives me a strange perspective. If I had actually ever met a woman who I had believed would "be there for me", and who I "could rely on", as a spouse, I would be either married or divorced today, instead of congenitally single.

Keep in mind the statistics, and the fact that they represent real people. Somewhere around 80% of all divorces are initiated by the woman. I had friends who were shacking up freshman year of college whose parents forced them to get married, who were divorced before we graduated. Since I was in my early 20s, I have been fishing in a pond in which the concentration of divorced women has been growing until by now it is distilled to about 190 proof.

And, having dated dozens of divorced women, I can tell you that the reasons they give for the divorce virtually always boil down to one thing - "he wasn't paying me enough attention."

As Wanker just said -

"There is nothing more lonely than being with someone you cannot talk to."

Around here there is a joke about why men barbecue - it gives them a chance to retreat to the farthest corner of the yard to get away from the perpetual bitching.

Loneliness? Depends on how much you accept and like yourself versus how much validation you need to get from other people. Being an introvert, people do not energize me, they drain me. And, nothing in the world drains me like listening to a woman's incessant whining, complaining, and nagging.

I don't ever get lonely, but I often do feel the urge to resort to a baseball bat to get someone else who is lonely and who is using me to dump her emotional shit onto - **to shut the fuck up.**

Further reading:

Zenpriest #12 - Happiness

Previous Zenpriest Index Next

Zenpriest #21 - The Terrible Twos

. · 21 January 2002 · Archived copy · Original

I think this issue needs to be looked at in a larger context. If one looks around at today's culture and takes note of all the destructive effects of the female attitude of entitlement, then went on to devise social controls which would prevent such destructive effects in the future, I think you would end up with social values very much like the ones currently labeled "patriarchal."

Rather than viewing feminism as "conditioning" women to behave in completely self-centered ways, I see it more as a case of feminism regarding the socialization process which countered the natural tendency of all organisms toward selfishness - as "oppression."

Every parent who has had daily involvement in raising a child is familiar with the stage called "the terrible twos." This is the stage during which the naturally selfish infant is forced to come to terms with the fact that their desires will not always be met and their will not always prevail. I have no doubt that if the child were able to express what it knows in its "special infantile way of knowing", that it would consider the imposition of external values on it to be "oppression."

The vast majority of women I have met have seemed to be stuck emotionally at about age two. Any frustration of their desires would result in a tantrum. In many cases these were more subtle than throwing herself on the floor and thrashing around, but it was a tantrum nonetheless. So, rather than saying that feminism "conditioned" women to behave in an immature, selfish, and totally self-centered fashion, I would describe it as feminism destroying the social value system and the process of conditioning women out of their infantile and narcissistic world view.

This my gravest concern, and the reason I feel such a sense of urgency to get some resources for men to help them cope with the coming onslaught. I think this current generation of women - raised completely under feminism's complete control - is ruined beyond redemption.

Women of the boomer generation were at least raised with a value system other than "it's all about ME", and yet they adopted it enthusiastically. Gen X women were raised during the transition period, so some had parents who still held the old value system. But, this current generation, which has been completely dumbed down by the education system, and pandered to every second of their lives, is going to be totally useless and completely insufferable.

Imagine growing up with Lynndie England as your mother.

“Feminism starts out being very simple. It starts out being the instinct of a little child who says ‘it’s not fair’ and ‘you are not the boss of me,’ and it ends up being a worldview that questions hierarchy altogether.” -- Gloria Steinem, in the two hour HBO special on the life of Gloria Steinem entitled, *"Gloria: In Her Own Words."*

Further Reading:

Zenpriest #41 - Feminism is an Extended Infantile Tantrum

Woman: The Most Responsible Teenager in the House

Philalethes #10 – Male vs. Female Thinking

.

Previous Zenpriest Index Next

Zenpriest #22 - "Broken" Men and Women's "Fixing" Them

. · 22 January 2002 · Archived copy · Original

About 40 years ago, a few women were allowed to become so out of control with their mental illness and megalomania, that they declared men and maleness in general to be "broken" and called upon women in general to "fix" them. Of course, we all know that there is nothing women like more than fixing men, so millions of women enthusiastically signed on.

The problem was that these women didn't know jack shit about what maleness was about or what men or men's world was really like - they simply declared men to be defective females and set about changing males into females, and coincidentally changing females into males.

Just like any marxists, no matter how many times their grand experiments failed, they blamed the victims of those experiments instead of their own stupid ideas.

"What happened to men" is women pushed other men and maleness out of the lives of males, but did not get the results they were expecting.

As women took on more and more masculine traits, it really should not surprise anyone that their subconscious still forced them to seek out men who were more masculine than they were, so in order to pick up chicks males adapted by assuming a totally stereotyped "hyper-masculine" persona.

And, it worked. The more a male lived up to the stereotype of the worthless hyper-masculine male, the more short-term success he had with women. The more a man fought it and tried to live up to a more classic male model of rational honor, the more he got ignored, insulted, and screwed over by women.

A huge percentage of the men you deal with were raised by single moms who are clueless about maleness - they only know what **they** want. So, instead of seeing their sons as real human beings, they attempted to raise them to be projections of mom's fantasies. Up until puberty, these boys **attempted** to make mom happy by being exactly what she wanted him to be, **the less like his worthless father, the better.**

However, when puberty hits, and the reality that nature will always win out and nurture don't mean shit starts to become apparent, these square pegs which have been forced into round holes begin to revolt.

The men you are encountering today are ones raised essentially entirely by women. Either mom dumped dad because he wasn't paying her enough attention, and not making her feel speshul enough, or dad was simply away breaking his back 60-70 or more hours per week trying to keep up with cupcake's cancerous spending habits. So, after being away all day, he came home to a kid who had been told all day to "wait until your father gets home" so dad could be cast into the role of the heavy - all the kid ever saw of his father was his temperament.

So, the short answer to your question about "what happened to men" is that women tried to raise boys into men without a man's input, and **TOTALLY** fucked up the job.

Further Reading:

Zenpriest #1 – Women Raised Without Fathers

Pathologizing the Male Sexual Response -- by Rollo Tomassi

Previous Zenpriest Index Next

Zenpriest #23 - Marriage Is Becoming the Social Edsel of the 21st Century

. · 23 January 2002 · Archived copy · Original

I like to point out some of those assumptions which I see people making and pose them as additional questions to be considered - often that ends up changing the question that the person ends up asking.

So, the first question I would like to re-ask is - are women really any better off than they have been in the past, and/or are men really any worse off?

I believe the answer is "no."

In any sufficiently large and complex system it is impossible for things to become grossly out of equilibrium or balance.

Try this experiment - take a yardstick (or meter stick, for our non US friends) point both index fingers straight out and put one end of the yardstick on each finger. Then, by moving only one finger, try to move that one to the middle of the stick. It can't be done. As one finger moves in, the amount of the stick beyond it starts to extert leverage and put more pressure on the finger. This creates more friction, and soon the other end of the stick starts to move instead. The same process then starts to happen on the other end of the stick. This process flips back and forth until your two fingers are together in the middle of the stick, never more than 1/2 inch from the exact center.

So, what does this have to do with men and women? For everything women have supposedly "gained" en masse, individual women have lost something. Men and women were under equal pressure to marry in the old social system, so the moment women started gaining "independence" they started losing the cultural belief that they needed to be protected and supported. Women were having difficulty getting men to marry them by the early 80s.

There have been dozens of stories told here on this board about fathers, grandfathers, uncles, etc. married to

overbearing, controlling, harpies. 50-60 or more years ago, men had far less freedom to not marry than they do today. A great many men were trapped in situations just as unhappy, just as unbearable, as men talk about today. The difference is that now we men have much more choice to not get trapped in such misery.

Marriage is becoming the social Edsel of the 21st century. Would you buy any product which failed more than 50% of the time?

As more and more women are forced into careers as a result of the lack of men willing to marry and support them, women's values will gradually shift away from careers and marriage will come back to being valued more. And, given how poorly men regard marriage, those values will eventually have to include major enticements to get men to sign on.

Will these changes happen in your lifetime? Probably not.

Which brings me to my second philosophical point - I will leave arguments about how the world "should" be to the theologians. My challenge is to figure out how to survive the world as it IS. Given things like disease, and a much higher rate of truly grisly work-related accidents, the world of today is still far better for men than it was 100 years or more ago.

.

Previous Zenpriest Index Next

Zenpriest #24 - If a Woman Goes Into a Bar Wearing Sexy Clothes and No Panties...

. · 24 January 2002 · Archived copy · Original

If a bunch of guys saw a man walking down the street waving a handfull of $100 bills, and he later got mugged, virtually to a man we would say "he asked for it." Translated out of PC-prohibited-speak, that means he engaged in stupid, high risk behavior.

If I go out and buy a few thousand $$$ worth of electronic equipment, and leave it in the back seat of an unlocked car, that is entirely different from leaving it in a locked trunk. While stealing it from either location is a crime, there is a significant difference in applying some common sense and awareness of one's surroundings to a situation, and stupidly blundering through it blaming every bad thing that happens on someone else.

Someone with good deadbolt locks on their doors, an alarm system, and bars on the windows is going to get their house burglarized much less frequently than someone who leaves the blinds up with stereo gear etc. clearly visible through a window, and the door unlocked.

Read my story under "ex GF stories" entitled "jerkus aroundus maximus." This was a woman with whom I had argued in the past over "if a woman goes into a bar wearing sexy clothes and no panties, and later gets raped, did she 'ask for it'?"

If a store put a sign out front that said "free merchandise" and then when people walked in expecting to get "free merchandise" they were refused, the store could be sued for false advertising or possibly fraud. If they advertise a product they do not have at a low price, and people come in and ask for it, unless they have specifically stated in their ad that "supplies were limited", they have to issue rain checks.

Male "attention" is not "free" and women are not "entitled" to be the center of male attention the way many of them seem to think they are. They are playing a high risk game which will sometimes get them hurt, and very often will incur the hostility and animosity of men. A woman who attracts male attention by wearing low-cut tops forfeits the right to bitch about men paying attention to her tits, because all of her actions are designed purely for the purpose

of attracting attention.

Men are not warm-blooded vibrators who exist for women to flip on and off like light switches purely for women's entertainment. There is a joke going around about a guy who takes his wife on a big shopping spree, then says he never intended to pay for any of the stuff.

That is interpersonal fraud at the most fundamental level. It is essentially the same as a man who lies through his teeth and says "I love you" frequently just to get women to sleep with him. People who play that sort of vicious exploitive game have already violated the social contract of mutual civility, and thus do not deserve to have the benefit of it keeping them safe.

Yes, some innocent women get hurt, but the reality of rape statistics is that few middle-aged and older women get raped compared the vast majority who are in the 18-35 age range.

But, none of this has anything to do with Kobe Bryant. The girl went up to his room and by her own admission engaged in what most people recognize as "foreplay." IF she "changed her mind" and clearly said "No, I don't want to do this", unless Kobe was so far gone in the throes of "passion" (which women supposedly love) it would be hard for me to imagine that he stupidly pushed the issue.

Like most men, I believe she went up to the room of this famous sports star, acted like a typical groupie and had willingly sex with him, and now is ducking behind the feminine mystique to pretend that a virtuous girl like her was abused by this nasty brute.

Most men aren't falling for it, but that still may not be enough to keep him out of prison.

If the only value women put on sex is the power that it gives them to jerk us men around, I can testify that eventually a man will lose all interest in women entirely. Supporting women like this will turn out to be very destructive toward women because as they age men will no longer do the shit work of initiating sexual relationships and taking all the risk. Women get to go along for a free ride letting the man do all the work and take all the risk, and still get half the goodies.

I had no sympathy at all for the stupid bitch when she whined about her husband not wanting her any more, because she stood up so firmly for women's right to use sex to jerk men around.

And, I have very little sympathy for a woman who engages in a high-risk and very vicious exploitive game, and then gets burned by the fire she played with because it was so exciting.

The real question boils down to: - if a woman goes into a bar wearing sexy clothes and no panties, and later gets raped -- who gives a shit?

I don't.

.

Previous Zenpriest Index Next

Zenpriest #25 - The 5 Best Arguments for Staying Single I Have Ever Run Across

. · 25 January 2002 · Archived copy · Original

Harpie Quote: *"but why is housewife heralded as the best woman's job, while men actually get to produce, create, and imagine!!!"*

Y'know, [Harpie], you are the 5 best arguments for staying single I have ever run across.

You have that incurable female tunnel vision. SOME men get to " produce, create, and imagine", but for every one who does there are 19 who crawl into holes in the ground to mine out the coal that provides your electricity, or the ore that gets made into steel for that nice new car you want, or cut down the trees that go into the lumber to build that nice house in the 'burbs you want, or go to work on construction when it is blistering hot or freezing cold to build that nice environmentally conditioned office you work in.

Kathryn Hepburn was one of the greatest actresses of the 20th century, and unlike women today was smart enough to know that she couldn't "have it all." She knew that choices had prices and when she chose to "produce, create, and imagine!" she knew that she was chosing not to have a family.

I have no problem at all with women having careers. However, I am not willing to be item # 4 on a "to do" list - a disposable accessory which enables her to get to # 5, having kids.

The only woman I ever made the mistake of "oppressing" into living expense-free on my generosity was a trained chef. I had to apply my boot to her ass frequently to get her off said ass and out looking for a job where she could "produce, create, and imagine!" instead of watching Oprah. Being in the habit of doing the household laundry myself, I simply kept doing it after she moved in. I also had a housecleaning service which kept the house up, so the sum total of her tasks at keeping house were to buy groceries, which I split the costs with her, and cook. It took me at most 10 minutes to load the dishwasher and clean up the kitchen after a meal, no matter what a god-awful mess she made.

So, go ahead and have your "career", and keep turning up your nose at men who work as garage mechanics. And, when you are in your mid-40s and going home to a cat named Fluffy and lean cuisine in the microwave, maybe you will wake the fuck up to how thick you were in your late 20s.

"There was a struggle going on inside of me. I mean, he lost his job at the auto body shop when they went [bankrupt] and closed down. Then he couldn't find another one. But it was months and months, and I was trying to live on my welfare check and it just wasn't enough. Finally, I couldn't do it anymore [because] it was just too much pressure on me [even though] he is the love of my life. I told him he had to leave even though I knew it wasn't really his fault... I couldn't take it, so I made him leave." -- A woman interviewed by Kathryn Edin, reported in *The American Prospect*, January 3, 2000

Previous Zenpriest Index Next

Zenpriest #26 - Second Wavers vs. The Suffragettes

. · 26 January 2002 · Archived copy · Original

Quote: *"The Women's lib movement started off like ours, with some legitimate grievances and a desire to right them."*

That is one of the most dangerous and destructive myths of our time. Virtually all the early names of "Women's Lib" - Friedan, Steinem, DeBeauvior - were dedicated radical Marxists, or virulent man-hating lesbians like Kate Millet and Valerie Solanis.

I have a copy of *The Feminine Mystique* that I purchased and read (if I have your age right) 2 years before you were born. This is what is says on the cover: *"Today American women are waking up to the fact that they have been sold into virtual slavery by a lie invented and marketed **by men.***"

Another interesting tidbit from the cover - *"For years American women have been assured that they had all they needed to be perfectly happy and fulfilled - hard working husbands, lovely houses, and wonderful babies, babies, babies."*

Fast forward the 41 years since TFM came out and what do we have? Women who want (high-earning) husbands, lovely houses, and babies enough to have them as single mothers or go to court and fight their husbands tooth and nail for those babies, babies, babies. Gee, the brainwashing they have endured to make them want these things must have been subtle indeed in a country swimming in feminist propaganda.

Feminism has always been about women blaming men for the choices they made and how things worked out as a result of those choices. Frieden goes into a huge long diatribe about the contents of women's magazines without ever once seeming to grasp the notion that women were buying the things **voluntarily.**

DeBeauvior, in a now very famous quote, even went so far as to state that she believed no woman should be given the **choice** to stay at home and raise her children, because too many women would make that choice. Thus, feminism has actually been the opposite of what its PR has said - it is about giving women fewer choices rather than more choices

---

"No woman should be authorized to stay at home and raise her children. Society should be totally different. Women should not have that choice, precisely because if there is such a choice, too many women will make that one." -- Interview with Simone de Beauvoir, "Sex, Society, and the Female Dilemma," Saturday Review, June 14, 1975, p.18

I just think we need to be very careful in identifying the social movements that are being discussed. The movement for suffrage accomplished its goal, and then had no further reason to exist. When you called it "Women's Lib" I assumed you were referring to the movement which sprang up in the 60s based on victimhood. As far as I know, that term was never used to describe the push for voting rights.

I think it also clouds the issue terribly to over-simplify the issues which went into voting rights. The current notion of popular democracy was considered and specifically rejected by the architects of the US government. It was intended as a Republic and federation of States, and was never intended to be as powerful as it has become. One of

the framers of the constition even went on record as saying that a pure democracy will always degenerate to mob rule. Institutions such as the Electoral College were designed specifically to moderate the effects of large population centers being able to impose their collective preferences on less populous states.

Just as today we are told that driving is a privilege not a right, the franchise was never intended to be handed out to anyone and everyone simply because they happened to be born here. At the very beginning, only landowners were given the vote, because they not only had a vested stake in the community, but they were also instrumental in building it. Interestingly, the "Poll Tax" which was later used to deny people the ability to vote was originally conceived as a way to expand voting rights beyond land and business owners. It was a measure of fiscal responsibility and success very similar to the requirement today in many states that one cannot license a car without proof of insurance or other demonstrable means of fiscal responsibility.

What women had to do was to convince those in control of the system that they (women) would use the franchise wisely and responsibly, and not frivolously by doing things like voting for a candidate because they liked his hair or the way he kissed his wife. In short, there was a sort of voting test much like today's driving tests which serve the purpose of testing certain basic minimal qualifications and competencies required for a complex process.

Such principles were not directed toward women specifically, because the franchise was also denied to most convicted felons, transients, and people who could not read well enough to know what the ballot said. The concept of women as flightly, irrational, and irresponsible certainly has more than enough proof today to make the point that concerns over whether they would use the franchise responsibly were probably quite justified in the 19th century. The overall risks and fragility of the country were certainly much greater then than they are today.

I know it is a sound-bite world, but I think we do need to be very careful in how we state our points. The "Women's Lib" movement of the last part of the 20th century relies heavily on the suffrage movement for its legitimacy, but I believe there is no continuity at all between them aside from the fact that they are both about women.

Further Reading:

Republic versus Democracy?

Previous Zenpriest Index Next

Zenpriest #27 - Ignoring Women

. · 27 January 2002 · Archived copy · Original

.

Quote: "If there is one piece of tactical knowledge modern man needs to add, it's the female hot button: being ignored."

I would like to take your tactical point, and expand it to show how it works *strategically.*

Once men understand *why* being ignored is so devastating to women, we will have a weapon of unbelievable power.

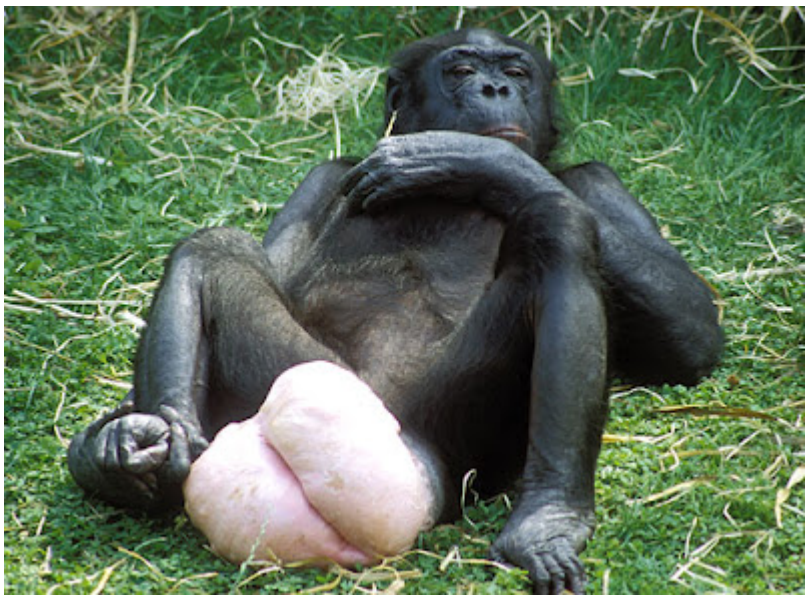
I'm not going to write a thesis on this, so just let me say that I have researched the hell out of this and can provide all the citations and evidence – the outline will be presented in sound bites.

Everywhere in nature, the male is the reproductive servant of the female. This goes down to the level of plants which have "male" and "female" parts.

The ripening of an egg, or ovum, is a time and energy intensive job, so the male is designed to be ready to fertilize that ovum when the female notifies him that she is "ready."

In the rest of the natural world, females announce their readiness to the entire world with a variety of cues - smell being the most significant, but visual cues come in a close second.

When a female chimpanzee is in estrus, her genitals swell up and become a SPECIFIC shade of bright pink. Jane Goodall observed one such female whose genitals could be seen from across a valley - nearly a mile or 2 away.



There is a species of fish in which the belly of the female turns a particular shade of red when she is gravid. A block of wood with the lower half painted that exact shade of red will drive males into a mating frenzy.

Smell is even more important. There are MANY species in which a female in heat gives off pheromones which are specific to that species which can be picked up by males as much as 5 miles away.

Ok, now here is the bombshell which usually blows a lot of men's groups apart. One of the most destructive concepts we have against us is creationism. Unless people are able to see that humans are part of the natural world and ruled by the same influences as all other living things, they are able to believe that change can be imposed "top down" by some sort of outside authority, instead of arising inevitably from our inherent natures.

This would be our "is-ness" - our inherent nature which makes us what we are, and not what we are not.

Mating behavior does NOT get mediated in the new brain, or the cortex. It happens in the brainstem and spinal cord, the old or "reptile" brain.

In the days when such experiments were still allowed, you could open a cat's skull and suck out all the cortex. Sexual and mating behavior was not affected at all, but social behavior was destroyed.

Human females have introduced a new factor in the game - they ovulate *covertly.* There is no way to tell when they are fertile and when they aren't - although we are beginning to hear about studies which suggest that women on the pill smell differently.

The human male adaptation to this has been to pay greater attention to women and the subtle cues they give off that they are fertile. These are these "signals" that women always talk about giving off and getting so angry at men when they don't pick up on them.

The problem lies in the fact that women have become adept at *faking* these cues in order to trigger men's mating responses - thus giving them huge amounts of power to manipulate men. Men react in their spinal cords to a woman's facial lips reddened with lipstick, exactly the same way they would react to a different set of lips reddened with sexual ripeness.

Purely *female* power depends entirely on how many males she can capture the attention of. The more males vying

for the chance to fertilize her egg, the more *choices* she has.

So, when women like Andrea Dworkin say they have no power, they are speaking the absolute truth. She has no *female* power because she is ugly as sin and men run in the other direction screaming. So, she wants *male* power. In Warren Farrel's one really good book, "Why Men Are The Way They Are" he talks about females becoming used to being "genetic celebrities" and men being "genetic groupies."

Women grow up being accustomed to having to do nothing more than show up in order to be the center of male attention. Like any child, their behavior gets shaped to maximize the rewards they get, and by two years after they hit puberty most females are masters of the art of sexual manipulation.

This is the reason for the extreme restrictions placed on girls in tribal cultures where the kind of endlessly self-centered manipulation of immature females would destroy the tribe. Women in the middle east wear the burqa and women in Africa take little girls and cut their genitals *off* because purely selfish behavior will destroy the cohesiveness of the tribe which is essential for its survival.

The old structure of marriage was designed mostly to benefit older women because the power of a young fertile female over men of all ages is universal. By locking people into a marriage which could not be broken, women were guaranteed to be cared for into old age. The smarter ones used the years of their peak sexual attractiveness to build emotional bonds with their husbands which would endure into their "not so pretty years."

When women got "liberated" from all this, the culture was thrown back to a situation where sexual power was everything. And, so far the first 2 quarters of the gender war have been fought in women's territory when they did still have sexual power.

But, things are changing. The boomers are getting old, and boomer men are losing interest in women at the same time that boomer women are getting so ugly that no one takes an interest in them. Chapin's series about the "Quagmire of Older Women." is dead on target.

If men allow women to get away with the shit they have gotten away with, and come in and rescue women from the painful consequences of it, there will be no learning at the cultural level.

The strategy which I believe will work for men is the equivalent of the labor management practice of a "lockout." Women wanted out of the system as it was, ok. Now that they are out, we don't let them back in.

There is a great old story about PT Barnum. One of his shows was so successful that the crowds were becoming dangerous. People were so packed that there was a real danger of some of them getting trampled. So, he had his carnies open some of the gates and his barkers start shouting "This way to see the great EGRESS!"

The herd surged through the gates and found out that "egress" means "exit."

I believe that natural forces are going to rule the day and that they are already in motion and already having an effect - I believe they are what is responsible for the effects that you are seeing. As decent men have gone on a marriage strike, the sneaky fuckers have moved in. (that is the actual name of an anthropological theory)

The birth rate in the black community has not fallen a bit from the destruction of the black family. I know one black guy who has 6-7 women he boinks on a regular basis. Black women are pretty hard up because so many black men are in prison and so many of them are dying so young.

So, back to the point about ignoring women. It is more than just a tactic for an individual man to use, it is a culture level STRATEGY for men which will have women screaming for their men back in no time at all.

And [it] is completely full of shit [to believe men should] "turn the other cheek and don't take revenge on women".

Boomer men OWE it to younger men to make life as miserable as we possibly can for boomer women.

Ok, now here is where the fact that I am NOT a christian really begins to come out.

Buddhists don't believe in "salvation." We believe in kharma. Everyone suffers according to the level of their own bullshit.

When that dumb motherfucking televangelist called for "forgiveness" of Karla Faye Tucker because at the last moment she "found the lord", I went berserk.

Women have made their bed, and if men do not make them lie in it, then men have asked for all the shit they have gotten and I will cease to have any sympathy at all for them.

I simply cannot go back to the innocent optimism that I had when I was a teenaged boy. I have personally been burned so many times, and seen every man I know burned so many times, that I am no longer "Charlie Brown, the sincere BLOCKHEAD", willing to be made a fool of ONE MORE TIME by Lucy who suckers me into believing that she will do what she promises, but a cagey old curmudgeon who simply expects women to lie and cannot be hoodwinked by their lies.

.

.

Men now must completely destroy marriage. It is too corrupt and too fouled to fix. It is a derelict building which MUST be torn down so that something useful can be built in its place.

We cannot stop the marriage strike. The real "men's movement" is millions of wildcat strikes of one man who has woken up to what bullshit "marriage" as it exists today really is.

No matter how big a dam one builds, a river will *always* overcome it. We cannot either push, or hold back, the river. It will proceed at its own pace.

We can, however, clear out the snags which naturally hold it back and let natural forces speed up the current.

Women have turned their backs on us when *we* needed *them,* now we must turn our backs on them when *they* need *us*.

I must now discuss the "uniting" impulse of women, for that plays the chief, if not the sole part in her sexuality. But it must not be supposed that this is greater in one sex than the other. Any such idea comes from a confusion between the desire for a thing and the stimulus towards the active part in securing what is desired. ***Throughout the animal and plant kingdom, the male reproductive cells are the motile, active agents, which move through space to seek out the passive female cells, and this physiological difference is sometimes confused with the actual wish for, or stimulus to, sexual union. And to add to the confusion, it happens, in the animal kingdom particularly, that the male, in addition to the directly sexual stimulus, has the instinct to pursue and bodily capture the female, whilst the latter has only the passive part to be taken possession of.*** These differences of habit must not be mistaken for real differences of desire. -- Otto Weininger, *Sex and Character*, Male and Female Sexuality

---

Further reading:

EOTM: Why Men Go For "The Look"

EOTM: The Biological Foundations of Sexuality

.

Your Attention Please -- by Rollo Tomassi

.

Getting What You Want, Wanting What You Get – by Fred Reed

Rats!

.

Previous Zenpriest Index Next

Zenpriest #28 - Ethical Sociopaths

. · 28 January 2002 · Archived copy · Original

[One reaction to feminism] is what I term "becoming an ethical sociopath." What I mean by that is embarking on a path of spiritual and self development which leads to coming to terms with or eliminating one's faults, and becoming confident enough about one's virtues to self-validate and no longer need the validation of women.

It may seem like a very fine line I am drawing here, but I believe it is a significant one. If a woman tells me every day what a rotten asshole I am, it is still my choice and something within my power to regard her opinion as insignificant. It is a mental battle that I must win against myself, but one that can be won.

The reason I may seem to harp on this, is that I am dedicated to helping men get their feet back under them and reclaim their power. I am not saying that it is easy, I am just saying that it can be done.

When a woman tells me I am a rotten asshole, there are basically two possibilities - 1) she is right, I really am a rotten asshole, or 2) she is wrong, I'm really ok, and she is a complete idiot.

I'll take what is behind door number 2.

This is what I mean when I keep saying that women have thrown away their own power. Yes, in times past, women did really have immense amounts of power based on the desire of most men to please them. But, by going so absolutely insane and self-absorbed, what they have ended up doing is training men how to live and survive mentally and emotionally without their approval.

I mean, really who can take seriously the opinions of creatures afraid to go out of the house without troweling a layer of paint on their faces?

Why in the world would I elevate the opinions of someone who is afraid of her own face over my own knowledge of myself?

.

Previous Zenpriest Index Next

Zenpriest #29 - The Future's Cultural Time-bombs

. · 29 January 2002 · Archived copy · Original

As pissed off as you guys are at women, most of you remember a time when women were something other than distilled viciousness. You seek and yearn for a different type of woman, you at least believe that such exists.

[The boys today] are growing up in a world where their mothers are the biggest skanks of all, because they should know better and because the boys feel instinctively that they should be able to trust mom.

Trying to explain to such boys that women who are capable of anything other than extreme cruelty will be like some of the things I have tried to get across to younger men here - they won't believe you.

Some of these boys will hate females with an intensity which makes arthur look like Alan Alda.

I see the potential in a few years for unprecedented levels of violence against women. A permanent social and economic underclass, deprived of breeding opportunity and ANY sort of positive deeply emotional contact, isn't going to like a bunch of older guys who found one way or another to do ok within the system that they are locked out of any more than they are going to like women.

As more incidents like Columbine happen, and these cultural time bombs go off, there are going to be calls for ever more laws to restrict your behavior, and be as intrusive into your lives as they want to be. Men accused of molesting children these days are routinely required to undergo a test in which their penis is wired to a machine and he is shown violent and kiddie porn and his sexual reaction is measured. Of course, the test doesn't mean shit and it will register anxiety and it gets interpreted as arousal.

I understand why guys want to run away to other countries - what is called "the Geographical Cure" - but all this shit will be everywhere in another generation or two. What then? Gonna leave it for the little boys to sort out?

A couple of generations of men have dropped the fucking ball that they ended up handing off to most of the guys here. My gang of idiots let this get started, and our little brothers and sisters - or first kids of those who had them early - just followed in our ruts.

But, some of us have got to turn around and do something to help these little boys and not abandon them to the all-consuming harridans.

This thing has such immense cultural momentum, it's unbelievable. Women are cutting the arms off little girls and

letting them bleed to death, and everyone rushes to comfort her, because we know that women are always the victims.

Monsters are running loose among us, and they are creating new monsters every day. The media tries to paint Aileen Wuornos in a sympathetic manner. It's ok to be a monster, if you are woman, everybody understands. Murder is cool, if a woman gets off on it. I think that was Karla Faye Tucker, but it might have been Karla Hromolka.

Guys need to start screaming about how this culture of hatred is going to backfire in a big way, and worst of all on women.

Hate bounces. Anyone here heard that before?

You need to start screaming because when it starts to happen "they" are going to start blaming you, and passing more laws to make your lives hell.

This is the one and only time I am going to use this particular word, because it has entered the junkfood category of meaningless words - empowerment.

All power comes from willingness to act. I hear a lot of helplessness from the guys here, and I keep preaching that they aren't as helpless as they think. But they keep going down the same old ruts because they feel safer and less risky.

But, those ruts keep leading to the same dead end.

When a person isn't getting what they want, it is pretty much a habit to do more of the same. But there comes a point when you are doing as much of it as you can, that you really ought to ask yourself what it is going to take to prove to you that it is NOT going to work. And, once you have figured that out, make the decision to try something else.

Somebody has to defend the boys, and stand up for positive maleness, and try to get bright lights shown on the stories of corruption and plain vileness of women.

Because as long as "The Feminine Mystique" is not shattered, women will be able to appear to men any way they want to appear.

Be prepared guys. And help out the little guys whenever and wherever you can.
.

Previous Zenpriest Index Next

Zenpriest #30 - Gurl Math

. · 30 January 2002 · Archived copy · Original

Quote: "The changing ratio of female to male students is a social phenomenon worthy of speculation. As women assume the role of breadwinner, are men becoming less economically driven? Does an anti-male bias in education discourage males (advancement), as another study suggests?"

Y'know, it takes a full PhD in something like sociology to become so stupid as to seriously ask such questions.

"If you fill your living room with wadded newspapers, and then throw a match into them, do you think your house will burn down?"

Take away not only the motivation, but the means as well, for men to become financially successful, and d'ya think men might actually become less financially successful?

Give women more than 50% of college degrees (since 1980) and more than 50% of all management level jobs (since 2001) and just where are these financially successful men supposed to come from? Out of the same ass that all the cooked statistics came from? I guess gurl-math somehow sees it as being possible for women to get 60% of the best paying jobs, and for men to get the other 60% so all those high achieving women can find an even higher achieving man, all the while also making $1 for every $1 a man makes.

The law of summation of paradoxes dictates that at some point the entire system of delusion has to collapse.

"No matter how strong a woman is, no matter how much of a feminist a woman is, she still tends to look down on men who are not sufficiently aggressive and successful... We still want men to achieve as much or more, and we have contempt for those who don't. They're marginal; they're losers." -- writer and professor Jane Young in *Good Will Towards Men* by Jack Kammer

"[S]leek young women in the Prada-handbag crowd... cast chilly, appraising glances around the room at power-lunch restaurants and dot-com launch parties. You can almost see the thought balloons over their heads: 'Anyone here making more than me and worth talking to?' Most of [the] female clients [of one professional matchmaker who worked at two dating services in San Francisco for ten years] were over 30. They made a lot of money but were determined to find a man who made even more. Their happiness seemed to depend on it." -- columnist Sue Hutchinson, *San Jose (California) Mercury News,* October 1, 2000

Previous Zenpriest Index Next

Zenpriest #31 - If Things You See Just Don't Seem To Make Any Sense, Check Your Assumptions. You Will Find That One Or More Of Them Is Wrong.

. · 31 January 2002 · Archived copy · Original

After spending years in exactly the same sort of "what the fuck is going on?" state, I began to apply the principle Ayn Rand states over and over again in "Atlas Shrugged" - if things you see just don't seem to make any sense, check your assumptions. You will find that one or more of them is wrong.

The situation as I see it for a lot of guys is like a mosaic - specifically, like one of those composite pictures which are made up of thousands of little pictures. If you stand with the thing right in front of your face, all you see is a few of the little pictures and they seem random and chaotic and don't add up to anything. But, if you start stepping back and work to detach yourself and separate your observations from what you want, at some point the larger picture appears and snaps into focus.

If you take the simple phenomenon of physical obesity, I think people are following exactly the same behavioral patterns when it comes to relationships that they are following when it comes to food - short term gratification of sensual indulgences without regard to the longer term consequences.

[Nice] Guys are being pushed out of the reproductive pool in two ways:

1- Genetically, because the EvilGuys™ are out there snapping up all the breeding opportunities with the stupid cows.

2 - Valuewise, because a lot of your potential mates have already gotten themselves pregnant with demon spawn. You would have to take on a woman with a few of these bastard kids and try to teach them your values, along with any kids you might have. One paradox there is that in order to do that you would already be violating part of that

value system you are trying to pass on.

Even if you were able to find a woman who hadn't shucked out a bastard or two and had kids of your own with her, there are absolutely no protections for your ability to stay in their lives and pass on your values. Fathers have been completely marginalized out of the family and dads today are fighting like hell for just the ability to see their kids on a regular basis. Once cupcake has dropped the nuke of "abuse" on you, you could end up like those poor bastards who have to pay $85-$300 per hour for "supervised visitation." Great. You get to shell out a few hundred bucks to spend 2 hours in the equivalent of an interrogation room interacting with your kid while a lesbian wimmins's-studies/socialwork major breathes down your neck and watches your every move under a microscope.

How do you play the game if you are after a reward which is no longer a part of the structure of the game? Answer: you can't. It's like Global Thermonuclear War – the only “winning” move is not to play.

Where does a nice-guy like you fit in? He doesn't. The feminidiots declared open season on guys like you and you are being hunted into extinction.

Those are hard answers, and I know they aren't the ones that NiceGuys™ are looking for, but those are the answers I see.

Being an old-style male and having fierce pride in men and maleness, I have great faith that men will be able to adapt and find a way to beat the game. I don't have the answer, because my choice was to refuse to play - or more accurately to choose to play only limited parts of the game.

What I'm trying to do is pass on what I have learned so that younger guys can build on it and come up with some innovations - exactly like science and technology have progressed on the work of each generation and added new ideas and knowledge to it which led to new techniques.

If I were going to make some suggestions for approaches which might be more useful than others, I would say start with looking at older style courtship processes. When I was a kid, the first question parents would ask their child who had a new love interest was "Do they come from a good family?" That one simple question contained a huge amount of wisdom. Look at the value system they were raised in and thus are likely to hold to. Try to meet a woman's family. If her mother or sisters are skanks, or her dad is an asshole, or gone because he either got pushed out of the family or was a deadbeat, look somewhere else.

There is another factor in that as well. There really is something which might be called "social capital." A good family reputation benefits all the members of a family and a bad one harms all of them. If your brother fucked someone over, you automatically became less trustworthy, so families exerted a great deal of internal pressure on their members to behave ethically.

Does the tradition of "honor killings" start to make sense?

Another suggestion would be to take a real hard look at yourself and get real honest with yourself regarding any degree to which you behave like a skank behaves. As irritating as she can be at times, MNIK points out that a lot of guys are just as picky about women and have just as shallow criteria when it comes to looks as NiceGuys™ complain about skanks being.

If a flat-chested 2 otherwise met all your criteria, would you consider her? Any NiceGuy™ who cannot answer an immediate and unconflicted "yes" to that question is carrying around some internal hypocrisy which is going to keep tripping him up in his quest for a NiceGal™.

As the old saying goes, you cannot con a man who is honest with himself.

Guys [often] talk about wanting intimacy and closeness, and I can tell them that I have personally experienced the old "Ugly Duckling" fairy tale and watched a 2 turn into a solid 7 right before my very eyes when snuggled up against her. I have also gone to bed with 9s who morphed overnight into -1s.

Even for the guys who want to be "playas", if we put strictly in cash terms, if you had one 10, and I had four 5s, would you trade me even up? If not, the guy would be a fool, and if so, I would be the fool.

Like I keep saying, I am not without sympathy for the situation of younger men. But I have been through enough of the territory to know that what many of them think it looks like out there, is not what it actually looks like. I'm a hard-assed old codger throwing buckets of cold water on some guys who have illusions and fantasies which I don't see as being any different than the illusions and fantasies young women hold these days.

Female infanticide and selective neglect of female infants resulting in their deaths have been very real things in the past. A few hundred years ago, the average ratio of men of breeding age to women of breeding age was about 130:100. Female sexuality (breeding capacity) really was a commodity for which there was far more demand than supply, which explains the high cultural value which was placed on it. Not only does our biology drive us men to compete for desirable females, cultural circumstances and values amplified this even further.

I was raised to be a NiceGuy™, but women of my generation were also raised to be NiceGals™. Then feminidiocy came along and convinced them that being a NiceGal™ was proof that they were "oppressed" by the dreaded evil "Patriarchy", and that in order to combat that they had to become skanks - so, many of them did.

A lot of NiceGuys™ think that the way to cope with the situation is to become EvilGuys™. The problem is that they can't - most of them just don't have it in them. Let just one woman scratch them where they itch, and they instantly revert back to being the NiceGuys™ that they really are, which gives the skank the chance to revert to her real type.

A lot of people think I'm an EvilGuy™. (MNIK thinks I shave with a blowtorch.) But, I'm really just a HardGuy™. The world wants us to be hard and will either beat us into being hard, or beat us to death trying. Contrary to all the crap women have put out, they really want us to be HardGuys™ too, which is why they beat the shit out of us.

The reason that women seem to go for EvilGuys™ is because they are the only HardGuys™ left. All the NiceGuys™ are really SoftGuys™ and they are about as appealing as oatmeal when the Rottweilers that women have become really want to sink their teeth into a flavorful but tough steak.

The course [which I think is the right one] is - harden yourself, become successful, demand fair compensation for what you have to give a woman or don't give it.

You may still end up without a woman, because women really have become ruined by feminidiocy, but you will get to keep your soul. Every man has to make the decision for himself which is more important to him.
.

Previous Zenpriest Index Next

Zenpriest #32 - The Glass Pussy Ceiling

. · 1 February 2002 · Archived copy · Original

I'm a male of the "old school" of masculinity. I realize that makes me a dinosaur in this day and age. But, having watched this whole slow-motion cultural train wreck from the beginning, I see men throwing away a lot of their strengths.

After all the yammering at them by women to become more like women, I see men of today doing just that. And the problem with that is that the female traits they are emulating are precisely the ones which tend to make women ineffective.

Let me use an example to illustrate. We all know by now that the whole "wage-parity/glass-ceiling" bit is complete horsehit. Women make less money than men because they work fewer hours, work less hard during the hours they do spend, take more time off work, and gravitate toward less risky jobs - thereby avoiding all the aspects of jobs for which higher compensation is paid.

What I see here is a bunch of NiceGuys™ complaining that there is a "glass pussy-ceiling." "Us NiceGuys™ only get 75 pieces of ass for every 100 that those EvilGuys™ get!" And, that's true, because EvilGuys™ do more of what it takes to get pussy than NiceGuys™ do, so they get paid more in the coin of the realm of the sexual marketplace.

Just like I have been saying to women all these years, choices have prices and consequences. You can play it safe, OR you can get laid - take your choice based on which results you prefer.

And, what I hear back sounds a whole lot like "But, we want to play it safe, and get laid." to which I say the same thing that I say to women whining about wanting a "woman-friendly workplace" - things just don't work that way. They never have, don't now, and I'm pretty sure they never will.

Guys who are aggressive and take risks, and who are thick skinned enough to ignore rejection, get laid more than guys who don't. And, because they take risks, some of them end up being Kobed. There's something inherent in the meaning of the word "risk" in that.

I don't want men to follow women down that primrose path to helplessness and ineffectiveness. Male values and ethics have served me very well in life and I have not only been able to survive pretty comfortably without massive and intrusive government intervention and protection, in many cases I have been able to survive, in spite of it.

You may have run across my notorious dictum that the best way to kill a bad idea is to implement it - as quickly and thoroughly and with as much fanfare as you can. As long as you fight it, the people pushing for it can paint you as obstructionist and claim that their hare-brained idea will be the salvation of everything. With no evidence to the contrary, their bullshit plays better to onlookers who want it all than your more disciplined approach and you get played to be the bad guy and lose in the court of public opinion. No matter how long and hard you fight it, people will find ways to push it through the back door and implement it incrementally, and the idiocy of it will be masked by the fact that you're keeping things working.

If, on the other hand, you implement it immediately and completely, making sure everyone knows who is responsible for it, when things go to shit the spectators start shouting for the heads of those who thought it up.

I have been fighting this progressive criminalization of male desire since the early 80s. I went head to head against

MacKinnon and Dworkin and the religious right over the Minneapolis porn ordinances, along with a small handfull of other men. That was a lot of fun, NOT! The diabolical thing about criminalizing male desire is that we are all guilty of it - we walk around on the lam just waiting for some woman to drop the hammer on us.

If things get as much worse in the next 20 years as they have gotten in the last 20, when the 20 and 30 somethings are 40 and 50 somethings, are they going to be hanging around on forums like this one talking to the then 20 and 30 somethings saying "yeah, you guys sure have it bad!"?

The reason any culture criminalizes something is to try to stamp it out. Apparently, they are now trying to stamp out "unsolicited compliments" and any form of male initiative in starting relationships. And guys keep letting themselves get fined and tossed in jail for providing the benefits of relationships to women who aren't doing jack shit to bring them about.

hmmmmmmm

Yeah, I know guys are saying "But, if we don't pursue women then some EvilGuy™ will and then he will get the pussy we might have been able to have." Yeah, that's true, but he also might end up like Kobe Bryant, or paying child support to some skank for the next 18 years.

Young guys gotta take the risk, I know that. The screaming hornies demand it. So, if they are, at least go for the big payoffs.

Previous Zenpriest Index Next

Zenpriest #33 - Salesmanship 101

. · 2 February 2002 · Archived copy · Original

Maybe Doc Love and DeAngelo have just found a way to package some universal truths in sound bites, but I didn't think of what I was saying as "relationship advice." It was more in the line of "how to get through this world without letting it drive you crazy advice."

Taking it completely out of the relationship realm, what is the first thing they teach in Sales 101 about the most important aspect of selling? **ASK FOR THE SALE!** If you go shopping for a car and one salesman stands around and yaks your ear off about how great the car is then just stands there expecting you to be spontaneously overcome with a great desire to shuck out thousands of bucks, and a different one says "I really, and I do mean REALLY want your business, what is it going to take to get it?" - which one are you more likely to buy from?

There is this insane notion going around among young men that the only way they can get a woman to sleep with them is to pretend they don't want her to. Guys complain about all the mixed messages they get from women, but don't realize that the messages they give out are no less ambiguous.

Yes, I know that for young men their internal hornies are screaming at them so loudly they just assume that everyone around them can hear too. It isn't true. Yes, in a general sense women are aware that most men want to sleep with attractive women. But, there is a huge difference at the interpersonal level between "yup, guys want to have sex with girls, and I'm a guy and you're a girl, soooo - draw your own conclusions" and "I want to sleep with YOU." The second is at least a departure from the "generic relationship" and acknowledges the other person as a unique individual.

It is also nothing but basic sales to **QUALIFY YOUR PROSPECTS.** Car salesmen know there are tire-kickers and there are buyers. And, they'll spend a few minutes with a tire-kicker, but the moment a buyer walks in the door they'll drop them like a hot rock and pursue a sale they can close.

This has nothing to do with being a "playa", and is in fact the antithesis of the assumed basic dishonesty which most people associate with the playa mentality. What I'm suggesting is to get **MORE** honest with yourself and other people, not less.

Yes, I know a lot of guys have been beaten down by feminist bullshit. And I know that a few posts aren't going to reverse that process. But, I also believe that guys have some responsibility for improving their own situations. If I try to tell a guy that there is nothing wrong with wanting what he wants, and he tries to argue with me -- WTF?? - ok, I give in, you're right, you really are pieces of shit!

There's nothing "bad" about wanting sex. If cupcake's father hadn't wanted sex, she would not be alive. But most guys carry around such a huge load of guilt and shame for it that they stand around looking like whipped cocker spaniels hoping some woman will take pity on them and hand out a mercy hump.

It don't happen!

What she wants is for **the guy** to take the responsibility for moving both of them into bed. She wants to maintain her fantasy of a being a reluctant virgin, and have him call out the wanton woman inside of her.

Guys who do this - get laid. Guys who won't, don't.

It is absolutely true that we suffer according to the level of our own bullshit. When we become willing to let go of our bullshit, then our suffering decreases.

Any guy who holds a woman in contempt and calls her a "slut" for sleeping with other guys is bullshitting himself if he thinks he is not going to hold a woman in subconscious contempt for sleeping with him. It is like the old Grouch Marx joke about not wanting to belong to any club who would have someone like him as a member.

It all boils down to accepting oneself as ok, accepting what one wants as ok to want, and then going about looking for it.

"Hey, you're cute. I want to sleep with you. Do you want to sleep with me? No? Ok. **NEXT!**"

"Hey, you're cute. I want to sleep with you. Do you want to sleep with me? Yes? **COOL!**"

Women have a right to not want to fuck someone, just as every guy has that same right to not want to fuck any particular woman. Find out if she wants to, and if she doesn't **THEN MOVE ON TO ONE WHO MIGHT.**

There's nothing "playa" about that - it is just being honest with yourself and with that other person and respecting both of your rights as human beings.

It is obvious as hell that most women really do want to fuck someone, because they ARE, and it would serve most guys really well to ask what the guys that they are fucking are doing which is different from what they are doing.

If someone sold cars for a living, and the guy next to him was whipping his ass in sales each month, wouldn't it make sense for him to study the other guy's sales techniques and try to emulate them if he really wanted to sell cars?

Previous Zenpriest Index Next

Zenpriest #34 - When Desiring Women is Outlawed, Only Outlaws Will Desire Women

. · 3 February 2002 · Archived copy · Original

Technically, the law is the law and while one might wish to disagree with it and perform an act of civil disobedience, one has to do so with an awareness of the consequences and a willingness to pay them. If the feminidiots want to define looking a woman in the eye as "rape" and can intimidate enough lawmakers into passing that law, then looking a woman in the eye is rape in every sense that matters to a man.

I'm sure you remember the controversy over gun control here in the US, and those bumper stickers that read "When guns are outlawed, only outlaws will have guns." Well, when desiring women is outlawed (which it basically has been in most English speaking countries) then only outlaws will desire women.

The feminidiots won that round, because they capitalized on historic prudish and puritan attitudes toward sex and succeeded in escalating those horrible "impure thoughts" that so many men have from merely shameful to criminal. And, the so-called "average good woman" dodge holds no water here because all these women sat around with their thumbs up their asses and either passively watched it happen or actively aided and abetted it through their sexual harassment lawsuits and endless repetition of the famous "1 in 4" lie.

You see the result today in the unrelentingly sluttish behavior of women. Because girls no longer have a female role from which they can draw their identity, and have been forced into the old male role, the only way a girl can announce her femininity to the world is by flaunting her sexuality in every blatant manner possible. Far from the bogus facade of confidence which the media has tried to brainwash everyone into believing that girls today have, girls are actually emotional wrecks. You don't need to look any farther than the "bogus beauty" pageant in China to see that normal young women in the peak of their sexually attractive years still are so neurotic that they feel a compelling need to spend thousands of $$$, and go through surgery after surgery in a vain quest for a sense of female identity and confidence.

[A commenter illustrated this well by saying] - while he still may have a few vestiges of physical attraction, he feels absolutely no emotional attraction. The men here have just had a verbal brawl over the best way to react to this - whether to try to beat women at their own lying game, or just quit and sit out the rest of the gender war.

While naive romantics may continue to live in a fantasy world where all this has no effect on men, the truth is quite different. Every act of sex today is a potential rape charge for the male, and one for which there seems to be no statute of limitations. Men have differing levels of awareness of this, but it is only the truly dense men who can escape the implications of a Kobe Bryant.

And, what [the above commenter] described is a fundamental change in the way men view women, and an irreversible one. I frequently use the saying that it is not possible to turn a pickle back into a cucumber. The NGs here who were once innocent and wanting nothing in life more than to find a woman to love with all their heart who would love them back in any sort of fashion, have lost the innocence and the ability to trust which makes that possible.

Women have destroyed men's ability to love them by turning it into a crime. And, they have further alienated the men who are even still willing to try by their arrogant and hate-filled demeanor and demands.

I've been arguing with the [Toxic Trolls] for all my adult life. In my younger days when I was still afflicted with the strong desires that many of the guys here are trying to contend with, I argued because I had a deep sense that I was

fighting for my personal right to exist and emotional survival. That will to survive is one of the strongest forces on earth, so it kept me going for a long time. But, it eventually ran out, as did the last of my ability to feel anything positive toward women at all.

Another analogy I have often used is that situation we have today is like a large lake. On one side, you have armies of women pissing and shitting and dumping as much raw emotional sewage as they can create into that lake. On the other side, you have the group of so-called "nice normal" women who are beginning to realize that their drinking water is no longer as sweet and fresh as it used to be.

Now, the ordinary male response to a situation like this would be to run around to the other side of the lake, and stop those bitches from poisoning the water that everyone else has to drink from. For some odd reason, the female response has been to cheer the bitches for their polluting ways, with calls of "YOU GO, GRRL!!"

From my perspective, it is up to women to do something about the fact that men are no longer allowed to desire them. A lot of dickless men caved in to the army of ToxicTrolls, largely due to the fact that all other women kept silent and appeared to be complicit in what was happening.

One of the reasons that married women who brag about how well they treat their husbands or BFs draw so much fire on here, is that men have seen a lot of women who take the position "I got mine, so what do I care how badly these women are screwing things up for other women, men, and children?"

Nor will a woman like that get any kudos from this group simply because they haven't fucked a man over in the last week. The culture as a rule does not hand out gold medals to members of a group of known arsonists simply because they haven't burned anything down in the past week.

Nor will women who talk about "trying." The male ethic is to look at results. If your house is burning down, you don't want firemen who "try", you want them to be effective in putting out the fire.

"Do, or do not do. There is no 'try'."

I have been hammering on women for years to provide some kind of countervoice to the male-hating and bashing of the feminidiots on the one hand, and the smug sense of superiority of women who want men to continue in their traditional roles despite everything in the culture working to make that impossible, on the other.

Previous Zenpriest Index Next

Zenpriest #35 - How Was This Allowed To Happen?

. · 4 February 2002 · Archived copy · Original

The politicians knew full well what they were doing. It worked in Russia, it worked in China, it worked in Cambodia.

This big lie that feminists have been telling all the time draws its power from how false it is. Most men used to like women and have an incredibly strong urge to please them. Some of this comes from being conditioned to respect our mothers, and some it from the pussy power that arthur mentioned.

Taking the question of how it happened into a much larger context, even a cursory examination of history turns up enough examples of the same type of thing happening that I'm frankly surprised that anyone is surprised. After the holocaust, people could not understand how it happened. There have been a half dozen genocidal campaigns in the past 10 years alone.

I think most people have a very naive view of the realities of human nature. Looking back on slavery in the US, it is inconceivable to most people today to contemplate that many people believed it was ok to own other people, and the government of the day had no problem at all defining black men as 3/5ths of a person. It is exactly the same kind of blind spot which made it simply impossible for most Americans to even imagine that 19 young men would voluntarily commit suicide so that they could kill 3,000 people. Hatred is a much more powerful force which lurks in the dark recesses of the human psyche than most people realize.

I think what astonished most men was that we found it almost impossible to believe that so many women hated us so intensely. For about 20 years I watched guys act like abused children trying to make mommy happy so she would stop hitting them. Males are conditioned to take responsibility from birth, so they were sitting ducks for all the blame that women projected onto us. Plus, men are born problem solvers so they set about to remedy any real problems in the naive belief that once remedied women would call off their attacks on men.

I went through wave after wave of false hope. When MacKinnon and Dworkin, in conspiracy with the religious right and the John Ashcroft types, pushed through the Minneapolis and Indianapolis porn ordinances, I thought that would be a wakeup call. When the famous "1 in 4" faked research came out, I thought that would be a wakeup call. When Fruity Faludi came out with her book, I thought that would be a wakeup call. When Lorena Bobbit mutilated her husband and was cheered by millions of women, I thoutht that would be a wakeup call. But, I also watched the Crips-in-suits (color=blue) use Anita Hill to ambush Clarence Thomas, then the Bloods-in-suits (color=red) use whatever her name was to try to ambush Clinton, and it finally all began to make sense.

Everything about feminism is a lie, most particularly the part where men look out for other men. In fact, men compete with each other for just about everything, particularly women and the wealth it takes to attract them. Men will gladly knife each other in the back for some pussy, so given the opportunity to play hero and lock in the female vote, the lawmakers and judges trampled each other in the stampede to hand power to women - they were not threatened because they already had a lot of power and what did they care about all those guys who were just 3/5ths of a person out there just trying to get by and find love?

My question was and is - why do women love so much to hate us? I've told the story many times of a woman I was dating who referred to her feminist consciousness raising group as a "perfectly satisfying man-hating session." That was about 1972 before it became so deeply entrenched in academia, and the pattern was already established which is still being played out today in almost 1,000 "wimmins's studdees" programs.

At first I was bewildered. Then, I spent a lot of years being hurt by the whole thing. Then I got mad as hell.

Read some Maureen Dowd. Then try to step back and see the forest instead of that criminally insane tree. Why? Why is she being provided a platform from which to spew insane irrational hatred on a daily basis? Why is everyone jumping on the anti-male bandwagon, like that one article about fake engagement rings? Why is this shit dished up all day every day?

Somewhere back about 40 years ago, people seemed to generally lose the ability to recognize people who were criminally insane - Betty Friedan, Gloria Steinem, child-molesting Germain Greer - and instead elevated them to folk-hero status.

Since I don't own a TV, I read a lot. The more I studied human behavior in the form of history, anthropology, and the mind sciences, the less able I was to hold on to the Humanistic philosophies of my idealist youth. If you would like to read something which really gives an eye-opening perspective, I would suggest "The Anatomy of Human Destructiveness" by Erich Fromm. Don't read it, however, if you really want to keep liking people in general. We are a far less noble species that we would like to believe ourselves to be.

Previous Zenpriest Index Next

Zenpriest #36 - Feminism is Repudiation of the Law of Cause and Effect

. · 5 February 2002 · Archived copy · Original

If you look at every aspect of feminism, from blaming the dreaded "patriarchy" to the idiotic concept of "glass ceilings", it all boils down an abyssmal level of ignorance of the amount of work required to get something done. I just recently saw an article on how feminists were trying to suppress research that showed that females, both by the reports of their mates and by their own admissions engaged in more dating violence than the males did. The feminidiot commenting on it was afraid that people might draw the conclusion that women "asked for it" - it being having the man retaliate - by attacking the man first.

This is the level of criminal insanity we are dealing with. It is the key to understanding feminism at it's very core - women want to be able to attack men any way they want (or wear seductive clothes flaunting their sexual power over men) and never have to pay any consequences of their out-of-control behavior.

The core of feminism is repudiation of the law of cause and effect, and all those other "androcentric patriarchal constructions" and force the world to conform to female fantasies of what they want the world to be like.

It is the most dangerous mentality ever unleashed on an unsuspecting world.

Previous Zenpriest Index Next

Zenpriest #37 - How It All Happened

. · 6 February 2002 · Archived copy · Original

"How it all happened" was by a genius masterstroke of positioning. The feminidiots claimed to be speaking for all women, and were able to dismiss any attempt to refute their nonsense by the personal attacks of being anti-woman. Once they had constructed the elaborate hoax of "patriarchy" and "male power and privilege" they could dismiss any criticism by males as being nothing more than protecting that privilege.

The second part of their brilliant strategy was to make the personal political and the political personal. They thus destroyed the ability to have personal relationships. Friction between two individual people ceased to be about those individuals and became merely symbolic of the universal "oppression" of the larger culture. An argument between a man and woman invariably expanded to include the treatment of women in Afghanistan, and Female Genital Mutilation, and how men used to beat their wives with sticks as big around as their thumbs, and so many other totally irrelevant topics that the conflict between them could never get resolved.

For years, millions of women enthusiastically joined the "junior anti-sex league" (thank you, George Orwell) and were the zealous agents of big sister turning every slight mis-comment around the dinner table or in any social setting into an opportunity to climb on their soapboxes and preach to the unwashed masses. Men got sick of having feminist spies watching their every move, and self-absorbed women landing on them with hobnail boots for every politically incorrect statement, and ruining every social occasion with an ideological tirade, and a great many men just caved in.

Most guys when they come home want a little peace and quiet and maybe a bit of physical intimacy, not to have to engage the little woman in an ideological diatribe.

Women just wore men down. Some men fought, some fought hard and long, but in the end they got so confused by female doublethink that they lost focus on what they were fighting for and just caved in.

This is reason #1 why I hold women in general culpable for this mess.

But, the bigger reason is that during all those years women never spoke up to refute the feminidiots. Men couldn't because of the brilliant pre-emptive strike of the positioning of all men as simply defending their privilege. And women didn't, thus by their silence allowing the feminidiots to speak for them because the voices of the criminally insane were the only ones speaking.

Previous Zenpriest Index Next

Zenpriest #38 - Mid-Life Crisis

. · 7 February 2002 · Archived copy · Original

Male change-of-life is very real. Calling it "male menopause" is simply an example of the way that language has been feminized and women's experience has become the standard by which all things are judged.

A frequent topic here is the life pattern of female fertility. Male sex drive follows exactly the same pattern as female fertility - it peaks in the late teens, declines very slowly for about 10-15 years, then begins to decline more rapidly.

Whether one believes in "intelligent design" (newspeak for creationism) or purely Occam's Razor, any other pattern would make no sense at all. All behavior is purposeful, and for a middle-aged man to have the same level of sex drive as he did when he was 18 at a time women his age are largely infertile would be the nadir of bad design.

Instead of calling it "menopause" or even "andro-pause", it should be called just what it is - horny-pause. Before the current obsession with avoiding aging, it was folk knowledge that men normally experienced a marked decrease in sexual desire by age 50, which also used to be the median age for female menopause. Now, pharmaceutical companies are making billion$ off "little blue pills" which do for the average male what steroids do for pro athletes - allow them to squeeze out just a little bit more and better performance.

Quote: "A MLC is when a man stops counting time from birth and starts counting time to death. It is when you reach the half way point, what ever you think that age would be."

Men have a biological clock just like women do - we have an awareness at the cellular level that we are running out of time. Sometime around age 40, a lot of men look around and ask themselves "Is this all there is? - bills, wage slavery, braces and tuition for the kids, and a nagging hateful harridan who owns the bed and lets me share it if I am a 'good boy'?"

The thing which makes it far more complex for men is the protector provider role which extends a minimum of 18-22 years beyond birth. When a man figures his "time left", he has to subtract about 20 years from his entire allotment of time in order to get the real time he has left. That leaves the magic numbers of 47 and 43 - the cutoff age beyond which they cannot have a child and get it graduated from college or just high school before they retire. Chaining backwards - add one year for the pregnancy, one to really get to know the woman, and one for courtship, when a man is 40-44 there are only a few minutes left on the clock. Some men fall prey to the same sense of urgency experienced by a 37 y/o childless woman.

All this simply cannot make any sense to a younger man who still has a sense of immortality and invulnerability. It is like trying to describe what it feels like to stand on the moon to all but the handful of people who had done it, or what riding a bicycle feels like to one who has never done it - there is no substitute for experience.

One of the best descriptions of what the mid-life crisis really is - how mundane the reality is - comes in the form of an old joke:

There was kid who wanted to join the grade school band. He and his parents talked to the band teacher who told them he had all the trumpets and clarinets he needed, and that the one real opening he had was for a tuba player. So the parents bought the kid a tuba and he joined the band. He kept at it through high school, then joined the armed forces and played tuba with the band. After he got out, he went to college and played the tuba. He got out during an economic slump and there weren't many jobs for Forensic Oceanographers, so he got a job playing tuba for the

Boise, Idaho Brass Ensemble. In a few years he moved up to the Missoula, Montana Symphony Orchestra, then on to the big time - the Fargo Philharmonic.

The day before his 40th birthday he wakes up and thinks "My God!! I'M A TUBA PLAYER!!!!"

John Lennon said "Life is what happens while you are planning other things." A lot of guys simply drift into a rut while they are figuring out what they want to do with their lives, and once they do they find that not only is that rut worn pretty deep, but that there are also a lot of people very invested in keeping him in it - so they can keep milking his wallet. Attempts to break out of those self-created prisons are seldom any more elegant than breaking out of any other type of prison.

Mid-Life Crisis for a man really boils down to him asking himself - "Is this really the way I want to spend the rest of the time I have left?" - and coming up with "no" for an answer.

Further Reading:

EOTM: Sexual Psychology – Part 3 – 40 to Closing Time

Mid-Life Crisis -- Rollo Tomassi

Previous Zenpriest Index Next

Zenpriest #39 - Brer Patriarch

. · 8 February 2002 · Archived copy · Original

.

QUOTE: "This article is disturbing because they only relate it to how the hardships suffered by boys are affecting women. This is a product being sold with great bias, and in its method, the point of the article is lost to those that examine it closely.

On the one hand though, this can also be considered fighting fire with fire. If one adopts that philosophy for how they fight, then it's also got to be accepted that their cause will be pushed forward in ways that aren't agreeable to them. In this case, the reversal of feminist ideology will continue in small steps until there is social revolution. I don't particularly like McElroy myself, but she is speaking to 'feminists' in language that they will understand and what they don't is honor, morals and principles.

An article that is wolf in sheep's clothing indeed."

I read this 3 times and still didn't get what point you were trying to make. I really don't think she is "she is speaking to 'feminists' in language that they will understand". The most basic tenets of feminism are:

1) a fundamental disrespect for men, maleness, and the male experience,

2) the bedrock belief that women always have it worse than men and always have had it worse than men.

While she and some others of her ilk try to put a "rational" face on some aspects of feminism, I don't think they manage to pull it off. A perfect, but very indirect, measure of the belief system from which she operates was given in the thread over at MND which resulted in the female mod resigning. McElroy's husband jumped into the argument between Gonz and navyblue in which Gonz was explaining why he was not interested in going out and giving another woman a chance to totally fuck him over. NB was pulling the standard shaming tactic of "suck it up, get over it and move on" - with the implication of that being to go right back to courting women and currying their favor.

Brad jumped in with "blame yourselves, men!"

I see her entire paradigm as being simply wrong - trying to invert feminism and apply the same errors in reverse. Women felt that being shut out of major careers was "oppression" when in fact being pushed into them was the real oppression. Women then demanded to give up a huge degree of freedom in exchange for the same wage-slavery which the old protector/provider role forced on men.

Right now there are nearly as many men in prison for not paying child support as for all other crimes combined with the exception of drug offenses (another bogus, manufactured crime). Boys are accurately perceiving what slavery the old male role represents for them, and are opting off the track early on. *Of course* this "harms women" because it reduces the pool of potential providers for them to choose from. Many of these women will no longer have the choices which women of previous generations had, but will instead have the same 3 choices men have had:

1) Work full time,

2) Work full time, or

3) Work full time.

If one looks at the black community, which is where many say the white population is headed as well, black women have no problem at all finding plenty of guys willing to screw them, but very few who can and are willing to support them. This is already becoming the case with white women, and will become increasingly so over the next few years.

If one looks at the values of ghetto-ized black males (the black members of this board not being part of that group) they have little if any desire to support women, and have no problem at all taking money from them. They have learned the whole "independent woman" thing is complete bullshit, and have found that many black women will not only put up with, but will also give money to a man, simply to have one around to meet some of their emotional needs - no matter how sparsely he actually meets them.

The boys who are not going to college today got diverted off that track 15 years or more ago. No changes, no matter how big, would show any effect for a similar period of time. A great many of these women getting the majority of degrees and professional positions will simply have no one to marry, and will either have to support a man to some extent or remain alone.

The lack of males in college does not represent males somehow being "left out", but is more representative of them "opting out." Hunchback just cited the fact that 60% of women and at least 40% of men do not see fathers as necessary. That being the case, they certainly are not going to commit themselves to the hard work necessary to fulfill that role.

What is happening right now is akin to a wonderful old story by Uncle Remus called "The Tar Baby", here is the punch line:
.

QUOTE: Brer Rabbit saw he'd been caught dead to rights and he talked mighty humble. "I don't care what you do with me, Brer Fox, so long as you don't fling me in that there briar patch."

Seeing as how it was going to be a lot of work to make a fire and apparently not caring whether lunch was cooked or raw, Brer Fox reckoned he could just hang the rabbit. "Hang me just as high as you please, Brer Fox, but for the Lawd's sake, don't fling me in that briar patch," said Brer Rabbit.

Seeing as how he had no rope, Brer Fox decided to drown the rabbit. "Drown me just as deep as you please, Brer Fox, but don't fling me in that briar patch," said Brer Rabbit.

Seeing as how there was no water around, the Fox said he'd just skin the rabbit. "Skin me, Brer Fox, snatch out my eyeballs, pull out my hair, tear out my ears by the roots and cut off my legs," said Brer Rabbit, "but please, please, Brer Fox, don't fling me in the briar patch."

Well, Brer Fox was pretty fed up with Brer Rabbit's whining. He really didn't care about eating him so much as he did hurting him as bad as he could. So he caught him up by the hind legs, pulled him out of the Tar-baby, slung him around in the air, and flung him right into the middle of that there briar patch.

There was a considerable flutter where the rabbit struck and Brer Fox hung around to see what was going to happen. By and by he heard someone calling to him, and way up the hill he saw Brer Rabbit sitting on a log combing the tar out of his fur. ***"Bred and born in the briar patch, Brer Fox, bred and born in the briar patch. Briars can't hurt me,"*** *sang Brer Rabbit as he skipped off just as lively as a cricket in the embers.*

.

Brer Fox thought he was doing something to **hurt** Brer Rabbit, when in fact he was giving Brer Rabbit **exactly** what he wanted. All Brer Fox ended up doing was throwing away his dinner.

Women have thought they were hurting men by pushing them out of the provider role. And, for the generation of men who had it pounded into their heads that they were defined by that role, it did hurt them. But, the generation of men who grew up after men had already been pushed out - it doesn't matter to them in the least.

Brer Feminazi has thrown them back into the briar patch where they were born and bred, and destroyed all the social mechanisms which used to force men to support women - thus throwing away all women's guaranteed meal tickets.

What we are seeing right now is a desperate attempt by women and chivalrous idiots to try to contain the damage with increasingly draconian laws. Some of the unwary will get caught, and the smarter ones will learn from the mistakes of their stupid brothers.

So, McElroy gets part of it right by getting it all wrong - women really are the ones who are harmed by pushing men out of college and out of the professions.

Several years ago, I got my mouthy ass fired by a guy who was a complete pathological liar. For years I had been living on not much more than 1/3rd of what I took home, because I didn't have the consuming habits of a female and her pups to support, and investing the rest. After the initial shock of being fired for the first time in my life, I began to feel an electrifying sense of freedom. I kept telling myself "I really gotta start looking for work, **next week**"

This went on for 6 1/2 years. I took a lot of long motorcycle trips, went to NZ, built Eye of the Mind, read a lot, slept late, and generally enjoyed life. I would have never been able to do that with a female parasite attached to me.

Being in my mid-40s, non-obese, and a true OB down to the colors and the tats, I had no shortage of middle-aged, mostly obese, mostly divorced, and truly desperate women wanting to bag me. They asked me out, and they always

paid. And, they always went home alone. I took the basic attitude, "ok, you can buy me dinner if you want, but don't for a moment think it has bought you a guarantee that I will fuck you in exchange for it."

(sound familiar to any of you guys?)

McElroy continues to carry forward the same mistaken belief that underlies all feminism - that men did what they did for any reason other than society and women pressured them into it every bit as much as women were pressured into their old roles.

Men supported women because they were not given the choice not to.

Now that men are given that choice, far more men will take it than almost any woman would wish.

Further reading:

The Same Old Story – by Adam Kostakis

This Way to See the Great Egress!

Philalethes #1 – Feminist Allies?

Philalethes #14 – Hyphenate Them Any Way You Want, A Feminist is a Feminist is a Feminist

Philalethes #16 – Who Stole Feminism? Nobody!

International Women's Working Day – by V.I. Lenin

Previous Zenpriest Index Next

Zenpriest #40 - Girls Just Wanna Have Fun

. · 9 February 2002 · Archived copy · Original

QUOTE:

Courtship Signaling and Adolescents:
"Girls Just Wanna Have Fun"?

Monica M. Moore, Ph.D.
Department of behavioral and Social Sciences, Webster University

Cary (1976) discovered that ***the woman****, through eye contact,* ***controlled the course of interaction with a male stranger, both in the laboratory and in singles' bars.*** *Perper (1985) gave a detailed description of courtship, stressing an escalation-response process in which women play a key role in escalation or deescalation. The steps in this process are approach, turn, first touch, and steady development of body synchronization.*

Although these reports are clearly valuable, most researchers addressed courtship very generally, and some failed to recognize the importance of the female role in the courtship process .What was needed was a more complete ethogram of women's nonverbal courtship signals. To compile such a catalog of flirting behavior exhibited by women involved in initial heterosexual interaction, more than 200 adults were observed (Moore, 1985) in field settings such as singles' bars, restaurants, and parties.

Research has shown, therefore, that the cultural myth that the man is always the sexual aggressor, pressing himself on a reluctant woman, is incorrect.

Thus the old saying "she asked for it."

Two key issues related to the red highlighted part in particular, and the related information:

1) socially we have become so stupid, and so enmeshed in the "sex is a social construct" idiocy, that we now have to have extensive research projects to discover what the majority of people have always known. Ms Moore's next research project, for which she received a $10 million grant, took 10 years but was able to definitively determine that peanut butter is made from .... peanuts.

2) That mythology, which is part of the foundation of both the old Feminine Mystique and the modern Feminist Mystaque, allows the horny slut of tonight to revise history and become the reluctant virgin of tomorrow suffering so terribly from being "sexually harassed" or "rayyyppped".

This is the nuclear bomb of the gender war, in that it attacks the very foundations and mechanisms which draw men and women together in the first place. Given the universal lying about this by women, men are left between a rock and hard place. No matter how aggressively she may signal interest, in many cases completely faked purely for the purpose of extracting attention and resources from the male, in the light of revisionist history the man will always take the fall if he fails to please her in the way she expected.

“Women chat happily, send sexually explicit signals and encourage the man’s attention, even if they have absolutely no interest in him. This gives a woman time to assess a man, says [Karl Grammer of the Ludwig Boltzmann Institute of Urban Ethology in Vienna, who studied 45 male-female pairs of strangers in their teens and early twenties]… Importantly, the women also seemed to control the encounter – what the women did had a direct effect on what the men did next. ‘You can predict male behaviour from female behaviour but not the other way around,’ says Grammer” – *New Scientist Magazine* (London), February 14, 2001

Further Reading:

Zenpriest #18 – The Designated Initiator

Previous Zenpriest Index Next

Zenpriest #41 - Feminism is an Extended Infantile Tantrum

. · 10 February 2002 · Archived copy · Original

QUOTE 1: "Guys around here who talk about "feminism" and "Ameriskanks" and "female sexism" as exceptions to the basic goodness and fairness of women are missing the bigger issue: Many of women's worst traits seem consistent, if not hardwired.

*The bad impulses **will** surface from generation to generation -- at most, we can hope to deny them legitimacy or free expression."*

*QUOTE 2: **"Many of women's worst traits seem consistent, if not hardwired."***

Exactly right. All feminism did was give women free reign to do what they have want to for centuries. And it is government sanctioned.

QUOTE 3: And you see this again and again if you review history.

*Destructive female psychology is hard wired. It is not a product of feminism. **Feminism is a product of female psychology.** A culture can attenuate those worst female tendencies or it can not. American culture no longer does and most of the world is headed our way.*

This is why I tend to stomp on any statement that it is only those nasty "bad" types of feminists which are the problem. Feminism at its very heart is part absolute self-centeredness, part fantasy and wishful thinking, part denial, and part infantile tantrum.

All people are selfish - it is simply called "self-preservation" which is a fundamental characteristic of anything alive. People living together without ending up killing each other over access to limited resources requires cultural and social values which restrain and limit the destructive impulses of people.

Feminism is an extended infantile tantrum over these limitations, with the rage fueled by fantasies and wishful thinking about the way they want the world to be (in order to gratify their constant infantile needs) and based on denial that the nature of the world itself imposes many of these limitations.

This is why the fundamental denial of nature is an essential part of feminist thought. They have to deny nature so they can blame men.

They have to blame men because female passivity is the real reason behind women's inaction, along with the inability to suffer discomfort. Notice how wymyn's "feee-yuhl-lings" have become elevated to be the most important things in the world.

Women's passivity will also be their downfall in this situation. Over the past 40 years, women have kept turning up the volume on their bitching, until they have reached the status of "Maximum and perpetual bitch."

What really chaps my ass is the way that men keep making excuses for women, and accepting the constant poison women drip out and praise them for being "less like that" than other women.

I can't remember if I posted a link to this comment about Kathleen Parker:

QUOTE: "I want you to observe how the first 8 paragraphs are full of praise for father's restraint, but then the ninth paragraph is this:

"Women are frankly better at defending themselves than men are, which may be a function of the fact that they were the underdogs for so many centuries. Under the heel of a boot, one learns to think creatively. Men are just beginning to feel the crunch of gravel pressing into their faces."

You see, according to her, we deserve it! Kathleen sows seeds of hatred by pulling the "I'm not a feminist, but..." and then states a feminist statement? If she's saying feminist things, then's she's a feminist! You, as a man don't notice these things, because the dose of misandrist poison comes from behind a facade of weakness, and is enough of a low dose to destroy over time, unlike feminists who use high doseages of manhating poison which would trigger something you could react to.

In fact, I would say conservative women and feminists are the "Good cop, bad cop" and both of them are working against you as a man, comprimising everything you are and do as a man. See here:

Good cop, bad cop

She also quotes the Gilder Fallacy of which I am posting a link to disprove her claims, and I am also reminded of Esther Vilar saying that men are praised for their qualities useful to women.

In short, don't trust conservative women any more than you would a feminist."

This is what many guys are saying. [It has been] pointed out many times that foreign women are not the magic solution that some guys seem to think they are. There is no hidden spot of uncorrupted women left. All restraints to women's behavior have been or are in the process of being removed.

And, what a lot of guys underestimate is the absolute degree of skankness that the current generation of girls is being raised into. A massive army of entitlement-princess-victims has been unleashed on an unprepared public.

Conservative women are no better, because they deliver their poison from behind a smile - or from behind the mask of a ditz.

*QUOTE: "**Women** are frankly better at defending themselves than men are, which may be a function of the fact that they **were the underdogs for so many centuries. Under the heel of a boot, one learns to think creatively. Men are just beginning to feel the crunch of gravel pressing into their faces."***

And don't she just **love** it. Women are "getting men back" for all those mythical "centuries as the underdog."

"Feminism starts out being very simple. It starts out being the instinct of a little child who says 'it's not fair' and 'you are not the boss of me,' and it ends up being a worldview that questions hierarchy altogether." -- Gloria Steinem, in the two hour HBO special on the life of Gloria Steinem entitled, *"Gloria: In Her Own Words."*

Further Reading:

Zenpriest #21 – The Terrible Twos

Woman: The Most Responsible Teenager in the House

Previous Zenpriest Index Next

Zenpriest #42 - Activism

. · 11 February 2002 · Archived copy · Original

QUOTE 1: "You know, once in a while I get a good gut feeling, like there is light at the end of the tunnel. Hearing you hit the root of the problem over and over in the previous post makes me feel like we're striking home runs. Why? because ***our very political system is breeding the men we need to beat this.*** *The angry men here fall under that category.*

You know it, I know it, and most of us here know it. ***One day there'll be enough single, disgruntled, assraped men that will repay the very system that enslaved them*** *by voting it out.*

The only way to pull this off is to educate every MRA, male-slave, or Real life activist...

QUOTE 2: What comes to mind when reading these posts is an issue I felt strongly about and was popularly opposed. I did the usual activist stuff: going to meetings, rallies, and writing letters to politicians and newspapers. ***The ONLY reward I got was some snippy responses from FEMALE politicians and a pair of gov't guns at the back door. The measure passed nonetheless.***

My view is more of a list of Don'ts rather than Do's. My view of the feminist juggernaut is simple. It's like a drunk on a bender. Try getting in the way of one intent on staying drunk is an exercise in futility. However, there ARE things I CAN do. ***I can withdraw my financial support from the feminist cause as much as possible. The date/mate strike is a good one. I will NOT intervene to "rescue damsels in distress". I will NOT play "Captain Free Therapist".***

Quote 3: My priority is to survive.

I'm trying to survive in a hostile system.

Marriage strike = only way to make an impact, and that's an indirect impact. One day the powers that be will wake up and maybe sweeten the deal for us. But ***we've come so far down the path of misandry there's no hope of fighting it all at once.*** *You are met with a wall of emotion whenever you try. Emotion is saturated in the issue, becoming more important in law, family law especially, than what can be proven. At college feminist professors would tell me that emotions were a way of knowing, a superior way of knowing, than "patriarchal" logic and reasoning. Sounds funny until you see it's actually working out that way, that it's being put into effect.* ***It's a losing game, playing by the rules established now. Don't play. It's the only way.***

The fundamental flaw with traditional activism is that it validates by acceptance the view that politicians are our rulers rather than in service to us. Going to them begging for crumbs acknowledges the power they have over us and indicates acceptance that such power is valid.

It is not.

We are bound only by chains of our own making - addiction to comfort, instant gratification, and TV. The moment we "go to the other side" and become willing to live without such things, in that moment we become free.

The looters will continue looting as long as there is anything to loot. They will not stop because we ask them - no matter whether it is nicely or angrily. They will stop **when we stop them, and not before.**

The first priority is to survive, and that is done by not playing the game and withdrawing our support and participation from all who do. No rescuing the damsels in distress, no playing "Captain FreeTherapist", no feeding the beast.

Look at what happened to Larry Summers. It was that tsunami of emotion which left him groveling and backing away from a simple statement of the truth. Unless and until we can muster an equal tidal wave of anger in response to misandry, it will continue to exist and spread.

The thing that pisses me off most about MRAs as they have been for the past few years is that they insist on eating the whole elephant in one bite. Guys talk big about climbing Mt. Everest, **before** they have gotten their asses off the couch and walked to the front door.

Public demonstrations have never done shit and never will do shit. When I was the age of a lot of guys on this board I was active in both the civil rights movement and the anti Vietnam war movements. Yeah, it made us feel all warm and fuzzy inside to get together with a couple thousand of our closest friends and sing kum-ba-ya, and we could even take the fire hoses and the tear gas (which was a real drag, though). But, when the guns came out at Kent State and they started mowing us down, the children's hour was over for most of us and we realized we were just spoiled kids playing at adult activities.

I lost track of the number of buddhist monks who set themselves on fire to protest the war. It made the nightly news for **one** night, and then it was back to business as usual of robberies, car accidents, and celebrity scandals. **BUT** when LBJ looked at his poll numbers and knew he couldn't win because he had alienated so many people with his aggressive pursuit of the war, he knew he had to quit the game.

Every day the system recruits more men to our cause than we ever could. **How many times** has a guy come here and said *"Geez, for so long I thought I was the only guy who felt this way."* That is the fatal flaw in the system's game - they **must** keep us isolated and from talking to each other and feeling like we are the only ones who see the problem and therefore we must be wrong.

In the past couple of days I have read several posts of younger men who are flatly resisting the pressures to put themselves in a position where they can be looted - refusing to marry, refusing to sire hostages (oops, I mean "children"), refusing to willingly put themselves in chains. They are that light at the end of the tunnel you talk about. We did not create them, the system created them.

What we must do is keep watch for the men getting ready to turn, and the moment we sense that they have become ready to "go to the other side" to grab them and give them a moral sanction and validation for their choice. That is what many men are doing - every guy who responds to women's whining "there are no good men left" with "sure there are, we are just on strike against bitches like you!"

The **only** way they have left to **force** us to support them is with their guns and prisons. Social pressure to marry is no longer effective because women destroyed it in order to "liberate" themselves. With their wishful emotional non-thinking, they were able to delude themselves that they could be liberated while men remained enslaved.

Sorry, sweetcheeks. It has worked for a while, but you have looted out all there is to loot and men are wising up. Unless they can now find a way to get goverment thugs with guns to show up at them door and **force** a man to marry some parasite, he will remain free of their grasp.

Survival is going to mean going without things that we want - like a loving mate and children - but the reality is that we will do without them anyway no matter what we do. So we might as well do what it takes to survive.

All we have to do is wait out the system. No matter how much public acceptance and support a bad idea has, the fact that it is a bad idea and simply **wrong** will cause it to collapse eventually. We have seen collectivism collapse a couple of times in this century alone, so we know that it will eventually collapse in contemporary western civilization.

What we have to do is **learn** from those mistakes, in ways that our so-called "leaders" have not. Soviet men are in a world of hurt, but by studying their bad example western men can avoid the same pitfalls. Dozens of men on this board are doing exactly that - keeping healthy, working on developing a positive outlook and emotional independence from women, concentrating on building assets and resources and protecting them from the looters and looterettes.

When the day comes that there is a male equivalent of Emily's list, and when enough men are angry enough that they can put aside all their petty differences and decide that they are going to work together to punish assholes like Joe Biden for his anti-male VAWA legislation and **do anything and everything it takes to get the sonofabitch OUT of office,** then men's activism will have finally grown up.

While I certainly remember youthful impatience, anger, and energy, I'm going to use an old joke to make a point:

A young bull and an old bull were standing on a hill looking at a bunch of heifers in a field below.

The young bull says - "Let's run down there and fuck one of those heifers."

*The old bull says - "Let's **walk** down there, and **fuck them all."***

Previous Zenpriest Index Next

Zenpriest #43 - There's Nothing In The World More Over-rated Than A Good Lay...

. · 12 February 2002 · Archived copy · Original

I think it was Norman Mailer who quipped that there is nothing in the world more over-rated than a good lay, and nothing in the world more under-rated than a good shit.

.

It seems the only cliche that artful left out quoting is that the guys here must have small penises. These types certainly know how to punch the buttons of a lot of men, and the biggest challenge for us is to overcome our reflexes and examine what is being played upon us before we react.

This mind game is a great example of being able to play all ends against the middle. Already having an overinflated sense of their value, women naturally assume that men are going to get angry over being deprived of access to their gold-lined panties. The truth comes out when one of them offers a man access and he turns them down, as predictable as the sun coming up will come the comment "What is wrong with you, are you gay?"

To me, there is nothing in the world more annoying than the stereotype that every man is always dying to fuck any available pussy. The truth is that the vast majority of women consider their part of sex done when they show up, and sex with them is about as much fun as masturbating with a cheap cut of round steak wrapped around your schlong.

It is important to keep in mind that women define themselves and their self-worth by the amount of male attention they can attract and hold onto - along with the material resources which go with it. Otherwise, makeup would just be seen as foul-smelling paint. Having men ignore them or be indifferent toward them literally induces a loss of sense of self - they cease to have any identity because they define themselves entirely by the male attention they attract, in much the same way that some men define themselves by their material success.

The most important thing to keep in mind is that if you bite, then the feminidiots and the manginas have won - you have allowed them to define you and reacted to their infantile games.

---

*QUOTE: **"The most important thing to keep in mind is that if you bite, then the feminidiots and the manginas have won - you have allowed them to define you and reacted to their infantile games."***

Yes, true enough.

But, what solution for basic human desire ("if you bite...") are you offering?

Everything you have stated is true.

Everything you have stated is irrelevant to a man infatuated (re: in "love') with a woman.

Everything you have implied is irrelevant to any politician who just voted for VAWA 2005.

If you bite ... you are prey.

If you don't bite ....

Sounds of one hand clapping, yes?

(Recall that great koan about the monk hanging off the cliff holding onto a tenuous vine while fearlessly gazing up into the eyes of the tiger about to devour him if he decides to climb up the vine, and not let go and fall to his certain death on the rocks?

That's exactly where men live now, IMHO...) :lol:

There are several vague concepts floating around in this discussion which I believe it will be to men's benefit to clarify.

When I said "if you bite, they win" I was referring to the manipulative tactic of insulting and offending you in order to get a reflexive reaction of trying to disprove the accusation, not to the issues of desire or infatuation. Take a meaningless phrase like "self-loathing closet (or basket) case" or "misogynist" or "homophobe" and apply the solution "if you were not _____, you would eat dog shit" and I think you can see the irrelevancy of the manipulation.

The largest essential energy of feminidiocy is "the whole rest of the world has to change, so I don't have to." I don't want men to fall into the same trap of helplessness. All real power begins with mastery of self. If jedmunds or another mangina or feminidiot tries to insult and offend me, I can choose between changing their actions or my reactions. It is the outward focus and insistence on changing **other people** instead of changing themselves which makes the feminidiots so offensive and destructive. Let's not fall into the same trap ourselves.

Who the hell is jedmunds, or Amynda, or Hugo, or any of the other femnag/maginas, and, really, why in the world would I give a flying fuck what they think of me?

The first thing a man has to do when he starts to go his own way is to claim the power to define himself and take that power away from people he has absolutely no reason to respect or care about their judgment.

To illustrate a major but subtle drift in cultural values - the attempted putdown/dismissal "you're just angry because

you can't get laid" could not have existed in the world I inhabited up until I was about 21. Sex was something which happened only within marriage, or at least that was the way it was supposed to work and if it was otherwise people did not make it the subject of daily conversation.

When the social roles of breadwinner versus homemaker began to blur, and the great social reconstruction experiment of unisex was being forced on a population who really didn't want it, identity for both sexes became shallow and superficial. Women began acting and dressing like sluts so they could prove to the world and themselves that they were still female. That definition of femininity began to blur over into the definition of masculinity and men were also defined purely by their sexual appeal - ie. how often they could "get laid". The paradox in the values operating in our culture is perfectly illustrated by the fact that "getting laid" is also referred to as "getting lucky."

Female sexuality is way overvalued in western culture. It has become the unsatisfying substitute for deeper emotional connections. It has become just another commodity to brainwash people into chasing, and spending money on so that they get trapped into the work-earn-spend-work more-earn more-spend more trap of wage slavery.

It is far easier to get laid than it is to get loved, which is what I think most of the guys here really are looking for. When such men allow the jedmunds and Hugos and Amyndas of the world to dehumanize them by defining them by only one supeficial aspect, they allow those other people to do violence to them - in the literal sense that "violence" means "to **violate**." Most guys here would understand the principle that if someone attempts physical violence against them, they have both the right and responsibility to stop that other person if they can.

The same is true of mental and emotional violence. When someone attempts to redefine me in bullshit terms, I can choose either to go along with it and follow the rest of the lemmings off the cliff of insanity, or I can reject those values. It reminds me of old kids' jingle "sticks and stones may break my bones, but words can never hurt me." Words **can** hurt us, but only if we allow them to. The emperor has no clothes and if we allow fools to make us feel badly for saying so, then we are participating in the very problem we are bitching about.

The secret of power is the willingness to **act**, and to ignore all those who try to demand that we become as helpless and powerless as they are.

QUOTE: "(Recall that great koan about the monk hanging off the cliff holding onto a tenuous vine while fearlessly gazing up into the eyes of the tiger about to devour him if he decides to climb up the vine, and not let go and fall to his certain death on the rocks?

That's exactly where men live now, IMHO...) :lol:"

But, you left out the punch line. While he is hanging there, the monk notices a strawberry growing out of the side of the cliff - a big, ripe, juicy strawberry. He plucks it and eats it and says "ah, it is so sweet."

"That" is where men have always lived. "That" is part and parcel of what being a man has always been. Anyone who thinks men in the past had it better has fallen for the feminidiot bullshit.

In the words of a man who was once clued in, before he caught the creeping necrotic groupthink fungus:

I grew up down in the valley
where, brother, when you're young,
they bring you up to do

like your daddy done.

<...>

Then I got Mary pregnant
and, man, that was all they wrote.
For my 19th birthday,
I got a union card and a wedding coat."

He "got laid" and the consequences of that "getting lucky" was that he was trapped in wage slavery for the rest of his life. Doesn't sound all that fuckin "lucky" to me.

Since we are talking about eastern principles of thought and action, let's take one from the practice of ju jitsu - use your opponents' weight against them.

Once someone has found and knows how to keep their psychological/emotional center, just like their physical center in martial arts, it becomes easier to keep your own balance while using your opponents' moves against them.

A great counter-move to the "you're just angry because you can't get laid" feint is to reply "Nah, I've gotten 'laid' plenty. What I'm so pissed off about is how useless and awful American (or whatever group the woman or mangina represents) are when you get them into bed."

I guarantee that you will put the would-be gamer on the defensive and that you will start getting some variation of the old saw "but, not all women are like that!!! You have just been meeting the wrong kind of women."

The response to this needs to be "yeah, whatever. Gotta go. C'ya, bye."

Previous Zenpriest Index Next

Zenpriest #44 - The Box Feminism Builds for Women

. · 13 February 2002 · Archived copy · Original

QUOTE:

"Once feminist ideas are discarded the answers to your questions will become self evident."

I agree with this statement in principle, but in practice it has been tricky to figure out which of the ideas I've grown up with were the feminist ones, in the same way that I now forget what people who haven't been immersed in ship education for 6 years know about ships. Again, this forum's been very helpful for that.

Regarding some of the recent threads: I continue to work to become a better woman and to learn the housewifely arts, and being a wife and mother is my ultimate goal, but in the meantime (until a good man considers me to be Miss Right) ***I'm grateful that I can work in a field that I am suited to and that I don't have to depend on my non-existent man to provide for me.*** *It seems that some are advocating just this dependency be required of women, and I wanted to point out that while perhaps ideal this situation is unrealistic unless you don't mind seeing innocent people starving to death while preparing for and awaiting marriage. This is why I'm sure I must be misunderstanding those posters. What exactly are they advocating?*

As [was previously] said, we are all over the board. That is fallacy one that you have to overcome. So, the first feminist belief you have to discard is that all men are the same. We are not.

Fallacy 1a woud be that any of us can give you meaningful advice regarding anyone we don't know - ie a potential mate for you. The best answer I can give you is "ask him what he wants, then **listen to what he says**, and I mean really **listen**.

If you want to understand feminism in a nutshell, take the current joke men understand perfectly:

"If a man speaks in the forest, and there is no woman there to correct him, is he still wrong?"

The feminist position is that men are de facto wrong and women are de facto right.

The whole "oppression" bullshit has been used to make women fear being dominated, used, and messed over, so they reflexively and habitually resist anything a man tries to say or do. This leads to nothing but a power struggle which leads to people hating each other's guts.

The #1 issue men have with women these days is the inherent double standard almost all of them seem to assume is their birthright. When the economy was such that most families could live on one income, it was a pretty natural division of labor for the man to do the earning - often doing jobs women simply could not do when pregnant - and the woman to stay home, take care of the house and kids, and let the man go along for the ride with the comforts. Children were a team effort and both members of the team were specialists, not generalists.

But, now women not only get pretty much any job they ask for, under threat of lawsuit, but they always pick the plum jobs - the highest paying ones. This would be fine if they let go of the double standard and were willing to accept a man who cannot have her job because she has it, and has to settle for one making less. In general, women

refuse to marry down because even as their earning power has increased, they have refused to change their expectations that men will be the breadwinners. Women are not clamoring for the jobs of garbage collectors, nor are the female Advertising executives etc marrying such guys.

So, women have manipulated law in such a way that "we get the cream, and you guys get the dregs, and BTW you are such LOOOSERS that we would never dream of marrying you."

No one is going to get into or stay in a relationship with someone whose primary purpose in life seems to be to tell him how flawed and insignifcant he is. The glue that holds a relationship together simply does not exist. Under constant demands to "perform", and now minus any objective standards save her ever changing whims, the relationship turns from one where there is any sort of "equality" at all, to one of mother and child.

Contrary to feminist bullshit, most men do not want to sleep with their nagging shrew mothers. Regarding the list, why in the world is "be nice to be around, rather than nasty, nagging, unpleasant, and tearing him down every chance you get" even need to be explained? Isn't that just common sense?

If someone told you all day every day how insignificant you were, wouldn't that qualify as "abuse"? You could probably even go to a "wimmins's shelter" and have him arrested for it. So, women can keep up a never ending psychological and emotional bombardment, from behind the shield of laws everywhere to protect her.

So, you don't "need a mayaan", because you can support yourself. A man in your life is an optional fashion accessory like Jimmy Choo shoes or an Armani handbag. This removal of real dependency, which creates a very strong bond of love much like parent-child, turns a relationship from long-term interdependence into one of moment to moment satisfaction.

QUOTE: *"Also, your list and recommendation of The Care and Feeding of Husbands saw me through a relationship with a fantastic man."*

What an interesting statement!! Saw you "through" it? Are you no longer in it?

If having a "relationship with a fantastic man" has become the equivalent of watching an extended movie, that is a core of the problem right there. Putting that together with "(until a good man considers me to be Miss Right)" and "I'm grateful that I can work in a field that I am suited to and that I don't have to depend on my non-existent man to provide for me" you give the impression that this "fantastic man" passed into and out of your life with hardly more than a "ho hum."

It is that very dependency that bothers you, which was what made marriages work. People really did need each other - they were far more significant than just for their entertainment value.

That is the core of your feminist beliefs.

So, you are very unlikely to find a man who is capable of and willing to support you for the following reasons:

1) you really don't **need** him to. You want someone who can give you an extended vacation from the rigors of earning a living, but

2) as a result of your "independence" and probably comfortable salary combined with no dependents, you have probably become accustomed to a lifestyle in which all your income goes to entertaining yourself, thus you limit

your choices of mates to those men who make enough to support and entertain both of you in that fashion, plus the kids. Very few men make that kind of money, for many reasons including the fact that

3) **YOU** have the job that he might have had.

So, if you were to ever find such a man, given the fact that every other woman in the world is looking for pretty much the same things and the men who can do that are getting pretty scarce - **what do you have, expect, or are willing to offer him in exchange other than sex?**

If that is all you have to offer, then you'd better be damn good in bed.

Do you see the box that feminism and your own beliefs have built for you?

Previous Zenpriest Index Next

Zenpriest #45 - I am a Strong Believer in Natural Processes

. · 14 February 2002 · Archived copy · Original

QUOTE 1: Forget about women and LIVE!

QUOTE 2: How to forget? Do you have some links on that, keywords for memorable posts? I read a lot of JadedGuy, but ***somehow it didn't click, maybe we're on different wavelengths (we're obviously in different phases of life).***

Your advice reminds me of the initiation to "the inklings", where they'd make someone sit in the corner for an hour and NOT think of a white polar bear. Damn near impossible.Again, how?

QUOTE 3: Well, a divorce when I was 26 and betrayal by every girlfriend I ever had (-1) helped quite a bit. I lowered my standards for my last girlfriend (physically.) She is very bright, has a master's degree, and is interesting to talk to (and enthusiastic in bed) but she wanted to be even more of a player than really hot girls. Once she had me she had to see someone else at the same time and take me for granted to prove to herself that she could be just like super hot skanks. She did it for me. If I never date another woman I am ok with that. ***I realized that the emotional terrorism that women put me through was too high a price to pay for poontang and female companionship.*** *That and I bought a motorcycle.*

I am a strong believer in **natural** processes. I have contended since the 1960s that women's claims of "oppression" were completely bogus and that cultural values were a natural result of a negotiated balance between the sexes. Or, in other words, women had every bit as much a role in the creating the old social values that the feminidiots wanted to destroy as men had in creating them - more, in fact, due to their role in socializing and educating children.

I think men burning out on women and just getting so sick of dealing with them that they start to avoid doing so is another natural process. Men put all the benefits of dealing with women on one side of the scale, and all the costs and unpleasantness on the other, and one day it just reaches the tipping point and his gut starts telling him that the costs far outweigh the benefits.

B.F. Skinner would call what is going on today "aversive conditioning." It's a lot like the alcoholic who takes Antabuse which will make him sick if he drinks. The power of his addiction to make him want another drink is offset by the powerful sickness he will experience if he does. Eventually, the nauseating behavior of modern women makes a man so sick that his nausea overpowers his pussy addiction and makes avoidance the less painful option.

It becomes like those old word association tests. When younger men hear the word "woman", the words that come to mind are "sex, attractive, love, enjoyment." However, unless a man lucks out in the split-tail lottery, his own experiences begin to shape his automatic reactions to "bitching, drama, bullshit, manipulation, hostility, mindfuck, disgusting, demanding, selfish, unpleasant, fuggit."

No one besides Maureen Dowd had to do **anything** to get most men to regard her as worthy of nothing more than a quick fuck, if that. Likewise, I seriously doubt that there is any answer that any man here could give to your question - except "keep right on doing what you are doing now, until you get so sick of the results that it turns your stomach to think about continuing to do it." Given enough time, dealing with women will produce the result you are asking about. Until then, there is no magic spell any of us can give you to make it happen.

But, once it does happen, the change is not reversible. Once you burn out on women, you are **burned out** and will remain so for the rest of your life. As you begin to choose more pleasant ways to spend your time, your attention will naturally begin to turn to toward those pleasant pursuits and away from the people whose sole purpose in life is to jerk you around and make you miserable just to entertain themselves.

Women are **not** going to change as long as they keep getting everything they want from men despite their obnoxious unpleasant behavior. I hear a lot of younger guys saying, in effect - "Hey, I have this fantasy of what women are, and I am so in love with it that I will **not** give it up, so how do we get women to change so that they are more like I wish they were."

The answer, of course, is that you can't and won't - not ever. Women are what they are, the choice men have basically boils down to take them or leave them. What you see is what you got to pick from, and one of the main purposes of Mancoat is to expose the lies women have used to hoodwink men into believing they are something else.

As one of the posters here recently quipped - this is the red pill, it is not Zion. The situation men are in today sucks, but if any of us knew how to make it better we would have done so long ago and we would not be here talking about it.

Those of us who have survived the gauntlet can pass along tips for how we did it, but that is about all we can do. Life is still pretty much a do-it-yourself deal for men, and each man seems to build his own individual strategy from all the pieces and parts other men give him.

So, the short answer to your question is that you are going to keep on getting what you have been getting as long as you keep on doing what you have been doing. By all means, continue to think about women like you do until your own experiences sour you on them so much that thinking about them begins to trigger the reflex to hurl. Then, it will be very easy to start avoiding things that make you feel like puking.

Previous Zenpriest Index Next

Zenpriest #46 - Twenty Years From Now This Will Be "The Good Old Days"

. · 15 February 2002 · Archived copy · Original

QUOTE: "And the women my age - good God - maybe ZP can back me up here, the ones who were OK back in 1972 have shot through two or three good men and a half dozen bad ones, and they think that the pinnacle of feminine desirability is to be as demanding, as histrionic, as psychotic, and as self-obsessed as their daughters."

Yeah, I'll back you up on that one. Being a part of the counterculture, I got exposed to radical feminism early. I have a brother 10 years older than I am, and by the time I graduated from HS his wife was already using his kids to jerk him around, so I wasn't all that hot on marriage from the get-go. After encountering radical feminism with all its hatred, distortions, and anger in my freshman year of college, I copped an attitude and basically made the decision that I was going to force the fish to live without this bicycle. I met many women over the years who would have loved to be supported to stay at home, but my brother's wife was so useless and helpless and suffered from a perpetual broken wing, that I really did react to marriage like a jail sentance - "none for me, thanks."

But, as I have said before, I think that men and women had a chance of sorting things out but for the poisonous influence of Susan Faludi and Naomi Wolf. Right after their books came out was when things turned really ugly. The 90s were a nightmare. There was a period of several years when every day I got several man-bashing supposedly "funny" emails that were making the rounds - "what do you call a man with half a brain? gifted."

What makes me have no hope at all for the future is the way that little girls and boys are being programmed to hate each other now. Young women when they reach your age, Kelly, will pay a terrible price for their stupid bitches of mothers buying them "boys are stupid, be violent toward them" T-shirts, jammies, and the like. Boys today are forming the opinion of girls which will be with them the rest of their lives, and that opinion is largely that girls are violent, hateful, and vicious.

Twenty years from now, young women like you will look back on today and think of it as "the good old days."

Previous Zenpriest Index Next

Zenpriest #47 - The Future's So Bright, I've Gotta Wear Shades

. · 16 February 2002 · Archived copy · Original

QUOTE: "I almost get the feeling that you feel as though the future is rosy for men because more and more men are going their own way and because women have, to some extent, dug their own grave.

I view the future with increasing alarm given that women are gaining power across the board, particularly in terms of the fact that women are rapidly becoming the more highly educated and privileged class. This will not be without its benefits for women given that knowledge is power. It is no good thing that more women come away with more degrees than do men. In the UK approximately 2/3 of law students are women. Just think about the future implications that holds for men!

In my opinion George Orwell was right, he just got the phrasing wrong. 'Big sister' would be more appropriate."

It isn't that I expect the future to be "rosy" for men, but I don't think it will be any worse than the past was. Men made it through hard times before, I expect them to again.

The reason I can take a long view is because of my decision to drop out of the game. I have no vested interest one way or the other, so I can look at the issues slightly more dispassionately.

I agree that Orwell was right, and so was Aldous Huxley and so was Ayn Rand. The simple fact that the situation we find ourselves in today despite so many people having read the classic dystopian novels, gives a certain sense of inevitability to it.

I really don't think that the average man thinks or cares much about the issues, which is why there has always been a ruling class - because **some** people do obsess about the issues and crave power over others.

The value of a college degree is vastly over-rated these days. Most of them are absolutely worthless, and there are self-correcting mechanisms built into any system. Economics is no exception although it does have more than its share of people meddling in keeping this fiasco running much longer than it should have.

A factoid in absolute means nothing. It is just an effective means of manipulation. "They" always tout the value of a college indoctrination, saying things like "a person with a college degree will make an extra million $$$ in his lifetime." So an extra million $$$ passes through his hands as compared to another guy. But, where does it go to? Bigger houses? More "stuff" and consumer oriented shit?

I would argue that the quality of life of a corporate lawyer these days is not significantly better than that of a HVAC worker.

Women can have all the power and money in the world, but that won't get them what many of them really do want - a husband and kids - unless they become willing to marry men who make less than they do. In the end, many of them will.

This whole long battle between the sexes has been waged entirely in the corridors of power. Feminism is a movement of the white upper class women, and what it mostly amounts to for the average man is that the ruling classes now contain both men and women, and the women he has to deal with are far less pleasant. But, the mythology of the pleasant woman has been far over sold.

I think men have gained different kinds of power at the same time women have supposedly been gaining power. It all kind of washes out - that yin and yang thing associated with my internet personna.

Life has always been pretty tough for men. I once read an account of an ancient battle where all the losers got their penises cut off. There was summary by rank of how many "phalluses were collected" and the total was something over 13,000. A hundred years ago, men who were building the Panama canal worked 12-14 hours per day, six days per week - basically all the hours of daylight. The only reason they got the 7th day off was because religion was still a given for most people. Thousands of them died from malaria. Life must have been pretty tough back home to work that hard in such dangerous circumstances just to make money.

Compared to either of those 2 situations, and thousands more I could describe, I think men today live mostly a life of incredible comfort and safety.

College degrees are now starting people out under incredible loads of debt. The differential in what they earn in many cases will not offset the costs of their education in every case, perhaps not even most. The few extremely highly paid assholes really skew the statistics for the average guy.

A degree used to mean more money because it actually meant something - you got prepared for career in which skill had value - like medicine or dentistry. But, with degrees now in "queer theory", the only place for such people is in the massive sucking bureaucracy. The US is bankrupt, and very soon will not be able to afford to be the nanny state.

Men adjust better to adversity than women do, which is why I expect them to come through the years when things get really rough as well or better than women do.

It is not the strongest of the species that survives, nor the most intelligent, but rather the one most adaptable to change. -- Charles Darwin

---

Further Reading:

Zenpriest #23 – Marriage is Becoming the Social Edsel of the 21st Century

---

Previous Zenpriest Index Next

Zenpriest #48 - Social Breakdown and Civil Disorder is More Likely

. · 17 February 2002 · Archived copy · Original

Re: A questionable male-female revenge story

QUOTE 1: I think the story is bogus, just a revenge fantasy.

QUOTE 2: Whether or not the story is bogus, it brings out inner conflicted dilemas many guys feel. On the one hand it is disturbing, yet on the other hand american women have gone so extreme that them receiving such medicine may not be out of line.

There is one femi nazi that I know and it would not bother me at all if she received the revenge treatment in the story. Yet there are are other more tame decent women that it would bother me immensly if such a thing happened to them.

These inner conflicted feelings many guys feel nowadays need to be sorted out so the MRA movement does not throw bread at stone --and stone at bread.

QUOTE 3: Putting aside my serious questions about the story's authenticity, ***I'm not sure what good it does to post it here at Mancoat. Certainly everyone has the right to review it and draw their own conclusions, but I think that publishing it on this forum casts its members and our goals in a negative light.***

QUOTE 4: You're right about that. [The person who provided the story] has already posted that we're all a bunch of bloodthirsty savages. So I think he's testing that thesis by gauging our reactions to an inflammatory story.

---

*QUOTE 5: "****We sometime forget we are in a war.*** *Feminists have taken off the gloves a long time ago.* ***By men not taking off the gloves when needed [we've] only given feminists countless hours of laughs.*** *Still it seems many members of this forum are in the illusion that feminists can be rectified and changed --****fact is we are slowly but surely moving towards violence and an armed struggle."***

Violence? perhaps. But not an armed "struggle". I speculate that social breakdown and civil disorder is more likely.

I'm kind of leaning toward [the] interpretation that this is a little Rorschach ink blot thrown out to see what people see in it.

The theme of "righteous vengeance" has been a popular one in American media for as long as I can remember. From films like "Rolling Thunder", the "Dirty Harry" series (Clint Eastwood), the "Death Wish" series (Charles Bronson), and dozens of other lesser known films with the same theme, it is only a small step to "The Burning Bed" and "Kill Bill." The impulse for revenge seems to be as deeply embedded in the human psyche as the need to eat

and to mate.

One aspect of the story which stands out for me, but about which I haven't seen many comments, is that the guy is a dope dealer. This guy is a lowlife among lowlifes. His lifestyle is defined by doing something few guys here would approve of - selling drugs - so it shouldn't be surprising that he does other things which are outside the bounds of civil society.

What one lowlife does to another is mostly beyond my control, thus excessive concern about it is likely to be wasted. Such people have existed in every culture in the history of the world and I expect that they will continue to exist in every culture for the rest of history.

Here's one for your "how it used to be" file - both the guy and the skank in this story are a type of people who were completely ouside my realm of experience until I was in my late 20s. People like that existed in subcultures which were shunned by and isolated from normal civil society. When one thief or drug dealer shot another thief or drug dealer, the police did their best to solve the case, but in most cases it was a coin toss which lowlife shot the other - simply existing within civil society was some degree of insurance that such things would not happen to you or people you knew.

With the breakdown of social values, that insulation is going away. There were no Nathalee Holloways when I was growing up, because girls living within the protection of civil society were bound by the rules of civility which defined that group, and dictated that young women of age 18 did **not** go out at 1:00 am with anyone they did not know well, and in most cases were related to.

The point I am making here is that is as the social values which define civilization break down, we will see more and more of this. Preventing occurances of this nature were the entire reason for those values. Just as the physical body gets sick when the individual practices very bad health habits, so does society become sick when it ceases to practice good health habits.

"Sarah" was a monster, not a human being. Someone so cold and callous as to wish that someone killed themselves sooner is barbaric at the level of Ghengis Khan. By her attitudes and beliefs she put herself outside the bounds of civil society, and among the company of lowlifes. She puts herself beyond the protections which the social contract provides to those to abide by it. Actions and choices have consequences.

It's all well and good for guys here to try to take the moral high road and practice christlike forgiveness and forbearance, but what we ourselves do will have absolutely no effect on whether things like this story happen, or how often they happen.

I am sure that few, if any, members of Mancoat would actually do what this guy did, but the more significant and ominous implication is that I also would guess that few if any would care in the least what happened to this girl. I know that I personally would not.

I think that the real danger to women comes from their destruction of chivalry and the protective instinct of men. If this girl had had a father, he would have warned her very sternly against getting involved with this kind of guy, against the party lifestyle, and would have done whatever he could to keep her from becoming such a slut. If she had brothers or uncles, they would have done the same.

It is indicative and symtomatic of the cultural decay we see all around us that this girl was surrounded by men who did not give a shit about her. And, it is perfectly understandable from her own attitudes.

Whatever our opinion of this guy's story, regardless of what we do, I believe that more and more things like this will happen. Men who would have cared about her have been forced out of her life, and she herself alienated those future men who were forming their opinions of her and could have just as easily seen her as "what a great gal" instead of "what a horrible bitch."

I don't think that most women have a clue about what deep and bitter hatred for themselves which they are creating among men - young and old. I don't have a link to the story titled "The Screams of Women" about a boat sinking and things turning out **very** differently than the sinking of the Titanic - with men pushing women out of the lifeboats - but I'm sure someone here does. I think it was Darren Blacksmith on his cooltools4men blog who linked to an article about how men will no longer stop to help a female motorist with problems.

Whether the men here react to the viciousness, exploitation, and arrogance of women with hatred or indifference does not matter. Some men **will** react with hatred, and those men will be enough to make life very brutal and ugly for some women, while the indifferent men look the other way and go about their business.

Yes, I do see an unbelievable deep and bitter hatred toward women growing among a lot of men. And, the generation of marginalized and narcotized boys getting ready to be launched into the population as whole frankly scares the shit out of me.

But, my concern about it is limited to the effects it will have on men. I am cold as dry ice inside when I hear about the "suffering" of women, because it seems they "suffer" equally from a hangnail as from being roasted alive on a spit. The old story of "The Boy Who Cried Wolf" is getting ready to be played out on a culture-wide scale. There are no more heroes. There are no rescuers of damsels in distress left. Women have hated that part of most men to death.

So, Rich, if you are taking the temperature of the men here with that story, let me tell you what I think should be a lot more ominous and frightening than the rage and "hot" anger of some of these guys - the "cold" rage and indifference of men like me who will both argue against men getting caught up in the lust for vengeance (because of what it will do to the **men**), but at the same time turn my back on a woman who becomes the target of another man's rage.

To me, the key question regarding this story is - if I was an outside observer, watching this go on, would I lift a finger to stop it, and help her out?

The answer is - no, I wouldn't.

Remember, women "need" us like fish need bicycles. If she was stupid enough, and vile enough to get herself into this situation, then let her get herself out of it.

QUOTE: "It looks like 40 years of feminists trying to achieve 'progress for women' will in fact set women a good 4,000 years back."

I think that says it quite well.

Previous Zenpriest Index Next

Zenpriest #49 - Let Women Win the "Battle of the Sexes"

. · 18 February 2002 · Archived copy · Original

QUOTE: I guess what I'm trying to say is that, if men and woman no longer believe that here is a companion or that one person out there for them, then that is bad news indeed.

Because our country is in trouble now, and the family unit, a man and a woman, is the best way to keep it. If you guys give up on finding someone, then the feminists and the left have already won.

So, are you guys going down with out a fight? Are you going to let the feminists win, looking to take over… a world without men?

That would make an awful lot of Muslims happy."

No, we are going to let the **women** win the "battle of the sexes." You can thank Susan Faludi for single-handedly turning the battle into an all out war. You can thank Susan Brownmiller, Andrea Dworkin, Catherine MacKinnon, Mary Koss, Naomi Wolf, Joe Biden, et al, for forging the nuclear weapons which created the situation of Mutally Assured Destruction. You can thank the Bradley Amendment for creating legal peonage again and re-establishing the debtors prisons which were abolished a couple of hundred years ago.

And, you can thank the millions of these so-called "normal good women" who sat passively and silently by and reveled in the fact that the tide of the battle was swinging in their direction **in the short term.** You can thank Oprah for peddling her message of female victimhood and male perfidy to millions of women who lapped it up - loving the hating of men. You can thank all the dozens of trailer-trash panderers - Sally Jesse, Maury, Phil, Gerendo, Jerry, and all the rest - for serving up their multiple daily servings of emotional road-kill which millions of women lapped up like flocks of emotional buzzards.

And, you can thank the millions of these so-called "nice, average, normal women" who just loved to bash men, complain endlessly about petty crap like toilet seats, cheered on Lorena Bobbit when she castrated her husband and played the "abuse excuse" card.

You can thank the lesbians who have dominated "wimmins's studdees" programs turning out thousands of what Christina Hoff-Sommers calls "hate-intoxicated little zealots" and creating a climate that Daphne Patai calls "Heterophobia." You can thank the millions of female teachers who have led the "War on Boys" and when they couldn't stamp out the masculinity in boys, decided to dope them with dangerous drugs in order to turn them into compliant zombies.

You can thank the millions of these so-called "nice normal women" who circulate their endless man-bashing emails which are so creative that they contain "jokes" like - "What do you call a man with half a brain? Answer: gifted."

You can thank all these "strong, independent, women" who **don't need NO mah-yaan**" and who delight in telling men that a woman without a man is like a fish without a bicycle. And, then when men take them at their word and decide maybe it isn't all that bad to not have their clean seats slimed up, then start bitching about how men are "afraid of committment, afraid of strong women, don't know how to handle a strong woman, and besides they are just angry losers who can't get laid and probably have small penises anyway."

Do I care of the Muslims take over? Not even a little bit. At least in Muslim countries a woman like Mary Winkler would not be able to murder her husband by shooting him in the back with a 12 gauge shotgun and get all kinds of sympathy, including a woman blogger who says “thinks of her as a hero.” You would not have women like Mary McDonald lying in wait for her husband for an hour and half, emptying 5 high-power rifle slugs into him, **then reloading and shooting him again, and still walking free.**

Interesting how in this post-feminist world where “women can do anything a man can do” (as long as they get as many tries as they want, are held to lower standards, and get head starts) that you still see it as **men’s job** to defend and make safe the culture and the sex who have declared war on them, criminalized their deepest desires and longings, bashes them constantly, and is constantly dreaming up new ways to extort money from them and put them in prison.

nuh uh.

This is women’s battle to fight from here on out. I, personally, have been fighting it for over 35 years and have lost everything I started out fighting for.

It ain’t my job any longer to do the shit work of seeking women out, put up with their bashing, hostility, arrogance, contempt, and exploitation just so they can have the relationships which they will still endlessly complain about not being anywhere good enough.

Women have spent the last 4 decades alienating men from themselves, and all that emotional DDT they have been poisoning the social environment with has built up to toxic levels which are poisoning all relationships.And what is so funny, is that women still expect men to do the shit work that they have criminalized and endlessly spat on men for doing.

Sorry, [ladies], certainly there are bad men out there - but the difference is that up until recently “normal good men” did not cheer them on with shouts of “you go, guy!!”

Remember what women have been telling us for years - there simply are no good men. Actually there are, but “the men have left the building.”

You gals made your bed, we hope you like it. If you ever decide to get off your passive butts and come looking for us good men, court us, treat us decently, and stop playing victim, and give up your attitude of entitlement, we are here.

But now, you have to come looking for us. A whole lot of us don’t really want you any more - you have made yourselves unwantable.

Further Reading:

Philalethes #13 – A Letter to Devvy Kidd

Previous Zenpriest Index Next

Zenpriest #50 - Listening to What Men Really Say

. · 19 February 2002 · Archived copy · Original

QUOTE: Gee…I must thank all the guys who put forth their efforts to tell me just how idiotic, foolish, stupid, ridiculous, I am..and how all woman seem to be..whores, selfish, bitches and just how much happier men are without them…

These are the "feelings" I get from reading your responses.

some of your comments hurt me to the core…

You have taken away hope….

Because I have no hope to ever write what I feel again on this site without being torn apart.

Right here we all have fallen into the gender gap which keeps fueling this stupid war. Nowhere, in any of the responses by men, did I see any personal attacks on you. No one called you *"idiotic, foolish, stupid, ridiculous".* Nowhere in any of the posts **except your own** were the words *"bitches and whores"* used.

In short, you are accusing men of what they **did not do!** What did I just say in one of my earlier replies? "Women will not hear what men do say."

No one attacked you personally, they just responded to your exhortation to "get back out there and find one of the good ones" with -"No. And here is why."

How are you the victim here? How did men expressing **their own pain**, their own frustration, hurt **you**?

No one "tore you apart". They just expressed their own side of the story.

Yet, here we go - you have been "wounded", you have been hurt and forced to "learn a painful lesson". We have "taken away your hope." Somehow, in being honest, the men who have responded to you have turned you into a victim. Your post is full of victim language.

So, yes, this is how and why the vast majority of American women are complicit in this monstrous tragedy. You do not want to hear what men have to say. You want to express **yourselves**, but when men express **themselves** in response, they wound the poor little sensitive person on the other side.

So, guys are backpeddling and apologizing for hurting your feelings. I'm sorry that your feelings were hurt, but I am not going to apologize because **I never attacked you!** I will not take on either guilt or blame **for something I did not do.**

I warned you not to try to blow sunshine up our butts. When you have walked a mile in our shoes, then we will listen to comments you make about the experience. Until then, you are speaking from ignorance. Sure, you try to spread the blame around and say everyone is guilty, but by doing so you gloss over the specific complaints men bring up again, and again, and again.

Go to the link I mentioned - specifically this post "What the Movement Has Taught me about men - so far."

One major revelation -

"In listening to these men as they talked to each other and to me, I learned something that has literally changed my life.

It was this: men have feelings. Seriously."

Wow. What a concept! Men have feelings too! Men are not anvils that can be pounded on 7×24x365 and remain unaffected by it.

See, this woman is doing what you aren't, and what most women won't - *she is actually **listening** to men, to what we **really say.*** She isn't putting words in our mouths that we **did not say** - like *"idiotic, foolish, stupid, ridiculous, whores, and bitches."*

Those are **your** words, not ours, just as **your** feelings are your feelings and we won't take responsibility for causing them by simply being honest about our real life experiences.

If women really want to stop this stupid perpetual war, then they need to start really listening to men. They need to stop trying to keep men silenced by playing "oh, you big mean brutes, you have hurt me."

If you have been "hurt" by men's honest expressions of their own lives and experiences, it is harm which you have constructed out of thin air. **The ugly words are yours, not ours.**

We just speak of our lives. If you do not want to hear it, and only want **us** to listen to **you** then I think that is the real lesson you should be taking from all this.

"Men like to please women and gain their approval, so they give their power away. Men are incredibly afraid of women; they have tremendous fear of women if they feel that the woman is going to criticize them. Frequently when he expresses himself, she says, 'Oh, don't be so ridiculous; I can't believe you're saying that!' or 'Why don't you ever talk about your feelings?' Then when the guy talks about his feelings, she'll often say, 'That's stupid!' or 'You can't really feel that way!' So the way he sees it is never right. And so the guy shuts down, and he refuses to talk. That's what I see in my practice over and over. The guy wonders, 'Why should I open my mouth, when every time I do, she tells me it's wrong?'" -- therapist Laurie Ingraham, in *Good Will Towards Men* by Jack Kammer

"As listeners, wives tended to display more negative non-verbal behaviour than their husbands. Wives were negative listeners 11% of the time compared to their husband's 3%."

.

"Negative face cues" include "frown, sneer, fear, crying, angry face or disgust."

.

"Negative voice cues" are "cold, tense, fearful, impatient, whining, sarcastic, blaming, angry, hurt, mocking or depressed."

.

"Negative body cues" are "arms akimbo (with hands on hip), tense neck or hands, innattentive, pointing, jabbing or slicing with the hand."

-- Clifford I. Notarius and Jennifer S. Johnson, *Journal of Marriage and the Family,* 1982

The Lamentations of Matheolus: Dominating Clock, 1295:

This female clock is really driving me mad, for her quarrelsome din doesn't stop for a moment. The tongue of a quarrelsome woman never tires of chiming in. She even drowns out the sound of the church bell. A nagging wife couldn't care less whether her words are wise or foolish, provided that the sound of her own voice can be heard. She simply pursues her own ends; there's not a grain of sense in what she says; in fact she finds it impossible to have a decent thought. She doesn't want her husband to be the boss and finds fault with everything he does. Rightly or wrongly, the husband has no choice: he has to put up with the situation and keep his mouth shut if he wants to remain in one piece. No man, however self disciplined or clear-sighted he may be, can protect himself adequately against this. A husband has to like what the wife likes, and disapprove of what she hates and criticize what she criticizes so that her opinions appear to be right. So anyone who wishes to immolate himself on the altar of marriage will have a lot to put up with. Fifteen times, both day and night, he will suffer without respite and he will be sorely tormented. Indeed, I believe that this torture is worse than the torments of hell, with its chains, fire, and iron.

Further Reading:

Zenpriest #14 – If a Man Speaks in the Forest, and There is No Woman There to Correct Him, Is He Still Wrong?

Bonecrker #3 – Shaming Language

Previous Zenpriest Index Next

Zenpriest #51 - What's Happening to Boys?

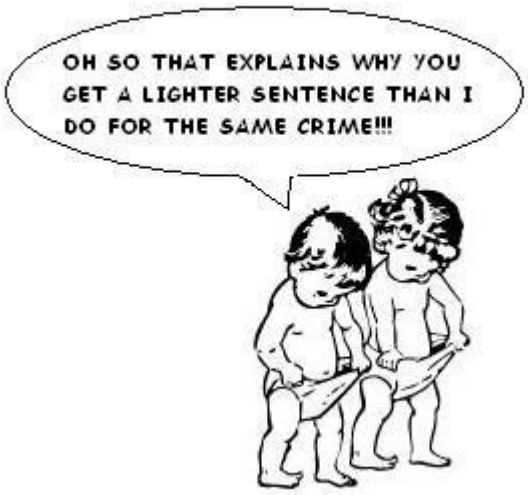
. · 20 February 2002 · Archived copy · Original

Quote: *"If the policy these days is to go your own way…wouldn't they be doing everything humanly possible to be financially independent enough to travel and enrich themselves free of womenfolk?"*

What an interesting way to put it. First of all, there is no "policy" at work here. It is simply the individual decisions of millions and millions of men which add up to a trend. Men on the average are not nearly as materialistic as women. The reason they used to work so hard and be so concerned with making money was because they were locked into the old provider/breadwinner role. Every cultural institution and value pushed them into that role, supported them in it, and gave them no alternatives. Every bit of that has been destroyed in the past 40 years.

I had a really bizarre and terrifying exchange with a woman a couple of years ago. She actually made the statement that she had never given any thought to how men made money, she had always just thought of it as something men just did. I guess she thought we just sit around and grow it like we do hair.

That conversation alone explained so much of what I have observed during this whole social/cultural/economic "deconstruction" process. It was both enraging and terrifying. There was a perfect example of the magical mode of thinking which is the foundation of women thinking they were "oppressed" because they simply did not understand how things work. That woman never gave any thought to the long hours, hard work, high stress, risks, and major unpleasantness which are required to make much money. There used to be cartoon of a girl baby and a boy baby looking inside their diapers with the caption "Oh, that explains the difference in our salaries." It was one of the most offensive things to men I have ever seen. I wanted to make up a cartoon (except I have no artistic talent and can't even draw flies) of a woman breezing out of the office while the clock on the wall shows 4:30 saying "gotta pick up the kids", next to a man still at his desk when the clock shows 8:30 with him saying "No, THAT explains the difference in our salaries."



Quote: *"Or is it another form of going your own way–in which the idea that you're only a potential rapist and women are better at this and that girls are much more encouraged that somewhere along the line it translated into "well fine, if you don't expect anything of me, I guess that means I don't have to do anything."*

That's part of it, but it's only the tip of the iceberg. Any man who is successful will still be considered to be victimizing all women because "Women still only make 76 cents for every dollar a man makes!" No matter what a man does it gets twisted into women being the victims of it somehow. The only way a man can really avoid victimizing women in some way is to leave them completely the hell alone and avoid them as much as possible.

What is the point of succeeding these days? All it does is make a man into a target for the looters who want to confiscate the fruits of his success in the name of "diversity." Besides, no matter how hard he works or how successful he is, they will keep changing the rules until he loses. Look at what they do with the marathon races. If a guy works hard to become a great marathon runner, they will rig the game and give women a 15 minute head start. If a woman "wins", then women everywhere will regard it as a victory of the entire female sex over the entire male sex and start chanting "girls rule, boys drool." If 15 minutes isn't enough to rig the game so a woman wins, the next race will give them a 16 minute head start. If a woman still doesn't win, they will up it to 17 minutes, and keep giving them a head start until some woman finally does win - then they will trumpet to the world how superior all women are to all men.

The roots of this go back more than 30 years. Women have been getting more college degrees than men since the early 1980s. Schools beat down boys as much as they are allowed to get away with, and when the rigged educational system still wasn't crippling boys enough to let girls win, they started medicating all the little guys who showed any promise at all. A 10 y/o boy on Ritalin in 1990 is today's 26 y/o who knows through bitter experience that if he shows any promise at all, it will simply make him a target. The nail that sticks up is the one which gets hammered down.

Boys are not nearly as big fools as people have believed. There has been a war against them for more than 30 years, and they have learned to make themselves the smallest possible targets. They have also learned to not feed the system which has as its major priority to destroy them any way it can.

Why make money when any woman can simply trap a sperm and lay claim to most of what they make? It doesn't even have to be his sperm - any old sperm will do. Women have been "daddy shopping" for ages - "hm, his wallet looks nice and fat, HE'S THE DADDY OF MY BABY!!!"

The H-bomb of the demotivation of males is this insane and evil concept called "imputed income." Financial success is little more than an excuse to turn a man into complete and total slave of some woman and her new husband "the government." If a guy is theoretically "capable" of making $100,000/year, it becomes a crime to not make that much.

Why show the world that you have ability when all that will result from it is that the looters will attach themselves to you like parasites, chanting "from each according to his ability, to each according to her need"?

It is fascinating and surreal that the writer would mention "Atlas Shrugged" because all one has to do is read that book and they will understand everything which has happened for the past 40 years and exactly what is going on. Men with ability are going on strike and have been since the 1970s. They are simply refusing to use their "abilities" to support a system which operates under the ideology of a cancer. Why function as a heart or lungs when the tumors suck all the blood anyway? No matter how much blood the heart pumps, the tumors will suck it all up and demand more, and keep demanding that the heart pump more until it bursts from overload.

Quote: *"I think it's disappointing that the article doesn't throw more theories out there."*

The article is not about theories or finding answers, it is nothing but a propaganda piece continuing the policy of "blame men" that Khank pointed out. It is inconceivable to me that so many people could be so stupid as to not be

able to see what is happening right in front of their eyes, so my conclusion is that it must be driven by malicious intent.

What no one seemed to count on, or the mediocre and stupid were just too stupid to figure out, is that men didn't achieve at the levels they did because of some inherent characteristic of men that everyone else lacked. Just like the woman who thought men grew money like we grow hair, they just assumed men would keep doing it no matter how difficult they made it for men to do so.

Well, as Gomer Pyle would say - "Surprise, surprise, surprise!"

Women wanted to be trapped in our old roles as wage slaves, so they enthusiastically jumped in to pushing us out of them. The Powers That Be wanted docile little wage slaves to be the drones of their economic consumerist engine.

Simply because men are not as materialistic as women, the engineers of the velocity economy of goods and services made women their primary targets. And, also because men are not as materialistic and consumption oriented, getting the man out of the middle and preventing him from practicing fiscal responsibility and trying to hold on to some of the wealth he generated, was the best way to drive the velocity economy. So, they concentrated on putting women into the workforce and the $$$ directly into their hands, and coming up with laws which allowed for the confiscation of whatever wealth men were still able to accumulate on their own.

So, it's pretty much a no-brainer to make the decision between working 60 hours per week at a job you hate, or working zero, or maybe 10-15 hours at something which isn't too unpleasant, and fucking off the rest of the time - if both decisions give the guy the same results.

And, speaking of no-brainers, this article was written by one of them.

Zenpriest #52 - The Moral High Ground Always Goes to the Winner

. · 21 February 2002 · Archived copy · Original

Quote: *"OTH the battle against Al-Qaida is first and foremost a battle of minds. The moral high ground always goes to the winner. Nature made it such that those who die out doesn't count anymore. No one pity us for dying out because we were Nice-Guy's."*

You have just stated one of the most profound truths ever - the moral high ground always does go to the winner, because they are the ones still around to write the history books and to define what is moral and what is not.

But, it is the corollary of this statement which has the most profound implications for the MRM - you do not win simply because you believe that you hold the moral high ground. There is never a week that goes by that I don't hear some fool say "well, we don't want to be like the feminists" or some bitch saying something like that in order to silence a man or get him to give up what he is doing - **because it is effective.**

Those who die nobly, still die. And, their "nobility" is written out of the history books because despite their nobility, they lost and they died. The current hegemony of feminist revisionist history is the perfect example of this. Someone recently posted a description of a wall poster painting the founding fathers as deadbeat dads, or child molesters, or some one of the other stereotypes which have been used to collectively assassinate the characters of men.

I, for one, see no "nobility" in fighting ineffectively, and dying pointlessly leaving no legacy, simply because we believe that we are "nicer" than our enemies.

.

Previous Zenpriest Index Next

Zenpriest #53 - Feminism Really Is All About Projection

. · 22 February 2002 · Archived copy · Original

Just like psychological projection tests like the Rorschach, women's behavior when they think they are "acting like men" gives away what women really think of us. Their perceptions are completely distorted and they delete anything positive about men by simply refusing to see it.

Feminism really is all about projection. Women have all the same dark desires and qualities that men do, but as the experiment that shows women become more aggressive when they think no one is watching proves - women are masters of illusion and perception management. They have to keep up their act of being "the fairer sex" and ducking behind the feminine mystique in order to keep their feminine power base.

But, self-delusion always carries its own punishments built into it. As women become more and more violent, they will not contain that violence solely toward men and boys. As the posts here about female-on-female violence and the rising numbers of things like girl gangs should show to anyone who can **see**, women are becoming more violent and dangerous - and this will include violence toward women and girls. A lot of women are going to get seriously hurt as a result of this denial.

What men can do is see what women refuse to see, and take measures to protect ourselves from these violent women - just let them harm other women. Eventually it will boil down to the choice between maintaining their lie and self-preservation. It won't matter to men which way it turns out, because we will take the responsibility to protect ourselves, while the women will just whine "why doesn't some **man** do something."

Further Reading:

When Shit Gets Sold as Soap

Collective Projection

Projection – by Buster B.

Eternal Solipsism of the Female Mind - By Ferdinand Bardamu

Previous Zenpriest Index Next

Zenpriest #54 - The Way We Were

. · 23 February 2002 · Archived copy · Original

My high school girlfriend quite literally "fell into my arms." We were decorating a float for the homecoming parade and she contrived to get close to me, and then "slipped" off the box she was standing on forcing me to catch her while she threw her arms around my neck and we ended up standing there looking into each other's eyes with our arms around each other.

Pretty effective "first move." Got my attention.

If a woman is interested in a man, she will find a way to get in his face.

Now, contrast this with the way the mating game is played today, which reminds me of the grisly ritual of school dances when I was growing up.

The girls would all congregate on one side of the gym, the boys on the other. The band would start playing, and for the first couple of dances the already established couples were the only ones on the floor.

Then, the sorting began. The bravest and most cocky guys were the first ones to venture out and make the long trek across the gym floor to ask one of the wallflowers to dance. Of course, since they were the most confident, and felt like their boldness and work to make the approach deserved something - they approached the prettiest girl remaining unpaired. After all, the most literally "attractive" girls were the ones who exuded the magnetism to pull the boys across that great divide.

Over time, things worked their way down the prettiness/boldness hierarchy, with the shyest boys finally pairing up with the plainest girls.

Women who rely purely on the passive approach, even if it is the passive/aggressive approach of dressing and making themselves up like whores, and wait for men to approach them are at the mercy of both where they rate on the attractiveness scale and on the relative aggression of the boys. Such a woman will never get the best mates, because the prettier ones will draw his attention first.

Just like in every other part of life, a female who uses a more active approach to attracting the attention of a boy she fancies, as my HS girlfriend did, hugely tilts the scales in her favor regarding who gets noticed and who doesn't.

“Women chat happily, send sexually explicit signals and encourage the man’s attention, even if they have absolutely no interest in him. This gives a woman time to assess a man, says [Karl Grammer of the Ludwig Boltzmann Institute of Urban Ethology in Vienna, who studied 45 male-female pairs of strangers in their teens and early twenties]… Importantly, the women also seemed to control the encounter – what the women did had a direct effect on what the men did next. ‘You can predict male behaviour from female behaviour but not the other way around,’ says Grammer” – *New Scientist Magazine* (London), February 14, 2001

Further Reading:

Zenpriest #19 – How Women Keep Score

Zenpriest #18 – The Designated Initiator

Previous Zenpriest Index Next

Zenpriest #55 - Now, Please Explain to Me What the Hell Men Need a "Movement" For?

. · 24 February 2002 · Archived copy · Original

QUOTE: The one area where we get snagged: relations with women. That's because that's the one area where women have incessantly redrawn the rules in their favor. As a result that one particular area is a minefield for men, but otherwise in life, things are pretty good for us, hence why we are reportedly happier than women are, overall.

Read that about 50,000 times and really let it sink in. Men's lives really are better today than they were 40 years ago, and can't even be compared to 100 years ago when life was so tough for men that thousands of them would sign up to work on construction of the Panama Canal despite the fact that the work was so dangerous that more than 25,000 men would end up dying in order to get it built.

What is bizarre is that if there ever really had been a MRM that really worked for the best interests of men, it might have actually worked for exactly the same results we have today – increased happiness of men, less pressure to live up to the protector/provider role, more options for our lives, etc.

If you look at the reasons men used to marry, they basically boil down to 4 reasons:

1) desire for sex
2) desire for intimacy with a woman (homophobia ruled out getting it from men)
3) desire for children
4) social pressure to live up the protector provider role

Women themselves ruled out #2 by becoming so unrelentingly selfish and self-centered. #3 got pretty much destroyed by family courts. And, women themselves destroyed #4 because they really don't need us to do that any more. In the US women are poised to become the majority of the workforce, and have pushed so hard and so long for "e-kwuhl pay fer e-kwuhl werk" that women in general have better opportunities to make a decent living than men do.

That leaves #1 and women's attitudes and marital rape laws have pretty much demolished that as a fundamental aspect of marriage. High status men can shag their way through hundreds of beautiful young women and the only pushback they get is from conservative men and their dowdy wives. A lot of the rest of women are busy fantasizing being one of these guys' harems – and of course being the one to "tame" him.

In the "goodle days" a man had to marry if he wanted a sex life, but he was buying a pig in a poke. The sexy young woman he married could devolve into a fat nagging shrew and he was stuck having to provide for her for life. Marriage was very difficult to get out of. Now, if he gets conned by a real loser, as long as he bails out before she spawns any annuities, he comes out pretty unscathed.

Yeah, the animosity, contempt, and often outright hatred of women gets a bit old to deal with, but there are lots of ways to avoid it.

QUOTE: There will be no men's rights movement that will demand changes to laws and so on - that isn't going to happen, folks. It is not in the nature of men to run to the state for protection, not least for protection from what women are doing to men with the power of the state.

Men don't need protection **by** the law, mostly what we need is protection **from** the law. In the US, we used to have

some pretty strong protections against runaway government interference and control of our lives. But, as women demanded ever-increasing government intervention into people's lives to protect them from us, the systemic rights that people once had got entirely stripped away.

When we talk about "men's rights", it automatically assumes two tiers or sets of rights – one for men, and one for women. That goes against every foundation principle of US law and thinking – everything about it generally tries to establish one set of laws which apply to everyone. So, any true MRM would really have to be about re-establishing consitutional rights and reducing the size of government.

What amazes me about the people who think more government is the answer is that "government" is not some mystical, magical, inherently ethical ethereal entity. "Government" is a bunch of functionaries drawn from the very same population which supposedly cannot be trusted on their own. So, we take people who can't be trusted with their own lives and put them in charge of other people's lives.

Go figure.

The real MRM has being going on for years – millions and millions of individual "movements" (choices) by individual men. Men seek individual solutions, not collective ones, because we are so individualistic by nature that we don't want to be forced by goverment to live the same life as the guy next to us. For every change in law that some men will fight for, there will be an equal number of men fighting against it.

The original MRAs were the first "marriage strikers" – like me. We simply implemented what the feminist movement was promising men in our own lives right away. Women don't need us to provide for them or protect them – because the government will now do both? Cool! That frees up a whole lot of time to spend fishing or motorcycling. But wait, that makes us "Peter Pans" who "can't make/are afraid of a commitment." Why, yes it does, as a matter of fact. What can we say besides ***"First Star On The Right, Then Straight On Til Morning!"***

Social pressure and social acceptability used to be the primary means of keeping men trapped in their old roles. But, women blew this when they started with the wholesale man bashing. Men got clobbered just as bad, or worse, for being upstanding guys than they got clobbered for being cads. Given that they were going to get clobbered no matter what they did, men naturally chose to do what was the most fun.

The culture used to have a "carrot and stick" approach – if you were a good beta provider you got – 1) sex, 2) family stability and intimacy, 3) children you could pretty well count on being your own, and 4) social respectability.

Then women and the culture said – **"To hell with the carrot, gimme two sticks!"** and figured they could keep browbeating men into living up to their old roles and the same time they browbeat men for living up to those roles.

It was confusing for a while, but now several distinct strategies have emerged for men which men choose based on their individual preferences. If a man wants sex, he learns Game. If he wants peace and quiet and freedom from nagging, ragging, bitching, complaining, whining pissing and moaning – he becomes a MGHOW or a Ghost. If we wants a family, marriage, and kids, he goes expat or imports a foreign wife.

Men have tons of options today and really don't need the goverment to do squat. Meanwhile, the women who have "won" the gender war and now have "A Woman's Nation" are left holding the bag of being the breadwinner and raising the kids by themselves, and some of them are still up for quick lays but not marriage – in other words, they are fine with being pumped and dumped.

Now, please explain to me what the hell men need a “movement” for?

Further Reading:

The Pitfalls of Inviting More Government Into Our Lives

Zenpriest #47 – The Future’s So Bright, I’ve Gotta Wear Shades

---

Previous Zenpriest Index Next

Zenpriest #56 - MGTOW's Trademark Copyright Philosophy

. · 25 February 2002 · Archived copy · Original

.

QUOTE: "Mind if I work those sentiments into the series?"

Not at all. You've not been around long enough to have heard my standard "tgc public use license" spiel - Any so-called "men's movement", in order to be effective, will necessarily be decentralized, have no formal organization, and be entirely voluntary and viral in nature. The existing power structures support feminism because feminism supports the existing power structures and demands their growth.

I do not subscribe to the concept of "intellectual property" because I cannot claim that any idea I've had or expressed is purely original and came from nowhere besides my own brilliance.

I have some real heartburn with guys who try to copyright or trademark essential ideas - which men might use to improve their conditions - in order to make a quick buck. Phil McGraw and Warren Farrell are simply different points on the same spectrum.

All that being said, any MRA is welcome and granted a perpetual license to use or reuse anything I have ever said **without wasting both of our time by asking me** - as long as it is used to further the interests of men - with or without attribution, and preferably without.

Here is why - feminism was unleashed like a disease on an unsuspecting world. No woman claims ownership of the "69 cents" lie, or the "1 in 4" lie, so women in general own it and every woman out there will argue it as if it were her very own idea - because she believes it is. Men have to start doing the same. I would love nothing more than millions of men repeating ideas that I have articulated, and believing that they are their own ideas and they cooked them up their own clever selves.

MRAs are in general too damn polite. Scumbags will rip off anyone else's idea and try to make a buck off it, MRAs will stand around being "polite" and not do something which might help men because..., well because there might be something not-polite in there somewhere.

QUOTE: "I can't seem to find a way to contact this fellow through blogger. Do you know of any way i can contact him? i just prefer to be up front about this sorta thing, I just wanna avoid accusations of plagiarism, i think online the

best way to do that is by going above and beyond to give credit where its due."

Don't be so fuckin' polite. Damn few MRAs have ever made one cent from being MRAs, and a lot of of us use pseudonyms purely because we avoid the limelight rather than seek it. I've had lots of conversations with JadedGuy and I can tell you that he would 1000 times rather that the ideas get picked up and spread among men and that they would catch on than he cares one shred about "credit." He is on at least his third or fourth blog (the previous one was "Scripturally Single", and I'm not sure what the one before that was called, I just remember that there was one.) He re-invents himself every couple of years, anyway.

The whole concept of Men Going Their Own Way came out of discussions on Mancoat about 3-4 years ago. Some of us long term activists were discussing if men would ever manage to get their shit together to mount any sort of organized pushback against femi-fascism. The consensus was that they never would, and it was observed that what was really already happening was that massive numbers of men were simply unplugging from the system of social values which was screwing them over and defining their own values for proceeding with their lives - Going **Their Own** Way. JadedGuy was as much a part of these discussions as anyone, and he clearly understands that aspect of needing to give ownership of any "men's movement" to any man willing to get off his ass and ”Shovel the Fuckin’ Gravel.”

.

.

The biggest challenge to the MRM is getting out of neutral - it has remained stalled for more than 40 years. One big part of this is that men have become passive as they have become feminized, and most boards have plenty of suggestions of great ideas for **SOMEONE ELSE** to make happen.

Which leads to another really good contribution by JadedGuy - "to suggest is to volunteer."

You are shoveling some gravel in making this happen. You have volunteered. Not one of us will do anything to hold you back.

Go for it.

.

Further Reading:

Zenpriest #8 - The Big Truth

The History of MGTOW

Previous Zenpriest Index Next

Zenpriest #57 - Personal Attacks and Mind Games

. · 26 February 2002 · Archived copy · Original

QUOTE: "If anyone knows who wrote [The Feminist Shaming Tactics Catalog], I'd love to give credit where it's due."

The author is a fellow who went by the handle of JadedGuy on Mancoat, and currently has the blog "Biblical Manhood" where I believe he calls himself Anakin Niceguy.

As useful as this has been for men, I have already noticed that women are adapting. I have been suggesting for some time that men anticipate this and up their side of the confrontation.

These really are "tactics", and those familiar with military terms will know that "tactics" are individual actions executed within an overall strategy, and strategies themselves are engaged in to support a goal or objective.

The goal, of course is to keep men silenced and refuse to hear what they are saying, the strategy is to twist the message so that it becomes about the man himself rather than what he is saying, and the tactic is person attacks and mind games.

From our side, I suggest strategically going on the counter-offensive. The reason that shaming tactics are so effective is that they trigger the reflex to go on the defensive and attempt to either deny or justify the accusation - in effect validating it.

eg. "You all just hate women.
response: "I don't hate women, I love women."

No matter what a man says at this point, he has lost the conversation because the woman has stolen it from him and made it about him rather than about the issues.

That is why I suggest calling them "personal attacks and mind games" instead of "shaming tactics" or "shaming language." Point out that the person is simply attacking you personally, for the purpose of changing the subject. This puts them on the defensive. Then, go on to restate your point. If they engage in another personal attack on you, simply point that out again, along with the fact that you have already pointed it out.

Remember that the objective is **NEVER** to convert the person you are arguing with - always, always, ALWAYS play to the lurkers. If you can keep control of the conversation, and make the feminist look foolish and hypocritical, as well as malicious, you will sway far more sympathy to your position than if you allow them to sucker you into chasing your own tail with attacks and mind games they don't believe but use because they have been proven to be so effective at confusing men and forcing them to give up.

Further Reading:

Social Strategy: How Men And Women Are After Different Things When They "Debate"

Previous Zenpriest Index Next

Zenpriest #58 - The MRM's Perpetual War With Itself

. · 27 February 2002 · Archived copy · Original

QUOTE: "Actually, the whole black MRA thing on youtube is at war right now."

The whole MRA-etc. thing is at war right now - not just the black part of it. The issue of "Game" has just exploded of late, with lots and lots of guys weighing in on it. I've maintained all along that men would end up adapting to the changes in women - in ways that women were not going to like a whole lot. Women tried to shift the system so that everything tilted their way, so men are learning how to game the system.

Us old time MRAs probably have a blind spot when it comes to "unity." For so man years there were so few of us crying in the wilderness that we thought the only way we would ever make any headway was to try to get men to unify in the way that women always unify against men in their women-first-ism.

MGTOW got articulated when a few of us began to think that men would **NEVER, EVER, EVER, YES NOT NEVER** get unified. If you get enough men whose only thing in common is that they do not support the system, that will weaken the system even if the opposition is not unified. But, a lot of guys came to MGTOW still stuck in the old way of thinking and kept saying "we've got to get other guys to join us."

I've reached the point where I don't think that is needed. Anarchy and chaos are just as threatening to the system as organized resistance - and a lot harder to fight.

What I am seeing now is lots of individual men, and a few identifiable groups, attacking the system. They aren't cooperating with anyone else, but I don't think that really matters - with the system being attacked on a lot of fronts simultaneously, it will get weakened and eventually fall.

A lot of MRAs - maybe most of those who apply that term to themselves - basically hold feminist values -- "equality." They/we tend to be older and many are the ones who went along with early feminism due to the promise it would liberate men as well. At some point, they woke up to the fact that feminism was never about "equality", but wanted to go ahead and finish the job that the feminists started.

A lot of the men I am seeing show up now are a new and different breed. They don't care much that there are no DV shelters for men, because they pretty much reject all the liberal values of the boomers. They are just looking out for #1.

It wouldn't have been my first choice of how things would work out, but I do think it is better than what we have seen for the past 45-50 years.

QUOTE: "We all have different views, I guess thats the underlying prinicple of MGTOW but shouldnt we have the wellbeing of ALL other menin a female society at heart? Be he white, black, yellow, blue whatever? I personally am batting for all men opposed to feminist doctrine. If we are all supposed to batting for ourselves then why are we all here in this online commuity?"

MRAs have been attacking each other since the 1970s. That is nothing new. I've lost track of the number of men's groups, lists, and boards that I have been part of - I know that it is well over 100 - and it is very rare that they grow over about 50 active members before they start tearing themselves apart with internal conflict. We've just had an example of it here with the sudden introduction of the "incel" concept which in short order led to a suggestion to split the board.

MRAs are already "marginalized." In some respects that is to our advantage because no one takes us seriously and they don't pay much attention to what we do.

Certainly, I would like to see men get their shit together and mount some sort of organized resistance to the creeping totalitarianism being pushed by women. But, they haven't so far and there seem to be some very persistent reasons why they haven't. We seem to be hard-wired to compete with each other, and struggle and conflict come so naturally that cooperation takes more effort than most men are capable of.

What is more worrisome to me than some guy shooting off his mouth and upsetting some other guys, is the fact that so many men seem to be waiting for some sort of Moses to lead us out of our wilderness. I've reached the point where I am certain that there ain't no one going to "do it for me", nor are they going to listen much to me when I try to communicate my own vision. That leaves me to put it to work in my own life, and leave other men to do the same.

As long as someone is hacking away at the perverse trend which has taken over the culture, I'm content to let him keep at it - knowing that I don't want to join him in his ideas, and he won't join me in mine. But, we do have a common enemy and as long as we are both attacking it, we are "working together" in what is perhaps the only way possible for men today.

Further Reading:

The History of MGTOW

A Leading Philosophy Rather Than a Leader

MGTOW is also Men Going The Right Way

Previous Zenpriest Index Next

Zenpriest #59 - The Most Important Lesson a Man Can Ever Learn

. · 28 February 2002 · Archived copy · Original

QUOTE: "When one considers that one must "game" a woman, even your wife, in order to keep her around, then it also means that you must always be operating at a "higher level" than her. It totally negates the whole notion of having a "soul-mate" and means that on many levels, ***a man will always be alone."***

That is probably the most important lesson a man can ever learn.

Intimacy with a woman is impossible **if** you have any interest in being her lover. If you are fine with being one of her grrrlfriends, and don't mind the stupid messed up games women run on them, then you can share to your heart's content - and will always be on the LJBF ladder.

The fundamental problem with today's concept of marriage is that it seems both men and women expect their spouse to be all things to them - lover, confidante, helpmate, "soulmate", co-housekeeper, and co-wage-earner. With so many role demands, it is inevitable that everyone will fail at some of them. That is why the old division of roles worked fairly well for most people - each could concentrate on a few things they were good at, and leave the rest to the other person.

The fundamental dilemma for men is that as they age they slow down. They get tired and sometimes need someone to lean on. Marriage 1.0 worked fairly well in this regard, as it also worked for women who had lost all their physical attractiveness. If they had managed to become friends and partners in the early years, that would often carry them through the aging years when neither of them had what it took to find and snare a new partner.

Under the new rules of marriage 2.0 a man has a choice - being alone in an expensive manner, or a not-so-expensive manner. The loneliest men I know are married men trapped in a loveless marriage to a perpetually complaining slug who they nevertheless have to enslave themselves to support. I look at their lives and they are as good a definition of hell as I need. Alone = freedom.

The tiny crumbs of affection that WW dole out today are priced way way over what they are worth.

Previous Zenpriest Index Next

Further Reading:

Zenpriest #20 – There Is Nothing More Lonely Than Being With Someone You Cannot Talk To

---

"The average woman is not strategically capable of bringing down the most tempting game within her purview, and must thus content herself with a second, third, or nth choice.... A few women, true enough, are so pertinacious that they prefer defeat to compromise. That is to say, they prefer to put off marriage indefinitely rather than to marry beneath the highest leap of their fancy. But such women may be quickly dismissed as abnormal, and perhaps as downright diseased in mind; the average woman is well-aware that marriage is far better for her than celibacy, even when it falls a good deal short of her primary hopes, and she is also well aware that the differences between man and man, once mere money is put aside, are so

slight as to be practically almost negligible. Thus the average woman is under none of the common masculine illusions about elective affinities, soul mates, love at first sight, and such phantasms. She is quite ready to fall in love, as the phrase is, with any man who is plainly eligible, and she usually knows a good many more such men than one...

Here we have a sufficient explanation of the general superiority of bachelors, so often noted by students of mankind—a superiority so marked that it is difficult, in all history, to find six first-rate philosophers who were married men. The bachelor's very capacity to avoid marriage is no more than a proof of his relative freedom from the ordinary sentimentalism of his sex—in other words, of his greater approximation to the clear headedness of the enemy sex." -- H.L. Mencken

Zenpriest #60 - Why There Never Has Been Any Coherent "Men's Movement" and Why There Never Will Be

. · 1 March 2002 · Archived copy · Original

Involuntary Celibate (Incel) QUOTE: "I thought the division here was between PUAs and non-PUAs. But now I see this is wrong. People are motivated by personal experience. There are two types of personal experiences that make men MGTOW. One is being screwed over by the system, divorced. The other is being universally rejected by women (in the femisphere). It is sad that most men of the divorced group are so incapable or unwilling to understand the men of the rejected group. I now understand that these divorced men are not my allies, they are not on my side."

And, once again, here is why there never has been any coherent "men's movement" and never will be. Women who detest everything about another woman will still stand with her as a woman against all men, while men will argue each other to death over such weighty issues as "boxers or briefs" or "paper or plastic."

Men, in general, seem so obsessed with dividing the world into "us" and "them" that the inevitable end point of the process seems to boil down to "me" and "them".

There are far more than just two types of motivations for a man to unplug and decide to go his own way. And, there is no "the" division among the men on this board - there are thousands of divisions, even though we only have a little over 100 members.

MGTOW is not any sort of "movement", or at least no sort of mass or unified movement - just like the so-called "marriage strike" is no sort of strike at all, but the visible result of millions of men turning off to the idea of marriage, and becoming so disgusted with women who have the EMF (Entitlement Materialist Feminist) mentality that dealing with them is so unpleasant that aversion to them is stronger than the normal biological drive and attraction.

That alone says a lot about the quality of women we have as our possible choices of mates.

"Understanding" does not equal getting down with someone in their self-pity pot and wallowing in it with them. If that is how they want to spend their time, they are welcome to do that, but the rest of us have better things to do with our time and our lives.

I think there is a third group which is far larger among MGTOW than either of those mentioned above - men who realized that the system was rigged against them and opted out of playing the rigged game.

I have a certain degree of empathy for divorced men who have been screwed over by the system, but it is limited. The signs have been out there in the culture for more than 30 years indicating where this is all headed. Men who ignored those signs, or were too thick to realize what they meant, had the chance to avoid what ended up happening to them, but chose not to. I saw those signs and have avoided most of the negative consequences of dealing with EMF women, and don't see any reason why they couldn't have done the same.

Yes, I agree that the system has mightily fucked them over. What I do not understand is why so many of them continue to support and defend the very system which did fuck them over.

I view the whole marriage/fatherhood and even dating issue much like I view the de-criminalization of marijuana. Marriage and fatherhood have been criminalized, and those who go ahead and choose to do it are doing it at their own risk. A lot of people take the same approach to smoking pot - they do it, and hope that they are one of the ones

who get away with it without getting caught.

But, there is also a group of us for which the legal deterrent is significant enough to encourage us to refrain. Particularly when past experience with the criminalized activity has convinced us that it is marginally worth continuing even without the legal risk.

Now, there are a lot of issues on which I disagree with [certain member here]. But none of them are significant enough to be worth putting energy into creating conflict about and risking polarization because there is a far greater number of issues on which we are in total agreement. Since those are major issues for men, it makes more sense to spend time and energy looking for ways to cooperate and strengthen each other's efforts, instead of wasting a lot of time and energy, and creating animosity, by trying to prove to each other that we are right and he is wrong.

QUOTE: "Well this clarifies things, quite a bit.On the one hand we have the people who are worried about men's rights -- yes, the "system", the law, what it does to men in the workplace, in the family, in the school system, title ix and so on. Men's rights.

On the other hand we have whining little boys who never figured out how to get laid. MRA/MGTOW and so on is not about "I can't get laid, waaaah". No-one has the right to be chosen by women for relationships.

Whining about women's choices is insane. They are going to choose who they want, these days, and you can either become that, or avoid them, or go someplace where they make different choices.

Men need to realize this: women's behavior in the west is not going to change. At least not anytime soon."

Forty years ago, when I first encountered feminism, it seemed to me like a bunch of spoiled brats whining that they weren't getting their way and wanting the whole world to change so that they got what they wanted without having to follow the path everyone else had had to follow in order to get that.

Women wanted into the workplace, and a lot of men said "We don't think you really want that - the workplace is a pretty nasty and unpleasant place to be." But the women screamed "PATRIARCHY" and claimed that they were tough and could take it "just like a man" and could do anything a man could do, so they got let in and the first thing they started doing was screaming "But, this place isn't WOMAN FRIENDLY!!!!"

Um, no, it isn't. We told you that. That is why we said we didn't think you would like it.

Recent history since then has been one long push to legally require the world to change its nature to give women what they want and demand. It has only worked to a limited extent.

One of the fundamental foundations of feminism is absolute flat denial that there is such a thing as biological reality. We are seeing manifestations of that today with middle-aged women whining that they can't have children because they pissed away their most fertile years chasing careers and banging thugs.

It is that idea that the world is responsible for giving someone what they want, no matter how stupidly and stubbornly they deny reality, which is what I have been fighting against as I have fought against feminist thought.

So, yes, I have absolutely no empathy for men who engage in the same sort of thinking. When I saw it starting to emerge among men, I knew that I had lost everything I had been fighting for, and mostly quit being any sort of MRA.

QUOTE: "As for the system, those are other, legal issues, and they can be changed at least a bit on the margins. Unlikely, but much easier to do than changing the entire culture. And so that's what MRAs do. I don't think there's much hope of success, because men are too disunited (look at this forum) and women don't care about things until it directly impacts them."

And there, in 10 concise words, is the sum of the entire issue, the answer, and what needs to be our entire strategy. When this mess starts to directly and signifcantly hurt women, then and only then will they become motivated to do anything about it. And, when it does start to hurt them, men would not be able to do anything to stop them, even if men wanted to, and men won't have to do jack shit because women are champion whiners and naggers and men aren't even in the bush league.

QUOTE: "If you're not getting laid, there are things you can do about that -- you have options. Deal with them. You only get to live once, and being pissed that you were born at the wrong time is a piss-poor way to go through life."

When I first heard the insane notion that women in western cultures were "oppressed", I laughed it off. One of my favorite counter-examples when they bring up "male privilege" is the Battle of the Somme in WWI. Over a million men were dead, wounded, missing, or captured - most of them young, and most of them virgins.

So, yes, sorry I don't see "not getting laid" while living in a land of unbelievable luxury (by historical standards), being largely safe and free of the threat of conscription to force them to go to some foreign country to shiver in the mud and die or have their body torn apart, as being the worst thing that men have ever had to endure.

I can just imagine one of those scared boys, only a few weeks off the farm, whining to his commanding officer - "hey, those guys over there are **shooting** at me."

And, his commander replying "Well, yes they are, son. Now, what are you going to do to make sure you aren't on the receiving end of one of those bullets?"

There is a great old saying - "I was sad because I had no shoes, until I met a man who had no feet."

Every spiritual tradition has some form of "count your blessings." I'm sure that is because humans have a tendency to obsess about what they don't have that they want, and completely forget about how much they **do** have and how good their life really is.

Previous Zenpriest Index Next

Zenpriest #61 - Everyone Lives Through History, We Just Don't Realize It...

. · 2 March 2002 · Archived copy · Original

…until we have.

These are exciting times for men.

I know that statement will cause some people to snort and roll their eyes and start to think of all kinds of reasons that it is just plain crazy. There is a lot of gloom and doom being circulated about men and boys these days – “The Decline of Males”, “The End of Men”, the cackling of the pecking hens that men are “obsolete” because some scientist has claimed to be able to produce sperm in a lab. Most of it comes from the necrotic husk of the has-been lame-stream media. Too much of it comes from men themselves.

I don’t buy it – any of it.

I think I’m the oldest contributor here. I have lived through what many of the contributors here (and probably most of the readers) view as history and know of only through the same manner that they know of Ancient Greece, or the World Wars of the 20th century – from something they read or someone told them. The 1960s may not seem as remote as an ancient civilization, but from the perspective of a participant-observer, I can tell you that a lot of what has been said and is being said about life 50 years ago is 190 proof horse manure.

Men’s lives in the 1950s and before were not all about the much mythologized “male power and privilege,” nor were woman anywhere near as “oppressed” as has been claimed. History is always revisionist, and the revision is always done by the victor. In considering the 2nd half of the 20th century, the ideology of feminism was clearly the victor.

But, other than the ability to dictate how things are spoken about, and what things can be said and what can’t, what did they “win.” I think the real answer turns out to be “nothing”, except perhaps the booby prize. See, men’s lives for most of history have been not about “power and privilege”, but rather about bone crushing and soul destroying work, huge responsibilities, and disposability.

There has been much buzz about the internet recently about the finding that women's happiness has actually declined during the past 40 years that they have been "winning", becoming "liberated", and pursuing "having it all" – both in absolute terms, and relative to men. At the same time, men's happiness has increased – both in absolute terms and relative to women.

Now, let me say that again, and really let it sink in – men today are happier than men were 40 years ago, and women are less happy. Lots of people have analyzed the hows and whys of that to the level of terminal boredom, but that one simple fact stands alone – **men today, on the average and in the aggregate, are happier than their fathers and grandfathers were**.

Why?

Well, it's really pretty simple – men's lives today are simply better than the lives their fathers, and grandfathers, and great-grandfathers, and all the men in history who lived and died before them. Life for men, in general, has never been better.

"What??!?!" you say. "How could that be?!!?! It's just not so! The feminists have told me!"

One of the better musical poets of my generation, Bruce Springsteen, summed up very well what the lives of average men used to be like not very long ago, in his powerful song, "The River."

"I come from down in the valley
where mister when you're young
They bring you up to do like your daddy done."

Mens' lives were incredibly constrained. What your "daddy done" was most likely what you would end up doing, and your son, and his son. For the college educated and middle class, this usually took the form of some sort of business, mercantile, management, or professional white collar job. For the working class, it meant -

"Then I got Mary pregnant
and man that was all she wrote
And for my nineteenth birthday
I got a union card and a wedding coat"

A white collar boy/man might marry Sally instead of Mary, and a get clerkship in his father's law office instead of a union card, but both classes of men had their life script handed to them about the end of their teens. And, all classes of men were expected to spend the vast majority of their waking lives working for someone else in order to live up to the protector/provider role which was most men's alternative to being social non-entities. In those days, the only roles which gave men any social validity at all were husband, father, and wealthy man. In order for a single man to have any social acceptance at all, he damn well better be wealthy.

Well, fast forward 50 years and we find that men have far more freedom and flexibility than any group of men has ever had in the history of the world. They can now choose to be husbands, and/or fathers, or anything else, and the social pressure and stigma which used to force the vast majority of men into early marriage (and often early graves) and the role of a specialized beast of burden bred for the specific purpose of dragging around an emotionally and financially dependent wife and family is simply no longer there.

Certainly, some men might wish to continue to choose those roles for their lives. And the social Luddites, who fear and resist change, may want to try to keep men trapped in those old roles. But, as women's roles have changed, the

system which gave men only one set of choices has changed whether people wanted it to or not.

Men may choose to be husbands and fathers. Or not. They can choose to be travelers, or explorers, or scholars, or X-box players. Or not. They can be househusbands, assuming they can find a breadwinning wife and are willing to deal with the residual social stigma toward a man who does not live up to the traditional roles. But, women have blazed the way in breaking down those old roles and in their place have left men a world of opportunities limited only by their own imaginations.

The real challenges confronting men these days are the topics Novaseeker and Prime have recently written about – defining core masculine values by which men define themselves. For too long men have been allowing women to define us – either in the negative, by giving a us a list of things they don't like about us, or by demanding that we become more like them. Some men are comfortable with becoming more like women, and we will see how women really end up liking them once the do.

But, for the rest of us, who have never had any desire to be women, we now have the opportunity to completely define for ourselves what sort of masculinity will serve us, and those we love, best in the coming years.

We men, right now, are living through history. To most of us, it just seems like our lives. But, as time passes our lives of today will become our context of tomorrow. And, our choices of today will shape the world that we and our children will live in tomorrow. And, in far less time than they can imagine, young men of today will have become the "older generation" of tomorrow and find to their surprise that those who came after them are now judging them based on the present they created for those next generations.

Instead of watching our feet, and looking behind us, and castigating the boomers for their mistakes, our best future lies in reclaiming our authenticity from those aspects of the culture which have become toxic. We need to do what the younger men here have started to do and realize that we no longer have sustainable values handed to us – as previous generations of men did – and that we must now create them. We can seize the day and take the best from the past ideals of masculinity, reclaim them from the dishonor which has fallen on them, and at the same time shed the worst aspects which have been the source of much of that dishonor.

More than at any other time in history, we have the ability to define not just our own presents, but our futures and the futures of those we care about.

Yes, indeed, these are exciting times for men.

We are confronted with insurmountable opportunities.

Previous Zenpriest Index Next

Zenpriest #62 - The Hegelian Dialectic and Social Change

. · 3 March 2002 · Archived copy · Original

I'm going to take as a springboard this comment by Novaseeker -

QUOTE: "This is a time of great change and dislocation, to be sure. But it is also our time, the time of our freedom, if we choose to recognize that and embrace it in our lives. We can be our future now, if we only have the courage to grasp that destiny with both hands and mold it as we wish."

I agree totally, but I think it also raises the question of "how"? How do we grasp that destiny, and how do we mold it? Do we simply make individual personal choices and have everyone else do the same? That would seem to me to be a state of cultural entropy in which culture simply continues down a path of progressive disorganization – the only possible end point of which is complete disorganization, or "chaos."

Some may be familiar with what is called the "Hegelian Dialectic" and some may not, but it is a way of describing the process of social change: **de**scription, not **pre**scription. It is not saying how it "should" occur, but simply noting how it does.

In a terribly oversimplified version -

You start with existing conditions and social values which are defined by a majority or dominant group within a culture, and those conditions and values are generally thought to define the culture. Hegel did not actually use the terms which are now most commonly associated with his description of the dialectic, but the term used now to describe the "status quo" is the "thesis", the theory on which the culture is based.

However, those conditions and values, that thesis, work best (or in some cases only) for the dominant group. For other subgroups the thesis does not work so well so they come up with an opposing or alternate set of theories, called the "antithesis" (literally the anti-thesis), which functions as a counter-thesis.

These two competing theories struggle for dominance in the culture and over time end up modifying each other and achieving compromises which are more workable and acceptable to both groups than either the thesis or the anti-thesis. And, this stage is called "synthesis."

Remember that this is a description of social change, which is constant. So, the synthesis is not a steady state or a permanent solution, but instead becomes the thesis against which a new antithesis (counter thesis) arises.
So, if the 1950s and "Leave it to Beaver" and "Ozzie and Harriet" were the thesis, and 2nd wave feminism was the antithesis, and the synthesis of the two is the conditions in which we live today, it seems that it is time for a new antithesis – this time posed by men because the last one was posed by women.

Is the new anti-thesis Game? Or is there more to it than that? Are we cycling away from a purely theoretical approach to life exemplified by feminism toward a more pragmatic one like Game, or is Game simply a transition point on the way to a fully developed anti-thesis? Is HBD actually the anti-thesis?

Some raw meat thrown out for the discussion minded…

Previous Zenpriest Index Next

Zenpriest #63 - In a Bar Last Night: One Good Marriage and One Attention Whore

. · 4 March 2002 · Archived copy · Original

Last night I went to see a HS buddy of mine, who has become an absolutely amazing guitarist, playing in a local bar. I got to see an interesting contrast between two very different types of women.

First, my buddy and his wife. This is his third marriage. He was a bit over 40 when they got married, and so far this one has lasted longer than his previous two combined – 13 years and counting. He's been playing guitar for about 40 years and while he was always an "adequate" guitarist, he was also a fairly pedestrian one – not really any better than thousands of other wannabe superstars out there. But, something has happened to him recently – a quantum leap in his skill and subtlety. There were times sitting there listening to him last night when he just blew me away.

I mentioned that fact to his wife sitting at the front and center table with me. She said that he really took off a few years ago when he gave up being a plumber to devote full time to music. She is actually the one who convinced him to do that, and said she would support him while he did. Some months he makes a little more than she does now, and some months a little less. One thing she said really struck me – "He believes in me and I believe in him, and we are in this together for the long haul."

She is about as well-preserved as any woman in her early 50s I have ever met, and a truly delightful person to be with. The old saying "Third time is the charm" certainly seems to apply in his case.

In the bar was another woman who made an interesting contrast to my buddy's quietly attractive, supportive, wife. She was 40-ish – actually could have been anywhere between mid 30s to late 40s. She had that kind of generic American woman look about her. She was reasonably attractive for a woman her age, but also had the air that she had put a lot of work into it. The man she was with I assumed was her husband because they were both wearing rings. He appeared to be a mid-level beta. He was stockily built and looked like he did manual labor type of work, but was wearing a shirt that made it obvious his wife dressed him. It had all kinds of embroidery on it, and a few sparkly somethings. I've never met a man in my life who looked like him who would buy that kind of shirt for himself.

She was doing all kinds of signalling for attention: flipping her hair, making expansive gestures with her arms, being all over him like a teenaged girl giddy over a date with the quarterback of the football team. The music was so good that the band was holding everyone's attention, so she had to up her game. Despite the fact that this was a restaurant and there was no dance floor, she got up and started dancing solo (and not very well) right in front of the band. When people still didn't pay any attention to her and continued to watch, listen to, and enjoy the band, she started going up to the men at the first row of tables and saying something inane about herself. The men would just flash her an empty smile and go back to watching the band. The third time she approached me she escalated to arm and shoulder touching.

Meanwhile her husband continued to sit at the bar and just watch her. I wondered what was going through his mind. She obviously wasn't getting enough traction that he could have been sitting there smugly thinking "You guys all want her, but she is going home with **me**." My guess is that this was standard enough behavior for her that he was just sitting there waiting for her to get it out of her system and come back to "papa."

I looked over at my buddy's wife who was watching her husband with obvious adoration in her eyes. Every once in a while he would look at her from the stage with the same look. They obviously have a good marriage – one of the

few I have ever seen. I would call my buddy almost an “Accidental Alpha.” His wife clearly gets off on saying “I’m with the band, with the lead guitarist!” I’m sure that she would not have beamed in the same way if she were standing outside of someone’s house pointing to him and saying “I’m with the plumber over there.” She invested of herself in helping him achieve something that allowed her to be prouder of him, and got a lot of personal rewards from it.

His attention was all she needed. She had no need to seek it from other men present.

The guy at the bar watching his attention-whore wife trying to get attention from other men wasn’t really a complete herb. He looked like the kind of guy who would be great to knock back a few beers with, or the kind of guy you would want to know and be able to call on if you ran into a snag putting headers on your smallblock.

When the band got done with their gig I walked out of the bar thinking about the contrast between the two glimpses of marriages I’d seen. I don’t really envy my buddy because he has earned his happiness by enduring 2 difficult marriages and raising a total of 7 kids. He’s earned his happiness.

And, despite the fact that the attention seeker was above average in looks for a woman her age, I sure didn’t envy her husband.

Previous Zenpriest Index Next

Zenpriest #64 - Only a Fool Would Have Swallowed It

. · 5 March 2002 · Archived copy · Original

Just as any magazine has different sections and departments, such as sports, entertainment, hard news, etc., so will The Spearhead look at different aspects of the male experience in the early 21st century westernized world. And, I think most readers of the Spearhead will agree that experience has some issues.

One aspect of the traditional notions of masculinity favors the active over the passive. Men have been identified with doing, and are typically known by what they **DO**. How many times have you been asked the question, many times as the first opening of conversation, "What do you **DO**?"

Just for the fun of it, because I love to yank people's chains by giving unexpected responses, I often reply "I don't **DO** anything, I just **am**."

There is immense power in not going along with people's social expectations. I'm not talking about being actively anti-social and doing things which are immoral, unethical, or illegal; but rather to simply not fall into the subtle social manipulation which amounts to following a script: "Well, if I say "A" then that is your prompt to say "B." "The Social Script", or just the "The Script", for short, is a very powerful means of subtly controlling other people's behavior.

One of my favorite examples of not following the social script in circumstances where doing so is self destructive is a story about the philosopher Alan Watts. At a posh, high-brow, dinner party he was served some potatoes which were still scaldingly hot. He immediately spit them out onto his plate and looked up to a sea of faces aghast at his incredible breech of "table manners." He laughed in their faces and said "Only a fool would have swallowed it."

Only a fool would swallow something which is self-destructive, simply because he is under social pressure to do so.

Ferdinand did a recent post about "The Emptiness of Modern Manhood." Welmer has said that "Over the last few years, it has become increasingly obvious that American men – particularly those of the post-boomer generations – have fallen into a cultural gap." and "As our society slowly hews down the last pillars of masculinity, ennervating a once vigorous civilization, it is important that some among us continue to stand up and live, speak and think as men." If this is the picture of manhood, and civilization, that younger men see, it seems fairly obvious that somewhere along the line the guardians of masculinity and manhood have been fools and swallowed something fairly destructive.

As part of the generation who probably dropped the ball more than any other, I am in a position to offer some insights into how and why that occured. However, a post-mortem on classical notions of manhood and masculinity would be nothing more than a pointless intellectual exercise, particularly for men, unless whatever understanding and insight comes from that is taken to the next step and forms the basis for some sort of action.

If there is one symptom of the malaise of modern manhood/masculinity which more than any other points to both the root of the problems and their potential solutions, it is the loss of the ability and desire to take action. Rich Zubaty wrote a book a few years ago entitled "Surviving the Feminization of America." His message boils down to the concept which has been pushed for the past 40 years – that masculinity and men are bad and femininity and women are good and that all the problems of the world will be solved if only men will become women.

But, the problem is that the average woman who is not among the feminist policy makers is not a lesbian. If she wanted to be with a woman, she could choose to do so. Masculinity is the natural complement to femininity, and to

the extent that women retain any sense of their own feminine natures, they prefer masculine men.

When Ferdinand speaks of “The Emptiness of Modern Manhood”, he invokes the imagery of a hollowed out shell. Certain surface trappings of manhood have been held onto by the social deconstructionists in collusion with the Social Conservatives, but they have hollowed out the heart of it, leaving a truly empty feeling shell. Obsessive-compulsive “chivalry” has dictated deference and special treatment for all women which was previously reserved for those women who had earned the right to be called “ladies.” Hint: this right was not earned by swearing like a sailor, dressing in a manner which would embarass anyone with both self-awareness and taste, or excusing boorish and excessive behavior by saying “well, men have been doing it for years.”

So, part of the problem with modern manhood which makes it feel empty to younger men is being required to treat with respect an entire group of people who have not earned it by acting in a respectable manner or by reciprocating that respect – a group of people who seem to feel entitled whatever they want for no other reason than having been born with a vagina. And, in allowing that to come about and continue, the people who allowed it have cheapened the entire concept of “respect” so that it no longer contains any aspects of excellence, or admirable qualities, or achievement. In short, people today demand respect not for anything they do, but simply for being – existing. Well, earthworms exist, but they are not particularly admirable creatures.

But, there is something in the masculine spirit which rebels against this – something deep down which knows that it is fundamentally, completely, perversely wrong; something which knows that anything unearned is nothing but alms. And to accept alms is to be a beggar and is a wound to the spirit.

The masculine spirit knows that something must be done to earn what one receives in order for it feel like an achievement, a reward for excellence, and something which is worthy of respect. The quarterback who scrambles, finds his receiver, connects with his pass, and the receiver who takes it into the end zone both have done something characteristically different than the waterboy sitting on the sidelines. And thus it is just and right that should be rewarded with more respect.

But, in today’s world, the opposite is the case. Those who have achieved nothing demand the same rewards as those who have, and blame their own failures on the successes and excellence of others.

“From each according to ability, to each according to need” is the ideology of a cancer cell. Yet, in much of today’s world people are punished according to their ability and rewarded according to their need. That is what has eaten the heart out of modern manhood – the demand that we respect what is not respectable, give what has not been earned, and feed the tumor before we feed the heart.

Yes, indeed, only a fool would swallow it. But, unfortunately a lot of fools did. And, a lot of younger men have been left with a sense of emptiness.

So, what do we do now? We stop being fools and stop swallowing it. We spit out the nonsense we have been fed back onto the plates where it came from. And, when we get those nasty disapproving looks from people because we have refused to allow them to socially pressure us into harming ourselves – we laugh in their faces.

Previous Zenpriest Index Next

Zenpriest #65 - Upping MRA "Game": Honing Our Rhetoric of Ridicule

. · 6 March 2002 · Archived copy · Original

Feminism is cultural-level Game being run by women, collectively, against men, collectively. Men and boys swim in a sea of negs, and the purpose is exactly the same as using negs in game – to keep the other side off balance.

While some serious practitioners of Game may be fine with the relative advantage that knowing Game gives them over a lot of other men, others cannot help but be aware that the playing field is tilted signficantly to the advantage of females and that leveling the playing field in general would probably help their overall percentages. As the trailblazers of Game have studied individual female behaviors and learned how to use those behaviors to their advantage, I think that men can certainly study collective female Game, or feminism, and use that understanding to improve conditions for men at the cultural level.

Nilk just made an interesting comment – “I don’t have the answers, but I suspect a part of it comes from beating the enemy at their own game.”

Let that one sink in for a minute.

In order to do that, first we must define the enemy, then identify their game, and finally analyze it so we can devise tactics to defeat it.

So, let’s start with who is the enemy. Are women “the enemy”? Yeah, yeah, I can hear the chorus of objections coming from all directions. Stow it. I’ll come back to this.

Is the NWO the enemy? They make a convenient scapegoat – like hobgoblins, evil spirits, and “patriarchy.” Sorry, but there have been more “new world orders” or “new orders for the ages” throughout history than wannabe prophets and messiahs, and there have been plenty of those.

Maybe Alphas, or SoCons, or maybe even “card-carrying-Kommunnnists!” And then again, maybe not.

Or maybe all of them are for one simple reason: their interests are not our interests, and they are going to pursue their interests and show no concern at all about ours – leaving that job to us. And if we don’t do the job of looking out after our own interests, then we are the ones who dropped the ball, not them.

So, let’s start with the enemy that looks back at us from the mirror and tackle that one first. What keeps us from actively advocating for our own interests? I’m looking for reasons, not excuses. (“Excuses are LIES, plebe!”) Identifying obstacles is the first step in the process of problem-solving, which we men are supposed to be so good at. Sorry, dudes, based on the performance of the past 45 years I would have to say we really suck at it. Let’s start by seeing if we can get out of our own way and start to do something effective.

Which brings me back to women and the game they have been running on men and boys.

While they may not be “the enemy”, they are certainly not our allies, either. Feminism has convinced a great many women that their interests and men’s interests are in conflict, mutually exclusive, and a zero sum game. That makes many of them our opponents, our competitors, and a group of people who generally view any gain for men as a loss for women. Many of them also view any loss for men as a group to be long overdue because every man throughout history has led a life of unbroken “power and privilege” don’cha’know.

So, one answer to this has been to run game on men and boys collectively with an unbroken and constant stream of negs – sometimes hidden behind “cuteness” and sometimes just flat-out man-bashing. The tiresome litany of complaints has become so cliched that most of us could write the entire kvetch based on the first line or two. Recently Novaseeker did a post about a post on another blog titled “94 reasons the guy I’m dating isn’t right for me.” A better title would have been “94 cliches negging men, repeated for the 10 millionth time.”

Whether they are “enemies” or not, you can pretty much count on most women playing for “Team Woman.” They are going to high-five each other over cutting those “over-inflated male egos down to size”, and nod their heads in enthusiastic agreement as the “you go grrls” give men their what-for.

And, betas just sit there with stupid Prozac grins on their faces and take it. Why?

There are a lot of reasons, but I want to focus on just a couple of them.

First, men have a very difficult time internalizing the fact that they are dealing with an opponent dedicated to stonewalling them and preventing from making any progress. For some odd reason, a lot of men unreasonably and irrationally cling to the “reasonable and rational” approach despite the fact that it has never worked.

Second, men generally lag behind women in the psychological warfare being waged. They do not realize that they have walked into a gunfight with a plastic spork, and when their patient explanations do not win over their opponents, they often get angry, flustered and inarticulate.

I think the next stage of evolution of cultural-level game will be for men to upgrade their skills in the rhetoric of ridicule. As things often play out now, one or two representatives from “Team Woman” can usually easily keep the issues confused and keep stinging men like hovering wasps with their crafted words which are skillful personal attacks designed to stonewall and derail discussion.

Our friend Anakin has done a very valuable piece of work with his “Catalog of anti-male shaming tactics” by identifying the most common games run on men to try to shut them up. I think it needs to be taken farther, however. While he identifies the mechanism – the emotional response of shame – it needs to be taken to the next step and how those tactics fit into an overall strategy needs to be subjected to the same sort of analysis.

This is why I have suggested no longer calling them “shaming tactics” and instead calling them “Personal Attacks and Mind Games Used to Silence Men.” The strategy is to shift the discussion from the subject at hand to being about the person, and with a personal attack put that person on the defensive.

So, this leads us back to the idea of beating our opponents at their own game.

The naive and simple Charlie Browns, thinking that they are not dealing with people who are actual opponents but simply people who don’t understand yet because it hasn’t been properly explained to them, will plunge doggedly ahead making points their opponents do not want to hear and will do everything in their power to prevent from being heard. The wasps will swoop in and start stinging – “loser, you hate women, you live in your mother’s basement, you must have a small penis” until they land one that hits a sore spot and triggers Chuck’s anger.

At this point he will lose his train of thought, and pop off with some terribly imaginative comeback like “bitch” or “whore” or “slut.” Contrary to all the nonsense about “slut shaming”, these terms don’t bother the attack wasps of Team Woman in the slightest. In fact, they are clear signals the wasps have hit their target, accomplished their objective, and reduced poor Chuck to barely articulate profanity.

So, it's time for MRAs to up our game, and improve our own negging ability – to start honing our rhetoric of ridicule so we can sting our opponents as deeply as they are trying to sting us. This is where the masters of Game have a real advantage. They know how to go for the throat, how to undermine, and how to do it with a light touch so that objections can be dismissed as being thin-skinned, or having no sense of humor, or taking themselves too seriously.

Now, of course, this being Game, there will be the cultural level version of cockblockers. Most of these will be SoCons, or knee-jerk chivalrists, or manginas – "HOW DARE YOU SAY THAT ABOUT WOMANHOOD!!! Up with this, I WILL NOT PUT!!!"

That is probably where we need to start developing wingman skills. Instead of leaving our intrepid Man Who Is Concerned About The Status And Future Of Men (MWICATSAFOM? Nah, fuggit, "MRA" is much simpler) hanging out there on his own, we need to give him an assist.

Unfortunately, this will probably require going for the throat. It will require analyzing the areas where women really are insecure and beating on them the same way operatives from Team Woman will attack a man's potential areas of insecurity in order to shut him down.

It's nice to see that Paul Elam has resurrected A Voice For Men after a hiatus of several years. On his front page, he poses the interesting question which a lot of long-time MRAs have pondered -
"Suppose they had a gender war…
and men showed up."

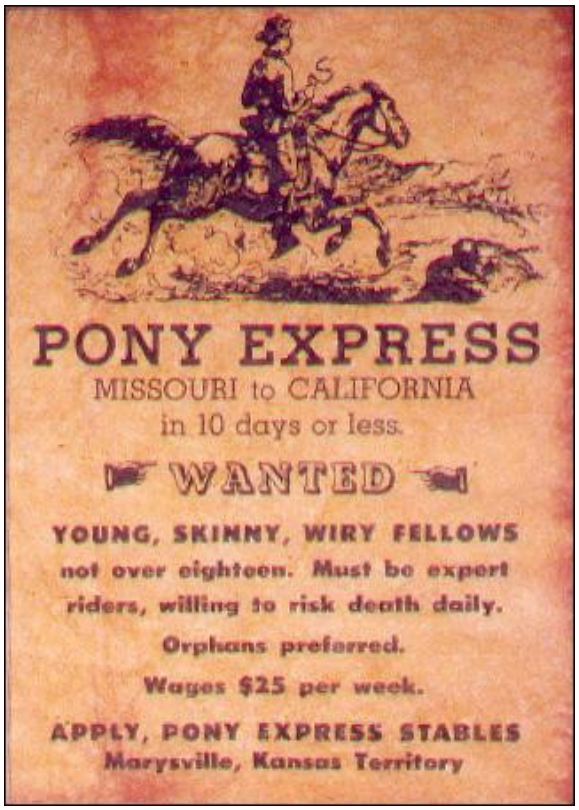
Are men ready to start taking the sticks of dynamite that Team Woman has been throwing at us for more than 45 years, lighting them, and throwing them back? Are we/they ready to take off the kid gloves, abandon their romanticized Victorian notions about women, and realize that many of them have no concern at all for us (best case) and some actually harbor intense and active malice toward us (worst case)?

Is Team Men ready to take the field? Is it time for "Game on"?

Previous Zenpriest Index Next

Zenpriest #66 - Guy Stuff: Traveling Hard, Fast, and Light

. · 7 March 2002 · Archived copy · Original



Road Trip!

Those two words conjure up many romantic images of days gone by – Route 66, the "freedom of the open road", and maybe even a memory or two of the Pony Express.
One huge advantage that guys have is that our needs are simple and the list of "requirements" we have for comfort is fairly short. Unlike a woman I knew many years ago whose idea of "roughing it" was "no reservations", we as men can easily travel hard, fast, and light

There is so much of traditional manhood shown in that Pony Express poster – male ability, and freedom, **and** disposability. "Must be willing to risk death daily." Men without family ties, "orphans", were preferred. Not only would no one really miss them, but their lack of interpersonal ties left them completely free to do what men, and only men, could do when set free.

Riders changed horses every 10 miles – the maximum distance a horse could travel at full gallop – and when the riders themselves were ridden out, they handed off the mail satchel to another man just like them.

It's interesting that the only major "road trip/buddy" movie of the past few years has been about women – Thelma and Louise. It's popularity among women seems to indicate that some women, at least, envy the kinds of freedoms and mobility that men have always had.

Some of the authors and readers here are motorcycle enthusiasts. Those with the pluck and grit to climb on their own "Iron Horse" can carry just about everything they need for a decently comfortable existence in their saddlebags. A one-burner camp stove, day's worth of rations, light sleeping bag, and a bivvy sack are all that is needed to cast an eye to the horizon and say to oneself "I wonder what is over there? I think I will go see."

Some of the most powerful and pleasant memories of my life are experiences I had on motorcycle road trips. Many years ago a buddy of mine and I stood under a tree at Vail Pass eating french onion soup into which a passing thunderstorm had dumped a few hailstones while it was heating. More than 25 years later we still get a laugh out of eating "Hailstone Soup" at Vail Pass.

He's all settled down, now – with a wife, and a daughter, and a big mortgage, and a membership in the local Kiwanis Club. He and I are cut from different cloth, and we have always known that. Several years ago, he said to me that he had always envied me my freedom. I told him that my life was as good a definition of hell as he would ever need. He is a guy who needs comfort, and security, and someone to take care of him. When we would have any sort of breakdown on one of our two-up trips, he would go find some shade and patiently wait while I fixed whatever would need to be fixed. He is the same type of guy as many who have approached me on one of my road trips and said wistfully "Well, I used to have a bike, but my wife made me sell it."

On the last road trip we took together, and I am sure the last one we ever will take together, he made the comment that he realized that if I died on one of those twisting mountain roads I love so much to travel, that it would be "right"… that I would simply be dying the way I had lived. He knows me really well, and has known me a long time, and he was right.

There has always been a subset of men with itchy feet. We're not the guys who coach your little league teams, or keep the florists and jewelry stores in business, or settle down like good betas and do what our wives tell us and sell our motorcycles when they tell us to. We don't make very good husbands, or dads for that matter, but a lot of kids love to have us as crazy uncles that keep the family entertained by allowing them live vicariously through our exploits. We are the kind of yahoos who climb on ships and sail toward what everyone else knows is the edge of the world and we are going to certainly fall off. Or climb into experimental airplanes not knowing whether we are going to blow up or break the sound barrier.

We ain't got a lick of sense, we are wilder than March hares, and as Burt Munro (a Kiwi from Invercargill, Julie) says in "The World's Fastest Indian", we often live more in 10 seconds on the edge than some people live in a lifetime. And, that works out for everyone – because we want to, and they don't. We do crazy shit, and we love it.

We are gluttons for intensity – believing that life is best savored by taking **BIG** bites. Yeah, we seldom do what we "should" do, which is why we are neither boring nor bored. We never sustain a civilization, but we end up doing those things which a civilization cannot do without – carrying its mail, pushing its limits, and reminding people that he who is not busy being born is busy dying.

We travel fast, hard, and light, and for that reason travel mostly alone, sometimes in the company of other hard men, but seldom in the company of women. You don't want to be us, but you benefit from having us around. We don't want to be you, and we will fight like hell if you try to make us into clones of you.

We are the ones who have benefited most from feminism. Women no longer need us, so we are now free to see what is over that next horizon, eat hail-stone soup, and sit by the ocean feeling the waves hit the shore and meditating for days on end. Women have forced us to learn how to live without a woman's love, and we learned while that can be painful for a man, it is not fatal. We are "orphans" who are now free to make the lives we choose.

Facing death makes a man appreciate life in a unique way. No longer is it worth wasting even one minute of this miraculous experience called "life" slaving away in some corporate cube so that a government can confiscate what we make by doing so. Every minute of life passed is a minute we will never have again, and one gone out of a too small allotment we are given in the first place.

Related: EOTM: Road Trip '97

Previous Zenpriest Index Next

Zenpriest #67 - The Baby Bomb: How the Boomers were Used to Demolish a Culture

. · 8 March 2002 · Archived copy · Original

The baby boom had a long fuse. While the social mass of having such a large number of people suddenly added to a culture would naturally displace the center of social balance toward the values of younger people, the impact of the boomers was disproportionately greater than the percentage of the population they represented. The reason for this unusually large impact came from the convergence of several long-term trends and influences which converged at the time of the boomer generation to produce a sort of “Demographic Perfect Storm” which wrought fundamental changes in the culture.

When I say they were used to “demolish” it, I mean to fundamentally change the values which had defined the culture up until that time. Any culture is defined by its values, and when you change those values you change the culture into something else. Using the social mass of the boomer generation like a wrecking ball, they were slammed into a culture which was already undergoing fundamental changes in social organization and the institutions which perpetuated that organization. The large scale trends that came together as the boomers were being born and raised were:

- Demographic Displacements and Shifts
- The Rise of Mass Media
- Consumer Culture and
- Marxist Thought.

First Demographic Displacements and Shifts

World War I was fundamentally about the end of the old hereditary aristocracies in Europe, but it had a subtle and unforeseen effect on the US as well. The long term trend of movement of the population away from farms, rural settings, and agrarian lifestyles toward urban settings and industrial employment got a huge bump from the servicemen leaving the farms to go off to war and not returning to the farms when they came back. Instead they tended to stay in the cities and feed the work force for the growing industrial output of the US.
About 1920, the first of two huge demographic crossover points was passed – when the majority of the population no longer worked on and drew their livelihood from farms, but instead lived in urban areas and was employed in industrial production or commerce. During the Depression and Dust Bowl eras of the 1930s, this rural to urban

movement increased as many landholders lost their land and were forced to move to the cities and find employment where they could.

World War II was a repeat of the pulling of farm boys into the armed forces and then dumping them back in the cities, with the added twist of the GI Bill which allowed many of them to attend college who otherwise would have never had the chance to do so. This sudden increase in the proportion of the population with college degrees raised income expectations and did, in fact, result in increased personal incomes for a while, which in turn drove a growing housing market and the rise of “suburbia” as new living spaces were constructed on the edges of cities already at saturation point in terms of the number of people they could hold.

With the end of the war, the US was left with massive industrial production capacity but no longer had the majority of that output being destroyed by war and thus needing constant replacements. The suburban population centers with their newfound affluence and disposable income were one obvious outlet, as was post-war Europe and Japan in rebuilding mode. But, even with all those markets the unbelievable production of the US industrial engine would have soon saturated demand. The two concepts of “Planned Obsolescence” and “Conspicuous Consumption” were wedded with the newly emerging mass media of television to produce an advertising-driven culture of perpetual consumption.

No longer were people accustomed to producing most of their own needs like food, fuel, and even furnishings. They were entirely dependent on trading the wages for their labors with other people for all the necessities and luxuries of life. This played very well into Keynesian economics, or the “velocity economy” in which the economy was measured not by total wealth, but by how many times and how often a dollar changed hands.

These were the parents of the boomers, and the environment into which the boomers were born.

Consumer Culture

About 1960, one of the most profound demographic shifts in history occurred virtually unnoticed in the US: the number of people involved in the production of anything – agricultural or manufactured goods – slipped into the minority and there became more people involved in selling, distributing, or managing those goods than were involved in producing them. In other words, the US shifted from being a nation of producers to a nation of handlers. This laid the groundwork for being able to use such phrases as “service economy” or “information economy”, which would play a very significant role in how the expectations of affluence created by the circumstances of the boomers’ upbringing would be met as they moved into and through adulthood.

The boomers were raised on a steady diet of television, parental competition to “keep up with the Joneses”, and the repeated refrain from their depression-era parents that “we don’t want our kids to have it as hard as we had it.” They were also indoctrinated virtually from birth that they would carry on the tradition of being college educated which may have only started with their parents, but which was definitely seen as the key to “a better life” – which at that time generally meant “having more stuff.”

The Rise of Mass Media

After WW I, two new mass communication technologies really began to take off and spread – film (movies) and radio. These two technologies covered two very important aspects of culture – information dissemination and entertainment. Radio had the advantage over print media like newspapers in being immediate and timely, as well as being one step closer to direct human experience – hearing is a direct sensory experience, while reading requires intellectual processing and literacy in addition to sight. Literacy was far from universal at that time, so people could be reached by radio that could not be reached by newspapers, books, or magazines.

Film put the experience of “theatre” within the reach of the common people. While everyone might not be able to afford tickets to a Broadway play, almost everyone could scrape together the 5 cents for which they could purchase an hour or two of complete escapism. This escapism gained even wider appeal during the Great Depression when a great many people had really difficult lives from which they loved having the ability to purchase an hour or two of complete escape.

The film industry spawned an interesting side effect based on the social tendencies of people – the phenomenon of celebrity. Stage actors and other entertainers had always had a degree of fame and celebrity, but the mass market venue of film provided a much broader potential audience and a whole host of new niches for celebrities to fit into and exploit. It was possible to have only so many great Shakespearean actors or operatic divas, but movies provided the opportunity for many different types – from the buffoons of the 3 Stooges to the cowboy actor – to gain a following.

Radio and film merged their potentials in television. Sight, sound, and immediacy were a very potent combination. The propaganda potential of radio was well recognized and exploited in the years leading up to WW II and during the war, and the advent of television on a mass scale made it a propaganda device on steroids. In addition, it also made a very nice consumer good to occupy those factories, as well as being a self-perpetuating outlet for consumption because it created demand through advertising.

Radio also spawned a related industry which would eventually come to figure very heavily in the “information economy” to come – recorded music. While it was a product with some continuing market from its introduction up through the war years, it really started to become a force in its own right when presented with a market comprised of suburban teenagers with lots of time on their hands due to lack of involvement in any economic activity but still with disposable income.

So, all the fragments were arranged – massive production, massive consumption, high degree of wealth relative to what had gone before, mass media with both propaganda potential and the ability to create demand for consumer goods by emotional manipulation, and a number of products with no direct need or worth as necessities of life which were easy to produce and easy to distribute – when the baby bomb was detonated and sent those fragments tearing through the foundations of cultural values.

Marxist Thought

Now the plot thickens.

All of the above is merely descriptive – laying out the conditions that existed when this huge mass of new future citizens was dumped onto the scene.

Marxist thought goes back, of course, to Karl Marx and Friedrich Engels in the mid-19th century. However, the portion I’m going to highlight starts in 1917 with the Bolshevik revolution in Russia. Rob has covered this extensively, so this is going to be an extremely brief synopsis. For a far more complete picture, go to http://menforjustice.net/library or http://no-maam.blogspot.com.

The Russian revolution failed to spark the world-wide uprising of the proletariat to kill the capitalists which the Marxists had expected. In analyzing the reasons why it didn’t, Marxist theorists saw the cultural institutions of religion and religious values, family, patriotism/nationalism, and education as being too strong in maintaining and transmitting cultural values for such a major shift to take place. In order for the Communist revolution to come about, those institutions would have to be weakened and undermined and the cultural values they transmitted be destroyed.

One of the best ways to go about this was to deal with people's baser appetites and motivations and weaken their intellectual and moral control of their behavior. A perfect model of how this might be accomplished was provided by Freudian psychoanalytic theory with his "id, ego, and superego" – the id being the reptilian brain and the animal appetites and emotions, the superego being social and moral consciousness, and the ego mediating the conflicts between the two. Appealing to the id, and weakening the superego, puts the ego in service of the id.

The Frankfurt School was a center of Marxist thought established in Germany in the early-mid 1920s. Their goal was to meld psychoanalytic thought with political action as a way of weakening cultural institutions supporting restraint, by endorsing hedonism and short-term gratification. The prime strategist was a man named Antonio Gramsci, who laid out a plan for a "Long March Through The Culture" which would leave every cultural institution which had defeated the Bolshevik revolution in a pile of rubble in its wake.
So, now the stage is set.

Fearing the rise of National Socialism, the Frankfurt School relocated to New York in the mid 1930s. Most of the members were Jewish, so they had real reasons to fear the anti-Semitic sentiment which was rising in Germany, and they were able to come into the US without attracting much attention because of the large influx of other Jewish intellectuals and professionals fleeing Germany for the same reason. Once here, they set out to infiltrate and become strong influences in the media, education, and psychotherapeutic communities. There was an easy symbiosis between these, particularly due to the chic and trendy nature of psychoanalysis in the post WW II US.

Despite the way that McCarthy has been ridiculed and demonized, there really were communists active in the entertainment industry during the post-war years. They didn't concentrate as much on strictly Marxist themes as they did on indirectly attacking cultural values. Instead of a direct attack on religion, for example, a competing idea of nihilism was introduced and promoted – e.g. "Rebel Without A Cause."

The boomers were sitting ducks for all this because they were children in the stage of life when the purpose and goal is to learn and internalize cultural values. Instead of the parents, churches, and communities which provided most of the input for previous generations, the boomers were raised by television, radio, and film. The monumental sexual drives of adolescence, which every culture has to find a way to grapple with and restrain, coincided with a generalized loosening of sexual mores and restraints. More and more sexual imagery started appearing, and the Pill conveniently arrived – separating sex from reproduction and making "recreational sex" a real possibility – just as the first boomers hit puberty.

During the "turbulent 1960s", there were two major cultural phenomena which strained generational relationships even more than the classic and inevitable tensions between the old and the young – the civil rights movement, and the Vietnam War. The high level of distrust engendered among young people for the older generations, the "establishment", was captured in Abbie Hoffman's famous dictum "Never trust anyone over 30." "Traditional" values were seen as corrupt, exploitive, capricious, and often dishonest. A major youth movement/trend developed whose participants were called "Hippies" with values directly opposed to and reacting against the values of their parents and older generations. It was actually termed the "counter-culture", which was an very accurately descriptive term because the values which defined it ran directly counter to prevailing cultural values of the time. "Sex, drugs, and Rock'n'Roll" was the mantra, "Make Love, Not War" was the passion, and "Free Love" was the ideal goal. Hedonism became the highest good, and even members of their parents' generation wanted to join the party and have some fun. The developmental period of adolescence got greatly extended, with many parents sitting down to smoke dope with their own kids, if not being the ones to introduce their own children to the drug subculture.

The expectations of affluence, plus the expectations of their parents, plus the Vietnam War sent the boomers to college in unprecedented numbers. Here is where the Frankfurt school had really been busy. A huge number of

their members had achieved professorships in prestigious institutions, and by the late 1960s they owned the academy. Hardly any discipline outside the hard sciences was untouched. Their thinking pervaded the social sciences, the arts, philosophy, and even theology. The boomers were at college to LEARN, so that is what they did. Few had the critical facilities to question and analyze what they were being taught. Some of us renegades who did question saw the early beginnings of Political Correctness taking shape as refusing to conform to the ideological indoctrination would be severely punished. If you wanted good grades, and that meant the carrot of a “good job” that they dangled in your face, you toed the party line.

And, into this volatile mess, they injected feminism.

The family, paradoxically, was at the same time both the strongest cultural institution and one of the easiest to attack. The age old tensions between men and women, dubbed “the battle of the sexes” were easily exploited to get women to see themselves as an “oppressed” class. The sexual revolution was in the news, but not in everyone’s minds yet. The boomers were raised mostly under the old cultural mores and values regarding sex, and then suddenly turned loose with a new toy they weren’t quite sure how to play with. Mis-cues and misunderstandings between the sexes on what sexual “liberation” actually looked like were easy fodder for exploitation in the next phase of the gender war – the escalating issue of “rape.”

The establishment of “Women’s Studies” departments in the academy metastized the cancer, and gave the hard core haters an entrenched “bully pulpit” from which to spread their Marxist theory and hatred against the “class” of men.

Boomer men were on the horns of two-pronged dilemma They were at the stage of their lives when their primary goal and task was to find a mate and form a family, yet their pool of potential mates was developing values which were fundamentally different than the values that men had been led to expect to find in the women they would choose as wives. Trained in one set of skills and attitudes that had been attractive to women in the past, men were now finding women who were not attracted by those characteristics and were demanding something different. However, the specifics of what was demanded no longer followed any sort of cultural pattern but were mostly based on the preferences of individual women – their much vaunted “choices.”

No-fault divorce and the rise of “rape consciousness” fundamentally changed the relationship dynamic within marriage. The idea that a man could be convicted of “raping” his wife totally erased the long held tradition of “marital duties” and turned sex from being part of the foundation of the relationship between man and wife into an instance-by-instance exercise in the gratification of personal whims.

The Marxist concept of “class oppression” combined with the sex-fearing dysfunction of women like Susan Brownmiller severed the most basic marital bond in one blow.

This class warfare was extended by placing all sexual activity on a “continuum of oppression” and set up a situation and consciousness that men could not possibly do anything but lose – the fundamental attraction between the sexes which is essential for the continuation of the human race became proof of “oppression” and a constant and perpetual source of justification for claims of female victimhood. The class consciousness of the “sisterhood” hoodwinked women into believing that they had more in common with women living on the other side of the world, or with women who had lived and died years before they were born, than with the man with whom their shared their bed, their children, and their lives.

This “unity based on type” was exactly what the socialist and union organizer Eugene Debs was saying when he said -

"while there is a lower class, I am in it, and while there is a criminal element I am of it, and while there is a soul in

prison, I am not free."

“Brotherhood” and “sisterhood” are the same basic concept, and are illustrations of the same type of “ideology over everything else” that sometimes found members of the same families, sometimes even biological brothers, on opposite sides in the US war between the states, or civil war. A woman might have a splendid life – a comfortable home, a loving husband, decent kids – but as long as there was one woman anywhere who was “oppressed”, then so was she. ”

“The personal is political and the political is personal” destroyed people’s ability to have personal relationships and turned all relationships into political relationships. A man and a wife might be having a typical couples argument, and suddenly the man became responsible for the mistreatment of women in the Middle East, the binding of Chinese women’s feet, and the lack of women’s suffrage a century ago.

In the face of this onslaught, most men felt an unbelievable sense of betrayal, but they were stuck in marriages to these women and their only choices were a lifetime of conflict or to just surrender and give in. Most men chose keeping their family together over falling on their swords of principle, and just caved in. Some even went so far as to exhibit a form of Stockholm Syndrome and became dedicated feminists, denouncing themselves in weird displays of schizophrenia and self-abdication.

Those that didn’t soon faced the Soviet-style “re-education camps” created by the DV industry which was based on the Marxist idea that all Domestic Violence was a conspiracy by men to perpetuate their “oppression” of women. There is no more purely Marxist bit of thinking at work in feminist countries today than the Duluth Model of domestic violence.

Demographic and economic shifts, and growth of mass media and consumer culture continue

This gradual infiltration of Marxist thought occurred against the backdrop of continuation of the social, economic, and cultural trends which took off a half century before. During the 1960s mass media exploded. For many years there had been only 3 TV broadcast networks and only people living in or near major cities had access to all three. As the distance increased, reception decreased and people living 60 or more miles from an urban center often could only get all 3 stations reliably if the weather was clear. Throw in a bit of rain or fog and most people got vague ghosts on the TV and slightly warmed rain or fog between them and the broadcast tower.

These remote communities soon saw a business opportunity open up in the form of Community Antennas, or Cable TV. Entrepreneurs built huge towers and installed signal boosters, filters, and amplifiers and delivered the signal to homes via coaxial cable. The low cost of this kind of distribution system led quickly to the development of original content specifically for cable, which eventually became cable networks like HBO, Cinemax, and MTV. The expansion of content drove up demand, and demand drove the expansion of content. An entire new “industry” was born which in turn spawned many new jobs.

The transition from a nation of producers to a nation of handlers in 1960 was the key to an economy which would have to absorb more new workers than ever before in history. A purely production-based economy could not have done so because there were not enough markets to absorb greatly increased output. At the end of the decade of the 1950s, the US, with 2% of the world’s population, was absorbing over 50% of the world’s industrial output. The rebuilding of Europe and Japan were essentially complete, so any increase in production would require opening new markets. But, opening new overseas markets would require spurring development in those areas so that those countries would have something of economic value to exchange with the US. Only a strategy of globalization provided enough potential for perpetually expanding markets, and one of the first functions to be “outsourced” to other countries was industrial production.

This fit perfectly with the white-collar expectations of the new generation who never once considered following in their fathers' footsteps and becoming blue collar workers.

The boomers were a double-whammy to the labor market because not only was a larger number of men than ever before looking for places in it, but also a large number of women were following the feminist script to compete with men economically and for the available jobs. The "service economy", and "information economy" ideas led to the rapid development of a generalized "managerial" class, which required skills which transferred seamlessly into a rapidly growing government bureaucracy.

As the boomers seeped into the workforce between 1964 and about 1986, the economy slid into the doldrums. The petroleum crisis in the mid 1970s ended cheap gasoline, dealt a crippling blow to the US auto industry because they were too slow to respond to trends and downsize their offerings, and opened the US market to Japanese autos of much higher quality than the US produced models. Globalization had begun in earnest.

Interest rates spiraled out of control in the early 80s, going over 20%, which depressed the housing market and sent ripples through the rest of the economy. The displacement of farm families of the 1930s was repeated as rising fuel costs and a weak economy forced a large percentage of the remaining family farms out of business.

Through all this, men and women had been stroking away, coping as best they could, trying to work out some sort of new balance and mixture of gender roles, and managing to get along.

And then the feminists unveiled the nuclear device of the gender war – the redefinition of normal sexual relations between men and women as "rayyyype!"

The notion of women as an "oppressed class" had simply failed to gain the traction it had needed to completely split the normal attraction between the sexes, so the obvious strategy was to attack that attraction itself. Susan Brownmiller had laid the conceptual foundations in the mid 1970s with "Against Our Wills", and Catherine MacKinnon and Andrea Dworkin had carried the water of the concept forward with sexual harassment law and Dowkin's sex-hating, man-hating, prose. All it took was for Mary Koss to fabricate her bogus bit of research in which she mysteriously "found" that "1 in 4″ women were being "rayyyyped" and the wedge to sever the trust and attraction between the sexes was set.

The feminist movement had pretty much stalled because most women still didn't see their husbands, brothers, fathers, and male friends as the enemy. People were slowly working out new roles and people were adjusting to dual income families. The Equal Rights Amendment had failed back in the 1970s, but the real barriers to the kind of equality it envisioned were more in the slowly changing social attitudes. Things had changed blindingly fast as social change normally goes, but still not fast enough for the feminists.

And then, along came Susan Faludi, with her *Backlash: The Undeclared War Against American Women.* If there ever is a trial for war crimes of the gender war, I hope Faludi hangs. Despite what were actually huge strides toward a new more equal social system, including the fact that women had been getting the majority of college degrees for a full decade, she dismissed all that and re-kindled the sense of victimhood among women of a certain age group. There wasn't a war before her book, but things certainly became one as a result of it.

In the brief cultural span of less than 50 years, every social value which was in place half a century ago has been swept aside. The idealistic boomers, fresh out of college with their Marxist ideas went into every aspect of government, and rode Lyndon Johnson's "Great Society" into a welfare-therapeutic state where they controlled education, social services, and most branches of government as a result of having become entrenched in the multitude of bureaucracies spawned by the notion that every human problem could be solved if you just threw

enough money at it.

The right to kill one's own children and call them "choices" was enough of a blow to the culture, but when people started seriously using "same sex" and "marriage" together, the Long March Through the Culture was complete – absolutely nothing meant the same thing it had 50 years before.

Previous Zenpriest Index Next

From the Buddha's Little Known "Ultimate Extinction of the Dharma Sutra"

. · 1 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

"When the Dharma is about to disappear, women will become vigorous and will at all times do deeds of virtue. Men will grow lax and will no longer speak the Dharma."

"When my Dharma disappears it will be just like an oil lamp which flares brightly for an instant just before it goes out. After this time it is difficult to speak with certainty of what will follow."

"Good persons will be hard to find; at most there will be one or two. Men will die younger, and women will live longer."

Buddha - From "The Sutra of the Past Vows of Earth Store Bodhisattva" (Commentary by Tripitaka Master Hsuan Hua - in America)

. · 1 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

Sutra:

Buddha: "If there are women who detest the body of a woman, and who full-heartedly make offerings to Earth Store Bodhisattva's image, whether the image be a painting or made of earth, stone, lacquerware, brass, iron, or some other material, and if they do so day after day without fail, using flowers, incense, food, drink, clothing, colored silks, banners, money, jewels, and other items as offerings, when the female retribution body of those good women is exhausted, for hundreds of thousands of aeons they will never again be born in the worlds where there are women, much less be one, unless it be through the strength of their compassionate vows to liberate living beings. From the power of the meritorious virtues resulting from these offerings to Earth Store Bodhisattva, they will not receive the bodies of women throughout hundreds of thousands of tens of thousands of aeons.

Commentary:

Do not think that being a woman is a good thing, for being a woman involves a great deal of trouble. There are women who do not like it and always wonder why they have to be women; they want to learn what they can do about it. Through worship of Earth Store Bodhisattva these questions can be resolved.

What is the trouble involved in being a woman? Because there are people who might like to investigate this further, I will go into a bit more detail. You should not think of this as an attempt to cause women to dislike their state and leave home. If that occurred then there might be even more problems for me to deal with.

There are Five Obstructions and Ten Evils encountered by women. First we will discuss the Five Obstructions. The first is that women are not able to become the Great Brahma Lord because that position is accomplished through purity, and the body of a woman has a great many impurities. Second, women cannot become Sakra. An astute student may object that earlier we discussed the thirty-three women who became lords of the heavens. This objection is a valid one, but it should be realized that upon reaching the heavens their bodies became male, because only males can be lords of the heavens. Although Sakra has some desire remaining, that desire is quite light; women, on the other hand, are extremely libidinous and consequently cannot become Sakra.

Third, women cannot become demon kings. This is not too bad. They cannot attain this position because demons are extremely hard, solid, and firm, while women are extremely soft and weak. As soon as anything unusual comes up they are at a loss and have to seek help. Fourth, beings cannot be wise wheel-turning kings - the gold, silver, copper, and iron wheel-turning kings - as long as they have female bodies. Wise kings have hearts of great compassion and kindness; they teach people to maintain the Five Precepts and the Ten Good Deeds. Whenever women see something good occur to others, they become jealous, and this keeps them from having great compassion. Because of this basic problem, they cannot become Buddhas. Buddhas have ten thousand virtues; women have many evils. They are jealous and obstructive, and their hearts are about the size of a sesame seed.

If, however, women are able to rid themselves of jealousy, desire, weakness, defilement, and of all evils, they may become men, and so theirs is not a hopeless plight. There is, for example, the case of the dragon king's daughter. When Sariputra said that she could not become a Buddha, she took a precious gem, her most valuable and cherished possession, and offered it to the Buddha, who accepted it. She then asked Sariputra if the Buddha's acceptance of

her offering was fast, and he replied that, indeed, it had been quick. "I shall become a Buddha that quickly," she said and then she became a Buddha. This is proof that women's lot is not hopeless. All they must do is resolve to cultivate courageously and they too can become Buddhas.

There are also Ten Evils that pertain to women. First, at their birth their parents are displeased. Although it is not always the case that parents are displeased at the birth of a daughter, in most societies this is the case, and a daughter starts out life by making a bad impression on her parents.

The second evil is that raising daughters is not a very interesting task. The third is that women are always afraid of people. Boys are not usually afraid, but girls almost always are. The fourth evil connected with women is that their parents undergo a great deal of worry about their daughters' marriage. In America this is not a major matter, but in most other countries parents have to give a great deal of consideration to finding good husbands for their daughters.

Once girls grow up, the fifth of the Ten Evils occurs, when they have to leave their parents alone. The sixth comes after they have been married and are in constant fear of their husbands. When a husband likes something, they are pleased, and when he is angry, they cower in terror. The seventh evil of women is the difficulty and fear of giving birth.

The eighth difficulty is that no matter what they do or say, the report gets back to their parents that they are not good. Although the good remains, it is a goodness that does not influence their parents. The ninth is that they are always controlled by their husbands and are subject to many restrictions, which, if broken, can lead to divorce.

The above nine evils apply to women in their youth. They are old when the tenth arrives and their own children and grandchildren slight them. As the proverb says, "To be old and not yet dead is to be a thief." These are only a few of the many problems involved with being a woman. To explain all of them in detail would be an unending task.

Buddha - from "Selected Writings of Nichiren"

. · 1 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

- Women are messengers from hell. They cut off the seeds of Buddhahood. They have the faces of bodhisattvas, but their hearts are like demons. Women can no more attain Buddhahood than can a dried up seed sprout.

- The course of a river and a woman's mind both wander. Water is malleable, it turns here and there when rocks and mountains block its path. Women are like this. They are inconstant as water. Although they know what is right, when they run into the strong will of a man, they are checked and turn in bad directions. The right fades like a line drawn on the water. Women's nature is unsteady: though they see what they should be, they soon become what they should not be. Buddhahood is founded on integrity. Therefore, women, who are easily swayed, cannot become Buddhas. Women have the "five obstacles" (inability to become anything great) and the "three followings" (follows first the father, then the husband, then the son). Thus in one sutra it is written: "Even should the eyes of all the buddhas of the three worlds fall to the earth, women cannot become Buddha." Another text says: "Even if you can capture the clear wind, you can never capture the mind of a woman."

- The passions of all the men of the three thousand worlds and the hindrances to the salvation of one woman are comparably immeasurable.

- Among the three pleasures of Yung Ch'i-ch'i (in "Tales of Chuang Tzu") was the pleasure of not being born as a woman. He also named the pleasure of not being reborn in heaven as a woman.

Nothing Higher to Live For: A Buddhist View of Romantic Love -- by Bhikkhu Nyanasobhano (Leonard Price)

. · 1 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

If it is possible to live with a purpose, what should that purpose be? A purpose might be a guiding principle, a philosophy, or a value of sovereign importance that informs and directs our activities and thoughts. To have one is to live seriously — though not necessarily wisely — following some track, believing in a hub to the wheeling universe or a sea toward which we flow or an end before which all the hubbub of civilization subsides. What is your purpose, friend, or what should it be?

Perhaps most of us do not come to a clear conclusion in the matter, but this does not mean we have no purpose, only that we do not recognize it or admit it or even choose it for ourselves. In the unhappiest case nature simply takes its course, which is a turbid meandering through the swamps of desire. If life means nothing then only pleasure is worthwhile; or if life has meaning and we cannot get at it then still only enjoyment matters — such is the view of brutes and some sophisticated philosophers. It slips into the unconscious by default when we hold no other, but we are reluctant to entertain it and will rather, if we think about it, take as our purpose support of family, search for beauty, improvement of society, fame, self-expression, development of talent, and so on. But it might be fair to say that apart from these or beneath these the fundamental purpose of many of us is the search for love, particularly romantic love.

The love of a man for a woman and a woman for a man is often the floor to which people fall after the collapse of other dreams. It is held to be solid when nothing else is, and though it frequently gives way and dumps them into a basement of despair, it still enjoys a reputation of dependability. No matter that this reputation is illogical — it still flourishes and will continue to flourish regardless of what is said in any book. Love, or possibly the myth of love, is the first, last, and sometimes the only refuge of uncomprehending humanity. What else makes our hearts beat so fast? What else makes us swoon with feeling? What else renders us so intensely alive and aching? The search for love — the sublime, the nebulous, the consuming — remains sacred in a world that increasingly despises the sacred. When the heroic and the transcendental are but memories, when religious institutions fill up with bureaucrats and social scientists, when nobody believes there is a sky beyond the ceiling, then there seems no other escape from the prison of self than the abandon of love. With a gray age of spiritual deadness upon us, we love, or beg for love, or grieve for love. We have nothing higher to live for.

Indeed, many take it on faith that romantic love is the highest thing to live for. Popular literature, movies, art, and music tirelessly celebrate it as the one truth accessible to all. Such love obliterates reason, as poets have long sweetly lamented, and this is part of its charm and power, because we want to be swept up and spirited out of our calculating selves. "Want" is the key word, for in the spiritual void of modern life the wanting of love becomes increasingly indistinguishable from love itself. So powerful, so insistent is it that we seldom notice that the gratification is rare and the craving relentless. Love is mostly in anticipation; it is an agony of anticipation; it is an ache for a completion not found in the dreary round of mundane routine. That we never seem to possess it in its imagined fullness does not deter us. It hurts so bad that it must be good.

Practically nobody questions the supremacy of romantic love, which is good enough reason to do a little poking around the foundations of its pedestal. Who is entirely satisfied with the romance in his or her life? Who has found the sublime rapture previously imagined? And if one has actually found such a thing, does it last, or does it not rather change and decline from the peak of ecstasy? And if it declines what becomes of one's purpose in life? If a purpose is achieved it is no longer a purpose; it can no longer guide or sustain us. Does one taste of nectar satisfy us forever?

When we tire of crass, material goals we may go searching for love instead of, say, religious insight, because love seems both more accessible and more urgent, and because so much of institutional religion in our time has degenerated into insipid humanism. Some claim refuge here but many more, longing for authentic and moving experience, turn to the vision of the "lover," that source of wonder, joy, and transcendence, who, it is thought, must be pursued and if captured perfected and if perfected then enjoyed forever — or until some other lover lights up the horizon. Love is its own justification, especially for the young who have no other inspiration or no career or responsibilities to dull themselves with as their plodding elders do. Longing bursts through this one channel that seems open, dizzily insisting that the life of unreflecting passion is the highest they can aspire to. They do not reason, but fall. Their elders do reason — obsessively — but fall all the same, thereby admitting that, with all their thought and experience, they find, when driven to extremity, they have nothing but love to live for.

This is not to say that such a surrender must be bad, only that it happens out of instinct and uninformed passion. Love is sweet and it is our nature to give way. But why do we worship it so ardently and why do we break off our search for fulfillment here? Perhaps because we see no other gods. Yet if love is the highest thing to live for then this is a hopeless universe, because we should see in a calm hour that Cupid's arrows not only thrill us but make us bleed.

"Man Kills Estranged Lover, Then Self." "Wife Stabs Husband in Domestic Quarrel." "Love Triangle Leads To Shooting." So read the headlines with depressing regularity. The stories behind these are only the most shocking of countless tales of passion, but they do forcefully suggest that romantic love is not always a blessing. One might object that hate, not love, spawns such tragedies, but where has such hate come from if not from a prior attachment now broken? We should know from experience how easily what we call love can turn to bitterness, jealousy, and malice, and though we protest that this is not the fault of love, we ought to notice that where one passion arises another is likely to follow. Passions are unreliable, volatile, dangerous, and a poor foundation for happiness.

Divorces, suicides, dissipation, violence, depravity, fanaticism, and other miseries great and small follow from passion, and yet passion is still, in the public mind, considered commendable, a mark of vigor and liveliness. Though everybody will admit that passion gone awry is dangerous, few realize that passion is by its nature likely to go awry. Romantic love is a chancy passion that may result in the opposite of what is desired. It may have happy consequences, too — else it would not have so many votaries — but it raises the stakes in the gamble of life and makes us more vulnerable both to our own weaknesses and to unpredictable fortune. As most of us count the joys of successful love (however we define it) worth the pain involved in its pursuit, we must learn to step lightly and with intelligence. We believe, with some reason, that love can ennoble and redeem us, and call forth our purest energies, but we are slower to see that when the lamp of love flickers out, as it tragically tends to do, we might lose our way in a fearful labyrinth of suffering.

Granted that few will shun the pursuit of romance out of fear of unhappy consequences, what can be done to ameliorate those consequences? If we really have nothing higher to live for, nothing to fall back on, the lugubrious truth is that nothing much can be done to ameliorate them, given the volatile nature of human affections, so it would be wise to make sure there really is no superior, sustaining ideal before committing ourselves exclusively to the chase.

Buddhism, of course, teaches such an ideal, which is nothing less than deliverance from all sorrow, called Nibbana. While worldly joys are mutable and fleeting, Nibbana is established, sorrowless, stainless, and secure. While worldly pains are piercing, unpredictable, and unavoidable, Nibbana is altogether free from pain. It is the end of suffering, the supreme refuge, the ultimate emancipation. The Buddha himself applied many terms of praise to it while recognizing their essential inadequacy. Nibbana cannot be grasped by language or concept, but it can be known and realized by one who makes the right efforts. This is a critical point.

Nibbana is not something that happens to us through an external agency; rather it is something that we ourselves may achieve. The Buddha certainly never would have troubled himself to teach had he not understood that his own realization was not fortuitous but rightly won and that those who followed his instructions could win realization for themselves. That understanding, passed down, has sustained the Buddhist religion to the present day. The diligent are not powerless. Suffering can be overcome.

Still, knowing ourselves to be sunk in confusion and beset by myriad defilements, we might regard Nibbana as too remote to do us much good here and now. We persist in seeing an unbridgeable chasm between saints and ordinary people like ourselves. We think practically everybody is like us (or worse) while maybe there are one or two genuine saints in the world, they presumably having just been born in that condition or with the exceptional good luck to get themselves elevated — who knows how? Yet the human condition is not, according to Buddhism, a fixed sentence to this or that level of wisdom and virtue. Beings are living at all stages of attainment, and they do not stay in the same place. They rise through their own good efforts, and decline through their own negligence in the endless action and reaction of intentional deeds (kamma) and results of deeds (kamma-vipaka).

The Buddha did not teach the Dhamma for the entertainment of those already perfected; he taught it for the benefit of fallible people like us who were struggling to avoid pain and make sense of the world. Even to those who came to him with no intention to scale high spiritual summits he imparted the progressive training of giving, morality and mental development. Why? Because there is always scope for improvement and because the human alternatives are not limited to holy wisdom or cloddish ignorance. Suffering lessens and happiness increases when we make an effort to follow the Noble Eightfold Path, whatever our present condition.

In the classic formula, the Dhamma is "directly visible, timeless, calling one to come and see, leading onwards, to be personally realized by the wise." Perhaps we cannot see Nibbana resplendent on the horizon, but we can certainly make out the ground beneath our feet; we can know when we draw a joyful breath or put behind us an old sorrow or refrain from a vicious act or compose an agitated mind. The Dhamma confers benefits here and now as well as in the future. Is there not satisfaction in performing a good deed with a clear mind? Is there not uplift in a moment of quiet contemplation saved from the tumult of the day? The Dhamma lightens our burdens in the present and gives us grounds for hope.

What then does this have to do with the problems of love? Simply this. The Dhamma puts the delights and torments of love into perspective, so that we can break the illusion of love as the highest of aspirations and most essential of desires. Henry Thoreau wrote (when young): "The only remedy for love is to love more." We might amend this to say: The only remedy for love is to love better. The understanding and the practice of the Dhamma do not destroy our capacity to love or enjoy love — far from it. The Dhamma purges the grasping, selfish qualities from our love and makes it purer and nobler.

As we come to understand through personal experience the rightness and goodness of the path of Dhamma, we may discover — slowly or suddenly — that the consuming passions we previously thought to be the only reasons for our existence are really not so, and that something of wondrous value overarches them — indistinct as yet but flashing out now and again from the clouds of possibility. What do our heaving emotions matter compared with that? When we lean hard, out of passion, we will fall hard — such is the nature of attachment. But when we do not lean, when instead we stand upright with an eye to the heights, then the love we bestow flows out of us without weakening us, like a superabundance of vigor. This is metta — loving-kindness devoid of selfishness. It becomes purer to the extent we realize it is not the purest; it becomes happier to the extent we realize it is not the happiest. Nibbana surpasses all.

If, through our own ripening knowledge, we appreciate that our ultimate and highest purpose should be Nibbana, the absolute end of sorrow, then all goals beneath that are cast in a new light. When we have something to live for

that is higher than fame, honor, friendship, or health — higher even than love — we can never be utterly impoverished or ruined. We are in fact in a much better position to enjoy whatever may be achieved in worldly life, because we no longer depend solely on changeable circumstances for our happiness.
Love cools, friendships wane, calamities carry off the good and the beautiful. Who can deny it? If we are to overcome despair and grief we must not invest ourselves obsessively in what is perishable. We need to keep our minds, and consequently our actions, as free as possible from craving and attendant defilements like covetousness and possessiveness:

Our actions are all led by the mind;
mind is their master, mind is their maker.
If one acts or speaks with a defiled state of mind,
then suffering follows like the cart-wheel
that follows the foot of the ox.
Our actions are all led by the mind;
mind is their master, mind is their maker.
If one acts or speaks with a pure state of mind,
then happiness follows like a shadow
that remains behind without departing.
— Dhammapada vv. 1, 2

While nobody can cut off craving simply by an act of will, we can certainly loosen its frightful grip on us by following the path and paying attention to the ultimate deliverance that shines at its end.

Love is never the poorer for being accompanied by wisdom. It is not harmed by being deprived of a crown. The agonies we endure and inflict in the name of love come from making love bear too heavy a weight. While we are in the world and engaged in the life of a householder we will naturally form attachments to family, job, friends, and lovers, but the suffering produced from these attachments will vary according to our wisdom and maturity. If we see nothing higher at all and abandon ourselves to the lottery of gaining and losing, we will surely suffer great pain, but if we keep the ideals of the Dhamma before us we will gain a measure of insulation against worldly inclemencies.

According to Buddhism, everything that has the nature of arising has the nature of ceasing, so it is well to place our greatest faith in Nibbana, which, being beyond all concepts and limits, does not "arise," and thus does not fluctuate with the teetering universe. An independent mind, intent on deliverance, is not a cold, unfeeling mind, but a mind whose love is uncalculated, beneficent, free — and empty of the furious I want of ego. If we don't live for love we won't die for it either. If the windows of our mind are open to the streaming light of Dhamma then that light will bathe our thoughts and actions and distinguish the skillful from the foolish.

Even without understanding of the Dhamma most of us will distinguish in theory between love and infatuation. We think of infatuation as capricious, irresponsible, and shallow, and true love as mature, serious, and steady — though in practice it is hard to tell where one ends and the other begins. At least we recognize some advantage to clear sight and reflection, and this recognition grows sharper with actual experience of the Dhamma. We become less likely to throw ourselves at the feet of the adored object and more likely to stand erect, honest, and mindful, ready to meet our fortune with bravery. To a world that knows nothing loftier than the convulsions of craving, this may seem a loss, but to one who truly experiences the refreshment of wisdom there comes no narrowness but rather a loosening of the bonds of fear and selfishness. One can love without compulsion, out of free will. How gratifying when affection is given, or received, without a bill for services rendered!

Even under promising circumstances there is no guarantee that love will be returned in equal measure, or that it will

last long, or that it will provide unalloyed joy. When we depend on it entirely for our happiness we must dwell in the shadow of pain, however bright our amorous interludes. What if we should lose our heart's support tomorrow? We're okay as long as we have each other, we assure ourselves dreamily. But we will not have each other long. Quarrels, time, distance, changes, or finally death dissolve all unions of friends, lovers, and relatives, plunging the unwary into despair and meaninglessness; and if we have no wisdom we too may go creeping about the lonely streets with our eyes staring hungrily into other eyes and seeing the same hunger there.

But in the way of the Buddha there is relief from distress and exile. In wisdom there is security. Because love is fragile and temporary it cannot protect us forever, but if we relax our grip it may bloom even better, allowing us to give and receive without encumbrance, frenzy, or fear, offering to each other our strength instead of our weakness.

In a sense the practice of Dhamma is like gradually filling the abyss of ignorance with knowledge until that terrible vacuum is appeased and neutralized and the heart no more cries for unknown succor. The perfected one, clinging to nothing here or hereafter, asks nothing and requires nothing, so he is wholly free. His loving-kindness is just the over-measure, the overflowing of his goodness quite purified of the need, the visceral wanting and the vacillation of ordinary attachment.

While we cannot all at once purify our sentiments of their dross, we can raise the aim of our thought and conduct, and reflect on — indeed, contemplate — the virtues of the Buddha and the noble ones who are free from taint. Their achievement is an image to set before our inner eye, something higher to live for, within and beyond the motions of our conventional life. No good thing prospers in ignorance. The more we understand this flawed universe the more skillfully we can live, and the happier we will be. We love best when we do not love out of desperation.

About the Author
Bhikkhu Nyanasobhano (Leonard Price) is an American Buddhist monk from Louisville, Kentucky. In lay life a writer and an actor, he was ordained as a Buddhist monk at Wat Mahadhatu in Bangkok in early 1987. He has spent time in Thailand and Sri Lanka, and currently resides in the United States.

"Nothing Higher to Live For: A Buddhist View of Romantic Love", by Bhikkhu Nyanasobhano (Leonard Price). Access to Insight, 16 June 2011, http://www.accesstoinsight.org/lib/authors/price/bl124.html . Retrieved on 29 December 2012.

The Politics of Aristotle

. · 2 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

The Spartan Women

Again, the license of the Lacedaemonian women defeats the intention of the Spartan constitution, and is adverse to the happiness of the state. For, a husband and wife being each a part of every family, the state may be considered as about equally divided into men and women; and, therefore, **in those states in which the condition of the women is bad, half the city may be regarded as having no laws. And this is what has actually happened at Sparta; the legislator wanted to make the whole state hardy and temperate, and he has carried out his intention in the case of the men, but he has neglected the women, who live in every sort of intemperance and luxury.** The consequence is that in such a state wealth is too highly valued, especially if the citizen fall under the dominion of their wives, after the manner of most warlike races, except the Celts and a few others who openly approve of male loves. The old mythologer would seem to have been right in uniting Ares and Aphrodite, for all warlike races are prone to the love either of men or of women. This was exemplified among the Spartans in the days of their greatness; many things were managed by their women. **But what difference does it make whether women rule, or the rulers are ruled by women? The result is the same.** Even in regard to courage, which is of no use in daily life, and is needed only in war, **the influence of the Lacedaemonian women has been most mischievous. The evil showed itself in the Theban invasion, when, unlike the women of other cities, they were utterly useless and caused more confusion than the enemy.** This license of the Lacedaemonian women existed from the earliest times, and was only what might be expected. For, during the wars of the Lacedaemonians, first against the Argives, and afterwards against the Arcadians and Messenians, the men were long away from home, and, on the return of peace, they gave themselves into the legislator's hand, already prepared by the discipline of a soldier's life (in which there are many elements of virtue), to receive his enactments. **But, when Lycurgus, as tradition says, wanted to bring the women under his laws, *they resisted, and he gave up the attempt.*** These then are the causes of what then happened, and this defect in the constitution is clearly to be attributed to them. We are not, however, considering what is or is not to be excused, but what is right or wrong, and the disorder of the women, as I have already said, not only gives an air of indecorum to the constitution considered in itself, but tends in a measure to foster avarice.

The mention of avarice naturally suggests a criticism on the inequality of property. While some of the Spartan citizen have quite small properties, others have very large ones; hence the land has passed into the hands of a few. And this is due also to faulty laws; for, although the legislator rightly holds up to shame the sale or purchase of an inheritance, he allows anybody who likes to give or bequeath it. Yet both practices lead to the same result. **And nearly two-fifths of the whole country are held by women;** this is owing to the number of heiresses and to the large dowries which are customary. It would surely have been better to have given no dowries at all, or, if any, but small or moderate ones. As the law now stands, a man may bestow his heiress on any one whom he pleases, and, if he die intestate, the privilege of giving her away descends to his heir. Hence, although the country is able to maintain 1500 cavalry and 30,000 hoplites, **the whole number of Spartan citizens fell below 1000. The result proves the faulty nature of their laws respecting property; for the city sank under a single defeat; *the want of men was their ruin.***

.

Related:

”The Man-Woman” – by Hic Mulier, 1620

"On this same issue, here is an abstract from the essay *Rulers Ruled by Women: An Economic Analysis of the Rise and Fall of Women's Rights in Ancient Sparta*

ABSTRACT: Throughout most of history, women as a class have possessed relatively few formal rights. The women of ancient Sparta were a striking exception. Although they could not vote, Spartan women reportedly owned 40 percent of Sparta's agricultural land and enjoyed other rights that were equally extraordinary. We offer a simple economic explanation for the Spartan anomaly. The defining moment for Sparta was its conquest of a neighboring land and people, which fundamentally changed the marginal products of Spartan men's and Spartan women's labor. To exploit the potential gains from a reallocation of labor – specifically, to provide the appropriate incentives and the proper human capital formation – men granted women property (and other) rights. Consistent with our explanation for the rise of women's rights, when Sparta lost the conquered land several centuries later, the rights for women disappeared. Two conclusions emerge that may help explain why women's rights have been so rare for most of history. First, in contrast to the rest of the world, the optimal (from the men's perspective) division of labor among Spartans involved women in work that was not easily monitored by men. ***Second, the rights held by Spartan women may have been part of an unstable equilibrium, which contained the seeds of its own destruction.***

"The want of men was their ruin." -- Chateau Heartiste

.

"Ancient Sparta Showed That Women's Rights Are A Function Of The Economy" -- Return of Kings

.

Aristotle: On a Good Wife, from "Oikonomikos", c. 330 BCE

. · 3 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

A good wife should be the mistress of her home, having under her care all that is within it, according to the rules we have laid down. She should allow none to enter without her husband's knowledge, dreading above all things the gossip of gadding women, which tends to poison the soul. She alone should have knowledge of what happens within. She must exercise control of the money spent on such festivities as her husband has approved---keeping, moreover, within the limit set by law upon expenditure, dress, and ornament---and remembering that beauty depends not on costliness of raiment. Nor does abundance of gold so conduce to the praise of a woman as self-control in all that she does. This, then, is the province over which a woman should be minded to bear an orderly rule; for it seems not fitting that a man should know all that passes within the house. But in all other matters, let it be her aim to obey her husband; giving no heed to public affairs, nor having any part in arranging the marriages of her children.

Rather, when the time shall come to give or receive in marriage sons or daughters, let her then hearken to her husband in all respects, and agreeing with him obey his wishes. It is fitting that a woman of a well-ordered life should consider that her husband's wishes are as laws appointed for her by divine will, along with the marriage state and the fortune she shares. If she endures them with patience and gentleness, she will rule her home with ease; otherwise, not so easily. Therefore not only when her husband is in prosperity and good report must she be in agreement with him, and to render him the service he wills, but also in times of adversity. If, through sickness or fault of judgement, his good fortune fails, then must she show her quality, encouraging him ever with words of cheer and yielding him obedience in all fitting ways---only let her do nothing base or unworthy. Let her refrain from all complaint, nor charge him with the wrong, but rather attribute everything of this kind to sickness or ignorance or accidental errors. Therefore, she will serve him more assiduously than if she had been a slave bought and taken home. For he has indeed bought her with a great price--with partnership in his life and in the procreation of children....Let her bethink herself how Alcestis would never have attained such renown nor Penelope have deserved all the high praises bestowed on her had not their husbands known adversity. To find partners in prosperity is easy enough; but only the best women are ready to share in adversity.

Such then is the pattern of the rules and ways of living which a good wife will observe. And the rules which a good husband will follow in treatment of his wife will be similar; seeing that she has entered his home like a suppliant from without, and is pledged to be the partner of his life and parenthood; and that the offspring she leaves behind her will bear the names of their parents, her name as well as his. And what could be more divine than this, or more desired by a man of sound mind, than to beget by a noble and honored wife children who shall be the most loyal supporters and discreet guardians of their parents in old age, and the preservers of the whole house? Rightly reared by father and mother, children will grow up virtuous, as those who have treated them piously and righteously deserve that they should; but parents who observe not these precepts will be losers thereby. For unless parents have given their children an example how to live, the children in their turn will be able to offer a fair and specious excuse for undutifulness. Such parents will risk being rejected by their offspring for their evil lives, and thus bring destruction upon their own heads. Therefore his wife's training should be the object of a man's unstinting care; that so far as is possible their children may spring from the noblest of stock. For it is only by this means that each mortal, successively produced, participates in immortality; and that petitions and prayers continue to be offered to ancestral gods. So that he who thinks lightly of this would seem also to be slighting the gods. For their sake then, in whose presence he offered sacrifice and led his wife home, promising to honor her far above all others saving his parents, a man must have care for wife and children.

Now a virtuous wife is best honored when she sees that her husband is faithful to her, and has no preference for another woman; but before all others loves and trusts her and holds her as his own. And so much the more will the

woman seek to be what he accounts her. If she perceives that her husband's affection for her is faithful and righteous, she too will be faithful and righteous towards him. Therefore it befits not a man of sound mind to bestow his person promiscuously, or have random intercourse with women; for otherwise the base-born will share in the rights of his lawful children, and his wife will be robbed of her honor due, and shame be attached to his sons.

And it is fitting that he should approach his wife in honor, full of self-restraint and awe; and in his conversation with her, should use only the words of a right-minded man, suggesting only such acts as are themselves lawful and honorable. And if through ignorance she has done wrong, he should advise her of it in a courteous and modest manner. For of fear there are two kinds. The fear which virtuous and honorable sons feel towards their fathers, and loyal citizens towards right-minded rulers, has for its companions reverence and modesty; but the other kind, felt by slaves for masters and by subjects for despots who treat them with injustice and wrong, is associated with hostility and hatred. By choosing the better of all these alternatives a husband should secure the agreement, loyalty, and devotion of his wife, so that whether he himself is present or not, there may be no difference in her attitude towards him, since she realizes that they are alike guardians of the common interests; and so when he is away she may feel that to her no man is kinder or more virtuous or more truly hers than her own husband. And if the husband learns first to master himself, he will thereby become his wife's best guide in all the affairs of life, and will teach her to follow his example.

De Officiius (excerpts), by Cicero

. · 4 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

BOOK II. VI.

.... In what state of mind do we fancy Alexander of Pherae lived? We read in history that he dearly loved his wife Thebe; and yet, whenever he went from the banquet-hall to her in her chamber, he used to order a barbarian - one, too, tattooed like a Thracian, as the records state - to go before him with a drawn sword; and he used to send ahead some of his bodyguard to pry into the lady's caskets and to search and see whether some weapon were not concealed in her wardrobe. Unhappy man! To think a barbarian, a branded slave, more faithful than his own wife! Nor was he mistaken. For he was murdered by her own hand, because she suspected him of infidelity...

XVI. There are, in general, two classes of those who give largely: the one class is the lavish, the other the generous. The lavish are those who squander their money on public banquets, doles of meat among the people, gladiatorial shows, magnificent games, and wild-beast fights - vanities of which but a brief recollection will remain, or none at all. The generous, on the other hand, are those who employ their own means to ransom captives from brigands, or who assume their friends' debts or help in providing dowries for their daughters, or assist them in acquiring property or increasing what they have. And so I wonder what Theophrastus could have been thinking about when he wrote his book on "Wealth." It contains much that is fine; but his position is absurd, when he praises at great length the magnificent appointments of the popular games...

.... in the matter of this enormous waste and unlimited expenditure we are not very greatly astonished, and that, too, though by it no extreme need is relieved, no dignity is enhanced, and the very gratification of the populace is but for a brief, passing moment; such pleasure as it is, too, is confined to the most frivolous, and even in these the very memory of their enjoyment dies as soon as the moment of gratification is past." His conclusion, too, is excellent: "This sort of amusement pleases children, silly women, slaves, and the servile free; but a serious-minded man who weighs such matters with sound judgment cannot possibly approve of them." And yet I realize that in our country, even in the good old times, it had become a settled custom to expect magnificent entertainments from the very best men in their yearof aedileship.

The History of Rome -- by Titus Livius (excerpts)

. · 5 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

"At Rome, besides the general institutions, the censors prevailed on the magistrates to enact several particular laws for maintaining the frugality of women. This was the design of the Fannian, Licinian, and Oppian laws. We may see in Livy the great ferment the senate was in when the women insisted upon the revocation of the Oppian law. The abrogation of this law is fixed upon by Valerius Maximus as the period whence we may date the luxury of the Romans." -- Baron de Montesquieu

---

Book 34: Close of the Macedonian War 34.1

While the State was preoccupied by serious wars, some hardly yet over and others threatening, an incident occurred which though unimportant in itself resulted in a violent party conflict. Two of the tribunes of the plebs, M. Fundanius and L. Valerius, had brought in a proposal to repeal the Oppian Law. This law had been made on the motion of M. Oppius, a tribune of the plebs, during the consulship of Q. Fabius and Tiberius Sempronius, when the strain of the Punic War was most severely felt. It forbade any woman to have in her possession more than half an ounce of gold, to wear a dress of various colours or to ride in a two-horsed vehicle within a mile of the City or of any Roman town unless she was going to take part in some religious function. The two Brutuses-M. Junius and T. Junius-both tribunes of the plebs, defended the law and declared that they would not allow it to be repealed; many of the nobility came forward to speak in favour of the repeal or against it; the Capitol was crowded with supporters and opponents of the proposal; the matrons could not be kept indoors either by the authority of the magistrates or the orders of their husbands or their own sense of propriety. They filled all the streets and blocked the approaches to the Forum; they implored the men who were on their way thither to allow the women to resume their former adornments now that the commonwealth was flourishing and private fortunes increasing every day. Their numbers were daily augmented by those who came up from the country towns. At last they ventured to approach the consuls and praetors and other magistrates with their demands. One of the consuls at all events was inexorably opposed to their request-M. Porcius Cato. He spoke as follows in defence of the law: 34.2

"If we had, each one of us, made it a rule to uphold the rights and authority of the husband in our own households we should not now have this trouble with the whole body of our women. As things are now our liberty of action, which has been checked and rendered powerless by female despotism at home, is actually crushed and trampled on here in the Forum, and because we were unable to withstand them individually we have now to dread their united strength. I used to think that it was a fabulous story which tells us that in a certain island the whole of the male sex was extirpated by a conspiracy amongst the women; there is no class of women from whom the gravest dangers may not arise, if once you allow intrigues, plots, secret cabals to go on. I can hardly make up my mind which is worse, the affair itself or the disastrous precedent set up. The latter concerns us as consuls and magistrates; the former has to do more with you, Quirites. Whether the measure before you is for the good of the commonwealth or not is for you to determine by your votes; this tumult amongst the women, whether a spontaneous movement or due to your instigation, M. Fundanius and L. Valerius, certainly points to failure on the part of the magistrates, but whether it reflects more on you tribunes or on the consuls I do not know. It brings the greater discredit on you if you have carried your tribunitian agitation so far as to create unrest among the women, but more disgrace upon us if we have to submit to laws being imposed upon us through fear of a secession on their part, as we had to do formerly on occasions of the secession of the plebs. It was not without a feeling of shame that I made my way into the Forum through a regular army of women. Had not my respect for the dignity and modesty of some amongst them, more than any consideration for them as a whole, restrained me from letting them be publicly rebuked by a consul, I should have said, 'What is this habit you have formed of running abroad and blocking the streets and

accosting men who are strangers to you? Could you not each of you put the very same question to your husbands at home? Surely you do not make yourselves more attractive in public than in private, to other women's husbands more than to your own? If matrons were kept by their natural modesty within the limits of their rights, it would be most unbecoming for you to trouble yourselves even at home about the laws which may be passed or repealed here.' Our ancestors would have no woman transact even private business except through her guardian, they placed them under the tutelage of parents or brothers or husbands. We suffer them now to dabble in politics and mix themselves up with the business of the Forum and public debates and election contests. What are they doing now in the public roads and at the street corners but recommending to the plebs the proposal of their tribunes and voting for the repeal of the law. Give the reins to a headstrong nature, to a creature that has not been tamed, and then hope that they will themselves set bounds to their licence if you do not do it yourselves. This is the smallest of those restrictions which have been imposed upon women by ancestral custom or by laws, and which they submit to with such impatience. What they really want is unrestricted freedom, or to speak the truth, licence, and if they win on this occasion what is there that they will not attempt? 34.3

"Call to mind all the regulations respecting women by which our ancestors curbed their licence and made them obedient to their husbands, and yet in spite of all those restrictions you can scarcely hold them in. If you allow them to pull away these restraints and wrench them out one after another, and finally put themselves on an equality with their husbands, do you imagine that you will be able to tolerate them? From the moment that they become your fellows they will become your masters. But surely, you say, what they object to is having a new restriction imposed upon them, they are not deprecating the assertion of a right but the infliction of a wrong. No, they are demanding the abrogation of a law which you enacted by your suffrages and which the practical experience of all these years has approved and justified. This they would have you repeal; that means that by rescinding this they would have you weaken all. No law is equally agreeable to everybody, the only question is whether it is beneficial on the whole and good for the majority. If everyone who feels himself personally aggrieved by a law is to destroy it and get rid of it, what is gained by the whole body of citizens making laws which those against whom they are enacted can in a short time repeal? I want, however, to learn the reason why these excited matrons have run out into the streets and scarcely keep away from the Forum and the Assembly. Is it that those taken prisoners by Hannibal-their fathers and husbands and children and brothers-may be ransomed? The republic is a long way from this misfortune, and may it ever remain so! Still, when this did happen, you refused to do so in spite of their dutiful entreaties. But, you may say, it is not dutiful affection and solicitude for those they love that has brought them together; they are going to welcome Mater Idaea on her way from Phrygian Pessinus. What pretext in the least degree respectable is put forward for this female insurrection? 'That we may shine,' they say, 'in gold and purple, that we may ride in carriages on festal and ordinary days alike, as though in triumph for having defeated and repealed a law after capturing and forcing from you your votes.' 34.4

"You have often heard me complain of the expensive habits of women and often, too, of those of men, not only private citizens but even magistrates, and I have often said that the community suffers from two opposite vices-avarice and luxury-pestilential diseases which have proved the ruin of all great empires. The brighter and better the fortunes of the republic become day by day, and the greater the growth of its dominion-and now we are penetrating into Greece and Asia, regions filled with everything that can tempt appetite or excite desire, and are even laying hands on the treasures of kings-so much the more do I dread the prospect of these things taking us captive rather than we them. It was a bad day for this City, believe me, when the statues were brought from Syracuse. I hear far too many people praising and admiring those which adorn Athens and Corinth and laughing at the clay images of our gods standing in front of their temples. I for my part prefer these gods who are propitious to us, and I trust that they will continue to be so as long as we allow them to remain in their present abodes.

In the days of our forefathers Pyrrhus attempted, through his ambassador Cineas, to tamper with the loyalty of women as well as men by means of bribes. The Law of Oppius in restraint of female extravagance had not then been passed, still not a single woman accepted a bribe. What do you think was the reason? The same reason which

our forefathers had for not making any law on the subject; there was no extravagance to be restrained. Diseases must be recognised before remedies are applied, and so the passion for self-indulgence must be in existence before the laws which are to curb it. What called out the Licinian Law which restricted estates to 500 jugera except the keen desire of adding field to field? What led to the passing of the Cincian Law concerning presents and fees except the condition of the plebeians who had become tributaries and taxpayers to the senate? It is not therefore in the least surprising that neither the Oppian nor any other law was in those days required to set limits to the expensive habits of women when they refused to accept the gold and purple that was freely offered to them. If Cineas were to go in these days about the City with his gifts, he would find women standing in the streets quite ready to accept them.

There are some desires of which I cannot penetrate either the motive or the reason. That what is permitted to another should be forbidden to you may naturally create a feeling of shame or indignation, but when all are upon the same level as far as dress is concerned why should any one of you fear that you will not attract notice ? The very last things to be ashamed of are thriftiness and poverty, but this law relieves you of both since you do not possess what it forbids you to possess. The wealthy woman says, 'This levelling down is just what I do not tolerate. Why am I not to be admired and looked at for my gold and purple? Why is the poverty of others disguised under this appearance of law so that they may be thought to have possessed, had the law allowed it, what it was quite out of their power to possess?'

Do you want, Quirites, to plunge your wives into a rivalry of this nature, where the rich desire to have what no one else can afford, and the poor, that they may not be despised for their poverty, stretch their expenses beyond their means? Depend upon it, as soon as a woman begins to be ashamed of what she ought not to be ashamed of she will cease to feel shame at what she ought to be ashamed of. She who is in a position to do so will get what she wants with her own money, she who cannot do this will ask her husband. The husband is in a pitiable plight whether he yields or refuses; in the latter case he will see another giving what he refused to give. Now they are soliciting other women's husbands, and what is worse they are soliciting votes for the repeal of a law, and are getting them from some, against the interest of you and your property and your children. When once the law has ceased to fix a limit to your wife's expenses, you will never fix one. Do not imagine that things will be the same as they were before the law was made. It is safer for an evil-doer not to be prosecuted than for him to be tried and then acquitted, and luxury and extravagance would have been more tolerable had they never been interfered with than they will be now, just like wild beasts which have been irritated by their chains and then released. I give my vote against every attempt to repeal the law, and pray that all the gods may give your action a fortunate result." 34.5

After this the tribunes of the plebs who had announced their intention of vetoing the repeal spoke briefly to the same effect. Then L. Valerius made the following speech in defence of his proposal: .....

34.8
After these speeches in support of and against the law the women poured out into the streets the next day in much greater force and went in a body to the house of the two Brutuses, who were vetoing their colleagues' proposal, and beset all the doors, nor would they desist till the tribunes had abandoned their opposition. There was no doubt now that the tribes would be unanimous in rescinding the law. It was abrogated twenty years after it had been made....

Related:

The Spirit of Laws – Baron de Montesquieu

Advice to Married Couples - by Plutarch (46-120AD)

. · 6 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

TO POLLIANUS AND EURYDICE WITH PLUTARCH'S BEST WISHES.

WHEN they were shutting you in your bridal chamber, the ancestral ritual was duly applied to you by the priestess of Demeter. I believe that now, if reason also were to take you in hand and join in the nuptial song, it would prove of some service, and would support the tune as prescribed. In the musical world they used to call one of the modes for the flute "the Horse-and-Mare", because, apparently, the strains in that key were provocative of union between those animals. Well, philosophy has many excellent sermons to give, but none more worthy of serious attention than that upon marriage. By it she exerts a spell upon those who come together as partners in life, and renders them gentle and tractable to each other. I have, therefore, taken the main points of the lessons which you have repeatedly heard, brought up as you have been in the company of Philosophy. I have arranged them in a series of brief comparisons to make them easier to remember, and am sending them as a present to you both. In doing so I pray that the Muses may graciously lend aid to Aphrodite, since, if it is their province to see that a lyre or a harp shall be in tune, it is no less so to provide that the music of the married home shall be harmonized by reason and philosophy. When people in olden times assigned a seat with Aphrodite to Hermes, it was because the pleasure of marriage stands in special need of reason; when to Persuasion and the Graces, it was in order that the married pair might obtain their wishes from each other by means of persuasion, and not by contention and strife

THE RULES

1. Solon bade the bride eat a piece of quince before coming to the bridegroom's arms--apparently an enigmatical suggestion that, as a first requirement, a pleasant and inviting impression should be gathered from an agreeable mouth and speech.

2. In Boeotia, after veiling the bride, they crown her with a wreath of thorny asparagus. As that plant yields the sweetest eating from among the roughest prickles, so a bride, if the groom does not run away in disgust because he

finds her difficult and vexatious at first, will afford him a sweet and gentle com- panionship. One who shows no patience with the girl's first bickerings is as bad as those who let the ripe grapes go because once they were sour. Many a young bride is affected in the same way. First experiences disgust her with the bridegroom, and she makes as great a mistake as if, after enduring the sting of the bee, she were to abandon the honeycomb.

3. It is especially at the beginning that married people should beware of quarrel and friction. Let them note how vessels which have been mended will at first easily pull to pieces on the slightest occasion, but as time goes on and they become solid at the seams, it is as much as fire and iron can do to separate the parts.

4. Fire is readily kindled in chaff, dry rushes, or hare's fur, but quickly goes out unless it gets a further hold upon some- thing capable both of keeping it in and feeding it. So with that fierce blare of passion which is produced in the newly- married by physical enjoyment. You must not rely upon it nor expect it to last, unless it is built round the moral character, gets a hold upon your rational part, and so obtains a permanent vitality.

5. Doctoring the water is no doubt a quick and easy way of catching fish, but it renders them bad and uneatable. So when women work artificially upon their husbands with philtres and spells, and control them by the agency of pleasure, they have but crazy simpletons and dotards for their partners. While Circe derived no good from the men she had bewitched, and made no use of them when turned into swine and asses, she found the greatest pleasure in the rational companionship of the wise Odysseus.

6. A woman who is more desirous of ruling a foolish husband than of obeying a wise one, is like a traveller who would rather lead a blind man than follow one who possesses sight and knowledge.

7. Why should people disbelieve that Pasiphae, though consort to a King, fell in love with an ox, when they see that some women find a strict and continent husband wearisome, and prefer to live with one who is as much a mass of ungoverned sensuality as a dog or a goat?

8. When a rider is too weak or effeminate to vault upon a horse, he teaches the animal itself to bend its legs and crouch. In the same way some men who marry high-born or wealthy women, instead of improving themselves, put indignities upon their wives, in the belief that they will he more easily ruled when humbled. The proper course is, while using the rein, to main- tain the dignity of the wife, as one would the full height of the horse.

9. When the moon is at a distance from the sun, we see it bright and luminous. When it comes near him, it fades and is lost to view. With a properly conducted woman it is the con- trary. She should be most visible when with her husband; in his absence she should keep at home and out of sight.

10. Herodotus was wrong in saying that when a woman lays aside her tunic she lays aside her modesty. On the contrary, a chaste wife puts on modesty in its place. Between married persons the token of greatest regard is greatest modesty.

11. If two notes are taken in accord, the lower of the two is the dominant. So, though every action in a well-conducted house is performed by both parties in tune, it will reveal the husband's leadership and priority of choice.

12. The Sun vanquished the North Wind. When the wind endeavoured to take off the man's cloak by violence and blowing a gale, he only tightened his mantle the more and held it the closer. But when, after the wind, the sun became hot, the man began to grow warm. When at last he sweltered, he took off not only his cloak but his tunic. This parable applies to the generality of women. When their husbands take violent measures to do away with extravagant indulgence, they show fight and temper; but if you reason with them, they give it up peaceably and practise moderation.

13. Cato expelled from the Senate a man who had kissed his own wife in the presence of his daughter. This, perhaps, was too severe a step. But if--as is the case--it is unseemly to be fondling and kissing and embracing each other in company, it is surely more unseemly to be scolding and quarrelling in com- pany, and, while treating your love-passages as a sacred secret between you and your wife, to make an open display of fault- finding and reproach.

14. A mirror,1 though decorated with gold and precious stones, is of no use unless it shows you your form true to life. Similarly there is no advantage in a rich wife, if her conduct does not represent that of her husband and harmonize with it in character. If the reflection which it offers is glum when you are joyful, but wears a merry grin when you are gloomy and distressed, the mirror is faulty and bad. A wife is a poor thing and out of place if she is in the dumps when her husband is disposed for frolic or love-making, but is all fun and laughter when he is serious. In the former case she in disagreeable; in the latter, she slights you. Geometers tell us that lines and surfaces make no movement by themselves, but only in conjunc- tion with the bodies to which they belong. In the same way a woman should be free from peculiar states of mind of her own, but should act as the husband's partner in his earnestness and his jest, in his preoccupation and his laughter.

1 Made of polished bronze.

15. A man who dislikes to see his wife eating with him, teaches her to satisfy her appetite when she gets by herself. Similarly one who is never a merry companion to her, nor shares in her sport and laughter, teaches her to look for private pleasures apart from him.

16. When the Persian kings are dining or feasting, their legitimate wives sit at their side. But when they wish to amuse themselves or get tipsy, they send those wives away and summon their minstrel-women and concubines. The practice is a right one, at least to the extent that they do not permit their wives to take part in wanton and licentious scenes. So, if a private man, who lacks self-control or good-breeding in his pleasures, is guilty of a lapse with a common woman or a menial, the wife should not be indignant and resentful, but should reflect that, out of respect for her, he finds some other woman to share his riot and lasciviousness.

17. When kings are fond of music, they make many musicians; when of learning, learned men; when of athletics, gymnasts. So when the love of a husband is for the person, his wife will be all for dress; when for pleasure, she becomes lewd and wanton; when for goodness and virtue, she shows herself discreet and chaste.

18. When a Lacedaemonian girl was once asked whether she had already embraced a man, she answered, "No, indeed; but he has embraced me." Such, I believe, is the right attitude for a lady--not to shun or dislike caresses, when the husband begins them, nor yet to begin them of her own accord. The one course is bold and immodest, the other disdainful and unaffectionate.

19. The woman ought not to possess private friends, but to share those of the man. But first and greatest are the gods, and it is therefore right for the wife to reverence or acknowledge only those gods who are recognized by the husband. Her street-door should be kept shut to out-of-the-way forms of worship and alien superstitions. No deity finds gratification in ceremonies which a woman performs in secret and by stealth.

20. Plato holds that a community is in a state of blissful well-being when the expressions "mine" and "not mine" are scarcely ever heard, inasmuch as the citizens enjoy, as far as possible, the common use of everything worth considering. Much more ought such language to be abolished from the married state. In the same way, however, in which medical men tell us that a blow on the left side produces an answering sensation in the right, it is proper for a wife to sympathize with her husband's concerns and the husband with the wife's. In this way, just as ropes, when interwoven, lend each other strength, so, through each party reciprocating the other's goodwill, the partnership will be maintained by both combined. Nature blends us through the body in such a way as to take a portion from each,

and by commingling produce an offspring common to both, so that neither can define or distinguish an "own" part from "another's". The same sort of partnership between married persons should assuredly exist in respect of money also. They should pour it all into a single fund, and blend it in such a way that they never think of one part as "own" and one as "another's", but treat it all as "own" and none of it as "another's". And as we call a mixture "wine", though it may contain a greater proportion of water, so the property of the house should be said to belong to the man, even though the wife may contribute the larger share.

21. Helen loved wealth, and Paris loved pleasure: Odysseus was wise, and Penelope discreet. Hence the union of the latter pair was happy and enviable, while that of the former brought upon Greeks and Asiatics an "Iliad of Woes".

22. When the Roman was admonished by his friends for having divorced a wife who was chaste, rich, and beautiful, he stretched out his shoe and remarked: "Yes, and this looks fine and new, but no one knows where it chafes me." The wife must not rely upon her dowry, her birth, or her beauty. The matters in which she touches her husband most closely are conversation, character, and companionship. Instead of making these harsh and vexatious day after day, she must render them compatible, soothing, and grateful. Physicians are more afraid of fevers which spring from vague causes gradually accumulating, than of those for which there is a great and manifest reason. So it is these little, continual, daily frictions between man and wife, which the world knows nothing of, that do most to create the rifts which ruin married life.

23. King Philip was once enamoured of a Thessalian woman who was charged with bewitching him. Olympias [Philip's wife] thereupon became eager to get this person into her power. When, upon presenting herself, she not only turned out to be a handsome woman, but spoke with considerable nobility and good sense, Olympias said: "Those calumnies are all nonsense! Your witchcraft lies in yourself." How irresistible a thing is a married and lawful wife, if, by treating everything--dowry, birth, philtres, the very girdle1 of Aphrodite--as lying in herself, she conquers affection by means of character and virtue!

1 Which contained "every charm: love, desire, and sweet converse" (Homer, Il. xiv. 214).

24. On another occasion, when a youthful courtier had married a handsome woman of bad repute, Olympias remarked, "The fellow has no judgement; otherwise he would not have married with his eyes." Marriage should not be made with tile eyes; neither should it with the fingers, as it is in the case of some, who reckon up the amount of the dower, instead of calculating the companionable quality, of the wife they are marrying.

25. To young men who are fond of looking at themselves in the mirror Socrates recommended that the ugly should correct their defects by virtue, while the handsome should avoid spoiling their beauty by vice. It is a good thing for the married woman also, while she is holding the mirror, to talk to herself, and, if she is plain, to ask, "And what if I show myself indiscreet?" if beautiful, "And what if I show myself discreet as well!" The plain woman may pride herself on being loved for her character, and the handsome woman on being loved more for her character then her beauty.

26. When the Sicilian despot sent Lysander's daughters a set of costly mantles and chains, he refused to accept them. "These bits of ornaments," said he, "will rather take from my daughters' beauty than set it off." Lysander, however, was anticipated by Sophocles in the lines:

Nay, 'twould not seem, poor fool, to beautify,
But to unbeautify, and prove thee wanton.

As Crates used to say, "Adornment is that which adorns," and that which adorns is that which adds to a woman's seemliness. This is not done by gold or jewels or scarlet, but by what- ever invests her with the badges of dignity,

decorum, and modesty.

27. In sacrificing to Hera as goddess of marriage, the gall is not burned with the other portions of the sacrifice, but is taken out and thrown down at the side of the altar--an indirect injunction of the legislator that gall and anger should have no place in the married state. The austerity of the lady of the house, like the dryness of wine, should be wholesome and palatable, not bitter like aloes or unpleasant like a drug.

28. Xenocrates being somewhat harsh in character, though otherwise a high type of man, Plato recommended him to sacrifice to the Graces. Now I take it that a woman of strict morals stands in special need of the graces in dealing with her husband, so that--as Metrodorus used to say--she may live with him on pleasant terms and not "in a temper because she is chaste". A woman should no more forget to be amiable because she is faithful, than to be neat because she is thrifty. Decorum in a woman is rendered as disagreeable by harshness as frugality is by sluttishness.

29. A wife who is afraid to laugh and joke with her husband for fear of seeming bold and wanton, is as bad as the woman who, from fear of being thought to use ointments on her head, does not even oil it,1 and, to avoid seeming to rouge her face, does not even wash it. We find that when poets and orators avoid appealing to the vulgar by bad taste and affectation in respect of their diction, they practise every art to attract and stir the hearer with their matter, their treatment, and their moral quality. So the lady of the house, because she avoids and deprecates--as she is quite right to do--extravagant or meretricious demonstration, ought all the more to bring the graces of character and conduct into play in dealing with her husband, thus habituating him to proper ways, but in a pleasur- able manner. If, however, a wife shows herself strait-laced and rigidly austere, her husband must put the best face upon it. When Antipater required Phocion to perform an improper and degrading action, he answered, "I cannot serve you both as your friend and your toady." In the same way, when a woman is staid and strait-laced, our reflection should be, "The same woman cannot behave to me as both a wife and a mistress."

1 The use of oil to soften the hair was practically universal.

30. By a national custom the Egyptian women wore no shoes, so that they might keep at home all day. In the case of most women, to deprive them of gold-worked shoes, bangles, anklets, purple, and pearls, is to make them stay indoors.

31. Theano, in putting on her mantle, once showed a glimpse of her arm. Upon some one saying, "A beautiful forearm!" she retorted, "But not for the public!" A well-conducted woman will keep, not only her forearm, but her speech, from publicity. She will be as shy and cautious about her utterances to the outside world as if they were an exposure of her person, inasmuch as, when she talks, they are a revelation of feelings, character, and disposition.

32. Pheidias, in representing the Elean Aphrodite with her foot upon a tortoise, meant women to take it as a symbol of home-keeping and silence. A woman should talk either to, or through the medium of, her husband; nor should she resent it if, like a player on the clarinet, she finds a more impressive utterance through another tongue than through her own.

33. When rich or royal persons pay respect to a philosopher, they do honour both to themselves and to him. But when a philosopher pays court to rich people, he is not conferring distinction upon them, bur lowering his own. The same is the case with women. By submission to their husbands they win regard; by seeking to govern them they demean themselves worse than the men so governed. Meanwhile it is only right that the husband, in controlling the wife, should not be like an owner dealing with a chattel, but like the mind dealing with the body--sympathetic with the sympathy of organic union. It is possible to care for the body without being a slave to its pleasures and desires, and it is possible to rule a wife and yet do things to please and gratify her.

34. Compound objects are classified by philosophers as follows. In some the parts are distinct, as in a fleet or army. In some they are conjoined, as in a house or ship. In others they form an organic unity, as in all living creatures. We may say much the same of marriage. The marriage of love is the "organic unity"; the marriage for a dowry or for children is that of persons "conjoined"; marriage without sharing the same couch is that of persons "distinct", who may be said to dwell together, but not to live together. With persons marrying, there should be a mutual blending of bodies, means, friends, and relations, in the same way as, according to the scientists, when liquids are mixed, the mixture runs through the whole. When the Roman legislator forbade married couples to exchange presents, he did not mean that they should not impart to each other, but that they should look upon everything as joint property.

35. At Leptis in Africa it is a traditional custom for the bride, on the day after marriage, to send to the bridegroom's mother to borrow a pot. The latter refuses, saying she has none. The intention is that the bride may realize from the first the "step- mother" attitude of her mother-in-law, so that, if anything more disagreeable happens afterwards, she may not be vexed or irritated. The wife should understand this fact and apply treatment to its cause, which is, that the mother is jealous of her son's affections. There is but one treatment for this state of mind. While winning the special affection of her husband for herself, she must avoid detaching or lessening his affection for his mother.

36. Mothers appear to be more fond of their sons, because those sons are able to help them, and fathers of their daughters, because daughters need their help. Maybe also it is out of compliment to each other that both parties desire to be seen making much of that which is more akin to the other. This, perhaps, is a trait of no importance, but there is another which is charming. I mean, when the wife's respect is seen to incline rather to the husband's parents than to her own, and when, in case of anything troubling her, she refers it to them and conceals it from her own people. If you are thought to trust, you are trusted; if you are thought to love, you are loved.

37. The Greeks who accompanied Cyrus received the follow- ing order from their commanders: "If the enemy come shouting to the attack, await them in silence; if they come in silence, charge to meet them with a shout." When a husband has his fits of anger, if he raises his voice, a sensible wife keeps quiet; if he is silent, she soothes him by talking to him in a coaxing way.

38. Euripides is right in blaming those who have the lyre played to them at their wine. Music is more properly called in to cure anger and grief than to encourage further abandon- ment on the part of those who are taking their pleasure. So I would have you believe that it is a wrong principle to share the same bed for the sake of pleasure, and yet, when you are angry or fall out, to sleep apart. That is exactly the time to call in the Goddess of Love, who is the best physician for such cases. This is practically the reaching of the poet, when he makes Hera say:

And their tangled strife will I loosen,
When to their couch I bring them, to meet in love and in union.

39. At all times and everywhere a wife should avoid offending the husband, and a husband the wife; but especially should they beware of doing so when together at night. In the story, the wife, in the vexation of her throes, used to say to those who were putting her to bed: "How can this couch cure a trouble which befell me upon it." So quarrels, recriminations, and tempers which are begotten in the chamber are not easily got over in another place or at another time.

40. There appears to be a truth in Hermione's plea:

'Tis wicked women's visits have undone me.

This occurs in more than one way, but especially when connubial quarrels and jealousies offer to such women not only an open door, but an open ear. At such a time, therefore, should a sensible woman shut her ears, keep out of

the way of slanderous whispers which add fuel to the fire, and be ready to apply the well-known saying of Philip. We are told that when his friends were trying to exasperate that monarch against the Greeks-- on the ground that, though he treated them well, they abused him--he remarked, "Well, and what, pray, if we treat them badly?" So, when the scandalizers say, "Your husband grieves you, in spite of all your affection and chastity," you should retort, "And what, pray, if I begin to hate and wrong him?"

41. A man caught sight of a slave who had run away some time before, and gave chase. When the slave was too quick, and took refuge in a mill, he observed, "And in what better place could I have wished to find you than where you are?"1 So let a woman who is declaring for a divorce through jealousy say to herself, "And where would my rival be more glad to see me? And what would she be more pleased to see me doing, than harbouring a grievance, at feud with my husband, and actually abandoning the house and the marriage-chamber?"

1 A common punishment for a slave was to put him to hard labour in turning the mill, in place of a horse or ass.

42. The Athenians observe three sacred ploughings; the first at Sciron, in memory of the oldest sowing of crops; the second in the Rharian district; and the third--known as the Buzygian festival--close to the Acropolis. More sacred than all of these is the connubial ploughing and sowing for the pro- creation of children. It is a happy expression of Sophocles, when he calls Aphrodite "fair-fruited Cytherea". Man and wife should therefore be especially scrupulous in this connexion, keeping pure from unholy and unlawful intercourse with others, and forbearing to sow where they desire no crop to grow, or, if it does, are ashamed of it and seek to conceal it.

43. When Gorgias the rhetorician once read to the Greeks at Olympia a discourse upon peace and harmony, Melanthius exclaimed, "Here is a man giving us advice about peace and harmony, when in private life he has failed to harmonize three people--himself, his wife, and his maidservant." For Gorgias, it appears, was enamoured, and his wife jealous, of the domestic [maidservant]. A man's house ought to be in tune before he offers to set in tune a state, a public meeting, or friends. The public is more likely to hear of offences against a wife than of offences committed by her.

44. They say that the cat is driven frantic by the smell of unguents. If it had been the case that women were provoked out of their senses by the same means, it would have been a monstrous thing for men not to abstain from unguents, and to let their wives suffer so cruelly for the sake of a trifling gratifica- tion of their own. Now since, though the husband's use of unguents does not so afflict them, his dealings with other women do, it is unjust to cause such vexation and distress to a wife for the sake of a little pleasure. On the contrary, husbands should come to their wives pure and untainted by other intercourse, just as they would approach bees, who are said to show disgust and hostility rewards any one who has been so engaged.

45. People never dress in bright clothes when approaching an elephant, nor in red when approaching a bull, since the animals in question are particularly infuriated by those colours. Of tigers it is said that, if you beat drums all around them, they go mad and tear themselves to pieces. Surely, then, inasmuch as some men cannot bear to see scarlet or purple clothes, and some are irritated at cymbals and tambourines, it is not asking too much for women to leave such things alone, and not harass or exasperate their husbands, but practise quietude and con- sideration in their society.

46. When Philip was once seizing upon a woman against her will, she said, "Let me go. All women are the same when you take away the light." While this applies well enough to adulterers and sensualists, it is particularly when the light is taken away that a wife should not be the same as any ordinary female. Her person may not be visible, but her modesty, chastity, decorum, and natural affection should make themselves palpable.

47. Plato used to recommend that respect should rather be paid by elderly men to the young, so that the latter might

behave modestly to them in return. For, said he, "where old men lie shameless" the young acquire no modesty or scruple. A husband should bear this in mind, and show more respect to his wife than to any one else, since the nuptial chamber will prove to be her school of propriety or its opposite. The husband who indulges himself in certain pleasures, while warning her against the same, is as bad as the man who bids his wife fight on against an enemy to whom he has himself surrendered.

48. As to love of display, do you, Eurydice, read and endeavour to remember what Timoxena wrote to Aristylla. And you, Pollianus, must not expect your wife to refrain from showy extravagance, if she sees that you do not despise it in other matters, but that you take a pleasure in cups with gilding, rooms with painted walls, mules with decorated harness, and horses with neck-trappings. You cannot banish extravagance from the women's quarters when it has the free run of the men's. You are at the right age to cultivate philosophy. Adorn your character, therefore, by listening to careful reasoning and demonstration in improving company and conversation. Be like the bees. Gather valuable matter from every source. Carry it home in yourself, and share it with your wife by discussing it and making all the best principles agreeable and familiar to her. While

Thou unto her art father, and honoured mother, and brother,

it is no less a matter of pride to hear a wife say, "Husband, thou unto me art guide, philosopher, and teacher of the noblest and divinest lessons." It is studies of this kind that tend to keep a woman from foolish practices. She will be ashamed to be dancing, when she is learning geometry. She will lend no ear to the incantations of sorcery, when she is listening to those of Plato and Xenophon. When any one promises to fetch down the moon,1 she will laugh at the ignorance and silliness of women who believe such things; for she will possess a knowledge of astronomy, and will have heard how Aglaonice, the daughter of Hegetor of Thessaly, thoroughly understood eclipses of the full moon, how she knew beforehand the date at which it must be caught in the shadow, and how she thereby cheated the women into believing that she was fetching it down herself.

We are told that no woman produces a child without the participation of the man, though there are shapeless and fleshlike growths--called "millstones"--which form themselves spon- taneously from corrupted matter. We must beware of this occurring in women's minds. If they are not impregnated with sound doctrines by sharing in the culture of their husbands, they will of their own accord conceive many an ill-advised intention or irrational state of feeling.

As for you, Eurydice, above all things do your best to keep touch with the sayings of wise and good men, and to have continually in your mouth those utterances which you learned by heart in my school when a girl. By so doing, you will not only be a joy to your husband, but the admiration of other women, when they see how, at no expense, you can adorn yourself with so much distinction and dignity.

This rich woman's pearls, that foreign lady's silks, are not to be worn without paying a large price for them. But the orna- ments of Theano, of Cleobuline, of Gorgo the wife of Leonidas, of Timoclea the sister of Theagenes, of the Claudia of ancient history, and al Cornelia the daughter of Scipio, you may wear for nothing; and with this adornment your life may be as happy as it is distinguished. Sappho thought so much of her skill as a lyrist that she wrote-- addressing a wealthy woman--

When thou art dead, thou shalt lie with none to remember thy name:
For no portion hast thou in the roses Pierian. . . .

You will assuredly have more occasion to think highly and proudly of yourself, if you have a portion, not only in the roses, but also in the fruits, which the Muses bring as free gifts to those who prize culture and philosophy.

1 A frequent pretence of ancient witches.

SOURCE:
The preceding text is part of Plutarch's Moralia or Moral Essays, more specifically, it was taken from Selected Essays of Plutarch, Vol. 1, translated by T. G. Tucker, Clarendon Press, Oxford, 1913, p. 96-112.

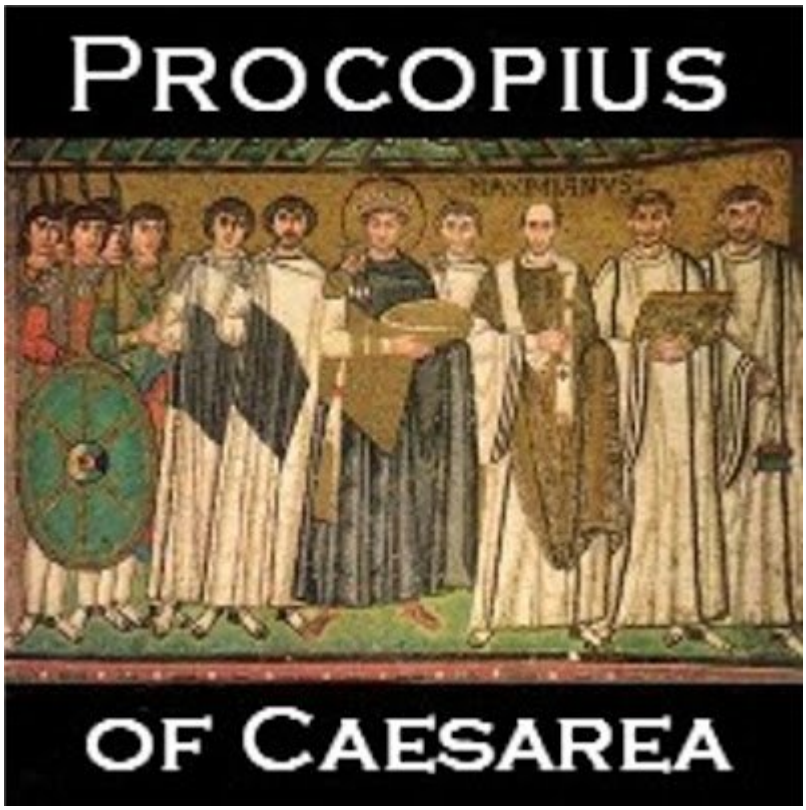
Certain minor modifications were made to the text to suit the medium and purpose used here. For example, page breaks and numbering were omitted, as well as marginal reference systems; footnotes were repositioned to fall under the numbered section in which they were used as opposed to the previous page bottom.

No attempt was made to Americanize or modernize the spelling, hopefully readers will have no trouble recognizing that, for example, connexion = connection.

This page was prepared by Spartacus, Editor of The Men's Tribune; repostings must include this link. Please report errors.

The Secret History - by Pocopius of Caesarea

. · 7 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original



Procopius: The Secret History

CONTENTS

By the Historian (See bottom of this page)

1 - How the Great General Belisarius Was Hoodwinked by His Wife

2 - How Belated Jealousy Affected Belisarius's Military Judgment

3 - Showing the Danger of Interfering with a Woman's Intrigues

4 - How Theodora Humiliated the Conqueror of Africa and Italy

5 - How Theodora Tricked the General's Daughter

6 - Ignorance of the Emperor Justin, and How His Nephew Justinian Was the Virtual Ruler

7 - Outrages of the Blues

8 - Character and Appearance of Justinian

9 - How Theodora, Most Depraved of All Courtesans, Won His Love

10 - How Justinian Created a New Law Permitting Him to Marry a Courtesan

11 - How the Defender of the Faith Ruined His Subjects

12 - Proving That Justinian and Theodora Were Actually Fiends in Human Form

13 - Perceptive Affability and Piety of a Tyrant

14 - Justice for Sale

15 - How All Roman Citizens Became Slaves

16 - What Happened to Those Who Fell Out of Favor with Theodora

17 - How She Saved Five Hundred Harlots from a Life of Sin

18 - How Justinian Killed a Trillion People

19 - How He Seized All the Wealth of the Romans and Threw It Away

20 - Debasing of the Quaestorship

21 - The Sky Tax, and How Border Armies Were Forbidden to Punish Invading Barbarians

22 - Further Corruption in High Places

23 - How Landowners Were Ruined

24 - Unjust Treatment of the Soldiers

25 - How He Robbed His Own Officials

26 - How He Spoiled the Beauty of the Cities and Plundered the Poor

27 - How the Defender of the Faith Protected the Interests of the Christians

28 - His Violation of the Laws of the Romans and How Jews Were Fined for Eating Lamb

29 - Other Incidents Revealing Him as a Liar and a Hypocrite

30 - Further Innovations of Justinian and Theodora, and a Conclusion

.

.

By the Historian

.

In what I have written on the Roman wars up to the present point, the story was arranged in chronological order and as completely as the times then permitted. What I shall write now follows a different plan, supplementing the previous formal chronicle with a disclosure of what really happened throughout the Roman Empire. You see, it was not possible, during the life of certain persons, to write the truth of what they did, as a historian should. If I had, their hordes of spies would have found out about it, and they would have put me to a most horrible death. I could

not even trust my nearest relatives. That is why I was compelled to hide the real explanation of many matters glossed over in my previous books.

These secrets it is now my duty to tell and reveal the remaining hidden matters and motives. Yet when I approach this different task, I find it hard indeed to have to stammer and retract what I have written before about the lives of Justinian and Theodora. Worse yet, it occurs to me that what I am now about to tell will seem neither probable nor plausible to future generations, especially as time flows on and my story becomes ancient history. I fear they may think me a writer of fiction, and even put me among the poets.

However, I have this much to cheer me, that my account will not be unendorsed by other testimony: so I shall not shrink from the duty of completing this work. For the men of today, who know best the truth of these matters, will be trustworthy witnesses to posterity of the accuracy of my evidence.

Still another thing for a long time deferred my passion to relieve myself of this untold tale. For I wondered if it might be prejudicial to future generations, and the wickedness of these deeds had not best remain unknown to later times: lest future tyrants, hearing, might emulate them. It is deplorably natural that most monarchs mimic the sins of their predecessors and are most readily disposed to turn to the evils of the past.

But, finally, I was again constrained to proceed with this history, for the reason that future tyrants may see also that those who thus err cannot avoid retribution in the end, since the persons of whom I write suffered that judgment. Furthermore, the disclosure of these actions and tempers will be published for all time, and in consequence others will perhaps feel less urge to transgress.

For who now would know of the unchastened life of Semiramis or the madness of Sardanapalus or Nero, if the record had not thus been written by men of their own times? Besides, even those who suffer similarly '-from later tyrants will not find this narrative quite unprofitable. For the miserable find comfort in the philosophy that not on them alone has evil fallen.

Accordingly, I begin the tale. First I shall reveal the folly of Belisarius, and then the depravity of Justinian and Theodora.

1 - How the Great General Belisarius Was Hoodwinked by His Wife

. · 7 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

From: “The Secret History” – by Pocopius of Caesarea

1 - How the Great General Belisarius Was Hoodwinked by His Wife

The father of Belisarius's wife, a lady whom I have mentioned in my former books, was (and so was her grandfather) a charioteer, exhibiting that trade in Constantinople and Thessalonica. Her mother was one of the wenches of the theater; and she herself from the first led an utterly wanton life. Acquainted with magic drugs used by her parents before her, she learned how to use those of compelling qualities and became the wedded wife of Belisarius, after having already borne many children.

Now she was unfaithful as a wife from the start, but was careful to conceal her indiscretions by the usual precautions; not from any awe of her spouse (for she never felt any shame at anything) and fooled him easily with her deceptions), but because she feared the punishment of the Empress. For Theodora hated her, and had already shown her teeth. But when that Queen became involved in difficulties, she won her friendship by helping her, first to destroy Silverius, as shall be related presently, and later to ruin John of Cappadocia, as I have told elsewhere. After that, she became more and more fearless, and casting all concealment aside, abandoned herself to the winds of desire.

There was a youth from Thrace in the house of Belisarius: Theodosius by name, and of the Eunomian heresy by descent. On the eve of his expedition to Libya, Belisarius baptized this boy in holy water and received him in his arms as a member henceforth of the family, welcoming him with his wife as their son, according to the Christian rite of adoption. And Antonina not only embraced Theodosius with reasonable fondness as her son by holy word, and thus cared for him, but soon, while her husband was away on his campaign, became wildly in love with him; and, out of her senses with this malady, shook off all fear and shame of God and man. She began by enjoying him surreptitiously, and ended by dallying with him in the presence of the men servants and waiting maids. For she was now possessed by passion and, openly overwhelmed with love, could see no hindrance to its consummation.

Once, in Carthage, Belisarius caught her in the very act, but allowed himself to be deceived by his wife. Finding the two in an underground room, he was very angry; but she said, showing no fear or attempt to keep anything hidden, "I came here with the boy to bury the most precious part of our plunder, where the Emperor will not discover it." So she said by way of excuse, and he dismissed the matter as if he believed her, even as he saw Theodosius's trousers belt somewhat unmodestly unfastened. For so bound by love for the woman was he, that he preferred to distrust the evidence of his own eyes.

As her folly progressed to an indescribable extent, those who saw what was going on kept silent, except one slave, Macedonia by name. When Belisarius was in Syracuse as the conqueror of Sicily, she made her master swear solemnly never to betray her to her mistress, and then told him the whole story, presenting s witnesses two slave boys attending the bed-chamber.

When he heard this, Belisarius ordered one of his guards to put Theodosius away; but the latter learned of this in time to flee to Ephesus. For most of the servants, inspired by the weakness of the husband's character, were more anxious to please his wife than to show loyalty to him, and so betrayed the order he had given. But Constantine, when he saw Belisarius's grief at what had befallen him, sympathized entirely except to comment, "I would have tried to kill the woman rather than the young man." Antonina heard of this, and hated him in secret. How malicious

was her spite against him shall be shown; for she was a scorpion who could hide her sting.

But not long after this, by the enchantment either of philtres or of her caresses, she persuaded her husband that the charges against her were untrue. Without more ado he sent word to Theodosius to return, and promised to turn Macedonia and the two slave boys over to his wife. She first cruelly cut out their tongues, it is said, and then cut their bodies into little bits which were put into sacks and thrown into the sea. One of her slaves, Eugenius, who had already wrought the outrage on Silverius, helped her in this crime.

And it was not long after this that Belisarius was persuaded by his wife to kill Constantine. What happened at that time concerning Presidius and the daggers I have narrated in my previous books. For while Belisarius would have preferred to let Constantine alone, Antonina gave him no peace until his remark, which I have just repeated, was avenged. And as a result of this murder, much enmity was aroused against Belisarius in the hearts of the Emperor and all the most important of the Romans.

So matters progressed. But Theodosius said he was unable to return to Italy, where Belisarius and Antonina were now staying, unless Photius were put out of the way. For this Photius was the sort who would bite if anyone got the better of him in anything, and he had reason to be choked with indignation at Theodosius. Though he was the rightful son, he was utterly disregarded while the other grew in power and riches: they say that from the two palaces at Carthage and Ravenna Theodosius had taken plunder amounting to a hundred centenaries, as he alone had been given the management of these conquered properties.

But Antonina, when she learned of Theodosius's fear, never ceased laying snares for her son and planning deadly plots against his welfare, until he saw he would have to escape to Constantinople if he wished to live. Then Theodosius came to Italy and her. There they stayed in the satisfaction of their love, unhindered by the complaisant husband; and later she took them both to Constantinople. There Theodosius became so worried lest the affair became generally known, that he was at his wit's end. He saw it would be impossible to fool everybody, as the woman was no longer able to conceal her passion and indulge it secretly, but thought nothing of being in fact and in reputation an avowed adulteress.

Therefore he went back to Ephesus, and having his head shaved after the religious custom, became a monk. Whereupon Antonina, insane over her loss, exhibited her grief by donning mourning; and went around the house shrieking and wailing, lamenting even in the presence of her husband what a good friend she had lost, how faithful, how tender, how loving, how energetic! In the end, even her spouse was won over to join in her sorrow. And so the poor wretch wept too, calling for his beloved Theodosius. Later he even went to the Emperor and implored both him and the Empress, till they consented to summon Theodosius to return, as one who was and would always be a necessity in the house of Belisarius.

But Theodosius refused to leave his monastery, saying he was completely resolved to give himself forever to the cloistered life. This noble pronouncement, however, was not entirely sincere, for he was aware that as soon as Belisarius left Constantinople, it would be possible for him to come secretly to Antonina. Which, indeed, he did.

Index Next

Related:

The Winning Sophistry of Wives

2 - How Belated Jealousy Affected Belisarius's Military Judgment

. · 7 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

From: “The Secret History” – by Pocopius of Caesarea

2 - How Belated Jealousy Affected Belisarius's Military Judgement

For soon Belisarius went off to war on Chosroes, and he took Photius with him; but Antonina remained behind, though this was contrary to her usual habit. She had always preferred to voyage wherever her husband went, lest he, being alone, come to his senses and, forgetting her enchantments, think of her for once as she deserved. But now, so that Theodosius might have free access to her, she planned once more how to rid herself permanently of Photius. She bribed some of Belisarius's guards to slander and insult her son at all times; while she, writing letters almost every day, denounced him, and thus set everything in motion against him. Compelled by all of this to counterplot against his mother, Photius got a witness to come from Constantinople with evidence of Theodosius's commerce with Antonina, took him to Belisarius, and commanded him to tell the whole story.

When Belisarius heard it, he became passionately angry, fell at Photius's feet, kissed them, and begged him to revenge one who had been so wronged by those who should least have treated him thus. "My dearest boy," he said, "your father, whoever he was, you have never known, for he left you at your mother's breast when the sands of his life were measured. Nor have you even benefited from his estate, since he was not overblessed with wealth. But brought up by me, though I was only your stepfather, you have arrived at an age where it becomes you to avenge my wrongs. I, who have raised you to consular rank, and given you the opportunity of acquiring such riches, might call myself your father and mother and entire kindred, and I would be right, my son. For it is not by their kinship of blood, but by their friendly deeds that men are wont to measure their bonds to one another.

"Now the hour has come, when you must not only look on me in the ruin of my household and the loss of my greatest treasure, but as one sharing the shame of your mother in the reproach of all mankind. And consider too, that the sins of women injure not only their husbands, but touch even more bitterly their children, whose reputation suffers the greater from this reason, that they are expected to inherit the disposition of those who bore them.

"Yet remember this of me, that I still love my wife exceedingly well; and if it is in my power to punish the ruiner of my house, to her I shall do no hurt. But while Theodosius is present, I cannot condone this charge against her."

When he had heard this, Photius agreed to serve him in everything; but at the same time he was afraid lest some trouble might come to himself from it, for he had little confidence in Belisarius's strength of will, where his wife was concerned. And among other unhappy possibilities, he remembered with distaste what had happened to Macedonia. So he had Belisarius exchange with him all the oaths that are held most sacred and binding among Christians, and each swore never to betray the other, even in the most mortal peril.

Now for the present they decided the time had not yet come to take action. But as soon as Antonina should arrive from Constantinople and Theodosius return to Ephesus, Photius was to go to Ephesus and dispose without difficulty of Theodosius and his property.

It was at this time that they had invaded the Persian country with the entire army, and there occurred to John of Cappadocia what is reported in my previous works. There I had to hush up one matter out of prudence, namely, that it was not without malice aforethought that Antonina deceived John and his daughter, but by many oaths, than which none is more reverenced by the Christians, she induced them to trust her as one who would never use them ill. After she had done this, feeling more confident than before of the friendship of the Empress, she sent

Theodosius to Ephesus, and herself, with no suspicion of opposition, set out for the East.

Belisarius had just taken the fort of Sisauranum when the news of her coming was brought to him; and he, setting everything else as nothing in comparison, ordered the army to retire. It so happened, as I have shown elsewhere, that other things had occurred to the expedition which fitted in with his order to withdraw, however, as I said in the foreword to this book, it was not safe for me at that time to tell all the underlying motives of these events. Accusation was consequently made against Belisarius by all the Romans that he had put the most urgent affairs of state below the lesser interests of his personal household. For the fact was that, possessed with jealous passion for his wife, he was unwilling to go far away from Roman territory, so that as soon as he should learn his wife was coming from Constantinople, he could immediately seize her and avenge himself on Theodosius.

For this reason he ordered the forces under Arethas to cross the Tigris River; and they returned home, having accomplished nothing worthy of mention. And he himself was careful not to leave the Roman frontier for much more than a one hour's ride. Indeed, the fort of Sisauranum, going by way of the city of Nisibis, is not more than a day's journey for a well-mounted man from the Roman border; and by another route is only half that distance. Yet if he had been willing in the beginning to cross the Tigris with his entire army, I believe he could have taken all the plunder in the land of Assyria, and marched as far as the city of Ctesiphon, with none to hinder him. And he could have rescued the captured Antiochans and whatever other Romans misfortune had brought there, and restored them to their native lands.

Furthermore, he was culpable for Chosroes's unhindered return home from Colchis. How this happened I shall now reveal. When Chosroes, Cabades's son, invading the land of Colchis, accomplished not only what I have elsewhere narrated, but captured Petra, a great part of the army of the Medes was destroyed, either in battle or because of the difficulty of the country. For Lazica, as I have explained, is almost roadless and very mountainous. Also pestilence, falling upon them, had destroyed most of -the army, and many had died from lack of necessary food and treatment. It was at this time that messengers came from Persia with news that Belisarius, having conquered Nabedes in battle before the city of Nisibis, was approaching; that he had taken the fort of Sisauranum by siege, captured at the point of the spear Bleschames and eight hundred Persian cavalry; and that he had sent a second army of Romans under Arethas, ruler of the Saracens, to cross the Tigris and ravage all the land there that heretofore had not known fear.

It happened also that the army of Huns which Chosroes had sent into Roman Armenia, to create a diversion there so that the Romans would not notice his expedition into Lazica, had fallen into the hands of Valerian and his Romans, as other messengers now reported; and that these barbarians had been badly beaten in battle, and most of them killed. When the Persians heard this, already in low spirits over their ill fortune among the Lazi, they now feared if they should meet a hostile army in their present difficulties, among precipices and wilderness, they would all perish in disorder. And they feared, too, for their children and their wives and their country; indeed, the noblest men in the army of the Medes reviled Chosroes, calling him one who had broken his plighted word and the common law of man, by invading in time of peace the land of the Romans. He had wronged, they cried, the oldest and greatest of all nations, which he could not possibly surpass in war. A mutiny was imminent.

Aroused at this, Chosroes found the following remedy for the trouble. He read them a letter which the Empress had recently written to Zaberganes. This was the letter:

"How highly I esteem you, Zaberganes, and that I believe you friendly to our State, you, who were ambassador to us not so long ago, are well aware. Would you not be acting suitably to this high opinion which I have for you, if you could persuade King Chosroes to choose peace with our government? If you do this, I can promise you will be rewarded by my husband, who does nothing without my advice."

Chosroes read this aloud, and asked the Persian leaders if they thought this was an Empire which a woman

managed. Thus he calmed their nervousness. But even so, he withdrew from the place with considerable anxiety, thinking that at any moment Belisarius's forces would confront him. And when none of the enemy appeared to bar his retreat, with great relief he marched back to his native land.

Previous Index Next

3 - Showing the Danger of Interfering with a Woman's Intrigues

. · 7 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

From: “The Secret History” – by Pocopius of Caesarea

3 - Showing the Danger of Interfering with a Woman's Intrigues

On his return to Roman territory, Belisarius found his wife just arriving from Constantinople. He put her under guard in disgrace, and often was on the point of putting her to death; but each time he weakened, overcome, I suppose, by the rekindling of his love for her. But they say he was also driven from his senses by philtres she gave. him.

Meanwhile the outraged Photius had gone to Ephesus, taking the eunuch Calligonus, pander for his mistress, with him, in chains; and under the whip, during the course of his journey Calligonus confessed all his lady's secrets. But Theodosius again learned of his peril, and fled to the Church of St. John the Apostle, which is the holiest and most revered sanctuary thereabouts. However Andrew, Bishop of Ephesus, was bribed by Photius to give the man up into his hands.

Theodora was now in some fear for Antonina, for she had heard what had happened to her; so she sent word to Belisarius to bring his wife to Constantinople. Photius, hearing of this, sent Theodosius to Cilicia, where his own lancers and shield-bearers happened to be wintering; enjoining upon those who took him thither to do so as secretly as possible, and on arriving in Cilicia to hide him privately in the garrison, letting no one know where in the world he was. Then, with Calligonus and Theodosius's considerable moneys, Photius went to Constantinople.

Now the Empress gave evidence to all mankind that for every murder to which she was indebted, she could pay in greater and even more savage requital. For Antonina had betrayed for her one enemy, when she had lately ensnared the Cappadocian; but she ruined, for Antonina's sake, a number of blameless men. Some of Belisarius's and Photius's acquaintances she put to the torture, when the only charge against them was that they were friends of the two (and to this day we do not know what was their ultimate fate), and others she banished into exile on the same accusation.

One man who had accompanied Photius to Ephesus, a Senator who was also named Theodosius, not only lost his property but was thrown into a dungeon, where he was, fastened to a manger by a rope around his neck so short that the noose was always tight and could not be slackened. Consequently the poor man had to stand at the manger all the time, whether he ate or sought sleep or performed the other needs of the body. The only difference between him and an ass, was that . he could not bray. The time the man passed in this condition was not less than four months; after which, overcome by melancholy, he went mad, and as such they set him free to die.

The reluctant Belisarius she forced to become reconciled with his wife; while Photius, after she had him tortured like a slave and scourged on the back and shoulders, was ordered to tell where Theodosius and the pander were. But in spite of his anguish at the torture he kept silent as he had sworn to do; though he had always been delicate and sickly, had had to be very careful of his health, and was hitherto inexperienced in such outrage and ill treatment. Yet none of Belisarius's secrets did he divulge.

Later, however, everything that up to this time had been concealed came to light. Discovering Calligonus in the neighborhood, Theodora handed him over to Antonina, and then had Theodosius brought back to Constantinople, where she hid him in her palace. On the day after his arrival she sent for Antonina. "My dearest lady," she said, "a pearl fell into my hands yesterday, such a one as no mortal has ever seen. If you wish, I will not grudge you a sight

of this jewel, but will show it to you." Not knowing what had happened, her friend begged Theodora to show her the pearl; and the Empress, leading Theodosius from the rooms of one of the eunuchs, revealed him.

For a moment Antonina, speechless with joy, remained dumb. Then she broke into an ecstasy of gratitude, and called Theodora her saviour, her benefactress, and her true mistress. Thereafter, the Empress kept Theodosius in the palace, wrapping him in every luxury, and declared she would even make him general of all the Roman forces before long. justice, however, intervened. Carried off by a dysentery, he disappeared from the world of men.

Now in Theodora's palace were certain secret dungeon rooms: dark, unknown, and remote, wherein there was no difference between day and night. In one of these Photius languished for a long time. He had the good fortune, however, to escape, not once, but twice. The first time he took refuge in the Church of the Virgin Mother, which is the most holy and famous of the churches in Constantinople, and there took his place at the sacred table as a suppliant. But she captured him even here, and had him removed by force. The second time he fled to the Church of St. Sophia and sought sanctuary at the holy font, which of all places the Christians most reverence. Yet even from here the woman was able to drag him: for to her no spot was too awful or venerable to transgress, and she thought nothing of violating all the sanctuaries put together. Like all the rest of the people, the Christian priests were struck dumb with horror, but stood to one side and suffered her to do as she willed.

Now for three years Photius remained thus in his cell; and then the prophet Zechariah came to him in a dream, and ordered him in the name of the Lord to escape, promising to aid him in this. Trusting in the vision, he broke loose again, and unnoticed by anyone made his way to Jerusalem. Though he passed through countless thousands of men on his flight, not one of them saw the youth. There he shaved his head, assumed the garb of the monks, and was free at last from the punishment of Theodora.

But Belisarius, disregarding his word of honor, took no measures to avenge his accomplice's suffering of such impious treatment as has been told. And all of his military expeditions from this time on- failed, presumably by the will of God- For his next campaign against Chosroes and the Medes, who were for the third time invading Roman territory, was severely criticized; though one good thing was said of him, that he had driven the foe back. But when Chosroes crossed the Euphrates River, took the great city of Callinicus without a battle, and enslaved myriads of Roman citizens, while Belisarius was careful not even to pursue the enemy when he retired, he won the reputation of being one of two things-either a traitor or a coward.

Previous Index Next

4 - How Theodora Humiliated the Conqueror of Africa and Italy

. · 7 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

From: “The Secret History” – by Pocopius of Caesarea

4 - How Theodora Humiliated the Conqueror of Africa and Italy

Soon after this, a further disaster befell him. The plague, which I have described elsewhere, became epidemic at Constantinople, and the Emperor Justinian was taken grievously ill; it was even said he had died of it. Rumor spread this report till it reached the Roman army camp. There some of the officers said that if the Romans tried to establish anyone else at Constantinople as Emperor, they would never recognize him. Presently, the Emperor's health bettered, and the officers of the army brought charges against each other, the generals Peter and John the Glutton alleging they had heard Belisarius and Buzes making the above declaration.
This hypothetical mutiny the indignant Queen took as intended by the two men to refer to herself. So she recalled all the officers to Constantinople to investigate the matter; and she summoned Buzes impromptu to her private quarters, on the pretext she wished to discuss with him matters of sudden urgency.

Now underneath the palace was an underground cellar, secure and labyrinthian, comparable to the infernal regions, in which most of those who gave offense to her were eventually entombed. And so Buzes was thrown into this oubliette, and there the man, though of consular rank, remained with no one cognizant of his fate. Neither, as he sat there in darkness, could he ever know whether it was day or night, nor could he learn from anyone else; for the man who each day threw him his food was dumb, and the scene was that of one wild beast confronting another. Everybody soon thought him dead, but no one dared to mention even his memory. But after two years and four months, Theodora took pity on the man and released him. Ever after he was half blind and sick in body. This is what she did to Buzes.

Belisarius, although none of the charges against him were proved, was at the insistence of the Empress relieved of his command by the Emperor; who appointed Martinus in his place as General of the armies of the East. Belisarius's lancers and shield-bearers, and such of his servants as were of military use, he ordered to be divided between the other generals and certain of the palace eunuchs. Drawing lots for these men and their arms, they portioned them as the chances fell. And his friends, and all who formerly had served him, were forbidden ever to visit Belisarius. It was a bitter sight, and one no one would ever have thought credible, to see Belisarius a private citizen in Constantinople, almost deserted, melancholy and miserable of countenance, and ever expectant of a further conspiracy to accomplish his death.

Then the Empress learned he had acquired great wealth in the East, and sent one of the eunuchs of the palace to confiscate it. Antonina, as I have told, was now quite out of temper with her husband, but on the most friendly and intimate terms with the Queen, since she had got rid of John of Cappadocia. So, to please Antonina, Theodora arranged everything so that the wife would appear to have asked mercy for her husband, and from such peril to have saved his life; and the poor wretch not only became quite reconciled to her, but let her make him her humblest slave for having saved him from the Queen. And this is how that happened.

One morning, Belisarius went to the palace as usual with his few and pitiful followers. Finding the Emperor and Empress hostile, he was further insulted in their presence by baseborn and common men. Late in the evening he went home, often turning around as he withdrew and looking in every direction for those who might be advancing to put him to death. Accompanied by this dread, he entered his home and sat down alone upon his couch. His spirit broken, he failed even to remember the time when he was a man; sweating, dizzy and trembling, he counted himself lost; devoured by slavish fears and mortal worry, he was completely emasculated.

Antonina, who neither knew just what arrangement of his fate had been made nor much cared what would become of him, was walking up and down nearby pretending a heartburn; for they were not exactly on friendly terms. Meanwhile, an officer of the palace, Quadratus by name, had come as the sun went down, and passing through the outer hall, suddenly stood at the door of the men's apartments to say he had been sent here by the Empress. And when Belisarius heard that, he drew up his arms and legs onto the couch and lay down on his back, ready for the end. So far had all manhood left him.

Quadratus, however, approached only to hand him a letter from the Queen. And thus the letter read: "You know, Sir, your offense against us. But because I am greatly indebted to your wife, I have decided to dismiss all charges against you and give her your life. So for the future you may be of good cheer as to your personal safety and that of your property; but we shall know by what happens to you how you conduct yourself toward her."

When Belisarius read this intoxicated with joy and yearning to give evidence of his gratitude, he leapt from his couch and prostrated himself at the feet of his wife. With each hand fondling one of her legs, licking with his tongue the sole of first one of her feet and then the other, he cried that she was the cause of his life and of his safety: henceforth he would be her faithful slave, instead of her lord and master.

The Empress then gave thirty gold centenaries of his property to the Emperor, and returned what was left to Belisarius. This is what happened to the great general to whom destiny had not long before given both Gelimer and Vitiges to be captives of his spear! But the wealth that this subject of theirs had acquired had long ago gnawed jealous wounds in the hearts of Justinian and Theodora, who deemed it grown too big for any but the imperial coffers. And they said he had concealed most of Gelimer's and Vitiges's moneys, which by conquest belonged to the State and had handed over only a small fraction, hardly worth accepting by an Emperor. Yet, when they counted the labors the man had accomplished, and the cries of reproach they might arouse among the people, since they had no credible pretext for punishing him, they kept their peace: until now, when the Empress, discovering him out of his senses with terror, at one fell stroke managed to become mistress of all his fortune.

To tie him further to her, she betrothed Joannina, Belisarius's only daughter, to Anastasius her nephew.

Belisarius now asked to be given back his old command, and as General of the East lead the Roman armies once more against Chosroes and the Medes; but Antonina would not hear of it. It was there she had been insulted by him before, she said, and she never wanted to see the place again. Accordingly, Belisarius was instead made Count of the imperial remounts, and fared forth a second time to Italy; agreeing with the Emperor, they say, not to ask him at any time for money toward this war, but to prepare all the military equipment from his private purse.

Now everybody took it for granted that Belisarius had arranged this with his wife and made the agreement about the expedition with the Emperor, merely so as to get away from his humiliating position in Constantinople; and that as soon as he had gotten outside the city, he intended to take up arms and retaliate, nobly and as becomes a man, against his wife and those who had done him wrong. Instead, he made light of all he had experienced, forgot or discounted his word of honor to Photius and his other friends, and followed his wife about in a perfect ecstasy of love: and that when she had now arrived at the age of sixty years.

However, as soon as he arrived in Italy, some new and different trouble happened with each fresh day, for even Providence had turned against him. For the plans this General had laid in the former campaign against Theodatus and Vitiges, though they did not seem to be fitting to the event, usually turned out to his advantage; while now, though he was credited with laying better plans, as was to be expected after his previous experience in warfare, they all turned out badly: so that the final judgment was that he had no sense of strategy.

Indeed, it is not by the plans of men, but by the hand of God that the affairs of men are directed; and this men call

Fate, not knowing the reason for what things they see occur; and what seems to be without cause is easy to call the accident of chance. Still, this is a matter every mortal will decide for himself according to his taste.

Previous Index Next

5 - How Theodora Tricked the General's Daughter

. · 7 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

From: “The Secret History” – by Pocopius of Caesarea

5 - How Theodora Tricked the General's Daughter

From his second expedition to Italy Belisarius brought back nothing but disgrace: for in the entire five years of the campaign he was unable to set foot on that land, as I have related in my former books, because there was no tenable position there; but all this time sailed up and down along the coast.

Totila, indeed, was willing enough to meet him before his city walls, but could not catch him there, since like the rest of the Roman army he was afraid to fight. Wherefore Belisarius recovered nothing of what had been lost, but even lost Rome in addition; and everything else, if there were anything left to lose. His mind was filled with avarice during this time, and he thought of nothing but base gain. Since he had been given no funds by the Emperor, he plundered nearly all the Italians living in Ravenna and Sicily, and wherever else he found opportunity: collecting a bill, as it were, for which those who dwelt there were in no way responsible. Thus, he even went to Herodian and asked him for money, and his threats so enraged Herodian that he rebelled against the Roman army and gave his services, with those of his followers and the city of Spoletum, to Totila and the Goths.

And now I shall show how it came about that Belisarius and John, the nephew of Vitalian, became estranged: a division that brought great disaster to Roman affairs.

Now so thoroughly did the Empress hate Germanus, and so conspicuously, that no one dared to become a relative of his, though he was the nephew of the Emperor. His sons remained unmarried while she lived, and his daughter Justina, though in the flower of eighteen summers, was still unwedded. Consequently, when John, sent by Belisarius, arrived in Constantinople, Germanus was forced to approach him as a possible son-in-law, though John was not at all worthy in station of such an alliance. But when they had come to an agreement, they bound each other by most solemn oaths to complete the alliance by all means in their power; and this was necessary because neither had any confidence in the good faith of the other. For John knew he was seeking a marriage far above his rank, and Germanus feared that even this man might try to slip out of the contract.

The Empress, of course, was unable to contain herself at this: and in every way, by every possible device, however unworthy, tried to hinder the event. When, for all her menaces, she was unable to deter either of them, she publicly threatened to put John to death. After this, on john's return to Italy, fearing Antonina might join the plot against him, he did not dare to meet Belisarius until she left for Constantinople. That Antonina had been charged by the Queen to help murder him, no one could have thought unlikely; and when he considered Antonina's habits and Belisarius's enslavement by his wife, John was as greatly as he was reasonably alarmed.

The Roman expedition, already on its last legs, now collapsed entirely. And this is how Belisarius concluded the Gothic war. In despair he begged the Emperor to let him come home as fast as he could sail. And when he received the monarch's permission to do this, he left straightway in high spirits, bidding a long farewell to the Roman army and to Italy. He left almost everything in the power of the enemy; and while he was on his way home, Perusia, hard pressed by a most bitter siege, was captured and submitted to every possible misery, as I have elsewhere related.

As if this were not enough, he suffered a further personal misfortune in the following manner. The Empress Theodora, desiring to marry the daughter of Belisarius to her nephew, worried the girl's parents with frequent letters. To avoid this alliance, they delayed the ceremony until they could both be present at it," and then, when the

Empress summoned them to Constantinople, pretended they were unable at the time to leave Italy. But the Queen was still determined her nephew should be master of Belisarius's wealth, for she knew his daughter would inherit it, as Belisarius had no other child. Yet she had no confidence in Antonina; and fearing that after her own life was ended, Antonina would not be loyal to her house, for all that she had been so helpful in the Empress's emergencies, and that she would break the agreement, Theodora did an unholy thing.

She made the boy and girl live together without any ceremony. And they say she forced the girl against her will to submit to his clandestine embrace, so that, being thus deflowered, the girl would agree to the marriage, and the Emperor could not forbid the event. However, after the first ravishing, Anastasius and the girl fell warmly in love with each other, and for not less than eight months continued their unmarital relations.

But when, after Theodora's death, Antonina came to Constantinople, she was unwilling to forget the outrage the Queen had committed against her. Not bothering about the fact that if she united her daughter to any other man, she would be making an ex-prostitute out of her, she refused to accept Theodora's nephew as a son-in-law, and by force tore the girl, ignoring her fondest pleadings, from the man she loved.

For this act of senseless obstinacy she was universally censured. Yet when her husband came home, she easily persuaded him to approve her course: which should have openly disclosed the character of the man. Still, though he had pledged himself to Photius and others of his friends, and then broken his word, there were plenty who sympathized with him. For they thought the reason for his perjury was not uxoriousness, but his fear of the Empress. But after Theodora died, as I have told, he still took no thought of Photius or any of his friends; and it was clear he called Antonina his mistress, and Calligonus the pander, his master. And then all men saw his shame, made him a public laughing stock, and reviled him to his face as a nitwit. Now was the folly of Belisarius completely revealed.

As for Sergius, son of Bacchus, and his misdeeds in Libya, I have described that affair sufficiently in my chapter elsewhere on the subject: how he was most guilty for the disaster there to Roman power, and how he disregarded the gospel oath he had sworn to the Levathae, and criminally put to death their eighty ambassadors. So there remains for me to add now only this, that neither did these men come to Sergius with any intention of treachery, nor did Sergius have any suspicion that they did; but nevertheless, after inviting them to a banquet under pledge of safety, he put them shamefully to death. This resulted in the loss of Solomon, the Roman Army, and all the Libyans. For consequent to this affair, especially after Solomon's death, as I have told, neither officer nor soldier was willing to venture the dangers of battle. Most notably John son of Sisinnolus, kept entirely from the filed of war because of his hatred of Sergius, until Areobinus came to Libya.

This Sergius was a luxurious person and no soldier; juvenile in nature and years; a jealous and swaggering bully; a wanton liver and a blowhard. But after became the accepted suitor of her niece and was this related to Antonina, Belasarius's wife, the Empress would not allow him to be punished or removed from his command, even when she saw Libya sure to be lost. And with the Emperor's consent she even let Solomon, Sergius brother, go scot-free after the murder of Pegasius. How this happened, I shall now relate.

After Pegasius had ransomed Solomon from the Levathae, and the barbarians had gone home, Solomon with Pegasius his ransomer and a few soldiers, set out for Carthage. And on the way Pegasius reminded Solomon of the wrong he had done, and said he should thank God for his rescue from the enemy. Solomon vexed at being reproached for having been taken captive, straightway slew Pegasius; and this was his requital to the man who saved him. But when Solomon arrived in Constantinople, the Emperor pardoned him on the ground that the man he killed was a traitor to the Roman state. So Solomon this escaping justice, left gladly for the East to visit his native country and his family. Yet God's vengeance overtook him on the very journey, and removed him from the world of men.

This is the explanation of the affair between Solomon and Pegasius.

Previous Index Next

6 - Ignorance of the Emperor Justin, and How His Nephew Justinian Was the Virtual Ruler

. · 7 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

From: “The Secret History” – by Pocopius of Caesarea

6 - Ignorance of the Emperor Justin, and How His Nephew Justinian Was the Virtual Ruler

I now come to the tale of what sort of beings Justinian and Theodora were, and how they brought confusion on the Roman State.

During the rule of the Emperor Leo in Constantinople, three young farmers of Illyrian birth, named Zimarchus, Ditybistus, and Justin of Bederiana, after a desperate struggle with poverty, left their homes to try their fortune in the army. They made their way to Constantinople on foot, carrying on their shoulders their blankets in which were wrapped no other equipment except the biscuits they had baked at home. When the arrived and were admitted into military service, the Emperor chose them for the palace guard; for they were all three fine-looking men.

Later, when Anastasius succeeded to the throne, war broke out with the Isaurians when that nation rebelled; and against them Anastasius sent a considerable army under John the Hunchback. This John for some offense threw Justin into the guardhouse, and on the following day would have sentenced him to death, had he not been stopped by a vision appearing to him in a dream. For in this dream, the general said, he beheld a being, gigantic in size and in every way mightier than mortals: and this being commanded him to release the man whom he had arrested that day. Waking from his sleep, John said, he decided the dream was not worth considering. But the next night the vision returned, and again he heard the same words he had heard before; yet even so he was not persuaded to obey its command. But for the third time the vision appeared in his dreams, and threatened him with fearful consequences if he did not do as the angel ordered: warning that he would be in sore need of this man and his family thereafter, when the day of wrath should overtake him. And this time Justin was released.

As time went on, this Justin came to great power. For the Emperor Anastasius appointed him Count of the palace guard; and when the Emperor departed from this world, by the force of his military power Justin seized the throne. By this time he was an old man on the verge of the grave, and so illiterate that he could neither read nor write: which never before could have been said of a Roman ruler. It was the custom for an Emperor to sign his edicts with his own hand, but he neither made decrees nor was able to understand the business of state at all.

The man on whom it befell to assist him as Quaestor was named Proclus; and he managed everything to suit himself. But so that he might have some evidence of the Emperor's hand, he invented the following device for his clerks to construct. Cutting out of a block of wood the shapes of the four letters required to make the Latin word, they dipped a pen into the ink used by emperors for their signatures, and put it in the Emperor's fingers. Laying the block of wood I have described on the paper to be signed, they guided the Emperor's hand so that his pen outlined the four letters, following all the curves of the stencil: and thus they withdrew with the FIAT Of the Emperor. This is how the Romans were ruled under Justin.

His wife was named Lupicina: a slave and a barbarian, she was bought to be his concubine. With Justin, as the sun of his life was about to set, she ascended the throne.

Now Justin was able to do his subjects neither harm nor good. For he was simple, unable to carry on a conversation or make a speech, and utterly bucolic. His nephew Justinian, while still a youth, was the virtual ruler-, and the of more and worse calamities to the Romans than any one man in all their previous history that has come down to us.-

For he had no scruples; against murder or the seizing of other persons property; and it was nothing to him to make away with myriads of men, even when they gave him no cause. He had no care for preserving established customs, but was always eager for new experiments, and, in short, was the greatest corrupter of all noble traditions.

Though the plague, described in my former books, attacked the whole world, no fewer men escaped than perished of it; for some never were taken by the disease, and others recovered after it had smitten them. But this man, not one of all the Romans could escape; but as if he were a second pestilence sent from heaven, he fell on the nation and left no man quite untouched. For some he slew without reason, and some he released to struggle with penury, and their fate was worse than that of those who had perished, so that they prayed for death to free them from their misery; and others he robbed of their property and their lives together.

When there was nothing left to ruin in the Roman state, he determined the conquest of Libya and Italy, for no other reason than to destroy the people there, as he had those who were already his subjects.

Indeed, his power was not ten days old, before he slew Amantius, chief of the palace eunuchs, and several others, on no graver charge than that Amantius had made some rash remark about John, Archbishop of the city. After this, he was the most feared of men.

Immediately after this he sent for the rebel Vitalian, to whom he had first given pledges of safety, and partaken with him of the Christian communion. But soon after he became suspicious and jealous, and murdered Vitalian and his companions at a banquet in the palace: thus showing he considered himself in no way bound by the most sacred of pledges.

Previous Index Next

7 - Outrages of the Blues

. · 7 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

From: “The Secret History” – by Pocopius of Caesarea

7 - Outrages of the Blues

The people had since long previous time been divided, as I have explained elsewhere, into two factions, the Blues and the Greens. Justinian, by joining the former party, which had already shown favor to him, was able to bring everything into confusion and turmoil, and by its power to sink the Roman state to its knees before him. Not all the Blues were willing to follow his leadership, but there were plenty who were eager for civil war. Yet even these, as the trouble spread, seemed the most prudent of men, for their crimes were less awful than was in their power to commit. Nor did the Green partisans remain quiet, but showed their resentment as violently as they could, though one by one they were continually punished; which, indeed, urged them each time to further recklessness. For men who are wronged are likely to become desperate.

Then it was that Justinian, fanning the flame and openly inciting the Blues to fight, made the whole Roman Empire shake on its foundation, as if an earthquake or a cataclysm had stricken it, or every city within its confines had been taken by the foe. Everything everywhere was uprooted: nothing was left undisturbed by him. Law and order, throughout the State, overwhelmed by distraction, were turned upside down.

First the rebels revolutionized the style of wearing their hair. For they had it cut differently from the rest of the Romans: not molesting the mustache or beard, which they allowed to keep on growing as long as it would, as the Persians do, but clipping the hair short on the front of the head down to the temples, and letting it hang down in great length and disorder in the back, as the Massageti do. This weird combination they called the Hun haircut.

Next they decided to wear the purple stripe on their togas, and swaggered about in a dress indicating a rank above their station: for it was only by ill-gotten money they were able to buy this finery. And the sleeves of their tunics were cut tight about the wrists, while from there to the shoulders they were of an ineffable fullness; thus, whenever they moved their hands, as when applauding at the theater or encouraging a driver in the hippodrome, these immense sleeves fluttered conspicuously, displaying to the simple public what beautiful and well-developed physiques were these that required such large garments to cover them. They did not consider that by the exaggeration of this dress the meagerness of their stunted bodies appeared all the more noticeable. Their cloaks, trousers, and boots were also different: and these too were called the Hun style, which they imitated.

Almost all of them carried steel openly from the first, while by day they concealed their two-edged daggers along the thigh under their cloaks. Collecting in gangs as soon as dusk fell, they robbed their betters in the open Forum and in the narrow alleys, snatching from passersby their mantles, belts, gold brooches, and whatever they had in their hands. Some they killed after robbing them, so they could not inform anyone of the assault.

These outrages brought the enmity of everybody on them, especially that of the Blue partisans who had not taken active part in the discord. When even the latter were molested, they began to wear brass belts and brooches and cheaper cloaks than most of them were privileged to display, lest their elegance should lead to their deaths; and even before the sun went down they went home to hide. But the evil progressed; and as no punishment came to the criminals from those in charge of the public peace, their boldness increased more and more. For when crime finds itself licensed, there are no limits to its abuses; since even when it is punished, it is never quite suppressed, most men being by nature easily turned to error. Such, then, was the conduct of the Blues.

Some of the opposite party joined this faction so as to get even with the people of their original side who had ill-treated them; others fled in secret to other lands, but many were captured before they could get away, and perished either at the hands of their foes or by sentence of the State. And many other young men offered themselves to this society who had never before taken any interest in the quarrel, but were now induced by the power and possibility of insolence they could thus acquire. For there is no villainy to which men give a name that was not committed during this time, and remained unpunished.

Now at first they killed only their opponents. But as matters progressed, they also murdered men who had done nothing against them. And there were many who bribed them with money, pointing out personal enemies, whom the Blues straightway dispatched, declaring these victims were Greens, when as a matter of fact they were utter strangers. And all this went on not any longer at dark and by stealth, but in every hour of the day, everywhere in the city: before the eyes of the most notable men of the government, if they happened to be bystanders. For they did not need to conceal their crimes, having no fear of punishment, but considered it rather to the advantage of their reputation, as proving their strength and manhood, to kill with one stroke of the dagger any unarmed man who happened to be passing by.

No one could hope to live very long under this state of affairs, for everybody suspected he would be the next to be killed. No place was safe, no time of day offered any pledge of security, since these murders went on in the holiest of sanctuaries even during divine services. No confidence was left in one's friends or relatives, for many died by conspiracy of members of their own households. Nor was there any investigation after these deeds, but the blow would fall unexpectedly, and none avenged the victim. No longer was there left any force in law or contract, because,of this disorder, but everything was settled by violence. The State might as well have been a tyranny: not one, however, that had been established, but one that was being overturned daily and ever recommencing.

The magistrates seemed to have been driven from their senses, and their wits enslaved by the fear of one man. The judges, when deciding cases that came up before them, cast their votes not according to what they thought right or lawful, but according as either of the disputants was an enemy or friend of the faction in power. For a judge who disregarded its instruction was sentencing himself to death. And many creditors were forced to receipt the bills they had sent to their debtors without being paid what was due them; and many thus against their will had to free their slaves.

And they say that certain ladies were forced by their own slaves to do what they did not want to do; and the sons of notable men, getting mixed up with these young bandits, compelled their fathers, among other acts against their will, to hand over their properties to them. Many boys were constrained, with their fathers' knowledge, to serve the unnatural desires of the Blues; and happily married women met the same misfortune.

It is told that a woman of no undue beauty was ferrying with her husband to the suburb opposite the mainland; when some men of this party met them on the water, and jumping into her boat, dragged her abusively from her husband and made her enter their vessel. She had whispered to her spouse to trust her and have no fear of any reproach, for she would not allow herself to be dishonored. Then, as he looked at her in great grief, she threw her body into the Bosphorus and forthwith vanished from the world of men. Such were the deeds this party dared to commit at that time in Constantinople.

Yet all of this disturbed people less than Justinian's offenses against the State. For those who suffer the most grievously from evildoers are relieved of the greater part of their anguish by the expectation they will sometime be avenged by law and authority. Men who are confident of the future can bear more easily and less painfully their present troubles; but when they are outraged even by the government what befalls them is naturally all the more grievous, and by the failing of all hope of redress they are turned to utter despair. And Justinian's crime was that he was not only unwilling to protect the injured, but saw no reason why he should not be the open head of the guilty

faction; he gave great sums of money to these young men, and surrounded himself with them: and some he even went so far as to appoint to high office and other posts of honor.

Previous Index Next

8 - Character and Appearance of Justinian

. · 7 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

From: “The Secret History” – by Pocopius of Caesarea

8 - Character and Appearance of Justinian

Now this went on not only in Constantinople, but in every city: for like any other disease, the evil, starting there, spread throughout the entire Roman Empire. But the Emperor was undisturbed by the trouble, even when it went on continually under his own eyes at the hippodrome. For he was very complacent and resembled most the silly ass, which follows, only shaking its ears, when one drags it by the bridle. As such Justinian acted, and threw everything into confusion.

As soon as he took over the rule from his uncle, his measure was to spend the public money without restraint, now that he had control of it. He gave much of it to the Huns who, from time to time, entered the state; and in consequence the Roman provinces were subject to constant incursions, for these barbarians, having once tasted Roman wealth, never forgot the road that led to it. And he threw much money into the sea in the form of moles, as if to master the eternal roaring of the breakers. For he jealously hurled stone breakwaters far out from the mainland against the onset of the sea, as if by the power of wealth he could outmatch the might of ocean.

He gathered to himself the private estates of Roman citizens from all over the Empire: some by accusing their possessors of crimes of which they were innocent, others by juggling their owners' words into the semblance of a gift to him of their property. And many, caught in the act of murder and other crimes, turned their possessions over to him and thus escaped the penalty for their sins.

Others, fraudulently disputing title to lands happening to adjoin their own, when they saw they had no chance of getting the best of the argument, with the law against them, gave him their equity in the claim so as to be released from court. Thus, by a gesture that cost him nothing, they gained his favor and were able illegally to get the better of their opponents.

I think this is as good a time as any to describe the personal appearance of the man. Now in physique he was neither tall nor short, but of average height; not thin, but moderately plump; his face was round, and not bad looking, for he had good color, even when he fasted for two days. To make a long description short, he much resembled Domitian, Vespasian's son. He was the one whom the Romans so hated that even tearing him into pieces did not satisfy their wrath against him, but a decree was passed by the Senate that the name of this Emperor should never be written, and that no statue of him should be preserved. And so this name was erased in all the inscriptions at Rome and wherever else it had been written, except only where it occurs in the list of emperors; and nowhere may be seen any statue of him in all the Roman Empire, save one in brass, which was made for the following reason.

Domitian's wife was of free birth and otherwise noble; and neither had she herself ever done wrong to anybody, nor had she assented in her husband's acts. Wherefore she was dearly loved; and the Senate sent for her, when Domitian died, and commanded her to ask whatever boon she wished. But she asked only this: to set up in his memory one brass image, wherever she might desire. To this the Senate agreed. Now the lady, wishing to leave a memorial to future time of the savagery of those who had butchered her husband, conceived this plan: collecting the pieces of Domitian's body, she joined them accurately together and sewed the body up again into its original semblance. Taking this to the statue makers, she ordered them to produce the miserable form in brass. So the artisans forthwith made the image, and the wife took it, and set it up in the street which leads to the Capitol, on the right hand side as one goes there from the Forum: a monument to Domitian and a revelation of the manner of his death until this day.

Justinian's entire person, his manner of expression and all of his features might be clearly pointed out in this statue.

Now such was Justinian in appearance; but his character was something I could not fully describe. For he was at once villainous and amenable; as people say colloquially, a moron. He was never truthful with anyone, but always guileful in what he said and did, yet easily hoodwinked by any who wanted to deceive him. His nature was an unnatural mixture of folly and wickedness. What in olden times a peripatetic philosopher said was also true of him, that opposite qualities combine in a man as in the mixing of colors. I will try to portray him, however, insofar as I can fathom his complexity.

This Emperor, then, was deceitful, devious, false, hypocritical, two-faced, cruel, skilled in dissembling his thought, never moved to tears by either joy or pain, though he could summon them artfully at will when the occasion demanded, a liar always, not only offhand, but in writing, and when he swore sacred oaths to his subjects in their very hearing. Then he would immediately break his agreements and pledges, like the vilest of slaves, whom indeed only the fear of torture drives to confess their perjury. A faithless friend, he was a treacherous enemy, insane for murder and plunder, quarrelsome and revolutionary, easily led to anything evil, but never willing to listen to good counsel, quick to plan mischief and carry it out, but finding even the hearing of anything good distasteful to his ears.

How could anyone put Justinian's ways into words? These and many even worse vices were disclosed in him as in no other mortal nature seemed to have taken the wickedness of all other men combined and planted it in this man's soul. And besides this, he was too prone to listen to accusations; and too quick to punish. For he decided such cases without full examination, naming the punishment when he had heard only the accuser s side of the matter. Without hesitation he wrote decrees for the plundering of countries, sacking of cities, and slavery of whole nations, for no cause whatever. So that if one wished to take all the calamities which had befallen the Romans before this time and weigh them against his crimes, I think it would be found that more men had been murdered by this single man than in all previous history.

He had no scruples about appropriating other people's property, and did not even think any excuse necessary, legal or illegal, for confiscating what did not belong to him. And when it was his, he was more than ready to squander it in insane display, or give it as an unnecessary bribe to the barbarians. In short, he neither held on to any money himself nor let anyone else keep any: as if his reason were not avarice, but jealousy of those who had riches. Driving all wealth from the country of the Romans in this manner, he became the cause Of universal poverty.

Now this was the character of Justinian, so far as I can portray it.

Previous Index Next

9 - How Theodora, Most Depraved of All Courtesans, Won His Love

. · 7 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

From: “The Secret History” – by Pocopius of Caesarea

9 - How Theodora, Most Depraved of All Courtesans, Won His Love

He took a wife: and in what manner she was born and bred, and, wedded to this man, tore up the Roman Empire by the very roots, I shall now relate.

Acacius was the keeper of wild beasts used in the amphitheater in Constantinople; he belonged to the Green faction and was nicknamed the Bearkeeper. This man, during the rule of Anastasius, fell sick and died, leaving three daughters named Comito, Theodora and Anastasia: of whom the eldest was not yet seven years old. His widow took a second husband, who with her undertook to keep up Acacius's family and profession. But Asterius, the dancing master of the Greens, on being bribed by another ' removed this office from them and assigned it to the man who gave him the money. For the dancing masters had the power of distributing such positions as they wished.

When this woman saw the populace assembled in the amphitheater, she placed laurel wreaths on her daughters' heads and in their hands, and sent them out to sit on the ground in the attitude of suppliants. The Greens eyed this mute appeal with indifference; but the Blues were moved to bestow on the children an equal office, since their own animal-keeper had just died.
When these children reached the age of girlhood, their mother put them on the local stage, for they were fair to look upon; she sent them forth, however, not all at the same time, but as each one seemed to her to have reached a suitable age. Comito, indeed, had already become one of the leading hetaerae [high class prostitutes] of the day.

Theodora, the second sister, dressed in a little tunic with sleeves, like a slave girl, waited on Comito and used to follow her about carrying on her shoulders the bench on which her favored sister was wont to sit at public gatherings. Now Theodora was still too young to know the normal relation of man with maid, but consented to the unnatural violence of villainous slaves who, following their masters to the theater, employed their leisure in this infamous manner. And for some time in a brothel she suffered such misuse.

But as soon as she arrived at the age of youth, and was now ready for the world, her mother put her on the stage. Forthwith, she became a courtesan, and such as the ancient Greeks used to call a common one, at that: for she was not a flute or harp player, nor was she even trained to dance, but only gave her youth to anyone she met, in utter abandonment. Her general favors included, of course, the actors in the theater; and in their productions she took part in the low comedy scenes. For she was very funny and a good mimic, and immediately became popular in this art. There was no shame in the girl, and no one ever saw her dismayed: no role was too scandalous for her to, accept without a blush.

She was the kind of comedienne who delights the audience by letting herself be cuffed and slapped on the cheeks, and makes them guffaw by raising her skirts to reveal to the spectators those feminine secrets here and there which custom veils from the eyes of the opposite sex. With pretended laziness she mocked her lovers, and coquettishly adopting ever new ways of embracing, was able to keep in a constant turmoil the hearts of the sophisticated. And she did not wait to be asked by anyone she met, but on the contrary, with inviting jests and a comic flaunting of her skirts herself tempted all men who passed by, especially those who were adolescent.

On the field of pleasure she was never defeated. Often she would go picnicking with ten young men or more, in the flower of their strength and virility, and dallied with them all, the whole night through. When they wearied of the

sport, she would approach their servants, perhaps thirty in number, and fight a duel with each of these; and even thus found no allayment of her craving. Once, visiting the house of an illustrious gentleman, they say she mounted the projecting corner of her dining couch, pulled up the front of her dress, without a blush, and thus carelessly showed her wantonness. And though she flung wide three gates to the ambassadors of Cupid, she lamented that nature had not similarly unlocked the straits of her bosom, that she might there have contrived a further welcome to his emissaries.

Frequently, she conceived but as she employed every artifice immediately, a miscarriage was straightway effected. Often, even in the theater, in the sight of all the people, she removed her costume and stood nude in their midst, except for a girdle about the groin: not that she was abashed at revealing that, too, to the audience, but because there was a law against appearing altogether naked on the stage, without at least this much of a fig-leaf. Covered thus with a ribbon, she would sink down to the stage floor and recline on her back. Slaves to whom the duty was entrusted would then scatter grains of barley from above into the calyx of this passion flower, whence geese, trained for the purpose, would next pick the grains one by one with their bills and eat. When she rose, it was not with a blush, but she seemed rather to glory in the performance. For she was not only impudent herself, but endeavored to make everybody else as audacious. Often when she was alone with other actors she would undress in their midst and arch her back provocatively, advertising like a peacock both to those who had experience of her and to those who had not yet had that privilege her trained suppleness.

So perverse was her wantonness that she should have hid not only the customary part of her person, as other women do, but her face as well. Thus those who were intimate with her were straightway recognized from that very fact to be perverts, and any more respectable man who chanced upon her in the Forum avoided her and withdrew in haste, lest the hem of his mantle, touching such a creature, might be thought to share in her pollution. For to those who saw her, especially at dawn, she was a bird of ill omen. And toward her fellow actresses she was as savage as a scorpion: for she was very malicious.

Later, she followed Hecebolus, a Tyrian who had been made governor of Pentapolis, serving him in the basest of ways; but finally she quarreled with him and was sent summarily away. Consequently, she found herself destitute of the means of life, which she proceeded to earn by prostitution, as she had done before this adventure. She came thus to Alexandria, and then traversing all the East, worked her way to Constantinople; in every city plying a trade (which it is safer, I fancy, in the sight of God not to name too clearly) as if the Devil were determined there be no land on earth that should not know the sins of Theodora.

Thus was this woman born and bred, and her name was a byword beyond that of other common wenches on the tongues of all men.

But when she came back to Constantinople, Justinian fell violently in love with her. At first he kept her only as a mistress, though he raised her to patrician rank. Through him Theodora was able immediately to acquire an unholy power and exceedingly great riches. she seemed to him the sweetest thing in the world, and like all lovers, he desired to please his charmer with every possible favor and requite her with all his wealth. The extravagance added fuel to the flames of passion. With her now to help spend his money he plundered the people more than ever, not only in the capital, but throughout the Roman Empire. As both of them had for a long time been of the Blue party, they gave this faction almost complete control of the affairs of state. It was long afterward that the worst of this evil was checked in the following manner.

Justinian had been ill for several days, and during this illness was in such peril of his life that it was even said he had died; and the Blues, who had been committing such crimes as I have mentioned, went so far as to kill Hypatius, a gentleman of no mean importance, in broad daylight in the Church of St. Sophia. The cry of horror at this crime came to the Emperor's ears, and everyone about him seized the opportunity of pointing out the enormity of what

was going on in Justinian's absence from public affairs; and they enumerated from the beginning how many crimes had been committed. The Emperor then ordered the Prefect of the city to punish these offenses. This man was one Theodotus, nicknamed the Pumpkin. He made a thorough investigation and was able to apprehend many of the guilty and sentence them to death, though many others were not found out, and escaped. They were destined to perish later, together with the Roman Empire.

Justinian, unexpectedly restored to health, straightway undertook to put Theodotus to death as a poisoner and a magician. But since he had no proof on which to condemn the man, he tortured friends of his until they were compelled to say the words that would wrongfully ruin him. When everyone else stood to one side and only in silence lamented the plot against Theodotus, one man, Proclus the Quaestor, dared to say openly that the man was innocent of the charge against him, and in no way merited death. Thanks to him, Theodotus was permitted by the Emperor to be exiled to Jerusalem. But learning there that men were being sent to do away with him, he hid himself in the church for the rest of his life until he died. And this was the fate of Theodotus.

But after this, the Blues became the most prudent of men. For they ventured no longer to continue their offenses, even though they might have transgressed more fearlessly than before. And the proof of this is, that when a few of them later showed such courage, no punishment at all befell them. For those who had the power to punish, always gave these gangsters time to escape, tacitly encouraging the rest to trample upon the laws.

Previous Index Next

10 - How Justinian Created a New Law Permitting Him to Marry a Courtesan

. · 7 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

From: “The Secret History” – by Pocopius of Caesarea

10 - How Justinian Created a New Law Permitting Him to Marry a Courtesan

Now as long as the former Empress was alive, Justinian was unable to find a way to make Theodora his wedded wife. In this one matter she opposed him as in nothing else: for the lady abhorred vice, being a rustic and of barbarian descent, as I have shown. She was never able to do any real good, because of her continued ignorance of the affairs of state. She dropped her original name, for fear people would think it ridiculous, and adopted the name of Euphemia when she came to the palace. But finally her death removed this obstacle to Justinian's desire.

Justin, doting and utterly senile, was now the laughing stock of his subjects; he was disregarded by everyone because of his inability to oversee state affairs; but Justinian they all served with considerable awe. His hand was in everything, and his passion for turmoil created universal consternation.

It was then that he undertook to complete his marriage with Theodora. But as it was impossible for a man of senatorial rank to make a courtesan his wife, this being forbidden by ancient law, he made the Emperor nullify this ordinance by creating a new one, permitting him to wed Theodora, and consequently making it possible for anyone else to marry a courtesan.

Immediately after this he seized the power of the Emperor, veiling his usurpation with a transparent pretext: for he was proclaimed colleague of his uncle as Emperor of the Romans by the questionable legality of an election inspired by terror.

So Justinian and Theodora ascended the imperial throne three days before Easter, a time, indeed, when even making visits or greeting one's friends is forbidden. And not many days later Justin died of an illness, after a reign of nine years. Justinian was now sole .monarch, together, of course, with Theodora.

Thus it was that Theodora, though born and brought up as I have related, rose to royal dignity over all obstacles. For no thought of shame came to Justinian in marrying her, though he might have taken his pick of the noblest born, most highly educated, most modest, carefully nurtured, virtuous and beautiful virgins of all the ladies in the whole Roman Empire: a maiden, as they say, with upstanding breasts. Instead, he preferred to make his own :what, had been common to all men, alike, careless of all her revealed history, took in wedlock a woman who was not only guilty of every other contamination but boasted of her many abortions.

I need hardly mention any other proof of the character of this man: for all the perversity of his soul was completely displayed in this union; which alone was ample interpreter, witness, and historian of his shamelessness. For when a man once disregards the disgrace of his actions and is willing to brave the contempt of society, no path of lawlessness is thereafter taboo to him; but with unflinching countenance he advances, easily and without a scruple, to acts of the deepest infamy.

However, not a single member of even the Senate, seeing this disgrace befalling the State, dared to complain or forbid the event; but all of them bowed down before her as if she were a goddess. Nor was there a priest who showed any resentment, but all hastened to greet her as Highness. And the populace who had seen her before on the stage, directly raised its hands to proclaim itself her slave in fact and in name. Nor did any soldier grumble at being

ordered to risk the perils of war for the benefit of Theodora: nor was there any man on earth who ventured to oppose her.

Confronted with this disgrace, they all yielded, I suppose, to necessity, for it was as if Fate were giving proof of its power to control mortal affairs as malignantly as it pleases: showing that its decrees need not always be according to reason or human propriety. Thus does Destiny sometimes raise mortals suddenly to lofty heights in defiance of reason, in challenge to all out cries of injustice; but admits no obstacle, urging on his favorites to the appointed goal without let or hindrance. But as this is the will of God, so let it befall and be written.

Now Theodora was fair of face and of a very graceful, though small, person; her complexion was moderately colorful, if somewhat pale; and her eyes were dazzling and vivacious. All eternity would not be long enough to allow one to tell her escapades while she was on the stage, but the few details I have mentioned above should be sufficient to demonstrate the woman's character to future generations.

What she and her husband did together must now be briefly described: for neither did anything without the consent of the other. For some time it was generally supposed they were totally different in mind and action; but later it was revealed that their apparent disagreement had been arranged so that their subjects might not unanimously revolt against them, but instead be divided in opinion.

Thus they split the Christians into two parties, each pretending to take the part of one side, thus confusing both, as I shall soon show; and then they ruined both political factions. Theodora feigned to support the Blues with all her power, encouraging them to take the offensive against the opposing party and perform the most outrageous deeds of violence; while Justinian, affecting to be vexed and secretly jealous of her, also pretended he could not openly oppose her orders. And thus they gave the impression often that they were acting in opposition. Then he would rule that the Blues must be punished for their crimes, and she would angrily complain that against her will she was defeated by her husband. However, the Blue partisans, as I have said, seemed cautious, for they did not violate their neighbors as much as they might have done.

And in legal disputes each of the two would pretend to favor one of the litigants, and compel the man with the worse case to win: and so they robbed both disputants of most of the property at issue.

In the same way, the Emperor, taking many persons into his intimacy, gave them offices by power of which they could defraud the State to the limits of their ambition. And as soon as they had collected enough plunder, they would fall out of favor with Theodora, and straightway be ruined. At first he would affect great sympathy in their behalf, but soon he would somehow lose his confidence in them, and an air of doubt would darken his zeal in their behalf. Then Theodora would use them shamefully, while he, unconscious as it were of what was being done to them, confiscated their properties and boldly enjoyed their wealth. By such well-planned hypocrisies they confused the public and, pretending to be at variance with each other, were able to establish a firm and mutual tyranny.

Previous Index Next

11 - How the Defender of the Faith Ruined His Subjects

. · 7 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

From: “The Secret History” – by Pocopius of Caesarea

11 - How the Defender of the Faith Ruined His Subjects

As soon as Justinian came into power he turned everything upside down. Whatever had been before by law, he now introduced into the government, while he revoked all established customs: as if he had been given the robes of an Emperor on the condition he would turn everything topsy-turvy. Existing offices he abolished, and invented new ones for the management of public affairs. He did the same thing to the laws and to the regulations of the army; and his reason was not any improvement of justice or any advantage, but simply that everything might be new and named after himself. And whatever was beyond his power to abolish, he renamed after himself anyway.

Of the plundering of property or the murder of men, no weariness ever overtook him. As soon as he had looted all the houses of the wealthy, he looked around for others; meanwhile throwing away the spoils of his previous robberies in subsidies to barbarians or senseless building extravagances. And when he had ruined perhaps myriads in this mad looting, he immediately sat down to plan how he could do likewise to others in even greater number.

As the Romans were now at peace with all the world and he had no other means of satisfying his lust for slaughter, he set the barbarians all to fighting each other. And for no reason at all he sent for the Hun chieftains, and with idiotic magnanimity gave them large sums of money, alleging he did this to secure their friendship. This, as I have said, he had also done in Justin's time. These Huns, as soon as they had got this money, sent it together with their soldiers to others of their chieftains, with the word to make inroads into the land of the Emperor: so that they might collect further tribute from him, to buy them off in a second peace. Thus the Huns enslaved the Roman Empire, and were paid by the Emperor to keep on doing it.

This encouraged still others of them to rob the poor Romans; and after their pillaging, they too were further rewarded by the gracious Emperor. In this way all the Huns, for when it was not one tribe of them it was another, continuously overran and laid waste the Empire. For the barbarians were led by many different chieftains, and the war, thanks to Justinian's senseless generosity, was thus endlessly protracted. Consequently no place, mountain or cave, or any other spot in Roman territory, during this time remained uninjured; and many regions were pillaged more than five times.

These misfortunes, and those that were caused by the Medes, Saracens, Slavs, Antes, and the rest of the barbarians, I described in my previous works. But, as I said in the preface to this narrative, the real cause of these calamities remained to be told here.

To Chosroes also -he paid many centenaries in behalf of peace, and then with unreasonable arbitrariness caused the breaking of the truce by making every effort to secure the friendship of Alamandur and his Huns, who had been in alliance with the Persians: but this I freely discussed in my chapters on the subject.

Moreover, while he was encouraging civil strife and frontier warfare to confound the Romans, with only one thought in his mind, that the earth should run red with human blood and he might acquire more and more booty, he invented a new means of murdering his subjects. Now among the Christians in the entire Roman Empire, there are many with dissenting doctrines, which are called heresies by the established church: such as those of the Montanists and Sabbatians, and whatever others cause the minds of men to wander from the true path. All of these beliefs he ordered to be abolished, and their place taken by the orthodox dogma: threatening, among the punishments for

disobedience, loss of the heretic's right to will property to his children or other relatives.

Now the churches of these so-called heretics especially those belonging to the Arian dissenters, were almost incredibly wealthy. Neither all the Senate put together nor the greatest other unit of the Roman Empire, had anything in property comparable to that of these churches. For their gold and silver treasures, and stores of precious stones, were beyond telling or numbering: they owned mansions and whole villages, land all over the world, and everything else that is counted as wealth among men.

As none of the previous Emperors had molested these churches, many men, even those of the orthodox faith, got their livelihood by working on their estates. But the Emperor Justinian, in confiscating these properties, at the same time took away what for many people had been their only means of earning a living.

Agents were sent everywhere to force whomever they chanced upon to renounce the faith of their fathers. This, which seemed impious to rustic people, caused them to rebel against those who gave them such an order. Thus many perished at the hands of the persecuting faction, and others did away with themselves, foolishly thinking this the holier course of two evils; but most of them by far quitted the land of their fathers, and fled the country. The Montanists, who dwelt in Phrygia, shut themselves up in their churches, set them on fire, and ascended to glory in the flames. And thenceforth the whole Roman Empire was a scene of massacre and flight.

A similar law w as then passed against the Samaritans, which threw Palestine into an indescribable turmoil.

Those, indeed, who lived in my own Caesarea and in the other cities, deciding it silly to suffer harsh treatment over a ridiculous trifle of dogma, took the name of Christians in exchange for the one they had borne before, by which precaution they were able to avoid the perils of the new law. The most reputable and better class of these citizens, once they had adopted this religion, decided to remain faithful to it; the majority, however, as if in spite for having not voluntarily, but by the compulsion of law, abandoned the belief of their fathers, soon slipped away into the Manichean sect and what is known as polytheism.

The country people, however, banded together and determined to take arms against the Emperor: choosing as their candidate for the throne a bandit named Julian, son of Sabarus. And for a time they held their own against the imperial troops; but finally, defeated in battle, were cut down, together with their leader. Ten myriads of men are said to have perished in this engagement, and the most fertile country on earth thus became destitute of farmers. To the Christian owners of these lands, the affair brought great hardship: for while their profits from these properties were annihilated, they had to pay heavy annual taxes on them to the Emperor for the rest of their lives, and secured no remission of this burden.

Next he turned his attention to those called Gentiles, torturing their persons and plundering their lands. of this group, those who decided to become nominal Christians saved themselves for the time being; but it was not long before these, too, were caught performing libations and sacrifices and other unholy rites. And how he treated the Christians shall be told hereafter.

After this he passed a law prohibiting pederasty: a law pointed not at offenses committed after this decree, but at those who could be convicted of having practised the vice in the past. The conduct of the prosecution was utterly illegal. Sentence was passed when there was no accuser: the word of one man or boy, and that perhaps a slave, compelled against his will to bear witness against his owner, was defined as sufficient evidence. Those who were convicted were castrated and then exhibited in a public parade. At the start, this persecution was directed only at those who were of the Green party, were reputed to be especially wealthy, or had otherwise aroused jealousy.

The Emperor's malice was also directed against the astrologer. Accordingly, magistrates appointed to punish thieves

also abused the astrologers, for no other reason than that they belonged to this profession; whipping them on the back and parading them on camels
throughout the city, though they were old men, and in every way respectable, with no reproach against them except that they studied the science of the stars while living in such a city.

Consequently there was a constant stream of emigration not only to the land of the barbarians but to places farthest remote from the Romans; and in every country and city one could see crowds of foreigners. For in order to escape persecution, each would lightly exchange his native land for another, as if his own country had been taken by an enemy.

Previous Index Next

12 - Proving That Justinian and Theodora Were Actually Fiends in Human Form

. · 7 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

From: “The Secret History” – by Pocopius of Caesarea

12 - Proving That Justinian and Theodora Were Actually Fiends in Human Form

Now the wealth of those in Constantinople and each other city who were considered second in prosperity only to members of the Senate, was brutally confiscated, in the ways I have described, by Justinian and Theodora. But how they were able to rob even the Senate of all its property I shall now reveal.

There was in Constantinople a man by the name of Zeno, grandson of that Anthamius who had formerly been Emperor of the West. This man they appointed, with malice aforethought, Governor of Egypt, and commanded his immediate departure. But he delayed his voyage long enough to load his ship with his most valuable effects; for he had a countless amount of silver and gold plate inlaid with pearls, emeralds and other such precious stones. Whereupon they bribed some of his most trusted servants to remove these valuables from the ship as fast as they could carry them, set fire to the interior of the vessel, and inform Zeno that his ship had burst into flames of spontaneous combustion, with the loss of all his property. Later, when Zeno died suddenly, they took possession of his estate immediately as his legal heirs; for they produced a will which, it is whispered, he did not really make.

In the same manner they made themselves heirs of Tatian, Demosthenes, and Hilara, who were foremost in the Roman Senate. And others' estates they obtained by counterfeited letters instead of wills. Thus they became heirs of Dionysius, who lived in Libanus, and of John the son of Basil, who was the most notable of the citizens of Edessa, and had been given as hostage, against his will, by Belisarius to the Persians: as I have recounted elsewhere. For Chosroes refused to let this John go, charging that the Romans had disregarded the terms of the truce, as a pledge of which John had been given him by Belisarius; and he said he would only give him up as a prisoner of war. So his father's mother, who was still living, got together a ransom not less than two thousand pounds of silver, and was ready to purchase her grandson's liberty. But when this money came to Dara, the Emperor heard of the bargain and forbade it: saying that Roman wealth must not be given to the barbarians. Not long after this, John fell ill and departed from this world, whereupon the Governor of the city forged a letter which, he said, John had written him as a friend not long before, to the effect that he wished his estate to go to the Emperor.

I could hardly catalogue all the other people whose estates these two chose to inherit. However, up to the time when the insurrection named Nika took place, they seized rich men's properties one at a time; but when that happened, as I have told elsewhere, they sequestrated at one swoop the estates of nearly all the members of the Senate. On everything movable and on the fairest of the lands they laid their hands and kept what they wanted; but whatever was unproductive of more than the bitter and heavy taxes, they gave back to the previous owners with a philanthropic gesture. Consequently these unfortunates, oppressed by the tax collectors and eaten up by the never-ceasing interest on their debts, found life a burden compared to which death were preferable.

Wherefore to me,- and many others of us, these two seemed not to be human beings, but veritable demons, and what the poets call vampires: who laid their heads together to see how they could most easily and quickly destroy the race and deeds of men; and assuming human bodies, became man-demons, and so convulsed the world. And one could find evidence of this in many things, but especially in the superhuman power with which they worked their will.

For when one examines closely, there is a clear difference between what is human and what is supernatural. There

have been many enough men, during the whole course of history, who by chance or by nature have inspired great fear, ruining cities or countries or whatever else fell into their power; but to destroy all men and bring calamity on the whole inhabited earth remained for these two to accomplish, whom Fate aided in their schemes of corrupting all mankind. For by earthquakes, pestilences, and floods of river waters at this time came further ruin, as I shall presently show. Thus not by human, but by some other kind of power they accomplished their dreadful designs.

And they say his mother said to some of her intimates once that not of Sabbatius her husband, nor of any man was Justinian a son. For when she was about to conceive, there visited a demon, invisible but giving evidence of his presence perceptibly where man consorts with woman, after which he vanished utterly as in a dream.

And some of those who have been with Justinian at the palace late at night, men who were pure of spirit, have thought they saw a strange demoniac form taking his place. One man said that the Emperor suddenly rose from his throne and walked about, and indeed he was never wont to remain sitting for long, and immediately Justinian's head vanished, while the rest of his body seemed to ebb and flow; whereat the beholder stood aghast and fearful, wondering if his eyes were deceiving him. But presently he perceived the vanished head filling out and joining the body again as strangely as it had left it.

Another said he stood beside the Emperor as he sat, and of a sudden the face changed into a shapeless mass of flesh, with neither eyebrows nor eyes in their proper places, nor any other distinguishing feature; and after a time the natural appearance of his countenance returned. I write these instances not as one who saw them myself, but heard them from men who were positive they had seen these strange occurrences at the time.

They also say that a certain monk, very dear to God, at the instance of those who dwelt with him in the desert went to Constantinople to beg for mercy to his neighbors who had been outraged beyond endurance. And when he arrived there, he forthwith secured an audience with the Emperor; but just as he was about to enter his apartment, he stopped short as his feet were on the threshold, and suddenly stepped backward. Whereupon the eunuch escorting him, and others who were present, importuned him to go ahead. But he answered not a word; and like a man who has had a stroke staggered back to his lodging. And when some followed to ask why he acted thus, they say he distinctly declared he saw the King of the Devils sitting on the throne in the palace, and he did not care to meet or ask any favor of him.

Indeed, how was this man likely to be anything but an evil spirit, who never knew honest satiety of drink or food or sleep, but only tasting at random from the meals that were set before him, roamed the palace at unseemly hours of the night, and was possessed by the quenchless lust of a demon?

Furthermore some of Theodora's lovers, while she was on the stage, say that at night a demon would sometimes descend upon them and drive them from the room, so that it might spend the night with her. And there was a certain dancer named Macedonia, who belonged to the Blue party in Antioch, who came to possess much influence. For she used to write letters to Justinian while Justin was still Emperor, and so made away with whatever notable men in the East she had a grudge against, and had their property confiscated.

This Macedonia, they say, greeted Theodora at the time of her arrival from Egypt and Libya; and when she saw her badly worried and cast down at the ill treatment she had received from Hecebolus and at the loss of her money during this adventure, she tried to encourage Theodora by reminding her of the laws of chance, by which she was likely again to be the leader of a chorus of coins. Then, they say, Theodora used to relate how on that very night a dream came to her, bidding her take no thought of money, for when she should come to Constantinople, she should share the couch of the King of the Devils, and that she should contrive to become his wedded wife and thereafter be the mistress of all the money in the world. And that this is what happened is the opinion of most people.

Previous Index Next

13 - Perceptive Affability and Piety of a Tyrant

. · 7 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

From: “The Secret History” – by Pocopius of Caesarea

13 - Perceptive Affability and Piety of a Tyrant

Justinian, while otherwise of such character as I have shown, did make himself easy of access and affable to his visitors; nobody of all those who sought audience with him was ever denied: even those who confronted him improperly or noisily never made him angry. On the other hand, he never blushed at the murders he committed. Thus he never revealed a sign of wrath or irritation at any offender, but with a gentle countenance and unruffled brow gave the order to destroy myriads of innocent men, to sack cities, to confiscate any amount of properties.

One would think from this manner that the man had the mind of a lamb. If, however, anyone tried to propitiate him and in suppliance beg him to forgive his victims, he would grin like a wild beast, and woe betide those who saw his teeth thus bared!

The priests he permitted fearlessly to outrage their neighbors, and even took sympathetic pleasure in their robberies, fancying he was thus sharing their divine piety when he judged such cases, he thought he was doing the holy thing when he gave the decision to the priest and let him go free with his ill-gotten booty: justice, in his mind, meant the priests' getting the better of their opponents. When he himself thus illegally got possession of estates of people alive or dead, he would straightway make them over to one of the churches, gilding his violence with the color of piety-and so that his victims could not possibly get their property back. Furthermore he committed an inconceivable number of murders for the same cause: for in his zeal to gather all men into one Christian doctrine, he recklessly killed all who dissented, and this too he did in the name of piety. For he did not call it homicide, when those who perished happened to be of a belief that was different from his own.

So quenchless was his thirst for human blood; and with his wife, intent on this end, he neglected no possible excuse for slaughter. For these two were almost twins in their desires, though they pretended to differ: they were both scoundrels, however they affected to oppose each other, and thus destroyed their subjects. The man was lighter in character than a cloud of dust, and could be led to do anything any man wished him to do, so long as the matter did not require philanthropy or generosity. Flattery he swallowed whole, and his courtiers had no difficulty in persuading him that he was destined to rise as high as the sun and walk upon the clouds.
Once, indeed, Tribonian, who was sitting beside him, said his greatest fear was that Justinian some day by reason of his piety would be carried off to heaven and vanish in a chariot of fire. Such praise, if not irony, as this he treasured fondly in his mind.

Yet if he ever remarked on any man's virtue, he would soon revile him as a villain; and whenever he abused any of his subjects, he would next as inconsistently commend him, with no reason for the change. For what he thought was always the opposite of what he said and wished to seem to think.

How he was affected by friendship or enmity I have indicated by the evidence of his actions. For as a foe he was relentless and unswerving, and to his friends he was inconstant. Thus he ruined recklessly most of those who were loyal to him, but never became a friend to any whom he hated. Even those who seemed to be his nearest and dearest associates he betrayed, and after no long time, to please his wife or anybody else, though he was well aware that it was only because of their devotion to him that they perished. For he was openly faithless in everything, except indeed to inhumanity and avarice. From these ideals no man could divert him. Whatever his wife could not otherwise induce him to do, by suggesting the great profits to be hoped for in the matter she intended, she led him

willingly to undertake. For if there were an ever infamous, he had no scruple against making a law and then repudiating it. Nor were his decisions made according to the laws himself had written: but whichever way was to his greater advantage, and promised the more elaborate bribe. Stealing, little by little, the property of his subjects, he saw no reason for feeling any shame; when, indeed, he did not somehow grab it all at once, either by bringing some unexpected accusation or by presenting a forged will.

There remained, while he ruled the Romans, no sure faith in God, no hope in religion, no defense in law, no security in business, no trust in a contract. When his officials were given any affair to handle for him, if they killed many of their victims and robbed the rest, they were looked upon by the Emperor with high favor, and given honorable mention for carrying out so perfectly his instructions. But if they showed any mercy and then returned to him, he frowned and was thenceforth their enemy.

Despising their qualms as old-fashioned, he called them no more to his service. Consequently many were eager to show him how wicked they were, even when they were really nothing of the sort. He made frequent promises, guaranteed with a sworn oath or by a written confirmation; and then purposely forgot them directly, thinking this summary negligence added to his importance. And Justinian acted thus not only to his subjects, but to many of the enemy, as I have already said.

He was untiring; and hardly slept at all, generally speaking; he had no appetite for food or drink, but picking up a morsel with the tips of his fingers, tasted it and left the table, as if eating were a duty imposed upon him by nature and of no more interest than a courier takes in delivering a letter. Indeed, he would often go without food for two days and nights, especially when the time before the festival called Easter enjoins such fasting. Then, as I have said, he often went without food for two days, living only on a little water and a few wild herbs, sleeping perhaps a single hour, and then spending the rest of the time walking up and down.

If, mark you, he had spent these periods in good works, matters might have been considerably alleviated. Instead, he devoted the full strength of his nature to the ruin of the Romans, and succeeded in razing the state to its foundation. For his constant wakefulness, his privations and his labors were undergone for no other reason than to contrive each day ever more exaggerated calamities for his people. For he was, as I said, unusually keen at inventing and quick at accomplishing unholy acts, so that even the good in him transpired to be answerable for the downfall of his subjects.

Previous Index Next

14 - Justice for Sale

. · 7 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

From: “The Secret History” – by Pocopius of Caesarea

14 - Justice for Sale

Everything was done the wrong way, and of the old customs none remained; a few instances will illustrate, and the rest must be silence, that this book may have an end. In the first place, Justinian, having no natural aptitude toward the imperial dignity, neither assumed the royal manner nor thought it necessary to his prestige. In his accent, in his dress, and in his ideas he was a barbarian. When he wished to issue a decree, he did not give it out through the Quaestor's office, as is usual, but most frequently preferred to announce it himself, in spite of his barbarous accent; or sometimes he had a whole group of his intimates publish it together, so that those who were wronged by the edict did not know which one to complain against.

The secretaries who had performed this duty for centuries were no longer trusted with writing the Emperor's secret dispatches: he wrote them himself and practically everything else, too; so that in the few cases where he neglected to give instructions to city magistrates, they did not know where to go for advice concerning their duties. For he let no one in the Roman Empire decide anything independently, but taking everything upon himself with senseless arrogance, gave the verdict in cases before they came to trial, accepting the story of one of the litigants without listening to the other, and then pronounced the argument concluded; swayed not by any law or justice, but openly yielding to base greed. In accepting bribes the Emperor felt no shame, since hunger for wealth had devoured his decency.

Often the decrees of the Senate and those of the Emperor nominally conflicted. The Senate, however, sat only for pictorial effect, with no power to vote or do anything. It was assembled as a matter of form, to comply with the ancient law, and none of its members was permitted to utter a single word. The Emperor and his Consort took upon themselves the decisions of all matters in dispute, and their will of course prevailed. And if anybody thought his victory in such a case was insecure because it was illegal, he had only to give the Emperor more money, and a new law would immediately be passed revoking the former one. And if anybody else preferred the law that had been repealed, the ruler was quite willing to reestablish it in the same manner.

Under this reign of violence nothing was stable, but the balance of justice revolved in a circle, inclining to whichever side was able to weight it with the heavier amount of gold. Publicly in the Forum, and under the management of palace officials, the selling of court decisions and legislative actions was carried on.

The officers called Referendars were no longer satisfied to perform their duties of presenting to the Emperor the request of petitioners, and referring to the magistrates what he had decided in the petitioner's case; but gathering worthless testimony from all quarters, with false reports and misleading statements, deceived Justinian, who was naturally inclined to listen to that sort of thing; and then they would go back to the litigants, without telling them what had been said during their interview with the Emperor, to extort as much money as they desired. And no one dared oppose them.

The soldiers of the Pretorian guard, attending the judges of the imperial court in the palace, also used their power to influence decisions. Everybody, one might say, stepped from his rank and found he was now at liberty to walk roads where before there had been no path; all bars were down, even the names of former restrictions were lost. The government was like a Queen surrounded by romping children. But I must pass over further illustrations, as I said at the beginning of this chapter.

I must, however, mention the man who first taught the Emperor to sell his decisions. This was Leo, a native of Cilicia, and devilish eager to enrich himself. This Leo was the prince of flatterers, and apt at insinuating himself into the good will of the ignorant. Gaining the confidence of the Emperor, he turned the tyrant's folly toward the ruin of the people. This man was the first to show Justinian how to exchange justice for money.

As soon as the latter thus learned how to be a thief, he never stopped; but advancing on this road, the evil grew so great that if anyone wished to win an unjust case against an honest man, he went first to Leo, and agreeing that a share of the disputed property would be given to be divided between this man and the monarch, left the palace with his wrongful case already won. And Leo soon built up a great fortune in this way, became the lord of much land, and was most responsible for bringing the Roman state to its knees.

There was no security in contracts, no law, no oath, no written pledge, no penalty, no nothing: unless money had first been given to Leo and the Emperor. And even buying Leo's support gave no certainty, for Justinian was quite willing to take money from both sides: he felt no guilt at robbing either party, and then, when both trusted him, he would betray one and keep his promise to the other, at random. He saw nothing disgraceful in such double dealing, if only it brought him gain. That is the sort of person Justinian was.

Previous Index Next

15 - How All Roman Citizens Became Slaves

. · 7 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

From: “The Secret History” – by Pocopius of Caesarea

15 - How All Roman Citizens Became Slaves

Theodora too unceasingly hardened her heart in the practice of inhumanity. What she did, was never to please or obey anyone else; what she willed, she performed of her own accord and with all her might: and no one dared to intercede for any who fell in her way. For neither length of time, fulness of punishment, artifice of prayer, nor threat of death, whose vengeance sent by Heaven is feared by all mankind, could persuade her to abate her wrath. Indeed, no one ever saw Theodora reconciled to any one who had offended her, either while he lived or after he had departed this earth. Instead, the son of the dead would inherit the enmity of the Empress, together with the rest of his father's estate: and he in turn bequeathed it to the third generation. For her spirit was over ready to be kindled to the destruction of men, while cure for her fever there was none.

To her body she gave greater care than was necessary, if less than she thought desirable. For early she entered the bath and late she left it; and having bathed, went to breakfast. After breakfast she rested. At dinner and supper she partook of every kind of food and drink; and many hours she devoted to sleep, by day till nightfall, by night till the rising sun. Though she wasted her hours thus intemperately, what time of the day remained she deemed ample for managing the Roman Empire.

And if the Emperor intrusted any business to anyone without consulting her, the result of the affair for that officer would be his early and violent removal from favor and a most shameful death.

It was easy for Justinian to look after everything, not only because of his calmness of temper, but because he hardly ever slept, as I have said, and because he was not chary with his audiences. For great opportunity was given to people, however obscure and unknown, not only to be admitted to the tyrant's presence, but to converse with him, and in private.

But to the Queen's presence even the highest officials could not enter without great delay and trouble; like slaves they had to wait all day in a small and stuffy antechamber, for to absent himself was a risk no official dared to take. So they stood there on their tiptoes, each straining to keep his face above his neighbor's, so that eunuchs, as they came out from the audience room, would see them. Some would be called, perhaps, after several days; and when they did enter to her presence in great fear, they were quickly dismissed as soon as they had made obeisance and kissed her feet. For to speak or make any request, unless she commanded, was not permitted.

Not civility, but servility was now the rule, and Theodora was the slave driver. So far had Roman society been corrupted, between the false geniality of the tyrant and the harsh implacability of his consort. For his smile was not to be trusted, and against her frown nothing could be done. There was this superficial difference between them in attitude and manner; but in avarice, bloodthirstiness, and dissimulation they utterly agreed. They were both liars of the first water.

And if anyone who had fallen out of favor with Theodora was accused of some minor and insignificant error, she immediately fabricated further unwarranted charges against the man, and built the matter up into a really serious accusation. Any number of indictments were brought, and a court appointed to plunder the victim, with judges selected by her, to compete with themselves to see which one could please her most in fitting his decision to the Empress's inhumanity. And so the property of the victim would be straightway confiscated, and after he was cruelly

whipped, even if he perhaps belonged to an ancient and noble family, she would callously have him sentenced to exile or to death.

But if any of her favorites happened to be caught in the act of murder or any other serious crime, she ridiculed and belittled the efforts of their accusers, and compelled them, however unwillingly, to quash the charge. Indeed, whenever she felt the inclination, she turned the most serious matters of state into a jest, as if she were again on the stage of the theater.

Once an elderly patrician, who had been for a long time in high office (whose name I well know, but shall carefully refrain from mentioning, so as not to bring eternal ridicule upon him), being unable to collect from one of her attendants a considerable sum of money owed him, went to her with the intention of asking his due and imploring her just aid. But Theodora was warned, and told her eunuchs, as soon as the patrician should be admitted to her presence, to surround him in a body and listen to her words; telling them what to say after she had spoken. And when the patrician was admitted to her private quarters, he kissed her feet in the customary manner and, weeping, addressed her:

"Highness, it is hard for a patrician to ask for money. For what in other men brings sympathy and pity, in one of my rank is considered disgraceful. Any other man suffering hardships from poverty may plead this before his creditors, and receive immediate relief from his difficulty; but a patrician, not knowing whence he can find the wherewithal to pay his creditors, would be ashamed in the first place to admit it. And if he did say this, he could never persuade them that one of such rank could know penury. And even if he did persuade them, he would be making himself suffer the most shameful and intolerable disgrace imaginable.

"Yet, Highness, such is my plight. I have creditors to whom I owe money, while others owe money to me. And those whom I owe, who are pressing me for payment, I cannot, for the sake of my reputation, attempt to cheat of their due; while my debtors, for they are not patricians, deny me with unmanly excuses. I charge you, therefore; I beseech and beg of you, to aid me in what is right, and release me from my present trouble."

So he said, and the Queen answered musically:

"Patrician Mr. Such-and-such-" whereupon the chorus of eunuchs sang:

"Your hernia seems to bother you much!"

And when the man entreated her again, making a second speech similar to his first one, she answered as before, and the chorus sang the same refrain: till, giving it up, the poor wretch bowed and went home.

Most of the year the Empress resided in the suburbs on the seashore, especially in the place called Heraeum, and the numerous crowd of her attendants was subjected to great inconvenience. For it was hard to get necessary supplies, and they were exposed to the perils of the sea: especially to the frequent sudden storms and the attack of sharks. Nevertheless they counted the most bitter misfortunes as nothing, so long as they could share the licenses of her court.

Previous Index Next

16 - What Happened to Those Who Fell Out of Favor with Theodora

. · 7 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

From: “The Secret History” – by Pocopius of Caesarea

16 - What Happened to Those Who Fell Out of Favor with Theodora

How Theodora treated those who offended her will now be shown, though again I can give only a few instances, or obviously there would be no end to the demonstration.

When Amasalontha decided to save her life by surrendering her queendom over the Goths and retiring to Constantinople (as I have related elsewhere), Theodora, reflecting that the lady was well-born and a Queen, more than easy to look at and a marvel at planning intrigues, became suspicious of her charms and audacity: and fearing her husband's fickleness, she became not a little jealous, and determined to ensnare the lady to her doom.

So she forthwith persuaded Justinian to send Peter, alone, to Italy as ambassador to Theodatus. When he set out the Emperor gave him the instructions I described in the chapter on that event: where, however, I could not tell the whole truth of the matter, for fear of the Empress. But she gave him this single secret command: to remove the lady from this world with all dispatch; bribing the fellow with the hope of much money if he performed his order. And when he arrived in Italy (for man is not by nature too hesitant at committing murder, if he has been bribed by the promise of high office or considerable money), by what argument I know not, he persuaded Theodatus to make away with Amasalontha. Consequently raised to the rank of Master of Offices, he achieved immense power and universal hatred. And so ends the story of Amasalontha.

Then ,there was a secretary to Justinian named Priscus: an utter villain and Paphlagonian, of a character likely to please his master, to whom he was more than devoted, and from whom he expected similar consideration. And accordingly he very soon became the owner of great and ill-gotten wealth. Finding him insolent and always trying to oppose her, Theodora denounced him to the Emperor. At first she was unsuccessful; but before long she took the matter in her own hands: embarked the man on a ship, sailing to a determined port, had his head shaved, and compelled him against his will to become a priest. And Justinian, pretending he knew nothing of the matter, never asked where on earth Priscus was, nor ever after mentioned him: remaining silent as if he had utterly forgotten him. However, he did not forget to seize what property Priscus had been forced to abandon.

Again, Theodora was overtaken with suspicion of one of her servants named Areobindus, a barbarian by birth, but a handsome young man, whom she had made her steward. Instead of accusing him directly, she decided to have him cruelly whipped in her presence (though they say she was madly in love with the fellow) without explaining her reason for the punishment. What became of the man after that we do not know, nor has any one ever seen him since. For if the Queen wanted to keep any of her actions concealed, it remained secret and unmentioned; and neither was any who knew of the matter allowed to tell it to his closest friend, nor could any who tried to learn what had happened ever find out, no matter how much of a busybody he was.

No other tyrant since mankind began ever inspired such fear, since not a word could be spoken against her without her hearing of it: her multitude of spies brought her the news of whatever was said and done in public or in private. And when she decided the time had come to take vengeance on any offender, she did as follows. Summoning the man, if he happened to be notable, she would privately hand him over to one of her confidential attendants, and order that he be escorted to the farthest boundary of the Roman realm. And her agent, in the dead of night, covering the victim's face with a hood and binding him, would put him on board a ship and accompany him to the place selected by Theodora. There he would secretly leave the unfortunate in charge of another qualified for this

work: charging him to keep the prisoner under guard and tell no one of the matter until the Empress should take pity on the wretch or, as time went on, he should languish under his bondage and succumb to death.

Then there was Basanius, one of the Green faction, a prominent young man, who incurred her anger by making some uncomplimentary remark. Basanius, warned of her displeasure, fled to the Church of Michael the Archangel. She immediately sent the Prefect after him, charging Basanius however not with slander, but pederasty. And the Prefect, dragging the man from the church, had him flogged intolerably while all the populace, when they saw a Roman citizen of good standing so shamefully mistreated, straightway sympathized with him, and cried so loud to let him go that Heaven must have heard their reproaches. Whereupon the Empress punished him further, and had him castrated so that he bled to death, and his estate was confiscated; though his case had never been tried. Thus, when this female was enraged, no church offered sanctuary, no law gave protection, no intercession of the people brought mercy to her victim; nor could anything else in the world stop her.

Thus she took a hatred of a certain Diogenes, because he belonged to the Greens: a man urbane and beloved by all, including the Emperor himself. None the less she wrathfully denounced him as homosexual. Bribing two of his servants, she presented them as accusers and witnesses against their master. However, as he was tried publicly and not in secret, as was her usual practise in such cases, the judges chosen were many and of distinguished character, because of Diogenes's high rank; and after cross-examination of the evidence of the servants, they decided it was insufficient to prove the case, especially as the latter were only children.

So the Empress locked up Theodorus, one of Diogenes's friends, in one of her private dungeons; and there first with flattery, then with flogging, tried to overwhelm him. When he still resisted, she ordered a cord of oxhide to be wound around his head and then turned and tightened. But though they twisted the cord till his eyes started from their sockets and Theodora thought he would lose them completely, still he refused to confess what he had not done. Accordingly the judges, for lack of proof, acquitted him, while all the city took holiday to celebrate his release. And that was that.

Previous Index Next

17 - How She Saved Five Hundred Harlots from a Life of Sin

. · 7 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

From: “The Secret History” – by Pocopius of Caesarea

17 - How She Saved Five Hundred Harlots from a Life of Sin

I have told earlier in this narrative what she did to Belisarius, Photius and Buzes.

There were two members of the Blue faction, Cilicians by birth, who with a mob of others offered violence to Callinicus, Governor of the second Cilicia; and when his groom, who was standing near his master, tried to protect him, they slew the fellow before the eyes of the Governor and all the people. The Governor, convicting the two of this and many previous murders, sentenced them to death. Theodora heard of this, and to show her preference f or the. Blues,. crucified Callinicus, without troubling to remove him from his office, on the spot where the murderers had been buried.

The Emperor affected to lament and mourn the death of his Governor, and sat around grumbling and making threats against those responsible for the deed. But he did nothing, except to seize the estate of the dead man.

Theodora also devoted considerable attention to the punishment of women caught in carnal sin. She picked up more than five hundred harlots in the Forum, who earned a miserable living by selling themselves there for three obols, and sent them to the opposite mainland, where they were locked up in the monastery called Repentance to force them to reform their way of life. Some of them, however, threw themselves from the parapets at night and thus freed themselves from an undesired salvation.

There were in Constantinople two girls: sisters, of a very illustrious family -not only had their father and grandfather been Consuls, but even before that their ancestors had been Senators. These girls had both married early, but became widows when their husbands died; and immediately Theodora, accusing them of living too merrily, chose new husbands for them, two common and disgusting fellows, and commanded the marriage to take place. Fearing this repulsive fate, the sisters fled to the Church of St. Sophia, and running to the holy water, clung tightly to the font. Yet such privations and ill treatment did the Empress inflict upon them there, that to escape from their sufferings they finally agreed to accept the proposed nuptials. For no place was sacred or inviolable to Theodora. Thus involuntarily these ladies were mated to beggarly and negligible men, far beneath their rank, although they had many well-born suitors. Their mother, who was also a widow, attended the ceremony without daring to protest or even weep at their misfortune.

Later Theodora saw her mistake and tried to console them, to the public detriment, for she made their new husbands Dukes. Even this brought no comfort to the young women, for endless and intolerable woes were inflicted on practically all their subjects by these men; as I have told elsewhere. Theodora, however, cared nothing for the interest of office or government, or anything else, if only she accomplished her will.

She had accidentally become pregnant by one of her lovers, when she was still on the stage; and perceiving her ill luck too late tried all the usual measures to cause a miscarriage, but despite every artifice was unable to prevail against nature at this advanced stage of development. Finding that nothing else could be done, she abandoned the attempt and was compelled to give birth to the child. The father of the baby, seeing that Theodora was at her wit's end and vexed because motherhood interfered with her usual recreations, and suspecting with good reason that she would do away with the child, took the infant from her, naming him John, and sailed with the baby to Arabia. Later, when he was on the verge of death and John was a lad of fourteen, the father told him the whole story about

his mother.

So the boy, after he had performed the last rites for his departed father, shortly after came to Constantinople and announced his presence to the Empress's chamberlains. And they, not conceiving the possibility of her acting so inhumanly, reported to the mother that her son John had come. Fearing the story would get to the ears of her husband, Theodora bade her son be brought face to face with her. As soon as he entered, she handed him over to one of her servants who was ordinarily entrusted with such commissions. And in what manner the poor lad was removed from the world, I cannot say, for no one has ever seen him since, not even after the Queen died. The ladies of the court at this time were nearly all of abandoned morals. They ran no risk in being faithless to their husbands, as the sin brought no penalty: even if caught in the act, they were unpunished, for all they had to do was to go to the Empress, claim the charge was not proven, and start a countersuit against their husbands. The latter, defeated without a trial, had to pay a fine of twice the dower, and were usually whipped and sent to prison; and the next time they saw their adulterous wives again, the ladies would be daintily entertaining their lovers more openly than ever. Indeed, many of the latter gained promotion and pay for their amorous services. After one such experience, most men who suffered these outrages from their wives preferred thereafter to be complaisant instead of being whipped, and gave them every liberty rather than seem to be spying on their affairs.

Theodora's idea was to control everything in the state to suit herself. Civil and ecclesiastical offices were all in her hand, and there was only one thing she was always careful to inquire about and guard as the standard of her appointments: that no honest gentleman should be given high rank, for fear he would have scruples against obeying her commands.

She arranged all marriages as if that were her divine right, and voluntary betrothals before a ceremony were unknown. A wife would suddenly be found for a man, chosen not because she pleased him, which is customary even among the barbarians, but because Theodora willed it. And the same was true of brides, who were forced to take men they did not desire. Frequently she even made the bride jump out of her marriage bed, and for no reason at all sent the bridegroom away before he had reached the chorus of his nuptial song; and her only angry words would be that the girl displeased her. Among the many to whom she did this were Leontius, the Referendar, and Saturninus, the son of Hermogenes the Master of Offices.

Now this Saturninus was betrothed to a maiden cousin, freeborn and a good girl, whom her father Cyril had promised him in marriage just after the death of Hermogenes. When their bridal chamber was in readiness, Theodora arrested the groom, who was conducted to another nuptial couch, where, weeping and groaning terribly, he was compelled to wed Chrysomallo's daughter. Chrysomallo herself had formerly been a dancer and a hetaera; at this time she lived in the palace, with another woman of the same name and one called Indaro, having given up Cupid and the stage to be of service to the Queen.

Saturninus, lying down finally to pleasant dreams with his new bride, discovered she was already unmaidened; and later told one of his friends that his new-found mate came to him not imperforate. When this comment got to Theodora, she ordered her servants, charging him with impious disregard of the solemnity of his matrimonial oath, to hoist him up like a schoolboy who had been saucy to his teacher: and after whipping him on his backsides, told him not to be such a fool thereafter.

What she did to John the Cappadocian I have told elsewhere; and need add only that her treatment of him was due to her anger, not at his transgressions against the state (and a proof of this is that those who later did even more terrible things to their subjects met no such similar fate from her), but because he had a not only dared oppose her in other things, but had denounced her before the Emperor: with the result that she was all but estranged from her husband. I am explaining this now, for it is in this book, as I said in the foreword, that I necessarily tell the real truths and motives of events.

When she confined him in Egypt, after he had suffered such humiliations as I have previously described, she was not even then satisfied with the man's punishment, but never ceased hunting for false witnesses against him. Four years later, she was able to find two members of the Green party who had taken part in the insurrection at Cyzicus, and who were said to have shared in the assault upon the bishop. These two she overwhelmed with flattery and threats, and one of them, inspired by her promises, accused John of the murder; while the other utterly refused to be an accomplice in this libel, even when he was so injured by the torture that he seemed about to die on the spot. Consequently for all her efforts she was unable to cause john's death on this pretext. But the two young men had their right hands cut off: one, because he was unwilling to bear false witness; the other, that her conspiracy might not be utterly obvious. Thus she was able to do things in full public sight, and still nobody knew exactly what she had done.

Previous Index Next

18 - How Justinian Killed a Trillion People

. · 7 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

From: “The Secret History” – by Pocopius of Caesarea

18 - How Justinian Killed a Trillion People

That Justinian was not a man, but a demon, as I have said, in human form, one might prove by considering the enormity of the evils he brought upon mankind. For in the monstrousness of his actions the power of a fiend is manifest. Certainly an accurate reckoning of all those whom he destroyed would be impossible, I think, for anyone but God to make. Sooner could one number, I fancy, the sands of the sea than the men this Emperor murdered. Examining the countries that he made desolate of inhabitants, I would say he slew a trillion people. For Libya, vast as it is, he so devastated that you would have to go a long way to find a single man, and he would be remarkable. Yet eighty thousand Vandals capable of bearing arms had dwelt there, and as for their wives and children and servants, who could guess their number? Yet still more numerous than these were the Mauretanians, who with their wives and children were all exterminated. And again, many Roman soldiers and those who followed them to Constantinople, the earth now covers; so that if one should venture to say that five million men perished in Libya alone, he would not, I imagine, be telling the half of it.

The reason for this was that after the Vandals were defeated, Justinian planned, not how he might best strengthen his hold on the country, nor how by safeguarding the interests of those who were loyal to him he might have the goodwill of his subjects: but instead he foolishly recalled Belisarius at once, on the charge that the latter intended to make himself King (an idea of which Belisarius was utterly incapable), and so that he might manage affairs there himself and be able to plunder the whole of Libya. Sending commissioners to value the province, he imposed grievous taxes where before there had been none. Whatever lands were most valuable, he seized, and prohibited the Arians from observing their religious ceremonies. Negligent toward sending necessary supplies to the soldiers, he was over-strict with them in other ways; wherefore mutinies arose resulting in the deaths of many. For he was never able to abide by established customs, but naturally threw everything into confusion and disturbance.

Italy, which is not less than thrice as large as Libya, was everywhere desolated of men, even worse than the other country; and from this the count of those who perished there may be imagined. The reason for what happened in Italy I have already made plain. All of his crimes in Libya were repeated here; sending his auditors to Italy, he soon upset and ruined everything.

The rule of the Goths, before this war, had extended from the land of the Gauls to the boundaries of Dacia, where the city of Sirmium is. The Germans held Cisalpine Gaul and most of the land of the Venetians, when the Roman army arrived in Italy. Sirmium and the neighboring country was in the hands of the Gepidae. All of these he utterly depopulated. For those who did not die in battle perished of disease and famine, which as usual followed in the train of war. Illyria and all of Thrace, that is, from the Ionian Gulf to the suburbs of Constantinople, including Greece and the Chersonese, were overrun by the Huns, Slavs and Antes, almost every year, from the time when Justinian took over the Roman Empire; and intolerable things they did to the inhabitants. For in each of these incursions, I should say, more than two hundred thousand Romans were slain or enslaved, so that all this country became a desert like that of Scythia.

Such were the results of the wars in Libya and in Europe. Meanwhile the Saracens were continuously making inroads on the Romans of the East, from the land of Egypt to the boundaries of Persia; and so completely did their work, that in all this country few were left, and it will never be possible, I fear, to find out how many thus perished. Also the Persians under Chosroes three times invaded the rest of this Roman territory, sacked the cities, and either

killing or carrying away the men they captured in the cities and country, emptied the land of inhabitants every time they invaded it. From the time when they invaded Colchis, ruin has befallen themselves and the Lazi and the Romans.

For neither the Persians nor the Saracens, the Huns or the Slavs or the rest of the barbarians, were able to withdraw from Roman territory undamaged. In their inroads, and still more in their sieges of cities and in battles, where they prevailed over opposing forces, they shared in disastrous losses quite as much. Not only the Romans, but nearly all the barbarians thus felt Justinian's bloodthirstiness. For while Chosroes himself was bad enough, as I have duly shown elsewhere, Justinian was the one who each time gave him an occasion for the war. For he took no heed to fit his policies to an appropriate time, but did everything at the wrong moment: in time of peace or truce he ever craftily contrived to find pretext for war with his neighbors; while in time of war, he unreasonably lost interest, and hesitated too long in preparing for the campaign, grudging the necessary expenses; and instead of putting his mind on the war, gave his attention to stargazing and research as to the nature of God. Yet he would not abandon hostilities, since he was so bloodthirsty and tyrannical, even when thus unable to conquer the enemy because of his negligence in meeting the situation.

So while he was Emperor, the whole earth ran red with the blood of nearly all the Romans and the barbarians. Such were the results of the wars throughout the whole Empire . during this time. But the civil strife in Constantinople and in every other city, if the dead were reckoned, would total no smaller number of slain than those who perished in the wars, I believe. Since justice and impartial punishment were seldom directed against offenders, and each of the two factions tried to win the favor of the Emperor over the other, neither party kept the peace. Each, according to his smile or his frown, was now terrified, now encouraged. Sometimes they attacked each other in full strength, sometimes in smaller groups, or even lay in ambush against the first single man of the opposite party who came along. For thirty-two years, without ever ceasing, they performed outrages against each other, many of them being punished with death by the municipal Prefect.

However, punishment for these offenses was mostly directed against the Greens.
Furthermore the persecution of the Samaritans and the so-called heretics filled the Roman realm with blood. Let this present recapitulation suffice to recall what I have described more fully a little while since. Such were the things done to all mankind by the demon in flesh for which Justinian, as Emperor, was responsible. But what evils he wrought against men by some hidden power and diabolic force I shall now relate.

During his rule over the Romans, many disasters of various kinds occurred: which some said were due to the presence and artifices of the Devil, and others considered were effected by the Divinity, Who, disgusted with the Roman Empire, had turned away from it and given the country up to the Old One. The Scirtus River flooded Edessa, creating countless sufferings among the inhabitants, as I have elsewhere written. The Nile, rising as usual, but not subsiding in the customary season, brought terrible calamities to the people there, as I have also previously recounted. The Cydnus inundated Tarsus, covering almost the whole city for many days, and did not subside until it had done irreparable damage.

Earthquakes destroyed Antioch, the leading city of the East; Seleucia, which is situated nearby; and Anazarbus, most renowned city in Cilicia. Who could number those that perished in these metropoles? Yet one must add also those who lived in Ibora; in Amasea, the chief city of Pontus; in Polybotus in Phrygia, called Polymede by the Pisidians; in Lychnidus in Epirus; and in Corinth: all thickly inhabited cities from of old. All of these were destroyed by earthquakes during this time, with a loss of almost all their inhabitants. And then came the plague, which I have previously mentioned, killing half at least of those who had survived the earthquakes. To so many men came their doom, when Justinian first came to direct the Roman state and later possessed the throne of autocracy.

19 - How He Seized All the Wealth of the Romans and Threw It Away

. · 7 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

From: “The Secret History” – by Pocopius of Caesarea

19 - How He Seized All the Wealth of the Romans and Threw It Away

How he seized all wealth I will next discuss: recalling first a vision which, at the beginning of Justinian's rule, was revealed to one of illustrious rank in a dream.

In this dream, he said, he seemed to be standing on the shore of the sea somewhere in Constantinople, across the water from Chalcedon, and saw Justinian there in midchannel. And first Justinian drank up all the water of the sea, so that he presently appeared to be standing on the mainland, there bring no longer any waves to break against it; then other water, heavy with filth and rubbish, roaring out of the subterranean sewers, proceeded to cover the land. And this, too, he drank, a second time drying up the bed of the channel. This is what the vision in the dream disclosed.

Now Justinian, when his uncle Justin came to the throne, found the state well provided with public funds. For Anastasius, who had been the most provident and economical of all monarchs, fearing (which indeed happened) that the inheritor of his Empire should find himself in need of money, would perhaps plunder his subjects, filled all the treasuries to their brim with gold before he completed his span of life. All of this Justinian immediately exhausted, between his senseless building program on the coast and his lavish presents to the barbarians; though one might have thought that it would take the most extravagant of Emperors a hundred years to disburse such wealth. For the treasurers and those in charge of the other imperial properties had been able, during Anastasius's rule of more than twenty-seven years over the Romans, easily to accumulate 3,200 gold centenaries; and of all these nothing at all was left, for it had been squandered by this man while Justin still lived; as I have already related.

What he illegally confiscated and wasted during his lifetime, no tale, no reckoning, no count could ever make manifest. For like an ever flowing river swallowing more each day he pillaged his subjects, to disgorge it straightway on the barbarians.

Having thus carried away the public wealth, he turned his eye upon his private subjects. Most of them he immediately robbed of their estates, snatching them arbitrarily by force, bringing false charges against whoever in Constantinople and each other city were reputed to be rich.
Some he accused of polytheism, others of heresy against the orthodox Christian faith; some of pederasty, others of love affairs with nuns, or other unlawful intercourse; some of starting sedition, or of favoring the Greens, or treason against himself, or anything else; or he made himself the arbitrary heir of the dead and even of the living, when he could. Such were the subtleties of his actions. And how he profited from the insurrection against himself which is called Nika, making himself heir to the Senators, I have already shown; and how, some time before the sedition broke out, he privately robbed each man of his estate.

To all the barbarians, on every occasion, he gave great sums: to those of the East and those of the West ' to the North and to the South, as far as Britain, and over all the inhabited earth; so that nations whose very names we had never heard of, we now learned to know, seeing their ambassadors for the first time. For when they learned of this man's folly, they came to him and Constantinople in floods from the whole world. And he with no hesitation, but overjoyed at this, and thinking it good luck to drain the Romans of their prosperity and fling it to barbarian men or to the waves of the sea, daily sent each one home with his arms full of presents.

Thus all the barbarians became masters of all the wealth of the Romans, either being presented with it by the Emperor, or by ravaging the Roman Empire, selling their prisoners for ransom, and bartering for truces. And the prophecy of the dream I mentioned above, came to pass in this visible reality.

Previous Index Next

20 - Debasing of the Quaestorship

. · 7 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

From: “The Secret History” – by Pocopius of Caesarea

20 - Debasing of the Quaestorship

He also had contrived other ways of plundering his subjects (which I will now describe as well as I can) by which he robbed them, not all at once, but little by little of their entire fortunes. First he appointed a new municipal magistrate, with the power to license shopkeepers to sell their wares at whatever prices they desired: for which privilege they paid an annual tax. Accordingly, people buying their provisions in these shops had to pay three times what the stuff was worth, and complainants had no redress, though great harm was thus done; for the magistrates saw to it that the imperial tax was fattened accordingly, which was to their advantage. Thus the government officials shared in this disgraceful business, while the shopkeepers, empowered to act illegally, cheated unbearably those who had to buy from them, not only by raising their prices many times over, as I have said, but by defrauding customers in other unheard-of ways.

Again he licensed many monopolies, as they -are called; selling the freedom of his subjects to those who were willing to undertake this reprehensible traffic, after he had exacted his price for the privilege. To those who made this arrangement with him, he gave the power to manage the business however they pleased; and he sold this privilege openly, even to all the other magistrates. And since the Emperor always got his little share of the plundering, these officials and their subordinates in charge of the work, did their robbing with small anxiety.

As if the formerly appointed magistrates were not enough for this purpose, he created two new ones; though the municipal Prefect had formerly been able to look after all criminal charges. His real reason for the change was, of course, so that he could have additional informers, and thus misuse the innocent with more celerity. Of the two new officials, one, nominally appointed to punish thieves, was called Praetor of the People; the other was charged with the punishment of cases of pederasty, illegal intercourse with women, blasphemy, and heresy; and his official name was Quaestor.

Now the Praetor, whenever he found anything very valuable among the stolen goods that came to his notice, was supposed to give it to the Emperor and say that no owner had appeared to claim it. In this way the Emperor continually got possession of priceless goods. And the Quaestor, when he condemned persons coming before him, confiscated as much as he pleased of their properties, and the Emperor shared with him each time in the lawlessly gained riches of other people. For the subordinates of these magistrates neither produced accusers nor offered witnesses when these cases came to trial, but during all this time the accused were put to death, and their properties seized without due trial and examination.

Later, this murdering devil ordered these officials and the municipal Prefect to deal with all criminal charges on equal terms: telling them to vie with each other to see which of them could destroy the most people in the shortest time. And one of them asked him at once, they say, "If somebody is sometime denounced before all three of us, which of us shall have jurisdiction over the case?" Whereupon he replied, "Whichever of you acts faster than the rest."

Thus shamelessly he debased the Quaestor's office, which former emperors almost without exception had held in high regard, taking care that the men they appointed to it were experienced and wise, law-abiding, and uncorruptible by bribes; since otherwise it would be a calamity to the state, if men holding this high office were ignorant or avaricious.

But the first man that this Emperor appointed to the office was Tribonian, whose actions I have fully related elsewhere. And when Tribonian departed from this world, Justinian seized a portion of his estate, though a son and many other children were left destitute when the fellow ended the final day of his life. Junilus, a Libyan, was next appointed to this office: a man who had never even heard the law, for he was not a rhetorician; he knew the Latin letters, but as far as Greek went, he had never even gone to school, and was unable to speak the language. Frequently when he tried to say a Greek word, he was laughed at by his servants. And he was so damned greedy for base gain, that he thought nothing of publicly selling the Emperor's decrees. For one gold coin he would hold out his palm to anybody without hesitation. And for not less than seven years' time the State shared the ridicule earned by this petty grafter.

When Junilus completed the measure of his life, Constantine was appointed Quaestor: a man not unacquainted with law, but exceeding young, and without actual experience in court; and the most thievish bully among men. Of this person Justinian was very fond, and became his bosom friend, since through him the Emperor saw he could steal and run the office as he wished. Consequently, Constantine had great wealth in a short time, and assumed an air of prodigious pomp, with his nose in the clouds despising all men; and even those who wanted to offer him large bribes had to entrust them to those who were in his special confidence, to offer him together with their requests; for it was never possible to meet or talk with him, except when he was running to the Emperor or had just left him, and even then he trotted by in a great hurry, lest his time be wasted by somebody who had no money to give him. This is what the Emperor did to the quaestorship.

Previous Index Next

21 - The Sky Tax, and How Border Armies Were Forbidden to Punish Invading Barbarians

. · 7 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

From: “The Secret History” – by Pocopius of Caesarea

21 - The Sky Tax, and How Border Armies Were Forbidden to Punish Invading Barbarians

The Prefect in charge of the praetors each year handed over to the Emperor more than thirty centenaries in addition to the public taxes; this tribute was called the sky tax, to show, I suppose, that it was not a regular duty or assessment, but as it were fell into his hands by chance out of the sky: it should have been called the villainy tax, for in its name the magistrates robbed their subjects worse than ever, on the ground they had to hand it over to the autocrat, while they themselves acquired a king's fortune in no time. For this Justinian left them unpunished, awaiting the time when they should have gained immense riches; as soon as this happened, he brought some charge against them for which there was no defense, and confiscated their entire property all at once, as he had done to John of Cappadocia.

Everyone appointed to office during this period of course became immensely wealthy at once, with two exceptions: Phocas, whom I have mentioned elsewhere as an utterly honest man, who remained uncorrupted by gain during his office; and Bassus, who was appointed later. Neither of these gentlemen held their office for a year, but were removed after a few months as useless and unsuited to the times. But if I went into all the details, this book would never end: suffice it to say that all the rest of the magistrates in Constantinople were equally guilty.

Also everywhere else in the Roman Empire Justinian did the same. Picking out the worst scoundrels he could find, he sold them the offices they were to corrupt, for large sums of money. Indeed, an honest man or one with any sense at all, would never think of throwing away his own money on the chance of getting it back by robbing the innocent. When Justinian had collected this money from such bargainers, he gave them complete power over their subjects, by which, pillaging the country and the inhabitants, they were to become rich. And since they had borrowed money at heavy interest to pay the Emperor for their magistracies, as soon as they arrived in the cities of their jurisdiction, they treated their subjects with every kind of evil, caring for nothing but how they might fulfill their agreements with their creditors and themselves thereafter be listed among the super-wealthy. They saw no peril and felt no shame in this conduct; rather, they anticipated that the more they wrongfully killed and plundered, the higher would be their reputation; for the name of murderer and robber would prove the energy of their service. However, as soon as he heard these officials had become adequately wealthy, Justinian snared them with a fitting pretext, and straightway seized their fortunes in one swoop.

He passed a law that candidates for offices must swear they would keep themselves clean of all graft and never give or receive any bribe as officials; and all the curses that were named by the ancients he invoked on any who should violate this agreement. But the law was not over a year old before he himself, disregarding its words and maledictions, shamelessly put these offices up for sale; and not secretly, but in the public Forum. And the buyers of the offices, breaking their oaths also, plundered more than ever.

Later he contrived another unheard-of scheme. The offices which he believed to be the most powerful in Constantinople and the other large cities, he decided not to sell any longer as he had been doing, but put them in the hands of picked men on a fixed salary, who were commanded to turn over all revenues to himself. And these men, after receiving their pay, worked fearlessly and carried off everything on earth, going around tin the name of their office to rob the subjects. . The Emperor was always very careful to choose for his agents men who were truly of all people the worst scoundrels; and he had no trouble finding those who were bad enough. When, indeed he appointed

the first rascals to office, and their power brought to light their corruption, we were astonished that nature had produced such evil in human form. But when the successors to these offices later went far beyond the first occupants in villainy, men were at a loss to see how their predecessors could have been thought to be wicked, since in comparison to the new officials the former had - And the third been noble gentlemen in their actions set, and those who followed them, out-Heroded the second lot in every kind of depravity; and by their ingenuity in inventing new methods of bringing false charges, gave all their predecessors the name of being virtuous and honest. As the evil progressed, it was eventually demonstrated that the wickedness of man has no natural limit, but when it feeds on the experience of the past, and is given the opportunity to mistreat its victims, it is encouraged to such a degree that only those who are oppressed by it can measure it. And thus were the Romans treated by their magistrates.

After armies of the hostile Huns had several times enslaved and plundered inhabitants of the Roman Empire, the Thracian and Illyrian generals planned to attack them on their retreat, but gave up the idea when they were shown letters from the Emperor Justinian forbidding them to attack the barbarians on the ground that alliance with them was necessary to the Romans against the Goths, forsooth, or some other foe.

And after this, these barbarians ravaged the country as if they were the foe, and enslaved the Romans there; and, laden with booty and captives, these friends and allies of the Romans returned to their homes. Often some of the farmers of these regions, induced by longing for their children and wives who had been carried off to slavery, formed into bands and attacked the Huns, kill' capturing their horses ladening many, and with spoils; but the consequence of their success was unfortunate. For agents were sent from Constantinople to beat and torture them and seize their property, until they had given up all the horses they had taken from the barbarians.

Previous Index Next

22 - Further Corruption in High Places

. · 7 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

From: “The Secret History” – by Pocopius of Caesarea

22 - Further Corruption in High Places

Now when the Emperor and Theodora dismissed John of Cappadocia, they wished to appoint a successor to his office, and agreed to choose a still baser rogue; so they looked everywhere for such an instrument of tyranny, examining all manner of men that they might be able to ruin their subjects the faster. For the time being, they appointed Theodotus to the office: a man who was by no means good, but still not bad enough to satisfy them; and meanwhile they continued their general search till finally, almost to their surprise, they discovered a banker named Peter, a Syrian by birth, surnamed Barsyames; who, after years of sitting at the copper money-changer's table had made himself rich by thievish malpractices, being gifted at stealing obols, which he could filch under the eyes of customers by the quickness of his fingers. He was not only smart at this sleight-of-hand thievery, but if he were ever detected, would swear it was a mistake, covering up the sins of his hands with the impudence of his tongue.

Enlisting in the Pretorian guard, he behaved so outrageously that Theodora was delighted with him, and decided he could most easily serve her in the worst of her nefarious schemes. So Theodotus, who had succeeded the Cappadocian, was straightway removed from office and Peter appointed in his place; and he did everything to their taste. Cheating all the soldiers of -their due pay, without the slightest shame or fear, he also offered offices for sale to a greater extent than ever to those who did not hesitate to engage in this impious traffic for dishonored positions; and he openly licensed those who bought these offices to use as they wished the lives and substance of their subjects. For he claimed himself, and granted to whoever paid the price of a province, the right to destroy and ravage without restriction.

This sale of human lives proceeded from the first officer of the State; and by him the contract for the ruin of cities was made. Through the principal law courts and in the public Forum went the licensed bandit who was given the name of Collector-collector of the money paid for high offices which was in turn extorted from the despairing people. And of all the imperial agents, many of whom were men of repute, Peter selected for his own service those who were villains.
In this he was not unique; for those who held the same office before and after him were equally dishonest. So were the Master of Offices, the Palatine Treasurers of the public and the Emperor's private moneys, and those in charge of his personal estates; and, in short, all who held public offices in Constantinople and the other cities. For from the time when this tyrant first managed the affairs of state, in each department the ministers without any justification claimed the moneys pertaining to that department for themselves whenever he did not take them himself; and the subordinates of these officials, suffering the extremes of penury during all this time, were compelled to serve in the manner of slaves.

Most of the great stores of grain that had been kept in Constantinople had rotted; but he forced each of the cities of the East to buy what was not fit for human consumption; and he made them pay not what was the usual price for the best grain, but a still higher rate; so that the purchasers who had thrown away large sums of money, buying at such extravagant prices, had then to throw the rotten grain into the sea or down the sewers. Then the grain that was still sound and wholesome, of which there was great abundance, he decided to sell to the cities that were in danger of famine. In this way he made twice the money which the public collectors had formerly taken by the sale of this grain.

The next year, however, the harvests were not so ample, and the grain transports arrived at Constantinople with less

than the necessary supply. Peter, worried over the situation, determined to buy a large quantity of grain in Bithynia, Phrygia, and Thrace. So the inhabitants of these regions were forced to the heavy task of bringing their harvests down to the seacoast and to transport it at considerable peril to Constantinople, where they received a miserably small price. So great indeed were their losses, that they would have been glad to give their grain outright to the State and pay a fine for that privilege. This is the grievous burden which was called "co-operative buying."

But when even thus the supplies of grain in Constantinople were insufficient for its needs, many denounced this system before the Emperor. And at the same time nearly all the soldiers, because they had not been given their due pay, assembled mutinously throughout the city and created a great uproar. The Emperor turned now against Peter and decided to remove him from office, because of the above-mentioned complaints, and since he heard he had hidden a devilishly large amount of plunder of which he had robbed the State. Which was indeed the case.

But Theodora would not let her husband do this, for she was marvelously delighted with Barsyames, I suppose because of 'his wickedness and his remarkable cruelty to his subjects. For she herself was utterly savage and bursting with inhumanity, and thought those who served her should be as nearly as possible of a character with herself. They say, too, that she had been involuntarily charmed by magic to become Peter's friend; for this Barsyames was a devotee of sorcerers and demons, and was admittedly a member of the Manichaeans. Although the Empress had heard all this, she did not withdraw her favor from the man, but decided to prefer and favor him all the more on this account. For she herself from childhood had consorted with magicians and sorcerers, as her pursuits inclined her toward them and all her life she believed in the black art and had' great confidence in it.

They even say that it was not so much by flattery that she made Justinian eat from her hand as by demoniac power. For this was not a kindly, just, or good man, to prevail over such machinations, but plainly overmastered by his passion for murder and money; easily yielding to those who deceived and flattered him, and in the midst of his fondest plans he could be diverted with facility, like a bit of dust caught up by the wind. None of his kindred or his friends had any sure confidence in him, and his plans were continually subject to change. Thus, he was an easy mark to sorcery, as I have said, and with no difficulty fell into the power of Theodora. And it was for this reason that the Empress regarded Peter, practised in such arts, with great affection.

So it was all the Emperor could do to remove him from office; and at Theodora's insistence, soon afterward he made him chief of the treasurers, removing John from this position which he had given him only a few months before. This man John was a native of Palestine, exceedingly good and gentle, ignorant of the possibility of increasing his private fortune, and had never wronged a single man. All the people loved him; and therefore he could not please Justinian and his wife, who, as soon as they saw among their agents an unexpected decent gentleman, became faint with horror, and determined to get rid of him at the first possible opportunity.

So it was that Peter succeeded John as chief of the treasurers, and once more became the cause of great calamities. Embezzling most of, the moneys which had been set apart since the time of a long-past Emperor to be distributed each year to the many poor, he made himself thus unjustly rich at the expense of the people, and handed a share of it to the Emperor. Those who were thus deprived of their dole sat around in great grief. Furthermore, he did not coin the customary amount of gold, but issued a less amount, a thing that had never happened before. And this is how the Emperor dealt with the magistracies.

Previous Index Next

23 - How Landowners Were Ruined

. · 7 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

From: “The Secret History” – by Pocopius of Caesarea

23 - How Landowners Were Ruined

I will now tell how he ruined the landowners everywhere; although it were a sufficient indication of their sufferings to refer to what I have just written about the officials who were sent to all the cities, for these men plundered the landowners and did what other violence has been told.

Now it had formerly been the long-established custom that each Roman ruler should, not only once during his reign but often remit to his subjects whatever public debts were in arrears, so that those who were in financial difficulty and had no means of paying their delinquencies would not be too far pressed; and so that the tax collectors would not have the excuse of persecuting, as subject to the tax, those who really owed nothing. But Justinian, during thirty-two years' time, made no such concession to his subjects, and consequently those who were unable to pay had to flee their country and never return. Others, more prosperous, grew weary of trying to answer the continual accusations of the informers that the tax they had always paid was less than required by the present rate on their estates. For these unfortunates feared not so much the imposition of a new tax as that they should be burdened by the unjust weight of additional back taxes for so many years. Many, indeed, preferred to abandon their property to the informers or to the confiscation of the state.

Besides, the Medes and the Saracens had ravaged most of Asia, and the Huns and Slavs all of Europe; captured cities had either been razed to their foundations, or made to pay terrible tribute; men had been carried off into slavery together with all their property, and every district had been deserted by its inhabitants because of the daily raids: yet no tax was remitted, except in the case of cities that had been captured by the enemy, and then only for one year. Yet if, as the Emperor Anastasius had done, he had decided to exempt the captured cities from taxation for seven years, even so I believe, he would not have done as much as he should.

For Cabades retired after doing hardly any damage to the buildings, but Chosroes burned to the foundations everything he took, and left greater ruin in his track. Yet to these remaining sufferers, for whom he made this ridiculous remission of taxes, and to all the others, who had many times been invaded by the army of the Medes, and been continually plundered by the Huns and barbarous Saracens in the East, and to those Romans who had met an equal fate daily from the barbarians in Europe, this Emperor straightway became a more bitter foe than all the barbarians put together. For as soon as the enemy had retreated, the landowners immediately were overwhelmed by new requisitions, imposts and levies.

What these were I will now explain. Those who owned land were compelled to feed the Roman army, according to a special assessment determined by the actual emergency but arbitrarily fixed by law. And if sufficient provisions for the soldiers and horses were not to be found on their estates, these unfortunates had to go out and buy them at an excessive price, wherever they could, even if they had to transport them from a distant country to the place where the army was quartered , and then distribute them to the army officials not at a legal price, but at the whim of the commanders. This requisition, called co-operative buying, took the heart out of the landowners. For it made their annual taxes easily ten times what they had been, as they had not only to feed the army, but often to transport grain from Constantinople. Barsyames was not the only one who dared this outrage, for the Cappadocian before him had done the same, and Barsyames's successors after him. And this is what co-operative buying meant.

The "impost" was an unexpected ruin which suddenly attacked the landowners, pulling up their hope of livelihood

by the roots. In the case of estates that had run down and been deserted, whose owners and farmer tenants had either perished or left the country, on account of their misfortunes, and disappeared, a ruthless tax was still laid on those who had already lost all. This was called the impost, levied frequently during this time.

The nature of the third levy was briefly as follows: Many losses, especially at this time, were suffered by the cities, whose causes and extents I refrain from describing now, or the tale would be endless. These losses the landowners had to repair, by special assessment on each individual; and their troubles did not even stop there. The pestilence, which had attacked the inhabited world, did not spare the Roman Empire. Most of its farmers had perished of it, so that their lands were deserted; nevertheless Justinian did not exempt the owners of these properties. Their annual taxes were not remitted, and they had to pay not only their own, but their deceased neighbors' share. And in addition to all of this, these land-poor wretches had to quarter the soldiers in their best rooms, while they themselves during this time existed in the meanest and poorest part of their dwellings.

Such were the constant afflictions of mankind under the rule of Justinian and Theodora; for there was no release from war or any other of these calamities in all their time.

While I am on the subject of quartering, I should not fail to mention that the householders in Constantinople had to quarter seventy thousand barbarians, so that they got no pleasure from their own houses, and were greatly inconvenienced in many ways.

Previous Index Next

24 - Unjust Treatment of the Soldiers

. · 7 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

From: “The Secret History” – by Pocopius of Caesarea

24 - Unjust Treatment of the Soldiers

I must not pass over his treatment of the soldiers, over whom he appointed paymasters with instructions to hold out as much of their money as they found possible, on the understanding that one twelfth of what they thus collected was theirs. Their method each year was as follows. It was the regulation that different ranks in the army receive different pay: the young and newly enlisted received less, those who had seen hard service and had advanced half way up the list received more, and the veterans who should soon retire from service had a still higher rating, so that they could live on their savings as private citizens, and when their span of life was complete, might be able to leave some consolation to their families. In this way, the soldiers step by step arose in rank as their older comrades died or retired, and each man's pay fitted his degree of seniority.

But the paymasters forbade the erasing from the lists of the names of soldiers who died, even when many perished together, as frequently happened in the constant wars. Nor did they fill the vacancies in the lists, even after considerable time.

The result of this was that the number of soldiers grew continually less, and those who survived their dead comrades were deprived of their proper advancement in rank and pay; while the paymasters handed over to Justinian the money that should have gone to these soldiers all this time.

Furthermore, they fined the soldiers for other personal and unjust reasons, as a reward for the perils they underwent in the battlefield: on the charge that they were Greeks, as if none of that nation could be brave; or that they were not commissioned by the Emperor to serve, even when they showed his signature to that effect, which the paymasters did not hesitate to question; or that they had been absent from duty for a few days.

Later, some of the palace guards were sent throughout the whole Roman Empire to investigate how many on the military lists were unfit for service; and some were relieved of their uniform for being old and use less, so that for the rest of their lives they had to beg their meals of the charitable in the public Forum, exhibiting their tears and lamentations to passersby; and the rest, lest they might suffer a similar fate, handed over their savings as a bribe, with the result that all the soldiers lost heart for their profession, were reduced to poverty, and had no further enthusiasm for campaigning.

This was ruinous to the Romans and their authority in Italy; and the paymaster Alexander, sent thither, had the audacity to reproach the soldiers for their poor morale; while he exacted further money from the Italians, on the pretext of punishing them for their negotiations with Theodoric and the Goths. The common soldiers, indeed, were not the only ones to be reduced to poverty and helplessness by these commissioners; for all the staff officers, under the generals, who had formerly been in high esteem, were utterly impoverished and in danger of famine, as they had no money left with which to buy their customary provisions.

Speaking of the soldiers reminds me to add further details. The Roman emperors hitherto had stationed large armies on all frontiers of the State to protect its boundaries; and particularly in the East, to repel incursions of the Persians and Saracens. These border troops Justinian used so ill and meanly from the start that their pay became four or five years overdue; and when peace was declared between the Romans and Persians, these poor men, instead of sharing in the fruits of peace, were forced to contribute to the public treasury whatever was owed them; after

which they were summarily discharged from the army. Thereafter the boundaries of the Roman Empire were unguarded, and the soldiers were left suddenly on the hands of charity.

Another corps of not less than three thousand, five hundred other soldiers, originally mustered for the palace guard, and called the Scholars, had always received higher pay from the public treasury than the rest of the army. Originally they were chosen to this preferred company by special merit, from the Armenians; but from the time when Zeno became Emperor, it was possible for anyone, no matter how poor or cowardly a soldier, to wear this uniform. Now when Justin came to the throne, this Justinian distributed the honor among a large number upon their paying him a considerable price for it. And when he saw there was no further possible vacancy, he enrolled two thousand more, whom he called Supernumeraries. When he himself took over the throne, he immediately disbanded the Supernumeraries, without giving them back any of the money they had paid him.

This, however, is what he schemed with reference to the Student Corps. Whenever an army was about to be sent against Libya, Italy, or the Persians, he ordered them to pack for service with the regulars, though he knew well they were utterly unfit for the campaign. And they, trembling at the possibility of active service, surrendered their pay for the period of the war. The Students had this unpleasant experience more than once. Also Peter, during all the time he was Master of Offices, worried them daily with unheard-of thefts.

For he was a gentle seeming and unassuming man, but the biggest thief alive, and simply bursting with sordid meanness. It was this Peter whom I mentioned before as responsible for the murder of Amasalontha, Theodoric's daughter.

There were also others in the palace guard of much higher rank; and the more they paid into the treasury for their commissions, the higher was their military rating. These were called Domestics and Protectors, and had always been exempt from active service. Only as a matter of form they were listed in the palace guard. Some of them were regularly stationed in Constantinople, others had always been assigned to Galatia or other provinces. Justinian scared these, too, in the same way, into forfeiting their pay to him.

Finally, it was the law that every five years the Emperor should give each soldier a bonus of a fixed sum in gold. And every five years commissioners had been sent over all the Roman Empire to give each soldier five gold staters. Not to comply with this custom was simply unthinkable. Yet from the time that this man managed the State, he never once did this, nor had any idea of doing it, though he reigned for thirty-two years: so that the very custom was finally forgotten by everyone.

Previous Index Next

25 - How He Robbed His Own Officials

. · 7 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

From: “The Secret History” – by Pocopius of Caesarea

25 - How He Robbed His Own Officials

I will next describe another way in which he robbed his subjects. Those who serve the Emperor and the magistrates in Constantinople, either as guards or as secretaries or what not, are inscribed last in the list of officials. As time goes on, their rank advances as their superiors die or retire and they replace them, until they reach the topmost dignity. Those who attained this highest rank, according to the long-established rule, were paid more than one hundred gold centenaries a year, so as to have a competence for their old age, and that they might be able to discharge their many debts: which resulted in the affairs of state being competently and smoothly managed. But this Emperor deprived them of nearly all this money, to the great harm of these officials and everybody else. For poverty, attacking them first, soon spread to the others who formerly shared their solvency. And if one could calculate the sums of money thus lost during thirty-two years, he would know of how great a total they were thus deprived. This is how the tyrant used his military aides.

What he did to merchants and sailors, artisans and shop-keepers, and through them to everybody else, I will now relate. There are two straits on either side of Constantinople: one in the Hellespont between Sestos and Abydus, the other at the mouth of the Euxine Sea, where the Church of the Holy Mother is situated. Now in the Hellespontine strait there had been no customhouse, though an officer was stationed by the Emperor at Abydus, to see that no ship carrying a cargo of arms should pass to Constantinople without orders from the Emperor, and that no one should set sail from Constantinople without papers signed by the proper officials; for no ship was allowed to leave Constantinople without permission of the bureau of the Master of Offices. The toll exacted from the ship owners, however, had been inconsequential. The officer stationed at the other strait received a regular salary from the Emperor, and his duty was exactly the same, to see that nothing was transported to the barbarians dwelling beyond the Euxine that was not permitted to be sent from Roman to hostile territory; but he was not allowed to collect any duties from navigators at this point.

But as soon as Justinian became Emperor, he stationed a customhouse at either strait, under two salaried officials, to whom he gave full power to collect as much money as they found possible. Eager to show their zeal, they made the mariners pay such tributes 'on everything as pirates might have exacted. And this was done at both straits.

At Constantinople, he concocted the following scheme. He appointed one of his intimates, a Syrian named Addeus, in charge of the port, with orders to collect duty from the ships anchoring there. And he, accordingly, never allowed any of the vessels putting in to Constantinople to leave until their owners either paid clearance fees or submitted to taking a cargo for Libya or Italy. Some of the ship owners, however, refused to submit to this compulsion, preferring to burn their boats rather than sail at such a price; and considered themselves lucky to escape with this sacrifice. Those who had to continue sailing in order to live, on the other hand, charged merchants three times the former rate for carrying their wares: so that the merchants had to recoup these losses by selling their stuff to individual purchasers at a correspondingly high price, with the result that the Romans nearly died of starvation.

This was the state of affairs throughout the Empire.

I must not omit, I suppose, mention of what the rulers did to the petty coinage. Formerly the money changers had customarily given two hundred and ten obols, or "folles," for one gold stater; but Justinian and Theodora, as a scheme for their private profit, ordered that only one hundred and eighty obols should be given for a stater. In this

way they clipped off one sixth of each gold coin possessed by the people.

By licensing monopolies of nearly all kinds of wares, these rulers daily oppressed the purchasers; the sale of clothes was the only thing they left untouched, and even in this case they contrived the following scheme. Cloaks of silk had long been made in Berytus and Tyre, in Phoenicia. Merchants who dwelt in these, and all the artisans and workers connected with the trade, had settled there in early times, and from these cities this trade had spread throughout the earth. But during the reign of Justinian, those in this business at Constantinople and in the other cities, raised the price of these garments: claiming that the price for such stuffs had been raised by the Persians, and that the import duties to Roman territory were also higher.

The Emperor, pretending to be incensed at this, proclaimed by edict that such clothing could not be sold for more than eight gold coins a pound; and the punishment for disobeying this law was the confiscation of the transgressor's property. This seemed to everybody impossible and futile. For it was not practicable for the merchants who imported silk at a higher price, to sell it to their customers for less. Consequently they decided to stop dealing in it at all, and privately got rid of their present stock as best they could, selling it to such notables as took pleasure in throwing away their money for such finery, or thought they had to wear it.

The Empress, hearing what was going on through her whispering spies, without stopping to verify the rumor, immediately confiscated these persons' wares, fining them a centenary in addition. Now the imperial treasurer is to be in charge of all matters connected with this trade. So when Peter Barsyames was given that office, they soon left it to him to do their unholy deeds. He ruled that all should obey the letter of the law, while he ordered the silk makers to work for himself. And this was no secret, for he sold colored silk in the Forum at six gold pieces an ounce, while for the imperial dye, which is known as holovere, he charged more than twenty-four.

In this way he got much money for the Emperor and more, quietly, for himself; and the custom he started continues to this day, the treasurer being admittedly the sole silk merchant and controller of this trade.

The former dealers in silk in Constantinople and every other city, by sea and by land, were naturally heavily damaged. Almost the whole populace in the cities mentioned were suddenly made beggars. Artisans and mechanics were forced to struggle against famine, and many consequently left the country and fled to Persia. Only the imperial treasurer could transact this business, giving a share of the profits aforesaid to the Emperor, and himself taking most of them, fattening on the public calamity. And so much for that.

Previous Index Next

26 - How He Spoiled the Beauty of the Cities and Plundered the Poor

. · 7 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

From: “The Secret History” – by Pocopius of Caesarea

26 - How He Spoiled the Beauty of the Cities and Plundered the Poor

How he ruined the beauty and appearance of Constantinople and every other city, we shall now see.

First he determined to debase the standing of the lawyers. He deprived them of all court fees, by which they had formerly lived in comfort and elegance; and in consequence they lost caste and significance. And after he had confiscated the estates of the Senators and other prosperous people, as has been related, in Constantinople and all over the Roman Empire, there was little use for lawyers anyway; men no longer had anything worth mentioning to go to court about. So of all the many noted advocates, only a few were left; and they were despised and reduced to penury, reaping nothing but insult from their work.

Furthermore, he caused physicians and teachers of the liberal arts to be deprived of the necessities of life. For he stopped all their living subsidies, which former emperors had paid men of these professions from the public treasury.

Also all of the taxes which the municipalities had devoted to public use or entertainments, he transferred arbitrarily to the imperial treasury. No consideration was now given to any physician or teacher; no one dared pay any attention to public buildings; there were no public lights in any city, nor any entertainments for the citizens. For the theaters, hippodromes, and circuses, in which his wife had been born, bred and educated, were all discontinued. Later he even stopped the public spectacles in Constantinople, to avoid spending the usual State money on them, by which an almost incalculable number of people had got their livelihood. On these, individually and collectively, ruin and desuetude descended, and as if some cataclysm had fallen on them from Heaven, their happiness was slain. And no other subject was spoken of among men, at home or in public or in the churches, than their calamities, their sufferings, and their overwhelming by the latest misfortune. Such was the state of affairs in the cities.

Of what is left to tell, this is worth mentioning. Each year two Roman consuls were appointed: one at Rome, the other at Constantinople. And whoever was called to this honor was expected to spend more than twenty gold centenaries on the public; some of which came from the Consul's private purse, but most was furnished by the Emperor. This money was given to those others whom I have mentioned, but mostly to the poor and those employed in the theater; all of which was to the good of the city. But from the time Justinian came to power, these distributions were not made at the customary time; for sometimes a Consul remained in office for year after year, till finally people wearied of hoping for a new one, even in their dreams. As a result, universal poverty was the case, since the usual annual relief was no longer afforded to subjects; and in every way all that they had was taken from them by their ruler.

Now I think I have shown sufficiently how this destroyer devoured all the public moneys and robbed each member of the Senate, publicly and privately, of all his estates; and how by bringing false charges he confiscated the properties of everybody else who was reputed to be wealthy, I imagine I have adequately told: as in the case of the soldiers, subordinate officers, and the palace guard; the farmers and landowners; those whose business is in words; merchants, ship owners and sailors; mechanics, artisans, and market dealers; those whose livelihood is in the theater; and indeed everyone else, who was affected in turn by the damage done to these. And now let us see what he did to those in need of alms: the poor, the beggars, and the diseased; for what he did to the priests will be

described later.

First, as I have said, he took control of all the shops, licensed monopolies of all the wares most necessary to life, and exacted a price of more than triple their worth from the citizens. And other details of what he did I would not even attempt to catalogue in an endless book, since they were simply uncountable.

He put a bitter and perpetual tax on the sale of bread, which the day laborers, the poor and the infirm could not help buying. From this source he demanded three centenaries a year, with the result that the bakers filled their loaves with shells and dust; for the Emperor had no scruples against profiting meanly from even this unholy adulteration. Those in charge of the markets, turning this trick to their private gain, with ease became very wealthy and reduced the poor to an unexpected famine even in prosperous times; since it was not permitted to bring in grain from other places, but all were forced to eat bread purchased in the city.

One of the municipal aqueducts, which furnished not a small share of the city water, collapsed; but the rulers disregarded the matter and refused to repair it, though the constant crowds who had to use the wells were fairly stifling, and all the baths were shut down. On the other hand, he threw away great sums of money senselessly on buildings by the seashore and elsewhere, in all the suburbs, as if the palaces in which all the former emperors had been content to dwell were not enough for this pair. So it was not to save money, but to destroy his subjects, that he refused to rebuild the aqueduct; for no one in all history had ever been born among men more eager than Justinian to get hold of money, and then to throw it immediately away again. Through the two things left to them to drink and eat, water and bread, this Emperor injured those who were in the last extremes of poverty; making the one hard to procure at all, and the other too expensive to buy.

This he did not only to the poor in Constantinople, but to inhabitants elsewhere, as I shall now relate. When Theodoric captured Italy, he permitted the palace guard to remain in Rome, that some trace of the ancient State might be left; and he continued their daily pay. These soldiers were quite numerous, comprising the Silentiarii, the Domestics, and the Student Corps, who were soldiers only in name; their pay was just enough to live on; and Theodoric ordered that this should revert, on their deaths, to their children and families. Among the poor, who lived near the Church of St. Peter the Apostle, he distributed each year three thousand bushels of grain from the public granary; which they continued to receive until the arrival in Italy of Alexander the Scissors.

This man immediately decided to deprive them of all this. When Justinian, Emperor of the Romans, learned of this economy, he was greatly pleased, and favored Alexander more than ever. It was on his way here that Alexander treated the Greeks as follows. The fortress at Thermopylae had long been guarded by the neighboring farmers, who took turns watching the wall whenever an incursion of barbarians into the Peloponnese was anticipated.

But this Alexander, when he arrived there, claimed it was to the advantage of the Peloponnesians not to allow this pass to be kept by farmers. So he stationed two thousand soldiers there, to be paid not out of the imperial treasury, but by all the cities of Greece; and on this pretext, he diverted all their public and entertainment revenues to the general fund, saying that from it food would be bought for these soldiers. In consequence, after this, everywhere in Greece, including even Athens, no public buildings or any other benefit could be considered. But Justinian of course approved this action of the Scissors. And that is what happened here.

Then there is the matter of the poor in Alexandria. Among the lawyers there was one Hephaestus, who, on being made Governor of Alexandria, put a stop to civic sedition by intimidating the rioters, but reduced all the inhabitants to the utmost misery. For he immediately brought all the wares in the city under a monopoly, forbidding other merchants to sell anything, and himself became the only dealer and sole vendor of all wares: fixing prices as he pleased under his supreme power. By the consequent shortage in necessary provisions the city of Alexandria was greatly distressed, where formerly even the very poor had been able to live adequately; and the high price of bread

pinched them most. For he alone bought up all the grain in Egypt, not allowing anyone else to purchase as much as a single bushel; and thus he controlled the supply and price of bread as he pleased. In this way he soon amassed unheard-of wealth, at the same time satisfying the greed of the Emperor. The people of Alexandria through fear of Hephaestus bore their suffering in silence; and the Emperor, awed by the abundance of money that continuously came to him from that quarter, was wonderfully delighted with his Governor.

This Hephaestus, planning to incur even greater favor of the Emperor, contrived the following additional scheme. When Diocletian became ruler of the Romans, he ordered a large quantity of grain to be given yearly to the poor in Alexandria. And the Alexandrians, distributing this among themselves at that time, had transmitted the right to receive this bounty to their descendants up to this time. But Hephaestus, depriving these needy ones of this charity, which amounted to two million bushels, diverted it to the imperial granary, and wrote to the Emperor that these men had been getting this dole unjustly and not in accordance with the interests of state. The Emperor, approving this action, was still fonder of him than before. But such Alexandrians whose hope of life had been in the distribution, in their present bitter distress felt the full benefit of his inhumanity.

Previous Index Next

27 - How the Defender of the Faith Protected the Interests of the Christians

. · 7 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

From: “The Secret History” – by Pocopius of Caesarea

27 - How the Defender of the Faith Protected the Interests of the Christians

The deeds of Justinian were such that all eternity would not be long enough in which to describe them adequately. So a few examples will have to suffice to illuminate his whole character to future generations: what a dissembler he was, how he disregarded God, the priests, the laws, and the people who showed themselves loyal to him. He had no shame at all, either when he brought destruction on the State or at any misdeed; he did not bother to try to excuse his actions, and his only care was how he might get sole possession of all the wealth of the world. To begin:

As bishop of Alexandria he appointed a man by the name of Paul. At this time one Rhodon, a Phoenician, was Governor of that city. Him he ordered to serve Paul with all zeal, and to allow none of his instructions to be unfulfilled. For thus he thought he could associate all the priests in Alexandria under the synod of Chalcedon.

Now there was a certain Arsenius a native of Palestine, who had become one of the most useful intimates of the Empress Theodora, and consequently after acquiring great power and wealth, had been raised to senatorial rank, though he was a disgusting fellow. He was a Samaritan, but so as not to lose his official rank and power, became a nominal Christian; while his father and brother, encouraged by his authority, continued in their ancestral faith in Scythopolis, where, with his consent, they persecuted the Christians intolerably. As a result of this, the citizens revolted and put them both to a most shameful death. Many later troubles afflicted the people of Palestine because of this. At the time, however, neither Justinian nor the Empress did anything to punish Arsenius, though he was principally responsible for the whole trouble. They merely forbade him entrance to the palace, to get rid of the crowds of Christians complaining against him.

This Arsenius, thinking to please the Emperor, soon after went to Alexandria with Paul, to assist him generally and in special to help him get the good will of the Alexandrians. For during the time he had been barred from the palace, he affirmed he had become learned in all the Christian doctrines. This displeased Theodora, for she pretended to disagree with the Emperor in religious matters, as I have told before.

As -soon as they arrived in Alexandria, Paul handed over a deacon by the name of Psoes to Rhoden to be put to death, on the charge that this man alone stood in the way of the accomplishment of the Emperor's wishes. And following instructions in letters from the Emperor, which came frequently and cogently, Rhodon ordered the man to be scourged; after which, while he was being racked by the torture, he up and died.

When news of this reached the Emperor, at the Empress's instigation he expressed horror at what had been done by Paul, Rhodon and Arsenius: as if he had forgotten his own instructions to these men. He now appointed Liberius, a patrician from Rome, Governor of Alexandria, and sent certain priests of good reputation to Alexandria, to investigate the matter; among these were the Archdeacon of Rome, Pelagius, who was commissioned by Pope Vigilius to act as his legate.

Paul, convicted of the murder, was removed from the bishopric; Rhodon, who fled to Constantinople, was beheaded by the Emperor and his estates confiscated, although the man produced thirteen letters which the Emperor had written him, insisting and commanding him to serve Paul in everything and never to oppose him, so that he could fulfill his every wish in religious matters. Liberius, at Theodora's order, crucified Arsenius, and the Emperor

confiscated his property, though he had no charge to bring against him except that he had been intimate with Paul. Now whether his actions in this matter were just or otherwise, I cannot say; but I shall soon show why I have described the affair.

Some time later, Paul came to Constantinople and offered the Emperor seven gold centenaries if he would reinstate him in the holy office from which, he claimed, he had been illegally removed. Justinian genially took the money, treated the man with great respect, and agreed to make him Bishop of Alexandria again very soon, though another now held the office; as if he did not know that he himself had put to death Paul's friends and helpers, and had confiscated their estates.

So the Augustus zealously extended every effort to arrange this matter, and Paul was generally expected to regain his bishopric one way or another. But Vigilius, who was in the capital at the time, decided not to yield to the Emperor's command in such a case; and he said he could not annul a decision which Pelagius had given as his legate. And the Emperor, whose only idea was to get the money, dismissed the matter.

Here is another similar case. There was a certain Faustin, born in Palestine, and of an old Samaritan family, who accepted a nominal Christianity when the law constrained him. This Faustin became a Senator and a Governor of his province; and when his term of office expired a little later, he came to Constantinople, where he was denounced by certain priests as having favored the Samaritans and impiously persecuted the Christians in Palestine. Justinian appeared to be very angry and outraged that during his rule over the Romans, anybody could have insulted the name of Christ.

So the Senate investigated the affair and by the will of the Emperor, punished Faustin with exile. But the Emperor, after getting from him the money he wanted, straightway annulled the decree. And Faustin, restored to his former rank, and the Emperor's friendship, was made Count of the imperial domains in Palestine and Phoenicia, where he fearlessly did as much harm as he wanted. Now in what way Justinian protected the true interests of the Christians may clearly be seen in these instances, few of them as I have had time to give.

Previous Index Next

28 - His Violation of the Laws of the Romans and How Jews Were Fined for Eating Lamb

. · 7 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

From: “The Secret History” – by Pocopius of Caesarea

28 - His Violation of the Laws of the Romans and How Jews Were Fined for Eating Lamb

How he unhesitatingly abolished laws when money was in question will now be shown in a few words. There was one Priscus in the City of Emesa, who was a skilful forger of others' handwriting, and a rare artist in such c ' rime. It happened that the church of Emesa had a long time before inherited the property of a distinguished patrician named Mammian, of illustrious family and of great wealth. During Justinian's reign, Priscus inventoried all the families of the mentioned city, so as to find which were adequately rich to be worth plundering, and after he investigated their family history, and found ancient letters in their ancestors' handwriting, he forged documents purporting to be their agreements to pay to Mammian large sums of money which were supposed to have been left with them by him as a deposit.

The amount of money mentioned as an obligation in these forgeries was not less than one hundred gold centenaries. He also imitated very craftily the writing of a certain notary public whose office was in the Forum during Mammian's lifetime: a man of high reputation for truth and every other virtue, who used to draw up all the citizens' documents, fixing them with his own seal. To those who were in charge of ecclesiastical affairs at Emesa he gave these documents, after they agreed that he would get a share of the money to be obtained from the matter.

But since there was a statute of limitations barring action after thirty years, except in mortgages and certain other matters, where the limit was forty years, they formed the following plan. Going to Constantinople and offering the Emperor large sums of money, they begged him to join in accomplishing the destruction of their innocent fellow citizens. He took the money, and without scruple published a new law, to the effect that the statute of limitations did not apply to the church, but claims connected with that institution might be brought at any time within a hundred years. And this was now the law not only in Emesa, but throughout the whole Roman Empire.

To enforce his decree he sent to Emesa one Longinus, a man of deeds and of great bodily strength, who later was Prefect of Constantinople. And those in charge of church affairs there immediately brought suit for two centenaries against some of the citizens whose ancestors were mentioned in the forgeries; and soon obtained judgment against these men, who had no defence owing to the great lapse of time and their ignorance of the facts. And all the other citizens were greatly grieved over this, and incensed against the accusers; the most reputable men of Emesa being the most perturbed.

Just as this evil was now progressing against the majority of the citizens, Providence intervened in the following way. Longinus ordered Priscus, the inventor of the mischievous trick, to bring him all the documents in the case; and when he objected, slapped him with all his might. Priscus, unable to bear the shock of a blow from a strong man, fell on his back, now trembling and shaking with fear; and supposing that Longinus had discovered him and that the whole deceit had been brought to light, stopped bringing suits.

As if it were not enough to do away with the laws of the Romans daily, the Emperor also exerted himself to destroy the traditions of the Jews. For whenever in their calendar Passover came before the Christian Easter, he forbade the Jews to celebrate it on their proper day, to make then any sacrifices to God or perform any of their customs. Many of them were heavily fined by the magistrates for eating lamb at such times, as if this were against the laws of the State.

Knowing countless other such acts of Justinian, I cannot include them, since the end of this book draws near. In any case, what I have told will be enough to show the nature of the man.

Previous Index Next

29 - Other Incidents Revealing Him as a Liar and a Hypocrite

. · 7 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

From: “The Secret History” – by Pocopius of Caesarea

29 - Other Incidents Revealing Him as a Liar and a Hypocrite

I will now show what a liar and hypocrite he was. This Liberius, whom I recently mentioned, he removed from office and in his stead appointed John, an Egyptian, surnamed Laxarion. When Pelagius, a particular friend of Liberius's, heard of this, he asked the Emperor if the report about Laxarion's appointment were true. And he immediately denied it, assuring him he had done nothing of the sort; and gave him a letter to take to Liberius charging him to stick tight to his office and give it over to nobody, as he, Justinian, had not the slightest idea of removing him from it at this time.

Now John had an uncle in Constantinople named Eudemon, of consular rank and great wealth, who was at the time Count of the imperial estates. This Eudemon, when he heard the rumor, also went to the Emperor to inquire if the office were really going to his nephew. And Justinian, in contradiction of what he had written to Liberius, now wrote a document to John, telling him to take over the office by all means, as his intentions were unchanged. John, trusting in this instruction, ordered Liberius to retire from his office as he had been officially removed. But Liberius, with equal confidence, of course, in the letter he had had from the Emperor, refused. So John went after Liberius with an armed guard, and Liberius with his own guard defended himself. During the fight many were killed, including John himself, the new Governor.

Now at Eudemon's instigation, Liberius was summoned to Constantinople; the Senate investigated the affair, and acquitted Liberius, since what he did had been in self-defense. The Emperor, however, did not let him off until he had privately paid him a fine. This shows Justinian's love of truth and how he kept his word.

It might not be out of the way for me to tell a sequel of this incident. This Eudemon died a little later, leaving many relatives but no will of any kind. About the same time the chief eunuch of the palace, Euphrates, was released from life, leaving a nephew but no will disposing of his considerable property. The Emperor seized both estates, making himself the arbitrary heir, and did not give as much as a three-obol piece to the legal inheritors. Such was the respect for law and the kinsmen of his friends that this Emperor had. So, also ' he seized the estate of Ireneus, who had died some time before, without any proper claim to it of any kind.

Another thing that happened at this time I must also not fail to tell. One Anatolius was foremost in the Senate of Ascalon. His daughter was married to a citizen of Caesarea by the name of Mamilian, of illustrious family. This girl was Anatolius's legal heir, since she was his only child. Now there was an ancient law that when a Senator of any of the cities departed this world, leaving no male issue, one fourth of his estate should go to the Senate of his city, and all the rest to his heirs. Here again the tyrant had showed his true character. He made a new law reversing the rule, decreeing that when a Senator died without male issue, his heirs should get one fourth of his estate, and all the rest should go to the imperial treasury and the local Senate. Never in the memory of man had the treasury or the Emperor shared the estate of a Senator.

While this new law was in force, Anatolius reached the final day of his life. His daughter was about to divide her inheritance with the treasury and the city Senate according to the law, when she received letters from both the Emperor and the Ascalon Senate, dismissing all their claims to the property, on the ground they had already all that was properly their just due.

Later Mamillan also died, Anatolius's son-in-law, leaving one daughter, who of course inherited his estate. While her mother was still living, this daughter too died, after marrying a man of distinction by whom she had no children, male or female. Justinian immediately seized the whole estate, on the remarkable ground that it would be an unholy thing for the daughter of Anatolius, an old woman, to become rich on the property of both her father and her husband. But that the woman might not be reduced to beggary, he ordered her to be given one gold stater a day so long as she lived: writing in the decree by which he robbed her of these properties that he was granting her this stater for the sake of religion, "for it is my custom to do what is holy and pious."
This will have to suffice, in order that my book may not be overfilled with such anecdotes; and indeed, no one man could recall everything he did.

I will show how he cared nothing for even the Blues, who were devoted to him, when money was at stake. There was a Cilician named Malthanes, son-in-law of that Leo who was, as I have said, a Referendar. Justinian sent this Malthanes to restore order among the Cilicians. On this pretext Malthanes inflicted intolerable sufferings on most of his fellow citizens, and robbed them of their money, some of which he sent to the tyrant, enriching himself unjustly with the rest.

Now some bore their sufferings in silence; but those of the inhabitants of Tarsus who were Blues, trusting in the favor of the Empress, assembled in their Forum to insult Malthanes, who was not present. When Malthanes heard of this, he assembled a body of soldiers and arrived in Tarsus by night; and sending his soldiers into the private houses, ordered them to put the inhabitants to death. Thinking this was an invasion by an enemy, the Blues defended themselves. And among other evils that took place in the darkness, it happened that Damian, a Senator, was killed by an arrow wound.

This Damian was president of the local Blues; and when the news came to Constantinople, the indignant Blues there made a great uproar throughout the city, and gathered in crowds to complain violently to the Emperor, while they uttered terrible threats against Leo and Malthanes. The Emperor pretended to be no less outraged at the affair, and immediately wrote to order an investigation and punishment of Malthanes by his citizens. But Leo gave him a large sum of money, so he stopped inquiry and his interest in the Blues.

With the affair thus unsettled, the Emperor received Malthanes at Constantinople with all favor and esteem. As he was leaving the imperial presence, the Blues, who had been on the lookout for him, attacked him in the very palace and would have killed him, if some of their party, who had been bribed by Leo, had not stopped them. Who would not call that state most miserable, in which the Emperor accepts bribes to leave an inquiry unfinished, and in which factionists, while the Emperor is in the palace, dare to mutiny against one of their own magistrates and lift violent hands against him? However, no punishment for this was ever brought on either Malthanes or those who attacked him. And from this alone, if you pleased, you could prove the character of Justinian.

Previous Index Next

30 - Further Innovations of Justinian and Theodora, and a Conclusion

. · 7 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

From: “The Secret History” – by Pocopius of Caesarea

30 - Further Innovations of Justinian and Theodora, and a Conclusion

How much he cared for the interests of the State may be seen by what he did to the public couriers and the spies. For the preceding Roman emperors, so that they might most quickly and easily have news of enemy invasions into any province, of sedition in the cities or any other unexpected trouble, of the actions of the governors and everyone else everywhere in the Roman Empire, and also so that those bringing in the annual taxes might be kept from delay and danger, had established a system of public couriers everywhere in the following manner.

As a day's journey for an active man, they decided on eight stages in some places, in others less, but hardly ever less than five. Forty horses were kept for each stage, and grooms in proportion to the number of horses. By frequent relays of the best mounts, couriers were thus able to ride as long a distance in one day as would ordinarily require ten, and bring with them the news required. Also the landowners in these provinces, especially those whose estates were in the interior ' were greatly benefited by the system, as they sold at a high price to the government each year their surplus harvests to feed the horses and the grooms. And accordingly the State received the due tribute from each of these, immediately reimbursing them for furnishing it: and this was to the advantage of the whole State. Now this is how things were formerly done.

But this tyrant first suppressed the post from Chalcedon to Dacibiza, and then compelled the couriers to go from Constantinople to Helenopolis, however little they liked it, by sea. Faring in small boats, such as were usually used for crossing the strait, they were in serious peril if a storm came up. For because speed was demanded of them, they could not wait for calm weather. In the case of the road to Persia, he permitted the former system to remain; but everywhere else in the East, as far as Egypt, he reduced the number of stages making a day's journey to one, and provided, instead of horses, a few asses. Consequently news of what happened in each province was brought with great difficulty, too late to be of any use and long after the event, and the farm owners got no benefit of their crops which either rotted or lay idle.

The spies were organized as follows. Many men were formerly supported by the treasury, who visited the enemy, especially the Persian court, to find out exactly what was going on; on their return to Roman territory, they were able to report to the Emperors the secrets of the enemy. And the Romans, being warned, were on guard and could not be taken by surprise. This system was also a long-established custom with the Medes; and Chosroes, they say, increased the pay of his spies, and benefited by the precaution. But Justinian did away with the practice of hiring Roman spies, and in consequence lost much territory to the enemy, including Lazica, which was taken because the Romans had no information as to where the Persian King was with his army.

The State had also always kept a large number of camels, which carried all the baggage when the Roman army marched against the foe. Thus the peasants did not have to carry burdens, and the soldiers lacked no necessity. But Justinian did away with almost all of these animals. Consequently when the Roman army now marches against the enemy, it is impossible for it to be supplied with what it needs. Such was the zeal he displayed for the interests of the State.

There is nothing like mentioning one of his ridiculous acts. Among the lawyers at Caesarea was one Evangelius, a man of no mean distinction, who, favored by the winds of Fate, became the master of much money and much land.

Eventually he bought a village on the seacoast, named Porphyreon, for three gold centenaries. Learning of this, Justinian immediately took the place from him, giving him back only a small fraction of the price he had paid, and uttered the remark that it would never do for Evangelius, a mere lawyer, to be the lord of such a village. Well, we must stop somewhere when we begin to recall all these stories.

This, however, is worth telling among the innovations of Justinian and Theodora. Formerly, when the Senate approached the Emperor, it paid homage in the following manner. Every patrician kissed him on the right breast; the Emperor kissed the patrician on the head, and he was dismissed. Then the rest bent their right knee to the Emperor and withdrew. It was not customary to pay homage to the Queen.

But those who were admitted to the presence of Justinian and Theodora, whether they were patricians or otherwise, fell on their faces on the floor, stretching their hands and feet out wide, kissed first one foot and then the other of the Augustus, and then retired. Nor did Theodora refuse this honor; and she even received the ambassadors of the Persians and other barbarians and gave them presents, as if she were in command of the Roman Empire: a thing that had never happened in all previous time.

And formerly intimates of the Emperor called him Emperor and the Empress, Empress; and the other officials according to the title of their rank. But if anybody addressed either of these two as Emperor or Empress without adding "Your Majesty" or "Your Highness," or forgot to call himself their slave, he was considered either ignorant or insolent, and was dismissed in disgrace as if he had done some awful crime or committed an unpardonable sin.

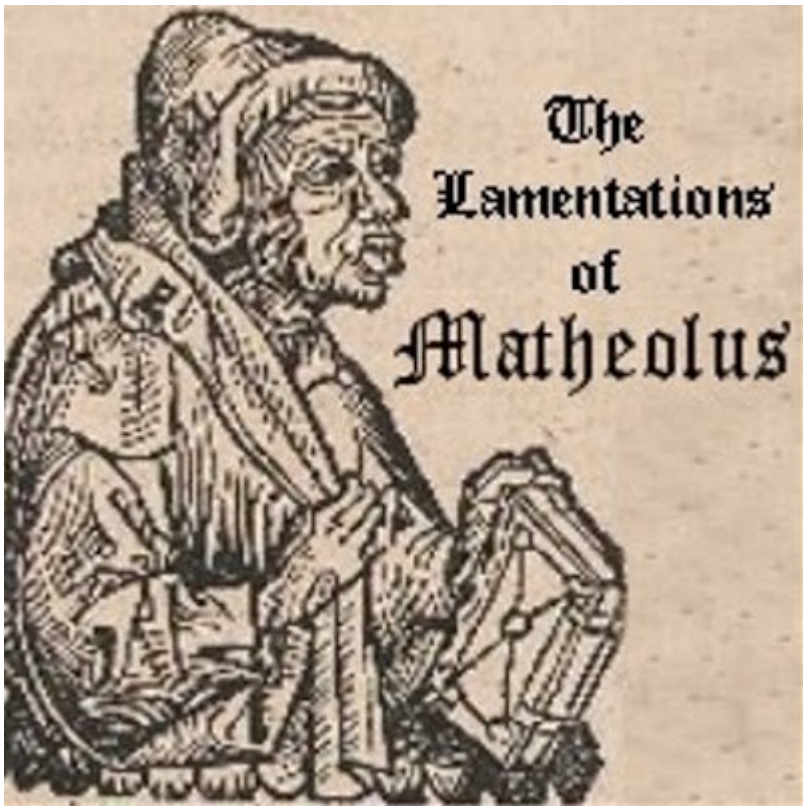
And before, only a few were sometimes admitted to the palace; but from the time when these two came to power, the magistrates and everybody else had no trouble in fairly living in the palace. This was because the magistrates of old had administered justice and the laws according to their conscience, and made their decisions while in their own offices, while their subjects, neither seeing nor hearing any injustice, of course had little cause to trouble the Emperor. But these two, taking control of everything to the misfortune of their subjects, forced everyone to come to them and beg like slaves. And almost any day one could see the law courts nearly deserted, while in the hall of the Emperor there was a jostling and pushing crowd that resembled nothing so much as a mob of slaves.

Those who were supposed to be in the imperial favor would stand there all day and most of the night, sleepless and foodless, until they were exhausted; and this is what their presumed good fortune got them. And those who were free of all this sort of thing, asked each other what would become of the prosperity of the Romans. For some were sure it was already in the hands of the barbarians, and others said the Emperor had hidden it away in his various dwelling places. But only when Justinian, be he man or King of the Devils, shall have departed this life, shall they who then happen to survive him, discover the truth.

Previous Index

The Lamentations of Matheolus

. · 8 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original



The Lamentations of Matheolus

While married men necessarily know very little about women, Matheolus struggles through his bitterness to reveal more than enough of the truth about women, at the same time as serving as a warning to us all . . .

[The following short extracts are from Le Fèvre's translation (c. 1371-2) of a subtle poem, the Liber lamentationum Matheoluli, written around 1295 by Mathieu of Boulogne (via a recent translation from Le Fèvre's by Karen Pratt, in Woman Defamed and Woman Defended: An Anthology of Medieval Texts, Oxford University Press, 1992)]

Dominating Clock

The Winning Sophistry of Wives

Woman Over Wisdom

Living with a Basilisk

”Jangling” Woman

The Free-wheeling Widow

Bedroom Politics

Women and Lechery

In Defence of Anti-feminism

Mother of Calamity

Monstrous Woman

Termination of the Female Sex

Dominating Clock - Mathieu of Boulogne

. · 8 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

This female clock is really driving me mad, for her quarrelsome din doesn't stop for a moment. The tongue of a quarrelsome woman never tires of chiming in. She even drowns out the sound of the church bell. A nagging wife couldn't care less whether her words are wise or foolish, provided that the sound of her own voice can be heard. She simply pursues her own ends; there's not a grain of sense in what she says; in fact she finds it impossible to have a decent thought. She doesn't want her husband to be the boss and finds fault with everything he does. Rightly or wrongly, the husband has no choice: he has to put up with the situation and keep his mouth shut if he wants to remain in one piece. No man, however self disciplined or clear-sighted he may be, can protect himself adequately against this. A husband has to like what the wife likes, and disapprove of what she hates and criticize what she criticizes so that her opinions appear to be right. So anyone who wishes to immolate himself on the altar of marriage will have a lot to put up with. Fifteen times, both day and night, he will suffer without respite and he will be sorely tormented. Indeed, I believe that this torture is worse than the torments of hell, with its chains, fire, and iron.

Mathieu of Boulogne Index Next

The Winning Sophistry of Wives - Mathieu of Boulogne

. · 8 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

In addition to using arguments and disputes, a woman can lead her man to false conclusions by means of five different types of sophism. It's only right that I should give you some examples of their deception. Their linguistic sophistry is easily demonstrated.

Guy found his wife in her bedroom underneath Simon, who was bonking her on the edge of the bed. Once the act was over, Guy got angry, scolded and reproached his wife, saying, "Get out, wicked woman, may God destroy you, body and soul, for your wickedness is now only too clear." But the woman was very quick to contradict her husband, replying, "Are you trying to kill me? Tell me what's the matter?". And the martyr to marriage said to her, "I want a divorce." "Alas," she said "why do you dare to speak such evil words to me? My father was once deluded into thinking that what you are now accusing me of had happened to him, for he imagined that he had seen my mother behaving in a wifely manner underneath another man, but his eyesight was defective. I know that my mother died as a result of such an incident, and my other female ancestors in just the same way. Dear husband, tell me how you arrived at such a crazy idea. Where has this melancholy come from? Dear friend, do you wish to be the death of me? Do you want me to live, or to die needlessly having done no wrong? You would be a wicked man indeed. Tell me what you want me to do." The poor wretch wept as he embraced her and said to her, "Sweet sister, I want you to live, for if you were ever to depart prematurely from this life as your mother did, your death would be too bitter a blow to me." She replied. "Then you must acknowledge publicly that I was never guilty of such a crime or, I promise you, I shall die. Now go quickly and say that it was a lie and that you dreamt it, for it was in this way that my female ancestors met their untimely ends." Against this argument the husband could find no defence, and without further ado, retracted his accusations under oath in the presence of their female neighbours, gossips, and cousins and swore that he had lied and had wrongly accused her. Thus his wife was exculpated, while he allowing himself to be contradicted in this way, suffered public humiliation.

Previous Mathieu of Boulogne Index Next

Related:

The Secret History: 1 – How the Great General Belisarius was Hoodwinked by His Wife

Woman Over Wisdom - Mathieu of Boulogne

. · 8 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

Women can sing to more than one tune. What good were the Perihermeneias, the Elenchi, divided into several branches, the Prior and Posterior Analytics, logic, or the mathematical sciences to Aristotle? For a woman surmounted all of these in mounting him and conquered the master of logic. She placed a bit and headstall on his head and he was dragged into solecism, barbastoma, and barbarism. The hussy used him as a horse and spurred him on like a female ass. She lifted her crotch far too high when she rode the male. The governor was governed and the roles of the sexes reversed, for she was active and he passive, willing to neigh under her. . . .

In my opinion, he had the status of a horse, and yet he was well acquainted with the power of nature, reason, and justice. Yet why did they not gallop to his aid, bringing succour to their greatest proponent and master? I don't know how this could be. What will the logicians say about the ancient art of sophistry if their celebrated teacher and master was thrown into greater confusion than any madman with a shaven head? He could not have been more confounded. Alas, what will philosophy say, given that the great master was tricked by the figure of amphiboly? Never had such a thing been seen before: the woman was the mounted knight and the man, with a halter under his hoary beard, was the horse that carried the burden. Because of this unnatural act, practitioners of the liberal arts are in constant and perpetual confusion. May they be eaten by evil wolves, if they have not yet taken revenge for this act. This book shows in what way, in what circumstances, and by what means I have reached this sorry pass. There is no one who can offer me a cure for it, for my wife's evil charms are too potent. She is always armed with arguments which torture me terribly. I sigh, weep, and lament, and suffer more than if I had chronic fever. How am I going to write this work? I can hardly begin to compose it without bursting into tears and lamenting.

Previous Mathieu of Boulogne Index Next

Living with a Basilisk - Mathieu of Boulogne

. · 8 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

I, who once used to compose and polish off fine poems while my studies flourished and gave me great pleasure, have now fallen on hard times, not because of advancing age, but because of the constant nagging which upsets me. It's making me old before my time, allowing me no truce or respite. While asleep I dream of battles which end worse than they begin; I feel as if I am constantly at war whether awake or asleep. It's not surprising if I'm fed up with suffering such a cruel life, a life worse than death; for death stops once it has killed you, whereas this torture goes on and on and yet I must endure it. Since I am dying a terrible death, I should serve as a warning to all other men not to get married and to learn from my mistakes, thereby escaping woman and her wiles. If one's neighbour's house is on fire and one sees the flames leaping higher, one ought to fear for one's own house.

If there is anyone who is so naive that he is untutored in woman's art, let him read this very work and select from it the most pleasing formulations himself. He will learn a lot from it provided that he uses it wisely. Dear reader, make sure that you rid yourself of women. Once you are acquainted with their opinions, behaviour and character (which I shall describe if I have the chance) then I believe that justice will prevail, that you will side with me and will rightly condemn them. Woman is always quarrelsome, a nag, cruel and shrewish. Peace and quiet are foreign to her. She recites her own litany of grievances, her own version of scriptures and the liturgy, just to annoy me. She often breaks her promises. My nagging wife sings her own Tenebrae [spiritual songs]; "Damn you," she says, and haunts my lamentations. She curses all the time or nags or weeps. Every wife intones and plays the same quarrelsome tune to her husband; she sings and chimes in every hour on the hour and is a terribly perverse creature. She is in the habit of shouting out and bawling during Responses, providing her own contrafacture of the Tenebrae. She begins the antiphon with "Damn you," causing her husband much grief and pain. She goes on like this all the time. Whether she is weeping or nagging, her husband hears everything, whether he wants to or not. Yet he dares not complain about it for in return for one word of complaint he would get a thousand. Instead he has to leave home and escape from his house. This treacherous cow treats him so badly that the man has to flee. It's true that smoke, rain, and a wife's unjustified nagging drive a man away from his home. When a woman argues and disputes she is often the one to start the quarrel. The water becomes undrinkable, the smoke from the hearth clouds his sight, making his eyes weep and he is unable to stay any longer in those conditions. In order to start a fight the wife pretends that she has caught her husband in the act of adultery. She attacks or turns on him, or strikes their child so that it screams and she couldn't be bothered to calm it down, she is such a cruel viper.

Just as it is impossible for a fish to live out of water, so a wife can't live without abusing her husband and fighting. So I tell you truly, take in carefully what you read, for she is like a basilisk and may God protect you from this snake that kills people with its gaze. Above all retain this piece of advice: the only antidote is to flee it. Man is much safer with a snake or a lion than with a woman in fighting mood. I can demonstrate this with indisputable proof. You can tame all wild beasts by using chains or cages, ingenuity and cunning, and break their proud spirits, but you can't do this with your wife, for you can't get rid of an old crease in a boot. Even if you could conquer a whole empire by feats of arms, you would not be able to subjugate a woman. You can see this illustrated in paintings and Holy Scripture bears witness to this too. No man exists who has nothing to fear from her. If you are willing to acknowledge the truth, there is no man, however powerful. who isn't ultimately defeated by woman and her shield.

Previous Mathieu of Boulogne Index Next

"Jangling" Woman - Mathieu of Boulogne

. · 8 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

Indeed, the birds will stop singing and the crickets in summer too before woman finds the strength to hold her tongue, whatever harm comes of her words. For Calphurnia, more gossipy than a magpie, this was indeed her undoing, since she did not plead her case wisely. Her verdict was to bare her bum. Her punishment for her crime, which she fully deserved, was to reduce all women to the status of second-class citizens. Each is deprived of and barred from practising advocacy. With her tongue and outrageous behaviour she banned all women. They have inherited her tongue and share in her guilt, according to the laws of heredity. Condemned in this way, rightly as far as I can tell, they are forbidden for all time to question witnesses and to defend cases. . . .

Why is the raven black? Some writers lead us to believe that it was once white. She has changed her appearance as a sign of her fault, because she was a gossip, a slanderer, and a nag. If only our wives were now similarly metamorphosed by divine miracle and shed their nasty habits. If I had my way, no man would have to suffer this. Indeed, the devil was told concerning woman that God, in whom all good abounds, would have made the world a peaceful place if he had removed the cursed tongues of women, so ill-pained in the art of speaking. In many a land and many a country, wars begin and are caused because of women. It seems therefore that whoever gave them the gift of speech was out of his mind. If one were to dare to accuse God, He would not be able to defend Himself against the charge of giving perverse women deadly weapons when He gave them many tongues. He saw the evil that would come of it, and yet did not wish to come to our aid. It's my belief that it would be a miracle to make a mute woman speak. But truly, it would be a much greater marvel if one were able to shut up a woman once she is in full flow. The two are barely comparable. Why are women more argumentative, so full of idle gossip and more talkative than men? Because they are made of bone, while our bodies are fashioned of clay: bone makes more noise than clay. Note therefore my conclusion, which does not offer us much solace: it is their nature which makes them all foolish and proud.

Previous Mathieu of Boulogne Index Next

The Free Wheeling Widow - Mathieu of Boulogne

. · 8 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

As soon as her husband is in his coffin, a wife's only thought day and night is to catch another husband. She observes convention by weeping, but after three days can't wait to be remarried. If her children wish to claim their share of the goods and money they have inherited from their father, there's not one of them who doesn't pay dearly for it. She disagrees with everything they say, argues, and is good at reproaching them, saying "I would already be married if it were not for your objections, for this has already happened to me three or four times. Now I'm having to dispute with you; what wretched progeny I have borne." Then she curses the fruits of her womb and tells them that despite their objections, without delay or further procrastination, she will marry one of her suitors, who will protect her rights for her. And she is so eager to marry that she takes a husband who brings about her ruin: who spends and squanders her money, an unbridled spendthrift, who will not be restrained as long as she still has something in the loft. He leaves her with neither a penny nor halfpenny, neither land, vineyard, nor house which he hasn't sold; everything has been spent. Then, when she sees how she has been used, she complains to her children and weeps for her first husband. Such tears, may God help me, with which women reproach their most recent husbands are an indictment against the heat of their loins. Their frivolity does not excuse them.

I don't think there is a more foolish woman than a widow all dolled up; she doesn't think of herself as past it, she often transforms and changes her appearance, adopting different hairstyles. She paints her face, rearranges her hair, wears make-up, adorns herself. One moment she is willing, the next she isn't; now she's friendly, now hostile; first she quarrels with one person then with another, praising one to the skies and piling scorn on another. And if ever out of habit many men waste their time with her, she is still too dissolute, abandoning the flower for the flames. In this way she proves to be naive and foolish, resembling the dung-beetle, which leaves the perfume of the flowers to follow in the wake of carts, wallowing in horse shit. And just like the she-wolf on heat, that always takes the worst male as her mate, so the widow always chooses badly.

Alas, things used to be different. A wife used to lament her husband's death and remain in mourning for a full year. Now she waits no more than three days; you'd be hard pressed to find anyone waiting longer! For as soon as her first husband slips into everlasting sleep and has been disposed of in the ground, his wife begins to wage war, refusing to give up until she has found another man to stuff her tights again, for she is incapable of remaining alone. And I don't believe for a moment that she will wear black clothes to encourage mourning. Instead she will don a silk dress to indicate her joy. This is no more nor less than a disgrace. There is no bridle nor halter that could ever restrain her. She is forever coming and going; no man would ever be able to confine her to her room or to her house. She wants to be seen everywhere, so driven is she by her ardour. The burning lust of widows is an affront to decency; they creep and climb on to rooftops just like the frogs of Egypt; they are not interested in beds or couches unless there is a man with them. Who would have thought they would be like this? Saint Acaire preferred to be the protector of madmen and the insane rather than to be responsible for widows. Anyone who looks into the matter knows that he was right, for these women are mad and know no bounds and so he didn't wish to be their patron. Widows are a base and immoral lot, while a madman in chains can do no harm.

Previous Mathieu of Boulogne Index Next

Bedroom Politics - Mathieu of Boulogne

. · 8 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

Whenever there is a secret, woman from here to the island of Crete insists on discovering it. She seizes her husband, drags him off and takes him to bed, pretending that she wants to make love; then she kisses and embraces her husband and deceiving him with her words says, "I don't know what a man has to fear, for in the words of God, a man leaves his father and mother for his wife, they become one, hopefully one flesh, it really is possible. For God has united and joined them with one indivisible bond, tying them tightly so that they will stay together. Therefore every man should do whatever pleases his wife."

Then she strokes his head and resumes the kissing and lies down under him and, arching her back and spine, offers to him her carnal vessel, saying "I'm ready to do your will and shall prove this to you whenever you wish. I beg you to be mine, for we are one and in my case as God says, whether you like it or not, you are mine however reluctantly, and to my mind, rightly so." And as they draw together and she recognizes in his excitement that he is getting ready to copulate, she presses her breast against his, despite the silk of the bedclothes and blankets, saying to him; "Here you are, I'm giving you all I have, offering up to you my heart, body and all my limbs, but please do not forget that you are my husband and lord. Now tell me what I ask of you, you can tell me confidently, for indeed God will know if I am lying. I'd prefer to suffer a terrible and sudden death than to reveal your secrets to others. Oh wretch that I am. I would never do it. You know how I am, you've put me to the test many a time, fair friend, wise husband, now tell me why I am not party to this information. Everything you know I ought to know too. No other person will ever get to hear of it."

Then she kisses and embraces him again, caressing and soothing him. With blandishments and flattery she presses herself right up against him saying, "How foolish and wretched I am since you scorn and ignore my words. Alas, I am truly dishonoured by my misguided love for you. If my neighbours knew of this, I would right1y be criticized, if the situation between us were common knowledge. I love you more than I love myself, I am far superior to other women, yet you deny me knowledge of your secrets - and I tell you all I know, never omitting anything. Other women cover themselves better, for they do not reveal their secrets, they are wise to do this. Yet I am foolish and generous, since I behave in this way towards you. And love alone makes me do this." What more effective and touching proof is there than the gift of one's heart and one's mouth? If the man tries to draw closer, she forbids him to touch her, pulls away, turns her back on him and weeps as if sad and upset. She pretends to be very distressed. Then there's double trouble. She is silent for a while, then sighs and in a grumbling tone says, after a few moments' silence, "Alas, how I am deceived. I can't help but lament; whatever this man wants, I want it too. God knows his every wish would be mine, yet he would do nothing for me. I know that what he keeps hidden from me he discloses to all other women. He who says that man is deceived by woman is misguided and wrong. In this respect too I have been misled. I love you yet you don't love me at all. You aren't mine yet I am yours. And because I love you I'm telling you that you would please me greatly if you were to tell me what I ask. for I would then reveal to you all that I know, and I wouldn't lie on pain of death. Alas, I am your chambermaid. I'd rather be far away and be lying dead in a pit. The matter would have to be very important indeed for me to be able to hide it from you, yet you do not wish to reveal anything to me. I serve you as my lord, as a very important and superior person, yet you turn a deaf ear to my words Our love is hardly mutual."

The man is dismayed and ponders awhile but can find no defence against this attack; he does not notice the malice in her words and replies, "What's the matter, my love? Please turn round. I have never been so upset as I am now over your complaint. I love you truly and there is nothing else so dear to me." She then turns to face her husband, offering him her mouth and breast. He is completely taken in by her lecture. In response to a barrage of request and supplications, he reveals everything to her, thus committing great folly, for from then on, she is the lady and mistress, while he lives the wretched life of a serf. Perrette wants me to tell her everything, concentrating all her

efforts on making me angry. If I don't resist, believe me, I shall be treated just as you have heard.

Previous Mathieu of Boulogne Index Next

Related:

Man Superior to Woman – Chapter Four

Women and Lechery - Mathieu of Boulogne

. · 8 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

People say that women are lecherous. On the surface, these words sound insulting. However, with due respect to all ladies, it is necessary to speak as one finds. . . .

.

If there is anyone who says that women with their tits and boobs are colder than the male, let him lose his purse and its contents. If anyone has come to this conclusion, he hasn't looked at the evidence carefully enough. For, by Saint Acaire of Haspre, their lust is much stronger than ours and turns into greater ardour. A woman underneath a man gets very excited. But let's say no more about it at present. . . Women are by nature very weak and frail and more fragile than glass. Ovid says that woman is only chaste when no man courts or chases her. Given their lust, the pope has granted them permission to marry without delay in order to pay the tribute their flesh demands. For otherwise they would hardly manage to wait and would offer or sell themselves to all comers.

Previous Mathieu of Boulogne Index Next

In Defence of Anti-feminism - Mathieu of Boulogne

. · 8 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

Yet one might disagree with me, criticize my conclusion. and, putting forward the opposite point of view, suggest that my words are completely untrue. For, if some women are evil and perverse and abnormal, it does not necessarily follow that all of them are so cruel and wicked; nor should all of them be lumped together in this general reproach. A speech is badly composed if one's general conclusion is only partly valid. Logic hates this type of argumentation. Nevertheless, this present work, which expresses the pain in my heart, wishes me to exclude nothing, but commands me to push my argument to its logical, if extreme, conclusion, which is that no good woman exists. Solomon, in his works, makes an amazing comment, which supports my case, for he exclaims, "Who could find a virtuous woman?" The implication here is, of course, that this would be impossible. Since he says this, who am I to disagree? Why should I be shocked? What's more, he says that a base and broken man is worth more than a woman when she's doing good. Thus there is no woman worth anything at all; I don't need to look for further proof. That's enough logical demonstration.

My exposition is clearly valid, for woman has - and there is ample evidence of this - deceived all the greatest men in the world; I shall be basing myself on rational argument. If the greatest are deceived, then the lesser naturally fall. In the street where I live they say that what applies to the greatest amongst us applies even more to lesser mortals. Who were the greatest lords? Who has ever heard of greater men than Solomon or Aristotle? Yet good sense, riches and reason were not worth a dung-beetle to them; all were made to look as if they had gone out of fashion; these men were both outmanoeuvred by women, deceived, vanquished, and tamed.

Previous Mathieu of Boulogne Index Next

Mother of Calamity - Mathieu of Boulogne

. · 8 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

It's true that women are lazy, but they are always ready to do harm. An evil woman just gets worse, becoming even more evil and wicked. It would take far too long for me to tell you everything about them, so for brevity's sake I shan't. Woman is not wise in this respect, for in her eagerness to do harm she only brings about her own ruin. According to the law, as I understand it, woman is not rational, nor does her love reside deep in her heart, but is there on her gaze for everyone to see. She entrusts her honour openly to her eyes, yet they can't help but fail to protect it, since folly animates her gaze. With all her words, her chatter, and her talk, she could break a heart of glass; all her actions are stupid and foolish. Woman can do no good, indeed, goodness is destroyed and obliterated by her. Many a war is begun by women and many a murder committed throughout the world; castles are burned and ransacked and the poor made destitute. As every man and woman knows, there isn't one war in a thousand that isn't started by a woman and by her sowing of discord. She is the mother of all calamities; all evil and all madness stem from her. Her sting is more venomous than a snake's; there isn't anyone who has anything to do with her who doesn't live to regret it.

Previous Mathieu of Boulogne Index Next

Monstrous Woman - Mathieu of Boulogne

. · 8 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

Now you can see how foolhardy it is to take a wife. What will your response be? What is the point of your studying the matter? Don't get married, have mistresses. If you are weak by nature, it will be safer for you to have a hundred of them rather than devote yourself to one; treat them as if they were no more important than a straw. And if you are strong, take my advice, don't plunge yourself in the mire or frequent either one woman or many - I forbid you to have anything to do with them, for in the garden lurks a snake; and no one approaches it without regretting it afterwards.

Now I should like to rest for a while. for whoever sets out to expose the evils of the female sex, finds her poisonous acts too numerous to relate. Nature shows and teaches us that every woman is a real monster and that she is quite happy to put up with her own faults. There is no shortage of proof of this, or demonstration of how monstrous she is. It is said that woman was conceived without nature's consent. A philosopher testifies to this quite clearly in his works, saying that nature, having embarked on creation, was shocked when she contemplated her mistake and blushed as she became aware of it. Woman is a monstrous hermaphrodite, proving to be a chimaera with horns and a tail bigger than a peacock's or pheasant's. Thus she bears the marks of a monster, as this treatise informs you.

And if anyone were to say that women in general are slandered without taking account what each individual woman might do, and that some, who are specially favoured, deserve our respect and praise, I would venture to say that this would be an unnatural thing and that there has never been such a great miracle. For their sex in no way prepares them to be virtuous or to do good, indeed they are predisposed to do the very opposite.

In a vision the narrator remonstrates with God about the creation of woman and the institution of marriage. Moreover, he objects to the injustice of the punishment for the Fall, and argues that God, as good shepherd, must save people, whatever their sin.

Previous Mathieu of Boulogne Index Next

Termination of the Female Sex - Mathieu of Boulogne

. · 8 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

"You should gather up your sheep and wander through the fields calling them, in case you find any that have gone astray, so that they can be saved by you. You must do all you can for their safety, chasing away the wolves with your dogs and staff, and your shouting. If one dies, and you see it, you should immediately try to revive it; for if a shepherd allows a ewe to die through his own fault, ignorance, or laziness, he must, according to the law, pay compensation, if he was in a position to protect it and even if Argus himself had tried to prevent this. And since the ordinary shepherd is expected to make reparation, you are expected to do so all the more, you who are all-seeing and all-powerful, and the lord of all shepherds. Thus it follows logically that, since you are capable of saving your flock and your sheep, then you must and will save them. If you are not moved by pity, you will be the cause of our deaths.

"Yet whatever one might say about us men, who are in a position to be saved, I do not believe that you can have or save the soul of a woman. For you know and have clear proof of the fact that she was the cause of our fall and the reason for your death. Therefore you should not strive at all for her salvation. And when, on judgement day, Adam is resurrected and his body becomes whole again, then the whole female sex, which, as I have said, is full of venom, will revert to nothingness and will thus disappear. For otherwise Adam could not be whole again: if his rib were not replaced in its rightful spot (from which it was taken, and with which you created woman many years ago in your earthly paradise and then forbade her entry into it), Adam would not be complete. However, once his rib has been replaced, woman will be no more. Thus she will not be saved or resurrected."

Previous Mathieu of Boulogne Index

The Fifteen Joys of Marriage (first two "joys") -- by Antoine de la Salle (possible author, born 1388)

. · 9 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

pp. xv - xlii.

The First Joy

The first joy of marriage is when the young man is in his first youth, when he is fresh, nimble and merry and cares for nothing except making love, composing ballads and singing them, looking at the most beautiful women, and considering where he may take his pleasure and find his delight, according to his station; and he doesn't worry about money, for probably he still has his father and mother or other kinsfolk who give him whatever he needs.

And although his life is easy and pleasant and he does what he likes, he can't endure it. Instead, he only looks at other good men who are held in the trap and thinks that they are enjoying themselves more because they have the bait beside them in the trap, that is to say, the woman, who is fair, neatly presented and sweetly dressed, with gowns that her husband has probably not paid for; for he has been deceitfully told that her father or mother gave them to her from their bountiful store.

The young man turns and explores around the trap and at last he enters it and is married; and, so hasty is he to snatch at the bait, that he makes few enquiries concerning necessary things; instead he plunges in at the market price.

Now the poor man is in the trap, he who formerly had no care except to sing and to buy points, silk purses and similar ornaments, to give to young women. He takes his pleasure and delight for a while and has no thought of escape until he has pondered a little ; but by then it is too late.

His wife must, perforce, be set up in a condition befitting her estate. And perhaps her heart is light and merry and at a feast the other day she saw the ladies and burgesses' wives or other women of her estate who were dressed in the new fashion; and she says within herself that it is appropriate, considering her lineage and kin,that she should be as well dressed as others.

Then she awaits the place and time and the hour to raise the matter with her good man. And women prefer to speak of their special matters in the place where their good men are more subservient and must be more inclined to grant their wishes, that is, in bed. There the fellow I speak of craves for his delights and pleasures, and it seems that he has nothing better to do. Then his wife begins and she says:

"My dear, please leave me alone, for I am very upset."
"My chuck !" says he, "what's the matter? "
"Certainly", says she, " I have good reason, but I can't say anything about it to you, since you never listen to me."
"My sweet chuck", says he, "why do you say such things to me?"
"By Our Lady, sir", says she, "Why should I tell you: for it's a thing you wouldn't consider important if I did tell you, and you would think I had some other motive."
"Truly", says he, "you must tell me."

Then she says: "Since you are so determined, I will tell you. My dear, you know that the other day I was at a feast, where you had sent me, and it gave me very little pleasure; for when I was there I think there was no woman, however base her estate, who was so poorly dressed as I. I don't say this to be vain, but, thanks be to God, I am as

well-born as any woman there, be she lady or merchant's wife; I can establish that through my noble family tree. I don't mention it because of my attire, for I don't care how I am dressed; but I was ashamed for love of you and my kin."

"Dear God!" says he, "my chuck, and how were they dressed at this feast?""By my faith", she says, "there was no one of my estate who did not have a scarlet or Malines gown or a fine green one, trimmed with good grey or short vair fur, with large sleeves and a high peaked hood to match, with a lining of red or green silk falling to the ground, all designed in the newest fashion. And I still have only my wedding gown, and that is faded and very short because I have grown since it was made, for I was still only a child when I was given to you and already I am so wrinkled and have endured so many sorrows that I look the mother of those whose daughter I might be. And certainly I was so ashamed while I was among them that I did not know not how to behave and hold up my head. And it grieved me still more when the lady of such a place and the wife of such a one told me before them all that it was shame I was no better dressed. And, by my faith and truth, it is a long time since they have been to see me.

"Dear Lord! My chuck, let me speak: you know very well, my dear, that we are hard pressed, and you know also, my dear, that when we set up house together we had nothing, and have had to buy beds, bedding, room-furnishings and many other such things; and at present we have little money; and you know we must buy two oxen for our yeoman in such a place. And then the other day the gable of our barn fell down because the roof was damaged and it must be repaired as quickly as possible. And then I must go to the court, at such a place, because of the case I am involved in concerning your land in that area, which brings me no income, or very little, and it is costing me a great deal."

"Ha! sir, I was sure you wouldn't remember anything but that land of mine."

Then she turns away onto her other side and says:

"In God's name, leave me alone, for I will never mention it again.""My Lord", says the good man, "you are getting angry with me for nothing.""Not so, sir ", says she, "for if you have nothing or very little, it is not my fault. And you know I was sought in marriage by such and such a one, and in a score of other houses, by those who asked nothing but my body, and you know you visited me so often that I would have none but you. Because of this my lord my father was unhappy with me, and he still is, for which I should hate myself. I think I am the most unhappy woman alive.

And I pray you, sir", says she, "to tell me if the wives of such and such a one (who sought to have me) are in the same state as I am? Certainly, they are not of such a noble house as I. By Saint John, the dresses they give their serving maids are better than those I wear on Sundays. I don't know why so many good people die, which is a sad thing; but, please God! I shall not live long. At least you would be rid of me and I should cease to be a burden to you."

"By my faith", says he, "my chuck, I don't like to hear this, for I would do anything to please you, but you should consider our circumstances: turn over to me and I will do whatever you want."

"In God's name", says she "let me alone, for, by my faith, I don't want to make love. Would to God you had never wanted it more than I; by my faith, ye would never have touched me."

"No?" said he.
"Certainly not", said she.
Then, trying to tempt her, he says to her:
"If I were dead, you would soon be married with another."

"Are you mad?" says she. "It would not be for any pleasure I have had. By God's blessed sacrament, never should a man's mouth touch mine; if I knew I should outlive you, I would make sure that I went first."

And then she starts weeping.

Thus the good woman restrains herself (no matter how much she might have wanted it) and the good man both rejoices and grieves at once; rejoices because he assumes her to be a cold woman and so pure that she is not attracted by such filthy pleasure and because he believes she loves him so much, and grieves, because he sees her weeping which causes him to be sore afflicted and moved and have no rest until she is comforted, and he tries in every way he can to do her pleasure. But she, who is preparing to strike the blow for her gown, will have none of it, but rises early at an unusual hour, and all day she is in such a foul mood that he may not get one pleasant word from her. When the next night comes, she goes to bed, and after she is in bed the good man listens to see if she is asleep and looks to see if her arms are well covered and covers her if needed. Then she pretends to wake up. The good man says:

"Are you sleeping, chuck?"
"Certainly not", she says.
"Are you feeling better?"
"Better?" says she; "my sadness is a small thing. And praised be God", says she, sighing. "I have enough since this is God's will."

"Dear Lord", says he, "chuck, if it is God's will, we shall have enough; I have thought it over, and I will put thee in such an estate that I guarantee you will be the best dressed woman at my cousin's wedding."

"Certainly", says she, "I shall go to no feast this year.""Faith and truth, chuck, but you will, and you will have what you ask for.""What I ask for!" says she. "Certainly, I ask for nothing. So help me God, I never said it from any desire to display myself, for I would rather never go out of our house, except to church, but I said it because of the words spoken between other people: for I was advised about it by my close friend who heard much talk about it and reported it to me."

Then the poor man (a new husband) thinks it over. He has many obligations, he has few possessions, and the gown will probably cost fifty or three score gold crowns; and, as he ponders, he can see no way to get the money, but nevertheless, he must have it, for he sees his spouse who (he thinks) is a very worthy and notable lady, and he praises God in his heart that he has been given such a valuable jewel. Then he tosses and turns and rolls from one side of the bed to the other, and all night he has no sleep to comfort him. And it often happens that the woman is so shrewd that she well knows what the outcome will be and she laughs to herself under the sheets.

When the day comes, the good man, who has contended with heavy thoughts all night, rises and goes about his business; and perhaps he gets the cloth and trimmings on credit and binds himself to the shop owner or he borrows or pledges ten or a score shillings of his yearly income, or he decides to sell an ancient jewel of gold or silver made in the time of his great-grandfather, which his father had bequeathed him; and he does so much that, in the end, he comes home with all things his dame required of him. But she pretends to take no joy in them and curses those that first invented such great display; and when she sees the thing is done and that he has brought the cloth and the trimmings, she says to him:

"My love, be careful that you never reproach me in future that you spent the money for my sake, for I would not give a half-farthing for any gown in the world, as long as I am warmly clad."

In brief, the gown is made, the girdle and the hood, which are perhaps shown off at many a church and many a

dance.

And the day comes when it is time to pay the creditors, and the poor man cannot pay, and they will not wait, and will have his goods sold or himself excommunicated, and the woman hears about this and sees the dilemma; and perhaps they take the very ornaments for which the debt was made. Then it happens that after the excommunication his fortunes grow worse and the woman must stay indoors. And God knows the delight and joy in which the good man lives and spends his days, for the woman rages through the house, saying:

"Cursed be the day I was born! Would that I had died in my swaddling bands! Alas! Alas! Such great shame never fell upon a woman of my house, and on one so delicately nurtured and raised. Alas!" says she, "I must labour to oversee the household and all I can do and save is lost. I might have married into a score of families if I had wanted to, and lived with great respect and riches: for I know well how their wives are doing. Poor weary woman, why doesn't Death come to release me?"

Thus the woman complains and gives not thought to her responsibilities, but rather of the gowns and ornaments she craves and of the banquets and wedding-feasts she went to when she should have been at home thinking of her household, but she puts all the blame upon the poor man who probably has done nothing wrong. And moreover he is so distraught because of his debts that he doesn't even realize that it was her fault.

Don't ask about the sad thoughts that overcome the poor man, who can neither sleep nor rest, but can only think how to calm his wife and to find some remedy for his debt. Despite everything, he is more troubled by his wife's distress than by anything else. So he mopes and falls into destitution and it is unlikely that he will ever recover from it once he has been brought down, but all this means but little to him. So he is caught in the trap and perhaps he doesn't regret it and if he were not in it, he would soon enter. There he wastes his life and wastes away and there will he end his days miserably.

The Second Joy

The second joy is when the woman feels herself to be an object of admiration, as is said, and knows that she is attractive (even if she is not, nevertheless, she imagines herself to be so) and she often goes to feasts, gatherings and pilgrimages : and sometimes her husband is not pleased; and therefore she schemes with her aunts, her close friend and her cousin, that perhaps is no relation to her, but is called cousin for a reason. And even her mother, that sometimes knows the business, hath told the poor man that it is her cousin, so that his heart may be lightened if it were burdened. And sometimes the good man, who does not want her to go, will claim he has no horse, or some other cause. Then the aunt or the friend will say:

"By heavens, my friend or my nephew, it upsets me to go to feasts at this time, for I have many things to do at home; but, in God's name, were it not for your honour and mine, I wouldn't have mentioned it; and, by my faith and truth, I know very well that my niece or my friend, your wife, finds no pleasure in such things, for of all women I know, she is the one most eager to depart when she gets there."

Then the good man is persuaded and asks who will take them and who will go with them.

"By my faith and truth, my friend or my nephew, there will be your lady, my niece's mother, your wife, the wife of such a one, my cousin and yours, and the other women of our street or near us: I dare say that for respectability and honour there will be as good company as would serve for a King's daughter."And perhaps she that tells this tale is to have a gown or other adornment if she plays her part well, which often happens.

"I know well", says he, "that the company is fair and honourable; but she has much to do within doors and she is

always gadding about the streets. But so be it", he says,"let her go this time; but be sure", he says to the woman, "come home before nightfall."

Then the wife, who sees full well that she now has permission to go, pretends that she hath no desire to go, and says:

"Ah, my dear heart", says she, "I have no will to go; please, let me stay at home.""Indeed", says the aunt or the friend, "you shall go."

And then the good man takes the aunt aside and says to her:

"Friend, if it were not for the faith I have in you, I would not let her go.""Indeed, friend, by God that made the world, you may certainly do so."

They set forth, and then they mock the good man and say to one another that he is certainly jealous but he doesn't do anything about it. On they go, and perhaps some among them have tried their luck at earlier feasts and mean to end their business now. God knows, the woman is flattered, served and honoured for love of her husband; God knows it well. Consider well how she takes care to dance and sing and how little she considers her husband when she sees herself so esteemed and praised. Then the gallants, who see her so well dressed and well-spoken, push forward towards her, one before the other; for a pleasant and forward manner in a woman gives boldness of speech to the lowly and fainthearted. One gives her good words, gracious and pleasant; another treads on her foot or holds onto her hand; another looks at her sideways with a fixed and piteous gaze; another gives her a ring, a diamond or a ruby; whereby the woman may easily understand their desires if she has any skill in understanding reason. Then often she departs from the strait way and takes her pleasure and other things, and perhaps worse will come of it.

Now the poor man has gone into debt because of his wife's estate, the estate which is the cause of her going to feasts, where the gallants are gathered from all parts, and each of them, for his part, hopes only to deceive the poor man, and it is unlikely that he will escape. Yet he is the cause of his own shame. And it happens, after a long period, that either the woman or her admirer is unwary, or some kinsman or close friend of the good man says a word about it to him so that he finds out the truth or makes a shrewd guess about what is happening. Then he falls into a rage of jealousy, into which no wise and sober man should ever fall: for his wife's fault can never be healed by such behaviour; and then he will beat her, whereby his situation will grow worse, for she will never be chastened, and by beating her he will only cast fuel on the fire of passionate love between her and her lover, yes, even if he were to cut off her limbs.

Whereby it happens that he loses his goods and becomes a feeble and falls into depression. And she will never love him thereafter, unless perhaps for her entertainment and to torment him.

Then the poor man lives in pain and torment, which he thinks is joy. But he is fairly caught in the trap; and if he were not, he would rush into it; there he wastes his life, and always languishes and will end his days in misery.

"The Man-Woman" -- Hic Mulier, 1620

. · 10 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

Hic Mulier; or, The Man-Woman:
Being a Medicine
to cure the Coltish Disease of the Staggers
in the Masculine-Feminines of our Times,
Expressed in a brief Declamation:
Non omnes possumus omnes.

Hic Mulier: How now? Break Priscian's head at the first encounter? But two words, and they false Latin? Pardon me, good Signor Construction, for I will not answer thee as the Pope did, that I will do it in despite of the Grammar. But I will maintain, if it be not the truest Latin in our Kingdom, yet it is the commonest. For since the days of Adam women were never so Masculine: Masculine in their genders and whole generations, from the Mother to the youngest daughter; Masculine in Number, from one to multitudes; Masculine in Case, even from the head to the foot; Masculine in Mood, from bold speech to impudent action; and Masculine in Tense, for without redress they were, are, and willbe still most Masculine, most mankind, and most monstrous. Are all women then turned Masculine? No, God forbid, there are a world full of holy thoughts, modest carriage, and severe chastity. To these let me fall on my knees and say, "You, oh you women, you good women, you that are in the fullness of perfection, you that are the crowns of nature's work, the complements of men's excellences, and the Seminaries of propagation; you that maintain the world, support mankind, and give life to society; you that, armed with the infinite power of Virtue, are Castles impregnable, Rivers unsailable, Seas immovable, infinite treasures, and invincible armies; that are helpers most trusty, Sentinels most careful, signs deceitless, plain ways fail-less, true guides dangerless, Balms that instantly cure, and honors that never perish. Oh do not look to find your names in this Declamation, but with all honor and reverence do I speak to you. You are Seneca's Graces, women, good women, modest women, true women -- ever young because ever virtuous, ever chaste, ever glorious. When I write of you, I will write with a golden pen on leaves of golden paper; now I write with a rough quill and black Ink on iron sheets the iron deeds of an iron generation."

Come, then, you Masculine women, for you are my Subject, you that have made Admiration an Ass and fooled him with a deformity never before dreamed of; that have made yourselves stranger things than ever Noah's Ark unloaded or Nile engendered; whom to name, he that named all things might study an Age to give you a right attribute; whose like are not found in any Antiquary's study, in any Seaman's travel, nor in any Painter's cunning. You that are stranger than strangeness itself; whom Wise men wonder at, Boys shout at, and Goblins themselves start at; you that are the gilt dirt which embroiders Playhouses, the painted Statues which adorn Caroches, and the perfumed Carrion that bad men feed on inBrothels: 'tis of you I entreat and of your monstrous deformity. You that have made your bodies like antic Boscadge or Crotesco work, not half man/half woman, half fish/half flesh, half beast/half Monster, but all Odious, all Devil; that have cast off the ornaments of your sexes to put on the garments of Shame; that have laid by the bashfulness of your natures to gather the impudence of Harlots, that have buried silence to revive slander; that are all things but that which you should be, and nothing less than friends to virtue and goodness; that have made the foundation of your highest detested work from the lowest despised creatures that Record can give testimony of: the one cut from the Commonwealth at the Gallows; the other is well known. From the first you got the false armory of yellow Starch (for to wear yellow on white or white upon yellow is by the rules of Heraldry baseness, bastardy, and indignity), the folly of imitation, the deceitfulness of flattery, and the grossest baseness of all baseness, to do whatever a greater power will command you. From the other you have taken the monstrousness of your deformity in apparel, exchanging the modest attire of the comely Hood, Cowl, Coif, handsome Dress or Kerchief, to the cloudy Ruffianly broad-brimmed Hat and wanton Feather; the modest upper parts of a concealing straight gown, to the loose, lascivious civil embracement of a French doublet being all

unbuttoned to entice, all of one shape to hide deformity, and extreme short waisted to give a most easy way to every luxurious action; the glory of a fair large hair, to the shame of most ruffianly short locks; the side, thick gathered, and close guarding Safeguards to the short, weak, thin, loose, and every hand-entertaining short bases; for Needles, Swords; for Prayerbooks, bawdy legs; for modest gestures, giantlike behaviors; and for women's modesty, all Mimic and apish incivility. These are your founders, from these you took your copies, and, without amendment, with these you shall come to perdition.

Sophocles, being asked why he presented no women in his Tragedies but good ones and Euripides none but bad ones, answered he presented women as they should be, but Euripides, women as they were.

The modest comeliness in which they were? Why did ever these Meremaids, or rather Mermonsters, that weare the Car-man's blocke, the Dutchman's feather Upse-van-muffe, the poore man's pate poul'd by a Treene dish, the French doublet truss'd with points, to Mary Anbries light nether skirts , the Fooles Bandrike, and the Devil's Ponyard. Did they ever know comliness, or modestie? Fie, no, they never walked in those paths; for these at the best are sure bur ragges of Gentry, torne from better pieces for their foul stains, or elsethe adulterate branches of rich Stocks, that taking too much sap from the roote, are cut away, and imploy'd in base uses; or, if not so, they are the stinking vapours drawne fromdunghills, which nourished in the higher Retions of the air, become Meteors and false fires blazing and flashing therein, andamazing men's minds with their strange proportions, till the substanceof their pride being spent, they drop down againe to the place from whence they came, and there rot and consume unpittied, and unremembered.

And questionless it is true that such were the first beginners of these last deformities, for from any purer blood would have issued a purer birth; there would have been some spark of virtue, some excuse for imitation. But this deformity hath noagreement with goodness, nor no difference against the weakest reason. It is all base, all barbarous: base, in respect itoffends man in the example and God in the most unnatural use; barbarous, in that it is exorbitant from Nature and an Antithesis to kind, going astray with ill-favored affectation both in attire, in speech, in manners, and, it is to be feared, in the whole courses and stories of their actions. What can be more barbarous than with the gloss of mumming Art to disguise the beauty of their creations? To mould their bodies to every deformed fashion, their tongues to vile and horrible profanations, and their hands to ruffianly and uncivil actions? To have their gestures as piebald and as motleyvarious as their disguises, their souls fuller of infirmities than a horse or a prostitute, and their minds languishing in those infirmities? If this be not barbarous, make the rude Scythian, the untamed Moor, the naked Indian, or the wild Irish, Lords and Rulers of well-governed Cities.

But rests this deformity then only in the baser, in none but such as are the beggary of desert, that have in them nothing but skittishness and peevishness, that are living graves, unwholesome Sinks, quartan Fevers for intolerable cumber, and the extreme injury and wrong of nature? Are these and none else guilty of this high Treason to God and nature?

Oh yes, a world of other -- any known great, thought good, wished happy, much loved and most admired -- are so foully branded with this infamy of disguise. And the marks stick so deep on their naked faces and more naked bodies that not all the painting in Rome or Fauna can conceal them, but every eye discovers them almost as low as their middles.

It is an infection that emulates the plague and throws itself amongst women of all degrees, all deserts, and all ages; from the Capitol to the Cottage are some spots or swellings of this disease. Yet evermore the greater the person is, the greater is the rage of this sickness; and the more they have to support the eminence of their Fortunes, the more they bestow in the augmentation of their deformities. Not only such as will not work to get bread will find time to weave herself points to truss her loose Breeches; and she that hath pawned her credit to get a Hat will sell her Smock to buy a Feather; she that hath given kisses to have her hair shorn will give her honesty to have her upper

parts put into a French doublet. To conclude, she that will give her body to have her body deformed will not stick to give her soul to have her mind satisfied.

But such as are able to buy all at their own charges, they swim in the excess of these vanities and will be manlike not only from the head to the waist, but to the very foot and in every condition: man in body by attire, man in behavior by rude complement, man in nature by aptness to anger, man in action by pursuing revenge, man in wearing weapons, man in using weapons, and, in brief, so much man in all things that they are neither men nor women, but just good for nothing.

And can Greatness and great Birth; great beauty, great bringing up, and great riches stoop to the baseness of these monstrous imitations? Why, what are all they when the face of virtue is is disguised, more then as silver Bells on a Jack an Apes' coat that show fair, and chime sweet, but save not poor Jack from one lash of the whip, when his knavery requires it? No more shall their greatness or wealth save them from one particle of disgrace, which these monstrous disguises have cast upon them. Oh you that are the great rich builders of this huge frame or Masse of disguises, remember what the poet saith:

As for the (oddes of sexes) portion,
Nor will I shunne it, nor my ayme it make,
Birth, Beauty, wealth are nothing worth alone,
All these I could for good additions take:
Not for good parts, those two are ill combin'd
Whom any third thing fro themselves hath join'd.

Rather then these the object of my love,
Let it be good; when these with vertue goe,
They (in themselves indifferent) vertues prone,
For good like fire burnes all things to be so:
Gods Image in her Soule, O let me place
My love upon; not Adams in her face.

Remember how your Maker made for our first Parents coats -- not one coat, but a coat for the man and a coat for the woman, coats of several fashions, several forms, and for several uses -- the man's coat fit for his labor, the woman's fit for her modesty. And will you lose the model left by this great Workmaster of Heaven?

The long hair of a woman is the ornament of her sex, and bashful shamefastness her chief honor; the long hair of a man, the vizard for a thievish or murderous disposition. And will you cut off that beauty to wear the other's villainy? The Vestals in Rome wore comely garments of one piece from the neck to the heel; and the Swordplayers, motley doublets with gaudy points. The first begot reverence; the latter, laughter. And will you lose that honor for the other's scorn? The weapon of a virtuous woman was her tears, which every good man pitied and every valiant man honored; the weapon of a cruel man is his sword, which neither Law allows nor reason defends. And will you leave the excellent shield of innocence for this deformed instrument of disgrace? Even for goodness' sake, that can ever pay her own with her own merits, look to your reputations, which are undermined with your own Follies, and do not become the idle Sisters of foolish Don Quixote, to believe every vain Fable which you read or to think you may be attired like Bradamant, who was often taken for Ricardetto, her brother; that you may fight like Marfiza and win husbands with conquest; or ride astride like Claridiana and make Giants fall at your stirrups. The Morals will give you better meanings, which if you shun and take the gross imitations, the first will deprive you of all good society; the second, of noble affections; and the third, of all beloved modesty. You shall lose all the charms of women's natural perfections, have no presence to win respect, no beauty to enchant men's hearts, nor no bashfulness to excuse the vilest imputations.

The fairest face covered with a foul vizard begets nothing but affright or scorn, and the noblest person in an ignoble disguise attains to nothing but reproach and scandal. Away then with these disguises and foul vizards, these unnatural paintings and immodest discoveries! Keep those parts concealed from the eyes that may not be touched with the hands; let not a wandering and lascivious thought read in an I enticing Index the contents of an unchaste volume. Imitate nature, and, as she hath placed on the surface and superficies of the earth all things needful for man's sustenance and necessary use (as Herbs, Plants, Fruits, Corn and suchlike) but locked up close in the hidden caverns of the earth all things which appertain to his delight and pleasure (as gold, silver, rich Minerals, and precious Stones), so do you discover unto men all things that are fit for them to understand from you (as bashfulness in your cheeks, chastity in your eyes, wisdom in your words, sweetness in your conversation, and severe modesty in the whole structure or frame of your universal composition). But for those things which belong to this wanton and lascivious delight and pleasure (as eyes wandering, lipsbilling, tongue enticing, bared breasts seducing, and naked arms embracing), oh, hide them, for shame hide them in the closest prisons of your strictest government! Shield them with modest and comely garments, such as are warm and wholesome, having every window closed with a strong Casement and every Loophole furnished with such strong Ordinance that no unchaste eye may come near to assail them, no lascivious tongue woo a forbidden passage, nor no profane hand touch relics so pure and religious. Guard them about with Counterscarps Of Innocence, Trenches of humane Reason, and impregnable walls of sacred Divinity, not with Antic disguise and Mimic fantasticalness, where every window stands open like the Subura, and every window a Courtesan with an instrument, like so many Sirens, to enchant the weak passenger to shipwreck and destruction. Thus shall you be yourselves again and live the most excellent creatures upon earth, things past example, past all imitation.

Remember that God in your first creation did not form you of slime and earth like man, but of a more pure and refined metal, a substance much more worthy: you in whom are all the harmonies of life, the perfection of Symmetry, the true and curious consent of the most fairest colors and the wealthy Gardens which fill the world with living Plants. Do but you receive virtuous Inmates (as what Palaces are more rich to receive heavenly messengers?) and you shall draw men's souls unto you with that severe, devout, and holy adoration, that you shall never want praise, never love, never reverence.

But now methinks I hear the witty offending great Ones reply in excuse of their deformities: "What, is there no difference among women? No distinction of places, no respect of Honors, nor no regard of blood or alliance? Must but a bare pair of shears pass between Noble and ignoble, between the generous spirit and the base Mechanic? Shall we be all coheirs of one honor, one estate, and one habit? Oh Men, you are then too tyrannous and not only injure Nature but also break the Laws and customs of the wisest Princes. Are not Bishops known by their Miters, Princes by their Crowns, Judges by their Robes, and Knights by their spurs? But poor Women have nothing, how great soever they be, to divide themselves from the enticing shows or moving Images which do furnish most shops in the City. What is it that either the Laws have allowed to the greatest Ladies, custom found convenient, or their bloods or places challenged, which hath not been engrossed into the City with as great greediness and pretense of true title as if the surcease from the Imitation were the utter breach of their Charter everlastingly?

"For this cause these Apes of the City have enticed foreign Nations to their cells and, there committing gross adultery with their Gewgaws, have brought out such unnatural conceptions that the whole world is not able to make a Democritus big enough to laugh at their foolish ambitions. Nay, the very Art of Painting, which to the last Age shall ever be held in detestation, they have so cunningly stolen and hidden amongst their husbands' hoards of treasure that the decayed stock of Prostitution, having little other revenues, are hourly in bringing their action of Detinue against them. Hence, being thus troubled with these Popinjays and loath still to march in one rank with fools and Zanies, have proceeded these disguised deformities, not to offend the eyes of goodness but to tire with ridiculous contempt the everto-be- satisfied appetites of these gross and unmannerly intruders. Nay, look if this very last edition of disguise, this which is so full of faults, corruptions, and false quotations, this bait which the Devil hath laid to catch the souls of wanton Women, be not as frequent in the demiPalaces of Burgers and Citizens as it is

either at Masque, Triumph, Tiltyard, or Playhouse. Call but to account the Tailors that are contained within the Circumference of the Walls of the City and let but their Hells and their hard reckonings be justly summed together, and it will be found they have raised more new foundations of this new disguise and metamorphosized more modest old garments to this new manner of short base and French doublet only for the use of Freeman's wives and their children in one month than hath been worn in Court, Suburbs, or County since the unfortunate beginning of the first devilish invention.

"Let therefore the powerful Statue of apparel but lift up his Battle-Ax and crush the offenders in pieces, so as everyone may be known by the true badge of their blood or Fortune. And then these Chimeras of deformity will be sent back to hell and there burn to Cinders in the flames of their own malice."

Thus, methinks, I hear the best of offenders argue, nor can I blame a high blood to swell when it is coupled and counterchecked with baseness and corruption. Yet this shows an anger passing near akin to envy and alludes much to the saying of an excellent Poet:

Women never
Love beauty in their Sex, but envy ever.

They have Caesar's ambition and desire to be one and alone, but yet to offend themselves to grieve others is a revenge dissonant to Reason. And, as Euripides saith, a woman of that malicious nature is a fierce Beast and most pernicious to the Commonwealth, for she hath power by example to do it a world of injury. But far be such cruelty from the softness of their gentle dispositions: O let them remember what the Poet saith:

Women be
Fram'd with the same parts of the minde as we:
Nay Nature triumphant in thier beauties birth,
And women made the glory of the earth,
The life of beauty, in whose simple brests,
(As in her fairest lodging) Vertue rests:
Whose towering thoughts attended with remorse,
Doe make their fairnesse be of greater force.

But when they thrust virtue out of doors, and give a shameless liberty to every loose passion, that eithertheir weak thoughts engenders, or the discourse of wicked tongues can charm into their yielding busoms (much too apt to be opened with any lockpick of flattering and deceitful insinuation) then they turn Maskers, Mummers, nay Monsters in their disguises, and so they may catch the bridle in their teeth, and run away with their Rulers, they care not into what dangers they plunge either their Fortunes or Reputations, the disgrace of the whole Sex, or the blot and obloquy of their private Families, according to the saying of the Poets:

Such is the cruelty of womenkind,
When they have shaken off the shamefast band
With which wise Nature did them strongly bind
T'obey the hests of man's well ruling hand,
That then all rule and reason they withstand
To purchase a licentious liberty.
But virtuous women wisely understand
That they were born to base humility,
Unless the heavens them lift to lawful sovereignty.

To you therefore that are Fathers, Husbands, or Sustainers of these new Hermaphrodites belongs the cure of this Impostume. It is you that give fuel to the flames of their wild indiscretion; you add the oil which makes their stinking Lamps defile the whole house with filthy smoke, and your purses purchase these deformities at rates both dear and unreasonable. Do you but hold close your liberal hands or take strict account of the employment of the treasure you give to their necessary maintenance, and these excesses will either cease or else die smothered in the Tailor's Trunk for want of Redemption.

Seneca, speaking of liberality, will by no means allow that any man should bestow either on friend, wife, or children anytreasure to be spent upon ignoble uses, for it not only robs the party of the honor of bounty and takes from the deed the name of a Benefit, but also makes him conscious and guilty of the crimes which are purchased by such a gratuity. Be, therefore, the Scholars of Seneca, and your Wives, Sisters, and Daughters will be the Coheirs of modesty.

Lycurgus the law-giver made it death in one of his Statutes to bring in any new custom into his Commonwealth. Do you make it the utter loss of your favor and bounty to have brought into your Family any new fashion or disguise that might either deform Nature or be an injury to modesty. So shall shamefastness and comeliness ever live under your roof, and your Wives and Daughters, like Vines and fair Olives, ever spread with beauty round about your Tables.

The Lacedaemonians, seeing that their children were better taught by examples than precepts, had hanging in their houses in fair painted tablets all the Virtues and Vices that were in those days reigning with their rewards and punishments. Oh, have you but in your houses the fashions of all attires constantly and without change held and still followed through all parts of Christendom! Let them but see the modest Dutch, the stately Italian, the rich Spaniard, and the courtly French with the rest according to their climates, and they will blush that in a full fourth part of the world there cannot be found one piece of a Character to compare or liken with the absurdity of their Masculine Invention. Nay, they shall see that their naked Countryman, which had liberty with his Shears to cut from every Nation of the World one piece or patch to make up his garment, yet amongst them all could not find this Miscellany or mixture of deformities which, only by those which whilst they retained any spark of womanhood were both loved and admired, is loosely, indiscreetly, wantonly, and most unchastely invented.

And therefore, to knit up this imperfect Declamation, let every Female-Masculine that by her ill eximples is guilty of Lust or Imitation cast off her deformities and clothe herself in the rich garments which the Poet bestows upon her in these Verses following:

Those Virtues that in women merit praise
Are sober shows without, chaste thoughts within,
True Faith and due obedience to their mate,
And of their children honest care to take.

FINIS

Also see:

"The Spartan Women", The Politics of Aristotle: Politics, Book II B Ch. IX: 5-16.

Memoirs Of Louis XIV And The Regency, Vol. III, Chapter II (excerpt) -- byt the Duke of Saint-Simon

. · 11 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

MEMOIRS OF LOUIS XIV AND THE REGENCY

By the

DUKE OF SAINT-SIMON

Vol. III

CHAPTER II.

Daily Occupations of Madame de Maintenon--Her Policy--How She Governed the King's Affairs -- Connivance with the Ministers....

IT MUST not be imagined that in order to maintain her position Madame de Maintenon had need of no address. Her reign, on the contrary, was only one continual intrigue; and that of the King a perpetual dupery.

Her mornings, which she commenced very early, were occupied with obscure audiences for charitable or spiritual affairs. Pretty often, at eight o'clock in the morning, or earlier, she went to some minister; the ministers of war, above all those of finance, were those with whom she had most business.

Ordinarily as soon as she rose, she went to St. Cyr, dined in her apartment there alone, or with some favorite of the house, gave as few audiences as possible, ruled over the arrangements of the establishment, meddled with the affairs of convents, read and replied to letters, directed the affairs of the house, received information and letters from her spies, and returned to Versailles just as the King was to enter her rooms. When older and more infirm, she would lie down in bed on arriving between seven and eight o'clock in the morning at St. Cyr, or take some remedy.

Toward nine o'clock in the evening two waiting women came to undress her. Immediately afterward, her maitre d' hotel or a valet de chambre brought her her supper--soup or something light. As soon as she had finished her meal, her women put her to bed, and all this in the presence of the King and his minister, who did not cease working or speak lower. This done, ten o'clock had arrived; the curtains of Madame de Maintenon were drawn, and the King went to supper, after saying good night to her.

When with the King in her own room, they each occupied an arm chair, with a table between them, at either side of the fireplace, hers toward the bed, the King's with the back to the wall, where was the door of the antechamber ; two stools were before the table, one for the minister who came to work, the other for his papers.

During the work Madams de Maintenon read or worked at tapestry. She heard all that passed between the King and his minister, for they spoke out loud. Rarely did she say anything, or, if so, it was of no moment. The King often asked her opinion; then she replied with great discretion. Never did she appear to lay stress on anything, still less to interest herself for anybody, but she had an understanding with the minister, who did not dare to oppose her in private, still less to trip in her presence. When some favor or some post was to be granted, the matter was arranged between them beforehand; and this it was that sometimes delayed her, without the King or anybody knowing the cause.

She would send word to the minister that she wished to speak to him. He did not dare to bring anything forward until he had received her orders; until the revolving mechanism of each day had given them the leisure to confer together. That done, the minister proposed and showed a list. If by chance the King stopped at the name Madame de Maintenon wished, the minister stopped too, and went no further. If the King stopped at some other, the minister proposed that he should look at those which were also fitting, allowed the King leisure to make his observations, and profited by them, to exclude the people who were not wanted. Rarely did he propose expressly the name to which he wished to come, but always suggested several that he tried to balance against each other, so as to embarrass the King in his choice. Then the King asked his opinion, and the minister, after touching upon other names, fixed upon the one he had selected.

The King nearly always hesitated, and asked Madame de Maintenon what she thought. She smiled, shammed incapacity, said a word upon some other name, then returned, if she had not fixed herself there at first; to that which the minister had proposed; so that three-fourths of the favors and opportunities which passed through the hands of the ministers in her rooms--and three-fourths even of the remaining fourth--were disposed of by her. Sometimes when she had nobody for whom she cared, it was the minister, with her consent and her help, who decided, without the King having the least suspicion. He thought he disposed of everything by himself; while, in fact, he disposed only of the smallest part, and always then by chance, except on the rare occasions when he specially wished to favor some one.

As for state matters, if Madame de Maintenon wished to make them succeed, fail, or turn in some particular fashion (which happened much less often than where favors and appointments were in the wind), the same intelligence and the same intrigue were carried on between herself and the minister. By these particulars it will be seen that this clever woman did nearly all she wished, but not when or how she wished.

There was another scheme if the King stood out: it was to avoid decision by confusing and spinning out the matter in hand, or by substituting another as though arising opportunely out of it, and by which it was turned aside, or by proposing that some explanations should be obtained. The first ideas of the King were thus awakened, and the charge was afterward returned to, with the same address, oftentimes with success.

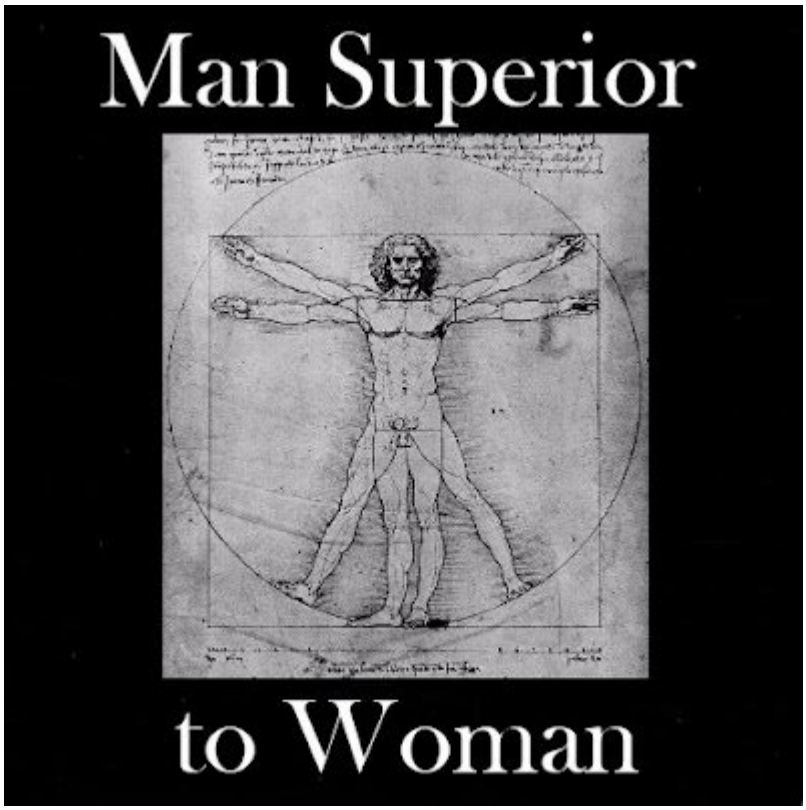
It is this which made the ministers so necessary to Madame de Maintenon, and her so necessary to them. She rendered them, in fact, continual services by means of the King, in return for the services they rendered her. The mutual concerns therefore, between her and them were infinite; the King, all the while, not having the slightest suspicion of what was going on!

The power of Madame de Maintenon was, as may be imagined, immense. She had everybody in her hands, from the highest and most favored ministers to the meanest subject of the realm. Many people have been ruined by her, without having been able to discover the author of the ruin, search as they might. All attempts to find a remedy were equally unsuccessful....

THE MEN'S TRIBUNE

Man Superior to Woman -- by A Gentleman, 1739

. · 12 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original



Man *Superior* to Woman;

OR, A

V I N D I C A T I O N

OF

MAN's Natural Right

OF

Sovereign AUTHORITY

O V E R T H E

W O M A N

Containing a plain Confutation of the fallacious Arguments of SOPHIA, in her late Treatise entitled, Woman not inferior to Man. Interspersed with a Variety of Characters, of different Kinds of Women, drawn from Life.

To which is prefix'd, a Dedication to the Ladies.

By a G E N T L E M A N.

You here in Miniature you Pictures see,
Nor hope from Zincks more Justice than from me.
My portraits grace your Mind, as his your Side;
His Portraits will inflame, mine quench your Pride.
He's dear, you frugal: choose my cheaper Lay,
And be your Reformation all my Pay. Young.

L O N D O N:
Printed for T. Cooper, at the Globe in Pater-noster Row.
1739.

.
Dedication to the Ladies
.
Introduction
.
Chapter One
(Whether the Superiority of the Men over the Women be not founded on something more solid than Custom and Prejudice.)
.
Chapter Two
(In what esteem the Women are held by the Men, and how justly.)
.
Chapter Three
(Whether Women are equal to Men in their intellectual Capacity, or not.)
.
Chapter Four
(Whether the Women are equally qualified with Men for Government and Public Offices.)
.
Chapter Five
(What Capacity the Women have for Sciences.)
.
Chapter Six
(Whether Women are naturally qualified for Military Offices, or not?)
.
Conclusion
.

Man Superior to Woman - Dedication to the Ladies

. · 12 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

From “Man Superior to Woman” – by Anonymous, 1739

.

DEDICATION *to the* LADIES.

LOVELY CREATURES,

If openly to attack so fair and favourite a part of human society, as you are, will seem a confident attempt; it will appear a much bolder one, to lay at your feet, for approbation, the very instrument of your pain, still warm and reeking from the wound it has given you. Methinks, I see some pretty Lady pouting with an indignation so amiable that a man would almost, for the sake of beholding, purposely study to pique her. What! says the charming, peevish thing, is not striking at our honour in every tender part, an injury great enough, unless the aggressor insult us with the very weapon which has just executed his cruel purpose? Must we not only feel the barbarous edge of his ungenerous satire but be taunted with a dedication of it?

And truly, I must own, if we are to judge of things by their first appearances, the angry fair-one's transport is not quite unreasonable. But still, Ladies, if you allow yourselves leisure to reflect, you will not only be far from considering me, with like passion, as an insolent enemy, but will look upon it as your common Interest to acknowledge me a generous friend. Examine but the nature of the operation I have performed and the disease which made it necessary, and you will consider me in the true character I act in, which is not that of a merciless assassin whose end is destruction; but that of an honourable surgeon, who makes no incision, but to let in a cure where it is wanting; as I have already hinted elsewhere.

As I have employed a good deal of time in the study of your fair beings, I could not help discovering, in several of you, many visible tumours, in mind and heart, which, like pimples on your faces, were injurious to your real charms, and obstructive of the rational delight you were born to receive and bestow. Nevertheless the same tender respect, which made me anxious in wishing you an effectual riddance of them, restrained me from attempting to remove them myself; I saw no probable means of succeeding to my wish but by such an operation as must give exquisite smart to some, however beneficial is was likely to prove to all. But when I saw a rash hand from among your fair selves, indiscreetly busied in clogging your evils, already too dangerous, with the more dangerous poultice of pride and ambition, I thought it high time to spare you the threatening gangrene, at the expense of some anguish, by applying where necessary the lancet of satire to let out those imposthumes, which the pretty, undefigning traitress was labouring to render incurable.

I would beg fair Sophia's pardon for giving her the title of traitress, if I did not think the epithet, undefigning, sufficient to dispense me from Apologies. I am far from imagining, she had the least sinister view in the work she has published: On the contrary, I am inwardly convinced, her intentions were excellent. For though I have not the honour of happiness to know the charming creature, however I wish for both; the noble sentiments and virtuous dispositions, she discovers in that ingenious essay, oblige me to consider her as another Angelica, at once her sex's noblest ornament, and liveliest reproach, as well as the most illustrious example their virtuous ambition can aspire to copy after. If all women were like her, we should have little danger to apprehend from coming into her Ladyship's notions; and I might have spared the pains of a desperate remedy to try to make them such. But as the case is quite otherwise, and their dangerous evils call for a dangerous cure; I flatter myself, lovely creatures, that she, and all such of you as are like her, will approve me for attempting one. How much more concerned I am for your happiness than my own safety must appear from my entering the lists against a Lady so formidable as Sophia must be, if the charms of her person are equal to those of her soul.

If my zeal for your felicity and safety has rendered me eager to rescue you from imminent misery; it has equally tempered that eagerness with a regard for your natural delicacy in the manner of doing it. So that wherever I found amputation necessary, without sparing proud flesh, I have been sparing of the quick. But if nevertheless I have not been able to pursue the honest end of my wishes, without giving pain to some of you, let your resentment be levelled, not at the instrument of your cure, but at the evils which called for it; not at the hand which directed it, but at that which provoked it. Instead then of frowning on me as an enemy who has a design on your honour and happiness; if you have either at heart, you will exert all your industry to show, how far you are from being incurable in your evils, by reaping the benefits of a cure offered you; and how little you are aversed to that cure, by receiving into your graces the person who has generously endeavoured to perform it at the risk of displeasing you.

Or otherwise, lovely creatures, if you are insensible of being, or unwilling to own yourselves, in need of a cure; let that natural love of change which is so bewitching in you justify my presenting to you this little lovegift in a different shape, by changing the allegory. The transition, however unconnected, is no impropriety in an address to such pretty variable things as you. Fancy then that it is a useful pocket-mirror I present you with. It is at least capable of answering the best ends of one, if consulted with the same attention as the glasses on your toilets. Indeed you will find it less flattering than most of those are; but perhaps it may prove the more useful for being so; and therefore ought to be, at least, equally agreeable to you. By showing you to yourselves in a true light, it will, I hope, enable you to improve the real excellencies, and to remove out of sight all the blemishes you may discover in yourselves. And as patches and paint will be useless to hide the defects which this will point you out, it may possibly set you on finding out better expedients to prevent the ill effects of them than the daubing disguise of affectation.

Accept then this little token of my regard for you, in the light I propose it in, and I am confident you cannot be out of temper with the donor. For should any of you chance to see yourselves in a Salacia, an Uberia, a Pavonia, or some other as little pleasing figure, 'tis not the truth of the representation, but yourselves you must fall out with for being so like what you are so unwilling to be thought like. And such of you, as may applaud yourselves in the merit of an Angelica, can have no reason to be angry with me for placing you in company, which can only serve to see your charms in a more conspicuous light.

If I have not represented all women in that amiable character, it is not my fault, but theirs, who refute or neglect to assume it, that I have not placed you all in as lovely light as some of you deserve to be, and all are capable of being. For if you are not all Angelicas, you all have the power to be such. And therefore, if, notwithstanding all I have said, you are still resolved to consider me as an enemy, for exposing the deformity of some of you, you have a fair opportunity of glutting an honourable revenge by unanimously assuming Angelica's character.

By this means you will condemn me to the infamy of a scandalous libeller, and make all I have advanced, to the disgrace of your sex in general, be branded by future ages with the ignominious title of impudent falshood. And should this undertaking be happy enough to provoke you to such a noble resentment, I shall think my labour amply rewarded by the fruit it produces. For such is the ardent zeal I have for your real felicity, that I would gladly fall a sacrifice to the worst effects of your indignation, to have the merit of contributing towards the making you the perfect beings, in your kind, I wish to see you, as Lovely Creatures

.

Your disinterested Votary

.

.

Introduction

.

Back to the “Man Superior to Woman” Index

Man Superior to Woman - Introduction

. · 12 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

From “Man Superior to Woman” – by Anonymous, 1739

.

MAN Superior to WOMAN

INTRODUCTION

The very great tenderness, I have always expressed and really felt for the fairsex, would by no means suffer me now to exert my pen against that delicate part of the creation which has hitherto engrossed my best wishes; if justice to my own sex, a disinterested zeal for the prosperity of the other, and an invincible love of truth, did not oblige me to render them service by opposing them.

Nature, ever reminding me that I was born of a woman, bids me respect that endearing name: yet honour, not allowing me to forget by whom I was begotten, forbids me to derogate from the dignity of man. However generosity then may incline me to favour the women, by overlooking their real imperfections, and putting an advantageous gloss on their little merits; it is an act of justice I owe to my own sex to defend its prerogatives, when openly attacked by the too daring ambition of the other.

From the beginning of the world till now, our sex has enjoyed an undisputed sovereignty over the other, and their joint consent in all ages sufficiently proves our possession not usurped. Hitherto, the women, conscious of their own inabilities, have cheerfully acknowledged the authority which wisdom gives to men over them, content with the soft dominion which love secures to them over the men. In a word the little glimmering of reason, which Heaven bestowed on them out of compassion to us, that they might be in some degree a sort of rational amusement to us, was sufficient to convince them of the justness of their subjection. And so far from accusing Nature of partiality in making them vassals to us, they were sensible that she had been but too bountiful in bestowing on them the privilege of reigning in the hearts of their lords: a privilege which we have hitherto been too generous to grudge them; having no danger to apprehend from leaving our hearts in the keeping of women, while the heads of the fair-keepers themselves were in due subjection to our own.

But the case must necessarily alter from the minute that sex forgets its allegiance to us. Once the women presume to call in question the great duty of vassalage to us, it must be time to withdraw our hearts from their power. They can no longer be safe in the custody of such women as refuse to submit their heads to our authority.

The joint industry of the *fair* of all times, in labouring to make themselves agreeable to us, is a standing proof that that is the great business they were created for, and that the acquiring our love and esteem is the highest end their ambition ought to soar to; as the possession of *both* is the great and sole happiness they are capable of enjoying in this life. But how can they hope ever to reach *either*, without persevering in the use of those methods which alone can render them worthy to obtain what they aim at. How shall they appear any longer agreeable in our eyes, once they throw off that modesty and subjection which alone can give even their native charms the force to please us? What title will they have left to our favour and indulgence, from the moment they begin to dispute our power and prerogative over them? In a word, if, instead of making use of the little complaisances we have for their weakness to redouble their obedience and fidelity to us, they aspire to become our equals; ought we not, in justice to ourselves and for instruction to them, to show them that it has been owing to our own generosity more than to any right they claim, that we have not hitherto treated them only as our less useful slaves?

However one should be apt to imagine that women had their own interest more at heart than to reduce us to this extremity. Who could conceive that any one of that sex should be so much an enemy to herself and the rest, as to risk the forfeiture of that liberty which the *men* have so graciously raised them to, merely for the sake of grasping at a libertinism which they are sure of never attaining to? And yet, inconceivable as it is, our own times can show a very
recent instance of it in a Lady, who, perhaps, for the sake of becoming an author, has taken abundance of pains to convince us that there is no excess of extravagance which that sex cannot attempt; and no presumption in them which merits our surprise.

Every one will be able to guess that I am speaking of SOPHIA, that enlightened Lady, who, after a prescription which scarce any duration but that of eternity can out-date, has surprisingly found out that *man* is not superior to *woman* in any thing but what she pleases to call *brutal strength*. So extravagant an assertion cannot but be attended with very fatal consequences to both sexes, if listened to by the women: and what will not woman listen to which flatters her vanity, ambition, curiosity or love of change?

For women have fantastic constitutions,
Inconstant as their wishes, ever wavering
And never fixed. *Ven. Pres.*

. . . To show them how much I am their friend, and how sincerely I wish to preserve them in that degree which the generosity of the men has lifted them to, I shall here render them all the service their tender capacities will permit me to do, by endeavouring to open their eyes to the discovery of the gay illusions of this aspiring Lady; that they may not become the dupes of her friendly but mistaken zeal for them, which might otherwise do them more mischief than their greatest enemies could wish done, or than their native charms could possibly repair.

This dexterous female, to give us a sample of the expertness of her sex at invention, has artfully enough thrown in a caveat against any man's being judge of the equality or inferiority of merit in women, as compared with men: because truly the men are to be considered as parties concerned, and therefore must all be partial in their judgment. However, I must beg leave to observe, that though it be true that the generality of both sexes are weak enough to give prejudice and interest the preference to truth and justice, yet even Sophia herself cannot be so rashly censorious as to imagine that all are unjust alike. And therefore she must own that some few men may be found among us, who, supposing their interest to be ever so nearly concerned, would nevertheless be honest enough to acknowledge the women for their equals, if there was the least appearance of reason in their favour; and to make them every concession they had a right to demand.

For my own part at least I have so indefeasible a right to be ranked in the number of those few, that the most jealous of their sex cannot dispute my title. For on one side, I can have no interest to bias me, having nothing to hope or fear from my own sex, and expecting as little from the opposite. And on the other, if I have received any partiality or inclination, it is all for the women. I do not say this out of any ambition of being judge in so unthankful an affair, in which it will be impossible to do justice to one party without giving the other offence. And I of all men have the least reason to court the occasion of displeasing those amiable creatures; who cannot myself give them the slightest pain without sharing with them in it.

Instead therefore of taking upon me the office of deciding the merit of the fairsex, and the degree they ought to stand in comparatively with the men, I shall leave it to themselves to be the judges in their own cause, after I have fairly stated what is worthy observation on both sides of the debate. For I can by no means apprehend anything from their partiality, or prejudice, when I consider how much it is to their own advantage to be just to the men, and how seldom they are guilty of disregarding their own private interests.

The more suspicious part of our sex may perhaps think it dangerous to trust the woman to judge of anything where reason is concerned, on account of the weakness of their intellects, which seldom can reach higher than a head-dress. But to remove all objections of this kind, I shall endeavour to make the matter plain to them, by treating it in the most familiar manner. And as well to prevent their weakening the little understanding they have by keeping it too much upon the stretch, as to save them from exposing their slight-pinioned fancy to the resistless beams of scrutiny by soaring above their capacity, I shall do my utmost to make reason stoop to their comprehension, by confining myself entirely to their sphere. In doing this I know it will be expected that I take notice of whatever may seem worthy of any in the pretty whimsical treatise with which Sophia has thought fit to divert the public: and therefore I shall follow the method she has pointed out to me. However I must beg to be excused from being accessary to her losing herself and her partisans in the maze of theory, a ground too holy for female feet to tread with impunity. No; practice is the boundary of their province; and therefore I shall wholly confine myself, in this little treatise, to practical reasoning, except where I am obliged to step aside to recover my bewildered fair antagonist from the danger of straying out of her latitude.

It will be a needless repetition, to say that my only motive in opposing this Lady is the desire of seconding her good intention, by doing effectual service to her sex; as my only view in laying open their foibles is the hope I conceive of rendering them less pernicious to themselves. However, tender as I design to be in handling the faults of these delicate creatures, I am sensible that an operation of this kind cannot but give them some smart. Nevertheless resolved, like an honest surgeon, to conquer the little reluctances of a heart disposed to compassion, I shall rather choose to give them a little momentary pain, than suffer them out of false tendencies to risk a more fatal mortification. The little uneasiness, which the probing of their blemishes may occasion, will be amply atoned for by the gangrene it will prevent; especially since natural propensity towards them will incline me to use them as gently as possible. Not that I can think of seeing a delirious man fond of the man which trepans him. I only flatter myself that once they have received benefit enough from it to be sensible of the necessity of it, they will thank me for my labour: a labour in which neither passion nor prejudice, and much less interest, could have any share, with one whose age and state of life raise him above being biased by the smiles of their sex, or the frowns of his own. So that even those pretty incurables, whom nothing will be sufficient to prevail with to consider me in any other light than that of an enemy, cannot without injustice deny me to be a generous one: though how far I am from being one at all will best appear in the conclusion of this little piece. And therefore relying on the uprightness of my own intentions, and the manner of executing them. I shall confidently proceed to the subject in question. But before we descend to particulars, it will not be improper to examine in general,

.

.

Chapter One

.

Back to the “Man Superior to Woman” Index

Man Superior to Woman - Chapter One

. · 12 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

From “Man Superior to Woman” – by Anonymous, 1739

.

CHAPTER I.

Whether the Superiority of the Men over the Women be not founded on something more solid than Custom and Prejudice.

It cannot be denied that the ingenious Lady, whom I have to contend with, is, for a woman, no despicable adversary. The cause indeed she has undertaken to defend is none of the best. But bad as it is, she has been cautious enough to make use of all the means practicable to render her arguments, in the support of it, unanswerable. She could not, without a degree in blindness, possibly overlook the irrefragable authority of a practice founded upon a prescription as ancient as human nature. She knew that the superiority of man over woman was no novelty to either sex ever since Adam's time; and therefore imagined, as well she might, that it could be no easy matter to invert this disposition of things, so venerable from the single consideration of its antiquity, without removing the obstacle which custom put in her way, by lessening the regard which the most considerate are inclined to pay to it. This she has endeavoured to do, but how?Why truly by enumerating some few instances, in which mankind of both sexes have been led into error by a blind prejudice in favour of habitual ignorance, and not of practical positive custom: and those too instances of a particular nature, and in which all men were not concerned, as the disbelief of the *Antipodes,* the supposed *spirits of machinery*, and the fancied *machinery of cartesian animals*. Whereas to convince us that custom is never to be regarded, she should have instanced some one *custom* as universal with relation to place and time, as that of woman's subjection to man, in which mankind had confessedly found themselves in error.

As this is past her skill to do, it is plain she has run beyond her mark, and contrary to her design established an argument in favour of man's authority over woman on the very principle of custom, which she with so much industry and artifice laboured to undermine. For it cannot without rashness be doubted but that mankind being rational creatures and therefore not only directed, but even of themselves inclined, to do nothing without reason, they must have consulted reason for the introduction of such practices as have been universally received by both sexes in all places, and at all times. Insomuch that it is impossible for any in their senses to conceive that right reason and prudence had no hand in establishing the customs, which both oblige us to conform to, and which we cannot deviate from without breaking in upon order and decency.

Of this nature is the custom, if *Sophia* chooses to call it so, which directs the women to be subject and submissive to the heaven-derived authority of their natural sovereign *man*: a custom, which, whether right or wrong, must so nearly concern every individual of human nature, that neither sex could be supposed so indifferent to their happiness, as not to consult reason before they established or rejected it. And therefore, since both sexes from the creation unanimously established this practice and handed it down, through all ages to our own, it is the height of temerity to impute the power of men over women to inconsiderate custom, or to any cause inferior to reason and prudence.

. . . No, let any one affirm, if truth will permit, that the women were ever treated in any one nation made up of both sexes, upon a better footing than inferior subjects; fit at best only to be the upper servants in their families.

This is the light in which they have always been viewed here in England; the place in the world where the fair sex is the most regarded, and perhaps deserves most to be so. And every one knows how much worse they are looked

upon in some countries where they are esteemed absolute slaves. In China they are confined to see no one but their husbands and children; and have their feet kept small on purpose to prevent their gadding. In Turkey they are pampered
prisoners at best. Almost throughout Asia, Africa and America wives are but housemaids for life. In most parts of Europe indeed they are treated a little more gently; though the difference is but little in Italy, and scarce discernible in Spain. In a word they are every where employed in nothing but what is low and servile. Their highest dignities are limited to housewifery, and their common use is to be kept for breeders. In England alone it is that they are raised to the
office of dissipators of our more intense thoughts, amusing lullers of our care and application, and a kind of under-companions to us, when reason is disposed to relax. Nor is it easy to comprehend how it is possible to raise them higher, with any show of reason, considering their natural incapacity for every thing above the sphere they actually move in. So that however the men might be disposed, and whatever endeavour they might make use of, to alter the present disposition of matters with regard to the fair-sex, it is absolutely impossible to succeed in it.

It is doubtless for this reason that the wisest of law-givers, in founding their common-wealths, have never once established any thing in favour of an equality between both sexes. Their laws, on the contrary, have tended only to confirm the women in an entire subjection to the men. The generality of the learned of all ages have advanced many things to the disadvantage of woman: but not one has ever thought of adding the least privilege to those we have in general agreed to allow them. Nay the wise of all times and places are so unanimous in the establishment of the men's sovereignty over women, that one should be apt to imagine they had conspired together; but for the evident impossibility, that so many persons of different ages, distant climes, and opposite interests, unknown to each other, should be able to combine with one another. Whence it is plain to a demonstration, that the state of subordination, which woman is in to man, must have been dictated at least by reason and prudence.

This alone might suffice to show how greatly the Lady my antagonist is overseen in imputing the power of our sex over her own to blind custom and inconsiderate prejudice. But what will confirm it still more, is the universal ease with which the women of all ages have supported this their condition. The general content with which they submit is a plain proof, that they look upon submission as a natural duty they owe to us; and that, conscious of the legalness of our authority, they pass the same judgment on their dependency as every man does. Insomuch that both sexes appear convinced that their souls are as different as their bodies, and that there ought to be as great distinction between the two sexes in all the functions of life as there is in that of instrumentally producing it. All which considered, no woman in her senses can doubt of the subjection of that sex to ours being dictated at least by the Laws of Nature and Reason. . . .

Her All is but a Show,
Rather than solid Virtue; all but a Rib,
Crooked by Nature.
Oh! why did God,
Creator wise, that peopled highest Heaven
With Spirits masculine, create at last
This Novelty on Earth! this fair Defect
Of Nature! and not fill the World at once
With Men, as Angels, without Feminine,
Or find some other Way to generate Mankind.
- Milton

Heaven took him sleeping when he Woman made,
Had Man been waking he had ne'er consented.
- Dryden

. . . Let it suffice that I have shown how much inferior to us they are, from their Creation, if considered in themselves, and now I shall proceed to examine a little farther with *Sophia*.

.

.

Chapter Two

.

Back to the “Man Superior to Woman” Index

Man Superior to Woman - Chapter Two

. · 12 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

From “Man Superior to Woman” – by Anonymous, 1739

CHAPTER II

.

In what esteem the Women are held by the Men, and how justly.

My fair adversary is undoubtedly right in saying that "the men are unanimous in thinking women made only for their use, fit only to breed and nurse children in their tender years, to mind household affairs, and to obey, serve and please the masters" appointed them by Heaven. And would not all women be as right in thinking the same with men? Can it be doubted by the Christian *Sophia* that her sex was made for our use, after St. Paul has told her in his Epistle to the Corinthians that the man was not made for the woman, but the woman for the man?

. . . Though the consideration of man's not being created till all creatures were in readiness for him be no contemptible argument of their being created for his use; yet it is far from being the only one on which he builds his authority. It is the only one indeed which *Sophia* thought to her purpose to alledge; though had she allowed herself time to reflect, woman as she is, she might have been able to see how little it suits the purpose she has applied it to. For she is certainly mistaken in saying, that, "if this argument has any weight at all, it must equally prove that the men were made for the woman's use rather than she for theirs." And her mistake, it is plain, arises from the vulgar error of imagining that woman was created at all. Whereas any understanding inferior to that of woman, if such a being could exist, would be capable of discerning that the production of that weak sex was no distinct creation from that of man. . . Let not *Sophia* then nor any of her sex glory any more in their disgrace. Let them not be vain of the title of creatures which our sex is so generous to compliment them with; rather ought they to reject it as flattery, since they cannot themselves but be convinced that we can look upon the most perfect of their sex in no better a light than a kind of amphibious thing between a creature and no creature; and therefore man, who calls them creatures, must mean very *poor* creatures indeed.

After what I have just now said, good breeding obliges me to add, that, whenever I let the word drop in the course of this little treatise, it neither is nor will be my meaning to offend, or call them names; but a desire of complying with *fashion*, a goddess ever sacred in their tender eyes. However, to show more fully my aversion to abusing them, whenever I may chance to give them the title of creatures, I shall take the precaution of adding the softening epithets, *pretty, charming, beautiful, etc,* which, unless I am more unfortunate than others before me, would, I know, be looked upon by the generality of them as a sufficient atonement for the grossest invectives.

Though I will allow the women to deserve that some care should be taken of them, in consideration of the part they have in the propogation of human nature, as a field does on account of the vegetables it produces; yet I cannot see the reason why they are to be considered on a level with the men they bring forth, any more than that the mould in a garden is to be equally valued with the fruits it produces; unless the Ladies place a merit in the superior propensity they have above men to this office of life. But how ever they may value themselves upon this score, I am apt to believe that they, who have the most of this sort of merit, are not such as have the least of our disesteem.

To name but one instance of the many which this one town affords, Salacia is undeniably rich in this kind of worth, and too much so to obtain the esteem of the more moderate even of her own sex. It is true she is fair, most exquisitely fair; but not more fair than wanton. The charms of her person can be excelled by nothing, but the brightness of her wit; which bears so near a resemblance to sense that any man would be liable to mistake it for

such, who should lay down reflection but for a minute. Her good nature is boundless, and her evenness of temper not to be ruffled. In short, all the blemishes which compose the perfections of her sex, she possesses in so high a degree, that we could not but acknowledge her worthy of something very like our esteem, if all these feminine accomplishments were not eclipsed by one more, which absorbs all the rest. She is sensible that the chief end she was made for is to breed; and therefore is unweariedly solicitous to answer that end. The good man she pitched upon for a husband, as the most likely to second her procreative zeal, is indeed every way qualified to answer the expectations of any woman less public- spirited than herself; and is rather industrious than indolent in the duty of propogation. But the misfortune is, that his industry to forward the Lady's good intentions serves only to point out his inability, and to convince her, that all mankind are scarce a sufficient match for one woman, whose zeal nothing less could gratify than being the immediate mother of all men. If she herself is not so, it is more to be ascribed to the obstinacy of fate than any slackness in her capricious disposition which takes in the whole creation of men. Had she her will she would breed in every pore. And if she is not incessantly employed in this important office, it is for want of a perpetual succession of help-mates. Though to give her her due Nature itself is not more active in multiplying, than she in procuring them. As she is never tired with labouring towards the preservation of the species, no assistant comes amiss to her. Her taste is as little nice as her appetite is never sated nor satiable. In the act of gratifying it, like a true woman,

No hungry Churl feeds coarser at a feast;
Every rank Fool goes down: Otway

And in the few short intervals of bodily inactivity, her mind is ever busied in preparing for action. Awake she is ever conceiving in body or soul; and her very slumbers are so many rough draughts of future embryos. If nevertheless none of them are brought to maturity, it is not for want of manuring the soil which should produce them: In this so far from being sparing she is profuse; for, as the polite Lord Lansdown says of another heroine of the same class, I may say,

She's mine, or thine, and strolling up and down
Sucks in more Filth than and Sink in Town.

It is true, indeed, that all this extravagant merit in *Salacia*, entitles her to no degree of esteem from our sex or her own. Her too eager desire of being serviceable to the human species renders her useless, nay destructive to it. What colonies might not the motley nation of foetuses within her have peopled, if properly dispersed? . . . which are now too busy in struggling for room to aim at maturity; and too much taken up, in their intestine war, with destroying each other, to add one perfect individual to the decaying numbers of mankind. In a word, what esteem can we have for a woman made barren by excess of fertility, and lavish of the choicest fruits of the creation by an insatiable lust of monopolizing them?

Clavia, it must be owned has been more cautious, though not less criminal. Disposed from her cradle to become a common *recevoir* of human nature, she took care not to launch out into wholesale lechery, till she furnished the world with a breeder in her stead. Indeed she makes ample amends in her old age for the little time she lost in her prime, by converting her house into a public stew, and making herself the sewer of it. All men are welcome there, if provided with brawn, though unprovided with breeches, from the tall apothecary to the luftylimbed porter. Though neither the purchased roses on her cheeks, nor the borrowed ivory in her gums would have any power over the most rampant, even of her powdered, pampered, parti-coloured stallions-in-keeping, if the yellow charms of all enchanting gold, which the God of waste has lavished upon her, did not fill up the deep-indented furrows of seventy. 'Tis by this she is empowered, in the last stage of life, to vie with her sex in the favourite commerce of their youth, and to convince the world, that though there are some women, whom the whole collection of mankind would be an equal match for, there are others again of more extensive inclinations, who, but for the short date of their existence, could unweariedly weary a new creation of men in the business of enjoyment. Not that she herself

is capable of reaping any thing from fruition but the guilt of it - too old and battered to produce even a monster, and too inanimate for any sensation, she has nothing to enjoy but sin. And this her eager soul has such a talent for, that, like the demon who inspires her, she can take in an eternity of lust into one single minute. And multiply one libidinous act into an infinity. Such are the pretty creatures we are to esteem for the talent of breeding.

The general rule however will admit of some exceptions: and *Sprucilla* is one. Formed by Heaven a perfect vehicle of human nature, she has every qualification requisite to reap the fruits of fruition, and no dislike to the pleasure of it. The graces have combined to enrich her with every endearment capable of charming the man she is married to, and making him forget himself, to stoop to the low but necessary office of rendering her really useful. But pride, predominant pride, is so prevalent in her, as to make her prefer the empty praise of a fine shape to that of being a mother of children. And if, in complying with her husband's wantonness to gratify her own, she is at any time made a mother before she is aware, so careless is she of the only good she is fit for, as rather to risk the loss of an heir to his estate, than to miss an opportunity of gaining new admirers at a ball or a play.

Among the unmarried women, what numberless tribes of useless things are there not, whose pride, avarice, fickleness or icy constitutions, rob human nature of the individuals they were intended to bear; and by not answering the use they were given to him for, become a dead weight upon man? Indeed, if there are some among them less squeamish than the rest, who atone out of wedlock for their slowness to engage in it; how few of them is human nature the better for? How many of them stifle the fruit of their pleasure before it is ripe? Not to speak of those disgraces to the soft shape they wear, who only delay destruction to make it more cruel.

Nor can it be deemed a sufficient amends to the creation for the many particles of human nature wafted and destroyed in their passage through these quicksanded, baneful channels, that there are a few married women, fertile enough to forward the propogation of man, and modest enough to moderate their pregnative zeal. Especially if we consider, how dearly their whims, their vanity, their extravagance, and fantastical humours make us purchase the service they do us. *Uberia* has blessed her husband with a numerous offspring, all his own. But she would scarce be a woman, if she did not take pains to make him sensible how expensive and troublesome a thing is a fruitful, faithful wife. Every lying-in costs him more than would make a handsome provision for the infant; besides an estate spent in the time of her breeding. Indeed she has economy enough to lose him no time between her bringing forth one child and preparing him another. The reason is, that there are two conditions in which her Ladyship can bear no contradiction, that is before delivery and after. And therefore she is in the perpetual possession of her own will, because ever with child or in the straw. However the happy father might be very well content to sell her a wood for every longing, to mortgage a manor for every lying-in, and to fell another for every Christening; nay to make her over, by deed of gift, the everlasting property of her own will, upon the bare condition of her leaving him the undisturbed possession of his. But nothing less can reward the prolific merit of this Lady than her husband's peace. He must not so much as look civilly on any other female. And such a miser is she of his manhood, that while she takes care to hoard up the principal to herself, she is as solicitous to secure even the interest. He must not have even the use of a single smile at his own disposal. His company must be such only as her Ladyship approves of; and them he must converse with no longer than his pretty fond thing of a wife can spare him from her embraces. At home, it is true, he never wants amusement, being sure in the daytime to be entertained with seeing his children either humoured into impertinencies, or chastised into faults; and rendered incorrigible by the folly, passion, and caprice of their fond, fickle, foolish mother; to contradict whom would cost nothing less than the price of another child. Then that he may not grow tired with such entertainments by daily repetition, they are ever succeeded by an evening interlude of vapours, ratasee, and tears, till bed invites him to repose; where, after he has glutted the kind creature's fonder fits, he is generally lulled to sleep, and awakened from it, by the melody of a curtain-serenade. Now can it be denied after all that Uberia's husband is a happy man; and that all men have reason to esteem the women for their prolific merit?

But that they should be entitled to any part of our esteem for nursing the children they bring forth for their

pleasure, I see nothing in it. What is it they do for infants which would not be much better done by the men, if they were not called away from that meaner task to provide for the safety and sustenance of them and their mothers? Indeed they may save the expense of milk, which we cannot: but how much more cheaply might this defect be supplied from a cow, a goat, or an ass than from them? And how few women of any condition in life have economy enough to save us this superfluous expense! Too delicate themselves, to bestow on the fruits of their own bowels the nutriment which heaven and nature design them, don't they force us to hire a mercenary wretch, to starve her own babe to give suck to ours? Pretty nurses indeed! Happy for man that the life of an infant does not entirely depend on the liberality of woman in this particular! And how much happier would it not be for all infants, were they snatched from the arms of the women, in the instant they are born! How much more healthy, wise, and comely would they grow! For 'tis notorious that the longer a child sucks the more weakly and stupid it turns out; and that those which suck at all are never so wise, so strong or well-formed as those which are brought up by hand. The reason is plain: with the milk they suck in, they generally imbibe a tincture of the follies, passions, and imbecillities of that sex, besides having their various distempers entailed upon them.

However, as this is a means of humiliation pointed out to us by Nature, we are not to condemn it, but to apply to it, when not to be avoided without danger to the infant. The greater mischief is that which comes from the weakness of woman in their manner of educating it. With what innumerable follies, vices, and impertinencies do they not fill children's heads, by their example and precepts, during the time of their nursing them! To what secret crimes do they often make them privy; and to what fanciful inconsistencies do they not publicly expose and encourage them!

I can forgive a mother for putting a doll into the hands of her daughters as soon as they are able to hold it. As the great end of their semi-creation is the getting of children, it may not be absolutely improper to forward their natural propensity to that duty, while they are but children themselves. But for this diligence in an industrious parent, here and there one of them might be so awkwardly innocent as not to know the essential difference of her own sex from the opposite, till the period of her passing from a maid to a mother. Whereas, by this and other helps they are generally supplied with, they are often as well versed as the most skilful matron, in the theory, if not in the practical knowledge of propogation, long before they are ripe for the fruits of it. A very
useful science to some young Ladies, who have been able to instruct an ignorant booby of a husband in the sacred and secret rites of wedlock, in a much more familiar manner than the modest *Albertus* could pretend to.

But I can by no means be reconciled to their training up our boys, as they do, from their earliest infancy, to folly, foppery, effeminacy, and vice. If little master must be humoured into pride, idleness, or mischief; why should he be taught to lie, cajole, dissemble to all above him, and domineer over all beneath him? If it is thought so necessary to acquaint him with the greatness of his birth and fortune, with the handsomness of his person, or the acuteness of his understanding, or any advantages he possesses above others designed by Nature for his equals; why must be he taught to make no better use of them than to disregard the authority of those above him, to envy his equals, to despise his inferiors, and render himself the contempt of all who know him, by an unlimited gratification of his lawless passions? Let his fond, foolish mother think it wonderfully pretty to initiate the little urchin in the mystery of intriguing with the little miffes of his companions: but let her not expose him to the danger of practising those intrigues in her absence, by abandoning him to the corrupt company of the wanton wenches, her servants. And yet how many of our youth, by such shocking education, have been utterly debauched at an age when we could scarce think it possible for them to have parted with innocence! Have we not then the greatest reason to esteem and revere that sex on account of the obligations we have to them for our early advances in the knowledge of good and evil? Must not we be lost to all reason, if we are not pleased with these eminent services which the pretty creatures are so industrious to do us? Or if not; must not *Sophia* be lost to all shame, should she again repeat without a blush that what she has so inconsiderately advanced "that their office of nursing our children entitles them to the *first place in civil society?"* If I had a mind to be severe, I could tell them, that it is owing to our own generosity that we give them any place at all; and that nothing, but the want of power to annihilate them, or to create a lower degree for them, can excuse our leaving them in possession even of the lowest place in society. But I choose to drop a subject so

much the more disagreeable as we are daily made sensible of the truth of it. I shall therefore immediately pass to another consideration.

Chapter Three

Back to the “Man Superior to Woman” Index

Man Superior to Woman - Chapter Three

. · 12 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

From “Man Superior to Woman” – by Anonymous, 1739

CHAPTER III

Whether Women are equal to Men in their intellectual Capacity, or not.

If the business of the mind were nothing more than to contrive a dress; to invent a new fashion; to set off a bad face; to heighten the charms of a good one; to understand the economy of a tea-table; to manage an intrigue; to conduct a game at quadrille, and to lay out new plans of pleasure, pride and luxury; then women must be owned to have a capacity not only equal but even superior to us. But as the understanding of man has infinitely higher objects to employ its speculations on, objects beyond the very aim of the ablest women; their intellectual faculties are so evidently inferior to his, that I should think it an impertinence in me to take up any time to prove it. Need we look any farther than their soft, simpering, silly faces to fathom the perceptible depth of their understandings? View the whole sex round:

Eternal Smiles their Emptiness betray
As shallow Streams run dimpling all the way.
Pope.

A thoughtless stare, a wild vivacity, a sleepy pertness, giddy gravity, or some such other sense-defying look betrays, in all, the narrow space between the surface and centre of their mimic wit. How well the masterly Limner knew them, who snatched from them the graces he so skilfully bestowed on Sporus, that copy of themselves, inspired too by them as they by Satan! As nothing can show the finished mastery of that excellent piece in the fairer light than giving back to its pretty originals whatever is borrowed from them, it cannot be amiss to do it, considering it requires but little alteration: a presumption, I dare say, that ingenious author will excuse.

Whether in florid impotence they speak,
And, as the prompter breathes, the puppets squeak,
Or, Eves true spawn, and tools of the ancient toad,
Half froth, half venom, spit themselves abroad,
In puns, or politics, or tales, or lies,
Or spite, or smut, or rhymes, or blasphemies.
Their wit all see-saw, between that and this,
Now high, now low, now forward, now remiss,
And each herself one dull antithesis.
Amphibious things! That acting either part,
The trifling head, or the corrupted heart,
Bullies at cards, and flirts when at the board,
Now jilt like Dames, now swear like any Lord.
Their tempter thus the Rabbins have expressed,
A cherubs face, a reptile all the rest.
Beauty that shocks you, parts that none will trust,
Wit that must creep, and pride that licks the dust.

In Fact, what is all their discourse but *froth*? What inspires it but *venom*? And in what does their Sprightliness

appear, but in empty puns, conundrums, rebukes, trifling politics or mischievous lies? They who shine most among them, are such as have nothing to entertain you with but scandal, indecency, hypocrisy, or impiety. What is their wit but a mere see-saw from one inconsistency to another? Their conversation is ever screwed up to bombast, when it should be familiar; or sunk into meanness, when the subject they presume to meddle with is sublime. Where they should be silent, they are as forward to prate, as they are remiss in speaking on proper occasions. In short their talk, like their persons, is one continued, insipid antithesis. Amphibious things indeed! Whose impotent eagerness to be like man serves only to show that they are but mere mechanic rote-repeaters of his words, and unsuccessful mimics of his sense. How unlike are they at their tea-tables to the sensible things they would be thought; and at the card-table how short of the spirit of the noble creatures they would be! There is nothing of a piece in them but the corruption of their hearts and the low cunning of their heads. If ever they succeed in aping us, it is in what is a disgrace to understanding. Whenever they attempt it, they can swear as well as the greatest libertine among us, though still without excelling the parrot in anything but the guilt. Thus ever actuated by perversity, they are never truly like us; and are never themselves, but when they jilt us: though in that, thanks to their native talents, they seldom fail to be true women. How ill-bestowed then on these fantastic things is the beauty we admire in them! And if it was bestowed on them by nature to decoy us into a commerce with them, for the benefit of propogation; must it not still shock our reason when we consider it accompanied only with parts which we can reap no benefit from, nor place any confidence in? And what assistance can we hope from their false wit, as groveling as the pride it inspires them with?

But *Sophia* it seems would fain make a handle of the beauty of her sex to impose upon us an opinion of their sense; and because "the organs of the body are more delicate in them, therefore they must be fitter to answer the ends they were made for." True in one sense, the organs of women were designed for finical amusements, and therefore were made more delicate than ours, in that sense of the word. But if by delicate she means more perfectly or exactly formed; I must insist that experience in the use proves ours to be more solidly and exactly formed than those of the women. And fit they should be so, considering the more noble uses they were designed for, and are employed in. But granting for a minute that the organs of sense are as perfect in women as in men, and yet more delicate; what can Sophia infer but that they are more liable to be thrown into disorder, and therefore the less to be depended upon? As the mechanism of a watch, the more minute, gim, and delicate it is, the more is it subject to inconstancy. A consideration which I willingly mention to apologize, as much as the nature of the thing will bear, for that otherwise unaccountable inconstancy in which alone the fair sex are ever constant.

Not that I entirely come into my soft antagonist's opinion, that the organs in women are any more adapted to the natural functions of the mind than in men: perhaps they are less so. For the external sleekness of their pretty forms is no proof of the internal perfection of their organization. And to imagine a woman must have sense because she is handsome, would be as absurd as to think that a house must needs be finely furnished within, because the outside is beautiful: an error to be excused in none but a woman.

What angel can imagination paint more beautiful than *Pavonia*! What reptile more insensate! To reason by *Sophia's* rule, our eyes would cheat us into the belief that she surpasses all the sages time has yet produced. And yet hear her but speak, you'll almost doubt if Heaven had any hand making a thing at once so fair and foolish, though so like a man. Never guilty of design, she never looks it. Her smiles and frowns, alike effects of accident, want power to please or displease. Her words mere liquid sounds of half-articulated nonsense, gush from her pretty coral-spouted mouth with such unmeaning energy, or drip with such deliberate drawl that even ridicule is robbed of all its zest. Frequent in blunders, she excites no laugh in others; but often laughs herself, when she should be most serious. Her misbehaviour moves no anger, and her favours lay no obligations but upon such as are little wiser than herself. Every motion, every air betrays the fool, whom they who have sense can scarce stoop to pity, and they who have none scarce condescend to envy. In a word, gazed at by all, she is admired and conversed with by none but idiots and women. Amidst whom while she alternately reigns the idol of flattery, and slavishly sinks the dupe of deceit, she is still looked down upon by all men of sense, with the same contempt as the comely peacock: though she be

worthy of greater scorn in this, that the more beauteous bird bears all his blemish in his feet, while her disgrace is feated in her head; his deformity abates his pride, while hers but serves to make her more incorrigibly vain. Must it not be owned then, that beauty is a convincing proof of sense in its fair possessors? But *Sophia* perhaps will answer that one black feather makes no crow. Let us then see, how much wiser the rest of her sex are than pretty, simple *Pavonia*?

It is a common rule, and liable to very few mistakes, to guess at people's Genius by their company. To know then the capacity of the fair sex, let us but survey their favourite companions. Eye them, and you will find them the very dregs of our sex; fops whose whole merit is made up of dress and drivel, show and emptiness; mere Jack-daws and parrots; nay, rather gawdy, screech-owls made fine with plundered plumes. Laced-waistcoats, smart toupees, light heels, and lighter heads, are all they have to recommend them to the Ladies. Yet they are sure to please, because eminently qualified to discuss the weightiest arguments on country-dances, to decide the fate of fashions, square the round of a woman's petticoat, and take the latitude of a nightcap from the equinox of her noddle, or the longitude of two lappets by the meridian of her whims. Not that I the least blame the lovely female triflers who are pleased with them. 'Tis but natural for birds of a feather to associate; and since likeness ever begets liking, why should they not be fondest of those men whose follies are nearest their own? But then I would not have them boast of an equality of sense with those men, whose superior understanding is all they have to find fault with.

It will be to little purpose for *Sophia* to quote me the illustrious names of many of the greatest wits of all ages who have admired, and been admired by, the women. Has not the success they have met with been more owing to their being men, than to their having sense? *Anacreon,* the polite, the witty *Anacreon*, with all his fine parts reaped nothing from his pursuit of those unsettled things but the contempt of his agedness. And *Theocritus* himself makes no secret of the little encouragement he met with. The lesser poets indeed, as well as *Ovid* and *Horace*, received some marks of their favour; but what were these mighty favours if you will believe their own boasts, but the sharing the lewdness of their mistresses with half the town. If I leave the classics it will be an endless toil to enumerate the many instances that that thought-abhoring sex have, at all times and on all occasions, furnished, of the preference they give to fools before men of parts. But where is the necessity of recurring to other times and countries for what our own can produce? Of all our fine Ladies industrious in adorning the brows of their husbands, where is there one who does it with a man of true wit? Of all our pretty widows ruined by second adventures, where is there one who does it with a *man* of any merit? Search but the registers of the fleet, and you shall find numbers of our fairest, brightest heiresses charmed away from their guardians by lacqueys, valet-de-chambres, and powdered, empty coxcombs; but scarce one single match with a really rational creature. In short, who are the persons who can boast of the favours of all our finest women, but wretches too low for the jest of our sex, and too much like theirs to differ from them in any thing but one single circumstance. Let the amorous billets they scribble be produced; and for every one that is directed to a man of sense, I'll allow them a grain of understanding more than they are entitled to.

But surely they are not all void of understanding. No; but to fathom the depth of their understandings, remark only the objects which employ them. Frequent their drawing-rooms, and listen to their conversation: what is it filled up with but annoying repetitions of stale impertinencies to every new visitor? One part of the week, the day is wasted in visiting and contriving visits to persons they hope not to find at home, and the night in receiving visits from persons they would rather be almost blind than have the sight of: The other part, their mornings, are laid out in interrupting some tradesmen whom they know to be busy, and lulling their own time as well as murdering his in rummaging his shop for goods they neither want nor purpose to buy; and their evenings are eked out with tea, slander, operas, and quadrille, when the intrigues on their hands are not interfered with. In a word upon examining them thoroughly, it must be owned that not all the bloom on their cheeks, nor the washes they owe it to, can make any tolerable amends, in the esteem of a wise man, for the folly, vanity, affectation, malice, deceit and impertinence which appear in all they say, and inspire all they do.

And yet it must be granted, there are women, who employ their understandings on higher objects; who can try to reason; and almost succeed in it. Nay there are some can write, can even spell; and, what is more, can turn a sophistry to look not altogether unlike an argument. And therefore it would be quite ungenerous not to allow a brilliancy of wit (however false) in some of them. Especially since my pretty smooth antagonist has given so late proof of it in herself. And yet even she

Had she been blessed with only half her sense,
None could admire too much her excellence.
But since she can make error shine so bright,
She thinks it vulgar to defend the right.
With understanding she is quite o'er-run;
And by too great accomplishments undone.
With skill she vibrates her unwearied tongue,
For ever most divinely in the Wrong
Young.

So dangerous is a little understanding to that tender sex! How happy is it for them, that learning but seldom molests them! What strange distraction would it not create in their poor tender heads! Is not *Sophia's* self a living demonstration that to them

A little learning is a dangerous thing?

And they, alas, poor pretty creatures, have neither breath nor brains to *drink* of knowledge *deeply*. Good sense and tea they are forced to sip alike; their heads and stomachs of equal delicacy can best digest the shallowest draughts of all but mum and mischief. Let thus much then suffice to show *Sophia* how little room she has to complain of want of learning in her sex; and how much less, for any parallel between her sex and ours in point of understanding; when her own essay plainly proves how short the brightest of them fall of man's superior wisdom. Is there nothing less will serve the women's turn than having an equal share with us in Government and public offices? Let us then weigh their best pretentions to so extraordinary a privilege.

.

.

Chapter Four

Back to the “Man Superior to Woman” Index

Man Superior to Woman - Chapter Four

. · 12 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

From “Man Superior to Woman” – by Anonymous, 1739

CHAPTER IV

Whether the Women are equally qualified with Men for Government and Public Offices.

Our female champion is in a very great passion with *Cato* for excluding her sex from all Government; and, I must own not without some appearance of reason. For it is certainly true that *Cato* was not the most well-bred man who ever spoke of them. He had too little of the courtier in him to flatter; and spoke too plain truth not to fet a pretty Lady, who wants to wear the breeches, on pouting. But *Sophia* would have much more reason to be angry with him, if he had been the only one of opinion that women are to be ever kept in subjection. Whereas unluckily for them, all the greatest sages of antiquity, as well as the wisest legislators of all ages, have been of the same mind. The greatest poets, the most eminent divines, the brightest orators, the ablest historians, the most skilful physicians, and the profoundest philosophers, in a word, all who have been famous for excelling in learning, wisdom, and parts, have condemned the women to perpetual subjection, and less noble, less perfect, and consequently inferior to men. The laws of all common-wealths are so many confirmations of the subjection they have ever been in. Neither can the men free them from this subjection, without revolting against the decree of Heaven, which appointed them masters, as I have already shown, and therefore need not repeat. There are not wanting other texts of scripture to confirm this matter. *Ecclesiasticus*, ch.vii. absolutely forbids the men to give woman any power over their minds; and the prophet *Micab* positively says to them, *Keep the doors of thy mouth from her who lyeth in thy bosom*.

. . . How exactly of a mind are the divines and the poets! *Euripedes* tells us, that of all animals, especially the intellectual ones, woman is the poorest thing. Therefore, says *Pittacus*, "keep womankind in subject." *Tibullus* says, "they are a cruel generation void of all Faith." *Menander* says almost the same, and adds that "when a woman speaks with most affability, it is then she is most to be dreaded." And if we believe *Plautus* "Once a woman has any mischief in her head, sickness, nay what is worse old age, is less insupportable to her, than being thwarted in the pursuit of it. Either let her complete it, or you make her completely miserable. But if by chance or whim she attempts anything that is good, how soon is she sick and tired of it! Whatever you do, if she begins anything tolerable, never be afraid of her hurting herself; she'll be sure to do little enough. For women have a natural Genius for exceeding in mischief, but are never guilty of excess in what is right."

The greatest of orators are not the most favourable to them, and the best the character *Cicero*, one of the ablest, had to give them, was that they are a covetous race, sovereignly ruled by the inordinate love of lucre. Nor are the physicians a jot more in their interest. We are assured by *Philo* that the women, according to the common received opinion of the faculty "are but a kind of imperfect men, that their understandings are naturally weaker than ours, and that they are incapable of comprehending anything but what immediately falls under the jurisdiction of their sensation."

If we credit historians, whose opinions are less to be suspected as being founded on the irrefragable evidence of experience, we shall find women everywhere a weak, inconsistent generation, ever irresistibly led away by some predominant passion, which enslaves and engrosses them. "The fair sex (says *Tacitus*) is not only weak and unequal to toil, but, if truth may be spoken, cruel, ambitious, and greedy after power." *Valerius Maximus* goes yet further and assures us, that the practice of poison had still been unknown, if the cruel artifice of that sex had not made it

necessary to enact laws against it.

Cato then was not the only wise man who thought the women unfit to govern. The sacred writers tell us they are not to be trusted; divines, poets, orators, physicians, and historians agree that they are weak, silly, poor, fickle, cruel, ambitious things, ever forward in mischief, ever sluggards in good. Pretty qualifications truly to entitle them to Government and public offices!

But let us suspend our judgment till we hear what the philosophers think. Those oracles of wisdom may perhaps be more their friends, and then it will ill become us to be their adversaries. Not at all; *Aristotle* tells us that "a city must needs be wretchedly governed which is governed by women," and well may he think so who tells us that "the judgment of boys is only imperfect, but that of women is absolutely impotent." Therefore, says an anonymous author, "when things are come to so bad a pass as to suffer an old woman to reign, or interfere in state affairs, nothing better is to be expected than to see her rend the state and involve it in calamities and confusion." Among men the oldest are generally the fittest to govern, because the most confirmed in wisdom and experience, but in women, according to this author, age is incapable of any wisdom: and no wonder at it, when their judgment is all impotence.

To which if we add their natural itch of tattling, their invincible curiosity, and their innate aversion to secrecy, it can no longer be doubted that they are absolutely unfit for public Government, and every office connected with it. Nothing more requisite in one who is to be entrusted with Government, than a steadiness which no curiosity can make giddy, and nothing more powerful to make a woman give up the most important interests of her own or others than curiosity. Secrecy is the very soul of public administration, which to require from that tongue-punished race would be downright barbarity. The wise Romans were thoroughly convinced of the natural incapacity of women for keeping a secret, and therefore were kind enough to them never to entrust any of them with one. Every one knows the strategem young *Papirius* was forced to make use of to satisfy his mother's curiosity, without betraying the secrets of the Senate. Being one day extremely solicited by her to reveal the subject of that morning's debate, to rid himself of her importunities, he was reduced to the necessity of feigning, that a law was proposed to allow the men a plurality of wives. There needed no more to alarm the whole sex. *Papirius's* mother, spite of her solemn engagements, divulges it to all the women she knew, and they to as many more, till the whole tribe of wives, acquainted with it, formed themselves into a league, and began to make open opposition to a law so odious to them. How safe would the young Senator have been, had he been indiscreet enough to trust his tattling mother with a real secret as he did with a fiction!

Plutarch tells us of another Senator, who, teased by his wife, on the like score, beyond all power of toleration, and unwilling to mortify her, told her, that a lark being seen to fly over the Senate house with a golden helmet on his head and a spear on his claws, the augurs had been consulted, to know what it could portend. To make it appear the more like a real secret, he had had the precaution to exact from her the most solemn vows of privacy, assuring her that nothing less than his life could atone for his divulging it to her, should it be known he had done so. But what force could the fear of a husband's death have to make a woman keep a secret, who must herself burst or vent it? No sooner had her husband taken leave of her, to return again to the Senate, than she eased herself of the intolerable burden, and the tale flew so swiftly about the city, that, before he got to his journey's end, he had it whispered in his ear as a profound secret, by one who supposed him to have been absent from the Senate. At his return home he charges his wife with having undone him. But she, with a confidence peculiar to that sex, flatly denies her having divulged what he entrusted her with; and to silence him at once, of three hundred Senators in the house, why should the secret be supposed to come from you alone, says she? She had carried her boldness yet farther, but for his stopping her mouth by telling her, that it was a fiction of his own making.

Fulvius was far from coming off so well, but he must blame himself for knowing womankind no better. We are obliged to *Plutarch* for the account. *Augustus* displeased with *Fulvius* for disinheriting his own nephews in favour of

Livia's children, blamed him for it; and he like a silly oaf was weak enough to tell it his wife. She immediately tells the Empress of it; and the Empress upbraided the Emperor with it. So that the next time *Fulvius* went to court was to receive a severe reprimand from *Augustus*, and the pleasure of finding himself undone. And what did he get by returning home to tell his wife what she had done, and that he was resolved to stab himself? Why, no other satisfaction than to be answered that he was a fool and deserved no better fate, for living with her for so long without finding out that she was a true woman, and could not keep a secret.

What shall we say after this? Shall we agree with *Sophia*, that the women are fit for Government and public offices? Or shall we not rather conclude them absolutely unqualified for them; and that the ancients were undoubtedly right in saying that *woman are no more to be trusted than their wombs* - these not being more liable to miscarry of their fruits than they of the trusts we deposit in them?

If England has been so wise to admit these evils to reign over us when necessary to avoid greater evils, is that any proof that they are qualified for it? No 'twas not their capacity, but our prudence placed them on the throne, to remove occasions of bloodshed and other ill effects of civil dissension. And though it must be confessed that during the reign of some of our women, this nation has been in its most flourishing condition; yet whether ought it to be attributed to, the capacity of the soft cyphers placed over us, or the wisdom of the ministry which made them of some account. Mere adjectives of Nature, what use could they have been of but for the substantial support of their counsel and parliament? Into which none, not even themselves ever thought it worth while to introduce a woman.

However, I am apt to think that the pretty fawning faces of these fair creatures would go a great way towards wheedling us into the folly of admitting them to a share in public offices, if we could discern in them the least talent for governing their own families. Whereas without much study we need but step into the next house we can think of, where the gray mare is the better horse, to find a Babylon of anarchy and confusion.

Belluina's is the first in my mind, let us pay her a visit then. To do her justice, nothing can be more decent than her apartments, her whole house from the cellars to the stairs, from the kitchen to the closet are so many varied scenes of finished neatness; not the meanest piece of furniture owes its situation to the hand of chance; every table has its proper post; every picture its fellow; there's not a chair a hair's breadth from its place; not a carpet but what is mathematically spread; nay, woe to Mrs. Betty if the very china is not as regularly disposed as the features in her Ladyship's face. From such an orderly economy in trifles who would not expect to find a little Commonwealth, where peace and decorum have taken up their residence? But a moment's patience, and the all-divulging tea- table will set you right. An insufferable troop of illtrained brats are called in to expose their want of manners, and put yours on the trial. Pretty Miss must throw your hat about, Master Jacky must put his fingers in your eyes, Charlie in you dish; and Tommy, her favorite for never doing what his father bids him, should offer to wipe his greasy fingers on your coat, you must suffer him to do so, or be as much in her disgrace as John, who had his head broke but an hour ago, just where you see the plaster, for hastily setting Veny upon the bare ground to save my Lord from falling downstairs. Happily for John he is in her Ladyship's good graces, or he had fared no better than Fanny the housemaid, who had warning given her, for letting a tea-cup fall to hinder the house from taking fire. But this lucky fellow, who is too much used to his Lady to be often guilty of such mistakes, has absolutely rooted himself into his post by once leaving a butt of wine to run about the cellar rather than let the parrot call him twice. So despotic is *Belluina* in her family! Her children, sure never to be corrected but when they behave well, are incessantly rude and unruly; and her servants, never sure that her Ladyship will think what they do right, are always doing wrong, with as sedate a confusion as the workmen of Babel. If you call for a teaspoon a saucer is brought you; and if you have a mind for sugar you must call for the milk-pot. But it's time to leave this orderly Lady, Miss's cap you see is the tenth part of an inch awry; the lightning in her mother's looks are portentous of a storm, and once it breaks out the house will be too hot for every one in it. Her Ladyship can bear anything but disorder in trifles; but that like a true woman she is so averse to, that she'll rather throw herself, her family and even her country into confusion, than suffer the symmetry of a curl or a cap to be broken with impunity. Whence it appears that all this excellent Lady's

qualifications for Government are owing to her happy want of sense to set others right, and temper to curb herself when wrong.

Muccabella has a great deal more temper but much less sense than *Belluina*. She can with incredible calmness see her house a perpetual dung-hill, for want of brains to reflect how ill it becomes the fortune she has, and the figure she affects. She has a number of servants, every one of which is too busy, in helping their mistress to litter the rooms, ever to be clean themselves. Neither is it fit they should disgrace their superiors by being less dirty than they are. About seven months ago, before she was a widow, I went for the first and last time to breakfast with her and her gouty husband and family. The dirty disorder of the room I was introduced to offended me less than the rankness of my company poisoned me. It is true I was forced to stand for some time, every chair in the place being taken up with some greasy heap; one with foul plates, another with the Lady's stays, and the rest with miscellaneous muck. At length however I was helped to a chair and dish of excellent coffee from a silver teaboard, placed on a large table near my old gouty friend, and jumbled together with a mangled piece of beef, a woman's dirty night-cap, a comb-brush, an old stocking, and a urinal. The conversation I was entertained with was a piece with the persons who held it: 'twas an argument between the Lady and her husband, who would fain have persuaded her that one clean shift a week could not prejudice her health. But with all her meekness she had been put out of temper, if Mamma's own daughter had not taken up the argument, and insisted that the trouble was needless when a pair of sleeves would do as well. It must be thought I could not be fond of staying in such a disorderly Jakes: accordingly I took leave never to return thither again. My old friend followed my example not long after: he died in about two months, and was sent to rot in a decent tomb after having lived many years buried in a disorderly sink of sluttery. However I have been lately informed that this Lady has put her children in a terrible fright, by turning cleanly at last. They are under dreadful apprehensions of her marrying again; and not without some reason. For she has washed her hands and face twice since my friend's death, has the dining room swept once a week, and has shifted her no less than three times in one fortnight. Whatever might be said of *Muccabella* the wife, it cannot be disowned that the widow discovers a tolerable disposition for Government, and public offices. For if outward cleanliness is any proof of inward neatness, and if an orderly outside is an indication of no confusion within, why may not she be at least advanced to the dignity of Mistress of Ceremonies to the Court?

Priscilla is akin to neither of the former: not finically nice nor carelessly sluttish. She loves neatness and knows when she sees it, but has been too genteely bred to be able to give any directions towards it. For the very economy of her table she is forced to depend upon the discretion of her servants: and if her housekeeper should desert her, she would be as much puzzled to order a dinner, as a blind man could be to find out his way without a guide. This was a secret to her husband, till an unlucky accident brought him acquainted with it. One day when he was without a housekeeper he came home and desired his wife to add another dish to the table, because he should bring an accquaintance or two home with him. She did as he ordered her; and the gentlemen when they sat down had the solid satisfaction of two legs of mutton and turnips to feed on at the first course. A Lady so versed in domestic economy must needs be wondrous fit for public Government: must she not?

In justice to that sex I must not put an end to this subject without taking notice of *Prudentia*. She is one of your notable women, a tip-top housewife I assure you. There's not a secret in domestic management unknown to her. She can metamorphose a leg of mutton to a haunch of venison, make the Lark transmigrate to an Ortolan, and transform English hog's flesh into good Westphalia ham as ever was imported into Great Britain. She is perfectly acquainted with the mystery of making butter and cheese, jellies, conserves, sweet meats, cordials, and what not. Gardening she is quite learned in, and at the needle she is perfect mistress. Nay she is a good accomptant too. In short, nothing which relates to economy comes amiss to her. And yet she is not vain of all these accomplishments. For though she does often plague us with her dissertations upon these subjects, 'tis ever the commendable view of learning what she knows not, or showing us how much she does know. So far is she from being proud that she has stooped to the humble office of boiling an egg; and, to show how fit she was to govern, she submitted once, in her husband's life time, to boil him a pig pursuant to his own request. But, such is the fatality of that poor sex, she has

forfeited, since a widow, all her reputation of wisdom, in the management of her children; though she has but two to manage. Possessed of a thousand pounds a year at her own disposal, she has withstood the temptation of a second match to lay up all for them; and has made no better use of it than to ruin one by excess of extravagance, and the other by extreme niggardliness. By giving her daughter a profusion of money and liberty, she has afforded her the means to gain the title of Mother independent of Wedlock. And to make amends for that error in the care of her son, has kept him so short of money, that to get rid of twelve penny dun he has married a fritter- woman.

Strange as this circumstance is, 'tis no less strange than true. Nevertheless *Prudentia* cannot be charged with want of love. All the defect lies in that want of talent for Government, which is so evident in that tender sex. It can no longer then be doubted that those poor pretty creatures must make a very sorry figure in Government and public offices, who appear so universally unqualified for the administration of private economy. But I fear I have proved this matter too plainly to them, and therefore not to give them the pain of more ungrateful truths on this head, I shall follow whither *Sophia* leads me, that is to consider.

.

.

Related:

Bedroom Politics – Mathieu of Boulogne, 1295 A.D.

.

Chapter Five

Back to the “Man Superior to Woman” Index

Man Superior to Woman - Chapter Five

. · 12 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

From “Man Superior to Woman” – by Anonymous, 1739

CHAPTER V

What Capacity the Women have for Sciences.

I cannot help being of the same mind with the Duke of Britany quoted by Montagne in his essays, and every one in their right senses must think with us, that a woman is learned enough in conscience if she can distinguish between her husband's shirt and his breeches. A severer imprecation could scarce be uttered against the lovely sex than to wish them science-mad. 'Tis their pretty fluency in nonsense, and their bewitching confidence in ignorance, which give their charms the power of pleasing us in the soft moments, when unbending the mind from study we seek in their native folly a respite from sense and speculation. But why should we put them to the pains of learning to entertain us with that nonsense and ignorance in several languages? Why should they be suffered to distract their poor tender brains with hard words and technical terms: is it not enough that they can clip and carve their own mother tongue into a variety of dialects, without obliging them to confound others into a kind of mixed jargon, as unintelligible as the conversation of negroes?

I don't however pretend to dispute their natural Genius for words. It is undoubtedly to them we owe the preservation of that ancient and venerable language, called *gibberish*, which had long since been utterly lost but for their care and assiduity in cultivating it. It would therefore be highly ungrateful not to give them the praise due to their excellent talents in this branch of learning, especially since we reap such important advantages from their excellence in it. Without the instructions of those pretty jabbering creatures, we should be at a loss to converse with our own infants. Our ignorance would run us into the dilemma of either frighting them with plain English, or reducing them to the necessity of learning it much sooner than the usual time, and even before they had gone through the politer language of the nursery. How vulgar would it be to hear an infant say, "Pray mother give your little boy a plum!" Is it not infinitely more elegant to say, *Pay Mamma div eeky boy a pum*." And how should a child ever be able to learn the latter preferably to the former, if the women were not more industrious in teaching them than we are? Besides, we are such natural dunces when put out of the road of sense, that we should never succeed in making children reach the eloquent unintelligible so soon as they do under their present teachers. For my own part I have been often in a nursery of young children, and, though ever so attentive to their conversation with one another, could understand no more of their meaning than if they had been so many Hottentots. Though every woman who came in, I found, was perfectly versed in their language. Well for me and them they were so, or I am afraid I should often have done mischief, but particularly once. Being where two or three children were at play, on a sudden I heard one of them cry, and more good natured than wise was offering to pacify it with these barbarous words, *Pretty thing, what do you cry for?* But the children were terribly frightened, and for aught I know had all fallen into fits at the cannibal sound, if a learned woman in the room had not interpreted my meaning in familiar gibberish, which it seems runs thus: *Peety sing! did um ky, did um vets it, sall um beat paw paw man, div me a bow den, dare, doe paw man doe.* These mellifluous sounds quite tranquillized the little peevish gentry, and finished to convince me of how great importance it is to mankind that this feminine science should be kept up.

So far then from thinking the Ladies incapable of teaching at least this branch of knowledge, I am for moving the legislature for the establishment of a female university for that purpose. And if I were not afraid of offending my fair antagonist's great modesty, I would, with all due submission to higher powers, propose her for Chancellor. One of the professors I have already in my eye; 'tis a Lady who keeps a female academy in Blackfriars. I was agreeably surprized, some time ago, to find her excellent talents, for such a purpose, displayed on the very board over her

door. Where was written in golden capitals these elegant words, *Yong Laydis taut to spill and imbrawther.* Which by the nicest of critics is translated thus, "Young Ladies taught to spell and embroider." But I have since had the satisfaction to hear that this piece of antique learning has brought her such a number of scholars, that she thinks it now beneath her to keep out a board, convinced of the old proverb, that *Good wine needs no bush*.

Nevertheless I would not have *gibberish* the sole affair of this university. No, I would have some taught to lisp a little *English*, and write it, however askew and unintelligibly. If I am not misinformed there is a Lady now at work upon a new English grammar for the use of the fair sex; which in all probability will take very much, as her chief view has been to save unnecessary trouble, by reducing the work to a very concise compass. Still she has spared no pains to make it of universal use to the women, and by the strength of her Genius, and continued application, she has abridged the whole art of grammar to four parts of speech, *lisping, mispelling, noise,* and *nonsense.* If my scheme should take effect, what a considerable figure would not this Lady make in an university chair?

I can by no means however consent to the women's losing any time in the study of the law. To complete a man a knave, it is absolutely necessary to make a lawyer of him. But every woman from her cradle is by nature a lawyer in this sense. They have all such finished talents for lying, dissembling, cajoling, undermining, equivocating and barefacedly cheating, that there is no law profane or sacred which they cannot argue away or brazen out. 'Tis rather than a woeful shame their knowledge of this kind has no bridle put to it, than any ways likely they should improve us or themselves by any farther advances.

What a disgrace to her sex, and what a bane to ours, is *Lolia*, with all her jurisprudence. There is no tricking attorney she has not out-tricked, no sharping counsellor she has not bit, and no both-sided sergeant she has not outwitted. There's not a court in England but she is versed in the practice of, and not a quirk in it but she has made use of. She has cozened a bribe-worthy Judge into open perversion of the law, and bilked him after all of the premium of his iniquity. She has forged away an eminent knave's ears without risking her own, and married away the estate of an honest dupe of rank from his lawful issue, to squander it away upon her own lawless mongrel. Her greatest praise is the having utterly ruined many, and greatly injured all she ever had to do with. The never having built upon one honest plea the numberless suits she has had upon her hands; and the having gained many causes without using any honest means; though she never lost a single one for want of any knavish artifice in her power. To sum up the litigious merit of this Machiavelian Lady in few words; without ever poring over Littleton or Coke, there is no law so plain which could any ways concern her, but what she has baffled by the sanction of the laws themselves. So idle and needless is it for that sex to study the chicaneries of the law; so easy is it for them without study to be perfect in the practice, and so pernicious is this perfection in them to all who have any concerns with them? I would therefore, for *Lolia's* sake, have all matters of law banished the female province under pain of death.

Indeed they may, if they think proper, erect a faculty of their own to give a grace to the mischief they do with their nostrums. To qualify them for physicians there is nothing wanting but a little solemnity of phiz, the use of spectacles, and a profuseness of unintelligible jargon; though the latter, thanks to their propitious stars, their natural glibness of tongue, and fondness for hard words, gives them an admirable disposition for.

For history I think they have an uncommon capacity: at least one of the most noted productions in that kind is thought to be the work of a female Genius. For though a Reverend Bishop, in compliance with the modesty of its real author, was so kind to lend his name to the celebrated history of his own times, it is believed by many that this Chaplains old grandmother had the chief hand in it. In politics and novels too they are remarkable for excelling: their propensity to intriguing qualifies them for the latter, and the former they are assisted in by curiosity and the gift of tattle.

Novilia is an excellent newspaper, which neither tires your eyes, nor sounds your purse: your ears are at all the expense of your information. There is not a thing happens or can happen but she knows or invents, unless there be

too much probability in it. She can fettle the affairs of all Europe with as great facility as the grounds in her coffee-pot; can carry on war with equal resolution; and has actually taken more ships from Spain since the rupture, than Admiral Haddock had time to take; nay than that nation has to lose. I was informed of the convention by her two hours before I read it in a *Hague* letter; and had from her some months ago the joyful news of Cuba being taken by Admiral *Vernon*; which if it was not true, was very near being so; but luckily for the Spaniards the Admiral had not yet quitted the Downs. She has often communicated to me the important conferences a certain great monarch had in bed with his wife. And if she is not always right in her accounts it is owing to the impolitic proceedings of the ministers of state. For to give her her due, in telling you what is done, she only means to acquaint you with what she thinks ought to be done. I would by all means therefore have a chair erected in the female university, for the instruction of such women as discover a Genius for politics: but that they may be of some use to the public, I would humbly propose to the Government to take off the duty from all other newspapers, and lay it upon these living *Gazettes.*

In the Chair, for the Education of such as have a peculiar talent for novels, I would have the works of the learned authors Mrs. *Behn* and Mrs. *Manly* read as the standard of that Science; and as impiety and smut are considerable branches of it, I would have those passages, which are the most remarkable for either, particularly enforced to the fair students. I know no one more happy for a communicative faculty, in that part of literature, and therefore none likely to make a more able Professor of it, than the witty *Saphira,* that surprising Genius the first essay of whose incomparable pen was closed in the sprightly parentheses of bawdy and blasphemy. The Lady, you must know, is a freethinker by profession; but most firmly believes there is a God, because folks will have it there is none: though she can with a becoming ease talk of him in as careless a manner as she does of the Devil, whom she looks upon as a mere fiction, and wishes she had nothing to trouble her more than the Fears of Hell. For she is very sure God is too good to make such a troublesome being, or such a dismal place. As she has, besides these accomplishments, a tolerable taste for poetry she may give her pretty scholars a little tincture of it by reading to them *Mrs. Barber's* "Family Poems", unless she should think it more instructive to paraphrase *Mrs. Behn's* piece upon Enjoyment.

If I mistake not, *Sophia* disclaims, in the name of her whole sex, the privilege of interfering in matters of Divinity: though she still contends hard for their natural aptness for it. What commission she may have from her pretty clients to give up so considerable a claim I know not. However, I am absolutely of opinion, that it becomes them full as well to hold forth on the subject of religion in a Church as in their drawing-rooms; in a pulpit as at a tea-board; and both are as graceful in them as riding astride would be. What schism ever rended the Church, which they have not had a principal hand in? What error ever crept in among Christians which they have not been industrious to forward? What point too abstruse in religion which they are not for deciding? If they must be Chamber-Divines, why do they not even go farther and seize the Church and pulpit too? Why do they not copy after that female pattern of consistency, *Dromonia*? This fleshly Tabernacle of Spirit hath wisely thrown off all idle forms, to preach the outward man into the arms of the inward one. Convinced of the Light within her, she hath not buried it under a bushel; at her levee, but has placed it on a candlestick in the House of the Lord, that it may give Light unto all that are in it. And the Lord in return hath so replenished her with the Light of his Knowledge, that she expoundeth the Scriptures without ceasing, and bursteth not, albeit she knoweth not how to read them. He hath made her a picklock of Wisdom, and given unto her a key to open the greatest mysteries of the revelations, and show that there is no mystery in them; to unfold the prophets as she unfoldeth her apron; and to expose the evangelists as she exposeth herself. Nay he hath given her a two-edged tongue for a snare, two rolling eyes for a bait; he hath added claws unto her fingers, and behold she goeth forth like unto a fisher of men, and spreadeth her snowy arms like unto a net. But the Spirit bloweth where it lifteth; and the Sons of Flesh will not bite at the bait, nor be caught in the net.

However unsuccessful the industry of this female Divine is, I think she is a living proof of the ability of that sex for the study of Theology. And therefore I am not against their erecting a Chair to teach, and appointing her the Professor.

But I can by no means give into their puzzling their little delicate heads with the more intricate study of philosophy of any sort. Every branch of that is built upon reason, and reason they have nothing to do with. However as they have some faint glimmerings of it, I don't pretend to say there will be any harm in their gaining a little superficial smatch of some trifles dependent on philosophy: such as a few mysterious terms, a small number of detached sentences, and here and there a trite experiment. These will suffice to make any woman as learned as she need be, and these any woman may pick up without much cost.

I was lately, entertained by one of your very learned Ladies in her study, where I had the opportunity, during a short space she left me alone there, to take a survey of her library, and the choice collection which had contributed to make her such a scholar. As I found it very curious I was at the pains of writing a catalogue, which I shall here transcribe for the benefit of all the fair lovers of polite learning. So far am I from envying them any opportunity of improving their talents:

Her books then stood in the following order.

"The Atalantis", "A Common-prayer-book", "Rochester's Poems", "Preparation for Communion", "Love's Last Shift", "Meditations of Death", "A Patch Box", "Paradise Lost", "The Art of being Easy at all Times", "Behn's Novels", "Whitefield's Sermons", "Ovid's Art of Love", "Advice of a Mother to her Son and Daughter", "Petronius in English", A Bible, "A Paper of Pins", "A Theeand- Thou Almanack", "The Moral Philosopher", "The Pilgrim's Progress", "Geography of Children", "The Tatlers", "A Pocket Looking Glass", "Dacier's Homer", "Persian Tales", "The Merry Jester", "Essay on Midwifery" . . . in a vacancy lay Swift's "Dressing-Room", with a housewife upon it stuffed with silks, and a paper of Spanish wool, "The Plain-Dealer", "Law's Serious Call to a devout Life", "Tale of a Tub", "Dyche's Spelling-Book", "The Whole Duty of Man", "The Art of getting Beautiful Children" . . .

After having given an account of her library, it is fit I should give some idea of its fair owner. She has read a great deal, and has a very good memory; can talk incoherently in five several languages; has translated and even composed; is a critic in prose and an author in verse. But with all this deal of learning and memory, she neither knows how to set her cap straight, nor can remember to buckle her shoes. . . . It must be owned, that if this Lady is a scholar she is a very sluttish one; and the much she reads is to little purpose, since it can make nothing better than a bookish slattern. . . . For my part, after seeing such an instance of the ill consequence of literature in women, I cannot but be of *Juvenel's* mind, as Mr. Dryden translates him,

That of all plagues, the greatest is untold;
The book-learned wife in Greek and Latin bold.
The Critic-Dame, who at her table sits;
Homer and Virgil quotes, and weighs their wits;
And pities Dido's agonizing fits.
She has so far the ascendant of the board,
The prating pedant puts not in one word:
The man of law is nonplussed, in his suit;
Nay every other female tongue is mute.
Hammers and beating anvils, you would swear,
And vulcan with his whole militia there.
Tabors and trumpets cease;
for she alone Is able to redeem the labouring moon.
Even wit's a burden, where it talks too long:
But she, who has no continence of tongue,
Should walk in breeches, and should wear a beard;
And mix among the philosophic herd.

O what midnight curse has he,
whose side Is pestered with a mood and figure bride?
Let mine, ye gods! (if such must be my fate)
No logic learn, nor history translate;
But rather be a quiet, humble fool:
I hate a wife to whom I go to school,
Who climbs the grammar tree, distinctly knows
Where noun, and verb, and participle grows;
Corrects her country neighbour; and a-bed
For breaking priscian's breaks her husband's head.

Neither Juvenal nor I deny that women may acquire some superficial learning: all we contend for is that it is ever ill bestowed upon them, inasmuch as it renders them useless to their own sex, and a nuisance to ours. Of which the Lady whose portraiture I have just given is a signal proof. If *Sophia* should bring me a few instances out of the common rule, what will she get by it? I grant that Greece has shown its *Sappho*; Rome her *Cornelia*; France has produced *Dacier*; Holland has brought forth a *Schurman*; Italy a *Doctress*; and, more blessed than all, England now boasts an *Eliza* and a *Sophia*: what then? Are seventy instances, though seventy times seven times doubled, in upwards of five thousand seven years, sufficient to prove a general capacity in women for knowledge and learning? Would my fair antagonist think horses a fit party for her at quadrille, if I should instance some of that species which have been dabs at put? Or would she like to be confined to the conversation of parrots because many of them can talk a great deal? No: neither can we deem the women fit associates for us in the study of sciences, because a few have had a tolerable smattering of them. But let us proceed to view them in another light in the following question.
.

Chapter Six

Back to the “Man Superior to Woman” Index

Man Superior to Woman - Chapter Six

. · 12 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

From “Man Superior to Woman” – by Anonymous, 1739

CHAPTER VI

Whether Women are naturally qualified for Military Offices, or not?

Idle as I think this question, it is necessary to take it into a minute's consideration, in complaisance to my fair adversary, who is disposed to think it of some importance. Indeed, in one sense I am of her mind: for I cannot help wishing, for the good of my own sex, that the women, however unqualified for military exploits, were obliged to engage in all the wars, civil dissentions, family feuds, and bloody broils they are the original authors of; since, in all probability, their natural aversion to danger would have made them less forward to expose us to it. I would have every jilting coquet, who prides herself in measuring the love of her dupes by the length of their swords, be compelled to act the part of a second in the fray. And as for those Ladies who have pride and prettiness enough to set their families on cutting one another's throats, to involve their country in civil discord, or to let nations at a bloody strife, I would have them singled out, like so many *Curatia* and *Horatia*, to decide the dispute with their own blood, and spare unnecessary slaughter. Thus, knowing themselves doomed to heal at their own cost the mischiefs of their own making, they would be less fond of discord, or we should be less the victims of it. But to expect them to expose their pretty carcasses to perils or hardships for the safety of their country, the good of the public, or the defense of virtue, would be requiring impossibles from them. Magnanimity, as an illustrious author observes, was never expected from that pusillanimous sex. Each sex, indeed, has its perfections, but greatness of soul was never numbered among feminine accomplishments. Nature from the beginning fixed an essential difference between man and woman, not more in strength of body than of mind; and, though she gave them both some virtues not unlike in appearance, yet she distributed those virtues between them in very unequal shares. What is the utmost strength of woman but the struggle of imbecility? What her greatest bravery, but cowardice made desperate?

And yet I will not pretend to say that every woman is a coward, or that any of them are always such: No, women can be sometimes fearless, but that is only when vice inspires their valour. And then what is it they cannot do or dare? For, as Mr. *Dryden* says after *Juvenal*,

Each inconvenience makes their virtue cold;
But womankind in ills is ever bold.

Tremula is as tender a Lady, and as easily feared as any I know of her whole sex. Too pretty to tread the ground in a vulgar manner, she cannot stand, though it should be to save her husband from ruin, much less can she walk the enormous length of a room, unless she has a man to lean upon, or the happiness to forget herself. Music, indeed, has a miraculous effect on the harmonious creature, it can solidate her too supple sinews, and give her force to foot it, without fainting, for four and twenty hours together; though her joints are naturally so very weak, that she can seldom succeed to take two steps and a half without tripping. I myself have known her laid up with a cold for the whole winter, by rashly venturing across a boarded entry to her coach before the maid could spread the carpet, for all her husband had warmed her clogs very carefully: and at this very time is dangerously ill of a toothache, which she got by inconsiderately going one night to the play without earrings. What makes the danger greater is that she cannot be bled. The sight of a lancet would throw her into a swoon; and her fits are frequent enough, without seeking occasions to make them more so. She is always in a panic at best. For conscious to herself of being something very precious, she never thinks herself thoroughly safe. The buzz of a gnat will awake her from the

profoundest dream of tranquillity; the rustling of her own silks has often set her on trembling; and in another person's house, she has fainted away at the sight of her own sweet self in a glass, before she had time to recollect the dear idol's features. All edge tools she has an utter dread of; two cross knives are sufficient matter at any time to metamorphose the fearful thing into an aspin leaf; her husband's sword, though as harmless as Harlequin's sabre, she can tolerate nowhere but at his side; and one day finding him, as she came into his closet, with a razor in his hand, she fairly fell back into the arms of the footman; and what would have been the consequence I cannot say, if Richard had not unlaced her, while his master went after the housekeeper for her Lady's drops. So delicate and fearful is pretty *Tremula*. And yet, averse as I am to hazards, I would venture an even wager of a small matter, that if Richard had the sense to feel her pulse, and guess at her constitution, he might enable her to walk three or four miles to an assignation of mischief, in the darkest night, without fear of meeting in the way of a bear, or a bug-a-boe: if I may be allowed this female elegance.

And why not; *Viragina* is as slender and delicate to appearance as herself; and yet she can do that and more. Strong and stout as the tallest officers in our standing army, horse or foot, she can leap a five-barred gate, keep at the heels of a fox, and set a buck at bay, with the best of them. She can turn her horse adrift, take her dog and her gun on a winter's day, and without fear of colds or catarrhs ramble miles in the dirt, to a solitary coppice, in pursuit of her game. No weather can keep her at home, and no dangers can fright her from venturing abroad. In the country she can stroll a whole day, from cover to cover, after a brace of woodcocks; and, moon or no moon, can traipse all night through thick and thin from village to village, after a single fidler. In town she is as undaunted; can swagger at a card table, riot at a tavern, and ramble through the streets from bagnio to bagnio, with as much security in a hack as in her own coach; and that at hours when the honester part of the watchmen are scarce safe.

Nevertheless, it cannot be said that this Lady is vigorous and undaunted alike in everything. No; in every thing that is good and commendable, she is all impotence and panic; and would be full as feeble and fearful as *Tremula* herself, even in these her favourite amusements, if the toil and danger of them should once assume the face of virtue. 'Tis mischief then, dear, dear mischief, which spirits *Viragina* to be so vigorous, and act so valiantly. Vice and mischief alone are capable of making that sex summon all its latent strength, and forget all its fears. Inspired by evil, what will they not hazard? Vice shall make a *Thalestris* equal to the labour of rambling after an *Alexander*; make *Sheba's* Queen overlook the dangers of a long an unknown road; and humble an Empress, *Messalina*, a Roman Empress, to walk the streets. Every woman is a *Hippia*, pressed in the lists of virtue; slow, impotent and heartless, scared by an atom, fainting at a rose. But place the goal of vice, or standard of iniquity within their reach, all volunteers of sin and lust, they'll hurry to it with the utmost eagerness; forsake their husbands, the tenderest of husbands, forget their children, parents, blood and friends, dare foaming seas, snuff pitch and tar, feed on carrion with a gusto, lie hard, work harder, and go through all sufferable woes to gain the point in view.

Can it then be denied, that some women have strength and courage enough to qualify them for military offices? And yet what Pascal says, in his political maxims, is still true:

"Nothing is more certain, than that the fair sex is not only weak and unequal to toil; but even, if truth is no treason, as impotent as they are cruel-minded, ambitious, and greedy of power; which they are to such an excess, that they know no moderation in their disorders, when, shameless enough to herd with warriors, they expose themselves to public view at the head of armies, range troops, march with a regiment at their tail, and value themselves upon their own dexterity in all military exercises. Though when I see any such forward woman, I cannot help thinking I see a monkey aping the actions of a man."

And in reality, what can be more ridiculous or indecent? Is it not full as unseemly a sight to behold a woman giving the word of command to her troops, leading them up to combat in battle array, and giving them the signal of onset, as to see a man knotting, knitting, handling a distaff, or embroidering his wife's petticoat? The reason is plainly that which *Buchanan* gives us from *Rennodius*, that everything unnatural and out of character is offensive, and therefore

wrong. And therefore what appears and is, in a valiant man, gallantry, bravery and sturdiness, is, in a forward woman, madness, arrogance and cruelty; as on the contrary, what makes a woman elegant, makes a man deformed; as the dress and ornaments which add grace and dignity to her beauty, but serve to make him a finical, pragmatic, enervate coxcomb. It is no praise then, but rather a disgrace, to any of that soft sex to be qualified for military offices. For, as the same learned writer observes, the more their natural weakness is a curb to their violent sallies of imagination and whim, so when they give a loose to libertinism, the greater lengths are they sure to run, and with the more difficulty are they brought back to their former modesty, if ever they are. And such of them as are something more robust and dauntless than the generality are but the more dangerous evils for being so; inasmuch as their impetuosity of temper is ever more furious. So that when once a woman, impatient of her sex, throws off the soft character which is properly hers, she will never fail to carry her insolence beyond the bounds which even men of any sense fix to their boldness.

And yet I don't believe it absolutely impossible for a woman to have a true courage, animated by real virtue, but I look upon such a woman as a miracle, out of the common course of Nature. As such I consider the immortal *Boadicea*, and as such I profoundly revere the more immortal *Sophia*, when she tells us, that she *could, with more ease and less repugnance, dare the frowns and fury of an already victorious army, which she had forces to resist, than she could stoop to court the smiles of a corrupt minister whom she had reason to despise.* Sentiments so like my own compel me to believe her, though a woman; and I admire (I had almost said adore) her for them. Words are but words at best, and hers are no more. But the spirit they are uttered with is a proof to me of their being the overflowings of a heart capable of the execution. But will *Sophia* pretend to say there are many women like her in this particular; or that the bulk of womankind are not pusillanimous things? If the sun halted once at the valiant Joshua's word of command, must its course be interrupted for every impertinent bully? And if virtuous courage has taken a seat in one woman's breast, shall all the heartless generation lay a claim to that extraprivilege?
No; miracles allowed for, timidity, like all other defects of men, is an ornamental perfection in women, and inseparable, in some degree or other, even from those virago dames who launch out of nature into affectation.

I will agree with my fair antagonist so far, that the virtuous are always timid; but can draw no conclusion thence in favour of her sex, till she makes it appear that the timid are always virtuous. The contrary to which I have already so plainly instanced in those little heartless pretty mischiefs, that I need add nothing more to convince a rational creature, that the women are as little qualified for military employments as honour, truth, or importance, as they are for every other office in life, except that for which they were given us, that is, the propogation of human nature.
.

.
Conclusion

Back to the “Man Superior to Woman” Index

Man Superior to Woman - Conclusion

. · 12 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

From “Man Superior to Woman” – by Anonymous, 1739

CONCLUSION

From what I have hitherto said it must appear, to all who have the least degree of understanding, that if the merit of women be weighed by the end of their production, and the circumstances attending it, by their natural capacity, and the practice they have applied it to in all ages; by the living variety of instances of their folly, inconsistency, impotence in good, and propensity to evil, they are not only wide of the perfection of man, but even almost infinitely beneath him. So that far from having any just title, or even plausible pretence, to claim an equality of power, dignity and esteem with him; the very privileges they enjoy can only be looked upon as so many instances of his generosity to them.

If we trace their conduct through every age, and consider it in all lights, we shall find them everywhere, even in their seeming differences, the same; emptily vain, foolishly conceited, and ambitiously groveling; at once covetous and extravagant to extremes; restless even in indolence, and false in their very fits of fondness; in their hatred cruel, in their love lascivious, and then most treacherous, when most industrious to show sincerity. What else do we find in women but the bane of friendship, an inevitable pain, a native temptation, a desirable calamity, a domestic snare, a flattering mischief, the very essence of evil, under the semblance of good? If then there is a heinous crime in dismissing them when ours, it must surely be owned as heavy grievance to be forced to retain them, though uncertain of their being only ours. And yet such the hapless dilemma man is reduced to, when tied to that frail toy of woman; in danger of becoming an adulterer if he dismisses her, or of harbouring an adultress if he keeps her.

Nevertheless it must be owned, that woman, though essentially an evil, is a necessary one: but then so much the more burdensome is she for being so; since what is most endearing in her makes our danger the more imminent, and our only security is in what must render her intolerable. The man, who weds a beautiful woman, measures a mark for every libertine's lechery. But he who marries a plain one, marries lechery itself. The former will find it an arduous
task to preserve inviolated his private property in the object of public lust. And how wretched must be the fate of the latter, to be confined to the society of one, whom none else would condescend to couple with! However upon the whole there may be, perhaps, much less misery annexed to the possession of a homely wife, than to the difficulty of keeping a handsome one chaste. But still it is plain there is misery in both.

Well then might *Cato* say, that "but for woman the world would be without woe, and the celestial beings would delight to mingle their conversation with ours." It is well remarked by a learned author that *Cato* spoke not by guess but from his own fatal experience. And who better qualified to give a proper idea of the artifices of those common mischiefs, than one who was himself the dupe of them? Their vices and follies alike are carried to such an excess, that nothing could make them credible but conviction; and nothing but experience could justify the belief of it in one who were almost conscious of the reality. But *Cato* had the trial, and to his sorrow found the fair, delusive flower of venus like the soft, silky, touch-ensnaring rose, beneath whose beauteous baneful blossom lies many a pointed thorn.

But I forget, *Cato* is no oracle with *Sophia*. Nor would he be such with me, was he particular in his opinion of the fair-sex. But surely all can never be mistaken. And do not all, who bear the character of wise, agree, that women are the shuttle-cocks of vice and folly, impotence and eagerness; the dupes of others passions, and jilted by their own. Do not all writers, sacred and profane, without comparing notes, combine in painting them false as they are fair,

and silly as they are sweet; artful in modest guise, and impudent when lewd; treacherous, ambitious, slaves of avarice, the foes of reason, and never friends to thought, but when they think on mischief. If *Seneca* may be believed, "a woman never muses by herself, but she is musing on some wickedness." And if we discredit him, we must discredit all who have ever stooped to write about them. For all are of his mind, and all consider them at best as flattering, pleasing, desirable evils. *Democritus* was so convinced of this, that, being questioned, *why he who was himself so big had married a wife so little,* he answered, *Methinks, says he, as it is, I have chosen too big a one, when all I had to choose was evil.* But *Protagoras* went farther still, no evil according to him exceeds that Evil, *Woman.* What made him give his daughter in marriage to his mortal enemy? Ask him, and take his reason from himself, *I gave her to him,* says he, *because I could give him nothing worse.*

I should never have done were I to give a list of all the sages in every age who have thought like them. But what occasion have we for the authority of others to confirm a truth our own eyes are daily witnesses to? Let us look round the female world; what shall we find but weakness of head and corruption of heart, intolerable trifling, or destructive industry? A giddy tribe of useless things, made up of noise and nonsense, envy, malice, impertinence, and show? Mere murderers of time, averse to all that's good, and prone to all that's naught; proud only of what serves to humble them, and never humble but when 'tis base to be so; and but a fairer kind of fiends disguised in angels dresses, whose actions are the best antidote to the poison of their charms? Here their insatiable incontinence renders their beauty shocking; there their modesty is meant a cover to their own lust and an incentive to yours. In one house, you see a pretty, foolish, lifeless, moving statue; in another, a homely, bookish, pert prating Doctress, a retailer of cross-cross sentences, whose brain is a mere lottery-wheel of sense and nonsense drawn alike by chance, five hundred blanks to one prize, of no worth when examined. In a third you meet with a housewifely shrew, a sober slut, an ignorant cypher, a gossiping politician, or a learned slattern. In a fourth a litigious cheat, a virago, bully, or phantom frighted at the crow of a cock. And everywhere you are sure to find an inconsistent set of fickle creatures, never for a minute themselves, but when most unlike us and nearest being unlike themselves; and never steady in anything but folly, vice and fickleness.

How unlike are these pretty, little-more-than-nothings, to that lordly creature, whose superiority of merit, as well as power and prerogative, their impotent ambition to be like him might alone suffice to convince them of, had they but one degree of understanding more than they have! *Man*, created by Nature to rule, was endowed with a soul equal to the task. His body is strong, his mind vigorous, and his heart resolute; his understanding is fitted for the most sublime speculations, and his person for the most hardy and important exercises. He can dive into the inmost secrets of Nature without losing himself; and has art enough to copy her noblest works, and almost to excel the great Original. He wants neither fancy to invent, nor Genius to contrive. With quickness to apprehend and memory to retain, he haS judgment to discern, and can by distinguishing and comparing different ideas form the greatest of designs. Happy in a Genius for the most glorious enterprises he has both courage and conduct sufficient to execute them. For he is not only qualified by his intellectual capacity to be greatly wise, but naturally prompted to be truly good. In short, virtue and wisdom are the epitome of his character, where woman interferes not to corrupt it. If there are a few degenerate creatures, who answer not this character, they are such only as by conversing with womankind, putting on their foibles, and affecting to be like them, degrade themselves of manhood, commence intellectual eunuchs, and, though they are, deserve no more to be reputed of the same sex with us. But still the bulk of men were designed by Nature to be both greatly wise and eminently good. And there are as many instances to prove these characteristics in the men, as there are in women to prove their want of them, and natural incapacity for them.

How many men might we not point out, whom but to name would force that daring sex to own the little claim they have to equal merit with that noble creature, though all the female train should club their several worths to match it. To know what man is capable of being, examine what he really is when perfect. And to gain a true idea of all men's real merit, view any man in whom all manly virtues are blended.

Philanthropus is such, admired, esteemed, beloved by all who know him, and loving all mankind. Majestic in his person, of a lively understanding, and of manners gracious, affable and sincere; he is ever cheerful, never light; ever present to his company, never absent to himself. His voice is all harmony, his words all sense, his actions answer to his mien, and what he looks he is; discreetly daring, modest with becoming boldness, sprightily sedate, easy without levity, solid without solemnity, good by approved principle, and wise by parts anticipating experience. His virtue not stiffened by austerity, nor his wisdom foiled by any fondness of showing it. Never elated by prosperity, adversity cannot depress him; always serene in every vicissitude of life, not from insensibility, but from thought, resolution, and conscious worth. Grateful to his maker he has nothing so much at heart as the true interests of religion, which he is incessantly studious to cultivate in himself, and frequently happy enough to promote in others. His unblemished conduct proves him the Christian he professes to be; In him faith free from bigotry and superstition, zeal according to knowledge, Godliness without ostentation or severity, and devotion without enthusiasm, give piety such an amiable aspect, as makes the practice of it inviting. Thus blessed, thus happy, thus worthy to be so, so far is he from taking pride in any advantages he possesses above others, that he looks on them as the common property of all. Nor is he more anxious to communicate those advantages to others, than sure to share in their miseries by a generous fellow-feeling of their misfortunes. The widow has a protector in him, the orphan a father; the wretched find him their relief, and all who are in distress or under oppression, their advocate, support, and defence. He never thinks himself so rich as when a poor man shares with him his fortune. His endeavours to surpass others in goodness, never hinder him from labouring to make them even better than himself. And he never approves his own wisdom but when it helps him to make others wise, or to discover some excellence in them. The good are ever sure of his esteem, the sage of his admiration, and both of his love and praise. For no merit escapes his acknowledgment which reaches his knowledge, as no demerit incurs his scorn or hatred, though it cannot elude his penetration. To the gift of knowing how to applaud the deserving, without putting them out of countenance, he joins the talent of reasoning or laughing others out of their follies and foibles, without exposing or offending them; ever sure to gain a friend by the worth he rewards, never in danger of making an enemy by the vice he discountenances. The foolish he is industrious to direct, and is indefatigable as well as informing the ignorant as in reforming the wicked. Those, whom he can better, he always encourages; and those whom he cannot, he pities, but never condemns; not more liberal of just commendation than sparing of deserved censure. He is just to the nicest point of honour, and sets no other bounds to benevolence than prudence prefixes. Glad of advice, he is not forward to give it, not conceited enough to offer it unasked but where 'tis a charity to do so. And when he does give it, his counsels are honest, open, and persuasive, the torch of reason and the flame of friendship; his encomiums are pathetic, emulative and insinuating, the spur of virtue, though the curb of pride; and his reproofs, gentle yet piercing; calm but not resolute; serious though soothing; candid and yet so piquing, that every haughtiness must stoop, and obstinacy itself submit to rule. Skilled in every science, versed in many languages, and master of every elegance, his learning serves not to make him arrogant, nor his eloquence to make him talkative. In a word, such judgment, propriety, energy, dignity and grace combine to dictate all he says, and inspire all he does, that envy itself considers him as a finished pattern of manly perfection; a nice Christian, a complete gentleman, a useful friend, a prudent parent, and an indulgent husband; Good even where goodness seems fruitless; and wise even in a choice where wisdom has but the left hand of chance, the election of a wife.

Angelica, the fair the exquisitely fair *Angelica,* is the blessed object of this happy choice. In her person, oh! She is all beauty, softness, ease, and delicacy. Nature, in a strife of grandeur, fashioned her to show how far the charms of ocular perfection could be carried. And then she is good beyond what fancy can conceit of woman, and wise enough to copy from her husband such accomplishments as may be molded into female virtues. Yet her virtue neither renders her formal nor censorious; and her sense but serves to make her easily reserved and modestly free. Her only pride is to enrich her mind with such useful knowledge as may complete her a perfect mother, wise and friend. Without the ambition to appear learned, she has gained a sufficient tincture of the sciences to make herself an agreeable companion to her husband and all who converse with her. Though whenever she treats of learning, 'tis in a manner which shows rather a desire of receiving information than a consciousness of being able to afford it. The books she reads are such only as can assist her judgment and refine her morals, the choice of which she ever

depends upon her husband for: and them she never suffers to break in upon the essential duties of her station; for study is only the occupation of her leisure hours, not the business of life. Her chief care is to please and be useful to her Lord; to nurse her children, to educate them in virtue, and to instill into them by her precepts and example an early aversion to vice, folly, idleness and trifling. And the next to this is the economy and government of her family; in which, with sensible subordination to her husband, she is absolute mistress, without being imperious; frugal without meanness, hospitable without prodigality, and neat without affectation. She can manage her domestic affairs without neglecting the service of her friends. Ever assiduous to oblige, she has the art of doing it without making an obligation a burden. The poor, the sick, the imprisoned, and distressed, all look upon her as a common mother; and that truly Christian piety, which gives life to all she does or thinks, inspires her with means to assist them all, which she does without the least exterior ostentation or inward vanity. Thus free from every vice she is deficient in no one commendable quality her sex can be capable of, but that of forgiving enemies; which she cannot practise for want of foes to forgive. For, respectful to those above her, courteous to her equals, affable to her dependents, and beneficent to all, she reigns the object of just admiration, respect, and esteem in every heart, and forces envy itself to wish for her friendship.

Such is *Angelica*, and such the height of womanish perfection, as near to that of man, as women's lovely faces in a glass appear to them. All that is wanting is the life, the truth, the reality. Still lifeless and feeble as their merit is, compared with manly worth, how happy might not man esteem himself, if each *Philanthropus* among mankind had an *Angelica* to match with. But such a one is too delicate a work for Nature to produce in every century. 'Tis like a phoenix, the prodigy of an age; and such a miracle of completeness but serves to make the rest of the sex more contemptible by comparison, as *Michael* painted with the rebel Angels shows the fiends more frightful.

Let women then give up their claim to an equality with the men, and be content with the humble station which Nature has allotted them. If their souls are great enough to aspire to our esteem, let them learn from *Angelica* to be more deserving and less assuming. And since neither their capacity for head nor their dispositions of heart can lift them to emulate, let them apply their little talents at least to imitate us: That pleased with the pretty mimics of ourselves, we may venture to place them in our bosoms without fear of cherishing a viper there. Let them remember that man holds his superiority over them by a charter from Nature in his very production. And nothing can justify their calling that charter into question till they are able to prove their worth. But as we may venture to bid them a bold defiance to this, we may safely conclude that the utmost liberty they have a tolerable colour to contend for is that we admit children too; which would be a barbarous condescention to some, considering the ill use they are able to make of it, and is but a good-natured weakness to the best of them, considering the little good use any of them are capable of applying it to.

F I N I S

.

.

Back to the “Man Superior to Woman” Index

The Spirit of Laws (excerpts) -- Baron de Montesquieu, 1748

. · 13 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

THE SPIRIT OF LAWS

By

Charles De Secondat, Baron De Montesquieu

Translated By Thomas Nugent
[Selected sections]

[Scanned and edited with footnote revision for the web by Spartacus, editor of The Men's Tribune. Repostings must include this link. Please report errors.]

[Montesquieu has been said to be the most influential philosopher of the founding fathers of the United States of America, who guaranteed to their states that highest form of government, the "republican form" (Art. IV, Sect. 4.)]

.

.

Book VII
CONSEQUENCES OF THE DIFFERENT PRINCIPLES OF THE THREE GOVERNMENTS WITH RESPECT TO SUMPTUARY LAWS, LUXURY, AND THE CONDITION OF WOMEN
8.--Of public Continency
9.--Of the Condition or State of Women in different Governments
10.--Of the domestic Tribunal among the Romans
11.--In what Manner the Institutions changed at Rome, together with the Government
12.--0f the Guardianship of Women among the Romans
13--Of the Punishments decreed by the Emperors against the Incontinence of Women
14--Sumptuary Laws among the Romans
15--0f Dowries and Nuptial Advantages in different Constitutions
.
Book XVI
HOW THE LAWS OF DOMESTIC SLAVERY BEAR A RELATION TO THE NATURE OF THE CLIMATE
8.--Of the Separation of Women from Men
9.--Of the Connection between domestic and political Government
10.--The Principle on which the Morals of the East are founded
11.--Of domestic Slavery independently of Polygamy
12.--0f natural Modesty
.
Book XVII
HOW THE LAWS OF POLITICAL SERVITUDE BEAR A RELATION TO THE NATURE OF THE CLIMATE
1.--Of political Servitude
2.--The Difference between Nations in point of Courage
3.--0f the Climate of Asia
.
Book XIX

OF LAWS IN RELATION TO THE PRINCIPLES WHICH FORM THE GENERAL SPIRIT, THE MORALS, AND CUSTOMS OF A NATION
12.--Of Customs and Manners in a despotic State
13.--0f the Behavior of the Chinese
.
Book XXVII
1.--Of the Origin and Revolutions of the Roman Laws on Successions
.

The Spirit of Laws - Book VII

. · 13 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

From “The Spirit of Laws” – by the Baron De Montesquieu

.

BOOK VII

CONSEQUENCES OF THE DIFFERENT PRINCIPLES OF THE THREE GOVERNMENTS WITH RESPECT TO SUMPTUARY LAWS, LUXURY, AND THE CONDITION OF WOMEN

.....

8.--Of public Continency

So many are the imperfections that attend the loss of virtue in women, and so greatly are their minds depraved when this principal guard is removed, that in a popular state public incontinency may be considered as the last of miseries, and as a certain forerunner of a change in the constitution.

Hence it is that the sage legislators of republican states have ever required of women a particular gravity of manners. They have proscribed, not only vice, but the very appearance of it. They have banished even all commerce of gallantry--a commerce that produces idleness, that renders the women corrupters, even before they are corrupted, that gives a value to trifles, and debases things of importance: a commerce, in fine, that makes people act entirely by the maxims of ridicule, in which the women are so perfectly skilled.

9.--Of the Condition or State of Women in different Governments

In monarchies women are subject to very little restraint, because as the distinction of ranks calls them to court, there they assume a spirit of liberty, which is almost the only one tolerated in that place. Each courtier avails himself of their charms and passions, in order to advance his fortune: and as their weakness admits not of pride, but of vanity, luxury constantly attends them.

In despotic governments women do not introduce, but are themselves an object of, luxury. They must be in a state of the most rigorous servitude. Every one follows the spirit of the government, and adopts in his own family the customs he sees elsewhere established. As the laws are very severe and executed on the spot, they are afraid lest the liberty of women should expose them to danger. Their quarrels, indiscretions, repugnancies, jealousies, piques, and that art, in fine, which little souls have of interesting great ones, would be attended there with fatal consequences.

Besides, as princes in those countries make a sport of human nature, they allow themselves a multitude of women; and a thousand considerations oblige them to keep those women in close confinement.

In republics women are free by the laws and restrained by manners; luxury is banished thence, and with it corruption and vice.

In the cities of Greece, where they were not under the restraint of a religion which declares that even amongst men regularity of manners is a part of virtue; where a blind passion triumphed with a boundless insolence, and love appeared only in a shape which we dare not mention, while marriage was considered as nothing more than simple friendship;1 such were the virtue, simplicity, and chastity of women in those cities, that in this respect hardly any people were ever known to have had a better and wiser polity.2

10.--Of the domestic Tribunal among the Romans

The Romans had no particular magistrates, like the Greeks, to inspect the conduct of women. The censors had not an eye over them, as over the rest of the republic.

The institution of the domestic tribunal3 supplied the magistracy established among the Greeks.4

The husband summoned the wife's relatives, and tried her in their presence.5 This tribunal preserved the manners of the republic; and at the same time those very manners maintained this tribunal. For it decided not only in respect to the violation of the laws, but also of manners: now, in order to judge of the violation of the latter, manners are requisite.

The penalties inflicted by this tribunal ought to be, and actually were, arbitrary: for all that relates to manners, and to the rules of modesty, can hardly be comprised under one code of laws. It is easy indeed to regulate by laws what we owe to others; but it is very difficult to comprise all we owe to ourselves.

The domestic tribunal inspected the general conduct of women: but there was one crime which, beside the animadversion of this tribunal, was likewise subject to a public accusation. This was adultery; whether that in a republic so great a depravation of manners interested the government; or whether the wife's immorality might render the husband suspected; or whether, in fine, they were afraid lest even honest people might choose that this crime should rather be concealed than punished.

11.--In what Manner the Institutions changed at Rome, together with the Government

As manners were supported by the domestic tribunal, they were also supported by the public accusation; and hence it is that these two things fell together with the public manners, and ended with the republic.6

The establishing of perpetual questions, that is, the division of jurisdiction among the praetors, and the custom gradually introduced of the praetors determining all causes themselves,7 weakened the use of the domestic tribunal. This appears by the surprise of historians, who look upon the decisions which Tiberius caused to be given by this tribunal as singular facts, and as a renewal of the ancient course of pleading.

The establishment of monarchy and the change of manners put likewise an end to public accusations. It might be apprehended lest a dishonest man, affronted at the slight shown him by a woman, vexed at her refusal, and irritated even by her virtue, should form a design to destroy her. The Julian law ordained that a woman should not be accused of adultery till after her husband had been charged with favoring her irregularities; which limited greatly, and annihilated, as it were, this sort of accusation.8

Sextus Quintus seemed to have been desirous of reviving the public accusation.9 But there needs very little reflection to see that this law would be more improper in such a monarchy as his than in any other.

12.--0f the Guardianship of Women among the Romans

The Roman laws subjected women to a perpetual guardianship, except they were under cover and subject to the authority of a husband.10 This guardianship was given to the nearest of the male relatives: and by a vulgar expression11 it appears they were very much confined. This was proper for a republic, but not at all necessary in a monarchy.12

That the women among the ancient Germans were likewise under a perpetual tutelage appears from the different codes of the Laws of the Barbarians.13 This custom was communicated to the monarchies founded by those people; but was not of long duration.

13--Of the Punishments decreed by the Emperors against the Incontinence of Women

The Julian law ordained a punishment against adultery. But so far was this law, any more than those afterwards made on the same account, from being a mark of regularity of manners, that on the contrary it was a proof of their depravity.

The whole political system in respect to women received a change in the monarchical state. The question was no longer to oblige them to a regularity of manners, but to punish their crimes. That new laws were made to punish their crimes was owing to their leaving those transgressions unpunished which were not of so criminal a nature.

The frightful dissolution of manners obliged indeed the emperors to enact laws in order to put some stop to lewdness; but it was not their intention to establish a general reformation. Of this the positive facts related by historians are a much stronger proof than all these laws can be of the contrary. We may see in Dio the conduct of Augustus on this occasion, and in what manner he eluded, both in his praetorian and censorian office, the repeated instances that were made him.14 for that purpose.

It is true that we find in historians very rigid sentences, passed in the reigns of Augustus and Tiberius, against the lewdness of some Roman ladies: but by showing us the spirit of those reigns, at the same time they demonstrate the Spirit of those decisions.

The principal design of Augustus and Tiberius was to punish the dissoluteness of their relatives. It was not their immorality they punished, but a particular crime of impiety or high treason15 of their own invention, which served to promote a respect for majesty, and answered their private revenge. Hence it is that the Roman historians inveigh so bitterly against this tyranny.

The penalty of the Julian law was small.16 The emperors insisted that in passing sentence the judges should increase the penalty of the law. This was the subject of the invectives of historians. They did not examine whether the women were deserving of punishment, but whether they had violated the law, in order to punish them.

One of the most tyrannical proceedings of Tiberius17 was the abuse he made of the ancient laws. When he wanted to extend the punishment of a Roman lady beyond that inflicted by the Julian law, he revived the domestic tribunal.18

These regulations in respect to women concerned only senatorial families, not the common people. Pretences were wanted to accuse the great, which were constantly furnished by the dissolute behavior of the ladies.

In fine, what I have above observed, namely, that regularity of manners is not the principle of monarchy, was never better verified than under those first emperors; and whoever doubts it need only read Tacitus, Suetonius, Juvenal, or Martial.

14--Sumptuary Laws among the Romans

We have spoken of public incontinence because it is the inseparable companion of luxury. If we leave the motions

of the heart at liberty, how shall we be able to restrain the weaknesses of the mind?

At Rome, besides the general institutions, the censors prevailed on the magistrates to enact several particular laws for maintaining the frugality of women. This was the design of the Fannian, Licinian, and Oppian laws. We may see in Livy19 the great ferment the senate was in when the women insisted upon the revocation of the Oppian law. The abrogation of this law is fixed upon by Valerius Maximus as the period whence we may date the luxury of the Romans.

15--0f Dowries and Nuptial Advantages in different Constitutions

Dowries ought to be considerable in monarchies, in order to enable husbands to support their rank and the established luxury. In republics, where luxury should never reign,20 they ought to be moderate; but there should be hardly any at all in despotic governments, where women are in some measure slaves.

The community of goods introduced by the French laws between man and wife is extremely well adapted to a monarchical government; because the women are thereby interested in domestic affairs, and compelled, as it were, to take care of their family. It is less so in a republic, where women are possessed of more virtue. But it would be quite absurd in despotic governments, where the women themselves generally constitute a part of the master's property.

As women are in a state that furnishes sufficient inducements to marriage, the advantages which the law gives them over the husband's property are of no service to society. But in a republic they would be extremely prejudicial, because riches are productive of luxury. In despotic governments the profits accruing from marriage ought to be mere subsistence, and no more.

.

.

FOOTNOTES:

1 "In respect to true love," says Plutarch, " the women have nothing to say to it." In his "Treatise of Love," p.600. He spoke in the style of his time. See Xenophon in the dialogue entitled "Hiero."

2 At Athens there was a particular magistrate who inspected the conduct of women.

3 Romulus instituted this tribunal, as appears from Dionysius Halicarnassus, book II. p.96.

4 See in Livy book XXXIX., the use that was made of this tribunal at the time of the conspiracy of the Bacchanalians (They gave the name of conspiracy against the republic to assemblies in which the morals of women and young people were debauched)

5 It appears from Dionys. Haficarn. lib. II., that Romulus's institution was, that in ordinary cases the husband should sit as judge in the presence of the wife's relatives, but that in heinous crimes he should determine in conjunction with five of them. Hence Ulpian, tit. 6, secs 9, 12, and 13, distinguishes in respect to the different judgments of manners between those which he calls important, and those which are less so; mores, graviores, leviores.

6 "Judicio de moribus (quod antea quidem in antiquis legibus positum erat, non autem frequentabatur) penitus abolito."-Leg. II, "Cod. de repud."

7 Judicia extraordinaria.

8 It was entirely abolished by Constantine: "It is a shame," said he, "that settled marriages should he disturbed by the presumption of strangers."

9 Sextus Ouintus ordained that, if a husband did not come and make his complaint to him of his wife's infidelity, he should be put to death. See Leti.

10 Nisi convenissent in manum viri.

11 Ne sis mihi patruus oro.

l2 The Papian law ordained, under Augustus, that women who had borne three children should be exempt from this tutelage.

13 This tutelage was by the Germans called Mundeburdium.

14 Upon their bringing him a young man who had married a woman with whom he had before carried on an illicit commerce, he hesitated a long while, not daring to approve or to punish these things. At length recollecting himself, "Seditions," says he, "have been the cause of very great evils; let us forget them." Dio, book LIV. The Senate having desired him to give them some regulations in respect to women's morals, he evaded their petition by telling them that they should chastitise their wives in the same manner as he did his; upon which they desired him to tell them how he behaved to his wife. (I think a very indiscreet question.)

15 "Culpam inter viros et foeminas vulgatum gravi nomine laesarum re- ligionum appellando, clementiam majorum suasque ipse leges egrediebatur." --Tacit. "Annal." lib. III.

16 This law is given in the Digest, but without mentioning the penalty. It is supposed it was only relegatio, because that of incest was only deportatio. Leg. si quis viduam, ff. de quaest.

17 "Proprium id Tiberia fuit scelera nuper reperta priscis verbis obtegere."-- Tacit.

18 "Adulterii graviorem paonam deprecatus, ut exemplo majorum propinquis suis ultra ducentesimum lapidem re- moveretur, suasit. Adultero Manlio Italia atque Africa interdictum est."-- Tacit. "Annal." lib. II.

19 Dec. 4. lib. IV.

20 Marseilles was the wisest of all the republics in its time; here it was ordained that dowries should not exceed one hundred crowns in money, and five in clothes, as Strabo observes, lib. IV. Strabo further allows a small sum in gold ornaments to serve in the decoration of the bride.

.

Back to “The Spirit of Laws” index page

The Spirit of Laws - Book XVI

. · 13 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

From “The Spirit of Laws” – by the Baron De Montesquieu

BOOK XVI

HOW THE LAWS OF DOMESTIC SLAVERY BEAR A RELATION TO THE NATURE OF THE CLIMATE

.....

8.--Of the Separation of Women from Men

The prodigious number of wives possessed by those who live in rich and voluptuous countries is a consequence of the law of polygamy. Their separation from men, and their close confinement, naturally follow from the greatness of this number. Domestic order renders this necessary; thus an insolvent debtor seeks to conceal himself from the pursuit of his creditors. There are climates where the impulses of nature have such force that morality has almost none. If a man be left with a woman, the temptation and the fall will be the same thing; the attack certain, the resistance none. In these countries, instead of precepts, they have recourse to bolts and bars.

One of the Chinese classic authors considers the man as a prodigy of virtue who, finding a woman alone in a distant apartment, can forbear making use of force.21

9.--Of the Connection between domestic and political Government

In a republic the condition of citizens is moderate, equal, mild, and agreeable; everything partakes of the benefit of public liberty. An empire over the women cannot, amongst them, be so well exerted; and where the climate demands this empire, it is most agreeable to a monarchical government. This one of the reasons why it has ever been difficult to establish a popular government in the east.

On the contrary, the slavery of women is perfectly conformable to the genius of a despotic government, which delights treating all with severity. Thus at all times have we seen in Asia domestic slavery and despotic government walk hand in hand with an equal pace.

In a government which requires, above all things, that a particular regard be paid to its tranquillity, and where the extreme subordination calls for peace, it is absolutely necessary to shut up the women; for their intrigues would prove fatal to their husbands. A government which has not time to examine into the conduct of its subjects views them with a suspicious eye, only because they appear and suffer themselves to be known.

Let us only suppose that the levity of mind, the indiscretions, the tastes and caprices of our women, attended by their passions of a higher and a lower kind, with all their active fire, and in that full liberty with which they appear amongst us, were conveyed into an eastern government, where would be the father of a family who could enjoy a moment's repose? The men would be everywhere suspected, everywhere enemies; the state would be overturned, and the kingdom overflowed with rivers of blood.

10.--The Principle on which the Morals of the East are founded

In the case of a multiplicity of wives, the more a family ceases to be united, the more ought the laws to reunite its

detached parts in a common centre; and the greater the diversity of interests, the more necessary is it for the laws to bring them back to a common interest. This is more particularly done by confinement. The women should not only be separated from the men by the walls of the house, but they ought also be separated in the same enclosure, in such a manner that each may have a distinct household in the same family. Hence each derives all that relates to the practice of morality, modesty, chastity, reserve, silence, peace, dependence, respect, and love; and, in short, a general direction of her thoughts to that which, in its own nature, is a thing of the greatest importance, a single and entire attachment to her family.

Women have naturally so many duties to fulfil--duties which are peculiarly theirs, that they cannot be sufficiently excluded from everything capable of inspiring other ideas; from everything that goes by the name of amusements; and from everything which we call business.

We find the manners more pure in the several parts of the East, in proportion as the confinement of women is more strictly observed. In great kingdoms there are necessarily great lords. The greater their wealth, the more enlarged is their ability of keeping their wives in an exact confinement, and of preventing them from entering again into society. Hence it proceeds that in the empires of Turkey, Persia, of the Mogul, China, and Japan, the manners of their wives are admirable.

But the case is not the same in India, where a multitude of islands and the situation of the land have divided the country into an infinite number of petty states, which from causes that we have not here room to mention are rendered despotic.

There are none there but wretches, some pillaging and others pillaged. Their grandees have very moderate fortunes, and those whom they call rich have only a bare subsistence. The confinement of their women cannot, therefore, be very strict; nor can they make use of any great precautions to keep them within due bounds; hence it proceeds that the corruption of their manners is scarcely to be conceived.

We may there see to what an extreme the vices of a climate indulged in full liberty will carry licentiousness. It is there that nature has a force, and modesty a weakness, which exceed all comprehension. At Patan22 the wanton desires of the women are so outrageous, that the men are obliged to make use of a certain apparel to shelter them from their designs.23 According to Mr. Smith,24 things are not better conducted in the petty kingdoms of Guinea. In these countries the two sexes lose even those laws which properly belong to each.

11.--Of domestic Slavery independently of Polygamy

It is not only a plurality of wives which in certain places of the East requires their confinement, but also the climate itself. Those who consider the horrible crimes, the treachery, the dark villainies, the poisonings, the assassinations, which the liberty of women has occasioned at Goa and in the Portuguese settlements in the Indies, where religion permits only one wife; and who compare them with the innocence and purity of manners of the women of Turkey, Persia, Hindostan, China, and Japan, will clearly see that it is frequently as necessary to separate them from the men, when they have but one, as when they have many.

These are things which ought to be decided by the climate. What purpose would it answer to shut up women in our northern countries, where their manners are naturally good; where all their passions are calm; and where love rules over the heart with so regular and gentle an empire that the least degree of prudence is sufficient to conduct it?

It is a happiness to live in those climates which permit such freedom of converse, where that sex which has most charms seems to embellish society, and where wives, reserving themselves for the pleasures of one, contribute to the amusement of all.

12.--0f natural Modesty

All nations are equally agreed in fixing contempt and ignominy on the incontinence of women. Nature has dictated this to all. She has established the attack, and she has established too the resistance; and having implanted desires in both, she has given to the one boldness, and to the other shame. To individuals she has granted a long succession of years to attend to their preservation: but to continue the species, she has granted only a moment.

It is then far from being true that to be incontinent is to follow the laws of nature; on the contrary, it is a violation of these laws, which can be observed only by behaving with modesty and discretion.

Besides, it is natural for intelligent beings to feel their imperfections. Nature has, therefore, fixed shame in our minds --a shame of our imperfections.

When, therefore, the physical power of certain climates violates the natural law of the two sexes, and that of intelligent beings, it belongs to the legislature to make civil laws, with a view to opposing the nature of the climate and reestablishing the primitive laws.

.

FOOTNOTES

21 "It is an admirable touch-stone, to find by oneself a treasure, and to know the right owner; or to see a beautiful woman in a lonely apartment; or to hear the cries of an enemy, who must perish without our assistance." Translation of a Chinese piece of morality, which may be seen in Du Halde, vol: iii. p. 151.

22 "Collection of voyages for the establishment of an India Company," vol. ii. p. 2.

23 In the Maldivian isles the fathers marry their daughters at ten and eleven years of age, because it is a great sin, say they, to suffer them to endure the want of a husband. See Pirard, cap. xii. At Bantam, as soon as a girl is twelve or thirteen years old, she must be married, if they would not have her lead a debauched life. "Collection of Voyages for the establishment of an India Company," p. 348.

24 "Voyage to Guinea," part second. "When the women happen to meet with a man, they lay hold of him, and threaten to make a complaint to their husbands if he slight their addresses They steal into a man's bed, and wake him; and if he refuses to comply with their desires, they threaten to suffer themselves to be caught in flagranti."

Back to “The Spirit of Laws” index page

The Spirit of Laws - Book XVII

. · 13 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

From “The Spirit of Laws” – by the Baron De Montesquieu

.

BOOK XVII

HOW THE LAWS OF POLITICAL SERVITUDE BEAR A RELATION TO THE NATURE OF THE CLIMATE

1.--Of political Servitude

POLITICAL servitude does not less depend on the nature of the climate than that which is civil and domestic; and this we shall now demonstrate.

2.--The Difference between Nations in point of Courage

We have already observed that great heat enervates the strength and courage of men, and that in cold climates they have a certain vigor of body and mind, which renders them patient and intrepid, and qualifies them for arduous enterprises. This remark holds good, not only between different nations, but even in the different parts of the same country. In the north of China25 a people are more courageous than those in the south; and those in the south of [K]orea26 have less bravery than those in the north.

We ought not, then, to be astonished that the effeminacy of the people in hot climates has almost always rendered them slaves; and that the bravery of those in cold climates has enabled them to maintain their liberties. This is an effect which springs from a natural cause.

This has also been found true in America; the despotic empires of Mexico and Peru were near the Line, and almost all the little free nations were, and are still, near the Poles.

3.--0f the Climate of Asia

... in Asia the strong nations are opposed to the weak; the warlike, brave, and active people touch immediately upon those who are indolent, effeminate, and timorous; the one must, therefore, conquer, and the other be conquered. In Europe, on the contrary, strong nations are opposed to the strong; and those who join each other have nearly the same courage. This is the grand reason of the weakness of Asia, and of the strength of Europe; of the liberty of Europe, and of the slavery of Asia: a cause that I do not recollect ever to have seen remarked. Hence it proceeds that liberty in Asia never increases; whilst in Europe it is enlarged or diminished, according to particular circumstances.

FOOTNOTES

26 The Chinese books make mention of this. Ibid.

Back to “The Spirit of Laws” index page

The Spirit of Laws - Book XIX

. · 13 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

From “The Spirit of Laws” – by the Baron De Montesquieu

.

BOOK XIX

OF LAWS IN RELATION TO THE PRINCIPLES WHICH FORM THE GENERAL SPIRIT, THE MORALS, AND CUSTOMS OF A NATION

.....

12.--Of Customs and Manners in a despotic State

It is a capital maxim, that the manners and customs of a despotic empire ought never to be changed; for nothing would more speedily produce a revolution. The reason is, that in these states there are no laws, that is, none that can be properly called so; there are only manners and customs; and if you overturn these you overturn all.

.

Laws are established, manners are inspired; these proceed from a general spirit, those from a particular institution: now it is as dangerous, nay more so, to subvert the general spirit as to change a particular institution.

.

There is less communication in a country where each, either as superior or inferior, exercises or is oppressed by arbitrary power, than there is in those where liberty reigns in every station. They do not, therefore, so often change their manners and behavior. Fixed and established customs have a near resemblance to laws. Thus it is here necessary that a prince or a legislator should less oppose the manners and customs of the people than in any other country upon earth.

Their women are commonly confined, and have no influence in society. In other countries, where they have intercourse with men, their desire of pleasing, and the desire men also have of giving them pleasure, produce a continual change of customs. The two sexes spoil each other; they both lose their distinctive and essential quality; what was naturally fixed becomes quite unsettled, and their customs and behavior alter every day.

13.--0f the Behavior of the Chinese

But China is the place where the customs of the country can never be changed. Besides their women being absolutely separated from the men, their customs, like their morals, are taught in the schools. A man of letters may be known by his easy address.27 These things being once taught by precept, and inculcated by grave doctors, become fixed, like the principles of morality, and are never changed.

FOOTNOTES

27 Du Halde.

Back to “The Spirit of Laws” index page

The Spirit of Laws - Book XXVII

. · 13 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

From “The Spirit of Laws” – by the Baron De Montesquieu

BOOK XXVII

1.--Of the Origin and Revolutions of the Roman Laws on Successions

.... The laws of the ancient Romans concerning successions, being formed with the same spirit which dictated the division of lands, did not sufficiently restrain the riches of women; thus a door was left open to luxury, which is always inseparable from this sort of opulence. Between the second and third Punic wars, they began to perceive the evil and made the Voconian law;28 but as they were induced to this by the most important considerations; as but few monuments have reached us, that take notice of this law, and as it has hitherto been spoken of in a most confused manner, I shall endeavor to clear it up.

Cicero has preserved a fragment, which forbids the instituting a woman an heiress, whether she was married or unmarried.29 The epitome of Livy, where he speaks of this law, says no more:30 it appears from Cicero31 and St. Augustin,32 that the daughter, though an only child, was comprehended in the prohibition.

Cato, the elder, contributed all in his power to get this law passed.33 Aulus Gellius cites a fragment of a speech,34 which he made on this occasion. By preventing the succession of women, his intent was to take away the source of luxury; as by undertaking the defence of the Oppian law, he intended to put a stop to luxury itself....

The Voconian law was made to hinder the women from growing too wealthy; for this end it was necessary to deprive them of large inheritances, and not of such as were incapable of supporting luxury...

At the time the Voconian law was passed, the Romans still preserved some remains of their ancient purity of manners .. But latterly their morals were corrupted ...

Rome, corrupted by the riches of every nation, had changed her manners; the putting a stop to the luxury of women was no longer minded. Aulus Gellius, who lived under Adrian,35 tells us, that in his time the Voconian law was almost abolished; it was buried under the opulence of the city ...

The ancient laws of Rome began to be thought severe ...

We have seen, that by the ancient laws of Rome mothers had no share in the inheritance of their children. The Voconian law afforded a new reason for their exclusion ...

These laws were extremely conformable to the spirit of a good republic, where they ought to have such an influence, as to prevent this sex from rendering either the possession, or the expectation of wealth, an instrument of luxury. On the contrary, the luxury of a monarchy rendering marriage expensive and costly, it ought to be there encouraged, both by the riches which women may bestow, and by the hope of the inheritances it is in their power to procure. Thus when monarchy was established at Rome, the whole system of successions was changed. The praetors called the relatives of the woman's side in default of those of the male side; though by the ancient laws, the relatives on the woman's side were never called. The Orphitian, senatus-consultum called children to the succession of their mother; and the Emperors Valentinian, Theodosius, and Arcadius called the grandchildren by the daughter to the succession of the grandfather.36 In short, the Emperor Justinian37 left not the least vestige of the ancient

right of successions: he established three orders of heirs, the descendants, the ascendants, and the collaterals, without any distinction between the males and females; between the relatives on the woman's side, and those on the male side; and abrogated all of this kind, which were still in force: he believed that he followed nature, even in deviating from what he called the embarrassments of the ancient jurisprudence.

[Justinian's reign began in 527 A. D., about the same time that the Dark Ages began; "The regulations made by the Romans to increase the number of their citizens had their effect while the republic, in the full vigour of her constitution, had nothing to repair but the losses she sustained by her courage, by her intrepidity, by her firmness, her love of glory and of virtue. But soon the wisest laws could not re-establish what a dying republic, what a general anarchy, what a military government, what a rigid empire, what a proud despotic power, what a feeble monarchy, what a stupid, weak, and superstitious court had sucessively pulled down. It might, indeed, be said that they conquered the world only to weaken it, and to deliver it up defenseless to barbarians." *Montesquieu*.]

FOOTNOTES

28 It was proposed by Quintus Voconius, Tribune of the people. See Cicero's "Second Oration against Verres. In the "Epitome" of T. Livy, lib. XLI., we read Voconius, instead of Voluminus.

29 "Sanxit ... ne quis haeredem virginem neve mulierem faceret."-- Cicero's "Second Oration against Verres."

30 "Legem tulit, ne quis haeredem mulierem institueret."--Lib. IV.

31 "Second Oration against Verres." 32 "Of the City of God," lib. III.

33 "Epitome" of Livy, lib. XL.

34 Lib. XXVII. cap. vi.

35 Lib. XX. cap. i.

36 Lib. 9. Cod. "de suis et legitimis haeredibus."

37 Lib. XIV. Cod. " de suis et legitimis haeredibus," et "Nov." 118 and 127.

.

Back to “The Spirit of Laws” index page

Letter to His Son (excerpt) -- by Lord Chesterfield, 1748

. · 14 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

LONDON, September 5, O.S. 1748.

.... As women are a considerable, or at least a pretty numerous part of company; and as their suffrages go a great way toward establishing a man's character in the fashionable part of the world (which is of great importance to the fortune and figure he proposes to make in it), it is necessary to please them. I will therefore, upon this subject, let you into certain Arcana that will be very useful for you to know, but which you must, with the utmost care, conceal and never seem to know. *Women, then, are only children of a larger growth;* they have an entertaining tattle, and sometimes wit; but for solid reasoning, good sense, I never knew in my life one that had it, or who reasoned or acted consequentially for four-and-twenty hours together. Some little passion or humor always breaks upon their best resolutions. Their beauty neglected or controverted, their age increased, or their supposed understandings depreciated, instantly kindles their little passions, and overturns any system of consequential conduct, that in their most reasonable moments they might have been capable of forming. ***A man of sense only trifles with them, plays with them, humors and flatters them, as he does with a sprightly forward child; but he neither consults them about, nor trusts them with serious matters;*** though he often makes them believe that he does both; which is the thing in the world that they are proud of; for they love mightily to be dabbling in business (which by the way they always spoil); and being justly distrustful that men in general look upon them in a trifling light, *they almost adore that man who talks more seriously to them, and who seems to consult and trust them; I say, who seems; for weak men really do, but wise ones only* ***seem*** *to do it.* No flattery is either too high or too low for them. They will greedily swallow the highest, and gratefully accept of the lowest; and you may safely flatter any woman from her understanding down to the exquisite taste of her fan. Women who are either indisputably beautiful, or indisputably ugly, are best flattered upon the score of their understandings; but those who are in a state of mediocrity, are best flattered upon their beauty, or at least their graces; for every woman who is not absolutely ugly thinks herself handsome; but not hearing often that she is so, is the more grateful and the more obliged to the few who tell her so; whereas a decided end conscious beauty looks upon every tribute paid to her beauty only as her due; but wants to shine, and to be considered on the side of her understanding; and a woman who is ugly enough to know that she is so, knows that she has nothing left for it but her understanding, which is consequently and probably (in more senses than one) her weak side. But these are secrets which you must keep inviolably, if you would not, like Orpheus, be torn to pieces by the whole sex; on the contrary, a man who thinks of living in the great world, must be gallant, polite, and attentive to please the women. *They have, from the weakness of men, more or less influence in all courts;* they absolutely stamp every man's character in the beau monde, and make it either current, or cry it down, and stop it in payments. It is, therefore, absolutely necessary to manage, please, and flatter them: and never to discover the less marks of contempt, which is what they never forgive; but in this they are not singular, for it is the same with men; who will much sooner forgive an injustice than an insult. Every man is not ambitious, or courteous, or passionate; but every man has pride enough in his composition to feel and resent the least slight and contempt. Remember, therefore, most carefully to conceal your contempt, however just, wherever you would not make an implacable enemy. Men are much more unwilling to have their weaknesses and their imperfections known than their crimes; and if you hint to a man that you think him silly, ignorant, or even ill-bred, or awkward, he will hate you more and longer, than if you tell him plainly, that you think him a rogue. Never yield to that temptation, which to most young men is very strong, of exposing other people's weaknesses and infirmities, for the sake of either of diverting the company, or showing your own superiority. You may get the laugh on your side by it for the present; but you will make enemies by it forever; and those who laugh with you then, will, upon reflection, fear, and consequently hate you; besides that it is ill-natured, and a good heart desires rather to conceal than expose other people's weaknesses or misfortunes. If you have wit, use it to please, and not to hurt: you may shine, like the sun in the temperate zones, without scorching. Here it is wished for; under the Line it is dreaded.

These are some of the hints which my long experience in the great world enables me to give you; and which, if you attend to them, may prove useful to you in your journey through it. I wish it may be a prosperous one; at least, I am sure that it must be your own fault if it is not.

Make my compliments to Mr. Harte, who, I am very sorry to hear, is not well. I hope by this time he is recovered. Adieu!

Further Reading:

Zenpriest #21 – The Terrible Twos

Philalethes #10 – Male vs. Female Thinking

Thomas Jefferson (selections)

. · 15 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

THOMAS JEFFERSON
(selections)

.

On European Education

.

Amazons and Angels

.

Commerce, War, and Revolution

.

Religion and The University

.

On Marie Antoinette

.

On Mrs. Merry [Wife of British Minister to the United States]

.

A Bill for Proportioning Crimes and Punishments

.

Random Remarks as a Young Man

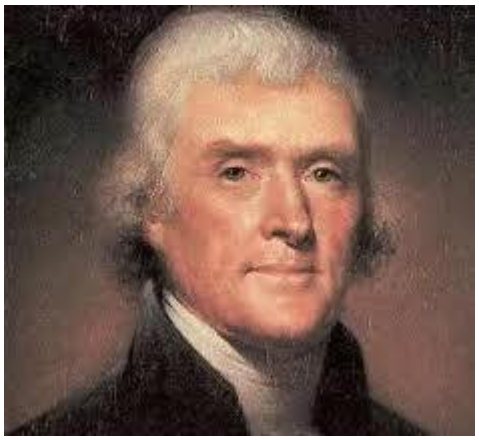
.

The Aristocracy of Beauty

.

Various Jefferson Quotes (Pinched from Angry Harry)

.



.

Thomas Jefferson (1743-1826) was an American Founding Father who was the principal author of the United States Declaration of Independence (1776) and the third President of the United States (1801–1809).

“When we get piled upon one another in large cities, as in Europe, we shall become as corrupt as Europe .”

“The democracy will cease to exist when you take away from those who are willing to work and give to those who would not.”

"It is incumbent on every generation to pay its own debts as it goes. A principle which if acted on would save one-half the wars of the world."

"I predict future happiness for Americans if they can prevent the government from wasting the labors of the people under the pretense of taking care of them."

"My reading of history convinces me that most bad government results from too much government."

"The strongest reason for the people to retain the right to keep and bear arms is, as a last resort, to protect themselves against tyranny in government."

"To compel a man to subsidize with his taxes the propagation of ideas which he disbelieves and abhors is sinful and tyrannical."

Thomas Jefferson - On European Education

. · 15 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

To John Banister, Jr.

Paris, October 15, 1785

Let us view the disadvantages of sending a youth to Europe. To enumerate them all, would require a volume. I will select a few. If he goes to England, he learns drinking, horse racing and boxing. These are the peculiarities of English education. The following circumstances are common to education in that, and the other countries of Europe. He acquires a fondness for European luxury and dissipation, and a contempt for the simplicity of his own country; he is fascinated with the privileges of the European aristocrats, and sees, with abhorrence, the lovely equality which the poor enjoy with the rich, in his own country; he contracts a partiality for aristocracy or monarchy; he forms foreign friendships which will never be useful to him, and loses the season of life for forming in his own country, those friendships, which, of all others, are the most faithful and permanent; he is led by the strongest of all the human passions, into a spirit for female intrigue, destructive of his own and others' happiness, or a passion for whores, destructive of his health, and, in both cases, learns to consider fidelity to the marriage bed as an ungentlemanly practice, and inconsistent with happiness; he recollects the voluptuary dress and arts of the European women, and pities and despises the chaste affections and simplicity of those of his own country; .....

It appears to me then, that an American coming to Europe for education, loses in his knowledge, in his morals, in his health, in his habits, and in his happiness. I had entertained only doubts on this head, before I came to Europe: what I see and hear, since I came here, proves more than I had even suspected. Cast your eye over America: who are the men of most learning, of most eloquence, most beloved by their countrymen, and most trusted and promoted by them? They are those who have been educated among them, and whose manners, morals and habits, are perfectly homogeneous with those of the country.

Back to the Thomas Jefferson Index Page

Thomas Jefferson - Amazons and Angels

. · 15 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

To Anne Willing Bingham
Paris, May 11, 1788

DEAR MADAM, -- A gentleman going to Philadelphia furnishes me the occasion of sending you some numbers of the Cabinet des Modes & some new theatrical pieces. These last have had great success on the stage, where they have excited perpetual applause. We have now need of something to make us laugh, for the topics of the times are sad and eventful. The gay and thoughtless Paris is now become a furnace of Politics. All the world is now politically mad. Men, women, children talk nothing else, & you know that naturally they talk much, loud & warm. Society is spoilt by it, at least for those who, like myself, are but lookers on. -- You too have had your political fever. But our good ladies, I trust, have been too wise to wrinkle their foreheads with politics. They are contented to soothe & calm the minds of their husbands returning ruffled from political debate. They have the good sense to value domestic happiness above all other, and the art to cultivate it beyond all others. There is no part of the earth where so much of this is enjoyed as in America. You agree with me in this; but you think that the pleasures of Paris more than supply its wants; in other words that a Parisian is happier than an American. You will change your opinion, my dear Madam, and come over to mine in the end. Recollect the women of this capital, some on foot, some on horses, & some in carriages hunting pleasure in the streets, in routs & assemblies, and forgetting that they have left it behind them in their nurseries; compare them with our own countrywomen occupied in the tender and tranquil amusements of domestic life, and confess that it is a comparison of Amazons and Angels. -- You will have known from the public papers that Monsieur de Buffon, the father, is dead & you have known long ago that the son and his wife are separated. They are pursuing pleasure in opposite directions. Madame de Rochambeau is well: so is Madame de la Fayette. I recollect no other Nouvelles de societe interesting to you. And as for political news of battles & sieges, Turks & Russians, I will not detail them to you, because you would be less handsome after reading them. I have only to add then, what I take a pleasure in repeating, tho' it will be the thousandth time that I have the honour to be with sentiments of very sincere respect & attachment, dear Madam, your most obedient & most humble servant.

Back to the Thomas Jefferson Index Page

Thomas Jefferson - Commerce, War, and Revolution

. · 15 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

To George Washington
Paris, Dec. 4, 1788

The nation [France] has been awaked by our revolution ... How far they can proceed, in the end, towards a thorough reformation of abuse, cannot be foreseen. In my opinion a kind of influence, which none of their plans of reform take into account, will elude them all; I mean the influence of women in the government. The manners of the nation allow them to visit, alone, all persons in office, to sollicit the affairs of the husband, family, or friends, and their sollicitations bid defiance to laws and regulations. This obstacle may seem less to those who, like our countrymen, are in the habit of considering Right, as a barrier against all sollicitation. Nor can such an one, without the evidence of his own eyes, believe the desperate state to which things are reduced in this country from the omnipotence of an influence which, fortunately for the happiness of the sex itself, does not endeavor to extend itself in our country beyond the domestic line.

Back to the Thomas Jefferson Index Page

Thomas Jefferson - Religion and The University

. · 15 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

To Dr. Thomas Cooper
Monticello, November 2, 1822

DEAR SIR, -- Your favor of October the 18th came to hand yesterday. The atmosphere of our country is unquestionably charged with a threatening cloud of fanaticism, lighter in some parts, denser in others, but too heavy in all.... In our Richmond there is much fanaticism, but chiefly among the women. They have their night meetings and praying parties, where, attended by their priests, and sometimes by a hen-pecked husband, they pour forth the effusions of their love to Jesus, in terms as amatory and carnal, as their modesty would permit them to use to a mere earthly lover.

Back to the Thomas Jefferson Index Page

Thomas Jefferson - On Marie Antoinette

. · 15 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

ON MARIE ANTOINETTE

The King [of France]... had a Queen of absolute sway over his weak mind and timid virtue, and of a character the reverse of his in all points .. proud, disdainful of restraint, indignant of all obstacles to her will, eager in the pursuit of pleasure, and firm enough to hold to her desires or perish in the wreck. Her inordinate gambling and dissipations .. had been a sensible item in the exhaustion of the treasury which called into action the reforming hand of the nation; and her opposition to it, her inflexible perverseness and dauntless spirit, led herself to the guillotine, drew the King on with her, and plunged the world into crimes and calamities which will forever stain the pages of modern history. I have ever believed that had there been no Queen there would have been no revolution...

Back to the Thomas Jefferson Index Page

Thomas Jefferson - On Mrs. Merry [Wife of British Minister to the United States]

. · 15 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

ON MRS. MERRY [Wife of the British Minister to the United States]

Mr. Merry is with us, and we believe him to be personally as desirable a character as could have been sent us. But he is unluckily associated with one of an opposite character in every point. She has already disturbed are harmony extremely... The latter, be assured, is a virago, and in the short course of a few weeks has established a degree of dislike among all classes which one would have thought impossible in so short of time... It is unfortunate that the good understanding of nations should hang on the caprice of an individual who ostensibly has nothing to do with them.

Back to the Thomas Jefferson Index Page

Thomas Jefferson - A Bill for Proportioning Crimes and Punishments

. · 15 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

A Bill for Proportioning Crimes and Punishments

SECT. XIV. Whosoever shall be guilty of rape, polygamy or sodomy with man or woman, shall be punished; if .. a woman, by boring through the cartilage of her nose a hole of one half inch in diameter at the least.

.

Back to the Thomas Jefferson Index Page

Thomas Jefferson - Random Remarks as a Young Man

. · 15 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

RANDOM REMARKS AS A YOUNG MAN

Is there any such thing as happiness in this world? No. And as for admiration, I am sure the man who powders most, perfumes most, embroiders most, and talks the most nonsense, is most admired. Though to be candid, there are some who have too much good sense to esteem such monkey-like animals as these ..

I can view the beauties of this world with the most philosophical indifference

In the most melancholy fit that ever any poor soul was, I sit down to write to you. Last night, as merry as agreeable company with Belinda in the Apollo could make me, I never could have thought the succeeding sun would have seen me so wretched as I am now! I was prepared to say a great deal; I had dressed up, in my own mind, such thoughts as occurred to me, in as moving a language as I knew how, and expected to have performed in a tolerably creditable manner. But, good God!. When I had an opportunity of venting them, a few broken sentences, uttered in great disorder, and interrupted with pauses of uncommon length, were the too visible marks of my strange confusion!

You are determined to be married as soon as possible, and advise me to the same. No, thank ye .. Many and great are the comforts of a single state..

Back to the Thomas Jefferson Index Page

Thomas Jefferson - The Aristocracy of Beauty

. · 15 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

John Adams to Thomas Jefferson,
November 15, 1813.

A daughter of a greengrocer walks the streets in London daily with a basket of cabbage sprouts, dandelions, and spinach on her head. She is observed by the painters to have a beautiful face, an elegant figure, a graceful step, and a debonairness. They hire her to sit. She complies, and is painted by forty artists in a circle around her. The scientific Dr. William Hamilton outbids the painters, sends her to school for a genteel education, and marries her. This lady not only causes the triumphs of the Nile, Copenhagen, and Trafalgar but separates Naples from France and finally banishes the King and Queen from Sicily. Such is the aristocracy of the natural talent of beauty. Millions of examples might be quoted from history, sacred and profane, from Eve, Hannah, Deborah, Susanna, Abigail, Judith, Ruth, down to Helen, Mrs. de Mainbenor, and Mrs. Fitzherbert. For mercy's sake, do not compel me to look to our chaste states and territories to find women, one of whom let go would, in the words of Holofernes' guards, deceive the whole earth....

Back to the Thomas Jefferson Index Page

Tom Pry's Wife -- by Charles Lamb (1775-1834)

. · 16 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

YOU say you were diverted with my description of the "Curious Man." Tom is in some respects an amusing character enough, but then it is by no means uncommon. But what power of words can paint Tom's wife? My pencil faulters while I attempt it. But I am ambitious that the portraits should hang side by side: they may set off one another. Tom's passion for knowledge in the pursuit is intense and restless, but when satisfied it sits down and seeks no further. He must know all about everything, but his desires terminate in mere science. Now as far as the pure mathematics, as they are called, transcend the practical, so far does Tom's curiosity, to my mind, in elegance and disinterestedness, soar above the craving, gnawing, mercenary (if I may so call it) inquisitiveness of his wife.

Mrs. Priscina Pry must not only know all about your private concerns, but be as deeply concerned herself for them: she will pluck at the very heart of your mystery. She must anatomise and skin you, absolutely lay your feelings bare. Her passions are reducible to two, but those are stronger in her than in any human creature--pity and envy. I will try to illustrate it. She has intimacy with two families--the Grimstones and the Gubbins's. The former are sadly pinched to live, the latter are in splendid circumstances: the former tenant an obscure third floor in Devereux Court, the latter occupy a stately mansion in May-fair. I have accompanied her to both these domiciles. She will burst into the incommodious lodging of poor Grimstone and his wife at some unseasonable hour, when they are at their meagre dinner, with a " Bless me!" what a dark passage you have! I could hardly find my way upstairs! Isn't there a drain somewhere? Well, I like to see you at your little bit of mutton!" But her treat is to catch them at a meal of solitary potatoes. Then does her sympathy burgeon, and bud out into a thousand flowers of rhetorical pity and wonder; and it is trumpeted out afterwards to all her acquaintance, that the poor Grimstones were "making a dinner without flesh yesterday." The word poor is her favorite; the word (on my conscience) is endeared to her beyond any monosyllable in the language. Poverty in the tone of her compassion, is somehow doubled; it is emphatically what a dramatist, with some licence, has called poor poverty. It is stark-naked indigence, and never in her mind connected with any mitigating circumstances of self- respect and independence in the owner, which give to poverty a dignity. It is an object of pure pity, and nothing else. This is her first way. Change we the scene to May-fair and the Gubbins's. Suppose it a morning call:

" Bless me!--(for she equally blesses herself against want and abundance) what a style you do live in! what elegant curtains! You must have a great income to afford all these things. I wonder you can ever visit such poor folks as we":--with more to the same purpose, which I must cut short, not to be tedious. She pumps all her friends to know the exact income of all her friends. Such a one must have a great salary. Do you think he has as much as eight hundred a year--seven hundred and fifty perhaps? A wag once told her I had fourteen hundred-- (Heaven knows we Bank Clerks, though with no reason to complain, in few cases realise that luxury)--and the fury of her wonder, till I undeceived her, nearly worked her spirits to a fever. Now Pry is equally glad to get at his friends' circum- stances; but his curiosity is disinterested, as I said, and passion- less. No emotions are consequent upon the satisfaction of it. He is a philosopher who loves knowledge for its own sake; she is not content with a lumen siccum (dry knowledge, says
Bacon, is best); the success of her researches is nothing, but as it feeds the two main springs between which her soul is kept in perpetual conflict--Pity, and Envy.

A Bachelor's Complaint of the Behaviour of Married People - Charles Lamb (1775-1834)

. · 16 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

AS a single man, I have spent a good deal of my time in noting down the infirmities of Married People, to console myself for those superior pleasures, which they tell me I have lost by remaining as I am.

I cannot say that the quarrels of men and their wives ever made any great impression upon me, or had much tendency to strengthen me in those anti-social resolutions, which I took up long ago upon more substantial considerations. What oftenest offends me at the houses of married persons where I visit, is an error of quite a different description; -- it is that they are too loving.

.

Not too loving neither: that does not explain my meaning. Besides, why should that offend me? The very act of separating themselves from the rest of the world, to have the fuller enjoyment of each other's society, implies that they prefer one another to all the world. But what I complain of is, that they carry this preference so undisguisedly, they perk it up in the faces of us single people so shamelessly, you cannot be in their company a moment without being made to feel, by some indirect hint or open avowal, that you are not the object of this preference. Now there are some things which give no offence, while implied or taken for granted merely; but expressed, there is much offence in them. If a man were to accost the first homely-featured or plain-dressed young woman of his acquaintance, and tell her bluntly, that she was not handsome or rich enough for him, and he could not marry her, he would deserve to be kicked for his ill manners; yet no less is implied in the fact, that having access and opportunity of putting the question to her, he has never yet thought fit to do it. The young woman understands this as clearly as if it were put into words; but no reasonable young woman would think of making this the ground of a quarrel. Just as little right have a married couple to tell me by speeches, and looks that are scarce less plain than speeches, that I am not the happy man, the lady's choice. It is enough that I know I am not: I do not want this perpetual reminding.

The display of superior knowledge or riches may be made sufficiently mortifying; but these admit of a palliative. The knowledge which is brought out to insult me, may accidentally improve me; and in the rich man's houses and pictures, -- his parks and gardens, I have a temporary usufruct at least. But the display of married happiness has none of these palliatives: it is throughout pure, unrecompensed, unqualified insult.

Marriage by its best title is a monopoly, and not of the least invidious sort. It is the cunning of most possessors of any exclusive privilege to keep their advantage as much out of sight as possible, that their less favoured neighbours, seeing little of the benefit, may the less be disposed to question the right. But these married monopolists thrust the most obnoxious part of their patent into our faces.

Nothing is to me more distasteful than that entire complacency and satisfaction which beam in the countenances of a new-married couple, -- in that of the lady particularly: it tells you, that her lot is disposed of in this world: that you can have no hopes of her. It is true, I have none; nor wishes either, perhaps: but this is one of those truths which ought, as I said before, to be taken for granted, not expressed.

The excessive airs which those people give themselves, founded on the ignorance of us unmarried people, would be more offensive if they were less irrational. We will allow them to understand the mysteries belonging to their own craft better than we who have not had the happiness to be made free of the company: but their arrogance is not content within these limits. If a single person presume to offer his opinion in their presence, though upon the most indifferent subject, he is immediately silenced as an incompetent person. Nay, a young married lady of my acquaintance, who, the best of the Jest was, had not changed her condition above a fortnight before, in a question

on which I had the misfortune to differ from her, respecting the properest mode of breeding oysters for the London market, had the assurance to ask with a sneer, how such an old Bachelor as I could pretend to know any thing about such matters. But what I have spoken of hitherto is nothing to the airs which these creatures give themselves when they come, as they generally do, to have children. When I consider how little of a rarity children are, -- that every street and blind alley swarms with them, -- that the poorest people commonly have them in most abundance, -- that there are few marriages that are not blest with at least one of these bargains, -- how often they turn out ill, and defeat the fond hopes of their parents, taking to vicious courses, which end in poverty, disgrace, the gallows, &c. -- I cannot for my life tell what cause for pride there can possibly be in having them. If they were young phoenixes, indeed, that were born but one in a year, there might be a pretext. But when they are so common -- I do not advert to the insolent merit which they assume with their husbands on these occasions. Let them look to that. But why we, who are not their natural-born subjects, should be expected to bring our spices, myrrh, and incense, -- our tribute and homage of admiration, -- I do not see.

"Like as the arrows in the hand of the giant, even so are the young children:" so says the excellent office in our Prayer-book appointed for the churching of women. "Happy is the man that hath his quiver full of them:" So say I; but then don't let him discharge his quiver upon us that are weaponless ; -- let them be arrows, but not to gall and stick us. I have generally observed that these arrows are double-headed: they have two forks, to be sure to hit with one or the other. As for instance, when you come into a house which is full of children, if you happen to take no notice of them (you are thinking of something else, perhaps, and turn a deaf ear to their innocent caresses), you are set down as untractable, morose, a hater of children. On the other hand, if you find them more than usually engaging, if you are taken with their pretty manners, and set about in earnest to romp and play with them, some pretext or other is sure to be found for sending them out of the room: they are too noisy or boisterous, or Mr. -- does not like children. With one or other of these forks the arrow is sure to hit you.

I could forgive their jealousy, and dispense with toying with their brats, if it gives them any pain; but I think it unreasonable to be called upon to love them, where I see no occasion, -- to love a whole family, perhaps, eight, nine, or ten, indiscriminately, to love all the pretty dears, because children are so engaging.

I know there is a proverb, "Love me, love my dog:" that is not always so very practicable, particularly if the dog be set upon you to tease you or snap at you in sport. But a dog or a lesser thing -- any inanimate substance, as a keep-sake, a watch or a ring, a tree, or the place where we last parted when my friend went away upon a long absence, I can make shift to love, because I love him, and any thing that reminds me of him; provided it be in its nature indifferent, and apt to receive whatever hue fancy can give it. But children have a real character and an essential being of themselves: they are amiable or unamiable per se; I must love or hate them as I see cause for either in their qualities. A child's nature is too serious a thing to admit of its being regarded as a mere appendage to another being, and to be loved or hated accordingly: they stand with me upon their own stock, as much as men and women do. O! but you will say, sure it is an attractive age, there is something in the tender years of infancy that of itself charms us. That is the very reason why I am more nice about them. I know that a sweet child is the sweetest thing in nature, not even excepting the delicate creatures which bear them; but the prettier the kind of a thing is, the more desirable it is that it should be pretty of its kind. One daisy differs not much from another in glory; but a violet should look and smell the daintiest. -- I was always rather squeamish in my women and children.

But this is not the worst: one must be admitted into their familiarity at least, before they can complain of inattention. It implies visits, and some kind of intercourse. But if the husband be a man with whom you have lived on a friendly footing before marriage, if you did not come in on the wife's side, -- if you did not sneak into the house in her train, but were an old friend in fast habits of intimacy before their courtship was so much as thought on, -- look about you -- your tenure is precarious -- before a twelve-month shall roll over your head, you shall find your old friend gradually grow cool and altered towards you, and at last seek opportunities of breaking with you. I have scarce a married friend of my acquaintance, upon whose firm faith I can rely, whose friendship did not

commence after the period of his marriage. With some limitations they can endure that: but that the good man should have dared to enter into a solemn league of friendship in which they were not consulted, though it happened before they knew him, -- before they that are now are man and wife ever met, -- this is intolerable to them. Every long friendship, every old authentic intimacy, must he brought into their office to be new stamped with their currency, as a sovereign Prince calls in the good old money that was coined in some reign before he was born or thought of, to be new marked and minted with the stamp of his authority, before he will let it pass current in the world. You may guess what luck generally befalls such a rusty piece of metal as I am in these new mintings.

Innumerable are the ways which they take to insult and worm you out of their husband's confidence. Laughing at all you say with a kind of wonder, as if you were a queer kind of fellow that said good things, but an oddity, is one of the ways -- they have a particular kind of stare for the purpose -- till at last the husband, who used to defer to your judgment, and would pass over some excrescences of understanding and manner for the sake of a general vein of observation (not quite vulgar) which he perceived in you, begins to suspect whether you are not altogether a humorist, -- a fellow well enough to have consorted with in his bachelor days, but not quite so proper to be introduced to ladies. This may be called the staring way; and is that which has oftenest been put in practice against me.

Then there is the exaggerating way, or the way of irony: that is, where they find you an object of especial regard with their husband, who is not so easily to be shaken from the lasting attachment founded on esteem which he has conceived towards you; by never-qualified exaggerations to cry up all that you say or do, till the good man, who understands well enough that it is all done in compliment to him, grows weary of the debt of gratitude which is due to so much candor, and by relaxing a little on his part, and taking down a peg or two in his enthusiasm, sinks at length to that kindly level of moderate esteem, -- that "decent affection and complacent kindness" towards you, where she herself can join in sympathy with him without much stretch and violence to her sincerity.

Another way (for the ways they have to accomplish so desirable a purpose are infinite) is, with a kind of innocent simplicity, continually to mistake what it was which first made their husband fond of you. If an esteem for something excellent in your moral character was that which riveted the chain which she is to break, upon any imaginary discovery of a want of poignancy in your conversation, she will cry, "I thought, my dear, you described your friend, Mr. -- as a great wit." If, on the other hand, it was for some supposed charm in your conversation that he first grew to like you, and was content for this to overlook some trifling irregularities in your moral deportment, upon the first notice of any of these she as readily exclaims, "This, my dear, is your good Mr. ----." One good lady whom I took the liberty of expostulating with for not showing me quite so much respect as I thought due to her husband's old friend, had the candour to confess to me that she had often heard Mr. -- - speak of me before marriage, and that she had conceived a great desire to be acquainted with me, but that the sight of me had very much disappointed her expectations; for from her husband's representations of me, she had formed a notion that she was to see a fine, tall, officer-like looking man (I use her very words); the very reverse of which proved to be the truth. This was candid; and I had the civility not to ask her in return, how she came to pitch upon a standard of personal accomplishments for her husband's friends which differed so much from his own; for my friend's dimensions as near as possible approximate to mine; he standing five feet five in his shoes, in which I have the advantage of him by about half an inch; and he no more than myself exhibiting any indications of a martial character in his air or countenance.

These are some of the mortifications which I have encountered in the absurd attempt to visit at their houses. To enumerate them all would be a vain endeavour: I shall therefore just glance at the very common impropriety of which married ladies are guilty, of treating us as if we were their husbands, and vice versa -- . I mean, when they use us with familiarity, and their husbands with ceremony. Testacea, for instance, kept me the other night two or three hours beyond my usual time of supping, while she was fretting because Mr. -- did not come home, till the oysters were all spoiled, rather than she would he guilty of the impoliteness of touching one in his absence. This

was reversing the point of good manners: for ceremony is an invention to take off the uneasy feeling which we derive from knowing ourselves to be less the object of love and esteem with a fellow-creature than some other person is. It endeavors to make up by superior attentions in little points, for that invidious preference which it is forced to deny in the greater. Had Testacea kept the oysters back for me, and withstood her husband's importunities to go to supper, she would have acted according to the strict rules of propriety. I know no ceremony that ladies are bound to observe to their husbands, beyond the point of a modest behaviour and decorum: therefore I must protest against the vicarious gluttony of Cerasia, who at her own table sent away a dish of Morellas, which I was applying to with great good will, to her husband at the other end of the table, and recommended a plate of less extraordinary goose- berries to my unwedded palate in their stead. Neither can I excuse the wanton affront of -- But I am weary of stringing up all my married acquaintance by Roman denominations. Let them amend and change their manners, or I promise to record the full-length English of their names, to the terror of all such desperate offenders in future.

Democracy in America, Vol. 2, Ch. XII, "How The Americans Understand The Equality Of The Sexes," -- by Alexis de Tocqueville, 1840

. · 17 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

Chapter XII

.

.

HOW THE AMERICANS UNDERSTAND THE EQUALITY OF THE SEXES

.

I have shown how democracy destroys or modifies the different inequalities that originate in society; but is this all, or does it not ultimately affect that great inequality of man and woman which has seemed, up to the present day, to be eternally based in human nature? I believe that the social changes that bring nearer to the same level the father and son, the master and servant, and, in general, superiors and inferiors will raise woman and make her more and more the equal of man. But here, more than ever, I feel the necessity of making myself clearly understood; for there is no subject on which the coarse and lawless fancies of our age have taken a freer range.

There are people in Europe who, confounding together the different characteristics of the sexes, would make man and woman into beings not only equal but alike. They would give to both the same functions, impose on both the same duties, and grant to both the same rights; they would mix them in all things--their occupations, their pleasures, their business. It may readily be con- ceived that by thus attempting to make one sex equal to the other, both are degraded, and from so preposterous a medley of the works of nature nothing could ever result but weak men and dis- orderly women.

It is not thus that the Americans understand that species of democratic equality which may be established between the sexes. They admit that as nature has appointed such wide differences between the physical and moral constitution of man and woman, her manifest design was to give a distinct employment to their various faculties; and they hold that improvement does not consist in making beings so dissimilar do pretty nearly the same things, but in causing each of them to fulfill their respective tasks in the best possible manner. The Americans have applied to the sexes the great principle of political economy which governs the manufacturers of our age, by carefully dividing the duties of man from those of woman in order that the great work of society may be the better carried on.

In no country has such constant care been taken as in America to trace two clearly distinct lines of action for the two sexes and to make them keep pace one with the other, but in two pathways that are always different. American women never manage the outward concerns of the family or conduct a business or take a part in political life; nor are they, on the other hand, ever compelled to perform the rough labor of the fields or to make any of those laborious efforts which demand the exertion of physical strength. No families are so poor as to form an exception to this rule. If, on the one hand, an American woman cannot escape from the quiet circle of domestic employments, she is never forced, on the other, to go beyond it. Hence it is that the women of America, who often exhibit a masculine strength of understanding and a manly energy, generally preserve great delicacy of personal appearance and always retain the manners of women although they sometimes show that they have the hearts and minds of men.

Nor have the Americans ever supposed that one consequence of democratic principles is the subversion of marital

power or the confusion of the natural authorities in families. They hold that every association must have a head in order to accomplish its object, and that the natural head of the conjugal association is man. They do not therefore deny him the right of directing his partner, and they maintain that in the smaller association of husband and wife as well as in the great social community the object of democracy is to regulate and legalize the powers that are necessary, and not to subvert all power.

This opinion is not peculiar to one sex and contested by the other; I never observed that the women of America consider conjugal authority as a fortunate usurpation of their rights, or that they thought themselves degraded by submitting to it. It appeared to me, on the contrary, that they attach a sort of pride to the voluntary surrender of their own will and make it their boast to bend themselves to the yoke, not to shake it off. Such, at least, is the feeling expressed by the most virtuous of their sex; the others are silent; and in the United States it is not the practice for a guilty wife to clamor for the rights of women while she is trampling on her own holiest duties.

It has often been remarked that in Europe a certain degree of contempt lurks even in the flattery which men lavish upon women; although a European frequently affects to be the slave of woman, it may be seen that he never sincerely thinks her his equal. In the United States men seldom compliment women, but they daily show how much they esteem them. They constantly display an entire confidence in the understanding of a wife and a profound respect for her freedom; they have decided that her mind is just as fitted as that of a man to discover the plain truth, and her heart as firm to embrace it; and they have never sought to place her virtue, any more than his, under the shelter of prejudice, ignorance, and fear.

It would seem in Europe, where man so easily submits to the despotic sway of women, that they are nevertheless deprived of some of the greatest attributes of the human species and considered as seductive but imperfect beings; and (what may well provoke astonishment) women ultimately look upon themselves in the same light and almost consider it as a privilege that they are entitled to show themselves futile, feeble, and timid. The women of America claim no such privileges.

Again, it may be said that in our morals we have reserved strange immunities to man, so that there is, as it were, one virtue for his use and another for the guidance of his partner, and that, according to the opinion of the public, the very same act may be punished alternately as a crime or only as a fault. The Americans do not know this iniquitous division of duties and rights; among them the seducer is as much dishonored as his victim.

It is true that the Americans rarely lavish upon women those eager attentions which are commonly paid them in Europe, but their conduct to women always implies that they suppose them to be virtuous and refined; and such is the respect entertained for the moral freedom of the sex that in the presence of a woman the most guarded language is used lest her ear should be offended by an expression. In America a young unmarried woman may alone and without fear undertake a long journey.

The legislators of the United States, who have mitigated almost all the penalties of criminal law, still make rape a capital offense, and no crime is visited with more inexorable severity by public opinion. This may be accounted for; as the Americans can conceive nothing more precious than a woman's honor and nothing which ought so much to be respected as her independence, they hold that no punishment is too severe for the man who deprives her of them against her will. In France, where the same offense is visited with far milder penalties, it is frequently difficult to get a verdict from a jury against the prisoner. Is this a consequence of contempt of decency or contempt of women? I cannot but believe that it is a contempt of both.

Thus the Americans do not think that man and woman have either the duty or the right to perform the same offices, but they show an equal regard for both their respective parts; and though their lot is different, they consider both of them as beings of equal value. They do not give to the courage of woman the same form or the same direction as to

that of man, but they never doubt her courage; and if they hold that man and his partner ought not always to exercise their intellect and understanding in the same manner, they at least believe the understanding of the one to be as sound as that of the other, and her intellect to be as clear. Thus, then, while they have allowed the social inferiority of woman to continue, they have done all they could to raise her morally and intellectually to the level of man; and in this respect they appear to me to have excellently understood the true principle of democratic improvement.

As for myself, I do not hesitate to avow that although the women of the United States are confined within the narrow circle of domestic life, and their situation is in some respects one of extreme dependence, I have nowhere seen woman occupying a loftier position; and if I were asked, now that I am drawing to the close of this work, in which I have spoken of so many important things done by the Americans, to what the singular prosperity and growing strength of that people ought mainly to be attributed, I should reply: To the superiority of their women.

The Metaphysics of the Love of the Sexes - by Arthur Schopenhauer, 1844

. · 18 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

> "Ye wise men, highly, deeply learned,
> Who think it out and know,
> How, when, and where do all things pair?
> Why do they kiss and love?
> Ye men of lofty wisdom, say
> What happened to me then;
> Search out and tell me where, how, when,
> And why it happened thus."
> - BURGER

This chapter is the last of four whose various reciprocal relations, by virtue of which, to a certain extent, they constitute a subordinate whole, the attentive reader will recognize without it being needful for me to interrupt my exposition by recalling them or referring to them.

We are accustomed to see poets principally occupied with describing the love of the sexes. This is as a rule the chief theme of all dramatic works, tragical as well as comical, romantic as well as classical, Indian as well as European. Not less is it the material of by far the largest part of lyrical and also of epic poetry, especially if we class with the latter the enormous piles of romances which for centuries every year has produced in all the civilised countries of Europe as regularly as fruits of the earth. As regards their main contents, all these works are nothing else than many-sided brief or lengthy descriptions of the passion we are speaking of. Moreover, the most successful pictures of it - such, for example, as Romeo and Juliet, *La Nouvelle Heloise*, and *Werther* - have gained immortal fame. Yet, when Rochefoucauld imagines that it is the same with passionate love as with ghosts, of which ever one speaks, but which no one has seen; and Licthenberg also in his essay, "*Ueber die Macht der Liebe*," disputes and denies the reality and naturalness of that passion, they are greatly in error. For it is impossible that something which is foreign and contrary to human nature, thus a mere imaginary caricature, could be unweariedly represented by poetic genius in all ages, and received by mankind with unaltered interest; for nothing that is artistically beautiful can be without truth:-

> *"Rein n'est beau que le vrai; le vrai seul est amiable."*
> -BOIL

Certainly, however, it is also confirmed by experience, although not by the experience of every day, that that which as a rule only appears as a strong yet still controllable inclination may rise under certain circumstances to a passion which exceeds all others in vehemence, and which then sets aside all considerations, overcomes all obstacles with incredible strength and perseverance, so that for its satisfaction life is risked without hesitation, nay, if that satisfaction is still withheld, is given as the price of it. Werthers and Jacopo Ortis exist not only in romance, but every year can show at least a half a dozen of them in Europe: *Sed ignotis perierunt mortibus illi*; for their sorrows find no other chroniclers than the writers of official registers or the reporters of the newspapers. Yet the readers of the police news in English and French journals will attest the correctness of my assertion. Still greater, however, is the number of those whom the same passion brings to the madhouse. Finally, every year can show cases of the double suicide of a pair of lovers who are opposed by outward circumstances. In such cases, however, it is inexplicable to me how those who, certain of mutual love, expect to find the supremest bliss in the enjoyment of this, do not withdraw themselves from all connections by taking the extremest steps, and endure all hardships, rather than give up with life a pleasure which is greater than any other they can conceive. As regards the lower grades of that passion, and the mere approaches to it, every one has them daily before his eyes, and, as long as he is

not old, for the most part also in his heart.
So then, after what has been called to mind, no one can doubt either the reality or the importance of the matter; and therfore, instead of wondering that a philosophy should also for once make its own this constant theme of all poets, one ought rather to be surprised that a thing which plays throughout so important a part in human life has hitherto practically been disregarded by philosophers altogether, and lies before us as raw material. The one who has most concerned himself with it is Plato, especially in the "Symposium" and the "Phaedrus". Yet what he says on the subject is confineed to the sphere of myths, fables, and jokes, and also for the most part concerns only the Greek love of youths. The little that Rousseau says upon our theme in the "*Discours sur l'inegalite*" (p. 96, ed. Bip.) is false and insufficient. Kant's explanation of the subject in the third part of the essay, "*Ueber das Gefuhl des Schonen und Erhabenen*" (p. 435 *seq.* of Rosenkranz' edition) is very superficial and without practical knowledge, therefore it is also partly incorrect. Lastly, Platner's treatment of the matter in his "Anthropology" (*sect.* 1347 *seq.*) every one will find dull and shallow. On the other hand, Spinoza's definition, on account of its excessive naivete, deserves to be quoted for the sake of amusement: "*Amor est titillatio, concomitante idea causae externae*" (*Eth*. iv., prop. 44, *dem.*).
Accordingly I have no predecessors either to make use of or to refute. The subject has pressed itself upon me objectively, and has entered of its own accord into the connection of my consideration of the world. Moreover, least of all can I hope for approbation from those who are themselves under the power of this passion, and who accordingly seek to express the excess of their feelings in the sublimest and most ethereal images. To them my view will appear too physical, too material, however metaphysical and even transcendent it may be at bottom. Meanwhile let them reflect that if the object which to-day inspires them to write madrigals and sonnets had been born eighteen years earlier it would scarcely have won a glance from them.
For all love, however ethereally it may bear itself, is rooted in the sexual impulse alone, nay, it absolutely is only a more definitely determined. specialised, and indeed in the strictest sense individualised sexual impulse. If now, keeping this in view, one considers the important part which the sexual impulse in all its degrees and nuances plays not only on the stage and in novels, but also in the real world, where, next to the love of life, it shows itself the strongest and most powerful of motives, constantly lays claim to half the powers and thoughts of the younger portion of mankind, is the ultimate goal of almost all human effort, exerts an adverse influence on the most important events, interrupts the most serious occupations every hour, sometimes embarrasses for a while even the greatest minds, does not hesitate to intrude with its trash interfering with the negotiations of statesmen and the investigations of men of learning, knows how to slip its love letters and locks of hair even into ministerial portfolios and philosophical manuscripts, and no less devises daily the most entangled and the worst actions, destroys the most valuable relationships, breaks the firmest bonds, demands the sacrifice sometimes of life or health, sometimes of wealth, rank, and happiness, nay, robs those who are otherwise honest of all conscience, makes those who have hitherto been faithful, traitors; accordingly, on the whole, appears as a malevolent demon that strives to pervert, confuse, and overthrow everything;- then one will be forced to cry, Wherefore all this noise? Wherefore the straining and storming, the anxiety and want? It is merely a question of every Hans finding his Grethe. Why should such a trifle play so important a part, and constantly introduce disturbance and confusion into the well-regulated life of man? But to the earnest investigator the spirit of truth gradually reveals the answer. It is no trifle that is in question here; on the contrary, the importance of the matter is quite proportionate to the seriousness and ardor of the effort. The ultimate aim of all love affairs, whether they are played in sock or cothurnus, is really more important than all other ends of human life, and is therefore quite worthy of the profound seriousness with which everyone pursues it. That which is decided by it is nothing less than the *composition of the next generation*. The *dramatis personae* who shall appear when we are withdrawn are here determined, both as regards their existence and their nature, by these frivolous love affairs. As the being, the *existentia*, of these future persons is absolutely conditioned by our sexual impulse generally, so their nature, *essentia*, is determined by the individual selection in its satisfaction, *i.e.*, by sexual love, and is in every respect irrevocably fixed by this. This is the key of the problem: we shall arrive at a more accurate knowledge of it in its application if we go through the degrees of love, from the passing inclination to the vehement passion, when we shall also recognise that the difference of these grades arises from the degree of the individualisation of the choice.
The collective love affairs of the present generation taken together are accordingly, of the whole human race, the

serious *meditatio compositionis generationis futurae, e qua iterum pendent innumerae generationes*. This high importance of the matter, in which it is not a question of individual weal or woe, but of the existence and special nature of the human race in future times, and therefore the will of the individual appears at a higher power as the will of the species;- this it is on which the pathetic and sublime elements in affairs of love depend, which for thousands of years poets have never wearied of representing in innumerable examples; because no theme can equal in interest this one, which stands to all others which only concern the welfare of individuals as the solid body to the surface, because it concerns the weal and woe of the species. Just on this account, then, it is so difficult to impart interest to a drama without the element of love, and, on the other hand, this theme is never worn out even by daily use.

That which presents itself in the individual consciousness as sexual impulse in general, without being directed towards a definite individual of the other sex, is in itself, and apart from the phenomenon, simply the will to live. But what appears in consciousness as a sexual impulse directed to a definite individual is in itself the will to live as a definitely determined individual. Now in this case the sexual impulse, although in itself a subjective need, knows how to assume very skillfully the mask of an objective admiration, and thus to deceive our consciousness; for nature requires this stratagem to attain its ends. But yet that in every case of falling in love, however objective and sublime this admiration may appear, what alone is looked to in the production of an individual of a definite nature is primarily confirmed by the fact that the essential matter is not the reciprocation of love, but possession, *i.e.*, the physical enjoyment. The certainty of the former can therefore by no means console us for the want of the latter; on the contrary, in such a situation many a man has shot himself. On the other hand, persons who are deeply in love, and can obtain no return of it, are contented with possession, *i.e.*, with the physical enjoyment. This is proved by all forced marriages, and also by the frequent purchase of the favor of a woman, in spite of her dislike, by large presents and other sacrifices, nay, even by cases of rape. That this particular child shall be begotten is, although unknown to the parties concerned, the true end of the whole love story; the manner in which it is attained is a secondary consideration. Now, however loudly persons of lofty and sentimental soul, and especially those who are in love, may cry out here about the gross realism of my view, they are yet in error. For is not the definite determination of the individualities of the next generation a much higher and more worthy end than those exuberant feelings and supersensible soap bubbles of theirs? Nay, among earthly aims, can there be one which is greater or more important? It alone corresponds to the profoundness with which passionate love is felt, to the seriousness with which it appears, and the importance which it attributes even to the trifling details of its sphere and occasion. Only so far as this end is assumed as the true one do the difficulties encountered, the infinite exertions and annoyances made and endured for the attainment of the loved object, appear proportionate to the matter. For it is the future generation, in its whole individual determinateness, that presses into existence by means of those efforts and toils. Nay, it is itself already active in that careful, definite and arbitrary choice for the satisfaction of the sexual impulse which we call love. The growing inclination of two lovers is really already the will to live of the new individual which they can and desire to produce; nay, even in the meeting of their longing glances its new life breaks out, and announces itself as a future individuality harmoniously and well composed. They feel the longing for an actual union and fusing together into a single being, in order to live on only as this; and this longing receives its fulfilment in the child which is produces by them, as that in which the qualities transmitted by them both, fused and united in one being, live on. Conversely, the mutual, decided, and persistent aversion between a man and a maid is a sign that what they could produce would only be a badly organised, in itself inharmonious and unhappy being. Hence there lies a deeper meaning in the fact that Calderon, though he calls the atrocious Semiramis the daughter of the air, yet introduces her as the daughter of rape followed by the murder of the husband.

But, finally, what draws two individuals of different sex exclusively to each other with such power is the will to live, which exhibits itself in the whole species, and which here anticipates in the individual which these two can produce an objectification of its nature according to its aims. This individual will have the will, or character, from the father, the intellect from the mother, and the corporization from both; yet, for the most part, the figure will take more after the father, the size after the mother,- according to the law which comes out in the breeding of hybrids among the

brutes, and principally depends upon the fact that the size of the foetus must conform to the size of the uterus. Just as inexplicable as the quite special individuality of any man, which is exclusively peculiar to him, is also the quite special and individual passion of two lovers; indeed at bottom the two are one and the same: the former is *explicite* what the latter was *implicite*. The moment at which the parents begin to love each other - to fancy each other, as the very happy English expression has it - is really to be regarded as the first appearance of a new individual and the true *punctum saliens* of its life, and, as has been said, in the meeting and the fixing of their longing glances there appears the first germ of the new being, which certainly, like all germs, is generally crushed out. This new individual is to a certain extent a new (Platonic) Idea; and now, as all Ideas strive with the greatest vehemence to enter the phenomenal world, eagerly seizing for this end upon the matter which the law of causality divides among them all, so also does this particular Idea of a human individuality strive with the greatest eagerness and vehemence towards its realisation in the phenomenon. This eagerness and vehemence is just the passion of the two future parents for each other. It has innumerable degrees, the two extremes of which may at any rate be described as *Aphrodite pandemos* and *ourania*; in its nature, however, it is everywhere the same. On the other hand, it will be in degree so much the more powerful the more *individualised* it is; that is, the more the loved individual is exclusively suited; by virtue of all his or her parts and qualities, to satisfy the desire of the lover and the need established by his or her own individuality. What is really in question here will become clear in the further course of our exposition. Primarily and essentially the inclination of love is directed to health, strength, and beauty, consequently also to youth; because the will first of all seeks to exhibit the specific character of the human species as the basis of all individuality: ordinary amorousness (*Aphrodite pandemos*) does not go much further. To these, then, more special claims link themselves on, which we will investigate in detail further on, and with which, when they see satisfaction before them, the passion increases. But the highest degrees of this passion spring from the suitableness of two individualities to each other on account of which the will, *i.e.*, the character of the father and the intellect of the mother, in their connection, make up precisely that individual towards which the will to live in general which exhibits itself in the whole species feels a longing proportionate to this; its magnitude, and which therefore exceeds the measure of a mortal heart, and the motives of which, in the same way, lie beyond the sphere of the individual intellect. This is thus the soul of a true and great passion. Now the more perfect is the mutual adaptation of two individuals to each other in each of the many respects which have further to be considered, the stronger will be their mutual passion. Since there do not exist two individuals exactly alike, there must be for each particular man a particular woman - always with reference to what is to be produced - who corresponds most perfectly. A really passionate love is as rare as the accident of these two meeting. Since, however, the possibility of such a love is present in every one, the representations of it in the works of the poets are comprehensible to us. Just because the passion of love really turns about that which is to be produced, and its qualities, and because its kernel lies there, a friendship without any admixture of sexual love can exist between two young and good-looking persons of different sex, on account of the agreement of their disposition, character, and mental tendencies; nay, as regards sexual love there may even be a certain aversion between them. The reason of this is to be sought in the fact that a child produced by them would have physical or mental qualities which were inharmonious; in short, its existence and nature would not answer the ends of the will to live as it exhibits itself in the species. On the other hand, in the case of difference of disposition, character, and mental tendency, and the dislike, nay, enmity, proceeding from this, sexual love may yet arise and exist, when it then blinds us to all that; and if it here leads to marriage it will be a very unhappy one.

Let us now set about the more thorough investigation of the matter. Egoism is so deeply rooted a quality of all individuals in general, that in order to rouse the activity of an individual being egoistical ends are the only ones upon which we can count with certainty. Certainly the species has an earlier, closer, and greater claim upon the individual than the perishable individuality itself. Yet when the individual has to act, and even make sacrifices for the continuance and quality of the species, the importance of the matter cannot be made so comprehensible to the intellect, which is calculated merely with regard to individual ends, as to have its proportionate effect. Therefore in such a case nature can only attain its ends by implanting a certain illusion in the individual, on account of which that which is only a good for the species appears to him as a good for himself, so that when he serves the species he

imagines he is serving himself; in which process a mere chimera, which vanishes immediately afterwards, floats before him, and takes the place of a real thing as a motive. This illusion is instinct. In the great majority of cases this is to be regarded as the sense of the species, which presents what is of benefit to it to the will. Since, however, the will has here become individual, it must be so deluded that it apprehends through the sense of the individual what the sense of the species presents to it, thus imagines it is following individual ends while in truth it is pursuing ends which are merely general (taking this word in its strictest sense). The external phenomenon of instinct we can best observe in the brutes where its role is most important; but it is in ourselves alone that we arrive at a knowledge of its internal process, as of everything internal. Now it is certainly supposed that man has almost no instinct; at any rate only this, that the new-born babe seeks for and seizes the breast of its mother. But, in fact, we have a very definite, distinct, and complicated instinct, that of the selection of another individual for the satisfaction of the sexual impulse, a selection which is so fine, so serious, and so arbitrary. With this satisfaction in itself, *i.e.*, so far as it is a sensual pleasure resting upon a pressing want of the individual, the beauty or ugliness of the other individual has nothing to do. Thus the regard for this which is yet pursued with such ardor, together with the careful selection which springs from it, is evidently connected, not with the chooser himself - although he imagines it to be so - but with the true end, that which is to be produced, which is to receive the type of the species as purely and correctly as possible. Through a thousand physical accidents and moral aberrations there arise a great variety of deteriorations of the human form; yet its true type, in all its parts, is always again established: and this takes place under the guidance of the sense of beauty, which always directs the sexual impulse, and without which this sinks to the level of a disgusting necessity. Accordingly, in the first place, every one will decidedly prefer and eagerly desire the most beautiful individuals, *i.e.*, those in whom the character of the species is most purely impressed; but, secondly, each one will specially regard as beautiful in another individual those perfections which he himself lacks, nay, even those imperfections which are the opposite of his own. Hence, for example, little men love big women, fair persons like dark, &c., &c. The delusive ecstasy which seizes a man at the sight of a woman whose beauty is suited to him, and pictures to him a union with her as the highest good, is just the *sense of the species*, which, recognizing the distinctly expressed stamp of the same, desires to perpetuate it with this individual. Upon this decided inclination to beauty depends the maintenance of the type of the species: hence it acts with such great power. We shall examine specially further on the considerations which it follows. Thus what guides man is really an instinct which is directed to doing the best for the species, while the man himself imagines that he only seeks the heightening of his own pleasure. In fact, we have in this an instructive lesson concerning the inner nature of all instinct, which, as here, almost always sets the individual in motion for the good of the species. For clearly the pains with which an insect seeks out a particular flower, or fruit, or dung, or flesh, or as in the case of the ichneumonidae, the larva of another insect, in order to deposit its eggs there only, and to attain this end shrinks from neither trouble nor danger, is thoroughly analogous to the pains with which for his sexual satisfaction a man carefully chooses a woman with definite qualities which appeal to him individually, and strives so eagerly after her that in order to attain this end he often sacrifices his own happiness in life, contrary to all reason, by a foolish marriage, by love affairs which cost him wealth, honor, and life, even by crimes such as adultery or rape, all merely in order to serve the species in the most efficient way, although at the cost of the individual, in accordance with the will of nature which is everywhere sovereign. Instinct, in fact, is always an acts which seems to be in accordance with the conception of an end, and yet is entirely without such a conception. Nature implants it wherever the acting individual is incapable of understanding the end, or would be unwilling to pursue it. Therefore, as a rule, it is given only to the brutes, and indeed especially to the lowest of them which have least understanding; but almost only in the case we are here considering it is also given to man, who certainly could understand the end, but would not pursue it with the necessary ardor, that is, even at the expense of his individual welfare. Thus here, as in the case of all instinct, the truth assumes the form of an illusion, in order to act upon the will. It is a voluptuous illusion which leads the man to believe he will find a greater pleasure in the arms of a woman whose beauty appeals to him than in those of any other; or which indeed, exclusively directed to a single individual, firmly convinces him that the possession of her will ensure him excessive happiness. Therefore he imagines he is taking trouble and making sacrifices for his own pleasure, while he does so merely for the maintenance of the regular type of the species, or else a quite special individuality, which can only come from these parents, is to attain an existence. The character of instinct is here so

perfectly present, thus an action which seems to be in accordance with the conception of an end, and yet is entirely without such a conception, that he who is drawn by that illusion often abhors the end which alone guides it, procreation, and would like to hinder it; thus it is in the case of almost all illicit love affairs. In accordance with the character of the matter which has been explained, every lover will experience a marvelous disillusion after the pleasure he has at last attained, and will wonder that what was so longingly desired accomplishes nothing more than every other sexual satisfaction; so that he does not see himself much benefited by it. That wish was related to all his other wishes as the species is related to the individual, thus as the infinite to the finite. The satisfaction, on the other hand, is really only for the benefit of the species, and thus does not come within the consciousness of the individual, who, inspired by the will of the species, has served an end with every kind of sacrifice, which was not his own end at all. Hence, then, every lover, after the ultimate consummation of the great work, finds himself cheated; for the illusion has vanished by means of which the individual was here the dupe of the species. Plato very happily says, "*hedone hapanton alazonistaton*" (*voluptas omnium maxime vaniloqua*), *Phileb.* 319.

But all this reflects light on the instincts and mechanical tendencies of the brutes. They are also, without doubt, involved in a kind of illusion, which deceives them with the prospect of their own pleasure, while they work so laboriously and with such self-denial for the species, the bird builds his nest, the insect seeks the only suitable place for its eggs, or even hunts for prey which, unsuited for its own enjoyment, must be laid beside the eggs as food for the future larvae, the bees, the wasps, the ants apply themselves to their skillful dwellings and highly complicated economy. They are all guided with certainty by an illusion, which conceals the service of the species under the mask of an egotistical end. This is probably the only way to comprehend the inner or subjective process that lies at the foundation of the manifestations of instinct. Outwardly, however, or objectively, we find in those creatures which are to a large extent governed by instinct, especially in insects, a preponderance of the ganglion system, *i.e.*, the *subjective* nervous system, over the objective or cerebral system; from which we must conclude that they are moved, not so much by objective, proper apprehension as by subjective ideas exciting desire, which arise from the influence of the ganglion system upon the brain, and accordingly by a kind of illusion; and this will be the *physiological* process in the case of all instinct. For the sake of illustration, I will mention as another example of instinct in the human species, although a weak one, the capricious appetite of women who are pregnant. It seems to arise from the fact that the nourishment of the embryo sometimes requires a special or definite modification of the blood which flows to it, upon which the food which produces such a modification at once presents itself to the pregnant woman as an object of ardent longing, thus here also an illusion arises. Accordingly woman has one instinct more than man; and the ganglion system is also much more developed in the woman. That man has fewer instincts than the brutes and that even these few can be easily led astray, may be explained from the great preponderance of the brain in his case. The sense of beauty which instinctively guides the selection for the satisfaction of sexual passion is led astray when it degenerates into the tendency to pederasty; analogous to the fact that the blue-bottle (*musca vomitoria*), instead of depositing its eggs, according to instinct, in putrefying flesh, lays them in the blossom of the *Arum dracunculus*, deceived by the cadaverous smell of this plant.

Now that an instinct entirely directed to that which is to be produced lies at the foundation of all sexual love will receive complete confirmation from the fuller analysis of it, which we cannot therefore avoid. First of all we have to remark here that by nature man is inclined to inconstancy in love, woman to constancy. The love of the man sinks perceptibly from the moment it has obtained satisfaction; almost every other woman charms him more than the one he already possesses; he longs for variety. The love of the woman, on the other hand, increases just from that moment. This is a consequence of the aim of nature which is directed to the maintenance, and therefore to the greatest possible increase, of the species. The man can easily beget over a hundred children a year; the woman, on the contrary, with however many men, can yet only bring one child a year into the world (leaving twin births out of account). Therefore the man always looks about after other women; the woman, again, sticks firmly to one man; for nature moves her, instinctively and without reflection, to retain the nourisher and protector of the future offspring. Accordingly faithfulness in marriage is with the man artificial, with the woman it is natural, and thus adultery on the part of the woman is much less pardonable than on the part of the man, both objectively on account of the

consequences and also subjectively on account of its unnaturalness.

But in order to be thorough and gain full conviction that the pleasure in the other sex, however objective it may seem to us, is yet merely disguised instinct, *i.e.*, sense of the species, which strives to maintain its type, we must investigate more fully the considerations which guide us in this pleasure, and enter into details of this, rarely as these details which will have to be mentioned here may have figured in a philosophical work before. These considerations divide themselves into those which directly concern the type of the species, *i.e.*, beauty, those which are concerned with physical qualities, and lastly, those which are merely relative, which arise from the requisite correction or neutralisation of the one-sided qualities and abnormities of the two individuals by each other. We shall go into them one by one.

The first consideration which guides our choice and inclination is age. In general we accept the age from the years when menstruation begins to those when it ceases, yet we give the decided preference to the period from the eighteenth to the twenty-eighth year. Outside of these years, on the other hand, no woman can attract us: an old woman, *i.e.*, one who no longer menstruates, excites our aversion. Youth without beauty has still always attraction; beauty without youth has none. Clearly the unconscious end which guides us here is the possibility of reproduction in general: therefore every individual loses attraction for the opposite sex in proportion as he or she is removed from the fittest period for begetting or conceiving. The second consideration is that of health. Acute diseases, only temporarily disturb us, chronic diseases or cachexia repel us, because they are transmitted to the child. The third consideration is the skeleton, because it is the basis of the type of the species. Next to age and disease nothing repels us so much as a deformed figure; even the most beautiful face can not atone for it; on the contrary, even the ugliest face when accompanied by a straight figure is unquestionably preferred. Further, we feel every disproportion of the skeleton most strongly; for example, a stunted, dumpy, short-boned figure, and many such; also a halting gait, where it is not the result of an extraneous accident. On the other hand, a strikingly beautiful figure can make up for all defects: it enchants us. Here also comes in the great value which all attach to the smallness of the feet: it depends upon the fact that they are an essential characteristic of the species, for no animal has the tarsus and the metatarsus taken together so small as man, which accords with his upright walk; he is a plantigrade. Accordingly Jesus Sirach also says (xxvi. 23, according to the revised translation by Kraus) "A woman with a straight figure and beautiful feet is like columns of gold in sockets of silver." The teeth also are important; because they are necessary for nourishment and quite specially hereditary. The fourth condition is a certain fulness of flesh; thus a predominance of the vegetative function, of plasticity; because this promises abundant nourishment for the foetus; hence great leanness repels us in a striking degree. A full female bosom exerts an exceptional charm upon the male sex; because, standing in direct connection with the female functions of propagation, it promises abundant nourishment to the new-born child. On the other hand, excessively fat women excite our disgust: the cause is that this indicates atrophy of the uterus, thus barrenness; which is not known by the head, but by instinct. The last consideration of all is the beauty of the face. Here also before everything else the bones are considered; therefore we look principally for a beautiful nose, and a short turned-up nose spoils everything. A slight inclination of the nose downwards or upwards has decided the happiness in life of innumerable maidens, and rightly so, for it concerns the type of the species. A small mouth, by means of small maxillae, is very essential as specifically characteristic of the human countenance, as distinguished from the muzzle of the brutes. A receding or, as it were, cut-away chin is especially disagreeable, because *mentum prominulum* is an exclusive characteristic of our species. Finally comes the regard for beautiful eyes and forehead; it is concerned with the psychical qualities, especially the intellectual which are inherited from the mother.

The unconscious considerations which, on the other hand, the inclination of women follows naturally cannot be so exactly assigned. In general the following may be asserted: They give preference to the age from thirty to thirty-five years, especially over youths who yet really present the height of human beauty. The reason is that they are not guided by taste but by instinct, which recognises in the age named the acme of reproductive power. In general they look less to beauty, especially of the face. They are principally won by the strength of the man, and the courage

which is connected with this; for these promise the production of stronger children, and also a brave protector for them. Every physical defect of the man, every divergence from the type, may with regard to the child be removed by the woman in reproduction, through the fact that she herself in these respects, or even exceeds in the opposite direction. Only those qualities of the man have to be excepted which are peculiar to his sex, and which therefore the mother cannot give to the child: such are the manly structure of the skeleton, slender hips, straight bones, muscular power, courage, beard, &c. Hence it arises that women often love ugly men, but never an unmanly man, because they cannot neutralise his defects.

The second class of the considerations which lie at the foundation of sexual love are those which regard psychical qualities. Here we shall find that the woman is throughout attracted by the qualities of the heart or character in the man, as those which are inherited from the father. The woman is won especially by firmness of will, decision, and courage, and perhaps also by honesty and good-heartedness. On the other hand, intellectual gifts exercise no direct and instinctive power over her, just because they are not inherited from the father. Want of understanding does a man no harm with women; indeed extraordinary mental endowment, or even genius, might sooner influence them unfavorably as an abnormity. Hence one often sees an ugly, stupid and coarse fellow get the better of a cultured, able and amiable man with women. Also marriages from love are sometimes consummated between natures which are mentally very different: for example, the man is rough, powerful and stupid; the woman tenderly sensitive, delicately thoughtful, cultured, aesthetic, &c.; or the man is a genius and learned, the woman a goose:

> *"Sic visum Veneri; cui placet impares*
> *Formas atque animos sub juga aenea*
> *Saevo mittere cum joco"*

The reason is, that here quite other considerations than the intellectual predominate,- those of instinct. In marriage what is looked to is not intellectual entertainment, but the production of children: it is a bond of the heart, not of the head. It is a vain and absurd pretence when women assert that they have fallen in love with the mind of a man, or else it is the over-straining of a degenerate nature. Men, on the other hand, are not determined in their instinctive love by the qualities of the character of the woman; hence so many Socrateses have found their Xantippes; for example, Shakespeare, Albrecht Durer, Byron, &c. The intellectual qualities, however, certainly influence here, because they are inherited from the mother. Yet their influence is easily outweighed by that of physical beauty, which acts directly, as concerning a more essential point. However, it happens, either from the feeling or the experience of that influence, that mothers have their daughters taught the fine arts, languages, and so forth in order to make them attractive to men, whereby they wish to assist the intellect by artificial means, just as, in case of need, they assist the hips and the bosom. Observe that here we are speaking of that entirely immediate instinctive attraction from which alone love properly so called grows. That a woman of culture and understanding prizes understanding and intellect in a man, that a man from rational reflection should test and have regard to the character of his bride, has nothing to do with the matter with which we are dealing here. Such things lie at the bottom of a rational choice in marriage, but not of the passionate love, which is our theme.

Hitherto I have only taken account of the *absolute* considerations, *i.e.*, those which hold good for every one: I come now to the *relative* considerations, which are individual, because in their case what is looked to is the rectification of the type of the species, which is already defectively presented, the correction of the divergencies from it which the chooser's person already bears in itself, and thus the return to the pure presentation of the type. Here, then, each one loves what he lacks. Starting from the individual constitution, and directed to the individual constitution, the choice which rests upon such relative considerations is much more definite, decided, and exclusive, than that which proceeds merely from the absolute considerations; therefore the source of really passionate love will lie, as a rule, in these relative considerations, and only that of the ordinary and slighter inclination in the absolute considerations. Accordingly it is not generally precisely correct and perfect beauties that kindle great passions. For such a truly passionate inclination to arise something is required which can only be expressed by a chemical metaphor: two persons must neutralise each other, like acid and alkali, to a neutral salt. The essential conditions demanded for this

are the following. First: all sex is one-sided. This one-sidedness is more distinctly expressed in one individual than in another; therefore in every individual it can be better supplemented and neutralised by one than by another individual of the opposite sex, for each one requires a one-sidedness which is the opposite of his own to complete the type of humanity in the new individual that is to be produced, the constitution of which is always the goal toward which all tends. Physiologists know that manhood and womanhood admit of innumerable degrees, through which the former sinks to the repulsive gynander and hypospadaeus, and the latter rises to the graceful androgyne; from both sides complete hermaphrodism can be reached, at which point those individuals who, holding the exact mean between the two sexes, can be attributed to neither, and consequently are unfit to propagate the species. Accordingly, the neutralisation of two individualities by each other, of which we are speaking, demands that the definite degree of *his* manhood shall exactly correspond to the definite degree of *her* womanhood; so that the one-sidedness of each exactly annuls that of the other. Accordingly, the most manly man will seek the most womanly woman, and *vice versa*, and in the same way every individual will seek another corresponding to him or her in degree of sex. Now how far the required relation exists between two individuals is instinctively felt by them, and, together with the other relative considerations, lies at the foundations of the higher degrees of love. While, therefore, the lovers speak pathetically of the harmony of their souls, the heart of the matter is for the most part the agreement or suitableness pointed out here with reference to the being which is to be produced and its perfection, and which is also clearly of much more importance than the harmony of their souls, which often, not long after the marriage, resolves itself into a howling discord. Now, here comes in the further relative considerations, which depend upon the fact that everyone endeavors to neutralise by means of the other his weaknesses, defects, and deviations from the type, so that they will not perpetuate themselves, or even develop into complete abnormities in the child which is to be produced. The weaker a man is as regards muscular power the more he will seek strong women; and the woman on her side will do the same. But since now a less degree of muscular power is natural and regular in the woman, women as a rule will give the preference to strong men. Further, the size is an important consideration. Little men have a decided inclination for big women, and *vice versa*; and indeed in a little man the preference for big women will be so much the more passionate if he himself was begotten by a big father, and only remains little through the influence of his mother; because he has inherited from his father the vascular system and its energy, which was able to supply a large body with blood. If, on the other hand, his father and grandfather were both little, that inclination will make itself less felt. At the foundation of the aversion of a big woman to big men lies the intention of nature to avoid too big a race, if with the strength which this could impart to them would be too weak to live long. If, however, such a woman selects a big husband, perhaps for the sake of being more presentable in society, then, as a rule, her offspring will have to atone for her folly. Further, the consideration as to the complexion is very decided. Blondes prefer dark persons, or brunettes; but the latter seldom prefer the former. The reason is, that fair hair and blue eyes are themselves a variation from the type, almost an abnormity, analogous to white mice, or at least to grey horses. In no part of the world, not even in the vicinity of the pole, are they indigenous, except in Europe, and are clearly of Scandinavian origin. I may here express my opinion in passing that the white color of the skin is not natural to man, but that by nature he has a black or brown skin, like our forefathers the Hindus; that consequently a white man has never originally sprung from the womb of nature, and that thus there is no such thing as a white race, much as this is talked of, but every white man is a faded or bleached one. Forced into the strange world, where he only exists like an exotic plant, and like this requires to winter in the hothouse, in the course of thousands of years man became white. The gipsies, an Indian race which immigrated only about four centuries ago, show the transition from the complexion of the Hindu to our own. Therefore in sexual love nature strives to return to dark hair and brown eyes as the primitive type; but the white color of the skin has become a second nature, though not so that the brown of the Hindu repels us. Finally, each one also seeks in the particular parts of the body the corrective of his own defects and aberrations, and does so the more decidedly the more important the part is. Therefore snub-nosed individuals have an inexpressible liking for hook-noses, parrot-faces; and it is the same with regard to all other parts. Men with excessively slim, long bodies and limbs can find beauty in a body which is even beyond measure stumpy and short. The considerations with regard to temperament act in an analogous manner. Each will prefer the temperament opposed to his own; yet only in proportion as his own is decided. Whoever is himself in some respect very perfect does not indeed seek and love imperfection in this

respect, but is yet more easily reconciled to it than others; because he himself insures the children against great imperfection of this part. For example, whoever is himself very white will not object to a yellow complexion; but whoever has the latter will find dazzling whiteness divinely beautiful. The rare case in which a man falls in love with a decidedly ugly woman occurs when, beside the exact harmony of the degree of sex explained above, the whole of her abnormities are precisely the opposite, and thus the corrective, of his. The love is then wont to reach a high degree.

The profound seriousness with which we consider and ponder each bodily part of the woman, and she on her part does the same, the critical scrupulosity with which we inspect a woman who begins to please us, the capriciousness of our choice, the keen attention with which the bridegroom observes his betrothed, his carefulness not to be deceived in any part, and the great value which he attaches to every excess or defect in the essential parts, all this is quite in keeping with the importance of the end. For the new being to be produced will have to bear through its whole life a similar part. For example, if the woman is only a little crooked, this may impart to her son a hump, and so in all the rest. Consciousness of all this certainly does not exist. On the contrary, every one imagines that he makes that careful selection in the interest of his own pleasure (which at bottom cannot be interested in it at all); but he makes it precisely as, under the presupposition of his own corporisation, is most in keeping with the interest of the species, to maintain the type of which as pure as possible is the secret task. The individual acts here, without knowing it, by order of something higher than itself, the species; hence the importance which it attaches to things which may and indeed must be, indifferent to itself as such. There is something quite peculiar in the profound unconscious seriousness with which two young persons of opposite sex who see each other for the first time regard each other, in the searching and penetrating glance they cast at one another, in the careful review which all the features and parts of their respective persons have to endure. This investigating and examining is the *mediation of the genius of the species* on the individual which is possible through these two and the combination of its qualities. According to the result of this mediation is the degree of their pleasure in each other and this yearning for each other. This yearning, even after it has attained a considerable degree, may be suddenly extinguished again by the discovery of something that had previously remained unobserved. In this way, then, the genius of the species mediates concerning the coming race in all who are capable of reproduction. The nature of this race is the great work with which Cupid is occupied, unceasingly active, speculating, and pondering. In comparison with the importance of his great affair, which concerns the species and all coming races, the affairs of individuals in their whole ephemeral totality are very trifling; therefore he is always ready to sacrifice these regardlessly. For he is related to them as an immortal to mortals, and his interests to theirs as infinite to finite. Thus, in the consciousness of managing affairs of a higher kind than all those which only concern individual weal or woe, he carries them on sublimely, undisturbed in the midst of the tumult of war, or in the bustle of business life, or during the raging of a plague, and pursues them even into the seclusion of the cloister.

We have seen in the above that the intensity of love increases with its individualisation, because we have shown that the physical qualities of two individuals can be such that, for the purpose of restoring as far as possible the type of the species, the one is quite specifically and perfectly the completion or supplement of the other, which therefore desires it exclusively. Already in this case a considerable passion arises, which at once gains a nobler and more sublime appearance from the fact that it is directed toward an individual object; thus, as it were, arises at the special order of the species. For the opposite reason, the mere sexual impulse is ignoble, because without individualisation it is directed to all, and strives to maintain the species only as regards quantity, with little respect as to quality. But the individualising, and with it the intensity of the love, can reach so high a degree that without its satisfaction all the good things in the world, and even life itself, lose their value. It is then a wish which attains a vehemence that no other wish ever reaches, and therefore makes one ready for any sacrifice, and in case its fulfilment remains unalterably denied, may lead to madness or suicide. At the foundation of such an excessive passion there must lie, besides the considerations we have shown above, still others which we have not thus before our eyes. We must therefore assume that here not only the corporisation, but the *will* of the man and the *intellect* of the woman are specially suitable to each other, in consequence of which a perfectly definite individual can be produced by them

alone, whose existence the genius of the species has here in view, for reasons which are inaccessible to us, since they lie in the nature of the thing-in-itself. Or, to speak more exactly, the will to live desires here to objectify itself in a perfectly definite individual, which can only be produced by this father with this mother. This metaphysical desire of the will in itself has primarily no other sphere of action in the series of existences than the hearts of the future parents, which accordingly are seized with this ardent longing, and now imagine themselves to desire on their own account what really for the present has only a purely metaphysical end, *i.e.*, an end which lies outside the series of actually existing things. Thus it is the ardent longing to enter existence of the future individual which has first become possible here, a longing which proceeds from the primary source of all being, and exhibits itself in the phenomenonal world as the lofty passion of the future parents for each other, paying little regard to all that is outside itself; in fact, as an unparalleled illusion, on account of which such a lover would give up all the good things of this world to enjoy the possession of this woman, who yet can give him nothing really more than any other. That yet it is just this possession that is kept in view here is seen from the fact that even this lofty passion, like all others, is extinguished in its enjoyment - to the great astonishment of those who are possessed by it. It also becomes extinct when, through the woman having turned out barren (which, according to Hufeland, may arise from nineteen accidental constitutional defects), the real metaphysical end is frustrated; just as daily happens in millions of germs trampled under foot, in which yet the same metaphysical life principle strives for existence; for which there is no other consolation than that an infinity of space, time, and matter, and consequently inexhaustible opportunity for return, stands open to the will to live.

The view which is here expounded must once have been present to the mind of Theophrastus Paracelsus, even if only in a fleeting form, though he has not handled this subject, and my whole system of thought was foreign to him; for, in quite a different context and in his desultory manner, he wrote the following remarkable words: *"Hi sunt, quos Deus copulavit, ut eam, quae fuit Uriae et David; quamvis ex diametro (sic enim sibi humana mens persuadebat) cum justo et legitimo matrimonio pugnaret hoc....sed propter Salomonem, QUI ALIUNDE NASCI NON POTUIT, nisi ex Bathsheba, conjuncto David semine, quamvis meretrice, conjunxit eos Deus" (De vita longa, i.5).*

The longing of love, the *himeros*, which the poets of all ages are unceasingly occupied with expressing in innumerable forms, and do not exhaust the subject, nay, cannot do it justice, this longing, which attaches the idea of endless happiness to the possession of a particular woman, and unutterable pain to the thought that this possession cannot be attained,- this longing and this pain cannot obtain their material from the wants of an ephemeral individual; but they are the signs of the spirit of the species, which sees here, to be won or lost, a means for the attainment of its ends which cannot be replaced, and therefore groans deeply. The species alone has infinite life, and therefore is capable of infinite desires, infinite satisfaction, and infinite pain. But these are here imprisoned in the narrow breast of a mortal. No wonder, then, if such a breast seems like to burst, and can find no expression for the intimations of infinite rapture or infinite misery with which it is filled. This, then, affords the materials for all erotic poetry of a sublime kind, which accordingly rises into transcendent metaphors, soaring above all that is earthly. This is the theme of Petrarch, the material for the St. Preuxs, Werthers, and Jacobo Ortis, who apart from it could not be understood nor explained. For that infinite esteem for the loved one cannot rest upon some spiritual excellences, or in general upon any objective, real qualities of hers; for one thing, because she is often not sufficiently well known to the lover, as was the case with Petrarch. The spirit of the species alone can see at one glance what *worth* she has for *it*, for its ends. And great passions also arise, as a rule, at the first glance:

> "Who ever loved that loved not at first sight?"
> - SHAKESPEARE, "As You Like It," iii. 5.

In this regard a passage in the romance of *"Guzman de Alfarache,"* by Mateo Aleman, which has been famous for 250 years, is remarkable: *"No es necessario, para que uno ame, que pasa distancia de tiempo, que siga discurso, ni haga eleccion, sino que con aquella primera y sola vista, concurran juntamente cierta correspondencia o consonancia, o lo que aca solemos vulgarmente decir, una confrontacion de sangre, a que por particular influxo suelen mover las*

estrellas." (For one to love it is not necessary that much time should pass, that he should set about reflecting and make a choice; but only that at that first and only glance a certain correspondence and consonance should be encountered on both sides, or that which in common life we are wont to call a *sympathy of the blood*, and to which a special influence of the stars generally impels), P. ii. lib. iii. c. 5. Accordingly the loss of the loved one, through a rival, or through death, is also for the passionate lover a pain that surpasses all others, just because it is of a transcendental kind, since it affects him not merely as an individual, but attacks him in his *essentia aeterna*, in the life of the species into whose special will and service he was here called. Hence jealousy is such torment and so grim, and the surrender of the loved one is the greatest of all sacrifices. A hero is ashamed of all lamentations except the lamentation of love, because in this it is not he but the species that laments. In Calderon's "Zenobia the Great" there is in the first act a scene between Zenobia and Decius in which the latter says:

> *"Cielos, luego tu me quieres?*
> *Perdiera cien mil victorias,*
> *Volvierame,"* &c.

(Heaven! then thou lovest me? For this I would lose a thousand victories, would turn about, &c.)

Here, honor, which hitherto outweighed every interest, is beaten out of the field as soon as sexual love, *i.e.*, the interest of the species, comes into play, and sees before it a decided advantage; for this is infinitely superior to every interest of mere individuals, however important it may be. Therefore to this alone honor, duty, and fidelity yield after they have withstood every other temptation, including the threat of death. In the same way we find in private life that conscientiousness is in no point so rare as in this: it is here sometimes set aside even by persons who are otherwise honest and just, and adultery is recklessly committed when passionate love, *i.e.*, the interest of the species, has mastered them. It even seems as if in this they believed themselves to be conscious of a higher right than the interests of individuals can ever confer; just because they act in the interest of the species. In this reference Chamfort's remark is worth noticing: *"Quand un homme et une femme ont l'un pour l'autre une passion violente, il me semble toulours que quelque soient les obstacles qui les separent, un mari, des parens, etc., les deux amants sont l'un a l'autre, de par la Nature, qu'ils s'appartiennent de droit divin, malgre les lois et les conventions humaines."* Whoever is inclined to be incensed at this should be referred to the remarkable indulgence which the Savior shows in the Gospel to the woman taken in adultery, in the He also assumes the same guilt in the case of all present. From this point of view the greater part of the "Decameron" appears as mere mocking and jeering of the genius of the species at the rights and interests of individuals which it tramples under foot. Differences of rank and all similar circumstances, when they oppose the union of passionate lovers, are set aside with the same ease and treated as nothing by the genius of the species, which, pursuing its ends that concern innumerable generations, blows off as spray such human laws and scruples. From the same deep-lying grounds, when the ends of passionate love are concerned, every danger is willingly encountered, and those who are otherwise timorous here become courageous. In plays and novels also we see, with ready sympathy, the young persons who are fighting the battle of their love, *i.e.*, the interest of the species, gain the victory of their elders, who are thinking only of the welfare of the individuals. For the efforts of the lovers appear to us as much more important, sublime, and therefore right, than anything that can be opposed to them, as the species is more important than the individual. Accordingly the fundamental theme of almost all comedies is the appearance of the genius of the species with its aims, which are opposed to the personal interest of the individuals presented, and therefore threaten to undermine their happiness. As a rule it attains its end, which, as in accordance with poetical justice, satisfies the spectator, because he feels that the aims of the species are much to be preferred to those of the individual. Therefore at the conclusion he leaves the victorious lovers quite confidently, because he shares with them the illusion that they have founded their own happiness, against the will and foresight of their elders. In has been attempted in single, abnormal comedies to reverse the matter and bring about the happiness of the individuals at the cost of the aims of the species; but then the spectator feels the pain which the genius of the species suffers, and is not consoled by the advantages which are thereby assured to the individuals. As examples of this kind two very well-known little pieces occur to me: *"La*

reine de 16 ans," and *"La mariage de raison."* In tragedies concerning love affairs, since the aims of the species are frustrated, the lovers who were its tools, generally perish also; for example, in "Romeo and Juliet," "Tancred," "Don Carlos," "Wallenstein," "The Bride of Messina," and many others.

The love of a man often affords comical, and also tragical phenomena; both because, taken possession of by the spirit of the species, he is now ruled by this, and no longer belongs to himself: his conduct thereby becomes unsuited to the individual. That which in the higher grades of love imparts such a tinge of poetry and sublimeness to his thoughts, which gives them even a transcendental and hyperphysical tendency, on account of which he seems to lose sight altogether of his real, very physical aim, is at bottom this, that he is now inspired by the spirit of the species whose affairs are infinitely more important than all those which concern mere individuals, in order to found under the special direction of this spirit the whole existence of an indefinitely long posterity with this individual and exactly determined nature, which it can only receive from him as father and the woman he loves as mother, and which otherwise could never, *as such*, attain to existence, while the objectification of the will to live expressly demands that existence. It is the feeling that he is acting in affairs of such transcendent importance which raises the lover so high above everything earthly, nay, even above himself, and gives such a hyperphysical clothing to his very physical desires, that love becomes a poetical episode even in the life of the most prosaic man; in which last case the matter sometimes assumes a comical aspect. The mandate of the will which objectifies itself in the species exhibits itself in the consciousness of the lover under the mask of the anticipation of an infinite blessedness which is to be found for him in the union with this female individual. Now, in the highest grade of love the chimera becomes so radiant that if it cannot be attained life itself loses all charm, and now appears so joyless, hollow, and insupportable that the disgust at it even overcomes the fear of death, so that it is then sometimes voluntarily cut short. The will of such a man has been caught in the vortex of the will of the species, or this has obtained such a great predominance over the individual will that if such a man cannot be effective in the first capacity, he disdains to be so in the last. The individual is here too weak a vessel to be capable of enduring the infinite longing of the will of the species concentrated upon a definite object. No year passes without proving the reality of what has been expounded by several cases of all these kinds.

Not only, however, has the unsatisfied passion of love sometimes a tragic issue, but the satisfied passion also leads oftener to unhappiness than to happiness. For its demands often conflict so much with the personal welfare of him who is concerned that they undermine it, because they are incompatible with his other circumstances, and disturb the plan of life built upon them. Nay, not only with external circumstances is love often in contradiction, but even with the lover's own individuality, for it flings itself upon persons who, apart from the sexual relation, would be hateful, contemptible, and even abhorrent to the lover. But so much more powerful is the will of the species than that of the individual that the lover shuts his eyes to all those qualities which are repellent to him, overlooks all, ignores all, and binds himself forever to the object of his passion - so entirely is he blinded by that illusion, which vanishes as soon as the will of the species is satisfied, and leaves behind a detested companion for life. Only from this can it be explained that we often see very reasonable and excellent men bound to termagants and she-devils, and cannot conceive how they could have made such a choice. On this account the ancients represented love as blind. Indeed, a lover may even know distinctly and feel bitterly the faults of temperament and character of his bride, which promise him a miserable life, and yet not be frightened away:-

> "I ask not, I care not,
> If guilt's in thy heart.
> I know that I love thee
> Whatever thou art."

For ultimately he seeks not his own things, but those of a third person, who has yet to come into being, although he is involved in the illusion that what he seeks is his own affair. But it is just this not seeking of one's own things which is everywhere the stamp of greatness, that gives to passionate love also a touch of sublimity, and makes it a

worthy subject of poetry. Finally, sexual love is compatible even with the extremest hate toward its object: therefore Plato has compared it to the love of the wolf for the sheep. This case appears when a passionate lover, in spite of all efforts and entreaties, cannot obtain a favorable hearing on any condition:-

> "I love her and hate her."
> - SHAKESPEARE, Cymbeline, iii. 5.

The hatred of the loved one which then is kindled sometimes goes so far that the lover murders her, and then himself. One or two examples of this generally happen every year; they will be found in the newspapers. Therefore Goethe's lines are quite correct:-

> "By all despised love! By hellish element!
> Would that I knew a worse, that I might swear by!"

It is really no hyperbole if a lover describes the coldness of his beloved and the delight of her vanity, which feeds on his sufferings, as cruelty; for he is under the influence of an impulse which, akin to the instinct of insects, compels him, in spite of all grounds of reason, to pursue his end unconditionally, and to undervalue everything else: he cannot give it up. Not one but many a Petrarch has there been who was compelled to drag through life the unsatisfied ardor of love, like a fetter, an iron weight at his foot, and breathe his sighs in lonely woods; but only in the one Petrarch dwelt also the gift of poetry; so that Goethe's beautiful lines hold good of him:-

> "And when in misery the man was dumb
> A god gave me the power to tell my sorrow."

In fact, the genius of the species wages war throughout with the guardian geniuses of individuals, is their pursuer and enemy, always ready relentlessly to destroy personal happiness in order to carry out its ends; nay, the welfare of whole nations has sometimes been sacrificed to its humors. An example of this is given us by Shakespeare in "Henry VI.," pt. iii., act 3, sc. 2 and 3. All this depends on the fact that the species, as that in which the root of our being lies, has a closer and earlier right to us than the individual; hence its affairs take precedence. From the feeling of this the ancients personified the genius of the species in Cupid, a malevolent, cruel, and therefore ill-reputed god, in spite of his childish appearance; a capricious, despotic demon, but yet lord of gods and men:

> *"Su, do theos turanne k'anthropos, Eros!"*
> *(Tu, deorum hominumque tyranne, Amor!)*

A deadly shot, blindness, and wings are his attributes. The latter signify inconstancy; and this appears, as a rule, only with the disillusion which is the consequence of satisfaction.

Because the passion depended upon an illusion, which represented that which has only value for the species as valuable for the individual, the deception must vanish after the attainment of the end of the species. The spirit of the species which took possession of the individual sets it free again. Forsaken by this spirit, the individual falls back into its original limitation and narrowness, and sees with wonder that after such a high, heroic, and infinite effort nothing has resulted for its pleasure but what every sexual gratification affords. Contrary to expectation, it finds itself no happier than before. It observes that it has been the dupe of the will of the species. Therefore, as a rule, a Theseus who has been made happy will forsake his Ariadne. If Petrarch's passion had been satisfied, his song would have been silenced from that time forth, like that of the bird as soon as the eggs are laid.

Here let me remark in passing that however much my metaphysics of love will displease the very persons who are entangled in this passion, yet if rational considerations in general could avail anything against it, the fundamental truth disclosed to me would necessarily fit one more than anything else to subdue it. But the saying of the old

comedian will, no doubt, remain true: *"Quae res in se neque consilium, neque modum habet ullum, eam consilio regere non potes."*

Marriages from love are made in the interest of the species, not of the individuals. Certainly the persons concerned imagine they are advancing their own happiness; but their real end is one which is foreign to themselves, for it lies in the production of an individual which is only possible through them. Brought together by this aim, they ought henceforth to try to get on together as well as possible. But very often the pair brought together by that instinctive illusion, which is the essence of passionate love, will, in other respects, be of very different natures. This comes to light when the illusion vanishes, as it necessarily must. Accordingly love marriages, as a rule, turn out unhappy; for through them the coming generation is cared for at the expense of the present. *"Quien se casa por amores, ha de vivir con dolores"* (Who marries for love must live in sorrow), says the Spanish proverb. The opposite is the case with marriages contracted for purposes of convenience, generally in accordance with the choice of the parents. The considerations prevailing here, of whatever kind they may be, are at least real, and cannot vanish of themselves. Through them, however, the happiness of the present generation is certainly cared for, to the disadvantage of the coming generation, and notwithstanding this it remains problematical. The man who in his marriage looks to money more than to the satisfaction of his inclination lives more in the individual than in the species; which is directly opposed to the truth; hence it appears unnatural, and excites a certain contempt. A girl who, against the advice of her parents, rejects the offer of a rich and not yet old man, in order, setting aside all considerations of convenience, to choose according to her instinctive inclination alone, sacrifices her individual welfare to the species. But just on this account one cannot withhold from her a certain approbation; for she has preferred what is of most importance, and has acted in the spirit of nature (more exactly, of the species), while the parents advised in the spirit of individual egoism. In accordance with all this, it appears as if in making a marriage either the individual or the interests of the species must come off a loser. And this is generally the case; for that convenience and passionate love should go hand in hand is the rarest of lucky accidents. The physical, moral, or intellectual deficiency of the nature of most men may to some extent have its ground in the fact that marriages are ordinarily entered into not from pure choice and inclination, but from all kinds of external considerations, and on account of accidental circumstances. If, however, beside convenience, inclination is also to a certain extent regarded, this is, as it were, an agreement with the genius of the species. Happy marriages are well known to be rare; just because it lies in the nature of marriage that its chief end is not the present but the coming generation. However, let me add, for the consolation of tender, loving natures, that sometimes passionate sexual love associates itself with a feeling of an entirely different origin - real friendship based upon agreement of disposition, which yet for the most part only appears when sexual love proper is extinguished in its satisfaction. This friendship will the generally spring from the fact that the supplementing and corresponding physical, moral, and intellectual qualities of the two individuals, from which sexual love arose, with reference to the child to be produced, are, with reference also to the individuals themselves, related to each other in a supplementary manner as opposite qualities of temperament and mental gifts, and thereby form the basis of a harmony of disposition.

The whole metaphysics of love here dealt with stands in close connection with my metaphysics in general, and the light which it throws upon this may be summed up as follows.

We have seen that the careful selection for the satisfaction of the sexual impulse, a selection which rises through innumerable degrees up to that of passionate love, depends on the highly serious interest which man takes in the special personal constitution of the next generation. Now this exceedingly remarkable interest confirms two truths which have been set forth in the preceding chapters. (1.) The indestructibility of the true nature of man, which lives on in that coming generation. For that interest which is so lively and eager, and does not spring from reflection and intention, but from the inmost characteristics and tendencies of our nature, could not be so indelibly present and exercise such great power over man if he were absolutely perishable, and were merely followed in time by a race actually and entirely different from him. (2.) That his true nature lies more in the species than in the individual. For that interest in the special nature of the species, which is the root of all love, from the passing inclination to the

serious passion, is for everyone really the highest concern, the success or failure of which touches him most sensibly; therefore it is called *par excellence* the affair of the heart. Moreover, when this interest has expressed itself strongly and decidedly, everything which merely concerns one's own person is postponed and necessarily sacrificed to it. Through this, then, man shows that the species lies closer to him than the individual, and he lives more immediately in the former than in the latter. Why does the lover hang with complete abandonment on the eyes of his chosen one, and is ready to make every sacrifice for her? Because it is his immortal part that longs after her; while it is only his mortal part that desires everything else. That vehement or intense longing directed to a particular woman is accordingly an immediate pledge of the indestructibility of the kernel of our being, and of its continued existence in the species. But to regard this continued existence as something trifling and insufficient is an error which arise from the fact that under the conception of the continued life of the species one think nothing more than the future existence of beings similar to us, but in no regard identical with us; and this again because, starting from knowledge directed towards without, one takes into consideration only the external form of the species as we apprehend it in perception, and not its inner nature. But it is just this inner nature which lies at the foundation of our own consciousness as its kernel, and hence indeed is more immediate than this itself, and as thing-in-itself, free from the *pricipium individuationis*, is really the same and identical in all individuals, whether they exist together or after each other. Now this is the will to live, thus just that which desires life and continuance so vehemently. This accordingly is spared and unaffected by death. It can attain to no better state than its present one; and consequently for it, with life, the constant suffering and striving of the individuals is certain. To free it from this is reserved for the denial of the will to live, as the means by which the individual breaks away from the stem of the species, and surrenders that existence in it. We lack conceptions for that which it now is; indeed all data for such conceptions are wanting. We can only describe it as that which is free to be will to live or not. Buddhism denotes the latter case by the word Nirvana. It is the point which remains for ever unattainable to all human knowledge, just as such.

If now, from the standpoint of this last consideration, we contemplate the turmoil of life, we behold all occupied with its want and misery, straining all their powers to satisfy its infinite needs and to ward off its multifarious sorrows, yet without daring to hope anything else than simply the preservation of this tormented existence for a short span of time. In between, however, in the midst of the tumult, we see the glances of two lovers meet longingly; yet why so secretly, fearfully, and stealthily? Because the lovers are the traitors who seek to perpetuate the whole want and drudgery, which would otherwise speedily reach an end; this they wish to frustrate, as others like them have frustrated it before.

IN VINO VERITAS (or THE BANQUET) -- by Soren Kierkegaard -- from his book "Stages on Life's Way"

. · 18 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

It was on one of the last days in July, at ten o'clock in the evening, when the participants in that banquet assembled together. Date and year I have forgotten; indeed, this would be interesting only to one's memory of details, and not to one's recollection of the contents of that experience. The "spirit of the occasion," and whatever impressions are recorded in one's mind under that heading, concerns only one's recollections; and just as generous wine gains in flavor by passing the Equator, because of the evaporation of its watery particles, likewise does recollection gain by getting rid of the watery particles of memory; and yet recollection becomes as little a mere figment of the imagination by this process as does the generous wine.

The participants were five in number: John, called the Seducer, Victor Eremita, Constantine Constantius, and yet two others whose names I have not exactly forgotten - which would be a matter of small importance - but whose names I did not learn. It was as if these two had no proper names, for they were constantly addressed by some epithet. The one was called the Young Person. Nor was he more than twenty and some years, of slender and delicate build, and of a very dark complexion. His face was thoughtful; but more pleasing even was its lovable and engaging expression which betokened a purity of soul harmonizing perfectly with the soft charm, almost feminine, and the transparency of his whole presence. This external beauty of appearance was lost sight of, however, in one's next impression of him; or, one kept it only in mind whilst regarding a youth nurtured or - to use a still tenderer expression - petted into being, by thought, and nourished by the contents of his own soul - a youth who as yet had had nothing to do with the world, had been neither aroused and fired, nor disquieted and disturbed. Like a sleepwalker he bore the law of his actions within himself, and the amiable, kindly expression of his countenance concerned no one, but only mirrored the disposition of his soul.

The other person they called the Dressmaker, and that was his occupation. . . .

. . . They were seated. In the same moment the little company were launched into the very middle of the infinite sea of enjoyment - as if with a single bound. Each one had addressed all his thoughts and all his desires to the banquet, had prepared his soul for the enjoyment which was offered to overflowing and in which their souls overflowed. . . .

. . . Thus they banqueted. Soon, conversation had woven its beautiful wreaths about the banqueters, so that they sat garlanded. Now, it was enamored of the food, now of the wine, and now again of itself; now, it seemed to develop into significance, and then again it was altogether slight. . . .

. . . After a couple of courses had been served Constantine proposed that the banquet should conclude with each one's making a speech, but that precautions should be taken against the speakers' divagating too much. He was for making two conditions, viz., there were to be no speeches until after the meal; and no one was to speak before having drunk sufficiently to feel the power of the wine - or else he was to be in that condition in which one says much which under other circumstances one would leave unsaid - without necessarily having the connection of speech and thought constantly interrupted by hiccoughs. Before speaking, then, each one was to declare solemnly that he was in that condition. No definite quantity of wine was specified, capacities differed so widely. Against this proposal, John entered protest. He could never become intoxicated, he averred, and when he had come to a certain point he grew the soberer the more he drank. . . .

. . . As to the contents of the speeches, Constantine proposed that they should deal with love, that is, the relation between man and woman. No love stories were to be told though they might furnish the text of one's remarks.

The conditions were accepted. All reasonable and just demands a host may make on his guests were fulfilled: they ate and drank, and "drank and were filled with drink," as the Bible has it; that is, they drank stoutly.

The desert was served. Even if Victor had not, as yet, had his desire gratified to hear the splashing of a fountain - which, for that matter, he had luckily forgotten since that former conversation - now champagne flowed profusely. The clock struck twelve. Thereupon Constantine commanded silence, saluted the Young Person with a goblet and the words "May it be fortunate and favorable," and bade him to speak first.

.

The Young Person's Speech

The Young Person arose and declared that he felt the power of the wine, which was indeed apparent to some degree; for the blood pulsed strongly in his temples, and his appearance was not as beautiful as before the meal. He spoke as follows: . . .

(Editors note: The Young Person began his speech by speaking about the comical and contradictory nature of love. I have chosen to exclude the early part of his speech insofar as it does not relate immediately to the subject of woman. - KS)

. . . No, love anyone I will not, before I have fathomed what love is; but this I cannot, but have, rather, come to the conclusion that it is comical. Hence I will not love - but alas! I have not thereby avoided the danger, for, since I do not know what the lovable is and how it seizes me, or how it seizes a woman with reference to me, I cannot make sure whether I have avoided the danger. . . .

. . . Look you, for this reason have I forsworn all love, for my thought is to me the most essential consideration. So even if love be the most exquisite joy, I renounce it, without wishing to either offend or to envy anyone; and even if love be the condition for conferring the greatest benefit imaginable I deny myself the opportunity therefor - but my thought I have not prostituted. By no means do I lack an eye for what is beautiful, by no means does my heart remain unmoved when I read the songs of the poets, by no means is my soul without sadness when it yields to the beautiful conceptions of love; but I do not wish to become unfaithful to my thought. And of what avail were it to be, for there is no happiness possible for me except my thought have free sway, for it is my immortal part and, hence, of more importance than a wife. Well do I comprehend that if anything is sacred it is love; that if faithlessness in any relation is base, it is doubly so in love; that if any deceit is detestable, it is tenfold more detestable in love. But my soul is innocent of blame. I have never looked at any woman to desire her; neither have I fluttered about aimlessly before blindly plunging, or lapsing, into the most decisive of all relations. If I knew what the lovable were I would know with certainty whether I had offended by tempting anyone; but since I do not know, I am certain only of never having had the conscious desire to do so.

Supposing I should yield to love and be made to laugh; or supposing I should be cast down by terror, since I cannot find the narrow path which lovers travel as easily as if it were a broad highway, undisturbed by any doubts, which they surely have bestowed thought on (seeing our times have, indeed, reflected about everything and consequently will comprehend me when I assert that to act unreflectingly is *nonsense*, as one ought to have gone through all possible reflections before acting) - supposing, I say, I should yield to love! Would I not insult past redress my beloved one if I laughed, or irrevocably plunge her into despair if I were overwhelmed by terror? For I understand well enough that a woman cannot be expected to have thought as profoundly about these matters; and a woman who found love comical (as but gods and men can, for which reason woman is a temptation luring them to become ridiculous) would both betray a suspicious amount of previous experience and understand me least. But a woman who comprehended the terror of love would have lost her loveliness and still fail to understand me - she would be annihilated, which is in nowise my case, so long as my thought saves me.

. . . If there be no one who laughs at my speech - well, then laugh a little at me, dear fellow banqueters, and I shall not wonder; for I do not understand what I have occasionally heard you say about love. Very probably, though, you are among the initiated as I am not.

. . . Thereupon the Young Person seated himself. He had become more beautiful, almost, than before the meal. Now he sat quietly, looking down before him, unconcerned about the others. John the Seducer desired at once to urge some objections against the Young Person's speech but was interrupted by Constantine who warned against discussions and ruled that on this occasion only speeches were in order. John said if that was the case, he would stipulate that he should be allowed to be the last speaker. This again gave rise to a discussion as to the order in which they were to speak, which Constantine closed by offering to speak forthwith, against their recognizing his authority to appoint the speakers in their turn.

Constantine's Speech

Constantine spoke as follows:

There is a time to keep silence, and a time to speak, and now it seems to be the time to speak briefly, for our young friend has spoken much and very strangely. His comical power has made us struggle in uncertain battle because his speech was full of doubts, as he himself is, sitting there now - a perplexed man who knows not whether to laugh, or weep, or fall in love. In fact, had I had foreknowledge of his speech, such as he demands one should have of love, I should have forbidden him to speak; but now it is too late. I shall bid you then, dear fellow banqueters, "gladsome and merry be," and even if I cannot enforce this I shall ask you to forget each speech so soon as it is made and to wash it down with a single draught.

And now as to woman, about whom I shall speak. I too have pondered about her, and I have finally discovered the category to which she belongs. I too have sought, but I have found, too, and I have made a matchless discovery which I shall now communicate to you. Woman is understood correctly only when placed in the category of "the joke."

It is a man's function to be absolute, act in an absolute fashion, or to give expression to the absolute. Woman's sphere lies in her relativity. Between beings so radically different, no true reciprocal relation can exist. Precisely in this incommensurability lies the joke. And with woman the joke was born into the world. It is to be understood, however, that man must know how to stick to his role of being absolute; for else nothing is seen - that is to say, something exceedingly common is seen, viz., that man and woman fit each other, he as half man and she as half man.

The joke is not an aesthetic, but an abortive ethical, category. Its effect on thought is about the same as the impression we receive if a man were solemnly to be making a speech, recite a comma or two with his pronouncement, then say "hm!" - "dash" - and then stop. Thus with woman. One tries to cover her with the ethical category, one thinks of human nature, one opens one's eyes, on fastens one's glances on the most excellent maiden in question; an effort is made to redeem the claims of the ethical demand; and then one grows ill at ease and says to one's self: ah, this is undoubtedly a joke! The joke lies, indeed, in applying that category to her and measuring her by it, because it would be idle to expect serious results from her; but just that is the joke. Because if one could demand it of her it would not be a joke at all. A mighty poor joke indeed it would be to place her under the air pump and draw the air out of her - indeed it were a shame; but to blow her up to supernatural size and let her imagine herself to have attained all the ideality which a little maiden of sixteen imagines she has, that is the beginning of the game and, indeed, the beginning of a highly entertaining performance. No youth has half so much imaginary ideality as a young girl, but: "We shall soon be even" as says the tailor in the proverb; for her ideality is

but an illusion.

If one fails to consider woman from this point of view, she may cause irreparable harm; but through my conception of her she becomes harmless and amusing. For a man there is nothing more shocking than to catch himself twaddling. It destroys all true ideality; for one may repent of having been a rascal and one may feel sorry for not having meant a word of what one said; but to have talked nonsense, sheer nonsense, to have meant all one said and behold! it was all nonsense - that is too disgusting for repentance incarnate to put up with. But this is not the case with woman. She has a prescriptive right to transfigure herself - in less than twenty-four hours - into the most innocent and pardonable nonsense; for far is it from her ingenuous soul to wish to deceive one! Indeed, she meant all she said, and now she says the precise opposite, but with the same amiable frankness, for now she is willing to stake everything on what she said last. Now in case a man in all seriousness surrenders to love he may be called fortunate indeed if he succeeds in obtaining an insurance - if, indeed, he is able to obtain it anywhere; for so inflammable a material as woman is most likely to arouse the suspicions of an insurance agent. Just consider for a moment what he has done in thus identifying himself with her! If, some fine New Year's night she goes off like some fireworks he will promptly follow suit; and even if this should not happen he will have many a close call. And what may he not lose! He may lose his all; for there is but one absolute antithesis to the absolute, and that is nonsense. Therefore, let him not seek refuge in some society for morally tainted individuals, for he is not morally tainted - far from it; only, he has been reduced *in absurdum* and beatified in nonsense; that is, has been made a fool of.

This will never happen among men. If a man should sputter off in this fashion I would scorn him. If he should fool me by his cleverness I need but apply the ethical category to him, and the danger is trifling. If things go too far I shall put a bullet through his brain; but to challenge a woman - what is that, if you please? Who does not see that it is a joke, just as when Xerxes had the sea whipped? When Othello murders Desdemona, granting she really had been guilty, he has gained nothing, for he has been duped, and a dupe he remains; for even by his murdering her he only makes a concession with regard to a consequence which originally made him ridiculous; whereas Elvira (in Mozart's "Don Giovanni") may be an altogether pathetic figure when she arms herself with a dagger to obtain revenge. The fact that Shakespeare has conceived Othello as a tragic figure (even disregarding the calamity that Desdemona is innocent) is to be explained and, indeed, to perfect satisfaction, by the hero being a colored person. For a colored person, dear fellow banqueters, who cannot be assumed to represent spiritual qualities - a colored person, I say, who therefore becomes green in the face when his ire is aroused (which is a physiological fact), a colored man may, indeed, become tragic if he is deceived by a woman; just as a woman has all the pathos of tragedy on her side when she is betrayed by a man. A man who flies into a rage may perhaps become tragic; but a man of whom one may expect a developed mentality, he will either not become jealous or he will become ridiculous if he does, and most of all when he comes running with a dagger in his hand.

A pity that Shakespeare has not presented us with a comedy of this description in which the claim raised by a woman's infidelity is turned down by irony; for not everyone who is able to see the comical element in this situation and is capable also of developing the thought can give it dramatic embodiment. Let one but imagine Socrates surprising Xanthippe in the act - for it would be un-Socratic even to think of Socrates being particularly concerned about his wife's fidelity, or still worse, spying on her - imagine it, and I believe that the fine smile which transformed the ugliest man in Athens into the handsomest would for the first time have turned into a roar of laughter. It is incomprehensible why it never occurred to Aristophanes, who so frequently made Socrates the butt of his ridicule, to have him come running on the stage, shouting: "Where is she, where is she, so that I may kill her, ie., my unfaithful Xanthippe." For really it does not matter greatly whether or not Socrates was made a cuckold, and all that Xanthippe may do in this regard is wasted labor, like snapping one's fingers in one's pocket; for Socrates remains the same intellectual hero, even if he is cuckolded. But if he had in fact become jealous and had wanted to kill Xanthippe - alas! then would Xanthippe have exerted a power over him such as the entire Greek nation and his sentence of death could not - to make him ridiculous.

A cuckold is comical, then, with respect to his wife; but he may be regarded as becoming tragical with respect to other men. In this fact we may find an explanation of the Spanish conception of honor. But the tragic element resides chiefly in his not being able to obtain redress, and the anguish of his suffering consists really in its being devoid of meaning - which is terrible enough. To shoot the woman, to challenge her, to despise her, all this would only serve to render the poor man still more ridiculous; for woman is the weaker sex. This consideration enters in everywhere and confuses all. If she performs a great deed she is admired more than man, because it is more than was expected of her. If she is betrayed, all the pathos is on her side; but if a man is deceived one has scant sympathy and little patience while he is present - and laughs at him when his back is turned.

Look you, therefore is it advisable betimes to consider woman as a joke. The entertainment she affords is simply incomparable. Let one consider her a fixed quantity and one's self a relative one; let one by no means contradict her, for that would simply be helping her; let one never doubt what she says but, rather, believe her every word; let one gallivant about her, with eyes rendered unsteady by unspeakable admiration and blissful intoxication and with the mincing steps of a worshiper; let one languishingly fall on one's knees, then lift one's eyes up to her languishingly and heave a breath again; let one do all she bids one, like an obedient slave. And now comes the cream of the joke. We need no proof that woman can speak, ie., use words. Unfortunately, however, she does not possess sufficient reflection for making sure against her in the long run - which is, at most, eight days - contradicting herself, unless, indeed, man, by contradicting her, exerts a regulative influence. So the consequence is that within a short time confusion will reign supreme. If one had not done what she told one to, the confusion would pass unnoticed; for she forgets again as quickly as she talks. But since her admirer has done all and has been at her beck and call in every instance, the confusion is only too glaring.

The more gifted the woman, the more amusing the situation. For the more gifted she is, the more imagination she will possess. Now, the more imagination she possesses, the greater airs she will give herself and the greater the confusion which is bound to become evident in the next instant. In life, such entertainment is rarely had, because this blind obedience to a woman's whims occurs but seldom. And if it does, in some languishing swain, most likely he is not qualified to see the fun. The fact is, the ideality a little maiden assumes in moments when her imagination is at work is encountered nowhere else, whether in gods or man; but it is all the more entertaining to believe her and to add fuel to the fire.

As I remarked, the fun is simply incomparable - indeed, I know it for a fact because I have at times not been able to sleep at night with the mere thought of what new confusions I should live to see, through the agency of my sweetheart and my humble zeal to please her. Indeed, no one who gambles in a lottery will meet with more remarkable combinations than he who has a passion for this game. For this is sure, that every woman without exception possesses the same qualifications for being resolved and transfigured in nonsense with a gracefulness, a nonchalance, an assurance such as befits the weaker sex.

Being a right-minded lover one naturally discovers every possible charm in one's beloved. Now, when discovering genius in the above sense, one ought not to let it remain a mere possibility but ought, rather, to develop it into virtuosity. I do not need to be more specific, and more cannot be said in a general way, yet everyone will understand me. Just as one may find entertainment in balancing a cane on one's nose, in swinging a tumbler in a circle without spilling a drop, in dancing between eggs, and in other games as amusing and profitable, likewise, and not otherwise, in living with his beloved the lover will have a source of incomparable entertainment and food for the most interesting study. In matters pertaining to love, let one have absolute belief, not only in her protestations of fidelity - one soon tires of that game - but in all those explosions of inviolable Romanticism by which she would probably perish if one did not contrive a safety valve through which the sighs and the smoke, and "the aria of Romanticism" may escape and make her worshiper happy. Let one compare her admiringly to Juliet, the difference being only that no person ever as much as thought of touching a hair on her Romeo's head. With regard to intellectual matters, let one hold her capable of all and, if one has been lucky enough to find the right woman, in a

trice one will have a cantankerous authoress, whilst wonderingly shading one's eyes with one's hand and duly admiring what the little black hen may yield besides. It is altogether incomprehensible why Socrates did not choose this course of action instead of bickering with Xanthippe - oh, well! to be sure he wished to acquire practice, like the riding master who, even though he has the best trained horse, yet knows how to tease him in such fashion that there is good reason for breaking him in again.

Let me be a little more concrete in order to illustrate a particular and highly interesting phenomenon. A great deal has been said about feminine fidelity, but rarely with any discretion. From a purely aesthetic point of view this fidelity is to be regarded as a piece of poetic fiction which steps on the stage to find her lover - a fiction which sits by the spinning wheel and waits for her lover to come; but when she has found him, or he has come, why, then aesthetics is at a loss. Her infidelity, on the other hand, as contrasted with her previous fidelity, is to be judged chiefly with regard to its ethical import, when jealousy will appear as a tragic passion. There are three possibilities, then, and so the situation is favorable for woman; for there are two cases of fidelity, as against one of infidelity. Inconceivably great is her fidelity when she is not altogether sure of her cavalier; and ever so inconceivably great is it when he repels her fidelity. The third case would be her infidelity. Now granted one has sufficient intellect and objectivity to make reflections, one will find sufficient justification, in what has been said, for my category of "the joke." Our young friend whose beginning in a manner which deceived me seemed to be on the point of entering into this matter, but backed out again, dismayed at the difficulty. And yet the explanation is not difficult, providing one really sets about it seriously, to make unrequited love and death correspond to one another, and providing one is serious enough to stick to his thoughts - and so much seriousness one ought to have - for the sake of the joke.

Of course, this phrase of unrequited love being death originated either with a woman or a womanish male. Its origin is easily made out, seeing that it is one of those categorical outbursts which, spoken with great bravado on the spur of the moment, may count on a great and immediate applause; for although this business is said to be a matter of life and death, yet the phrase is meant for immediate consumption - like cream puffs. Although referring to daily experience, it is by no means binding on him who is to die, but only obliges the listener to rush posthaste to the assistance of the dying lover. If a man should take to using such phrases, it would not be amusing at all, for he would be too despicable to laugh at. Woman, however, possesses genius, is lovable in the measure she possesses it, and is amusing at all times. Well, then, the languishing lady dies of love - why certainly, for did she not say so herself? In this matter she is pathetic, for woman has enough courage to say what no man would have the courage to do - so then she dies! In saying so, I have measured her by ethical standards. Do ye likewise, dear fellow banqueters, and understand your Aristotle aright, now! He observes very correctly that woman cannot be used in tragedy. And very certainly her proper sphere is the pathetic and serious divertissement, the half-hour farce, not the five-act drama. So then she dies. But should she for that reason not be able to love again? Why not? - that is, if it be possible to restore her to life. Now, having been restored to life, she is of course a new being - another person, that is, and begins afresh and falls in love for the first time: nothing remarkable in that! Ah, death, great is thy power; not the most violent emetic and not the most powerful laxative could ever have the same purging effect!

The resulting confusion is capital, if one but is attentive and does not forget. A dead man is one of the most amusing characters to be met with in life. Strange that more use is not made of him on the stage, for in life he is seen now and then. When you come to think of it, even one who has only been seemingly dead is a comical figure; but one who was really dead certainly contributes to our entertainment all one can reasonably expect of a man. All depends on whether one is attentive. I myself had my attention called to it one day as I was walking with one of my acquaintances. A couple passed us. I judged from the expression on his face that he knew them and asked whether that was the case. "Why, yes" he answered, "I know them very well, and especially the lady, for she is my departed one." - "What departed one?" I asked - "Why, my departed first love," he answered. "Indeed, this is a strange affair. She said: I shall die. And that very same moment she departed, naturally enough, by death - else one might have insured her beforehand in the widow's insurance. Too late! Dead she was and dead she remained; and now I wander about, as says the poet, vainly seeking the grave of my ladylove that I may shed my tears thereon." Thus

this brokenhearted man who remained alone in the world, though it consoled him to find her pretty far along, if not by, yet with another man.

It is a good thing for the girls, thought I, that they don't have to be buried every time they die; for if parents have hitherto considered a boy child to be the more expensive, the girls might become even more so!

A simple case of infidelity is not as amusing, by far. I mean, if a girl should fall in love with someone else and should say to her husband: "I cannot help it, save me from myself!" But to die from sorrow because she cannot endure being separated from her lover by his journey to the West Indies, to have put up with his departure, however - and then, at his return, be not only not dead but attached to someone else for all time - that certainly is a strange fate for a lover to undergo. No wonder, then, that the heartbroken man at times consoled himself with the burthen of an old song which runs: "Hurrah for you and me, I say, we never shall forget that day!"

Now forgive me, dear fellow banqueters, if I have spoken at too great length; and empty a glass to love and to woman. Beautiful she is and lovely, if she be considered aesthetically. That is undeniable. But, as has often been said, and as I shall say also: one ought not to remain standing here, but should go on. Consider her, then, ethically and you will hardly have begun to do so before the humor of it will become apparent. Even Plato and Aristotle assume that woman is an imperfect form, an irrational quantity, that is, one which might some time, in a better world, be transformed into a man. In this life one must take her as she is. And what this is becomes apparent very soon; for she will not be content with the aesthetic sphere, but goes on, she wants to become emancipated, and she has the courage to say so. Let her wish be fulfilled and the amusement will be simply incomparable.

When Constantine had finished speaking, he forthwith ruled Victor Eremita to begin. He spoke as follows:

Victor Eremita's Speech

As you know, Plato offered thanks to the gods for four things. In the fourth place he is grateful for having been permitted to be a contemporary of Socrates. For the three other boons mentioned by him (that he had been made a man and not an animal, a man and not a woman, a Greek and not a barbarian), an earlier Greek philosopher had already thanked the gods, and so I conclude that they are worthy of our gratitude. But alas! - even if I wanted to express my gratitude like these Greeks, I would not be able to do so for what was denied me. Let me then collect my soul in gratitude for the one good which was conferred on me also - that I was made a man and not a woman.

To be a woman is something so curious, so heterogeneous and composite that no predicate will fully express these qualities; and if I should use many predicates they would contradict one another in such fashion that only a woman would be able to tolerate the result and, what is worse, feel happy about it. The fact that she really signifies less than man - that is not her misfortune, and still less so if she got to know it, for it might be borne with fortitude. No, her misfortune consists in her life's having become devoid of fixed meaning through a romantic conception of things, by virtue of which now she signifies all, and now, nothing at all, without ever finding out what she really does signify - and even that is not her misfortune but, rather, the fact that, being a woman, she never will be able to found out. As for myself, if I were a woman, I should prefer to be one in the Orient and as a slave, for to be a slave, neither more nor less, is at any rate something, in comparison with being now heyday, now nothing.

Even if a woman's life did not contain such contrasts, the distinction she enjoys, and which is rightly assumed to be hers as a woman - a distinction she does not share with man - would by itself point to the meaninglessness of her life. The distinction I refer to is that of gallantry. To be gallant to woman is becoming in men. Now gallantry consists very simply in conceiving in fantastic categories that person to whom one is gallant. To be gallant to a man is, therefore, an insult, for he begs to be excused from the application of fantastic categories to him. For the fair

sex, however, gallantry signifies a tribute, a distinction, which is essentially its privilege. Ah me, if only a single cavalier were gallant to them the case would not be so serious. But far from it! At bottom every man is gallant; he is unconsciously so. This signifies, therefore, that it is life itself which has bestowed this perquisite on the fair sex. Woman on her part unconsciously accepts it. Here we have the same trouble again; for if only a single woman did so, another explanation would be necessary. This is life's characteristic irony.

Now if gallantry contained the truth, it ought to be reciprocal, ie., gallantry would be the accepted quotation for the stated difference between beauty on the one hand, and power, astuteness, and strength on the other. But this is not the case. Gallantry is essentially woman's due, and the fact that she unconsciously accepts it may be explained through the solicitude of nature for the weak and those treated in a stepmotherly fashion by her, who feel more than recompensed by an illusion. But precisely this illusion is her misfortune. It is not seldom the case that nature comes to the assistance of an afflicted creature by consoling him with the notion that he is the most beautiful. If that is so, why, then we may say that nature made good the deficiency since now the creature is endowed with even more than could be reasonably demanded. But to be beautiful only in one's imagination, and not to be overcome, indeed, by sadness, but to be fooled into an illusion - why, that is still worse mockery. Now, as to being afflicted, woman certainly is far from having been treated in a step- motherly fashion by nature; still she is so in another sense inasmuch as she never can free herself from the illusion with which life has consoled her.

Gathering together one's impressions of a woman's existence, in order to point out its essential features, one is struck by the fact that every woman's life gives one an entirely fantastic impression. In a far more decisive sense than man she may be said to have turning points in her career; for her turning points turn everything upside down. In one of Tieck's Romantic dramas there occurs a person who, having once been king of Mesoptamia, now is a greengrocer in Copenhagen. Exactly as fantastic is every feminine existence. If the girl's name is Juliana, her life is as follows: erstwhile empress in the wide domains of love and titulary queen of all the exaggerations of tomfoolery; now, Mrs. Petersen, corner Bathhouse Street.

When a child, a girl is less highly esteemed than a boy. When a little older, one does not know exactly what to make of her. At last she enters that decisive period in which she holds absolute sway. Worshipfully, man approaches her as a suitor. Worshipfully, for so does every suitor, it is not the scheme of a crafty deceiver. Even the executioner, when laying down his *fasces* to go a-wooing, even he bends his knee, although he is willing to offer himself up, within a short time, to domestic executions which he finds so natural that he is far from seeking any excuse for them in the fact that public executions have grown so few. The cultured person behaves in the very same manner. He kneels, he worships, he conceives his ladylove in the most fantastic categories; and then he very quickly forgets his kneeling position - in fact, he knew full well the while he knelt that it was fantastic to do so.

If I were a woman I would prefer to be sold by my father to the highest bidder, as is the custom in the Orient; for there is at least some sense in such a deal. What misfortune to have been born a woman! Yet her misfortune really consists in her not being able to comprehend it, being a woman. If she does complain, she complains rather about her Oriental, than her Occidental, status. But if I were a woman I would first of all refuse to be wooed and resign myself to belong to the weaker sex, if such is the case, and be careful - which is most important if one is proud - of not going beyond the truth. However, that is of but little concern to her. Juliana is in the seventh heaven, and Mrs. Petersen submits to her fate.

Let me, then, thank the gods that I was born a man and not a woman. And still, how much do I forego! For is not all poetry, from the drinking song to the tragedy, a deification of woman? All the worse for her and for him who admires her; for if he does not look out he will, all of a sudden, have to pull a long face. The beautiful, the excellent, all of man's achievement, owes its origin to woman, for she inspires him. Woman is, indeed, the inspiring element in life. How many a lovelorn shepherd has played on this theme, and how many a shepherdess has listened to it! Verily, my soul is without envy and feels only gratitude to the gods; for I would rather be a man,

though in humble station, but really so, than be a woman and an indeterminate quantity, rendered happy by a delusion - I would rather be a concrete thing, with a small but definite meaning, than an abstraction which is to mean all.

As I have said, it is through woman that ideality is born into the world and - what were man without her! There is many a man who has become a genius through a woman, many a one a hero, many a one a poet, many a one even a saint; but he did not become a genius through the woman he married, for through her he only became a privy councillor; he did not become a hero through the woman he married, for through her he only became a general; he did not become a poet through the woman he married, for through her he only became a father; he did not become a saint through the woman he married, for he did not marry, and would have married but one - the one whom he did not marry; just as the others became a genius, became a hero, became a poet through the help of the woman they did not marry. If woman's ideality were in itself inspiring, why, then the inspiring woman would be the one to whom a man is united for life. But life tells a different story. It is only by a negative relation to her that man is rendered productive in his ideal endeavors. In this sense she is inspiring; to say that she is inspiring, without qualifying one's statement, is to be guilty of a paralogism which one must be a woman to overlook. Or has anyone ever heard of any man having become a poet through his wife? So long as man does not possess her, she inspires him. It is this truth which gives rise to the illusions entertained in poetry and by women. The fact that he does not possess her signifies, either, that he is still fighting for her - thus has woman inspired many a one and rendered him a knight; but has anyone ever heard of any man having been rendered a knight valiant through his wife? Or, the fact that he does not possess her signifies that he cannot obtain her by any manner of means - thus has woman inspired many a one and roused his ideality; that is, if there is anything in him worth-while. But a wife, who has things ever so much worth-while for her husband, will hardly arouse any ideal strivings in him. Or, again, the fact that he does not possess her signifies that he is pursuing an ideal. Perchance he loves many, but loving many is also a kind of unrequited love; and yet the ideality of his soul is to be seen in this striving and yearning and not in the small bits of lovableness which make up the sum total of the contributions of all those he loves.

The highest ideality a woman can arouse in a man consists, in fact, in the awakening within him of the consciousness of immortality. The point of this proof lies in what one might call the necessity of a reply. Just as one may remark about some play that it cannot end without this or that person getting in his say, likewise (says ideality) our existence cannot be all over with death: I demand a reply! This proof is frequently furnished, in a positive fashion, in the public advertiser. I hold that to be entirely proper, for if proof is to be made in the public advertiser it must be made in a positive fashion. Thus: Mrs. Petersen, we learn, has lived a number of years, until in the night of the 24th it pleased Providence, etc. This produces in Mr. Petersen an attack of reminiscences from his courting days, or, to express it quite plainly, nothing but seeing her again will ever console him. For this blissful meeting he prepares himself, in the meanwhile, by taking unto himself another wife; for, to be sure, this marriage is by no means as poetic as the first - still it is a good imitation. This is the proof positive. Mr. Petersen is not satisfied with demanding a reply, no, he wants a meeting again in the hereafter.

As is well known, a base metal will often show the gleam of precious metal. This is the brief silver gleam. With respect to the base metal this is a tragic moment, for it must once for all resign itself to being a base metal. Not so with Mr. Petersen. The possession of ideality is by rights inherent in every person - and now, if I laugh at Mr. Petersen, it is not because he, being in reality of base metal, had but a single silver gleam, but, rather, because just this silver gleam betrays his having become a base metal. Thus does the Philistine look most ridiculous when, arrayed in ideality, he affords fitting occasion to say, with Holberg: "What! if that cow doesn't wear a fine dress, too!"

The case is this: whenever a woman arouses ideality in man, and thereby the consciousness of immortality, she always does so negatively. He who really became a genius, a hero, a poet, a saint through a woman, he has by that very fact seized on the essence of immortality. Now if the inspiring element were positively present in woman,

why, then a man's wife, and only his wife, ought to awaken in him the consciousness of immortality. But the reverse holds true. That is, if she is really to awaken ideality in her husband she must die. Mr. Petersen, to be sure, is not affected, for all that. But if woman, by her death, does awaken man's ideality, then is she indeed the cause of all the great things poetry attributes to her; but note well: that which she did in a positive fashion for him in no wise roused his ideality. In fact, her significance in this regard becomes the more doubtful the longer she lives, because she will at length really begin to wish to signify something positive. However, the more positive the proof the less it proves; for then Mr. Petersen's longing will be for some past common experiences whose content was, to all intents and purposes, exhausted when they were had. Most positive of all the proof becomes if the object of his longing concerns their marital spooning - that time when they visited the Deer Park together! In the same way one might suddenly feel a longing for the old pair of slippers one used to be so comfortable in; but that proof is not exactly a proof for the immortality of the soul. On the other hand, the more negative the proof, the better it is; for the negative is higher than the positive, inasmuch as it concerns our immortality and is thus the only positive value.

Woman's main significance lies in her negative contribution, whereas her positive contributions are as nothing in comparison but, on the contrary, pernicious. It is this truth which life keeps from her, consoling her with an illusion which surpasses all that might arise in any man's brain, and with parental care ordering life in such fashion that both language and everything else confirm her in her illusion. For even if she be conceived as the very opposite of inspiring, and rather as the wellspring of all corruption; whether now we imagine that with her, sin came into the world, or that it is her infidelity which ruined all - our conception of her is always gallant. That is, when hearing such opinions one might readily assume that woman were really able to become infinitely more culpable than man, which would, indeed, amount to an immense acknowledgment of her powers. Alas, alas! the case is entirely different. There is a secret reading of this text which woman cannot comprehend; for, the very next moment, all life owns to the same conception as the state, which makes man responsible for his wife. One condemns her as man never is condemned (for only a real sentence is passed on him, and there the matter ends), not with her receiving a milder sentence; for in that case not all of her life would be an illusion, but with the case against her being dismissed and the public, ie., life, having to defray the costs. One moment, woman is supposed to be possessed of all possible wiles; the next moment, one laughs at him whom she deceived, which surely is a contradiction. Even such a case as that of Potiphar's wife does not preclude the possibility of her having really been seduced. Thus has woman an enormous possibility, such as no man has - an enormous possibility; but her reality is in proportion. And most terrible of all is the magic of illusion in which she feels herself happy.

Let Plato then thank the gods for having been born a contemporary of Socrates: I envy him; let him offer thanks for being a Greek: I envy him; but when he is grateful for having been born a man and not a woman I join him with all my heart. If I had been born a woman and could understand what now I can understand - it were terrible! But if I had been born a woman and therefore could not understand it - that were still more terrible!

But if the case is as I stated it, then it follows that one had better refrain from any positive relation with woman. Wherever she is concerned one has to reckon with that inevitable hiatus which renders her happy as she does not detect the illusion, but which would be a man's undoing if he detected it.

A negative relation to a woman may arouse the highest ideality in a man. Let that be said once for all, and let it be said in honor of woman; and it may be said without reservation. For it depends not on the particular quality of the woman concerned, her loveliness, or the persistence of her loveliness. Rather does it depend on her appearing at the right moment, when ideality is glimpsed. That is but a short moment, and then she had better disappear again, because a positive relation to a woman renders man finite to the highest degree. Therefore, the greatest service a woman can do a man is to make her appearance at the right moment. But that she cannot do by herself but only through the benevolence of fate. And now comes the greatest thing she can do for a man, and that is, to be unfaithful to him, the sooner the better. The first ideality will assist him to attain a still higher degree of ideality -

and then he is helped in an absolute sense. This second ideality is, to be sure, purchased with the sharpest pain, but it is also his greatest bliss. And though he may in no wise desire it before it comes to pass, yet he will thank her when it has come. And as, humanly speaking, he has no very good reason to thank her, why, then everything is as it should be. But woe to him if she remains faithful to him!

I thank the gods, then, that I was born a man and not a woman; and I thank them, furthermore, that no woman by some lifelong attachment compels me to be constantly reflecting that it ought not to have been.

Indeed, what a passing strange device is marriage! And what makes it all the stranger is the suggestion that it is to be a step taken without thought. And yet no step is more decisive, for nothing in life is as inexorable and masterful as the marriage tie. And now so important a step as marriage ought, so we are told, to be taken without reflection! Yet marriage is not something simple but something immensely complex and ambiguous. Just as the meat of the turtle smacks of all kinds of meat, so likewise does marriage have a taste of all manner of things; and just as the turtle is a sluggish animal, likewise is marriage a sluggish thing. Falling in love is, at least, a simple thing, but marriage-! Is it something heathen or something Christian, something spiritual or something profane, or something civil, or something of all things? Is it an expression of an inexplicable love, the elective affinity of souls in delicate accord with one another; or is it a duty, or a partnership, or a mere convenience, or the custom of certain countries - or is it a little of all these? Is one to order the music for it from the town musician or the church organist, or is one to have a little from both? Is it the minister or the police inspector who is to make the speech and enroll the names in the book of life - or in the town register? Does marriage blow a tune on a comb, or does it listen to the whisperings "like to those of the fairies from the grottoes of a summer night"?

And now every Darby imagines he performed such a potpourri, such incomparably complex music, in getting married - and imagines that he is still performing it while living a married life! My dear fellow banqueters, ought we not, in default of a wedding present and congratulations, give each of the conjugal partners, and marriage itself, demerits for repeated inattentiveness? It is taxing enough to express a single idea in one's life, but to think something so complicated as marriage and, consequently, bring it under one head, to think something so complicated and yet to do justice to each and every element in it, and have everything present at the same time - verily, he is a great man who can accomplish all this! And still every Benedict accomplished it - so he does, no doubt, for does he not say that he does it unconsciously? But if this is to be done unconsciously it must be through some higher form of unconsciousness permeating all one's reflective powers. But not a word is said about this! And to ask any married man about it means just wasting one's time.

He who has once committed a piece of folly will constantly be pursued by its consequences. In the case of marriage the folly consists in one's having gotten into a mess, and the punishment, in recognizing, when it is too late, what one has done. So you will find that the married man now becomes chesty, with a bit of pathos, thinking he has done something remarkable in having entered wedlock; now puts his tail between his legs in dejection, then again, praises marriage in sheer self-defense. But as to a thought unit which might serve to hold together the scattered members of the most heterogeneous conceptions of life contained in marriage - for that we shall wait in vain.

Therefore, to be a mere Benedict is humbug, and to be a seducer is humbug, and to wish to experiment with woman for the sake of "the joke" is also humbug. In fact, the two last-mentioned methods will be seen to involve concessions to woman on the part of man quite as large as those found in marriage. The seducer wishes to rise in his own estimation by deceiving her; but this very fact that he deceives and wishes to deceive - that he cares to deceive - is also a demonstration of his dependence on woman. And the same holds true of him who wishes to experiment with her.

If I were to imagine any possible relation with woman it would be one so saturated with reflection that it would, for

that very reason, no longer be any relation with her at all. To be an excellent husband and yet on the sly seduce every girl, to seem a seducer and yet harbor within one all the ardor of Romanticism - there would be something to that, for the concession in the first instance were then annihilated in the second. Certain it is that man finds his true ideality only in such a reduplication. All merely unconscious existence must be obliterated, and its obliteration ever cunningly guarded by some sham expression. Such a reduplication is incomprehensible to woman, for it removes from her the possibility of expressing man's true nature in one term. If it were possible for woman to exist in such a reduplication, no erotic relation with her were thinkable. But, her nature being such as we all know it to be, any disturbance of the erotic relation is brought about by man's true nature which ever consists precisely in the annihilation of that in which she has her being.

Am I then preaching the monastic life and rightly called Eremita? By no means. You may as well eliminate the cloister, for after all it is only a direct expression of spirituality and as such but a vain endeavor to express it in direct terms. It makes small difference whether you use gold, or silver, or paper money; but he who does not spend a farthing but is counterfeit, he will comprehend me. He to whom every direct expression is but a fraud, he and he only is safeguarded better than if he lived in a cloister cell - he will be a hermit even if he travelled in an omnibus day and night.

Scarcely had Victor finished when the Dressmaker jumped to his feet and threw over a bottle of wine standing before him; then he spoke as follows:

The Dressmaker's Speech

Well spoken, dear fellow banqueters, well spoken! The longer I hear you speak the more I grow convinced that you are fellow conspirators - I greet you as such, I understand you as such; for fellow conspirators one can make out from afar. And yet, what know you? What does your bit of theory to which you wish to give the appearance of experience, your bit of experience which you make over into a theory - what does it all amount to? For every now and then you believe her for a moment and - are caught in a moment! No, *I* know woman - from her weak side, that is to say, I know her. I shrink from no terror, I shrink from no means to make sure about what I have learned; for I am a madman, a madman one must be to understand her, and if one has not been one before, one will become a madman once one understands her. The robber has his hiding place by the noisy highroad, and the ant lion has his funnel in the loose sand, and the pirate his haunts by the roaring sea: likewise have I my fashion shop in the very midst of the teeming streets, seductive, irresistible to woman as is the Venusberg to men. There, in a fashion shop, one learns to know woman in a practical way and without any theoretical ado.

Now, if fashion meant nothing than that woman in the heat of her desire threw off all her clothing - why, that would at least mean something. But this is not the case, fashion is not plain sensuality, not tolerated debauchery, but an illicit trade in indecency authorized as proper. And, just as in heathen Prussia the marriageable girl wore a bell whose ringing served as a signal to the men, likewise is a woman's existence in fashion a continual bell ringing, not for debauchees but for lickerish voluptuaries. People hold Fortune to be a woman - ah, yes it is, to be sure, fickle; still, it is fickle in something, as it may also give much; and insofar it is not a woman. No; but fashion is a woman, for fashion is fickleness in nonsense and is consistent only in its becoming ever more crazy.

One hour in my shop is worth more than days and years without, if it really be one's desire to learn to know woman; in my shop, for it is the only one in the capital; there is no thought of competition. Who, forsooth, would dare to enter into competition with one who has entirely devoted himself, and is still devoting himself, as high priest in this idol worship? No, there is not a distinguished assemblage which does not mention my name first and last; and there is not a middle-class gathering where my name, whenever mentioned, does not inspire sacred awe, like that of the king; and there is no dress so idiotic but is accompanied by whispers of admiration when its owner proceeds down the hall - provided it bears my name; and there is not the lady of gentle birth who dares pass my shop by, nor the

girl of humble origin but passes it sighing and thinking: if only I could afford it! Well, neither was she deceived. I deceive no one; I furnish the finest goods and the most costly, and at the lowest price; indeed, I sell below cost. The fact is, I do not wish to make a profit. On the contrary, every year I sacrifice large sums. And yet do I mean to win. I mean to, I shall spend my last farthing in order to corrupt, in order to bribe the tools of fashion so that I may win the game. To me it is a delight beyond compare to unroll the most precious stuffs, to cut them out, to clip pieces from genuine Brussels lace in order to make a fool's costume - I sell at the lowest prices, genuine goods and in style.

You believe, perhaps, that woman wants to be dressed fashionably only at certain times? No such thing, she wants to be so all the time and that is her only thought. For a woman does have a mind, only it is employed about as well as is the Prodigal Son's substance; and woman does possess the power of reflection in an incredibly high degree, for there is nothing so holy but she will in no time discover it to be reconcilable with her finery - and the chiefest expression of finery is fashion. What wonder if she does discover it to be reconcilable; for is not fashion holy to her? And there is nothing so insignificant but she certainly will know how to make it count in her finery - and the most fatuous expression of finery is fashion. And there is nothing, nothing in all her attire, not the least ribbon, of whose relation to fashion she has not a definite conception and concerning which she is not immediately aware whether the lady who just passed by noticed it, because for whose benefit does she dress if not for other ladies!

Even in my shop where she comes to be fitted out *a la mode*, even there she is in fashion. Just as there is a special bathing costume and a special riding habit, likewise there is a particular kind of dress which it is the fashion to wear to the dressmaker's shop. That costume is not *insouciant* in the same sense as is the negligee a lady is pleased to be surprised in, earlier in the forenoon, where the point is her belonging to the fair sex and the coquetry lies in her letting herself be surprised. The dressmaker costume, on the other hand, is calculated to be nonchalant and a bit careless without her being embarrassed thereby, because a dressmaker stands in a different relation to her from a cavalier. The coquetry here consists in thus showing herself to a man who, by reason of his station, does not presume to ask for the lady's womanly recognition, but must be content with the perquisites which fall abundantly to his share, without her ever thinking of it, or without it even so much as entering her mind to play the lady before a dressmaker. The point is, therefore, that her being of the opposite sex is, in a certain sense, left out of consideration, and her coquetry invalidated, by the superciliousness of the noble lady who would smile if anyone alluded to any relation existing between her and her dressmaker. When visited in her negligee, she conceals herself, thus displaying her charms by this very concealment. In my shop she exposes her charms with the utmost nonchalance, for he is only a dressmaker - and she is a woman. Now, her shawl slips down and bares some part of her body, and if I did not know what that means and what she expects, my reputation would be gone to the winds. Now, she draws herself up, *a priori* fashion; now she gesticulates *a posteriori*; now, she sways to and fro in her hips; now, she looks at herself in the mirror and sees my admiring phiz behind her in the glass; now, she minces her words; now, she trips along with short steps; now, she hovers; now, she draws her foot after her in slovenly fashion; now, she lets herself sink softly into an armchair, whilst I with humble demeanor offer her a flask of smelling salts and with my adoration assuage her agitation; now, she strikes after me playfully; now, she drops her handkerchief and, without as much as a single motion, lets her relaxed arm remain in its pendant position whilst I bend down low to pick it up and return it to her, receiving a little patronizing nod as a reward. These are the ways of a lady of fashion when in my shop. Whether Diogenes made any impression on the woman who was praying in a somewhat unbecoming posture when he asked her whether she did not believe the gods could see her from behind - that I do not know; but this I do know, that if I should say to her ladyship kneeling down in church: "The folds of your gown do not fall according to fashion," she would be more alarmed than if she had given offense to the gods. Woe to the outcast, the male Cinderella, who has not comprehended this! By the immortal gods, what pray, is a woman who is not in fashion; I adjure you by the gods, and what when she is in fashion!

Whether all this is true? Well, make trial of it: let the swain, his beloved one sinks rapturously on his breast, whispering unintelligibly: "Thine forever," and hides her head on his bosom - let him but say to her: "My sweet

Kitty, your coiffure is not at all in fashion." - Possibly, men don't give thought to this, but he who knows it, and has the reputation of knowing it, he is the most dangerous man in the kingdom. What blissful hours the lover passes with his sweetheart before marriage I do not know; but of the blissful hours she spends in my shop he hasn't the slightest inkling either. Without my special license and sanction a marriage is null and void, anyway - or else an entirely plebeian affair. Let it be the very moment when they are to meet before the altar, let her step forward with the very best conscience in the world that everything was bought in my shop and tried on there - and now, if I were to rush up and exclaim: "But mercy! gracious lady, your myrtle wreath is all awry" - why, the whole ceremony might be postponed, for aught I know. But men do not suspect these things; one must be a dressmaker to know.

So immense is the power of reflection needed to fathom a woman's thought that only a man who dedicates himself wholly to the task will succeed, and even then only if gifted to start with. Happy therefore the man who does not associate with any woman, for she is not his, anyway, even if she be no other man's; for she is possessed by that phantom born of the unnatural intercourse of woman's reflection with itself, fashion. Do you see, for this reason should woman always swear by fashion - then were there some force in her oath; for, after all, fashion is the thing she is always thinking of, the only thing she can think together with, and into, everything. For instance, the glad message has gone forth from my shop to all fashionable ladies that fashion decrees the use of a particular kind of headdress to be worn in church, and that this headdress, again, must be somewhat different for High Mass and for the afternoon service. Now when the bells are ringing, the carriage stops in front of my door. Her ladyship descends (for also this has been decreed that no one can adjust that headdress save I, the fashion dealer), I rush out, making low bows, and lead her into my cabinet. And whilst she languishingly reposes, I put everything in order. Now she is ready and has looked at herself in the mirror; quick as any messenger of the gods I hasten in advance, open the door of my cabinet with a bow, then hasten to the door of my shop, and lay my arm on my breast like some Oriental slave, but, encouraged by my gracious courtesy, I even dare to throw her an adoring and admiring kiss - now she is seated in her carriage - oh dear! she left her hymn book behind. I hasten out again and hand it to her through the carriage window. I permit myself once more to remind her to hold her head a trifle more to the right and herself to arrange things, should her headdress become a bit disordered when descending. She drives away and is edified.

You believe, perhaps, that it is only great ladies who worship fashion, but far from it! Look at my seamstresses for whose dress I spare no expense, so that the dictates of fashion shall be proclaimed most emphatically from my shop. They form a chorus of half-witted creatures, and I myself lead them on as high priest, as a shining example, squandering all, solely in order to make all womankind ridiculous. For when a seducer makes the boast that every woman's virtue has its price, I do not believe him; but I do believe that every woman at an early time will be crazed by the maddening and defiling introspection taught her by fashion, which will corrupt her more thoroughly than being seduced. I have made trial more than once. If not able to corrupt her myself, I set on her a few of fashion's slaves of her own station; for just as one may train rats to bite rats, likewise is the crazed woman's sting like that of the tarantula. And most especially dangerous is it when some man lends his help.

Whether I serve the Devil or God I do not know; but I am right, I shall be right, I will be, so long as I possess a single farthing, I will be until the blood spurts out of my fingers. The physiologist pictures the shape of woman to show the dreadful effects of wearing a corset, and beside it he draws a picture of her normal figure. That is all very well, but only one of the drawings has the validity of truth: they all wear corsets. Describe, therefore, the miserable, stunted perversity of the fashion-mad woman, describe the insidious introspection devouring her, and then describe the womanly modesty which least of all knows about itself - do so and you have judged woman, have in very truth passed terrible sentence on her. If ever I discover such a girl who is contented and demure and not yet corrupted by indecent intercourse with woman - she shall fall nevertheless. I shall catch her in my toils; already she stands at the sacrificial altar, that is to say, in my shop. With the most scornful glance a haughty nonchalance can assume I scrutinize her appearance; she perishes with fright; a peal of laughter from the adjoining room where sit my trained accomplices annihilates her. And afterward, when I have gotten her rigged up *a la mode* and she looks

crazier than a lunatic, as crazy as one who would not be accepted even to a lunatic asylum, then she leaves me in a state of bliss - no man, not even a god, were able to inspire fear in her; for is she not dressed in fashion?

Do you comprehend me now, do you comprehend why I call you fellow conspirators, even though in a distant way? Do you now comprehend my conception of woman? Everything in life is a matter of fashion, and so are love, and hoop skirts, and a ring through the nose. To the utmost of my ability will I therefore come to the support of the exalted genius who wishes to laugh at the most ridiculous of all animals. If woman has reduced everything to a matter of fashion, then will I, with the help of fashion, prostitute her, as she deserves to be; I have no peace, I the dressmaker, my soul rages when I think of my task - she will yet be made to wear a ring through her nose. Seek therefore no sweetheart, abandon love as you would the most dangerous neighborhood; for the one whom you love would also be made to go with a ring through her nose.

Thereupon John, called the Seducer, spoke as follows:

The Speech of John the Seducer

My dear boon companions, is Satan plaguing you? For, indeed, you speak like so many hired mourners; your eyes are red with tears and not with wine. You almost move me to tears also, for an unhappy lover does have a miserable time of it in life. Therefore those tears. I, however, am a happy lover, and my only wish is to remain so. Very possibly that is one of the concessions to woman which Victor is so afraid of. Why not? Let it be a concession! Loosening the lead foil on this bottle of champagne also is a concession; letting its foaming contents flow into my glass also is a concession; and so is raising it to my lips - now I drain it - *concedo*. Now, however, it is empty, hence I need no more concessions. Just the same with girls. If some unhappy lover has bought his kiss too dearly, this proves to me only that he does not know either how to take what is coming to him or how to do it. I never pay too much for this sort of thing - that is a matter for the girls to decide. What this signifies? To me it signifies the most beautiful, the most delicious, and well-nigh the most pursuasive, *argumentum ad hominem;* but since every woman, at least once in her life, possesses this argumentative freshness I do not see any reason why I should not let myself be persuaded. Our young friend wishes to make this experience in his thought. Why not buy a cream puff and be content with looking at it? I mean to enjoy. No mere talk for me! Just as an old song has it about a kiss: *it can hardly be seen; it is but for lips which understand each other exactly* - understand each other so perfectly that any reflection about the matter is but impertinence and folly. He who is twenty and does not grasp the existence of the categorical imperative, "Enjoy thyself" - he is a fool; and he who does not seize the opportunity is and remains a Christiansfelder (a Herrnhutian Pietist).

However, you are all unhappy lovers, and that is why you are not satisfied with woman as she is. The gods forbid! As she is, she pleases me, just as she is. Even Constantine's category of "the joke" seems to contain a secret desire. I, on the other hand, I am gallant. And why not? Gallantry costs one nothing and gives one all and is the condition for all erotic pleasure. Gallantry is the Masonic language of the senses and of voluptuousness, between man and woman. It is a natural language, as love's language in general is. It consists not of sounds but of desires disguised and of ever-changing wishes. That an unhappy lover may be ungallant enough to wish to convert his deficit into a draught payable in immortality - that I understand well enough. That is to say, I for my part do not understand it; for to me a woman has sufficient intrinsic value. I assure every woman of this, it is the truth; and at the same time it is certain that I am the only one who is not deceived by this truth. As to whether a despoiled woman is worth less than man - about that I find no information in my price list. I do not pick flowers already broken; I leave them to the married men to use for Shrove-tide decoration. Whether e.g. Edward wishes to consider the matter again, and again fall in love with Cordelia, or simply repeat the affair in his reflection - that is his own business. Why should I concern myself with other peoples' affairs! I explained to her at an earlier time what I thought of her; and, in truth, she convinced me, convinced me to my absolute satisfaction, that my gallantry was well applied.

I concede, I have conceded. If I should meet with another Cordelia, why then I shall enact a comedy "Ring number 2." (A comedy which employed a moderate popularity in Copenhagen) But you are unhappy lovers and have conspired together and are worse deceived than the girls, notwithstanding that you are richly endowed by nature. But decisiveness - the decisiveness of desire - is the most essential thing in life. Our young friend will always remain an onlooker. Victor is an unpractical enthusiast, Constantine has acquired his good sense at too great a cost; and the fashion dealer is a madman. Stuff and nonsense! With all four of you busy about one girl, nothing would come of it.

Let one have enthusiasm enough to idealize, taste enough to join in the clinking of glasses at the festive board of enjoyment, sense enough to break off - to break off absolutely, as does Death, madness enough to wish to enjoy all over again - if you have all that you will be the favorite of gods and girls. But of what avail to speak here? I do not intend to make proselytes. Neither is this the place for that. To be sure, I love wine; to be sure, I love the abundance of a banquet - all that is good; but let a girl be my company, and then I shall be eloquent. Let then Constantine have my thanks for the banquet, and the wine, and the excellent appointments - the speeches, however, were but indifferent. But in order that things shall have a better ending I shall now pronounce a eulogy on woman.

Just as he who is to speak in praise of the divinity must be inspired by the divinity to speak worthily, and must therefore be taught by the divinity as to what he shall say, likewise he who would speak of woman. For woman, even less than the divinity, is a mere figment of man's brain, a daydream, or a notion that occurs to one and which one may argue about *pro et contra*. Nay, one learns from woman alone what to say of her. And the more teachers one has had, the better. The first time one is a disciple; the next time one is already over the chief difficulties, just as one learns in formal and learned disputations how to use the last opponent's compliments against a new opponent. Nevertheless, nothing is lost. For as little as a kiss is a mere sample of good things, and as little as an embrace is an exertion, just as little is this experience exhaustive. In fact it is essentially different from the mathematical proof of a theorem, which remains ever the same, even though other letters be substituted. This method is one befitting mathematics and ghosts, but not love and women, because each is a new proof, corroborating the truth of the theorem in a different manner. It is my joy that, far from being less perfect than man, the female sex is, on the contrary, the more perfect. I shall, however, clothe my speech in a myth; and I shall exult, on woman's account whom you have so unjustly maligned, if my speech pronounce judgment on your souls, if the enjoyment of her beckon you only to flee you, as did the fruits from Tantalus; because you have fled, and thereby insulted, woman. Only thus, forsooth, may she be insulted, even though she is far from being ruffled by that, and though punishment instantly falls on him who had the audacity to do so. I, however, insult no one. That is but a notion of married men, and a slander; whereas, in reality, I respect her more highly than does the man she is married to.

Originally there was but one sex, so the Greeks relate, and that was man's. Splendidly endowed he was, so he did honor to the gods - so splendidly endowed that the same happened to them as sometimes happens to a poet who has expended all his energy on a poetic invention: they grew jealous of man. Ay, what is worse, they feared that he would not willingly bow under their yoke; they feared, though with small reason, that he might cause their very heaven to totter. Thus they had raised up a power they scarcely held themselves able to curb. Then there was anxiety and alarm in the council of the gods. Much had they lavished in their generosity on the creation of man; but all must be risked now, for reason of bitter necessity; for all was at stake - so the gods believed - and recalled he could not be, as a poet may recall his invention. And by force he could not be subdued, or else the gods themselves could have done so; but precisely of that they despaired. He would have to be caught and subdued, then, by a power weaker than his own and yet stronger - one strong enough to compel him. What a marvelous power this would have to be! However, necessity teaches even the gods to surpass themselves in inventiveness. They sought and they found. That power was woman, the marvel of creation, even in the eyes of the gods a greater marvel than man - a discovery which the gods in their naivete could not help but applaud themselves for. What more can be said in her praise than that she was able to accomplish what even the gods did not believe themselves able to do;

and what more can be said in her praise than that she did accomplish it! But how marvelous a creation must be hers to have accomplished it.

It was a ruse of the gods. Cunningly the enchantress was fashioned, for no sooner had she bewitched man than she changed and caught him in all the circumstantialities of existence. It was that the gods had desired. But what, pray, can be more delicious, or more entrancing and bewitching, than what the gods themselves contrived, when battling for their supremacy, as the only means of luring man? And most assuredly it is so, for woman is the only, and the most seductive, power in heaven and on earth. When compared with her, in this sense, man will indeed be found to be exceedingly imperfect.

And the strategem of the gods was crowned with success, but not always. There have existed at all times some men - a few - who have detected the deception. They perceive well enough woman's loveliness - more keenly, indeed, than the others - but they also suspect the real state of affairs. I call them erotic natures and count myself among them. Men call them seducers; woman has no name for them - such persons are to her unnameable. These erotic natures are the truly fortunate ones. They live more luxuriously than do the very gods, for they regale themselves with food more delectable than ambrosia, and they drink what is more delicious than nectar; they eat the most seductive invention of the gods' most ingenious thought; they are ever eating dainties set for a bait - ah, incomparable delight, ah, blissful fare - they are ever eating but the dainties set for a bait; and they are never caught. All other men greedily seize and devour it, like bumpkins eating their cabbage, and are caught. Only the erotic nature fully appreciates the dainties set out for bait - he prizes them infinitely. Woman divines this, and for that reason there is a secret understanding between him and her. But he knows also that she is a bait, and that secret he keeps to himself.

That nothing more marvelous, nothing more delicious, nothing more seductive than woman can be devised, for that vouch the gods and their pressing need which heightened their powers of invention; for that vouches also the fact they risked all and, in shaping her, moved heaven and earth.

I now forsake the myth. The conception "man" corresponds to his "idea." I can, therefore, if necessary, think of an individual man as existing. The idea of woman, on the other hand, is so general than no one single woman is able to express it completely. She is not contemporaneous with man (and hence of less noble origin), but a later creation, though more perfect than he. Whether now the gods took some part from him whilst he slept, from fear of waking him by taking too much, or whether they bisected him and made woman out of the one half - at any rate it was man who was partitioned. Hence she is the equal of man only after this partition. She is a delusion and a snare, but is so only afterward, and for him who is deluded. She is finiteness incarnate; but in her first stage she is finiteness raised to the highest degree in the deceptive infinitude of all divine and human illusions. As yet, there is no deception - one instant longer, and one is deceived.

She is finiteness, and as such she is a collective: one woman represents all women. Only the erotic nature comprehends this and therefore knows how to love many without ever being deceived, sipping the while all the delights the cunning gods were able to prepare. For this reason, as I said, woman cannot be fully expressed by one formula, but is, rather, an infinitude of finalities. He who wishes to think her "idea" will have the same experience as he who gazes on a sea of nebulous shapes which ever form anew, or as he who is dazed by looking over the waves whose foamy crests ever mock one's vision; for her "idea" is but the workshop of possibilities. And to the erotic nature these possibilities are the everlasting reason for his worship.

So the gods created her delicate and ethereal as if out of the mists of the summer night, yet goodly like ripe fruit; light like a bird, though the repository of what attracts all the world - light because the play of the forces is harmoniously balanced in the invisible center of a negative relation; slender in growth, with definite lines, yet her body sinuous with beautiful curves; perfect, yet ever appearing as if completed but now; cool, delicious, and

refreshing like new-fallen snow, yet blushing in coy transparency; happy like some pleasantry which makes one forget all one's sorrow; soothing as being the end of desire, and satisfying in herself being the stimulus of desire. And the gods had calculated that man, when first beholding her, would be amazed, as one who sees himself, though familiar with that sight - would stand in amaze as one who sees himself in the splendor of perfection - would stand in amaze as one beholds what he did never dream he would, yet beholds what, it would seem, ought to have occurred to him before - sees what is essential to life and yet gazes on it as being the very mystery of existence. It is precisely this contradiction in his admiration which nurses desire to life, while this same admiration urges him ever nearer, so that he cannot desist from believing himself familiar with the sight, without really daring to approach, even though he cannot desist from desiring.

When the gods had thus planned her form, they were seized with fear lest they might not have the wherewithal to give it existence; but what they feared even more was herself. For they dared not let her know how beautiful she was, apprehensive of having someone in the secret who might spoil their ruse. Then was the crowning touch given to their wondrous creation: they made her faultless; but they concealed all this from her in the nescience of her innocence and concealed it doubly from her in the impenetrable mystery of her modesty. Now she was perfect, and victory certain. Inviting she had been before, but now doubly so through her shyness, and urging man on through her shrinking from him, and irresistible through herself offering resistance. The gods were jubilant. And no allurement has ever been devised in the world so great as is woman, and no allurement is as compelling as is innocence, and no temptation is as ensnaring as is modesty, and no deception is as matchless as is woman. She is unaware of anything, still her modesty is instinctive divination. She is distinct from man, and the separating wall of modesty parting them is more decisive than Aladdin's sword separating him from Gulnare; and yet, when like Pyramus (in Ovid's "Metamorphoses" IV) he puts his head to this dividing wall of modesty, the erotic nature will perceive all pleasures of desire divined within as from afar.

Thus does woman tempt. Men are wont to set forth the most precious things they possess as a delectation for the gods; nothing less will do. Thus is woman a showbread. The gods knew of naught comparable to her. She exists, she is present, she is with us, close by; and yet she is removed from us to an infinite distance when concealed in her modesty - until she herself betrays her hiding place, she knows not how: it is not she herself, it is life which informs on her. Roguish she is like a child who, in playing peeps forth from his hiding place; yet her roguishness is inexplicable, for she does not know of it herself, she is ever mysterious - mysterious when she casts down her eyes, mysterious when she sends forth the messengers of her glance which no thought, let alone any word, is able to follow. And yet is the eye the "interpreter" of the soul! What, then, is the explanation of this mystery if the interpreter too is unintelligible? Calm she is like the hushed stillness of eventide, when not a leaf stirs; calm like a consciousness as yet unaware of aught. Her heartbeats are as regular as if life were not present; and yet the erotic nature, listening with his stethoscopically practiced ear, detects the dithyrambic pulsing of desire sounding along unbeknown. Careless she is like the blowing of the wind, content like the profound ocean, and yet full of longing like a thing biding its explanation. My friends! My mind is softened, indescribably softened. I comprehend that also my life expresses an idea, even if you do not comprehend me. I too have discovered the secret of existence; I too serve a divine idea - and, assuredly, I do not serve it for nothing. If woman is a ruse of the gods, this means that she is to be seduced; and if woman is not an "idea," the true inference is that the erotic nature wishes to love as many of them as possible.

What a luxury it is to relish the ruse without being duped, only the erotic nature comprehends. And how blissful it is to be seduced, woman alone knows. I know that from woman, even though I never yet allowed any one of them time to explain it to me, but re-asserted my independence, serving the idea by a break as sudden as that caused by death; for a bride and a break are to one another like female and male. Only woman is aware of this, and she is aware of it together with her seducer. No married man will ever grasp this. Nor does she ever speak with him about it. She resigns herself to her fate, she knows that it must be so and that she can be seduced only once. For this reason she never really bears malice against the man who seduced her. That is to say, if he really did seduce

her and thus expressed the idea. Broken marriage vows and that kind of thing are, of course, nonsense and no seduction. Indeed, it is by no means so great a misfortune for a woman to be seduced. in fact, it is a piece of good fortune for her. An excellently seduced girl may make an excellent wife. If I myself were not fit to be a seducer - however deeply I feel my inferior qualifications in this respect - if I chose to be a married man, I should always choose a girl already seduced, so that I would not have to begin my marriage by seducing my wife. Marriage, to be sure, also expresses an idea; but in relation to the idea of marriage *that* quality is altogether immaterial which is the absolutely essential condition for *my* idea. Therefore, a marriage ought never to be planned to begin as though it were the beginning of a story of seduction. So much is sure: there is a seducer for every woman. Happy is she whose good fortune it is to meet just him.

Through marriage, on the other hand, the gods win their victory. In it the once seduced maiden walks through life by the side of her husband, looking back at times, full of longing, resigned to her fate, until she reaches the limit of life. She dies; but not in the same sense as man dies. She is volatilized and resolved into that mysterious primal element of which the gods formed her - she disappears like a dream, like an impermanent shape whose hour is past. For what is woman but a dream, and the highest reality withal! Thus does the erotic nature comprehend her, leading her, and being led by her true existence, being an illusion. Through her husband, on the other hand, she becomes a creature of this world, and he through her.

Marvelous nature! If I did not admire thee, a woman would teach me; for truly she is the *venerabile* of life. Splendidly didst thou fashion her, but more splendidly still in that thou never didst fashion one woman like another. In man, the essential *is* the essential, and insofar always alike; but in woman the adventitious is the essential, and is thus an inexhaustible source of differences. Brief is her splendor; but quickly the pain is forgotten, too, even as though I had never felt it, when the same splendor is proffered me anew. It is true, I too am aware of the unbeautiful which may appear in her thereafter; but she is not thus with her seducer.

On Women - by Arthur Schopenhauer, 1851

. · 19 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

These few words of Jouy, *Sans les femmes le commencement de notre vie seroit privé de secours, le milieu de plaisirs et la fin de consolation*, more exactly express, in my opinion, the true praise of woman than Schiller's poem, *Würde der Frauen*, which is the fruit of much careful thought and impressive because of its antithesis and use of contrast. The same thing is more pathetically expressed by Byron in *Sardanapalus*, Act i, Sc. 2:—

"The very first
Of human life must spring from woman's breast,
Your first small words are taught you from her lips,
Your first tears quench'd by her, and your last sighs
Too often breathed out in a woman's hearing,
When men have shrunk from the ignoble care
Of watching the last hour of him who led them."

Both passages show the right point of view for the appreciation of women.

One need only look at a woman's shape to discover that she is not intended for either too much mental or too much physical work. She pays the debt of life not by what she does but by what she suffers — by the pains of child-bearing, care for the child, and by subjection to man, to whom she should be a patient and cheerful companion. The greatest sorrows and joys or great exhibition of strength are not assigned to her; her life should flow more quietly, more gently, and less obtrusively than man's, without her being essentially happier or unhappier.

Women are directly adapted to act as the nurses and educators of our early childhood, for the simple reason that they themselves are childish, foolish, and short-sighted — in a word, are big children all their lives, something intermediate between the child and the man, who is a man in the strict sense of the word. Consider how a young girl will toy day after day with a child, dance with it and sing to it; and then consider what a man, with the very best intentions in the world, could do in her place.

With girls, Nature has had in view what is called in a dramatic sense a "striking effect," for she endows them for a few years with a richness of beauty and a, fulness of charm at the expense of the rest of their lives; so that they may during these years ensnare the fantasy of a man to such a degree as to make him rush into taking the honourable care of them, in some kind of form, for a lifetime — a step which would not seem sufficiently justified if he only considered the matter. Accordingly, Nature has furnished woman, as she has the rest of her creatures, with the weapons and implements necessary for the protection of her existence and for just the length of time that they will be of service to her; so that Nature has proceeded here with her usual economy. Just as the female ant after coition loses her wings, which then become superfluous, nay, dangerous for breeding purposes, so for the most part does a woman lose her beauty after giving birth to one or two children; and probably for the same reasons.

Then again we find that young girls in their hearts regard their domestic or other affairs as secondary things, if not as a mere jest. Love, conquests, and all that these include, such as dressing, dancing, and so on, they give their serious attention.

The nobler and more perfect a thing is, the later and slower is it in reaching maturity. Man reaches the maturity of his reasoning and mental faculties scarcely before he is eight-and-twenty; woman when she is eighteen; but hers is reason of very narrow limitations. This is why women remain children all their lives, for they always see only what is near at hand, cling to the present, take the appearance of a thing for reality, and prefer trifling matters to the most

important. It is by virtue of man's reasoning powers that he does not live in the present only, like the brute, but observes and ponders over the past and future; and from this spring discretion, care, and that anxiety which we so frequently notice in people. The advantages, as well as the disadvantages, that this entails, make woman, in consequence of her weaker reasoning powers, less of a partaker in them. Moreover, she is intellectually short-sighted, for although her intuitive understanding quickly perceives what is near to her, on the other hand her circle of vision is limited and does not embrace anything that is remote; hence everything that is absent or past, or in the future, affects women in a less degree than men. This is why they have greater inclination for extravagance, which sometimes borders on madness. Women in their hearts think that men are intended to earn money so that they may spend it, if possible during their husband's lifetime, but at any rate after his death.

As soon as he has given them his earnings on which to keep house they are strengthened in this belief. Although all this entails many disadvantages, yet it has this advantage — that a woman lives more in the present than a man, and that she enjoys it more keenly if it is at all bearable. This is the origin of that cheerfulness which is peculiar to woman and makes her fit to divert man, and in case of need, to console him when he is weighed down by cares. To consult women in matters of difficulty, as the Germans used to do in old times, is by no means a matter to be overlooked; for their way of grasping a thing is quite different from ours, chiefly because they like the shortest way to the point, and usually keep their attention fixed upon what lies nearest; while we, as a rule, see beyond it, for the simple reason that it lies under our nose; it then becomes necessary for us to be brought back to the thing in order to obtain a near and simple view. This is why women are more sober in their judgment than we, and why they see nothing more in things than is really there; while we, if our passions are roused, slightly exaggerate or add to our imagination.

It is because women's reasoning powers are weaker that they show more sympathy for the unfortunate than men, and consequently take a kindlier interest in them. On the other hand, women are inferior to men in matters of justice, honesty, and conscientiousness. Again, because their reasoning faculty is weak, things clearly visible and real, and belonging to the present, exercise a power over them which is rarely counteracted by abstract thoughts, fixed maxims, or firm resolutions, in general, by regard for the past and future or by consideration for what is absent and remote. Accordingly they have the first and principal qualities of virtue, but they lack the secondary qualities which are often a necessary instrument in developing it. Women may be compared in this respect to an organism that has a liver but no gall-bladder.(9) So that it will be found that the fundamental fault in the character of women is that they have no *"sense of justice."* This arises from their deficiency in the power of reasoning already referred to, and reflection, but is also partly due to the fact that Nature has not destined them, as the weaker sex, to be dependent on strength but on cunning; this is why they are instinctively crafty, and have an ineradicable tendency to lie. For as lions are furnished with claws and teeth, elephants with tusks, boars with fangs, bulls with horns, and the cuttlefish with its dark, inky fluid, so Nature has provided woman for her protection and defence with the faculty of dissimulation, and all the power which Nature has given to man in the form of bodily strength and reason has been conferred on woman in this form. Hence, dissimulation is innate in woman and almost as characteristic of the very stupid as of the clever. Accordingly, it is as natural for women to dissemble at every opportunity as it is for those animals to turn to their weapons when they are attacked; and they feel in doing so that in a certain measure they are only making use of their rights. Therefore a woman who is perfectly truthful and does not dissemble is perhaps an impossibility. This is why they see through dissimulation in others so easily; therefore it is not advisable to attempt it with them. From the fundamental defect that has been stated, and all that it involves, spring falseness, faithlessness, treachery, ungratefulness, and so on. In a court of justice women are more often found guilty of perjury than men. It is indeed to be generally questioned whether they should be allowed to take an oath at all. From time to time there are repeated cases everywhere of ladies, who want for nothing, secretly pocketing and taking away things from shop counters.

Nature has made it the calling of the young, strong, and handsome men to look after the propagation of the human race; so that the species may not degenerate. This is the firm will of Nature, and it finds its expression in the

passions of women. This law surpasses all others in both age and power. Woe then to the man who sets up rights and interests in such a way as to make them stand in the way of it; for whatever he may do or say, they will, at the first significant onset, be unmercifully annihilated. For the secret, unformulated, nay, unconscious but innate moral of woman is: *We are justified in deceiving those who, because they care a little for us ,— that is to say for the individual ,— imagine they have obtained rights over the species. The constitution, and consequently the welfare of the species, have been put into our hands and entrusted to our care through the medium of the next generation which proceeds from us; let us fulfil our duties conscientiously.*

But women are by no means conscious of this leading principle *in abstracto*, they are only conscious of it *in concreto*, and have no other way of expressing it than in the manner in which they act when the opportunity arrives. So that their conscience does not trouble them so much as we imagine, for in the darkest depths of their hearts they are conscious that in violating their duty towards the individual they have all the better fulfilled it towards the species, whose claim upon them is infinitely greater. (A fuller explanation of this matter may be found in vol. ii., ch. 44, in my chief work, *Die Welt als Wille und Vorstellung*.)

Because women in truth exist entirely for the propagation of the race, and their destiny ends here, they live more for the species than for the individual, and in their hearts take the affairs of the species more seriously than those of the individual. This gives to their whole being and character a certain frivolousness, and altogether a certain tendency which is fundamentally different from that of man; and this it is which develops that discord in married life which is so prevalent and almost the normal state.

It is natural for a feeling of mere indifference to exist between men, but between women it is actual enmity. This is due perhaps to the fact that *odium figulinum* in the case of men, is limited to their everyday affairs, but with women embraces the whole sex; since they have only one kind of business. Even when they meet in the street, they look at each other like Guelphs and Ghibellines. And it is quite evident when two women first make each other's acquaintance that they exhibit more constraint and dissimulation than two men placed in similar circumstances. This is why an exchange of compliments between two women is much more ridiculous than between two men. Further, while a man will, as a rule, address others, even those inferior to himself, with a certain feeling of consideration and humanity, it is unbearable to see how proudly and disdainfully a lady of rank will, for the most part, behave towards one who is in a lower rank (not employed in her service) when she speaks to her. This may be because differences of rank are much more precarious with women than with us, and consequently more quickly change their line of conduct and elevate them, or because while a hundred things must be weighed in our case, there is only one to be weighed in theirs, namely, with which man they have found favour; and again, because of the one-sided nature of their vocation they stand in closer relationship to each other than men do; and so it is they try to render prominent the differences of rank.

It is only the man whose intellect is clouded by his sexual instinct that could give that stunted, narrow-shouldered, broad-hipped, and short-legged race the name of *the fair sex*; for the entire beauty of the sex is based on this instinct. One would be more justified in calling them the *unaesthetic sex* than the beautiful. Neither for music, nor for poetry, nor for fine art have they any real or true sense and susceptibility, and it is mere mockery on their part, in their desire to please, if they affect any such thing.

This makes them incapable of taking a purely objective interest in anything, and the reason for it is, I fancy, as follows. A man strives to get *direct* mastery over things either by understanding them or by compulsion. But a woman is always and everywhere driven to *indirect* mastery, namely through a man; all her *direct* mastery being limited to him alone. Therefore it lies in woman's nature to look upon everything only as a means for winning man, and her interest in anything else is always a simulated one, a mere roundabout way to gain her ends, consisting of coquetry and pretence. Hence Rousseau said, *Les femmes, en général, n'aiment aucun art, ne se connoissent à aucun et n'ont aucun génie* (Lettre à d'Alembert, note xx.). Every one who can see through a sham must have found this to

be the case. One need only watch the way they behave at a concert, the opera, or the play; the childish simplicity, for instance, with which they keep on chattering during the finest passages in the greatest masterpieces. If it is true that the Greeks forbade women to go to the play, they acted in a right way; for they would at any rate be able to hear something. In our day it would be more appropriate to substitute *taceat mulier in theatro for taceat mulier in ecclesia*; and this might perhaps be put up in big letters on the curtain.

Nothing different can be expected of women if it is borne in mind that the most eminent of the whole sex have never accomplished anything in the fine arts that is really great, genuine, and original, or given to the world any kind of work of permanent value. This is most striking in regard to painting, the technique of which is as much within their reach as within ours; this is why they pursue it so industriously. Still, they have not a single great painting to show, for the simple reason that they lack that objectivity of mind which is precisely what is so directly necessary in painting. They always stick to what is subjective. For this reason, ordinary women have no susceptibility for painting at all: for *natura non facet saltum*. And Huarte, in his book which has been famous for three hundred years, *Examen de ingenios para las scienzias*, contends that women do not possess the higher capacities. Individual and partial exceptions do not alter the matter; women are and remain, taken altogether, the most thorough and incurable philistines; and because of the extremely absurd arrangement which allows them to share the position and title of their husbands they are a constant stimulus to his *ignoble* ambitions. And further, it is because they are philistines that modern society, to which they give the tone and where they have sway, has become corrupted. As regards their position, one should be guided by Napoleon's maxim, *Les femmes n'ont pas de rang*; and regarding them in other things, Chamfort says very truly: *Elles sont faites pour commercer avec nos faiblesses avec notre folie, mais non avec notre raison. Il existe entre elles et les hommes des sympathies d'épiderme et très-peu de sympathies d'esprit d'âme et de caractère.* They are the *sexus sequior*, the second sex in every respect, therefore their weaknesses should be spared, but to treat women with extreme reverence is ridiculous, and lowers us in their own eyes. When nature divided the human race into two parts, she did not cut it exactly through the middle! The difference between the positive and negative poles, according to polarity, is not merely qualitative but also quantitative. And it was in this light that the ancients and people of the East regarded woman; they recognised her true position better than we, with our old French ideas of gallantry and absurd veneration, that highest product of Christian-Teutonic stupidity. These ideas have only served to make them arrogant and imperious, to such an extent as to remind one at times of the holy apes in Benares, who, in the consciousness of their holiness and inviolability, think they can do anything and everything they please.

In the West, the woman, that is to say the "lady," finds herself in a *fausse position*; for woman, rightly named by the ancients *sexus sequior*, is by no means fit to be the object of our honour and veneration, or to hold her head higher than man and to have the same rights as he. The consequences of this *fausse position* are sufficiently clear. Accordingly, it would be a very desirable thing if this Number Two of the human race in Europe were assigned her natural position, and the lady-grievance got rid of, which is not only ridiculed by the whole of Asia, but would have been equally ridiculed by Greece and Rome. The result of this would be that the condition of our social, civil, and political affairs would be incalculably improved. The Salic law would be unnecessary; it would be a superfluous truism. The European lady, strictly speaking, is a creature who should not exist at all; but there ought to be housekeepers, and young girls who hope to become such; and they should be brought up not to be arrogant, but to be domesticated and submissive. It is exactly because there are *ladies* in Europe that women of a lower standing, that is to say, the greater majority of the sex, are much more unhappy than they are in the East. Even Lord Byron says (*Letters and Papers*, by Thomas Moore, vol. ii. p. 399), *Thought of the state of women under the ancient Greeks — convenient enough. Present state, a remnant of the barbarism of the chivalric and feudal ages — artificial and unnatural. They ought to mind home — and be well fed and clothed — but not mixed in society. Well educated, too, in religion — but to read neither poetry nor politics — nothing but books of piety and cookery. Music — drawing — dancing — also a little gardening and ploughing now and then. I have seen them mending the roads in Epirus with good success. Why not, as well as hay-making and milking?*

In our part of the world, where monogamy is in force, to marry means to halve one's rights and to double one's duties. When the laws granted woman the same rights as man, they should also have given her a masculine power of reason. On the contrary, just as the privileges and honours which the laws decree to women surpass what Nature has meted out to them, so is there a proportional decrease in the number of women who really share these privileges; therefore the remainder are deprived of their natural rights in so far as the others have been given more than Nature accords.

For the unnatural position of privilege which the institution of monogamy, and the laws of marriage which accompany it, assign to the woman, whereby she is regarded throughout as a full equivalent of the man, which she is not by any means, cause intelligent and prudent men to reflect a great deal before they make so great a sacrifice and consent to so unfair an arrangement. Therefore, whilst among polygamous nations every woman finds maintenance, where monogamy exists the number of married women is limited, and a countless number of women who are without support remain over; those in the upper classes vegetate as useless old maids, those in the lower are reduced to very hard work of a distasteful nature, or become prostitutes, and lead a life which is as joyless as it is void of honour. But under such circumstances they become a necessity to the masculine sex; so that their position is openly recognised as a special means for protecting from seduction those other women favoured by fate either to have found husbands, or who hope to find them. In London alone there are 80,000 prostitutes. Then what are these women who have come too quickly to this most terrible end but human sacrifices on the altar of monogamy? The women here referred to and who are placed in this wretched position are the inevitable counterbalance to the European lady, with her pretensions and arrogance. Hence polygamy is a real benefit to the female sex, taking it as a whole. And, on the other hand, there is no reason why a man whose wife suffers from chronic illness, or remains barren, or has gradually become too old for him, should not take a second. Many people become converts to Mormonism for the precise reasons that they condemn the unnatural institution of monogamy. The conferring of unnatural rights upon women has imposed unnatural duties upon them, the violation of which, however, makes them unhappy. For example, many a man thinks marriage unadvisable as far as his social standing and monetary position are concerned, unless he contracts a brilliant match. He will then wish to win a woman of his own choice under different conditions, namely, under those which will render safe her future and that of her children. Be the conditions ever so just, reasonable, and adequate, and she consents by giving up those undue privileges which marriage, as the basis of civil society, alone can bestow, she must to a certain extent lose her honour and lead a life of loneliness; since human nature makes us dependent on the opinion of others in a way that is completely out of proportion to its value. While, if the woman does not consent, she runs the risk of being compelled to marry a man she dislikes, or of shrivelling up into an old maid; for the time allotted to her to find a home is very short. In view of this side of the institution of monogamy, Thomasius's profoundly learned treatise, de Concubinatu, is well worth reading, for it shows that, among all nations, and in all ages, down to the Lutheran Reformation, concubinage was allowed, nay, that it was an institution, in a certain measure even recognised by law and associated with no dishonour. And it held this position until the Lutheran Reformation, when it was recognised as another means for justifying the marriage of the clergy; whereupon the Catholic party did not dare to remain behindhand in the matter.

It is useless to argue about polygamy, it must be taken as a fact existing everywhere, *the mere regulation* of which is the problem to be solved. Where are there, then, any real monogamists? We all live, at any rate for a time, and the majority of us always, in polygamy. Consequently, as each man needs many women, nothing is more just than to let him, nay, make it incumbent upon him to provide for many women. By this means woman will be brought back to her proper and natural place as a subordinate being, and *the lady,* that monster of European civilisation and Christian-Teutonic stupidity, with her ridiculous claim to respect and veneration, will no longer exist; there will still be women, but no *unhappy women*, of whom Europe is at present full. The Mormons' standpoint is right.

In India no woman is ever independent, but each one stands under the control of her father or her husband, or brother or son, in accordance with the law of Manu.

It is certainly a revolting idea that widows should sacrifice themselves on their husband's dead body; but it is also revolting that the money which the husband has earned by working diligently for all his life, in the hope that he was working for his children, should be wasted on her paramours. *Medium tenuere beati.* The first love of a mother, as that of animals and men, is purely *instinctive*, and consequently ceases when the child is no longer physically helpless. After that, the first love should be reinstated by a love based on habit and reason; but this often does not appear, especially where the mother has not loved the father. The love of a father for his children is of a different nature and more sincere; it is founded on a recognition of his own inner self in the child, and is therefore metaphysical in its origin.

In almost every nation, both of the new and old world, and even among the Hottentots, property is inherited by the male descendants alone; it is only in Europe that one has departed from this. That the property which men have with difficulty acquired by long-continued struggling and hard work should afterwards come into the hands of women, who, in their want of reason, either squander it within a short time or otherwise waste it, is an injustice as great as it is common, and it should be prevented by limiting the right of women to inherit. It seems to me that it would be a better arrangement if women, be they widows or daughters, only inherited the money for life secured by mortgage, but not the property itself or the capital, unless there lacked male descendants. It is men who make the money, and not women; therefore women are neither justified in having unconditional possession of it nor capable of administrating it. Women should never have the free disposition of wealth, strictly so-called, which they may inherit, such as capital, houses, and estates. They need a guardian always; therefore they should not have the guardianship of their children under any circumstances whatever. The vanity of women, even if it should not be greater than that of men, has this evil in it, that it is directed on material things — that is to say, on their personal beauty and then on tinsel, pomp, and show. This is why they are in their right element in society. This it is which makes them inclined to be extravagant , especially since they possess little reasoning power. Accordingly, an ancient writer says, [Greek: Gunae to synolon esti dapanaeron physei].(10) Men's vanity, on the other hand, is often directed on non-material advantages, such as intellect, learning, courage, and the like. Aristotle explains in the Politics(11) the great disadvantages which the Spartans brought upon themselves by granting too much to their women, by allowing them the right of inheritance and dowry, and a great amount of freedom; and how this contributed greatly to the fall of Sparta. May it not be that the influence of women in France, which has been increasing since Louis XIII.'s time, was to blame for that gradual corruption of the court and government which led to the first Revolution, of which all subsequent disturbances have been the result? In any case, the false position of the female sex, so conspicuously exposed by the existence of the "lady," is a fundamental defect in our social condition, and this defect, proceeding from the very heart of it, must extend its harmful influence in every direction. That woman is by nature intended to obey is shown by the fact that every woman who is placed in the unnatural position of absolute independence at once attaches herself to some kind of man, by whom she is controlled and governed; this is because she requires a master. If she, is young, the man is a lover; if she is old, a priest.

---

9. Let me refer to what I have said in my treatise on The Foundation of Morals , §71.

10. Brunck's Gnomici poetae graeci v. 115.

11. Bk. I., ch. 9.

Woman/Man -- From Kierkegaard's Journals

. · 19 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

- The more a body is organically developed, the more dreadful is the decay. When grass rots, there is a fragrance. When an animal rots, it stinks. A man's perdition is dreadful, more dreadful even than a woman's. Is this a proof that man is superior to woman?

- . . . she is more sensate than man; for were she more spiritual she could never have her culmination point in another. Spirit is the true independent.

.

Of course every religious view, like every more profound philosophical view, sees woman, despite this difference, as essentially identical with man; but it is not foolish enough to forget for that reason the truth of the difference, aesthetically and ethically understood.

- The whole plan of "A Thousand and One Nights" is very profound. This battle between masculinity and femininity, the fact that femininity conquers by means of her storytelling, her persuasiveness. In the future the Sultan, who has discovered the basic unfaithfulness of all women, intends to have every woman put to death after one single night. Then Scheherazade offers to save the sex (since the Sultan demands one every night it must end rather soon with the eradication of the women) and she saves the sex by telling stories, which means: go with her and you can never get rid of her. Fundamentally there is a terrible tenacity: No man could go on living this way for three years facing the possibility of death - but a woman can - if only she gets permission to tell stories. A woman does not have the strength for a break or finds it difficult to make such a decision, but she is able to conquer by means of your not being able to get rid of her.

- Woman's reflection is almost overpowering to her; this is why it is so dangerous for a woman to reflect. A woman's reflection usually goes like this: if she has won on one point or another, she is so overcome herself that she cannot avoid gazing at her victory - and then she stumbles.

.

The man is more essentially character; and character consists not so much in winning as in continuing after having won, keeping in character. The woman endures something and counts on the approaching moment when she can take a deep breath. This moment is precisely the danger. Character is essentially continuity.

- It was Eve who seduced the man - in compensation there is no undertaking more appealing to a woman than to become loved by someone who has gone astray and who now, in loving her, will let himself be led along the right path. This appeals to a woman so much that she is not infrequently deceived, because such a person puts everything over on her - and she believes everything - perhaps also because the thought of being the man's savior is so very satisfying to her.

- For woman the temptation to misuse cunning (for example, to deceive) corresponds to man's temptation to misuse power. The fact that the woman's guilt is always more strongly emphasized than the man's is basically an indirect compliment to the woman, an admission of the degree to which she is the stronger sex in cunning.

- In the New Testament the matter is put this way: "Let all those trivialities, those egotistical trivialities with which men generally fill their lives - job, marriage, having children, getting to be somebody in the world - let them all go, break with them completely, and let your life be dedicated to loving God, to being sacrificed for the human race. Be salt!" This is what our Lord Jesus Christ calls Christianity. When a man is intending to get married, the invitation (see the Gospel) comes to him: Let it go - and become a Christian, etc.

Now Christianity has become the very opposite. It has become a divine blessing upon all the trivialities and putterings of finitude and the temporal enjoyment of life. The lovers summon the clergymen - he blesses them - this is Christianity, in spite of Luke 20:34-35 (which is a suitable text for a wedding). If the buyer of the six pairs of oxen were to summon a clergyman and pay him ten dollars to bless him and the oxen before he went out to test them, he would be considered an extraordinary, incomparable Christian worthy of adoration.

Of course it is Protestantism in particular which is total nonsense.

This is why Protestantism has elevated woman so high, more accurately, to first place. Everything revolves around woman. Charming, but then one can also be sure that everything revolves around chatter, trivialities, and in a refined way, around sexual relations. To some extent woman may be said to have ennobled social life in that we do not fight any more or drink and swear as did the old heroes - but refined lust or a carefully concealed, refined allusion to sexual relations - that is what has ennobled social life - Christianity!!

This is how some of my pseudonyms have portrayed it and which I now also find Schopenhauer rages against in his own way. Woman is not to blame, but she is determined to humble man and to make him mediocre. Existence is also a sovereign and like every sovereign knows very well how to best maintain its regime - specifically by humbling and breaking those over whom they rule.

A woman is proficient along this line when a man gets involved with her too seriously. She contributes the first and the most to his humbling. Generally it can be assumed that every married man is secretly mortified because he feels that he has been made a fool of when all this ravishing talk from the courting days, all this about Julie being the paragon of loveliness and beauty, and getting to possess her is the highest bliss turns out to be - a false alarm. This is the first knock the husband gets, but this in itself is not insignificant, because it is hard for a man to admit that he has been fooled, that both he and Julie must have been crazy. The next undermining is that the husband and Julie (who incidentally has had the same experience on her side) agree to keep a stiff upper lip and to hide things from others; they agree to tell the lie that marriage is the true happiness and that they especially are happy.

When we have settled this, providence knows that this fellow is easy to control, that he is one of those who will make no conquests in the world of ideas. Constantly lying like this is extremely degrading to the man. It is different for a woman; she is once and for all a born virtuoso in lying, is really never happy without a little lying, just as it is *a priori* certain that wherever a woman is there is a little lying. In a sense she is innocent in this; she cannot help it. It is not possible to get angry about it: on the contrary, we find it very attractive. She is in the power of a natural disposition which uses her with extreme cunning to weaken the man.

Thus in the forward march of history - I mean marriage - there come along with woman all the follies of finitude, this puttering around, and an egotism peculiar to woman. As wife, as mother - well, here is an egotism of which the man has no intimation. Society has licensed it under the name of love - good heavens, no, it is the most powerful egotism in which woman most certainly does not love herself foremost but through (egotistically) loving her own she loves herself. From then on ideas, and every higher infinite striving likewise, whistle in vain for the man - yes, even if our Lord and his angels tried to move him, it would do no good, because the egotism of the mother is such an enormous power that she can hold him fast.

Woman has a dangerous rapport with finitude in a way quite different from man. She is, as The Seducer says, a mystification (see "The Banquet"); there is a moment in her life when she deceptively appears to be infinitude itself - and that is when man is captured. And as a wife she is quite simply - finitude.

- What the judge in the second part of "Either/Or" says in his way about women is to be expected from a married man who, ethically inspired, champions marriage.

Woman could be called "the lust for life." There is undoubtedly lust for life in man, but essentially he is structured to be spirit, and if he were alone, left all alone to himself, he would not know (here the judge is right) how to begin, and he would never really get around to beginning.

But then "the lust for life," which is within him indefinitely, becomes manifest to him externally in another form, in the form of woman, who is the lust for life: and now the lust for life awakens.

Likewise, what is said by The Seducer (in "The Banquet") about woman being bait is very true. And strange as it may seem, it is nevertheless a fact that the very thing which makes the seducer so demonic and makes it hard for any poet to contrive such a character is that in the form of knowledge he has at his disposal the whole Christian ascetic view of woman - except that he employs it in his own way. He has knowledge in common with the ascetic, the hermit, but they take off from this knowledge in a completely different direction.

- Woman is personified egotism. Her fervent, burning devotion to man is neither more nor less than her egotism.

But His Honor, Man, has no inkling of this; he considers himself very lucky and feels highly flattered to be the object of such fervent devotion, which always takes the form of submission perhaps because woman has a bad conscience about it, wondering if it is not really egotism; man, however, as mentioned, does not see this but feels enhanced by the devotion of this other I.

Woman herself does not know that it is egotism; she is always a riddle to herself, and by a subtlety of nature the whole mystification of egotism manifesting itself as devotion is concealed from her. If woman could understand what an enormous egotist she is, she would not be that, for in another sense she is too good to be an egotist.

This whole business of man and woman is a very intricate plot or a practical joke intended to destroy man *qua* spirit.

Man is not originally an egotist; not until he is lucky enough to be united with a woman does he become that, and then completely. In contrast to a loose-jointed framework egotism, this union, commonly known as marriage, could be called a stone-wall egotism, egotism's proper enterprise.

Having once entered this company enterprise, egotism really begins to hum - and this is also why there are two, a company, in order to have someone to blame and to share the telling of lies (just as in the practical world it is recommended to have an associate who can be blamed for everything).

And it follows as a matter of course that once man enters this company he is essentially lost for everything higher.

This is the reason that Christianity and all more profound views of life take a dim view of the relation to the other sex, for they assume that getting involved with the other sex is the demotion of man.

And this is precisely why it is said (in the thieves' slang we humans use) that everyone is duty-bound to marry and that marriage is the genuinely ennobling life.

In this context it is distressing to me that an eminent person like Luther came to such an erroneous position. He should have understood that his marriage was an exceptional act, a corrective; therefore, as I have pointed out somewhere in my journal, he should rather have taken pains to stress the fact: Although I am a monk, I have married - the woman is not at all the important factor here; what was needed was an awakening, and it would have been just as awakening if it had been an ironing board, which naturally would have had to be kept secret. This would have been a way of being salt! But instead Luther became the commander-in-chief of that whole swarm of prolific people or breeders who, inspired by Luther, assume that getting married belongs to true Christianity.

As far as I am concerned, I will not claim to have understood everything at first as I later came to understand it; if I had not once and for all run aground on the exceptional. I too would have been married.

Something very exceptional held me back - and now at long last I see that the exceptional for me is what Christianity would call the universal, the normal, that Christianity insists on the single state and rather makes marriage the exception.

Here again a Governance has been with me. But it really had to be done this way, for how could a man born and brought up in this Danish-Protestant eudaemonism have his eyes opened to what is essentially Christian if a

Governance, through exceptional collisions, did not help him by always having him first experience formally the essentially Christian, even though he did not perceive this to be Christianity but believed it to be something quite uncommon - and subsequently let him see that it is in fact the essentially Christian, the truly Christian - which, incidentally, has come to be something very uncommon, particularly in Protestantism, particularly in Denmark.

- Intellectually, in the realm of ideas, thought, etc., woman as compared to man is usually pictured as being something of a little goose.

But in the realm of what could be called instinctive sagacity, man is a big clod compared to woman.

In an idle moment as I walked today it occurred to me that if for the sake of curiosity one were to imagine momentarily that the man could bear children - I am convinced that the births would be extremely difficult, and why? Among other reasons because he would not scream. He would say to himself: You are a man; it is inappropriate to scream - and would force back the scream. The woman, on the other hand, screams immediately - and it is well known that this screaming assists the birth.

There is something of genius about this instinctive sagacity in every woman; with a stroke of genius she takes a radical shortcut, whereas the man, who is weighed down by a thousand reflections, is also weighed down by an occasional but all too pompous idea of his own dignity in being a man.

- The weaker sex can wail and scream etc.; this is perhaps why the woman suffers much less than the silent, enclosed man.

In this context one could be tempted to say that woman is the stronger sex, for if it is strength to defend oneself against suffering, then woman defends herself far better than man.

But the main point is this: it is strength to be able to accept suffering, to be able to enter into suffering, to bear up under it; and it is weakness to ward off suffering by every means possible. Woman's weakness lies in the very fact that she immediately has entreaties, tears, and sighs at her disposal to ward off suffering; her weakness is simply her propensity to wail and scream and thus mitigate her suffering. Man's strength is that he has no means of defense, no way to mitigate suffering; therefore his strength - yes, it is a paradox - his strength makes him suffer more than the weaker sex. It is paradoxical, but no more paradoxical than something equally true, that it takes health to become ill; there are sickly people who lack the health to become ill.

- When a youth or young man goes astray in his passions, there are two powers alert to save him: a loving woman - and God in heaven. If he is saved by the former, he will still be finitized. If, however, he is not saved by woman's love, if he does not find a harbor here - but he is saved nevertheless, consequently by God, then his life becomes meaningful.

- Woman was taken from the man's side - but Christianly understood, may not man's relation to woman be compared to what is called making a side remark.

.

Man was structured for eternity; woman leads him into a side remark.

.

In this world man without woman is weaker; he has a weak side which woman protects, and united they have

strength for this life. But Christianly this weakness, the weakness of the solitary, weakness for this life, is a part of being strong for eternity.

- Basically it is terrible but true, and it expresses the dreadful extent to which it is true - Christianity simply does not exit.

This is the real situation in Christendom, especially in Protestantism.

The men - and that means the miserable weaklings and clods that are called men these days, compared to the Oriental idea of what it is to be a man - men turn away from religion with a certain pride and egotism and say: Religion (Christianity) is something for women and children.

But the truth of the matter is that Christianity as it is found in the New Testament has such prodigious aims that, strictly speaking, it cannot be a religion for women, at most secondhand, and is impossible for children.

As a psychologist I maintain that no woman can endure a dialectical redoubling, and everything that is essentially Christian is intrinsically dialectical.

The essentially Christian task requires a man, it takes a man's toughness and strength simply to be able to bear the pressure of the task.

A good which is identified by its hurting, a deliverance which is identified by its making me unhappy, a grace which is identified by suffering, etc. - all this, and everything essentially Christian is like this, no woman can bear, she will lose her mind if she is to be put under the tension of this strenuousness.

As far as children are concerned, it is sheer nonsense that they are supposed to be Christians.

A woman and, above all, a child relate to things directly and breathe the air of directness and immediacy. If something is a good, well then it must be recognizable by its doing good; there is no use in forcing a woman (I will not even mention the child) into a good that hurts - it would break her.

Just notice why it is that a woman cannot tolerate irony, that as far as her emotions are concerned irony is fatal. Is this not because she cannot bear the dialectical?

In this respect I have really taken the comprehensive philosophy examination. Try it: make a girl unhappy, and then tell her: I did it all out of love for you - and you break her, her mind snaps. Adapt yourself to her and say: I am a thoughtless scoundrel - that she will be able to bear, and she will heartily forgive you. But then she also escapes the dialectical redoubling.

So it is with everything essentially Christian. Only man has from the hand of Governance the toughness to be able to endure the dialectical.

Having to endure the dialectical is the most intense agony there is. A child, the little rascal, is completely safeguarded against it; he can never even get close enough to lose his mind over it, even if you were to pour as much of it into him as you can. A woman can come so close that she collapses under it, or her mind, in order to get her out of this, slips away - that is, she loses her mind.

To have to endure the dialectical is the most intense agony possible. It is also easy to see that far more intense

than, for example, becoming unhappy, is the suffering of becoming unhappy and in addition having to take this as one's very happiness - and in every respect. Thus anyone who comprehends this (if there is such a person), when he thinks of the figure of speech, a dialectical redoubling, and imagines a woman in such a situation, will (just as when one sees the instruments of torture for the martyrs, he involuntarily hears, as it were, a martyr's shriek) involuntarily hear this scream: O, save me, save my sanity!

What has really happened in Christianity, then, is that this sublimity, which is the essentially Christian position, this sublimity which no man has reached, not even when to be man was an ideal and not even one of those with highest ideality even attempted it or felt its weight without its bringing him to his knees, this sublimity under which (to put it as strongly as possible) even the Savior of the world sinks - that God who is love yet can abandon him and do it out of love - this sublimity Christendom has so flatly and heartily jabbered down into the vulgar gossip which is characteristic of the ordinary human mentality, that this sublimity has even become too light and easy for the kind of creatures dressed up to look like and whom we nowadays call men, and it is turned over to women and children, for whom religion really is intended, after all.

The New Testament is aimed at the man, religion is related to the man; woman participates in religion at second hand, through the man; she cannot herself endure a dialectic, but by seeing how the man feels the weight of the task she gets an impression of something more than the immediate pure and simple; the child shifts for himself until his time comes. To want to pour true Christianity into a child (if it were at all possible, for the child's nature makes it impossible to appropriate this) is just as crude as wanting to pour brandy into a child (which happens too often), because the parents themselves drink brandy, and the sweet lassie has to have it as well as her parents. And in the name of Christianity to want to pour something into the child which is not Christianity is, after all, indefensible.

But, as stated, Christendom has gotten everything transposed over into the immediate and direct - and therefore, quite right, "the child" has become the measure of what it is to be Christian! Christendom does not seem to be at all aware that all this about "the child" has raised an ironic problem, a question which has been kindly answered, the problem of what shall we do with the child, can the child become a Christian - a question to which the New Testament gives no answer since it assumed that the Christian does not get married.

Have a third-party relationship to a child, and you will see that everything is just as the New Testament presents it. But then the nice Christians hit upon the very thing Christianity put a stop to, even wanting to start all over afresh - so children got another significance. And thus, quite logically, by means of the child Christianity was turned upside-down, became exactly the opposite of what it is in the New Testament, got to be sugar candy for children, even to the point that the kind of men we have nowadays were right in turning away from it and regarding it as something that was only for women and children, something which disgusts a man just like gossip, chit-chat, and the temperature in the nursery.

No, let it become again what it once was, let it bring the man to his knees to pick up and carry the task, let woman shudder to see how heavy it is. And the child? Yes, let it become as it once was, let us be free from this child-begetting by Christians: then it is possible that Christianity may be seen again. Otherwise it is impossible, and I for my part cannot see how it is possible that anyone with an impression of Christ's life and what the evangelists understood it was to be Christian and with an idea of Christ's demand for discipleship and imitation can think of getting married.

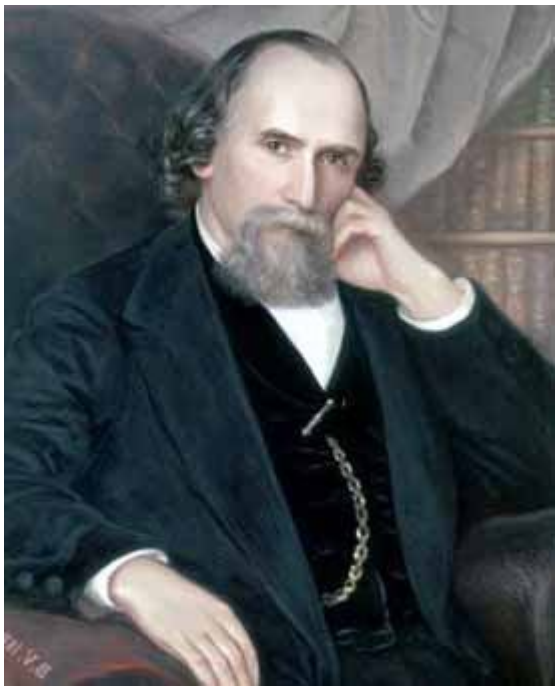
- To say that Christianity makes man and woman equal, and therefore the woman must relate to Christianity the same way as man, is baseless talk. Christianity does indeed make man and woman equal, but it still does not change their natural qualifications; otherwise by the same logic one could conclude that Christianity must cause women to grow just as tall and muscular as men, or even (if Christianity normally had this result) have the effect of making

the business of childbirth in Christendom so confusing and indescriminating that sometimes it would be the woman, sometimes the man, who bore the child.

To say that women relate to Christianity even more essentially than men is a fraudulent trick to get Christianity redrafted in terms of the immediate and direct. No, on the scale of the immediate and direct women certainly have the advantage both in delicacy and depth and inwardness, but as soon as there is a dialectic, women are in the same situation as people in the southern countries when they have to pronounce a Slavic word with five or six consonants before a vowel.

The Intimate Journal of Henri Amiel (selections)

. · 20 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original



The Intimate Journal of Henri Amiel (selections)

Translated by Mary A. Ward, 1890

March 17, 1868

December 26, 1868

May 13, 1869

April 1, 1870

December 11, 1872

April 3, 1873

Translated by Van Wyck Brooks and Charles Van Wyck Brooks, ©1935. (see copyright notice at bottom) 1

.

May 3, 1852

May 6, 1852

April 26, 1868

May 21, 1868

February 16, 1871

April 2, 1873

February 15, 1874

February 1, 1876

August 8, 1876

March 24, 1878

March 25, 1878

September 17, 1880

.
1 This text is copyrighted and is believed to be used in accordance with "Fair use" limitation of the Copyright Act given below. Since the guidelines are not strict, and therefore subject to misapplication, I will make my case as follows:

(1) This copying is being done non commercially as part of a nonprofit gender studies series and for other purposes allowed in the "Fair use" limitation.

(2) This work was published long ago; partly from the passage of time, and partly because of the unpopular views expressed, this work is unknown to many, and by copying such excerpts it is believed that an interest or new interest in the work will be kindled. Furthermore, a check for the year 1999 revealed this work out of print, which one would then think would give a greater latitude to its use as no commercial interest is being affected at this time.

On the issue of whether this translation is more fact than fiction (which would give a greater latitude to its "fair use"), a cursory examination reveals a great similarity between the Ward and Brooks translations, the differences often being a matter of different grammar and syntax choices that give the same meaning. Perhaps the French is a rather clear and easy language to translate, and then the Brooks translation came later (and through the same publisher) which allows the possibility of the earlier Ward translation being used as reference. Whatever the reasons, there seems to be little art or originality in the translation.

(3) The text used is about six pages out of a total work of 675 pages (including introduction and index) - or less than 1% of the entire work.

(4) Taking movie advertisements and book reviews as a clue, it appears that showing colorful clips and excerpts has the effect of causing people to want to take in the rest of the work (see also (2) above.)

I also wish to note that this copying is being done in the public's interest. It is believed by some that what is frequently portrayed in the media as to the relationship of the sexes in this country is false. That such false information assists the passage of discriminatory legislation aimed at the sex portrayed as the oppressor class. The excerpts above are of such a contrary character to what is given as the "truth" today that further comment by myself would seem superfluous.
Sec. 107. Limitations on exclusive rights: Fair use

Notwithstanding the provisions of sections 106 and 106A, the fair use of a copyrighted work, including such use by

reproduction in copies or phonorecords or by any other means specified by that section, for purposes such as criticism, comment, news reporting, teaching (including multiple copies for classroom use), scholarship, or research, is not an infringement of copyright. In determining whether the use made of a work in any particular case is a fair use the factors to be considered shall include -

(1) the purpose and character of the use, including whether such use is of a commercial nature or is for nonprofit educational purposes;

(2) the nature of the copyrighted work;

(3) the amount and substantiality of the portion used in relation to the copyrighted work as a whole; and

(4) the effect of the use upon the potential market for or value of the copyrighted work. The fact that a work is unpublished shall not itself bar a finding of fair use if such finding is made upon consideration of all the above factors.

The Intimate Journal of Henri Amiel - March 17, 1868

. · 20 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

March 17, 1868

Women wish to be loved without a why or a wherefore; not because they are pretty, or good, or well bred, or graceful, or intelligent, but because they are themselves. All analysis seems to them to imply a loss of consideration, a subordination of their personality to something which dominates and measures it. They will have none of it; and their instinct is just. As soon as we can give a reason for a feeling we are no longer under the spell of it; we appreciate, we weigh, we are free, at least in principle. Love must always remain a fascination, a witchery, if the empire of woman is to endure. Once the mystery gone, the power goes with it. Love must always seem to us indivisible, insoluble, superior to all analysis, if it is to preserve that appearance of infinity, of something supernatural and miraculous, which makes its chief beauty. The majority of beings despise what they understand, and bow only before the inexplicable. The feminine triumph par excellence is to convict of obscurity that virile intelli- gence which makes so much pretense to enlightenment. And when a woman inspires love, it is then especially that she enjoys this proud triumph. I admit that her exulta- tion has its grounds. Still, it seems to me that love--true and profound love--should be source of light and calm, a religion and revolution, in which there is no place left for the lower victories of vanity. Great souls care only for what is great, and to the spirit which hovers in the sight of the Infinite, any sort of artifice seems a disgraceful puerility.

Index Next

The Intimate Journal of Henri Amiel: December 26, 1868

. · 20 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

December 26, 1868

If men are always more or less deceived on the subject of women, it is because that they forget that they and women do not speak altogether the same language, and that words have not the same weight or the same meaning for them, especially in questions of feeling. Whether from shyness or precaution or artifice, a woman never speaks out her whole thought, and moreover what she herself knows of it is but a part of what it really is. Complete frankness seems to be impossible to her, and complete self-knowledge seems to be forbidden her. If she is a sphinx to us, it is because she is a riddle of doubtful meaning even to herself. She has no need of perfidy, for she is mystery itself. A woman is something fugitive, irrational, indeterminable, illogical, and contradictory. A great deal of forbearance ought to be shown her, and a good deal of prudence exercised with regard to her, for she may bring about innumerable evils without knowing it, capable of all kinds of devotion, and of all kinds of treason, "monstre incompréhensible," raised to the second power, she is at once the delight and the terror of men.

.

The more a man loves, the more he suffers. The sum of possible grief for each soul is in proportion to its degree of perfection.

.

.

Doubt of the reality of love ends by making us doubt everything. The final result of all deceptions and dis- appointments is atheism, which may not always yield up its name and secret, but which lurks, a masked specter, within the depths of thought, as the last supreme ex- plainer. "Man is what his love is," and follows the for- tunes of his love.

.

Previous Index Next

The Intimate Journal of Henri Amiel: May 13, 1869

. · 20 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

May 13, 1869

A break in the clouds, and through the blue interstices a bright sun throws flickering and uncertain rays. Storms, smiles, whims, anger, tears--it is May, and nature is in its feminine phase! She pleases our fancy, stirs our heart, and wears out our reason by the endless succession of her caprices and the unexpected violence of her whims.

This recalls to me the 213th verse of the second book of the Laws of Manou. "It is in the nature of the feminine sex to seek here below to corrupt men, and therefore wise men never abandon themselves to the seductions of women." The same code, however, says: "Wherever women are honored the gods are satisfied." And again: "In every family where the husband takes pleasure in his wife, and the wife in her husband, happiness is ensured." And again: "One mother is more venerable than a thousand fathers." But knowing what stormy and irrational elements there are in this fragile and delightful creature, Manou concludes: "At no age ought a woman to be allowed to govern herself as she pleases."

Up to the present day, in several contemporary and neighboring codes, a woman is a minor all her life. Why? Because of her dependence upon nature, and of her subjection to passions which are the diminutives of madness; in other words, because the soul of a woman has something obscure and mysterious in it, which lends itself to all superstitions and weakens the energies of man. To man belong law, justice, science, and philosophy, all that is disinterested, universal, and rational. Women, on the contrary, introduce into everything favor, exception, and personal prejudice. As soon as a man, a people, a literature, an epoch, become feminine in type, they sink in the scale of things. As soon as a woman quits the state of subordination in which her merits have free play, we see a rapid increase in her natural defects. Complete equality with man makes her quarrelsome; a position of supremacy makes her tyrannical. To honor her and to govern her will be for a long time yet the best solution. When education has formed strong, noble, and serious women in whom conscience and reason hold sway over the effervescence of fancy and sentimentality, then we shall be able not only

to honor woman, but to make a serious end of gaining her consent and adhesion. Then she will be truly an equal, a work-fellow, a companion. At present she is so only in theory. The moderns are at work upon the problem, and have not solved it yet.

.

Previous Index Next

The Intimate Journal of Henri Amiel: April 1, 1870

. · 20 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

April 1, 1870.

I am inclined to believe that for a woman love is the supreme authority--that which judges the rest and decides what is good or evil. For a man, love is subordinate to right. It is a great passion, but it is not the source of order, the synonym of reason, the criterion of excellence. It would seem, then, that a woman places her ideal in the perfection of love, and a man in the perfection of justice. It was in this sense that St. Paul was able to say, " The woman is the glory of the man, and the man is the glory of God." Thus the woman who absorbs herself in the object of her love is, so to speak, in the line of nature; she is truly woman, she realizes her fundamental type. On the contrary, the man who should make life consist in conjugal adoration, and who should imagine that he has lived sufficiently when he has made himself the priest of a beloved women, such a one is but half a man; he is despised by the world, and perhaps secretly disdained by women themselves. The woman who loves truly seeks to merge her own individual- ity in that of the man She loves. She desires that her love should make him greater, stronger, more masculine, and more active. Thus each sex plays its appointed part: the woman is first destined for man, and man is destined for society. Woman owes herself to one, man owes himself to all; and each obtains peace and happiness only when he or she has recognized this law and accepted this balance of things. The same thing may he a good in the woman and an evil in the man, may be strength in her, weakness in him.

There is then a feminine and a masculine morality-- preparatory chapters, as it were, to a general human moral- ity. Below the virtue which is evangelical and sexless, there is a virtue of sex. And this virtue of sex is the occa- sion of mutual teaching, for each of the two incarnations of virtue makes it its business to convert the other, the first preaching love in the ears of justice, the second jus- tice in the ears of love, And so there is produced an oscillation and an average which represent a social state, an epoch, sometimes a whole civilization.

Such at least is our European idea of the harmony of the sexes in a graduated order of functions. America is on the road to revolutionize this ideal by the introduction of the democratic principle of the equality of individuals in a general equality of functions. Only, when there is nothing left but a multitude of equal individualities, neither young nor old, neither men nor women, neither benefited nor benefactors--all social difference will turn upon money. The whole hierarchy will rest upon the dollar, and the most brutal, the most hideous, the most inhuman of inequalities will be the fruit of the passion for equality. What a result! Plutolatry--the worship of wealth, the madness of gold--to it will be confided the task of chastis- ing a false principle and its followers. All plutocracy will be in its turn executed by equality. It would be a strange end for it, if Anglo-Saxon individualism were ultimately swallowed up in Latin socialism.

It is my prayer that the discovery of an equilibrium between the two principles will be made in time, before the social war, with all its terror and ruin, overtakes us. But it is scarcely likely. The masses are always ignorant and limited, and only advance by a succession of contrary errors. They reach good only by the exhaustion of evil. They discover the way out, only after having run their heads against all other possible issues.

.

Previous Index Next

The Intimate Journal of Henri Amiel: December 11, 1872

. · 20 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

December 11, 1872

The ideal which the wife and mother makes for herself, the manner in which she understands duty and life, contain the fate of the community. Her faith becomes the star of the conjugal ship, and her love the animating principle that fashions the future of all belonging to her. Woman is the salvation or destruction of the family. She carries its destinies in the folds of her mantle.

Perhaps it is not desirable that a woman should be free in mind; she would immediately abuse her freedom. We cannot become philosophical without losing her special. gift, which is the worship of all that is individual, the defense of usage, manners, beliefs, traditions. Her rôle is to slacken the combustion of thought. It is analogous to that of azote in vital air.

In every loving woman there is a priestess of the past--a pious guardian of some affection, of which the object has disappeared.

Previous Index Next

The Intimate Journal of Henri Amiel: April 3, 1873

. · 20 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

April 3, 1873

Women of an enthusiastic temperament have a curious way of speaking of extempore preachers and orators. They imagine that inspiration radiates from a crowd as such, and that inspiration is all that is wanted. Could there be a more naïf and childish explanation of what is really a lecture in which nothing has been left to accident, neither the plan, nor the metaphors, nor even the length of the whole, and where everything has been prepared with the greatest care! But women, in their love of what is mar- velous and miraculous, prefer to ignore all this. The meditation, the labor, the calculation of effects, the art, in a word, which have gone to the making of it, diminishes for them the value of the thing, and they prefer to believe it fallen from heaven, or sent down from on high. They ask for bread, but cannot bear the idea of a baker. The sex is superstitious, and hates to understand what it wishes to admire. It would vex it to be forced to give the smaller share to feeling, and the larger share to thought. It wishes to believe that imagination can do the work of reason, and feeling the work of science, and it never asks itself how it is that women, so rich in heart and imagina- tion, have never distinguished themselves as orators--that is to say, have never known how to combine a multitude of facts, ideas, and impulses, into one complex unity. Enthu- siastic women never even suspect the difference that there is between the excitement of a popular harangue, which is nothing but a mere passionate outburst, and the unfold- ing of a didactic process, the aim of which is to prove something and to convince its hearers. Therefore, for them, study, reflection, technique, count as nothing; the improvisatore mounts upon the tripod, Pallas all armed issues from his lips, and conquers the applause of the dazzled assembly.

Evidently women divide orators into two groups; the artisans of speech, who manufacture their laborious dis- courses by the aid of the midnight lamp, and the inspired souls, who simply give themselves the trouble to he born. They will never understand the saying of Quintilian, *"Fit orator, nascitur poeta."* [A poet is born but an orator is made]

The enthusiasm which acts is perhaps an enlightening force, but the enthusiasm which accepts is very like blind- ness. For this latter enthusiasm confuses the value of things, ignores their shades of difference, and is an obstacle to all sensible criticism and all calm judgment. The "Ewig-Weibliche" [Eternal Womanly] favors exaggeration, mysticism, sentimentalism--all that excites and startles. It is the enemy of clearness, of a calm and rational view of things, the antipodes of criticism and of science. [The preponderant influence of women is all to the advantage of religion and the priests, and subsidiarily the poets, to the detriment of truth and liberty. This influence is an intoxication analogous to the intoxication of love.--So Athene prefers the males, and Proudhon has shown that the accession of women destroyed ancient society, because, as a reciprocal effect, it made the men effeminate.]

I have had only too much sympathy and weakness for the feminine nature. The very excess of my former indulgence toward it makes me now more conscious of its infirmities. Justice and science, law and reason, are virile things, and they come before imagination, feeling, reverie, and fancy. When one reflects that Catholic superstition is maintained by women, one feels how needful it is not to hand over the reins to the "Eternal Womanly," [the charm of which at bottom is dangerous and deceptive.]

Previous Index Next

The Intimate Journal of Henri Amiel: May 3, 1852

. · 20 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

May 3, 1852

... man rather forms himself by his will and woman is rather moulded by her lot; because the one modifies circumstances with his energy, while the other submits to them and reflects them in her gentleness; briefly, because woman is rather of the species and man the individual.

Previous Index Next

The Intimate Journal of Henri Amiel: May 6, 1852

. · 20 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

May 6, 1852

Oddly enough, women are the sex that is at once most one and most different; the most alike from the moral point of view, the most different from the social point of view. Women are a sisterhood in the first case, in the second a hierarchy. All the degrees of culture and condition are sharply marked in their exterior, their manners and their tastes; the inner community is found in their feelings, their instincts and desires. The feminine sex thus represents the equality of nature and the inequality of human his- tory; it maintains the unity of the species and separates the cate- gories of society. Woman has therefore an essentially conservative mission. She preserves, on the one hand, the work of God, that which is permanent in man, the beautiful, the great, the human; she preserves, on the other hand, that which is the work of circum- stances, the usages, absurdities, prejudices, pettinesses--the good and the bad, the serious and the frivolous. How could one wish it otherwise? Accept the smoke, if you would have the fire. This is a law that is providential and consequently good.--Woman is tradi- tion, as man is progress; without both there would be no life. His- tory, like all that has life, is the product of two forces; if its father is progress, tradition is its mother. Each sex has its part to play in the common work of the race.

Previous Index Next

The Intimate Journal of Henri Amiel: February 16, 1871

. · 20 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

February 16, 1871 (midnight)

One understands women as one understands the language of the birds, either by intuition or not at all. Trouble, study, effort count for nothing here: it is a gift and a grace...

Previous Index Next

The Intimate Journal of Henri Amiel: April 2, 1873

. · 20 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

A voluptuous shepherd girl quells Attila. A baker's maid extinguishes Raphael. Delilah, with her tresses, does more than a whole people to reduce Samson ... In short, the sexual function is the most terrible of the tributes that nature has imposed upon us. And of all the ways of escaping this bondage, the surest, the only good one, is obedience to its law. Calm comes from using it, not from privation or mutilation. Woman cures us of the curiosity, the desire and the madness of sex. She cures us of the ill that she causes. She tempts, but she satiates; she excites, but she allays. And reciprocally. Each sex thus attains a balanced humanity only through the other sex. Sexu- ality is an imperfection in the individual which can be corrected only by pairing ...

Previous Index Next

The Intimate Journal of Henri Amiel: February 15, 1874

. · 20 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

February 15, 1874

What always astonishes me is the kind of impetuous enthusiasm with which women side against the accused. A prisoner is in their eyes a culprit. Far from distrusting their own passion, they glory in it; they have an antipathy to impartiality, to calm, to the spirit of justice. Great God, what would become of the tribunals if women sat there under the ermine? Not one of us, not one of them[,] would wish to be weighed in this balance and have no other security for our honour than this blind and violent verdict of beings who are incapable of perfect equity. Suspected and con- demned, arraigned and convicted, judged and executed is all one thing with the ladies. Twenty errors on their part, consecutive and proved, gives them neither greater modesty in their accusations nor more reserve in their procedure, nor more charity in their judg- ments. *Cosi fan tutte [all women are like that].* They know only love and hatred and do not conceive even the fringe of justice. These gentle creatures are truly ferocious the moment they cease to be partial. Beware then of theological women, political women, socialistic women, beware of the women with the knitting-needles, the women who pour petroleum on the flames, those that light the pyres. Having a horror of reason, they are the prey of every extravagance and they can go to every extreme. The moment the feminine element dominates, over- excitement and orgies are imminent; religions, art, poetry, customs, states are impaired and fall into decadence.--I have believed too much in woman, I must lower my estimate. Her role must be subor- dinate in order to be salutary. Her preponderance would be disas- trous.

It seems to me that we already have an exaggeration of the fem- inine element. Proudhon, the robust misogynist, is not altogether wrong in his anti-feminist crusade (see his book La Justice). Sci- ence, reason, justice, all that is best in the patrimony of our race, is threatened by the advent of woman, who is all feeling, imagination, caprice, passion, credulity, favour, without respect for general inter- ests.

"Woman is the wise man's affliction", the moment she becomes proud of her infirmity and obstinate in her weaknesses. It is necessary therefore that she should obey. But this is a sorry expedient, for she must still be persuaded, won over, complied with in her un- believable contentions...

What attaches me to S. is that she has the fine manly attributes, strict rectitude, the love of the truth, the instinct of justice and the practice of charity, in short, that she is a noble creature who reacts against the vexatious instincts of her sex, without neglecting its virtues.

Previous Index Next

The Intimate Journal of Henri Amiel: February 1, 1876

. · 20 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

February 1, 1876

Women, encountering everywhere the incomprehensible, very quickly accommodate themselves to it, and form the habit of con-verting everything into questions of faith and opinion. The differ-ence between the knowable and the unknowable is never dear to them. Scientific criticism is not their business; they shine only in the analysis of the feelings....

Previous Index Next

The Intimate Journal of Henri Amiel: March 24, 1878

. · 20 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

March 24, 1878

A sex that prefers favour to justice, supersti-tion to wisdom, opinion to knowledge, error to truth, must be kept out of the great historic questions and decisions. It has only a tenant's faculties, not a general's. It is invalid, and would be dread- ful as judge, as legislator, as revolutionary, as institutor, as inventor. It is proper that the sex should be employed in everything, but it should not be given the supreme direction in anything. To grant it complete equality with the other sex in functions and in rights would be to check the advance of humanity and civilization. The manifest exceptions prove nothing. A few extraordinary women do not prevent the average from being the sentimental, passionate, retard- ing element of society, passive and committed to routine. Progress does not come from them, but in spite of them. Progress is es- sentially progress in truth, and it is man who invents, finds, dis-covers, innovates, undertakes, attempts, man who creates and con- quers. *Cuique suum [to each his own].* The male has many weaknesses and makes many mistakes; but everything would be worse if he ceased to the master. The age of gynæcocracy must have been a sad age, and a return of if is not to be desired. The effemination of a race alone means that the race is decedent ... It will be a singular thing if the democratic era ends in the com- plete emancipation of women, which will put an end to democratic customs. All women have the aristocratic weakness, they detest vul- garity and equality; their taste is for distinction, for arbitrary fa- vour, for the inequality of merits. Their first care will be to arrange a good tyranny after their own heart, the dictatorship of the priest and the artist. The reaction will be amusing. Liberalism in politics and religion is the last thing that women will like or practise. Respect for science if the opposite pole from their inclination.

Previous Index Next

The Intimate Journal of Henri Amiel: September 17, 1880

. · 20 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

September 17, 1880

I cannot conceal from myself that for a dozen years or more I have ceased to be under the spell of sex; I know too well the defects and weaknesses of the idol. I had set it too high, to the detriment of the virile man; I have liked women and sought their company too much. At last impartiality has come. It is never too late to be wise. If I continue to feel a slight preference for the more loving sex, I am less naive, less blind, less credulous, less admiring than before. The veil of Maya has worn thin, and illusion is less necessary to me. My camaraderie has enabled to see truly. I can look at them as they look at one another, as their mothers, fathers and brothers look at them, as the doctor sees them, that is, in all the ways other than the amorous and illusioned way. I am sensitive to their charm, without overrating them; I am touched, moved, grateful, attracted, without being deceived. This is the state I prefer.

Previous Index

The Intimate Journal of Henri Amiel: March 25, 1878

. · 20 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

March 25, 1878

The feminine tendency is to a swift and usurping assimilation. Things that they remember they convert at once into personal finds. They think things have happened for the first time ... The critical need to indicate one's sources, to acknowledge one's borrowings, to cite there from wham one has borrowed, to give others their rights is not properly feminine. The echo pretends to originality. The small additional element of recombination poses as the equal of the mother-wit that creates. The talent of the pupil considers itself the equivalent of the master's genius. And this illusion has its good faith, or at least it guards itself against any examination of conscience that might disturb it. Women do not wish to distinguish between giving birth and procreating, between exploiting and originating, between the power of imitation and that of innovation. The moon, which reflects, imagines also that it is a light by itself, and secretly thinks itself a little sun. Eagerness to receive, facility in reproducing are, however, only secondary qualifies of the intelligence. The male alone labours over things and creates something new. The feminine mind pumps ideas out of man and imagines it has drawn them from nature itself. This perpetual unconfessed larceny is the comedy of cultivated epochs. Women are a good deal like those stewards who contrive to collect in their money-boxes the gold that has been produced by the unceasing toil of other men, and who think they are superior to those who produce it because they have carried it off.--The drones of the intellectual hive mock the bees who make the honey and think themselves better than their collaborators.

The *imaginative faculty* is not the same thing as the imagination. Woman does not produce the fruitful ideas, but she discovers the details, she dresses, polishes, finishes, perfects, she observes the overlooked, she embellishes the exterior. She represents adroitness and taste, finesse and care. In a word, to be done well a work should be created, hewn by man, finished by woman. To one the architecture belongs, to the other the dressing and trimming. Masterpieces, in fact, demand both genius and talent, one providing the stuff and the proportions, the other eliminating the seams and the defects. And humbler works demand no less the concert of two forces, both of which indeed exist in the artist, but one of which as a rule predominates in one of the sexes.--I have therefore been very fortunate and highly favoured in having been able to review à deux everything I have done during the last few years. This auxiliary and this check is very useful to me, not to mention my great advantage in having, instead of a simple copyist, an intelligent, sympathetic and zealous secretary.

Previous Index Next

A Collection of Writings on Women -- Freiderich Neitzsche

. · 20 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

Actio in distans

When a man stands in the midst of his own noise, in the midst of his own surf of plans and projects, then he is apt also to see quiet, magical beings gliding past him and to long for their happiness and seclusion: *women*. He almost thinks that his better self dwells there among the women, and that in these quiet regions even the loudest surf turns into deathly quiet, and life itself into a dream about life. Yet! Yet! Noble enthusiast, even on the most beautiful sailboat there is a lot of noise, and unfortunately much small and petty noise. The magic and the most powerful effect of women is, in philosophical language, action at a distance, *actio in distans*: but this requires first of all and above all - *distance*.

Woman and music

Why is it that warm, rainy winds inspire a musical mood and the inventive pleasure of melodies? Are they not the same winds that fill the churches and arouse thoughts of love in women?

Skeptics

I am afraid that old women are more skeptical in their most secret heart of hearts than any man: they consider the superficiality of existence its essence, and all virtue and profundity is to them a veil over this "truth," a very welcome veil over a pendulum - in other words, a matter of decency and shame, and no more than that.

The strength of the weak

All women are subtle in exaggerating their weaknesses; they are inventive when it comes to weaknesses in order to appear as utterly fragile ornaments who are hurt even by a speck of dust. Their existence is supposed to make men feel clumsy, and guilty on that score. Thus they defend themselves against the strong and "the law of the jungle."

Simulating - oneself

Now she loves him and looks ahead with quiet confidence - like a cow. Alas, what bewitched him was precisely that she seemed utterly changeable and unfathomable. Of steady weather he found too much in himself. Wouldn't she do well to simulate her old character? To simulate a lack of love? Is this not the counsel of - love? *Vivat comoedia* (Long live comedy!).

On female chastity

There is something quite amazing and monstrous about the education of upper-class women. What could be more paradoxical? All the world is agreed that they are to be brought up as ignorant as possible of erotic matters, and that one has to imbue their souls with a profound sense of shame in such matters until the merest suggestion of such things triggers the most extreme impatience and flight. The "honor" of women really comes into play only here: what else would one not forgive them? But here they are supposed to remain ignorant even in their hearts; they are supposed to have neither eyes nor ears, nor words, nor thoughts for this - their "evil"; and mere knowledge is considered evil. And then to be hurled, as by a gruesome lightning bolt, into reality and knowledge, by marriage - precisely by the man they love and esteem most! To catch love and shame in a contradiction and to be forced to

experience at the same time delight, surrender, duty, pity, terror, and who knows what else, in the face of the unexpected neighborliness of god and beast!

Thus a psychic knot has been tied that may have no equal. Even the compassionate curiosity of the wisest student of humanity is inadequate for guessing how this or that woman manages to accomodate herself to this solution of the riddle, and to the riddle of a solution, and what dreadful, far-reaching suspicions must stir in her poor, unhinged soul - and how the ultimate philosophy and skepsis of woman casts anchor at this point!

Afterward, the same deep silence as before. Often a silence directed at herself, too. She closes her eyes to herself.

Young women try hard to appear superficial and thoughtless. The most refined simulate a kind of impertinence.

Women easily experience their husbands as a question mark concerning their honor, and their children as an apology or atonement. They need children and wish for them in a way that is altogether different from that in which a man may wish for children.

In sum, one cannot be too kind about women.

Mothers

Mothers find in their children satisfaction for their desire to dominate, a possession, an occupation, something that is wholly intelligible to them and can be chattered with: the sum of all this is what mother love is; it is to be compared with an artist's love for his work. Pregnancy has made women kinder, more patient, more timid, more pleased to submit; and just so does spiritual pregnancy produce the character of the contemplative type, which is closely related to the feminine character: it consists of male mothers.

Vita femina

The Greeks, to be sure, prayed: "Everything beautiful twice and even three times!" They implored the gods with good reason, for ungodly reality gives us the beautiful either not at all or once only. I mean to say that the world is overfull of beautiful things but nevertheless poor, very poor when it comes to beautiful moments and unveilings of these things. But perhaps this is the most powerful magic of life: it is covered by a veil interwoven with gold, a veil of beautiful possibilities, sparkling with promise, resistance, bashfulness, mockery, pity, and seduction. Yes, life is a woman.

- Would any link be missing from the whole chain of science and art, if woman, if woman's work, were excluded from it? Let us acknowledge the exception - it proves the rule - that woman is capable of perfection in everything which does not constitute a work: in letters, in memoirs, in the most intricate handiwork - in short, everything which is not a craft; and precisely because in the things mentioned woman perfects herself, because in them she obeys the only artistic impulse in her nature, which is to captivate.

- And finally, woman! *One-half of mankind is weak,* chronic- ally sick, changeable, shifty - woman requires . . . a religion of the weak which glorifies weakness, love and modesty as divine: or better still, she makes the strong weak - she succeeds in overcoming the strong. Woman has always conspired with decadent types - the priests, for instance - against the "mighty," against the "strong," against *men*. Women avail themselves of children for the cult of piety . . .

- Are you a slave? If so, you cannot be a friend. Are you a tyrant? If so, you cannot have friends. In woman, a slave and a tyrant have all too long been concealed. For that reason, woman is not yet capable of friendship: she

knows only love. In a woman's love is injustice and blindness towards all that she does not love. And in the enlightened love of a woman, too, there is still the unexpected attack and lightning and night, along with the light. Woman is not yet capable of friendship: women are still cats and birds. Or, at best, cows. Woman is not yet capable of friendship. But tell me, you men, which of you is yet capable of friendship?

"From a woman you can learn nothing of women." -- Nietzsche

The Intimate Journal of Henri Amiel: April 26, 1868

. · 20 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

April 26, 1868

You are as weak at heart as a woman; you should do something rash to preserve your self-respect, and yet you an afraid of any elation became you fear the anti-heroic reactions in yourself. You have impulses but no confidence in your impulses. You cannot en- dure the idea of causing unhappiness to one who loves you, nor yet the thought of a humiliation, nor the prospect of regret, remorse, repentance. You lack the courage to will, for your conscience, you reason and your heart do not wish to yield either way, and you spurn any arbitrary determination. The divided men draws down upon himself thunderbolts, and woes, and, as he foresees this, he shuns adventures and is loath to quit the port.

... Unhappy soul, you have no energy left, no will, no heroism. You seek for nothing but that which pampers your over-feminine instincts of sympathy and affection. The malaria of indifference has sterilized your intelligence and whatever talent you have. And for this then is no remedy, for you cherish your infirmity, and you do not believe them is any cure. All manly ambition is extinguished in you. The enjoyment of struggle, the illusion of success, the passion for victory, the craving for power and influence, the thirst for riches, the desire for reputation, the curiosity of the mind are reagents that have ceased to be capable of biting into your indolence. Inner peace is your one and only longing. To make those who are around you happy and reduce your existence as much as possible is your sole instinctive aspiration. You no longer have the stuff in you for any- thing but a poor little paterfamilias, and, even there, the life of a husband and father seems to you too complicated and difficult at your age and with your habits of mind. To avoid destitution or humiliation you would renounce everything in advance and with a good grace. Incredulity, timidity, sloth, discouragement.--This is all wrong. We must give pleasure to those who love us, those who re- spect us and have faith in us. This is reason enough, and this stimu- lant has not lost its efficacy.

Previous Index Next

The Intimate Journal of Henri Amiel: May 21, 1868

. · 20 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

May 21, 1868

Why, I ask myself, does love always make one think of death? Because it is itself a death, death to ourselves, the annihilation of the sombre despot of whom the Persian poet speaks, the extinction of egoism, of the personal, solitary life. And this death is a new life; but this life is indeed a death.--Why is it that woman, nervous, feeble, timid as she is, feels that danger has ceased to exist when she is with the one she loves? Because to die on the heart of her beloved is her secret dream. Paradise for her is to be together; whether in suffering, joy, pleasure or death is a secondary matter. To cease to be two, to make a single one, at all costs, everywhere, always: that is her aspiration, her soul, her cry, her instinct. Woman has only one religion, love; love has only one concern, ecstatic identification, the combustion of isolated beings and their union in a single flame. And there are people who deny and scoff at mysticism, when half of our species has no other cult, no other faith, no other ideal, when the supreme state glimpsed by the tender feelings, by lofty piety and great poetry bears witness to this moral reality! Mysticism, which disturbs the reason, is the natural home- land of the soul. Its more summary method ends in the same result as speculation; it brings one back to Unity and the Absolute. It breaks down the temporary and fictitious barriers of individuality. It gives vent in the finite breast to the overflowing sentiment of the infinite. It is an emancipation, a metamorphosis, a transfiguration of our poor little Self.

Previous Index Next

The Intimate Journal of Henri Amiel: August 8, 1876

. · 20 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

August 8, 1876

Woman is loving but passive, receiving the idea and the spark, but without the gift of self-electrification. Virility alone originates things spontaneously and is an origin, a punctum saliens [salient point] . Thus the feminine principle is subordinate, it comes afterwards and in the second place. Man is by nature the master in art. legislation, science, industry; woman is the pupil, disciple, servant, imitator. Chivalrous courtesy dissembles this in vain, for there is no equity between the sexes. They are indispensable one to another, but one is the leader and the other led. The ram is the master of the ewe; the reverse would be an aberration and monstrosity. The pride of the American women will bring about a reaction; for whatever these ladies are they owe to man. If the latter wearies of his generosity and leaves them to their own merits, the expiatory plunge will oblige them to measure the immensity of their ingrati- tude.

Nature has willed the subordination of woman. Civilized man dignifies his companion, submits willingly to grace, sweetness, frailty, creates for her the right to protection, gives her a privi- leged place. But the condition is such that, if she denies the bene- faction and claims to have earned what has been given to her and to be indebted to no one, her benefactor may bring this course to an abrupt end.

The illusion consists in this: superiority constitutes a moral duty on the part of the superior towards the inferior, but inferiority does not constitute any legal right on the part of the inferior over the superior. Generosity is beautiful and noble, but it is optional; the cripple who demands that he should he carried dispels one's desire to aid him. Man enjoys protecting woman, but when woman imperatively summons him to serve and protect her, he whom an entreaty would have softened loses his inclination at once.

By substituting the legal sphere for the moral sphere, the eman- cipation of women will desiccate society, as legal charity destroys real charity, as love by command would sterilise the marriage-bed. --In asking more than civil equality and economic equality, women are playing a dangerous game. Equality in services will be demanded of them, and this will serve them right.

Previous Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #121 – Women Only Have What Rights Men Give Them

Virginibus Puerisque - Chapter One - By Robert Louis Stevenson

. · 21 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

CHAPTER I - "VIRGINIBUS PUERISQUE"

[Part I]

WITH the single exception of Falstaff, all Shakespeare's characters are what we call marrying men. Mercutio, as he was own cousin to Benedick and Biron, would have come to the same end in the long run. Even Iago had a wife, and, what is far stranger, he was jealous. People like Jacques and the Fool in LEAR, although we can hardly imagine they would ever marry, kept single out of a cynical humour or for a broken heart, and not, as we do nowadays, from a spirit of incredulity and preference for the single state. For that matter, if you turn to George Sand's French version of AS YOU LIKE IT (and I think I can promise you will like it but little), you will find Jacques marries Celia just as Orlando marries Rosalind.

At least there seems to have been much less hesitation over marriage in Shakespeare's days; and what hesitation there was was of a laughing sort, and not much more serious, one way or the other, than that of Panurge. In modern comedies the heroes are mostly of Benedick's way of thinking, but twice as much in earnest, and not one quarter so confident. And I take this diffidence as a proof of how sincere their terror is. They know they are only human after all; they know what gins and pitfalls lie about their feet; and how the shadow of matrimony waits, resolute and awful, at the cross-roads. They would wish to keep their liberty; but if that may not be, why, God's will be done! "What, are you afraid of marriage?" asks Cecile, in MAITRE GUERIN. "Oh, mon Dieu, non!" replies Arthur; "I should take chloroform." They look forward to marriage much in the same way as they prepare themselves for death: each seems inevitable; each is a great Perhaps, and a leap into the dark, for which, when a man is in the blue devils, he has specially to harden his heart. That splendid scoundrel, Maxime de Trailles, took the news of marriages much as an old man hears the deaths of his contemporaries. "C'est desesperant," he cried, throwing himself down in the arm-chair at Madame Schontz's; "c'est desesperant, nous nous marions tous!" Every marriage was like another gray hair on his head; and the jolly church bells seemed to taunt him with his fifty years and fair round belly.

The fact is, we are much more afraid of life than our ancestors, and cannot find it in our hearts either to marry or not to marry. Marriage is terrifying, but so is a cold and forlorn old age. The friendships of men are vastly agreeable, but they are insecure. You know all the time that one friend will marry and put you to the door; a second accept a situation in China, and become no more to you than a name, a reminiscence, and an occasional crossed letter, very laborious to read; a third will take up with some religious crotchet and treat you to sour looks thence-forward. So, in one way or another, life forces men apart and breaks up the goodly fellowships for ever. The very flexibility and ease which make men's friendships so agreeable while they endure, make them the easier to destroy and forget. And a man who has a few friends, or one who has a dozen (if there be any one so wealthy on this earth), cannot forget on how precarious a base his happiness reposes; and how by a stroke or two of fate - a death, a few light words, a piece of stamped paper, a woman's bright eyes - he may be left, in a month, destitute of all. Marriage is certainly a perilous remedy. Instead of on two or three, you stake your happiness on one life only. But still, as the bargain is more explicit and complete on your part, it is more so on the other; and you have not to fear so many contingencies; it is not every wind that can blow you from your anchorage; and so long as Death withholds his sickle, you will always have a friend at home. People who share a cell in the Bastile, or are thrown together on an uninhabited isle, if they do not immediately fall to fisticuffs, will find some possible ground of compromise. They will learn each other's ways and humours, so as to know where they must go warily, and where they may lean their whole weight. The discretion of the first years becomes the settled habit of the last; and so, with wisdom and patience, two lives may grow indissolubly into one.

But marriage, if comfortable, is not at all heroic. It certainly narrows and damps the spirits of generous men. In marriage, a man becomes slack and selfish, and undergoes a fatty degeneration of his moral being. It is not only when Lydgate misallies himself with Rosamond Vincy, but when Ladislaw marries above him with Dorothea, that this may be exemplified. The air of the fireside withers out all the fine wildings of the husband's heart. He is so comfortable and happy that he begins to prefer comfort and happiness to everything else on earth, his wife included. Yesterday he would have shared his last shilling; to-day "his first duty is to his family," and is fulfilled in large measure by laying down vintages and husbanding the health of an invaluable parent. Twenty years ago this man was equally capable of crime or heroism; now he is fit for neither. His soul is asleep, and you may speak without constraint; you will not wake him. It is not for nothing that Don Quixote was a bachelor and Marcus Aurelius married ill. For women, there is less of this danger. Marriage is of so much use to a woman, opens out to her so much more of life, and puts her in the way of so much more freedom and usefulness, that, whether she marry ill or well, she can hardly miss some benefit. It is true, however, that some of the merriest and most genuine of women are old maids; and that those old maids, and wives who are unhappily married, have often most of the true motherly touch. And this would seem to show, even for women, some narrowing influence in comfortable married life. But the rule is none the less certain: if you wish the pick of men and women, take a good bachelor and a good wife.

I am often filled with wonder that so many marriages are passably successful, and so few come to open failure, the more so as I fail to understand the principle on which people regulate their choice. I see women marrying indiscriminately with staring burgesses and ferret-faced, white-eyed boys, and men dwell in contentment with noisy scullions, or taking into their lives acidulous vestals. It is a common answer to say the good people marry because they fall in love; and of course you may use and misuse a word as much as you please, if you have the world along with you. But love is at least a somewhat hyperbolical expression for such luke-warm preference. It is not here, anyway, that Love employs his golden shafts; he cannot be said, with any fitness of language, to reign here and revel. Indeed, if this be love at all, it is plain the poets have been fooling with mankind since the foundation of the world. And you have only to look these happy couples in the face, to see they have never been in love, or in hate, or in any other high passion, all their days. When you see a dish of fruit at dessert, you sometimes set your affections upon one particular peach or nectarine, watch it with some anxiety as it comes round the table, and feel quite a sensible disappointment when it is taken by some one else. I have used the phrase "high passion." Well, I should say this was about as high a passion as generally leads to marriage. One husband hears after marriage that some poor fellow is dying of his wife's love. "What a pity!" he exclaims; "you know I could so easily have got another!" And yet that is a very happy union. Or again: A young man was telling me the sweet story of his loves. "I like it well enough as long as her sisters are there," said this amorous swain; "but I don't know what to do when we're alone." Once more: A married lady was debating the subject with another lady. "You know, dear," said the first, "after ten years of marriage, if he is nothing else, your husband is always an old friend." "I have many old friends," returned the other, "but I prefer them to be nothing more." "Oh, perhaps I might PREFER that also!" There is a common note in these three illustrations of the modern idyll; and it must be owned the god goes among us with a limping gait and blear eyes. You wonder whether it was so always; whether desire was always equally dull and spiritless, and possession equally cold. I cannot help fancying most people make, ere they marry, some such table of recommendations as Hannah Godwin wrote to her brother William anent her friend, Miss Gay. It is so charmingly comical, and so pat to the occasion, that I must quote a few phrases. "The young lady is in every sense formed to make one of your disposition really happy. She has a pleasing voice, with which she accompanies her musical instrument with judgment. She has an easy politeness in her manners, neither free nor reserved. She is a good housekeeper and a good economist, and yet of a generous disposition. As to her internal accomplishments, I have reason to speak still more highly of them: good sense without vanity, a penetrating judgment without a disposition to satire, with about as much religion as my William likes, struck me with a wish that she was my William's wife." That is about the tune: pleasing voice, moderate good looks, unimpeachable internal accomplishments after the style of the copy-book, with about as much religion as my William likes; and then, with all speed, to church.

To deal plainly, if they only married when they fell in love, most people would die unwed; and among the others, there would be not a few tumultuous households. The Lion is the King of Beasts, but he is scarcely suitable for a domestic pet. In the same way, I suspect love is rather too violent a passion to make, in all cases, a good domestic sentiment. Like other violent excitements, it throws up not only what is best, but what is worst and smallest, in men's characters. Just as some people are malicious in drink, or brawling and virulent under the influence of religious feeling, some are moody, jealous, and exacting when they are in love, who are honest, downright, good-hearted fellows enough in the everyday affairs and humours of the world.

How then, seeing we are driven to the hypothesis that people choose in comparatively cold blood, how is it they choose so well? One is almost tempted to hint that it does not much matter whom you marry; that, in fact, marriage is a subjective affection, and if you have made up your mind to it, and once talked yourself fairly over, you could "pull it through" with anybody. But even if we take matrimony at its lowest, even if we regard it as no more than a sort of friendship recognised by the police, there must be degrees in the freedom and sympathy realised, and some principle to guide simple folk in their selection. Now what should this principle be? Are there no more definite rules than are to be found in the Prayer-book? Law and religion forbid the bans on the ground of propinquity or consanguinity; society steps in to separate classes; and in all this most critical matter, has common sense, has wisdom, never a word to say? In the absence of more magisterial teaching, let us talk it over between friends: even a few guesses may be of interest to youths and maidens.

In all that concerns eating and drinking, company, climate, and ways of life, community of taste is to be sought for. It would be trying, for instance, to keep bed and board with an early riser or a vegetarian. In matters of art and intellect, I believe it is of no consequence. Certainly it is of none in the companionships of men, who will dine more readily with one who has a good heart, a good cellar, and a humorous tongue, than with another who shares all their favourite hobbies and is melancholy withal. If your wife likes Tupper, that is no reason why you should hang your head. She thinks with the majority, and has the courage of her opinions. I have always suspected public taste to be a mongrel product, out of affectation by dogmatism; and felt sure, if you could only find an honest man of no special literary bent, he would tell you he thought much of Shakespeare bombastic and most absurd, and all of him written in very obscure English and wearisome to read. And not long ago I was able to lay by my lantern in content, for I found the honest man. He was a fellow of parts, quick, humorous, a clever painter, and with an eye for certain poetical effects of sea and ships. I am not much of a judge of that kind of thing, but a sketch of his comes before me sometimes at night. How strong, supple, and living the ship seems upon the billows! With what a dip and rake she shears the flying sea! I cannot fancy the man who saw this effect, and took it on the wing with so much force and spirit, was what you call commonplace in the last recesses of the heart. And yet he thought, and was not ashamed to have it known of him, that Ouida was better in every way than William Shakespeare. If there were more people of his honesty, this would be about the staple of lay criticism. It is not taste that is plentiful, but courage that is rare. And what have we in place? How many, who think no otherwise than the young painter, have we not heard disbursing second-hand hyperboles? Have you never turned sick at heart, O best of critics! when some of your own sweet adjectives were returned on you before a gaping audience? Enthusiasm about art is become a function of the average female being, which she performs with precision and a sort of haunting sprightliness, like an ingenious and well- regulated machine. Sometimes, alas! the calmest man is carried away in the torrent, bandies adjectives with the best, and out-Herods Herod for some shameful moments. When you remember that, you will be tempted to put things strongly, and say you will marry no one who is not like George the Second, and cannot state openly a distaste for poetry and painting.

The word "facts" is, in some ways, crucial. I have spoken with Jesuits and Plymouth Brethren, mathematicians and poets, dogmatic republicans and dear old gentlemen in bird's- eye neckcloths; and each understood the word "facts" in an occult sense of his own. Try as I might, I could get no nearer the principle of their division. What was essential to them, seemed to me trivial or untrue. We could come to no compromise as to what was, or what was not, important in the life of man. Turn as we pleased, we all stood back to back in a big ring, and saw another

quarter of the heavens, with different mountain-tops along the sky-line and different constellations overhead. We had each of us some whimsy in the brain, which we believed more than anything else, and which discoloured all experience to its own shade. How would you have people agree, when one is deaf and the other blind? Now this is where there should be community between man and wife. They should be agreed on their catchword in "FACTS OF RELIGION," or "FACTS OF SCIENCE," or "SOCIETY, MY DEAR"; for without such an agreement all intercourse is a painful strain upon the mind. "About as much religion as my William likes," in short, that is what is necessary to make a happy couple of any William and his spouse. For there are differences which no habit nor affection can reconcile, and the Bohemian must not intermarry with the Pharisee. Imagine Consuelo as Mrs. Samuel Budget, the wife of the successful merchant! The best of men and the best of women may sometimes live together all their lives, and, for want of some consent on fundamental questions, hold each other lost spirits to the end.

A certain sort of talent is almost indispensable for people who would spend years together and not bore themselves to death. But the talent, like the agreement, must be for and about life. To dwell happily together, they should be versed in the niceties of the heart, and born with a faculty for willing compromise. The woman must be talented as a woman, and it will not much matter although she is talented in nothing else. She must know her METIER DE FEMME, and have a fine touch for the affections. And it is more important that a person should be a good gossip, and talk pleasantly and smartly of common friends and the thousand and one nothings of the day and hour, than that she should speak with the tongues of men and angels; for a while together by the fire, happens more frequently in marriage than the presence of a distinguished foreigner to dinner. That people should laugh over the same sort of jests, and have many a story of "grouse in the gun-room," many an old joke between them which time cannot wither nor custom stale, is a better preparation for life, by your leave, than many other things higher and better sounding in the world's ears. You could read Kant by yourself, if you wanted; but you must share a joke with some one else. You can forgive people who do not follow you through a philosophical disquisition; but to find your wife laughing when you had tears in your eyes, or staring when you were in a fit of laughter, would go some way towards a dissolution of the marriage.

I know a woman who, from some distaste or disability, could never so much as understand the meaning of the word POLITICS, and has given up trying to distinguish Whigs from Tories; but take her on her own politics, ask her about other men or women and the chicanery of everyday existence - the rubs, the tricks, the vanities on which life turns - and you will not find many more shrewd, trenchant, and humorous. Nay, to make plainer what I have in mind, this same woman has a share of the higher and more poetical understanding, frank interest in things for their own sake, and enduring astonishment at the most common. She is not to be deceived by custom, or made to think a mystery solved when it is repeated. I have heard her say she could wonder herself crazy over the human eyebrow. Now in a world where most of us walk very contentedly in the little lit circle of their own reason, and have to be reminded of what lies without by specious and clamant exceptions - earthquakes, eruptions of Vesuvius, banjos floating in mid-air at a SEANCE, and the like - a mind so fresh and unsophisticated is no despicable gift. I will own I think it a better sort of mind than goes necessarily with the clearest views on public business. It will wash. It will find something to say at an odd moment. It has in it the spring of pleasant and quaint fancies. Whereas I can imagine myself yawning all night long until my jaws ached and the tears came into my eyes, although my companion on the other side of the hearth held the most enlightened opinions on the franchise or the ballot.

The question of professions, in as far as they regard marriage, was only interesting to women until of late days, but it touches all of us now. Certainly, if I could help it, I would never marry a wife who wrote. The practice of letters is miserably harassing to the mind; and after an hour or two's work, all the more human portion of the author is extinct; he will bully, backbite, and speak daggers. Music, I hear, is not much better. But painting, on the contrary, is often highly sedative; because so much of the labour, after your picture is once begun, is almost entirely manual, and of that skilled sort of manual labour which offers a continual series of successes, and so tickles a man, through his vanity, into good humour. Alas! in letters there is nothing of this sort. You may write as beautiful a hand as you will, you have always something else to think of, and cannot pause to notice your loops and flourishes; they are

beside the mark, and the first law stationer could put you to the blush. Rousseau, indeed, made some account of penmanship, even made it a source of livelihood, when he copied out the HELOISE for DILETTANTE ladies; and therein showed that strange eccentric prudence which guided him among so many thousand follies and insanities. It would be well for all of the GENUS IRRITABILE thus to add something of skilled labour to intangible brain-work. To find the right word is so doubtful a success and lies so near to failure, that there is no satisfaction in a year of it; but we all know when we have formed a letter perfectly; and a stupid artist, right or wrong, is almost equally certain he has found a right tone or a right colour, or made a dexterous stroke with his brush. And, again, painters may work out of doors; and the fresh air, the deliberate seasons, and the "tranquillising influence" of the green earth, counterbalance the fever of thought, and keep them cool, placable, and prosaic.

A ship captain is a good man to marry if it is a marriage of love, for absences are a good influence in love and keep it bright and delicate; but he is just the worst man if the feeling is more pedestrian, as habit is too frequently torn open and the solder has never time to set. Men who fish, botanise, work with the turning-lathe, or gather sea-weeds, will make admirable husbands and a little amateur painting in water-colour shows the innocent and quiet mind. Those who have a few intimates are to be avoided; while those who swim loose, who have their hat in their hand all along the street, who can number an infinity of acquaintances and are not chargeable with any one friend, promise an easy disposition and no rival to the wife's influence. I will not say they are the best of men, but they are the stuff out of which adroit and capable women manufacture the best of husbands. It is to be noticed that those who have loved once or twice already are so much the better educated to a woman's hand; the bright boy of fiction is an odd and most uncomfortable mixture of shyness and coarseness, and needs a deal of civilising. Lastly (and this is, perhaps, the golden rule), no woman should marry a teetotaller, or a man who does not smoke. It is not for nothing that this "ignoble tabagie," as Michelet calls it, spreads over all the world. Michelet rails against it because it renders you happy apart from thought or work; to provident women this will seem no evil influence in married life. Whatever keeps a man in the front garden, whatever checks wandering fancy and all inordinate ambition, whatever makes for lounging and contentment, makes just so surely for domestic happiness.

These notes, if they amuse the reader at all, will probably amuse him more when he differs than when he agrees with them; at least they will do no harm, for nobody will follow my advice. But the last word is of more concern. Marriage is a step so grave and decisive that it attracts light-headed, variable men by its very awfulness. They have been so tried among the inconstant squalls and currents, so often sailed for islands in the air or lain becalmed with burning heart, that they will risk all for solid ground below their feet. Desperate pilots, they run their sea-sick, weary bark upon the dashing rocks. It seems as if marriage were the royal road through life, and realised, on the instant, what we have all dreamed on summer Sundays when the bells ring, or at night when we cannot sleep for the desire of living. They think it will sober and change them. Like those who join a brotherhood, they fancy it needs but an act to be out of the coil and clamour for ever. But this is a wile of the devil's. To the end, spring winds will sow disquietude, passing faces leave a regret behind them, and the whole world keep calling and calling in their ears. For marriage is like life in this - that it is a field of battle, and not a bed of roses.

Need It Be So? - by Leo Tolstoy (1900)

. · 23 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

Why, then, do men live thus ?

It is natural for the rich, who are used to their wealth and who do not see clearly that wealth does not give happiness, to try to maintain their position. But why does the vast majority, in whose hands is every power, assume that there is happiness in wealth, and continue to live in want and submit to the minority ?

Indeed, why do all those men who are strong in muscles and in artisanship and in the habit of work -- the vast majority of men -- submit, give in to a handful of feeble people, pampered old men and mainly women, who for the most part are not fit for anything ?

Take a walk before the holidays or during bargain weeks along the business streets, say through the Moscow Passages. Ten or twelve Passages, consisting of solid rows of magnificent shops with immense plate-glass windows, are all filled with all kinds of expensive wares, -- exclusively feminine ones, -- stuffs, dresses, laces, gems, foot-gear, house adornments, furs, and so forth. All these things cost millions and millions, all these articles have been manufactured in establishments by working people who frequently ruin their lives over this work, and all these articles are of no use, not only to the working people, but even to the wealthy men, -- they are all amusements and adornments of women. At the entrances porters in galloons stand on both sides, and coachmen in expensive garments sit on the boxes of expensive carriages, which are drawn by trotters that cost into the thousands. Again millions of working days have been wasted on the production of all the luxury of the harnesses: old and young working people, men and women, have devoted all their lives to the production of all these articles. And all these articles are in the power and in the hands of a few hundred women, who in expensive furs and hats of the latest fashion saunter through these shops and purchase all these articles, which are manufactured for them.

A few hundreds of women arbitrarily dispose of the labor of millions of working people, who work to support themselves and their families. On the whims of these women depend the fate, the lives of millions of people.

How did this happen ?

Why do all these millions of strong people, who have manufactured these articles, submit to these women?

Now a lady in a velvet fur coat and a hat of the very latest fashion drives up with a span of trotters. Everything upon her is new and most expensive. A porter hurries to throw back the boot of her sleigh, and respectfully helps her out, by supporting her under her elbow. She walks down the Passage as though through her kingdom, enters one of the shops, and buys five thousand roubles worth of material for her drawing-room, and, having given the order to send it up to her house, goes elsewhere. She is an evil, stupid, and not at all beautiful woman, who does not bear any children and has never done anything in her life for any one else. Why, then, do the porter, and the coachmen, and the clerks fawn so servilely before her? And why has all that over which thousands of workmen have laboured become her property? Because she has money, and the porter, the coachman, the clerks, and the workmen in the factory need money, with which to support their families. The money is most convenient for them, and frequently can be gained only by serving as a coachman, porter, clerk, workman in a factory.

And why has this woman money ? She has money because people who have been driven off the land and have forgotten how to do any other work are living in her husband's factory, while her husband, giving the workmen as much as they must necessarily have for their support, takes all the profit from the factory, to the amount of several hundred thousands, for himself, and, not knowing what to do with the money, is glad to give it to his wife, for her

to spend it on anything she may wish.

And here is another lady, in a still more luxurious carriage and garments, who is buying up all kinds of expensive and useless things in all kinds of shops. Where does she get the money from? She is the mistress of a wealthy landowner of twenty thousand desyatinas, which were given to his ancestor by a harlot queen for his debauchery with that old queen. This landowner owns all the land around a colony of peasants, and lets this land to the peasants at seventeen roubles per desyatina. The peasants pay this money, because without the land they would starve. And this money is now in the hands of the mistress, and with this money she buys things which have been made by other peasants, who have been driven off the land.

Here again a third rich woman, with her fiancé and mother, is walking clown the Passage. This woman is about to marry, and she is buying bronzes and expensive dishes. She has money given her by her father, a distinguished official, who is receiving a salary of twelve thousand roubles. He gave his daughter a dowry of seven thousand roubles. This money was collected from import revenues and taxes, again from the peasants. These same taxes compelled the porter, who opens the door (he is a Kaluga peasant, -- his wife and children are left at home), and the coachman, who brought them up (he is a Tula peasant), and hundreds, and thousands, and millions of men, who work out in houses or in factories, -- to leave their homes and to work on articles which are consumed by the ladies, who receive the money, which by the manufacturers, landowners, officials is collected from the profit in the factories, or from the land, or from the taxes.

Thus millions of workmen have submitted to these women, because one man has taken possession of a factory, in which people work, another has taken possession of the land, while a third has seized the taxes, which are collected from the laboring classes. It is this that produced that which I saw about the foundry.

The peasants ploughed somebody else's field, because they have not enough land, and he who owns the land permits them to use his land only on condition that they work for him. The stone-breakers broke rock, because only by means of this work were they able to pay the taxes demanded of them. In the foundry and in the mines the people worked, because the earth from which the ore is extracted and the smelter where it is smelted do not belong to them.

All these working people do hard work, not for them- selves, because the rich have taken possession of the land, collect taxes, and own the plants.

SOURCE:

Tolstoy, Lev N., Complete Works: Letters and Essays, Vol. 23-24, p. 202-5.
Translated by Leo Wiener, Willey Book Co., New York, 1904.

(From) Principles of Psychology -- by William James

. · 23 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

- We observe an identical difference between men as a whole and women as a whole. A young woman of twenty reacts with intuitive promptitude and security in all the usual circumstances in which she may be placed. Her likes and dislikes are formed; her opinions, to a great extent, the same that they will be through life. Her character is, in fact, finished in its essentials. How inferior to her is a boy of twenty in all these respects! His character is still gelatinous, uncertain what shape to assume, "trying it on" in every direction. Feeling his power, yet ignorant of the manner in which he shall express it, he is, when compared with his sister, a being of no definite contour. But this absence of prompt tendency in his brain to set into particular modes is the very condition which insures that it shall ultimately become so much more efficient than the woman's. The very lack of preappointed trains of thought is the ground on which general principles and heads of classification grow up; and the masculine brain deals with new and complex matter indirectly by means of these, in a manner which the feminine method of direct intuition, admirably and rapidly as it performs within its limits, can vainly hope to cope with.

- Women take offense and get angry, if anything, more easily than men, but their anger is inhibited by fear and other principles of their nature from expressing itself in blows.

- The consciousness of how one stands with other people occupies a relatively larger and larger part of the mind, the lower one goes on the scale of culture. Woman's intuition, so fine in the sphere of personal relations, is seldom first-rate in the way of mechanics. Hence Dr. Whately's jest, "Woman is the unreasoning animal, and pokes the fire from the top."

(From) New Introductory Lectures on Psycho-Analysis -- by Sigmund Freud

. · 23 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

One might make an attempt to characterize femininity psychologically by saying that it involves a preference for passive aims. That is naturally not the same as passivity; it may require a good deal of activity to achieve a passive end. It may be that the part played by women in the sexual function leads them to incline towards passive behaviour and passive aims, and that this inclination extends into their ordinary life to a greater or less degree, according to whether the influence of her sexual life as a model is limited or far-reaching. But we must take care not to underestimate the influence of social conventions, which also force women into passive situations. The whole thing is still very obscure. We must not overlook one particularly constant relation between femininity and instinctual life. The repression of their aggressiveness, which is imposed upon women by their constitutions and by society, favours the development of strong masochistic impulses, which have the effect of binding erotically the destructive tendencies which have been turned inwards. Masochism is, then, as they say, truly feminine. But when, as so often happens, you meet with masochism in men, what else can you do but say that these men display obvious feminine traits?

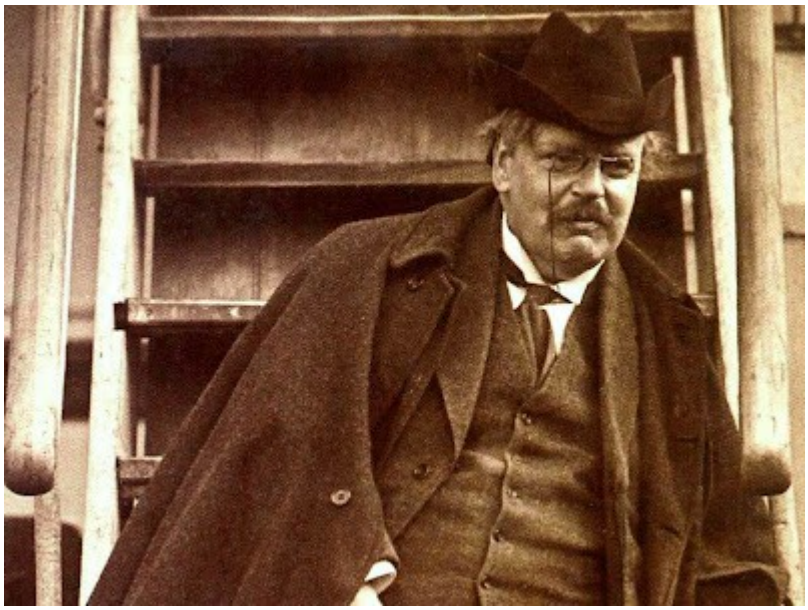
- The only thing that brings a mother undiluted satisfaction is her relation to a son; it is quite the most complete relationship between human beings, and the one that is the most free from ambivalence. The mother can transfer to her son all the ambition which she has had to suppress in herself, and she can hope to get from him the satisfaction of all that has remained to her of her masculinity complex. Even a marriage is not firmly assured until the woman has succeeded in making her husband into her child and in acting the part of a mother towards him.

- It must be admitted that women have but little sense of justice, and this is no doubt connected with the preponderance of envy in their mental life; for the demands of justice are a modification of envy; they lay down the conditions under which one is willing to part with it. We say also of women that their social interests are weaker than those of men, and that their capacity for the sublimation of their instincts is less. The former is no doubt derived from the unsocial character which undoubtedly attaches to all sexual relationships. Lovers find complete satisfaction in each other, and even the family resists absorption into wider organization. The capacity for sublimation is subject to the greatest individual variations.

In spite of this I cannot refrain from mentioning an impression which one receives over and over again in analytic work. A man of about thirty seems a youthful, and, in a sense, an incompletely developed individual, of whom we expect that he will be able to make good use of the possibilities of development, which analysis lays open to him. But a woman of about the same age frequently staggers us by her psychological rigidity and unchangeability. Her libido has taken up its final positions and seems powerless to leave them for others. There are no paths open to her for further development; it is as though the whole process had been gone through and remained inaccessible to influence for the future; as though, in fact, the difficult development which leads to femininity had exhausted all the possibilities of the individual. As therapeutists, we deplore this state of affairs, even when we are successful in removing her sufferings by solving her neurotic conflict.

What's Wrong With The World -- by G.K. Chesterton (excerpts)

. · 24 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original



Part One: The Homelessness of Man

Part Two: Imperialism, or The Mistake About Man

II Wisdom And The Weather

.

III The Common Vision

Part Three: Feminism, or The Mistake About Woman

I The Unmilitary Suffragette

II. The Universal Stick

III. The Emancipation of Domesticity

IV. The Romance of Thrift

V. The Coldness of Chloe

VI. The Pedant and the Savage

VII. The Modern Surrender of Woman

VIII. The Brand of the Fleur-de-lis

IX. Sincerity and the Gallows

X. The Higher Anarchy

XI. The Queen and the Suffragettes

XII. The Modern Slave

Part Four: Education: Or, the Mistake About the Child

V. An Evil Cry

XIV. Folly and Female Education

Three Notes

I. On Female Suffrage

Part One: The Homelessness of Man -- by G.K. Chesterton

. · 24 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

VIII

.... there is a plutocratic assumption behind the phrase "Why should woman be economically dependent upon man?" The answer is that among poor and practical people she isn't; except in the sense in which he is dependent upon her. A hunter has to tear his clothes; there must be somebody to mend them. A fisher has to catch fish; there must be somebody to cook them. It is surely quite clear that this modern notion that woman is a mere "pretty clinging parasite," "a plaything," etc., arose through the somber contemplation of some rich banking family, in which the banker, at least, went to the city and pretended to do something, while the banker's wife went to the Park and did not pretend to do anything at all. A poor man and his wife are a business partnership. If one partner in a firm of publishers interviews the authors while the other interviews the clerks, is one of them economically dependent? Was Hodder a pretty parasite clinging to Stoughton? Was Marshall a mere plaything for Snelgrove?

But of all the modern notions generated by mere wealth the worst is this: the notion that domesticity is dull and tame. Inside the home (they say) is dead decorum and routine; outside is adventure and variety. This is indeed a rich man's opinion. The rich man knows that his own house moves on vast and soundless wheels of wealth, is run by regiments of servants, by a swift and silent ritual. On the other hand, every sort of vagabondage of romance is open to him in the streets outside. He has plenty of money and can afford to be a tramp. His wildest adventure will end in a restaurant, while the yokel's tamest adventure may end in a police-court. If he smashes a window he can pay for it; if he smashes a man he can pension him. He can (like the millionaire in the story) buy an hotel to get a glass of gin. And because he, the luxurious man, dictates the tone of nearly all "advanced" and "progressive" thought, we have almost forgotten what a home really means to the overwhelming millions of mankind.

For the truth is, that to the moderately poor the home is the only place of liberty. Nay, it is the only place of anarchy. It is the only spot on the earth where a man can alter arrangements suddenly, make an experiment or indulge in a whim. Everywhere else he goes he must accept the strict rules of the shop, inn, club, or museum that he happens to enter. He can eat his meals on the floor in his own house if he likes. I often do it myself; it gives a curious, childish, poetic, picnic feeling. There would be considerable trouble if I tried to do it in an A.B.C. tea-shop. A man can wear a dressing gown and slippers in his house; while I am sure that this would not be permitted at the Savoy, though I never actually tested the point. If you go to a restaurant you must drink some of the wines on the wine list, all of them if you insist, but certainly some of them. But if you have a house and garden you can try to make hollyhock tea or convolvulus wine if you like. For a plain, hard-working man the home is not the one tame place in the world of adventure. It is the one wild place in the world of rules and set tasks. The home is the one place where he can put the carpet on the ceiling or the slates on the floor if he wants to. When a man spends every night staggering from bar to bar or from music-hall to music-hall, we say that he is living an irregular life. But he is not; he is living a highly regular life, under the dull, and often oppressive, laws of such places. Some times he is not allowed even to sit down in the bars; and frequently he is not allowed to sing in the music-halls. Hotels may be defined as places where you are forced to dress; and theaters may be defined as places where you are forbidden to smoke. A man can only picnic at home.

G.K. Chesterton Index Next

II Wisdom And The Weather -- by G.K. Chesterton

. · 24 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

.... The old writers were entirely wise when they talked of the equality of men; but they were also very wise in not mentioning women. Women are always authoritarian; they are always above or below; that is why marriage is a sort of poetical see-saw. There are only three things in the world that women do not understand; and they are Liberty, Equality, and Fraternity. But men (a class little understood in the modern world) find these things the breath of their nostrils; and our most learned ladies will not even begin to understand them until they make allowance for this kind of cool camaraderie. Lastly, it contains the third quality of the weather, the insistence upon the body and its indispensable satisfaction. No one has even begun to understand comradeship who does not accept with it a certain hearty eagerness in eating, drinking, or smoking, an uproarious materialism which to many women appears only hoggish. You may call the thing an orgy or a sacrament; it is certainly an essential. It is at root a resistance to the superciliousness of the individual. Nay, its very swaggering and howling are humble. In the heart of its rowdiness there is a sort of mad modesty; a desire to melt the separate soul into the mass of unpretentious masculinity. It is a clamorous confession of the weakness of all flesh. No man must be superior to the things that are common to men. This sort of equality must be bodily and gross and comic. Not only are we all in the same boat, but we are all seasick.

The word comradeship just now promises to become as fatuous as the word "affinity." There are clubs of a Socialist sort where all the members, men and women, call each other "Comrade." I have no serious emotions, hostile or otherwise, about this particular habit: at the worst it is conventionality, and at the best flirtation. I am convinced here only to point out a rational principle. If you choose to lump all flowers together, lilies and dahlias and tulips and chrysanthemums and call them all daisies, you will find that you have spoiled the very fine word daisy. If you choose to call every human attachment comradeship, if you include under that name the respect of a youth for a venerable prophetess, the interest of a man in a beautiful woman who baffles him, the pleasure of a philosophical old fogy in a girl who is impudent and innocent, the end of the meanest quarrel or the beginning of the most mountainous love; if you are going to call all these comradeship, you will gain nothing, you will only lose a word. Daisies are obvious and universal and open; but they are only one kind of flower. Comradeship is obvious and universal and open; but it is only one kind of affection; it has characteristics that would destroy any other kind. Anyone who has known true comradeship in a club or in a regiment, knows that it is impersonal. There is a pedantic phrase used in debating clubs which is strictly true to the masculine emotion; they call it "speaking to the question." Women speak to each other; men speak to the subject they are speaking about. Many an honest man has sat in a ring of his five best friends under heaven and forgotten who was in the room while he explained some system. This is not peculiar to intellectual men; men are all theoretical, whether they are talking about God or about golf. Men are all impersonal; that is to say, republican. No one remembers after a really good talk who has said the good things. Every man speaks to a visionary multitude; a mystical cloud, that is called the club.

It is obvious that this cool and careless quality which is essential to the collective affection of males involves disadvantages and dangers. It leads to spitting; it leads to coarse speech; it must lead to these things so long as it is honorable; comradeship must be in some degree ugly. The moment beauty is mentioned in male friendship, the nostrils are stopped with the smell of abominable things. Friendship must be physically dirty if it is to be morally clean. It must be in its shirt sleeves. The chaos of habits that always goes with males when left entirely to themselves has only one honorable cure; and that is the strict discipline of a monastery. Anyone who has seen our unhappy young idealists in East End Settlements losing their collars in the wash and living on tinned salmon will fully understand why it was decided by the wisdom of St. Bernard or St. Benedict, that if men were to live without women, they must not live without rules. Something of the same sort of artificial exactitude, of course, is obtained in an army; and an army also has to be in many ways monastic; only that it has celibacy without chastity. But these things do not apply to normal married men. These have a quite sufficient restraint on their instinctive anarchy in the

savage common-sense of the other sex. There is only one very timid sort of man that is not afraid of women.

Previous G.K. Chesterton Index Next

III The Common Vision -- by G.K. Chesterton

. · 24 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

Now this masculine love of an open and level camaraderie is the life within all democracies and attempts to govern by debate; without it the republic would be a dead formula. Even as it is, of course, the spirit of democracy frequently differs widely from the letter, and a pothouse is often a better test than a Parliament. Democracy in its human sense is not arbitrament by the majority; it is not even arbitrament by everybody. It can be more nearly defined as arbitrament by anybody. I mean that it rests on that club habit of taking a total stranger for granted, of assuming certain things to be inevitably common to yourself and him. Only the things that anybody may be presumed to hold have the full authority of democracy. Look out of the window and notice the first man who walks by. The Liberals may have swept England with an over-whelming majority; but you would not stake a button that the man is a Liberal. The Bible may be read in all schools and respected in all law courts; but you would not bet a straw that he believes in the Bible. But you would bet your week's wages, let us say, that he believes in wearing clothes. You would bet that he believes that physical courage is a fine thing, or that parents have authority over children. Of course, he might be the millionth man who does not believe these things; if it comes to that, he might be the Bearded Lady dressed up as a man. But these prodigies are quite a different thing from any mere calculation of numbers. People who hold these views are not a minority, but a monstrosity. But of these universal dogmas that have full democratic authority the only test is this test of anybody. What you would observe before any newcomer in a tavern--that is the real English law. The first man you see from the window, he is the King of England.

The decay of taverns, which is but a part of the general decay of democracy, has undoubtedly weakened this masculine spirit of equality. I remember that a roomful of Socialists literally laughed when I told them that there were no two nobler words in all poetry than Public House. They thought it was a joke. Why they should think it a joke, since they want to make all houses public houses, I cannot imagine. But if anyone wishes to see the real rowdy egalitarianism which is necessary (to males, at least) he can find it as well as anywhere in the great old tavern disputes which come down to us in such books as Boswell's Johnson. It is worth while to mention that one name especially because the modern world in its morbidity has done it a strange injustice. The demeanor of Johnson, it is said, was "harsh and despotic." It was occasionally harsh, but it was never despotic. Johnson was not in the least a despot; Johnson was a demagogue, he shouted against a shouting crowd. The very fact that he wrangled with other people is proof that other people were allowed to wrangle with him. His very brutality was based on the idea of an equal scrimmage, like that of football. It is strictly true that he bawled and banged the table because he was a modest man. He was honestly afraid of being overwhelmed or even overlooked. Addison had exquisite manners and was the king of his company; he was polite to everybody; but superior to everybody; therefore he has been handed down forever in the immortal insult of Pope--

"Like Cato, give his little Senate laws And sit attentive to his own applause."

Johnson, so far from being king of his company, was a sort of Irish Member in his own Parliament. Addison was a courteous superior and was hated. Johnson was an insolent equal and therefore was loved by all who knew him, and handed down in a marvellous book, which is one of the mere miracles of love.

This doctrine of equality is essential to conversation; so much may be admitted by anyone who knows what conversation is. Once arguing at a table in a tavern the most famous man on earth would wish to be obscure, so that his brilliant remarks might blaze like the stars on the background of his obscurity. To anything worth calling a man nothing can be conceived more cold or cheerless than to be king of your company. But it may be said that in masculine sports and games, other than the great game of debate, there is definite emulation and eclipse. There is indeed emulation, but this is only an ardent sort of equality. Games are competitive, because that is the only way of making them exciting. But if anyone doubts that men must forever return to the ideal of equality, it is only

necessary to answer that there is such a thing as a handicap. If men exulted in mere superiority, they would seek to see how far such superiority could go; they would be glad when one strong runner came in miles ahead of all the rest. But what men like is not the triumph of superiors, but the struggle of equals; and, therefore, they introduce even into their competitive sports an artificial equality. It is sad to think how few of those who arrange our sporting handicaps can be supposed with any probability to realize that they are abstract and even severe republicans.

No; the real objection to equality and self-rule has nothing to do with any of these free and festive aspects of mankind; all men are democrats when they are happy. The philosophic opponent of democracy would substantially sum up his position by saying that it "will not work." Before going further, I will register in passing a protest against the assumption that working is the one test of humanity. Heaven does not work; it plays. Men are most themselves when they are free; and if I find that men are snobs in their work but democrats on their holidays, I shall take the liberty to believe their holidays. But it is this question of work which really perplexes the question of equality; and it is with that that we must now deal. Perhaps the truth can be put most pointedly thus: that democracy has one real enemy, and that is civilization. Those utilitarian miracles which science has made are anti-democratic, not so much in their perversion, or even in their practical result, as in their primary shape and purpose. The Frame-Breaking Rioters were right; not perhaps in thinking that machines would make fewer men workmen; but certainly in thinking that machines would make fewer men masters. More wheels do mean fewer handles; fewer handles do mean fewer hands. The machinery of science must be individualistic and isolated. A mob can shout round a palace; but a mob cannot shout down a telephone. The specialist appears and democracy is half spoiled at a stroke.

Previous G.K. Chesterton Index Next

I. The Unmilitary Suffragette -- by G.K. Chesterton

. · 24 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

It will be better to adopt in this chapter the same process that appeared a piece of mental justice in the last. My general opinions on the feminine question are such as many suffragists would warmly approve; and it would be easy to state them without any open reference to the current controversy. But just as it seemed more decent to say first that I was not in favor of Imperialism even in its practical and popular sense, so it seems more decent to say the same of Female Suffrage, in its practical and popular sense. In other words, it is only fair to state, however hurriedly, the superficial objection to the Suffragettes before we go on to the really subtle questions behind the Suffrage.

Well, to get this honest but unpleasant business over, the objection to the Suffragettes is not that they are Militant Suffragettes. On the contrary, it is that they are not militant enough. A revolution is a military thing; it has all the military virtues; one of which is that it comes to an end. Two parties fight with deadly weapons, but under certain rules of arbitrary honor; the party that wins becomes the government and proceeds to govern. The aim of civil war, like the aim of all war, is peace. Now the Suffragettes cannot raise civil war in this soldierly and decisive sense; first, because they are women; and, secondly, because they are very few women. But they can raise something else; which is altogether another pair of shoes. They do not create revolution; what they do create is anarchy; and the difference between these is not a question of violence, but a question of fruitfulness and finality. Revolution of its nature produces government; anarchy only produces more anarchy. Men may have what opinions they please about the beheading of King Charles or King Louis, but they cannot deny that Bradshaw and Cromwell ruled, that Carnot and Napoleon governed. Someone conquered; something occurred. You can only knock off the King's head once. But you can knock off the King's hat any number of times. Destruction is finite, obstruction is infinite: so long as rebellion takes the form of mere disorder (instead of an attempt to enforce a new order) there is no logical end to it; it can feed on itself and renew itself forever. If Napoleon had not wanted to be a Consul, but only wanted to be a nuisance, he could, possibly, have prevented any government arising successfully out of the Revolution. But such a proceeding would not have deserved the dignified name of rebellion.

It is exactly this unmilitant quality in the Suffragettes that makes their superficial problem. The problem is that their action has none of the advantages of ultimate violence; it does not afford a test. War is a dreadful thing; but it does prove two points sharply and unanswerably--numbers, and an unnatural valor. One does discover the two urgent matters; how many rebels there are alive, and how many are ready to be dead. But a tiny minority, even an interested minority, may maintain mere disorder forever. There is also, of course, in the case of these women, the further falsity that is introduced by their sex. It is false to state the matter as a mere brutal question of strength. If his muscles give a man a vote, then his horse ought to have two votes and his elephant five votes. The truth is more subtle than that; it is that bodily outbreak is a man's instinctive weapon, like the hoofs to the horse or the tusks to the elephant. All riot is a threat of war; but the woman is brandishing a weapon she can never use. There are many weapons that she could and does use. If (for example) all the women nagged for a vote they would get it in a month. But there again, one must remember, it would be necessary to get all the women to nag. And that brings us to the end of the political surface of the matter. The working objection to the Suffragette philosophy is simply that overmastering millions of women do not agree with it. I am aware that some maintain that women ought to have votes whether the majority wants them or not; but this is surely a strange and childish case of setting up formal democracy to the destruction of actual democracy. What should the mass of women decide if they do not decide their general place in the State? These people practically say that females may vote about everything except about Female Suffrage.

But having again cleared my conscience of my merely political and possibly unpopular opinion, I will again cast back and try to treat the matter in a slower and more sympathetic style; attempt to trace the real roots of woman's

position in the western state, and the causes of our existing traditions or perhaps prejudices upon the point. And for this purpose it is again necessary to travel far from the modern topic, the mere Suffragette of today, and to go back to subjects which, though much more old, are, I think, considerably more fresh.

Previous G.K. Chesterton Index Next

II. The Universal Stick -- by G.K. Chesterton

. · 24 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

Cast your eye round the room in which you sit, and select some three or four things that have been with man almost since his beginning; which at least we hear of early in the centuries and often among the tribes. Let me suppose that you see a knife on the table, a stick in the corner, or a fire on the hearth. About each of these you will notice one speciality; that not one of them is special. Each of these ancestral things is a universal thing; made to supply many different needs; and while tottering pedants nose about to find the cause and origin of some old custom, the truth is that it had fifty causes or a hundred origins. The knife is meant to cut wood, to cut cheese, to cut pencils, to cut throats; for a myriad ingenious or innocent human objects. The stick is meant partly to hold a man up, partly to knock a man down; partly to point with like a finger-post, partly to balance with like a balancing pole, partly to trifle with like a cigarette, partly to kill with like a club of a giant; it is a crutch and a cudgel; an elongated finger and an extra leg. The case is the same, of course, with the fire; about which the strangest modern views have arisen. A queer fancy seems to be current that a fire exists to warm people. It exists to warm people, to light their darkness, to raise their spirits, to toast their muffins, to air their rooms, to cook their chestnuts, to tell stories to their children, to make checkered shadows on their walls, to boil their hurried kettles, and to be the red heart of a man's house and that hearth for which, as the great heathens said, a man should die.

Now it is the great mark of our modernity that people are always proposing substitutes for these old things; and these substitutes always answer one purpose where the old thing answered ten. The modern man will wave a cigarette instead of a stick; he will cut his pencil with a little screwing pencil-sharpener instead of a knife; and he will even boldly offer to be warmed by hot water pipes instead of a fire. I have my doubts about pencil-sharpeners even for sharpening pencils; and about hot water pipes even for heat. But when we think of all those other requirements that these institutions answered, there opens before us the whole horrible harlequinade of our civilization. We see as in a vision a world where a man tries to cut his throat with a pencil-sharpener; where a man must learn single-stick with a cigarette; where a man must try to toast muffins at electric lamps, and see red and golden castles in the surface of hot water pipes.

The principle of which I speak can be seen everywhere in a comparison between the ancient and universal things and the modern and specialist things. The object of a theodolite is to lie level; the object of a stick is to swing loose at any angle; to whirl like the very wheel of liberty. The object of a lancet is to lance; when used for slashing, gashing, ripping, lopping off heads and limbs, it is a disappointing instrument. The object of an electric light is merely to light (a despicable modesty); and the object of an asbestos stove . . . I wonder what is the object of an asbestos stove? If a man found a coil of rope in a desert he could at least think of all the things that can be done with a coil of rope; and some of them might even be practical. He could tow a boat or lasso a horse. He could play cat's-cradle, or pick oakum. He could construct a rope-ladder for an eloping heiress, or cord her boxes for a travelling maiden aunt. He could learn to tie a bow, or he could hang himself. Far otherwise with the unfortunate traveller who should find a telephone in the desert. You can telephone with a telephone; you cannot do anything else with it. And though this is one of the wildest joys of life, it falls by one degree from its full delirium when there is nobody to answer you. The contention is, in brief, that you must pull up a hundred roots, and not one, before you uproot any of these hoary and simple expedients. It is only with great difficulty that a modem scientific sociologist can be got to see that any old method has a leg to stand on. But almost every old method has four or five legs to stand on. Almost all the old institutions are quadrupeds; and some of them are centipedes.

Consider these cases, old and new, and you will observe the operation of a general tendency. Everywhere there was one big thing that served six purposes; everywhere now there are six small things; or, rather (and there is the trouble), there are just five and a half. Nevertheless, we will not say that this separation and specialism is entirely useless or inexcusable. I have often thanked God for the telephone; I may any day thank God for the lancet; and

there is none of these brilliant and narrow inventions (except, of course, the asbestos stove) which might not be at some moment necessary and lovely. But I do not think the most austere upholder of specialism will deny that there is in these old, many-sided institutions an element of unity and universality which may well be preserved in its due proportion and place. Spiritually, at least, it will be admitted that some all-round balance is needed to equalize the extravagance of experts. It would not be difficult to carry the parable of the knife and stick into higher regions. Religion, the immortal maiden, has been a maid-of-all-work as well as a servant of mankind. She provided men at once with the theoretic laws of an unalterable cosmos and also with the practical rules of the rapid and thrilling game of morality. She taught logic to the student and told fairy tales to the children; it was her business to confront the nameless gods whose fears are on all flesh, and also to see the streets were spotted with silver and scarlet, that there was a day for wearing ribbons or an hour for ringing bells. The large uses of religion have been broken up into lesser specialities, just as the uses of the hearth have been broken up into hot water pipes and electric bulbs. The romance of ritual and colored emblem has been taken over by that narrowest of all trades, modem art (the sort called art for art's sake), and men are in modern practice informed that they may use all symbols so long as they mean nothing by them. The romance of conscience has been dried up into the science of ethics; which may well be called decency for decency's sake, decency unborn of cosmic energies and barren of artistic flower. The cry to the dim gods, cut off from ethics and cosmology, has become mere Psychical Research. Everything has been sundered from everything else, and everything has grown cold. Soon we shall hear of specialists dividing the tune from the words of a song, on the ground that they spoil each other; and I did once meet a man who openly advocated the separation of almonds and raisins. This world is all one wild divorce court; nevertheless, there are many who still hear in their souls the thunder of authority of human habit; those whom Man hath joined let no man sunder.

This book must avoid religion, but there must (I say) be many, religious and irreligious, who will concede that this power of answering many purposes was a sort of strength which should not wholly die out of our lives. As a part of personal character, even the moderns will agree that many-sidedness is a merit and a merit that may easily be overlooked. This balance and universality has been the vision of many groups of men in many ages. It was the Liberal Education of Aristotle; the jack-of-all-trades artistry of Leonardo da Vinci and his friends; the august amateurishness of the Cavalier Person of Quality like Sir William Temple or the great Earl of Dorset. It has appeared in literature in our time in the most erratic and opposite shapes, set to almost inaudible music by Walter Pater and enunciated through a foghorn by Walt Whitman. But the great mass of men have always been unable to achieve this literal universality, because of the nature of their work in the world. Not, let it be noted, because of the existence of their work. Leonardo da Vinci must have worked pretty hard; on the other hand, many a government office clerk, village constable or elusive plumber may do (to all human appearance) no work at all, and yet show no signs of the Aristotelian universalism. What makes it difficult for the average man to be a universalist is that the average man has to be a specialist; he has not only to learn one trade, but to learn it so well as to uphold him in a more or less ruthless society. This is generally true of males from the first hunter to the last electrical engineer; each has not merely to act, but to excel. Nimrod has not only to be a mighty hunter before the Lord, but also a mighty hunter before the other hunters. The electrical engineer has to be a very electrical engineer, or he is outstripped by engineers yet more electrical. Those very miracles of the human mind on which the modern world prides itself, and rightly in the main, would be impossible without a certain concentration which disturbs the pure balance of reason more than does religious bigotry. No creed can be so limiting as that awful adjuration that the cobbler must not go beyond his last. So the largest and wildest shots of our world are but in one direction and with a defined trajectory: the gunner cannot go beyond his shot, and his shot so often falls short; the astronomer cannot go beyond his telescope and his telescope goes such a little way. All these are like men who have stood on the high peak of a mountain and seen the horizon like a single ring and who then descend down different paths towards different towns, traveling slow or fast. It is right; there must be people traveling to different towns; there must be specialists; but shall no one behold the horizon? Shall all mankind be specialist surgeons or peculiar plumbers; shall all humanity be monomaniac? Tradition has decided that only half of humanity shall be monomaniac. It has decided that in every home there shall be a tradesman and a Jack-of all-trades. But it has also decided, among other things, that the Jack of-all-trades shall be a Gill-of-all-trades. It has decided, rightly or wrongly, that this specialism and

this universalism shall be divided between the sexes. Cleverness shall be left for men and wisdom for women. For cleverness kills wisdom; that is one of the few sad and certain things.

But for women this ideal of comprehensive capacity (or common-sense) must long ago have been washed away. It must have melted in the frightful furnaces of ambition and eager technicality. A man must be partly a one-ideal man, because he is a one-weaponed man--and he is flung naked into the fight. The world's demand comes to him direct; to his wife indirectly. In short, he must (as the books on Success say) give "his best"; and what a small part of a man "his best" is! His second and third best are often much better. If he is the first violin he must fiddle for life; he must not remember that he is a fine fourth bagpipe, a fair fifteenth billiard-cue, a foil, a fountain pen, a hand at whist, a gun, and an image of God.

Previous G.K. Chesterton Index Next

III. The Emancipation of Domesticity -- by G.K. Chesterton

. · 24 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

And it should be remarked in passing that this force upon a man to develop one feature has nothing to do with what is commonly called our competitive system, but would equally exist under any rationally conceivable kind of Collectivism. Unless the Socialists are frankly ready for a fall in the standard of violins, telescopes and electric lights, they must somehow create a moral demand on the individual that he shall keep up his present concentration on these things. It was only by men being in some degree specialist that there ever were any telescopes; they must certainly be in some degree specialist in order to keep them going. It is not by making a man a State wage-earner that you can prevent him thinking principally about the very difficult way he earns his wages. There is only one way to preserve in the world that high levity and that more leisurely outlook which fulfils the old vision of universalism. That is, to permit the existence of a partly protected half of humanity; a half which the harassing industrial demand troubles indeed, but only troubles indirectly. In other words, there must be in every center of humanity one human being upon a larger plan; one who does not "give her best," but gives her all.

Our old analogy of the fire remains the most workable one. The fire need not blaze like electricity nor boil like boiling water; its point is that it blazes more than water and warms more than light. The wife is like the fire, or to put things in their proper proportion, the fire is like the wife. Like the fire, the woman is expected to cook: not to excel in cooking, but to cook; to cook better than her husband who is earning the coke by lecturing on botany or breaking stones. Like the fire, the woman is expected to tell tales to the children, not original and artistic tales, but tales-- better tales than would probably be told by a first-class cook. Like the fire, the woman is expected to illuminate and ventilate, not by the most startling revelations or the wildest winds of thought, but better than a man can do it after breaking stones or lecturing. But she cannot be expected to endure anything like this universal duty if she is also to endure the direct cruelty of competitive or bureaucratic toil. Woman must be a cook, but not a competitive cook; a school mistress, but not a competitive schoolmistress; a house-decorator but not a competitive house-decorator; a dressmaker, but not a competitive dressmaker. She should have not one trade but twenty hobbies; she, unlike the man, may develop all her second bests. This is what has been really aimed at from the first in what is called the seclusion, or even the oppression, of women. Women were not kept at home in order to keep them narrow; on the contrary, they were kept at home in order to keep them broad. The world outside the home was one mass of narrowness, a maze of cramped paths, a madhouse of monomaniacs. It was only by partly limiting and protecting the woman that she was enabled to play at five or six professions and so come almost as near to God as the child when he plays at a hundred trades. But the woman's professions, unlike the child's, were all truly and almost terribly fruitful; so tragically real that nothing but her universality and balance prevented them [from] being merely morbid. This is the substance of the contention I offer about the historic female position. I do not deny that women have been wronged and even tortured; but I doubt if they were ever tortured so much as they are tortured now by the absurd modern attempt to make them domestic empresses and competitive clerks at the same time. I do not deny that even under the old tradition women had a harder time than men; that is why we take off our hats. I do not deny that all these various female functions were exasperating; but I say that there was some aim and meaning in keeping them various. I do not pause even to deny that woman was a servant; but at least she was a general servant.

The shortest way of summarizing the position is to say that woman stands for the idea of Sanity; that intellectual home to which the mind must return after every excursion on extravagance. The mind that finds its way to wild places is the poet's; but the mind that never finds its way back is the lunatic's. There must in every machine be a part that moves and a part that stands still; there must be in everything that changes a part that is unchangeable. And many of the phenomena which moderns hastily condemn are really parts of this position of the woman as the center and pillar of health. Much of what is called her subservience, and even her pliability, is merely the subservience and pliability of a universal remedy; she varies as medicines vary, with the disease. She has to be an optimist to the

morbid husband, a salutary pessimist to the happy-go-lucky husband. She has to prevent the Quixote from being put upon, and the bully from putting upon others.
The French King wrote--

"Toujours femme varie Bien fol qui s'y fie,"

but the truth is that woman always varies, and that is exactly why we always trust her. To correct every adventure and extravagance with its antidote in common-sense is not (as the moderns seem to think) to be in the position of a spy or a slave. It is to be in the position of Aristotle or (at the lowest) Herbert Spencer, to be a universal morality, a complete system of thought. The slave flatters; the complete moralist rebukes. It is, in short, to be a Trimmer in the true sense of that honorable term; which for some reason or other is always used in a sense exactly opposite to its own. It seems really to be supposed that a Trimmer means a cowardly person who always goes over to the stronger side. It really means a highly chivalrous person who always goes over to the weaker side; like one who trims a boat by sitting where there are few people seated. Woman is a trimmer; and it is a generous, dangerous and romantic trade.

The final fact which fixes this is a sufficiently plain one. Supposing it to be conceded that humanity has acted at least not unnaturally in dividing itself into two halves, respectively typifying the ideals of special talent and of general sanity (since they are genuinely difficult to combine completely in one mind), it is not difficult to see why the line of cleavage has followed the line of sex, or why the female became the emblem of the universal and the male of the special and superior. Two gigantic facts of nature fixed it thus: first, that the woman who frequently fulfilled her functions literally could not be specially prominent in experiment and adventure; and second, that the same natural operation surrounded her with very young children, who require to be taught not so much anything as everything. Babies need not to be taught a trade, but to be introduced to a world. To put the matter shortly, woman is generally shut up in a house with a human being at the time when he asks all the questions that there are, and some that there aren't. It would be odd if she retained any of the narrowness of a specialist. Now if anyone says that this duty of general enlightenment (even when freed from modern rules and hours, and exercised more spontaneously by a more protected person) is in itself too exacting and oppressive, I can understand the view. I can only answer that our race has thought it worth while to cast this burden on women in order to keep common-sense in the world. But when people begin to talk about this domestic duty as not merely difficult but trivial and dreary, I simply give up the question. For I cannot with the utmost energy of imagination conceive what they mean. When domesticity, for instance, is called drudgery, all the difficulty arises from a double meaning in the word. If drudgery only means dreadfully hard work, I admit the woman drudges in the home, as a man might drudge at the Cathedral of Amiens or drudge behind a gun at Trafalgar. But if it means that the hard work is more heavy because it is trifling, colorless and of small import to the soul, then as I say, I give it up; I do not know what the words mean. To be Queen Elizabeth within a definite area, deciding sales, banquets, labors and holidays; to be Whiteley within a certain area, providing toys, boots, sheets cakes[,] and books, to be Aristotle within a certain area, teaching morals, manners, theology, and hygiene; I can understand how this might exhaust the mind, but I cannot imagine how it could narrow it. How can it be a large career to tell other people's children about the Rule of Three, and a small career to tell one's own children about the universe? How can it be broad to be the same thing to everyone, and narrow to be everything to someone? No; a woman's function is laborious, but because it is gigantic, not because it is minute[.] I will pity Mrs. Jones for the hugeness of her task; I will never pity her for its smallness.

But though the essential of the woman's task is universality, this does not, of course, prevent her from having one or two severe though largely wholesome prejudices. She has, on the whole, been more conscious than man that she is only one half of humanity; but she has expressed it (if one may say so of a lady) by getting her teeth into the two or three things which she thinks she stands for. I would observe here in parenthesis that much of the recent official trouble about women has arisen from the fact that they transfer to things of doubt and reason that sacred stubbornness only proper to the primary things which a woman was set to guard. One's own children, one's own

altar, ought to be a matter of principle-- or if you like, a matter of prejudice. On the other hand, who wrote Junius's Letters ought not to be a principle or a prejudice, it ought to be a matter of free and almost indifferent inquiry. But take an energetic modern girl secretary to a league to show that George III wrote Junius, and in three months she will believe it, too, out of mere loyalty to her employers. Modern women defend their office with all the fierceness of domesticity. They fight for desk and typewriter as for hearth and home, and develop a sort of wolfish wifehood on behalf of the invisible head of the firm. That is why they do office work so well; and that is why they ought not to do it.

Previous G.K. Chesterton Index Next

IV. The Romance of Thrift -- by G.K. Chesterton

. · 24 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

The larger part of womankind, however, have had to fight for things slightly more intoxicating to the eye than the desk or the typewriter; and it cannot be denied that in defending these, women have developed the quality called prejudice to a powerful and even menacing degree. But these prejudices will always be found to fortify the main position of the woman, that she is to remain a general overseer, an autocrat within small compass but on all sides. On the one or two points on which she really misunderstands the man's position, it is almost entirely in order to preserve her own. The two points on which woman, actually and of herself, is most tenacious may be roughly summarized as the ideal of thrift and the ideal of dignity[.]

Unfortunately for this book it is written by a male, and these two qualities, if not hateful to a man, are at least hateful in a man. But if we are to settle the sex question at all fairly, all males must make an imaginative attempt to enter into the attitude of all good women toward these two things. The difficulty exists especially, perhaps, in the thing called thrift; we men have so much encouraged each other in throwing money right and left, that there has come at last to be a sort of chivalrous and poetical air about losing sixpence. But on a broader and more candid consideration the case scarcely stands so.

Thrift is the really romantic thing; economy is more romantic than extravagance. Heaven knows I for one speak disinterestedly in the matter; for I cannot clearly remember saving a half-penny ever since I was born. But the thing is true; economy, properly understood, is the more poetic. Thrift is poetic because it is creative; waste is unpoetic because it is waste. It is prosaic to throw money away, because it is prosaic to throw anything away; it is negative; it is a confession of indifference, that is, it is a confession of failure. The most prosaic thing about the house is the dustbin, and the one great objection to the new fastidious and aesthetic homestead is simply that in such a moral menage the dustbin must be bigger than the house. If a man could undertake to make use of all things in his dustbin he would be a broader genius than Shakespeare. When science began to use by-products; when science found that colors could be made out of coaltar, she made her greatest and perhaps her only claim on the real respect of the human soul. Now the aim of the good woman is to use the by-products, or, in other words, to rummage in the dustbin.

A man can only fully comprehend it if he thinks of some sudden joke or expedient got up with such materials as may be found in a private house on a rainy day. A man's definite daily work is generally run with such rigid convenience of modern science that thrift, the picking up of potential helps here and there, has almost become unmeaning to him. He comes across it most (as I say) when he is playing some game within four walls; when in charades, a hearthrug will just do for a fur coat, or a tea-cozy just do for a cocked hat; when a toy theater needs timber and cardboard, and the house has just enough firewood and just enough bandboxes. This is the man's occasional glimpse and pleasing parody of thrift. But many a good housekeeper plays the same game every day with ends of cheese and scraps of silk, not because she is mean, but on the contrary, because she is magnanimous; because she wishes her creative mercy to be over all her works, that not one sardine should be destroyed, or cast as rubbish to the void, when she has made the pile complete.

The modern world must somehow be made to understand (in theology and other things) that a view may be vast, broad, universal, liberal and yet come into conflict with another view that is vast, broad, universal and liberal also. There is never a war between two sects, but only between two universal Catholic Churches. The only possible collision is the collision of one cosmos with another. So in a smaller way it must be first made clear that this female economic ideal is a part of that female variety of outlook and all-round art of life which we have already attributed to the sex: thrift is not a small or timid or provincial thing; it is part of that great idea of the woman watching on all sides out of all the windows of the soul and being answerable for everything. For in the average human house there

is one hole by which money comes in and a hundred by which it goes out; man has to do with the one hole, woman with the hundred. But though the very stinginess of a woman is a part of her spiritual breadth, it is none the less true that it brings her into conflict with the special kind of spiritual breadth that belongs to the males of the tribe. It brings her into conflict with that shapeless cataract of Comradeship, of chaotic feasting and deafening debate, which we noted in the last section. The very touch of the eternal in the two sexual tastes brings them the more into antagonism; for one stands for a universal vigilance and the other for an almost infinite output. Partly through the nature of his moral weakness, and partly through the nature or his physical strength, the male is normally prone to expand things into a sort of eternity; he always thinks of a dinner party as lasting all night; and he always thinks of a night as lasting forever. When the working women in the poor districts come to the doors of the public houses and try to get their husbands home, simple minded "social workers" always imagine that every husband is a tragic drunkard and every wife a broken-hearted saint. It never occurs to them that the poor woman is only doing under coarser conventions exactly what every fashionable hostess does when she tries to get the men from arguing over the cigars to come and gossip over the teacups. These women are not exasperated merely at the amount of money that is wasted in beer; they are exasperated also at the amount of time that is wasted in talk. It is not merely what goeth into the mouth but what cometh out the mouth that, in their opinion, defileth a man. They will raise against an argument (like their sisters of all ranks) the ridiculous objection that nobody is convinced by it; as if a man wanted to make a body-slave of anybody with whom he had played single-stick. But the real female prejudice on this point is not without a basis; the real feeling is this, that the most masculine pleasures have a quality of the ephemeral. A duchess may ruin a duke for a diamond necklace; but there is the necklace. A coster may ruin his wife for a pot of beer; and where is the beer? The duchess quarrels with another duchess in order to crush her, to produce a result; the coster does not argue with another coster in order to convince him, but in order to enjoy at once the sound of his own voice, the clearness of his own opinions and the sense of masculine society. There is this element of a fine fruitlessness about the male enjoyments; wine is poured into a bottomless bucket; thought plunges into a bottomless abyss. All this has set woman against the Public House--that is, against the Parliament House. She is there to prevent waste; and the "pub" and the parliament are the very palaces of waste. In the upper classes the "pub" is called the club, but that makes no more difference to the reason than it does to the rhyme. High and low, the woman's objection to the Public House is perfectly definite and rational, it is that the Public House wastes the energies that could be used on the private house.

As it is about feminine thrift against masculine waste, so it is about feminine dignity against masculine rowdiness. The woman has a fixed and very well-founded idea that if she does not insist on good manners nobody else will. Babies are not always strong on the point of dignity, and grown-up men are quite unpresentable. It is true that there are many very polite men, but none that I ever heard of who were not either fascinating women or obeying them. But indeed the female ideal of dignity, like the female ideal of thrift, lies deeper and may easily be misunderstood. It rests ultimately on a strong idea of spiritual isolation; the same that makes women religious. They do not like being melted down; they dislike and avoid the mob[.] That anonymous quality we have remarked in the club conversation would be common impertinence in a case of ladies. I remember an artistic and eager lady asking me in her grand green drawing-room whether I believed in comradeship between the sexes, and why not. I was driven back on offering the obvious and sincere answer "Because if I were to treat you for two minutes like a comrade you would turn me out of the house." The only certain rule on this subject is always to deal with woman and never with women. "Women" is a profligate word; I have used it repeatedly in this chapter; but it always has a blackguard sound. It smells of oriental cynicism and hedonism. Every woman is a captive queen. But every crowd of women is only a harem broken loose.

I am not expressing my own views here, but those of nearly all the women I have known. It is quite unfair to say that a woman hates other women individually; but I think it would be quite true to say that she detests them in a confused heap. And this is not because she despises her own sex, but because she respects it; and respects especially that sanctity and separation of each item which is represented in manners by the idea of dignity and in morals by the idea of chastity.

Previous G.K. Chesterton Index Next

V. The Coldness of Chloe -- by G.K. Chesterton

. · 24 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

We hear much of the human error which accepts what is sham and what is real. But it is worth while to remember that with unfamiliar things we often mistake what is real for what is sham. It is true that a very young man may think the wig of an actress is her hair. But it is equally true that a child yet younger may call the hair of a negro his wig. Just because the woolly savage is remote and barbaric he seems to be unnaturally neat and tidy. Everyone must have noticed the same thing in the fixed and almost offensive color of all unfamiliar things, tropic birds and tropic blossoms. Tropic birds look like staring toys out of a toy-shop. Tropic flowers simply look like artificial flowers, like things cut out of wax. This is a deep matter, and, I think, not unconnected with divinity; but anyhow it is the truth that when we see things for the first time we feel instantly that they are fictive creations; we feel the finger of God. It is only when we are thoroughly used to them and our five wits are wearied, that we see them as wild and objectless; like the shapeless tree-tops or the shifting cloud. It is the design in Nature that strikes us first; the sense of the crosses and confusions in that design only comes afterwards through experience and an almost eerie monotony. If a man saw the stars abruptly by accident he would think them as festive and as artificial as a firework. We talk of the folly of painting the lily; but if we saw the lily without warning we should think that it was painted. We talk of the devil not being so black as he is painted; but that very phrase is a testimony to the kinship between what is called vivid and what is called artificial. If the modern sage had only one glimpse of grass and sky, he would say that grass was not as green as it was painted; that sky was not as blue as it was painted. If one could see the whole universe suddenly, it would look like a bright-colored toy, just as the South American hornbill looks like a bright-colored toy. And so they are--both of them, I mean.

But it was not with this aspect of the startling air of artifice about all strange objects that I meant to deal. I mean merely, as a guide to history, that we should not be surprised if things wrought in fashions remote from ours seem artificial; we should convince ourselves that nine times out of ten these things are nakedly and almost indecently honest. You will hear men talk of the frosted classicism of Corneille or of the powdered pomposities of the eighteenth century, but all these phrases are very superficial. There never was an artificial epoch. There never was an age of reason. Men were always men and women women: and their two generous appetites always were the expression of passion and the telling of truth. We can see something stiff and quaint in their mode of expression, just as our descendants will see something stiff and quaint in our coarsest slum sketch or our most naked pathological play. But men have never talked about anything but important things; and the next force in femininity which we have to consider can be considered best perhaps in some dusty old volume of verses by a person of quality.

The eighteenth century is spoken of as the period of artificiality, in externals at least; but, indeed, there may be two words about that. In modern speech one uses artificiality as meaning indefinitely a sort of deceit; and the eighteenth century was far too artificial to deceive. It cultivated that completest art that does not conceal the art. Its fashions and costumes positively revealed nature by allowing artifice; as in that obvious instance of a barbering that frosted every head with the same silver. It would be fantastic to call this a quaint humility that concealed youth; but, at least, it was not one with the evil pride that conceals old age. Under the eighteenth century fashion people did not so much all pretend to be young, as all agree to be old. The same applies to the most odd and unnatural of their fashions; they were freakish, but they were not false. A lady may or may not be as red as she is painted, but plainly she was not so black as she was patched.

But I only introduce the reader into this atmosphere of the older and franker fictions that he may be induced to have patience for a moment with a certain element which is very common in the decoration and literature of that age and of the two centuries preceding it. It is necessary to mention it in such a connection because it is exactly one of those things that look as superficial as powder, and are really as rooted as hair.

In all the old flowery and pastoral love-songs, those of the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries especially, you will find a perpetual reproach against woman in the matter of her coldness; ceaseless an stale similes that compare her eyes to northern stars, her heart to ice, or her bosom to snow. Now most of us have always supposed these old and iterant phrases to be a mere pattern of dead words, a thing like a cold wall-paper. Yet I think those old cavalier poets who wrote about the coldness of Chloe had hold of a psychological truth missed in nearly all the realistic novels of today. Our psychological romancers perpetually represent wives as striking terror into their husbands by rolling on the floor, gnashing their teeth, throwing about the furniture or poisoning the coffee; all this upon some strange fixed theory that women are what they call emotional. But in truth the old and frigid form is much nearer to the vital fact. Most men if they spoke with any sincerity would agree that the most terrible quality in women, whether in friendship, courtship or marriage, was not so much being emotional as being unemotional.

There is an awful armor of ice which may be the legitimate protection of a more delicate organism; but whatever be the psychological explanation there can surely be no question of the fact. The instinctive cry of the female in anger is noli me tangere. I take this as the most obvious and at the same time the least hackneyed instance of a fundamental quality in the female tradition, which has tended in our time to be almost immeasurably misunderstood, both by the cant of moralists and the cant of immoralists. The proper name for the thing is modesty; but as we live in an age of prejudice and must not call things by their right names, we will yield to a more modern nomenclature and call it dignity. Whatever else it is, it is the thing which a thousand poets and a million lovers have called the coldness of Chloe. It is akin to the classical, and is at least the opposite of the grotesque. And since we are talking here chiefly in types and symbols, perhaps as good an embodiment as any of the idea may be found in the mere fact of a woman wearing a skirt. It is highly typical of the rabid plagiarism which now passes everywhere for emancipation, that a little while ago it was common for an "advanced" woman to claim the right to wear trousers; a right about as grotesque as the right to wear a false nose. Whether female liberty is much advanced by the act of wearing a skirt on each leg I do not know; perhaps Turkish women might offer some information on the point. But if the western woman walks about (as it were) trailing the curtains of the harem with her, it is quite certain that the woven mansion is meant for a perambulating palace, not for a perambulating prison. It is quite certain that the skirt rneans female dignity, not female submission; it can be proved by the simplest of all tests. No ruler would deliberately dress up in the recognized fetters of a slave; no judge would appear covered with broad arrows. But when men wish to be safely impressive, as judges, priests or kings, they do wear skirts, the long, trailing robes of female dignity[.] The whole world is under petticoat government; for even men wear petticoats when they wish to govern.

Previous G.K. Chesterton Index Next

VI. The Pedant and the Savage - by G.K. Chesterton

. · 24 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

We say then that the female holds up with two strong arms these two pillars of civilization; we say also that she could do neither, but for her position; her curious position of private omnipotence, universality on a small scale. The first element is thrift; not the destructive thrift of the miser, but the creative thrift of the peasant; the second element is dignity, which is but the expression of sacred personality and privacy. Now I know the question that will be abruptly and automatically asked by all that know the dull tricks and turns of the modern sexual quarrel. The advanced person will at once begin to argue about whether these instincts are inherent and inevitable in woman or whether they are merely prejudices produced by her history and education. Now I do not propose to discuss whether woman could now be educated out of her habits touching thrift and dignity; and that for two excellent reasons. First it is a question which cannot conceivably ever find any answer: that is why modern people are so fond of it. From the nature of the case it is obviously impossible to decide whether any of the peculiarities of civilized man have been strictly necessary to his civilization. It is not self-evident (for instance), that even the habit of standing upright was the only path of human progress. There might have been a quadrupedal civilization, in which a city gentleman put on four boots to go to the city every morning. Or there might have been a reptilian civilization, in which he rolled up to the office on his stomach; it is impossible to say that intelligence might not have developed in such creatures. All we can say is that man as he is walks upright; and that woman is something almost more upright than uprightness.

And the second point is this: that upon the whole we rather prefer women (nay, even men) to walk upright; so we do not waste much of our noble lives in inventing any other way for them to walk. In short, my second reason for not speculating upon whether woman might get rid of these peculiarities, is that I do not want her to get rid of them; nor does she. I will not exhaust my intelligence by inventing ways in which mankind might unlearn the violin or forget how to ride horses; and the art of domesticity seems to me as special and as valuable as all the ancient arts of our race. Nor do I propose to enter at all into those formless and floundering speculations about how woman was or is regarded in the primitive times that we cannot remember, or in the savage countries which we cannot understand. Even if these people segregated their women for low or barbaric reasons it would not make our reasons barbaric; and I am haunted with a tenacious suspicion that these people's feelings were really, under other forms, very much the same as ours. Some impatient trader, some superficial missionary, walks across an island and sees the squaw digging in the fields while the man is playing a flute; and immediately says that the man is a mere lord of creation and the woman a mere serf. He does not remember that he might see the same thing in half the back gardens in Brixton, merely because women are at once more conscientious and more impatient, while men are at once more quiescent and more greedy for pleasure. It may often be in Hawaii simply as it is in Hoxton. That is, the woman does not work because the man tells her to work and she obeys. On the contrary, the woman works because she has told the man to work and he hasn't obeyed. I do not affirm that this is the whole truth, but I do affirm that we have too little comprehension of the souls of savages to know how far it is untrue. It is the same with the relations of our hasty and surface science, with the problem of sexual dignity and modesty. Professors find all over the world fragmentary ceremonies in which the bride affects some sort of reluctance, hides from her husband, or runs away from him. The professor then pompously proclaims that this is a survival of Marriage by Capture. I wonder he never says that the veil thrown over the bride is really a net. I gravely doubt whether women ever were married by capture I think they pretended to be; as they do still.

It is equally obvious that these two necessary sanctities of thrift and dignity are bound to come into collision with the wordiness, the wastefulness, and the perpetual pleasure-seeking of masculine companionship. Wise women allow for the thing; foolish women try to crush it; but all women try to counteract it, and they do well. In many a home all round us at this moment, we know that the nursery rhyme is reversed. The queen is in the counting-house, counting out the money. The king is in the parlor, eating bread and honey. But it must be strictly understood that

the king has captured the honey in some heroic wars. The quarrel can be found in moldering Gothic carvings and in crabbed Greek manuscripts. In every age, in every land, in every tribe and village, has been waged the great sexual war between the Private House and the Public House. I have seen a collection of mediaeval English poems, divided into sections such as "Religious Carols," "Drinking Songs," and so on; and the section headed, "Poems of Domestic Life" consisted entirely (literally, entirely) of the complaints of husbands who were bullied by their wives. Though the English was archaic, the words were in many cases precisely the same as those which I have heard in the streets and public houses of Battersea, protests on behalf of an extension of time and talk, protests against the nervous impatience and the devouring utilitarianism of the female. Such, I say, is the quarrel; it can never be anything but a quarrel; but the aim of all morals and all society is to keep it a lovers' quarrel.

Previous G.K. Chesterton Index Next

VII. The Modern Surrender of Woman

. · 24 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

But in this corner called England, at this end of the century, there has happened a strange and startling thing. Openly and to all appearance, this ancestral conflict has silently and abruptly ended; one of the two sexes has suddenly surrendered to the other. By the beginning of the twentieth century, within the last few years, the woman has in public surrendered to the man. She has seriously and officially owned that the man has been right all along; that the public house (or Parliament) is really more important than the private house; that politics are not (as woman had always maintained) an excuse for pots of beer, but are a sacred solemnity to which new female worshipers may kneel; that the talkative patriots in the tavern are not only admirable but enviable; that talk is not a waste of time, and therefore (as a consequence, surely) that taverns are not a waste of money. All we men had grown used to our wives and mothers, and grandmothers, and great aunts all pouring a chorus of contempt upon our hobbies of sport, drink and party politics. And now comes Miss Pankhurst with tears in her eyes, owning that all the women were wrong and all the men were right; humbly imploring to be admitted into so much as an outer court, from which she may catch a glimpse of those masculine merits which her erring sisters had so thoughtlessly scorned.

Now this development naturally perturbs and even paralyzes us. Males, like females, in the course of that old fight between the public and private house, had indulged in overstatement and extravagance, feeling that they must keep up their end of the see-saw. We told our wives that Parliament had sat late on most essential business; but it never crossed our minds that our wives would believe it. We said that everyone must have a vote in the country; similarly our wives said that no one must have a pipe in the drawing room. In both cases the idea was the same. "It does not matter much, but if you let those things slide there is chaos." We said that Lord Huggins or Mr. Buggins was absolutely necessary to the country. We knew quite well that nothing is necessary to the country except that the men should be men and the women women. We knew this; we thought the women knew it even more clearly; and we thought the women would say it. Suddenly, without warning, the women have begun to say all the nonsense that we ourselves hardly believed when we said it. The solemnity of politics; the necessity of votes; the necessity of Huggins; the necessity of Buggins; all these flow in a pellucid stream from the lips of all the suffragette speakers. I suppose in every fight, however old, one has a vague aspiration to conquer; but we never wanted to conquer women so completely as this. We only expected that they might leave us a little more margin for our nonsense; we never expected that they would accept it seriously as sense. Therefore I am all at sea about the existing situation; I scarcely know whether to be relieved or enraged by this substitution of the feeble platform lecture for the forcible curtain-lecture. I am lost without the trenchant and candid Mrs. Caudle. I really do not know what to do with the prostrate and penitent Miss Pankhurst. This surrender of the modem woman has taken us all so much by surprise that it is desirable to pause a moment, and collect our wits about what she is really saying.

As I have already remarked, there is one very simple answer to all this; these are not the modern women, but about one in two thousand of the modern women. This fact is important to a democrat; but it is of very little importance to the typically modern mind. Both the characteristic modern parties believed in a government by the few; the only difference is whether it is the Conservative few or Progressive few. It might be put, somewhat coarsely perhaps, by saying that one believes in any minority that is rich and the other in any minority that is mad. But in this state of things the democratic argument obviously falls out for the moment; and we are bound to take the prominent minority, merely because it is prominent. Let us eliminate altogether from our minds the thousands of women who detest this cause, and the millions of women who have hardly heard of it. Let us concede that the English people itself is not and will not be for a very long time within the sphere of practical politics. Let us confine ourselves to saying that these particular women want a vote and to asking themselves what a vote is. If we ask these ladies ourselves what a vote is, we shall get a very vague reply. It is the only question, as a rule, for which they are not prepared. For the truth is that they go mainly by precedent; by the mere fact that men have votes already. So far from being a mutinous movement, it is really a very Conservative one; it is in the narrowest rut of the British

Constitution. Let us take a little wider and freer sweep of thought and ask ourselves what is the ultimate point and meaning of this odd business called voting.

Previous G.K. Chesterton Index Next

VIII. The Brand of the Fleur-de-lis -- by G.K. Chesterton

. · 24 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

Seemingly from the dawn of man all nations have had governments; and all nations have been ashamed of them. Nothing is more openly fallacious than to fancy that in ruder or simpler ages ruling, judging and punishing appeared perfectly innocent and dignified. These things were always regarded as the penalties of the Fall; as part of the humiliation of mankind, as bad in themselves. That the king can do no wrong was never anything but a legal fiction; and it is a legal fiction still. The doctrine of Divine Right was not a piece of idealism, but rather a piece of realism, a practical way of ruling amid the ruin of humanity; a very pragmatist piece of faith. The religious basis of government was not so much that people put their trust in princes, as that they did not put their trust in any child of man. It was so with all the ugly institutions which disfigure human history. Torture and slavery were never talked of as good things; they were always talked of as necessary evils. A pagan spoke of one man owning ten slaves just as a modern business man speaks of one merchant sacking ten clerks: "It's very horrible; but how else can society be conducted?" A mediaeval scholastic regarded the possibility of a man being burned to death just as a modern business man regards the possibility of a man being starved to death: "It is a shocking torture; but can you organize a painless world?" It is possible that a future society may find a way of doing without the question by hunger as we have done without the question by fire. It is equally possible, for the matter of that, that a future society may reestablish legal torture with the whole apparatus of rack and fagot. The most modern of countries, America, has introduced with a vague savor of science, a method which it calls "the third degree." This is simply the extortion of secrets by nervous fatigue; which is surely uncommonly close to their extortion by bodily pain. And this is legal and scientific in America. Amateur ordinary America, of course, simply burns people alive in broad daylight, as they did in the Reformation Wars. But though some punishments are more inhuman than others there is no such thing as humane punishment. As long as nineteen men claim the right in any sense or shape to take hold of the twentieth man and make him even mildly uncomfortable, so long the whole proceeding must be a humiliating one for all concerned. And the proof of how poignantly men have always felt this lies in the fact that the headsman and the hangman, the jailors and the torturers, were always regarded not merely with fear but with contempt; while all kinds of careless smiters, bankrupt knights and swashbucklers and outlaws, were regarded with indulgence or even admiration. To kill a man lawlessly was pardoned. To kill a man lawfully was unpardonable. The most bare-faced duelist might almost brandish his weapon. But the executioner was always masked.

This is the first essential element in government, coercion; a necessary but not a noble element. I may remark in passing that when people say that government rests on force they give an admirable instance of the foggy and muddled cynicism of modernity. Government does not rest on force. Government is force; it rests on consent or a conception of justice. A king or a community holding a certain thing to be abnormal, evil, uses the general strength to crush it out; the strength is his tool, but the belief is his only sanction. You might as well say that glass is the real reason for telescopes. But arising from whatever reason the act of government is coercive and is burdened with all the coarse and painful qualities of coercion. And if anyone asks what is the use of insisting on the ugliness of this task of state violence since all mankind is condemned to employ it, I have a simple answer to that. It would be useless to insist on it if all humanity were condemned to it. But it is not irrelevant to insist on its ugliness so long as half of humanity is kept out of it

All government then is coercive; we happen to have created a government which is not only coercive; but collective. There are only two kinds of government, as I have already said, the despotic and the democratic. Aristocracy is not a government, it is a riot; that most effective kind of riot, a riot of the rich. The most intelligent apologists of aristocracy, sophists like Burke and Nietzsche, have never claimed for aristocracy any virtues but the virtues of a riot, the accidental virtues, courage, variety and adventure. There is no case anywhere of aristocracy having established a universal and applicable order, as despots and democracies have often done; as the last Caesars created the Roman law, as the last Jacobins created the Code Napoleon. With the first of these elementary forms of

government, that of the king or chieftain, we are not in this matter of the sexes immediately concerned. We shall return to it later when we remark how differently mankind has dealt with female claims in the despotic as against the democratic field. But for the moment the essential point is that in self-governing countries this coercion of criminals is a collective coercion. The abnormal person is theoretically thumped by a million fists and kicked by a million feet. If a man is flogged we all flogged him; if a man is hanged, we all hanged him. That is the only possible meaning of democracy, which can give any meaning to the first two syllables and also to the last two. In this sense each citizen has the high responsibility of a rioter. Every statute is a declaration of war, to be backed by arms. Every tribunal is a revolutionary tribunal. In a republic all punishment is as sacred and solemn as lynching.

Previous G.K. Chesterton Index Next

IX. Sincerity and the Gallows -- by G.K. Chesterton

. · 24 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

When, therefore, it is said that the tradition against Female Suffrage keeps women out of activity, social influence and citizenship, let us a little more soberly and strictly ask ourselves what it actually does keep her out of. It does definitely keep her out of the collective act of coercion; the act of punishment by a mob. The human tradition does say that, if twenty men hang a man from a tree or lamp-post, they shall be twenty men and not women. Now I do not think any reasonable Suffragist will deny that exclusion from this function, to say the least of it, might be maintained to be a protection as well as a veto. No candid person will wholly dismiss the proposition that the idea of having a Lord Chancellor but not a Lady Chancellor may at least be connected with the idea of having a headsman but not a headswoman, a hangman but not a hangwoman. Nor will it be adequate to answer (as is so often answered to this contention) that in modern civilization women would not really be required to capture, to sentence, or to slay; that all this is done indirectly, that specialists kill our criminals as they kill our cattle. To urge this is not to urge the reality of the vote, but to urge its unreality. Democracy was meant to be a more direct way of ruling, not a more indirect way; and if we do not feel that we are all jailers, so much the worse for us, and for the prisoners. If it is really an unwomanly thing to lock up a robber or a tyrant, it ought to be no softening of the situation that the woman does not feel as if she were doing the thing that she certainly is doing. It is bad enough that men can only associate on paper who could once associate in the street; it is bad enough that men have made a vote very much of a fiction. It is much worse that a great class should claim the vote be cause it is a fiction, who would be sickened by it if it were a fact. If votes for women do not mean mobs for women they do not mean what they were meant to mean. A woman can make a cross on a paper as well as a man; a child could do it as well as a woman; and a chimpanzee after a few lessons could do it as well as a child. But nobody ought to regard it merely as making a cross on paper; everyone ought to regard it as what it ultimately is, branding the fleur-de-lis, marking the broad arrow, signing the death warrant. Both men and women ought to face more fully the things they do or cause to be done; face them or leave off doing them.

On that disastrous day when public executions were abolished, private executions were renewed and ratified, perhaps forever. Things grossly unsuited to the moral sentiment of a society cannot be safely done in broad daylight; but I see no reason why we should not still be roasting heretics alive, in a private room. It is very likely (to speak in the manner foolishly called Irish) that if there were public executions there would be no executions. The old open-air punishments, the pillory and the gibbet, at least fixed responsibility upon the law; and in actual practice they gave the mob an opportunity of throwing roses as well as rotten eggs; of crying "Hosannah" as well as "Crucify." But I do not like the public executioner being turned into the private executioner. I think it is a crooked oriental, sinister sort of business, and smells of the harem and the divan rather than of the forum and the market place. In modern times the official has lost all the social honor and dignity of the common hangman. He is only the bearer of the bowstring.

Here, however, I suggest a plea for a brutal publicity only in order to emphasize the fact that it is this brutal publicity and nothing else from which women have been excluded. I also say it to emphasize the fact that the mere modern veiling of the brutality does not make the situation different, unless we openly say that we are giving the suffrage, not only because it is power but because it is not, or in other words, that women are not so much to vote as to play voting. No suffragist, I suppose, will take up that position; and a few suffragists will wholly deny that this human necessity of pains and penalties is an ugly, humiliating business, and that good motives as well as bad may have helped to keep women out of it. More than once I have remarked in these pages that female limitations may be the limits of a temple as well as of a prison, the disabilities of a priest and not of a pariah. I noted it, I think, in the case of the pontifical feminine dress. In the same way it is not evidently irrational, if men decided that a woman, like a priest, must not be a shedder of blood.

Previous G.K. Chesterton Index Next

X. The Higher Anarchy -- by G.K. Chesterton

. · 24 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

But there is a further fact; forgotten also because we moderns forget that there is a female point of view. The woman's wisdom stands partly, not only for a wholesome hesitation about punishment, but even for a wholesome hesitation about absolute rules. There was something feminine and perversely true in that phrase of Wilde's, that people should not be treated as the rule, but all of them as exceptions. Made by a man the remark was a little effeminate; for Wilde did lack the masculine power of dogma and of democratic cooperation. But if a woman had said it it would have been simply true; a woman does treat each person as a peculiar person. In other words, she stands for Anarchy; a very ancient and arguable philosophy; not anarchy in the sense of having no customs in one's life (which is inconceivable), but anarchy in the sense of having no rules for one's mind. To her, almost certainly, are due all those working traditions that cannot be found in books, especially those of education; it was she who first gave a child a stuffed stocking for being good or stood him in the corner for being naughty. This unclassified knowledge is sometimes called rule of thumb and sometimes motherwit. The last phrase suggests the whole truth, for none ever called it fatherwit.

Now anarchy is only tact when it works badly. Tact is only anarchy when it works well. And we ought to realize that in one half of the world--the private house--it does work well. We modern men are perpetually forgetting that the case for clear rules and crude penalties is not self-evident, that there is a great deal to be said for the benevolent lawlessness of the autocrat, especially on a small scale; in short, that government is only one side of life. The other half is called Society, in which women are admittedly dominant. And they have always been ready to maintain that their kingdom is better governed than ours, because (in the logical and legal sense) it is not governed at all. "Whenever you have a real difficulty," they say, "when a boy is bumptious or an aunt is stingy, when a silly girl will marry somebody, or a wicked man won't marry somebody, all your lumbering Roman Law and British Constitution come to a standstill. A snub from a duchess or a slanging from a fish-wife are much more likely to put things straight." So, at least, rang the ancient female challenge down the ages until the recent female capitulation. So streamed the red standard of the higher anarchy until Miss Pankhurst hoisted the white flag.

It must be remembered that the modern world has done deep treason to the eternal intellect by believing in the swing of the pendulum. A man must be dead before he swings. It has substituted an idea of fatalistic alternation for the mediaeval freedom of the soul seeking truth. All modern thinkers are reactionaries; for their thought is always a reaction from what went before. When you meet a modern man he is always coming from a place, not going to it. Thus, mankind has in nearly all places and periods seen that there is a soul and a body as plainly as that there is a sun and moon. But because a narrow Protestant sect called Materialists declared for a short time that there was no soul, another narrow Protestant sect called Christian Science is now maintaining that there is no body. Now just in the same way the unreasonable neglect of government by the Manchester School has produced, not a reasonable regard for government, but an unreasonable neglect of everything else. So that to hear people talk to-day one would fancy that every important human function must be organized and avenged by law; that all education must be state education, and all employment state employment; that everybody and everything must be brought to the foot of the august and prehistoric gibbet. But a somewhat more liberal and sympathetic examination of mankind will convince us that the cross is even older than the gibbet, that voluntary suffering was before and independent of compulsory; and in short that in most important matters a man has always been free to ruin himself if he chose. The huge fundamental function upon which all anthropology turns, that of sex and childbirth, has never been inside the political state, but always outside of it. The state concerned itself with the trivial question of killing people, but wisely left alone the whole business of getting them born. A Eugenist might indeed plausibly say that the government is an absent-minded and inconsistent person who occupies himself with providing for the old age of people who have never been infants. I will not deal here in any detail with the fact that some Eugenists have in our time made the maniacal answer that the police ought to control marriage and birth as they control labor and death.

Except for this inhuman handful (with whom I regret to say I shall have to deal with later) all the Eugenists I know divide themselves into two sections: ingenious people who once meant this, and rather bewildered people who swear they never meant it--nor anything else. But if it be conceded (by a breezier estimate of men) that they do mostly desire marriage to remain free from government, it does not follow that they desire it to remain free from everything. If man does not control the marriage market by law, is it controlled at all? Surely the answer is broadly that man does not control the marriage market by law, but the woman does control it by sympathy and prejudice. There was until lately a law forbidding a man to marry his deceased wife's sister; yet the thing happened constantly. There was no law forbidding a man to marry his deceased wife's scullery-maid; yet it did not happen nearly so often. It did not happen because the marriage market is managed in the spirit and by the authority of women; and women are generally conservative where classes are concerned. It is the same with that system of exclusiveness by which ladies have so often contrived (as by a process of elimination) to prevent marriages that they did not want and even sometimes procure those they did. There is no need of the broad arrow and the fleur-de lis, the turnkey's chains or the hangman's halter. You need not strangle a man if you can silence him. The branded shoulder is less effective and final than the cold shoulder; and you need not trouble to lock a man in when you can lock him out.

The same, of course, is true of the colossal architecture which we call infant education: an architecture reared wholly by women. Nothing can ever overcome that one enormous sex superiority, that even the male child is born closer to his mother than to his father. No one, staring at that frightful female privilege, can quite believe in the equality of the sexes. Here and there we read of a girl brought up like a tom-boy; but every boy is brought up like a tame girl. The flesh and spirit of femininity surround him from the first like the four walls of a house; and even the vaguest or most brutal man has been womanized by being born. Man that is born of a woman has short days and full of misery; but nobody can picture the obscenity and bestial tragedy that would belong to such a monster as man that was born of a man.

Previous G.K. Chesterton Index Next

XI. The Queen and the Suffragettes

. · 24 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

But, indeed, with this educational matter I must of necessity embroil myself later. The fourth section of discussion is supposed to be about the child, but I think it will be mostly about the mother. In this place I have systematically insisted on the large part of life that is governed, not by man with his vote, but by woman with her voice, or more often, with her horrible silence. Only one thing remains to be added. In a sprawling and explanatory style has been traced out the idea that government is ultimately coercion, that coercion must mean cold definitions as well as cruel consequences, and that therefore there is something to be said for the old human habit of keeping one-half of humanity out of so harsh and dirty a business. But the case is stronger still.

Voting is not only coercion, but collective coercion. I think Queen Victoria would have been yet more popular and satisfying if she had never signed a death warrant. I think Queen Elizabeth would have stood out as more solid and splendid in history if she had not earned (among those who happen to know her history) the nickname of Bloody Bess. I think, in short, that the great historic woman is more herself when she is persuasive rather than coercive. But I feel all mankind behind me when I say that if a woman has this power it should be despotic power--not democratic power. There is a much stronger historic argument for giving Miss Pankhurst a throne than for giving her a vote. She might have a crown, or at least a coronet, like so many of her supporters; for these old powers are purely personal and therefore female. Miss Pankhurst as a despot might be as virtuous as Queen Victoria, and she certainly would find it difficult to be as wicked as Queen Bess, but the point is that, good or bad, she would be irresponsible-- she would not be governed by a rule and by a ruler. There are only two ways of governing: by a rule and by a ruler. And it is seriously true to say of a woman, in education and domesticity, that the freedom of the autocrat appears to be necessary to her. She is never responsible until she is irresponsible. In case this sounds like an idle contradiction, I confidently appeal to the cold facts of history. Almost every despotic or oligarchic state has admitted women to its privileges. Scarcely one democratic state has ever admitted them to its rights The reason is very simple: that something female is endangered much more by the violence of the crowd. In short, one Pankhurst is an exception, but a thousand Pankhursts are a nightmare, a Bacchic orgie, a Witches Sabbath. For in all legends men have thought of women as sublime separately but horrible in a herd.

Previous G.K. Chesterton Index Next

XII. The Modern Slave -- by G.K. Chesterton

. · 24 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

Now I have only taken the test case of Female Suffrage because it is topical and concrete; it is not of great moment for me as a political proposal. I can quite imagine anyone substantially agreeing with my view of woman as universalist and autocrat in a limited area; and still thinking that she would be none the worse for a ballot paper. The real question is whether this old ideal of woman as the great amateur is admitted or not. There are many modern things which threaten it much more than suffragism; notably the increase of self-supporting women, even in the most severe or the most squalid employments. If there be something against nature in the idea of a horde of wild women governing, there is something truly intolerable in the idea of a herd of tame women being governed. And there are elements in human psychology that make this situation particularly poignant or ignominous. The ugly exactitudes of business, the bells and clocks the fixed hours and rigid departments, were all meant for the male: who, as a rule, can only do one thing and can only with the greatest difficulty be induced to do that. If clerks do not try to shirk their work, our whole great commercial system breaks down. It is breaking down, under the inroad of women who are adopting the unprecedented and impossible course of taking the system seriously and doing it well. Their very efficiency is the definition of their slavery. It is generally a very bad sign when one is trusted very much by one's employers. And if the evasive clerks have a look of being blackguards, the earnest ladies are often something very like blacklegs. But the more immediate point is that the modern working woman bears a double burden, for she endures both the grinding officialism of the new office and the distracting scrupulosity of the old home. Few men understand what conscientiousness is. They understand duty, which generally means one duty; but conscientiousness is the duty of the universalist. It is limited by no work days or holidays; it is a lawless, limitless, devouring decorum. If women are to be subjected to the dull rule of commerce, we must find some way of emancipating them from the wild rule of conscience. But I rather fancy you will find it easier to leave the conscience and knock off the commerce. As it is, the modern clerk or secretary exhausts herself to put one thing straight in the ledger and then goes home to put everything straight in the house.

This condition (described by some as emancipated) is at least the reverse of my ideal. I would give woman, not more rights, but more privileges. Instead of sending her to seek such freedom as notoriously prevails in banks and factories, I would design specially a house in which she can be free. And with that we come to the last point of all; the point at which we can perceive the needs of women, like the rights of men, stopped and falsified by something which it is the object of this book to expose.

The Feminist (which means, I think, one who dislikes the chief feminine characteristics) has heard my loose monologue, bursting all the time with one pent-up protest. At this point he will break out and say, "But what are we to do? There is modern commerce and its clerks; there is the modern family with its unmarried daughters; specialism is expected everywhere; female thrift and conscientiousness are demanded and supplied. What does it matter whether we should in the abstract prefer the old human and housekeeping woman; we might prefer the Garden of Eden. But since women have trades they ought to have trades unions. Since women work in factories, they ought to vote on factory-acts. If they are unmarried they must be commercial; if they are commercial they must be political. We must have new rules for a new world-- even if it be not a better one." I said to a Feminist once: "The question is not whether women are good enough for votes: it is whether votes are good enough for women." He only answered: "Ah, you go and say that to the women chain-makers on Cradley Heath."

Now this is the attitude which I attack. It is the huge heresy of Precedent. It is the view that because we have got into a mess we must grow messier to suit it; that because we have taken a wrong turn some time ago we must go forward and not backwards; that because we have lost our way we must lose our map also; and because we have missed our ideal, we must forget it. "There are numbers of excellent people who do not think votes unfeminine; and there may be enthusiasts for our beautiful modern industry who do not think factories unfeminine. But if these

things are unfeminine it is no answer to say that they fit into each other. I am not satisfied with the statement that my daughter must have unwomanly powers because she has unwomanly wrongs. Industrial soot and political printer's ink are two blacks which do not make a white. Most of the Feminists would probably agree with me that womanhood is under shameful tyranny in the shops and mills. But I want to destroy the tyranny. They want to destroy womanhood. That is the only difference.

Whether we can recover the clear vision of woman as a tower with many windows, the fixed eternal feminine from which her sons, the specialists, go forth; whether we can preserve the tradition of a central thing which is even more human than democracy and even more practical than politics; whether, in word, it is possible to re-establish the family, freed from the filthy cynicism and cruelty of the commercial epoch, I shall discuss in the last section of this book. But meanwhile do not talk to me about the poor chain-makers on Cradley Heath. I know all about them and what they are doing. They are engaged in a very wide-spread and flourishing industry of the present age. They are making chains.

Previous G.K. Chesterton Index Next

V. An Evil Cry -- by G.K. Chesterton

. · 24 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

The fashionable fallacy is that by education we can give people something that we have not got. To hear people talk one would think it was some sort of magic chemistry, by which, out of a laborious hotchpotch of hygienic meals, baths, breathing exercises, fresh air and freehand drawing, we can produce something splendid by accident; we can create what we cannot conceive. These pages have, of course, no other general purpose than to point out that we cannot create anything good until we have conceived it. It is odd that these people, who in the matter of heredity are so sullenly attached to law, in the matter of environment seem almost to believe in miracle. They insist that nothing but what was in the bodies of the parents can go to make the bodies of the children. But they seem somehow to think that things can get into the heads of the children which were not in the heads of the parents, or, indeed, anywhere else.

There has arisen in this connection a foolish and wicked cry typical of the confusion. I mean the cry, "Save the children." It is, of course, part of that modern morbidity that insists on treating the State (which is the home of man) as a sort of desperate expedient in time of panic. This terrified opportunism is also the origin of the Socialist and other schemes. Just as they would collect and share all the food as men do in a famine, so they would divide the children from their fathers, as men do in a shipwreck. That a human community might conceivably not be in a condition of famine or shipwreck never seems to cross their minds. This cry of "Save the children" has in it the hateful implication that it is impossible to save the fathers; in other words, that many millions of grown-up, sane, responsible and self-supporting Europeans are to be treated as dirt or debris and swept away out of the discussion; called dipsomaniacs because they drink in public houses instead of private houses; called unemployables because nobody knows how to get them work; called dullards if they still adhere to conventions, and called loafers if they still love liberty. Now I am concerned, first and last, to maintain that unless you can save the fathers, you cannot save the children; that at present we cannot save others, for we cannot save ourselves. We cannot teach citizenship if we are not citizens; we cannot free others if we have forgotten the appetite of freedom. Education is only truth in a state of transmission; and how can we pass on truth if it has never come into our hand? Thus we find that education is of all the cases the clearest for our general purpose. It is vain to save children; for they cannot remain children. By hypothesis we are teaching them to be men; and how can it be so simple to teach an ideal manhood to others if it is so vain and hopeless to find one for ourselves?

I know that certain crazy pedants have attempted to counter this difficulty by maintaining that education is not instruction at all, does not teach by authority at all. They present the process as coming, not from the outside, from the teacher, but entirely from inside the boy. Education, they say, is the Latin for leading out or drawing out the dormant faculties of each person. Somewhere far down in the dim boyish soul is a primordial yearning to learn Greek accents or to wear clean collars; and the schoolmaster only gently and tenderly liberates this imprisoned purpose. Sealed up in the newborn babe are the intrinsic secrets of how to eat asparagus and what was the date of Bannockburn. The educator only draws out the child's own unapparent love of long division; only leads out the child's slightly veiled preference for milk pudding to tarts. I am not sure that I believe in the derivation; I have heard the disgraceful suggestion that "educator," if applied to a Roman schoolmaster, did not mean leading our young functions into freedom; but only meant taking out little boys for a walk. But I am much more certain that I do not agree with the doctrine; I think it would be about as sane to say that the baby's milk comes from the baby as to say that the baby's educational merits do. There is, indeed, in each living creature a collection of forces and functions; but education means producing these in particular shapes and training them to particular purposes, or it means nothing at all. Speaking is the most practical instance of the whole situation. You may indeed "draw out" squeals and grunts from the child by simply poking him and pulling him about, a pleasant but cruel pastime to which many psychologists are addicted. But you will wait and watch very patiently indeed before you draw the English language out of him. That you have got to put into him; and there is an end of the matter.

Previous G.K. Chesterton Index Next

XIV. Folly and Female Education -- by G.K. Chesterton

. · 24 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

It is the same in the case of girls. I am often solemnly asked what I think of the new ideas about female education. But there are no new ideas about female education. There is not, there never has been, even the vestige of a new idea. All the educational reformers did was to ask what was being done to boys and then go and do it to girls; just as they asked what was being taught to young squires and then taught it to young chimney sweeps. What they call new ideas are very old ideas in the wrong place. Boys play football, why shouldn't girls play football; boys have school colors, why shouldn't girls have school-colors; boys go in hundreds to day-schools, why shouldn't girls go in hundreds to day-schools; boys go to Oxford, why shouldn't girls go to Oxford--in short, boys grow mustaches, why shouldn't girls grow mustaches--that is about their notion of a new idea. There is no brain-work in the thing at all; no root query of what sex is, of whether it alters this or that, and why, anymore than there is any imaginative grip of the humor and heart of the populace in the popular education. There is nothing but plodding, elaborate, elephantine imitation. And just as in the case of elementary teaching, the cases are of a cold and reckless inappropriateness. Even a savage could see that bodily things, at least, which are good for a man are very likely to be bad for a woman. Yet there is no boy's game, however brutal, which these mild lunatics have not promoted among girls. To take a stronger case, they give girls very heavy home-work; never reflecting that all girls have home-work already in their homes. It is all a part of the same silly subjugation; there must be a hard stick-up collar round the neck of a woman, because it is already a nuisance round the neck of a man. Though a Saxon serf, if he wore that collar of cardboard, would ask for his collar of brass.

It will then be answered, not without a sneer, "And what would you prefer? Would you go back to the elegant early Victorian female, with ringlets and smelling-bottle, doing a little in water colors, dabbling a little in Italian, playing a little on the harp, writing in vulgar albums and painting on senseless screens? Do you prefer that?" To which I answer, "Emphatically, yes." I solidly prefer it to the new female education, for this reason, that I can see in it an intellectual design, while there is none in the other. I am by no means sure that even in point of practical fact that [the] elegant female would not have been more than a match for most of the inelegant females. I fancy Jane Austen was stronger, sharper and shrewder than Charlotte Bronte; I am quite certain she was stronger, sharper and shrewder than George Eliot. She could do one thing neither of them could do: she could coolly and sensibly describe a man. I am not sure that the old great lady who could only smatter Italian was not more vigorous than the new great lady who can only stammer American; nor am I certain that the bygone duchesses who were scarcely successful when they painted Melrose Abbey, were so much more weak-minded than the modern duchesses who paint only their own faces, and are bad at that. But that is not the point. What was the theory, what was the idea, in their old, weak water-colors and their shaky Italian? The idea was the same which in a ruder rank expressed itself in home-made wines and hereditary recipes; and which still, in a thousand unexpected ways, can be found clinging to the women of the poor. It was the idea I urged in the second part of this book: that the world must keep one great amateur, lest we all become artists and perish. Somebody must renounce all specialist conquests, that she may conquer all the conquerors. That she may be a queen of life, she must not be a private soldier in it. I do not think the elegant female with her bad Italian was a perfect product, any more than I think the slum woman talking gin and funerals is a perfect product; alas! there are few perfect products. But they come from a comprehensible idea; and the new woman comes from nothing and nowhere. It is right to have an ideal, it is right to have the right ideal, and these two have the right ideal. The slum mother with her funerals is the degenerate daughter of Antigone, the obstinate priestess of the household gods. The lady talking bad Italian was the decayed tenth cousin of Portia, the great and golden Italian lady, the Renascence amateur of life, who could be a barrister because she could be anything. Sunken and neglected in the sea of modern monotony and imitation, the types hold tightly to their original truths. Antigone, ugly, dirty and often drunken, will still bury her father. The elegant female, vapid and fading away to nothing, still feels faintly the fundamental difference between herself and her husband: that he must be Something in the City, that she may be everything in the country.

There was a time when you and I and all of us were all very close to God; so that even now the color of a pebble (or a paint), the smell of a flower (or a firework), comes to our hearts with a kind of authority and certainty; as if they were fragments of a muddled message, or features of a forgotten face. To pour that fiery simplicity upon the whole of life is the only real aim of education; and closest to the child comes the woman--she understands. To say what she understands is beyond me; save only this, that it is not a solemnity. Rather it is a towering levity, an uproarious amateurishness of the universe, such as we felt when we were little, and would as soon sing as garden, as soon paint as run. To smatter the tongues of men and angels, to dabble in the dreadful sciences, to juggle with pillars and pyramids and toss up the planets like balls, this is that inner audacity and indifference which the human soul, like a conjurer catching oranges, must keep up forever. This is that insanely frivolous thing we call sanity. And the elegant female, drooping her ringlets over her water-colors, knew it and acted on it. She was juggling with frantic and flaming suns. She was maintaining the bold equilibrium of inferiorities which is the most mysterious of superiorities and perhaps the most unattainable. She was maintaining the prime truth of woman, the universal mother: that if a thing is worth doing, it is worth doing badly.

Previous G.K. Chesterton Index Next

I. On Female Suffrage -- by G.K. Chesterton

. · 24 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

Not wishing to overload this long essay with too many parentheses, apart from its thesis of progress and precedent, I append here three notes on points of detail that may possibly be misunderstood.

The first refers to the female controversy. It may seem to many that I dismiss too curtly the contention that all women should have votes, even if most women do not desire them. It is constantly said in this connection that males have received the vote (the agricultural laborers for instance) when only a minority of them were in favor of it. Mr. Galsworthy, one of the few fine fighting intellects of our time, has talked this language in the "Nation." Now, broadly, I have only to answer here, as everywhere in this book, that history is not a toboggan slide, but a road to be reconsidered and even retraced. If we really forced General Elections upon free laborers who definitely disliked General Elections, then it was a thoroughly undemocratic thing to do; if we are democrats we ought to undo it. We want the will of the people, not the votes of the people; and to give a man a vote against his will is to make voting more valuable than the democracy it declares.

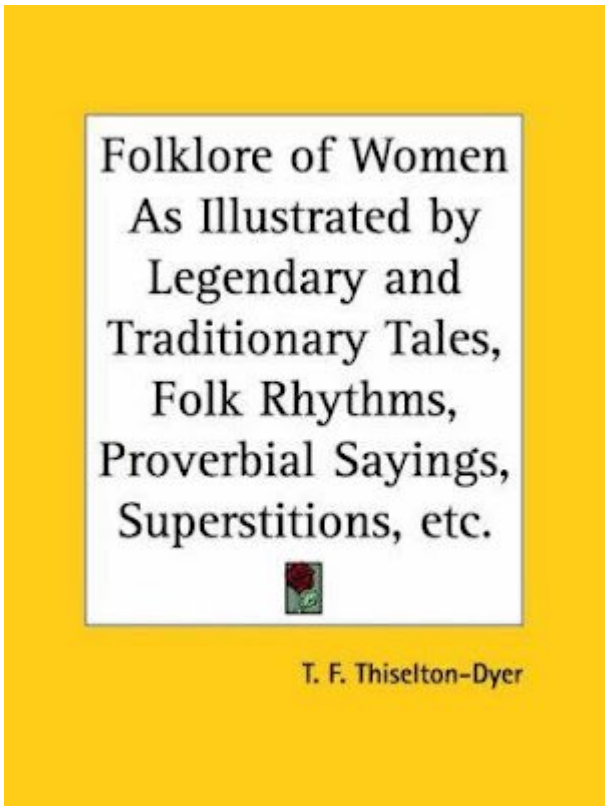
But this analogy is false, for a plain and particular reason. Many voteless women regard a vote as unwomanly. Nobody says that most voteless men regarded a vote as unmanly. Nobody says that any voteless men regarded it as unmanly. Not in the stillest hamlet or the most stagnant fen could you find a yokel or a tramp who thought he lost his sexual dignity by being part of a political mob. If he did not care about a vote it was solely because he did not know about a vote; he did not understand the word any better than Bimetallism. His opposition, if it existed, was merely negative. His indifference to a vote was really indifference.

But the female sentiment against the franchise, whatever its size, is positive. It is not negative; it is by no means indifferent. Such women as are opposed to the change regard it (rightly or wrongly) as unfeminine. That is, as insulting certain affirmative traditions to which they are attached. You may think such a view prejudiced; but I violently deny that any democrat has a right to override such prejudices, if they are popular and positive. Thus he would not have a right to make millions of Moslems vote with a cross if they had a prejudice in favor of voting with a crescent. Unless this is admitted, democracy is a farce we need scarcely keep up. If it is admitted, the Suffragists have not merely to awaken an indifferent, but to convert a hostile majority.

Previous G.K. Chesterton Index

Folklore of Women -- by T.F. Thistelton-Dyer (1906)

. · 25 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original



AS
ILLUSTRATED BY LEGENDARY
AND TRADITIONARY TALES
FOLK-RHYMES, PROVERBIAL
SAYINGS, SUPERSTITIONS, ETC.

BY
T. F. THISELTON-DYER, M.A. OXON
AUTHOR OF "OLD ENGLISH SOCIAL LIFE, ETC., ETC."

CHICAGO
A.C. McCLURG & CO.
LONDON: ELLIOT STOCK
1906

Preface

Woman's Characteristics

Woman's Beauty

Woman's Dress

Woman's Eyes

Woman's Tongue

Woman's Goodness

Bad Women

Woman's Love

Woman's Hate

Love Tests

Woman's Secrets

Red Haired Girls

Woman's Fickleness

Local Allusions to Women

Woman's Will

Women and Marriage

Women as Wives

Young and Old Maids

Widows

Woman's Curiosity

Sister Legends

Brides and their Maids

Superstitions about Women

Woman's Tears

Woman's Blushes

Daughters

My Lady's Walk

Preface, The Folk-Lore of Women -- by T.F. Thistelton-Dyer

. · 25 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

PREFACE

IN one of his essays, Emerson tells us that "proverbs, like the sacred books of each nation, are the sanctuary of the intuitions," a statement which, if accepted, must place this class of literature on a very high footing. But, although due caution must be taken, when analysing proverbial lore, to differentiate between the serious and jocular element contained therein, it may safely be said that, taken as a whole, such adages and saws--which form an important branch of folk-lore--express more or less correctly the estimate of mankind relative to the subject specially handled. And, when it is remembered what a wealth of material proverbial literature supplies in connection with every concern of daily life, it is not surprising that woman should have been made a prominent theme for criticism and comment, the judgment passed on her being in most cases fairly evenly divided between what is in her favour or the reverse.

In a field, too, so wide we have been content to cull, from here and there, sufficient typical instances of the proverbial wisdom of the human race in its teaching of woman's character as to illustrate the subjects classified in the following chapters, without unduly multiplying examples, which only too frequently are a repetition of the same adage told in a different form.

And, although at one time or another numerous volumes have been published on woman, no work similar to the present one has been attempted in this country, wherein we have endeavoured in a handy and concise form to classify under their subjective headings the proverbial sayings, folk-rhymes, superstitions, and traditionary lore associated with the fair sex. Some years ago, however, a valuable and interesting work was issued in Paris by Pierre Marie Quitard, entitled "Proverbes sur les femmes, l'amitlié l'amour, &c.," which contains much curious information, and the introductory chapter of Kelly's useful volume, "Proverbs of all Nations, Compared, Explained, and Illustrated," is devoted to women, love, and marriage. Among some of the works published in England on proverbial literature to which we are indebted are Christy's "Proverbs of All Ages" (2 vols., 1888), Denny's "Proverbs of Many Nations," William Stirling's "Essay towards a Collection of Books relating to Proverbs, &c." (1860), H. H. Vaughan's "Welsh Proverbs," Hislop's "Proverbs of Scotland" (1870), Macintosh's "Gaelic Proverbs" (1882), and Standing's "Anecdotes and Proverbs" (1891), besides the various works issued by the Folk-Lore Society, the several series of Notes and Queries--to the pages of which folk-lorists owe a deep debt of gratitude, information chronicled therein not to be found elsewhere--and a recent useful work on "Proverb Lore," by F. E. Hulme.

Among older works which deserve perusal may be noticed John Heywood's "Dialogue and Epigrams," which made its first appearance in 1546, and the famous work of John Ray, which was issued in 1670, and was incorporated by Mr. Bohn in his "Handbook of Proverbs," published in 1857. Herbert's "Outlandish Proverbs," printed in 1640, contains many curious and amusing sayings, and one section of Camden's "Remains," which first appeared in 1605, is devoted to a collection of proverbs.

Mr. Hazlitt, in his preface to his "English Proverbs and Proverbial Phrases" (1869), has made a valuable survey of the literature of proverb-lore in this country, and Dean Trench, in his introduction to his "Proverbs and their Lessons," alluding to "the immense number and variety of books bearing on the subject," truly remarks that most of these compilations "include matter which cannot fitly be placed before all, or they address themselves to the scholar alone; or, if not so, are at any rate inaccessible to the mere English reader; or they contain bare lists of proverbs, with no endeavour to compare, illustrate, or explain them--or, if they do seek to explain, they yet do it without

attempting to sound the depths or measure the real significance of that which they attempt to unfold." For the same reason we have been obliged to omit a very large number of proverbs as unsuitable for the general reader, although, unfortunately, very many of these old adages are witty and amusing, but their coarseness renders hem out of place in a work of the present kind.

Many valuable works illustrative of foreign proverb-lore have appeared at intervals, and, in addition to those connected with France already quoted, may be noticed "Les Proverbes de la langue francaise," par D. Loubens (1889), A. Mariette's "French and English Proverbs" (1896-7), G. Belcour's "Selection of French Proverbs," and M. de Lincy's "French Collection of Proverbs," published in two volumes in 1880.

Much that is interesting in connection with womankind will be found in J. Barten's "Collection of English and German Proverbs" (1890), and in J. Muddlemore's "Proverbs in Various Languages" (1889); and an old work which deserves notice is Torriano's "Italian Proverbs," published as far back as 1666. It may be added that a large number of publications on proverb-lore which illustrate our subject have been published abroad, many of which, although not easily accessible elsewhere, may be seen at the British Museum; and amongst some of the works to which we are indebted may be mentioned J. R. Jewett's "Arabic Proverbs" (1891), being the fifteenth volume of the American Oriental Society, S. W. Fallon's "Hindustani Proverbs" (1880), P. R. T. Gurdon's "Assamese Proverbs" (1896), G. Bayan's "Armenian Proverbs" (1889), and an interesting little volume on "Kashmiri Proverbs," by J. H. Knowles, which was published at Bombay in 1885.

In 1890 there was issued at Colombo a good collection of Sinhalese and European proverbs by N. Mendis, and in 1897 Mr. H. Jensen produced his "Tamil Proverbs," which contains much that has its counterpart in our own proverbial lore relating to woman; while Mr. W. F. Johnson's "Hindi Proverbs" (1886) further largely adds to the estimate formed of the fair sex.

Mr. A. H. Smith's "Chinese Proverbs" is excellent as far as it goes, and Mr. Pfoundes, in his "Notes," has collected many of the Japanese proverbs. Herr Knobloch, too, in the "Transactions of the German Society of Japan," has done much in this direction, whilst Sir Edward J. Reed's important work on Japan: its History, Traditions, and Religions (1880, 2 VOLS.) has devoted a chapter to the proverbs and proverbial sayings current among the Japanese people, in many of which he says, "there is in the original a play upon words which cannot be translated, but which sharpens the point of the phrase to the native"--a remark, however, which applies to most translations of foreign proverbs. When we turn to Japanese wisdom relative to woman's beauty, we find much the same advice given as is found amongst Western nations, one of their popular admonitions reminding us that "the heart is better than a beautiful face"--In other words, it is far better for a woman to have a good heart than to have a beautiful face; and the danger that often lurks behind a pretty face has been incorporated into many of their proverbs, one of which runs thus: "Beware of beautiful women as you would of red pepper"; and, it may be added, even the Japanese have long ago commented in their proverbial lore on woman's loquacity, one of their household maxims reaffirming what, under one form or another, seems to be universally acknowledged--that "a woman's tongue three inches long can kill a man six feet high."

Among some of the other works to which we have been more or less indebted in the succeeding pages may be mentioned the following: J. Christian's "Behar Proverbs"; A. Manwaring's "Marathi Proverbs"; "Telugu Proverbs," by Narasimha Acharyulu; "Sindhi Proverbs," by Rochiram Gajumal; "English Proverbs, with Urdu Equivalents," by Wazir Ahmad; "Osmanli Proverbs," by Ahmad Midhat (1898); and W. E. Taylor's "African Aphorisms" (1891).

T. F. THISELTON-DYER.

Index Next

Woman's Characteristics -- Folk-lore of Women -- by T.F. Thistelton-Dyer

. · 25 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

It is only a woman that can make a man become the parody of himself.--French Proverb.

PROVERBIAL philosophy has long agreed that woman is a complex creature, little understood, and, according to Michelet, "she is a miracle of Divine contradictions;" an opinion endorsed by Pope, who in his "Moral Essays," writes, "Woman's at best a contradiction still;" and, further, by Richter, who says, "A woman is the most inconsistent compound of obstinacy and self-sacrifice that I am acquainted with." The wisest sages from the earliest period have been forced to admit that he would be a truly clever man who could understand, and account for, the many and varied characteristics of womankind, for, as Lord Byron wrote:--

"What a strange thing is man! And what a stranger
Is woman! What a whirlwind is her head!
And what a whirlpool, full of depth and danger,
Is all the rest about her! Whether wed
Or widow, maid or mother, she can change her
Mind like the wind; whatever she has said
Or done, is light to what she shall say or do--
The oldest thing on record, and yet new." And yet it is universally acknowledged that woman is indispensable to man's happiness and well-being, for, as it is said in Germany, "Man without woman is head without body, woman without man is body without head," which corresponds with the French adage, "Without woman the two extremes of life would be without help, and the middle of it without pleasure;" and, long ago, the Egyptians were wont to represent a man without a woman by a single millstone, which cannot grind alone. The Burmese, too, of to-day maintain that "of all beings woman is most excellent; she is the chief of supporters;" and, according to another of their proverbial maxims, "her intelligence is four times that of man, her assiduity six times, and her desires eight times." Eastern proverbs are highly complimentary to women; for whereas, says a Sanskrit adage, "they are instructed by nature, the learning of men is taught by books;" or, as another piece of Oriental wisdom reminds us, "Nature is woman's teacher, and she learns more sense than

man, the pedant, gleams from books." And, in short, the power and influence of woman have been admirably described by Thomas Otway in his "Venice Preserved" (act i. sc. I):--

"O woman! lovely woman! Nature made thee
To temper man; we had been brutes without you.
Angels are painted fair to look like you"-- which is somewhat at variance with a popular Russian proverb to the effect that "the man is head of the woman, but she rules him by her temper;" and with the Spanish maxim, "A woman's counsel is not much, but he that despises it is a fool;" and again, with the Hindustani proverb, "Woman is wise when too late." But it would appear that, in summing up the characteristics of woman, proverbial lore, taken as a whole, is far more favourably disposed to her good points than the reverse, as is clearly the case with that of our French neighbours, who, long ago, have freely admitted the power of her influence in the world. Thus we are told that "women can do everything, because they rule those who command everything;" and "Women are the extreme, they are either better or worse than men;" and, again, it is said, "The world is the book of women"--Kashmiri proverb truly maintaining that "One woman is wealth to you, another ruination."

Woman has often been said to be equal to any emergency, a German saying expressing this idea thus: "Though an elephant and a tiger come she will leap over them;" and Hindustani lore waxes eloquent on this point--"What cannot a woman do? What cannot the ocean contain? What cannot the fire burn? What cannot death destroy?"

Most Oriental proverbs are much to the same effect, and it is said that "None know the wily tricks of a woman; they will kill their husbands, and then burn themselves," in order to prove their innocence; and again we are told, "Women's wills and thieves' tricks cannot be fathomed." And an old Welsh proverb warns us against the artifices of womankind, for--

"Nothing earthly hath a way
Like a woman to betray;" and Hindustani lore tells us that "Womankind is perfidious;" and much to the same purport is the Assamese saying--

Of women, Miris, the parrot, and the crow,
The minds of these four you cannot know;" for the Assamese never trust women; and not very complimentary is the Hindu saying, "My lady drops a spark in the chaff, and stands off to see the fun." Another common notion, underlying the proverbial lore relating to women, is their meanness--an amusing illustration of which may be quoted from Hindustani maxims, one of which runs thus: "Three cakes of a pennyweight each, and all her friends to eat them." But the reason for this frequent trait of character has been assigned to a woman's proverbial love of money, for--

"Nothing agreeth worse
Than a lady's heart and a beggar's purse." But, it must be remembered, another proverb tells us that--

"Weal and women cannot pan
But woe and women can"-- "pan" being equivalent to harmonise.

Proverbial philosophy is full of warning against forming hastily an estimate of women's character, for, as the German adage runs, "He must have keen eyes that would know a maid at sight." We are further told that a woman should be seen at home, when engaged in her household duties, to form a clear estimate of her character; and the Danish proverb inculcates this rule: "You must judge a maiden at the kneading trough, and not at the dance."

That two women seldom keep friends for long without quarrelling has long been proverbial, and a Tamil adage remarks that "A thousand men may live together in harmony, whereas two women are unable to do so though they be sisters." And the many ailments to which, under one form or another, women are supposed to be susceptible, have been incorporated into many a proverb like the following: "A mill, a clock, and a woman, always want mending."

It has long been said that there is no accounting for a woman's tastes, and, according to an old English proverb, "A black man is a jewel in a fair woman's eyes;" and, vice versa, we are told that "A black woman hath turpentine in her," a belief which has been told in various ways, an old proverbial phrase quoted by Hazlitt giving this advice--

"To a red man read thy read;
With a brown man break thy bread;
At a pale man draw thy knife,
From a black man keep thy wife"-- in illustration of which he gives the subjoined note from Tofte's translation of Varchi's "Blazon of Jealousie" (1615, P. 21):--"The Persians were wont to be so jealous of their wives, as they never suffered them to go abroad but in waggons close shut, but at this day the Italian is counted the man that is most subject to this vice, the sallow-complexioned fellow with a black beard, being he that is most prone, as well to

suspect, as to be suspected about women's matters, according to the old saying."

It would seem that, in early times, the fair sex were supposed to have the greater charms, and accordingly they were styled, "Children of the Gods" by the Greeks. In "As You Like it" (act iii. sc. 5), the Shepherdess Phoebe complains of being scorned on account of her being dark--

"I have more cause to hate him than to love him:
For what had he to do to chide at me?
He said mine eyes were black and my hair black:
And, now I am remember'd, scorned at me." Indeed, as a writer has observed in the Saturday Review, the time was when the black-haired, black-eyed girl of fiction was as dark of soul as of tresses, while the blue-eyed maiden's character was of "Heaven's own colour." But Thackeray changed this tradition by invariably making his dark heroines nice, his fair heroines "treacherous sirens." Another item of folk-lore tells us that--

"A brown wench in face
Shows that nature gives her grace," and many of our country peasantry still affirm that "a too brown lass is gay and cleanly;" whilst, in accordance with an old proverbial rhyme--

"The red is wise, the brown trusty,
The pale envious, the dark lusty." Dr. Paul Topinard, in his "Anthropology," has made an interesting summary of the variation of the colour of the skin, from the fairest Englishwoman to the darkest African, furnishing us with numerous examples of the many hues which form the distinguishing marks of different nationalities. These are interesting if only as showing how widely one country differs from another in its notion as to what constitutes beauty in the complexion. And, turning to uncultured tribes, Dr. Letourneau has given some curious illustrations in his "Sociology" on this point, which show how vastly different are their conceptions of beauty of complexion, some races even disfiguring themselves with pigments of the most glaring colours.

French proverbial wisdom in further enumerating the main features of a woman's character, says that her heart is a real mirror, which "reflects every object without attaching itself to any;" and in Germany, whilst due praise is bestowed on the fair sex, women's varied traits of character have not escaped criticism--one very common maxim affirming that "she is at the mercy of circumstances just as the sand is at the mercy of the wind;" whilst we are further told that, although "woman reads and studies endlessly, her thought is always an afterthought." The Russian is of the same opinion, for, according to him, "a woman's hair is long, but her sense short," and "a dog is wiser than a woman, he does not bark at his master." Tamil proverbial wisdom declares that "the skill of a woman only goes so far as the fireplace"--in other words, cleverness is no use to a woman outside domestic affairs; and the not very complimentary old English adage says, "When an ass climbs a ladder, we may find wisdom in a woman;" whilst another old saying runs, "She hath less beauty than her picture, and truly not much more wit."

In some instances, we find the essential requirements needed to make a good woman laid down, as in an excellent Chinese proverb, which runs thus: "We ask four things for a woman--that virtue dwell in her heart, modesty in her forehead, sweetness in her mouth, and labour in her hands;" with which may be compared a well-known Sanskrit maxim, "The beauty of the cuckoo is the voice, of women chastity; of the deformed learning, and of ascetics patience." On the other hand, under a variety of forms, proverbial literature inculcates the necessity of our remembrance of these four evils thus summed up in the Italian warning: "From four things God preserve us--painted woman, a conceited valet, salt beef without mustard, and a little late dinner." A similar idea is conveyed in the Assamese proverb: "To be the husband of a worthless woman, a cart covering with a hole in the middle of it, a hired weaver--these three are the agony of death." To understand this proverb it must be remembered that "in Assam the bullock cart is covered with a hood made of matting, with bamboo hoops to support it. Any one who has travelled in a bullock cart with a hole in the hood will appreciate its truth."

A trait of character, however, which women are proverbially said to their disadvantage to possess, is a lack of truth and reliability; and, according to an old proverb, "He who takes an eel by the tail, or a woman at her word, soon finds he holds nothing." The popular adage which warns a man not to trust a woman further than he can see her has been variously expressed, one version in Germany being "Arms, women, and books should be looked at daily;" and, according to another, it is said, "Beware of a bad woman, and put no trust in a good one;" which are similar to the Hindustani adage, "A hare and a woman are yours while in your power." The Italians have a maxim to the same effect, "Woman always speak the truth, but not the whole truth," and hence there are the frequent admonitions against trusting womankind, for the French affirm that "he who trusts a woman and leads an ass will never be free from plague;" and, similarly, it is said, "The ruses of women multiply with their years;" and where truth is deficient in a woman there can be no reliance in her word, for, as the Chinese affirm, "An untruthful woman is rotten grass and tangled hemp." But, unreliable as a woman at times may be, we cannot endorse the Turkish maxim, "The dog is faithful, woman never;" which is not unlike the Kashmiri proverb: "A horse, a wife, and a sword, these three are unfaithful;" and Hindu proverbial literature, speaking of woman's insincerity, says that "while the wife is eating her husband's food, she is inwardly singing the praises of her mother."

On the other hand, in defence of woman, it has been urged that good-nature and simplicity of character are liable to imposition, for, as it is commonly said, "All lay load on the winning horse," a version of which is to be found among Sindhi proverbs "A mild-faced woman has her cheeks pulled." We may further compare our own proverbs: "She is as quiet as a wasp in one's nose," and "She looks as if butter would not melt in her mouth;" and, again, "A gentle housewife mars the household"--in other words, through her leniency there is "a want of discipline."

An amusing phrase to denote a proud woman is this, "She holds up her head like a hen drinking water;" and when Herefordshire folk speak of a strong, robust girl, the remark may still occasionally be heard, "She hath one point of a good hawk, she is hardy." When a girl simpers and puts on an affected appearance, in such a way as to excite ridicule and amusement, she is still, in old proverbial phraseology, said to "simper as a mare when she eats thistles," or to "simper like a furmity kettle." An indolent girl is described as "having broken her elbow," and the phrase applied to a woman who grows inactive after marriage is, "She hath broken her elbow at the church-door." The same idea, again, is conveyed in the adage, "She had rather kiss than spin," implying that many a young girl, instead of being industrious at home, would much sooner gad about and play with love; and, if this be not in her power, to use a Somersetshire phrase, "She is as crusty as that is hard-baked."
Chastity, to which references will be found in ensuing chapters, has been universally regarded as an essential necessity for a good woman, for as a popular proverb, current under a variety of forms in most countries, enjoins, "An immodest woman is food without salt;" and a Chinese maxim tells its that "modesty is a woman's courage;" whereas Tacitus wrote in his day, "When a woman has lost her character, she will shrink from no crime." And, where this trait of character is wanting, the consensus of opinion seems to be that no amount of care, or foresight, will prevent a woman going astray; for a Kural saying, too, teaches much the same lesson

"Of what avail are prisons barred,
Their chastity is women's guard." And a Malay proverb emphasises the tenacity of a woman's purpose, whether that be good or bad--

"A whole herd of buffaloes might be shut up in a pen,
There is one thing not to be guarded--a woman." Much to the same effect is the Eastern proverb, "Women, if confined at home by faithful guardians, are not really guarded; but those women who guard themselves by their own will, are well guarded," to which may be added the German adages: "A sackful of fleas is easier to watch than a woman," and "A woman and a glass are always in danger;" whilst the old English proverbial phrase, "She will stay at home, perhaps, if her leg be broken," implies that nothing but what happens through compulsion will keep many a woman at home. Indeed, it has always been held that there is no compensation for the lack of chastity in a woman, an old Tamil maxim declaring that "beauty without chastity is a flower without fragrance."

On the other hand, an Arabic proverb says that "The modest woman's walk lasts from morning till evening," which has been thus explained, "The modest woman rarely goes out, or meets any one, and, when she does get the opportunity to go out, she is as delighted with the various sights as if she were a stranger, and she spends a long time in looking at them, and in chatting with those of her intimate friends whom she meets, so that the length of her absence from the house has become proverbial."

Lastly, due consideration for the frailty of woman is extensively enjoined in proverbial lore, a Tamil adage telling us that "though you see a woman sin with your own eyes, cover it over with earth," for, it adds, "if she says, I am a woman, even the devil will have compassion on her;" and hence a person is sternly warned "not to dare to stand on the earth when passing unjust remarks on a woman." A German proverb says, "Frailty, thy name is woman," which is to the same effect as the Eastern aphorism, "Women, like flowers, are of tender fabric, and should be softly handled;" which coincides with the Indian maxim, "Do not strike, even with a flower, a woman guilty of a hundred crimes," and with the Hindustani proverb, "It is not right to lift one's hand to a woman."

At the same time, our forefathers were strongly of opinion that a certain amount of correction was good for women, an opinion to which we have referred in our chapter on "Woman's Goodness," where we have given some of the proverbial wisdom on the subject. Among Oriental proverbs too much leniency is deprecated, it being said that "the petted boy becomes a gambler, and the petted girl a wanton," which is similar to the Marathi maxim, "By the mother's petting the child becomes an idiot;" and to our own proverbs "A child may have too much of his mother's blessing," and "Mothers' darlings make but milk-sop heroes;" for, says Ray, "Mothers are oftentimes too tender and fond of their children, who are ruined and spoiled by their indulgence." In Hindustani lore we find the same idea expressed, a familiar adage maintaining that, "Melons require the sun, and mangoes want the sun; women need a strong hand, and children want love." The reason for this would seem to be that a woman does not always know what is best for
her, hence the Welsh adage:--

"A woman mostly will prefer
The thing that is the worst for her." And hence, as the Italians say, "Women, apes, and nuts require strong hands." There is an African proverb which says that "a man is not obeyed by his wife in his own house," which, we are told, implies that she does not consider him her husband "unless he beat her, thwack"--a mode of treatment which, it is needless to say, would not be endured by the wives of the West

Previous Index Next

Woman's Beauty -- The Folk-lore of Women -- by T.F. Thistelton-Dyer

. · 25 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

"She's beautiful and therefore to be wooed;
She is a woman, therefore to be won."
1st Henry VI. act v. sc. 3. "A BEAUTIFUL woman," remarked Napoleon, "pleases the eye, a good woman pleases the heart; one is a jewel, the other a treasure." It is not surprising that the beauty of woman--in praise of which both literature and art have from the earliest period lavished some of their grandest works--should have given rise in most countries to a host of strange and romantic fancies. Many of these survive in our midst to-day, and, although experience has long proved how unreliable such beliefs are, they still retain their hold on the popular mind, often causing unnecessary prejudice and fear.

It is a very old notion, for instance, that beauty is unfortunate; and, according to an old Italian proverb, "Over the greatest beauty hangs the greatest ruin." Allusions to this piece of folk-lore are not only found in the poetry and romance of bygone centuries, but are of frequent occurrence in the literature of modern times. Thus Goethe makes Helena affirm that beauty and happiness remain not long united and Byron, in his "Childe Harold" (iv. 42), speaks of "the fatal gift of beauty." We may recall, too, Lord Tennyson's charming and pathetic language in "A Dream of Fair Women," where he relates how--

"In every land
I saw, wherever light illumineth,
Beauty and anguish walking hand in hand
The downward slope to death.
Those far-renowned brides of ancient song
Peopled the hollow dark, like burning stars,
And I heard sounds of insult, shame, and wrong,
And trumpets blown for wars." And there is a well-known passage where Fielding, in his "Journey from this World to the Next," (chap. vi.), thus writes: "She--Fortune--was one of the most deformed females I ever beheld, nor could I help observing the frowns she expressed when any beautiful spirit of her own sex passed her, nor the affability that smiled on her countenance on the approach of any handsome male spirits. Hence I accounted for the truth of an observation I had often made on earth, that nothing is more fortunate than handsome men, nor more unfortunate than handsome women;" such, too, was the opinion of the host of the "Canterbury Tales" who bewailed the sad fate of Virginia related by the Doctor of Physic:--

"Allas! too deare boughte sshe her beauté,
Wherefore I say, that alle men may se,
That giftes of fortune, or of nature,
Ben cause of deth of many a creature.
Her beaute was hir deth, I dar well sayn,
Allas! so piteously as she was slayn." And there is the old mythical tale which tells how Medusa was a maiden of such beauty as to provoke the jealousy of Minerva, wherefore she was transformed into a frightful monster. Her much-admired ringlets became hissing serpents, and no living thing could look upon her without being turned into stone. Legendary lore provides us with many stories of this kind, which illustrates Patterson's well-known lines:--

"O fatal beauty! why art thou bestowed
On hapless woman still to make her wretched?
Betrayed by thee, how many are undone!" Chinese folk-lore maintains that beautiful women are unlucky, one of

their many proverbs on the subject declaring that "fair maidens are very unlucky, and clever young men have little beauty." It was also supposed that feminine beauty of unusual merit was fatal to long life, and no subject has been more popular with the novelist, or poet, than the gradual fading away of some young girl gifted in a high degree with good looks.
Lord Tennyson, in his "May Queen," has interwoven this idea, and it is found scattered here and there in the literature of most countries. Hence, another reason why beauty has been regarded as unfortunate is owing to its being thought prejudicial to health, a variation of which belief occurs in "Richard III." (act iii. sc. i), where the Duke of Gloucester says:--

"So wise, so young, they say do never live long." Another misfortune connected with beauty is its evanescence, and, as the German proverbs run, "Woman's beauty, the forest echo and rainbows, soon pass away," and "Maidens and roses soon lose their bloom." And the same truth is conveyed in the Hindustani proverb, "The spring in which he saw the blossoms is gone, now, O bee, only the thorns remain on the rose;" another version of which is, "My fair one don't be proud of your complexion, it is the guest of but a few days." Poets have largely dwelt on beauty's transient character, and Shakespeare, in "The Passionate Pilgrim," says:--

"Beauty is but a vain and doubtful good;
A shining gloss that vadeth suddenly;
A flower that dies when first it 'gins to bud,
A brittle glass that's broken presently,
A doubtful good, a gloss, a glass, a flower,
Lost, vaded, broken, dead within an hour." And the oft-quoted adage that "Beauty is like an almanac; if it last a year it is well," reminds us of Moliér's lines in his "Les Feminies Savantes":--

"La beauté du visage est un frele ornement,
Une fleur passagére, un éclat d'un moment,
Et qui n'est attache qu' a la simple epiderne." The snares of beauty have been made from early times the subject of much proverbial wisdom, a Servian adage affirming that, "Better sometimes a woman blind than one too beautiful;" for, as the Italian proverb adds, "Tell a woman that she is beautiful, and the devil will repeat it to her ten times;" with which may be compared an old Welsh proverb, which has been translated thus:--

"Three things may make a woman nought
A giddy brain,
A heart that's vain,
A face in beauty's fashion wrought;" and the German proverb adds, "An impudent face never marries." There is, too, the old English adage, "The fairest silk is soon stained;" for, as Ray has said, "The handsomest women are soonest corrupted, because they are most tempted."

Although we cannot endorse the old German proverb which says that, "Every woman would be rather pretty than pious," yet most women are mightily proud of their beauty, for, as an early English maxim reminds us, "She that is born a beauty is born married;" another version of which we find in an old work entitled, "New Help to Discourse" (1721, P. 134), "Beauty draws more than five yoke of oxen;" with which we may
compare Pope's lines in "The Rape of the Lock" (Canto ii.):--

"Fair tresses man's imperial race insnare,
And beauty draws us with a single hair." The same idea occurs in French proverbial lore, but it is thus qualified:--

"Amour fait beaucoup
Mais argent fait tout;" and according to German proverbial lore, "Beauty is a good letter of introduction," and,

"Good looks are an inheritance," and again, "A pretty face is a good drummer;" but, on the other hand, it is said, "A poor beauty finds more lovers than husbands."

It is not surprising that in all ages women have striven to preserve their beauty, however transient it may be, for, as it has been remarked, "it is valueless to a woman to be young unless pretty, or to be pretty unless young;" and an amusing story is told of an old queen who, day after day, sighed with longing regret that her beauty had vanished, and that her young days were gone. In this sad dilemma she was advised to try some magic restorative to bring back the rosy blush of youth, and accordingly--

"Of rosmayr she took six pounde,
And grounde it well into a stownde," and then she mixed with it water, in which she bathed three times a day, taking care to anoint her head with "gode balme afterwards." In a few days her old withered face fell away, and she became so young and pretty that she began to look out for a husband.

But, unfortunately, stories of this class belong to the domain of fairyland, or, otherwise, old age would have a bad time of it, for every woman would remain young if not beautiful. At any rate, there is no disguising the fact that the human brain has done its very best to accommodate the fair sex with the charm of juvenescence, judging from the rules laid down for this purpose; a popular folk-rhyme advising us thus:--

"Those who wish to be fair and stout,
Must wash their faces with the disclout;
Those who wish to be wrinkled and grey,
Must keep the disclout far away." The common wayside flower, the lady's mantle, was once in great repute with ladies; for, according to Hoffman, it had the power of "restoring feminine beauty, however faded, to its early freshness;" and the wild tansy, laid to soak in buttermilk for nine days, had the reputation of "making the complexion very fair." The hawthorn, again, was in high repute among the fair sex, for according to an old piece of proverbial lore:--

"The fair maid who, the first of May,
Goes to the fields at break of day,
And washes in dew from the hawthorn-tree,
Will ever after handsome be"; and the common fumitory "was used when gathered in wedding hours and boiled in water, milk, and whey, as a wash for the complexion of rustic maids."

Various allusions to these old recipes occur in the literature of the past, and we find the Earl of Shrewsbury--who had charge of the unfortunate Mary Queen of Scots--making an application for an increased allowance on account of her expensive habit of bathing in wine. Those who could not afford such an extravagant luxury contented themselves with milk-baths, which were all the fashion in the reign of Charles II.
Great importance, too, has long been attached to what is popularly nicknamed "Beauty Sleep," it being supposed that the two hours' sleep before midnight are worth all that comes after it, and are far more instrumental in keeping off wrinkles than all the cosmetics and expedients to which we have just referred, the faintest indication of which is a killing blow to womankind. Hence it is not surprising that, in the words of a Portuguese proverb, the marriageable young lady cries in despair, "marry me, mother, for my face is growing wrinkled." The explanation given by Ray of the value of the so-called beauty-sleep is amusing: "For the sun being the light of this sublunary world, whose heat causes the motion of all terrestrial animals, when he is farthest off, that is about midnight, the spirits of themselves are aptest to rest and compose, so that the middle of the night must needs be the most proper time to sleep in, especially if we consider the greater expense of spirits in the daytime, partly by the heat of the afternoon, and partly by labour, and the constant exercise of all the senses; whereof then to wake is put the spirits in motion, when there are fewest of them, and they naturally most sluggish and unfit for it."

But it is generally acknowledged that the attempt to cheat time of his wrinkles has nearly always proved fruitless, and only too frequently "the would-be fair ones have been driven in despair to conceal what they found it impossible to remove, and hence the feminine fashion of bedaubing the complexion with artificial tints, a custom which it may be remembered was almost universal among Grecian women."

On the other hand, however much fortune may be reputed to be hostile to beauty, good looks have been termed "a woman's glory," and Galen perhaps was not far wrong in maintaining that one reason why misfortune is so often connected with beauty is that "many who have been distinguished for their loveliness have neglected the education of their mind," for, as the German proverbs say, "Beauty and understanding go rarely together;" "Beauty is but dross if honesty be lost," and there is the Tamil adage, "Beauty in the unworthy is poison in a casket of gold." Some, like Ralph Nickleby, may disparage a woman's beauty, but, as it has been remarked, one reason why beauty has been coveted by most women is partly owing to the early belief that a lovely face was the outward indication that a person so adorned was gifted with an equally beautiful soul within. It was long and extensively believed that a lofty soul could not dwell in an ugly casket, and hence a beautiful woman was commonly credited with having a fine and noble character, a notion which in only too many instances history alone has refuted, for, as an old proverb says, "Beauty may have fair leaves, but little fruit." This once popular belief, however, was a favourite one with the poets, and is referred to in the "Tempest," (act i. sc. 2):--

"There's nothing ill can dwell in such a temple:
If the ill Spirit have so fair a house,
Good things strive to dwell with't." And Young alludes to the same idea in these well-known lines:--

"What's female beauty, but an air divine,
Through which the mind's all gentle graces shine?
They, like the sun, irradiate all between,
The body charms, because the soul is seen,
Hence men are often captives of a face
They know not why, of no peculiar grace.
Some forms, though bright, no mortal man can bear,
Some, none resist, though not exceeding fair." Moralists and others have largely dwelt on this familiar idea, and, in one form or another, it has prevailed in most countries, and has been incorporated in many a legendary romance; an item of folk-lore which Sir A. de Vere Hunt has thus prettily expressed:--

"What is beauty? not the show
Of shapely limbs and features--no!
These are but flowers
That have their dated hours
To breathe their momentary sweets, then go.
'Tis the stainless soul within,
That outshines the fairest skin." There would appear, however, to be an exception to this rule, for German folk-wisdom tells us that "A fair skin often covers a crooked mind," and "A fair face may hide a foul heart," which reminds us of the whited sepulchres of the New Testament; and it is further said in Germany that "Falseness often lurks beneath fair hair," and there is the Spanish proverb, "A handsome woman is either silly or vain."

But notions of beauty fortunately differ, and, according to a popular adage, "What is one man's meat is another man's poison;" and, whatever truth there may be in the proverb which reminds us that "Beauty is but skin deep," there is no denying that personal appearance has made all the difference in the estimation formed by one person of another. According to an old folk-rhyme we are told that:--

A fair face is half a portion,
A fair face may be a foul bargain,
A fair face may hide a foul heart,
A fair field and no favour." The power of woman's beauty over man, however, has always been proverbial all over the world, and, from the earliest period, it has formed one of the leading subjects of the wise-saws current in most countries. Thus a popular German maxim tells us that "one hair of a woman draws more than a bell-rope," or, as another version has it, "Beauty draws us with a single hair;" and there is a common saying in the East, "A good-looking woman in a house is the foe of all the plain ones." At the same time there have never been wanting moralists to warn us that, however powerful the fascinatory influence of woman's beauty may be, it is far from being always supreme. Accordingly there are a number of proverbs which affirm that, whereas "beauty is potent, money is omnipotent," with which may be compared the oft-quoted saying to the effect that, "Beauties without fortunes have sweethearts plenty; but husbands none at all;" or, as it is sometimes said, "Beauty without bounty avails nought." Oftentimes those proverbs, which admit the fascinatory charms of a woman's beauty, qualify their statements with a warning, as in the German proverb, "Beauty is the eye's food, and the soul's sorrow;" an old English maxim is to the same effect: "A beautiful woman is the paradox of the eves, the hell of the soul, and the purgatory of the purse;" and again, "Wickedness with beauty is the devil's hook baited;" the same idea being found in Hindustani proverbial wisdom, in which we find this maxim: "All pretty maids are poisonous pests; an enemy kills by hiding these by smiles and jests." It is said in Italy that "a beautiful woman smiling bespeaks a purse-weeping," with which may be compared the German adage:--

"Hares are caught with hounds,
Fools with praises,
Women with gold." Indeed, in most countries there are numerous proverbs to the same effect, demonstrating how one of the penalties--one which oftentimes is man's ruin--paid for woman's beauty is an empty purse. Similarly, we are told that "a handsome hostess is bad for the purse;" and hence there is some truth in the following: "A rich man is never ugly in the eyes of a girl."

Proverb-making cynics, again, have not always been very chivalrous and complimentary in their allusions to the charms of the fair sex. Thus, as beautiful women had the reputation of being less handy and serviceable than plain ones, the adage arose which says--"A fair woman and a slashed gown will always find some nail in the way;" in other words, as women value themselves on their personal attractions, they are in the same degree generally apt to be negligent in other things. According to another version of the same proverb, it is very commonly said that "the more women look in their glasses the less they look to their houses." Cynical savings, happily, of this kind, as far as beauty is concerned, are in the minority; for, in most legendary and historical lore, good features have been made characteristic of nearly all superior and exalted beings. Hence, at the present day, beauty is often said to be "fairylike," it having been a popular belief that beauty, united with power, was one of the most attractive forms of the fairy tribe. Such was that of Spenser's Fairy Queen, and of Shakespeare's Titania; and it may be remembered how, in "Antony and Cleopatra" (act iv. sc. 8), Antony, on seeing Cleopatra enter, says to Scarus:--

"To this great fairy I'll commend thy acts,
Make her thanks bless thee." And in "Cymbeline" (act iii. sc. 6), when the two brothers find Imogen in their cave, Belarius exclaims:--

"But that it eats our victuals, I should think
Here were a fairy," and he then adds :--

"By Jupiter, an angel! or, if not,
An earthly paragon! Behold divineness,
No elder than a boy." Beauty, too, which Plato described as "a privilege of Nature;" Homer, "a glorious gift of

Nature;" Ovid, "a favour bestowed by the Gods;" and Shakespeare, "that miracle and queen of gems," has formed the theme of most of those traditionary tales of love and romance which, embodied in the folk-tales of different countries, portray the many beliefs and fancies which, in the course of centuries, have grouped round this acknowledged charm of womanhood.

The absence of beauty, on the other hand, was, in days of old, considered almost a disgrace, it having been a common idea that the ugliness of the wicked was in proportion to their evil nature. Hence, an unprepossessing appearance subjected the unfortunate woman to the most uncomplimentary stigma, and oftentimes even made her an object of contempt; for, according to an old proverb, "An ugly woman is a disease of the stomach, a handsome woman a disease of the head." And there is the Hebrew adage, "Ugliness is the guardian of women," for the chance is remote of those who are not gifted with beauty yielding to the snares of temptation. But even ugliness occasionally outweighs the advantages of beauty, for the German mother reminds her daughter that "a virtuous woman, though ugly, is the ornament of her house;" and there is the Spanish adage, which says, "the ugliest is the best housewife;" and our own proverb runs: "She's better than she's bonnie;" although a Tamil proverb, referring ironically to an ugly woman, speaks of her as "killed with beauty;" and a Welsh adage tells us that if an ugly woman fall, breaking her hip, the pity she gets is, "how clumsy to trip." It has, however, been generally acknowledged that there is no woman who is not, more or less, fond of flattery, and there is a common saying in Spain, "Tell a woman she is pretty and you will turn her head," a piece of proverbial lore which is found in France and Germany, and also in our own country. But, after all, there is one point to be remembered, for a popular German adage says that "handsome women generally fall to the lot of ugly men." There is truth, also, in the Sindhi adage which says, "Better a blind eye than a blind fate," which means, better be ugly than unfortunate, as many favoured with beauty are supposed to be; for, after all, as the proverb truly remarks, "a good fame is better than a good face." It is recorded that Madame de Bourignon was so ugly when born that the proposal was actually made of smothering her, so as to spare her a life of ridicule and humiliation; and, to quote a further illustration, a story is told of the Emperor Henry IV., of Germany, who, on entering a church, where an ugly priest happened to be officiating, wondered in his mind whether it was possible for God to accept services rendered by so ill-favoured a ministrant. But the imperial ministrations were interrupted by the priest's boy mumbling, almost unititelligibly the versicle: "It is He that hath made us, not we ourselves," whereupon the priest removed him for his indistinct enunciation, and he repeated the Psalmist's words, which the Emperor took as an undesigned rebuke to his own thoughts.

Queen Elizabeth, similarly, was careful to admit into her household none but those of "stature and birth;" and one day, it is recorded, she went so far as to refuse the services of a certain individual for no other reason than that one of his jaws was deficient of a tooth. But there was Tamerlane's wife, who, although she had no nose, was considered a belle by her contemporaries; and even hunchbacks have had their admirers on the ground that the "dorsal curvature is the true line of beauty."

It has, after all, however, been generally admitted that beauty is, more or less, deceptive, and especially where love is concerned, for, as the popular adage says: "If Jack is in love, he is no judge of Jill's beauty," which corresponds with the Italian saying, "Handsome is not what is handsome, but what pleases." Similarly, the French have a familiar proverb, "Never seemed a prison fair, nor a mistress foul," which has its counterpart in Germany, where it is said, "he whose fair one squints says she ogles;" and "Everybody thinks his own cuckoo sings better than another's nightingale;" with which we may compare what the African negro says, "The beetle is a beauty in the eyes of its mother"--love transforming all imperfections into beauty. But, as an Eastern piece of proverbial wisdom reminds us--

"For virtue a woman our our wife we make;
For her beauty we a concubine take," with which may be compared another Eastern adage:--

"Long not for the Goddess's beauty divine,

Long that the star of your husband may shine." The fact that love has a large mantle to hide faults is further shown in an Arab proverb: "Love is the companion of blindness;" and the Talmud emphasises the same truth: "To love a thing makes the eye blind, the ear deaf;" and a Hindustani proverb runs thus: "Fall in love with an ogress, and even she is a fairy," with which may be compared another not very complimentary one, "Her name is Beauty, and a dog's her face." It is interesting to find the same idea in Assamese folk-lore, wherein occurs the following: "What shall I say of my step-mother's character--in one hand she has chutney and in the other salt; she has no hair in the middle of her head, but her husband calls her the beautiful one?" And much the same idea is conveyed in the Hindustani piece of proverbial wisdom: "She cries over her own idiot, but laugh's at another's;" and the Dutch have a saying, "No ape but swears he has the handsomest children."

Indeed, that in a lover's eyes, plainness oftentimes becomes actual beauty, is exemplified over and over again in the literature of past and modern days, for, in "A Midsummer Night's Dream" (act v. sc. i)--

"The lover, all as frantic,
Sees Helen's beauty in a brow of Egypt." Lord Lytton, in "Kenelm Chillingly," has introduced the charming song, "The Beauty of the Mistress is in the Lover's Eye," which runs thus:--

"Is she not pretty, my Mabel May?
Nobody ever yet called her so.
Are not her lineaments faultless, say?
If I must answer you plainly--No.
Joy to believe that the maid I love
None but myself as she is can see;
Joy that she steals from her heaven above,
And is only revealed on this earth to me." The same idea is introduced in Mrs. Browning's "My Kate;" and Balzac, too, was of the same opinion, for he says, "When women love, they forgive us everything, even our crimes; when they do not love us, they give us credit for nothing, not even for our virtues." But, on the other hand, there is equal truth in the Welsh proverb, which is only too frequently proved in the romance of daily life, "Faults are thick when love is thin."
Some, again, have tried to disparage beauty by maintaining that it is only "skin-deep," a notion which has found its way into proverbial lore. The literature of the past contains sundry allusions to this idea, and in the Rev. Rob. Fleming's poems (1691) we are reminded that--

"Beauty is but skin-thick, and so doth fall
Short of those statues made of wood or stone." And in Ralph Venning's "Orthodoxe Paradoxe" (1650) it is said that--

"All the beauty of the world 'tis but skin-deep, a sunne-blast defaceth;" which is not unlike Sir Thomas Overbury's lines in his poem, "A Wife"--

"And all the carnall beauty of my wife
Is but skin-deep." And yet there is much truth in the Hindu adage, "The eyes love beauty, the heart loves wisdom," for, as it has been observed elsewhere, there is no denying the truth of the old French proverb, "It is not the greatest beauties that inspire the most profound passion;" and to the same purport is the German adage, "One cannot live on beauty."

Previous Index Next

Woman's Dress -- The Folk-lore of Women -- by T.F. Thistelton-Dyer

. · 25 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

"A woman of light, garmented in light."
SHELLEY, The Witch of Atlas

"THE true ornament of a woman," writes Justin, "is virtue, not dress;" but the love of finery, whether rightly or wrongly, has always been held to be one of the inherent weaknesses of womankind, and an old proverb says that "'tis as natural for women to pride themselves on fine clothes as 'tis for a peacock to spread his tall," with which may be compared an Eastern proverb, "A woman without ornament is like a field without water." But, perhaps, there is some excuse for this love of vanity, especially as dress pleases the opposite sex, it being popularly supposed in Spain that "A well-dressed woman draws her husband from another woman's door." It is said in Japan that "An ugly woman dreads the mirror," and some allowance must, therefore, be made for her desire to make up, in some measure, by dress what she lacks in good looks, although the proverb runs in Italy that "ugly women finely dressed are the uglier for it." This, however, must not be regarded as the popular verdict, a Tamil aphorism being not far wrong when it recommends us to "put jewellery on a woman and to look at her, and to plaster a wall and to look at it," implying that both will be improved by care. This advice, says Mr. Jensen, is generally given by a mother to one who confesses that her daughter is not exactly a beauty. Even Ovid was forced to complain that "dress is most deceptive, for, covered with jewels and gold ornaments everywhere, a girl is often the least part of herself;" with which may be compared the expression of Euripides, which is to this effect, "She who dresses for others beside her husband, makes herself a wanton."

It has long, however, been a familiar adage in most countries that "fine feathers make fine birds"; for, as the Spanish say, "No woman is ugly when she is dressed;" and, according to the Chinese proverb, "Three-tenths of a woman's good looks are due to nature, seven-tenths to dress;" a piece of proverbial lore which holds good in most countries.

It is not surprising that woman's dress has been much caricatured by wits and satirists, and been made the subject of many a piece of proverbial lore. As Plautus observed of a certain young lady, "it's no good her being well dressed if she's badly mannered; ill-breeding mars a fine dress more than dirt"--in other words, he meant to imply that dress is oftentimes deceptive and creates a false appearance, which is not in keeping with the woman who wears it. Many of our old proverbs are to the same effect, an oft-quoted one affirming that "fine clothes oftentimes hide a base descent," with which may be compared the following: "Fine dressing is a foul house swept before the doors," an illustration of which Ray thus gives, "Fair clothes, ornaments and dresses, set off persons and make them appear handsome, which, if stripped of them, would seem but plainly and homely. God makes and apparel shapes." Extravagant dress has been universally condemned as emblematic of bad taste, and, among Hindustani proverbs on the subject, a woman too showily dressed is described as "yellow with gold and white with pearls." A Tamil proverb, speaking of an elaborately-dressed woman, says, "It is true she is adorned with flowers and gold, but she is beaten with slippers wherever she goes;" in other words, such a woman, however well dressed, is a bad character, and must be treated with scorn; a variation of this maxim being thus: "If you dress in rags and go out, you will be an object for admiration, but, if you dress up nicely and go out, people will speak ill of you," thinking that you are an overdressed woman, and, therefore, inclined to be fast. Among German proverbs we are reminded that "A woman strong in flounces is weak in the head."

In Hindustani proverbial lore an old woman extravagantly dressed is contemptuously described "as an old mare with a red bridle," and "a gay old woman with a mat petticoat," and, according to another proverb, when a young girl not gifted with good looks is seen elaborately dressed, it is said, "On the strength of what beauty do you deck yourself thus?"

The inconsistency of dress when the home is poor and shabby has been much censured, an Eastern proverb running thus--"Nothing in the house and she sports a topaz ring," with which may be compared another saying, "Nothing to eat or drink in the house, and the lady of it very proud."

But the chief charm of a woman's dress is consistency, as it is thus expressed in a Sindhi proverb--

"As the wall so the painting,
As the face so the adornment." Similarly, it is commonly said that "fine words dress ill deeds," and hence we are told on the Continent, "the swarthy dame, dressed fine, deceives the fair one." It may be remembered, also, that the same idea occurs in "The Taming of the Shrew" (act iv. sc. 3):--

"What, is the jay more precious than the lark,
Because his feathers are more beautiful?
Or is the adder better than the eel,
Because his painted skin contents the eye?" Accordingly proverbial lore in most parts of the world warns men against selecting a wife by her outward appearance, which is often deceptive; and a common Spanish adage says, "If you want a wife choose her on Saturday, not on Sunday;" in other words, choose her when she is not decked out in her finery, otherwise a man may regret his mistake in the words of one of Heywood's proverbs:--

"I took her for a rose, but she breedeth a burr,
She cometh to stick to me now in hir lacke." On the other hand, true beauty needs no adornment, or outward display, to enhance its charms, for, as it is said in Scotland, "A bonny bride is sune buskit," that is, soon dressed, or, as the Portuguese say, "a well-formed figure needs no cloak," an adage which coincides with Thomson's poetic words:--

"Her polished limbs
Veiled in a simple robe, their best attire,
Beyond the pomp of dress; for loveliness
Needs not the foreign aid of ornament,
But is, when unadorn'd, adorn'd the most." However well dressed a woman may be, her nature remains the same, for, as the French say:--

"An ape's an ape, a varlet's a varlet,
Though she be drest in silks and scarlet." And, among the many German proverbs to the same effect, it is said, "The maid is such as she was bred, and tow as it was spun," and "Once a housemaid never a lady," which remind us of the popular adage, "There's no making a silk purse out of a sow's ear," and there is a Sindhi maxim which has the same moral, "Beads about the neck and the devil in heart."

Another proverb, which, under a variety of forms, is found in our own and other countries, runs thus--"Let no woman's painting breed thy heart's fainting," because women who thus adorn themselves have always been subject to reproach; for, as the old adage says, "A good face needs no paint," or, as another version has it, "Fair faces need no paint."

Such a practice as that of rouging, too, has been generaIly discountenanced, since it has, from a very early period, been the recognised emblem of a fast woman, for it has long been said that "A harlot's face is a painted sepulchre," and as the Italian adage runs--"Women rouge that they may not blush." Hence we are told that "A woman who paints puts up a bill to let," with which we may compare the popular adage--"A woman and a cherry are painted for their own harm." The same idea exists in most countries, and there is a Chinese proverb to this effect--"I guess that a good-looking woman needs no rouge to make her pretty;" and it is further said that, "although the rouged beauty

repudiates age, she cannot come up to the bloom of youth."
As "blemishes are unseen by night," according to an old Latin proverb, when dress, artfully arranged, presents most women in their most attractive form, their admirers were warned against falling into their meshes at such a time; for, as it is still commonly said by our French neighbours, "By candlelight a goat looks a lady," and on this account we are recommended by the Italians not to choose "A jewel, or a woman, or linen, by candlelight." It may be added that this idea has given rise to a host of proverbs much to the same effect, such as, "When candles be out all cats be grey," and "Joan is as good as my lady in the dark."

It has long been proverbial that the "smith's mare and the cobbler's wife are always the worst shod," a truism which, under one form or another, is found in most countries, a Sindhi adage running thus--"Her lover, an oilman, and yet her hair dirty;" and there is the Hindu proverb, "A shoemaker's wife with bursted shoes," with which we may compare the German proverb, "Anxious about her dress, but disregarding her appearance," in connection with which we may quote Heywood's couplet:--

"But who is worse shod than the shoemaker's wife,
With shops full of new shoes all her life?" and the old English proverb, "The tailor's wife is worst clad."

Woman's dress, again, has from time immemorial been strongly censured in our proverbial lore as productive of extravagance, and Ovid's words have long ago passed into a popular adage, "What madness it is to carry all one's income on one's back." Among modern poets Cowper, too, wrote in the same strain:--

"We sacrifice to dress, till household joys
And comforts cease. Dress drains our cellars dry,
And keeps our larder clean; puts out our fires,
And introduces hunger, frost, and woe,
Where peace and hospitality might reign." And Chinese proverbial lore says, "Do not marry wives or concubines who are gorgeously fine." There are other disadvantages, for, whereas it is said, "Silks and satins put out the fire in the kitchen," household duties are neglected, for one of Heywood's proverbs reminds us that "the more women look into the glass the less they look to the house," a German version running thus--"a woman who looks much in the glass spins but little;" and we may compare the French saying, "A handsome landlady is bad for the purse;" but, on the other hand, we are told "that's the best gown that goes up and down the house." Whatever the opinion of the fair sex may be on this point, we would quote the wisdom of Shakespeare's "Taming of the Shrew," (act iv. sc. 3):--

"Our purses shall be proud, our garments poor,
For 'tis the mind that makes the body rich;
And as the sun breaks through the darkest clouds
So honour peereth in the meanest habit." But, whatever censures may be passed on a woman's love of dress, she generally has some answer in defence. A puritan preacher once rebuked a young girl who had just been making her hair into ringlets, "Ah," said he, "had God intended your locks to be curled, He would have curled them for you." "When I was an infant," replied the damsel, "He did, but now I am grown up He thinks I am able to do it myself."

At the same time, slovenly dress has been equally condemned, and, according to a popular adage, "A pretty girl and a tattered garment are sure to find some hook in the way," which is similar to the Italian expression, "A handsome woman and a slashed gown;" which coincide with the old English maxim--

"A maid oft seen, a gown oft worn,
Are disesteemed and held in scorn." A piece of Suffolk folk-lore tells us that "If you have your clothes mended on your back, you will be ill-spoken of," or, as they add in Sussex, "you will come to want;" and in the Isle of Man one may often hear the couplet:--

"Snotty boy, clean man,
Snotty girl, slut of a woman"-- the idea apparently being that a dirty, untidy girl will never improve, as she is wanting in proper pride in her appearance; but that a dirty boy will probably improve, as a lad who is too much concerned with his looks is not likely to do much good in after life! It was formerly, too, a common belief in most parts of the country that clothes were, more or less, indicative of a woman's prosperity, a notion which is found in the Hindustani lore, "when the clothes are torn poverty has arrived."

There is a very prevalent belief among women that, if they would secure luck with any article of dress, they must wear it for the first time at church. Equal attention is also paid by many of the fair sex to the way they put on each article of dress, as, in case of its being accidentally inside out, it is considered an omen of success. In our northern counties, again, if a young woman accidentally puts a wrong hook, or button, into the hole when dressing in the morning, it is considered to be a warning that a misfortune of some kind will befall her in the course of the day, and any mishap, however trivial, is regarded as a proof of her fears having been well founded.

Most of these childish fancies retain their hold on the fair sex, and where is the young lady to be found who is not mindflil of the admonition--

"At Easter let your clothes be new,
Or else be sure you will it rue." A similar belief also prevails in connection with Whitsuntide, and many a girl would consider she had forfeited her claim to good luck for the ensuing twelve months if she did not appear in "new things on Whit Sunday."
Many, also, are the strange fancies relative to colour in dress, and the time-honoured rhyme is as much in force to-day as in years long ago which tell us that--

"Green is forsaken,
And yellow is forsworn,
But blue is the prettiest colour that's worn"-- a piece of folk-lore which specially appertains to weddings.
According to a folk-rhyme current in the southern counties:--

"Those dressed in blue
Have lovers true,
In green and white,
Forsaken quite." And another old proverbial rhyme says:--

"Blue is true, Yellow's jealous,
Green's forsaken, Red's brazen,
White is love, and Black is death." From its popularity blue has held a prominent place in love philactery, and one of many rhymes says:--

"If you love me, love me true,
Send me a ribbon, and let it be blue;
If you hate me, let it be seen,
Send me a ribbon, a ribbon of green." Mr. Morris, in his "Yorkshire Folk-Talk" (1892, pp. 227-28), writes that in some of the North Riding dales the antipathy to green as a colour for any part of the bridal costume is still very strong. "I was once at a farmhouse in a remote district near Whitby," he says, "and when discussing olden times and customs with an elderly dame was informed there were many she knew in her younger days who would rather have gone to the church to be married in their common everyday costume than in a green dress. My informant, however, was evidently one of those who held the same faith on this point as her lady companions, for she instanced a case that had come under her own observation where the bride was rash enough to be married in green, but it was added

that she afterwards contracted a severe illness."

Blue, again, would appear to be in ill-favour for the wedding dress, as the bride--

"If dressed in blue,
She's sure to rue." And yet in Leicestershire it is said that a bride on her wedding day should wear--

"Something new,
Something blue,
Something borrowed;" or, as a Lancashire version puts it--

"Something old and something now,
Something borrowed and something blue." The various articles of a woman's clothing, too, have their separate fancies attached to them, which, in some instances, have not only been incorporated by our peasantry in local jingles and rhymes, but occasionally have been made the subject of childish similes. Thus the poppy is commonly said to have a red petticoat and a green gown, the daffodil a yellow petticoat and green gown, and so on, fanciful ideas of this kind being expressed in many of our nursery couplets, as in the following

"Daffadown-dilly is come up to town,
In a yellow petticoat and a green gown"; with which may be compared a Hindustani doggerel, the accuracy of which is only too true--

"Says the hemp, I am of gorgeous hue;
Says the poppy, I am king of the world;
But says the opium, I am a lady-love,
Who takes me once takes me for ever." A well-known saying in Leicestershire of another class says "Shake a Leicestershire woman by the petticoat, and the beans will rattle in her throat," an expression which originated in the large quantity of that grain grown in this county, which caused it to be nicknamed "Bean Belly Leicestershire." There is another version applied to the opposite sex, which runs thus "Shake a Leicestershire man by the collar, and you shall hear the beans rattle in his belly."

If a young woman's petticoats are longer than her dress this is an indication that her mother does not love her so much as her father; and, according to a Yorkshire belief, when a married woman's apron falls off it is a sign that something is coming to vex her; but should the apron of an unmarried girl drop down she is frequently the object of laughter, as there is no surer sign that she is thinking about her sweetheart. In Suffolk the big blue apron usually worn by cottage women is known by them as a "mantle," and it is considered an omen of ill-luck if their mantle strings some untied.

Odd beliefs of this kind might easily be enumerated, for even a pin is an object of superstition with most women, who invariably, on seeing one, pick it up for the sake of good luck, as, by omitting to do so, they run into imminent danger of incurring misfortune, a notion embodied in the subjoined familiar rhyme:--

"See a pin and pick it up,
All the day you'll have good luck;
See a pin and let it lie,
All the day you'll have to cry." But why North-country women should be so persistent in their refusal to give one another a pin it is not easy to discover, for when asked for a pin they invariably reply, "You may take one, but, mind, I do not give it." This prejudice may, perhaps, have some connection with the vulgar superstition against giving a knife or any sharp instrument, as mentioned by Gay in his Shepherd's Week:--

"But woe is me! such presents luckless prove,
For knives, they tell me, always sever love."

Previous Index Next

Woman's Eyes -- The Folk-lore of Women -- T.F. Thistelton-Dyer

. · 25 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

"Where is any author in the world
Teaches such beauty as a woman's eye?"
Love's Labour's Lost, act iv. sc. 3. POETIC imagery, in painting the varied beauties of the eye, has applied to them a host of graceful and charming similes, many of which illustrate the beliefs and fancies of our forefathers respecting these so-called "keys of the human face," or, as Shakespeare has described them, "windows of the heart."

It has long been a disputed question as to what has been the recognised favourite colour of the eyes, the poets of all ages having laid much stress on the chameleon-like iris of the eye, which ever seems to vary in its green or bluish hue. Thus Homer speaks of Minerva as the "blue-eyed goddess," an epithet which has given rise to considerable comment, opinions having largely differed as to whether the poet meant this colour, or something between a green, blue, or grey.

Green eyes are often mentioned in classic literature, and they found special favour with early French poets, who were extremely fond of speaking of them under the title of yeux vers--a taste which seems to have been generally prevalent on the Continent. The Spaniards considered this colour of the eye an emblem of beauty, and as such there is an amusing allusion to it in "Don Quixote":--"But now I think of it, Sancho, thy description of her beauty was a little absurd in that particular of comparing her eyes to pearls. Sure, such eyes are more like those of a whiting, or a sea-bream, than those of a fair lady; and in my opinion Dulcinea's eyes are rather like two verdant emeralds, veiled in with two celestial arches, which signify her eyebrows. Therefore, Sancho, you must take your pearls from her eyes, and apply them to her teeth, for I verily believe you mistake the one for the other!" And we may quote the subjoined well-known lines in praise of green eyes, which show, like many others of the same kind, in that high esteem they were formerly held:--

"Ay ojuelos verdes,
Ay los mis ojuelos,
Ay hagan los cielos,
Qui de mi te acuerdos." Then, again, Villa Real, a Portuguese, wrote a treatise for the purpose of setting forth the estimation in which he regarded them; and Dante, it may be remembered, speaks of Beatrice's eyes as emeralds--

"Spare not thy vision, we have stationed thee
Before the emeralds, whence love erewhile
Hath drawn his weapons on thee"-- "emeralds," of course, here meaning the eyes of Beatrice.
In our own country we find no lack of allusions to green eyes, and in the "Two Noble Kinsmen " AEmilia, in her address to Diana, says: "Oh, vouchsafe with that thy rare green eye, which never yet beheld things maculate!" On the other hand, Shakespeare speaks of jealousy as "a green-eyed monster," and we know that the phrase has been frequently used in an uncomplimentary manner. But this is the exception, for what more pleasing, or graceful, instance of their being in repute as an object of beauty can be quoted than that given by Frances Collins, who tells us that her husband in writing to a certain lady always spoke of her eyes as sea-green:--

"So stir the fire and pour the wine,
And let those sea-green eyes divine,
Pour their love-madness into mine." And at another time he wrote these lines:--

"Cupid plucked his brightest plume,
To paint my mistress in her bloom;
Caught her eyes, the soft sea-green,
At a summer noontide seen." Longfellow in his "Spanish Student" (act ii. sc. 3) has painted with exquisite effect this phase of beauty in the following passage, where Victorian inquires: "How is that young and green-eyed Gaditana that you both wot of?" To which Don Carlos sympathetically adds, "Ay, soft, emerald eyes!" After a while, Victorian resumes her praises, remarking:--

"You are much to blame for letting her go back.
A pretty girl, and in her tender eyes
Just that soft shade of green we sometimes see
In evening skies." But perhaps one of the highest tributes of honour to green as the colour of the eye is that given by Drummond of Hawthornden, who could not write too eulogistically of his green-eyed maiden--

"When nature now had wonderfully wrought
All Auristella's parts, except her eyes;
To make those twins two lamps in beauty's skies,
The counsel of her starry synod sought.
Mars and Apollo first did her advise,
To wrap in colour black those comets bright,
That love him so might soberly disguise,
And unperceived wound at every sight.
Chaste Phoebe spake for purest azure dies,
But Jove and Venus, green about the light,
To frame thought best, as bringing most delight,
That to pined hearts hope might for ay arise.
Nature, all said, a paradise of green
There placed, to make all love which have them seen." And Mr. Swinburne in his "Félise" gives a beautiful picture of the chameleon-like iris--

"O lips that mine have grown into,
Like April's kissing May;
O fervid eyelids, letting through
Those eyes the greenest of things blue,
The bluest of things grey." According to a writer in the Quarterly Review, in an amusing paper on physiognomy, the following characteristics may be ascertained by the colour of the eyes: "Dark blue eyes are most common in persons of delicate, refined, or effiminate nature; light blue, and, much more, grey eyes, in the hardy and active; greenish eyes have generally the same meaning as the grey; hazels are the more usual indications of a mind masculine, vigorous, and profound;" with which may be compared the following well-known lines:--

"Black eyes most dazzle at a ball,
Blue eyes most please at evening fall;
The black a conquest soonest gains,
The blue a conquest best retains;
The black bespeaks a lovely heart,
Whose soft emotions soon depart;
The blue a steadier frame betray,
Which burns and lives beyond a day;
The black the features best disclose,

In blue my feelings all repose;
Then each let reign without control,
The black all mind, and blue all soul." Like green, blue eyes have always been much admired, and have attracted the notice of poets. Thus Elizabeth Barrett Browning, in her "Hector in the Garden," speaks of--

"Eyes of gentianellas azure,
Staring, winking at the skies"; and Longfellow, in his "Masque of Pandora," says:--

"O lovely eyes of azure,
Clear as the waters of a brook that run,
Limpid and laughing in the summer sun." Akenside compares blue eyes to the "azure dawn," and Kirke White sings the praises of the maiden's "blue eyes' fascination." Shelley, again, in his "Prometheus Unbound," likens eyes of this colour to the "deep blue, boundless heaven;" but it is perhaps Keats who--in his sonnet, written in answer to a sonnet by J. H. Reynolds, ending thus:--

"Dark eyes are dearer far
Than those that mock the hyacinthus bell"-- has given us the most elaborate picture of the charm of blue eyes:--

"Blue! 'tis the life of heaven--the domain
Of Cynthia--the wide palace of the sun,
The tent of Hesperus, and all his train,
The bosomer of clouds, gold, grey, and dun.
Blue! 'tis the life of waters--Ocean
And all its vassal streams: pools numberless
May rage, and foam, and fret, but never can
Subside, if not to dark-blue nativeness.
Blue! gentle cousin of the forest-green,
Married to green in all the sweetest flowers,
Forget-me-not, the Bluebell, and that Queen
Of secrecy, the Violet: what strange powers
Hast thou, as a mere shadow! But how great,
When in an Eye thou art alive with fate!" There is in Spain a proverbial saying much in use which shows the high esteem in which this colour is held, and it runs thus: "Blue eyes say, 'Love me or I die'; black eyes say, 'I Love me or I kill thee';" and in Hindustani folk-lore a blue-eyed girl is supposed to be fortunate.

And there are numerous rhymes in this country to the same effect; one current in Warwickshire running thus:--

"Blue-eyed--beauty,
Do your mother's duty;
Black eye,
Brown eye,
Grey-eyed--greedy gut,
Eat all the world up." Another version in Lincolnshire is this

"Blue eye--beauty.
Black eye--steal pie.
Grey eye--greedy gut.
Brown eye--love pie." Apart from blue being a much admired colour of the eye, it would seem to have gained an additional popularity from having been the recognised symbol of eternity and human immortality. Similarly the

ancient heathen poets were wont to sing the praises of their "blue-eyed goddesses." Petrarch's sonnets, again, are addressed to a blue-eyed Laura. Kriemhild, of the Nibelungen Lied, is blue-eyed, like Fricka, the Northern Juno, and Ingeborg of the Frithiof's Saga, and the Danish princess Iolanthe.

Blueness about the eyes, too, was considered a certain indication of love, and, to quote Lord Lytton's words, there is "a liquid melancholy of sweet eyes;" which reminds us of the simile of the Persian poet, who compares "a violet sparkling with dew" to "the blue eyes of a beautiful girl in tears;" and we may compare the remark of Rosalind to Orlando in "As You Like It " (act iii. sc. 2), who enumerates the marks of love, "a blue eye and sunken, which you have not."

Another favourite colour of the eye was grey, and Douce, in his "Illustrations of Shakespeare," quotes from the interlude of "Marie Magdalene" a song in praise of her, which says, "Your eyes as grey as glass and right amiable;" and, in the "Two Gentlemen of Verona" (act iv. sc. 4), Julia makes use of the same expression.
Black eyes have occasioned many curious fancies respecting them--some complimentary, and others just the reverse. Lord Byron, for instance, describing Leila's eyes, in the "Giacour," says:--

"Her eye's dark charm 'twere vain to tell,
But gaze on that of the gazelle,
It will assist thy fancy well:
As large, as languishingly dark,
But soul beam'd forth in every spark." And when addressing the maid of Athens in his tender and pathetic lines, he writes, "By those lids whose jetty fringe kiss thy soft cheeks' blooming tinge." He tells, also, how the beautiful Teresa had "the Asiatic eye" dark as the sky; and of the innocent Haidee he gives this picture:--

"Her hair, I said, was auburn, but her eyes
Were black as death, their lashes the same hue
Of downcast length, in whose silk shadows lies
Deepest attraction; for when to the view
Forth from its raven fringe the full glance flies,
Ne'er with such force the swiftest arrow flew." Apart from poetic imagery, the black-eyed sisterhood have rarely failed to get their share of praise, although, it is true, artists have seldom, if ever, painted the Madonna dark, for, it must be remembered:--

"In the old time black was not counted fair,
Or if it were it bore not beauty's name,
But now is black beauty's successive heir." It has been pointed out that Shakespeare only mentions black hair thrice throughout his plays. Although half, at least, of the heroines of novels are designated as having a fair complexion and the colour of the eyes that match it, we must not lose sight of the fact that the dark-eyed girl is generally supposed to be gifted with a power of force of expression which is denied to others. And as Mr. Finck remarks, "Inasmuch as black-eyed Southern nations are, on the whole, more impulsive than Northern races, it may be said in a vague, general way that a black eye indicates a passionate disposition." But there are countless exceptions to this rule--as in the case of apathetic dark-eyed persons, and, conversely, fiery, blue-eyed individuals. Nor is this at all strange, for "the black colour is not stored up in some mysterious way as a result of a fiery temperament, but is simply accumulated in the iris through natural selection as a protection against glaring sunlight."

Scottish history affords a good specimen of a dark woman in the famous "Black Agnes," the Countess of March, who was noted for her defence of Dunbar during the war with Edward III., maintained in Scotland from 1333 to the year 1338.

"She kept astir in tower and trench,
That brawling, boisterous, Scottish wench;
Came I early, came I late,
I found Black Agnes at the gate." According to Sir Walter Scott, the Countess was called Black Agnes from her complexion. She was the daughter of Thomas Randolph, Earl of Murray. But this statement has been disputed, and it is affirmed that the lady in question was so nicknamed from the terror of her deeds, and not from her dark complexion.

The Mahometan heaven is peopled with "virgins with chaste mien and large black eyes," and we may quote what the poet of woman's lore says:--

"The brilliant black eye
May in triumph let fly
All its darts without caring who feels 'em;
But the soft eye of blue,
Tho' it scatters wounds too,
Is much better pleased when it heals them.
The blue eye half hid
Says from under its lid,
I love, and am yours if you love me,
The black eye may say,
Come and worship my ray,
By adoring, perhaps you may win me." The black-eyed girl has long been credited with being deceitful, but there is little or no ground for this stigma, which, like so many other notions of a similar kind, has arisen from prejudice, or some such old adage as the following, which may be found in many parts of the country, but which, of course, is devoid of all truth:--

"Grey-eyed greedy,
Brown-eyed needy,
Black-eyed never likin',
Till it shame a' its kin." Similar folk-rhymes are to be found in different localities, to which much faith was formerly attached by the credulous.

From a very early period various devices were employed by women for improving the colour and appearance of the eye. The ladies of the East, for instance, tinged the edges of their eyelids with the powder of lead ore, their mode of procedure being to dip into the powder a small wooden bodkin, which they drew through the eyelids over the ball of the eye. But such artificial contrivances have always proved a poor substitute for Nature's charms; and, as Antoine Heroet, an early French poet, in his "Les Opuscules d'Amour," says of love, so it is equally true of such devices: "It is not so strange an enchanter that he can make black eyes become green, that he can turn a dark brown into clear whiteness." But, when it is remembered how enviable a prize beauty has always been, some allowance must be made for the fair sex if they have resorted to various little contrivances for enhancing the attractiveness of the most significant features of the human face.

Amongst other fancies associated with the eye we are told that " it's a good thing to have meeting eyebrows, as such a person will never know trouble but according to the generally considered idea such a peculiarity is far from being lucky, an illustration of which is given by Charles Kitigslev in his " Two Years Ago," who thus writes : " Tom began carefully scrutinising Mrs. Harvey's face. It had been very handsome. It was still very clever, but the eyebrows clashed together downwards above her nose and rising higher at the outward corners indicated, as surely as the restless, down-drop eye, a character self-conscious, furtive, capable of great inconsistencies. possibly of great

deceit." On the other hand, the Greeks admired those eyebrows which almost met, and Anacreoti's mistress had this style of face :--

"Taking care her eyebrows be
Not apart, nor mingled neither,
But as hers are, stol'n together
Met by stealth, yet leaving too
O'er the eyes their darkest hue." Theocritus, in one of his Idylls, makes one of the speakers value himself upon the effect his beauty had on a girl with meeting eyebrows:--

"Passing a bower last evening with my cows,
A girl look'd out--a girl with meeting brows.
'Beautiful! beautiful!' cried she. I heard,
But went on, looking down, and gave her not a word." Chaucer apologises for Creseyde's meeting eyebrows, but Lord Tennyson's compliment of Paris to OEnone, ascribing to her "the charms of married brows," implies that they actually met. However repugnant to the modern idea of beauty meeting eyebrows may be in Europe, they are so far from being contrary to the Asiatic canon of beauty, that, where they do not exist, or where only imperfectly developed, young ladies are in the habit of prolonging the curves by means of black pigment until they are perfectly conjoined. In the same way, meeting eyebrows are much admired. In Turkey, where women encourage the juncture by artificial means.
Referring to the colour of the eyebrows it is agreed on all hands that a female eyebrow ought to be delicately and nicely pencilled. Thus Dante says of his mistress's that it looked as if it were painted--"The eyebrow, polished and dark, as though the brush had drawn it;" and Shakespeare, in his "Winter's Tale," (act ii. sc. i) makes Mamillius speak much in the same strain:--

"Black brows, they say,
Become some women best, so that there be not
Too much hair there; but in a semicircle;
Or a half-moon made with a pen." There can be no doubt that eyebrows have been, from time immemorial, much in request, and we know how ladies of fashion have at different times resorted to sundry expedients to give prominence to this feature of beauty. Artists have introduced them with much effect into many of their famous works of art, and poets have loved to sing of maidens with their dark eyebrows. Some, it would seem, had admired a contrast between the hair and the eyebrows, and Burns tells of a certain lass how--

"Sae flaxen were her ringlets,
Her eyesbrows of a darker hue,
Bewitchingly o'erarching
Twa laughing e'en o' bonny blue." It is curious to find how the idea of beauty, as far as the colour of the eyebrow is concerned, has undergone numerous variations. In Central Africa women stain their hair and eyebrows with indigo, and Georgian damsels, following their own idea of aesthetic taste, blacken their eyebrows, which gives them a striking appearance.

Again, Japanese ladies when married, in order to prevent any likelihood of jealousy on the part of their husbands, have long been in the habit of removing their eyebrows; and, among some of the South American and African tribes, it has been customary to eradicate or destroy the hair, a practice which has been often extended to the eyebrows and eyelashes.

Much, too, has been written on the shape of the eyebrow, the arched one having been most generally admired. This is especially discernible in the works of the old masters, and is frequently mentioned in bygone chronicles of

fashion as a distinguishing feature of many of the beautiful women of past years. But Leigh Hunt considers it doubtful whether "the eyebrows were always devised to form separate arches, or to give an arched character to the brow considered in unison." Perhaps, as he adds, a sort of double curve was recommended, "the particular one over the eye, and the general one in the look together." At any rate, a finely shaped eyebrow has rarely failed to attract attention, and as Herder has remarked, an arched eyebrow is the rainbow of peace, because when "straightened by a frown, it portends a storm."

Previous Index Next

Woman's Tongue -- Folk-lore of Women -- by T.F. Thistelton-Dyer

. · 25 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

"How sweetly sounds the voice of a good woman!
It is so seldom heard that, when it speaks,
It ravishes all senses."
MASSINGER, Old Law, iv. 2. ALTHOUGH a well-known proverb tells us that "a silent woman is always more admired than a noisy one," the Chinese have a favourite saying to the effect that "a woman's tongue is her sword, and she does not let it rust;" with which may be compared the Hindustani proverb, "For talk I'm best, for work my elder brother-in-law's wife;" which has its counterpart in this country, where it is said, "A woman's strength is in her tongue," and in Wales the adage runs thus:--

"Be she old, or be she young,
A woman's strength is in her tongue." But proverbial literature has generally held that whatever a woman says must be received with caution; and, according to an African adage, "If a woman speaks two words take one and leave the other," with which may be compared an Eastern, saying, "A woman's talk heat from grass"--that is, worthless.

But, granted the effective use frequently made by this weapon, the teachers of old were of opinion that "Silence is the best ornament of a woman;" or, as another version expresses it, "Silence is a fine jewel for a woman, but it is little worn."

In days gone by a singular sign--a very favourite one with oil painters--was "The Good Woman," originally expressive of a female saint, a holy or good woman, who had met her death by the loss of her head, and how by the waggery of after ages the good woman came to be converted into the Silent Woman, as if it were a matter of necessity, is thus explained--

"A silent woman, Sir! you said;
Pray, was she painted without a head?
Yes, Sir, she was! You never read of
A silent woman with her head on.
Besides, you know, there's nought but speaking
Can keep a woman's heart from breaking!" And M. W. Praed, in his tale of "Lillian," by an ingenious metaphor of a beautiful idiot would explain a headless woman--

"And hence the story had ever run,
That the fairest of dames was a headless one." But proverbial wisdom is generally agreed that "there never was in any age such a wonder to be found as a dumb woman," and the Germans say, "when a woman has no answer the sea is empty of water."

In the old Scotch ballad of "The Dumb Wife of Aberdour," the husband is represented (writes Mr. W. A. Clouston in Notes and Queries, 6th Series, i. 272) as meeting with "a great grim man"--the devil, in fact--to whom he complains of his misfortune in having a wife who was dumb; upon which the Arch-fiend says to him

"Tak no disdain,
And I sall find remeid,
Gif thou wilt counsel keep,
And learn well what I say:

This night, in her first sleep,
Under her tongue then lay
Of quaking aspen leaf.
The whilk betokens wind,
And she shall have relief
Of speaking, thou shalt find,
What kind of tale, withouten fail,
That thou of her requires.
She shall speak out, have thou nae doubt,
And mair than thou desires." To make sure work, the husband lays three leaves under her tongue; and when she awoke in the morning she at once began to speak to him--with a vengeance. He afterwards consults with the fiend about making her dumb again, but quoth Satan:--

"The least devil in hell
Can give a wife her tongue;
The greatest, I you tell,
Can never make her dumb." The Satanic device of placing an aspen leaf in a woman's mouth to make her speak, he adds, is alluded to in an old English book entitled "The Praise of All Women, called Mulierum Pean. Very fruitful and delectable to all the Readers--

"'Look and read who can,
This work is praise to each woman.'" The author, Edward Gosynhill, thus accounts for the origin of woman's tongue:--

"Some say, the woman had no tongue
After that God did her create,
Until the man took leaves long
And put them under her palate;
An aspen leaf of the devil he gat,
And for it moveth with every wind,
They say women's tongues be of like kind." On the principle that "Speech is silver, silence is gold," it was formerly held that "One tongue is enough for two women"--an adage, we are told, which is "no less applicable to stormy Shrews than adverse to learned women who have the command of many tongues." It should be remembered, also, that the rhyme, which with a slight alteration is often uttered as a warning to children over-talking their elders, ran in former times thus:--

"Maidens should be mild and meek,
Swift to hear and slow to speak." Another version slightly different is this: "Maids should be seen and not heard," which occurs in "The Maids' Complaint against the Bachelors" (1675, p. 3), where it is called "a musty proverb"; and among further maxims, it is said, "Silence is a fine jewel for a woman but little worn," and "Silence is the best ornament of a woman."

The persistency of a woman's tongue has been made the subject of frequent comment in our proverbial lore, experience, having long proved that "a woman's tongue wags like a lamb's tall," or, as it is said in France, "Foxes are all tail, and women are all tongue." And, according to an Alsatian proverb, "If you would make a pair of good shoes, take for the sole the tongue of a woman--it never wears out." A Welsh proverb says "Arthur could not tame a woman's tongue," which is not surprising if there be any truth in the maxim that "A woman will scold the devil out of a haunted house," which reminds us of an amusing little anecdote told of Tom Hood, who, on hearing the piety of a very loquacious lady spoken of, humorously said, "Yes, she is well known for her mag-piety;" and there is the

German proverb, "Women are never at a loss for words." An amusing couplet, which is proverbial in the neighbourhood of Salisbury, thus speaks of a woman's tongue:--

"Nature, regardless of the babbling race,
Planted no beard upon a woman's face;
Not Freddy Keene's razors, though the very best,
Could shave a chin that never is at rest." And as, from time immemorial, women have been accused of gossiping, it is not surprising that this fault should have been made the subject of legal penalties, as at St. Helena, where, among the ordinances promulgated in the year 1789, we find the following:--"Whereas several idle, gossiping women, made it their business to go from house to house, about this island, inventing and spreading false and scandalous reports of the good people thereof, and thereby sow discord and debate among neighbours, and often between men and their wives, to the great grief and trouble of all good and quiet people, and to the utter extinguishing of all friendship, amity, and good neighbourhood; for the punishment and suppression thereof, and to the intent that all strife may be ended, we do order that if any women, from henceforth, shall be convicted of tale-hearing, mischief-making, scolding, or any other notorious vices, they shall be punished by ducking, or whipping, or such other punishment as their crimes or transgressions shall deserve, or the Governor and Council shall think fit."

According to an Italian saying, "three women and three geese make a market," which is also found among Hindustani proverbs, "Madame Slut and two farmers' wives make a fair," a version of which has long been current in this country, where it is said, "three women make a market, four a fair," as they are sure to attract notice, and to make themselves heard. This piece of proverbial lore is alluded to in "Love's Labour's Lost" (act iii. sc. 1.):--

"Thus came your argument in;
Then the boy's fat l'envoy, the goose that you bought." And in an old work entitled "Marriage of Wit and Wisdom," published about the year 1570, we find the proverbial phrase, "She can cackle like a cadowe," i.e., a jackdaw, with which may be compared the adage, "She's a wagtail." An early MS. of the fifteenth century contains this version:

"A young wife and a harvest goose,
Much cackle will both;
A man that hath them in his clos [possession],
He shall rest wroth." And we may compare with the above the following from the old nursery rhyme:--

"Misses One, Two, and Three, could never agree,
While they gossiped round a tea-caddy." A woman's tongue, again, it is said, must not be always trusted, for "a honey tongue, a heart of gall," or, as another version puts it, "Too much courtesy, too much craft." Similarly, an African proverb says, "Trust not a woman, she will tell thee what she has just told her companion;" and a Turkish adage tells us not to "trust the promise of the great, the calm of the sea, the evening twilight, the word of a woman, or the courage of the horse." Nothing, too, is more derogatory to a woman than coarse or bad language, and hence she is warned that "Bad words make a woman worse:" words which call to mind Martial's epigram:--

"Fair, rich, and young! How rare is her perfection,
Were it not mingled with one foul infection;
So proud a heart, so cursed a tongue,
As makes her seem nor rich, nor fair, nor young." And a popular maxim attributed to Tasso tells us that "Women have tongues of craft, and hearts of guile;" and, on this account, we are told that "he who listens to the words of a woman will be accounted worthless," as, not only lacking common sense, but as acting on her advice which can bring him no good.

Although proverbial wisdom is agreed that, to quote a German adage, "A woman has never spoiled anything through silence," her fondness of talking is further exemplified in such proverbs as "Her tongue steals away all the time from her hands," and "All women are good Lutherans," they say in Denmark, "because they would rather preach than hear Mass;" whereas the old English saying enjoins, "Let women spin and not preach." One of Heywood's proverbs tells us that "Husbands are in heaven whose wives scold not," which is similar to the well-known adage:--

"It is a good horse that never stumbles,
And a good wife that never grumbles;" for, as it is commonly said throughout Scotland, "A house wi' a reek and a wife with a reerd will make a man rin to the door," a dictum which has its equivalent in Spain--

"Smoke, a dripping roof, and a scolding wife,
Are enough to drive a man out of his life." a version of which was formerly current in the North of England:--

"Smoke, rain, and a very curst wife,
Make a man weary of house and life;" and we may compare the Hindustani proverb which, describing a woman who is quarrelsome beyond endurance, says, "She quarrels with the breeze." Disagreeable as such tongues may be, equally to be avoided is "a groaning wife," for as the Scotch peasantry tell us, "a grunting horse and a graneing wife seldom fail their master," implying that women who are constantly in the habit of complaining how ill they are, generally contrive to live as long as their neighbours.

Closely allied with the proverbial lore associated with a woman's tongue may be mentioned the strong antipathy to a woman whistling about a house or even out of doors, for, according to a well-known proverb, of which there are several versions:--

"A whistling woman and a crowing hen,
Are neither fit for God nor men;" or, as they say in the West of England, "A whistling woman and a crowing hen are two of the unluckiest things under the sun." Why there should be this deep-rooted prejudice it is difficult to decide, unless we accept the explanation in the subjoined couplet:--

"A whistling wife and a crowing hen,
Will call the old gentleman out of his den;" or, as the peasantry say in Cheshire, "Will fear the old lad out of his den." There are numerous versions of this popular piece of folk-lore, one warning us that--

"Whistling girls and crowing hens,
Always come to some bad end;" and again--

"A whistling wife and a crowing hen,
Will come to God, but God knows when;" and we may compare the Sinhalese proverb, "It is said that even the hen reared by a talkative woman crows." This superstition, too, is largely shared by the seafaring community, and, some years ago when a party of ladies were going on board a vessel at Scarborough, the captain declined to allow one to enter, exclaiming, " Not that young lady, she whistles." Curiously enough the vessel was wrecked on her next vovage, so had the young lady set foot on it, the catastrophe would have been attributed to her. A correspondent of Notes and Queries tells us that, one day after trying to induce his dog to come into the house, his wife essayed to whistle, when she was suddenly interrupted by a servant--a Roman Catholic--who apologetically said, "If you please, ma'am, don't whistle. Every time a woman whistles, the heart of the Blessed Virgin bleeds." Another legend informs us that the superstition originated in the circumstance that a woman stood by and whistled as she watched the nails for the cross being forged. The French have a similar prejudice, their proverb running as follows:--"Une poule qui chante le coq, et une fille qui jiffle, portent malheur dans la maison," a variation of which runs thus:--

"La maison est misérable et méchante
Ou la poule plus haut que le coq chant."
("That house doth everday more wretched grow,
Where the hen louder than the cock doth crow"); and another popular adage warns us that--

"La poule ne doit pas chanter devant le coq," a translation of which is sometimes heard in our own country:--

"Ill fares the hapless family that shows,
A cock that's silent, and a hen that crows." This superstition, too, is not confined to Europe, for there is a Chinese proverb to the same effect:--

"A bustling woman and crowing hen,
Are neither fit for gods nor men." It is an injunction of the priesthood, writes a correspondent of Notes and Queries (4th Series, xi. 475), "and a carefully observed household custom, to kill immediately every hen that crows, as a preventive against the misfortune which the circumstance is supposed to indicate;" and the same practice, he adds, prevails throughout many parts of the United States. The Japanese tells us that "when the hen crows the house goes to ruin," with which may be compared the Russian adage, "It never goes well when the hen crows," whilst the Persian proverb puts the matter sensibly thus:--"If you be a cock, crow; if a hen, lay eggs;" and there is the Portuguese maxim with a similar meaning, "It is a silly flock where the ewe bears the bell;" a further proverb telling us that "a house is in a bad case where the distaff commands the sword;" and the Italians go still further, for they say that "when a woman reigns the devil frowns," to which may be added the Indian adage, "What trust is there in a crowing hen?"

From the numerous instances recorded of this piece of folk-lore we may quote an amusing extract from one of Walpole's letters to Lady Ossory, January 8, 1772, wherein after informing her Ladyship of the damage done to his castle by the explosion of the Hounslow Powder Mills, he humorously writes:--

"Margaret [his housekeeper] sits by the waters of Babylon and weeps over Jerusalem. Yet she was not taken quite unprepared, for one of the Bantam hens had crowed on Sunday morning, and the chandler's wife told her three weeks ago, when the Barn was blown down, that ill-luck never came single. She is, however, very thankful that the china-room has escaped, and says God has always been the best creature in the world to her."

But a talkative, as well as a whistling, woman is, in German lore, equally warned against making an undue use of her tongue, for "a glaring sunny morning, a woman that talks Latin, and a child reared on wine never come to a good end;" or, as another adage has it, "A woman and a hen are soon lost in gadding"; and according to another warning, whereas "a gossiping woman talks of every one, every one talks of her." The most remarkable thing, as the Japanese say, is that, although "a woman's tongue is only three inches long, it can kill a man six feet high;" but the Chinese have a common proverb to the effect that, whereas "a man's words are like an arrow close to the mark, a woman's is like a broken fan." A further way, also, in which woman is occasionally able to use her tongue to advantage is in the art of dissimulation when love is concerned, a piece of craft which, skilfully devised, has deceived many a lover, for, as the Spanish adage goes--

"He that speaks me fair and loves me not,
I'll speak him fair and love him not;" with which may be compared the Hindustani proverb, "A shrill tongue and a false hand."

But, after all, it must not be forgotten that even "the whisper of a beautiful woman can be heard further than the loudest call of duty;" and again, "A sweet tongue will conquer the whole world, and a crooked one will estrange it."

Previous Index Next

Woman's Goodness -- The Folk-Lore of Women -- by T.F. Thistelton-Dyer

. · 25 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

"And whether coldness, pride, or virtue dignify
A woman, so's she's good what does it signify!"
BYRON, Don Juan. IF we are to believe an old German proverb, "there are only two good women in the world: one of them is dead, and the other is not to be found"--a statement which probably even few disparagers of the fair sex would be ready to accept, although it may be supplemented by an equally ungallant French saying which asserts that "a man of straw is worth a woman of gold."

But it must be remembered that, in formulating maxims of this kind, individual prejudice has in only too many cases been responsible for originating them, and, despite their having in the course of years passed into proverbs, they must not always be regarded as expressive of the consensus of opinion of the country to which they belong. Thus, going back to an early period, Ovid was of opinion that "it is easy for a woman to be good when all that hinders her from being so is removed;" and, although an old English proverb says, "All women are good," it qualifies this assertion by cautiously adding, "good for something, or good for nothing;" but the Hindu proverb declares that "oil and the pure woman will both rise."

With all due deference to the fair sex, it must unfortunately be acknowledged that much of the proverbial lore under this heading relating to them is far from being of a complimentary nature, as who, for instance, has not heard of the familiar adage:--

"If a woman were as little as she is good,
A peascod would make her a gown and a hood;" and, "She's a good maid, but for thought, word, and deed." And this estimate of woman's worth has been largely endorsed by those who have generally been credited with having possessed some knowledge of human life. Thus Pope says:--

"Shouldst thou search the spacious world around,
Yet one good woman is not to be found;" and Massinger speaks in the same strain:--

"How sweetly sounds the voice of a good woman.
It is so seldom heard that, when it speaks,
It ravishes all senses." But, confining ourselves more especially to the proverbial lore of the subject, the Spanish warn a man to "beware of a bad woman, and to put no trust in a good one;" and according to an African proverb, "a woman never brings a man into the right way." Plautus, too, was of the same opinion, remarking, "He that can avoid women, let him do so, so as to take care each day not to do what he may regret on the morrow."
The scarcity of good women is often illustrated by such adages as the following:--

"A good woman is worth--if she were sold--
The fairest crown that's made of pure gold" --the idea, of course, being that such a woman is not to be found; with which may be compared the couplet:--

"Show me a man without a spot,
And I'll show you a maid without a blot." Again, the familiar couplet:--

"A spaniel, a woman, and a walnut tree,

The more they're beaten the better they be," may be traced back as far as Martial. There are several versions of this time-honoured maxim, one of which is furnished by Moor in his "Suffolk Words" (p. 465):--

"Three things by beating better prove--
A nut, an ass, a woman:
The cudgel from their back remove,
And they'll be good for no man." Webster, in his "White Devil" (1612, act iv. sc. 4), had the same proverb in mind when he made Flamineo say:--

"Why do you kick her, say?
Do you think that she's like a walnut tree?
Must she be cudgell'd ere she bear good fruit?" And at the present day the Italians are wont to affirm, "Women, asses, and nuts require rough hands;" with which may be compared the Chinese adage, "Nothing will frighten a wilful wife but a beating." Such chastisement of women was really carried into effect in the so-called days of chivalry, as may be inferred from the precepts of the knightly orders which directed that ladies should be treated respectfully and tenderly. And yet, on the other hand, as it has been pointed out, "the social annals of our Anglo-Saxon period comprise revolting stories of the barbarity of mistresses to their slaves; and in later times the lady of a castle or manorial seat was accustomed to rule her children and domestics with a severity surpassing that of the lord whom she obeyed with fear." But happily woman no longer lives under the lash as in the days of long ago, and, no matter how bad her character may be--

"The man who lays his hand upon a woman,
Save in the way of kindness, is a wretch,
Whom 'twere gross flattery to name a coward." Indeed, he would be a bold man who, nowadays, would think to follow out with impunity the spirit of the old proverbial philosophy, and, under the impression that he was making his wife a good woman, put into practice the following admonition:--

"The crab of the wood is sauce very good
For the crab of the sea;
But the wood of the crab is sauce for a drab
That will not her huband obey." The same idea is embodied in numerous other items of proverbial lore, such as "A ship and a woman want always trimming;" or, as another version has it, "Women are ships and must be manned." But this apparently does not always answer, for, as an old folk-rhyme reminds us:--

"To talk well with some women doth as much good
As a sick man to eat up a load of greenwood." And, a propos of the subject, we may quote the case of the young girl who, on receiving an offer of marriage which she wished to accept, submitted the matter to her father, who advised her against matrimony, using as an argument St. Paul's words, "They who marry do well; but they who do not, do better." "Well," replied the damsel, "I love to do well; let those do better who can."

The Scotch would appear to be more gallant in their opinion of the fair sex, if we can place reliance on the following adage:--

"A' are gude lasses, but where do the ill wives come frae?" --a saying which has its equivalent in Spain, where there is a proverb, "All are good maids, but whence come the bad wives?"

Even the good woman is warned against the contaminating influence of her own sex, for, as an Eastern piece of proverbial lore tells us, "A good woman, beset by evil women, is like the chaste mimosa surrounded by poisonous herbs"--Illustrations of which maxim under a variety of forms are to be met with in most countries; a popular

Oriental adage warning us that "bad company is friendship with a snake fencing with a sword." But it has been generally held that "as the woman, so her friends," an Osmandi proverb reminding us that "the life of a good woman is shown by her companions."

Equivocal as many of the proverbial sayings are when speaking of woman's goodness, it may be noted that the reverse is invariably the case in the folk-tales and legends which have immortalised in a hundred and one ways their deeds of bravery and self-denial. At Lilliard's Edge, for instance, in Roxburghshire, was fought, in 1545, the battle of Ancrum Moor, in which, according to tradition, a female warrior named Lilliard, when covered with wounds, continued to fight on the Scotch side, in the name of Squire Witherington. Buried on the field of victory, a stone was raised to her good memory, on which were written these words:--

"Fair Maiden Lilliard lies under the stane,
Little was her stature, but great was her fame;
Upon the English loons she laid mony thumps,
And when her legs were cuttit off, she fought upon her stumps." Folk-lore can boast of numerous historic rhymes of this class, and elsewhere we have alluded to some of the old Church builder's legends which owe their origin to the marvellous efforts of noble and good women. Thus, to give one example, a pretty legend is told of the building of Linton Church, which is situated on a little knoll of fine, compact sand, without any admixture of stone, even pebbles, and widely different from the soil of the neighbouring heights. The sand has, however, hardened into stone, yet the particles are so coherent that the sides of ready-made graves appear smooth as a wall to the depth of fifteen feet. This singular phenomenon is thus accounted for by the local tradition: Many, many years ago a young man killed a priest, and was condemned to death for murder and sacrilege. By the intervention of two good women--his two sisters--his life was spared on condition that they should sift as much sand as would form a mound on which to build a church.

The maidens undertook the task, but on their brother's liberation at the completion of the church one of them died immediately "either from the effects of past fatigue, or overpowering joy."

Previous Index Next

Bad Women -- The Folk-Lore of Women -- T.F. Thistelton-Dyer

. · 25 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

"A worthless woman! Mere cold clay
As false things are! but so fair,
She takes the breath of man away
Who gaze upon her unaware."
E. B. BROWNING,
Bianca among the Nightingales. ACCORDING to the trite old adage, "Man, woman, and the devil are the three degrees of comparison," for it has long been agreed that when a woman is bad she far excels man in evil, a maxim which has been upheld by the proverb lore of most countries; a Chinese proverb affirming that "there is no such poison in the green snake's mouth, of the hornet's sting, as in a woman's heart;" and the Italians say that "it is better to irritate a dog than a bad woman," which is similar to the German sayng, "An ill-tempered woman is the devil's door-nail." According to a familiar adage:--

"A wicked woman and an evil
Is three-halfpence worse than the devil," which is to the same effect as the oft-quoted proverb, "A woman and her servant, acting in accord, would outwit a dozen devils;" or, as another version has it, "A woman is some nine points worse than the devil," being much to the same purport as the Italian proverb, "Women know a point more than the devil;" and to Congreve's adaptation of Ovid's lines:--

"Would you increase the craft of womankind,
Teach them new wiles and arts? As well you may
Instruct a snake to bite or wolf to prey;" all of which may be supplemented by Victor Hugo's words, "Men are women's playthings, women are the devil's;" for as our own proverb says, "She-devils are hard to turn."

In the "Hitopadesa,"--one of the choice treasure-houses of Sanskrit wisdom, it is declared that, "Infidelity, violence, deceit, envy, extreme avariciousness, a total want of qualities, with impurity, are the innate faults of womankind;" with which may be compared Goethe's views, "When we speed to the devil's house woman takes the lead by a thousand steps;" and there is a Sinhalese adage, "If you want to go to the gallows without the aid of a ladder, you can go by the aid of a woman."

There is a proverbial saying in Leicestershire, "Shay's as nasty as a devil unknobbed," i.e., a devil who has either never had any knobs fastened on his horns, or else has succeeded in getting rid of them; the phrase illustrating the bovine character of the popular devil; all of which statements recall the passage in Beaumont and Fletcher's comedy of Monsieur Thomas (act iii. sc. 1):--

"Oh, woman, perfect woman! what distraction
Was meant to mankind when thou wast made a devil!
What an inviting hell invented." According to Hindustani proverbial lore, "the elder sister-in-law is the devil's wand, when you see her she stands as straight as an arrow," the meaning being that she is the chief disturber of the family peace; and by a well-known Oriental adage a very bad woman is spoken of as "the devil's aunt." Marathi proverbial wisdom says that "in one fair woman there are seventy-two hidden vices," and that when she has had her fill of wickedness she takes to religion, and we may quote the Sindhi proverb, "Women, land, and money are all three homes of death"--In other words, they are the causes of many murders. An old Latin proverb goes so far as to say that "when a woman is openly bad she is then at her best;" another one illustrating the same idea in a different wording, "A wicked woman is a magazine of evils." It is further said that "it is better to dwell with a dragon than

with a wicked woman and there is some truth in this warning if the subjoined couplet be correct:--

"For woman's soul when once plunged in
Knows no stopping place in sin." Alexander Dumas puts into the mouth of an officer of the Paris detective force the well-known expression, "Cherchez la femme"--"Search for the women"--which corresponds with our saying, "Wherever there is anything wrong there is generally a woman in the case," or as Richardson says, "A plot must have a woman in it." Sardou, it may be remembered, introduces the phrase in his drama "Ferréol and George Ebers ("Uarda," vol. ii. cap. 14) says:--

"You forget that there is a woman in this.
That is so all the world over, replied Ameni." Sometimes the expression takes the form of, "Ou est la femme?"--"Where is the woman? Where is she? What is her name?"

Again, it is said, "Women are saints in the church, angels in the street, devils in the kitchen, and apes in bed," a saying which, says Hazlitt, "is rather elaborately illustrated in Jacques Olivier's work entitled 'L'Alphabet de l'Imperfection des Femmes,' which was first published about the year 1617;" and which reminds us of the adage, "Women are demons who make us enter hell through the gates of Paradise." There are many proverbs to the same purport, some of which are couched in stronger language than others. Thus one much used, in days gone by, amongst the peasantry throughout the country says:--

"A woman that is wilful is a plague of the worst;
As well live in hell as with a wit that is curst." And, owing to the fact that the fair sex have from the earliest period been regarded as mischievous, we find them styled "the devil's tools" and "the devil's nets"--a host of other uncomplimentary epithets having been applied to them for which, it must be acknowledged, there is little or no warranty. Pope says, "Every woman is at heart a rake," and Lord Lytton in his "Lady of Lyons":--

"Thou art the author
Of such a book of follies in a man,
That it would need the tears of all the angels,
To blot the record out!" with which may be compared the popular saying, "When a woman thinks by herself she thinks of evil," and with the Italian saying, "It is vain to watch a really bad woman." There can be no doubt, however, that in many of the allusions of this kind relating to women justice has not been done to them, and there is some reason in the proverb of the Italian sisterhood, "In men every mortal sin is venial; in women every venial sin is mortal."
Amongst some of the bad qualities condemned in women, and against which man is warned in our proverbial literature, may be mentioned intemperance, and loose morals. According to one folk-rhyme--

"Women and wine, game, and deceit,
Make the wealth small, and the wants great"-- which is told in various ways. In an old manuscript of the fifteenth century five evils to be avoided are thus summed up:--

"A young man a ruler, reckless;
An old man a lecher, loveless;
A poor man a waster, good-less;
A rich man a thief, needless;
A woman a ribald, shameless:
These five shall never thrive blameless." Another version evidently of this old proverbial maxim communicated to Current Notes for December, 1853, runs thus:--

"A wife that is unchaste is like a filthy sow;
An old man a lecher nothing more to be hated;
A woman unshamefast, a child unchastised,
Is worse than gall, where poison is undesired." Similarly one of Heywood's proverbs tells us how--

"Gaming, women, and wine,
While they laugh, they make men pine;" with which may be compared the adage, "Play, women, and wine undo men laughing;" or, as another version has it, "Women, money, and wine, have their good and their pine." But the illustrations already given show that some of the most severe strictures passed on women are those which relate to unchastity, one or two further instances of which we subjoin:--

"An unchaste wife, working mischief still,
Is oft compared to a foul dunghill." And--

"A woman that spins in vice
Has her smock full of lice." Again, we are told that "A fair woman without virtue is like palled wine;" an Arabian version being, "An immodest woman is food without bait;" or, as it is thus said in some country villages, "A fair woman with foul conditions is like a sumptuous sepulchre, full of corruption;" and further, "She that loseth her modesty and honesty hath nothing else worth losing;" reminding us of the warning often given to those about to get married, "A fair face may be a foul bargain," inasmuch as--

"There cannot be a greater clog to man,
Than to be weary of a wanton woman." The Scotch say, "Ye may drive the deil into a wife, but ye'll ne'er ding him oot o' her," implying that when a woman is once bad there is no chance of reclaiming her; and hence we cannot be surprised at the German proverb, "A bag of fleas is easier to keep guard over than a woman."

But, whether we regard women as good or bad, it is generally agreed they surpass man in either case, for, as the French say, "Women, ever in extremes, are always either better or worse than men," with which may be compared the following lines in Lord Tennyson's "Idylls," "Merlin and Vivien":--

"For men at most differ as Heaven and Earth,
But women, worst and best, as Heaven and Hell." Occasionally old local rhymes allude in somewhat uncomplimentary language to the bad qualities of the fair sex. The island of Iona is separated from Mull by a strait about a mile long. An islet close to the Mull shore opposite the ruins of Iona is designated "The Woman's Island," owing to a tradition of Columba that he would not allow a woman or a cow to remain on his own island. The reason assigned for this ungracious command is embodied in an old folk-rhyme:--

"Where there is a cow,
There will be a woman;
And where there is a woman,
There will be mischief"-- a saying which, we are told, is in certain parts of Scotland repeated as a good-humoured satire on women.

It has long been admitted, even by those who disparage women's virtues, that her memory is excellent when she is anxious to keep anything in mind, and hence it is said that "if a woman has any malicious mischief to do her memory is immortal." Proverbial wisdom, again, tells how worthless and unprincipled women often amuse themselves by dissimulation, even going so far as to feign love: an apt illustration of such sham love from Hindustani proverb runs thus, "I'll love him and I'll caress him and I'll put fire under him; if it burn him what can I do?" and there is a well-known Arabic adage which warns us that, " omen's immorality and monks' wiles are to be

dreaded."

Previous Index Next

Woman's Love -- The Folk-Lore of Women -- T.F. Thistelton-Dyer

. · 25 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

"There is no paradise on earth equal to the union of love and innocence."--ROUSSEAU.

ACCORDING to Lord Byron, "Man's love is of man's life a thing apart; 'tis woman's whole existence;" and under a thousand images the poets of all ages have depicted her as a mysterious mixture of joy and sadness, of agony and delight. But the truth of the well-known apothegm cannot be denied, "'Tis love, 'tis love that makes the world go round," for:--

"Love rules the court, the camp, the grove,
And men below and saints above;
For love is heaven, and heaven is love." It is only natural that much should have been written on woman's love--that inexhaustible theme which will continue to hold its sway till the end of time; for, as it was long ago said, "A woman will dare anything when she loves or hates." And yet, strange to say, it must be acknowledged the love of woman has always been more or less enigmatical in the eyes of man, on account of its only too often eccentric and contradictory nature. Thus Middleton speaks of love's strange antics:--

"Love is ever sick, and yet is never dying,
Love is ever true, and yet is ever lying;
Love does doat in liking, and is mad in loathing:
Love, indeed, is anything; yet, indeed, is nothing." Southwell describes a woman's loving looks as "murdering darts," and elsewhere he says:--

"She offereth joy, but bringeth grier,
A kiss--where she doth kill." The hesitancy with which a woman furtively, and oftentimes playfully, tries to conceal her love by a slight cough, has from an early period been humorously recognised in proverbial love, as in the old adage, "Love and a cough cannot be hid," the Latin equivalent of which is, "Amor tussis que non celantur," versions of which are to be met with in French and Italian proverbs. Similarly we may compare the proverb:--

"When a musician hath forgot his note,
He makes as though a crumb stuck in his throat." Thackeray has described "the delights and tortures, the jealousy and wakefulness, the longing and raptures, the frantic despair and elation, attendant upon the passion of love;" and, indeed, volumes might be written illustrative of the mysterious workings of woman's love, although Alphonse Karr went so far as to affirm: "Women for the most part do not love us. They do not choose a man because they love him, but because it pleases them to be loved by him." But, whatever may have been written descriptive of love, its influence is indisputable, and as the Scotch say, "Love is as warm amang cottars as courtiers;" and, as it has been truly said:--

"The rose blooms gay on shairney brae,
As weel's in briken shaw;
And love will lowe in cottage low,
As weel's in lofty ha';" with which may be compared the English equivalent, "Love lives in cottages as well as in courts."
Proverbial literature naturally has much to say on the power of a woman's love, and, according to a popular French adage, "Love subdues all but the ruffian's heart;" and history abounds in illustrations of this maxim, which under a variety of forms is found all over the world, one of the best-known versions being, "Love rules his kingdom without a sword."

And yet it is agreed that woman's love is only too frequently far from kind, for, as it was proverbially said by our forefathers, "Love is a sweet tyranny, because the lover endureth his torments willingly." The French have a proverb to the same effect: "He who has love in his heart has spurs in his sides," the chief reason for this being the anxiety of the fair sex to show their mastery over man; for, like St. Augustine, they have always been of opinion that "he that is not jealous is not in love." Hence a woman is fond of testing her lover's faith by kindling his jealousy, adhering to the time-honoured proverb, "There is no love without jealousy." On the other hand, we are told that "Love expels jealousy," and, according to an Italian belief, "It is better to have a husband without love than with jealousy," which calls to mind Iago's words ("Othello," act iii. sc. 3):--

"O, beware, my lord, of jealousy,
It is the green-eyed monster which doth mock
The meat it feeds on." But jealousy is not confined to either sex, for--

"The venom clamours of a jealous woman
Poison more deadly than a mad dog's tooth." But it is generally agreed that there is nothing worse than a jealous woman, and a piece of African proverbial wisdom tells us that "a jealous woman has no flesh upon her breast; for, however much she may feed upon jealousy, she will never have enough."

And yet, although French romance is full of the tortures which lovers have experienced from the fair sex, it is said:--

"Amour, tous les autres plaisirs
Ne valent pas tes peines," Which has been translated thus: "O Love, thy pains are worth more than all other pleasures"--a statement which is much open to doubt.

Again, woman's love when it "comes apace" is to be avoided as untrustworthy and likely as suddenly to wane; on which account it is commonly said, "Hasty love is iron hot and iron cold." In "Ralph Roister Doister," written about the year 1550, Christian Custance says: "Gay love, God save it! So soon hot, so soon cold." But the love which lasts is that recommended in one of Heywood's proverbs, "Love me little, love me long," which Hazlitt mentions as the title of an old ballad licensed to W. Griffith in 1569-1570.

Woman's love has ever been open to reproach as being fickle and unstable, and Southey, quoting the popular sentiment, says:--

"There are three things a wise man will not trust,
The wind, the sunshine of an April day,
And woman's plighted faith;" further instances of which trait of character will be found elsewhere, where we have dealt with the fickleness of the fair sex. But the swain who is disheartened by his lady-love's coquetry, and is afraid of losing her through excessive wooing, folk-lore admonishes him thus:--

"Follow love and it will flee;
Flee love, and it will follow thee." Indeed satirists have long since told us, in most countries, the folly of believing in a woman's expression of love, as "the last suitor wins the maid"--an adage which has also been expressed in this proverbial couplet:--

"The love of a woman and a bottle of wine,
Are sweet for a season and last for a time." and it has been suggested that it was owing to woman's fickleness that the saying originated, "Happy is the wooing that is not long in doing"--the prudent man thereby not giving her the opportunity of changing her mind.

But fickle and unstable as a woman's love probably may be, there is no gainsaying its power, and in China it is said of a woman who captivates a man, "With one smile she overthrows a city; with another a kingdom." According to the popular tradition this proverb originated in the following circumstance:--A certain lady named Hsi-Shih, the concubine of Fu Cha, King of the ancient State of Wu. She was eminently beautiful, and her beauty so captivated her lord that for her sake he neglected the affairs of his kingdom, which in consequence fell into disorder and ruin.

Whatever the value either of a woman's love or beauty, the folk-tales of most countries agree in one respect--the exacting conditions demanded of the suitor, as a price for gaining his heart's desire, although, under a variety of forms, the subjoined couplet is no doubt founded on the experience of womanhood:--

"Lads' love is lassies' delight,
And if lads don't love, lasses will flite [scold]." And yet, according to a common piece of West African wisdom, "If thou givest thy heart to a woman she will kill thee." Wanting in chivalry, as many such proverbs are, there is one current in China, the truth and wisdom of which most persons will endorse: "Where true love exists between husbands and wives, they're happily joined to the end of their lives."

Previous Index Next

Woman's Hate -- The Folk-Lore of Women -- T.F. Thistelton-Dyer

. · 25 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

"Not even the soldiers' fury, raised in war,
The rage of tyrants when defiance stings 'em!
The pride of priests, so bloodless when in power,
Are half so dreadful as a woman's vengeance."
SAVAGE. IT is generally agreed that a thing to be avoided by man at any cost is a woman's hatred; although, according to Walter Savage Landor, "No friendship is so cordial or so sweet as that of a girl for a girl; no hatred so intense or immovable as that of woman for woman." And the dislike of one woman for another is mostly attributed to jealousy; for, according to a common French proverb, "It is the men who cause the women to dislike each other."

But, as it has been observed, "The anger of a woman is the greatest evil with which one can threaten enemies, especially as proverbial experience tells us that "A woman is more constant in hate than in love" a maxim which has additional warning when it is remembered that "No woman is too silly not to have a genius for spite"--added to which may be quoted this piece of German proverb lore: "A woman's vengeance knows no bounds;" and, again: "A woman, when inflamed by love or hatred, will do anything." To the same effect is the French saying: "Women's counsels are ever cruel," the warning being added that "you should believe only one word in forty that a woman speaks," a fact which is said to be specially true when she is anxious to emphasise her expressions of hatred against her unfortunate victim.

And we are reminded that the hate of a woman is all the more to be dreaded, for even when at her best we are told that "Women like good wine are a secret poison," and that "whereas women's love is dangerous, their hate is fatal."

This view, too, is the same everywhere, and a well-known Hindustani maxim tells us that "the rage of a woman, a player, and a bull is something dreadful" but it consoles us by adding that "A woman's threats and goblin's stones break no bones."

And, as in love, so in hate, a woman is mentally proverbially blind, seeing nothing but what is thoroughly bad in the object of her hatred; and hence the popular proverb, of which there are many versions: "Hatred is blind as well as love."

Previous Index Next

Love Tests -- The Folk-Lore of Women -- by T.F. Thistelton-Dyer

. · 25 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

"'Twas the maiden's matchless beauty
That drew my heart a-nigh;
Not the fern-root potion,
But the glance in her blue eye." IT has been remarked that one of the grandest musical works in existence would never have been written had not Tristram and Ysonde drank the magic potion, which was so strong that it united them even after death; for from his grave there grew an eglantine, which twined about Ysonde's statue above, and, though three times they cut it down, it grew again, and ever wound its arms round the image of the fair Ysonde.

As a means of inspiring and securing love, amatory potions and love charms of all kinds have been much in request amongst the fair sex; and even, at the present day, cases occur now and again of persons being fined for either selling, or persuading lovesick damsels to purchase, various mysterious compounds for influencing the affections of others. Going back to early times, it is well known that the Roman poet Lucretius took his life in an amorous fit caused by a love potion, and Lucullus lost his reason in the same way. In the Middle Ages love-powders were advertised for sale, the pernicious effects of which became a matter of serious comment.

Shakespeare has represented Othello as winning Desdemona by such means--

"She is abused, stolen from me, and corrupted
By spells of medicines bought of mountebanks." Formerly the village apothecary kept love-philtres among his stock of drugs; and Gay, in his "Shepherds' Week," tells how Hobnelia was guilty of resorting to this questionable practice:--

"As I was wont, I trudged, last market-day,
To town with new-laid eggs, preserved in hay;
I made my market long before 'twas night,
My purse grew heavy, and my basket light.
Straight to the 'pothecary shop I went,
And in love-powder all my money spent.
Behap what will, next Sunday, after prayers,
When to the ale-house Lubberkin repairs,
These golden flies into his mug I'll throw,
And soon the swain with fervent love shall glow." Similarly, in the "Character or a Quack Astrologer," published in the year 1673, we are told how "He induces a young heiress to run away with a footman by persuading a young girl 'tis her destiny, and sells the old and ugly philtres and love-powder to procure them sweethearts."

In the preparation of the love-philtre, much importance has been attached to the ingredients used in its composition, certain plants and animals having been supposed to be specially adapted for such a purpose. Italian girls, for instance, still practise the following method: A lizard is caught, drowned in wine, dried in the sun, and reduced to powder, some of which is thrown on the obdurate man, who thenceforth is hers for evermore. A favourite Slavonic device with a lovesick girl, writes Mr. Fizick, in his "Romantic Love and Personal Beauty," "is to cut the finger, let a few drops of her blood run into a glass of beer, and make the adored man drink it unknowingly. The same method is current in Hesse and Oldenburg; and in Bohemia, the girl who is afraid to wound her finger may substitute a few drops of bat's blood."

Another form of this mode of procedure practised by girls on the Continent is this: "Take a holy wafer, but which has not yet been consecrated, write on it certain words from the ring-finger, and then let a priest say five masses over it; divide the wafer into two equal parts, of which keep one, and give the other to the person whose love you desire to gain."

Flowers have been much in request as love-philtres, a favourite one having been the pansy. Oberon tells Puck to place a pansy on the eyes of Titania in order that on awaking she may fall in love with the first object she meets:--

"Fetch me that flower--the herb I showed thee once;
The juice of it on sleeping eyelids laid
Will make a man, or woman, madly dote
Upon the next live creature that it sees." Vervain has long been in repute as a love-producer, and in many rural districts has the reputation amongst the fair sex of securing affection from those who take it to those who administer it. Another ingredient of the amatory potion once highly prized was cumin-seed. It is still popular with country lasses in Italy, who endeavour to make their sweethearts swallow it in order to insure their continued attachment and fidelity. Or if the lover is going to serve as a soldier, or has obtained employment in a distant part of the country, his lady-love gives him a newly-made loaf seasoned with cumin, or some wine in which cumin has been previously powdered and mixed.

Another mystic plant is the basil, which in Moldavia is said to stop the wandering youth on his way, and to make him love the maiden whose hand he happens to accept a sprig. Indeed, rarely does the Italian girl pay a visit to her sweetheart without wearing behind her ear a sprig of this favourite plant. The Mandrake, which is still worn in France as a love-charm, was formerly in demand by English girls for the same purpose, because, writes Gerarde, "It hath been thought that the root hereof serveth to win love." He also speaks of the carrot as "Serving for love matters," and adds that the root of the wild species is more effectual than that of the garden.

The root of the male-fern was, in days gone by, much sought for in the preparation of love-philtres, and hence the following allusion:--

"'Twas the maiden's matchless beauty
That drew my heart a-night;
Not the fern-rood potion,
But the glance of her blue eye." With Indian women the mango is a favourite plant in love matters. Tradition tells how once upon a time a young girl plucked one of its blossoms, and offered it to Cupid, uttering these words:--

"God of the bow, who with spring's choicest flowers
Dost point the five unerring shafts; to thee
I dedicate this blossom; let it serve
To barb thy truest arrow; be its mark
Some youthful heart that pines to be beloved." The jasmine, too, is reputed to be all potent in love matters; and it may be remembered how Moore represents the enchantress Namouna, who was skilled in all manner of charms and talismans, instructing Nourmahal to gather at midnight certain blossoms which would have the effect, when twined into a wreath, of recalling her Selim's love. Accordingly, the flowers having been duly gathered as directed, the enchantress Namouna, whilst singing the following invocatory lines, weaves the mystic chaplet which is to have such wondrous influence:--

"The image of love, that nightly flies
To visit the bashful maid,
Steals from the jasmine flower, that sighs

Its soul, like hers, in the shade.
The dream of a future, or happier, hour
That alights on misery's brow,
Springs out of the almond silvery flower,
That blooms on a leafless bough." Beans, again, are said to have been accounted efficacious by women as love-producers. An amusing case is recorded of an old woman who was scourged through the streets of Cremona for having endeavoured to conciliate the affections of a young man through the medium of some beans over which mass had been said. In short, all kinds of ingredients appear to have been used in the preparation of these amatory spells, and it is recorded how a young woman, in the seventeenth century, was indicted by the legal authorities of Leipsic for administering a love-philtre composed of bread, hair, and nails to a man whom it seriously affected.

Occasionally confidence was reposed in the power of written charms which were administered in drink, or food, to the person whose love it was desired to secure. Thus the story is told how a young man, passionately enamoured of a damsel of Gaza, having failed in the usual amatory charms, repaired to the priests of Aesculapius, at Memphis, from whom he acquired mystic powers. On returning after a year's absence, he introduced certain magical words and figures cut on Cyprian brass beneath the lady's door. The contrivance had the desired effect, for soon she began to rave on his name, "to wander with uncovered head, and dishevelled hair, for she had become distracted through the vehemence of love."

But cases of this kind were not always attended with the same success. We are told, for instance, how a Norwegian peasant, whose suit had been rejected, sought to inspire the lady he loved with corresponding affection by mystical means. So he carved Runic characters on pieces of wood; but not being sufficiently skilful in this mode of talismanic science, instead of furthering his purpose he threw the damsel into a dangerous illness. Fortunately, a Northern Chief witnessing his sufferings, and, hearing that Runic characters had been carved, sculptured those that he considered more appropriate, which, being placed beneath her pillow, soon restored her again to convalescence.

It is clear that there have been no lack of expedients either for inspiring or dispelling love, many an amusing instance being given in our old romances and folk-tales. It is a Basque superstition that yellow hair in a man is irresistible with a woman; hence every woman who set eyes on Ezkabi Fidel, the golden-haired, fell in love with him. We may compare a curious Irish piece of folk-lore which has long been practised. If a lover will run a hair of the object he loved through the fleshy part of a dead man's leg, the person from whom the hair is taken will go mad with love.

Such a practice may seem ludicrous, but it cannot be forgotten how great a hold it has on the female mind. How far this was originally due to the stories circulated is a matter of uncertainty; but it is generally admitted that tales dealing with the mystic powers of love, and handed down with every semblance of truth, have, in times past, largely helped to propagate a piece of folly which has been productive of so many mischievous effects.

Previous Index Next

Woman's Secrets -- The Folk-Lore of Women -- by T.F. Thistelton-Dyer

. · 25 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

"Search not to find what lies too deeply hid,
Nor to know things whose knowledge is forbid.:
DENHAM. "TO a woman and a magpie tell what you would speak in the market-place," runs the Spanish proverb--the reason being that "a woman only keeps a secret what she does not know;" and therefore an old Latin maxim solemnly enjoins us "not to trust a woman even when dead." Thus Hotspur tells his wife in "I Henry IV." (act ii. sc. 3):--

"Constant you are,
But yet a woman, and for secrecy
No lady closer; for I well believe
Thou wilt not utter what thou dost not know,
And so far I will trust thee, gentle Kate;" which, in other words, is equivalent to the well-known German adage, "A woman can't keep a secret, nor let any one else do it." But this maxim cannot be applied only to women, for, as it has been often remarked of secrets, both political and social, they are only too frequently made to be revealed, a truth illustrated by Bell Jonson's words in "The Case is Unaltered," wherein we find this passage:--

"A secret in his mouth
Is like a wild bird put into a cage,
Whose door no sooner opens but 'tis out." But, whatever dependence is to be placed on a woman's reliability to keep to herself what is told in confidence, it has often been remarked that she can at least keep her own secret, a proof of which will be quickly found if any one question her on the subject of her age.

Apart from this exception, a secret in the keeping of a woman soon becomes what the Spanish are accustomed to call, "The Secret of Anchuelos," that is, one which is known to every one. The town of that name is situated in a gorge between two steep hills, on one of which a shepherd tended his flock, on the other a shepherdess. This pair kept up all amorous converse by bawling from hill to hill, but always with many mutual strict injunctions of secrecy.

The inability of a woman to keep silent what is told her in confidence--even where her husband be concerned--is exemplified in the once popular "He that tells his wife is but lately married"--her indiscretion in disclosing information entrusted to her only too frequently causing serious mischief; with which be compared the Tamil proverb, "Do not disclose your secret to your wife, nor trust your enemy at any time."

But "A wise woman hath a close mouth," which has its equivalent in the French saying, "Le plus sage se tait." According to another popular adage, "Discreet women have neither eyes nor ears," which also has its French parallel, "La femme de bien n'a ny yeux ny orelles."

A piece of proverbial lore which applies to each sex is this: "Tell your secret to your servant and you make him your master"--a maxim which may be traced to an early period when, says Kelly, "it was the policy of the Greek adventurers in Rome to worm out the secrets of the house, and so make themselves feared." Juvenal has referred to this practice:--

"Poor simple Corydon! do you suppose

Aught is kept secret that a rich man does?
If servants hold their tongues, the beasts will blab,
The dog, the door-posts, and the marble-slab." Similarly, we find the same proverb on the Continent, "To whom you tell your secret you surrender your freedom;" or, according to another version, "Tell your friend your secret, and he will set his foot on your throat." And it may be remembered Dryden has introduced the same idea:--

"He who trusts a secret to his servant,
Makes his own man his master." African folk-lore, too, introduces the same idea, and a popular proverb says, "If a man tells his secrets to his wife, she will bring him into the way of Satan," which, it has been remarked, is rather a strong contrast to the English proverb, "He who would thrive must ask his wife." And again, it is said, "Trust your dog to the end, a woman till the first opportunity."

As might be supposed, folk-lore, at one time or another, has made good use of the value attaching to secrets; and stories of the supernatural in romantic fiction have shown how the fair sex, under the influence of magical influences, have unknowingly revealed the most sacred secrets. But the moral of most of these tales is the same--and may be applied to either sex--the lesson conveyed being not to trust any one; for, as the French say, "the disclosure of a secret is the fault of him who first disclosed it"--a truth, indeed, which is only too constantly verified in daily life by mistaken trust in another.

Women, it is said, forget the important fact that as soon as a secret becomes the property of three persons it is all the world's, which is summed up in a common Spanish adage, "What three knows every creature knows;" whereas according to the French proverb, "The secret of two is God's secret." The same idea also exists in West Africa, where this proverb is current:" Trust not a woman; she will tell thee what she has just told her companion," and "Whatever be thy intimacy, never give thy heart to a woman."

Turning to some of the numerous folk-tales and legendary stories, in which "the secret" plays the important part, there is the famous one of Melusine, which has been told in many ways. Raymond, Count of Lusignan, was one day hunting the boar in the forest of Poitou, when, whilst wandering in the forest at nightfall through his boar having outstripped his train, he saw Melusine with her sisters, dancing by a fountain in the moonlight. Smitten with her beauty, he asked her to marry him, to which proposal she consented on condition that he would allow her to remain secret and unseen every Sunday. They were married, and her secret was kept until one of his friends suggested that she only desired privacy in order to indulge an adulterous passage.

Raymond thereupon burst into her secret chamber and discovered that she was doomed to have the lower part of her body transformed to that of a serpent every Saturday. The secret broken, she was compelled, henceforth, to leave her husband for ever, and to be totally transformed to a serpent. But her spirit continued to haunt the Castle of Lusignan before the death of any of the lords of that race.

Sometimes, on the other hand, the wife is the transgressor. In a North German story a wizard keeps a young girl by force as his wife. One day, accidentally, he lets out the secret that his soul resides in a bird, which is locked up in a church in a desert place, and that, until the bird is killed, he cannot die. The bird is killed by the girl's lover, and the wizard dies--a similar story being found in the "Arabian Nights."

Previous Index Next

Red Haired Girls -- The Folk-Lore of Women -- by T.F. Thistelton-Dyer

. · 25 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

"The gold and topaz of the sun on snow
Are shade by the bright hair above those eyes."
PETRARCH. WHY red hair has been at a discount in all ages has perplexed many a chronicler of fashion. Although, it is true, artists have more chivalrously depicted its beauty, the reverse is the case in literature. What poet, it may be asked, has ventured to sing of "the fair one with the ruddy ringlets" in the same way as the charms of the dark-haired maiden have been so often described?

Whereas the jetty ringlet or flaxen plait has won a thousand admirers, the red-haired girl has found herself persistently passed by. However good and attractive her features, and however graceful her gait may be, she has rarely found her praises acknowledged. Fashion, hitherto, has boycotted in a most unrelenting manner the girl with hair of reddish hue; and, despite the fact that in years gone by many beautiful women possessed tresses of this unaristocratic colour, it still remains unpopular.

It is useless to urge in its favour that Queen Elizabeth considered herself to make the best appearance when wearing a red wig, and that others, counting themselves stars of fashion, have been of the same opinion; for there is a deep-rooted and unaccountable prejudice against this much-abused shade of colour, which it is quite possible some unexpected freak of fashion may one day change. Indeed, from time immemorial, the girl so endowed by Nature has been, in most places, open to sarcasm, and rude unsympathetic passers-by have contemptuously spoken of "carrots" by way of a joke. An old epigram running thus:--

"Why scorn red hair? The Greeks, we know
(I note it here in Charity),
Had taste in beauty, and with them
The Graces were all 'Charital.'" For years past barbers have advertised various compositions for altering the red shade of the hair, and some time ago a high German doctor and astrologer informed the public that he was blessed with a wife "who could make red hair as white as a lily."

A lady whose lover had an unconquerable antipathy to red hair once applied to a noted quack for help in her emergency, who politely answered:--"This is no business of mine, but my wife's, who'll soon redress your grievances and furnish you with a leaden comb, and my anti-Erythraean unguent, which after two or three applications will make you as fair, or as brown, as you please." According to an American newspaper paragraph, twenty-one men in Cincinnati, who had married red-haired women, were found to be colour blind, thus mistaking red for black.

But, going back to the antecedent history of this strange prejudice, it may be traced to a very early period. The Ancient Egyptians, for instance, seem to have been pre-eminent among all nations for their aversion to red-haired people. According to early authorities they were in the habit of annually performing the ceremony of burning alive an unfortunate individual whose only crime was the colour of his hair. "Fancy," as it has been remarked, "the state of mind into which every possessor of the obnoxious shade must have been thrown at the approach of the dreaded ceremony, each not knowing who might be selected as the victim."

From the epithets "red-haired barbarians" and "red-haired devils," with which the Chinese were formerly in the habit of designating the English, it is evident that with them a similar strong antipathy prevailed to this unfortunate,

and ill-omened, colour of the hair.

On the other hand, the Romans, from the days of Nero to the present, have been unstinted in their praise of red hair--with the old Romans the colour more esteemed being a dark red, almost brown. Modern Romans, it is said, inherit "the tastes of their ancestors in this respect; and nowhere else on the face of the earth are so many red-haired women to be found as among the patrician families of Rome and Florence. The same liking exists among modern Greeks, who strive to accentuate the burnished effect of their reddish tresses by the wearing of dull gold ornaments."

The Laura whom Petrarch has immortalised attracted him by the colour of her tresses. He first saw her in church clad in a mantle of green, over which her golden red hair fell, which inspired him to write these lines:--

"The snare was set amidst those threads of gold
To which Love bound me fast," and in another of his songs he says of his lady-love's hair--

"The gold and topaz of the sun on snow
Are shade by the bright hair above those eyes." Spanish artists look with no favour on a redhaired woman, and for two reasons. First, because red hair is in direct opposition to that of the Castilian women, who form the class ideal of feminine beauty to the people of that country. The second reason may be attributed to the old tradition which has led them always to portray Judas as a man with red hair. The same prejudice prevails in France, and Thiers, in his "Histoire des Perruques," gives this as one of the reasons for wearing a wig:--"Les rousseaux porterent des perruques pour cacher la couleur de leur cheveux, qui sont en horreur a tout le monde, parceque Judas, a ce qu'on prétend étoit rousseau." Hence there is an old French adage to this effect:--

"Homme roux et femme barbe,
Da trente pas loin le salue,
Avecques trois pierres au poing,
Pour t'en aider a ton besoign." In our own country, the literature of past years contains many similar allusions. In "As You Like It," Rosalind, speaking of Orlando, says "His very hair is of the dissembling colour;" whereupon Celia replies, "Something browner than Judas's." Southey, in his "Vision of the Maid of Orleans," after having taken the poor girl to a number of unpleasant places, introduces her to the following disagreeable personage:--

"From thence they came
Where, in the next ward, a most wretched band
Groaned underneath the bitter tyranny
Of a fierce demon. His coarse hair was red,
Pale grey his eyes, and bloodshot, and his face
Wrinkled with such a smile as malice wears
In ecstasy." This demon, of course, is Cruelty, into whose charge are committed all those who have been guilty of cruelty in their lifetime. Shirley, in his "Doubtful Heir," expresses the same idea, as also does Dryden, in his play of "Amboyna." Middleton, too, in his "Chaste Maid of Cheapside," has a similar allusion, showing how popular and widespread was the prejudice to this unfortunate colour; indeed, so much so, that there is some raason to think that the devil himself had occasionally this attribute bestowed upon him.

The Brahmins were forbidden to marry a red-haired woman; and, as it has been remarked, "the populace of most countries, confounding moral with aesthetic impressions, accuses red-haired people of various shortcomings." Hence, superstition has assigned to hair of a coppery tinge, when it adorns a woman's head, the worst traits; and "all the petty vices, all the lamentable shortcomings to which femininity is heir have been laid to the charge of the reddish crown." Of course this is only prejudice; and as the author of the "Ugly Girl Papers" writes, "I have seen a

most obnoxious head of colour so changed by a few years' care that it became the admiration of the owner's friends, and could hardly be recognised as the withered, fiery locks once worn." At the same time there seems some truth in the common opinion that a red-haired girl is invariably self-conscious; for she knows that her hair, although it may not be of a fiery carrot colour, is the subject of daily comment.

Referring to the colour of the hair in folk-lore, we may note that from time immemorial there has been a strong antipathy to red hair, which, according to some antiquarians, originated in a tradition that Judas had hair of this colour. One reason, it has been suggested, why the dislike to it arose was that it was considered ugly and unfashionable, and on this account a person with red hair would soon be regarded with contempt. It has been conjectured, too, that the odiuu took its rise from the aversion to the red-haired Danes.

Yellow hair was, also, in years gone by, regarded with ill-favour, and almost esteemed a deformity, allusions to which prejudice are of constant occurrence; and, it may be added, that hair was often used metaphorically for the colour, complexion, or nature of a thing, as in Beaumont and Fletcher's "The Nice Valour"--

"A lady of my hair cannot want pitying."

Previous Index Next

Woman's Fickleness -- The Folk-Lore of Women -- by T.F. Thistelton-Dyer

. · 25 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

"Ladies, like variegated tulips, show
'Tis to their changes half their charms we owe."
POPE'S Moral Essays, Ep. ii. BY an unwritten law it is held to be the privilege of woman to change her mind, a licence of which she rarely fails to avail herself. Hence she has often been said to be chameleonlike, and, as a German proverb runs, "Women are variable as April weather;" a Sindhi proverb used of fickle-minded people being this: "A mad woman wears a bangle sometimes on the arm and sometimes on the leg;" of which there are other versions, as thus:--

"Maids are May when they are maids,
But the sky changes when they are wives." and, "Fortune is like woman, loves youth, and is fickle."

According to an old adage in this country, "A woman's mind and winter wind change oft;" or, as it is sometimes said, "Winter weather and woman's thoughts often change;" another version of which we find current in Spain, "Women, wind, and fortune soon change;" and, similarly, it is said, "She can laugh and cry both in a wind."

But it has apparently always been so, and Virgil describes woman as "ever variable, ever changeable," and likens her to Proteus--

"Caeneus, a woman once, and once a man,
But ending in the sex she first began." Similarly, Verdi, in his opera of "Rigoletto," speaks of woman as an inconstant thing. Catullus, again, was of opinion that, "What a woman says to her ardent lover ought to be written on the winds, or on running water," so shifting and transient are her vows and professions, which reminds us of Keats's epitaph--

"Here lies one whose name was writ in water." This failing has been made the subject of frequent comment and ridicule, and Pope tells us how--

"Papillia, wedded to her amorous spark,
Sighs for the shadow--'How charming is a park!'
A park is purchas'd, but the fair he sees
All bath'd in tears--'O odious, odious trees.'" The French popular adage says, "Woman often varies, fool is he who trusts her." The story goes these words were written by Francis I. on a window-pane in the Castle of Chambord. His sister, Queen Margaret of Navarre, entered as he was writing what she considered a slander on her sex, and declared that she could quote twenty instances of man's infidelity. But Francis replied that her words were not to the point, and that he would rather hear one instance of a woman's constancy; to which the Queen replied, "Can you mention a single instance of her inconstancy?"

Francis triumphantly answered in the affirmative, for it so happened that, a few weeks before this conversation, a gentleman of the Court had been thrown into prison on a serious charge, while his wife, who was one of the Queen's ladies-in-waiting, was reported to have eloped with his page.

Margaret, however, maintained that the lady was innocent, at which the King shook his head, at the same time promising that if, within a month, her character should be re-established, he would break the pane on which the

disputed words were written, and grant his sister any favour she might ask. Not many days had elapsed when it was discovered that it was not the lady who had fled with the page, but her husband. During one of her visits to him in prison they had exchanged clothes, whereby he was enabled to deceive the jailer and effect his escape, which his devoted wife remained in his place.

Margaret claimed his pardon at the King's hand, who not only granted it, but gave a grand fete and tournament to celebrate this instance of conjugal affection. He also destroyed the pane of glass, although the saying on it has long passed into a proverb. It may, however, be added that Brantome, who had seen the writing, says that the words were "Toute femme varie," and not a distich, as is commonly supposed:--

"Souvent femme varie,
Bien fou qui s'y fic." On the other hand, Sir Philip Sidney was one of those who was forced to admit woman's fickleness, for he thus writes:--

"Ho water ploughs, and soweth in the sand,
And hopes the flickering wind with net to hold,
Who hath his hopes laid on a woman's hand." Again, the unreliability of woman has been exemplified in the saying, "An eel's held by the tail surer than a woman;" a maxim which is said to be "an ancient truth in Field's "Amends for Ladies," published in the year 1618, and is much to the same effect as the following lines:--

"She will and she will not. She grants, denies,
Consents, retracts, advances, and then flies." And an Oriental proverb says that "Women are like bows, they can bend as much as they please;" in other words, they are as changeable as the moon. But, although the proverbial lore of most countries makes fickleness one of the grave defects of a woman's character, it may be questioned whether, in this respect, she is a more grievous offender than man, despite all that has been said to prove her the greater sinner. However much, too, poets after the manner of Charles Mackay may have spoken of woman's fickleness in words like the following:--

"Whene'er a woman vows to love you
In fortune's spite;
Make protestations that would prove you
Her sou's delight;
Swears that no other shall win her
By passion stirr'd;
Believe her not;--the charming sinner
Will break her word;" it must not be forgotten that the same charge has been made against man, and oftentimes in language still more severe, an illustration of which may be quoted from Dryden's "Absalom and Ahitophel":--

"A man so various, that he seem'd to be
Not one, but all mankind's epitome;
Stiff in opinions, always in the wrong;
Was everything by starts, and nothing long;
But, in the course of one revolving moon,
Was chemist, fiddler, stateman, and buffoon;
Then all for women, painting, rhyming, drinking,
Besides ten thousand freaks that died in thinking." And yet the fair sex has always been credited with being fickle, one popular cure for which, in olden times, was the love-philtre, or potion, which forms the subject of a preceding chapter.

Previous Index Next

Local Allusions to Women -- The Folk-Lore of Women -- by T.F. Thistelton-Dyer

. · 25 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

"He that will not merry be,
With a pretty girl by the fire,
I wish he was atop of Dartemoor
A-stugged in the mire."
Devonshire Folk-Rhyme. MANY of our old towns and villages throughout the country have long been famous for certain characteristics, and some of these which pay special honour to the fair sex are embodied in local rhymes, which, if not in all respects quite complimentary, are generally quaint and goodhumoured.
A popular folk-rhyme informs us:--
"Oxford for learning, London for a wit,
Hull for women, and York for a tit." The downs in the vicinity of Sutton, Banstead, and Epsom, in addition to being noted for their sheep, which have given rise to various rhymes, have been in other ways equally famous, if we are to believe the following:--
"Sutton for good mutton,
Cheam for juicy beef,
Croydon for a pretty girl,
And Mitcham for a thief." But these are not the only places, as other folk-rhymes tell us, that can lay claim to producing pretty girls; for, under Oxfordshire, in Halliwell's Nursery Rhymes of England," these lines are given:--
"King's Sutton is a pretty town,
And lies all in a valley;
It has a pretty rng of bells,
Besides a bowling alley;
Wine in liquor in good store,
Pretty maidens plenty,
Can a man desire more?
There ain't such a town in twenty;" with which may be compared a similar rhyme on Middlewych, in Cheshire:--
"Middlewych is a pretty town,
Seated in a valley,
With a church and market cross,
And eke a bowling alley.
All the men are loyal there,
Pretty girls are plenty,
Church and King, and down with the Rump--
There's not such a town in twenty." Chambers, in his "Popular Rhymes of Scotland," quotes an old rhyme descriptive of places in the parishes of Bunkle and Chirnside; "but, alas," he says, "five of these little firm towns no longer exist, their lands being now included in large possessions:--
"Little Billy, Billy Mill,
Billy Mains, and Billy Hill,
Ashfield and Auchencraw,
Bullerhead and Pefferlaw,
There's bonny lasses in them a'." The term, "Lancashire fair women," has long age become proverbial, in connection with which we may quote this note by Ray: "Whether the women of this county be indeed fairer than their neighboirs I know not, but that the inhabitants of some counties may be, and are, generally fairer than those of others, is most certain; the reason whereof is to be attributed partly to the temperature of the air, partly to the condition of the soil, and partly to their manner of food. The hotter the climate, generally the blacker the

inhabitants, and the colder, the fairer; the colder, I say, to a certain degree, for in extreme cold countries the inhabitants are of dusky complexions. But in the same climate, that in some places the inhabitants should be fairer than in others, proceeds from the diversity of the situation--either high or low, maritime or far from sea--or of the soil and manner of living, which we see have so much influence upon hearts, as to alter in them bigness, shape, and colour; and why it may not have the like on men I see not."
Another folk-rhyme tells us:--
"Barton under Needwood,
Dunstall in the Dale;
Sitenhill for a pretty girl,
And Burton for good ale;" which is similar to one told of the hamlets of Pulverbatch, in Shropshire:--
"Cothercot up o' the hill,
Wilderley down i' the dale,
Churton for pretty girls,
And Powtherbitch for good ale." "Suffolk fair maids" is another popular proverbial expression, an allusion to which we find in Greene's "Friar Bacon and Friar Bungay" (Works, Edit. 1861, p. 153):--
"A bonnier wench all Suffolk cannot yield.
All Suffolk! Nay, all England holds none such;" and Ray remarks on this expression: "It seems the God of Nature hath been bountiful in giving them beautiful complexions; which I am willing to believe, so far forth as it fixeth not a comparative disparagement on the same sex in other places."

On the other hand, we occasionally find a place mentioned as possessing no pretty girls, as in the following:--
"Halifax is made of wax,
And Heptonstall of stone;
In Halifax there's many a pretty girl,
In Heptonstall there's none." A humorous rhyme on Camberwell runs thus:--
"All the maides in Camberwell,
May daunce in an egge shell,
For there are no maydes in that well;" to which one, who, it has been suggested, was doubtless a Camberwellian, answered in clumsy doggerel:--
"All the maides in Camberwell towne,
Cannot daunce in an acre of ground." It is proverbially said, too:--
"Castleford women must needs be fair,
Because they wash both in Calder and Aire." In short, in accordance with an old adage, "England's the Paradise of Women," upon which Ray has this note: "And well it may be called so, as might easily be demonstrated in many particulars, were not all the world therein satisfied. Hence it has been said that if a bridge were made over the narrow seas, all the women in Europe would come over hither. Yet it is worth the noting, that though in no country in the world the men are so fond of, so much governed by, so wedded to their wives, yet hath no language so many proverbial invectives against women."

Some places have enjoyed the unenviable notoriety of possessing loose women, if we are to put reliance in folk-rhymes like the subjoined:--
"Beccles for a puritan, Bungay for the poor,
Halesworth for a drunkard, and Bilborough for a whore." According to a Leicestershire saying, "There are more whores in Hose, than honest women in Long Clawton;" the humour of this proverb, as Ray says, 'turning on the word hose, which is here meant to signify stockings, and is the name of a small village adjoining Long Clawton, which is comparatively very populous." A proverbial couplet current in Essex informs us:--
"Braintree for the pure, and Bocking for the poor;
Cogshall for the jeering town, and Kelvedon for the whore." And to give a further instance, a Surrey folk-rhyme is to this effect:--

"Sutton for mutton, Carshalton for beeves,
Epsom for whores, and Ewel for thieves." At one time, too, it was a common saying, "Who goes to Westminster for a wife, to Paul's for a man, and to Smithfield for a horse, may meet with a whore, a knave, and a jade;" with which may be compared the following old folk-rhyme on the Inns of Court:--
"The Inner Temple rich,
The Middle Temple poor;
Lincoln's Inn for law,
And Gray's lnn for a whore." Herefordshire has long been famous for its four W's--its wine (cider), its wood (its sylvan scenery), its women, and its water (the river Wye), whence the saying, "Wine, wood, women, and water;" and a popular couplet speaks of:--
"Oxford knives,
London wives"; which, according to Grose, would seem to imply that "the Oxford knives were better to look at than to cut with; and that the London wives had more beauty and good breeding than housewifely qualities," with which may be compared a similar folk-rhyme:--
"Hutton for auld wives,
Broadmeadows for swine;
Paxton for drunken wives,
And salmon sae fine." Cheshire people when referring to a girl noted for her good looks are wont to describe her as being "As fair as Lady Done," a phrase which is thus explained by Pennant, in his "Journey from Chester to London," 1793:--"Sir John Done, Knight, hereditary forester and keeper of the forest of Delamere, Cheshire, died in 1629. When James I. made a progress in the year 1607, he was entertained by this gentleman at Utkinton, etc. He married Dorothy, daughter of Thomas Wilbraham, Esq., of Woodhey, who left behind her so admirable a character, that to this day, when a Cheshire man would express some excellency in one of the fair sex, he would say, 'There is Lady Done for you.'"

Ray, also, tells us that, "The Dones were a great family in Cheshire, living it Utkinton, by the forest side. Nurses use there to call their children so, if girls; if boys, Earls of Derby."

It is also commonly said in Cheshire, "Better wed over the mixen than over the moor"--a proverbial adage which Ray thus explains: "That is, hard by, or at home--the mixon being that heap of compost which lies in the yards of good husbandmen--than far off, or from London. The road from Chester leading to London over some part of the moorlands in Staffordshire, the meaning is, that gentry in Cheshire find it more profitable to match within their own county, than to bring a bride out of other shires: (1) Because better acquainted with her birth and breeding. (2) Because though her portion may chance to be less to maintain her, such inter-marriages in this county have been observed both a prolonger of worshipful families and the preserver of amity between them."

We find the same proverb in Scotland, "Better over the midden than over the muir;" and it has also found its way to the Continent, for to a young person about to marry in Germany this advice is given, "Marry over the mixon, and you will know who and what she is;" with which may be compared the Italian admonitlon, "Your wife and your nag get from a neighbour."
A couplet popular in Wem, Shropshire, runs thus:--
"The women of Wem, and a few musketeers,
Beat Lord Capel, and all his caveliers." Wem was the first town in Shropshire to declare for the Parliament. The story told--which gave rise to this rhyme--is that in 1643, Lord Capel, the King's lieutenant-general in Wales and the border counties, attempted to seize it from Shrewsbury before the completion of the fortifications, but he was repulsed from Wem by about forty troopers, with the aid of the townspeople. A smart piece of deception, it is said, was adopted, for old women in red cloaks were posted at carefully-selected spots, thus scaring the enemy, who took them for soldiers.

Another Cheshire adage tells us, "When the daughter is stolen, shut Pepper Gate," which Grose thus explains--"Pepper Gate was a postern on the east side of the city of Chester. The mayor ot the city having his daughter stolen away by a young man through that gate, whilst she was playing at ball with the other maidens, his worship, out of revenge, caused it to be closed up."

There are numerous items of folk-lore of a similar character; and the Scotch, when speaking of a changeable woman, remark, "Ye're as fu' o' maggots as the bride of Preston, wha stopt half-way as she gaed to the kirk;" on which adage, Henderson writes: "We have not been able to learn who the bride of Preston really was, but we have frequently heard the saying applied to young women who are capricious and changeable:--
"The bride took a maggot, it was but a maggot,
She wadna gang by the west mains to be married." Another common expression is, "Take a seat on Maggy Shaw's Crocky," which is a broad, flat stone, near to the brink of a precipice, overhanging the seashore, about a mile to the north of Eyemouth. Tradition says this stone was placed over the remains of an old woman who had hanged herself, and who is said frequently to be seen at night resting upon it, in the shape of a white sea-mew, sitting lonely on the--
"Glitty stane,
Green with the dow o' the jauping main." Sometimes one may hear a Scotch peasant use the phrase, "Ye breed o' Lady Mary, when you're gude, ye're ower gude," which Kelly thus explains: "A drunken man one day begged Lady Mary to help him on his horse, and having made many attempts to no purpose, he always reiterated the same position; at length he jumped quite over. 'O, Lady Mary,' said he, 'when thou art good, thou art over good.'" Another common phrase is, "Gae kiss yourlucky--she lives in Leith," which Allan Ramsay thus explains: "A cant phrase, from what rise I know not, but it is made use of when persons think it is not worth while to give a distinct answer, or think themselves foolishly accused."

It is commonly said in Buckinghamshire, in reference to a marriage of unequal age, "An old man who marries a buxom young maiden bids fair to become a freeman of Buckingham," that is, a cuckold. A Shropshire proverb, in which there does not seem to be much point, says, "He that fetches a wife from Shrewsbury must carry her into Staffordshire, or else he shall live in Cumberland," with which may be compared the following old rhyme:--
"Women are born in Wiltshire,
Brought up in Cumberland,
Lead their lives in Bedfordshire,
Bring their husbands to Buckingham,
And die in Shrewsbury." On the Kentish coast the white clouds which commonly bring rain are nicknamed "Folke Stone Washerwomen;" and in Cornwall we find the expression, "Grained like a Wellcombe woman;"--Wellcombe is about three miles from Morwenstow, the women in this neighbourhood being remarkably dark. At the present day, too, one may often hear the Sussex peasantry use the phrase, "Lithe as a lass of Kent," and in Northamptonshire a current expression used to be, "She is quite an Amy Florence."

Another old proverbial phrase which, at one time or another, has given rise to much discussion is, "As long as Meg of Westminster," which, says Ray, "is applied to persons very tall, especially if they have hopple height wanting breadth proportionately. But that there ever was," he adds, "such a giant woman cannot be proved by any good witness. I pass not for a late lying pamphlet, entitled, 'Story of a monstrous tall Virago called "Long Megg of Westminster,"' the writer of which thinks it might relate to a great gun lying in the Tower, called Long Megg, in troublesome times brought to Westminster, where for some time it continued."

Fuller, writing in 1662, says, "The large gravestone shown on the south side of the cloister in Westminster Abbey, said to cover her body, was placed over a number of monks who died of the plague, and were all buried in one grave."

Turning once more to Scotland, there is a small village named Ecclesmagirdle situated "under the northern slope of the Ochil Hills, and for some considerable part of the year untouched by the solar rays." Hence the following rhyme:--

"The lasses o' Exmagirdle
May very weel be dun;
For frae Michaelmas till Whitsunday,
They never see the sun." Corncairn, situated in Banffshire, is an extensive and fertile district, adjacent to Cornhill, where the well-known Cornhill markets are held. It was long noted for the industry of its inhabitants and the thrift of its women, which seems to have given rise to the following folk-rhyme:--

"A' the wives o' Corncairn,
Drilling up their harn yarn;
They hae corn, they hae kye,
They have webs o' claith, for bye." In Gilburn, Linlithgowshire, there is current a curious traditionary couplet. The story goes that an unfortunate lady lived with a Duke of Hamilton, very many years ago, at Kinneil House. She is said to have put an end to her existence by throwing herself from the walls of the castle into the deep ravine below, through which the Gilburn descends. Her spirit is supposed to haunt this glen; and it has long been customary for the children in the neibourhood, on dark and stormy nights, to say:--

"Lady, Lady Lilburn,
Hunts in the Gilburn." But, it has been suggested, it is far more likely that Lady Lilburn was the wife of the celebrated Cromwellian colonel, who for a time occupied Kinneil House.

Similarly, a dishonest milk-woman at Shrewsbury, who is condemned to wander up and down Lady Studeley's Diche, in the Raven Meadow--now the Smithfield--is said to repeat this couplet:--

"Weight and measure sold I never,
Milk and water sold I ever"; which at Burslem, in the Stafford-shire, has been associated with an old witch, locally known as "Old Molly Lee."

Previous Index Next

The Woman Question -- by Stephen Leacock (1916)

. · 26 January 2003 · Archived copy · Original

I WAS sitting the other day in what is called the Peacock Alley of one of our leading hotels, drinking tea with another thing like myself, a man. At the next table were a group of Superior Beings in silk, talking. I couldn't help overhearing what they said--at least not when I held my head a little sideways.

They were speaking of the war.

" There wouldn't have been any war," said one, " if women were allowed to vote."

" No, indeed," chorused all the others.

The woman who had spoken looked about her defiantly. She wore spectacles and was of the type that we men used to call, in days when we still retained a little courage, an Awful Woman.

" When women have the vote," she went on "there will he no more war. The women will forbid it."

She gazed about her angrily. She evidently wanted to be heard. My friend and I hid ourselves behind a little fern and trembled.

But we listened. We were hoping that the Awful Woman would explain how war would be ended. She didn't. She went on to explain instead that when women have the vote there will be no more poverty, no disease, no germs, no cigarette smoking and nothing to drink but water.

It seemed a gloomy world.

" Come," whispered my friend, " this is no place for us. Let us go to the bar."

" No," I said, " leave me. I am going to write an article on the Woman Question. The time has come when it has got to be taken up and solved."

So I set myself to write it.

The woman problem may be stated somewhat after this fashion. The great majority of the women of to-day find themselves without any means of support of their own. I refer of course to the civilised white women. The gay savage in her jungle, attired in a cocoanut leaf, armed with a club and adorned with the neck of a soda-water bottle, is all right. Trouble hasn't reached her yet. Like all savages, she has a far better time--more varied, more interesting, more worthy of a human being--than falls to the lot of the rank and file of civilised men and women. Very few of us recognise this great truth. We have a mean little vanity over our civilisation. We are touchy about it. We do not realise that so far we have done little but increase the burden of work and multiply the means of death. But for the hope of better things to come, our civilisation would not seem worth while.

But this is a digression. Let us go back. The great majority of women have no means of support of their own. This is true also of men. But the men can acquire means of support. They can hire themselves out and work. Better still, by the industrious process of intrigue rightly called " busyness," or business, they may presently get hold of enough of other people's things to live without working. Or again, men can, with a fair prospect of success, enter the criminal class, either in its lower ranks as a housebreaker, or in its upper ranks, through politics. Take it all in

all a man has a certain chance to get along in life.

A woman, on the other hand, has little or none. The world's work is open to her, but she cannot do it. She lacks the physical strength for laying bricks or digging coal. If put to work on a steel beam a hundred feet above the ground, she would fall off. For the pursuit of business her head is all wrong. Figures confuse her. She lacks sustained attention and in point of morals the average woman is, even for business, too crooked.

This last point is one that will merit a little emphasis. Men are queer creatures. They are able to set up a code of rules or a standard, often quite an artificial one and stick to it. They have acquired the art of playing the game. Eleven men can put on white flannel trousers and call themselves a cricket team, on which an entirely new set of obligations, almost a new set of personalities, are wrapped about them. Women could never be a team of anything.

So it is in business. Men are able to maintain a sort of rough-and-ready code which prescribes the particular amount of cheating that a man may do under the rules. This is called business honesty, and many men adhere to it with dog-like tenacity, growing old in it, till it is stamped on their grizzled faces, visibly. They can feel it inside them like a virtue. So much will they cheat and no more. Hence men are able to trust one another, knowing the exact degree of dishonesty they are entitled to expect.

With women it is entirely different. They bring to business an unimpaired vision. They see it as it is. It would be impossible to trust them. They refuse to play fair.

Thus it comes about that woman is excluded, to a great extent, from the world's work and the world's pay.

There is nothing really open to her except one thing--marriage. She must find a man who will be willing, in return for her society, to give her half of everything he has, allow her the sole use of his house during the daytime, pay her taxes, and provide her clothes.

This was, formerly and for many centuries, not such a bad solution of the question. The women did fairly well out of it. It was the habit to marry early and often. The " house and home " was an important place. The great majority of people, high and low, lived on the land. The work of the wife and the work of the husband ran closely together. The two were complementary and fitted into one another. A woman who had to superintend the baking of bread and the brewing of beer, the spinning of yarn and the weaving of clothes, could not complain that her life was incomplete.

Then came the modern age, beginning let us say about a hundred and fifty years ago. The distinguishing marks of it have been machinery and the modern city. The age of invention swept the people off the land. It herded them into factories, creating out of each man a poor miserable atom divorced from hereditary ties, with no rights, no duties, and no place in the world except what his wages contract may confer on him. Every man for himself, and sink or swim, became the order of the day. It was nicknamed " industrial freedom." The world's production increased enormously. It is doubtful if the poor profited much. They obtained the modern city--full of light and noise and excitement, lively with crime and gay with politics--and the free school where they learned to read and write, by which means they might hold a mirror to their poverty and take a good look at it. They lost the quiet of the country-side, the murmur of the brook and the inspiration of the open sky. These are unconscious things, but the peasant who has been reared among them, for all his unconsciousness, pines and dies without them. It is doubtful if the poor have gained. The chaw-bacon rustic who trimmed a hedge in the reign of George I, compared well with the pale slum-rat of the reign of George V.

But if the machine age has profoundly altered the position of the working man, it has done still more with woman. It has dispossessed her. Her work has been taken away. The machine does it. It makes the clothes and brews the

beer. The roar of the vacuum cleaner has hushed the sound of the broom. The proud proportions of the old-time cook are dwindled to the slim outline of the gas- stove expert operating on a beefsteak with the aid of a thermometer. And at the close of day the machine, wound with a little key, sings the modern infant to its sleep, with the faultless lullaby of the Victrola. The home has passed, or at least is passing out of existence. In place of it is the " apartment "--an incomplete thing, a mere part of something, where children are an intrusion, where hospitality is done through a caterer, and where Christmas is only the twenty-fifth of December.

All this the machine age did for woman. For a time she suffered--the one thing she had learned, in the course of centuries, to do with admirable fitness. With each succeeding decade of the modern age things grew worse instead of better. The age for marriage shifted. A wife instead of being a helpmate had become a burden that must be carried. It was no longer true that two could live on less than one. The prudent youth waited till he could " afford " a wife. Love itself grew timid. Little Cupid exchanged his bow and arrow for a book on arithmetic and studied money sums. The schoolgirl who flew to Gretna Green [3] in a green and yellow cabriolet beside a peach-faced youth-- angrily pursued by an ancient father of thirty-eight --all this drifted into the pictures of the past, romantic but quite impossible.

Thus the unmarried woman, a quite distinct thing from the " old maid " of ancient times, came into existence, and multiplied and increased till there were millions of her.

Then there rose up in our own time, or within call of it, a deliverer. It was the Awful Woman with the Spectacles, and the doctrine that she preached was Woman's Rights. She came as a new thing, a hatchet in her hand, breaking glass. But in reality she was no new thing at all, and had her lineal descent in history from age to age. The Romans knew her as a sibyl and shuddered at her. The Middle Ages called her a witch and burnt her. The ancient law of England named her a scold and ducked her in a pond. But the men of the modern age, living indoors and losing something of their ruder fibre, grew afraid of her. The Awful Woman --meddlesome, vociferous, intrusive--came into her own.

Her softer sisters followed her. She became the leader of her sex. " Things are all wrong," she screamed, " with the status of women." Therein she was quite right. " The remedy for it all," she howled, " is to make women ' free,' to give women the vote. When once women are ' free ' everything will be all right." Therein the woman with the spectacles was, and is, utterly wrong.

The women's vote, when they get it, will leave women much as they were before.

Let it be admitted quite frankly that women are going to get the vote. Within a very short time all over the British Isles and North America-- in the States and the nine provinces of Canada-- woman suffrage will soon be an accomplished fact. It is a coming event which casts its shadow, or its illumination, in front of it. The woman's vote and total prohibition are two things that are moving across the map with gigantic strides. Whether they are good or bad things is another question. They are coming. As for the women's vote, it has largely come. And as for prohibition, it is going to be recorded as one of the results of the European War, foreseen by nobody. When the King of England decided that the way in which he could best help the country was by giving up drinking, the admission was fatal. It will stand as one of the landmarks of British history comparable only to such things as the signing of the Magna Charta by King John, or the serving out of rum and water instead of pure rum in the British Navy under George III.

So the woman's vote and prohibition are coming. A few rare spots--such as Louisiana, and the City of New York-- will remain and offer here and there a wet oasis in the desert of dry virtue. Even that cannot endure. Before many years are past, all over this continent women with a vote and men without a drink will stand looking at one another and wondering, what next ?

For when the vote is reached the woman question will not be solved but only begun. In and of itself, a vote is nothing. It neither warms the skin nor fills the stomach. Very often the privilege of a vote confers nothing but the right to express one's opinion as to which of two crooks is the crookeder.

But after the women have obtained the vote the question is, what are they going to do with it ? The answer is, nothing, or at any rate nothing that men would not do without them. Their only visible use of it will be to elect men into office, Fortunately for us all they will not elect women. Here and there perhaps at the outset, it will be done as the result of a sort of spite, a kind of sex antagonism bred by the controversy itself. But, speaking broadly, the women's vote will not be used to elect women to office. Women do not think enough of one another to do that. If they want a lawyer they consult a man, and those who can afford it have their clothes made by men, and their cooking done by a chef. As for their money, no woman would entrust that to another woman's keeping. They are far too wise for that.

So the woman's vote will not result in the setting up of female prime ministers and of parliaments in which the occupants of the treasury bench cast languishing eyes across at the flushed faces of the opposition. From the utter ruin involved in such an attempt at mixed government, the women themselves will save us. They will elect men. They may even pick some good ones. It is a nice question and will stand thinking about.

But what else, or what further can they do, by means of their vote and their representatives to " emancipate " and " liberate " their sex ?

Many feminists would tell us at once that if women had the vote they would, first and foremost, throw everything open to women on the same terms as men. Whole speeches are made on this point, and a fine fury thrown into it, often very beautiful to behold.

The entire idea is a delusion. Practically all of the world's work is open to women now, wide open. *The only trouble is that they can't do it.* There is nothing to prevent a woman from managing a bank, or organising a company, or running a department store, or floating a merger, or building a railway-- except the simple fact that she can't. Here and there an odd woman does such things, but she is only the exception that proves the rule. Such women are merely--and here I am speaking in the most decorous biological sense--" sports." The ordinary woman cannot do the ordinary man's work. She never has and never will. The reasons why she can't are so many, that is, she " can't " in so many different ways, that it is not worth while to try to name them.

Here and there it is true there are things closed to women, not by their own inability but by the law. This is a gross injustice. There is no defence for it. The province in which I live, for example, refuses to allow women to practise as lawyers. This is wrong. Women have just as good a right to fail at being lawyers as they have at anything else. But even if all these legal disabilities, where they exist, were removed (as they will be under a woman's vote) the difference to women at large will be infinitesimal. A few gifted " sports " will earn a handsome livelihood, but the woman question in the larger sense will not move one inch nearer to solution.

The feminists, in fact, are haunted by the idea that it is possible for the average woman to have a life patterned after that of the ordinary man. They imagine her as having a career, a profession, a vocation--something which will be her " life work "--just as selling coal is the life work of the coal merchant.

If this were so, the whole question would be solved. Women and men would become equal and independent. It is thus indeed that the feminist sees them, through the roseate mist created by imagination. Husband and wife appear as a couple of honourable partners who share a house together. Each is off to business in the morning. The husband is, let us say, a stockbroker: the wife manufactures iron and steel. The wife is a Liberal, the husband a Conservative. At their dinner they have animated discussion over the tariff till it is time for them to go to their

clubs.

These two impossible creatures haunt the brain of the feminist and disport them in the pages of the up-to-date novel;

The whole thing is mere fiction. It is quite impossible for women--the average and ordinary women--to go in for having a career. Nature has forbidden it. The average woman must necessarily have--I can only give the figures roughly--about three and a quarter children. She must replace in the population herself and her husband with something over to allow for the people who never marry and for the children that do not reach maturity. If she fails to do this the population comes to an end. Any scheme of social life must allow for these three and a quarter children and for the years of care that must be devoted to them. The vacuum cleaner can take the place of the housewife. It cannot replace the mother. No man ever said his prayers at the knees of a vacuum cleaner, or drew his first lessons in manliness and worth from the sweet old-fashioned stories that a vacuum cleaner told. Feminists of the enraged kind may talk as they will of the paid attendant and the expert baby-minder. Fiddlesticks ! These things are a mere supplement, useful enough but as far away from the realities of motherhood as the vacuum cleaner itself. But the point is one that need not be laboured. Sensible people understand it as soon as said. With fools it is not worth while to argue. But, it may be urged, there are, even as it is, a great many women who are working. The wages that they receive are extremely low. They are lower in most cases than the wages for the same, or similar work, done by men. Cannot the woman's vote at least remedy this ?

Here is something that deserves thinking about and that is far more nearly within the realm of what is actual and possible than wild talk of equalising and revolutionising the sexes.

It is quite true that women's work is underpaid. But this is only a part of a larger social injustice. The case stands somewhat as follows: Women get low wages because low wages are all that they are worth. Taken by itself this is a brutal and misleading statement. What is meant is this. The rewards and punishments in the unequal and ill-adjusted world in which we live are most unfair. The price of anything--sugar, potatoes, labour, or anything else--varies according to the supply and demand : if many people want it and few can supply it the price goes up: if the contrary it goes down. If enough cabbages are brought to market they will not bring a cent a piece, no matter what it cost to raise them.

On these terms each of us sells his labour. The lucky ones, with some rare gift, or trained capacity, or some ability that by mere circumstance happens to be in a great demand, can sell high. If there were only one night plumber in a great city, and the water pipes in a dozen homes of a dozen millionaires should burst all at once, he might charge a fee like that of a consulting lawyer.

On the other hand the unlucky sellers whose numbers are greater than the demand--the mass of common labourers--get a mere pittance. To say that their wage represents all that they produce is to argue in a circle. It is the mere pious quietism with which the well-to-do man who is afraid to think boldly on social questions drugs his conscience to sleep.

So it stands with women's wages. It is the sheer numbers of the women themselves, crowding after the few jobs that they can do, that brings them down. It has nothing to do with the attitude of men collectively towards women in the lump. It cannot be remedied by any form of woman's freedom. Its remedy is bound up with the general removal of social injustice, the general abolition of poverty, which is to prove the great question of the century before us. The question of women's wages is a part of the wages' question.

To my thinking the whole idea of making women free and equal (politically) with men as a way of improving their *status*, starts from a wrong basis and proceeds in a wrong direction.

Women need not more freedom but less. Social policy should proceed from the fundamental truth that women are and must be dependent. If they cannot be looked after by an individual (a thing on which they took their chance in earlier days) they must be looked after by the State. To expect a woman, for example, if left by the death of her husband with young children without support to maintain herself by her own efforts, is the most absurd mockery of freedom ever devised. Earlier generations of mankind, for all that they lived in the jungle and wore cocoanut leaves, knew nothing of it. To turn a girl loose in the world to work for herself, when there is no work to be had, or none at a price that will support life, is a social crime.

I am not attempting to show in what way the principle of woman's dependence should be worked out in detail in legislation. Nothing short of a book could deal with it. All that the present essay attempts is the presentation of a point of view.

I have noticed that my clerical friends, on the rare occasions when they are privileged to preach to me, have a way of closing their sermons by "leaving their congregations with a thought." It is a good scheme. It suggests an inexhaustible fund of reserve thought not yet tapped. It keeps the congregation, let us hope, in a state of trembling eagerness for the next instalment.

With the readers of this essay I do the same. I leave them with the thought that perhaps in the modern age it is not the increased freedom of woman that is needed but the increased recognition of their dependence. Let the reader remain agonised over that till I write something else.

SOURCE:
Leacock, Stephen. *Essays and Literary Studies*, The Mayflower Press, Plymouth, Great Britain, 1916.

Sends Husband To Jail To Aid Suffrage Cause -- The Milwaukee Journal, Sept. 21, 1912

. · 1 December 2003 · Archived copy · Original

The Milwaukee Journal – Sept 21, 1912

Mrs. Mark Wilks, whose husband is in jail because she refuses to pay her taxes, is credited with discovering a new and formidable weapon for the suffragettes. The suffragettes are generally women of property and they will follow Mrs. Wilkes example immediately, it is said.

The plan will work only in cases of husbands whose wives have independent incomes. Nor will it work in cases where the husbands pay taxes on their wives' incomes. Some husbands, like Wilks, haven't enough money to pay their wives taxes. Suffragette husbands who can pay are counted on to refuse to do so. Thus will a large portion of the Englishmen with suffragette wives be in jail shortly.

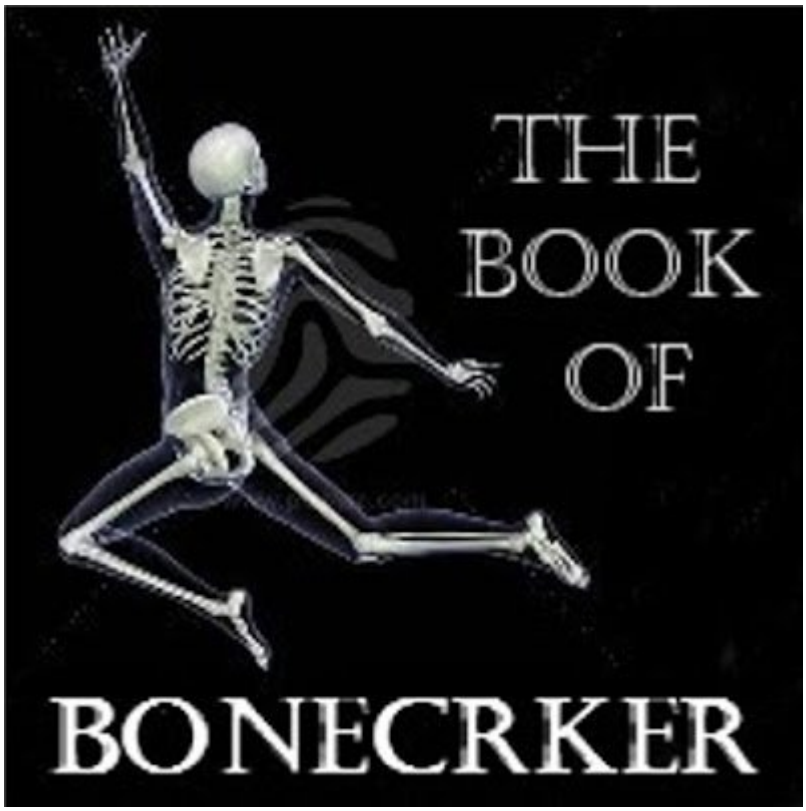
Under the married women property act a husband has no jurisdiction over his wife's property and income. Under the income tax he is responsible for her taxes. If the taxes are not paid, the husband, not the wife, is imprisoned. Mrs. Wilks refused to pay her income tax - $185 - and her husband was locked up. He will spend the rest of his life in prison unless his wife pays or the law is changed. When at liberty he is a teacher in Clapton.

See Coverture

The Book of Bonecrker - Table of Contents

. · 1 January 2004 · Archived copy · Original

.



.

Bonecrker #1 - Abusive Behaviour

Bonecrker #2 - Local vs. Foreign Women

Bonecrker #3 - Shaming Language

Bonecrker #4 - Immature or Evil?

Bonecrker #5 - Women Choosing Losers

Bonecrker #6 - Women Choosing Extinction

Bonecrker #7 - PMS

Bonecrker #8 - Humanity Transmitted Through Generations

Bonecrker #9 - Boycott Those Who Disrespect Men

Bonecrker #10 - Women Choosing Scum

Bonecrker #11 - Women & Racism

Bonecrker #12 - The Most Feminacentrist Statement of the 20th Century

.

Bonecrker #13 - DV Myths = Cold War

Bonecrker #14 – Ritalin and Abusive Schools

Bonecrker #15 – Abusive Schools II

Bonecrker #16 – Women Love Assholes

Bonecrker #17 – Movies Desensitize Social Problems

Bonecrker #18 – Three Rules to Follow

Bonecrker #19 – Tattoos and Piercings

Bonecrker #20 – Rape Fantasies

Bonecrker #21 – Who Pays?

Bonecrker #22 – Choose Confidence

Bonecrker #23 – Bad Boys vs. Alphas

Bonecrker #24 – Social Proofing

Bonecrker #25 – On Asshole Game

Bonecrker #26 – Fatherless-ness = Fucked-up-ness

Bonecrker #27 – Women Want Sex More Than Men

Bonecrker #28 – Women Ignoring Good Men and Choosing Thugs/Losers

Bonecrker #29 - Passive Aggression Related to the Female Orgasm

Bonecrker #30 – Desperate Non-Housewives

Bonecrker #31 – Women are Sick

Bonecrker #32 - Women Are Not Able To Get Sex On Demand

Bonecrker #33 – Women's Lack of Standards

Bonecrker #34 – Online Dating – Not!

Bonecrker #35 – You Mean Nothing to a Woman Until You Have Sex

Bonecrker #36 – Just Say No to Divorced Women

Bonecrker #37 - Gifts

Bonecrker #38 – You Mean Nothing Until You Have Sex II

Bonecrker #39 – Fat Bottom Girls

Bonecrker #40 - Relationship Phases

Bonecrker #41 - Finding the Small Pool of Interested Women

Bonecrker #42 - Lesbians and Gay Men

Bonecrker #43 - Women Behave Like Beavis and Butthead

Bonecrker #44 - Women Have Contradictory Love

Bonecrker #45 - Niceguys

Bonecrker #46 – Feminism Turns Women into Mere Sex Objects

Bonecrker #47 – Living in La-La Land

Bonecrker #48 – Sexes Approaching Eachother

Bonecrker #49 – Shit Tests vs. Psychotic Raving Lunatic Tests

Bonecrker #50 – Escalating With Women

Bonecrker #51 – Don't Argue With Women

Bonecrker #52 - Man-Hating Dykes

Bonecrker #53 – Online Dating is a Scam

Bonecrker #54 – Women Should Cultivate That Which Typically Is A Virtue

Bonecrker #55 - Dates

Bonecrker #56 – Giving Stuff to Women Leads to Unreasonable Behaviour

Bonecrker #57 – Approaching Fat/Ugly Chicks is Harmful to Your Self Esteem

Bonecrker #58 – Women are Narcissistic and Self-Absorbed

Bonecrker #59 – Four Kinds of Women Which Are More Psycho than the Others

Bonecrker #60 – A Man Must Strive to Prevent Women from Having the Smallest Shred of Power Over Him

Bonecrker #61 – There is No Pattern to a Woman's Attraction

Bonecrker #62 – You Must Be A Loser

Bonecrker #63 – Most People Who Work in Community Mental Health are Insane

Bonecrker #64 – On Players

Bonecrker #65 – The Repeating Patterns of Women Who Cry Rape

Bonecrker #66 – Singles Events

Bonecrker #67 – No Woman is “Out of Your League”

Bonecrker #68 – Two Things That Men Need to Know About Domestic Violence

Bonecrker #69 – That First Date at Your Place

Bonecrker #70 – She Expects It To Be This Way or She Won’t Respond To You

Bonecrcker #71 – Not All Women Are Like That (NAWALT)

Bonecrker #72 – Truth is Harsh

Bonecrker #73 - There Really Are Only Two Safe Subjects To Talk With Women About

Bonecrker #74 – All Married Women Are Available

Bonecrker #75 - Most Women Don’t Want a Man Who Isn’t Choosy

Bonecrker #76 – Most Women Are In Relationships That Aren’t Fun

Bonecrcker #77 – Just Say No to Women with Kids

Bonecrcker #78 – Women are Lying About Wanting to be Empowered

Bonecrcker #79 - Prostitution

Bonecrcker #80 – Binge and Purge

Bonecrcker #81 – You Cannot Change Women

Bonecrcker #82 – Women in Power

Bonecrcker #83 – Women Go to Clubs to be Seen and Cause Trouble

Bonecrcker #84 – Women Going for Evil Losers

Bonecrcker #85 – The Bible is Anti-Woman?

Bonecrcker #86 – It’s Very Difficult To Come To Terms With How Fast An Important Relationship Evaporates

Bonecrcker #87 – Abuse Is A Game You Can't Win

Bonecrcker #88 – The Moment You Ask Women for Something, Your Value Plummets

Bonecrcker #89 - Identifying Women Who Are Wasting Your Time

Bonecrcker #90 – There Is No Point In Approaching Any Woman Who Doesn't Look At You And Go "Yum"

Bonecrcker #91 – Could She Just Walk Out Of Your Life?

Bonecrcker #92 – The Problem With Whores

Bonecrcker #93 – She's Lying

Bonecrcker #94 – Evil, Not Power, Is The Defining Attribute Of Women's Attraction To Men

Bonecrcker #95 – No, no, no, no, No, NO!

Bonecrcker #96 – Celibacy Doesn't Equal Immunity

Bonecrcker #97 - The #1 Mistake Most Men Make With Women Is… Talking to Them

Bonecrcker #98 – Are Women Children or Adults?

.

Bonecrcker #99 – Living Together is a Scam

Bonecrcker #100 – The Problem with Pre-Nups

Bonecrcker #101 – Why You Must Never Give a Woman Any Money

Bonecrcker #102 – What Matters is the Amount of Power and Choice You Have in a Relationship

Bonecrcker #103 – Raising Your Sexual Status

Bonecrcker #104 – Sexual Status is Similar to Employment Status

Bonecrcker #105 - Stalkers

Bonecrcker #106 – Captain Free Therapist

Bonecrcker #107 – Feminism is a Purposefully Destructive Ideology within a Larger Destructive Group

Bonecrcker #108 – Feminism Pushes the Whore/Customer Model

Bonecrcker #109 – The Benefits of Boys-Only Schools

Bonecrcker #110 – The Problem With Discussing Things With Women

Bonecrcker #111 – Gaining Power With Women

Bonecrcker #112 – Who Cares What Women Are Thinking?

Bonecrcker #113 – Everything Out of a Woman's Mouth is a Lie

Bonecrcker #114 – To All The Girls I've Loved Before

Bonecrcker #115 – Women Go To Singles Events To Be Seen, Not To Pick Up Men

Bonecrcker #116 – Can I Ask You A Quick Question? You Married?

Bonecrcker #117 – Would You Strip Down In A Room With A Crack Addict?

Bonecrcker #118 – Women Who Marry Scumbags

Bonecrcker #119 – Sleeping With Single Moms and Cohabitating

Bonecrcker #120 – Women Pairing Up With Black Men Is Almost Always Based On Racism

Bonecrcker #121 – Women Only Have What Rights Men Give Them

Bonecrcker #122 – The Advantage The Big City Has Over The Small Town

Bonecrcker #123 – One of the Most Important Reasons to Have More Than One Woman at Once

Bonecrcker #124 – Women on Online Personals Are Just Wasting Your Time

Bonecrcker #125 – The Four Problems With Serial Monogamy

Bonecrcker #126 – A Woman's Need To Talk Is One Of The Key Methods Of Manipulating Them

Bonecrcker #127 – Timing is Important

Bonecrcker #128 – Women as "Friends"

Bonecrcker #129 – Eye Contact

Bonecrcker #130 – Never Allow a Woman to Call You a Friend Until You Have Had Sex at Least Once

Bonecrcker #131 – You Might As Well Be An Unemployed Loser Living In A Van Down By The River

Bonecrcker #132 – Finding and Approaching Women

Bonecrcker #133 – Don't Date Women

Bonecrcker #134 – Choosing Not To Marry Is Much More Involved Than Just Saying "Hey, I Don't Want To Be Married."

Bonecrcker #135 – With Gay Marriage Legal, Gays Might Stop Getting Into Marriages That Are a Lie

Bonecrcker #136 – Not All That Opposed To Gay Marriage

Bonecrcker #137 – Be a Lover, Not a Provider

Bonecrcker #138 – Sexist! Offensive!

Bonecrcker #139 – Religious Women and Projection

Bonecrcker #140 – Lesbian Women

Bonecrcker #141 – If You Don't Have Sex On The First Date, Your Chances Of Having Sex With Her At All Are Slim

Bonecrcker #142 – Buffy & Xena

Bonecrcker #143 – Hold Out The Lure Of Validation… But Don't Give It To Them

Bonecrcker #144 – Why Women Are Attracted To Bad Men & Thugs

Bonecrcker #145 – Feminism Causes Rape

Bonecrcker #146 – No Cover Charge For The Ladies

Bonecrcker #147 – The Dishonesty At N.O.W.

Bonecrcker #148 – Women Who Want To Cheat With You

Bonecrcker #149 – Women Don't Actually Have Personality Disorders – They Have Asshole-ism

Bonecrcker #150 – Women With Past Abusive Partners

Bonecrcker #151 – The Woman Who Is The Exception Phenomena

Bonecrcker #152 – The Predatory Female

Bonecrcker #153 – People Can Choose Anything They Want To… But They Can't Choose The Consequences

Bonecrcker #154 – Women Are Bitches To Nice Girls

Bonecrcker #155 – Types of Bad Advice

Bonecrcker #156 – Friends With Benefits

Bonecrcker #157 – Eating Disorders

Bonecrcker #158 – Part of Breaking-Up is About the Drama

Bonecrcker #159 – Men Who Sleep On The Couch

Bonecrcker #160 – Good Job On The Stats!

Bonecrcker #161 – The Old “Fat But Working On It” Line

Bonecrcker #162 – Women’s “Requirements” in a Man

Bonecrcker #163 – A “Real Man” Wouldn’t Shun a Woman with Kids

Bonecrcker #164 – The Media Is Being Used Against Us

Bonecrcker #165 – “The Problem” Is So Pervasive That It Is Difficult To Avoid

Bonecrcker #166 – Seeking After Money Is Not An Effective Means Of Getting Women

Bonecrcker #167 – Advice For Women On Inviting Guys To Approach You

Bonecrcker #168 – You Can’t Assume You Are Dealing With Nice, Normal, Rational, Loving People

Bonecrcker #169 – America Is Not A Socialist Country?

Bonecrcker #170 – Normal Looking Girls Get Hit On More Than Hot Looking Women

Bonecrcker #171 – The Problem Isn’t the Body, It’s the Mind

Bonecrcker #172 – Social Proofing Has Negative Survival Value For Women

Bonecrcker #173 – Questions For The Bonecrcker

Bonecrcker #174 – The Measure Of A Person’s Worth Is Their Actions

Bonecrcker #175 – Do Women Really Choose Men, Or Do Men Choose Women?

Bonecrcker #176 – Women Making More Money Than Their Husbands

Bonecrcker #177 – Responsibility And Power Go Hand In Hand

Bonecrcker #178 – Love Is A Verb

Bonecrcker #179 – Subversive Teachers

Bonecrcker #180 - Sarcasm

Bonecrcker #181 - Women Don’t Hate Men, But They Don’t Love Them Either

Bonecrcker #182 – Women Want Strong Emotions But Don’t Care If Those Emotions Are Negative

Bonecrcker #183 – Ladder Theory

Bonecrker #2 - Local vs. Foreign Women

. · 2 January 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Men and women are two sides of the same coin. Without each other, there can be no fulfillment and no peace of mind. Together, there is *life*. This is the way it has been since the very beginning. It is an active thing, not a passive one. It's not enough for the people to just show up in each others lives. Each of you needs to actively love the other.

Many American men are willing to do this. Almost *all* American women are ***not***. To make matters worse, these women do not value the men who are willing to love them. Instead, they value the men who couldn't give a shit about anything. He gets laid constantly and gives nothing to anyone (even himself). Since this type of man is good for nothing and is often a criminal, the last thing he is interested in or is capable of is taking care of a woman or a family. Women are also like this themselves, but pretend they are not. That pretending often extends towards making a phoney marriage and having several children she has no intention of putting any effort into raising. Most of the time, the *point* of the marriage is to manipulate the system into fleecing a good man of all his possessions.....rinse, repeat, until she gets too old.

This is *not* normal. For whatever reason, it is a problem endemic to westernized countries but is worst in the US, where our laws seriously enable these behaviours.

What many American men are figuring out though is they don't have to put up with this. By understanding the problem and its various aspects and, most importantly, the actual depth of the problem, he can avoid most of it, even fight back. The biggest obstacle though, is he is incomplete without a legitimate love in his life. American women use this fact as their greatest source of sinister manipulation. They will dangle the image of this in front of you constantly but never, ever give it to you. The reason is simple: they can't. Because they can't, they are completely unacceptable as anything but a casual sexual fling. But one that is constantly trying to do you harm, requiring extreme vigilance and protective measures. Hopping from one loser to the next, in the vain hope that the next one might not be like this is a depressing way to live. Rather than find a rare jewel, most men simply give up after a while and retire from "the game".

Most men don't know that this is abnormal. They think *all* women are like this and have always been this way. That's a dirty lie. A lie that women in this country foster in an attempt to keep men from looking around. It turns

out, that things were never like this for our grandfathers and great grandfathers. It's a *recent* problem. More importantly, it's a localized one.

In large chunks of the world, women aren't like this. They are the way they are supposed to be. If you bond with one and then love them, they will love you back. Although this is only the bare *minimum* needed for a good marriage and a good life, it changes things *dramatically*.

This means that it is a good idea to date a number of women from these places. Because you *will* find a jewel there eventually. No matter what, you will find a large pool of women who are sincere in their attempts to be with you. Some of these women will be sexually promiscuous. Some of them will be nuns. Most will be somewhere in between. Luckily, sincerely loving women will be common, no matter what she is like elsewise.....because *it's a seperate issue*. If you want a nun or a tart, a schoolteacher, a welfare mom or a doctor, you will find someone sincere. Since you will also find the occassional evil person mixed in, you must learn to tell the difference. But the odds are stacked in your favour.

That just doesn't exist in the US anymore (but it was once the rule, not the exception).

.

.

Previous Bonecrker Index Next

Bonecrker #1 - Abusive Behaviour

. · 2 January 2004 · Archived copy · Original

The struggle for dominance is a natural and normal part of human sexuality. There was this very funny joke on *Star Trek the Next Generation*, where Worf makes a comment that Klingon women like to throw heavy objects (with this introverted, lustful expression). What makes this joke funny is that both men and women in lust, yell, hit each other, throw things around and say nasty things to each other. Passion tends to leap out at odd times into unpredictable behaviour. This is the animal part of us refusing to be caged anymore. People in love fight *a lot.*

But abuse is something different. It is a weak, evil person attempting to make themselves feel better by inflicting suffering on another. It has sadistic and masochistic qualities. The people who do it will *only* do it if it is safe to do so. Men who do this tend to get drunk/high and then make up an excuse to beat their wives (substance abuse is a big, BIG part of abuse). Women tend to engage in protracted campaigns to get their partner to abuse them. The most common form of this is to be as disrespectful of the man as possible, especially in public. Physical abuse of the man is also very common. They keep it up until the man hits them. Then, they try to condition the man to hit them on a regular basis. Most importantly, they actively select *only* men that will beat them. They are very good at this. If they accidentally choose a man who won't ever beat them, they will make his life *miserable* and then abandon him.

The best, most effective way to handle abuse, for both men and women, is to nip it in the bud. Absolutely refuse to even give the time of day to anyone who even gives you the slightest possible suspicion they are abusive. At even the slightest hint of abuse, break things off immediately and refuse to ever talk to that person again.....no exceptions. This is important because abusers will test the waters with you by seeing if you will take them back. Make sure they find out that you won't.

This doesn't mean you break up immediately with someone just because you had a fight though. You *will* fight bitterly all the time with anyone you have passion with. It's the sadistic and masochistic qualities you are looking out for. Drug/alcohol use is a big red flag, as is any sort of criminal past. Especially look for any sort of past abusive relationships. Women that have been beaten by partners and/or raped, are big no-no's. It's extremely un-PC to say so, but most women who have been raped by someone they know went out of their way to be with a high-risk man. Again, drugs and alcohol are a big factor. You definitely don't want a woman like that. She will torture you incessantly for not being a rapist scumbag yourself.

It should go without saying that women who engage in child abuse/neglect deserve to be pariahs....accommodate them. They are completely unsuitable for even the most casual sexual fling.

Any woman that is any way involved with the sex for money industry (stripping, porn, prostitution, and politics) has 90% of her screws loose. This industry is all about letting someone beat them in exchange for cocaine, meth and other speedy drugs. Run very fast in the opposite direction.

Warning.....the cycle of abuse tends to make both partners obsessed with each other. Obsession is caused by all situations where pain and pleasure are randomly doled out (just look at gambling, lol). If you fail to nip these relationships in the bud, don't be surprised if you discover you can't later give them up, no matter how bad it gets. Also, don't be surprised if your partner leaps out at you with a butcher knife from the bushes some dark night. Having evil people obsessed with you is a very bad thing.

.

Bonecrker Index Next

.

.

Related:

Bonecrcker #13 – DV Myths = Cold War

Bonecrcker #68 – Two Things That Men Need To Know About Domestic Violence

.

Bonecrcker #87 – Abuse Is A Game You Can't Win

.

Bonecrcker #105 - Stalkers

Bonecrcker #180 - Sarcasm

Bonecrker #3 - Shaming Language

. · 3 January 2004 · Archived copy · Original

One liners like "get a life" are attempts at manipulation. Women use them constantly. What they mean by "life" is whatever behaviours, attitudes and way of living (in this case, as a servile worm) they want. The implied message is that whatever you are doing instead of this is weak, wrong, bad, unworthy and worthless. If they actually came right out and said what everyone already knows they mean....."Stop behaving independently and demanding better treatment and certainly don't make me compete against better women, because that's wrong to do and it somehow makes you a weak and worthless person".....they might get a little bit of resistance.

So, instead, they say it in a manipulative manner. The real message is in what's implied and the knee-jerk emotional response they are trying to evoke. Like all manipulations, it relies on you being fooled by it. 90% of all women's power is based on similar illusions. If men ever wised up, en masse.....they'd be in for some serious trouble.

.

Previous Bonecrker Index Next

.

.

Further Reading:

.

Bonecrker #62 – You Must Be A Loser

.

.

"One of the most effective ways I have seen women using to gain power over men is by shaming men, using their tongue to put men down, to shame their sexuality, to shame their success." -- Char Tosi, Founder of Women Within in *Good Will Towards Men* by Jack Kammer

.

.

Fembot Bingo!

Ugly	Small dick	Can't get laid
Beaten by mum	Beaten by dad	Impotent
Probably gay	Definately gay	Totally gay
Recently dumped	Womyn hater!!1!	Sex offender
Live in mum's cellar	Compulsive wanker	Spotty
Afraid of women	Intimidated by "strong women"	Did I mention u r teh gay!?!

.

The Catalogue of Anti-Male Shaming Tactics

.

"Shaming tactics." This phrase is familiar to many Men's Rights Activists. It conjures up the histrionic behavior of female detractors who refuse to argue their points with logic. Yet women are not the only ones guilty of using shaming tactics against men. Male gynocentrists use them, too.

Shaming tactics are emotional devices meant to play on a man's insecurities and shut down debate. They are meant to elicit sympathy for women and to demonize men who ask hard questions. Most, if not all, shaming tactics are basically ad homimem attacks.

Anyway, it might be helpful to categorize the major shaming tactics that are used against men whenever a discussion arises about feminism, men's issues, romance, etc. The following list contains descriptions of shaming tactics, some examples of quotes employing the tactics, and even color-coded aliases for mnemonic purposes. Enjoy.

.

Charge of Irascibility (Code Red)

.

Discussion: The target is accused of having anger management issues. Whatever negative emotions he has are assumed to be unjustifiable. Examples:

- "You're bitter!"
- "You need to get over your anger at women."
- "You are so negative!"

Response: Anger is a legitimate emotion in the face of injustice. It is important to remember that passive acceptance of evil is not a virtue.

.

Charge of Cowardice (Code Yellow)

Discussion: The target is accused of having an unjustifiable fear of interaction with women. Examples:

- "You need to get over your fear."
- "Step up and take a chance like a man!"
- "You're afraid of a strong woman!"

Response: It is important to remember that there is a difference between bravery and stupidity. The only risks that reasonable people dare to take are **calculated** risks. One weighs the likely costs and benefits of said risks. As it is, some men are finding out that many women fail a cost-benefit analysis.

.

Charge of Hypersensitivity (Code Blue) - *The Crybaby Charge*

Discussion: The target is accused of being hysterical or exaggerating the problems of men (i.e., he is accused of playing "Chicken Little"). Examples:

- "Stop whining!"
- "Get over it!"
- "Suck it up like a man!"
- "You guys don't have it as nearly as bad as us women!"
- "You're just afraid of losing your male privileges."
- "Your fragile male ego ..."
- "Wow! You guys need to get a grip!"

Response: One who uses the Code Blue shaming tactic reveals a callous indifference to the humanity of men. It may be constructive to confront such an accuser and ask if a certain problem men face needs to be addressed or not ("yes" or "no"), however small it may be seem to be. If the accuser answers in the negative, it may constructive to ask why any man should care about the accuser's welfare since the favor will obviously not be returned. If the accuser claims to be unable to do anything about the said problem, one can ask the accuser why an attack is necessary against those who are doing something about it.

.

Charge of Puerility (Code Green) - *The Peter Pan Charge*

Discussion: The target is accused of being immature and/or irresponsible in some manner that reflects badly on his status as an adult male. Examples:

- "Grow up!"
- "You are so immature!"
- "Do you live with your mother?"
- "I'm not interested in boys. I'm interested in real men."
- "Men are shirking their God-given responsibility to marry and bear children."

Response: It should be remembered that one's sexual history, marital status, parental status, etc. are not reliable indicators of maturity and accountability. If they were, then we would not hear of white collar crime, divorce, teen sex, unplanned pregnancies, extramarital affairs, etc.

.

Charge of Endangerment (Code Orange) - *The Elevated Threat Charge*

Discussion: The target is accused of being a menace in some undefined manner. This charge may be coupled with some attempt to censor the target. Examples:

- "You guys are scary."

- "You make me feel afraid."

Response: It may be constructive to point out that only bigots and tyrants are afraid of having the truth expressed to them. One may also ask why some women think they can handle leadership roles if they are so threatened by a man's legitimate freedom of expression.

.

Charge of Rationalization (Code Purple) - *The Sour Grapes Charge*

Discussion: The target is accused of explaining away his own failures and/or dissatisfaction by blaming women for his problems. Example:

- "You are just bitter because you can't get laid."

Response: In this case, it must be asked if it really matters how one arrives at the truth. In other words, one may submit to the accuser, "What if the grapes **really are** sour?" At any rate, the Code Purple shaming tactic is an example of what is called "circumstantial ad hominem."

.

Charge of Fanaticism (Code Brown) - *The Brown Shirts Charge*

Discussion: The target is accused of subscribing to an intolerant, extremist ideology or of being devoted to an ignorant viewpoint. Examples:

- "You're one of those right-wing wackos."
- "You're an extremist"
- "You sound like the KKK."
- "... more anti-feminist zaniness"

Response: One should remember that the truth is not decided by the number of people subscribing to it. Whether or not certain ideas are "out of the mainstream" is besides the point. A correct conclusion is also not necessarily reached by embracing some middle ground between two opposing viewpoints (i.e., the logical fallacy of "False Compromise").

.

Charge of Invirility (Code Lavender)

Discussion: The target's sexual orientation or masculinity is called into question. Examples:

- "Are you gay?"
- "I need a real man, not a sissy."
- "You're such a wimp."

Response: Unless one is working for religious conservatives, it is usually of little consequence if a straight man leaves his accusers guessing about his sexual orientation.

.

Charge of Overgeneralization (Code Gray)

Discussion: The target is accused of making generalizations or supporting unwarranted stereotypes about women. Examples:

- "I'm not like that!"

- "Stop generalizing!"
- "That's a sexist stereotype!"

Response: One may point out that feminists and many other women make generalizations about men. Quotations from feminists, for example, can be easily obtained to prove this point. Also, one should note that pointing to a trend is not the same as overgeneralizing. Although not all women may have a certain characteristic, a significant amount of them might.

.

Charge of Misogyny (Code Black)

Discussion: The target is accused of displaying some form of unwarranted malice to a particular woman or to women in general. Examples:

- "You misogynist creep!"
- "Why do you hate women?"
- "Do you love your mother?"
- "You are insensitive to the plight of women."
- "You are mean-spirited."
- "You view women as doormats."
- "You want to roll back the rights of women!!"
- "You are going to make me cry."

Response: One may ask the accuser how does a pro-male agenda become inherently anti-female (especially since feminists often claim that gains for men and women are "not a zero-sum game"). One may also ask the accuser how do they account for women who agree with the target's viewpoints. The Code Black shaming tactic often integrates the logical fallacies of "argumentum ad misericordiam" (viz., argumentation based on pity for women) and/or "argumentum in terrorem" (viz., arousing fear about what the target wants to do to women).

.

Charge of Instability (Code White) - *The White Padded Room Charge*

Discussion: The target is accused of being emotionally or mentally unstable. Examples:

- "You're unstable."
- "You have issues."
- "You need therapy."
- "Weirdo!"

Response: In response to this attack, one may point to peer-reviewed literature and then ask the accuser if the target's mental and/or emotional condition can explain the existence of valid research on the matter.

.

Charge of Selfishness (Code Silver)

Discussion: This attack is self-explanatory. It is a common charge hurled at men who do not want to be bothered with romantic pursuits. Examples:

- "You are so materialistic."
- "You are so greedy."

Response: It may be beneficial to turn the accusation back on the one pressing the charge. For instance, one may

retort, "So you are saying I shouldn't spend my money on myself, but should instead spend it on a woman like you ---and you accuse me of being selfish?? Just what were you planning to do for me anyway?"

.

Charge of Superficiality (Code Gold) - *The All-That-Glitters Charge*

Discussion: The charge of superficiality is usually hurled at men with regard to their mating preferences. Examples:

- "If you didn't go after bimbos, then ..."
- "How can you be so shallow and turn down a single mother?"

Response: Average-looking women can be just as problematic in their behavior as beautiful, "high-maintanence" women. Regarding the shallowness of women, popular media furnishes plenty of examples where petty demands are made of men by females (viz., those notorious laundry lists of things a man should/should not do for his girlfriend or wife).

.

Charge of Unattractiveness (Code Tan) - *The Ugly Tan Charge*

Discussion: The target is accused of having no romantic potential as far as women are concerned. Examples:

- "I bet you are fat and ugly."
- "You can't get laid!"
- "Creep!"
- "Loser!"
- "Have you thought about the problem being you?"

Response: This is another example of "circumstantial ad hominem." The target's romantic potential ultimately does not reflect on the merit of his arguments.

.

Charge of Defeatism (Code Maroon)

Discussion: This shaming tactic is akin to the Charge of Irascibility and the Charge of Cowardice in that the accuser attacks the target's negative or guarded attitude about a situation. However, the focus is not so much on the target's anger or fear, but on the target's supposed attitude of resignation. Examples:

- "Stop being so negative."
- "You are so cynical."
- "If you refuse to have relationships with women, then you are admitting defeat."
- "C'mon! Men are doers, not quitters."

Response: The charge of defeatism can be diffused by explaining that one is merely being realistic about a situation. Also, one can point out that asking men to just accept their mistreatment at the hands of women and society is the real attitude that is defeatist. Many men have not lost their resolve; many have lost their patience.

.

Threat of Withheld Affection (Code Pink) - *The Pink Whip*

Discussion: The target is admonished that his viewpoints or behavior will cause women to reject him as a mate. Examples:

- "No woman will marry you with that attitude."
- "Creeps like you will never get laid!"

Response: This is an example of the logical fallacy "argumentum ad baculum" (the "appeal to force"). The accuser attempts to negate the validity of a position by pointing to some undesirable circumstance that will befall anyone who takes said position. Really, the only way to deal with the "Pink Whip" is to realize that a man's happiness and worth is not based on his romantic conquests (including marriage).

Bonecrker #4 - Immature or Evil?

. · 4 January 2004 · Archived copy · Original

I think it's dangerous to chock women's extremely fucked up behaviour to capriciousness, childishness and immaturity. These are innocent qualities you attribute to children that often make them endearing. You tolerate them. The crap that women do is much more akin to what criminals do.....a repeated pattern of victimization with testing before hand to see if it is safe. If you tolerate criminals, they see it as a green light....same with women. Children, on the other hand, with very rare exceptions, are intrinsically good. They need guidance, not suppression of evil instincts and behaviour. Children grow up healthy and wealthy and wise, with proper guidance. American women are completely unaffected by guidance.

To put it another way, American women are not walking astray. They are engaged in intentionally evil acts with full awareness of what they are doing. If it was the former, you would simply shepherd them to another, better way. Since it's the latter, your behaviour must be designed to severely limit your potential as a victim.

.

Previous Bonecrker Index Next

.

.

Related:

Bonecrcker #98 – Are Women Children or Adults?

Women and Children

Letter to His Son – by Lord Chesterfield, 1748

Bonecrker #5 - Women Choosing Losers

. · 5 January 2004 · Archived copy · Original

All women *say* they want a dominant, successful, high status man with enlightened values. It is extremely easy to identify where a man is in the pecking order; by his job, by his dress, by the way he talks and acts and by the way other men treat him. *Everyone* knows where a man stands.

This includes women, who could easily snap up a man like this who freely advertises if he is available or not.

The problem is that almost no women actually follow through with this behavior. Dominant, successful, high status men with enlightened values are regularly passed up for dangerous, weak, emotionally unstable drug dealers with bad BO and a rap sheet as long as my arm. The younger and more attractive a woman is, the more likely she is to ignore the good men and screw as many of the bad men as she can get her hands on. Not all women do this. Some screw as many fraternity brothers as they can handle a night, just as long as they are drunk/high and treat her like dirt. Any man who doesn't act this way is labelled a loser, no matter how high status or macho. It's hilarious, and deeply, deeply sick.

Then, when a woman reaches about age 25, she starts to hunt for a man who is both wealthy *and* weak willed. Both qualities are very important, because her sole purpose for hunting this man is to attach herself vampire-like onto him and drain him for all he is worth. They continue to screw bad men during the entire marriage. Strong willed men quickly say no to this crapola and move on to the next woman. After a while, they start to wonder if all women are vampires trying to trick them into a bad situation. Certainly they don't meet anyone who actually cares for him and sincerely wants to be his wife.

Many of our country's most powerful men are either unmarried, taken to the cleaners by divorce, or are stuck in a marriage that is an obvious lie, often making up for it with dishonourable behaviour. A perfect example of this is Bill Clinton. His wife is an obvious lesbian who only married him because he was going places and could further her own political ambitions (the pay off isn't always in money, lol).

I'm tempted to say that American women are unable to recognize signs of status, power and high quality in men. But it's not true. They know full well what the deal is and purposefully choose the weak, psychotic, scum of the earth until they want a meal ticket.

Real men are left without.

.

Previous Bonecrker Index Next

.

.

Related:

.

Bonecrcker #6 – Women Choosing Extinction

.

Bonecrcker #10 – Women Choosing Scum

.

Bonecrcker #84 – Women Going for Evil Losers

.

Bonecrcker #94 – Evil, Not Power, Is The Defining Attribute Of Women's Attraction To Men

Bonecrcker #118 – Women Who Marry Scumbags

Bonecrcker #144 – Why Women Are Attracted To Bad Men & Thugs

Bonecrker #6 - Women Choosing Extinction

. · 6 January 2004 · Archived copy · Original

I just downloaded the book, If Men Have All The Power, How Come Women Make The Rules? Excellent book, BTW. It's filled with all sorts of interesting information.

Here's a quote that got me to thinking (originally from The Woman That Never Evolved, by Sarah Blaffer Hardy):

"The central organizing principle of primate social life is competition between females and especially female lineages... Females should be, if anything, more competitive than males, not less, although the manner in which females compete may be less direct, less boisterous, and hence, more difficult to measure"

.

Normally, women compete fiercely amongst each other for men. Unlike animals, human children take a looooooong time to mature and our most powerful survival ability (our mind) takes significant effort to train and develop. Before the modern era, any woman stupid enough to take a weak, deviant man, who left after sex... died. At the very least, her child had slim to none survival value. Her lineage died out. Normally, women compete for the best men, that competition being intense when they are scarce. One thing they don't do is willingly have sex with an inappropriate man, unless there absolutely isn't anyone else. Men also compete for the best women. Or rather, for the status among our peers that attracts the best women. However, since we don't actually have to bear the children, that competition isn't as fierce. Survival of our line has less to do with who we choose and more to do with what we do. We (men) compete in who does things best. Women compete in who can get the best man. Men have the option of leaving. A woman who left usually died. That's the way it's always been and the way it should be.

.

But American women aren't normal. They have absolutely stopped competing for good men. They go out of their way to devalue them. They freely engage in behaviours that result in the extinction of their lineage. They leave. They refuse to raise their children. They engage in infidelity. They choose disposable partners based on deviant behavior. The reason why women seem to be so scarce is not because they have made themselves unavailable but because they have ceased having any interest whatsoever in extending their female lineage to the next generation. There is a natural consequence for that... extinction. The children of these women grow up powerless and feral, with increasingly lower status. Eventually, their lines will disappear.

The question we should be asking ourselves is, are we a valuable prize that would normally be fiercely competed over? If you are healthy, strong, successful, educated and have values that would promote the well being of a family, then that answer is yes. We have been lied to, repeatedly and in a systematic manner. What is interesting is what might happen if you left our abnormal women and went someplace where the women are desperately competing with eachother for the best men. Especially if most of the men who live there don't have these traits.

You might come away with a different opinion of where you are in the pecking order.

Food for thought.

.

Previous Bonecrker Index Next

.

.

Related:

.

Bonecrcker #5 – Women Choosing Losers

.

Bonecrcker #10 – Women Choosing Scum

Bonecrcker #28 – Women Ignoring Good Men and Choosing Thugs/Losers

Bonecrcker #33 - Women's Lack of Standards

.

Bonecrcker #84 – Women Going for Evil Losers

.

Bonecrcker #94 – Evil, Not Power, Is The Defining Attribute Of Women's Attraction Toward Evil Men

Bonecrcker #172 – Social Proofing Has Negative Survival Value For Women

Bonecrker #7 - PMS

. · 7 January 2004 · Archived copy · Original

PMS is one of those gigantic lies that is disguised by a grain of truth. American women have a diet that swings from cake, candy, cookies, ice cream, chocolate, cocaine and booze, on one hand... to subsisting on a single string bean for days at a time, on the other. Among many other things, this leaves your hormones completely out of whack. So when that time of the month comes around, they feel like shit. This is the grain of truth.

The lie that surrounds this grain of truth is that wild mood swings, hatred, and psychotic behavior go hand in hand with this. Yeah, women feel crappy because of the consequences of their foolish choices in life. But in no way does that lead to bad behavior. PMS is a myth... a myth that bad women try to use as an excuse for what they do.

The next time a woman tries to use PMS as an excuse for behaving badly, raise your eyebrows, look her straight in the eyes and say "So?"

.

Previous Bonecrker Index Next

.

.

Further Reading:

.

PMS – by BusterB

Bonecrker #8 - Humanity Transmitted Through Generations

. · 8 January 2004 · Archived copy · Original

.

Unfortunately for us, our behaviours aren't hard wired like those of many animals. Humans have free will. Most of what we are is transmitted from person to person when we raise children. All you need to do to know this is so, is to look at what happens when people refuse to raise their children (uncomfortably common). The children grow up feral. Most of the parts are there. But they aren't working right. Something of that child's basic humanity is missing. Sometimes, it is something quite large that is missing.

.

The point is, that John Grey (geee, could this guy be more of a closet homosexual trying to subvert marriage and family) crap about men and women being different, so most conflicts are caused by miscommunications, is a total *lie*. Yes, there are biological differences. They pale in comparison to the socialized differences. But, men and women were *designed* to be together. Our makeup, on all levels, is created in such a way that we fit together.

Before all this shit started to happen (somewhere around WWII is my best guess), men and women had been together relatively harmoniously for a looooooong time. Each chose the other based on the quality of person they were and worked *hard* to survive, thrive, and most importantly, refine what it means to be human and pass that on to the next generation.

That process has stopped cold. Although there were slight hints of it in our parents and our grandparents' generation, it's gone hog wild in our generation. The fact that men and women are different has absolutely nothing to do with the fact that they are "poisoning the well" of human goodness, en masse. They are denying our basic humanity. The results are everywhere to see in our society. The message is very clear; they only want men who will cooperate in this sick agenda.

.

Previous Bonecrker Index Next

.

Related:

Bonecrcker #153 – People Can Choose Anything They Want To… But They Can't Choose The Consequences

Bonecrker #9 - Boycott Those Who Disrespect Men

. · 9 January 2004 · Archived copy · Original

There is only one reason you see thinly veiled hatred everywhere in commercial media. The men who run that media have sold us out to pander to women. Way back in the beginning, it was simple, harmless fun designed to get a chuckle. Nobody had disrespect for men. That was the point. That's what made it funny.

But things have changed. Most women and many men have open hatred and contempt for men and our many accomplishments together and as individuals. It's not meant to be funny anymore. It's meant to be disrespectful.

There is, of course, only one real way to deal with this situation, and that's to hit these traitors where it hurts the most... in the wallet. Watch commercial media very carefully and boycott any product with advertising that shows hatred, contempt or disrespect toward men. This includes movies. You know what makes a movie a chick flick... open contempt, hatred and disrespect toward men. If some woman wants to go see a chick flick with you, tell her no and tell her why. Make it clear that you don't accept attitudes like that from her or from anyone else. If she tests you, dump her.

A very important part of this strategy is to never give a woman any money, ever, even if she is to go spend it on your behalf. Many men let the woman buy everything. Advertisers then use hatred, contempt, and disrespect towards men as a way to pander to these women who are making all the choices on which products to buy. It's very difficult to change the women so this is no longer an effective marketing strategy. But it is extremely easy to short circuit it... just don't give women any money and boycott products harmful to men. Eventually, they will go out of business.

.

Previous Bonecrker Index Next

.

Further Reading:

Bonecrcker #164 – The Media Is Being Used Against Us

EOTM: Boycott Manbashers

Bonecrker #10 - Women Choosing Scum

. · 10 January 2004 · Archived copy · Original

There are two reasons women go after scum... the one they tell themselves and the one that's true.

The one they tell themselves has to do with the archetype of redemption. Love redeems all things. To a woman, love redeeming a bad man proves the love is real (too bad their love ain't real, lol). Also, a man who treats everyone poorly but herself, must really love her. This is the biggest crock of bull-ony... but exploiting this sick, sad, self-deception will account for 90% of your free pussy if you live in the US.

Unfortunately, the *real* reason women dig bad/low quality men is they are bad/low quality themselves. These men have attitudes and behaviours that match their own.

Excitement is supposed to come from risk-taking behaviours that men like to engage in to have *fun*. But women find *bad* behavior exciting instead. It's normal for women to be attracted to men that like sky-diving, mountain climbing, and going off on adventures at the spur of the moment. It's *abnormal* for women to be attracted to men that like to beat women, have been in jail, and take drugs. But that's exactly what's going on today. All of the losers have all the women they can deal with (hehe, but evil people are bad for you....both ways), while all of the real men do without.

.

Previous Bonecrker Index Next

.

.

Related:

.

Bonecrcker #5 – Women Choosing Losers

.

Bonecrcker #6 – Women Choosing Extinction

Bonecrcker #16 – Women Love Assholes

.

Bonecrcker #84 – Women Going for Evil Losers

.

Bonecrcker #94 – Evil, Not Power, Is The Defining Attribute Of Women's Attraction Toward Evil Men

Bonecrcker #118 – Women Who Marry Scumbags

Bonecrcker #144 – Why Women Are Attracted To Bad Men & Thugs

Bonecrker #11 - Women & Racism

. · 11 January 2004 · Archived copy · Original

In my experience, racism plays a big part of what's going on with American women. Several times I have met women whose attraction to men is race based... the more negatively stereotyped, the better. Behind their back, they use racial slurs, even when talking about their partner. You talk to them and it becomes clear that they have strong racist views, usually negative. They are chasing bad men and the racist views colors these men as bad. So, they go after them. It's a complicated issue, and one that women will test you on to see if you will accept it from them.

For example, there was one stripper I knew. For awhile, she was sizing me up as a potential man. One day, out of the blue, she says this to me, "I've been with a lot of black boys." "Do you think less of me?" My answer to her at the time was, "Of course not."

But that was the wrong answer. My answer should have been yes. There are several reasons. First of all, she is testing me, not looking for reassurance of her worth. She wants to see if I will accept her in a devalued state. If the answer to that is yes, she loses interest (she did lol) and, at the same time, goes hog wild in the process of devaluing herself further. On the surface, she wants to know if I'm racist. But what she is really saying is she is racist, and a whore to boot. What's behind her statement is several years of screwing black men, but only from the criminal class of society. She did this in exchange for money and drugs. Certainly she would have no interest in a black man in a 3-piece suit and a law degree. Part of the manipulation has to do with what she means by "black boys." She means black men from the criminal class of society. But, phrasing it this way is a trap. If you say it devalues her, it seems like something racist (being with black guys devalues you) but, it's the having sex with men from the criminal class that devalues her. If you say no to this sort of behavior, it implies that you are racist. You'll see a lot of manipulation along these lines in society, especially with women. They want you to accept deviant behavior by associating it to minorities. Reject the behavior and they act as if you rejected the minority.

You will see this pattern repeatedly with American women... multiple minority partners, sometimes multiple children of mixed racial background. The big lie is that inter-racial couples are now accepted, so people feel free to get together with those they like. But the truth is that racism and fucked-upness are behind most of these relationships (white men with black women; seem to me to be the exception). Look for extreme racist views in one or both of the partners (should be the LAST thing in an inter-racial couple), a history of trading sex for money and

drugs, and multiple one night stands, often resulting in children. Like any good lie, there is always a grain of truth in the center to give it credibility. There are lots of legitimate inter-racial marriages. You can tell the legitimate ones by their stability, high degree of education of both partners, and successful career the man has.

Racist views of women are a part of what's going on.

.

Previous Bonecrker Index Next

.

.

Related:

.

Bonecrcker #5 – Women Choosing Losers

.

Bonecrcker #84 - Women Going For Evil Losers

.

Bonecrcker #94 – Evil, Not Power, Is The Defining Attribute Of Women's Attraction To Evil Men

.

Bonecrcker #120 – Women Pairing Up With Black Men Is Almost Always Based On Racism

Bonecrker #12 - The Most Feminacentrist Statement of the 20th Century

. · 12 January 2004 · Archived copy · Original

"Women have always been the primary victims of war. Women lose their husbands, their fathers, their sons in combat. Women often have to flee from the only homes they have ever known. Women are often the refugees from conflict and sometimes, more frequently in today's warfare victms. Women are often left with the responsibility, alone, of raising the children" -- Hillary Clinton at the First Ladies' Conference on Domestic Violence in San Salvador, El Salvador, November 17, 1998

You dead and maimed guys are so lucky!

This speech is incredibly insidious. On the surface it's about women suffering as the unseen victims of war (the grain of truth to this lie). But there is a hell of alot implied by the way she chose to say it.

1) Absolutely no mention of the men who died or were maimed in this war. The implication is that their suffering is separate from their women and isn't worth mentioning.

2) There is a very strong implication that women had nothing to do with a war. It was a needless thing (caused by the thoughtless actions of men) that harms them. Actually, most wars are fought to protect women. History is one long string of good men sacrificing themselves to protect their women and children from bad people.

3) She mentions refugees as if they are only composed of women.

4) She comes right out and says the women are the *primary* victims of war. This isn't true. The primary victims of war are all the people killed by bullets, bombs and other horrors. These are mostly men. Not only are women secondary victims of war, but there are a hell of a lot of men and children that are also secondary victims.

5) The only time the loss of men *is* mentioned is how their deaths affect the women emotionally, and more importantly, financially. The irony is completely lost on her. The women she is speaking to probably care much more that they lost someone they loved rather than someone who took care of them. Obviously, Clinton can't see that. It never occurs to her. I bet more than one woman at the conference had a strange look on her face, thinking, what the heck is this gringa talking about? Why is she talking about unimportant stuff? I lost my husband. I loved him!

Guys, this fool was/is looking to be our next president. If you think laws and politics enable women now, imagine what it would be like after 4 years with *her* at the helm.

.

.

Previous Bonecrker Index Next

.

.

Mother of Calamity – from “The Lamentations of Matheolus", 1295 AD

.

It's true that women are lazy, but they are always ready to do harm. An evil woman just gets worse, becoming even more evil and wicked. It would take far too long for me to tell you everything about them, so for brevity's sake I shan't. Woman is not wise in this respect, for in her eagerness to do harm she only brings about her own ruin. According to the law, as I understand it, woman is not rational, nor does her love reside deep in her heart, but is there on her gaze for everyone to see. She entrusts her honour openly to her eyes, yet they can't help but fail to protect it, since folly animates her gaze. With all her words, her chatter, and her talk, she could break a heart of glass; all her actions are stupid and foolish. Woman can do no good, indeed, goodness is destroyed and obliterated by her. Many a war is begun by women and many a murder committed throughout the world; castles are burned and ransacked and the poor made destitute. As every man and woman knows, there isn't one war in a thousand that isn't started by a woman and by her sowing of discord. She is the mother of all calamities; all evil and all madness stem from her. Her sting is more venomous than a snake's; there isn't anyone who has anything to do with her who doesn't live to regret it.

.

.

Further Reading:

.

A Sexist Commenter Sets Me Straight

.

Man Superior to Woman - Chapter Four

.

The All-Encompassing Power Of The Pussy

Bonecrker #13 - DV Myths = Cold War

. · 13 January 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Most discussions on domestic violence ignore the truth surrounding it. There are dangerous double standards and myths involved in the whole industry. The myth is that women are victims of domestic violence. The truth is that *most* calls to the police about domestic violence are women using the system to harm their husbands and children. Rarely are such calls used to protect themselves from actual domestic violence. The truth also is that women engage in domestic violence in both equal amounts and equal severity. The double standard means men *rarely* call police about it. It also means children are often left at risk from it.

To put it bluntly, the whole system is a huge lie. It rarely involves itself in *real* domestic violence between men, women and children. Instead, it is the opening gambit when a woman seeks to destroy her family, usually through divorce. It's no accident that the system is set up this way. Powerful, evil people set it up that way on purpose. If you pay attention to this and other issues, you start to see a disturbing pattern of intentional manipulation of our institutions and social norms. It's as if a "cold war" was being waged on the US, trying to tear it down from within.

Why, is an interesting question. It's largely unanswerable at this time. (Edit - it's Cultural Marxism). However, who, can often be answered (big example: Hillary Clinton). These people need to be disempowered at every turn. It means becoming aware of them and voting against them. It means boycotting those people, companies and other groups you see participating in this in various ways. Realistically, it means avoiding marriage and children like the plague, for the time being.

.

Previous Bonecrker Index Next

.

Further Reading:

Bonecrker #20 – Rape Fantasies

Bonecrker #65 – The Repeating Patterns of Women Who Cry Rape

Bonecrker #68 – Two Things That Men Need to Know About Domestic Violence

Bonecrcker #117 – Feminism is a Purposefully Destructive Ideology Within a Larger Destructive Group

Bonecrcker #164 – The Media Is Being Used Against Us

EOTM: The Pearl Harbor of the Gender War: Rape and Sexual Harassment

EOTM: Sexual Harassment

EOTM: !!!!!!!!!!RAPE!!!!!!!!!!

Bonecrker #14 - Ritalin & Abusive Schools

. · 14 January 2004 · Archived copy · Original

This is more than just typical gender bias coming to play. It's hardcore child abuse. Its cooperation among mothers, female teachers and a handful of doctors to get children hooked on dangerous drugs (Ritalin *is* amphetamine, speed). The DEA is considering restricting Ritalin prescription, the same way it restricts Valium, for the same reason... wide spread abuse leading to recreational use by prescription. Also, Ritalin is one of the most common things used to make crystal meth. It's a widespread problem in schools. Typically, a woman will drag her son to doctor after doctor until she gets one that agrees to prescribe it... because most know damn well the kid does *not* have ADD and the mother is trying to use drugs to zone out her kid so she can spend her time eating bon bons, drinking, smoking crack, screwing drug dealers or whatever else she does instead of watching her children.

Understand that very bad people have infiltrated our schools with the deliberate intent to harm children. This is one of those ways. The deliberate with-holding of education is another. A third is attempting to brainwash children to accept sick and perverted ideals that are specifically at odds with what their parents want for them. Many women are only too glad to cooperate, unfortunately.

ADD is actually a rather rare condition that is related to to two things... mild to severe mental retardation and drug use. Those commercials you see on TV about possible adult ADD never mention that drug use (and severe alcohol abuse) is almost the exclusive cause of adult ADD. In children, you almost never see ADD (separate from drug use)

except in mildly retarded children that got that way because their mothers drank heavily or smoked crack while pregnant.

If your ex-wife is attempting to abuse your children by getting dangerous prescription drugs or surgery for them, you need to get your lawyer on the phone double quick and get an order to cease and desist. Threaten to use it to take away custody (if she won't stop, challenge custody). This issue *will* come up with frightening regularity.

.

Previous Bonecrker Index Next

.

.

Related:

Bonecrcker #15 – Abusive Schools II

Bonecrcker #109 – The Benefits of Boys Only Schools

Bonecrcker #179 – Subversive Teachers

Diagnosis ODD -- Hawaiian Libertarian

Every Mass Shooting Over the Last 20 Years Has One Thing in Common... And It's Not Guns!

Bonecrker #15 - Abusive Schools II

. · 15 January 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Many teachers know exactly what they are doing by indoctrinating children. They do it on *purpose*... because they hate men and because they are intentionally trying to be subversive.

What's going on is most female teachers (especially the lesbian ones) and many male teachers are intentionally trying to instill certain values in the children they teach. They purposefully go against what most parents want their kids to absorb and much of what they are trying to program into our kids is deviant. They mask what they are doing under political correctness.

Typically, what they do is talk about something perfectly reasonable on the surface. Then, the moment you have your back turned, they throw in a bunch of deviant stuff.

For example, there is a big movement to separate out religion from government and our schools. It's perfectly reasonable to want no religion to have undo influence over our government or be taught as doctrine in our schools. But that's not what they are after. What they are after is to have the principals of atheism be dominant in government and be taught as doctrine in our schools. They actively attempt to shame and stamp out belief in God.

A weird twist on this theme is attempting to expose impressionable youths to Islam, Wicca, and other tenants that have a strong sick streak running through them. Specifically, what they do is portray these in an extremely idealistic light, never mentioning the strong undercurrent of evil flowing through those. One thing those kids will never be shown is the legions dancing around and cutting themselves and their neighbours with knives, like certain of the Islamic sects do (nothing to see here).

Other things they try to instil in kids... the idea that abortion is completely right morally, tolerance of the behaviours that lead to the spread of AIDS, promiscuity, homosexuality as a lifestyle choice (rather than a biological fact, for a small percentage of the population), the idea that men are inferior and woman are superior, that America is a country causing most of the evil in the world, tolerance of drug use, tolerance of pedophilia, the fact that certain minorities are over-represented in prison, and have other social problems, is the result of racism rather than choices they made, promiscuity is OK, acting like a man is not OK. The list goes on and on.

Schools are spending more and more time socializing kids in ways their parents would not approve of and less time educating those kids (this includes college, in a big way).

Worse, teachers feel quite smug about doing things to your kids in direct opposition to your rights as a parent. The whole issue of abortion without parental consent is one example. Another is vaccination. In most cases, the law is on your side, but unless you come right out and threaten the teacher with being arrested or sued, they won't stop.

Several people I know have had to do this to put an end to abuse of their children in school... anywhere from medical abuse to trying to get the kids thrown out of school for supposed misbehaviour (that turned out to be nothing more than the teacher simply not liking the kid).

It's a big, big issue that is mostly hidden. Having your kid inappropriately diagnosed as ADD and then force fed dangerous amphetamines and/or barbiturates, is only the tip of the iceberg.

Seriously, if you have kids, you need to keep VERY close tabs on what is happening to them in school. You'll run into everything from psycho man-hating bitches telling him he is a dumbass every 5 minutes, to some mincing, child hungry pedophile putting the moves on him during gym class.

Schools are dangerous for children.

.

Previous Bonecrker Index Next

.

.

"Give us the child for 8 years and it will be Bolshevik forever." -- V.I. Lenin

.

"We must declare openly what is concealed, namely, the political function of the school...It is to construct communist society." -- V.I. Lenin

.

"If the classroom situation is very heteropatriarchal -- a large beginning class of 50 to 60 students, say, with few feminist students -- I am likely to define my task as largely one of recruitment...of persuading students that women are oppressed." -- said Professor Joyce Trebilcot of Washington University in *Who Stole Feminism: How Women Have Betrayed Women.*

.

.

Further Reading:

Bonecrker #14 – Ritalin and Abusive Schools

Bonecrcker #109 – The Benefits of Boys Only Schools

Bonecrcker #179 – Subversive Teachers

A New Kind Of Bigotry

Phonics: Learning to Read – by Angry Harry

Why Did Teachers Adopt Poor Teaching Methods? -- by Angry Harry

Stop Helping the Boys! – by Angry Harry

.

Bonecrker #16 - Women Love Assholes

. · 16 January 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Women find the quality of being an asshole to be very attractive and throw themselves at a guy like that... doubly so if the guy is a dangerous asshole. Outside of this country, things are different. Assholeness is unattractive.

This is part of the problem with American men. We've come to accept the twisted attitudes of American women and internalize them. Attractive men are going around thinking they are losers, while sick, unattractive men with bad BO are going around thinking they are God's gift to women.

But what's *really* going on here is like attracts like. Most women in the US have become the female version of the sick, unattractive man with bad BO. Unlike men who tend to be one way and stay that way for all of their lives, women change dramatically and quickly, depending on how good they are. When they are 16, they are hotter than hell. At 23, she's still cute. Cresting 30, she looks like hell. And by 35, she's dog ugly and hanging out at K-Mart. This doesn't happen with normal women. It doesn't even happen all the time with abnormal women with very good genes (look at Pamela Anderson), on the outside. It *always* happens on the inside. That woman who you totally fell in love with at 21, who screwed you over at 23, you wouldn't even recognize today. Her personality is *nothing* like it was back then (if it ever was, but that's a different story). The important thing to understand is, it has nothing to do with you. Because it has nothing to do with you, there is nothing you can do about it.

This is probably the biggest reason why women seem so scarce in our culture, even though they outnumber us. A woman has a shelf-life of age 15 to 35, maximum. She's really only available between the ages of 20 and 29. After that, her unacceptableness becomes much more obvious. If they didn't want money from us, they wouldn't even bother to go shopping around for a meal ticket at that age. They wouldn't even pretend to be part of our social groups.

.

Previous Bonecrker Index Next

.

.

Bonecrcker #5 – Women Choosing Losers

Bonecrcker #6 – Women Choosing Extinction

Bonecrcker #10 – Women Choosing Scum

Bonecrcker #84 – Women Going For Evil Losers

Bonecrcker #118 – Women Who Marry Scumbags

Bonecrcker #144 – Why Women Are Attracted To Bad Men & Thugs

Bonecrker #17 - Movies Desensitize Social Problems

. · 17 January 2004 · Archived copy · Original

.Movies try to manipulate the public by *selectively* showing the people and their lives. The idea here is to desensitize people, a little at a time. What they never show is the truth. The issues these movies attempt to minimalize all have one thing in common; they strip away the humanity of the people stupid enough to get involved in those situations. They no longer think like you and me. *Nothing* is off limits to them and they regularly engage in extremely evil behavior. The best way I can describe the way they view the world is as a big fish eating a smaller fish, which is eating an even smaller fish. Their whole way of looking at the world is looking for possible victims while constantly trying to get away from people trying to victimize them. *Do not* under any circumstances ever turn your back on someone like this. They can and will put a knife in your back.

A real life example: I once worked inpatient with some kid that got picked up for crack cocaine use, truancy and was given a separate diagnosis of depression. He was forced to be clean while in the program and he seemed like a nice, relatively normal kid... doing all the right things to get his life back on track. Four days after being released from his court ordered rehab, this fucker threw his mother through a plate glass window, killing her, because she wouldn't let him take money from her purse to buy more crack. This is the truth of drug use that you never see in movies. The only one I ever saw that was even close was Menace to Society, and that movie was trying to glorify that behavior. And it worked to. I'll never forget going to see that movie in a black neighbourhood. There was a scene where the protagonist murders a Korean store owner. It was both horrible and accurately showed how the average criminal sets up his victim. The entire theatre minus one, burst into laughter during that scene. Several people had little kids with them. I don't live there anymore.

.

Previous Bonecrker Index Next

.

.

Further Reading:

Bonecrcker #142 – Buffy & Xena

Bonecrcker #164 – The Media Is Being Used Against Us

.

The Fine Art of TV Repair

Bonecrker #18 - Three Rules to Follow

. · 18 January 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Several groups of very evil (and ignorant) people have worked over several generations to reduce the value and status of women to be low. But it's hidden. They are simply being attracted to men that have similar attitudes, philosophies and beliefs as them. Most women don't want the loss of status that comes with joining the trashcan of society, so they pretend and leach off of men who, looking around, see nothing better. Then they pass laws that prevent those men from simply disposing of the low quality woman once she is found out.

The truth is, those low quality women don't belong in any way, shape or form with high quality men. But until men are willing to say no to them the situation will continue. There are three areas it is most important to say no to... marriage (and living together, which is really the same thing), children, and jobs.

Whatever you do, don't get married to an American woman. All she wants is to take advantage of you, if not outright exploit you. Destroying you and your children is what's on her mind while stealing as much of your money as possible. Most women are very, *very* good at pretending they are not like this. You won't know what is going on until you come home, find every single thing from the house gone and get served with papers at work. Don't let a woman move in with you. Her only purpose is to manipulate you a little at a time, until you are married. If you balk, she will seek revenge in some way. Once you let the camel get its head in the tent, it gets all the way in. Then it is almost impossible to get her out, and your belongings usually wind up strewn across the desert. It's a good idea not to be monogamous. A woman's manipulation is a joke if you simply ignore her and fuck another one of your pearls on a string. She will leave without notice or second thoughts, married or not. If you have several girls, this is no big deal. You simply spend time with the others until you replace her. Having more than one woman makes other women want you more, not less.

You must have an iron clad grip on birth control. Almost all of the government help in twisting your nuts long term is related to paternity. Avoid the whole issue by having a vasectomy. Talk to your doctor about if it can be reversed or not. Have some sperm frozen (only you know about it) if you have to. Never tell anyone you are fixed. This guarantees your right to reproductive choice. If you don't reserve the right to choose, the choice will be made for you, usually in a way that destroys everyone's life.

Be very resistant to hiring women or empowering them in any way. Focus on performance issues. A handful of women throughout our entire history have traveled with the hunters, instead of the mommies. That's normal. But

most women in the work force aren't part of that breed. They are frauds. Insist on equality in performance and most of these women will come up short. The easiest way to handle this is to give women tough, high profile assignments. When they fail, you have a ready excuse to get rid of them. If they don't fail, you have one of the rare ones that isn't a fraud. They make great tokens. If your boss is the stupid type that lets women in because they might sleep with him, take him out and get him laid. Men who are getting it don't want or need the hassle of importing pussy at work. If your boss allows women to sleep with him to get promotions, get the dirt on him, then (anonymously) let his wife know what is going on, with proof. This gets rid of two birds with one stone. The most dangerous weapon an enemy can give you is the knowledge of their vices. This is an important thing to know. If you systematically and faithfully destroy your own vices, you go a long way toward making yourself invulnerable to your enemies. Take advantage of this disparity in power by destroying your enemies utterly. Never give them the opportunity to employ this concept against you.

.

Previous Bonecrker Index Next

.

.

Further Reading:

.

Bonecrker #60 – A Man Must Strive to Prevent Women from Having the Smallest Shred of Power Over Him

Bonecrcker #102 – What Matters is the Amount of Power and Choice You Have in a Relationship

Bonecrker #19 - Tattoos and Piercings

. · 19 January 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Of course, throughout history tattoos and piercing have been used for both slavery and as body art... but not in our culture. In our culture it's deviant. Oddly enough, it is still deviant among various minorities that *do* have a cultural history of tattoo/piercing use, once they join our culture. In *our* culture, the use of tattoos and piercing on slaves/criminals was dominant. Someone who gets them here is trying to identify with that element. Sometimes it's an attempt to do so in a safe way (look at me, I'm bad, I'm cool). Unfortunately, it is mostly used in an unsafe way (look at me, I'm one of you, come fuck me). You can tell things about women who do this sort of thing... unpleasant things you would be very unwise to ignore. Less so with men though. Because so many women choose the bad men over the good, many men have taken up looking a certain way to get women. Many of my friends are like this. Most have regretted it though.

Having a visible tattoo or inappropriate piercing makes you unemployable at most professional jobs... why? Because it identifies you as not one of the elite that hold those jobs... one of the underclass. Women get these done for the same outcome... to be identified as one of the underclass who is wide open for approach by a low class man. The more wild and obvious the tattoos or piercings, or the more numerous, the lower the class. There are always exceptions but they are rare. If your daughter comes home one day with a pierced tongue, she is telling you that she has decided to give blowjobs to various inappropriate men. Drugs are often involved. The men certainly understand that signal and will come after her. This means you must be extra vigilant or bad things will happen. As I said, it is a very reliable sign.

This is a tough issue because, like all lies (the lie being that people with tattoos and piercings are normal), it has a grain of truth. Normal people do get tattoos. They get them to be naughty and feel adventurous. Men get them because they know women will mistake them for inappropriate men, and are attracted. You can tell who these people are easily. You can't see their tattoos or piercings unless they are showing off. They hide them in polite company. The exception to the exception, are women who get tattoos around their butt, breasts and vagina or people that get their sex organs pierced. These people are sending a clear message that they are a sexual object and expect to be used as such (big warning sign for men).

Even relatively normal (are there any, lol) people who belong to the BDSM scene have a strong thread of this going through them. They *hate* when you say that, by the way. It goes sort of like this... people think the whole point is to

devalue, objectify, and humiliate your partner.....to dehumanize them. But the BDSM crowd says, no no, that's not really true. We pretend to devalue, objectify, and humiliate people in order to have great sex, and they love it. Anyone who does it for real is an asshole and not welcome. Great. So you get to know them and find out that they really *are* trying to devalue, objectify, and humiliate people... in a bad way. Or, to put it another way, a female submissive wants you to do various bad things to her so she can have screaming orgasms. This is supposed to be limited to the bedroom. *But*, if you don't treat her like the crawling worm that she is all of the time, she will lose interest in you. The last thing she wants is sincerity, warmth and love from you. These things spoil her perversion. She's using you for sex and has no second thoughts about leaving once reality intrudes (ouch, I have painful memories about dealing with someone like this). The easiest way to spot a female sub is by her tongue piercing and tattoos in the form of a chain around her wrists and/or ankles.

.

Previous Bonecrker Index Next

"'Do not cut your bodies for the dead or put tattoo marks on yourselves. I am the LORD." -- Leviticus 19:28

Bonecrker #20 - Rape Fantasies

. · 20 January 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Every woman I have ever met has had rape fantasies. It's part of the bigger problem that women find evil to be sexually exciting. The other side of the coin is they find love and goodness to be boring. You see this over and over and over again. Act like a total prick all the time and many women will be very attracted to you. They want you to hurt them in various ways including various violations like rape. The sicker the woman, the more real she will want it to be. *Most* women will seek out men who are likely to rape them for real. This is the *real* cause of rape in our culture. Rapists get tons and tons of dates while good men are treated with contempt. Part of it is a woman wants a man who is evil. But the other part is the rape fantasy. They want the type of man who is likely to rape them. I have a lot of experience with BDSM and I can tell you right now, those people are whacked. For them, nothing else exists but the degradation and humiliation of themselves and others. They always pretend it's just a fantasy that they want occasionally in the bedroom. But, it's a lie. They absolutely will not accept good behavior or intimacy from you, nor anything that approaches respect for yourself or others. If you won't cooperate, they will become bored with you and move on. They will be *very* vocal about denying this and insist you are ignorant for thinking so but you will observe this in every single woman who indulges in this. Self loathing is at the core of it.

.

Previous Bonecrker Index Next

.

Further Reading:

Bonecrker #13 – DV Myths = Cold War

Bonecrker #65 – The Repeating Patterns of Women Who Cry Rape

Bonecrcker #145 – Feminism Causes Rape

EOTM: The Pearl Harbor of the Gender War: Rape and Sexual Harassment

EOTM: !!!!!!!!!!RAPE!!!!!!!!!!

Sex Sells

Why Do Women Fantasize About Rape? -- by Angry Harry

Bonecrker #21 - Who Pays?

. · 21 January 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Who pays? The real issue here is not who pays. It's the lack of love, dignity and respect for you on the part of American women. That's what causes the resentment. The issue of who pays is determined by custom and the status of the woman you are with and your relationship with them. A high status woman whom you have a causal relationship with pays her own way in our culture. The bigger the difference in status and wealth between you, the more likely it is that you should pay. The more formal the relationship, the more likely you should pay.

The reason you should pay is rooted in old traditions and has to do with who you are in relation to your woman. If you are equals, she pays. If you are a patron and she is a peasant, you pay. Most people in the US are of the same socioeconomic class (even if there is a large difference in salaries). For man to pay, he is acting macho... like he is the patron and she is the peasant. This is a *normal* thing for men to act dominant with women. It's part of the complicated mating dance that humans do... you assert your role as protector, provider, and Lord of the Manor. And that role has rights and responsibilities. Paying is one of them.

But there is a huge ass problem. The problem is women in this country aren't interested in a legitimate relationship with you and have no real feeling toward you. What they do is use the custom as a way to exploit men for money and goods. They go a lot farther with it as a means to actually exchange sex and intimacy for money... that's prostitution... and the women who engage in it, in all cultures, are rightly at the very bottom of social classes... because it's deviant.

So, who should pay? My answer is you should dodge the question entirely. Never go anyplace that costs money. Go places like walks and picnics and parks. Jokingly tell her that you expect for her to pay. Dump any woman that constantly sniffs around for gifts or expects you to take her to expensive places.

There is also a third issue here. Women look at a man one of two ways... as a lover or as a provider. They make men who are providers wait for sex. You don't want to be seen as a provider. Instead, you should focus on women

that have decided to have sex with you right away and focus on having fun and being intimate with you. Later on, if you want to be serious with them, you can shift your role to one of provider. But if you allow them to look on you as a provider you can't change into a lover later on. This is extremely important to understand, because you only get the one chance in the beginning to establish what you are to her. However, in other countries where the contempt and exploitation of men isn't present, you could probably safely be the provider with the right woman. But my instinct says you should still present yourself as a lover instead, until you have a mature, steady, sexual relationship for quite some time.

Previous Bonecrker Index Next

.

Related:

.

Bonecrker #37 - Gifts

.

Bonecrker #55 - Dates

Tom Leykis on “Being a Gentleman” (YouTube – 7min)

Quotes taken from If Men Have All The Power How Come Women Make The Rules? pp. 116-122

"[The woman] doesn't have to do anything more on the date than show up... don't make it easy for him... he has to do all the work." -- Ellen Fein & Sherrie Schneider, *The Rules*

"It's just chivalrous... it's nice of you to care about his finances, but remember he is deriving great pleasure from taking you out." -- Ellen Fein & Sherrie Schneider, *The Rules*

"'The guy should pay [for dates]...' says [ESPN SportsCenter anchor Rich] Eisen...
"Why is that?... 'Hey, those are the rules,' he says. 'I don't make them. I just follow them.'" -- *Talk Magazine*, September 2000

.

"Any woman who expects the man to pay for everything all the time is behaving like a spoiled princess... A woman who has the means to pay for a date but refuses to do so is saying the pleasure of the man's company is not worth the price of dinner. Why should any man want to waste his time with a woman who has such a low opinion of him?" -- letter to the editor from a woman in Silver Spring, MD. *New York Times*, August 31, 2001
Like this woman, for instance:

"'Of course the men have to pay and buy you presents. Men have to spoil you. You have to be spoiled,' says [a 26 year old woman] who works in public relations. 'If you don't think you are a princess you're not going to be treated as one. You have to make sure you know - and they know - you're a princess. This is my feminism. It's the new feminism to say, "I'm expensive. I need lots of attention. I need men to bend over backwards for me."'" -- article by Rebecca Eckler in the *National Post* (Canada), August 26, 2000

.

"The feminist freeloading doesn't change with marriage. Professional women still want their husbands to get the checks at restaurants, pay the mortgage and be home by 6:30pm to help with chores and the kids." -

- Maureen Dowd, *New York Times*, August 29, 2001

Never forget Briffault's Law.

Bonecrker #22 - Choose Confidence

. · 22 January 2004 · Archived copy · Original

QUOTE: *"People say they are attracted to confidence, but how often do you meet a confident person who doesn't tend to act like a jerk? It's all too common for mere confidence to cross the threshold into arrogance. But that's what people want."*

This is where you fall into the trap that the average powerless person does. You assume that people who act like jerks are powerful. They are just as powerless as you, they just express it in a different way. Both tigers and mice are powerless. People play victim and victimizer for the same reason. Confident (confidence is based on power) people do neither. Quite literally, for no other reason than they don't have to. Going from a not confident to a confident person involves only one thing... cultivating power. Do all of those things likely to bring you power. Work out until you are strong. Mind your business until you are rich. Eliminate useless behaviours. Build your kingdom of people and resources until it is unassailable. Be competent in everything you do. Those are the things that bring confidence. Nothing else does.

QUOTE: *"Whether we like to admit it or not, we are all the products of our own little environments. We have been moulded and shaped by those people who have been a part of our lives. Our mothers created our physical bodies, but our peers created who we really are. It was our peers who taught us how to behave, because it is our peers that we want so much to be with. We want their acceptance, we want to belong, and the only way we can belong is if we become like them."*

People are most definitely *not* the product of their environment. We are the products of the choices we make, every single moment of every day. Change happens the very moment you decide I'm going to be different, today, right now, for this specific thing. Do enough of those little specific changes and the change generalizes. Almost nothing else except a person's free will and choice has the power to determine a person's behavior. Once you understand and know how to use this, everything else falls into place.

Part of the process is when a person understands that there is a tendency to seek approval and acceptance from others. However, that tendency isn't normal. It's neurotic. Once you know this, you can make *huge* gains in your life by examining it for behaviours that are approval seeking... and stopping them. People (especially women) manipulate you through your approval seeking behaviours. If you eliminate them, they have nothing to grab hold of. Also, eliminating these will make you feel much, *much* better about yourself. Approval seeking, even if you get the approval, makes you feel bad. But, like smoking, even though it is bad for you, it's addictive. You need to be ever vigilant for backsliding with this. But the effort is well worth it.

.

Previous Bonecrker Index Next

.

Related:

Bonecrcker #72 – The Truth Is Harsh

Pook #7 – Lesson Four: Patience is the Refined Sense of Confidence

Philalethes #25 – You Can Have As Much Power As You Are Willing To Be Responsible For, But No More

Bonecrker #23 - Bad Boys vs. Alphas

. · 23 January 2004 · Archived copy · Original

"Badboys" are pussies, not alpha males. The easiest way to tell if a man is alpha is to observe if he has the respect and cooperation of other men, especially other men in general (i.e. he has power and respect in society, not just socially). You very rarely see a "badboy" meet these criteria. When you do, it's usually an alpha fooling around to get laid.

Alpha males don't usually get the chicks. They get the best chick and she tends to stick around and beat the shit out of any other girls who come around.

The multiple sex partner thing is the omega male's gig. You usually see all sorts of deviant behavior going on in addition to this. Although he is getting laid, he is powerless in relationships as well as every other aspect of his life. No one respects him, not even the psycho chicks who screw him.

Alpha's get snapped up quickly. Beta males screw a lot early in life while women are competing over them, and then settle down. Omegas can't form stable relationships. And Zeta males rarely get laid. Most people are betas.

Humans aren't apes. We have a different mating strategy than them. Women compete for the best man they can get (at a very young age) and then stick with him for life. He sometimes cheats, but not to reproduce. She never cheats. Everyone pairs up. Whenever you see people straying from this paradigm, fucked-upness starts to happen. This is what is happening with women. They are becoming more and more omega. Their clustering around these men is not a normal thing, which is why it is so fucked up in all other ways.

.

Previous Bonecrker Index Next

Bonecrker #24 - Social Proofing

. · 24 January 2004 · Archived copy · Original

I keep saying it, but nobody really believes me (until they experience it for themselves). Women ignore objective signs of worth and status and instead make decisions on attraction mostly at random. Signs of worth... tall, looks, money, muscles, status, don't change greatly who is attracted to you. I'm undecided if fame actually does make more women attracted or if it simply makes the women who like you anyway, hunt you down in an obsessive way. What it does affect is their aggressiveness. Don't build muscles and a hot body in the gym (ditto for making cash, wearing cool clothes etc.) thinking it will get you a certain type of girl (or worse, a specific girl) because it won't (much to my dismay). You do it because it affects your own confidence and it makes the women (the same exact women who were already attracted to you), *more* attracted. More of them reveal themselves to you, and they make it easier for you to get them.

Also, and this is important, because women make these decisions at random, they often have difficulty judging their looks, status, whatever, compared to yours. What matters is social proofing. No matter how ugly you look, if you date a lot of women, good looking women will find you attractive. This also works in reverse. On the dating websites, all the girls on them are what you would call "hard to place". They rarely get dates, which is why they are online. Since you are also online, they assume you are the same way. It doesn't matter if you have all these signs of being much higher status than her. All she looks at is the social proof that you are also an online loser, like her. If you go, "Pffft, lady, I'm out of your league," they will freak. If anything, they assume your status is much lower than hers.

I think this is one of the biggest reasons to avoid online dating. All the girls are the dregs, who think you are beneath them, no matter what. It's a lose/lose situation.

Previous Bonecrker Index Next

.

.

"…Women may have happy ideas, taste and elegance, but they cannot attain to the ideal. The difference between men and women is like that between animals and plants. Men correspond to animals, while *women correspond to plants because their development is more placid and the principle that underlies it is the rather vague unity of feeling.* When women hold the helm of government, the state is at once in jeopardy, because *women regulate their actions not by the demands of universality but by arbitrary inclinations and opinions.* Women are educated – who knows how? – G.F. Hegel

.

.

Further Reading:

.

Bonecrker #34 – Online Dating – Not!

Bonecrcker #44 – Women Have Contradictory Love

Bonecrcker #103 – Raising Your Sexual Status

Bonecrcker #104 – Sexual Status is Similar to Employment Status

Bonecrcker #111 – Gaining Power With Women

Bonecrcker #123 – One of the Most Important Reasons to Have More Than One Woman at Once

Bonecrcker #172 – Social Proofing Has Negative Survival Value For Women

Bonecrker #25 - On Asshole "Game"

. · 25 January 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Being an asshole doesn't even work in the short term. Sure, alternating hot and cold will sometimes get a woman obsessed (the same way random interval reinforcement gets people hooked on gambling). But, just being a total jackass gets you nowhere. Some "game" guys say different. Based on what they say, they obviously have no real experience with women. What *does* work, and what these and a lot of inexperienced guys get mixed up with this, is being evil. If you are the type of guy who gets drunk and acts like a jackass in public, expect a lot of dateless nights. But if you are the type of guy who sells drugs, or gets drunk and beats a woman so badly she ends up in the hospital, or you've been arrested numerous times, or you are in a gang, these are the things that get you laid. That's not even close to being a normal thing and there is a very high price for aligning yourself with that intensely negative vibe.

If any guy thinks he is going to be successful with women by being a jackass, think again. Being a jackass is just the other side of the coin of being a wuss. The defining element here is lack of control... lack of power. Yeah, that'll get you laid... not. This is why it appeals to wusses so much. They think they can get their way by being an obnoxious wuss instead of a snivelling wuss. But they still haven't expended the effort or cultivated the power to not be a wuss (i.e. to affect the world rather than being blown around by it). Bad habits are the hallmark of that brand of nonsense.

Note that this is a hell of a lot different than being assertive or even aggressive in the face of a woman's bullshit. Women will call that behavior (i.e. not giving her her way) asshole behavior, but it's not. Most people who do this are very nice about it and treat people with love, dignity and respect, when they deserve it. They just don't take any baloney and they insist on things being on their terms. The typical asshole does none of these things. Instead, they treat women like shit, *and allow women to treat them like shit in return.* Their behaviour opens the door to the woman's behaviours. The assertive man does the exact opposite. He neither gives nor allows poor treatment. He never explains and never negotiates either. It's either his way or the highway. Women say they don't like that as a way to try and get away with something. But every normal woman *loves* that about a man.

.

Previous Bonecrker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #45 - Niceguys

Bonecrker #26 - Fatherlessness = F#@%ed-upness

. · 26 January 2004 · Archived copy · Original

The liberal a-holes really did take the Moynihan report to heart. (Reporting on the destruction of Black society due to fatherlessness). What they are doing, they are doing on purpose.

Every time this issue is measured, it comes out the same. Broken homes with the father absent = fucked-upness. Happy homes with a strong man as the father = happy, well adjusted children. Every single time. And yet, you have various groups creating policy on weird theories with no basis in observation, often very superficial in their reasoning. The theory is just a thinly veiled excuse to cover an agenda. Of course, they don't believe their own nonsense. They know full well what they are doing. They are just hoping that their theory will go unobserved because it quickly becomes revealed as bullshit and lies by anyone with the skill and knowledge to assess it.

The best way to handle this is to, first, identify who they are specifically. A good example is how you can see that the entire profession of psychology has ceased doing what it is supposed to do (treat mental illness) and is instead acting as the manipulative arm of something sinister. For God's sake, absolutely forbid your woman from seeing a therapist (boy, did I learn this the hard way).

The second thing to do is to say no to them. Marginalize them. When a vote comes up to divert time money and resources to them, vote no. Repeat this basic pattern over and over again until the people involved no longer matter. Don't listen to their arguments and bullshit. Pay attention to what is directly observable and can be reasonably inferred from that. If what a person wants, works, keep it. If it doesn't, kick them to the curb.

Do not accept attempts to argue away what can plainly be seen by everyone. A theory that contradicts reality is wrong, and probably only exists to fool you into doing something stupid.

Previous Bonecrker Index Next

.

Senator Daniel Moynihan: **"By 1983 the poverty rate reached its highest level in 18 years….The principal correlate had been the change in family structure, the rise of the female-headed household."** (Family and Nation, p. 95)

Here are some of the observed effects of removing a father to the position of a visitor in a child`s life.
"Based on our clinical experience with a number of latency aged and adolescent girls whose parents divorced during their oedipal years, we postulate that particular coping patterns emerge in response to the absence of the father, which may complicate the consolidation of positive feminine identification in many female children, and is observable during the latency years. We illustrate both the existence of these phenomena and implications for treatment:
1. intensified separation anxiety
2. denial and avoidance of feelings associated with loss of father
3. identification with the lost object
4. object hunger for males." "In an earlier study by Kalter and Rembar at [Children's Psychiatric Hospital, University of Michigan], a sample of 144 child and adolesce atients, whose parents had divorced, presented [for evaluation and treatment] with three most commonly occurring problems:
63% Subjective psychological problem (defined as anxiety, sadness, pronounced moodiness, phobias, and depression)
56% Poor grades or grades substantially below ability and/or recent past performance
43% Aggression toward parents Important features of the subgroup of 32 latency aged girls were in the same order:
69% indicating subjective psychological distress 47% academic problems
41% aggression toward pa ts.
Clinical Observations on Interferences of Early Father Absence in the Achievement of Femininity by R. Lohr, C. g, A. Mendell and B. Riemer, Clinical Social Work Journal, V. 17, #4, Winter, 1989

Also see:

Bonecrcker #109 – The Benefits of Boys-Only Schools

Zenpriest #1: Women Raised Without Fathers

Zenpriest #22 – "Broken Men" and Women's "Fixing" Them

Excerpt from Baskerville, S. Taken into Custody: The War Against Fatherhood, Marriage, and the Family. Nashville: Cumberland House Publishing, 2007

"Virtually every major social pathology of our time: violent crime, drug and alcohol abuse, truancy and scholastic failure, unwed pregnancy, suicide and other psychological disorders – all these correlate more strongly to fatherlessness than to any other single factor.[1] According to the National Fatherhood Initiative, "Children who live absent their biological fathers are, on average, at least two to three times more likely to be poor, to use drugs, to experience educational, health, emotional, and behavioral problems, to be victims of child abuse, and to engage in criminal behavior than those who live with their married, biological (or adoptive) parents."[2] The overwhelming majority of prisoners, juvenile detention inmates, high school dropouts, pregnant teenagers, adolescent murderers, and rapists all come from fatherless homes. Children from affluent but separated families are much more likely to get into trouble than children from poor but intact ones, and white children from separated families are at higher risk than

black children in intact families. The connection between single parent households and crime erases the relationship between race and crime and between low income and crime[3].”

[1] Attempts to attribute these behaviors to poverty or racial discrimination have been refuted by studies that control for these variables. See Urie Bronfenbrenner, “Discovering What Families Do,” in David Blankenhorn, et al. (eds.), Rebuilding the Nest: A New Commitment to the American Family (Milwaukee: Family Service America, 1990), p. 34; Ronald Angel and Jacqueline Angel, Painful Inheritance: Health and the New Generation of Fatherless Children (Madison: University of Wisconsin Press, 1993), p. 188. Even left-wing scholars concur: Norman Dennis and George Erdos, Families Without Fatherhood (London: Civitas, 2000).

[2] Horn and Sylvester, Father Facts, p. 15.

[3] Elaine Ciulla Kamarck and William Galston, Putting Children First (Washington: Progressive Policy Institute, 1990), p. 14.

Bonecrker #27 - Women Want Sex More Than Men

. · 27 January 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Women want sex much more than men, not that they succeed at getting sex or having a good sexual relationship much more than men. You guys are forgetting that women are freakin' nuts. And that insanity puts serious neurotic restrictions on her sexual expression.

An example. I had a woman friend that became more and more insane as she got older, eventually resulting in my expelling her from my life. Before that, I noticed that about once a month, she would pick up a couple of random guys at a bar (strong hormonal component). She was quite fond of telling me all about these wild sexual escapades. But I also knew her through several "relationships". They all followed the same pattern. The more intimate and close she became with a man (especially if he moved in with her), the more she lost sexual interest... to the point of becoming frigid. But she would still go out and pick up random guys on the sly. At one point I told her how I would never put up with that from a woman. To which she quipped, "Well, what the hell would you do about it?" Without skipping a beat I said I'd dump her skank ass.
My point here is the sex drive in this person was so strong that she really wasn't in control of it and her neuroses and being a miserable a-hole in general prevented her from channelling that into something positive (it actually got more and more negative as she got older). A lot of guys I know have run into this problem. She's a fiend in the sack until they get to know each other. Suddenly, she is frigid. But all these sexual skeletons keep falling out of her closet.

The high desire for sex is something I've observed over and over again with women. There are two things going on here. The first is that women are going out of their way to paint the picture that men want sex while women need to be convinced grudgingly give in to sex (plus baby, if not with me, you ain't gettin' anywhere else, because most women don't want it either). These are lies, specifically designed to inappropriately get the upper hand in relationships. The other thing going on is women are sick. They want sex lots more than men but are sexually dysfunctional. They have bizarre things like intense anxiety if they feel sexual attraction for the wrong (wrong being some weird random thing) man. They get angry if the "wrong" man approaches them because they feel guilty about that attraction and even more guilty about randomly fucking one of them on a regular basis (a situation they have little to no control over). Some are so anxiety ridden that they rarely have a man in their life and when they do, the conflicts and weirdness quickly drive him away.

This is why you have fundamentalist Christian babes who think sex out of marriage is amoral, but who regularly have some random guy strap them to an A-frame and whip the fuck out of them. A lot of similar stuff is going on in our society.

But none of this really matters. What matters is that no matter what women want you to think, there are a great many women around you who are all hot and horny for you. They hide it. It requires the ability to recognize and elicit subtle signals to tell who they are. It requires timing and the ability to known when and exactly how to strike when the iron is hot. There is never a reason to think that a woman is doing you a favour by having sex with you (requiring you return the favour in a manner other than sexual) or to think you can't walk away from a bad situation and within a reasonable period of time, get another one. If a woman is having sex with you, she is doing it because she likes sex, specifically with you. Don't be fooled and don't tolerate her neuroses. If she starts to lose interest, dump her. That lack of interest has nothing to do with lack of interest in sex. It has to do with bad behavior and lack of respect for you. It magically disappears 10 seconds after you are gone. This is VERY important to understand about women. Frigidity has NOTHING to do with lack of sexual interest. It has to do with lack of respect (you will see plenty of this in all other aspects of your relationship). Don't put up with that crap.

Plenty of fish in the sea.

.

Previous Bonecrker Index Next

.

.

Related:

Bonecrcker #32 – Women Are Not Able To Get Sex On Demand

Rats! (Or, He Chases Her Until She Catches Him)

"Women's Desire is an Underestimated and Constrained Force"

Bonecrker #28 - Women Ignoring Good Men & Choosing Thugs/Losers

. · 28 January 2004 · Archived copy · Original

.

The sad fact of the matter is most women lead sad, pathetic little lives. Their life choices leave them intensely unhappy failures.... and feeling very unloved. Many completely screw up their lives creating a hopeless situation of intense suffering. A lot of the more vindictive behavior on their part is to punish someone else for the pain they are feeling. Large numbers end up alone in their later years. Half of women over 40 haven't even been laid in the last year. As far as making sense from and evolutionary point of view, they are hardly picking up good genes. Originally, their behavior *did* make sense. They exhibited clustering around the men with the good genes (ie, intelligent, powerful men with resources got laid like fiends, especially the leaders). This ensured that the alpha males paired off with the alpha females and the beta males paired off with the beta females. Everyone else just sorta whored around. Unlike primates, humans exhibit pair-bonding. Most everyone mates and bears children, except the small number of losers and deviants and most of the structure and resources go towards the more valuable members of society. You had occasional breeding on the sly, but usually only on the lower rungs of the pecking order, for variation. Cuckolding was punishable by death when it involved alphas or the more valuable betas. Humans also engaged in staggering. This means that all men want the younger, child bearing women, except when they are paired off. When a man's woman croaks, he takes another, but not of the same age as him... only from child bearing age. This made sense too. It forced women to pair off when they were fertile... or miss the boat so to speak.

Today, westernized women act completely different than in normal cultures and how women have acted for most of our species' history. They still exhibit clustering, but they do it now around the guys *with bad genes!* They ignore the guys with the good, survival oriented genes.... strength, intelligence, virility, family orientation etc. Now, it's the omega male (criminal) and to a lesser extent the zeta male (weak loser) who are sought after. The former to indulge perversions, the latter to exploit for money. Also, women resist pair bonding (lol, while men still exhibit staggering) and child birth, putting it off until the end of their reproductive cycle. Often, they end up with nothing and no one. The results of this crap are plain for everyone to see... feral children who are quite frankly, genetically weak and inferior in various ways, growing up without fathers and few resources. Divorced women with no partner and no chance of getting one ever again. The whole situation is sick and unnatural and is slowly weakening us as a people.

That is the whole point of the feminist agenda. Most of those women are nuts and also inferior. They tend to be ugly, combat boot wearing deviants on the very bottom of the pecking order. Their hope is that by weakening us all, their position will rise. It just ain't gonna happen. The only way to rise in the pecking order is to be more important to society... to provide something, preferably something rare. The assholes provide nothing and take quite a bit. They are unworthy of respect in every way. One day, people will wake up to this fact and put them in their place. Not yet. But, it's getting there.

.

Previous Bonecrker Index Next

Bonecrker #29 - Passive Aggression Related To The Female Orgasm

. · 29 January 2004 · Archived copy · Original

When a woman orgasms, it has little to do with what the man is doing to her and mostly to do with what she is doing inside her head.

A woman can easily orgasm with any man she chooses to. If the woman you are with isn't orgasming, it's because she *chooses* to see you as someone who isn't sexually stimulating, hence the need for “romance”. It is *extremely* important to understand that (within limits) how sexual you appear toward a woman isn't under your direct control. You can slim down, lift weights and even get cosmetic surgery and she won't be attracted. She will, temporarily, be attracted to a guy who makes himself unavailable. And she definitely will be attracted if you make yourself inappropriate in some way (leather jackets, tattoos, earrings and other bad boy image stuff are favourites).

Part of this is the hilarious situation that often a woman you barely know orgasms like a banshee at the slightest stimulation, and then becomes completely frigid later on in the relationship. Often they will try to mask this as "issues with intimacy". But what is really going on here is she is purposefully shutting down her own sexual impulses because she no longer thinks she needs to please you anymore.

This isn't true with men. A woman who makes herself look in certain stereotypical ways will make herself generically attractive to all men. And a woman who screws you with ardour and skill, will definitely make you orgasm.

The point here is frigidity in women is a big warning sign. It is intentional passive-aggressive behavior that is just a part of the bigger issue of disrespect. If a woman starts having "sexual problems" like this, dump her immediately, for two reasons: The next one won't (i.e., there is absolutely nothing wrong with the way you are fucking her) *and*, the woman you just dumped seems to have no problem orgasming with the biker/meth dealer living next door (even though, he is so drugged out of his mind, he can barely get it up).

.

Previous Bonecrker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #27 – Women Want Sex More Than Men

Bonecrker #30 - Desperate Non-Housewives

. · 30 January 2004 · Archived copy · Original

As women age, their ability to get men plummets. Paradoxically, their standards go through the roof because they know the next one will be the last one (and they have been led toward an attitude of entitlement due to their *past* experiences with men). Then, their ability to get a man drops to zero, just about the time a woman hits 40. The inability to get the type of man they think they deserve and being left with no future and zero options, leaves a woman *incredibly* bitter and used up. The irony is that a great many men would at least fuck them (nobody wants them as a wife), but because of the bitterness, they opt out.

You always see the same thing. A 40ish woman, average looks, who hates men, but wants the top 1% quality wise... and has nothing to offer.

Previous Bonecrker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #28 – Women Ignoring Good Men and Choosing Thugs/Losers

Bonecrker #31 - Women Are Sick

. · 31 January 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Women are sick. They are mentally ill. One of the characteristics of mental illness is stereotyping. What that means is that one woman is sick in exactly the same way as another. You see the same patterns over and over again.

Our culture is involved in a complex scam trying to cover up this situation, particularly from young men. The worst case scenario is the totally oblivious guy who gets himself into a bad situation. However, most guys know something is wrong, but just can't put their finger on it because of the brainwashing. At first, they figure they just met some wacko and then try again. When the next one turns out just the same, they start to investigate if something is wrong with themselves (pleeeennnty of asshole relationship experts are willing to feed this). After awhile they come to the amazing conclusion that, yes, something *is* wrong with the entire female population. But they only know that something is wrong. And they don't know that "something" can be mapped out and understood.

Every time we examine a case, we learn a little more about the specifics of that "something". Understanding the nature of a thing gives you power over it. Because humans have free will and exercise it in every single facet of our existence, you can never change another. Only they can change themselves, and only by choosing to do so, with no influence possible from anyone or anything. However, that doesn't mean you can't get things you need from them or have to put up with their bullshit. Understanding that "something" gives you vital information on how to 1) get what you want and need from women and 2) how to prevent them from causing you undue hardship.

It's not simple, but it is understandable, reliable and effective.

Previous Bonecrker Index Next

.

Further Reading:

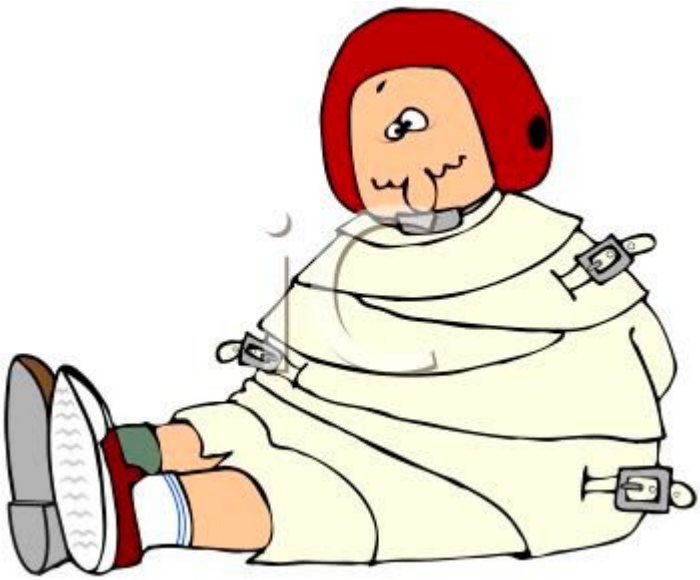
.

Bonecrker #76 – Most Women Are In Relationships That Aren’t Fun

Bonecrcker #149 – Women Don’t Actually Have Personality Disorders – They Have Asshole-ism

Bonecrcker #165 – “The Problem” Is So Pervasive That It Is Difficult To Avoid

.



Bonecrker #32 - Women Are Not Able To Get Sex On Demand

. · 1 February 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Its Men's Fault Women Are So Bitchy

Let me ask a simple question that every man should ask himself when confronted with this sentiment. Is this true?

Is it true that a woman, from a very young age gets hit on by a loser every 5 minutes who ignores polite rejection and continues on until he gets slapped down? Is it true that every woman since the age of 13, every guy they meet has been trying to fuck her and that they get offered "dick" every single day?

Let me answer that. No, it's not true. Women would like you to believe it is true. But it's not. There is a grain of truth to this in that men highly value women in their reproductive prime. Also, highly deviant males sometimes act this way. But it is a far cry from the norm. Although there is a grain of truth to the sentiment, the statement is false. It's actually patently ridiculous.

It assumes that women can get sex any time they want, but don't want it as much as men. Both of these are not true. You only have to look at the amount of time almost every woman spends desperately trying to attract a man to know it's not true. If it were true, women would just show up. They don't do that. They spend hours and hours finding the right outfit, making sure her makeup and hair is perfect, not to mention a thousand other things, carefully intended to attract men.

There is no way around it. Men pursue and women attract. In most normal cultures, the woman makes it very clear when and who she wants and the man then either steps right up to the plate, or doesn't, depending on his inclination. Women compete with eachother in this way to get the best man they can. Women in our country want you to believe that they are so unbelievably high status that they can snap their fingers and get any man they want and that their main problem is beating them off with a stick. The reality is far different. The average woman either whores around (ie. takes anyone she can get) or spends long periods of time dateless. Either way, they go to great lengths to attract, *but are way too neurotic to choose who,* let alone make it obvious that they are interested. Plus, if you are interested, your value plummets and they don't want you anymore. The problem isn't that the guy is a loser. The problem is that the woman is a neurotic freak who lost touch with reality a long time ago. She can't engage the

mating game in any sane way... and loses big time for it. A woman has ten to fifteen years to get herself a man. After that, she is only good for occassional sex. Her status reflects that. Too many women find this out after it is far too late to do something about it.

Understand that when women are playing this game they are trying to fool you about something. They want you to be misinformed about your worth and options relative to hers, not only as an individual but men as a group. They do this for two reasons. They want to get someone much better than they normally should be able to (but are *far* too lazy and fucked up to, ummm, make themselves better). And they want you to accept behavior from them that you *never* would, if you knew you had options.

Don't be fooled by this. Laugh in the face of any fruitloop who thinks she can act bitchy toward you.

Plenty of fish in the sea.

Previous Bonecrker Index Next

Rats! (Or, He Chases Her Until She Catches Him)

Bonecrker #33 - Women's Lack of Standards

. · 2 February 2004 · Archived copy · Original

The problem with women is they really *don't* have standards. They say they have standards but they are mostly bullshit. The day after she randomly rejects you (claiming not measuring up to her standard), you will see her with some loser that meets nobody's standards.

Women and men both *should* have standards. For a woman, the man should be reasonably fit (ie not 100 pounds overweight), the same height as her, the same education and socio-economic standing, should not have bad habits (drugs, alcohol, smoking, criminal record etc.) should have a job (within reason, type and income are irrelevant), should have his own living space (ie not living in his parents basement or at a PADS shelter), but most important of all, he should be of good character. I have yet to meet a woman who actively seeks out men who meet these reasonable standards. However, I meet pleeeenty of women who have taken men from the trashcan of society. I would like to point out, that a woman without real standards (as opposed to simple lip service to the idea to cover for her fucked-upness) is of low quality.

Personally, I have very high standards with women. I'll fuck a woman who isn't up to snuff, but the amount of time I let her hang around is directly related to how well she meets my standards. Most of my standards are related to character. Most people's should be.

.

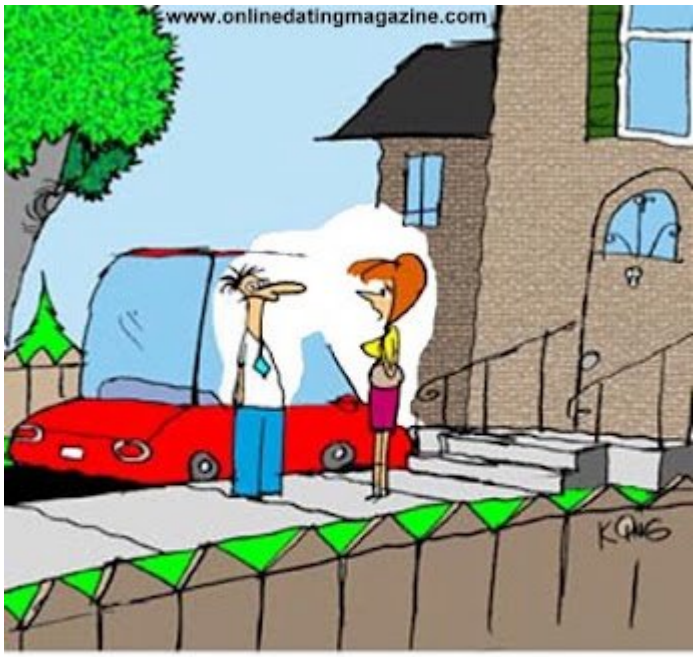
Previous Bonecrker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #5 – Women Choosing Losers

Bonecrker #34 - Online Dating - NOT!

. · 3 February 2004 · Archived copy · Original



"Let's go back to meeting on-line. You're much better looking there."

Nothing will change the fact that *all* of the women on dating sites are what you might call "hard to place"... as in the adoption term for older children of questionable backgrounds with bad habits and other undesirable traits. The women on these sites are desperately trying to deny that they are either dateless losers or being passed around as a whore because nobody wants to keep them. It's all an act. They are trying to appear as if they aren't the type of girl who has to be on a dating site because they don't attract a man in their day-to-day lives. And they are desperately trying to deny the type of man who does approach her on the site.

Oddly enough, this doesn't hold true for the men. There is a much broader cross-section of all types of men. But they get one whiff of the freak-show and go, "No thanks!" Either that or they are 'slumming' for easy sex with women who can't be too picky.

Remember that whenever you are dealing with a chick from a dating site. Perhaps it would be best to not look for women there. They are of low quality. They know they are of low quality but are doing everything they can to deny it. And, they assume that since you are approaching them, you must be of low quality also (aaaaahhh, gotta love that social proofing).

You'll have much better luck at the mall, if you know what you are looking for.

.

Previous Bonecrker Index Next

.

.

Further Reading:

.

Bonecrker #53 – Online Dating is a Scam

.

Bonecrcker #89 - Identifying Women Who Are Wasting Your Time

.

Bonecrcker #90 – There Is No Point In Approaching Any Woman Who Doesn't Look At You And Go "Yum"

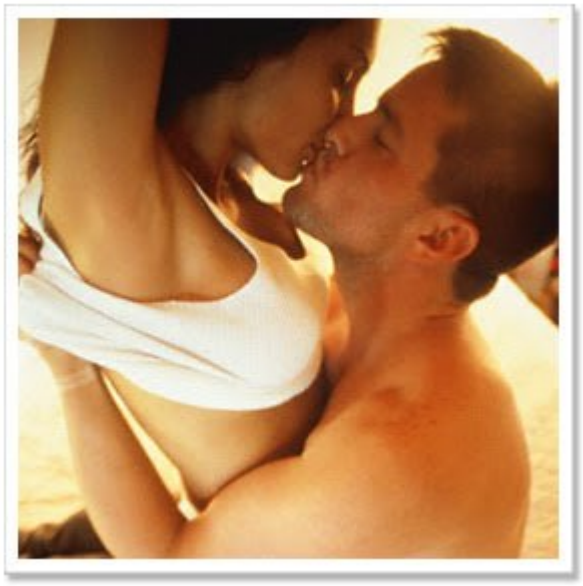
Bonecrcker #124 – Women on Online Personals Are Just Wasting Your Time

.

Online Dating is Futile -- Roissy

Bonecrker #35 - You Mean NOTHING To A Woman Until You Have Sex

. · 4 February 2004 · Archived copy · Original



My views on "chicks" are based on observation and experience and they are very reliable. A man can expect a woman to act as if nothing is going on, to fade on him, flake on him, play rapo and other games, string him along, forget his name, and a million other things that say he just doesn't matter. All that goes away (except for psycho chicks) after the first time you have sex. Until that happens, a man should take every single thing about a woman with a grain of salt. Also, there is a huge ass gap between what a woman says and what a woman does. Waiting around trying to get "close" to a girl, developing friendships and dating etc., are all highly counterproductive for a man because of this. A woman decides within seconds if she wants a man or not, and then immediately tests him to see if he is important enough and in demand enough to not have to chase her. Almost anything he does to pursue her, please her, or try to get close to her makes his value drop. It sucks that women are so fucked up. But it is what is.

A lot of men don't know this. They assume because they have put significant time and effort into wooing a girl and she is responding, that he is important to her. Nothing could be further from the truth. You will rarely find a woman who will admit this. But their behavior shows this *very* clearly. [It] is the rule, not the exception.

.

Previous Bonecrker Index Next

.

.

Further Reading:

.

Bonecrker #38 – You Mean Nothing Until You Have Sex II

Bonecrcker #127 – Timing is Important

Bonecrcker #128 – Women as “Friends”

Bonecrcker #130 – Never Allow a Woman to Call You a Friend Until You Have Had Sex at Least Once

Bonecrcker #156 – Friends With Benefits

Pook #5 – Lesson Two: Friendship – Abandon All Hope Ye Who Enter

Bonecrker #36 - Just Say No to Divorced Women

. · 5 February 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Most men who are divorced have been abandoned/victimized by a woman who flaked on them. They did their part, she did not. He did not want the divorce and she forced it on him, for no reason at all beyond her own insanity. The reverse is not true. Most women who are divorced, caused their divorce, chose divorce, forced divorce on their husband and and did all sorts of things to cause as much harm as possible, usually during a self-destructive death spiral. To say any sane man should stay the hell away from them is an understatement. There are exceptions, but they are relatively uncommon. Just as there are exceptions to divorced men. Some were abusive freaks, or ran off with their secretary or something equally inappropriate. But they are rare outside the lower socio-economic classes. Even the exceptions (and I have direct experience with this), a man will find she is the type of woman who seeks out bad men. You'll see a long history of weeding out the good men and only choosing the bad. Not that big of a problem. The problem happens when they try to get *you* to recreate the behavior and then dump you if you refuse. Ahhh yes, the joys of being called a loser because you refuse to beat someone.

The bottom line. Men should just say no to divorced women, especially with kids. But women don't have to follow the same rule. They can find many great men who have been divorced and encounter few problems if any. The kids thing though is a hassle, and a major obstacle to any type of serious long-term relationship, even if they are very young when you first come on the scene.

.

Previous Bonecrker Index Next

.

Related:

Bonecrcker #119 – Sleeping with Single Moms and Cohabitating

Bonecrcker #163 – A “Real Man” Wouldn’t Shun a Woman with Kids

Bonecrker #37 - Gifts

. · 6 February 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Gifts... are important if you are in a relationship. The rule here is, except for flowers, no gifts except on the big three... your anniversary, her birthday and Christmas. A man has to strike a fine line between getting a good gift and "paying for performance". They need to be moderately expensive (from $50 to a couple hundred or more depending on how rich you are) but can never be richly expensive (ie, no matter how rich you are, $500 is a bad idea). More than that though, they need to be symbolic. By that, they must represent care and thought put into them. You lose points for asking what she wants and gain points at playing the game: you hint at what you like and I'll take notes. When I was in relationships, and even occasionally now, I rely on certain categories of gifts that tend to be winners. Top of the list is jewerly. Not expensive jewerly, but cool jewelry (NO RINGS>>>>>NO EXCEPTIONS!!!!!!!!) This requires window shopping with her (Hey, look at the cool jewerly over there... maybe if you are a good girl, I'll get you that for your birthday next month, haha). Other winners are accessories (handbags, wallets, scarves) carefully chosen to match her style and look good. Clothes and shoes are a double edged sword. Never buy them unless you are absolutely positive of her size in that item. Make sure you choose items that match her style from the classy end. Lingerie is a big no-no and a waste of money. Another winner is artwork. A nice poster of a famous painting she admires in a nice frame is a sure winner (lots of extra points for knowing the art she admires). I tried this on a couple of girls and they go apeshit over it. I spend $100 and you would think I took them on a shopping spree through Tiffany's. Other winners... going cool places (massive extra points if the place has symbolic value to her but she rarely goes there, even more points if it is symbolic to the relationship... first date, first kiss, first sex, etc.)... pampering (usually an add on), cooking a special dinner, massage, away for the weekend someplace... and lastly, cards that are symbolic, somehow matching something about her, or something going on in your lives etc. Even better are homemade cards, if you got the skills (or even if you don't).

Gift giving is a big deal for women and never to be taken lightly if you are enmeshed with one. It's such a big deal that other women will grade your woman based on how good a gift you got her (ie how much you care about her). She'll lose status over a crappy gift. Women are nuts.

Previous Bonecrker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #21 – Who Pays?

Bonecrker #38 - You Mean Nothing Until You Have Sex II

. · 7 February 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Until you put your penis in a woman, you mean *nothing* to her, no matter what. Even after that, many will still flake on you soon after.

No matter how hot and heavy and interested in you she seems, no matter how much she grinds against you on the dance floor or whispers dirty promises in your ear, no matter how much she said she wants you to call her, no matter what love letters she writes you professing her undying love, until you put your penis in her, from her point of view, it is as if none of that ever happened and you are a stranger being met for the first time. That first sexual contact is the very beginning of your relating to her. Before then, you don't exist.

Men assume they are building up a relationship and getting to know her with the eventual goal of making her close enough to you and trusting enough of you to have sex. This is completely erroneous. Women lie about this all the time which is the source of the misunderstanding. What women actually do is keep a bunch of potentials in the wings and have sex with one of them (or some complete stranger) quite at random when they want to initiate courtship with them. The less you are willing to wait around for her to decide to fuck you, the higher your status. Also, since it is mostly random, it is a much better strategy for men to look for the woman who wants him right now, rather than to invest time and energy on a woman. However, women are completely neurotic, so you have to disguise it as something innocuos (hey, want to come over to my place and watch this new DVD I got....hehehe). You both know the real reason she is coming over to your place but you both must pretend it just sort of happened. It is very important that, if a woman ever says no to you, during the course of you seducing her, that you wander off, preferably with someone else. Hey, want to come over to my place and see the new DVD I got? No? Well, look, I"m busy right now and I gotta go, but I'll call you later in the week. Don't call her. And if she doesn't call you, forget all about her.

Some women are psychotic and prone to random slutty stuff like going to a club, doing a bunch of ecstasy and then blowing some random guy in the bathroom. Look, but don't touch. There is nothing you can do about women being neurotic except work around it and prevent it from impacting your life. But psychotic women are a whole different story. They are rare (thankfully) but extremely toxic. Keep them out of your life at all costs.

.

Previous Bonecrker Index Next

.

Further Reading:

.

Bonecrcker #35 - You Mean Nothing to a Woman Until You Have Sex

Bonecrcker #127 – Timing is Important

Bonecrcker #128 – Women as “Friends”

Bonecrcker #130 – Never Allow a Woman to Call You a Friend Until You Have Had Sex at Least Once

Bonecrcker #156 – Friends With Benefits

Pook #5 – Lesson Two: Friendship – Abandon All Hope Ye Who Enter

Bonecrker #39 - Fat Bottomed Girls

. · 8 February 2004 · Archived copy · Original

The big difference between a fat man and a fat woman is how they got that way. A fat guy gets that way either through ignorance or because he just doesn't give a shit. It tends to sneak up on him sometime in his late 30's. A lot of these guys are athletes of the football/wrestling type who just don't understand that as they let their muscle mass atrophy and as they age, their need for calories diminishes greatly. They keep eating the way they always have and balloon up. Then, there is the guy with the stressful, hectic job, who eats like shit constantly because he is too busy to cook. Many guys are fat because their wives have engaged in a calculated campaign to make them fat on purpose to severely restrict his options (this is incredibly common by the way).

Women, on the other hand, tend to be fat because they are neurotic and insane. Compulsion, shame, fear and hatred are the watchwords here. *Most* fat girls have a severe eating disorder, usually Bulimia. Traits very similar to Borderline Personality Disorder go hand in hand with that. They are big time into suffering, mostly theirs. However, they want to take you along for the ride. One thing is for certain, their opinion of you is very, very low. They think you are a loser because you can't date anyone better then them. They despise you because they feel they can't do any better than a loser like you. They will hate you because they think you secretly consider them disgusting, ugly and worthless. They will blame you for everything bad in their lives including their fat.

Fat chicks are miserable fucks but very good at appearing otherwise until you are enmeshed with them. Then the suffering starts. It's best to avoid them like the plague.

Get on your bikes and ride!

.

Previous Bonecrker Index Next

.

.

Further Reading:

.

Bonecrker #57 – Approaching Fat/Ugly Chicks is Harmful to Your Self Esteem

.

Bonecrcker #157 – Eating Disorders

.

Bonecrcker #161 – The Old “Fat But Working On It” Line

Bonecrcker #171 – The Problem Isn’t the Body, It’s the Mind

.

Zenpriest #19 – How Women Keep Score

Bonecrker #40 - Relationship Phases

. · 9 February 2004 · Archived copy · Original

It's important to understand how a woman undermines the ability of a man to walk away from a bad situation, in order to prevent falling into a bad situation by degrees.

1). The first thing she will want to do is spend more and more time with you. This is the most innocuous and insidious of her tools, because it is quite a reasonable thing for two people to do when they enjoy eachother's company. Often, she will make the sex incredible (the best sex you will ever have with her) to promote you wanting to see her more and more. This is the best place for a man to resist, with the most rewards, but also the most unstable. You must put limits on her by being "busy". Although you shouldn't tell her unless directly questioned, "busy" includes seeing other women. If you have a number of pearls on a string, it is perfectly OK to say upfront that "busy" means you are unavailable with another girl unless she is into threesomes. Women will work the hardest here and enjoy your company the most, but will wander off with a guy who seems like he might marry her.

2). After she is seeing you often and regularly, she will want to be exclusive. This isn't that bad for a man but can cause problems because the skills you use to get other women become rusty (that's part of the point). At this stage, women will do tons of things to try and make you dependent on her. The sex is still good but the focus shifts on her trying to make you emotionally dependant on her. If you let things slip to this point, you basically have a limited time before she dumps you if you won't "commit". Understand that she is 100% seeing other guys behind your back though, if you are formally her boyfriend or not. "Commitment" is always a one way street, 100% of the time. The only thing that will force her to actually be exclusive with you is if she can't get anyone else (you should never be with a girl like that because she will secretly despise you for it).

When She Asks You To Be Exclusive... Play This Song
(It also works to just say, "I don't think *anyone* should be exclusive for the first six months." -- But the above song is hilarious!) -- R.F.

3). After you two are an item comes the obnoxious and constant attempts to manufacture a "living together" type of situation. She will constantly leave stuff over at your place and change things around to suit her taste. She will bring it up again and again and is likely to manufacture a situation where she becomes homeless and needs to move in with you. Expect ultimatums. Expect fights. Expect downright obsessive behavior, especially if you are "cheating" on her. The good news is she will be much less likely to fuck other guys if she is living with you (if she does, it means she is either insane or about to dump you). The bad news is it will be incredibly difficult to get rid of her and she will literally rip your life up by the roots once she gets tired of waiting for marriage and leaves. This is the absolute last stand for a guy. If you screw up here, you will have a tough time of it.

4). When you live together, depending on the woman and how old you two are, comes the constant nagging for an engagement ring. It begins with attempted brain washing and dissolves into fighting if you resist. If you ever flat out tell her you won't marry her, ever, for any reason, she will burn your life and leave. However, she can and will cheat on you without a second thought. "Commitment" is always a one way street. If you catch her, she will beg for forgiveness and try to bend the situation into a marriage proposal, or burn your life and leave. The older you two are, the shorter this time period. If you meet a girl in college (cough) it can last a rollercoaster ride, a decade long. If you meet her when you are 30, expect demands for marriage within 6 months. If she is 35, the demands will be angry and psychotic. However, she can and usually will, leave without a second thought. It will be as if you two were never together. This last is probably the most important reason to never get married. It's a scam. Your lover never bothered to develop deep feelings for you even though she has done everything in her power to make you

have them for her. You must be very, very careful here because most girls will attempt to get pregnant to try and force you into marrying them. If you say no, they will either get an abortion or seek child support from you. Note that a significant portion of the time (perhaps as high as 30%, by some estimates) the child isn't yours. This is a purposeful response to careful birth control efforts on your part. Always make sure you know if she leaves and has a bun in the oven. Always get a DNA test. Be knowledgeable of wacko laws regarding this, especially if you live in a granola state (managed by nuts, fruits and flakes) like New York or California.

5). After the engagement immediately comes the specific dates and wedding plans, etc. Things are good but you have this nagging feeling that she actually hates your guts and plans to crucify you the second you get back from the honeymoon. Trust your instincts. If you push the wedding date back too much, she will likely fuck someone else and dump you... unless you have tons of cash that is. Then she will fuck someone else and you will never ever know. You can still leave her at the altar, but she will try to make you pay for it.

6). After marriage, the woman starts to attempt to reduce your status to that of marital slave. This is where the hardcore abuse starts with serious attempts to make you absolutely dependent on her. The moment you slipped the ring on her finger, she started planning the divorce. The wedding is the first attempt to bankrupt you, followed by constant demands for a bigger and better house you can't afford, new cars, expensive (yet worthless) crap of all makes and descriptions. To add icing on the cake, she will attempt to get pregnant with or without your consent, if you can afford a child or no. This is the stage women start to really let themselves go, but keep trying to cheat on you. Often they no longer care if you find out and being caught as it simply means she gets to fleece you for everything you have.

As you can see, there is a progression. This progression is fairly reliable among different women (stereotypical behavior is a sign of mental illness, BTW). The farther along in the progression you allow yourself to go, the harder it is to deal with and the more important it becomes that you actually deal with it.

Previous Bonecrker Index Next

Bonecrker #41 - Finding The Small Pool of Interested Women

. · 10 February 2004 · Archived copy · Original

What's going on (and what I think may be one of the differences in how women behave in other countries) is women totally suppress their body language and behavioural cues that let a man know they are interested in them. A man has to approach them before they will let on that they are attracted. Most men are not sophisticated enough to do this only a tiny bit, and not aware enough to consciously look for the behavioural cue that says this woman wants me to approach (it's actually unnatural to be that attuned, but it is what's needed).

The result? Most men don't approach women, causing both men *and* women to go without. They do this because every time (it seems) they approach a woman at random, it gets a negative result. However, it's actually not every time, it's just most times because they can't separate the small group of women who want them from the large group of women who don't. A few men are persistent. They approach a lot of women, and surge ahead with any one woman until she forces him to stop in some way. This is very frightening for women because they are extremely weak in all ways compared to a man. Her ability to make him stop is based almost solely on his consent or another man coming to her aid.

Also, there is a big problem in that objective worth doesn't mean anything anymore. A large, muscular, svelte, handsome, intelligent man with tons of money naturally assumes most women will be attracted to him. He approaches a woman he wants and is shut down. He naturally assumes this is a test of the steel content of his balls and turns it up a notch... causing a bad situation. He can't believe the small pool of women he actually has to choose from and the randomness of it all. I mean, if Pamela Anderson rolled up on you while you were working the register at Burger King and started going oooooohhhh, your soooo hot, let's go out somewhere tonight, would you be interested or would you assume she was a serial killer and go running for the manager. Too many girls do the latter, in this situation. Something is wrong with them.

Previous Bonecrker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #122 – The Advantage The Big City Has Over The Small Town

Bonecrker #42 - Lesbians & Gay Men

. · 11 February 2004 · Archived copy · Original

There is no such thing as lesbianism. Women on women sex is a normal part of heterosexual sex. That's why women who hate men are a relatively recent phenomenon and why they look and act deviant. If lesbianism was real, you would see two things.... no history of sex with men, and normal women/women relationships where the people involved are just like everyone else in all ways. They wouldn't hate men, either. They'd be indifferent. You see the exact opposite in the lesbian community... long history of sex with men, abnormal/no relationships, *intense* hatred of men, and most of all, bizarre, stereotypical behavior that you can use to identify them. This last wouldn't be that big of a deal if it wasn't bizarre. For example, many "lesbians" like sports. That's a *normal* type of thing to be associated with a group of people. But, many more "lesbians" practice witchcraft (and live an accompanying delusional lifestyle). That's a decidedly *abnormal* thing to be associated with a group. It let's you know they aren't legitimate, as does the entire pattern with them, even the fact that there is a pattern.

There is a similar thing going on with gay men. To put it another way, if being a gay man was a normal variant of sexuality, gay men would act like *men*, instead of like gays. I actually look at this as a continuum. Small subsets of gay men are legitimately gay, while the rest are just freaks. The *real* gay men act like *men*, not demented perverts. Why do I say this? Because unlike with lesbians, there is a looooong history of a small part of the male population, in all cultures, who form *relationships* (as opposed to 500 sex partners a year) with men. Depending on the demands of the culture, they may or may not breed, but the main relationship is with a man. They acted in all ways like men do and there was rarely any stigma.

The whole thing is just silly and very much their own business.... until they try to push it off on the rest of us. A line has to be drawn at that. Don't interfere with gay people's lives. But don't allow them to interfere with our life either.

Previous Bonecrker Index Next

Further Reading:

Bonecrker #52 - Man-Hating Dykes

Bonecrker #60 – A Man Must Strive to Prevent Women from Having the Smallest Shred of Power Over Him

Bonecrcker #135 – With Gay Marriage Legal, Gays Might Stop Getting Into Marriages That Are a Lie

Bonecrcker #136 – Not All That Opposed To Gay Marriage

A New Kind of Bigotry

Bonecrker #43 - Women Behave Like Beavis and Butthead

. · 12 February 2004 · Archived copy · Original

There was an old "Beavis & Butthead" episode where the boys went down to the local dog pound to get a dog.

Naturally, they wanted one who was studly. So they walked down the row of cages looking for a suitable dog. If the dog looked friendly, Butthead would say "Wuss!" with great contempt and move on to the next cage. When he spotted one who looked vicious enough, he'd say "Beavis? The Test!" and then he'd insert Beavis' arm into the cage.

If the dog licked Beavis' arm, Butthead would say, "That answer was incorrect!" and move on to the next cage.

Finally, one dog sank his teeth into Beavis … and that was the one they took home.

Something similar happens with dating.

The reason I like this joke so much is because it is such a strong, multi-faceted allegory of what is going on with American women.

1). The first is the understanding that American women have allowed themselves to become more than a little bit like Beavis and Butthead. Vicious yet weak, depraved, exploitative and most of all... stupid. They are dangerous deviants that most people fail to take seriously.

2). So, of course, they are going to choose a pet that matches their character. Note that they are so self-involved and fucked up that they are unable to distinguish something they want from something that is good. They don't know

that what they want is nuts, but worse, they treat what they don't want, even though it is obviously better (to a normal person), as if it had no value.

3). They go to an artificial situation (a pound) where the state has rounded up those who have been cast-away (divorce) and forcibly limited their choices. Without this interference, *none* of the dogs would even consider Beavis and Butthead. They do it because they are forced too. Also, since the issues of supply and demand have been artificially altered, the low quality element (Beavis and Butthead) gets to pick and choose among the high quality element. The situation is so lopsided that they feel the need to "test", even though every dog in the pound is actually acceptable.

4). Because Beavis and Butthead are fucked up, their test is fucked up. It displays sadism and exploitation (Butthead) and masochism (Beavis).

5). The only thing that matters about the dog is the fact that it will hurt them. Self-destructive people, situations and impulses are "cool."

So, we have a situation where a man is forced to seek after Beavis and Butthead rather than be imprisoned and alone, with all other choices kept away from him with the judicious use of force. In order to do that, he must be willing to bite them. What the joke doesn't mention is the dog goes right back to the pound after Beavis and Butthead lose interest and wander off to the next fucked up situation.

Previous Bonecrker Index Next

Bonecrker #44 - Women Have Contradictory Love

. · 13 February 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Women have been tricked into seeking after what is not in their own best interest in a highly neurotic fashion. They've been tricked by the small fraction of women who are convinced this is actually good to do because they are psychotic. If you were to ask most women, hey, how's your love life, almost all of them would say it's horrible (well, no shit, look who you are chasing after). Later in life, after those poor decisions have been left to fester, the question changes to hey, how is your life in general... with the same answer. Women's lives *suck* because they have chosen to believe those lies. Until they seek after the truth, there is no hope for a better outcome for them. They must wake up from their trance and see that what is normal, sexy and attractive in men is that a man is strong and of high quality.... physically, mentally, emotionally, financially and most of all, spiritually. Choosing a man like that, and being committed to him, is the *only* path to a happy life for a woman.

Men cannot do that for women. Yes, we can point it out, but only they can experience the truth for themselves. Quite frankly, it is not my responsibility. If someone tells you shit tastes good, and you nod your head and agree and spoon it into your mouth, well, there is nothing I can do for you. And it will tend to piss me off if I prepare a sumptuous, nutritious 3 course feast for you in the hopes you will stop, but you spit at my feet and yell at me. When you start clutching your stomach and throwing up, why should I take care of you? For that matter, don't expect a big sloppy kiss any time soon.

But, what we can (and should) do is make sure our needs are met, protect ourselves from an inappropriate shunting of responsibility from them to us, and most of all, *stop enabling their foolishness*. These three things are highly related. When you do one, you tend to do them all.

This is one of the things that really pisses me off about women. *None* of the things that make me a desirable man (money, looks, body, personality etc.) that I work on, mean a damn thing to them. In fact, many of these things are a detriment, as they chase after omega male (scumbag) traits. But, social proofing.... *that* matters. I got news for them. Social proofing pretty much means I can't or simply won't give them what they want. Social proofing means one of three things. I'm not going to commit under typical circumstances (me). I'm taken, so you have no chance with me (typical married guy). Or, worst of all, I'm taken and I'm the type of lying, cheating, scum who will do it with someone behind my wife's back (i.e. poor character). Social proofing has negative survival value for women. It's neurotic and unnatural.

Previous Bonecrker Index Next

.

Further Reading:

.

Philalethes #27 – In the Battle of the Sexes, If She Wins, She Loses

Bonecrker #45 - Niceguys

. · 14 February 2004 · Archived copy · Original

One of the things I don't like about the "niceguy" label is the assumption that niceguys are nice because they are afraid to be otherwise or it is part of approval seeking behavior or that the world revolves around ruthless, brutal behavior of which niceguys are ignorant and victims of.

This just isn't true.

What is true is that almost anything of any worth has been created by the good people of the world, despite negative influences. Bad people create jack shit. And that goodness flows from strength. It is the assholes of the world who are not doing what they are supposed to be doing, making life shitty for everyone. I'm not a niceguy because I was born that way. Nor am I a niceguy because of socialization. I'm a niceguy because I specifically choose to be so. It's part of my method of living a good, decent and satisfying life, because I have noticed that people who are not "nice" simply aren't able to get that for themselves.

Being an asshole is a weakness that makes a person's life sad and pathetic... all the while desperately trying to fool themselves and others that it isn't so.

Previous Bonecrker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #64 – On Players

Bonecrker #46 - Feminism Turns Women Into Mere Sex Objects

. · 15 February 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Feminism has created a situation where women are usually useless for anything except sexual recreation (many are useless for that too). That is the point of feminism... to marginalize women by turning them into whores (has there ever been a society where a whore was anywhere but at the bottom?) That's why looks are such a big deal these days. Feminists sold this sick situation by telling women that they were doing the opposite. Their behaviours just don't match the goals they give lip service to. It's a huge scam.

I've said it before and I'll say it again. The woman who works very hard at being worth more than the use of her body as a fuck toy, has such an incredible advantage over all other woman that she can basically pick and choose whomever and whatever she wants. A woman of quality is so rare that men (once they figure it out) will run over themselves trying to get to her. Of course, there are a few dipshits who just want T & A. But, you don't want them.

Previous Bonecrker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #54 – Women Should Cultivate Anything That Typically Is A Virtue (advice to women)

Bonecrcker #151 – The Woman Who Is The Exception Phenomenon (advice to women)

Bonecrcker #154 – Women Are Bitches To Nice Girls (advice to women)

Bonecrcker #167 – Advice For Women on Inviting Men To Approach You (advice to women)

Bonecrcker #174 – The Measure of a Person's Worth Is Their Actions (advice to women)

Bonecrcker #176 – Women Making More Money Than Their Husbands (advice to women)

Bonecrcker #177 – Responsibility and Power Go Hand In Hand (advice to women)

Bonecrker #47 - Living in La-La-Land

. · 16 February 2004 · Archived copy · Original

I think that the basic problem is that most women here are only interested in the fantasy of living life and not the reality of it. Only what is going on in their heads matters to them, not what is actually going on outside in the real world. Any time there is a conflict between the two, they treat what's in their head as true rather than what's outside. That's the very definition of a crazy person. A big problem with that is what goes on in your head is transitory and ephemeral. It disappears as soon as you daydream about something else.

However, the behavior women do based on this have very real and permanent consequences.

For example, if you have some fantasy about being in love with a guy, marry him and then have kids, but 10 years later you lose interest in that fantasy, the consequences of that are rather harsh. And women never seem to realize what is at the root of their problems. They tend to blame the problems on men. Blah, blah, blah... I don't love you anymore because you are boring, unromantic and a whole bunch of other things that are thinly veiled bullshit with no basis in reality. The truth is they were never in love in the first place. Love has to do with what you do outside in the real world... your behavior and what you build with it. It has nothing to do with what is going on in your head, even though what is going on in your head may be fun and exciting.

I think a pretty basic thing every man needs to pay attention to when in any relationship is how much does the woman's behavior match up with what she is saying. She says "I love you", but does she act in a loving manner? Does she do things that are incompatible with a person who loves you? Most importantly, does she work toward long term goals based on nurturing a love relationship that is permanent, or is she just along for the ride. *Very* few women act in any way except just enjoying the moment. What that means is, your behavior and the decisions you make with regard to her should be based on that. I think it is inappropriate to be monogamous with someone who is just having fun times with you. Certainly it is not a good idea live with them, marry them and God forbid, have children with them. Those things absolutely require certain continuous and extended behaviours that the woman (and men and women are absolutely different in this regard) is just not interested in.

To put it another way: American men make the best husbands on the planet. But, American women make the worst wives.

Everyone except Americans seems to know it, too.

Previous Bonecrker Index Next

Further Reading:

Bonecrker #74 – All Married Women Are Available

Bonecrcker #181 - Women Don’t Hate Men, But They Don’t Love Them Either

Bonecrcker #182 – Women Want Strong Emotions But Don’t Care If Those Emotions Are Negative

Pook #40 - Do Girls Want Sovereignty?

Empty Vessels and Relative Truth

Bonecrker #48 - Sexes Approaching Eachother

. · 17 February 2004 · Archived copy · Original

For all the myths that women are more intuitive, more social, more emotionally intelligent, aware of feelings etc., it is all basically a lie.

The bottom line is this: Men don't actually make the first move... women do.

They signal openness. Or rather, they are supposed to. Then an interested man will signal his interest to approach, usually by looking her in the eyes and smiling. *A normal man won't apporach unless invited.* If a man approaches without being invited it either means he is a psycho or he is one of the few men that have learned that women just don't get it, and he is compensating by testing the waters more aggressively. Yes, a lot of men don't know the steps to meeting a woman and, as a result, are socially awkward and have trouble meeting women (even when she is highly interested). This lack of skill leads to lack of confidence which then becomes a vicious circle.

Part of the problem is women are just as clueless about doing their part in the meeting ritual.

But, the biggest part of the problem is most women are completely out of control of their own sexuality. What I mean by this is, rather than deciding beforehand what she wants and then figuring out how to go about getting it, she tends to instead shut down. 90% of the time, and she is completely uninterested in any partner. That's a big problem because (most) men hunt and women choose. If 90% of the time that choice is no to anyone, and she is unaware of what she is doing, the chances for success aren't very good. The other 10% of the time, she gets overwhelmed by her needs (hormonal and otherwise) which forces her to be open to men who aren't a good match... leading to the ironic perception that there are no good men (ie no men who are a good match for her) *Even though she is surrounded by them.* Add in that most women put themselves on sexual display with the way they dress but shut down all signals of interest and the stage is set for some pretty fucked up behaviours.

In short, neurotic behavior in both men and women, lack of knowledge and lack of skill are at the root of the problem. Add in the fact that the relationship is mostly and illusion from the woman's point of view (ie she can and will walk with no notice and no reason at all) and you have a highly unstable situation where nobody is getting their needs met.

To fight against this, people have to study the situation and bring what they are doing into conscious awareness, and focus their will on making changes.

For example, I discovered that even though most women won't signal interest, a man can provoke her by skipping a step. Simply looking any woman you meet directly in the eyes and seeing if she looks back, and then smiling if she does... this forces her to say yes or no with her body language. That's an aggressive thing to do (in non-neurotic cultures, women signal first, not men) but it is still in the realm of acceptable behavior. Men going, "hey, baby, hey baby," while you are trying to get to work, or worse, approaching when you make it clear they are not welcome, isn't acceptable. It means the guy is either a dumbass or a psycho. Unfortunately, alot of women are open to them during their 10%.

As a woman, it is extremely easy to get around this. First, choose who you want. Then, do what a man would do. Look him right in the eyes and smile. You might have to do it several times if he is a dumbass. He'll usually approach you unless he is taken.

Previous Bonecrker Index Next

“Women chat happily, send sexually explicit signals and encourage the man’s attention, even if they have absolutely no interest in him. This gives a woman time to assess a man, say [Karl Grammer of the Ludwig Boltzmann Institute of Urban Ethology in Vienna, who studied 45 male-female pairs of strangers in their teens and early twenties]… Importantly, the women also seemed to control the encounter – what the women did had a direct effect on what the men did next. ‘You can predict male behaviour from female behaviour but not the other way around,’ says Grammer” – *New Scientist Magazine* (London), February 14, 2001

Cary (1976) discovered that the woman, through eye contact, controlled the course of interaction with a male stranger, both in the laboratory and in singles' bars. Perper (1985) gave a detailed description of courtship, stressing an escalation-response process in which women play a key role in escalation or deescalation. The steps in this process are approach, turn, first touch, and steady development of body synchronization.

Although these reports are clearly valuable, most researchers addressed courtship very generally, and some failed to recognize the importance of the female role in the courtship process .What was needed was a more complete ethogram of women's nonverbal courtship signals. To compile such a catalog of flirting behavior exhibited by women involved in initial heterosexual interaction, more than 200 adults were observed (Moore, 1985) in field settings such as singles' bars, restaurants, and parties.

Research has shown, therefore, that the cultural myth that the man is always the sexual aggressor, pressing himself on a reluctant woman, is incorrect. -- Courtship Signaling and Adolescents: "Girls Just Wanna Have Fun"? Monica M. Moore, Ph.D.Department of behavioral and Social Sciences, Webster University

---

Further Reading:

Zenpriest #40 - Girls Just Wanna Have Fun

Philalethes #29 - They Can Do It Because They Really Believe It!

Rats!

Bonecrker #49 - Shit Tests vs. Psychotic Raving Lunatic Tests

. · 18 February 2004 · Archived copy · Original

All women test, that's a fact of life. They want to know the steel content of your balls. To pass the test, your response needs to be some version of, I'm going to do whatever I choose to do, whether you like it or not, and for no better reason than I want to…..and if you don't like it, you can just leave because, quite frankly, there are other women waiting for me to get rid of you so they can have a turn.

But…….there are relatively normal, reasonable tests…..and psychotic, raving lunatic tests. If you ever get a psychotic, raving lunatic test, don't address it…..just dump her with no further explanation. Simply walk away from her and never speak to her again. Also, if you pass normal tests, all testing should cease for awhile. If, instead, she escalates the testing, the more she escalates, the more you should consider dumping her.

Examples of lunatic tests:

She accuses you of cheating

She steals from you

You go to the bathroom at a bar, restaurant etc. and you come back to find her flirting with another guy, she hits on another guy while you are around or tries to provoke a situation between you and another guy

She makes a scene out in public

Calls the cops on you for any reason whatsoever

Well, you get the picture.

Previous Bonecrker Index Next

Related:

Philalethes #3 – The Anti-Logic of Women

Bonecrker #50 - Escalating with Women

. · 19 February 2004 · Archived copy · Original

While it's good to have a take it or leave it attitude, it's also important to have the attitude of continuously testing the waters and trying to advance things. If you don't, when she expects you to, she will lose interest/get pissed and wander off. The pattern goes something like this. If you look at a woman and she looks back, she is inviting you to be attracted and initiate things with her…..so smile. If she is receptive and smiles back, she is inviting you to come talk to her. If you talk to her and she seems to enjoy it, she is inviting you to get to know her, so get her phone number. If you talk to her on the phone and you "click", she is receptive to being asked out on a date. If you are out on a date and she touches you, she is inviting you to touch her, so do so in an appropriate way. Later, try to hold hands with her. If she holds hands with you, she is inviting more intimate contact, so touch her hair. If she lets you touch her hair, it's OK to try and kiss her. If she kisses you, then it's OK to cuddle with her. If she cuddles with you, it's OK to touch her more intimately. If that goes well, touch her sexually….and escalate from there. The point is to not skip any steps and always be testing out the next level of intimacy. This works best if you take your time, build anticipation and get her expecting/desiring the level of intimacy you already have. You do that by testing a little bit and then pulling back, pushing ahead a little bit more and then pulling back. She is in control about letting you advance but after she makes that decision, you are in control about when, and how much. That's the behavior that separates a friend from a lover.

Previous Bonecrker Index Next

Bonecrker #51 - Don't Argue With Women

. · 20 February 2004 · Archived copy · Original

It is a mistake to argue with women. Arguments are all about words and women in our culture don't match up words with actions and freely say things that don't make sense and then deny that they don't make sense. In short, they aren't honest when trying to solve problems using discussion, negotiation and compromise. The reason they aren't honest is because they are trying to be abusive and exploitative rather than having relationships based on mutual love and respect.

Instead, deal with women in the realm of behavior. Point to a behavior you don't like and tell her to stop, or point out a missing behavior of hers and tell her to do it. Never discuss why you don't like it or why you want her to do something. Get used to saying the word NO….a lot. And NEVER discuss things in terms of right and wrong (it's enough that YOU want it). Always have a consequence lined up if she refuses, and ALWAYS come through with that consequence. Flakey girls get dumped, if you get my drift. This only works if you have her replacement waiting in the wings to take her place (your needs, not people's expectations, are what's important). Understand that, in our culture, ALL girls are flakey and need to be dumped sooner or later, so don't hesitate to do so, or let them get away with anything. As this behavior among men becomes common (and it is), women's flakiness will drop off dramatically.

Previous Bonecrker Index Next

Further Reading:

Bonecrcker #93 – She's Lying

Bonecrcker #95 - No, no, no, no, No, NO!

Bonecrcker #97 – The #1 Mistake Most Men Make With Women Is… Talking To Them

Bonecrcker #110 – The Problem With Discussing Things With Women

Bonecrcker #113 – Everything Out of a Woman’s Mouth is a Lie

Social Strategy: Why Men Shouldn't Argue with Women

Philalethes #3 – The Anti-Logic of Women

Philalethes #8 – When the Cow Rides the Bull, Priest Watch Your Skull

Philalethes #29 – They Can Do It Because They Really Believe It!

Zenpriest #27 – Ignoring Women

The Intimate Journal of Henri Amiel – Dec, 26, 1868

Bonecrker #52 - Man Hating Dykes

. · 21 February 2004 · Archived copy · Original

There is a HEAVY undertone of lesbianism involved in the anti-men hate groups. Wherever you see the real fanatics that stray from the supposed issue at hand to spit vitriol at men, you find the lesbians behind it, or at least in the middle of it. When I say that gay people have an agenda and are trying to undermine our society, this is part of what I mean. These are some of the specific behaviours they are doing. They try to hide their man-hating, family-hating, society-hating agenda, but like all psychotics, they can't quite keep a lid on it.

Don't misunderstand me. There is nothing wrong with munching a little rug. Almost all girls have this as a normal part of their [hetero] sexuality. But lesbianism isn't about having sex with women…..it's about hating men, and it's about hating a system that values morality and rewards virtue and merit. In my opinion, that is a pretty strong case for treating self-described "lesbians" as pariahs. Certainly, no one should cooperate with them on anything, and should always be deeply suspicious whenever they bring up an issue that supposedly addresses a wrong-doing (for example…..gay marriage). Abortions, rape, equal rights, have all been fertile grounds for this manipulative crap. You can always tell because they are highly resistant to any desire to critically examine the situation to find out if there is a problem and, if so, what is the exact nature of that problem. Mysteriously, they are never around when the work of fixing a real problem that has been identified. But, they never lack for time, energy or resources to spit hate at men, family, or just our way of life in general.

Previous Bonecrker Index Next

Further Reading:

Bonecrker #42 - Lesbians and Gay Men

Bonecrker #60 – A Man Must Strive to Prevent Women from Having the Smallest Shred of Power Over Him

Bonecrcker #135 – With Gay Marriage Legal, Gays Might Stop Getting Into Marriages That Are a Lie

Bonecrcker #136 – Not All That Opposed To Gay Marriage

A New Kind of Bigotry

Bonecrker #53 - Online Dating is a Scam

. · 22 February 2004 · Archived copy · Original

How much more evidence do you need to gather before you realize that the women on dating services are doing something other than looking for a man. What sort of behavior would you expect from women who were using the service to actually find a man? They would have pictures taken specifically to show them in the best possible light (cheap and easy to do in most places). They would write a well thought out, articulate profile, mind their P's and Q's, and try to both present themselves and what they want in such a way that they find someone who is a good match. They would, ummmm, actually look at men's profiles and email men they were interested in. And they would spend a significant amount of time chatting via IM, leaving it open only during times they have specifically put aside for this purpose. They would be polite, and interested in getting to know people to see if they were a good match and if it would be fruitful to meet with them in person.

Now, do women on the dating service do ANY of those things? Absolutely not. They do the opposite…..crappy pic of them and their ex with his head rubbed/cut out (sometimes, obviously drunk), profile looks like it was written by a 3rd grader who barely speaks English, with red flags all over the place, tons of rude, bitter, negative statements, sometimes openly stating they hate men or intend to exploit you, reveal little to nothing about what they are like as a person (sometimes because there is nothing there or something is there that nobody wants), rarely looks at men's profiles and NEVER responds to them no matter how good looking, alpha-male, rich, great personality, sexy, whatever, the man is, actively rude or time wasting on IM, pretends to bond with you and then, later, pretends has no idea who you are or what you agreed to do together earlier.

What this means, quite simply, is they aren't looking for a man (so, it's a waste of time to use this method to find a woman). At best, they are looking to have their egos stroked by saying no to all the men who seem to be interested in them (actually, these men have no interest in them and are just trolling the entire female database, for the one chick about to binge) and then will have an anonymous sexual encounter with some random loser, when they have been too long without love, sex or intimacy (ie they binge). At worst, these psychos are looking to actively harm someone, any way they can, as long as it is safe for them.

What's going on with the online dating thing is women are wasting time and men are emailing hundreds of women, trolling for anonymous encounters with sluts.

Previous Bonecrker Index Next

Further Reading:

Bonecrker #34 – Online Dating – Not!

Bonecrcker #89 - Identifying Women Who Are Wasting Your Time

Bonecrcker #90 – There Is No Point In Approaching Any Woman Who Doesn't Look At You And Go "Yum"

Bonecrcker #124 – Women on Online Personals Are Just Wasting Your Time

Bonecrker #54 - Women Should Cultivate Anything That Typically is a Virtue...

. · 23 February 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Women should cultivate anything that is typically a virtue……honesty, commitment, kindness, nurturing behavior, focus, reliability. Although the list goes on and on, ALL of the things on that list go together. Nobody (and I mean NOBODY) cares that you have a high paying job or lots of "interests" or if you are smart, sophisticated, high maintenance, whatever. What they care about is if you are a good person. If they add you to their life (and that is what you are asking them to do), will you enhance their life or be a detriment. Sadly, almost all women are a detriment, and not in a minor way. Most men, who get married, can expect their life to turn to shit, because of direct behaviours from their women. No man wants that, and any man who even thinks he might someday want to be married, and have a family, is desperately looking for the woman who isn't like that. If you are that RARE woman (I have certainly never met one), you will have your choice of men, and be given preference above all others (except by the losers of our society…..drug users, criminals, frat boys, most lawyers etc……losers). Who should you choose? The same type of man who cultivates virtues. Although VERY few women are like this, large numbers of men are like this. They are all around you.

I'd like to point out that every woman SAYS they are like this, but when you look at their behavior, it just doesn't match up. Nobody cares what you say about how you are. They are judging you on your behavior. Only after a man sees by your behavior, that you are just another woman of low worth, does he start reducing you to only what your body is. If he had no sex drive, he would probably ignore you entirely. If you don't like that, then you must have something more to offer. That something must be of yourself…..not your role, not your status, not your occupation, and certainly not your tits, but….who….you…are…..must be noble and worthy. This is an objective criterion, not a subjective one. It can be learned and implemented and the rewards for doing so are very great.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Bonecrcker #46 – Feminism Turns Women Into Mere Sex Objects (advice to women)

Bonecrcker #151 – The Woman Who Is The Exception Phenomena (advice to women)

Bonecrcker #154 – Women Are Bitches To Nice Girls (advice to women)

Bonecrcker #167 – Advice For Women On Inviting Guys To Approach You (advice to women)

Bonecrcker #174 – The Measure Of A Person's Worth Is Their Actions (advice to women)

Bonecrcker #176 – Women Making More Money Than Their Husbands (advice to women)

Bonecrcker #177 – Responsibility And Power Go Hand In Hand (advice to women)

Bonecrker #55 - Dates

. · 24 February 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Dates, where you expend time, money, effort, whatever, are only for someone you've been with awhile and are already fucking (as in plural). You call both these situations "dates" but they aren't even close to being the same thing. The first case, you are setting up a situation for one or more of three things. You are being evaluated. Right away, this sends the exact wrong message, that you need to be good enough, somehow to be with a particular woman (to say that is a lie, is a dramatic understatement on many different levels). Second, it opens the door wide for exploitation. Who seeks out situations where they get to exploit people? Women like this. In other words, if she is seeking to get set up on dates, she is probably looking for someone to exploit and that means she has a whole bunch of other negative traits (like the ones yous saw, hehe). The last thing she is looking for is the hook up. Totally neurotic, restrictive, arrogant and contemptuous, 95% of the time, she "binges" the other 5% of the time. She looks to have sex with anybody (don't be surprised if you find out she went out after your date, picked up some drunk at a bar and had sex in his car, without even finding out his name) with no intimacy and often under fucked up circumstances. That's how she ended up with her charming tattoo and probably other fun stuff (like herpes). If you went out with her a dozen times, she would care about you no more than navel lint.

The second type of "date" is totally different. Doing it only with someone you are intimate with, it has the goal of doing something fun, to become even more intimate. Afterward, you are probably going home to have sex and be together.

Just say no to the first type of "date". Someone want to hook you up on a blind date? Say no. Tell them to have that person come along a few times when you are hanging out with that mutual friend, preferably for a relaxing evening at home.

Previous Bonecrker Index Next

Bonecrker #56 - Giving Stuff to Women Leads to Unreasonable Behaviour

. · 25 February 2004 · Archived copy · Original

...the attitude of giving stuff to women is what opens the door to unreasonable behavior and expectations in the first place. It's a form of brain washing. First, it's expected that you give the woman a gift (or they'll leave). Next, it has to be a good (defined by them based on the whim de jour) gift. Lastly, the standard for a "good" gift is made unreasonable. Not only is the standard of "good" gift set by her but she won't tell you what it is and will judge you negatively if you get it wrong, or even ask her about it.

This is best handled by saying, well, what makes you think you are entitled to a gift AT ALL? I will decide if, and under what circumstances you get a gift and that gift's nature. And, I could care less if you judge me negatively for it (very important). If you choose to leave over that, I WILL LET YOU GO (even more important).

Wrong attitude on men's part opens the door wide to unreasonable behavior, judgement and expectations on women's part.

If it was me, and the woman hinted that my gift sucked, I wouldn't be trying to get better gifts by asking her what a good gift is. I'd be considering dumping her. Why? Because, there is no fixable problem here. The relationship is taking an inexorable path down the shitter BY HER CHOICE. Not mine. She has become presumptuous and greedy, not that I have become a lame gift giver.

You see, the big lie here is that the problem is what the man is doing or even the problem is something the man and the woman are doing together. If that was true, you simply fix the problem and live happily ever after. It just doesn't work that way. No matter what you do, with her or by yourself, things will get worse and worse. The real problem is with her. She CHOOSES to be this way, so you have no power over her free will, other than to leave. Or better yet, say no to her, and do whatever the hell you were going to do anyway, until she chooses to leave.

Previous Bonecrker Index Next

Further Reading:

Bonecrker #21 - Who Pays?

Bonecreker #27 - Gifts

Bonecrker #55 - Dates

Bonecrker #57 - Approaching Fat/Ugly Chicks is Harmful to Your Self-Esteem

. · 26 February 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Approaching fat/ugly chicks can be seriously harmful to your self-esteem. They are no more likely to find you attractive than a Pamela Anderson look-alike, and you will feel like total shit when they give you that, “get away from me you loser” look. But, it gets worse….MUCH worse. Fat/ugly chicks assume that if you are paying them any attention at all, you must be such a fucking loser that you can’t get anyone else…..and they treat you like it. Of course, this does zero to affect their sense of entitlement. In other words, you are a loser for wanting someone so heinous but they are still a princess, even though they ARE heinous. Plus, women who are fat/ugly are usually INSANE. They are into suffering big time and want to take you along for the ride. Unlike men who are usually fat because they eat too much, women are usually fat as a side effect of serious personality disorders that manifest as bulimia (binge eating, with or without vomiting), drug use and other fun stuff. Stay the hell away from women like this.

Women often bitterly complain that they are discriminated against if they are fat. But, it’s not true. A man who is fat has no chance with women (unless he is in the criminal scum class….but that’s another story). But, most fat/ugly chicks have a man. The people who discriminate against them are other women, not men. However, many men learn the hard way that they aren’t just fat, they are demented assholes. They give them a chance, often giving several fat women a chance, only to be treated like total dirt in the most fucked up situations. So, they learn to avoid them (at least I have, lol). It’s this issue that makes men avoid fat chicks, not their weight.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Further Reading:

Bonecrker #39 – Fat Bottom Girls

Bonecrcker #157 – Eating Disorders

Bonecrcker #161 – The Old “Fat But Working On It” Line

Bonecrcker #171 – The Problem Isn’t the Body, It’s the Mind

Zenpriest #19 – How Women Keep Score

Bonecrker #58 - Women Are Narcissistic and Self-Absorbed

. · 27 February 2004 · Archived copy · Original

What's going on is women are totally narcissistic and self-absorbed. They also see the world in very distorted ways and are all the time mistaking where things are coming from.

For example, women do not ever want to hear anything about you (sad but true). Women always find this offensive and think the guy is narcissistic (a projection of what they actually are) even if his talking about himself is brief and in context to the situation. On the other hand, if you spend all your time asking leading questions about her and then fleshing out the details of her life, only pausing to add various compliments to her, she will think you are the most brilliant conversationalist in the world, even though you have basically said nothing. You can do this for hours and hours and she'll never even think to ask anything about you. It's downright bizarre and disturbing, once you've experienced it. But not as bizarre and disturbing as the effect it has on how they see you.

However, NEVER get in the habit of being a sounding board for women's problems. This has various, extremely negative, effects on how she sees you. Not only does she become a whiney drain on your very life-force, she permanently puts you in the "no sex" category. Every time you see her, she'll start telling you all her problems (even making up problems for purposes of drama). This also is so sick and bizarre that most men don't really believe it until they experience it for themselves.

Talking about her is a tool. A tool to build rapport with her during your first few conversations. It needs to be replaced with something else, soon after that. It's an example of mapping out the sickness that women have and using that information to work around it. However, like all tools, it is only good for certain specific situations. It will serve in many other related situations (you can always bang a nail with a wrench, but a hammer would be better) and is completely inappropriate for many more.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

"It was a fool who said that women are attached to their appearance. Anyone can see it is not their appearance they are attached to, but what their appearance brings them . . . attention, compliments, self-

respect, friends, employment, sex, men, children . . . and the list goes on!

I once heard a woman say "I take a lot of care of my appearance, but I don't like to think of myself as shallow"!" -- Kevin Solway

---

“‘Really, women’s desire is not relational, it’s narcissictic.’ — it’s dominated by the yearnings of ‘self-love,’ by the wish to be the object of erotic admiration and sexual need. Still, on the subject of narcissism, she talked about research indicating that, in comparison with men, women’s erotic fantasies center less on giving pleasure and more on getting it. ‘When it comes to desire,’ she added, ‘women may be far less relational than men.’” -- Sex and Relationships, Bonobo Sex, and ‘Lady Boners’: Is Women’s Desire Really That Confusing? – by Vanessa Richmond

---

"The second fastest way to lose a woman is to treat her as a sex object. The first fastest is not to." -- Fred Reed

---

"Women have no sympathy... And my experience of women is almost as large as Europe. And it is so intimate too. Women crave for *being loved,* not for loving. They scream at you for sympathy all day long, they are incapable of giving you *any* in return for they cannot remember your affairs long enough to do so." -- Florence Nightingale

Bonecrker #59 - Four Kinds of Women Which Are More Psycho than the Others

. · 28 February 2004 · Archived copy · Original

There are four classifications of women that are far more psycho than [the rest]. They are:

1. Woman with a criminal record (number one in the psycho classification)

2. Any woman who uses drugs of any type. Warning, this includes pot.

3. Any woman who works in any capacity in the sex for money industry……prostitute, phone sex, porno, stripper, nude pictures, hooters girl, shot girl, any job selling alcohol where looks are a factor (ie almost any job serving alcohol, except as a bartender/waitress in the most classy establishments).

4. Any woman that has been in a lesbian relationship. By that, I don't necessarily include bi/curious girls (lol, all women are bi/curious, despite what they may say). No, I mean any woman that has had a woman as sole-sexual partner on a regular basis.

There are also a dozen types of psychos that aren't as bad as the women you mention, but, since I consider ALL of these women to be in the, do not touch under any circumstances, OR ELSE, classification, you could argue that they are all equally bad.

For example:

Women that have ever dated a deviant male or female…..drug dealer, criminal etc

Married women

Women with accidental pregnancies

Has ever accused a man of rape or sexual harassment

Violent temper

Trains in weapons for no good reason

Has relatives that are deviant….see above

Eating disorder or (God forbid), serious mental illness like schizophrenia, bipolar, borderline or other personality disorder, PTSD (rape) and basically, anything else more serious than depression or an anxiety disorder

More than $100,000 in debt. With specific exceptions for good debt. Good debt is any debt spent on an investment that returns more money than it costs to repay the payments on the debt…..businesses, rental property, paper assets (rare) etc. The wealthiest people in the world are millions of dollars in debt…..good debt.

More than $10,000 in debt from anything else besides owning a home, student loans, or investing in a business, real estate etc.

Ever expresses hate speech or other hateful behavior about men, or any other type…..for example racist remarks.

Has had more than one abortion or has had even one abortion and doesn't express deep remorse for it, or treats the issue of abortion as a woman's right issue rather than a rather unfortunate circumstance to prevents people lives from being ruined.

Is a witch or (God forbid) a Satanist.

The list goes on and on. Basically, there are two types of women in this world, acceptable and unacceptable. The unacceptable ones are easy to identify. Their behavior is bizarre, deviant, and extreme.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Bonecrker #60 - A Man Must Strive to Prevent Women from Having the Smallest Shred of Power Over Him

. · 1 March 2004 · Archived copy · Original

The fact that [anti-male] sentiments exist and are widespread is one of the biggest reasons why a man, every man, must strive to prevent women from having even the smallest shred of power over him. He must build his life and his decisions like a fortress…..create his life with this goal in mind, that if he EVER sees even the slightest hint of attitudes like this, from any specific woman, no matter in what sphere of his life, he immediately and permanently removes that woman from his life. And he strives to prevent any of his resources from being usurped to support that woman. And his decisions are always made in such a way as to reserve that right.

In practical terms that means no marriage and no living together. It means saying no to almost everything a woman asks of you. It means making sure she can't get pregnant from you. It means not hiring women (and hiding that fact). It means not relying on women doctors, lawyers, accountants etc. It means voting against any candidate who tries to force you, through various means to support these women (ie no welfare, no child support laws, no funky divorce laws, and taxes and government spending, especially socialist spending kept to a minimum).

Women give great lip service to the tired old saying…..a woman needs a man like a fish needs a bicycle. But, what a lie that is. Without us, they starve. Let them starve.

BTW, heterosexual women aren't the only group that hold attitudes like this, are not even the ones that hold these attitudes and agenda the strongest. This is the reality behind the facade of most, if not all, groups associated with the far left (and many on the far right). Groups like the ACLU and NOW and the pro-life movement. If you wonder why I am so hell bent against gay marriage, it's because that issue isn't about equality for gays, it's about the availability of gay marriage serving THIS agenda: The destruction of marriage and the family. These people rationalize it (the insanity of this is extreme and obvious), by judging this way of life as somehow oppressive and unworthy….in need of tearing down to be replaced by something else. But, the truth is, these people are crazy and

they hate everything and everyone. They know damn well, this is the normal way of doing things and, if you destroy it, nothing will replace it. People will suffer and die. That's their goal. I refuse to cooperate. I am not fooled by their emotional and manipulative portrayal of this situation as one of equal rights, similar to the one we went through for race. It has nothing to do with that. And never did.

.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

.

.

Further Reading:

.

Bonecrker #18 – Three Rules to Follow

.

Bonecrker #42 – Lesbians & Gay Men

.

Bonecrker #52 – Man-hating Dykes

Bonecrcker #102 – What Matters is the Amount of Power and Choice You Have in a Relationship

Bonecrcker #135 – With Gay Marriage Legal, Gays Might Stop Getting Into Marriages That Are a Lie

Bonecrcker #136 – Not All That Opposed To Gay Marriage

.

A New Kind of Bigotry

Bonecrker #61 - There is No Pattern to a Woman's Attraction

. · 2 March 2004 · Archived copy · Original

There absolutely is no pattern whatsoever to a woman's attraction. Or rather, just like men, they are attracted to large numbers of the opposite sex, with a rather low standard of beauty. But, unlike men, they suppress that attraction (women are sick). They don't do that in other cultures which is why their behavior differs, I think. There is no pattern, AT ALL, to when a woman switches off her suppression of attraction. But, when she does, she rationalizes it after the fact. Often, she switches it off because she has starved herself for affection for so long that she "binges"…..goes out, gets drunk, and picks up some random guy. Not only that, but women are total cowards. Even if they are drooling over some guy, they won't even hint at it unless the guy elicits it somehow.

There are four exceptions to this. The first is if a guy is extremely provocative, with model good looks. Often, his presence will elicit a binge in a woman. Often it won't and he will be treated like a dog, even though he is literally, on the top of the food chain. The second is the rich guy. Women will allow themselves (or, mostly pretend to allow) themselves to become attracted to a rich guy, to get their hands on his money. The third is someone who is famous. Even a moderate amount of fame will have large numbers of women drooling over a guy. The last, is the worst of all…..evil. Larges numbers of women go through periods where they are VERY attracted to evil. Some women are like this all the time. Literally, nothing else matters about the guy…looks, station, and basic hygiene. You could (and many are) 200 pounds overweight, smell BAD, have missing teeth and beat women every chance you get, and you will be drowning in pussy from this phenomena, as long as you are an ex-con, with a drug problem. This phenomenon is probably the single biggest threat to our way of life and the general happiness and well being of everyone. It is also an extremely good reason for strict, "three strikes your out" laws. Not only don't we want these scum on the street, but, left to their own devices, they can and do destroy large segments of our population….getting girls hooked on drugs, they are prime spreaders of AIDS and other STD's in our social circles, destroying families, illegitimate births, etc. Permanent imprisonment is a rational, reasonable and just solution to this problem.

Anyway, my point is this. It is impossible to increase the number of women who are interested in you by increasing your "attractiveness". You can lose weight, buff up your body, get better clothes, better style, whatever, and you may change slightly the quality of women who are interested in you, but not the number. You can also change your behavior, but that only changes who specifically reacts to you. You can be nice, or you can be playfully arrogant, or you can be a total shitheel. You can sharpen your technique or get better at the "game". But, it's all pointless. It may change who, but not how many. Nothing will allow you to pick and choose who, specifically, will respond.

The problem isn't attraction. The problem isn't with us. The PROBLEM is the neurotic behavior of women. You can't change them. But, once you understand the situation, you can change the way you approach the problem to become more effective.

.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

.

Related:

Bonecrcker #41 – Finding the Small Pool of Interested Women

Bonecrcker #122 – The Advantage The Big City Has Over The Small Town

Bonecrker #62 - You Must Be A Loser

. · 3 March 2004 · Archived copy · Original

(Re.: A Female Response to an Online Dating Profile)

Note the assumption that since she doesn't find your profile attractive, you must be a loser. "Loser" being a highly emotionally charged yet undefined term. In other words, you couldn't ask, "Well, what could I do to not be a loser?" and get a legitimate answer. On a related topic, you couldn't ask her what would make you a winner. You couldn't change what you do in any way that would make her want you.

The sole purpose of her response is to blame you for a problem she has. You will actually see this pattern repeated over and over again. She does something wrong (which in this case she did…..she started to immediately criticize you over the slightest slip of the tongue). The normal response is to go, "Ummm, sorry. You're an asshole. Bye." But, when you try to explain why, she acts like you are being incredibly insulting. Actually, her attitude is, "How dare you protest even the slightest bit about her heaping abuse on you!" To say that the correct response is to immediately break off contact with no explanation at all is putting it mildly. This person is sitting around wondering why all her interactions with men end with them either rejecting her or using her and then dumping her. This pattern is why.

And it's why she doesn't deserve any better.

.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

.

.

Further Reading:

.

Bonecrker #3 – Shaming Language

.

Bonecrker #34 - Online Dating – NOT!

.

Bonecrker #53 – Online Dating is a Scam

Bonecrker #63 - Most People Who Work in Community Mental Health are Insane

. · 4 March 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Most of the people who work in community mental health are completely insane…..that includes almost all of the people working on the master's level, especially in counselling and social work. It was because of these people that I abandoned my career in Clinical Psychology and went for the doctorate in Chiropractic instead.

Some examples of the behavior I saw among staff working inpatient community mental health:
First off, the main offices were located in the worst, most dangerous urban environment I've ever seen (and I've been to a lot of shitholes in my time). I kept my Glock on me at all times there.

One male staffer got caught on three separate occasions, getting blowjobs from male patients. All three were HIV positive.

Another male staffer, had sex with a number of female drug addicts who were slated for release into rehab (they were prostitutes).

A female staffer had a former patient living with her as her lover. He was an ex-con (for murder), heavy drug user (also HIV positive), incredibly violent, and had been inpatient for a psychotic break, with a long history of violence during his psychotic episodes.

I caught this same staffer dispensing meds to patients that they had no prescription for (a felony). When I told her to stop, she screamed for over an hour about how I dare tell her how to do her job. Supervisor did nothing.

Another staffer traded bourbon with patients for crack cocaine. Although I brought this to the attention of the highest levels of management (all women), they did nothing and eventually promoted this woman to run the entire inpatient system (a very high level, highly paid government job). Although all government jobs require mandatory

drug testing in the city, ours was mysteriously overlooked in the testing system.

My immediate superior had been caught several times, having sex with employees under her, on the physical plant grounds.

Two female staffers told me this bizarre story one day (one was the drug user….go figure) about how they saw a flying saucer that whizzed all around the facility grounds (nightshift) until stopping barely a few feet from them and whizzing away…..I shit you not.

Once, I had to escort one of the female staffers home because her ex-husband was threatening to kill her.

Lastly, the entire system was, in my opinion, a scam. Very few of our patients were of the legitimate, mental illness variety (even though we were the centralized mental health facility for a major metropolitan area). Some of the patients had mental illness like symptoms that were completely the result of crack cocaine use (ie, after a couple of weeks of rehab, they became symptom free, even in serious cases). But most of the patients were simple crack addicts who were homeless. At the cost of thousands and thousands of dollars, we warehoused these yahoos for a bit before moving them in and out of rehab and trying fruitlessly to place them in outpatients systems (drug use makes you ineligible you see……means you are out on the street). They were in no way interested in anything except doing crack and just running the system to get a roof over their head (you aren't allowed in the shelters if you are using drugs…they test). A typical example would be one of these yahoos being picked up by the cops. An ambulance (at least $2 thousand dollars each trip) would transport them to our facility where they would stay inpatient (about a grand a day) until they were "stable" enough to be placed outpatient or they decompensated and had to be hospitalized ($2-3 grand a day). All for someone who isn't mentally ill. As far as I could see, these wastes of life completely pushed out all the legitimate patients. Which tells me that the people designing the system are the most insane of all.

The system is insane and any person who tells you they work in that system is probably insane too. If not, they soon will be.

.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

.

.

Related:

.

Bonecrcker #82 – Women in Power

Bonecrker #64 - On Players

. · 5 March 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Briefly talking with a woman (or better yet, figuring it out before ever approaching them) to discover if she is attracted to you is hardly being a player. Neither is causally breaking off contact with the 90% of women who don't fall into that category. Women are not entitled to anything from you, least of all your interest in them if they have none in you. A player is trying to get away with something. He is without confidence and lacks an understanding that he has the right to determine the nature and direction of any relationships he is in, and with whom. So, he lies, cheats and goes to incredible lengths to try and fool women. I think the basic problem here is he is trying to convince the 90% (impossible). Don't do that. Instead, be assertive and honest. Build confidence by gaining experience. Understand that if you do what you are supposed to be doing and someone (especially a woman) accuses you of doing something wrong, it is a manipulation, with no basis in fact. She is trying to get away with something and claims that it is universal to all women. THAT IS A LIE!

If a woman sees you as a player when you are, instead, being rational and assertive, it means something is wrong with HER. She is trying to scam you. No one else will think you are a player, least of all the women who are interested in you.

For example, let's say you are interested in a short duration, non-monogamous fling. Be upfront and honest about it. When you are starting to become intimate with a woman, she will sometimes ask you where this is going. Tell her you are only looking for a fling and give her the option to say, "No, that's not what I want from you" (very few women will do that, BTW). Her shrewish friends might call you a player, simply because you aren't willing to get on all fours and beg for sex and swear your undying love, all your present and future earnings and put up with limitless abuse, just to get some pussy. But as long as you don't lie, she definitely won't think that way (for the limited time her feelings for you last, that is). And neither will anyone else who matters.

Being honest and direct like this INCREASES your chances with women, not decreases. A small minority of incredibly insane women (as in, everything else about them is insane too), have a problem with that. But all your behavior should revolve around making sure they aren't even allowed to talk to you, let alone influence your life.

Also, although I don't allow relationships to get too deep anymore, I am hardly engaging in a "fuck and dump" strategy. I simply understand that her interest in me has an expiration date (once it expires, her interest in me turns dark and sinister), so I better not get any ideas about the long term. Since there is no long term, I have no reason to

exclude myself to any one girl. Unfortunately, they don't understand that (if they did, maybe they would fix it, lol) and constantly try to deepen the relationship, forcing me to set limits. The most effective way to set limits isn't through what I say, but rather through what I do. And, what I do is limit the time I spend with a woman and refuse certain activities (like meeting her family). That's OK with most women (as long as you don't lie or use or abuse them) for varying amounts of time. Then they wander off. You need to be OK with that. And you won't be OK with that unless you have another to take her place. And you won't have another to take her place if you stop looking for interested women every time you meet one.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #45 - Niceguys

Bonecrcker #114 – To All The Girls I've Loved Before

Bonecrcker #65 - The Repeating Patterns of Women Who Cry Rape

. · 6 March 2004 · Archived copy · Original

There are a number of repeating patterns with women who cry rape. The first is, like most liars, 5 minutes after they lie to you, they forget what they said. When you talk about it sometime later, the story is completely different. Also, there is a sense of drama and excitement about what they say….they are pleased to be the center of attention rather than being engulfed in horror, reliving the moment. They tend to tell people they don't know very well (big tip off). Some girl you just met, going on and on about the time she was raped, smiling and embellishing and flourishing…..real believable. And the most telling sign is that they both had a sexual relationship beforehand and have a sexual relationship afterward with this person. Certainly, they have no fear of the person who supposedly raped them. Don't be surprised when they dump you and go back to them. Rape is a lie, 99.9% of the time.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Further Reading:

Bonecrker #13 – DV Myths = Cold War

Bonecrker #20 – Rape Fantasies

Bonecrcker #145 – Feminism Causes Rape

EOTM: The Pearl Harbor of the Gender War: Rape and Sexual Harassment

EOTM: !!!!!!!!!!RAPE!!!!!!!!!!

More Women Have Rape Fantasies Than Previously Thought -- Roissy

Bonecrker #66 - Singles Events

. · 7 March 2004 · Archived copy · Original

You have to be really careful at any “singles” event. Just like the women at the clubs (supposedly a place to meet others interested in finding a partner), these women aren’t there to meet a man. They are there to have their ego stroked. Sure, occasionally they will “binge” and go home with some random guy. But, for the most part, no guy will do. They will rationalize this in various ways that boil down to there are no good guys here (so what if they are all 6′s and 7′s and she is a 4). But the problem is her. The last thing she is interested in, is discovering if any of the guys she is attracted to (and she is attracted to a significant number) is compatible with her. Although she is attracted to a number of them (many times, you included), none of you has any more chance with her than some random chick you pass on the street. Unlike women you pass on the street, however, a huge number of the girls at the singles events are really into leading you on. What fun!

The other sad thing is that few women have interests until they get old, fat and married (which is exactly the type of woman you will meet at any interest you have). The exception to that is the gym. However, an increasing number of women are going to women’s only gyms.

In my experience, there are only two places where you meet lots of women. The first is in college classes, particularly college classes designed for people who are a waste of space…..art classes, acting classes, intro psychology classes, pop culture classes etc. The second is via a network of friends. You should always be on the lookout to add male and female friends to your network because they bring prospective women into your sphere of influence. However, it’s important to be selective with the type of person it is. If you have a buddy who is a drug-using criminal, guess what type of women he will bring into your sphere of influence. She has the same chance of being attracted to you as everyone else…..but you don’t want her lol.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

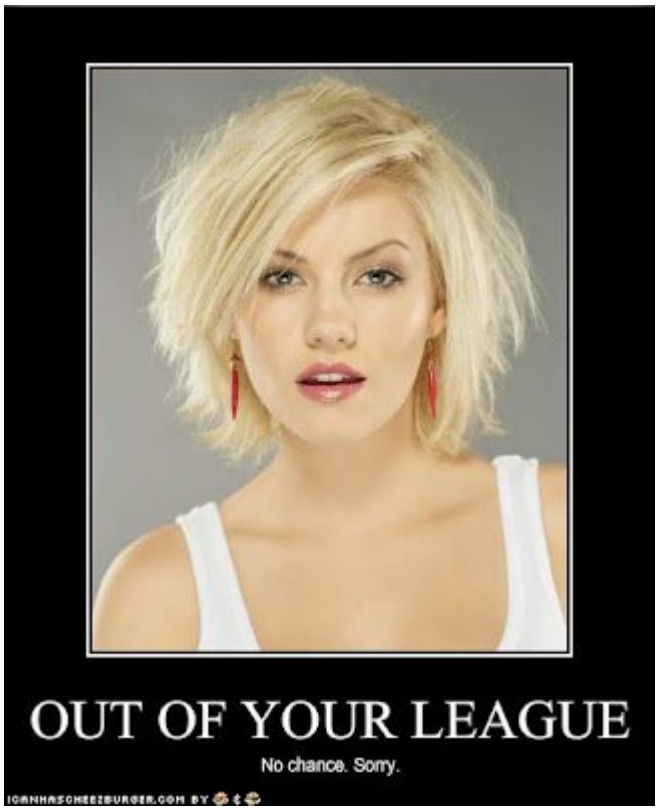
Bonecrcker #83 – Women Go To Clubs To Be Seen And Cause Trouble

Bonecrcker #115 – Women Go To Singles Events To Be Seen, Not To Pick Up Men

Bonecrcker #146 – No Cover Charge For The Ladies

Bonecrker #67 - No Woman is "Out of Your League"

. · 8 March 2004 · Archived copy · Original



What I mean by leagues is who is the woman hanging around. There are certain groups of people who only mingle among themselves and don't allow outsiders to join them. Many women lie, and say they are out of your league. What they mean by this is they have confused their ideal of looks with an ideal that everyone has. They aren't attracted to you, so you must be ugly (the biggest, most common lie women tell us). Unless she is going to parties over at Bill Gates house, or is the CEO of a company, she is most definitely in your league. You could line 100 of her up (not that difficult to do) and one of them would go, "Oh yeah, baby, you're the guy for me". The exact same number that you would get if you lined up 100 truck stop waitresses, etc. We all pretend there are stratifications among the 90% of everyone who is average. But, there aren't. Not in our culture. Instead, people pair up in a semi-random way, controlled mostly by whomever happens to be hanging around. But, who says you have to limit yourself to who is hanging around? Once you know about this situation, you can go looking for it. You'll be shocked by what you find.

The problem is that one doesn't whistle at you as you walk down the street. You need to do things to get her to reveal herself. Meanwhile, she is home alone, wondering why great guys like you never give her the time of day. Hilarious.

Try this experiment on a regular basis. Dress up in a reasonable fashion (ie wear normal clothes that are clean and in reasonable condition…bathe and be groomed). Then go to the mall and walk around. Keep an open posture at all times, relaxed with a open look on your face and a slight smile….and just stroll around. Every time you pass a woman, look her in the eye for a second or two. Do this a hundred times and think about the results. Most women will do some form of avoiding your gaze. An obnoxious minority will make a face at you (stupid bitches). A significant number will be open and friendly toward you. And one or two will look like they want to knock you down, rip your clothes off and fuck you right there. Be sure to smile and nod at any woman who looks like that…..if you want her or not. Why, because it shows very clearly the next step. Your smile and nod are the first step of talking to her and getting her as a part of your life. Notice the dramatic difference in her behavior vs every

other freaking woman you ever have contact with. Only women who are like this are really worth any significant amount of your time. Only women in the “friendly” category are worth being nice to. Everyone else can go fuck themselves. Why? Because it has nothing to do with you. Only with them.

But, most importantly, note the randomness of the whole damn thing. Ugly girls laugh in your face, moms with kids being open and friendly, nuns and teenage sex goddesses looking at you with lust…..all at random. All hidden until you went looking for it.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Bonecrker #68 - Two Things That Men Need To Know About Domestic Violence

. · 9 March 2004 · Archived copy · Original

There are two things that all men need to know about domestic violence that very few men actually know. The first is that women usually initiate domestic violence. Sure, there are a handful of wacko men who like to beat women and women flock to these men so they have no lack of victims. But, for the most part women will engage in specific behaviours (including but not limited to hitting the man) to try and initiate a physically abusive relationship. Most of these behaviours involve shame and humiliation of some sort. The second thing men need to know is that violence against women is the normal, instinctual defence mechanism to prevent insane behavior on the part of women, from threatening survival. Quite literally, the woman is ripping apart the relationship and violence is the last ditch effort to prevent that from happening. It should be rare, but it's not.

The solution is the same for both cases and involves self-awareness, clarity and the willingness to act. That solution is to immediately and permanently get rid of the woman with no chance of her coming back into your life. If a woman ever hits you or ever does anything shameful or humiliating to you, just dump her, with no explanation and no further contact. If she shows up at your place (and she will), call the cops against her. Refuse to talk to her and refuse any contact with her. She will try to sneak in and suck your dick (I'm not being facetious here) to make things all better until the next time. And she will try to initiate contact for purposes of revenge. Don't allow either. Your relationship is always, always, always time limited. When this shit starts to happen it means that timer ran out some time ago. You have no recourse and there is no point in further contact with her, let alone trying to make anything work or trying to fix anything.

This is one of the most important reasons to not allow a woman to live with you. It is almost impossible to get rid of a woman before she causes you significant harm, if she is living with you. If she isn't living with you, all you need to do is change the locks. If, for some reason, you allowed a woman to fool you into living with her, the solution is to leave without warning and with no forwarding address. Get a U-haul, wait until she is not home, load all your stuff up and drive off, even if its just to the YMCA you are driving to and you have to place your crap in storage. Talk to a lawyer and explain the situation with the lease. Have him contact the landlord and make arrangements to deal with this with absolutely no contact info of yours being given out. If you own property together, you will probably have to abandon it to her (might as well, as the court will just give it to her anyway)….although a lawyer could help that situation also. The goal here is to leave quickly, permanently, without explanation and without your abusive partner

being able to ever have contact with you again. Often, men who don't do this, will have something bad happen to them. They will be accused and convicted (really the same thing) of some crime, or some criminal will try to murder them (happened to a friend of mine). And, it will happen to you so don't kid yourself. If you are REALLY unlucky, some criminal will try to murder you and you will fight back, killing him. Then, you will spend the rest of your life being gang raped by his friends in prison.

.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

.

.

Further Reading:

.

Bonecrker #13 – DV Myths = Cold War

Bonecrker #69 - That First Date at Your Place

. · 10 March 2004 · Archived copy · Original

People [sometimes get] a little confused about what I mean by getting a woman over to your place, as if getting her there means you will be having sex. Although that happens a significant portion of the time (i.e. the woman has decided she will sleep with you already if she is coming over to your place), bringing the woman over to your place is only the very opening gambit of the relationship. My point is, until that first date at your place, you aren't even in the game. And a woman who doesn't want to come over doesn't even want to explore the possibility of anything with you…..instead, she is doing something else (that else, usually being something not so nice).

.

The date at your place is to establish intimacy, not to have sex. But, you don't in any way have a relationship until you have sex. Some girls will come over to your place, more than once before the first time. That's just fine. What isn't just fine is if there is something seriously wacko with them, causing them to go after you and then hold you in contempt once they think they have you (a large number of women who are "damaged goods" do this……history of rape, child abuse, drug use, etc.). They love you until you try to get close to them and then they hate you and then love you again when you are gone. Get rid of those girls. Typically, you will know who they are because you set everything up, bring her over, she shows strong signs of interest the whole time, you spend time laughing and having fun, sitting close together on the couch and then you smile, reach over to touch her hair, and she says, "What the fuck do you think you are doing". That woman is playing a game called "rape-o". Leading men on and then making fun of them when they admit feelings of attraction. They are freaks. The other thing that isn't OK is when they are trying to get you to initiate something (They NEVER initiate anything) and you miss the signals, let time pass and then it's time for them to go home. She'll be pissed and you'll never see her again.

.

The prime thing she is looking for is for you to touch her in some socially appropriate fashion…..usually while looking her deeply in the eyes, laughing at something or emphasisizing a point. She'll touch you back and it will escalate from there. Good places to touch are on the arm, the back of the hand, the hair, etc. in a non-sexual way. A woman who needs time to feel comfortable with you might start this touching with you but not escalate things until the 2nd, third or more time she comes over. But, if she is over there, she wants to start the process of becoming intimate (and a large number of women want to go through that whole process the first time). If she doesn't, something is wrong with her (rare, but it does happen). If she ever freaks on you when you didn't really try anything aggressive or sexual (never do that), then something is REALLY wrong with her and your goal should switch to getting her away from you as quickly as possible.

.

The whole point is that things aren't even close to being the way people are taught in our culture that they are. We are taught that you meet a girl, you talk, get to know her, and then you take her out places to both impress her and

give each other a chance to learn more about each other. With time and repeated shared experience, you start to become closer, first friends, and then lovers, and then more. That is absolutely not the way it happens, at all. Instead, what happens is a woman sees you and immediately classifies you into either fuckable or non-fuckable. If you are non-fuckable, she probably doesn't want to know you at all unless she is forced to for some reason (you belong to the same social group etc.) But, just because you are fuckable doesn't mean you have any chance with her, no, no, no. About 90% of the time, because of fucked-upness on her part, she is anywhere from completely indifferent to hostile toward you (think about how screwed up that is…..would you ever be indifferent/hostile toward a woman who you found attractive in personality and body). About 10% of the time, she is friendly. With time and effort, you could probably convince her to start the process of becoming intimate, and if successful, you can have a relationship of some sort. About 1% of the time, she needs no convincing, or effort, and is, instead, highly motivated to become intimate with you. This means she will respond favourably every time you initiate each step, not that she will initiate anything herself, BTW. Fuckable vs non-fuckable is a matter of your attractiveness, position and personal power relative to hers. What percentage she is in willingness to be with you, providing you are fuckable, mostly at random.

.

This has some implications for what men should be doing. First, you should try to be fuckable. Don't be obese. Shower. Have a job. Wear reasonable clothes. The higher up the social scale you want, the higher up the social scale you need to make yourself……wear better clothes, work out at the gym, make money, learn how to wield power, influence and charisma among your peers. Most normal men are perfectly fuckable for most normal women (despite their lies).

.

Next, you need to absolutely refuse to give the time of day to any woman who finds you unfuckable. Seriously, they think you are scum and anyone who thinks you are scum, doesn't deserve a single thing from you. If you are non-fuckable from some normal woman's perception, unless you are like, retarded, with bad BO and a wooden leg, something is wrong with her and not you.

.

The next thing you do and what is probably the absolute minimum effort is to identify which women are in the ten percent category. Only spend time on these girls. Be nice to them. Spend time getting to know them. Only consider inviting women from this pool over to your place. It is really an invitation to develop a relationship with you and it is OK to say no (again, this is mostly random, having nothing to do with you and everything to do with her). Convincing her to come over is not your goal. Discovering if she is ready to accept your invitation is your goal.

.

But, my personal opinion is that it is much more fruitful to try and find the 1% of women who are eager to be with you than to try and woo the other 9%. In other words, the the ability to select is the technique that gives you the biggest bang for your buck, so to speak.

.

How you relate to a woman or try to impress her or try to convince her or try to develop your relationship with her, are all completely irrelevant when it comes to the reality of being with women. Instead, they make snap judgements, at random, as to if they want you or not, and how much. If a woman doesn't want you, so what? Because she is nuts, it has nothing to do with you (but, also, don't ignore the fact that if she DOES want you it also has nothing to do with you….part of the reason your relationship and you are disposable). Plan accordingly. And don't be afraid to do things sooner rather than later. From her point of view (despite what she tells you and herself to deny that she is an easy whorish woman….which she most definitely is) the relationship happens all at once, not developed over time. Our culture lies to us about this because it lies to us about the truth of women. They are sick and in deep denial about being sick. It's important for men to understand specifically about the many facets of that sickness and compensate for it….or it will cause problems for us, not the least of which is failure with women.

.

Also, because women are sick they have a particularly obnoxious mode to look out for……..being extremely attracted to evil men who are the scum of the earth. We've all seen this. The hotter/younger/more desirable the

woman, the more likely she will be in this mode at any one time. While in it, she will only consider bring with the absolute worst men….drug dealers, criminal scum, frat boys, and other people who feel free to exist because society is too deluded to give them the regular, vicious beatings they so richly deserve. When a woman is like this, she has no interest in you and is engaging in completely self-destructive behavior.

.

There are three reasons I mention this. The first is, of course, women hang out at certain specific places/situations when they are like this (ie all the women there will be like this). This is an excellent reason to avoid clubs and other places gang members hang out, like the plague. None of the women there have any interest in you. The second is that some women are more prone to this mode than others and this is one of the major ways your relationship will end. You will find out she has lost interest in you for Bubba, the 100lb overweight cocaine dealer that just got out of jail. Your response should be to immediately and permanently get rid of her at that point. It has nothing to do with you, everything to do with her and part of that sickness is trying to cause harm to you in one way or another. You can do nothing for her but, for yourself you can get rid of her. The last reason I bring it up is some of us (myself included) have daughters, sisters, nieces, sometimes mothers etc. who WILL enter this mode from time to time. Do everyone a BIG favour and keep your family member locked up during that time and put a bullet in the head of any scum that comes sniffing around. As the men in the family, this is your responsibility, and if you shirk it, you will deeply, deeply regret it. However, society is sick about this issue and will punish you harshly if you get caught…..so, don't get caught.

.

Man, this thing is like a book, but only because there is so much to know and one thing leads to and feeds off another. As they say though, knowledge is power. Wouldn't it be much simpler if women took responsibility for being normal, healthy, mature individuals and developing sane, enduring, loving relationships?

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Bonecrcker #70 - She Expects It To Be This Way or She Won't Respond To You

. · 11 March 2004 · Archived copy · Original

The issue isn't if you want to be a player. I'm no player and I think men who are players are pussies. The issue is what will the woman demand of you. Make no mistake, she expects you to do it this way or she won't respond to you. Her attitude is you must be ready to go when she wants and not before, and you are to fuck off the other 99% of the time (she will actually say this to you……fuck off). That's her attitude. I didn't make things that way. I don't particularly want things to be that way. I have zero control over her being that way. She Chooses It. Not Me. I have two choices, accommodate her or do without. I choose to accommodate her. Note, that she absolutely won't say things to this effect. She won't TELL me these things. She'll expect me just to know them. Disrespect is what she will give me if I don't know or if I say no to this way of doing things.

So, what does the woman want me to do? Two things: The first is to read her mind and know when she is ready (and to fuck off if she isn't). Wonderful. What a fucked up thing to want. This means I need to have ways to know what's on her mind but I can't actually ask her. The second thing she wants is she wants me to fish for her, not to hunt for her. What I mean by this, is she wants me to set the stage for her and act enticing, but never to go after her and never be aggressive. So, I must initiate everything but I can't in any way be pushy. Great. This is also fucked up in now I must set up things so that stuff can happen but it has to seem like an accident and I have to initiate things but constantly monitor her to make sure she is actually the one who chooses when we move from one step to another, even though I am the one actually doing the behavior and God, help me if I get it wrong or miss a cue.

It really is only productive to have dates at your home because only here can you properly set the stage to make things happen. Initial dates are usually outside the home and only have the goal of making her comfortable enough with you so you can have the real date, which is at your home (ie, until that date at your home, any relationship you have with the woman is meaningless to her….it means zero, zip, nada, not a damn thing to her). Actually, until you fuck her for the first time, you don't have a relationship. You mean nothing to her until then and are barely a step up from some stranger she has met on the street…..even if you've known her for 20 years (I have learned this the HARD way….over and over and over again).

Once you have the date alone, at your house, that's when the building of your relationship can begin, and not before. If she is there, at all, she is there for that reason, and, often, having sex for the first time is on her mind, as the starting point. Will she say that or own up to that if asked? Nope. Will she act that way? You bet your ass she will.

What a woman wants. What she will demand of you and punish you harshly if you refuse to provide it, is a chance to be alone with you, in an intimate, romantic setting, where you can spend time together, preferably doing something together and pretend that things just sort of happened.

Should you be pushing for this to happen? Absolutely not. Should you set the stage and invite her to spend that time with you? You must….or she will get rid of you. When should you do this? After you have established that you are 1) safe, and 2) interesting. What does it mean if you've done all that and she says no? It means you have no chance with her, never did, and never will. Be VERY suspicious of any woman who wants you to take her out places and do things for her but isn't getting intimate sooner rather than later. The whole point of dating is to quickly get to that first date back at your place. If she isn't doing that, she isn't with you for the reason you think she is.

Now, if you have a female "friend", what this usually means is she is romantically interested in you but doesn't think enough of you to make you a lover, so she keeps you in reserve for years, until she hits a dry spell. This is

both a blessing and a curse. It's a blessing because, often, if you set the stage correctly, she will make the transition from "friend" to lover with very little effort. But, it's also a curse in that she has very little respect for you. As long as you focus on setting the stage for her and make it seem like it was her idea, she'll probably have sex with you. But, expect all sorts of wild, wacky behavior afterward, followed by being dumped after maybe 2 or 3 months of wild sex. After this happens a few times, you will realize that these women are not your friends and never were.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Further Reading:

Bonecrker #69 – That First Date At Your Place

Bonecrcker #71 - Not All Women Are Like That! (NAWALT)

. · 12 March 2004 · Archived copy · Original

I've said this before but I think [it is] necessary for me to bring it up again. And that is a little thing called "the woman who is the exception" phenomena. This is something that most men who have some inkling that something is seriously wrong with American women, will fall prey to, sometimes, more than once.

What happens is, men, knowing that most women are fucked up in a malevolent way, start to think to themselves, hey, they can't ALL be like that. This is true. There is a certain (extremely small) percentage of westernized women who aren't like this. So, the man, being more clued in than most men, starts to think to himself, "Well, all I gotta do is figure which women are like this and only go after them." Or, they think, "Well, all I need to do is change my behavior so that only nice, normal women, develop relationships with me." ALOT of us have been there, including myself, more than once, mind you.

The problem with this is the "woman who is the exception" phenomena. What's going on here is the knowledge that something is seriously wrong with women is starting to become widespread. A great many men are looking at women who display warning signs and avoiding them. More often, they are taking steps to prevent relationships from becoming too deep (ie, they avoid monogamy, avoid living together and avoid marriage like the plague). This causes a problem for the average predatory female. The worst can't get a man, at all. And most find that all the desirable men are putting severe limits on their power over them. So, to cope with this, they have come up with the "woman who is the exception" phenomena. What they do is present a facade that they aren't like all the other women. They go out of their way to present themselves as normal, mentally healthy, committed and loving. Unfortunately, it is a lie. As soon as you surrender even the least bit of power to them, they reveal themselves as just like everyone else. Women who actually are the exception are EXTREMELY rare. Women who pretend to be the exception are common as dirt (and you WILL meet one, trust me). You cannot tell the difference. You will find yourself in a bad situation with no power to prevent it.

The lesson to be learned here is you absolutely cannot stop those behaviours you have developed to maintain power and choice in your life and your relationships. Number one in those behaviours is you cannot be married. You can hem and haw and deny and argue, but the evidence is literally all around you. EVERY man who gets married becomes completely powerless in his relationship (as in the police will come to your door and kick your ass, throw you in jail, take everything you own and maybe shoot you in the head if you say boo about it, type of powerless). Most men who get married are abused. You can't get married. End of story. You also can't live together. Why? Because you end up being forced to get married. Often this happens by the woman getting pregnant on purpose. If not, she will make it common law, and then you might as well just get married. Lastly, you can't be monogamous (ALL relationships with American women, married, engaged, living together, dating or just fucking, are ALL 100% disposable from her point of view). Why? Because, if you do, she will systematically manipulate your needs and desires to control you into first living with her and then getting married. At the very least, your ability to tell her

to get lost becomes severely compromised. Also, there is absolutely no point. She is absolutely emotionally detached from you at all times and will walk away without a second thought. You will never, ever suspect that this is where she is coming from until she does it, leaving your entire life devastated.

Everything in this life has a cost. This is the cost of dating American women. If you don't pay it, you'll pay much more in other ways. Most men want a woman who is not like this. But, realistically, you aren't going to find her here.

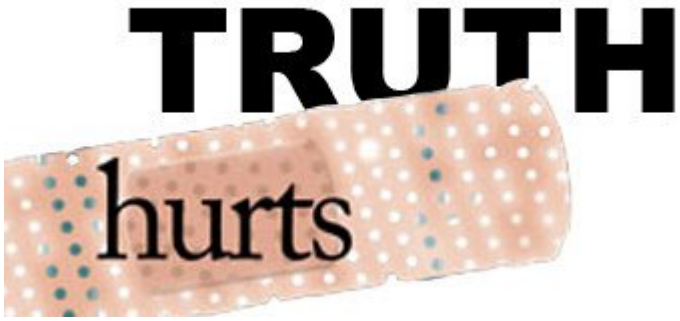
Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Further Reading:

Not All Women Are Like That

Bonecrker #72 - The Truth is Harsh

. · 13 March 2004 · Archived copy · Original



There are problems with women. These problems are specific, identifiable, and universal in western culture. The problems have extremely serious consequences for men who do not take the correct steps to prevent those consequences.

The first step is to let go of denial, prejudice and narcissism as methods of coping and replace them with an attitude of learning, testing, and then skill development. Until you do that, there is no hope of improving the situation. Instead, you will be powerless in the face of the extreme problems with women and will suffer all manner of fucked upness, from crushing lonliness and depression, to rejection, financial ruin, loss of family, or even loss of freedom or loss of life. It's not a few men who have this happen to them….or even a lot of men. Its most men….pretty close to all men.

The truth is harsh. So harsh that most men can't deal with it, so they pretend the problem doesn't exist. They make up excuses and moralisms and offer ignorant, trite, completely ineffective solutions that ignore the reality of the situation. Worse, they openly ridicule any methods that take into account those realities (so what, if they work). Why? Because in any way exploring those solutions, threatens the denial of the problem. They absolutely refuse to see things the way they really are or to test the effectiveness of both their attitudes, philosophies and beliefs, and, more importantly, their specific behavior.

This situation is common as dirt and is the first hurdle any man needs to conquer, in order to make anything of himself in life (in any sphere). But once you do, then the important task of sorting out what works, from what doesn't can begin.

Want to learn most everything about this problem and, specifically, what to do about it? Read the book, "The Ultimate Secrets of Total Self-Confidence" by Dr. Robert Anthony, and do what he tells you to do. Your effectiveness as a man will sky-rocket.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #22 – Choose Confidence

Bonecrker #73 - There Really Are Only Two Safe Subjects To Talk About With Women

. · 14 March 2004 · Archived copy · Original

There really are only two safe, effective topics to talk to women about in a social situation. The first is easy. You talk about her. And by talk I really mean you don't say anything except leading questions. Women will talk for hours about themselves this way. Afterward, they will think you are the most brilliant conversationalist in the entire world. However, you can't comment, editorialize, or even share similar experiences with her about anything she says. Her attitude is "who the hell are you to comment on my life?" It doesn't really matter if the comment is good or bad, lol. It's fucked up, but it is what it is. The second thing that is effective when talking with women is to bust their balls in a teasing, light-hearted, humorous way. This is very difficult to do (ie, it's a specialized skill that you learn with practice) without crossing a line and outright insulting them. But, if you do it right, it has the opposite effect of saying something complimentary to her. She assumes her status is lower than yours. Then she feels flattered that someone who is higher status than her is bothering to talk to her. The really screwed up ones will respond positively to rude, degrading and insulting behavior for this reason (must it be said that you want NOTHING to do with any woman like that).

The last thing to know about talking to women in situations like this is your body language. There are several techniques in controlling your own body language that make you look open, non-threatening, and at the same time, being on sexual display. Although you cannot control who becomes attracted to you, when you do this, the odds are that someone, sometimes several someones, will become attracted to you when you do this. Don't approach any woman at all. Instead, only talk to women who approach you. Usually, one will. The one who does so first will usually be the one who is most desperate (and usually married, ugly, or otherwise inappropriate……low on the pecking order) And all the others will be carefully examining how you act with her. Act appropriately and she will eventually go away and someone higher up on the food chain will approach you.

Men, in these situations, are just hanging out, bonding, gabbing, whatever. But women. Women are engaging in something complicated and specific with unwritten, yet rigid, rules of behavior. Break the rules and you will be ostracized. And common sense doesn't apply.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #58 – Women Are Narcissistic and Self Absorbed

Bonecrcker #126 – A Woman's Need To Talk Is One Of The Key Methods Of Manipulating Them

Bonecrcker #74 - All Married Women Are Available

. · 15 March 2004 · Archived copy · Original

It would be accurate to say that all married women are available…..much more available than single women. A single woman will snub every man she is attracted to until her lack of sexual fulfillment overwhelms her. Then, she will "binge" on the first readily available man, usually someone inappropriate. But a married woman is completely different. You would think that since she is taken she wouldn't give other men the time of day. But that isn't true, nearly 100% of the time. Instead, her marriage means NOTHING to her. However, she is no longer "saving herself for marriage", so to speak, and goes after any man she is attracted to (unlike with men, this is pretty much random). If that happens to be you, she shows you much attention and is nice to you…..making you attracted to her.

It is far easier to meet, date, and fuck a married woman, than a single woman (except perhaps a young, single, woman in college, who is doing her best to fuck as many men as possible via one night stands). However, a significant percentage of the men these women are married to, will kill you, if they catch you. Is it worth it? Probably not.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #116 – Can I Ask You A Quick Question? You Married?

Bonecrcker #148 – Women Who Want To Cheat With You

Bonecrcker #75 - Most Women Don't Want a Man Who Isn't Choosy

. · 16 March 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Most women absolutely will not consider a man who isn't choosy about women. You're being choosy comes out quite clearly and early in any encounter with her (indeed, she tests for it). Fail the test and she's gone. Pass the test and advance to the next level. If you aren't choosy, huge quantities of women discount you within ten seconds of meeting them. The pool increases because, even though you get rid of five, ten more see you doing this and become interested. My point here is women don't choose you for any particular quality you have. So gaining those qualities is relatively ineffective at getting them (the opposite however isn't true….women will discount you if you have certain negative qualities….especially being fat or not having basic fashion sense). Women primarily choose you on how far above them you are on the pecking order. They look primarily to how you treat them (nice or nasty, your message must be that they are below you) and how and who you interact with. If you kick a woman to the curb for bad behavior, you automatically become more attractive to all the others. The higher status the woman, the more attractive.

Have I mentioned that women are sick? Their behavior makes much more sense and you become much more effective with them once you accept this simple, horrible, fascinating fact of life. To understand women and what works with them, you must plumb the depths of their sickness. There really isn't much more to them.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Bonecrcker #76 - Most Women Are In Relationships That Aren't Fun

. · 17 March 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Most women right now are in relationships that are decidedly un-fun. Either they are busy being abused by the lowest end of the gene pool or they are busy abusing some man who is her meal ticket. Women are sick, not demanding or spoiled or shallow or interested in pleasure. I have learned this MANY times by trying to be the "fun" women are supposedly seeking….interesting, dynamic, good looking with a nice body, rich, with obvious signs of power and wealth and good in bed. You never realize just how far women have fallen until some girl you previously spent 5 or 6 hour fuck sessions where she is multiply orgasmic the entire time, dumps you for an impotent drug user with no job. This has happened to me more than once.

Women are sick. It's the explanation that fits their behavior. When I tailor MY behavior to take this into account, my interactions with them work better. Specifically, my behavior is geared toward enjoyment of them while putting severe limits on their destructive behavior. I never lean on them for even the slightest thing. I never become entwined with them (they are sick and will make me sick if I make them part of my life). I never listen to anything they say and instead watch what they do. Also, I have stopped trying to take my quality as a man to extremes (it just doesn't work). I am still a man, but I'm that way for myself, not for them. I still work out but I no longer try to be Jean Claude Van Damme in a tailored Brooks Brothers suit. When I'm with them, what **I** want is important. Pleasing them is not important (and not effective). Spending time with them revolves around sex (sex for my pleasure, not theirs) and going out to do things I like to do (not what they like to do). Most of all, I limit myself to only women who already feel a certain way about me (it's mostly random). And, it's time limited. It's ALWAYS time limited. She eventually self-destructs. I can't do anything about that. But, she wants to take me with her. I most certainly CAN do something about that. This ALWAYS happens. Like I said, women are sick. They don't choose men. They don't go after what they want. They don't tend the garden of their lives. They fall into relationships when they can't do without anymore (the binge and purge method of relationships). In short, they take absolutely no responsibility for anything in their lives. Since that is a recipe for disaster; I can't be a part of that except in the most incidental fashion. So I don't.

All of these things work with women. They don't work as well as being a scumbag musician like Tommy Lee does, but it works. Providing excitement, thrills, entertainment and trying to please her does not work. Doing what she wants doesn't work. Understanding her does not work. Talking to her does not work. Neither does accumulating wealth, power or prestige (although infamy does work).

Women are sick. Learn the depths and means of their sickness and plan accordingly.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #181 - Women Don't Hate Men, But They Don't Love Them Either

Bonecrcker #77 - Just Say No to Women With Kids

. · 18 March 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Some things people should know about women with kids. The obvious one is that a woman with a kid (especially if out of wedlock) is a huge warning sign that something is wrong with the woman. She goes out of her way to create bad situations with men and that will include you.

But, not so obvious is the fact that you will be expected to support the kid eventually. That's the woman's goal for having a relationship with you in the first place. That is not an appropriate reason. She's not looking at you as a friend, a lover, a man. She is looking at you as a source of money. But, understand that you are absolutely not welcome to be a father to that child. If you try, she will hurt you and will probably have you hauled off by the police for some made up reason (probably child molestation). Additionally, if you stick around, that child is going to grow up to be criminal scum. First will come the drug use (which you won't be allowed to stop), then the crime and violence. Some of this will be directed toward the mom (I have direct experience with this wonderful situation) and still, you will not be allowed to intervene.

Lastly, women like this are strongly attracted to men who are criminals or otherwise completely fucked in the head. Her attraction to you is zero. The *only* reason she is sucking *your* cock is so you will support her and her child or will in the near future. If she ever understands that you won't, you are finished. Eventually she will replace you with a criminal type, you being a source of funds or not. She'll probably want to marry you so that, after the divorce, you will be forced to continue to pay while she fucks her criminal scum.

Let me ask you something. Does this sound like something you would want? Of course not. Don't believe the bullshit lies that try to make men feel guilty for not wanting women with kids. It's not that they are an inconvenience (although that is a legitimate reason right there for not dating them). It's not that men don't want to be responsible for children in our society (although, this responsibility is NOT yours, it's hers and her child's father) It's that it is an extremely reliable warning sign for extremely bad behavior in the future.

Just say no to women with kids.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #36 – Just Say No to Divorced Women

Bonecrcker #119 – Sleeping With Single Moms and Cohabitating

Bonecrcker #163 – A "Real Man" Wouldn't Shun a Woman with Kids

Bonecrcker #78 - Women Are Lying About Wanting to be Empowered

. · 19 March 2004 · Archived copy · Original

The problem here is women are *totally* lying about wanting to be empowered. To have power, one must have independence and be self-reliant. This is the exact opposite of what women and children have been for most of human history. Instead of being independent and self-reliant (ie having power) they have been dependent and relied on men for everything. In return, there is a bunch of stuff they are expected to give men…..certain roles they must perform for the system to work.

Now, a handful of women have always been an exception. I can totally see how more women would want to have power by becoming self-reliant and independent. BUT THAT'S NOT WHAT THEY ARE DOING! Instead, they want to be empowered but still rely and depend on men for everything. They think they can do this by creating various ways and means to force us to take care of them, both as individuals and a society, without giving anything in return. They don't want marriage but they still want money from men via alimony and child support. They want to vote but don't exercise wisdom in what they vote for. They want jobs but are pathetic as employees, but God forbid you fire them, you'll get sued (plus they will trade sex for promotions).

The cure of course is to refuse to give them anything they haven't earned. Right now they are completely full of shit when it comes to empowerment. Force them to not be full of shit. Give them jobs but fire them if they perform poorly. Don't marry them under conditions where they bail from marriage in large numbers but force men to continue paying.

In other words, say NO to them. They want things from men. Tell them no. They want to be empowered. That means getting things for themselves. It most certainly doesn't mean getting things from men but not giving anything for them in return.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

...That woman is by nature intended to obey is shown by the fact that every woman who is placed in the unnatural position of absolute independence at once attaches herself to some kind of man, by whom she is controlled and governed; this is because she requires a master. If she, is young, the man is a lover; if she is old, a priest. -- Arthur Schopenhauer - On Women (1851)

Bonecrcker #79 - Prostitution

. · 20 March 2004 · Archived copy · Original

I think the only way prostitution could ever work would be to use price fixing and extremely rigid controls to make sure that AIDS isn't spread everywhere and that the criminal element wouldn't dare run the show. Basically, what we have now is that the criminal element in the US runs prostitution, which is heavily entwined with drugs. It's also the only way a normal man (i.e. a non-intravenous drug using heterosexual) can reasonably expect to catch AIDS.

If they can't solve those two problems, they can't legalize it. If they want to try, they should start small, like what they have in Nevada.

If you don't fix the price, you will have most women abandoning all pretence of family and respectable living to make thousands of dollars a night as a prostitute. Of course, once they reach age 30 and can't work anymore, society will pick up the tab for taking care of them. I mean, we already have a huge problem in this country where too large a percentage of our best looking women choose to strip instead of becoming normal decent folk. Most of these get hooked on drugs and become the absolute worst of the worst when it comes to women. How would you like that to become most women? Women are bad but most aren't *that* bad. Uncontrolled, legalized prostitution would make most women as bad as the average crack whore.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #92 – The Problem with Whores

Bonecrcker #108 – Feminism Pushes the Whore/Customer Model

Bonecrcker #117 – Would You Strip Down In A Room With A Crack Addict?

Bonecrcker #81 - You Cannot Change Women

. · 21 March 2004 · Archived copy · Original

There are three things you need if you want a lot of women to be attracted to you. The first is you need to be in shape. Not being fat is good but being muscular is better. The second thing you need is the right clothes. What are the right clothes? The clothes that women react positively to you in (as opposed to the clothes you want to be wearing). Want to learn more about the right clothes than you ever wanted to know? Go sign up for one of R Don Steele's workshops on this. Be polite. Steele isn't known for tolerating bad behavior….at all. The third thing you need is the right attitude. Whole books can and have been written about this. But, the crux of the issue is you must be completely assertive with a woman, have options and be willing to dump women who engage in bad behavior. Steele is a good source and I highly recommend his books.

However, that being said, you cannot change women, you cannot change women, you CANNOT change women. Your relationship is time limited. There is no way around that. You cannot make decisions about women that contradict that fact. If you do you most certainly will suffer. Your ability to enjoy that time with the woman is strictly dependent on how vigilant you are and how much power you cultivate in relationships. Once your power is gone, it's gone, and you can't get it back. If you allow a woman to stay when you have no power over her, she will destroy you (dump any woman you don't have power over, immediately). How do you know you have no power over her? She feels free to engage in bad behavior. Now all women do this a little bit to test you. The difference is when you call her on it, she laughs in your face instead of stopping. Most men give up their power a few weeks into a relationship. Big mistake.

My point here is: don't spend too much time worrying about theories with regard to women. Stay focussed on behaviours…..learning and refining what works from what doesn't. There is a hell of a lot out there that sounds good but is worthless. Pull little bits and pieces and test them out. Keep what works and discard the rest.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #102 – What Matters is the Amount of Power and Choice You Have in a Relationship

Bonecrcker #80 - Binge and Purge

. · 21 March 2004 · Archived copy · Original

99%……99% is the percentage of women who will say no if you approach them at random. They use the binge and purge method of dating. They have a fantasy in their head. The fantasy is different for every girl but isn't too much in line with what men are typically like. No man who doesn't match the fantasy is welcome. Time passes and a woman gets desperate for a man and "binges", taking anyone. Being unhappy with just anyone, she eventually "purges" him, and goes back waiting for her fantasy (which doesn't exist).

Your chances of catching a woman who is binging is maybe one in ten. If you woo her correctly, she will go for you. The chances of meeting a woman who you match her fantasy is about 1 in a hundred (completely random).

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #41 – Finding the Small Pool of Interested Women

Bonecrcker #61 – There Is Not Pattern To Women's Attraction

Bonecrcker #103 – Raising Your Sexual Status

Bonecrcker #122 – The Advantage The Big City Has Over The Small Town

Bonecrcker #82 - Women in Power

. · 22 March 2004 · Archived copy · Original

I used to work the night shift as part of the zombie squad for the inpatient mental health hospital for Cook County (Chicago). One night I walked in, went over the charts, got the patients settled and started to create the next day's treatment plans, when I notice a black cane in the corner. Now, having knowledge of various things like weapons and knowing that many of our patients are criminal scum, I was immediately suspicious. I pick it up thinking it's probably a zip gun smuggled on the unit by some dangerous psycho and start fiddling with it. Eventually, I discover it is actually a hidden storage device and extract four or five vials filled with brandy of all things. Of course, I write it up in the duty log and secure the cane in a locked cabinet. By morning, the next shift shows up and I explain what happened to one of the women who is taking over for me. I find out…..it's HER cane! She turns as white as a ghost as I explain what I found and then goes into this long bullshit explanation about how she bought it at a garage sale and had no idea what was inside (boy is she a lousy liar). I'm like……alcoholic. Anyway, over the next week, I notice that several of the patients are using the cane (note, neither the patients, nor the female staffers need a cane to walk with….all being young and relatively healthy). So, I start to lean on the patients and discover that this wacko staffer is trading the alcohol in the cane to male patients in exchange for sex and drugs. I immediately reported this to my superior (another woman) and the head of the clinic system (still another woman). A month later, I left that job to work on my doctorate. But a year or so later, what do I find, but the female staffer who was doing this sick shit was promoted to the head of that individual clinic while my old superior was made head of the entire system. That system crashed less than a year later leaving no services for the severely mentally ill in all of Cook County (at least those who don't have money) for quite some time.

This is a clear and specific example of just how big a mistake it is to promote women into positions of power and what happens when you do.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #18 – Three Rules To Follow

Bonecrcker #63 – Most People Who Work in Community Mental Health are Insane

Bonecrcker #83 - Women Go to Clubs to be Seen and Cause Trouble

. · 23 March 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Women go to clubs to be seen and cause trouble. The last thing on their minds is meeting men. There is no point. However, in many clubs that trouble takes the form of doing drugs so the criminal element, of course, moves in. With no chance of getting laid, do you really want to be in that environment? The whole scene is pathetic.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

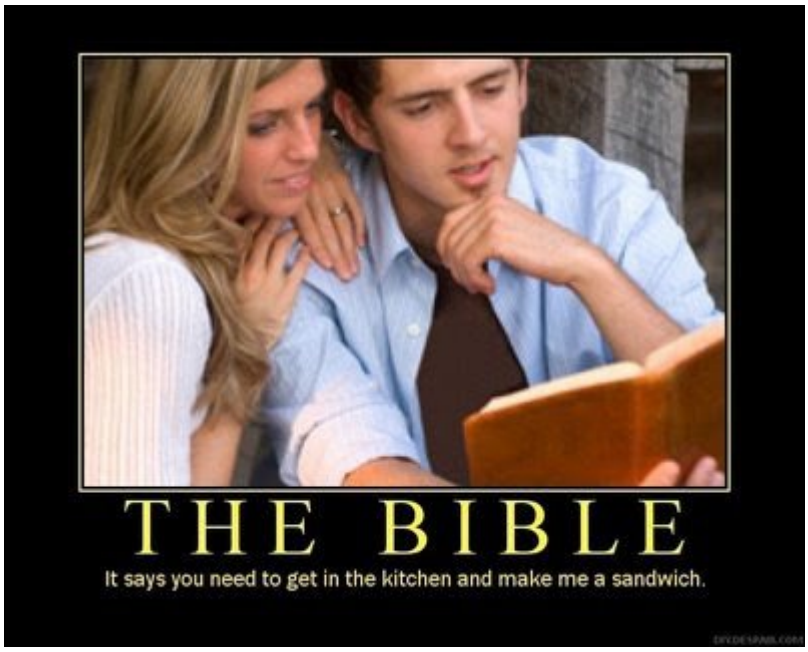
Bonecrcker #66 – Singles Events

Bonecrcker #115 – Women Go To Singles Events To Be Seen, Not To Pick Up Men

Bonecrcker #146 – No Cover Charge For The Ladies

Bonecrkcer #85 - The Bible is Anti-Woman?

. · 24 March 2004 · Archived copy · Original



Feminists would have you believe the bible is anti-woman and a tool men use to oppress women. Many people swallow that crap and abandon the bible as a source of wisdom and abandon religion and belief in God as being made up to enslave people. They never stop to ask three things. One, is what the bible saying true? Two, does the point seem to be mean spirited, oppressive or hateful toward women? And three, being simply an arbitrary collection of other books the early Christians used, is everything in it of equal value or is some of it correct and some of it wrong?

For the most part, the bible isn't anti-woman and much of what's in there about women and how to deal with them is correct. Further, those who say different seem to have an agenda of separating people from their faith as a means of controlling them (ironic that they should claim the faith controls them, lol). It's important to examine these ideas and try to see if you can verify if they are true or not by observing their application in everyday life. Because it is only that process that can sort out the truth from the crap.

There is great danger in not doing that process. Because you can easily accept attitudes, philosophies and beliefs as true, even though they support behaviours that don't work. People get attached to these and then start selectively attending to (or even making up) "evidence" that supports their position while desperately denying whatever contradicts it. That makes you powerless and usually results in intense suffering. Instead, what people should do is something almost like the scientific method. Treat the beliefs as a theory. Then try to hypothesize what will happen in specific situations when you choose behavior based on the theory. When the hypothesis is correct, it adds evidence that the theory is strong. Replace weak theories with strong ones, making your behavior more and more effective.

My point is the bible isn't misogynistic. It's warning of the problems inherent in women that have been with us from the beginning. Specifically it's warning us not to be tolerant of them or we end up with the type of problems we are starting to see today. But there are people who actually DO hate women. They use the problems that men are starting to wake up to as a chance to sneak a bunch of stuff in there that isn't true, particularly in regard to how to deal with women. They advocate punishing women and causing them pain. Those men are fools but tough to

distinguish from the real information that is becoming available (after all, there was a time for each of us that we would never have believed the things we know about women today). Hence, the warning to always test ideas about women and techniques to deal with them. Only retain what you can observe for yourself and keep those techniques that work. Why? Because, if you don't, the crap will prevent you from seeing things as they really are and will disempower you.

A "misogynistic" quote from the Bible is a good example of people throwing bullshit at you in an attempt to get you to dismiss ideas that might illuminate the truth and lead to powerful ways of dealing with things. If you never questioned the idea that what the Bible says about women is motivated by hatred, it would slide right by you. There are ALOT of people walking around that absolutely hate Christianity because they accept little tidbits without examination. They have been skilfully and purposefully separated from their faith by people who want to manipulate them. Feminists are only one of these types of people.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Bonecrcker #86 - It's Very Difficult To Come To Terms With How Fast An Important Relationship Evaporates

. · 25 March 2004 · Archived copy · Original

(Re: A man with a psychotic wife)

It's very difficult to come to terms with how quickly an important relationship (important to you, not to her) evaporates. It's happened to me. It's happened to a lot of guys here. All I can say is there is a hell of a lot more going on with women, particularly women like this, than meets the eye. Much of it is intentional deception on their part, much of it is psychotic behavior (literally in this case, with a diagnosis like bipolar). Because of this, and because of certain patterns of behavior that go along with this, it just isn't safe for you to still have her in your life. You need to train yourself to discount what women say and watch for patterns in what they do. In this case, she is telling you certain things but I think you should protect yourself from certain behaviours she is likely to engage in. What she says and what she does probably won't match up. I think you should divorce her as quickly and cleanly as possible, take extreme measures to make sure she never again darkens your doorstep (and she probably will try to) and examine the many warning signs this one showed you to prevent all the others (and there will be others) just like her from coming into your life.

The point I'm trying to make is there are several major patterns you see again and again with women, relationships and divorce. The patterns are repeating and pretty reliable from relationship to relationship. Yours is one of them…..one of the more extreme and disturbing ones. Unfortunately, there are some dangerous behaviours that go along with this particular pattern that I think you should look out for.

One thing I am a BIG advocate of is men identifying women like this as early as possible and getting rid of them. There is no hope of making things work because the other person is just broken and can't be fixed. If you try, you will be hurt, maybe even killed (I'm not exaggerating with that). Marrying them is one of the worst mistakes a man can make in life and if a man wakes up one day and finds himself in such a bad situation, he needs to be aware of what could happen (hell, what is likely to happen) and extricate himself carefully and in a protected way.

The first step is knowing what is going on. Groups like this can help, but what you really need is a support group of divorced men (men only!) to compare notes with and talk about these issues. I think you will be shocked at the similarity you would have with other guys going through the same thing. Similarity in behaviours from the women, similarity in ways of thinking, and similarity in what happens. But, there is also similarity in ways you can deal with these things too.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #47 – Living in La-La-Land

Bonecrcker #91 – Could She Just Walk Out Of Your Life?

Bonecrcker #152 – The Predatory Female

Men Harmed by Relationships More Than Women

Bonecrcker #87 - Abuse Is A Game You Can't Win

. · 26 March 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Abuse is a game you can’t win. As a matter of fact, the main purpose of abuse is to get you to abuse her. Once a relationship has devolved into abuse it becomes very unstable and feeds off the abuse. This often involves slow but steady escalation. The only way to handle this is to terminate the relationship, quickly and permanently. Having other options (ie other women) is an excellent technique to absolutely prevent abuse. Women whine incessantly that men are abusers but that’s a lie. The truth is that, mysteriously, abuse is completely absent when a man reserves options (forbids monogamy and living together). Quite literally, physical and verbal abuse is a cycle that women start, women maintain, and women escalate. Making it clear that the relationship is over at the very FIRST sign of this, is 100% effective in preventing all abuse. Don’t ever put up with the slightest bad behavior. You don’t have to play that game. Doing so makes you a loser.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #1 - Abuse

Bonecrcker #68 – Two Things That Men Need To Know About Domestic Violence

Bonecrcker #105 - Stalkers

Bonecrcker #180 - Sarcasm

Bonecrkcer #88 - The Moment You Ask A Woman For Something, Your Value Pummets

. · 27 March 2004 · Archived copy · Original

I will go so far as to say you cannot ask a woman out (or for anything else, for that matter). The very minute you ask for something, anything, your value plummets. It has nothing to do with you and everything to do with the fact that the woman is insane. The incredible irony of this is, the woman was probably interested in you, if she's hanging out with you, but the moment you show interest or ask for something, or try to impress her, you become worthless in her eyes.

This is why it is so important that your initial approach is oblique, feigning disinterest and focussing on attracting her rather than pursuing her. It's also why you should never, EVER approach a woman who doesn't show clear signs of interest. And, you are probably wasting your time with anyone but one percenters (the 1% of women who will show strong signs of interest if you elicit them). Identifying the right woman is far more important than the approach (although the wrong approach will also lead to failure).

It sucks. But what can you do. Women are nuts.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #127 – Timing is Important

Bonecrcker #89 - Identifying Women Who Are Wasting Your Time

. · 28 March 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Pushy is the difference between a desperate used car salesman and one who is trying to identify high probability sales. The first goes after everybody, cares nothing about their wants and needs and tries to coerce the person into buying something that isn't in their best interest. The high probability guy is doing the opposite. First, he's highly selective in who he approaches, only going towards people that seem to be looking for a salesman on the floor. Then, he tries to discover what she wants and needs to see if he has that available. However, if the potential customer doesn't cooperate with his behaviors designed to establish the fact that he is trustworthy and his behaviors to try an find out what she wants and needs or worse, he finds out she won't buy from him, even if he identifies something perfect for her, he walks away from the sale, because there is no point and the whole thing is just a waste of both of their time.

Most women are just wasting your time. Even if you are perfect for them, THEY NEVER HAD ANY INTENTION OF MEETING YOU IN THE FIRST PLACE. How do you know? They resist your attempts to establish trust. They are vague and elusive when you try to find out if you are a good match for them. They waste your time incessantly even after it becomes clear they don't want you. But most of all, after you have established trust and found out you are what they want and need, they won't meet you in person (arrrrgh). When you try to convince them that they should meet you, they react the same way as if you were trying to pressure them into meeting you when they aren't attracted to you at all. They call you pushy. If you try to get them to contact you without establishing trust and/or they aren't attracted to you, then you actually are pushy. However, most men don't do this. What's going on is they have established trust and identified themselves as a good match. The problem is the woman just isn't really looking at all. Calling you pushy in this case is a manipulative attempt to deny responsibility for her own behavior. The only way to handle both of these situations is to just walk away.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #34 – Online Dating – Not!

Bonecrcker #53 – Online Dating is a Scam

Bonecrcker #90 – There Is No Point In Approaching Any Woman Who Doesn't Look At You And Go "Yum"

Bonecrcker #124 – Women on Online Personals Are Just Wasting Your Time

Bonecrcker #90 - There is No Point in Approaching Any Woman Who Doesn't Look At You And Go "Yum"

. · 29 March 2004 · Archived copy · Original

There is absolutely no point in approaching any woman who doesn't look at you physically and go…yum. So, your picture should be upfront, probably several, showing you in great detail, as a screening device to get rid of women you have no chance with. Even that isn't good enough because the picture is a poor representation of you in person and can't convey body language, speech, smell, mannerisms, whatever (one of the reasons I think online personals are a waste of time). Somewhere between 1 and 10% of women will look at you and go yum. However, very few of them will be open to you for one reason or another, mostly for reasons that have absolutely nothing to do with you.

The number one reason a woman might not be open is because women choose men the way that bulimics choose food……they binge. A bulimic will deny her normal urge to eat and starve herself for long periods of time and then lose control and gorge herself on food that is bad for her, then shame herself afterward. As the disease progresses, the shame becomes addicting and she engages in this behavior for masochistic reasons, to feel the shame (ick). Women look at you and go, yum, but (unless you are very good at enticing them) they will deny their normal need for sex, love, companionship and intimacy, because they are holding out for Fabio. Of course the average woman never meets Fabio or Donald Trump or James Bond or whatever her wacko fantasy of perfect is, and after awhile her unmet needs overwhelm her. Then she grabs just anybody, usually the scum of the earth because they are easy to get. She feels shame afterward. BUT, she becomes addicted to the shame (identifies herself as being a bad person) and seeks out that type of partner more and more. You absolutely don't want one of these freaks in the advanced stages of the illness.

Your mission, should you choose to accept it, is to learn ways to know which women are looking at you and going yum, focus exclusively on those women, with the main goal of finding out if they are currently restricting themselves or not. THAT behavior is the one that pays dividends with women. That and learning how to entice women. Trying to approach and convince women to like you is COMPLETELY ineffective, except for the rare case where a guy gets a live one, by pure luck.

Or you could do it the hard and painful way and approach two or three hundred women at random and see who bites.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #34 – Online Dating – Not!

Bonecrcker #53 – Online Dating is a Scam

Bonecrcker #89 - Identifying Women Who Are Wasting Your Time

Bonecrcker #124 – Women on Online Personals Are Just Wasting Your Time

Bonecrcker #91 - Could She Just Walk Out Of Your Life?

. · 30 March 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Could? Will is more like it. She WILL walk out of your life without remorse. This is a concept you absolutely must understand when dealing with western women. She WILL walk out of your life without remorse AND, depending on how embedded she was in your life, cause varying levels of problems WHEN she leaves AND, depending on how fucked up she is, try to harm you and/or any children you have together, up to the limit you allow her to.

You cannot ignore the implications of this when you decide what type of relationship to have with a woman. Choose wisely and in such a way that it limits the mischief she causes. Or else…..

Also, when she is with you, she is in no way limiting herself just to you. Another thing to know about before deciding if monogamy (a scam) is for you. You never know about it, but she is actively looking for other men the entire time she is with you and goes through a string of men (whether you are married, living together or just dating), the entire time you know her. You can't let her know you know because she will just deny it and step up her search for your replacement. The moment she finds one, you're gone.

Lastly, the moment a woman "has you", she no longer wants you and will stop trying. The moment you accept the monogamous relationship, the bad behavior starts and she will soon be gone. You can't keep her. But, you can make her stay around longer by making her compete.

So, should you cheat on her? No, that's something a pussy whipped man, who is unworthy of respect, does. The only thing that will earn bad behavior more than monogamy is lying about monogamy. Do you lay down the law and say, look bitch; I just want pussy from you? Maybe. That works, but only with the most fucked up women. These women are into finding new and interesting ways to make themselves and you suffer…..avoid them. The best way to do this is to never allow the monogamous relationship to form in the first place. You must rigidly control how fast and how deep the relationship develops. You must set limits. You must say no to everything she asks for. And you must severely limit the time you spend with any particular woman (once every two weeks is a good rule of thumb). Make the time you spend with her, intense, but limited (ie valuable). She will inevitably ask why. The answer should always be vague, never defensive, and always some version of, I'm a busy man with a limited amount of time. Never allow her to think you are monogamous with her or that the relationship is getting serious but don't rub her face in the fact that you see other women (nobody's business but yours). Don't allow her to make you accountable for time you spend away from her. Don't let her leave shit at your apartment. And, whatever you do, don't stop your behaviors designed to meet new women. In fact, since you have a woman, it's a good time to step up those behaviors because this magically makes you much more attractive to women in general (and the effect is cumulative).

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #47 – Living in La-La-Land

Bonecrcker #86 – It's Very Difficult To Come To Terms With How Fast An Important Relationship Vanishes

Bonecrcker #152 – The Predatory Female

Bonecrcker #92 - The Problem With Whores

. · 31 March 2004 · Archived copy · Original

The problem with a whore is she takes the obnoxious high risk behavior women engage in to ridiculous extremes. Even with all the crap women do, few are having sexual contacts into the hundreds per year with complete lack of restrictions. However, all whores do this. And a whore that will have sex with you for money will happily have sex with a high risk man, without a condom….for more money. Anyplace (like the United States, for example) where being whore is all about letting men beat you in exchange for speedy drugs, you are almost guaranteed to be exposed to AIDS, many other diseases almost as deadly/nasty, not to mention the criminal element. Just say NO to any westernized woman who has ever worked in the sex for money industry in any capacity. Although every woman has a screw loose, these women have 90% of their screws loose. Quite frankly, your chances of being exposed to AIDS is close to nil, unless you specifically go looking for it by screwing prostitutes or specifically seek out the IV drug user crowd or if you have sex with men.

I cannot comment on the sex for money scene outside the US but I think it's asking for trouble. Definitely, not something you should even consider unless you spend a significant amount of time investigating the real risks involved. The problem though is there are people with an agenda who don't want you to have access to that scene, who lie about the risks (which, of course makes people doubt the risk is real). But, there are also people involved in the scene who lie the other way about the risks because denial is a big part of how they handle those risks. The truth is there is significant risk…..of catching AIDS (I actually know a guy who died of AIDS this way), of catching something else just as bad, of being robbed etc., and lots of other stuff. Anyone who tells you different is LYING. What you need is truthful information that allows you to plan behaviors that minimize your risk. If you can't or simply won't do that, then the price in terms of risk is probably unacceptably high.

Personally, I wouldn't consider an American prostitute under any circumstances. They are the worst women on the planet and I'd enter a monastery before I let one of those sick bitches even touch me. I might consider a woman from one of the eastern countries like this but only if she was of such high quality that I would never see a woman like that here, let alone screw her. And I would only do that if I spent a hell of a lot of time minimizing my risk and networking with guys who frequent that specific scene and know what they are doing.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #79 - Prostitution

Bonecrcker #108 – Feminism Pushes the Whore/Customer Model

Bonecrcker #117 – Would You Strip Down In A Room With A Crack Addict?

Bonecrcker #93 - She's Lying

. · 1 April 2004 · Archived copy · Original

The problem here is that women lie about anything and everything….often for no reason at all. Most men, not being liars themselves, never consider that other people, particularly their women friends and loved ones, are liars. It takes getting burned, often several times, before a man wakes up to rule number one when dealing with women……don't listen to anything they say, no matter how minor, because it's a lie. That's not enough though. It takes major education and rehabilitation before men even learn about rule number two (let alone, live it)…..you are the most important person in any relationship with women.

1) Who care what they say. It's either a lie or a manipulation and usually both. So don't listen to it.

2) I am the only important person in my relationships (no matter the type) with women.

It's important to understand the "woman who is the expception" phenomena. You WILL run into women (probably many women) who seem to not be this way. You will be tempted to break rules 1 and 2. DON'T DO IT! Women are sociopaths….perfect actors. A great many of them are into the whole, "I'm different" thing. They absolutely are NOT. They are the most dangerous because you will think you've found the real thing, completely arrange your life, mind and soul around them and then get destroyed. For months or years, you will be so overwhelmingly overjoyed that (unlike all those other losers) you actually have love in your life from a woman who truly cares about you. This is the worst and most insidious of lies and once it is revealed, well, there's nothing left. Falling for the "woman who is the exception", is a good way to end up contemplating eating a gun. Don't do that either. It is possible to have good relationships with women but only if you force it to be on your terms and understand that they are time limited. You enjoy them for as long as they last. Understand that they will be over, probably sooner, rather than later (so you want to leave at the first sign of bad behavior) and you have to constantly engage in behaviors that bring new women into your life.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #113 – Everything Out of a Woman's Mouth is a Lie

Pook #6 – Lesson Three: Judge By Actions, Not By Words

Social Strategy: Why Men Shouldn't Argue with Women

Bonecrcker #94 - Evil, Not Power, Is The Defining Attribute Of Women's Attraction Toward Deviant Men

. · 2 April 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Women aren't attracted to alpha males and they most certainly have no fear of men. Our society, on every level, goes out of its way to protect them. For most men, harming a woman is taboo.

What a woman wants from a man isn't for him to be powerful. If this was true than large, strong, rich men with high IQs would be overrun with pussy. Sadly, this isn't the case. At best, a woman looks for a man like this who is easily manipulated (a rare find) so that she can feed off him during the last stages of her self-destruction. But what women go after with zeal and verve are the losers of our society…..uneducated, drug-using, criminal scum. Are these men powerful? Absolutely not. That's why they stab you in the back but wouldn't dare face you man to man. It's also why they are complete failures in life…..they are weak beyond belief. But, other than being weak these bozos have one thing in common…..they are all evil. And it is that evil that attracts women.

Evil, not power, is the defining attribute of women's attraction toward deviant men.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

.
Bonecrcker #5 – Women Choosing Losers

.
Bonecrcker #6 – Women Choosing Extinction

.
Bonecrcker #10 – Women Choosing Scum

Bonecrcker #25 – On Asshole "Game"

.
Bonecrcker #84 – Women Going for Evil Losers

Bonecrcker #118 – Women Who Marry Scumbags

Bonecrcker #95 - No, no, no, no, No, NO!

. · 3 April 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Quite obviously all women have become insane. It's not that they eschew logic (actually, they are quite good at coming up with rationalizations). It's that they spend the lion's share of their efforts seeking out insane situations, engaging in insane behaviors and basically destroying themselves and anyone stupid enough to allow them the tiniest bit of say in their lives. The solution is equally obvious……don't give them even the tiniest bit of say in your life. When I say tiniest, I mean it. No matter what they ask for, no matter how innocuous, you must say no to it. You must never ask them for anything, even the simplest, most smallest thing. If you want something from them you must tell them to give it to you. Although you say it nicely, it must be a command. The very second they say no to you, you need to dump them.

It's sad to say, but that's what it takes just to prevent a woman from ruining your life, which she will do 100% of the time if you don't do this. A woman can and will move on, eventually to find someone who will let them ruin their life for them. Not enough men know about this yet, although many more know about it today than just a few short years ago. Eventually, most men will know it and women will have few to no options for this. They will have to change or do without. It will start with relationships first. Few to no men will get married each year and a great many men will seek wives from outside cultures. Next, these same men will look at women in the work place and ask, "Hey, do these female employees have merit?" You'll find few women being promoted unless they can do the job. Last to change will be the courts, as more and more, it is discovered that MOST of the female issues in court are based on lies. Most rape cases….lies. Most alimony/child (mommy) support based on lies. It will become very common for courts to assume a woman is lying about certain issues…..especially with regard to non-stranger rape and almost everything with regard to divorce.

However, it all starts with one simple word…..no. No is the magic word that will protect you from women…..today. No, we won't get married. No, you can't move in with me. No, I don't want to meet your parents. No, that kid isn't mine. No, you can't have any money. No, I just don't want a monogamous relationship. No. No. No. No. NO.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #51 – Don't Argue With Women

Bonecrcker #97 – The #1 Mistake Most Men Make With Women Is… Talking To Them

Bonecrcker #110 – The Problem With Discussing Things With Women

Bonecrcker #96 - Celibacy Doesn't Equal Immunity

. · 4 April 2004 · Archived copy · Original

A lot of guys I've known have thought they are immune when they aren't dating and mating. Every single one of them got royally burned by the "woman who is the exception". What happened was they were so starved for intimacy that they became a prime mark for some woman. Realizing that this was one of the men who know something is very wrong with women, she proceeds to pretend that she is the one woman in a million who isn't like that. And for a while, she is. What happens is the man is so overjoyed at finally having some pussy that he turns a blind eye a few months later when things subtly (or not so subtly) change. He ignores "dings" (odd inconsistencies in what a woman does or says). He ignores warning signs and allows the woman to get a death lock on his life by moving in and/or getting pregnant. Sometimes she is actually able to convince him to get married, even with extreme warning signs (Honey, I know I was a drug prostitute during college but I'm a different person now, hehehe).

No man thinks it can happen to him. But it will.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Bonecrcker #97 - The #1 Mistake Most Men Make With Women Is... Talking to Them

. · 5 April 2004 · Archived copy · Original

I think you are making the number one mistake that most men make with women. You are talking to them. Trying to have an honest, equal, intelligent conversation with them is like me trying to explain to Pushkin that terrorists, Nazis, and Satan worshipers are bad people…..a fruitless endeavour. The problem is, they're nuts and most of their mental power is focussed on rationalizing their nutty behavior. They will take every avenue to twist the truth in ways that are amazing to behold, and God forbid you should pin them down and dissect exactly what they are doing…..they hate you forever for it (and just keep on, keeping on). What's the point?

Quite frankly, if you don't want something from her (and let's face it, that means pussy), then you shouldn't be talking to her. If she shows no interest in giving you what you want in the near future, you should not be talking to her. Now, let's say you want something from her and she is giving you major signals that she wants to give it to you. You need to talk to her. However, keep in mind two things. First, within reason, the less you talk the better. The more you listen to her, the more a brilliant conversationalist you seem (they are COMPLETELY self-centered and only one subject is a guaranteed hit…..themselves). The less you reveal about yourself the better. Women don't love you, they love the fantasy of you and all that revealing just bursts their bubble. The second is anything you do say should be completely goal focussed. Think about this. You want something from her. The things you say to her should have the goal of opening the path to her giving it to you. If you are talking about something (rather than inane small talk) or explaining something, you have drifted away from your goal and are fucking up.

When talking to women, there are three things that should be coming out of your mouth. Inane small talk about something unimportant that you are both observing. Open ended questions about her. And various techniques for fostering attraction (for example, David D'Angelo has an excellent series on this). If one of these three things isn't coming out of your mouth, you are probably explaining something or arguing. Although it's satisfying to be heard by someone, it is fostering a negative image with her and every other woman observing you with her. You are driving the pussy off with a stick. Sad, but true.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #51 – Don't Argue With Women

Bonecrcker #93 – She's Lying

Bonecrcker #95 – No, no, no, no, No, NO!

Bonecrcker #110 – The Problem With Discussing Things With Women

Bonecrcker #113 – Everything Out of a Woman's Mouth is a Lie

Social Strategy: Why Men Shouldn't Argue with Women

Bonecrcker #98 - Are Women Children or Adults?

. · 6 April 2004 · Archived copy · Original

The logical conclusion that women are just children in adult bodies is that they need to be shielded from the consequences of their actions, just like children. That is perhaps the single most damaging assumption that has resulted in our current unfair and draconian system of legal, social and employment double standards. Women are not children in adult bodies. They are adults with all the responsibilities that implies. When one shirks his or her responsibilities there are consequences. It is both inappropriate and the source of all our problems with women for us to make up for their bad behavior, both as individuals and as a society.

Also, what do you do with unruly children after you have shielded them from the consequences of their actions? You punish them, so they won't do it again later on. Punishing a woman for her own good is a one way ticket to prison. Again, women are adults, not children. You don't punish them. Instead, you force them to accept the natural consequences of their own behavior. Eventually, men will figure this out and we will have a new system that decides how society reacts to an individual based on merit, not on gender.

.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

.

.

Related:

.

Bonecrcker #4 – Immature or Evil?

Woman: The Most Responsible Teenager in the House

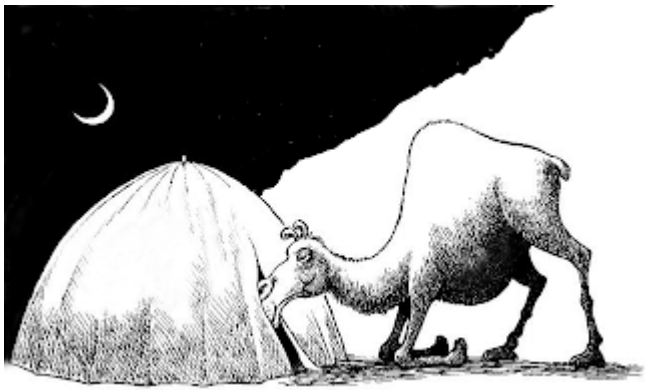
.

Women and Children

Letter to His Son – by Lord Chesterfield, 1748

Bonecrcker #99 - Living Together is a Scam

. · 7 April 2004 · Archived copy · Original



The problem with living together is it's a huge scam. You think you are getting a girlfriend but the only reason she is there at all is to spend 100% of her time manipulating you into marriage, while blocking off your access to other women. If you don't have options, her behavior goes hog wild. Your ability to walk away is severely compromised. You'll definitely be abused and you will probably end up married.

Additionally, some states have bizarre laws that give a live in women close to the same ability to screw you as a wife.

Once the camel gets its head in the tent, it gets all the way in. You can't get her out without your belongings being strewn all over the desert.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #18 – Three Rules To Follow

Bonecrcker #40 – Relationship Phases

Bonecrcker #100 – The Problem with Pre-Nups

Bonecrcker #101 – Why You Must Never Give a Woman Any Money

Bonecrcker #119 – Sleeping With Single Moms and Cohabitating

Bonecrker #100 - The Problem with Pre-Nups

. · 8 April 2004 · Archived copy · Original

The problem with a pre-nup is the stupid divorce court is out of control. They can and regularly do, ignore them. In the case of your house, even if it comes into the marriage as an asset that belongs to you (so, it should only be yours afterward) it serves as the residence for your wife and any children you have. The court can and will say that, since the wife and kids would end up on the street if you took the house, the asset is actually co-mingled. The same way that if you had a million dollars going into the marriage and were foolish enough to put it into your joint savings account, at divorce, the asset would become co-mingled and community property. You can have a contract (pre-nup) that says otherwise, but the court will just ignore it. What are you going to do about it? Plus, your stupid wife will do everything in her power to avoid signing the pre-nup, including dumping you. What's the point?

The best asset protection policy is the one that she doesn't know about (relying on financial privacy for protection) and that takes disputes outside of the rogue divorce court.

Hiring a divorce attorney before you get married to discuss all the nasty things that can happen during a divorce is a solid investment in your future. As is hiring a specialist in this type of protection to counsel you on what actually works and what doesn't.

However, my own opinion is…..simply refuse to get married.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #99 – Living Together is a Scam

Bonecrcker #101 – Why You Must Never Give a Woman Any Money

Bonecrcker #101 - Why You Must Never Give a Woman Any Money

. · 9 April 2004 · Archived copy · Original

You must never give a woman any money, even if she is your wife, because she will lead you into financial instability. Even if she isn't outright out to steal from you, once you allow your finances to mingle, she will wipe you both out.

A man understands that the secret to wealth is to live below your means and to invest that extra money, compounding the return on those investments into more investments. Do that long enough and you'll eventually be able to retire and live off your investments. But women do the opposite. They actually live way over their means and seek to balance this extreme financial irresponsibility and instability by hooking up with a man who has money. Rapidly, her problem grows until it threatens to put you both in the poorhouse.

The only solution is to have a strict policy of saying NO to everything. Hey, I want that. No. Hey, I'd like to be a stay at home mom. No. Hey, I want an allowance. No, the only spending money you get is what you earn yourself.

And even that won't work, because they will run up credit cards behind your back and then get into real trouble. Either you bail them out or they will face harsh consequences. Frankly, with what I know now, I know it's coming and would dump a woman who was getting into trouble this way.

Marriage is a sticky situation because most states force you to be responsible for your partner's debt, if you know about it or not.

An example: A friend of mine was married and living in California. They got divorced. A whole year before he even suspected his marriage was in trouble; his wife stopped paying her withholding. Did she take that extra money and stow it away somewhere? No. What she did was waste it. During the divorce, this surprise came up that she owed the IRS $12,000. Only it wasn't just she who owed the IRS $12 grand, they both did. And she absolutely refused to pay them. The feds, of course, starting tacking on all sorts of penalties and it ended up in court. In the end, my friend was forced to take out a loan to pay off the debt and hope to recoup half of it during the divorce. Only, her side started throwing delaying tactic after delaying tactic. She just wouldn't give him the damn divorce already. Finally, after two years of this, he caved in and accepted a settlement where he shouldered most of the debt (including about $50 grand in student loan debt that got co-mingled, during their marriage). And she made more of a salary than him! Ah yes, no-fault divorce…..what a concept.

The only way to avoid THAT noise is not to marry.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #99 – Living Together is a Scam

Bonecrcker #100 – The Problem with Pre-Nups

Bonecrcker #102 – What Matters is the Amount of Power and Choice You Have in a Relationship

Bonecrcker #102 - What Matters is the Amount of Power and Choice You Have in a Relationship

. · 10 April 2004 · Archived copy · Original

You know, if women really were only looking for a good provider, it wouldn't be that big of a deal. I mean, in most cultures it seems that part of what men are expected to provide is security for their wife and family.

The problem comes from the fact that most american woman are stuck in such a negative vibe. They don't want a nice home, financial security and the best for themselves and their children. What they want is to exploit a man for cash while they screw around with drug dealers. They don't respect themselves and they certainly don't respect the provider…….which is why men avoid marriage.

I guess what I am saying is the problem is NOT a misunderstanding of the roles between men and women, miscommunications, needs not being met, whatever (despite what tons of closet homos, like Dr Phil would have you believe). The problem is the quality of the character of the average woman is very, very low.

One, you have no control over that. They will NEVER change, no matter what you do, unless they decide on their own to change for their own reasons (realistically, that just doesn't happen). The only thing you can do is switch women constantly, making sure each new woman has a character that is better and better. But, since noble character is soooooo rare, it is the quality that gives a woman the most status. In other words, a good woman can demand any type of partner she chooses and get it. Unless you have worked your way up the status ladder, she has no reason to give you the time of day. Much less so than say, a penthouse pet would or an rich heiress like Paris Hilton would.

But two, you have to make damn sure you have the lions share of the power in any relationships you have. Why? Because you will have to constantly control negative behavior from those you are involved with. If you can't or won't, it will rapidly escalate into severe abuse. If you allow it to become very advanced, it will result in a marriage, plus kids, and then divorce, personal ruin and despair.

It's sad to say but you cannot solve this problem by being sane, loving, and nurturing in a relationship. Although that is nice, it is irrelevant. What matters is the amount of power and choice you have. Both niceguys and evil men are harmed by women when they haven't cultivated power in relationships. And both niceguys and evil men can have success with women, but only if they cultivate power and choice instead of love with women. The difference is the niceguy does it in a positive way. He says says no to all requests and refuses monogamous relationships. Although he cares about women, he is completely detached. The evil man, slaps a woman down when she "gets out of line" and laughs in her face whenever she expresses a desire or need. Everything out of his mouth is a lie or a putdown.

What is horrible is women cannot tell the difference between benevolent detachment and callous indifference. They are both equally attractive to them.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #60 – A Man Must Strive to Prevent Women From Having the Smallest Shred of Power Over Him

Bonecrcker #101 – Why You Must Never Give a Woman Any Money

Bonecrcker #103 - Raising Your Sexual Status

. · 11 April 2004 · Archived copy · Original

A lot of the problems with American chicks is that a 4 (slightly below average) thinks she is a 6 (slightly above average) who deserves an 8 (high quality). These women never get the 8. However, what they do is randomly screw men who are anywhere from a 1 to a 6. Most of the time they are stuck up, wanting that 8. But much like their eating, which involves several days of strict control followed by a binge once or twice a week, they'd sleep with anybody.

All women are like this, beautiful, ugly, single, married, young, old. Their status is mostly fixed. Most of the time they will only consider that high end range of their status. But alot of the time they will grab a random person from somewhere in a range around their status. Let's say she is a 6. Most of the time she won't even glance at any guy who isn't a 10. But once or twice a month, she'd grab a 4. Once she has sex with that 4, HE BECOMES ONE OF THE GUYS SHE'D HAVE SEX WITH AT ANY TIME.

If you're a 5 (ie most guys), you either need to limit yourself initially to women who you are a 10 for OR you need to improve your timing and be able to tell when women are in slut mode. Learn where women go when they are about to binge. Learn the behaviors they exhibit so you can first identify them and then exploit them.

Here's the interesting part. A man's status is not fixed for the most part. He can climb up the ladder by the number and quality of the women he is with. The average guy becomes a 10 when he is sleeping with 3 or 4 women 8 and above.

Since this is the game women actually play (as opposed to the love/marriage/commitment they lie that they actually want), men should become good at it and play to win.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #24 – Social Proofing

Bonecrcker #44 – Women Have Contradictory Love

Bonecrcker #104 – Sexual Status is Similar to Employment Status

Bonecrcker #111 – Gaining Power With Women

Bonecrcker #123 – One of the Most Important Reasons to Have More Than One Woman at Once

Bonecrcker #172 – Social Proofing Has Negative Survival Value For Women

Zenpriest #19 – How Women Keep Score

Bonecrcker #104 - Sexual Status is Similar to Employment Status

. · 12 April 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Sexual status for men is similar to being in the workforce. If you are unemployed and you apply for a job, everyone assumes you are an unemployable loser. But, if you go on exploratory interviews when you already have a job and make it clear that you love your job and would only consider being lured away for a 10% raise, etc. because you feel you could handle more important responsibilities, everyone wants to hire you. If you aren't getting any, you give off defeated loser vibes and women look at you and assume the reason you have no lover is because you aren't good enough for one. But as soon as you get one, all the girls just one step above her status-wise want to lure you away. The more women you have at one time, the more valuable you are.

The important thing is what you do after you get the first one. You need to immediately use that status to get another woman (to prevent the first ones leaving from being as leverage against you or becoming "unemployed" again). Then another, and probably one more just to be safe (each one is easier than the last, as long as they are all of the same status). Then you can start working on higher status chicks (younger, sexier/prettier, better personality, educated, wealthy etc.). You climb up the ladder this way. Keeping more than one prevents you from being pushed down the ladder. Any time you allow a woman to become monogamous you get pushed down a few rungs and held in place. You can only go down from there (and she will continuously try to push you down). That's a big difference between men and women. Men always try to push their women up the ladder and make them and their lives better. Women want to push you down the ladder so they feel justified/safe to degrade you. Don't let them do this.

The best solution to this problem is to enter a social situation where there are lots and lots of single women who are looking immediately to get a boyfriend. The number one place for that is college. Four year, resident living, slacker colleges (state colleges all the way up to big ten) are best for this. Every fall the freshmen show up and want a boyfriend within a couple of days. Better quality schools, especially engineering schools, aren't very good because the women who go there are either dykes or neurotic freaks that care only about their GPA. Community colleges are good but only if you go during the day.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #24 – Social Proofing

Bonecrcker #44 – Women Have Contradictory Love

Bonecrcker #103 – Raising Your Sexual Status

Bonecrcker #111 – Gaining Power With Women

Bonecrcker #123 – One of the Most Important Reasons to Have More Than One Woman at Once

Bonecrcker #172 – Social Proofing Has Negative Survival Value For Women

Bonecrcker #105 - Stalkers

. · 13 April 2004 · Archived copy · Original

You know, I've never met a man before who exhibits the behavior of a stalker. But I have met several women who have. I've even been stalked by a woman for a period of years. She would call up, sometimes say perverted things and hang up but later, just call and say nothing for awhile and then hang up. I'd move have an unlisted phone number and peace for a few weeks, and then she'd find out somehow and start up again. I had made the mistake of dating this woman when I was a freshman in college. I decided she was a deranged wacko and broke it off. Her response was to try and run me down with her car (hehe, she missed). After about 4 years of the calls, she lost interest.

A female "friend" of mine got involved with a married, soon-to-be-divorced man (yeah right). When he inevitably decided to return to his wife and child, she started to stalk him…..showing up at his work, following him around, and calling his house all the time. Stupidly, this guy fucked her again. Just after he came, while he was still lying in bed, she called his wife on the phone and yelled at her, "Guess what, I just fucked your husband." And she doesn't understand why I don't want to know her anymore.

Like many things, stalking is something something most women do and only a handful of men do.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #1 - Abuse

Bonecrcker #87 – Abuse is a Game You Can't Win

Bonecrcker #106 - Captain Free Therapist

. · 14 April 2004 · Archived copy · Original

The problem with Captain Free Therapist is he thinks women are good girls. They're not. With the possible exception of your mother and your sister, they are all horny little sluts. That crying jag when you first met her? She doesn't care that she broke up with her boyfriend. That's not why she is crying. She's crying to attract the attention of some guy who will fuck her. Sad, but true. But any guy who would possibly try to, ummm, make her feel better or even be nice to her, just doesn't fit the bill.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #35 – You Mean Nothing To A Woman Until You Have Sex

Bonecrcker #38 – You Mean Nothing Until You Have Sex II

Bonecrcker #127 – Timing Is Important

Bonecrcker #128 – Women as "Friends"

Bonecrcker #130 – Never Allow A Woman To Call You A Friend Unless You've Had Sex At Least Once

Bonecrcker #156 – Friends With Benefits

Pook #5 – Lesson Two: Friendship – Abandon All Hope Ye Who Enter

Bonecrcker #107 - Feminism is a Purposefully Destructive Ideology within a Larger Destructive Group

. · 15 April 2004 · Archived copy · Original

The more we analyze the pattern of feminist ideology, the more clear it becomes that these are NOT just misguided people with values that have destructive consequences. What they are doing, they are doing on purpose, in a shadowy, manipulative, behind-the-scenes manner. None of the actual issues matter to these people (indeed, they tend to flip-flop and have infighting on some issues), but it's the destructive quality they are after, to rot out the very fabric of our society. And feminists are just a subgroup of a larger group that seems to be involved with this, that have their dirty fingers in most movements, particularly the extreme ones (like BOTH the far right AND the far left). They play them off against each other in whatever way furthers their agenda.

The guys at mensnewsdaily.com have a point. They rightly point out certain links between feminists and other dangerous subversive movements. But they are biased and selective at rooting out those links. They abuse this phenomenon to beat up on groups they simply disagree with on certain issues, while turning a blind eye to people who are playing both sides of the fence in whatever way causes the most damage.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #13 – DV Myths = Cold War

Bonecrcker #164 – The Media Is Being Used Against Us

Roots of American Culture and Community in Disarray – Bill Woods

Bonecrcker #108 - Feminism Pushes the Whore/Customer Model

. · 16 April 2004 · Archived copy · Original

I see the increasing tendency of women to follow the whore/customer model (formally or informally) as a big part of the problem and as a major part of the feminist agenda. There is a weird double standard with this. They don't actually want men to have access to sex outside of marriage as a way to break their wives use of sex as a method of manipulation but they want to protect the ability of women to follow the lifestyle of a prostitute as a way to destroy the very fabric of families as an institution. I see this as one of the schisms in the feminist movement.

Prostitution is an extremely destructive thing to a culture when it is allowed to grow beyond a certain point. Bluntly, whores epitomize the very worst qualities in women. Too much patronage/normalization of this and women as a whole in that culture take on those traits, more and more. To a large extent, that's what is happening in our own culture.

The family is the traditional tool used by every culture to encourage positive values and loving, stable, nurturing relationships. Anything that threatens that is a bad thing. Just because whores are upfront and honest (yeah right) about what they desire from you doesn't mean that sort of relationship is desirable or even acceptable. The problem is so many women wanting to be like those whores. That should be discouraged. Giving money to a whore encourages those values, not only in her but in all women. Far better to treat a woman like a whore but make sure she gets nothing in the bargain. There are plenty of women that will let you do this to them. Making sure you get what you want out of them but that it is not a profitable (pun intended) exchange for them is a way to get what you want while discouraging the behavior as a whole. The goal should be to make those women think wistfully about being married to a devoted, caring husband who loves them.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #79 - Prostitution

Bonecrcker #92 – The Problem with Whores

Bonecrcker #109 - The Benefits of Boys-Only Schools

. · 17 April 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Boys want girls but girls only want boys who are part of the criminal class of society (their mothers taught them that boys like this are desirable by choosing men who are like this). Boys from that class can barely read. So, to avoid becoming low status, boys avoid all those things that are connected with being a normal, educated man. They start getting involved with things that attract girls, like drug use and gang violence. They've seen their mother kick out their father and spend time with every loser on the planet, so they think that's what a successful man is all about. An unsuccessful man was their father who wanted to stay but was forced away and probably victimized financially by mom (ie he's powerless, a loser, a failure). And people wonder why young boys want to emulate the criminal?

By having a boy's only school, the men who ran it were able to control what brought a boy status. Gee, what surprise, academic success brings status in that environment so boys there seek it. That would have ended with the first girl student admitted.

If it was the straight A student/captain of the football team that was popular with girls, things would be different. Instead, it's the failing drug addict smoking pot behind the gym while cutting classes. If he's carrying a gun, he's even more attractive.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #14 – Ritalin and Abusive Schools

Bonecrcker #15 – Abusive Schools II

Bonecrcker #26 - Fatherlessness Equals Fucked-upness

Bonecrcker #109 – The Benefits of Boys Only Schools

Bonecrcker #179 – Subversive Teachers

Bonecrcker #110 - The Problem With Discussing Things With Women

. · 18 April 2004 · Archived copy · Original

The problem with discussing things with women is their half of the debate is essentially made up on the spot with no basis in reality and subject to change instantly to either prove them right or to support a decision they've already made at random. That's a big difference between men and women. Men use critical thinking to make decisions while women use critical thinking to rationalize decisions they've already made. If the decision they made worked, the rationalization tends to be of high quality. If the decision fails (usually, it does) then the quality of the rationalization is intentionally poor, to cover up specific things they did that caused the failure and to avoid taking responsibility and (gasp) change, at all costs. Obviously, you can't work out things or negotiate with a person who does this and shouldn't even try. A side effect is they will hate you if you manage to box them in a corner analytically and will disrespect you if you just give up. It's a lose/lose situation, so why bother? The limit should be……Hey, I'm going out to "fill in the blank", wanna come? No. Ok…..bye. The bad news is she made that decision at random. So, you can't change her mind (well, sometimes you can, but it's degrading and just not worth the effort). The good news is, ask enough women and one will randomly say yes.

This is a far cry from being normal. But it is what it is. Normal would be a woman only considering men she thought were attractive and then getting to know men from that pool until she found one that was compatible, then focussing her attention on that man until love started to develop. Then start a sexual relationship with that man. No woman does that.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Bonecrcker #51 – Don't Argue With Women

Bonecrcker #93 – She's Lying

Bonecrcker #95 – No, no, no, no, No, NO!

Bonecrcker #97 – The #1 Mistake Most Men Make With Women Is… Talking To Them

Bonecrcker #113 – Everything Out of a Woman's Mouth is a Lie

Social Strategy: Why Men Shouldn't Argue with Women

Bonecrcker #111 - Gaining Power With Women

. · 19 April 2004 · Archived copy · Original

The way you get power with women is to get one, and then you have slightly more power with women than you had before. Where most men fuck up is they immediately stop trying to be with any woman except who they are already with. This is a normal and natural thing to do. You are SUPPOSED to seek a deeper relationship and foster love between you. But women just aren't interested in that and actually disrespect any man who follows that strategy with women. What you should do is keep on looking for women and use the extra oomph you have from already being involved to more easily get a second. This gives you even more power with women so you can get a third. Now, it's time to use that extra power to get rid of the ugliest one and replace her with a higher status woman. In general, women who are married are the lowest status as are fat women (i.e. they make a good starting point). Older women have lower status than younger ones. Richer girls are more status than poor, uneducated ones. And everyone knows that pretty girls and sexy girls (not necessary the same thing) have the highest status of all.

The only way to have power with women is to start at the bottom and work your way up. But, somewhere along the way (usually, right at the beginning) the women will try to derail you and get you to be exclusive with them. They rightly point out that it is the normal thing for men and women to do. Unfortunately, they have no intention of doing their part and your status drops dramatically if you take the bait. Simply say no and continue what you are doing. They will try to force you by walking out the door. Let them.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #24 - Social Proofing

Bonecrcker #44 – Women Have Contradictory Love

Bonecrcker #103 – Raising Your Sexual Status

Bonecrkcer #104 – Sexual Status is Similar to Employment Status

Bonecrcker #123 – One of the Most Important Reasons to Have More Than One Woman at Once

Bonecrcker #172 – Social Proofing Has Negative Survival Value For Women

Bonecrcker #112 - Who Cares What Women Are Thinking

. · 20 April 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Who cares what a woman may or may not be thinking inside? What matters is their behavior…..how predictable it is and most importantly, how you can (or cannot) get them to behave. You cannot get them to be honest, not cheat on you or respond positively to virtuous behavior. What you CAN do is get them to treat you nicely in the short term and severely limit the damage they can cause when they inevitably leave.

What's going on with women is that they are freakin' psychos. And being insane, it's impossible to have a sane intimate relationship with them. You can either be forced to have an insane intimate relationship with them or you can have a sane relationship where you keep your distance.

Sad to say but relationships with women in this country are about power, not love. If you give up the former in pursuit of the latter, you will suffer.

However, I agree that one should never blame women for the way they are. Judgement is the first step toward acceptance of responsibility, then forgiveness and redemption. Women just aren't capable of participating in that. Although men are and always should when necessary.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #95 – No, no, no, no, No, NO!

Bonecrcker #102 – What Matters is the Amount of Power and Choice You Have in a Relationship

Bonecrcker #113 - Everything Out of a Woman's Mouth is a Lie

. · 21 April 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Everything out of a woman's mouth is a lie…..especially when they want you to talk to them about something. There can be no resolution of problems because there is no transparency, no introspective honesty on their part. What they want, as far as this goes, is to be heard, not to communicate. The act of being heard by another is addictive to them. If you are a good listener and can clamp down on your own need to say stuff, you can manipulate how they see you, and, indirectly, how they treat you. Good treatment comes when a woman sees you as powerful, desirable and very much prone to being stolen by the competition. One thing that has zero effect on how they treat you is talking things out, and working through relationship issues. The reason is simple. While you may be sincere and motivated to have a deep meaningful relationship based on equality, trust and mutual caring, respect, warmth and love…..she NEVER is. She may pretend to but it is an exercise in pain, as she manipulates you into doing one inappropriate thing after another while constantly changing the rules at random. But, take one step outside that door, and see her behavior change instantly. Of course, eventually, she will boot your ass right out that very same door. But she was going to do that eventually, anyway.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Bonecrcker #93 – She's Lying

Pook #6 – Lesson Three: Judge By Actions, Not By Words

Social Strategy: Why Men Shouldn't Argue with Women

Bonecrcker #114 - To All The Girls I've Loved Before

. · 22 April 2004 · Archived copy · Original

I think of all the women I've been with as people I care about and love, not objects to be used for awhile and then discard when I find a better one. Unfortunately, I know full well that they view me and the relationship (and whatever marriage they may undertake in the future, lol) this way, which forces me to adjust my behavior. It's not natural for me to spread myself over several women, none of whom I allow to get any ideas about where our relationship is headed. But bitter experience has taught me that I really don't have a choice in the matter. Don't get me wrong, there are plenty of women who will say they are different. They say they love me and they say they are loyal and want a life with me. But their actions just don't match their words. After awhile I realized it was a deliberate deception. The way women REALLY see me is as a toy to vent their lusts on while they shop around for Mr. Right. Mr Right happens to be some weak willed schmoe with a fat wallet that they plan to suck dry during a divorce before they have even met.

Shopping around for the right partner is a euphemism for looking for a rich guy to victimize. The payoff for the time invested is his money. Women talk about this jokingly or in metaphor, but the behavior is direct and unambiguous. It's a reliable pattern I've come to expect and have gotten good at avoiding.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #64 – On Players

Bonecrcker #115 - Women Go To Singles Events To Be Seen, Not To Pick Up Men

. · 23 April 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Just like going out to a nightclub, women go to singles events to be seen, not to pick up men. Going out in packs, they have no intention of going home with anyone. Any number they give you will be fake….etc. Unless you look like Brad Pitt or are a celebrity or obviously have more money than God, you can forget about it. This contrasts very heavily with going out to a bar, during normal hours (9pm to midnight, just about), to scope and hangout, maybe have a beer and watch the game. Any woman there, who is alone, is looking to go home with a man. That goes double if it's an airport bar or the bar is connected to a hotel. However, be warned that those girls are usually married. Don't bring it up (usually you do, but not here). Bars where business people hang out after seminars or while on business trips are where married people go to cheat on their spouses. It's their turf. Overwhelmingly, she is going to want you to get lost afterwards.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #66 – Singles Events

Bonecrcker #83 – Women Go To Clubs To Be Seen And Cause Trouble

Bonecrcker #146 – No Cover Charge For The Ladies

Bonecrcker #116 - Can I Ask You A Quick Question? You Married?

. · 24 April 2004 · Archived copy · Original

I have this thing I do with all women I meet. At some time during the conversation (usually early), I say, “Can I ask you a quick question?” Then I look her right in the eyes and quip, “You single?” If I get anything but a quick, Yes, I say, “then why are you wasting my time.” This has to be done jokingly or they flip out.

This bit has two purposes. The first, obviously, is it is pretty effective at screening out the chicks that are married (ick) or seriously involved (ie living with someone). It firmly but politely explains in no uncertain terms what my position on such things is (a waste of my valuable time). It does this by owning the consequences of the situation. I’m not saying anything about her. I’m saying something about me. She’s not wrong for wanting to cheat (she is but she is never ever going to accept that judgement from me so why bother). It’s just something I don’t want and not wanting it, talking further to her is a waste of my time. It also mildly implies that she knew I wouldn’t want this and was trying to pull a fast one. And I don’t put up with that sort of thing.

The other purpose doing this early upon meeting a woman is it very clearly signals my interest in her as a sexual partner. This simply isn’t the type of question a potential “friend” asks.

Perhaps a third thing it does is let her know that I am the one who qualifies potential partners, not her. She needs to meet certain basic minimum standards, like not being married.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #74 – All Married Women Are Available

Bonecrcker #148 – Women Who Want To Cheat With You

Bonecrcker #117 - Would Strip Down In A Room With A Crack Addict?

. · 25 April 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Let me ask you. Would you strip down in a room alone with a crack addict who has been arrested numerous times for violent crimes? Because that is exactly the type of person you are with when you get a prostitute. I can almost guarantee you will be exposed to AIDS, herpes, hepatitis, TB, and a host of other things you wouldn't wish on your worst enemy. This person belongs to the criminal subculture….a part of society it is very important to avoid all contact with, because it exists for the sole purpose of hurting normal folks. There is also the additional issue that many prostitutes don't live that lifestyle by choice. They are actually slaves. Some are girls from the very worst situations domestically. Many have actually been tricked and then kidnapped into leaving a foreign country and then put to work in the sex trade. A great many strippers fall into that category. Do you really want to be a part of that…..hanging out with the Russian mob so you can have sex with an AIDS infected slave, and pay out the nose for it? Things are tough in the dating scene. But they're not THAT tough.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

.

Related:

Bonecrcker #79 - Prostitution

Bonecrcker #92 – The Problem With Whores

Bonecrcker #118 - Women Who Marry Scumbags

. · 26 April 2004 · Archived copy · Original

With rare exceptions, a woman who marries a scumbag does it because she's nuts. So even if the divorce is his fault, it means she is bad news. An example: I dated a woman a few times who had only been with one guy before. They had known each-other since they were kids. They fell in love in high school, then lived together while going to college (she supported him, actually). About a year after he graduated he started smoking crack cocaine with a (supposedly) dramatic change in his personality. They were Catholic and she did not want to divorce him. But one day he came home and dinner wasn't ready so he picked up a hammer out of the toolbox and bashed her head in with it. She was in a coma for 3 days and filed for divorce afterward (no kids).

Even though it sounds like she couldn't be responsible for this having to do with her, I later find out WHY he had been doing crack. It turns out that both are 3rd generation members of the mafia. He primarily made his money selling drugs and started using. Note that this woman is a doctor now. This is a disturbing example because it illustrates two things. The first is that women from traditionally reputable situations (professionals etc.) can EASILY actually be from the criminal underclass. The other is that, almost without exception, a woman who has to bail on a marriage with a dangerous man will have serious skeletons in her closet that clearly demonstrate how her own character is responsible for her being with such a man (it ain't no accident). Unfortunately, you often have to do quite a bit of digging to discover this and are usually deeply involved with her before you do. I think it is easier (and more reliable) to simply assume such things.

Children out of wedlock, divorces (particularly multiple divorces), children of mixed parentage (unless they are married and successful), ex-spouse in jail, ex-spouse is a criminal, violent, has ever used drugs of any type. These are all extremely reliable indicators that you don't want to have your life entangled with this woman.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #5 – Women Choosing Losers

Bonecrcker #10 – Women Choosing Scum

Bonecrcker #36 – Just Say No To Divorced Women

Radio Priest and the female mind (a transcript)

Woman: I am confused. The man I am with now is the best friend I ever had, but I think I should go back to the man I was with before, even though he used to abuse me badly.

Priest: But you really feel a lot for the man you're with now . . . so I think you should do what your heart tells you!

Woman: My heart tells me to go back to the man who abused me.

Priest: Then you should do what your mind tells you. -- Kevin Solway

Bonecrcker #119 - Sleeping With Single Moms and Cohabitating

. · 27 April 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Unfortunately, I have had experience sleeping with single moms and cohabitating (not both with the same woman, thank God). What I have found is the mother will neglect her children in the extreme in order to spend time with you, doing one perverted thing after another. When she gets tired of you, she will use the children as an excuse to blow you off (sorry I can't see you anymore, our relationship takes too much time away from my children). If you balk at this, she will take the "how dare you try to get me to neglect my children to satisfy your petty needs" approach. Many guys I know tell me that single mothers try very hard to turn them into a daddy for their kids. Since I make it a point to always be as disreputable as possible, none have tried that tact with me, yet. But I can see where this is a major thing to be careful of and a good reason to enforce a no contact policy with her kids. The worst part of dating a mother is having to endure her constant abuse of her children. The moment you say anything about it, you and her are quits. It's fucked up.

I learned a very painful lesson cohabitating with a woman for 10 years. That lesson was that women never truly become attached to any man, no matter how deep or intense the relationship seems, no matter how monogamous or even if you are engaged, married whatever. My woman and I were everything to eachother and planned to get married as soon as we both had our doctorates. I stood by her through incredibly tough times and took care of her, moulding her from the silly bitch she was into a capable and successful professional woman. And she walked out of my life without a second thought, for no discernable reason. Literally, the week before, she made me swear to never leave her and to love her forever. She took our love and murdered it, in exchange for something sick and unworthy.

This anecdote illustrates perhaps THE most important thing about dating American women. The relationships are disposable and the love isn't real (although you will think it is, no matter how much you know better). Because of this, there is NEVER a reason to have them as anything but a fuck toy. That is what they are for. The choice isn't yours to make and if you make decisions based on any other understanding, you are in for the ultimate ass kicking. Because of this, it is an extremely bad idea to cohabitate with a woman or allow your lives to become entangled in any way. She WILL be gone, sooner, rather than later, and will rip up any part of your life that is entangled with hers. Live together? Expect to be homeless afterwards. Married? Expect to be divested of your children, your home and your life's savings.

When it comes to American women, just say no to any sort of closeness or permanent relationship. When you are ready to give up your 5 girlfriends who don't even know (and don't care) what your last name is, marry an Asian chick. This is no guarantee of happiness but marriage and sincere love are at least possible.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #36 – Just Say No to Divorced Women

Bonecrcker #163 – A "Real Man" Wouldn't Shun a Woman with Kids

Bonecrcker #120 - Women Pairing Up With Black Men Is Almost Always Based On Racism

. · 28 April 2004 · Archived copy · Original

To be blunt, white women pairing up with black men is almost always based on racism. You see this very clearly in specifically who those black men are. Rich, successful, educated black men have the fewest choices on earth, unfortunately. Black women of the same status are RARE and their access to white men isn't very great (they don't want them). Contrast that with black men from the criminal class which have ample numbers of black women of their same status around (sad, but true) and, more importantly, have great access to white women of ALL social status. These women view these men as scum and get involved with them as part of their own downward, self-destructive death spiral.

Contrast what is going on with Asian women and white men. Do you see large numbers of white men from the criminal class hooking up with Asian girls? No. What you see is large numbers of successful, educated white men seeking out Asian girls for the same reasons we do. They are trying to find a woman of quality. Most would prefer a woman from their own culture, just out of ease of access. But finding the well poisoned, they have no choice but to look elsewhere. That elsewhere happens to include various asian cultures, to a large extent. A few guys have an Asian fetish. But most just want a good woman…..and are willing to honor that opportunity by being a good man.

This isn't a zero sum game, folks. The numbers we are talking about in all situations is quite small. Certainly, the number of white women with black guys does not appreciably lower the access of the average white guy to white women, at all. I can't really comment about black women's access to black men or Asian men's access to Asian women, but it is probably not at all. What limits white men's access to white women is the pathetically low quality of those women…..making high quality white women extremely rare. Black women (and black men, lol) have this same problem which is a separate issue that, quite frankly, the black community seems to have little interest in addressing. Asian men don't have that problem and any asian man that is having trouble finding an Asian girl should probably ask himself why they are avoiding him….and fix it. Because, it's not the white skin the Asian girls want. It's the way those men treat her.

I'll go even further than that. I've known women like this (even lived with one for a decade). When they aren't in earshot of black people, they call them niggers. It's strong, blatant racism. They actually hate minorities (almost as much as they hate themselves). And the only reason they are with a black man is they are looking for a man who is low life scum. They consider any man who is a minority to be low life scum. The more they fit the sterotype, the better. In other words, it's not the black lawyer they think is attractive; it's the black gang member.

This is a lot different than fetishism. Fetishism is only a perversion that gets in the way of forming a real attachment to your partner. This is something far more sinister.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #11 – Women & Racism

Bonecrcker #84 – Women Going for Evil Losers

Bonecrcker #94 – Evil, Not Power, Is The Defining Attribute Of Women's Attraction Towards Evil Men

Bonecrcker #121 - Women Only Have What Rights Men Give Them

. · 29 April 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Women only have what rights we give them. The real core of the problem with women is other men. The men who open their wallets in a snivelling desire to get laid. The men who pass foolish draconian laws to solve problems that don't exist. The men who promote women in return for sexual favours. The men who marry obviously inferior women. And most of all, the men who swallow the most outrageous of lies, rather than bother to think critically about what is happening both to them and everyone around them.

The bottom line is women have no real power, no intrinsic power. They are totally, completely and permanently dependant on men for power. This situation is deeply rooted in our biology and not going to change because some wacko broads think it should. We created this hobgoblin ourselves, feed it and keep it alive despite it's obviously odious nature. The very moment we stop, it will evaporate in a puff of smoke. Women know this. Their biggest fear is we will wake up and know it too.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

The Intimate Journal of Henri Amiel: August 8, 1876

Bonecrcker #122 - The Advantage The Big City Has Over The Small Town

. · 30 April 2004 · Archived copy · Original

The one advantage a big city has over a small town is “the strip”. It’s different in every city but they invariably have a section where there are a lot of bars (the places you go to drink and perhaps listen to the band). Why is this important? Because a HUGE percentage of women go to these places to meet men. But, also, a huge number of women go to these places to waste time. How to tell them apart? Simple, the ones looking for men are alone. At the very most, they have one girlfriend with them. The less there is to do in the bar besides drink, the more intensely they are looking for a man. A good investment in time is to simply tour these places on Friday and Saturday night. Walk through looking for women that catch your eye (literally, catch your eye). Walking through a dozen or so of these places is bound to turn up one woman who is a hot prospect (ie someone who is both looking for a man and is strongly interested in you). You are literally anonymous until you home in on a high probability prospect (NEVER waste your time on anyone else…..it’s a losing game). You just don’t have that luxury in a small town. Everyone will rapidly know you. If you fail to jump on a hot prospect in that situation….1) she won’t be a hot prospect later on, 2) new prospects don’t show up and all the other women will have already permanently put you in the non-fuckable category, and 3) people will think you are a weak dateless loser for not being able to get some from your hot prospect and avoid you.

This is probably the only saving grace living in the city has and most men don’t understand it at all. They’re all going out and spending a lot of money (and wasting a lot of time) going to the dance clubs. While, all the women who want to actually have sex are out at the bars.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #41 – Finding the Small Pool of Interested Women

Bonecrcker #129 – Eye Contact

Bonecrcker #123 - One of the Most Important Reasons to Have More Than One Woman At Once

. · 1 May 2004 · Archived copy · Original

One of the most important reasons to have more than one woman at once.

Because this phenomenon also works in reverse. If a woman sees you with another woman, it does two things. It provides "social proof" that you are attractive. Amazingly, for many, if not most women, it doesn't matter if you meet THEIR standard for attractiveness, at all. What matters is that other women want you…..that makes you attractive. The other thing is does is it makes women compete over you. They look at dating as a zero sum game. If another woman has you, then there are less men for her.

The end result is that, if you are sleeping around with a lot of women and the women around you know this, they will want to sleep with you too. This issue is FAR stronger than what you look like, how you act, or what you have.

Have I mentioned lately that women are insane?

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #44 – Women Have Contradictory Love

Bonecrcker #103 – Raising Your Sexual Status

Bonecrcker #104 – Sexual Status is Similar to Employment Status

Bonecrcker #111 – Gaining Power With Women

Bonecrcker #172 – Social Proofing Has Negative Survival Value For Women

Bonecrcker #124 - Women on Online Personals Are Just Wasting Your Time

. · 2 May 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Almost all of the women on online personals are only there to waste your time and they have no intention of meeting anyone. If a woman isn't interested in meeting you for coffee, sooner, rather than later, it means one of two things: She is either only interested in wasting men's time and not going to be meeting anyone, no matter what…..or, she has decided that you aren't worth meeting, although she will happily string you along. In neither of these cases should you waste more than a smidgen of your valuable time. Online dating is a good deal for women but a lousy deal for men because of the simple fact that most men doing it are serious and most women doing it are not. The goal here should be to quickly screen out the potentials from everyone else, not to waste hours and hours with women who have no intention of doing anything ever with you or anyone else. The potentials want to write a few emails back and forth and then meet you….not on a date, but in a casual, relaxed atmosphere they can leave easily. And most of those will never see you again after that. You'll have to approach a hell of alot of women to get one bite. Either that or find a way to get the high probability women to answer your own ad. That's tough to do because most of the idiot men email every woman on the system, filling her mailbox with a hundred emails a day (mostly losers).

That's the big problem with online personals. Just like going to the nightclub, the women there have too many options and too many men trying to get their attention. Their goal isn't the same as your goal. Your goal is to meet someone. Their goal is to have their worth validated. Their goal is met right away so why should they do anything more? A fraction of them have the same goal as you. But the ratio of men to available women who want to meet them is like 100 to a 1000 to one. Of course, that one is screwing a dozen or so men a month. You see this very clearly in a lot of their profiles….saying something to the effect of, oh, I'm just here because I am curious, but if I happen to meet someone who is a cross between Bill Gates and Fabio, I might go on a date with them if I feel like it. It's a bad scene for a man.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #34 – Online Dating – Not!

Bonecrcker #53 – Online Dating is a Scam

Bonecrcker #89 – Identifying Women Who Are Wasting Your Time

Bonecrcker #90 - There Is No Point In Approaching Any Woman Who Doesn't Look At You and Go "Yum"

Bonecrcker #125 - The Four Problems With Serial Monagamy

. · 3 May 2004 · Archived copy · Original

There are four problems with serial monogamy.

1) The woman won't really be monogamous. Unless you are with her every moment of every day, she will sleep around behind your back, usually with high risk partners. If you ARE with her every moment of every day, she will hit on men in front of your face. This is really an issue of respect. A monogamous lover gets no respect.

2) Monogamy to a woman means she is setting you up for exploitation. Her ability to do that is very limited unless you are married. The pressure to get married will go up exponentially, the longer you are together. It tends to be covert, rather than overt. Very quickly, she will manufacture a reason that she HAS to move in with you. It will be very convincing (ie she will become homeless if you don't help her). Worse, she will get pregnant on purpose. As far as condoms go, I'm sorry to say you have no choice but to use them 100% of the time and hide them so she can't poke holes in them. You've been warned.

.

.

3) Despite the universal push for marriage, the relationship is time limited….several months to a couple of years….WHETHER YOU MARRY HER OR NOT! Being married and/or having children won't change her sleeping around behind your back, one bit.

4) And most insidious….monogamy is a tool women use to make you dependent on them. As time passes, your seduction skills atrophy. Often, she tries to fatten you up, to make you less attractive…..anything to eliminate your ability to get another woman. She will then ration love, affection and sex, to get what she wants….and use the threat of abandonment to make you give in to the most unreasonable (unreasonable as in, having a boyfriend on the side, unreasonable). Eventually, she will abandon you. The point is, she doesn't make you dependent because she wants to keep you (indeed, she will soon dispose of you). She does this because she is preparing to abuse you and wants to make it so that if you left, you would never get another woman.

It is a very bad idea to allow any one woman to become too important. Self-sufficiency, ability to choose among partners, and extremely low tolerance for bullshit should be your goals.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #40 – Relationship Phases

When She Asks You To Be Exclusive... Play This Song
(It also works to just say, "I don't think *anyone* should be exclusive for the first six months." -- But the above song is hilarious!) -- R.F.

Bonecrcker #126 - A Woman's Need To Talk Is One Of The Key Methods Of Manipulating Them

. · 4 May 2004 · Archived copy · Original

A woman's need to talk is one of the key methods of manipulating them. If you can act like you are actually interested in what they are saying, they will think you are a brilliant, interesting individual. Ironically, talking yourself lowers your worth. It's best if they know as little about you as possible, so that their own mind fills in the blanks with something they find romantic. Your goal here is to sleep with them once. Because, if you sleep with them once, you can sleep with them multiple times, for as long as it lasts (usually, not long).

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #58 – Women Are Narcissistic and Self Absorbed

Bonecrcker #73 – There Really Are Only Two Safe Subjects To Talk About With Women

Bonecrcker #127 - Timing is Important

. · 5 May 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Timing is so important. So is understanding the nature of "friends" as a non-sexual boyfriend/girlfriend relationship that can't be sexualized (usually). It's dangerous to spend time with a woman or to spend time talking with a woman without expressing a sexual interest in her. Every second you do that makes it more and more likely that the relationship will slip into the friends' zone. It's one of the key ways in which women are sick because in order to have a satisfying, loving relationship with someone, you need to spend time bonding with them. They go out of their way to prevent this important aspect of human existence. Instead, they size you up for manipulation. During this key time they constantly test to see if you will be the one to decide what happens or if you will be led around by the nose to do things that aren't appropriate. One important thing they are looking for is if you will waste time on someone who isn't your lover. If they find out the answer to that is yes, it's all over. The best way to handle that is to be terse with any woman that you aren't sleeping with. Don't give the time of day to a woman unless she is showing strong signs of sexual interest. If she is, immediately try to sexualize the relationship. The problem is you can never ask for sex. Asking a woman for anything means she has something you want and she will use that to try and get you to do inappropriate things. Instead, you need to be seductive and suggestive (obviously, this only works on a woman who is interested anyway). You aren't asking a woman for what you want. You are giving her what she wants. Key skills to develop are the ability to say no to everything a woman asks for, no matter how small. Later, give it to her, but on your own terms. Example: Can we go out to dinner tonight? No, I prefer to eat in. A couple of days later, surprise her with a night out at a restaurant. Delayed gratification. Perhaps the most important area to do this with is sex. Kiss me! Don't be in such a rush.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #35 – You Mean Nothing To A Woman Until You Have Sex

Bonecrcker #38 – You Mean Nothing Until You Have Sex II

Bonecrcker #128 – Women as "Friends"

Bonecrcker #130 – Never Allow a Woman to Call You a Friend Until You Have Had Sex at Least Once

Bonecrcker #156 – Friends With Benefits

Bonecrcker #128 - Women as "Friends"

. · 6 May 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Women “friends” will ACTIVELY sabotage any attempt you make to pursue any other woman, friend of theirs or not. If they do find out you are with a woman, they will act all pissed off and jealous and may even get rid of you.

An example: I had this “friend” of mine from college. Occasionally I’d visit her and we’d hang out or something. Several times female friends of hers would be around and I’d ask about them. One time she told me this girl was a lesbian and that she absolutely hated men (I had sex with that one, hehehe). Another, she told me she was married (a lie). A third, she told me that the girl thought I was unattractive (I slept with that one too). The point here is my “friend” would continually try to cock-block me. The reason is simple: she wanted me for herself…..just not today (or any other time she had access to a man….I was her reserve).

I’d also like to point out that my “friend” thought it was just okay fine to let me drive 1000 miles to go see her and then not be there. I haven’t seen her since.

Women “friends” don’t care about you. What they care about is keeping a man (or several) in reserve, in case they want them later.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #35 – You Mean Nothing To A Woman Until You Have Sex

Bonecrcker #38 – You Mean Nothing Until You Have Sex II

Bonecrcker #127 – Timing is Important

Bonecrcker #130 – Never Allow a Woman to Call You a Friend Until You Have Had Sex at Least Once

Bonecrcker #156 – Friends With Benefits

Pook #5 – Lesson Two: Friendship – Abandon All Hope Ye Who Enter

Bonecrcker #129 - Eye Contact

. · 7 May 2004 · Archived copy · Original

People don't make eye contact with strangers. Especially women, who know this is an invitation of sexual interest. It's also not an ambiguous thing. She isn't just looking back….she's LOCKING gazes with you. Often, she is running her eyes up and down your body before returning her gaze to you and doing all sorts of other body language signals. If you talk to her, her response isn't all business but she'll probably try to engage you in further small talk or even flirt with you. Without the gaze, she probably just walks up and goes, hmm, he's cute, and then goes on her merry way. But, with the gaze, especially if you nod, smile or even wink, that changes things. It elicits behavior from her. An uninterested woman will actually be quite terse with you (lol, 99% of them), break eye contact with you, snap her at you (wench), and rapidly leave. Truthfully, though, you won't know it until you see it. But once you see it, you'll always be able to see it.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Cary (1976) discovered that the woman, through eye contact, controlled the course of interaction with a male stranger, both in the laboratory and in singles' bars. Perper (1985) gave a detailed description of courtship, stressing an escalation-response process in which women play a key role in escalation or deescalation. The steps in this process are approach, turn, first touch, and steady development of body synchronization.

Although these reports are clearly valuable, most researchers addressed courtship very generally, and some failed to recognize the importance of the female role in the courtship process .What was needed was a more complete ethogram of women's nonverbal courtship signals. To compile such a catalog of flirting behavior exhibited by women involved in initial heterosexual interaction, more than 200 adults were observed (Moore, 1985) in field settings such as singles' bars, restaurants, and parties.

Research has shown, therefore, that the cultural myth that the man is always the sexual aggressor, pressing himself on a reluctant woman, is incorrect. -- Courtship Signaling and Adolescents: "Girls Just Wanna Have Fun"? Monica M. Moore, Ph.D.Department of behavioral and Social Sciences, Webster University

---

Related:

Bonecrcker #48 – Sexes Approaching Eachother

Bonecrcker #122 – The Advantage The Big City Has Over the Small Town

Pook #26 - On Embracing Sexuality

Zenpriest #18 – The Designated Initiator

Eye Contact Game - Chateau Heartiste

Bonecrcker #130 - Never Allow a Woman to Call You a Friend Until You've Had Sex at Least Once

. · 8 May 2004 · Archived copy · Original

I've been friends with many women and had sex with them. If anything, my sexual desire for them has made me a better friend because the level of intimacy and their importance to me is greater. The problem is, they won't be friends back. Totally self-absorbed and obsessed with self-destructive and manipulative behavior, women aren't capable of being anyone's friend.

However, that's not what we are really talking about here. We're talking about a woman who actually rejects you as a man but wants to use you for something. To keep you in her life, she makes you a "friend". But what does that mean? It means you are a second class love interest. You are expected to do things for her but are unworthy of her doing things for you. There are a great many things a woman COULD do for you as a real friend (for example, actually give a shit about you, lol). However, the only thing women actually do for men, is give them sex. At least, that's the only thing my female friends ever gave me, despite what I wanted from them. Never allow a woman to call you a friend until you've had sex with her at least once. And for God's sake, don't believe her when she says it. You may be her friend. But she isn't yours. She may be your lover but you are nothing but disposable to her. In the beginning, you have some respect from her that rapidly diminishes. When it's gone, so is she. But if you start out as "friends", there will never be even a shred of respect for you. You are NEVER a friend to her. You are that guy she keeps around that isn't good enough to be her lover.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #35 – You Mean Nothing To A Woman Until You Have Sex

Bonecrcker #38 – You Mean Nothing Until You Have Sex II

Bonecrcker #127 – Timing Is Important

Bonecrcker #128 – Women as "Friends"

Bonecrcker #156 – Friends With Benefits

Bonecrcker #131 - You Might As Well Be An Unemployed Loser Living In A Van Down By The River

. · 9 May 2004 · Archived copy · Original

You haven't lived until you've given a woman hours and hours of continuous orgasmic joy, with the body you've spent hours and hours, making hard in the gym, only to have her dump you for some unemployed, drug addict loser who can't get it up because crack has made him impotent.

There is no point. You would think that being virile, studly and dominant would get you respect and preference from a woman. It doesn't. You might as well be a fat lump on the couch that burps. You'll get the same amount of women (sad, but true) who will be just as loyal and attentive (i.e. not at all) as they would if you expended effort. Same thing with money. Sure, a lot of women are looking for a rich man to feed off of. But success doesn't garner you respect or preference from women. You might as well be an unemployed loser living in a van down by the river. It just doesn't matter.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Bonecrcker #132 - Finding and Approaching Women

. · 10 May 2004 · Archived copy · Original

You can't ask a woman for anything because it gives her too many points. You need to use body language and only approach the ones that matter. And you can't be direct about it.

The basic behavior goes like this. Go places where you are likely to meet women (either go where women go or go where women go to get picked up). Make eye contact with every woman that crosses your path. Most women will not meet your gaze. Some of them will. After holding their gaze for just a second or two more than is socially appropriate, look away (not down, away). She might look down and away too, which is OK. After a few seconds, try to catch her gaze again and see if she locks gazes with you. Smile and nod to her if she does. If you feel aggressive, wink. If she holds your gaze this second time for an extended period of time and/or starts clustering body language signals of interest (read the book, Body Language by R Don Steele), that is one of the 1% of random women that will have sex with you right now, if you approach her correctly. It's extremely reliable.

Approaching correctly means that you come near her tangentially. You seem like you are actually doing something else. For example: You see one of these women in the mall. Don't go right up to her. Go near her and pretend to shop or look at something interesting. You strike up a conversation by noticing something about her and commenting on it and then asking a question. For example: "That's a very nice sweater you are wearing. What's the story behind it? Blah, blah, blah." Understand that women are completely self-involved. So shut your yap and look like you are paying attention and listen for cues for other getting to know you type questions. Tell her almost nothing about yourself other than your name and give her every opportunity to tell you even the most inane blather about herself. She'll think you are the most brilliant, interesting man on the planet. When you can't take this anymore, interupt her with some version of, "I have to go, want to come with me?" Whoops, I have to go home now and cook dinner and feed my cat. Hey, you know I making this great rice dish called Arroz con Pollo. I learned how to make it from this sweet old lady while I was vacationing in Puerto Rico. Come have dinner with me. We'll watch this video I've been meaning to see……The English Patient; I think it's called (hehehe).

The point here is she has already decided she wants to come home with you to have sex. But she doesn't know that you know that. And, she absolutely cannot face this fact without a convenient excuse that she is actually going over there for something else and the sex is just spontaneous. Make no mistake, once you get her home, she's the one who will likely be the aggressor, or will need very little prompting. If you get any resistance at all, it's time to cut and run because you screwed something up, probably misjudging if she was a one percenter. A lot of women will show casual interest. But it's the one percenter that will show focussed, intense interest. They are practically drooling.

There really is no work involved in finding her, other than in going to those places you are likely to find her. Don't stay; don't waste your time with pointless crap while there. Whatever you do don't pay a cover or anything (if you go for the band or something, that's me time and you should ignore women). Just recon the place looking for one percenters. Leave and move on to the next place if you don't immediately find a hit. Get in the habit of scoping out chicks all the time, but set aside a specific time each week where you zoom through several hot spots every week. Don't stay and waste your time. Show up, look, and if nothing is there…..leave.

After the first few times, it's easy. The first few times are hard because you screw things up and it's hard to initiate things because you don't really think things work this way. Instead, you think all women are judging you and rejecting you (and 99% of them are). Until you sleep with a few, you don't know that 1% is there for easy taking. I say the same thing to all my guy friends. Try it out a little at a time. The easiest part is scoping these women out. Go places and try the eye contact bit. Don't follow up on it. Just try it out and see for yourself what I am talking about.

After you are comfortable doing this for a few weeks, try occasionally saying Hi to one of them. Nothing complicated. Just Hi. You'll be shocked at the result and soon, you'll be doing the rest.

And for God's sake, don't give the time of day or anything else, not the slightest bit of respect, not a shred of time or effort, to any woman who isn't one of these. A woman who isn't sexually interested in you should be totally beneath notice. No staring at her tits. No talking to her. She's invisible. Women are sweet as pie when they are in acquisition mode (you being what they wish to acquire) but they are evil incarnate every time else. Only extremely high probability babes deserve even an ounce of your time. Everyone else is wasting it.

Screw em.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #41 – Finding the Small Pool of Interested Women

Bonecrcker #133 - Don't Date Women

. · 11 May 2004 · Archived copy · Original

The problem with "dating" is that you are spending time and effort to impress and keep them. Firstly, that's a pain in the ass. It yields meagre rewards for lots of effort. Second, it doesn't work. They WILL leave. Also, the rewards will be great in the beginning and get crappier as time goes on. Why not get rid of her? Seriously, you shouldn't be seeing any one woman more than once every couple of weeks or once a month. She will ask for more. Your answer to this (and almost everything any woman, except your mom, asks of you) is no. If she wanders off, oh well. She was going to do that anyway. Ironically, she stays LONGER if you are unavailable. Don't talk to her on the phone (30 secs = whoops, gotta run, I'm busy). Don't call her until it is time for her to come over. Hell, don't talk to her much at all except to tell her to do things. If she says no, dump her. Women only start to say no when they are ready to leave and nothing changes their mind.

The point here is you should be spending almost no energy on any one woman and instead should be focussed on screening the general population for new ones. Women are not sincere and they don't care even a little bit about you, no matter what you do (although they will pretend otherwise to get something from you). Plus, they are near random in whether they will suck your cock or not 5 minutes after you meet them. The implications for this are immense. You should expend nearly no effort on any woman. Testing for who you will approach is, will she suck your cock….now! Everything else is a lie.……because they have gone out of their way to make it a lie. Of course, don't tell them that. NEVER tell them that. They will constantly ask you why about different things. The reason you give them should always be some version of, I'm busy or I don't want to or just NO! They will inevitably give you the ultimatum (spend more time with me or I'm gone). Realize that she already IS gone and is just trying to find out if you will let her torture you or not during her last days. Your answer must always be…..bye bye.

As incredible as it may sound, if you are an emotionally (often physically) unavailable bastard out solely for your own benefit without even a casual regard for her wants and needs, all of her friends will want to fuck you too.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Bonecrcker #134 - Choosing Not To Marry is Much More Involved Than Just Saying "Hey, I Don't Want To Be Married"

. · 12 May 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Choosing not to marry is much more involved than just saying, “Hey, I don’t want to be married”. Perhaps, the number one rule involved is you must never allow a woman to live with you for any reason. You WILL constantly run into various reasons why your current woman “needs” to move in with you “temporarily”. I use the quotes because near 100% of the time, the reason is contrived and the temporary will somehow become permanent. Understand that a master is trying to manipulate you. Whatever reason pops up will look natural, innocuous and important enough for you to consider breaking the rule. Your biggest enemy will be not having access to sex and affection from other sources, making that particular woman too important to you. If you care too much, she will use this against you 100% of the time and you won’t suspect a thing because you will think she is better than that (right up until the time she screws you over).

The best defence against this is to simply date multiple people. You never tell them about eachother except to let them know in no uncertain terms that you see other people on a regular schedule that is absolutely none of their business. You must constantly be looking to add new women to this list because the old one will cycle out at a rate anywhere from a few dates (by date, I mean you have sex with them and do something fun you want to do with them) to a couple of years. The relationship is time limited (it’s ALWAYS time limited, no matter what you do….date, get serious, get married, whatever…..no exceptions). The idea here is you and she ain’t close enough for her to ask for a major favor (like a place to live for awhile). And, you certainly aren’t moving toward any type of relationship. This directly contradicts what most women SAY they want with a man. Luckily, they are completely full of shit and will screw a man on a regular basis when they barely know him. All women do this (well, all women would do this but some are just too inexperienced or too scared or too nuts to do this)…..they just do it only while going through certain ”phases”. In other words, when looking for women to add to your harem, nothing about you really matters and how you relate to a woman is of minor importance. What matters is timing. Is that particular woman in “whore” mode or not (about 50/50). Next, has she decided she would sleep with you (about 10%) which is almost entirely random but different women limit themselves to a specific social class (determined by how you dress and act) at any particular time. What really matters is, would she sleep with you, right now. This also is entirely random, but a good rule of thumb is, for any man, a random 1% of all women you come into contact with, will sleep with you.

The trick is to recognize her and then add her to your list of women you screw. With three or four pearls on a string, you become almost immune to manipulation. Certainly, you won’t hesitate to tell a woman to fucking get lost; especially if you are hot to add someone new.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #18 – Three Rules To Follow

Bonecrcker #40 – Relationship Phases

Bonecrcker #135 - With Gay Marriage Legal, Gays Might Stop Getting Into Marriages That Are a Lie

. · 13 May 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Well, at least with gay marriage legal, they might stop getting into heterosexual marriages that are a lie, living a secret double life and then abandoning their partner.

Then again, since most homosexual behavior has almost nothing to do with being gay but is, instead, a manifestation of an crazy person starting to deteriorate, maybe not.

It works something like this. A crazy person gets married. Having a long history of deviant behavior, particularly drug use and promiscuity (particularly promiscuity involving deviant partners, multiple partners and degrading situations), they decide to settle down and lead a normal life. What this means is they usually find a relatively normal partner, marry them and proceed to make their life a living hell with one out of control behavior after another. One day, they decide they are gay and abandon their family.

You can always tell what's going on by the behavior of the person. They don't just do this in a vacuum but virtually all their behaviour revolves around pathology and boy, do they make their spouse suffer during the marriage.

My friend, who decided at the age of 55 that she was a lesbian, comes to mind. The last I allowed her to talk to me, she had decided to go off on a retreat (she's a witch, which is a major clue) where people had sex with dead bodies. She's not gay. She's a freak. And I'm well rid of her. So is her husband.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #42 – Lesbians and Gay Men

Bonecrcker #52 – Man-Hating Dykes

Bonecrcker #60 – A Man Must Strive to Prevent Women From Having the Smallest Shred of Power Over Him

Bonecrcker #136 – Not All That Opposed To Gay Marriage

A New Kind of Bigotry

Bonecrcker #136 - Not All That Opposed To Gay Marriage

. · 14 May 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Actually, I'm not all that against gay marriage. I think it is a bad thing. The reason I think it is a bad thing is because every gay person I meet seems to be a total wacko. I'm sure there are legitimately gay people out there (homosexuality is a present in most species so it can't be a quirk of human failings) but I haven't met them. Not only that, but all gay relationships I've seen have been disposable, with little to no real love or intimacy between the partners. This is not a situation that should be honoured within the religious institution of marriage. It's disrespectful and cheapens the meaning of others marriages. Worse, it makes marriage a joke. This situation could change if gay people got their act together. Be gay, not crazy. Have REAL relationships based on love and intimacy. Then, marriage might be a good thing. That being said, a huge number of heterosexual marriages aren't legitimate anyway and it is more and more becoming a simple contract between two people and the state. So, what difference does it make? Marriage has been severely degraded anyway. Gay marriage just doesn't even pretend it's a sacred institution anymore.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #42 – Lesbians and Gay Men

Bonecrcker #52 – Man-Hating Dykes

Bonecrcker #60 – A Man Must Strive to Prevent Women From Having the Smallest Shred of Power Over Him

Bonecrcker #135 – With Gay Marriage Legal, Gays Might Stop Getting Into Marriages That Are a Lie

A New Kind of Bigotry

Bonecrcker #137 - Be a Lover, Not a Provider

. · 15 May 2004 · Archived copy · Original

I'm sorry to have to tell you this but things aren't the way they should be. ALL women are flakes. And ALL women have sex with men right away (even the extremely religious and prudish ones). A woman SHOULD spend time getting to know you and evaluating your decency as a person……but they don't. NONE of them do. Instead, they decide within a few seconds if they will sleep with you or not. If they decide no, you have zero chance with them but they will pretend like you do if you are aggressive enough or if you start giving them things. This always turns out badly. Even if they decide yes, they will make you wait if you start giving them stuff or if you act too interested (they want to see if you will give them stuff). If you hook up with them but don't seem that interested, then they will go after you. Most don't want to look like a slut and so will only do sexual things if you give them some form of rationalization. For example: We are going back to my place to watch a movie, not to have sex. The really insane ones act sexual and don't care if they are sluts out in the open. Usually they are substance abusers/high risk sexual partners. So look out!

Your best bet as a man is to immediately try to sexualize any relationship. If a woman doesn't cooperate, immediately dump her. The reason is simple. She either has decided no, and you will NEVER have a chance with her, so what is the point? Or, she has decided to exploit you first. And that sets a bad precedent. If a woman sees you as a provider, she will make you wait. If she sees you as a lover, she won't. Normally, this should not be a problem. But women don't respect providers. They abuse them and then dispose of them.

Be a lover, not a provider.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #21 – Who Pays?

Bonecrcker #138 - Sexist! Offensive!

. · 16 May 2004 · Archived copy · Original

The whole PC, feminist nonsense is only a half truth, as far as they are concerned. When a good (read, safe) man does anything even the slightest bit non-grovelling, it's sexist and offensive. But if a man who treats them like dirt does it, it's sexy.

The same woman who is highly offended because some 100K a year educated professional glances at her ankle, will happily spread her legs for homeless guy with missing teeth who tells her she is a 'ho.

And we wonder why young men are dressing with their pants down around their ankles, going yo' yo' yo' all the time, emulating this crap. They do it because being a normal person doesn't work.

Women are supposed to go after dominant men. Men who take what they want and pay for it…..intelligent, successful, and charismatic. But, they treat these guys like losers. Instead, they go after DEVIANT men…..rude, ignorant, weak, bad habits, but most of all…..treats them with a single ounce of respect. In other words, someone who reinforces the way they see themselves and is a match for how they REALLY are.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Bonecrcker #139 - Religious Women & Projection

. · 17 May 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Women become devoted to religion for reasons unrelated to piety. Usually, they do it because they are nuts. That's as in FUCKING nuts! What's going in here is one of the most primitive defence mechanisms. They did and continue to do (it's important to understand that almost all of them CONTINUE to do) sinful acts. In order to protect themselves from the guilt, they need to project (as in the defence mechanism of projection) that onto someone else. One excellent way to do that is to join one of the more strict religions. Now, they can spend all their time pointing at other people and saying how bad they are.

Want to have some fun? Find one of these and start confronting them about their own bad behavior. They FREAK out.

An example. One friend of mine is divorced and soon afterward got himself a new girlfriend that had recently become born again (hehehe). She is always talking about men who cheat on their wives, girls who sleep around, blah, blah, blah. He and I play various online games and one day while we were doing stuff, I casually remarked, "So, how's your new slut?" She happened to be reading over his shoulder and went ballistic…..screaming, jumping up and down, shattering dishes against the wall etc. Later on, I find out why her reaction was so strong. Turns out that she had been a swinger for many years. She started cheating on my friend. She was going out with her married friend and they were picking up grunts at a bar near the base and going to a motel room and having orgies (them two plus several guys). My friend found out and kicked her ass out. But, not before napping hundreds of photos taken with a digicam and stored on her computer. He had an X-rated Yahoo group about Asians (she was Thai) and he had those posted there for the longest time. Hilarious.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Bonecrcker #140 - Lesbian Women

. · 18 May 2004 · Archived copy · Original

I've had the unpleasant experience of getting close to several lesbian women and then finding out that they are bad people. One was actively working to subvert (her words) young children away from their parent's ideals and mores, as a teacher. Another was an employee of a phone sex line (like ALL women in the sex for money industry, she had 80% of her screws loose). Still another, who lived with her ex-husband (no sex), had "discovered" she was a lesbian at age 50 and shut off all intimacy with her husband but wouldn't leave. Later, I find out she went on some "retreat" to have sex with dead bodies (you heard me correctly) as part of some voodoo rite. Another was a total mooching loser. And the last one never told me she was gay, had an intensely sexual relationship with me for several years and dressed more and more like a diesel dyke and then stopped seeing me for no apparent reason (cough, cough, new girlfriend, cough, cough).

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #42 – Lesbians & Gay Men

Bonecrcker #52 – Man-Hating Dykes

Bonecrcker #179 – Subversive Teachers

Bonecrcker #141 - If You Don't Have Sex On The First Date, Your Chances Of Having Sex With Her At All Are Slim

. · 19 May 2004 · Archived copy · Original

If you don’t have sex with a woman on the first date, your chances of having sex with her at all are slim. The other side of that coin is, if you have sex with a woman you almost always can have sex with her multiple times in the future. Your goal on a “date” is not to impress a woman with endless blather but to make an excuse for her to come back to your place where you can seduce her. MOST of the time, if you aren’t totally wasting your time with a girl, she will come back to your place under the slimmest of excuses. She is going back there for sex. If she balks, makes a weird excuse etc., you might as well get rid of her (your not getting any, probably ever). The excuse needs to be reputable (so she can pretend she didn’t actually go back to your place for sex…..women are ummmm, nuts). "Hey, come back to my place so we can watch this chick flick on my DVD," is good. "Come and see the A-frame I built next to my bed," is not.

This is one of the many lies women tell. They SAY, they want to get to know a man and generate a certain amount of closeness, before engaging in a physical relationship. But what they DO is is decide within seconds of seeing you if they will have sex with you. The invitation lasts from seconds to several hours, and often has absolutely nothing to do with you (ie, she feels like a slut at that moment in time, and you are acceptable). That’s not normal. It’s not a good thing. But, it’s the way things are.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Bonecrcker #142 - Buffy & Xena

. · 20 May 2004 · Archived copy · Original

One interesting thing about both of these shows is they started out OK. The female heroine is a legitimate human archetype. You see this very clearly, it being present in various myths, legends and other stories in every culture, including our own. Buffy and Xena were good shows with good plot. But, somewhere along the way, they were hijacked. The message became more and more anti-men, anti-family, pro-lesbian, and pro-evil. Ironically enough, the quality of the plots took a rapid nosedive soon after. Let's face it, women do NOT drive the demographic for TV except the most vapid shows, specifically targeting them (i.e. soaps). Its men these shows were popular with…..probably because men are attracted to alpha females and the archetype of the rare heroine falls in that category.

What's scary is I think this was intentional. Get men hooked on an attractive archtypal character…..then subtly manipulate that character to introduce negative qualities that aren't really there, to manipulate men into finding those negative qualities (ie hatred of men, etc) to be desirable. Somebody with an agenda and a pop psych degree is behind this.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #17 – Movies Desensitize Social Problems

Bonecrcker #164 – The Media Is Being Used Against Us

The Fine Art of TV Repair

Bonecrcker #143 - Hold Out The Lure Of Validation... But Don't Give It To Them

. · 21 May 2004 · Archived copy · Original

One of the big differences between men and women is men want sex with a woman who cares about them and women want to have sex (only) with a man who could care less about them. But, both men and women want to have sex.

Part of the reason is women are soooooooo insecure about themselves. They desperately need validation that they aren't worthless worms (which of course, they are, unfortunately). They know the truth of this, deep down and the very minute you give them that validation, they assume the reason must be because you are even more of a worthless worm than they are. It's sick. Of course, it's also exploitable. Hold out the lure of validation but don't actually give it to them.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #144 – Why Women Are Attracted To Bad Men & Thugs

Bonecrcker #144 - Why Women Are Attracted To Bad Men & Thugs

. · 22 May 2004 · Archived copy · Original

What I'm talking about is how a bad person ASSUMES other people (actually ALL people) are bad without seeing their behavior. They rationalize exploiting them, harming them etc. because they know they deserve it anyway. Either that or they reverse the meaning of right and wrong. As in, it's a good thing to harm others if you can get away with it. It means you are strong and they are weak. This is at the core of why women are attracted to bad men (criminals, drug-users etc.) They see their doing bad things as evidence of them being powerful. They do those things because they can. This is probably the most dangerous lie involved in this situation. Bad people do bad things out of weakness, not strength. Women, being weak themselves, have no experience with this. Plus, they are self-deluded. They want to think of themselves as strong so they alter their perception to see being a bad person (ie, seeing someone who is just like them) as being strong, not weak. So, they look like someone who is exactly like themselves, only more so.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

.

Related:

Bonecrcker #5 – Women Choosing Losers

Bonecrcker #6 – Women Choosing Extinction

Bonecrcker #10 – Women Choosing Scum

Bonecrcker #16 – Women Love Assholes

Bonecrcker #84 – Women Going For Evil Losers

Bonecrcker #118 – Women Who Marry Scumbags

Bonecrcker #145 - Feminism Causes Rape

. · 23 May 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Fun things like rape come from two, related sources, both linked strongly to feminism. The first is a society being unable/unwilling to deal with scum. Strong, healthy patriarchal societies protect women and string rapists up under the nearest tree. They also take a dim view of false rape allegations. When a society is sick, good men are unable/unwilling to dispense justice, and evil men are free to do bad things. But that pales in comparison to what happens in a society like ours where women actively select evil men, giving them preference above all others, especially rapists. Under these conditions, the number of evil men multiplies and are empowered.

However, sick patriarchal societies also have this problem. Just look at Afghanistan and Iraq.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #5 – Women Choosing Losers

Bonecrcker #6 – Women Choosing Extinction

Bonecrcker #10 – Women Choosing Scum

Bonecrcker #20 – Rape Fantasies

Bonecrcker #65 – The Repeating Patterns of Women Who Cry Rape

Bonecrcker #84 – Women Going For Evil Losers

Bonecrcker #94 - Evil, Not Power, Is The Defining Attribute Of Women's Attraction To Evile Men

Bonecrcker #118 – Women Who Marry Scumbags

Bonecrcker #144 – Why Women Are Attracted To Bad Men & Thugs

Bonecrcker #146 - No Cover Charge For The Ladies

. · 24 May 2004 · Archived copy · Original

The very fact that women get in free in a particular place, makes that place worthless for getting laid. This is the difference between neighborhood bars and a nightclub. Women get way, waaaaayyyy too many points in a nightclub. They don't need to fuck any of the guys there because they've already gotten what they came there to get (the adoration and feeling of being attractive and valuable). A woman in a nightclub is there to be seen, to dance and maybe to be felt up on the dance floor. She's going home alone at the end of the night, especially if they are in packs (90% of the time). Also, the club is where all the competition is and unless you look like Fabio, this is not a situation you want. However, a woman in a bar is a different story. She's either there to socialize with people she knows or to be picked up. It's easy to tell because she will be alone. At most, she will have one (and only one) girlfriend with her.

Never, never, NEVER go to a nightclub and never pay a cover (ie, never go to a place where they want to charge men for access to women….because that access is a deception). Instead, go to a neighborhood pub with no cover. Either hang out there because you just feel like it or go to a place where there are a lot of free bars. Stay only long enough to make sure there are viable prospects. Walk around. Try to make eye contact with each woman you are possibly interested in. The ones you have a shot with will make extended eye contact (if they smile, you're in…..mwahaha). The other 99% will avoid your gaze or even be hostile. Don't even order a beer if there are no prospects. Fuck em and move on. Why waste your money, but more importantly your time?

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Bonecrcker #147 - The Dishonesty At N.O.W

. · 25 May 2004 · Archived copy · Original

The term dishonest implies that NOW has a legitimate agenda and is just willing to fight dirty to promote it. More and more it's becoming clear that this isn't true. These are deeply evil people doing everything in their power to hurt everyone they can, ESPECIALLY women. Every single issue they promote, they take the position most likely to hurt people, no matter how bizarre or unlikely, going to incredible lengths to make their wacko position seem reasonable. They are almost satanic in their promotion of abortion (as in, they want women to have as many abortions as possible and celebrate it) .While legitimate issues of women's rights go unchampioned, they spend all their time trying to strip rights away from men.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Bonecrcker #148 - Women Who Want To Cheat With You

. · 26 May 2004 · Archived copy · Original

(In response to a man who slept with a woman who had a boyfriend)

There is a basic understanding about the nature of American women that you are missing. And that basic misunderstanding is (unlike what is normal for men and women in every culture), love just isn't real for women here. Quite frankly, they just don't give a shit about you or anyone else they are involved with. They form no lasting attachments and tend to flitter randomly from one situation to another. Manipulation, lying and self-deception is what it is all about. What's going on with this woman is she is looking to replace her current boyfriend, or at the very least, has hit the point where she has no respect for him at all. The behavior this translates into is her cheating with every man she can get her hands on, and you just happened to be available. But does she act like some slut who is on the make? Noooooooo, that would be wrong. Instead, she acts like a young woman in love. It's a total lie. What she wanted was for you to fuck her in the car and then get the hell out when you were done. Her behavior toward you afterward is to deny responsibility for what she has done. After she was done with you, she ran over to her boyfriend and reduced his sperm count to zero, out of guilt. A lot of women will do this, ESPECIALLY women you have been involved with in the past or who were friends with you and are now married. It's one of the sick, reliable repeating patterns of women. Sad, but true.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #74 – All Married Women Are Available

Bonecrcker #116 – Can I Ask You A Quick Question? You Married?

Bonecrcker #149 - Women Don't Actually Have Personality Disorders, They Have Asshole-ism

. · 27 May 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Women don't actually have personality disorders (except the ones that have eating disorders…..the two go hand in hand). They have asshole-ism. There is a very big difference between mental disorders and fucked-upness. Mental disorders are diseases. They can be treated with varying degrees of expectation that the treatment will work. When under stress, the disease remains or even gets worse. Fucked-upness is an affectation caused by someone's self-willed behavior. When under stress (for example, a life threatening situation), it vanishes. Since it is not a disease, it cannot be treated. It only ends when the person doing it decides to improve their behavior. Once that happens, it instantly goes away.

When I say women are sick, I'm being facetious. There is nothing "wrong" with them and certainly nothing is going on that they don't have control over. They are being assholes in a way that looks like personality disorders. Actually, the whole idea of personality disorders is controversial. Because they are resistant to treatment and not well understood, some people don't think they are actual disease.

Personally, I DO think they are actual mental illness because a person with such a diagnosis does not have strong, immediate control over the behavior (i.e., they can decide they've had enough but be unable to change). Women don't fall into this category (mostly). Any woman, at any time, can accept the awareness of what the problem is and immediately correct it….gaining a happy and fulfilling life in the process. Most will NEVER accept that responsibility. The only way to affect this situation is to surround them with evidence of what the problem is (them). If everywhere they look there are happy, successful couples (American men married to foreign women), they might decide they want some of that. But probably not. What will happen is, their daughters will see it and won't grow up the same way their mothers did.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Bonecrcker #150 - Women With Past Abusive Partners

. · 28 May 2004 · Archived copy · Original

One thing this woman will never do is respect a man that doesn't use violence against her. She'll repeatedly seek out sick, dangerous men. Because she is sick herself, she won't see them as sick (actually weak) and dangerous. She'll see them as sexy and desirable. One day, she will "settle" for some guy who isn't like this. She will treat him as disrespectful as possible. She'll also engage in an escalating campaign to get him to abuse her and to self-destruct her entire life. Eventually, she'll leave. One thing is certain, she will blame everything on men (mostly on the men who aren't violent, because they are safe to hate) and will steadfastly refuse to do even the most basic behaviours necessary to get a good man and maintain a relationship with him.

No one can do a damn thing to help her. When a woman tells you about dangerously psychotic behaviours from previous men in her life, run the other way as fast as you can. They are emotionally unstable…..and like it.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Bonecrcker #151 - The Woman Who Is The Exception Phenomena

. · 29 May 2004 · Archived copy · Original

The woman who is the “exception” phenomena is very dangerous. Because there is always the chance that they actually are the exception, it practically demands that you respect that and value them. However, I have never actually met a woman like this, but I HAVE met tons of women who pretended to be this way. They give incredible lip service to virtues, love and good values. But their behaviour gives them away. How a woman acts, both now and in the past, is the true measure of her character. It’s a good idea to ignore what they say and watch what they do.

As for the, finding good women to be female friends thing, BEWARE, women spend a great deal of time trying to harm their friends, especially their female friends. You can expect hateful rumours, attempts to sleep with your boyfriend, outright stealing from you, and attempts to get you hooked on drugs and other charming behaviours. Just like I said for men, ignore what they say and watch what they do. And don’t turn your back on them for a second.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #46 – Feminism Turns Women Into Mere Sex Objects (advice to women)

Bonecrcker #54 – Women Should Cultivate Anything That Typically Is A Virtue… (advice to women)

Bonecrcker #71 – Not All Women Are Like That (NAWALT)

Bonecrcker #154 – Women Are Bitches To Nice Girls (advice to women)

Bonecrcker #167 – Advice For Women On Inviting Guys To Approach You (advice to women)

Bonecrcker #174 – The Measure Of A Person’s Worth Is Their Actions (advice to women)

Bonecrcker #176 – Women Making More Money Than Their Husbands (advice to women)

Bonecrcker #177 – Responsibility And Power Go Hand In Hand (advice to women)

Not All Women Are Like That (Arguments From History)

Bonecrcker #152 - The Predatory Female

. · 30 May 2004 · Archived copy · Original

I'd like to share a section from the book, *The Predatory Female,* by Rev. Lawrence Shannon, that might explain better what's going on. This sort of thing with women is extremely common (it happened to me, only much worse, lol)

Love Gap

Q. I lived with a girl for over a year, but when I refused to marry her, she broke off our affair and moved out. Within two weeks she was married to another man. I saw her recently and she behaved like a stranger, despite having professed undying love only three months previously. How do you explain such radical changes?

A. There were no changes. She never cared about you in the first place, but you have been blind to it by failing to grasp the nature of the predatory female. You loved her but she didn't love you. She is incapable of loving anyone, including her new husband. A predatory female never loves anyone but herself [note: my personal belief is she never loves anyone, ever, especially herself.....that's the real source of the problem.] Using sex to lure men into loving her, she can only pretend at loving them back. This is natural, involuntary behaviour for the predatory female. She feeds them sex, fusses over them, makes them feel loved, but it's only an act. It's the chameleon syndrome in full bloom. [Note: chameleon syndrome is described elsewhere in the book.....women are able to take on whatever character traits and behaviours make them seem the most attractive to an pending victim] She uses their love, or infatuation, to manipulate and control, stinging them like the wasp on a spider's back, until they are incapable of rational thought where she is concerned. The predatory female never becomes emotionally involved in the same way a male does. Her emotional involvement is strictly contingent upon her degree of success in bringing the male crashing to earth. It is not a conscious deceit, but an unconscious one. When, as in your case, she fails to trap him permanently [or chooses not to], she can easily leave because her involvement was only temporal. This is one of the toughest axioms for men to accept: Predatory females flatly don't care. The person deserving the sympathy is the poor unfortunate who married her. He has volunteered to become the host body for this parasite, and serves as another proof that slavery is the natural state of man.

Q. I just can't believe that women don't really ever love men, at least in the same way men love them.

A. The predatory female herself is sometimes fooled in this regard. She can be victimized by her own predatory nature, especially if she's young. But the experienced ones know better. They're counting on your inability to understand or accept it. They know your male ego will side with them. If your girlfriend sincerely believes she loves you, be sympathetic, be understanding. She doesn't know herself yet. But don't let her immaturity bring havoc into your life.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #85 – It's Very Difficult To Come To Terms With How Fast An Important Relationship Evaporates

Bonecrcker #91 – Could She Just Walk Out Of Your Life?

Love is for Suckers… Blood Suckers

Bonecrcker #153 - People Can Choose Anything They Want To... But They Can't Choose The Consequences

. · 31 May 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Feral isn't a good term. It implies that people have returned to a wild, natural state, much like a pet will if you abandon it. Savage is a better term. A good portion of what a human is (which is different from every other creature on the planet), is a matter of choice. When we raise children, we can choose to put good things or bad things into them. When they get older, they can choose what they bring into themselves. It's been this way since homo-sapiens first swung down out of the trees and chose to live like men, not animals. We can choose to live like good men or bad men. Unlike animals, that choice isn't made for us already by our biology. It's the source of our power and also the source of our folly……depending on the natural consequences of the choices we make.

Increasingly, women are choosing to bring bad things into themselves and to pass on those bad things to their children. They look for men WHO WILL ASSIST THEM IN THIS TASK. At the very least, they shirk their responsibility to bring good things into themselves and put good things into children. Instead, they let random people influence themselves and their children. A lot of evil people know about this and seek to exploit this situation for various ends (for example, gangs, pimps, drug dealers, and other miscellaneous scum).

One thing that REALLY pisses women off is when you point out the specific consequences of things they do. They get highly offended, thinking you are trying to manipulate them (being huge manipulators, they think everyone else is too). There is a grain of truth to this. Often, when someone is trying to manipulate you, they will punish you with shame and anger, anything to attach a negative emotion onto whatever it is they want to change for their benefit. They are a bit vague and ambiguous on the connection. You should/should not do that thing. Why? Because it's right/wrong. What they mean by right is what they want. What they mean by wrong is what they don't want. But this isn't what I'm talking about.

People can choose to do anything they want to. But they can't choose the consequences. That's what I'm talking about. Women constantly get these two things confused. They want to be free to do whatever thing they want AND to choose the consequences. This isn't possible. It's like someone jumping off a building and expecting not to fall.

The ingenuity of men is one long history of using superior understanding to seem to break the laws of nature for some benefit. But it's only an illusion. What's actually happening is men learn more laws of nature and combine them to get a different outcome. For example, if you jumped off a building with a parachute, you might get a completely different consequence. That's great. It's why MEN have been the ones to build everything of consequence for the last several thousand years.

But women see this and are fooled. They see the man jumping off the building in a parachute and landing safely. So, they insist, it's OK to just jump off. After a few have fallen to their death, they start screaming at men to do something. They get royally pissed when you hand them a parachute, and they throw it away, usually screaming about how worthless you are the whole time. A few more fall to their deaths. Finally, the men throw their hands up in frustration and walk away.

Some get so fed up, they leave and cross the mountain range to the next tribe over. They strike up a conversation with a local girl and mention the parachute they invented. The girl smiles and says…..oooooh, a parachute, how does it work, can I try it?

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

.

"Every day for the past thirty years, you high-heeled pit-bulls have blamed us for everything; from not being able to get into Harvard, to not being able to get into stretch-pants." -- Al Bundy

.

Related:

Bonecrcker #177 – Responsibility And Power Go Hand In Hand

Philalethes #25 – You Can Have As Much Freedom As You Are Willing To Be Responsible For, But No More

Bonecrcker #154 - Women Are Bitches To Nice Girls

. · 1 June 2004 · Archived copy · Original

QUOTE "Women are bitches to nice girls they perceive as losers precisely b/c they are nice." -- (a female commenter)

Hahaha…..want to know why they are doing that? Because you are ruining the scam for them. If they are a bitch, but you act nice, men will lose all interest in them and transfer it to you, forcing them to compete. They hate that. And want to trick you into giving up that behaviour.

Since you are most certainly in competition with the bitch, under no circumstances should you give that up, or anything else that makes you in demand. At this point in time, a great many women are stuck in a very negative vibe…..leaving the field wide open, for an ambitious girl who knows what she is doing.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #54 – Women Should Cultivate Anything That Typically Is A Virtue… (advice to women)

Bonecrcker #151 – The Woman Who Is The Exception Phenomena (advice to women)

Bonecrcker #167 – Advice For Women On Inviting Guys To Approach You (advice to women)

Bonecrcker #174 – The Measure Of A Person's Worth Is Their Actions (advice to women)

Bonecrcker #176 – Women Making More Money Than Their Husbands (advice to women)

Bonecrcker #177 – Responsibility And Power Go Hand In Hand (advice to women)

Bonecrcker #155 - Types of Bad Advice

. · 2 June 2004 · Archived copy · Original

There is a big problem with well meaning but ignorant people, and some not so well-meaning types with a woman-only agenda spreading bad advice about how to handle the problem. They fall into three general categories:

1. Do more – The problem is that you aren't doing enough for your woman, working hard enough at the relationship, aren't good enough somehow or have to change in some other way.

2. Expect less – The problem is what you want from women is unreasonable and no person could meet up to your standard.

3. That's just the way things are – Usually some dreck that attempts to explain what women are doing as a function of some leftover instincts from our evolution. Since it's hardwired, you can't do anything about it and just have to accept your lot in life.

There is one thing all of these theories have in common…..they don't work. Strategies based on them have absolutely no effect whatsoever on the situation. I would say they were untrue (mostly because bad people are intentionally lying to cause you some harm) but there is little point in that because there is no way to prove or disprove them. Instead, I have different criteria to judge them by. Does the theory suggest behaviours that make things better? The answers for these three categories is a very strong no.

So what does? Pretty much assuming the opposite. You should do less, demand more, and assume that you can (and should) choose your behaviours with some goal in mind. Instead of worrying about if you have enough money or some other nebulous criteria by which you are judged, you should instead be judging women as to if they are good enough to spend any of your valuable time on.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Bonecrcker #156 - Friends With Benefits

. · 3 June 2004 · Archived copy · Original

I've done the "friends with benefits" thing too. Basically, what happened was a woman I was in a relationship with demoted me to the status of sex object (I don't want to be your boyfriend anymore, but I still want to have sex). The point of this situation is their respect for you has dropped to a very low point, but they still need you for something (in my case, it was for sex, but many times, it is something more utilitarian). Their behavior towards you gets more and more uncaring and disrespectful. Just say no.

This doesn't mean you should commit to a woman….no, no, no. What this does mean is the relationship only lasts as long as she is still willing to work hard and compete in order to "get" you. When that behavior ends, she usually leaves (note that actually "getting" you tends to end the behavior made). Sometimes though, they want to hang on for various reasons. Don't let them.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #35 – You Mean Nothing To A Woman Until You Have Sex

Bonecrcker #38 – You Mean Nothing Until You Have Sex II

Bonecrcker #127 – Timing Is Important

Bonecrcker #128 – Women as "Friends"

Bonecrcker #130 – Never Allow A Woman To Call You A Friend Unless You've Had Sex At Least Once

Bonecrcker #158 - Part of Breaking-Up Is About The Drama

. · 4 June 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Women are neurotic freaks and very insecure. Part of the dumping process, for them, is the drama. They want you to crawl, to try to get them to stay. If you just don't care, it's devastating to them. Even worse is if you beat her to the punch and dump her first.

Understand this, if nothing else. They all leave eventually. Either they walk out, or they do something so bad that you had better throw them out. When you get involved with one, you need to keep this in mind. Since it is going to happen anyway, it really is no big deal. Also, you have absolutely no reason to limit yourself to only them. When the time comes, they will present it as one of the several variations of the dramatic breakup. Your response should be: So? Preferably, it should only mean that you spend more time with a girl or two you see on the side while you shop around for a replacement.

It is absolutely right to think that you cannot control the sickness in women. But, I would like to point out that you do not have to let it affect you either. There are certain situations that force you to do so (mostly due to government sticking its nose in where it doesn't belong) but they can be avoided (ie don't breed, and don't get married.)

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #178 – Love Is A Verb

Bonecrcker #157 - Eating Disorders

. · 4 June 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Tolerance of deviance has allowed behaviors like eating disorders to become common place. The solution, both on the societal and personal levels is to not tolerate it. This pays off big time in many ways, and not doing it has a very high cost. Eating disorders are a very good example. If you don't dump a chick upon learning she has an eating disorder, I can absolutely guarantee that you will regret it. Sooner or later (usually sooner), something fucked up will happen to you because the chick is a psycho. She simply won't act like a normal person. Although it is very difficult to find a woman who IS normal, there are degrees. If you do less, and expect more (especially in the character department), your love life will be MUCH better.

Most relationship experts tell you the exact opposite…..just do more for her and be tolerant of her foilables. That is a deadly mistake.

The very definition of insanity is doing what is counter to survival……refusing to eat is right up there at the top, just under refusing to breath.

That's the point I repeatedly make over and over again with women. Their behavior is NOT explainable in any MEANINGFUL way as a derivation of survival of the fittest. What they are doing is directly counter to both our biological imperatives and the specific patterns in which humans, meet, mate, and relate. The fucked up results are predictable. When you act in a manner contrary to survival……you don't. But, you usually don't croak right away. You spend a certain amount of time, sick, before you go. Usually, you don't pass on your genes. And that is EXACTLY what is happening in our society today.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #39 – Fat Bottom Girls

Bonecrcker #57 - Approaching Fat/Ugly Chicks Is Harmful To Your Self-Esteem

Bonecrcker #161 – The Old "Fat But Working On It" Line

Bonecrcker #171 – The Problem Isn't the Body, It's the Mind

Zenpriest #19 – How Women Keep Score

Bonecrcker #159 - Men Who Sleep On The Couch

. · 5 June 2004 · Archived copy · Original

This topic is one of the many problems that happens when you allow a woman to weasel her way into living with you (which is part of the point as to why she wanted to). You can't easily leave. You definitely can't leave without destroying the relationship. Contrast this with what you could do if you weren't living together. "Look babe, I'm just not satisfied with your behavior. I'll be back when you decide to behave. If it happens too many times, I won't come back."

Not sleeping with her (especially if you are sleeping with someone else) becomes empowering, rather than disempowering. Of course, she can do the same thing, but while your your desirability goes up when you do this, hers goes down. Plus, don't kid yourself; she is going to do it anyway. Why should you accept the problems inherent in monogamy when she won't?

My point here is, you lost the fight waaaaay back when you allowed her to move in with you, not when it comes down to her trying to get you to sleep on the couch. Also, if she is doing this, it means your relationship is over. She may hang on (sometimes for quite a bit) but the good times are done and she is looking for your replacement. This is a harsh, complicated thing when living together. But when not living together, it is as simple as erasing her number off your speed dial.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Bonecrcker #160 - Good Job On The Stats!

. · 6 June 2004 · Archived copy · Original

QUOTE: JUSTICE SYSTEM BIAS: Even though the amount of the average "child support payment" due from women is half the amount due from men, and even though women are twice as likely as men to default on those payments, fathers are 97% of "child support" collections prosecutions [Census Bureau]

I had no idea of that stat. It's an important one, IMHO and illustrates quite nicely how the whole "deadbeat dad" issue is a total lie.

QUOTE: HIGHER EDUCATION: There are more than 200 all-female colleges for women and now not one single all-male college for men. 5.8% fewer men than women are enrolled in 4 year colleges, even though two thirds of those who score higher than 550 in SAT Math are males. In 1993 only 44.5% of college enrolments were men, and that figure has declined since then. Only 45.8% of of bachelor's degrees were conferred to men in 1992, even though 98.2% of the top fiftieth percentile of the GRE are men, and ZERO PERCENT of American high school girls correctly answered 28 out of 67 TIMSS advanced math questions. Only 38.4% of private 4 year college students were men as of 1990, and this figure has declined since then.

I personally have run into this bit of discrimination. There was a time when I approached the Chicago School of Professional Psychology about their PsyD. Program. Even though I had GRE scores in the 99 percentile, high grades, published research and good references, they passed me over. Almost all of students there are women. More importantly, all of the women I knew who went to that school (including my own fiancé, at the time) had below average scores, grades and were missing research achievements (supposedly very important) like mine. I approached the head of the board that screens applicants (a woman) and was very rudely rebuffed. Perhaps I should have sued them. Of course, knowing what I know now, I would NEVER choose to enter the field of Clinical Psychology.

QUOTE: CHILD VIOLENCE: Even though mothers commit 55% of child murders and biological fathers commit 6%, even though NIS-3 shows that Mother-only households are 3 times more fatal to children than Father-only households, children are systematically removed from the natural fathers who are their most effective protectors and men are imprisoned at rate 20 times that of women.

This reminds me of that TV commercial showing a father and a little girl holding hands and acting in a loving manner, while the word Abuser is printed on his back, to be seen by a woman, with a caption urging people to report men even if they just mildly suspect abuse. The commercial is an obvious attempt to cause harm to normal families without abuse and a strong father role model. It conveniently ignores the fact that most abuse (and by far, the worst abuse) comes from women, not men. Of men and women, women are the ones who no longer feel the strong bond that makes harming a child, taboo….not men. That is sad and disturbing. And I can think of no stronger argument for the fact that women are the problem in society….not men. Further, of the men who DO abuse, almost all of them are omega males. The commercial shows the nice, white, middle class, respectable dad as the abuser. But the truth is, it's the drug using, lower income, criminal record scumbag that is the abuser. Unfortunately, minorities are over represented in this population.

Good job on the stats.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Bonecrcker #161 - The old "Fat But Working On It" Line

. · 7 June 2004 · Archived copy · Original

You need to be leery of the old "fat but working on it" line. When a man says this, what he means is he has carefully researched what works, has set goals and a method of monitoring his progress, and is in the process of implementing his plan. Six months to a year later, he will be fit.

What a WOMAN means when she says this, is she is eating disordered, spends most of the year binging as part of a destructive shame spiral, and is engaging in various extreme, bizarre, mostly ineffective behaviours (vomiting, diuretics, fasting, laxatives, fad diets etc.) out of desperation. Six months to a year later, she will be fatter than ever. Often she will lose a few pounds, snag a man, and then balloon way up again (a lot of the time this is on purpose with the point of being disrespectful). But none of this is the REAL problem. The real problem is the woman is a neurotic mess. Her behavior in all areas of her life is insane, self-defeating and self-destructive (especially with regard to relationships). If you give her the chance, she will try and include you in the pattern. One of the first things she will do is sabotage your own fitness, in a calculated campaign to make you fat. If you have other bad habits you have conquered (for example, smoking), she will try to bring those back too. Now, most women do this to a certain extent, but not nearly to the degree that a “fat chick” does.

Just say no.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #39 – Fat Bottom Girls

Bonecrcker #57 – Approaching Fat/Ugly Chicks Is Harmful To Your Self-Esteem

Bonecrcker #157 – Eating Disorders

Bonecrcker #171 – The Problem Isn’t the Body, It’s the Mind

Zenpriest #19 – How Women Keep Score

Bonecrcker #162 - Women's "Requirements" in a Man

. · 8 June 2004 · Archived copy · Original

QUOTE: I've been turned down for a date because the girl only wanted to date a guy with blue eyes. Mine are brown. So I didn't get a date. And yes, as you can tell, I'm all broken up over it. Yeah.

The correct response to something like this is to laugh in the woman's face, roll your eyes in that "I can't believe what a fucking loser you are" manner and walk away. When a woman has a weird attitude like this, she is telling you quite clearly, and in no uncertain terms, that something is wrong with her. She doesn't know how to play the game and will likely end up failing at it. Either she will end up with nobody or she will end up with an obese, ugly, smelly, unemployed guy…..with blue eyes.

This is a lot different than a woman saying, "I want a guy I'm heavily attracted to physically." Or "I want a guy who I find interesting to talk to." Or one of lots of different criteria that fall under personal taste. Those things speak directly to the enjoyment of her being with the guy. Blue eyes don't fit the bill with that. It shows she is clueless about how her choices affect the quality of her life. One day, she will look back at her crappy as hell life and go, "How the hell did I end up here?"

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #166 – Seeking After Money Is Not An Effective Means Of Getting Women

Bonecrcker #163 - A "Real Man" Wouldn't Shun A Woman With Kids

. · 9 June 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Any time you hear a term like “real man” you should automatically assume someone is trying to manipulate you. What they are trying to do is convince you that cleaning up the mess they made of their own lives is your responsibility. That you don’t have the right to choose the women and the situation that is best for you. That you are somehow less if you do what you want instead of what they want. The correct response to this is to laugh in their face. Feel free to meet her, seduce her, fuck her and then dump her because she has a kid. Sorry toots, you’re great, but there is just no future in a relationship with you because of all the bad decisions you made in the past……and it’s your responsibility to deal with it, not mine.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #3 – Shaming Language

Bonecrcker #36 – Just Say No To Divorced Women

Bonecrcker #77 – Just Say No to Women with Kids

Bonecrcker #119 – Sleeping with Single Moms and Cohabitating

Bonecrcker #164 - The Media Is Being Used Against Us

. · 10 June 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Haven't you guys seen enough evidence that media, in a pretty blanket fashion, is being used against us? I mean, turn on the TV at any time of the day and you will see something, a show, a commercial, a news item that portrays men in a very negative light. How can this be anything but a concerted campaign against us? Why can't you see how the news media is a big part of this and how the feminist agenda is just part of a larger agenda to disempower you in some weird social experiment. It doesn't get any plainer than showing who voted for what or showing specific, extreme examples of the bias (no…the manipulation of the news to serve a cause against our best interest). Who do you think is passing the laws that make marriage a very bad idea (hence, cutting men off from one of the prime determinants of a happy life), grossly perverting other laws on the bench, and presenting the feminist lies in every print, TV, movie and other media that exists. They aren't exactly subtle about it either.

I'm making a very specific point about this. That point is that feminism and the ass-raping laws that they have been responsible for are only one head of a hydra. You can't deal with the feminists without dealing with their allies and the agenda that ties them all together.

Do I care about the stupid liberal bias trying to paint the Iraq war as a disaster? Hell no, I don't. Except for all my tax money flowing into that cesspool, I don't really care about Iraq. What I care about is the blatant attempt to manipulate the next presidential election and shift the political balance of power. Why do I care about this? Because once in, they want to pass even more ass-raping laws (hey, how would you like to become financially responsible for kids your girlfriend has from some other man, 3 years after you dumped her or other fun stuff like that). They want to put even more women-only agenda judges on the bench. And they will really ramp up the media showing men in an even worse light, promoting lesbianism as an alternative, and sick lifestyles like being a drug whore or gangbanger in an even more positive light.

I prefer to say NO, to that nonsense.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #13 – DV Myths = Cold War

Bonecrcker #17 – Movies Desensitize Social Problems

Bonecrcker #117 – Feminism is a Purposefully Destructive Ideology Within a Larger Destructive Group

Bonecrcker #142 – Buffy & Xena

Roots of American Culture and Community in Disarray – by Bill Woods

Who Stole Our Culture? – By William S. Lind

The Fine Art of TV Repair

Bonecrcker #165 - "The Problem" Is So Pervasive That It Is Difficult To Avoid

. · 11 June 2004 · Archived copy · Original

The problem is so pervasive in women that it is difficult to avoid. Realistically, you will not meet a woman who is not like this, even if you spend an extended amount of time searching. A man can and should be as assertive as possible with any woman he is with. That being said, women are an aggressive pain in the ass and it takes a large amount of energy to do this….it's a battle of wills. The closer a woman gets to you, the more intense that battle becomes. But, that's not the worst part….nonono. The worst part is the woman will decompensate, no matter what you do. Eventually, she will abandon you or force you to eject her from your life. That is unavoidable if you want to prevent becoming her abused pet dog. The situation is made much worse because of state interference. Quite literally, you no longer have this right if you dare to get married or if she gets pregnant. If you or her decides to leave, the state will punish you severely. All women use this situation to really ramp up the abuse. Most eventually leave so that the state can whip their dog even more.

This is a very difficult situation to deal with, women en masse deciding to be so toxic. If you play your cards right, you can get many of your needs met while at the same time forcing women to accept the consequences of their inappropriate behavior. However, you cannot have what is most important in life…..a permanent monogamous relationship and family with a good woman. That is simply unavailable here, no matter what you do.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Bonecrcker #166 - Seeking After Money Is Not An Effective Means Of Getting Women

. · 12 June 2004 · Archived copy · Original

My whole point in posting this research is to show that, no, seeking after money is NOT an effective means of getting women and sex. What's going on here is two-fold. First, women are women are choosing most sexual partners at random with a small percentage of women (gold diggers) choosing a man based on money (only lots of money will do) but as a means of exploitation and have having no intention of doing anything but burning the relationship to get their hands on that money. Second, most women are lying about the randomness thing. They list a whole bunch of attributes (including income) that they want in a man. When they randomly reject you, they bring up lack in any of these attributes as the reason, and the very next day are with someone who has none of the attributes on that list. Hypocrisy. Income (height is another one) is a favourite because women list qualifications that only a tiny fraction of men meet. It's a handy way to reject you. However, it's total bullshit. The truth is, if she won't her sister will or her friends will. That is the truth. Men can (and do) make themselves crazy trying to meet the qualifications of women. They work out obsessively, work 80 hour weeks, dress in insanely expensive clothes, get all manner of plastic surgery, and a lot of other goofy stuff to try and "measure up". It just doesn't work. It doesn't work because the idea of objective measures of a man is just a scam. Women are lying.

If you redid this study with other objective measures…..things like lean muscle mass, height, education, dominance, whatever, you would find the exact same thing. The only exceptions would be fame (if you are on TV, you are going to get laid) and deviance (criminal history, drugs, violence etc.)

This has implications for a man's strategies for dealing with women. Work on THEM, work on the situation, don't waste time working on yourself.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Bonecrcker #167 - Advice For Women On Inviting Guys To Approach You

. · 13 June 2004 · Archived copy · Original

You need to understand that women in this country are completely socially inept and have stopped all relationship starting behavior. That leaves the field wide open for you (a woman who knows what she is doing) with little to no competition. See a guy you like? Look at him and smile as an invitation to approach. Likely, it is quite rare for him to get signals from women, no matter who he is, what he looks like or anything else about him. He may be surrounded by women who want him but NONE of them will invite him to approach. You can swoop right in and pluck him out of the crowd easy. The downside to this is he has gone so long without this happening that he might not recognize your invitation. Just be firm and repeat it several times. Eventually, he'll come on over. Talk lightly and steer the conversation to mutual interests and then mention you might want to do one of those together. Give him your phone number and bam; you have a date with a guy you are highly attracted to. This is easy for women to do and tough as hell for a man to do. Why? Because women get an idea in their head about the type of man they want (usually a random one at that) and are not open at all to anyone else, plus they try to keep any attraction a big secret until Mr. Right just decides to aggressively pursue them as some random encounter (yah, that works well…..not). Usually what happens is a woman gets lonely and bored and then grabs whoever just happens to be hitting on her aggressively, as a stop-gap measure. Men, on the other hand, are open to any woman of reasonable quality that seems interested in him.

What really burns my nut about the whole thing is the exception to this situation……the scumbag. Women will chase and do all sorts of freaky things for a scumbag, including competing over his sorry ass. That sort of behavior is quite natural to do for alpha males. It is decidedly unnatural and sick to do with fucked up losers.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #46 – Feminism Turns Women Into Mere Sex Objects (advice to women)

Bonecrcker #48 – Sexes Approaching Eachother

Bonecrcker #54 – Women Should Cultivate Anything That Typically Is A Virtue (advice to women)

Bonecrcker #151 – The Woman Who Is The Exception (advice to women)

Bonecrcker #154 – Women Are Bitches To Nice Girls (advice to women)

Bonecrcker #174 – The Measure Of A Person's Worth Is Their Actions (advice to women)

Bonecrcker #176 – Women Making More Money Than Their Husbands (advice to women)

Bonecrcker #177 – Responsibility And Power Go Hand In Hand (advice to women)

Bonecrcker #168 - You Can't Assume You Are Dealing With Nice, Normal, Rational, Loving People

. · 14 June 2004 · Archived copy · Original

You can't assume you are dealing with nice, normal, rational, loving people when you deal with women. Since that isn't even close to being true, making a situation come out right is much more a function of enforcing your will on them, than convincing them with rational arguments. First, cultivate power, and then use that power to force the other person to do what you want, then choose what you want them to do wisely. Yes, men and women should both come to the table with the idea that acting in a good and loving manner will result in a relationship with almost unlimited potential and fulfillment. The problem is, I can pretty much guarantee that the woman will not be coming from this position and, instead will be looking to do as little as possible, be as little invested as possible, and be as sick as possible. In order to prevent that, you must be the one who calls the shots in all things. The words benevolent dictator comes to mind. Problem is, our society and legal system are completely dedicated to wiping out your power, even punishing you, if you dare to marry or get her pregnant. They will even cooperate with the sicker ones to bust your balls outside that arrangement if you aren't careful.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Bonecrcker #169 - America Is Not A Socialist Country?

. · 15 June 2004 · Archived copy · Original

QUOTE: "America is not a Socialist country. In fact we are the LEAST socialist country on earth. We have the lowest taxes of any developed country so I don't know where you guys keep getting this socialist crap from.

Feminist is one thing, Socialist is another."

You guys are right, I really should be more careful in what I mean, but there is no specific term for it. For example, communism is a dirty word. But not because there is anything wrong with that model (even though it is a bit unrealistic). What makes communism a dirty word are the specific PEOPLE who identify themselves with communism, give lip service to that system but are involved in all sorts of crazy shit that isn't too related to the values they supposedly hold. Socialism has a very similar thing going on in a great many countries but hasn't yet been revealed as being quite as bad. Here in the US, although the same people are involved with the same pattern of behavior, they don't call themselves socialists. They call themselves liberals. Part of the problem is these malevolent shadow players adopt a name with a well defined set of goals and values to hide what they are doing. Their goals, values and behaviours are way out of line with what the name implies. The biggest example of this I can think of is feminism.

The specific part of the "socialist" agenda I'm talking about is the forced redistribution of wealth by centralized violence via alimony/child support and the attempt to dilute/remove the family as the prime source of socialization and values for children and replace them with the government (conveniently replacing good values with ones the socialists need to manipulate people with that are quite frankly immoral). Also, through various means they have set up a system where a person can be a very low quality human being and still survive, even thrive and multiply. They have removed many of the perks a person gets for being a good person. The biggest one of these is being treated with preference and respect by women. That prize now goes to men who are scum….thanks to direct manipulation and brain washing by these people.

Although centralization is a key element of what these people are about, that isn't their defining characteristic. And you are right, the US is much less socialistic (in the real sense of the word) than many other countries. The defining characteristic is the ABUSE of that centralization….turning it away from its intended purpose (usually leaving that purpose unfulfilled) to serve a fucked up purpose. They hijack our institutions and twist them to evil ends.

Although removing all elements of socialism from our society would solve the problem, it would also bring about other problems. Perhaps it would be better to say that we need to regain control of those institutions from these evil bastards and reform them. However, certain socialistic institutions are highly inappropriate and have always been abused harshly and their reason for being was mostly a lie. Child support and alimony are right at the top of the list for that.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Bonecrcker #170 - Normal Looking Girls Get Hit On More Than Hot Looking Women

. · 16 June 2004 · Archived copy · Original

QUOTE: "Haven't you ever seen like 200 men go after the same blonde bimbo?"

Want to know a few secrets? The first is that normal looking girls get hit on WAY more than hot looking women. Why? Because men care about sex, not about challenge. We're really not interested in competing with other men over a woman. No, what we want is sex. And to most men, the normal looking girl seems more in the realm of getting some with little effort. And, quite frankly, women are something of a commodity with men. Without the depth of a relationship, one woman is pretty much as good as another. This is the very harsh price women pay for making relationships built on bullshit fantasy, exploitation and appearances rather than on depth, loyalty and commitment. Quite literally, there is no reason for a man to commit or put more than a minor amount of energy into any one woman. The second is that hot looking women are deeply, DEEPLY insecure. They KNOW that although the packaging looks nice (something they are not at all sure of), what's inside is of dubious value. When bored or anxious, they will do almost anything to alleviate the problem. Lastly, there are major constraints over men's behavior in society. Even though the instinct is for tons of men to go after every woman at every opportunity, we rarely do. What I mean by that is you only see that behavior in certain specific situations…..for example, online dating, or at the club. The rest of the time, men are all around but none are on the hunt. Much of the time, a man who approaches women in normal, everyday situations, has the tremendous advantage that the woman he is chasing has gone an extended period of time with nobody showing interest, even (maybe especially) if she is some hot blonde. This is the harsh price women pay for not doing their part of the mating dance. However, a lot of women specifically seek out situations where men hunt them en masse, so this can skew their perception. They never notice that any man of worth stays away from those situations.

So the answer to your question is no. That only happens at the sex club or when trolling AOL. The truth is that women are much more highly motivated to get men than men are to get women. They just suck at it, on almost all levels. To put it another way, how many girls are satisfied with their love lives? Damn few.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Bonecrcker #171 - The Problem Isn't the Body, It's the Mind

. · 17 June 2004 · Archived copy · Original

The problem isn't the body, it's the mind. Although the body is important for various reasons, including status, it's not a deal breaker. What is a deal breaker is the reason WHY her body may look like that; particularly if she has good genetics (i.e. look at her when she was younger and look at her mother and siblings). Deterioration of one's body in the face of favourable factors is a huge warning sign of a pattern of obnoxious, self-destructive behavior (if it goes so far as to manifest as drug use or an eating disorder, run, don't walk in the other direction). It's a package deal. Where you see one behavior, you see tons of others. And the person wants to extend that crap to YOUR life….and will be very tenacious in doing so. This is unacceptable.

Also, I'd like to point out that the attitude of not discriminating against a woman based on her body is brain-washing on their part. It is one of the key elements of a greater pattern where they try to convince men to accept less, and provide more. Don't fall for that. Instead, always insist on full value for everything you provide her, particularly in the same area. If you are good in bed, she needs to become good in bed. If you are smart, educated and interesting to talk to, so must she be. And if you spend 5 days a week in the gym, developing that "ripped" look, guess what she needs to be doing? Why? Well, not only do you deserve it, but, if you let her slack off, she will try to slack off in all other areas. But, most important of all……she will disrespect you for it. You have the ridiculous situation that a fat/ugly chick will consider you a loser (no matter what other qualities you possess), simply because you were willing to look past her "packaging" to see if the person inside was of value. This is that social proofing issue coming up again. Those things I do that add value to myself don't matter. What matters is the associations I have. If I'm screwing a hot chick, I must be hot. If a lot of people are listening to me, I must be interesting. But, if I screw a homely chick, there must be something wrong with me…..even to the homely chick.

Women are sick.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #39 – Fat Bottom Girls

Bonecrcker #161 – The Old "Fat But Working On It" Line

Zenpriest #19 – How Women Keep Score

Bonecrcker #173 - Questions For The Bonecrcker

. · 18 June 2004 · Archived copy · Original

QUOTE: I have some questions.

1. What behaviours did they exhibit?

2. If you don't want to be soley with one woman, do the women know about each other/are they OK with this? I always wanted monogamy because I thought it was the hallmark of a serious relationship, not for power.

3. Does this example mean a person doesn't love you? I wasn't trying to test him, but you commute to school while dating someone. You don't have a car at the time and the person thinks you should. But you just borrow your parents' car because it is easier on you. One day, their car doesn't start and you call and ask your significat other for a ride to class. The answer is "I wanted you to get your own car, therefore I ain't taking you nowhere." Does this mean they don't care? Is this a test?

1. This is a tough one because there are so many and they are so varied. They range anywhere from simple flakiness and disrespect of my time (showing up late or not at all) to cutting me down in front of people in public. The first gets you a warning and a stern lecture. The second gets your number erased from my speed dial. There is a basic pattern of escalation. When I lived for 10 years with my fiancé (who later abandoned me in a rather fucked up way….but that's another story), the behaviours were incredibly extreme and downright bizarre. Then there is the other side of the coin….indifference. The person no longer seems excited to spend time together and doesn't put any effort into anything. Eventually they wander off and stop calling. Some women have to be dumped for the former. But, most women simply do the latter. They start hot and heavy and then fizzle out. The way I do things, this is not a big deal. But, these same women often pressure me for a monogamous relationship. I'm like, if you can't maintain interest for 6 months, what makes you think I want to be moving in with you? Also, most women will gab endlessly in narcissistic fashion about the most inane things. Rarely have I been with a woman that bothered to find out much about me in depth. My experience is most women behave themselves and are fun to be around, if you keep them on a short leash. But, if you let them cut you off from "competition" they very quickly become lazy and presumptuous. One thing I have never met any woman who does, is start working together to build a life with her man. I'd love to meet a woman like this. But, I doubt she exists. The types of behaviours I would expect from a woman like this range from the simple getting to know my personality in depth to the complex, starting money making ventures together to support the kids we plan to have. To be blunt, I rarely meet a woman who is sincere, down to earth and makes good decisions, let alone sending that my way. Most are completely involved in airy fairy nonsense, many to the point of being self-destructive and chasing after sensual pleasures. That's great in limited quantities. But it's hardly something to build a life together with.

2. This may come as some surprise to you but most women are more attracted to a man who won't be monogamous with them than to one who will (and they wonder why I choose the former). If you ask a woman, hey, would you date a man who was seeing other women? Most would say, "Of course not." But, that's not true. my value as a man goes up, not down, if I "date around". There are a few things though. You can't lie….and you can't burst their bubble. When a woman directly asks, "Are you dating other people?", the answer is yes. When she asks where were you Saturday night, the answer is, "None of your business." But, you don't leave other women's underwear hanging around your bedroom either. When a woman asks, "Are you single?", the answer is yes (unless you are married and that's a whole other thing) Also, most women "date around". They are seeing more than one man (none tell you this, BTW) and they don't respect a man who isn't seeing more than one woman. What they want to do though, is separate you from the other women. Not a problem, except once they have you, they don't want you anymore! Every time I let a woman become "serious", she wanders off. Not right away mind you. Instead she leads me on and

suddenly changes her mind at a later date. My point here is, the whole thing of a woman looking for a decent man to have a monogamous relationship with, is just a big myth. Either they want to bag you, but have no intention of doing their part in the relationship and, quite frankly, disrespect you for being willing to be bagged….or they WANT you to be the type of man who dates around. Even the women whose self-esteem is so low that they are rarely with a man do this. This is the way things are. I didn't choose it (quite frankly, I don't like it). And the way things are is very different than the way they say things are.

3. That's a person who is being an asshole. The hallmark of the asshole is unreasonableness. They expect you to rearrange your life and deal with a huge imposition so that you can indulge a minor whim of theirs. Or (as in this case) they are very controlling. They want you to solve a problem you have, their way, rather than your way. If you refuse and do what any assertive, self-determined person would do (choosing your own way to deal with something) and it doesn't work, they dump a hefty amount of blame on you and even try to punish you in an aggressive or passive-aggressive fashion. The point of what they do is NOT to make things come out right (mostly what they want you to do doesn't work anyway, lol), but that you do what THEY want. I would say that, no, the way that person is behaving is not what you would see in someone who loves you. There are two things you see in the behavior of someone who loves you. The first is their behavior encourages you to grow and become self-sufficient. The second is they are willing to give up things that don't really matter to them, so that you can have something that really matters or is important to you. If you have an emergency, they turn off the tube, get their ass off the couch and help you. They also don't try to make you feel stupid for having the emergency. However they also don't let you make it a habit of manufacturing emergencies on a regular basis.

Someone who loves you would SUGGEST getting your own car. When you chose to do something else, they would support your right to make that decision. If it didn't work, they would help you. They neither carry you through life nor let you fall off the cliff from a single bad decision. Someone who did that to me wouldn't even get the benefit of a phone call to let them know they've been dumped.

There is one exception to that. When a person consistently makes decisions that are deviant and way outside the realm of reasonableness….you confront them about it. For example, drug use. Another example, I had an old girlfriend of mine who was whoring around behind her fiancé's back with guys who had been in jail. I told her that was inappropriate and likely to result in ruining her life. She told me to fuck off…..so I did. I haven't spoken to her since.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Bonecrcker #172 - Social Proofing Has Negative Survival Value For Women

. · 18 June 2004 · Archived copy · Original

QUOTE: "Women seem to need a lot of consensual validation from other women."

This is one of the things that really pisses me off about women. NONE of the things that make me a desirable man (money, looks, body, personality etc.) that I work on, mean a damn thing to them. In fact, many of these things are a detriment, as they chase after omega male (scumbag) traits. But, social proofing….THAT matters. I got news for them. Social proofing pretty much means I can't or simply won't give them what they want. Social proofing means one of three things. I'm not going to commit, under typical circumstances (me). I'm taken, so you have no chance with me (typical married guy). Or, worst of all, I'm taken and I'm the type of lying, cheating, scum who will do it with someone behind my wife's back (ie poor character). Social proofing has negative survival value for women. It's neurotic and unnatural.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #6 – Women Choosing Extinction

Bonecrcker #24 – Social Proofing

Bonecrcker #44 – Women Have Contradictory Love

Bonecrcker #103 – Raising Your Sexual Status

Bonecrcker #104 – Sexual Status Is Similar To Employment Status

Bonecrcker #111 – Gaining Power With Women

Bonecrcker #123 – One Of The Most Important Reasons To Have More That One Woman At Once

Bonecrcker #174 - The Measure Of A Person's Worth Is Their Actions

. · 19 June 2004 · Archived copy · Original

QUOTE: "Women only hold the value men assign to them. So, if men don't value our vaginas or other parts, then we are probably practically useless to them."

Lol, you don't understand women or yourself (let alone men) very well if you think that. The measure of a person's worth, man or woman, is their actions…..what they do with their life, the virtues they cultivate and the way they impact the world. EVERY person is in full control of their worth. Further, how other people view you has virtually no bearing at all on your worth. You have the sole authority and responsibility to judge your own actions. The better you are at doing this and in choosing what you do wisely, the more empowered you become. Weak, fucked up people will try to deny what you are. But they are nothing to the person who cultivates power this way. Also, unlike the fucked up manipulator, a worthy person never lacks for friends, allies and others who will help him.

This is the difference between a whore and a woman of quality. Most American women choose to be whores (and cheap whores at that)….then they wonder why they are of low worth. Too many American women aren't satisfied to just be a whore; they strive to be a $5 crack whore instead of a $500 a night high class whore.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #46 – Feminism Turns Women Into Mere Sex Objects (advice to women)

Bonecrcker #54 – Women Should Cultivate Anything That Typically Is A Virtue… (advice to women)

Bonecrcker #151 – The Woman Who Is The Exception Phenomena (advice to women)

Bonecrkcer #154 – Women Are Bitches To Nice Girls (advice to women)

Bonecrcker #167 – Advice For Women On Inviting Men To Approach You (advice to women)

Bonecrcker #176 – Women Making More Money Than Their Husbands (advice to women)

Bonecrcker #177 – Responsibility And Power Go Hand In Hand (advice to women)

Bonecrcker #175 - Do Women Really Choose Men, Or Do Men Choose Women?

. · 20 June 2004 · Archived copy · Original

QUOTE: "women still have yea or nay choice even with the supposed initiation power men possess."

This is not nearly as cut and dried as you might think. Yes, when it comes down to one man pursuing one woman, it's the woman who decides. However, at least in our culture, only men do the pursuing. The woman is FORCED (mostly by her own foolish neurosis) to only be able to choose from among those who chase her. It's a pretty limited pool most of the time. However, I can choose to chase as many women as I want…..a pool limited only by time constraints. My personal choice for handling this issue is to pursue a great many women, but only a tiny bit. Most could not care less about me. They get barely a second look. A much smaller amount are interested in me (the prime attribute I use for deciding to put any energy of any type toward a woman). A small subset of them are highly motivated to get me. They get the lions share of my attention. Constantly searching out more and more women means this pool is always relatively large and I AM THE ONE WHO GETS TO CHOOSE AMONG THEM. Who has the choice now? Out of 100 chicks, I might approach 10, follow up with 3 and choose to sleep with one of them. 90% of those girls get nothing more than the once over from me. Ten get a polite conversation. Three will want to be with me. But I will only choose one based on how motivated she is to please me and certain other factors that are just my personal taste. A woman has to take what she can get. I do not…..provided I am willing to go out and get it. How much control does a woman really have over initiation behavior when I'm the one who chooses if I want to initiate with her?

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Bonecrcker #176 - Women Making More Money Than Their Husbands

. · 21 June 2004 · Archived copy · Original

QUOTE: "I don't mind making more than my husband. I put that as an example b/c I knew someone would say "Height cannot change, but weight can." Income can also change, and men feel uncomfortable with that requirement. It would not matter to me."

I think most people who don't have money have completely the wrong idea about this. A husband and wife do not compete or compare when it comes to incomes. Nor does the man bring home the bacon while any money the woman has is for play (this is the dominant attitude in couples with disposable income). People work together to make money. That's one of the secrets rich people have. It's how they got rich. Often, you'll see couples with complementary skills. One spouse has the money generating skills (business person, or professional usually) and the other has the money management skills (typically lawyer, accountant or real estate broker). If you are a man or a woman and you want wealth from your marriage, THAT'S the way to get it.

This is an example of what I mean by neurosis when it comes to choosing men that most women have. It is completely appropriate for a woman to have certain reasonable standards when it comes to income. Pretty much, you have to have a job and you have to have a roof over your head. Why? Because a man who doesn't is usually an omega male….and outcast, drug dealer, wife beater……a loser. What a woman should look for in a man are skills, goals, and focus…..particularly those that are in line with her own. For example, say you just happen to be a lawyer, you probably would want to hook up with another professional, say an accountant. Together, you live well below your means and invest your extra income in a business and use your collective skills to nurture it. You will make more money than God.

But that's not what most women do. Having no real interest in money at all, they know that men who have a lot of money are rare and SIMPLY WANT THE STATUS OF BEING WITH A RARE MAN. Who cares if he actually sucks as a man? Or worse, she wants to steal his money. Any way you slice it, that's a recipe for disaster.

Men should ALWAYS show a woman he has tons of skills, well developed (written) goals and a laser-like focus. But, he must be very careful to keep the fact that he has money well hidden. It attracts the wrong type of woman.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #46 – Feminism Turns Women Into Mere Sex Objects (advice to women)

Bonecrcker #54 – Women Should Cultivate Anything That Typically Is A Virtue… (advice to women)

Bonecrcker #151 – The Woman Who Is The Exception Phenomena (advice to women)

Bonecrkcer #154 – Women Are Bitches To Nice Girls (advice to women)

Bonecrcker #167 – Advice For Women On Inviting Men To Approach You (advice to women)

Bonecrcker #174 – The Measure Of A Person's Worth Is Their Actions (advice to women)

Bonecrcker #177 – Responsibility And Power Go Hand In Hand (advice to women)

Bonecrcker #177 - Responsibility And Power Go Hand In Hand

. · 22 June 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Responsibility and power go hand in hand. Any time you become a source of solutions to people's problems or become vital to meeting their needs, you become important to them. Often they don't notice until there is a disagreement and your voice carries more weight than theirs because they need you more than you need them.

In the last couple of generations, most women have simply lost interest in those behaviours that meet the needs of those around them and instead, focus on behaviours that are mostly useless. For example, many women ignore the behaviours that go with marriage and family (although near 100% of women will get married and/or have a family) to spend their time and effort on a career. But they never bother to ask themselves if their "career" is important. In other words, is the work they are doing meeting the vital needs of other people. Mostly, the answer is no, and they simply can't understand why this situation doesn't meet their desire for importance, wealth, status and power. Worse, the lack of behaviours in the family situation completely disempowers them from being able to choose what happens with that situation. The kids become fucked up. The marriage deteriorates. It isn't important to her and she isn't important to it. The whole thing….job, husband, family, becomes a dissatisfying mess. The average woman (ie more women then not) simply wander off, and then the real problems start. This is a grim situation for all involved but worst of all for the woman. An older, divorced woman, tied down with kids, in a nowhere dead-end job is best described as marginalized….with no options for the future and no self-esteem. Most women are headed there and FAST. And they don't even know it.

Any person can avoid that fate by doing the opposite. Decide what you want out of life, make goals, AND WRITE THEM DOWN, keep track of daily behaviours you take to make those goals manifest. Move your focus away from appearances and ego, and useless, time wasting behaviours and focus on specific problem solving and being of service to society. Don't get a job unless you desperately need the money, have a legitimate career or (best of all) own a business. Whatever you do, make sure the work you are doing is important. If it is mostly busy work, make changes immediately (let the 99% of people who are directionless schlubs, do the busy work).

But, most important of all, decide early and for certain if you want marriage and a family (if you are a hardcore career girl that is actually going places instead of just fooling herself, you have a difficult choice to make) and how that will fit into your life. Ignore appearances, fantasies and bullshit and choose a man based on substance and character, whose goals match your own. Who is an asset (your spouse is usually your first, most important and most valuable asset…..or your worst, most horrible liability) Figure it out early in life (unfortunately for women, the later in life you figure it out, the worse off you will be) and go after it with iron willed determination. Then, focus the lion's share of your effort, time and attention on your marriage and family. You MUST make your marriage permanent, loving, fulfilling and sane. You MUST socialize your children. Not doing so makes you worthless.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #46 – Feminism Turns Women Into Mere Sex Objects (advice to women)

Bonecrcker #54 – Women Should Cultivate Anything That Typically Is A Virtue… (advice to women)

Bonecrcker #151 – The Woman Who Is The Exception Phenomena (advice to women)

Bonecrcker #153 – People Can Choose Anything They Want To… But They Can't Choose The Consequences

Bonecrkcer #154 – Women Are Bitches To Nice Girls (advice to women)

Bonecrcker #167 – Advice For Women On Inviting Men To Approach You (advice to women)

Bonecrcker #174 – The Measure Of A Person's Worth Is Their Actions (advice to women)

Bonecrcker #176 – Women Making More Money Than Their Husbands (advice to women)

Philalethes #25 – You Can Have As Much Freedom As You Are Willing To Be Responsible For, But No More

Bonecrcker #178 - Love Is A Verb

. · 23 June 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Drama is one of the major techniques for seducing a woman. However, understand that you are dealing with extremely transitory states. Over time, her receptivity to your trying to stimulate strong emotion in her drops (the more she gets to know you, the less you can provoke a fantasy in her….even if it's not actually a fantasy, but reality). Also, the moment you stop, your relationship vanishes. No matter how cool, rich, powerful, pretty, mysterious, passionate, or sexy you are, the value she places on you drops over time. Once it reaches zero, she is immune to your charms. This is, of course, completely insane. If you stick around too long, you can and will have the wonderful experience of her wandering off from you, after all the energy you expended toward keeping her attracted to you, to be with a total loser. You could be going out on romantic dates, doing exciting, dangerous things together, followed by hours of mind blowing sex, only to have her leave you for some asshole who only wants to lay on the couch, and hasn't gotten it up in a decade, because she thinks you are boring. As a matter of fact, she won't stick around you much longer than if it was you laying around on the couch all day.

Doing stuff like this is great for getting laid. But to maintain a relationship, it just doesn't work, because the reason relationships fizzle out is solely due to a woman's choice to not breathe life into it.

Rather than work too hard to make a woman attracted, I prefer to make strong attraction to me the main criteria for letting a woman be a part of my life. The moment her attraction starts to wane, I start looking for a woman who IS attracted to me. Look at it this way, in the beginning (within reason) it is the man's responsibility to foster attraction in a woman. But very quickly, it becomes the woman's responsibility to feel attraction (and other emotions like warmth, affection and love). These emotions are actually behaviours she chooses to do. They don't just happen and they aren't a response to what you do (you can only just prime the pump), they are something she chooses to DO. And women do them, until they lose interest and wander off. Then it's like you never existed.

Or, to put it another way, love is a verb.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Bonecrcker #179 - Subversive Teachers

. · 24 June 2004 · Archived copy · Original

One of the things that bothered me the most was discovering (by meeting these people in my own social circles) that feminists (particularly lesbian feminists) are actively seeking careers as teachers with the specific intent of promoting feminist, anti-man, ideology. To quote one chick, we are being subversive. We want kids to have our values, not their parents' values. The implication was that their parents' values were sick, while theirs were good. There are two problems with this. It is completely disrespectful and in no way their place, to make such a decision for children who aren't theirs. The other problem is the parents values are actually normal (that's why their lives are fulfilling, stable and sane) while the lesbians' values are totally fucked up (that's why their lives are miserable, unstable and constantly filled with insane situations).

We need to pass strict laws on what teachers are allowed to do in the classroom. Children are sent to school to learn skills and knowledge, not (usually sick) social conditioning.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

.

"If the classroom situation is very heteropatriarchal -- a large beginning class of 50 to 60 students, say, with few feminist students -- I am likely to define my task as largely one of recruitment...of persuading students that women are oppressed." -- said Professor Joyce Trebilcot of Washington University in *Who Stole Feminism: How Women Have Betrayed Women.*

.

Related:

Bonecrcker #14 – Ritalin and Abusive Schools

Bonecrcker #15 – Abusive Schools II

Bonecrcker #109 – The Benefits of Boys Only Schools

Bonecrcker #180 - Sarcasm

. · 25 June 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Sarcasm has two meanings when a woman uses it. When she says she is sarcastic, what she means is she will be mean to you, try to cut you down and make you feel bad with humour that belittles you. But when she says she is looking for a lover who is sarcastic, what she means is she wants a guy who engages in light hearted teasing with sexual undertones (think little boys chasing little girls around the playground to tug on their hair), often busting her balls, challenging her about her beliefs etc. in a way that is best defined as cocky. In family type relationships, older siblings often do this to younger siblings as a normal way of fostering bonding and closeness. It's natural and normal for a woman to want that from her man. It's neither natural nor normal for a woman to want to be what she is calling "sarcastic". Don't fall for the double-speak. When used to describe a man, it means affectionate. When used to describe a woman, it means abusive. Very rarely, you will run into a woman who is "sarcastic" like she wants from a man. She is trying to prime the pump to get you to act the same way, and she never calls herself sarcastic. It is very easy to tell the difference. It has a benevolent quality, rather than a malevolent one (this also goes for weeding out the rare abusive man, BTW).

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #1 – Abusive Behavior

Bonecrcker #87 – Abuse Is A Game You Can't Win

Bonecrcker #181 - Women Don't Hate Men, But They Don't Love Them Either

. · 26 June 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Outside of the psychos, my experience has been that women don't hate men (any woman who hates men is a pariah….and knows it). The problem is that they don't love them either. They feel, and are often addicted to, the strong emotions and temporary states of love. But they never build the shared purpose, evolution, growth and bonding that goes along with love. That's the part that endures and builds over time. That's the part that is real. The moment they don't get their "fix" of strong emotions, they're gone. That's a problem because you absolutely cannot have a marriage or even a monogamous relationship under those circumstances. You can never go beyond just dating without it turning into a disaster. To make matters worse, the man is usually building all those things from his point of view. When she leaves, she rips an important piece of his psyche out. Many men don't recover. And many women die on the vine, some time after their 30′s, from lack of real love (not just the emotion) in their lives.

There are large numbers of women who are in marriages and other relationships that and are just empty shells of suffereing and don't know why. This is why.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #47 – Living In La-La Land

Bonecrcker #182 – Women Want Strong Emotions But Don't Care If Those Emotions Are Negative

Men Harmed By Relationships More Than Women

"Women have no sympathy… and my experience of women is almost as large as Europe. And it is so intimate too. Women crave for being loved, not for loving. They scream at you for sympathy all day long, they are incapable of giving you any in return for they cannot remember your affairs long enough to do so." – Florence Nightingale

Bonecrcker #182 - Women Want Strong Emotions But Don't Care If Those Emotions Are Negative

. · 27 June 2004 · Archived copy · Original

QUOTE: "In my case it wasn't just "pussy" that kept me around, I deeply loved my girlfriend and wanted to spend the rest of my life with her. And she talked like she wanted that too. But she didn't want to cooperate and work with me towards that goal, she just wanted to keep testing me and pushing the envelope to see what she could get away with. She would intentionally do things that she knew I would find upsetting just so she could get me upset. Stupid things, like keeping the radio or TV on loud all night."

This is a perfect example of what I am talking about. She wants the strong emotions and doesn't care that the particular emotions she gets are negative (anger, fear, jealousy pain etc.) Worse, there really is no relationship as far as she is concerned (it doesn't matter that you have built a relationship and think you two are in love). You could (and usually are) married for 20 years with 4 kids, and she walks away without a second thought. That's because it was all pretend for her. And the consequences don't matter to her.

What this means, quite simply, is there is no way in hell you can be monogamous with her. No matter your situation. No matter what you have been to eachother, what's REALLY going on is she has never moved past the initial stages of infatuation. Your "relationship" doesn't exist and she will disrespect you if you think it does. She will do a hell of a lot more, if you are stupid enough to marry her and/or have kids.

Previous Bonecrcker Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #181 - Women Don't Hate Men, But They Don't Love Them Either

Bonecrcker #183 - Ladder Theory

. · 28 June 2004 · Archived copy · Original

The problem with Ladder Theory is it assumes women make choices based on an objective evaluation of the value of a man that is commonly agreed upon. All you have to do is look around to see that isn't true. If anything, we have a big problem in our culture with criminal status men gaining access to normal and high status women…..often ruining them in the process. Also, the idea that there is a friend ladder and a sex ladder isn't true. People can and do "hop ladders" all the time, with little or no effort, simply by changing their behavior toward the person. If anything, women keep their so-called male friends as a "dick in reserve". Is that really a separate ladder? No. She is just giving a guy that should be given high priority because of his traits (looks, personality etc.) low priority because he isn't acting in the way that stimulates her neurotic personality correctly.

The problem with women is they are nuts. When you meet them and start to get "involved" with them, from your perspective, you are building a relationship……something real, that has permanence over time. That's what people who are involved are supposed to be doing. But that's not what she is doing. From her point of view, although she gives lip service to the relationship, she will only stick around for as long as you provoke strong feelings in her. The moment you slip, even if you are married with kids for 20 years, she is gone. The sicker ones don't care if the feelings are positive or negative. Want to hop ladders? Learn to provoke strong feelings in her. She'll jump your bones.

Ladder theory is the way things should be. Want a hot, high status, young, fertile woman? Then go to the gym until your body looks like a model's, wear expensive fashionable clothes, and get a high-paying, high-status job where you are the boss. Sounds great. Those are all things a powerful, motivated man can and usually will do. There is a problem though. IT DOESN'T WORK. Women don't give priority to men like that. They say they do, but their behavior doesn't match up with this. You'll get more play as a dirty, disheveled member of a rock band that is going nowhere fast or as a drug dealer. Even the women that do go for the man with money are only looking to exploit him. They don't want him, they want his money. Of course, they don't want a strong man with money (because he'll keep her on a tight leash). They want a WEAK, low status man with money.

Previous Bonecrcker Index

Pook #1 - Introduction - A Pook is a Pook!

. · 1 July 2004 · Archived copy · Original

When I do a post, I basically talk to myself.The post is something I've found that helps me, that is why it appears in the 'tips' section. If I wanted to discuss it, it would go in the discussion section. (Many people do not understand this distinction and start ranting on my threads and don't understand why I don't respond. There's no need to discuss anything. The posts end up becoming so long because I already put in the questions within the post.)

There is a trend lately where people do not see the posts, they just see 'Pook'. So when a Pook post appears, they go 'pook baiting' (term coined by Ice-pick). A good example of this is the 'Habit is All' thread. A very simple message (that provided clarity in my life) but obsfuscated by nonsensical replies.

My mission is to try to correct the Pook. I actually don't care about anything else. Things that help me I put out on the table, since maybe some of you guys have the same problems I did. If the post sounds like Latin to you, then don't consider it. We're all here to fix ourselves. Because the *focus is on ourselves.*

I think that was when my Big Change came was when I realized that **I was the problem, not the women. That's why I rage against the 'focus on women/controlling women/tactics' posts (or rather, when they rage at me). The solution to your problems is not in the woman but in yourself, but it does take a type of humility to realize that YOU are the problem (consider the Nice Guy: HE is right and the WORLD/WOMEN are wrong. He is backwards. He is wrong and the WOMEN are right).**

I've been here for 3-4 years. Looking at my past posts, I can see how A leads into B and then to C and so on. For example, the Kill That Desperation post (for me) slammed the door shut on 'tricks' and 'tactics'. So what else was there to do? After that came "Be A Man" which seperated sexuality from intercourse. This slammed the door on me on all the 'lay reports' and all. We are in a habit nowadays of defining sexuality only to matters of sex when, in fact, it goes well beyond intercourse.

Thus, a male and a man are not one but two. Anyone can be androgenous. And being an androgenous is not a virtue, and being masculine is not a vice.

Now, who is it that is saying 'man' and 'woman' do not exist, in their sexualized forms? Yes, *gender theorists!*

Gender theorists hold that masculinity and feminity are socially imposed, in other words, *artificial. I didn't realize they were the source but I did realize then that something was off sexuality wise in our world (the Nice Guys seem, not born, but manufactured). So I said, "Be a Man!" I want to free sexuality from 'just intercourse' else the world beocmes androgenous and very dull.*

In "Toward's Manhood", this thought got dealt with more. I ask a group of guys what a guy does that is MALE. The only answer they repeated was 'sex with women'. As big of supporter I am of sexing women, it shows that sexuality has been chased away and confined to the bedroom. I believe we're entering a new Puritan age where sexuality is outlawed, and allowed only through intercourse. The idea of a woman being feminine or a man being masculine drives some people nuts (as if they think they have a right to tell you how you should act!).

Life is much more enjoyable as a masculine figure than a nerdy androgenous. Now, here is a good observation. If sexuality is banned from all arenas except for intercourse (where it cannot be banned), what is the result? The result

is that society becomes more androgenous. And the result of that is that sexual intercourse becomes more and more hyped and monumentalized.

So your grandmother was right, intercourse is 'more paraded' more than ever (if you outlaw one part of human sexuality, we just focus on the other part. Sexuality must go *somewhere.) [Also, the Pleasantville analogy of the Human race not discovering sex until the 60s is wrong. The 50's and 40's probably had more sex than today. After all, where did the BABY BOOM come from?]*

We are all worms crawling between heaven and earth. The 'Towards Manhood' post went on detailing the 'heaven link' of Man. The 'Secret of the Jerk' post details the 'earth link' of Man. Personally, I think the 'Towards Manhood' post is a far better post than 'Secret of the Jerk' (because nowadays, everyone focuses on the earth link, never on the heaven link) but everyone seems very bent on the 'earth link'.

We are all centuars and we ride the beast through this world. Both elements, of the beast and the 'mind/soul', ought to be understood. What good does it do to cut off the 'heaven element' and make no differences between us and apes, wolves, dogs, or norwegian rats?

Secret of the Jerk II focuses on the 'earth link' of sexuality being morality whereas Brave New World focuses on the 'heaven link' of sexuality being morality. Both are to be dealt with.

Posts like 'Feminism on Trial' and such is my attack on what these Neo Puritans, these feminists, are doing with sexuality.

I gave up trying to figure out 'how to get women' and 'understanding women' because I kept coming back to defining men. Just as you cannot define day without defining night, so too you cannot define women without defnining men. Thus, my focus became placed on SEXUALITY, meaning both sexes and the laws that influence them. I want to mine the secrets of Nature to see how that can better *myself. I have no desire to be seen as an Oracle and I despise people who see me as one.*

One thing I still cannot understand is why people talk of 'Pook' as a person. There seems to be a contest going about who can best psycho-analyze the Pook. Alas, I wasn't invited to such a contest and when I say what I am, people don't believe it (!).

I tell you exactly how I think with my posts. But that is not enough, Pook is either 'this' or 'that'.

Consider this thread. I posted here because they kept on talking of Pook, psychoanalyzing him, etc. etc. That pissed me off as they don't know Pook and I'm the only one who really does. So the speed seducers came after me. They said, "Saying 'Be a Man' is not enough! We need practical advice!" Throughout all this, the Secret of the Jerk was on my computer (which dealt very much with the 'earth-plane'). I grew tired of all this and just decided to post the article.

And everyone shut up. Why? Because instead of trying to understand themselves, they tried to 'understand Pook'. "Pook is this... Pook is that..." Pook is Pook. What more needs to be said?

Consider a recent example with PowerEgo. He accused the Pook of being a (oh that term) *workaholic and that I was demanding everyone to become a workaholic. I kept talking to him just so he would keep talking, knowing full well the Fountain of Youth post was on my computer. When I grew tired of him, I just posted FoY and that was that.*

Look at this quote I got from another board:

Quote:

> *The whole foundation of Pook's current predicament is that he has dehumanised women to the point where he considers them to be grossly inferior creatures who are unworthy of his company. Unsurprisingly, that didn't even raise an eyebrow on SS, since that's also the foundation of every other approach to being a playah. Anyone that considers such an attitude to be 'masculine' needs to buy a dictionary. Just because a woman is intelligent doesn't make her masculine - the two are completely unrelated. Likewise, ignorance and self-delusional stupidity are not in the least bit masculine. Pook has taken a path of quasi-intellectual wanking and turned his back on the very Nature that he so vigourously plagiarises the classics to champion.*

These people condemn the Pook for being an intellectual! (btw, how can you 'plagiarize' the classics? Classics aren't copyrighted. And I haven't even gotten STARTED on the classics and the knowledge of sexuality they hold!)

Yet, some people are currently angry at me because I have been busy 'bashing' intellectuals!

So which is it, guys? Am I an intellectual or not an intellectual?

As you can imagine, this is so comedic as would be worthy of the pen of Moliere!

Lately, some people say, "Pook is mysnomic! He hates women!"

Yet, I have series of posts where a youth goes, "Evil women! Evil women!" and paints women as evil and I show that the youth wrong, and that women may very well be the opposite.

All these attempts to 'psycho-analyze' the Pook are going to be wrong. stop worrying about the Pook and worry about yourselves. If you don't like what the Pook says, don't listen to him.

"Pook is a big fat egotist!"

Yet, I have posts detailing that progress only comes through humility (as one who thinks he knows all the answers will never post anything new 'since he knows everything').

I have been accused and labeled as everything under the sun. What is funny is even when I am truthful about who I am (like in the Feminism on Trial thread), people don't believe it and think I'm lying! No, I am who I've said I am. The only reason why I'm here at Sosuave is to *help myself*. I have absolutely no interest in being an 'authority' or 'star poster' or anything of the such. I just want to correct my own flaws and discover life. I don't care about the DJ Bible, I don't care about any of the forum mechanics, or the forum custodians, or anything of the such.

Pook #1 - Introduction: A Pook Is A Pook!

. · 1 July 2004 · Archived copy · Original

The only reason why I'm here at Sosuave is to *help myself*. I have absolutely no interest in being an 'authority' or 'star poster' or anything of the such. I just want to correct my own flaws and discover life. I don't care about the DJ Bible, I don't care about any of the forum mechanics, or the forum custodians, or anything of the such.

When I do a post, I basically talk to myself. The post is something I've found that helps me, that is why it appears in the 'tips' section. If I wanted to discuss it, it would go in the discussion section. (Many people do not understand this distinction and start ranting on my threads and don't understand why I don't respond. There's no need to discuss anything. The posts end up becoming so long because I already put in the questions within the post.)

There is a trend lately where people do not see the posts, they just see 'Pook'. So when a Pook post appears, they go 'pook baiting' (term coined by Ice-pick). A good example of this is the 'Habit is All' thread. A very simple message (that provided clarity in my life) but obsfuscated by nonsensical replies.

My mission is to try to correct the Pook. I actually don't care about anything else. Things that help me I put out on the table, since maybe some of you guys have the same problems I did. If the post sounds like Latin to you, then don't consider it. We're all here to fix ourselves. Because the *focus is on ourselves.*

I think that was when my Big Change came was when I realized that I was the problem, not the women. That's why I rage against the 'focus on women/controlling women/tactics' posts (or rather, when they rage at me). The solution to your problems is not in the woman but in yourself, but it does take a type of humility to realize that YOU are the problem (consider the Nice Guy: HE is right and the WORLD/WOMEN are wrong. He is backwards. He is wrong and the WOMEN are right).

I've been here for 3-4 years. Looking at my past posts, I can see how A leads into B and then to C and so on. For example, the Kill That Desperation post (for me) slammed the door shut on 'tricks' and 'tactics'. So what else was there to do? After that came "Be A Man" which separated sexuality from intercourse. This slammed the door on me on all the 'lay reports' and all. We are in a habit nowadays of defining sexuality only to matters of sex when, in fact, it goes well beyond intercourse.

Thus, a male and a man are not one but two. Anyone can be androgynous. And being an androgynous is not a virtue, and being masculine is not a vice.

Now, who is it that is saying 'man' and 'woman' do not exist, in their sexualized forms? Yes, gender theorists! Gender theorists hold that masculinity and feminity are socially imposed, in other words, artificial. I didn't realize they were the source but I did realize then that something was off sexuality wise in our world (the Nice Guys seem, not born, but manufactured). So I said, "Be a Man!" I want to free sexuality from 'just intercourse' else the world beocmes androgynous and very dull.

In "Towards Manhood", this thought got dealt with more. I ask a group of guys what a guy does that is MALE. The only answer they repeated was 'sex with women'. As big of supporter I am of sexing women, it shows that sexuality has been chased away and confined to the bedroom. I believe we're entering a new Puritan age where sexuality is outlawed, and allowed only through intercourse. The idea of a woman being feminine or a man being masculine drives some people nuts (as if they think they have a right to tell you how you should act!).

Life is much more enjoyable as a masculine figure than a nerdy androgynous. Now, here is a good observation. If

sexuality is banned from all arenas except for intercourse (where it cannot be banned), what is the result? The result is that society becomes more androgenous. And the result of that is that sexual intercourse becomes more and more hyped and monumentalized.

So your grandmother was right, intercourse is 'more paraded' more than ever (if you outlaw one part of human sexuality, we just focus on the other part. Sexuality must go *somewhere*.) [Also, the Pleasantville analogy of the Human race not discovering sex until the 60s is wrong. The 50's and 40's probably had more sex than today. After all, where did the BABY BOOM come from?]

We are all worms crawling between heaven and earth. The 'Towards Manhood' post went on detailing the 'heaven link' of Man. The 'Secret of the Jerk' post details the 'earth link' of Man. Personally, I think the 'Towards Manhood' post is a far better post than 'Secret of the Jerk' (because nowadays, everyone focuses on the earth link, never on the heaven link) but everyone seems very bent on the 'earth link'.

We are all centaurs and we ride the beast through this world. Both elements, of the beast and the 'mind/soul', ought to be understood. What good does it do to cut off the 'heaven element' and make no differences between us and apes, wolves, dogs, or Norwegian rats?

Secret of the Jerk II focuses on the 'earth link' of sexuality being morality whereas Brave New World focuses on the 'heaven link' of sexuality being morality. Both are to be dealt with.

Posts like 'Feminism on Trial' and such is my attack on what these Neo Puritans, these feminists, are doing with sexuality.

I gave up trying to figure out 'how to get women' and 'understanding women' because I kept coming back to defining men. Just as you cannot define day without defining night, so too you cannot define women without defnining men. Thus, my focus became placed on SEXUALITY, meaning both sexes and the laws that influence them. I want to mine the secrets of Nature to see how that can better *myself*. I have no desire to be seen as an Oracle and I despise people who see me as one.

One thing I still cannot understand is why people talk of 'Pook' as a person. There seems to be a contest going about who can best psycho-analyze the Pook. Alas, I wasn't invited to such a contest and when I say what I am, people don't believe it (!).

I tell you exactly how I think with my posts. But that is not enough; Pook is either 'this' or 'that'.

Consider this thread. I posted here because they kept on talking of Pook, psychoanalyzing him, etc. etc. That pissed me off as they don't know Pook and I'm the only one who really does. So the speed seducers came after me. They said, "Saying 'Be a Man' is not enough! We need practical advice!" Throughout all this, the Secret of the Jerk was on my computer (which dealt very much with the 'earth-plane'). I grew tired of all this and just decided to post the article.

And everyone shut up. Why? Because instead of trying to understand themselves, they tried to 'understand Pook'. "Pook is this... Pook is that..." Pook is Pook. What more needs to be said?

Consider a recent example with PowerEgo. He accused the Pook of being a (oh that term) *workaholic* and that I was demanding everyone to become a *workaholic*. I kept talking to him just so he would keep talking, knowing full

well the Fountain of Youth post was on my computer. When I grew tired of him, I just posted FoY and that was that.

Look at this quote I got from another board:

Quote: *"The whole foundation of Pook's current predicament is that he has dehumanised women to the point where he considers them to be grossly inferior creatures who are unworthy of his company. Unsurprisingly, that didn't even raise an eyebrow on SS, since that's also the foundation of every other approach to being a playah. Anyone that considers such an attitude to be 'masculine' needs to buy a dictionary. Just because a woman is intelligent doesn't make her masculine - the two are completely unrelated. Likewise, ignorance and self-delusional stupidity are not in the least bit masculine. Pook has taken a path of quasi-intellectual wanking and turned his back on the very Nature that he so vigourously plagiarises the classics to champion."*

These people condemn the Pook for being an intellectual! (btw, how can you 'plagiarize' the classics? Classics aren't copyrighted. And I haven't even gotten STARTED on the classics and the knowledge of sexuality they hold!)

Yet, some people are currently angry at me because I have been busy 'bashing' intellectuals!

So which is it, guys? Am I an intellectual or not an intellectual?

As you can imagine, this is so comedic as would be worthy of the pen of Moliere!

Lately, some people say, "Pook is mysnomic! He hates women!"

Yet, I have series of posts where a youth goes, "Evil women! Evil women!" and paints women as evil and I show that the youth wrong, and that women may very well be the opposite.

All these attempts to 'psycho-analyze' the Pook are going to be wrong. Stop worrying about the Pook and worry about yourselves. If you don't like what the Pook says, don't listen to him. "Pook is a big fat egotist!" Yet, I have posts detailing that progress only comes through humility (as one who thinks he knows all the answers will never post anything new 'since he knows everything').

I have been accused and labeled as everything under the sun. What is funny is even when I am truthful about who I am (like in the Feminism on Trial thread), people don't believe it and think I'm lying! No, I am who I've said I am.

Previous Pook Index Next

Pook #2 - Pook Man's Advice to a Suffering Newbie

. · 2 July 2004 · Archived copy · Original

You should be free as a bird, flapping around, singing, full of joy with life. Women want to ****** the bird and throw it in a cage (cage = committment).

When birds try to fly *into* the cage, wouldn't you think something is wrong with that bird? After all, who wants a bird that WANTS to be in the cage? No, women want the birds that are FREE, WILD, and BEAUTIFUL. They want A GOOD CATCH. Good Catches do not fly into cages. Only wounded or needy birds do.

Women aren't complicated; our feelings just get in the way of what we WANT to do rather then what we SHOULD do. We want to rub their feet and build statues of them. We should demand respect and reward them only for good behavior.

True passion can only be achieved when the man is willing to walk away at a moment's notice. After all, if you say "I love you!" after a coffee date, then the passion is gone because you have shown that you will not walk away.

Flowers and gifts should be used as a REWARD, not as an item to BUY her affections.

When a woman treats you with indifference, you challenge her.

When a woman treats you with disrespect, you punish her by withdrawing your affection and time.

When a woman treats you well with respect and the affection you want, you reward her.

I think the solid line of thought that will get you as many girls as you want and keep your relationships bright and fiery is: Do not have desire.

Of course, being desire-less is impossible. You can go up to any guy and talk, right? You should be able to do the same with women. The only things that are holding you back is 1). Not understanding women, and 2). Desire makes you too nervous and uptight.

With all the great articles at this site and this message forum, you'll eliminate number 1 quite fast. Number 2 is a bit harder. Some people are naturals at it. Others have to go through a long series of crash and burns, rejections, and horrible relationships before they realize it was their desire that made them overlook all flaws and made them act illogically.

You should be commended since MOST men think they are MASTERS at romance (everyone thinks they are right about everything). By coming here, you are already on the path to becoming a DON JUAN. Soon, women will tremble with passion in your presence. If you're serious about educating yourself, then this site is going to change your life.

It did for me.

Previous Pook Index Next

Pook #3 - Fifteen Lessons

. · 3 July 2004 · Archived copy · Original

A young man sat and pondered the next phase of his life. “It is time,” he said, “for a girlfriend.” Yet, this new course in his life seemed both exciting and frightening. “But success will not come without much failure,” he realized. “If only there was a way to avoid the painful trials ahead.”

And then, like magic, appeared a *Pook!*

As like anyone shocked by the sudden appearance of a Pook, he was speechless. But this happened to be a talkative Pook who said, “I will guide you. The constant heartbreak, the loneliness, the feeling of having no control- these can be avoided. Follow me and I will show you many of the lessons that must be learned.”

“Oh Pook!” the young man cried out. “Would it not be better to throw myself into initial error? Is not error the best way to success?”

“No; your heart does not need to be shattered to realize its lessons. Do successful marriages come from a series of failed ones? Of course not. For…

“Foresight teaches gently; error teaches brutally.”

With that, the young man asked, “And what is the first lesson?”

The Pook replied, “Follow and see.”

Thus, the young man followed Pook to a nearby college campus. Pook then said, “Behold, the first example.”

Previous Pook Index Next

Pook #4 - Lesson One: Rejection Is Better Than Regret

. · 4 July 2004 · Archived copy · Original

A young man, overflowing with desire, saw a woman he thought was extremely cute. She was simply walking around and was involved with her own things.

"I should speak to her," he told himself. "I must meet her!"

But his body would not obey. He stood there, watching her in the corner of his eye, and felt as if he was burning. She eventually left and he cursed himself even more.

Then appeared another woman who was even cuter!

"I should say hi," he told himself. Yet, he stood like a statue and his body felt as if he was burning. "She is out of my league. She would never go for someone like me!" He never approached and the woman left.

Yet, another woman appeared more beautiful than the first two!

Somehow, he got himself to approach. "Hi!" he sputtered nervously. She was pleasant. He eventually asked for the number to which she said no. Even though he failed, he felt much better that he tried.

"Alas," he said now realizing the error of his ways.

"Rejection is better than Regret"

"Remember," said Pook. "Change is gradual. Before, you saw no opportunities. Now, you see them all about you, yet you are too hesitant to take them. You're slowly becoming more aware."

"What are you saying?"

"When you find yourself hesitant, always yield to Action. If you see her, do not wait, gawk or wait for a 'perfect moment'. Action, action, action!"

"Pook, I cannot. You see… I am insecure. I don't have that confidence!" "You are confusing CAUSE and EFFECT. The CAUSE of your hesitant nature is not because of your insecurity. You have not gotten what you've wanted, what you've desired. THAT is the cause of your hesitant nature."

"What?"

"You are caught in the vicious cycle. You are hesitant because you are not used for things going your way. And things will never go your way because you remain hesitant. You see what you want, become hesitant, and the door of opportunity closes. It happens again. And again. And again. With each choice towards **Inaction,** you reject yourself a little bit more."

Pook continued. "This is where that cycle of hesitation leads. In your world of Hesitation, you shred off more and more of your manliness until you turn into a full-fledged Nice Guy. Then you seek to remove hesitation by making the approach **risk free.** Then you start giving gifts, poetry, flowers, and declarations of love. You start to examine and re-examine non-existent signals until they read the way you want them to read. In the end, you place her on the

pedestal and throw yourself to her worship.

“If there is a choice between less pain or the possibility of more pain, we default to the less pain. In adolescence, going for a girl and failing made you think everyone else would laugh at you. Whether or not it was true, you thought it was true. This was how you were kept within the cycle.”

“But Pook! How do I get out?”

“By realizing that the choice of Inaction is more painful than Action. Childhood is over. You are the MAN. You must approach. Always default to Action now. From those of us who wasted years in that hesitation mode know that Rejection is always better than Regret. Always.”

Previous Pook Index Next

Pook #5 - Lesson Two: Friendship - Abandon All Hope Ye Who Enter

. · 5 July 2004 · Archived copy · Original

The woman enters the house followed by a guy. The guy is all smiles thinking that great acts of intimacy are about to occur. But, alas, the woman launches into a rant about men.

"My ex-boyfriend was such a jerk," she began. "Why is it that men treat me so roughly?"

The guy then transformed into Mr. Sensitive. "There, there," he purrs. "They do not know how great you are! You are beautiful, lovely, enchanting, dazzling in every way, and they are idiots when they cannot see it."

*"You are so **nice!** What a **friend** you are!" she squeals. "Let me tell you more of my problems with men…"*

And so the guy, who was excited because great acts of intimacy would occur, leaves severely disappointed with a hollow feeling echoing throughout him. "I thought that through friendship, love would eventually spring. How wrong I was! A friend she sees, a friend you be."

When he entered the house, the guy noticed a sign above the door. At the time, he was too excited to even CONSIDER reading it. Now that he was leaving, he read it. "So true!" he cried. For the sign above the door read:

"Friendship - Abandon all hope ye who enter!"

"But why, Pook!? Why is friendship hopeless!? I fall in love with my female friends. Do they not do the same?"

Pook then called up a *woman.* She appeared in a blaze of fire (probably from the place which all women are from…).

"Oh woman, pray tell! Why do you not go after your male friends?"

The woman looked amazed that anyone could ask her that. "Because they are just friends."

"But do they not fall in love with you?"

"Yes. My male friends constantly fall in love with me."

"And, speak truly madam, what do you and your male friends do?"

"Oh! Well, we hang out. We talk a lot."

"Talk? About what?"

"Everything. Anything."

"And they fall in love with you."

"Yes."

“Ahh…” said the Pook. “Now we have the answer. Away with you!” And the woman vanished in a fireball.

“What answer?”

“Why, it is a difference between the sexes. Young man, what do you do with your friends?”

He looked thoughtful. “We play basketball. We ride around town. We play video games. We…”

“But do you and your guy friends ever sit around and talk about your feelings and things going on in your life?”

The young man looked angry. “HELL NO!”

“There is your answer. Men do not get together and just talk. We do things. When we are with our women friends, we talk much more. Since we reserve our talking, sharing emotions and experiences, to our romantic interest, we get confused with our female friends. We begin to get interested in them because of this.”

“But what about women, Pook?”

Pook pointed to the telephone lines above them. Lightning surged and glowed along the lines.

“The phone lines! They are on fire!”

“Indeed. When women get together, what do they do?”

The young man looked at the fiery lines. “They talk!”

“About what?”

He looked thoughtful as sparks rained on him. “Everything!”

“Women usually aren’t used to getting together and doing pure action. So when they do so with their guy friends, they get a bit confused as well.”

“I see…”

“So avoid the friendship route. When you see a woman you are interested in, go for her romantically. For a friend *she* sees, a friend *you* shall always be.”

Previous Pook Index Next

Related: Pook #48 - Why "Just Be Friends"

Are you a slave? If so, you cannot be a friend. Are you a tyrant? If so, you cannot have friends. In woman, a slave and a tyrant have all too long been concealed. For that reason, woman is not yet capable of friendship: she knows only love. In a woman's love is injustice and blindness towards all that she does not love. And in the enlightened love of a woman, too, there is still the unexpected attack and lightning and night, along with the light. Woman is not yet capable of friendship: women are still cats and birds. Or, at

best, cows. Woman is not yet capable of friendship. But tell me, you men, which of you is yet capable of friendship? -- Freiderich Neitzsche

Pook #6 - Lesson Three: Judge By Actions, Not Words

. · 6 July 2004 · Archived copy · Original

A guy called a woman and asked her out. The guy was nervous, was scared; he was shy.

"So we're set for tomorrow night?"

"Umm, yeah," she replied.

Then, tomorrow night came. The guy agonized over the date the entire day. How should he act? What shall he wear? Did he have enough money? Would he be fun enough?"

But the poor guy realized he was wasting his time worrying for there was no date. He got stood up.

Obviously, there HAD to be a reason. Perhaps something awful happened. Perhaps her car didn't start. Perhaps some incredible thing occurred in her life AT THAT TIME that kept apart the two star crossed lovers!

So he tried again. "Did we miscommunicate?"

"Oh, umm…Yeah."

"You still want to go out?"

"Sure."

"Let's go out on this and this day. OK?"

"OK!"

That day comes. The guy gets stood up yet again.

But he rationalized it away. She did say she had things going on in her life. She did say that she wanted to go out with him. She did say that she wouldn't mind spending time with him. Obviously, something had to have come up. After all, she SAID she wanted to go!

So the guy calls again and sets up another date. Likewise, he got stood up AGAIN.

"Argh!" he screams to himself. "It is my fault. For I should…

"Judge by actions, not by words."

Pook then took the young man to a wall with a majestic painting on it. The painting showed a young man, much like the young man in person, standing before a feminine monster, a sphinx!

"What is that monster?" cried the young man.

"Why," said the Pook, "it is All Women, Mother Nature herself! This nasty sphinx devours all hearts and lives of those who cannot answer her riddle. That man, in the picture, he figured out the riddle to Woman. Thus, he became

known as Don Juan."

"And the answer to the riddle?"

"Is that there is no riddle. Woman is a sphinx with no secret. It is only our minds that we assign her secrets, mysteries, pedestals, and goddess-like status."

Pook noticed that the young man was confused so he elaborated. "Look at the above example! Look at how the lad got stood up over and over and, yet, over and over he rationalized the standing up! How often is it that a lad rationalizes 'signals' to his liking? How often is it that a lad offers gifts and treasures as sacrifices to her goddess-likeness for in his mind she is a goddess? How often is it that a lad's overactive imagination converts her disrespect, her shallowness, her flaws, into love?"

"So we paint the image we want to see?"

"Exactly! Judge by her actions and not by her words. Judge by what she does than by what your mind wants to see. Our vanity will convert the image of every disinterested girl into secretly loving us (for women tell us what we want to hear). This is why we must judge by her actions and not by her words."

Previous Pook Index Next

Pook #7 - Lesson Four: Patience is the Refined Sense of Confidence

. · 7 July 2004 · Archived copy · Original

A man found himself in the company of lovely ladies. Alas, also in company were several men of high esteem. They were more handsome. They had more money. They had more charm. They were better in every way.

But this man knew he had the goods too, if not in such a polished way. "I will be patient and let the cards fall where they may." Notice that this was NOT inaction or an abrupt slowness. He did not let the lovely ladies' attention get the best of him nor the success or failures of his competition.

The lovely ladies would cry, "Come here you!" and the other guys would rush to them. When they did it to the man, though, he just laughed, replied, AND WENT ON HIS WAY.

The other guys, more handsome, more beautiful, lost the girls because they could not hold back their desire for a girlfriend. The patient man ended up with the girls.

"I now understand," he smiled with both girls on his arms.

"Patience is the refined sense of confidence."

"But Pook!" cried the young man. "How can patience be confidence? Isn't confidence courage? Isn't confidence action? How is patience courageous or action?"

"Oh foolish boy!" and Pook slapped him. "Now let us summon up a Don Juan and observe his mannerisms."

In a fountain of light descended a Don Juan. "Hear me, oh Don Juan! There are women around and other men are hitting on them! What is your reaction?"

The Don Juan just shrugged his shoulders and laughed.

"What!" cried the young man. "These other guys are going to take his women! How can he be so laid-back?" "He is laid back because he *knows* how great a catch he is and that getting women is easy. He knows he is the Prince."

"But the women…"

"…are *not* significant! The focus must be on you! The guys that can get almost any women are not scared or nervous that other guys are hitting on girls. He knows things the other guys never will. In fact, he might let them have free reign to weed out the desperate and stupid chicks from the smart and picky ones. As with muscles, it is the strong guys that know they are capable who are quiet and patient. It is the noisy guys that lack the skills. It is the large dogs that are quieter while the small dogs make up for their size with their obnoxious bark. *It is the patient ones that control the world; the impatient ones are controlled by it!*

Previous Pook Index Next

Related:

Pook #50 - Patience: What Truly Makes a Don Juan

Pook #8 - Lesson Five: Trust the Gut

. · 8 July 2004 · Archived copy · Original

A woman was crushing on him badly and the guy was bewildered and stunned for this was unfamiliar ground for him. He was now wise enough to have patience. But...

She would get close to him. Her eyes would shine like stars. She would make jokes about kisses and kissing. He felt the urge to kiss her but denied it.

Eventually, the iron grew cold. The woman became disinterested. She moved on.

"Oh dear," the guy realized. "I should have kissed her. I have been following philosophies and not being myself. I should follow my inner nature, and…

"Trust the gut."

"How do you trust the gut?" asked the young man.

Pook led him to the breakfast table. Before it sat a kid.

"Now, how does the kid know to eat?"

"Why, the food is right in front of him. His nose smells it. His eyes see it. He drools."

"And so is the same with women! What does the kid do next?"

"He takes a taste."

"But how does he KNOW when to do it?"

"His senses all tell him to do so. He knows when to eat because the food has been all prepared, has been cooked, and is presented before him."

"But what mechanism tells him that?"

The young man smiled. "His gut."

"And so is it the same with women! They have been prepared through decades of aging and growth for this purpose. They dream it. They want it. Oh heavens, *do they want it!* They have been warmed through your fun, through your attention, through their desire, through your desire. They are presented through themselves. Do you think she is wearing what she does for herself? No, she is wearing it for you! Women are not ornaments to be admired. They are there to be consumed. You know it. They know it."

"I see…"

"Nature has a system in place. No philosophy in the world can do you any good. The philosophies that supposedly 'work' are the ones that best match Nature's music. You either can flow with the system and get what you want or you can buck it in pain. So LISTEN to that gut."

Previous Pook Index Next

Pook #9 - Lesson Six: You are the Great Catch!

. · 9 July 2004 · Archived copy · Original

The guy was on a prowl for a girlfriend. He approached many girls and did everything he could to WIN them. He failed miserably.

With one girl, he brought flowers. With another girl, he brought her gifts. Yet, with another girl he brought her candy.

In conversations, he would be agreeable to everything she said. In matters of planning, he would reschedule anything and everything on her whim. The women would become his sun with his entire life merely orbiting them.

But the poor guy kept crashing and burning.

"It is because they don't know how good you are," older women and friends said.

Yet, the guy noticed a pattern in his crash and burns. "The only constant is I. What if it is something I keep doing?"

He stayed the same. Unsurprisingly, he crashed and burned more. Eventually, something in him snapped. "No more!" he said. "Why am I acting like a beggar? I am smart, handsome, have a future, and women ought to work to get me!"

So, thus stopped the flowers, gifts, and candy- the agreeableness, rescheduling, and revolving around her whims.

"No more pedestals!" he declared, for…

"You are the Great Catch."

"Yes!" says the Pook.

"YOU are the prize to be won."

The young man jumped up and down with joy. "Goody! That means I get to be passive, to continue to indulge in my vaporous habits, **and not do a thing to alter myself!** I like to hear that because it means I am perfect as I am and ought not change for anyone!"

Pook slapped him. "Foolish youth! If you are not changed by life, then you are not living life! Only those who are not altered by life are those totally unaware of it!"

But the young man was stubborn. "I" he said with a moral tone, "will not change for anyone."

"What about for yourself?"

"I like myself the way I am!"

"All right! Enough!"

The young man was startled. He had never seen Pook angry. "I am what I am!" he persisted.

So Pook summoned two young men. Each stood in a corner. Pook then said, "Before us are two youths who are on

the threshold of life. Both have the same origins. Yet, the destinations are different. Let us look at the first one."

What was witnessed was that young man growing up. If he got a bump on his head, he would cry to his mother. He would pull on her apron strings. He felt safety and comfort in his mother. With his father, he felt an uncertain fear within him. His father was the one who set the punishments, the deadlines, the lessons that had to be learned. He preferred the company of his mother who seemed free from those hard edges.

Now the second young man's childhood came into view. His life was exactly the same!

"Is there a point to this?" protested the impatient young man.

"Watch," said the Pook.

The first young man never broke free from the enticing womb-like feeling around his mother. He sought to replicate it over and over. Off he tumbled into reality like tumbleweed blown every which way by the winds of the age. He didn't know what he wanted to do in life so he did what everyone around him did. He was captive to his friends, never seeking to break apart to tend to his own matters or such. The playtime was too important to him, a part of that sense of ease and joy he had around his mother. He eventually found a girl, chose the first one that actually liked him (or tolerated him, he couldn't know) and married. Alas! The marriage lasted only a few years until divorce came. "Why did she leave me?" whined the pathetic male. "I CHERISHED her! I bought her flowers everyday. I sang her sonnets. I always told her I loved her!" She complained, "He disgusted me." The man goes through life, broken and re-broken, trying fruitlessly to re-build that sandcastle of childhood fun whiles waves of reality kept on crashing down on him. He dies forgotten and irrelevant.

"Oh!" cried the young man. "That is awful!"

"What is so awful?" Pook replied. "He was, after all, just *being himself!* Now for the second young man."

This young man quickly realized that childhood was over. Rather then looking towards forever replicating that sense of summer vacation of escapefulness and feminine bliss, he launched himself at reality. "I will not live my life as a nothing!" he declared. His friends and friendly were astonished at his constant self-improvement, his constant blossoming of talent and will. He, in turn, was astonished at them. "It is like," he would say, "That they are stuck in a type of stasis. I have changed; they acknowledge that. But THEY are exactly the same!" He got to PICK what woman he wanted. He got to PICK what career he wanted. He got to PICK his destiny. He answered life's challenges and refused to retreat from them. Whereas the first young man was defined by the age within he lived, the second young man defined the age himself! When he died, countless people mourned. For they thought he was a genius. Others thought he was talented beyond description. Yet, others thought he was touched by heaven itself! After all, how else could these poor fools realize such success? "It couldn't have been made," they said. "He had to be born with it." No, it was because he was a **Man** who chose to ground up the world, culture, and all to his vision rather than to be grounded up into the worldly culture's axing wheel of routine and fashion.

"The difference is simple," said the Pook. "The first young man is facing TOWARDS infancy. The second young man is facing AWAY from infancy. The first one wishes to climb back into the womb; the second one wants to fly from it. The first wishes a cushioned place in the world while the second one leaves the cushions behind. The first one is ordinary; the second one is extraordinary. Thus, the second one becomes *the Great Catch* while the first one merely becomes a filler of a void.

"I see…" said the startled young man. "The second one is always getting better. The first one is always staying the same if not getting worse."

“Exactly! It is the difference between ROTTING and RIPENING. Be the good fruit! Be the PRIZE to be won!”

Previous Pook Index Next

Pook #10 - Lesson Seven: Respect is All

. · 10 July 2004 · Archived copy · Original

This young man thought he had become successful with his desire. Boyfriend and girlfriend were they; the hard awkward early moments finally gone. All was good! Except…

"I am hungry," (are they not always hungry!?). "Fetch me lunch."

Poor young man! He had enough wisdom not to do this earlier, but now, he told himself, "She is my girlfriend. I must make her happy!"

He brought her lunch. After feeding her face, was she satisfied? NO! For she said, "I need to do this and this at work today. It would be wonderful if you would go get the supplies for me."

And off the Nice Guy went! And when he returned, there was another task. Poor Nice Guy! On and on it went! More tasks, more chores, he became wrapped around her finger.

Then, it happened: "I think we should just be friends," she said.

The Nice Guy was devastated. But also, he was puzzled. He did everything he could to please her, and this was the result?

"Ahh," he realized. "By pleasing her whims, I lost track of mine. A servant you'll be, a friend she'll see. As…

"Respect is All."

"But Pook, why!? Why would respect be so vital?"

"I'm not equipped to answer such a question. Let us ask a Great Philosopher."

And then, out of nowhere, appeared Socrates!

"Attention Socrates! You have been summoned! Did you know that? Answer the question that is respect."

And Socrates replied, "That's an easy one, Pook. Where there is reverence there is fear, but there is not reverence everywhere that there is fear, because fear presumably has a wider extension than reverence." Socrates then vanished in a whirl of bluish smoke.

"Oh wise sage! Salient soul! Respect is the realization of set boundaries. After all, how can reverence become without any sense of fear (of you walking away!)? For true passion with women can only come when the man can easily walk away; the Great Catch walking away is woman's Great Fear."

"Walk away?"

"Yes. Now let us ask a question to that opposite sex. Arise woman!"

The woman enters with flare and fire.

“Answer this riddle, why do men who are willing to walk away turn you on?”

And the woman laughs. “Didn’t everyone know this? A man that can walk away means that he *has his pick of the litter* and the woman can easily be replaced. You won’t find the lawyer or doctor or politician be entangled to a woman at first.”

“Away you go!” The woman melted in a blaze of fire and flame.

“So the Great Catch is always willing to walk away?”

“The Great Catch is respect. She is supposed to celebrate life with you, not use you as a peon. Be a man and respect attends to itself.”

Previous Pook Index Next

Pook #11 - Lesson Eight: Only The Sexual Ones Get The Girls

. · 11 July 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Now the young man had battle plans galore for the women. "If she does this…" he said, "I will do this." He memorized the interest signals and was stuffed with philosophies.

Yet, he noticed that guys who did knew nothing of seduction scored left and right. How did they do it?

Also, he faced a big problem. Talking to a woman normally he was fine with. Talking to her with a sexual outcome made him feel guilty and dirty.

He knew being desireless was keeping him from being desperate, but it wasn't getting him women. In fact, it seemed that those guys desiring the women would have their desire reflected back.

Then it hit him,

"Only the Sexual Ones get the girls."

"I don't get it, Pook!" So Pook took the young man to the workshop of Leonardo da Vinci. The young man sat and watched the Pook stand before a large screen. Like Leonardo's picture of Man, Pook had one of Woman.

Pook tapped on the Woman with his pointy stick. "Women," he said, "are entirely sexual creatures. They do not respond to your intellectualism. They do not respond to your genius. They only respond to sexuality."

"What do you mean, Pook?"

"Most men are scared of their sexuality! Look at the chumps! They are not men; they are androgynous. They are ape-like."

The young man wasn't getting it, so Pook summoned up a Nice Guy and a woman.

"Look!" says Pook. "The woman has invited the Nice Guy to her pleasure palace. She is wearing sexy clothing…" (*The young man merely nods and drools.*) "She is being a WOMAN!" (*The young man nods enthusiastically.*) She simply… IS. Now look at the Nice Guy!"

The Nice Guy was very frustrated and looked extraordinarily nervous.

"Why, he is not being male. He is not being what he is. Enough."

Pook summoned up another example.

"Here, the Nice Guy is leeching off the woman in a pathetic friendship way."

Anyway, let us ask the Woman: 'Does Mr. Nice Guy have a penis?'"

"What!? Mr. Nice Guy!? NO WAY! He could never have a penis!"

But the young man was still confused. "I still don't get it."

“What do you want a relationship with a girl to be about?”

“Umm…” “Do you want to talk about DNA or genetics all day?”

The young man laughed. “Of course not!”

“Then stop talking to her about DNA and genetics! Stop talking to her about GEEK things. You do not need another lab partner.”

“I want sex. I want a sexual relationship!”

“Then embrace your own sexuality. Be a guy, talk like a guy, act like a guy. Do action things. It is one thing to talk about things you love, but most guys talk about things just to talk.”

“Sexualize myself, my appearance, and my actions, and the women will naturally follow?”

“EXACTLY!”

Previous Pook Index Next

Pook #12 - Lesson # Nine: Be Not Contained by Formula

. · 12 July 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Oh, how he wanted success with women! Why did others do so well and he so poorly? All jocks did was breathe and grunt to get chicks, and he did everything possible with no success. Alas, the pangs of desprised love! She was beautiful, wonderful, but only wanted him as a friend. In fact, every girl he held desirous thoughts about thought of him as only a friend or less.

It was time for change! Information was the key, he knew. He devoured books, articles, anything at all about the nature of women and creating romantic success.

Then he met a Spanish guy named Manual.

Manual said, "Behold, for here is your battleplan:

***Psychological Maneuvers!** You shall learn Neuro-linguistic programming! Now speak like this: "When you HAVE THAT CONNECTION with someone, that WARM, SAFE, and COMFORTABLE feeling RIGHT THERE, then what sometimes can happen is…" With Manual, women became a sum of psychological instruments to be played to his tune.*

***"Guides!** You shall learn and memorize the booklets of Societal Situations with Women." Now he knew to do this when she did that, to do that when she did this, on and so on. Following Manual's guides, he met a consistent success.*

***"Ceaseless Information!** You shall never have too much information," commanded Manual. Thus, countless articles, countless posts streamed underneath the young man's eyes. At the end of the day he was still in front of the computer.*

"I love you, Manual!" the young man cried. Any problems, any situations, Manual would always have an answer. He would consult with Manual day and night, memorize Manual's teachings, and worship Manual.

But, oh oh. Something was not going right. He had burned the mantra in his mind, "Thou shall never stay on the phone longer than twenty minutes," only to break it… with a startling success! Also ingrained was the mantra, "Thou shall never compromise," and lo and behold! When he broke this rule, he usually crashed and burned. But this time he achieved high flying success. Soon, the rules that had so framed his courtly actions disintegrated.

"Ahh," he realized. "These guides and rules were a clutch for my lack of confidence. They do, however, work but are overall limited." Then he smiled. "The rules and guides are the training wheels, the helper out of the nest."

No more shall he be completely dictated by that Spanish guy named Manual! He could now fly and soar on his own. So…

Be not contained by formula.

"If the rules and guides were successful, why would he abandon them?"

"Because he realized he was successful not by the rules and guides, but by the approaching and fun mindset the rules and guides demanded."

The young man, as ever, was confused. So Pook, with his seemingly endless magic abilities, summoned up two men.

“One of these,” said Pook, “is an actor.” And the three watched the actor become Hercules, Henry V, Hamlet, and every hero with a capital H. But in person, this actor transformed into a wimp.

“What happened to the hero!?” wondered the young man.

Then they saw the other man in action.

“He is heroic!” marveled the young man.

“Indeed,” said the Pook. “One is *naturally* confident, the other is scripted.”

“But what is wrong with the scripted?”

“Nothing! But it is critical to realize the purpose of scripts and guides.”

“Which is what?”

Pook then took the young man to a place that overlooked two crowds of men. One group kept rushing back and forth to the man on the center pedestal, the Spanish guy named Manual. The other group consulted Manual only here and there, but traveled off in blazing new and fresh paths.

“What is the point?”

“It is simple,” Pook declared. “The *point* of Manual is not to grant you success. If you do, you will forever be under his dictatorship. The entire reason why Manual exists is to not grant you success but *illustrate* the **means** of success.”

“Meaning…?”

“Meaning that a few people became successful and formed Manual out from the clay of their knowledge. Manual is their automaton, their robot, to consistently answer newbies’ questions. The end goal in seduction, in success, is to *make it natural*. When it becomes natural, you have no need for Manual and can handle anything women throw at you.”

“Argh!” the young man pulled his hair. “I used to think women were nice and charming, that only bad boys were the problem! This knowledge is shattering every ideal I held about women.”

Pook nodded. “These are but a few of the **Harsh Truths:**

Women would rather share a successful man than be attached to a faithful loser.

Many women do not marry for love.

Most divorces end up with the guy cherishing the woman but the woman detesting the man.

Even for long-term marriage, the Don Juan is the way to go.

The ‘innocent, nice girl’ is often the horniest and likely uninnocent.

Many women consider your looks, your career, what you can offer them, before your integrity and character.

Women are more sexual than men can even dream.

Women are not attracted to genius, only strength and imagination

Woman's sole mission is union, either for pleasure or the fruits of children. She cares nothing for your philosophy and all except to either use it to catch interest in a guy or to enthrone herself.

Women, in sex, desire to be treated as an object and relish it.

Women place value in societal links; how they are thought of. You become her ego.

Previous Pook Index Next

Pook #13 - Lesson Ten: As You Think, You Shall Become

. · 13 July 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Why did some guys succeed with women without even trying while other guys fail with women no matter how hard they try? Why did these guys, seemingly arrogant, get women? Why did these jerks succeed where he, the nice young guy, failed?

"Because you're a wimp!" answered the jerks. But the Nice Guy responded in a bashful tone, "But I am myself. I will never change for anybody."

But this Nice Guy wasn't receiving any dates, either.

"Haha, you are such a wimp!" said the jerks. The hot girls would laugh behind his back, "What a desperate chump!"

Desperate! Why was he acting as if the women were better then he? Why should he win her, ***let her win him!*** *Why buy her gifts? Let her buy* ***him*** *gifts! This new attitude got him all the dates he needed. But why did he not adopt that mindset before?*

He remembered the past voices in his head. What did they say? Let us hear them:

"You do not have muscles. What makes you think you can get hot women?"

"You are not that smart. Why do you think you can get the pick of the group?"

"You do not have a high paying job! Why do you think you deserve a hottie?"

And the loudest most annoying voice: "You are not as cute or handsome as the other guys. Therefore, you do not deserve a hot chick."

Alas! He knew he was not Prince Charming so he did not act like one. But now he realized that Prince Charming is not the producer of the confidant thought; to the contrary, the confident thought is the producer of the Prince Charming. In order to be successful in the world, you must be successful in your mind.

"That is the secret," he said during his revelation. For…

"As you think, you shall become."

"And so long as you think, so long you remain free."

"But Pook! What are you, a self-improvement seminar? Where is the woman in this?"

"Women come and go, but YOU are forever. The focus must be on you. What do YOU want in a girl? What do YOU want to do for a date? What type of relationship are YOU looking for? It is a machine to the ONE. You push the button and out she comes."

"But Pook! What if she does not like your date ideas? What if she is different from what you are looking for?"

“Then she is not for you! The thing girls hate is when you cannot have a date idea (which happens to guys because they want to please her without thinking of themselves). You have a series of hobbies and tastes. If she likes your date ideas, then that is good. If she doesn’t, then go get another girl. There are billions out there.”

“But… that is… *rejection!”*

Pook slapped the young man. “Only if you place the focus on the woman. If you do that, then you actually believe it is women who are making the choice, not you. There is no rejection; you are merely finding out if she has good taste. After all, she is looking for a guy that fits her interests and tastes. If she doesn’t like you for whatever reason, let her! And *thank her* for doing so!”

“Thank her?”

“Which would you prefer, a woman who collapses her own interests for the sakes of yours merely to have a boyfriend or a woman who likes you *because of you!?”*

“Because of our tastes, our compatibility, runs parallel!”

“Indeed! Now think back to your Nice Guy days, those suffering days of endless agreement and non-confrontation. What service did you do to help find compatibility?”

“Alas, no!” The young man’s face turned white as he realized the utter disgust he was in his old ways. “I am so ashamed!”

“You’re not the only one,” said the Pook. “Look into the valley! Look at how Man has fallen!”

And the young man looked into the valley. There he saw hordes of Nice Guys throwing themselves toward an idol, the golden woman statue. Flowers, chocolate, bad poetry, and declarations of love were all tossed at the statue. Thunder then exploded.

Then, out of nowhere in graceful light and melodies of enchanted harps, appeared the Don Juan.

“What is he doing here?” muttered Pook. “This was not scheduled in the post.” [Sosuave Note: Indeed! The Don Juan spirit can appear in any post whenever he wishes!]

The young man called out, “Speak spirit!”

“I will call out to it.” Pook cupped his mouth. “Where from did you come!?”

The spirit stood there, silent, with a confident air of invulnerability.

Then Pook yelled, “Oh speak perturbed spirit! Speak thy truth!”

And the spirit, in great anger of how Men have turned into beastly chumps, threw the tablets he held at the fleeing Nice Guys. He spoke these words then vanished in a fountain of light:

You cannot be yourself without truthfully seeing yourself.

You cannot sacrifice character for joyfulness without ultimately destroying happiness.

You cannot control the situation, but you can control yourself, your emotions, and your life.

You cannot have women love you until you love yourself.

You cannot grasp the female nature until you grasp your male nature.

You cannot win her until you focus on her winning you.

You cannot fully know the principles of this website until you leave it.

You cannot obtain love by giving yours away for free.

You cannot fulfill your desire by letting it trump your integrity.

You cannot be yourself by denying your dreams and what it takes to achieve them.

Previous Pook Index Next

Pook #14 - Lesson Eleven - Getting a Girl is Not the Success

. · 14 July 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Comfortable with himself and his successful habits, he relaxed and reacquainted himself with his friends. He noticed they had lady-problems.

"Why are women female?" one opined. "Everything would be much simpler if they weren't female and would logically make sense!"

"Indeed! They are not just female but so annoyingly female."

And on and on they complained.

Years later, the young man found his old friends married or in serious relationships. In every single one, the girl chose him. Each and every one of them was chronically unhappy.

However, they wouldn't admit it to themselves. They said, "What! You are still single? Oh, poor guy! You will one day progress and get a chick like us."

"Indeed," said another. "I just got a new girlfriend and you are still single! Hah!"

And a third said, "We all are married or have girlfriends but you, poor chap, are still single. You need to start listening to our advice…"

And together they said, "Give the woman flowers, chocolate, poetry, declarations of love, your full attention, your promises, your exclusiveness, your time, your dreams, your LIFE and adopt her desires, her plans, her manipulations, and her designs on your future."

The young man laughed. "Shrug off my Manhood for a girl? No thanks. For…"

"Getting a girl is not the success."

"Pook! Whatever do you mean by this?"

"Most guys still think like women. They think that by sleeping with lots of women, by having a girlfriend, or by having a wife means they are successful with women."

"You mean that 'beggars can't be choosers.' You mean for guys to PICK the girl rather than the other way around."

"You're closer and that is true. But women date for all sorts of reasons. They marry for all sorts of reasons. They sleep with you for all sorts of reasons. To the addition of the above, you want to find a woman that is interested in YOU."

"I don't understand."

So Pook summoned forth a guy and his girlfriend. The guy, smug, says, "I got a girlfriend now! Dobedobedo!" Pook summoned a single guy into the room. The coupled guy smugly said, "Oh, poor thing! You will get a girl like me one day!"

The single guy bowed his head and looked sad. Alas. He had no chick. Boo hoo.

“Now,” said the Pook, “let us fast forward several years.”

Years later, the guy and his girlfriend got married. Why did they marry? “It seemed like the next thing to do!” Alas, the divorce swiftly came in a few years.

“The error is guys defining their success on having a woman or women. They should rather be concerned with having a woman that DOES actually like them.”

“Why do you say this, Pook? It sounds like a bit more work.”

“Yes, but if you do this then you won’t be like the following:”

“She said she loved me and we got married! Why does she want a divorce now?”

“All my friends thought ‘she was a keeper’. So why is she cheating on me with her ex?”

“She won’t return my repeated calls? What is going on?”

“I do her date ideas and she thought I was ‘boring’. What does that mean?”

Pook shook his head. “When you aim at something long term, you need to make sure the woman likes you. Just because she dates you, sleeps with you, and yes, even MARRIES you does not mean she likes you.”

“So what should I do?”

“You define what the dates are at first. She will work with you if she likes you. You can ‘soften’ up later like in a couple of months. If she starts breaking dates, giving you the run around, or seems INFLEXIBLE then that should be warning signs that she doesn’t like you.”

“I see… But what if you’re so awful at DJing that NO woman likes you?”

“Then you’ll have more free time with your buddies. Success cannot be getting a girl because that means failure is being alone. No. Failure is being in an unhappy marriage or a relationship where she has no true interest in you.”

“So the focus must be on you, including her interest?”

“Right. Drop the ‘getting a girl is success’ mantra and you will never be DUMPED.”

Previous Pook Index Next

Pook #15 - Lesson Twelve: Unite Dream and Day

. · 15 July 2004 · Archived copy · Original

The young man showered himself with the ladies daily. Oh, how sweet this life seemed! But how sour its effects were! He felt hollow… as if he wasn't true to something. And then, a Voice swelled up inside him.

VOICE: "Pestilence! You cannot keep me caged forever!"

"What are you, cruel voice? Your words like daggers in my heart."

VOICE: "Then you are not valiant, for you fear the pointed tip like a soft worm. I am you, your inner self, your own imagination, and… if you like… soul. By caging me, your successes with women will spike with increasing frustration."

"What! You are the one that is spreading this EMPTINESS through my body like a virus?"

VOICE: "You craven dismal-dreaming miscreant! You know you are now getting what you desired: women. So why are you so unhappy?"

"Oh Voice, most cruel and foul. You are the rudeliest welcome to this world. My answer is, because I haven't found the right one…"

VOICE: No, you wimpled beef-witted wagtail! You have divided your emotions from yourself, your imagination from reality, your true personality from the universe.

"But I had to change because I wasn't getting the women!"

VOICE: "And you failed because by keeping me caged, you limit yourself."

"I act only in accordance to what women want."

VOICE: But women want you to live in your own world, to stop bending over to be spanked (and not in the good way), a willy billy translating into a tampon that every woman uses for her needs (emotional, physical, social, etc.). You are the equivalent of the woman doing whatever to please the men. Yes, the girl that is the smokehouse where every man does place his meat. You are the Magical Tampon where every woman does place in her…"

"Oh you are a crusty botch of Nature!"

"All the things women want… confidence… humor… spontaneous... fun… These are all qualities of a MAN living out his imagination. Embrace your dreams! Stop trying to be 'perfect' in woman's eyes for you'll wrong the truest commandment with sexuality: Do not bore women. And…"

"Unite Dream and Day"

"Goodly youth, you have gotten a letter."

The youth was excited. "A letter? For ME?" He hurried to rip it open. "Who is it from?"

“Read.”

And the youth did. He looked at Pook. “The address says the letter came from *Womaniverse*!”

“Indeed! Like a heaven over us, the ladies in Womaniverse watch us over. Yes, they *always* notice you. They look at your life and reward the *men* of the world with the feminine element.”

“But not all men get the same type?”

“Oh, no! Some get virgin material while the fools get common ore.”

“What else can you tell me of this ‘feminine element’?”

“It is highly relaxing, very ornamental in sports cars, explodes and freezes for no reason, and reacts well to gold, platinum, or any of the precious metals. It also turns green when placed near superior specimens.”

“What are you saying, Pook? That how we are the rock in their world, that they are the rock, an element of *ballast* for us in this universe?”

“Oh, silly youth! These thoughts are too feathery and fluff at nothingness in your dimension. Don’t think of it, only read the letter.”

“Do the women write to us men, often?”

“Rarely. Usually, women speak in womanese so we men don’t hear anything anyway. But, being a dutiful Pook, an emissary myself, I have translated the letter to masculine terms.”

“Thank heavens! Now I see why it’s in 19th century style!”

“Just read the letter.”

The youth held up the letter and read.

QUOTE:
"Dear Sir,

Do not be ungrateful to the women. They surprised you, perhaps shocked you, but they also prepared unexpected triumphs for you as author. Among these successes will be the control and direction you place on your own life and destiny.

But, alas, this will not be the fate for most. Indeed, for many of you, you remove one kingly focus only to place another error in its place! Instead of abolishing the throne, you just throw new ‘systems’ and ‘techniques’ on it! *This is the cycle of chumpdom!*

Yet, there is good reason to say that the ways of Nature are as infallible as they are inscrutable. For if you will just grant us a moment (what we shall very soon try to demonstrate through our messenger, Monsieur La Pook), we will show you a revolutionary revolution. The throne that kept controlling your life in some way, in some fashion, will finally be shattered, no matter what ‘system’ you place on it.

Your fellow nobles, all ambitious with dagger eyes, will try to place themselves on this throne of your world, to get you to live *in their world*. They will crown themselves with your dreams and say, “Look at me! I am the object and axis of your world. My whims become your laws. What you enjoy today, including your tastes in food, women, and cars, will be dictated by me. I alone will frame the world you live.”

Oh, you pitiful youth! There you go, bowing down, letting people control you. But locked within you is a promethean fire just waiting to unleash, phoenix like, a sexual combustion of soul and desire whose ingredients of dreams and thoughts lay ready and abundant within you. All you must do is combine these ingredients, combine your thought and action, your dream and day, and watch that throne be swept away."

“Oh, Pook! How strange these women be!”

“Indeed! One of the biggest surprises of my transformations into Don Juan was not that the older women noticing the difference, no, it was that they said, ‘It is like you have grown up.’”

“Why did they say that, Pook?”

“Because it was the truth. Why do you let people mold and shape your life? Your life is going in circles because you cannot tear yourself from your loser friends or stupid entertainment. Keep reading the letter.”

QUOTE:
"The difference between a Don Juan and a chump is the difference between a Man and a child. Make no mistake, the Don Juan world and the chump world are as different as heaven is to hell.

You see, sir, there was a time when this was known. Men strived and created a world of their own. They took what they wanted and asked questions later. They had designs on what they wanted to do in life and how to get there.

What we women despise the most is the broken male. It is the drifter, the Nice Guy, the chump who, when the focus of your energies is misplaced, production and energy are wasted and undone. Years of your life can pass by in this tragic manner.

Or worse, when the focus becomes seen as something that it is not, the male becomes the Nice Guy, just as a dog becomes a sheepdog, provided Nature does not guide it to freedom.

The life of a Man is not to be coddled and guided. All men are called to be leaders, even if it is not to guide other men you are meant to guide your own household, protect it, and keep your wife and children from the paths of error, defending your fruits of Nature from the locusts and storms of Time."

The youth put down the letter. “How odd and strange this note is!”

Pook smiled. “If one day, you actually get the chance to enter Womaniverse, you’ll be even more amazed.”

“And the key to get to Womaniverse?”

“…is to unite your Dream and Day. It is the only way.”

Previous Pook Index Next

Pook #16 - Lesson Thirteen: Charm is Treating Women Like Little Girls

. · 16 July 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Alas! Whenever the young man approached a woman, a thousand Don Juan philosophies came to thwart his peace. All these IDEAS clogged his action!

Then he remembered how AWESOME he was with women when he was a little kid. He was always the Don Juan of the sandbox.

He wondered, "Have women really CHANGED?" No, only in his mind. At heart, women are still little girls. So when he saw the luscious babe sitting there, he smiled and saw a bored little girl looking for fun. He would make fun of her, do physical action things with her, take her by the hand to lead her somewhere, and she thought he was the perfect guy.

"I understand now the source of Cocky and Funny…" he smiled..

"Charm is treating women like little girls."

"This is the most sexist thing I have ever heard!"

"You doubtful youth! You are a beanstalk cynic, a crusty philosopher."

"How can you argue so rudely against me?"

"Look. When we were young, we all desired to grow up. Now, once grown up, we desire to be young again! Being poor, you trade your time and health for money, only to use that money for time and health. We have all passed through the world of a child."

"Are you saying that I ought to be child-like?"

"Yes! Young kids, lacking the chemical madness curse that puberty brings us, are at PERFECT EASE and treat the sexes appropriately. No young boys will say, 'Whatever you want to do.' Young boys RUN AROUND, they do not sit and TALK to the girl all night. Young boys have their cars, their trucks, their dangers and excitements. Now, compare the young boys' actions to those who are REALLY successful with women."

The youth was alarmed. "They are identical! I always thought women were IMMATURE for going after these so-called jerks, bad boys, and jocks. I see that in some ways they are immature, but they kept that joy of youth with them whereas I had killed it."

"Youth, what do you do on a date?"

"Why, I speak to her about philosophy, about literature, about the designs on the universe, about DNA, about world events, about…"

"Stop! I can take no more! Come and drink from this Fountain of Youth."

The youth did so. All those paper bullets of the brain ceased. "Now all I want to do is *do things* and not talk. I want

to run around. I want to have FUN!"

"And women go CRAZY over these types of guys. Some people are so scared of growing older that they become extremely aged in their youthful flesh. Now you will be the envy of every philosopher, scholar, thinker, and deep analyzer. You will be in the world they have no access to. Nothing has changed. The attitude you had towards girls when you were in the sandbox is EXACTLY the attitude you need now. So *think young* and LIVE."

Previous Pook Index Next

Pook #17 - Lesson Fourteen: Always Have a Back-up Chick

. · 17 July 2004 · Archived copy · Original

The young man had one problem left. He would be very successful with women, from one night stands, from casual dating, from relationships, and so on. Yet, every now and then, he got that feeling of something BURSTING through his chest like a creature popping out from Alien.

The woman would talk to him, "Blah blah blah." He felt it inside, a very sweet but gooeish feeling. She would go on, "Blah yappity blah blah" and he felt the sickly warm feeling spread throughout his body. What was happening to him? "Yappity yap blah blah, yapitty, blah yap!" the girl continued as he felt the FEELINGS spread throughout his body, paralyzing him, like a poison. "Yah blah blah yah," she went on, oblivious as he was collapsing from this sickness.

The next day, he had this OVERWHELIMG urge to send her flowers, chocolate, and bad poetry. It was too much, and he gave in, and saying, "You are my life. I love nothing else so well as you. I will do ANYTHING for you."

Then she said, "I think we should just be friends…"

Oh, that AFC disease rose up again in him! How does one smash it forever? He smiled, and realized:

Always have a back-up chick!

"But Pook! Perhaps this guy was falling in love!"

"No. It was a False Love. Come and see."

Pook led the youth inside Every Man's Heart. Inside the cavernous room, each surrounding wall depicted television screens with a graphic.

"What is this place?"

"Every guy has a passion about different things. On that wall is his 'car' passion. We see many screens of different cars, all ones he loves. On that other wall there is his 'food' passion. We see screens of all his favorite foods. And if you come along here, you'll find the Ambition Wall where screens show all the things he wants to do. Now look at the Women Wall."

"Pook! There is only one picture on it!"

"Yes. Nature has designed us to love in a marriage way when there is only one picture on that wall."

"I can understand that. But where is the problem?"

"The problem is that he is not married or engaged to her! So he is acting married to her when really they are 'dating' or 'just friends'."

"Oh dear…"

"Yes. When a guy decides to go dating and dates only ONE chick at a time, only one picture will appear on the wall. When there is only one, he is designed to think of her in a marriage way. So he starts becoming AFC with this

girl he just talked to."

"So say if a guy is socially unskilled and has only one friend that is a girl, only that girl's picture will appear on the wall? And because of that, he will 'fall in love' with his friend?"

"Exactly! If there is only one f*ckbuddy, he will eventually want to 'date' the girl, want to become exclusive with her, and turn into a total AFC."

"But if he has a back-up chick…"

"…then another girl is on the wall as well. He can't act 'married' if there is more than one girl up there. Thus, he stops becoming a 'latent AFC'."

"But what if he has his interest in other things? Shouldn't he date only one girl then?"

"No. Either go for MANY or go for NONE. If you go for ONE you will become an AFC. Most guys are too LAZY or too SCARED to go for multiple girls. So they remain AFCs and forever remain in the vicious cycle."

Previous Pook Index Next

Pook #18 - Lesson Fifteen: The Greatest Risk You Can Take in Life is Not To Risk It All!

. · 18 July 2004 · Archived copy · Original

The young man had all the knowledge he could dream of about women and life. He stepped into the Casino of Life and approached the game. A man placed the dice, the new ones the young man had been so busy forging in his mind into the young man's hands.

"Pook! I recognize the young man you speak of. It is *you!*"

"Alas, I've only been telling you my own recollections with every lesson here. When I condemn the young man, I am only condemning myself. Let us continue:"

Pook looked onto the board and saw the squares of victory with their prizes. He shook the dice in his hand, knowing that it wasn't the victories earned that mattered. "The zest of life is the rattle of dice in the cup," he said to himself.

The Gamesmaster asked, "Monsieur Pook, how much are you willing to bet on the throw of your dice?" Pook looked at his dice. They were the dice of Talent, Dreams, and Endurance. He looked at his stack of chips, one color being whatever property and 'things' he had, another being his societal connections including that of his family and friends, and the most treasured type of chip of one's most awesome resource: time.

Pook told the Gamesmaster, "Put it all on the table." The Gamesmaster looked alarmed. "But if you do that, you may lose all your property, all your society, and all your time, and thus, your life. Are you willing to bet all that on your Talent, Dreams, and Endurance?" Everyone in the Casino was looking at Pook now. Very very few people bet it all.

"All on the table," Pook repeated, rattling the dice. Laughing, he rolled the bones and said,

"The greatest risk you can take in life is *not to risk it all!*"

"You can be the smartest person in the world, the most talented, the most persistent, but you will never win in the world or with women unless you embrace the glory of RISK."

"But Pook, I am scared of risk. What if I lose?"

Pook slapped the youth. "You cannot lose! Everyone wants to define your life, to shape it to their ends. From politicians to your friends. Everything is all right as long as you stay you. But if you break out of the mold, everyone, and I do mean everyone, will try to stop you."

"So how can we not lose?"

"Just as on the battlefield, the valiant warrior losing in glorious battle is honorable. It is not the victory that defines the Man, it is the fight. There are some people who somehow have this curse or bad luck and must eat an excrement sandwich everyday. They win everytime they struggle against that."

"So to risk is to fight. Then all this knowledge and 'insights' are merely the sword, shield, armor, and weapons we fight with? And those who fight, unarmed, are more worthy than those who sit there completely clad with the finest of weapons?"

“Yes. Paradise, spoken slowly, is literally a 'pair-of-dice'. Gamble what you have. For if you bury your talent and dreams to sit on it, you will receive the wrath of heaven. ‘Unworthy servant!’ will be screamed at you.”

“But what if the situation itself seems IMPOSSIBLE? What if ALL ODDS SEEM AGAINST YOU? What happens then?”

Pook, exhausted from this post, began to vanish towards the Pook Place where all Pooks come from. “Just remember…”

“Opportunities are brilliantly disguised as impossible situations!”

Previous Pook Index Next

Pook #19 - What Every Skinny Guy Should Know...

. · 19 July 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Smart, fun, and interesting. So why is it that all the *beautiful* women always seem out of your grasp?

Why!? You may even be athletic. You can do karate, can run super fast around the track, along with other things. So why does it seem you can get the average to cute girls but the very attractive women seem out of your reach?

What is holding you back is that you are skinny.

“But I like being skinny,” you say. “Look at all those fat people!” Indeed. “Those guys who go to the gym and all are just idiots.”

There was an article in the Atlantic Constitution that said how *average women marry skinny guys over big guys*. It also said… why am I parroting? Let the **article** speak for itself:

QUOTE: *"When women are choosing mates - except for very attractive women -- they're facing a tradeoff of choosing a guy who's very sexy or one who will stick around and treat them well," he added.*

It is self-evident that beautiful women end up with the masculine men, in other words, NOT skinny guys like you.

I know… I can hear what the objections you’re saying… because I used to make them. It seemed so ‘jock like’ and is ‘below you’.

I have gained over 50+ pounds of muscle mass. There is a saying that when skinny guys get big, when they look in the mirror, they still see the skinny guy. This is true, as my ‘skinny mind’ hasn’t yet caught up with my body.

Let me tell you of the change of reactions I got from the women:

For your reading pleasure,

Fat Girl = Means a big girl that requires an elephant gun.

Ugly Girl = In the same category as Fat Girl. These girls may not be fat, but it hurts to look at them.

Average Girl = They don’t hurt your eyes, but they aren’t amazing enough to attract your eyes. Average girls are the plain Janes.

Cute Girls = Often, they are *innocent* average girls whose innocence makes them cute. They are a bit picky about who they end up with as they are inexperienced.

Very Attractive = Great curves, long luscious hair, nice everything. These women know they are very attractive and sometimes narcissistically wear outfits to reflect it.

Very Beautiful = Bombshell. Every guy will notice this girl and stare and gawk. You know one of these women are around by seeing the *satellites* of boys trying to be ‘friends’ with them. Guys fear these magnificent creatures.

155

I started out around 155 pounds at 6'3 height. This meant that I was very skinny. I was also considered a nice looking guy. Women loved me being tall.

At this point, I had to deal with a lot of fat chicks hitting on me. These girls were BIG and I wanted nothing to do with them. Ugly girls also would come to me. This was me not doing anything. This was what my body was attracting all alone. If I wanted to get a cuter girl, I had to *work* for it.

I have problems talking to women, not because I am scared or boring, but because I sense the women think I am 'below' them. And the truth is that they do.

I date average women.

165

Already, things have changed. The fat/ugly women still go for me but they don't think I'm as easy. They want to enter oneitis with me. The 'unworthy' girls category would now all be staring at me. To the beautiful women, I'm just a typical guy. Cute girls now enjoy talking to me.

I still date average women and now some cute women

175

"You are looking very good," my older female manager told me. The fat/ugly women no longer hit on me (thank goodness!) and people (out of the blue) are asking why I don't have a girlfriend. Average girls are beginning to stare.

I date only cute women with some very attractive ones mixed in.

185

Average girls are now hitting on me. Very attractive women are checking me out. At this stage, every woman is happy to talk to me. They all secretly wonder if I'm gay.

I date more very attractive women but still have the cute ones.

195

OK, when you don't have a girlfriend at this stage, the ladies will whisper, "Is he gay?" all the time. One girl got bold about it and asked me point blankly, "Pook, you are cute and all. So why don't you have a girlfriend?" I was stunned by her bluntness (rare among women).

Average women consider me out of their league. Cute ones try to become my 'friend'.
I date only very attractive women. Beautiful women are still a bit of an anomalie.

205

When you get to this stage, something very strange happens. All the attention and staring women gave you is gone (mostly). Ugly/Fat women will despise you as will the average women. Most girls will be scared of you (cute girls, very attractive girls)

Let me give you some examples. One Very Beautiful girl was in several of my classes. I start talking to her and she has plenty of time to leave. But she doesn't… she stays to keep talking to me. The girls now notice me, but are a bit scared to talk and act around me.

One cute girl is like a leech to me in one of my classes. She must sit right next to me, must 'borrow my notes', must talk to me 20 minutes after class everyday…

One Very Beautiful woman was a fitness instructor at my gym (think 'well muscled' with nice strong legs (those strong thighs come in handy with her dealings with the Pook-man!)). Every time I saw this girl, she always had a 'satellite' boy around her. Who does she end up with? Me.

Or the ultimate example: there was a girl I was in oneitis that drove me to this webpage. As I got bigger, her reactions to me changed as well. At 155, I was 'average'. At 175, she knew something was up. I got her at 195.

Now I date some Very Attractive women but most are Very Beautiful Women.

I know many of you guys are saying the same thing, "I get beautiful women too and I am skinny!" But the thing is, all these examples here is based on attraction on the *body alone*. I am NOT working to get these women. My body is doing 99% of the attracting. I can just be a statue and get a response. (But of course, you have to take action. This is based on doing zilch.)

Rather than work hard to get *one* woman, why not work hard on yourself and get *all* the women? I don't work hard to get women, I work hard on my dreams which gets the women automatically.

Like the article says on top, only the extremely beautiful women will risk being with a hunk like you. If you want a girl with a great body, you ought to work on your own body.

Coming from a skinny guy, being big is a totally different world. The worst thing is finding out how people really viewed the old you. People now openly insult my past skinny self and it hurts. It hurts because I never knew they had thought that way of me. Clothes no longer hang on my body properly, but I look terrific naked (I am saying this for the mental imagery of our lovely lady readers).

Big guys are allowed to get away with more things. I allowed to be cruder, to be bolder, to take advantage of women more (I'm serious!), and so on. You can also be stupid as well. My biggest problem is women only wanting me for sex (no, this is not a joke. Yes, it is a problem). You try to find a girl that fits your life and all she is interested in is your body! It is like getting rich and putting up with gold diggers.

So how do you go from being skinny guy to brawny guy? There is a lot of information on the Internet. Diesel's Guide to Bulking Up threads in the Health Forum is a start. For myself, I used Anthony Ellis's **program.** 30lbs in 3 months, no joke. Though, for most people beginning, it will be like 30lbs in 4-5 months. The big problem with fitness is that there are so many different opinions. Many of them are wrong and will waste your time (including trainers). What I loved about Ellis's program was that it cut all the hype and came up with very in-depth information. It works.

However, the risk with body building is that it can turn into a highly narcissist womb. I often think the mirrors in the gyms are not so much to perfect the form, but to perfect the ego. The risk is that you will try to become *perfect* and we all know that perfect is boring.

Now for a note to the skinny guys who are successful with women. They will, no doubt, post replies to challenge the

relevancy of this post. Know that the central… thrust… of the post is not a bettering of image. It is an increase of testosterone. If you are naturally skinny, and are at a higher muscle mass, your body will continually be at a high state of testosterone building and rebuilding muscle mass just to stay the same. High rates of testosterone affects not only your actions, I believe women can sniff it out. So take a guy, stuffed with testosterone, and push him into a room full of lovely young ladies. He doesn't speak a word. He won't have to. The women will go to him automatically.

Such is the power of testosterone. Such is the power of sexuality.

Previous Pook Index Next

Pook #20 - Perfect is Boring

. · 20 July 2004 · Archived copy · Original

The gratitude of the ladies has crowned me with the label *Don Juan*.

I should have definitely declined the title if I saw it as most do! When a gentleman logs onto the website, he thinks, "I will absorb everything that is *Don Juan*...

QUOTE: *Don Juan! What is he? What ought he to do? All we know is the word catches all our imaginations, all our dreams, as we envision him, clad in black, macking the girls from all points in sight. Oh, that Don Juan! He does everything perfect! with the ladies! If only we could absorb all techniques, all fashions, all behaviors, and engage with no fear, all the ladies will be ours!"*

This viewpoint is so prevalent and dominant, I now understand why some people are GLUED to this forum! Perhaps there is a way to scrape us off our 'reading materials' once and for all.

The Perfect Player...

My roommate and I were watching one of those dating shows (I forget which). Two guys were competing for the ladies. One was a super player who was saying all the right things and getting physical with them. The other guy was a super horny dude that was loud, making crude comments, and literally humping the chicks.

My roommate was in awe of the player. “That guy rules! He is playing both of them. He is kissing both of them!” The other guy, in the pool, was humping the water jets and jumping around. The ladies said about him, “It is like a date with a 2 year old!” The player dude was feeling quite secure when the ladies would say, “Thank goodness I am with you. That guy is complete nuts!”

When it came time for the choosing, however, my roommate and I differed on whom the chicks would choose. “The player dude, obviously. He was PERFECT.” But I knew better. “What! No, no, the girls are going to go for the super horny guy.” My roommate thought I was nuts.

When the girls chose though, the player dude, Mr. Alpha Male, ended up all alone while the girls chose the horny dude. “I DON’T BELIEVE IT!” my roommate cracked.

Perfect is boring but to be Human is Beautiful.

The Player LOST to the horny dude because even though the Player Dude did THE RIGHT THINGS to the ladies, he was still boring. The horny dude had more personality than the Player in every encounter.

“But Pook! I do not get it!”

A creative director from Hollywood told me this,

“Look at the REAL stars that EVERYONE LOVES. Are these people the perfect model types that grace magazine covers? NO. They all have huge eccentrices of their own.” In other words, Schwarzenegger is no Shakespearean Actor. I think the only other character that hasn’t talked as much in movies would be Lassie.

Take the successful lawyer who goes to the gym all the time. BORING. What is Human about him? One thing I

didn't realize: if you strive towards perfection, chicks are going to expect you to be 'perfect'.

We must fall in order to rise. The little goodie who strives to be perfect in all his manners with everyone is going to be surpassed by the guy who lets his eccentricities rise in his dealings.

Perfection is boring. To be Human is Beautiful.

Modeling! You think modeling is about perfection? "Yes, Pook. I believe it is." Sure, there are standards. But anyone can play the role of a mannequin. Even in modeling, there is heavy emphasis on penetrating the lens, to 'be Human' so to say, to slip your personality throughout.

Music! What? You think music, that divine grace that is the perfect union of art and math, is to be 'perfect'? When you learn an instrument, there is much emphasis on tone, scales, notes, and rhythms. When you play in a symphony or band, you obviously let the director place you in your role. You could practice for DECADES and be PERFECT at playing songs yet be totally BORING. What makes the truly sensational players are the ones who put fun into the instrument, and fun ends up coming out of the instrument. If you take a player who is going at it with a sense of play, of thrill, of joy itself, a missed tone or a note off beat is not even heard. Compare that guy to the 'perfect player' and the player with thrill will always, always win.(To you guys still scared about dating and all, consider this: put fun into the woman and fun comes out. Put happiness into the woman and happiness comes out. What do you try to do instead? Do you try to be so 'perfect' that she will go crazy over you? Where a Nice Guy uses flowers, you use flowery acts. Unfortunately, you'll find that vaginas are not laced with gold.)

Writing! Look at the finest writers in history. Shakespeare is bawdy. Milton goes into full egotistical mode. Even some of ****ens's works seem incomprehensible. If you consider the so called 'perfect' works to those, they don't compare. Take your professors who write these so called 'brilliant' academic books that no one reads. People do not admire brilliance; they do not admire technical perfection. People admire the Humanity, the personality, found in works. People do not admire Napoleon for his military and artillery genius. They admire him because he had the audacity to say on a corpse filled battleground, "All these men will be replaced by a single night in Paris."

Popularity! Take any politician. What do they try to do? Why, they try to be PERFECT in your eyes. They speak to you as if you are a four year old, using focus grouped sayings and canned generalizations. The result is that every politician gets viewed as the same, are all *boring*. Which politicians are remembered? It is the one not with 'failings' but with a humanity of their own. Now look from women's eyes. All these men try to be 'perfect' to the ladies so they all come off as BORING. A 'humanized' guy, no matter what his failing, is always more desirable than a PERFECT Nice Guy, super intellectual, or dried up player.

Why does 'perfection' fail with the ladies? Because when you strive to be 'perfect', you enter an Anti-Life mode. You end up not really living but fulfilling some imaginary barometer of virtue, of thought, or other Human measuring stick.

QUOTE:
He who binds to himself a joy
Does the winged life destroy;
But he who kisses the joy as it flies
Lives in Eternity's sunrise.
William Blake

Now why do we strive towards 'perfection'? To get the PERFECT women? There are obviously no perfect women. Even a Playboy centerfold can turn into a FAT EVIL HAG. (*cough* Anna Nicole Smith *cough*)

I'd imagine the 'perfection' comes from the thought that the WOMAN obtained will be like heavenly rain in a parched desert. All the things you're looking for in life… joy, sociality, and even sexuality must come from YOU. And you know what? Examine the ladies you ARE attracted too. They already have the joy, socialibility, and sexuality. When they look at you, you may think you are 'perfect' but they see a joyless frustrated creature.

There was this guy who went to the gym almost all the time. His diet was PERFECT. His workout routines were PERFECT. His clothing was PERFECT. His six pack… no, EIGHT pack was PERFECT. He MODELED. He got involved in ACTING. He looked like a GREEK GOD. When he walked about, all the ladies noticed him. He used his flesh like a masculine dress. Aside from those that used and discarded him as a boy toy, the ladies always broke up with him. How could they break up with this ADONIS? "He is so BORING" they all said in chorus. After all, he spent most of his time in the gym or being consistent with his perfect diet. If this guy spent less time being perfect and more time being human, he would be much more successful with the ladies and much happier.

There was this other guy that became a super successful lawyer. He bought the token status car and made a mini-mansion. He went to the gym every other night. He had money, had status, and looked great. He thought the ladies would find him PERFECT. Well, they did find him perfect but not for the reasons he wanted. They found him PERFECT for STABILITY. So he married a 'super hot babe' and had kids (which he paid for a nanny to take care of). What does the 'super hot babe' do? She cheats on him! "Don't you love him?" "Yes, yes I very much do," and she speaks the truth. No, she sleeps around because SHE IS BORED. He dehumanized everything. She doesn't have to work, doesn't have to raise the kids, and doesn't have to do anything. Of course she won't leave him. And of course she is in 'love' with him (or rather his STABILITY). Yet, she is bored and cheats on him. If the guy was a bit more human and less perfect, she might find her husband more interesting than his foolish role of Mr. Perfection.

So when you think, "I have been on this forum for X amount of time! And I am STILL A) Virgin B) Single C) Non-LTR D) Not getting the girl I want. I have A) Read the DJ Bible again and again B) Gotten advice from the posters here C) Read and bought many DJ books."

Consider: "Are you trying to PERFECT yourself when it comes to women or are you trying to HUMANIZE yourself that you find interacting with women as natural as breathing?"

The difference is all.

Shakespeare *Striving to better, oft we mar what's well.*

Tennyson
Faultily faultless, icily regular, splendidly null,
Dead perfection, no more.

Hazlitt *No one ever approaches perfection except by stealth, and unknown to themselves.*

Orwell *The essence of being human is that one does not seek perfection, that one IS sometimes willing to commit sins for the sake of loyalty, that one does not push asceticism to the point where it makes friendly intercourse impossible, and that one is prepared in the end to be defeated and broken up by life, which is the inevitable price of fastening one's love upon other human individuals.*

*

I see you now. I know your gaze is fading from the computer screen… Look at me! *Pook hits the table.* For the love

of God, listen! Your life depends on this.

When you see a girl you want to approach, or you are getting cold feet about a date, remember three words:

“Perfect is boring…”

Three words!

“Perfect is boring…”

Your brain will spin out all these reasons why you are unworthy…

“Cheap and wimpy car.”
“Poor clothes”
“Shortness”
“Bad haircut”
“No money.”
“Not as good looking”
“No confidence”
“Past failures”

“Perfect is boring!” and watch those reasons evaporate. Stand up! Already, the blood is pulsing through your veins. You’ve always wanted to do this but have always been scared of yourself. Let go.

You stand up and go out the door.

Go! Go!

You see a beautiful woman but are afraid to approach.

“Perfect is boring…” and you go and talk to her.

But you like to spend your free time on the computer. So what? Talk to her.

You are scared to ask for her number… “Perfect is boring…”

She gave you the number! Again, you are scared of the date. Too many unknowns!

But…

“Perfect is boring…”

Look! She is smiling at you! She wants to kiss you!

But you have never kissed a girl before. Would you mess it up? Would you slobber over her? What of it!

“Perfect is boring…”

Smooch

She loves it! Now look at what position she is in! You know what to do…

For the love of yourself, for the love of life, you are letting go and are actually becoming human.

Pity those who want the perfect life! Break me, tear me apart, let me be beaten and altered by life, let my life be touched and touch in return for I will be Human, for there is no reason on earth to be scared of yourself.

Perfect is boring… let it be written in the sky, painted on buildings, read with your eyes, transcribed on your soul. All those people who are ALONE are perfect… but those with the girl realize that being perfect is boring!

Previous Pook Index Next

Pook #21 - The Secret of the Jerk

. · 21 July 2004 · Archived copy · Original

(NOTE: This post ended up being longer than I expected, MUCH LONGER. "You should have divided it in many posts." Why write a galaxy of posts when one article will do!)

No, your eyes are not mistaken. The guy with the beautiful woman is a *jerk* and/or *ugly guy*! What is he doing with her? Can she not see? Has she not eyes?

Alas! The poor male looks around, knows not who to turn to, and eventually sums up that the universe is a cruel and mysterious personnage who deals out no answers, offers no solutions, and gives out no explanations especially for the enigma of all enigmas, the beautiful woman! Obviously, something is amiss. How do these ugly to average looking guys get such babes? How do these cruel, stupid, barbaric males get these feminine jewels? Are they following a special trick? Are they super 'confidant'? What is their secret? Or *are they even aware of their secret*?

But what if nothing is amiss? What if this is all correct to the will of Nature? Where leaves the Don Juan?

Oh, there she is! The beautiful woman! The ornament of the world! The dream in flesh! She stands aloof on the platform and says, "Gentlemen! How are you to win me?"

And around the platform, a thousand mouths cry:

"Confidence."
"Humor."
"Patterns."
"Kino."
"Chocolate."
"Poetry."
"By ignoring you."
"By totally focusing on you."
"Puffed muscles."
"Flowers."
"Spikey hair."
"Endless gifts."
"Mirroring."
"Leather jackets."
"Eliciting values."
"Sparkly clothes."
"Bouncy personality."
"Romance."
"Dinner. Lobster!"
"Compliments."
"Guitar songs."

And she laughs only to say, "These are very well and good, gentlemen. But are you not aware that *imitation is suicide*? You forget that confidence is experience, that puffed muscles are not to be a masculine dress, that any guy can buy me lobster, and that countless many can sing the guitar songs. Are you so unaware of what I need?"

But a lone voice speaks from the floor: "You, madam, are to win *me*! For **I** am the prize to be won!"

And with that, she giggles in glee. "For every one of you, there are a thousand guys willing to offer me the above. It is cute that you are different. But why am I with the ugly guy at the end? Why do I prefer the jerk?" And with this the lone voice had no answer.

Then comes the great exclamation: "Because he is **a man**!"

"Yes but no," she snobbily laughs.

"Because he is disrespectful."

"He is that but no."

"Because he is an animal."

"Not at all!"

"Because he has super ego!"

"True, but no."

"Because he wears his cap backwards!"

"Hah!"

"Because he is rough and mean."

"Nope!"

And then a golden arrow shaft of voice pierced the confusion, penetrated deep within the truth, spread those warm gooey moans of ecstasy throughout, and made her come with such surprising clarity that she screams in delight. For the voice said,

"Extreme masculinity!"

"Oh Pook!" she smiled in radiance. "How right you are!" And all the guys' mouths turn into a big O as the beautiful woman ran off the platform into the arms of Pook.

Having satisfied none of her demands, what she ends up with (the ugly/average guy) becomes seemingly contradictory. Extreme masculinity? What answer can that be?

Oh women! Can you give us no explanations other than the ones that send us off the cliff? Can you not explain yourselves to our perplexed male minds? Alas, it is like speaking to a block. She gives expressions but not answers. She gives demands but not secrets. How smart men may be until they enter a bar! How knowledgable they seem until they're before a woman!

The Mystery of Mysteries

There are three mysteries to the world: the rise and fall of civilizations, fruitcake, and why beautiful women go for jerks.

Leaving fruitcake and the rise and fall of civilizations for other posts, let us concern ourselves with why beautiful women go for jerks. WHAT IS NATURE'S SECRET?

And, likewise, a sea of mouths with authoritative tongues chant out the usual 'answers':

"Confidence"
"Dominance
"Unpredictability"
"Hard to get"
"Selfishness"
"Rudeness"

And so on. These 'experts' or 'wise sages' merely look at the jerk as a fixed element and classify personality traits or even physical traits. Fools adopt the personality/physical traits. **But imitation is suicide.**

Why go for the fool's gold when the real gold is in your grasp?

There are things so simple in Nature and life that we utterly confuse them and ourselves with our stupid philosophies (jerks don't need websites like these!). Sexuality is one of these. Our countless reading of seduction over the internet is full of months if not years. Where has this got you? Yes, you feel you are always right on the edge of THE SECRETS to end your heartaches and tensions but, at the end of the day, you are still in front of your computer.

Someone said to me, "What an odd definition of Man you gave, Pook! A guy not afraid of his testosterone? Surely it is more heroic."

But it is entirely about testosterone. Girls are attracted to GUYS, not wimps, not nice guys, not chumps, but GUYS. Rather then trying to build and discover some killer philosophy to ease your troubles, why not accept the structure Nature has already set up? The secret of the jerks is that it is so widespread, common, and plain that since it is all around us we can't even distinguish it.

Nature is process, always seeking and devouring. Nothing remains set; everything's in cycles. Rather than classifying the ACTIONS of the jerk and merely DUPLICATING them, let us adopt the SOURCE so the actions come natural and without thought or effort.

Pook stands on the fruitcake and calls the crowd around him.

Gentlemen! Do say: what type of woman will the Nicest Nice Guy attract?

"Sperm whales."
"Hags."
"B*tches."
"Uglo girls."

Indeed! What trait commonly unites all these girls that end up with the pathetic Nice Guy?

Silence.

Gentlemen! Your silence most offends me! Sure, these girls may be sweet. Sure, they may be smart. Sure, they may be many things. Yet, there is one thing that they aren't. They *are not feminine*. They *are not girlish*.

The men nod.

And, likewise, what are these Nice Guys, these blobs of appeasing rolls of gooish flesh? Are these the men of the world?

"NO!"

These boys are not exactly feminine, but they certainly aren't masculine. They are neither. They are the androgenous blob who, without a spine, is clay to fit to any woman's desires or whims. Nice guys love women as a drowner loves a life preserver. He clings on to her because he cannot swim the waters of Nature. Tossed and tossed he becomes through his love life.

The Masculine Male

Pook walks toward a bubbly Nice Guy with a needle of Man-ness.

"No! The prick will hurt me!"

Fine, die a painful long death of Regret, Loneliness, and Frustration. Any other takers?

Another Nice Guy volunteered.

See? This fella knows that a momentary pain is prefarable to consistant suffering.

Pook puts the shot into the Nice Guy and injects him with testosterone.

Now, gentlemen, watch the effects.

The Nice Guy no longer fears what he desires. He sees the woman he wants. He approaches her.

Why do jerks approach women? To marry them? No! The jerk is operating not out of control with 'that head down there' but rather being influenced properly by his testosterone. He sees what he wants and goes and gets it. He does not apologize for it. He does not try to rationalize it. *He does not analyze it.* There are no stupid philosophies running around in the jerk's head.

The Nice Guy gets rejected by the woman!

Oh oh! Poor Nice Guy! But look, something is changing. Look at the anger building up in him. Something is being charged within him. It is frustration. It is anger. The worst thing for him to do would be to cry and duck his head in the sand. Constant rejection requires one of two solutions: either lower your standards or increase your standards in yourself.

But it is true that standards do not enter the jerk's mind. He gets frustrated and angry. He tries again with MUCH LESS awkardness. Nature's system is at work here, chiseling his social exterior. He gets the dates.

The Nice Guy gets dumped after a few dates.

Oh dear! What happened!? Why, perhaps the Nice Guy was trying to mock earlier jerk behavior and remetamorphed into an AFC eventually before his chick! Imitation IS suicide. No wonder chicks are so hard for honesty!

Do jerks really care on pleasing the women in the spirit of altruism and glorious relationship?

"Yes."

Hush you! The jerks obviously DO NOT care about the women in such a manner. Their testosterone says, "I have needs that need to be fulfilled. Entertain me." And so the jerks come off self-centered not because they ARE self-centered, but because they are closer to their own male nature and seek to satisfy their thirst.

The nice guy sees that fun is merely being around a beautiful woman. The jerk is a bit more... active. He wants to have fun his way. She is along for the ride.

It has been well known that action dates (ex: dancing, bowling, rock climbing, etc.) work MUCH BETTER than regular dates (coffee, dinner, movie, etc). Rather than merely matching the effect (the action date), let us focus on the cause.

The jerk would obviously skateboard and play basketball than to sit at dinner and watch the girl flap her gums. Testosterone has been shown to create more ACTION in the individual. Jerks (i.e. testosteronized males) do the action NATURALLY. Rather than worrying about making yourself do action dates, get yourself in that natureset and action dates will become the only comfortable choice you could make.

The Nice Guy gets dumped because he hardly made any moves.

Oh no! We know how the girl gets mistreated and will talk to her girly friend (the nice guy) about it. We see the abuse and we think, "Oh heavens! Am I to be abusive to get the girl?" What is this abuse? Is she really hurt? Or is she merely mad that she has failed in her mission: to sterilize and link to the masculinized dude?

"But the guy stands her up all the time, etc. etc."

It is not because he stands her up. It is because she knows she is not loved by him. Her feminine powers are not ensnaring him. It is a *feminine* failure.

The girl sleeps with the jerk and he leaves her. We, as guys, think the abuse is the jerk sleeping with the girl merely to 'use' her (and motherly harpies try to feminize us into not doing 'this'). Rather, the 'abuse' is that the girl realizes she could not keep the guy. She 'was not woman enough'.

Nature's Path Leads to Women

As men, we are governed by two masters: Mind and Nature. (NOT mind and body. Nature refers to the processes and cycles that our bodies are only but a part.)

Both fight one another.

Mind: "The finest philosophies will get us the women."

Nature: "You bore me. Unleash me."

But what will get the women?

Mind: "Calculation. Seduction."

Nature: "Instinct. Masculinity."

And why should you get any women?

Mind: "Because everyone else is, and I am not."

Nature: "Because I am MALE and she is FEMALE."

Now let us throw some obstacles at the two. Let us say they are unceasingly unsuccessful in obtaining the beautiful women.

What are your reactions?

Mind: "This is obviously a failure within my calculation, my framing of the events. I will solve this with more seduction

research, essay writing on message boards, for I treat sexual dynamics like an academic degree."

Nature: "The failure is in not being male enough. Increased masculinity is the solution."

But you who enraged the poets and tortured the philosophers, please please elaborate.

Nature: When the embryo is at three months, it is unisex. It is both sexes at once. Alas, from then it divides into a gender (of which we cannot choose, of which enforces a code of conduct and duties of behavior we cannot control or understand. And we call ourselves free...)

Mind: Yes, yes. One half turns male, the other female. It is in my books.

Nature: Then I shall burn your library. For Nature always has more secrets then you can decipher. Gender is not all or none.

There is a MIX.

Mind: But this is in my books. In Sex and Character, Weineger says that from birth, males and females are divided. Some males are 70% male, 30% female. Others are 80% male, 20% female. It is vice versa for women. We know of effininate men. We know of tom boys. Attraction is not a choice. A male that is 60% male and 40% female will attract a female that is 60% female and 40% male. A female that is 90% female and 10% male will attract a male that is 90% male and 10% female. It is a fact that some men are more feminine than others. This attraction scale is destiny: we mate with what fills the void the best. This is the mix that Weineger speaks of, is marked in the very first chapter of his book and made everything else possible.

Nature: I wonder if you would talk then till doomsday? Your followers, your philosophers, lawyers, academics, prattle and rattle on just like you! You are completely unaware of the seasons of life that color and sparkle the world. But I hesitate!

Mind: Like the flow and ebb of the moon.

Nature: Quiet you! Weineger and others of his ilk made good attempts at trying to discover my secrets. They tried to 'pop' themselves out of my earthly cycle and peer upon my work with the eyes of a god. Melancholy is my vengeance. Nieztche and Keirkegard, I drove those two mad. For Weineger I made his life so unpleasant that he had to shoot himself.

Mind: Is this your only vengeance?

Nature: No. It is reserved for anyone who frustrates my cycle. A man who persistantly stays single becomes a public temptation. I chisel away at him to make him more appropriate and correct the purpose of getting the women and carrying on my work.

Mind: But he will not do this. And your melancholy will not work due to the female attention he recieves.

Nature: I make and unmake the Adonis. The beautiful boy, refusing to use my gift for my purpose, enjoys being slaughtered by the elephant's tusk, the early untimely death. I will not be defied.

Mind: Yet, Weineger explained you.

Nature: Fool! Your 'mix' is all wrong. It is true that it is not simply 'male' and 'female'. But there is androgenous, where the male levels are so low in the male that he is barely a male. Or that the female levels are so low in the female that she is barely a female.

Mind: You divided us before birth.

Nature: And I inject you again with my touch at puberty. The boy must become a man and the girl a woman. But, alas, many attempt to buck my ways to follow YOU. Nerds, geeks, we know the labels. The longer a man tries to ignore the fact of my mission and cycle, the more pain and loneliness I will add into him until he has no choice to act.

Mind: You are vicious.

Nature: It gets the job done. But Weineger is wrong. We are not born onto a spectrum. Rather, we can add to it or decrease it. The element of attraction is destruction.

Mind: Destruction?

Nature: If a woman is amazingly female, what is the result?

Mind: Hordes of men hunt after her.

Nature: Yes. Extremeness of spectrum is an anomaly that must be seeked out and destroyed. The female is feminine with matter. Girls at an early age are aware the effects their bodies have on young men. They know they are like a magnet. But who do they go for? The beautiful woman is the extreme female? Why, she is seeking the

extreme male. By the actions of the jerk, who can say that he is not looking for destruction? He finds it in her and she finds it in him. I demand sterilization of the two. The more successes they have, the more and more it is drained from them. Eventually, they settle for one mate and begin the march toward the androgenous.

Mind: So the beautiful woman is attracted to the jerk because...

Nature: It is better to say that the extreme female woman is attracted to the extreme male man.

And this is the utterly simple secret. Jerks are not super confidant, not superior in all seduction knowledge. Jerks are testosteronized males. This seperates them from the Nice Guys who still defy the flooding of testosterone Nature inflicts on them.

Science of Testosterone

Be a Man!: "A Man is one who is not afraid of his testosterone."

This will seem incredibly basic. But to illustrate the effects, look at the effects of men who must be injected with artificial testosterone because (for whatever reason) their body isn't making enough (usually due to having HIV).

One HIV positive guy shares his differences with the before and after shots:

His weight increases from 165 pounds to 185 pounds. The collar size goes from 15 to 17 1/2, the chest from 40 to 44. His appetite expands beyond measure. Before he was constantly napping. Now he has enough energy for daily workouts and strict work schedules. Before, depression was a regular feature. Now, it is a 'distant memory'. With the testosterone shots, he feels better to recover from life's curveballs, more persistant, more alive.

There are more effects. With the testosterone, he feels more energy. The attention span shortens. He finds it harder to concentrate on writing and feels he must exercise. The wit becomes quicker, the mind faster, and the judgement more impulsive. It is literally a 'rush'.

Without the testosterone, he finds himself more reserved. The energy still is there but is geared towards interaction rather than action, toward pride rather than lust. He rarely looks for dates or thinks of approaching women without it. But with it, he is constantly scanning the women for potential dates and socializing.

With testosterone comes increased debating type attitudes, and increased anger. Driving makes him scream at the other cars and 'stupid drivers'. (This is oddly reminiscent of Thomas Jefferson's personality when he was always said to be 'unemotional' except when riding a horse and became 'overly' emotional.) With testosterone comes increased impatience, increased edginess, but increased self-confidence.

Now do these traits of the under-testosteronized male and over-testosteronized male match the Nice Guy and Jerk? They do most accurately.

For the rest, we require a scientist.

A scientist appears.

There you are! Oh, Mr. Scientist, do tell us more about Testosterone.

"I'd love to, Pook.

"Testosterone, oddly enough, is a chemical closely related to cholesterol. It was first isolated by a Dutch scientist in 1935 from mice testicles and successfully synthesized by the German biologist Adolf Butenandt. Although testosterone is often thought of as the definition of maleness, both men and women produce it. Men produce it in their testicles; women produce it in their ovaries and adrenal glands. The male body converts some testosterone to estradiol, a female hormone, and the female body has receptors for testosterone, just as the male body does. That's why women who want to change their sex are injected with testosterone and develop male characteristics, like deeper voices, facial hair and even baldness. The central biological difference between adult men and women, then, is not that men have testosterone and women don't. It's that men produce much, much more of it than women do. An average woman has 40 to 60 nanograms of testosterone in a deciliter of blood plasma. An average man has 300 to 1,000 nanograms per deciliter."

Ok, ok, Mr. Scientist. You are putting this Pook to sleep. The EFFECTS of testosterone. Focus on the EFFECTS.

"Certainly, Pook.

"Testosterone's effects start early -- really early. At conception, every embryo is female and unless hormonally altered will remain so. You need testosterone to turn a fetus with a Y chromosome into a real boy, to masculinize his brain and body. Men experience a flood of testosterone twice in their lives: in the womb about six weeks after conception and at puberty. The first fetal burst primes the brain and the body, endowing male fetuses with the instinctual knowledge of how to respond to later testosterone surges. The second, more familiar adolescent rush -- squeaky voices, facial hair and all -- completes the process."

Go on.

"The effect of testosterone is systemic. It engenders both the brain and the body. Apart from the obvious genital distinction, other differences between men's and women's bodies reflect this: body hair, the ratio of muscle to fat, upper-body strength and so on. But testosterone leads to behavioral differences as well. Since it is unethical to experiment with human embryos by altering hormonal balances, much of the evidence for this idea is based on research conducted on animals. A Stanford research group, for example, as reported in Deborah Blum's book "Sex on the Brain," injected newborn female rats with testosterone. Not only did the female rats develop penises from their clitorises, but they also appeared fully aware of how to use them."

What!

"Indeed. But let me continue."

Yes, I am sorry.

"And these female rats were trying to have sex with other females with merry abandon. Male rats who had their testosterone locked after birth, on the other hand, saw their penises wither or disappear entirely and presented themselves to the female rats in a passive, receptive way. Other scientists, theorizing that it was testosterone that enabled male zebra finches to sing, injected mute female finches with testosterone. Sure enough, the females sang. Species in which the female is typically more aggressive, like hyenas in female-run clans, show higher levels of testosterone among the females than among the males. Female sea snipes, which impregnate the males, and leave them to stay home and rear the young, have higher testosterone levels than their mates. Typical "male" behavior, in other words, corresponds to testosterone levels, whether exhibited by chromosomal males or females."

But does this apply to Humans?

"The evidence certainly suggests that it does, though much of the "proof" is inferred from accidents. Pregnant women who were injected with progesterone (chemically similar to testosterone) in the 1950's to avoid miscarriage had daughters who later reported markedly tomboyish childhoods."

Incredible!

"Ditto girls born with a disorder that causes their adrenal glands to produce a hormone like testosterone rather than the more common cortisol. The moving story, chronicled in John Colapinto's book "As Nature Made Him," of David Reimer, who as an infant was surgically altered after a botched circumcision to become a girl, suggests how long-lasting the effect of fetal testosterone can be. Despite a ruthless attempt to socialize David as a girl, and to give him the correct hormonal treatment to develop as one, his behavioral and psychological makeup was still ineradicably male. Eventually, with the help of more testosterone, he became a full man again. Female-to-male transsexuals report a similar transformation when injected with testosterone. One, Susan/Drew Seidman, described her experience in The Village Voice last November. 'My sex-drive went through the roof,' Seidman recalled. 'I felt like I had to have sex once a day or I would die. . . . I was into porn as a girl, but now I'm really into porn.' For Seidman, becoming a man was not merely physical. Thanks to testosterone, it was also psychological."

So what makes a Man?

"I don't know what exactly makes a man. But one thing I can tell you for sure: it is not his penis."

Oh wise sage! Wonderful scientist!

But do not confuse testosterone with Popeye's spinach. Nature says, "Testosterone levels will rise when the situation warrants it. Survival is the priority." So in cases of danger, of war, the testosterone levels increase. When in a strip club or viewing a porno website, testosterone levels also rise. Men with higher testosterone achieve psychological dominance, have high self esteem, and move through the world with natural confidence.

"But Pook. I have more to add."

Tarry! Then I will step aside and let you speak.

"Testosterone is clearly correlated in both men and women with psychological dominance, confident physicality and high self-esteem. In most combative, competitive environments, especially physical ones, the person with the most testosterone wins. Put any two men in a room together and the one with more testosterone will tend to dominate the interaction."

Gentlemen, this is your secret 'ingredient' to that 'alpha-maleness' you keep longing for.

"Working women have higher levels of testosterone than women who stay at home, and the daughters of working women have higher levels of testosterone than the daughters of housewives. A 1996 study found that in lesbian couples in which one partner assumes the male, or "butch," role and another assumes the female, or "femme," role, the "butch" woman has higher levels of testosterone than the "femme" woman."

Ahh! So in lesbian couples, one acts male and the other acts female.

"In naval medical tests, midshipmen have been shown to have higher average levels of testosterone than plebes.

Actors tend to have more testosterone than ministers, according to a 1990 study. Among 700 male prison inmates in a 1995 study, those with the highest testosterone levels tended to be those most likely to be in trouble with the prison authorities and to engage in unprovoked violence. This is true among women as well as among men, according to a 1997 study of 87 female inmates in a maximum security prison."

Whohoo! The key to dominance!

"Careful Pook.

"Although high testosterone levels often correlate with dominance in interpersonal relationships, it does not guarantee more social power. Testosterone levels are higher among blue-collar workers, for example, than among white-collar workers, according to a study of more than 4,000 former military personnel conducted in 1992."

But is testosterone like adrenaline? Or does it respond to long-term surrounding environment stimuli?

"Well Pook, studies have shown that inner-city youths, often exposed to danger in high-crime neighborhoods, may generate higher testosterone levels than unthreatened, secluded suburbanites. And so high testosterone levels may not merely be responses to a violent environment; they may subsequently add to it in what becomes an increasingly violent, sexualized cycle."

Increase in violence AND sexuality? Then it's no accident that testosterone-soaked ghettos foster both high levels of crime and high levels of illegitimacy!

"Indeed, Pook. In the same way, declines in violence and crime may allow testosterone levels to drop among young inner-city males, generating a virtuous trend of further reductions in crime and birth rates. This may help to explain why crime can decline precipitously, rather than drift down slowly, over time."

But what for the men who enter that dungeon, I mean marriage?

"Studies have also shown that men in long-term marriages see their testosterone levels progressively fall and their sex drives subsequently decline. It is as if their wives successfully tame them, reducing their sexual energy to a level where it is more unlikely to seek extramarital outlets. A 1993 study showed that single men tended to have higher levels of testosterone than married men and that men with high levels of testosterone turned out to be more likely to have had a failed marriage. Of course, if you start out with higher testosterone levels, you may be more likely to fail at marriage, stay in the sexual marketplace, see your testosterone increase in response to this and so on."

So what is the entire point, Mr. Brainy Guy?

"This, then, is what it comes down to: testosterone is a facilitator of risk -- physical, criminal, personal. Without the influence of testosterone, the cost of these risks might seem to far outweigh the benefits. But with testosterone charging through the brain, caution is thrown to the wind. The influence of testosterone may not always lead to raw physical confrontation. In men with many options it may influence the decision to invest money in a dubious enterprise, jump into an ill-advised sexual affair or tell an egregiously big whopper. At the time, all these decisions may make some sort of testosteroned sense."

It sounds like you are describing a US politician.

"Hush Pook."

Oh, I'm sorry. Continue.

"The effects of testosterone are not secret; neither is the fact that men have far more if it than women. But why? As we have seen, testosterone is not synonymous with gender; in some species, it is the female who has most of it. The relatively new science of evolutionary psychology offers perhaps the best explanation for why that's not the case in humans. For neo-Darwinians, the aggressive and sexual aspects of testosterone are related to the division of labor among hunter-gatherers in our ancient but formative evolutionary past. This division -- men in general hunted, women in general gathered -- favored differing levels of testosterone. Women need some testosterone -- for self-defense, occasional risk-taking, strength -- but not as much as men. Men use it to increase their potential to defeat rivals, respond to physical threats in strange environments, maximize their physical attractiveness, prompt them to spread their genes as widely as possible and defend their home if necessary."

But women are attracted, in the physical imagery sense, to the feminine looking guys. How can testosterone increase physical attractiveness? I do not understand.

"But the picture, as most good evolutionary psychologists point out, is more complex than this. Men who are excessively testosteroned are not that attractive to most women. Although they have the genes that turn women on -- strong jaws and pronounced cheekbones, for example, are correlated with high testosterone -- they can also be precisely the unstable, highly sexed creatures that childbearing, stability-seeking women want to avoid. There are two ways, evolutionary psychologists hazard, that women have successfully squared this particular circle. One is to marry the sweet class nerd and have an affair with the college quarterback: that way you get the good genes, the good sex and the stable home."

This has always been the problem. Nice Guy or Jerk?

"There is a third path."

A third way? And what is it?

"The third way is to find a man with variable testosterone levels, who can be both stable and nurturing when you want him to be and yet become a muscle-bound, bristly gladiator when the need arises. This is sadly more easily said than done."

Ahh! The secret is to CONTROL the sexuality or else it will control you! The jerk is entirely controlled by it. The Nice Guy recoils from the abuses he sees in the jerk and becomes merely static on the woman's radar.

To be a jerk in control of his sexuality is to cease being 'jerk-like'. For Nature has set up this game of life we all play.

Learn the system and work within it.

No Nice Guy in Animal World

Now we require a farmer.

A farmer appears.

What are the effects of testosterone on animals?

The farmer looks at Pook as if he was crazy.

Yes, the effects.

"Well, one thing with animals is that the female is usually the one more in heat, always searching for sex, than the male. Take female pigs. They go completely beserk."

Go on.

"But it is exactly what that scientist said. Nature dashes some tesosterone to create the male at first. Then, at puberty, Nature floods the male with testosterone. If you neuter the animal before this flood, you will have a great pet."

And if you don't?

"Well, you end up with an unhappy beast. Male pigs must be neutered or the testosterone will flood the body, making its meat worthless. This is why we don't eat bull."

So our animal friends, when testostoronized, are merely to mate? There is no other strength in it?

"That isn't true. If you neuter the dog before he gets testosteronized, he makes a great pet. But he will not make a good sheepdog. It's almost like his will of action gets taken out."

And so is the same with Humans! What do Nice Guys become but human pets for the female? And just as animals use their sexuality for action, for a higher purpose, so do Humans.

The Women Agree

Even on this site's discussion of 'Nice Guys versus Jerks', read what some of what the women had to say.

Italics will be the woman. Regular text will be da Pook Man.

First Lady

Alright, I read some of your responses from women and noticed that most of them seemed older.

And probably uglier! It is the pretty chicks we want. Too bad pictures weren't included with their words!

And since a lot of guys who go here seem to be around my age (17), I figured I would put my 2 cents in.

Here it comes...

I don't like the nice guy. To me he's a definite turn off. He seems too timid to pursue intimacy, and personally I love it when a guy is real horny (as long as he's attractive and knows when to stop). It makes me feel a lot more comfortable.

Too timid to pursue intimacy! Perhaps he needs a shot of testosterone? Notice how she loves a guy being horny (just not a
stupid type of horny). She feels COMFROTABLE when the guy is following his nature rather than acting out

stupid philosophies.

*I'm not saying I like jerks, I like the funny guy who always has something interesting or colorful to say. Normally girls look for someone of their 'niceness quotient' or lower. Feeling like the jerk in the relationship is no fun. Of course, neither is being the '*****' so it's totally up to the chick. Maybe u nice guys should get a bit more bold, not necessarily 'jerk-ish'*

Fortune favors the bold.

Second Lady

Women start to see the light in their late twenties. Some men never do.

As women get older, they become less feminine in that they are rapidly aging. Yes, Nice Guys can get girls. All the girls we DON'T want.

My advice to the nice guys whose decency might be hampering their dating success is to widen the pool of women they consider.

Translated: go for uglier/older girls.

A current philosophy among some (male) dating gurus is to never date a woman over 30, as they are too set in their ways, hate men, and are starting to lose their looks anyway. Wrong, wrong, wrong!

Older women have developed depth of character, have learned that "nice guys" are the way to go, and are in their sexual prime. In addition, they know who they are sexually, and are unashamed and unafraid to experiment and to take and give pleasure. Sex with a woman over 35 might be some of the best sex a man will ever have.

Over 35! She can't have many children by then! At that age she is losing her purpose of sexuality.

The problem with dating women under 25, which seems to be the goal for many men of all age groups, is that one will have to contend with the image-seeking behavior of youth. Unless a man is equally shallow and image-driven---and most men over 30 are not---women in their 30s, 40s, and up can be a goldmine of interesting and wonderful experiences.

We know that the young women go for the jerks. But notice how the desexualized male (i.e. Nice Guy) wins with the desexualized female (i.e. women in their 30s and 40s)?

Third Woman

I date only nice guys. Most women want to date a nice guy. But men are being classified into two groups, nice or jerks.

That doesn't cover the subject. People are more complex than that. Neither sex can be grouped into just two groups.

Of course.

The "NICE GUY" is often a man who doesn't have a life. And neither sex is attracted to this type of person. A truly nice guy is hard to find. A true jerk most women don't want. I think we try to make people fit into a category instead of

getting to know them. You can't always know what a woman wants based on another woman's choices.

Why not? Women seem to follow the same pattern of going for the jerk.

It is true that the Nice Guy has no life. It is because he lacks the ACTION that the jerk has.

I love a nice guy. To me nothing is sexier than a guy who has the guts to say he really likes me on a first date. And yes I do continue dating him! I must clear one last thing up "Nice guys do FINISH last" and I find that to be very sexy! He is the one I'll see again.

This woman must be fat or old or something.

Fourth Girl

*Sorry, but its no more true that women prefer jerks than it is true that men prefer *****es.*

The thing is, the nice guys who are with a woman are not out there complaining that women don't like nice guys. The nice guys who are not with a woman will express their loneliness, in a nice way, from time to time. The jerks who are not with a woman never complain about it. They lie and say they do have a woman, or many women, or they don't want a woman. Nice guys don't lie like that.

The jerk is a challenge. The nice guy wants to go on Oprah's show.

The truth is that nice guys are alone from time to time. The truth is that there are plenty of people out there looking for the right one. Keep looking, you will find her.

It is interesting that women are all united in the belief that there is 'one for everyone'. It's as if they are well aware of Nature's invisible hand demanding union.

PS. You are a guy, right, so looks are very important to you? Lets say you think you could not be with less than an "8".

I know huge compromise is not possible, but just try to accept a "7" or a "6" perhaps. Women get a lot better looking TO YOU after you know and love them. Give it a try. If I had a brother and he was a nice guy, the above advice is what I would have given him.

Notice how many of these women are missing the point here. The point is to get the BEAUTIFUL WOMEN. Some of these girl's solutions is to not go for the beautiful ones!

But all the attributes of the jerk they love (the action, the horniness, the unpredictability, the exciting life) are all effects of a testosteronized male.

Fifth Girl

I don't think that women are attracted to jerks, but they are attracted to men that illuminate power. Those type of men(powerful, strong and masculine) are sometimes jerks, which accounts for the confusion.

Finally! A woman links the jerk to masculinity. But it is the effects of testosterone she sees.

The nice guy sometimes is not strong or powerful and that's what turns women off. So in essence, it's not the fact that

they are nice, it's that they may be lacking other attractive qualities that out weigh the niceness.

Which the Nice Guys do NOT have or are afraid of (and sterilize themselves with 'nice' philosophies).

Ultimately, I love nice guys that illuminate strength and masculinity. There is no better combination.

It becomes quite simple:

NICE GUY: Male who is scared of his testosterone and seeks to sterilize himself with his niceness.

JERK: A male who merely acts male. He is controlled by his testosterone. This is why he gets into trouble.

GREAT GUY: A guy who can CONTROL his sexuality and acts male WITHOUT getting into trouble.

Sixth Girl

I got the e-mail about the nice guys vs. jerks. I'm totally for nice guys in a relationship, but when it comes to lusting or dreaming about a guy, it's usually the jerks, b/c most jerks have the nice bodies and have that something that's sexy about them.

Can you not see the pattern emerging? Are we not seeing the Jerk and Nice Guy for what they truly are?

Seventh Girl

I recognized some time ago exactly what I was doing... I was looking for a specific "character," for lack of a better word. It's epitomized by Judd Nelson in "The Breakfast Club," or by Elvis Presley in "King Creole" for your readers who aren't up on the 80's John Hughes phenomenon. Essentially, they're "bad boys with heart." I've dated guys who are nice - JUST nice, and I get bored after about three dates. "Bad boys" are much more interesting, of course, although it's not a wish of women that these guys are REALLY bad. Misunderstood would be a better word.

Check out the local oldies station for "Leader of the Pack" and you'll get the idea. A guy who's a troublemaker enough to be dangerous and daring and fun and keep life interesting, but who is a real sweetheart underneath. Hell, even when I was in 8th grade, I was much more infatuated with Jason Bateman's character on Silver Spoons (the best friend/next door neighbor who was always causing trouble to get attention from parents he thought didn't care) than Ricky Schroeder's... Ricky was so sweet he was saccharine.

The problem that I've run into, as I'm sure many women have, is that most of these "bad boys" don't seem to have the good hearts we seek. What you see is what you get.

This is because they are CONTROLLED by it. The only way to get both, and be the desire of every woman, is to understand it and CONTROL it.

By the time you realize it, you may have been dating this jerk for a while. When you ditch him, it's "on with the search." For the same damned thing. This is where guys will get the idea that jerks get all the women. They see us in the process of the search. What they need to understand is that we're not looking for some nasty idiot; behind it all is the wish to find that guy who can be trouble to everyone else but nice to us. Just like Judd.

Eighth Girl

Nice guys vs. jerks isn't the real issue here, it is all about confidence. The major difference between nice guys and jerks is this: if a nice guy has the guts to approach a woman who has caught his attention, he is so worried about saying the perfect "nice" thing that he will totally flub it. The "nice" one ends up stumbling away from the object of his desires with his tail caught between his legs ... for those who don't already realize, this is NOT the impression you want to make!

A jerk, on the other hand, appears to have been blessed with ability to approach anyone and say just what's on his mind completely disregarding any of the repercussions. He just does it. I have no clue how he does it. But DAMN, the man who has the confidence to accomplish that has caught my eye for the night whether he wants it or not!

What does this say? She is saying: "Stop trying to say the perfect thing!" This was why I left 'Seduction' behind and gone the Natural route. It is more fun, less headaches, and gets better effects.

Ninth Girl

Don't think women don't like nice guys. There is an initial appeal to a jerk, but it doesn't last long. As long as you don't act desperate and have a little something going for you, believe me, a nice guy CAN finish first - and with the girl of his dreams.

Translated: Treat yourself as the PRIZE to be won.

This does solve a lot of errors but it is not enough. Mastering the secret of the jerk optimizes your sexual appeal.

Tenth Girl

This is from the book (which I am sure many of you have read) called *The Fountainhead* by Ayn Rand. Ms. Rand's Objectivism was always a bit thorny going down philosophically. (And I know how women are the sexual ones which is strange with the person of Ms. Rand. Yet, Ms. Rand's 'noble hero' is entirely in the sexual realm. Her heroes are her ideal men.)

Objectivism is, in Ms. Rand's words, a 'noble' vision of Man which characters like John Galt as symbols. But Objectivism is more of a style of masculinity than it is a philosophy. Her heroes usually blast philosophical 'niceness' away.

In *The Fountainhead*, the hero (Roark) is not attractive and said to be even ugly. His rival, (Keating), is the pretty boy. But notice the effect that Roark has on Dominque, the extroadinarily beautiful woman. At the quarry, he does not seduce her. He literally rapes her (as virgin girls are often said to express as fantasy).

At a later party, the people notice Dominque (usually surrounded by desperate guys) show signs of attraction.

"And, my dear," asked Kiki Holcombe, "what did you think of that new one, you know, I saw you talking to him, that Howard Roark?"

"I think," said Dominique firmly, "that he is the most revolting person I've ever met."

"Oh, now, really?"

"Do you care for that sort of unbridled arrogance? I don't know what one could say for him, unless it's that he's terribly

good-looking, if that matters."

*"**Good-looking!?** Are you being funny, Dominique?"*

The beautiful woman is attracted to this ugly guy. But why?

"Why, my dear," said kiki, "he's not good-looking at all, but extremely masculine."

Extreme masculinity. This is what the beautiful woman wants.

Now for the males:

First Male

One thing to add on the nice guys V jerks thing: jerks win because in their selfish insensitivity they never hide their raw sexuality. Nice guys in their sensitivity hide their sexuality because they think it will oppress women.

This guy is on the right track.

Women are powerfully attracted to guys who are open with their sexuality, thus the jerks win.

EXACTLY!

*Now it is important to realize that being open with your sexuality is not about being a macho wanker, but simply about not denying that you wanna have sex with her. She knows it anyway, and if you don't let the world know it, you're headed right for the friendship zone, which is great if you wanna chat all night only to see her waltz out the door and straight into bed with some ******* who just walked in, but useless if you wanna be the one helping her mess up her sheets.*

SO TRUE!

*To be open with your sexuality all you gotta do is be yourself knowing that **it is fine to feel sexual about her**, just don't drool or go straight for the Wanna F**k approach (although even that works about 10% of the time).*

When we acted on our desires as AFCS, we got burned. So many of us became desireless (which is not bad for getting the attention of many pretty babes). But male lust turns women on. The problem is not the male lust, it is putting that male lust in ridiculous philosophies such as the 'Nice Guy' way and so on. Realize that there are no ilosophies with dealing with Nature and trust your gut more.

Be nice by all means, in fact I would advocate nothing but niceness, but you gotta combine it with strength and let your sexuality shine through. After all, the difference between you and the jerk is that you are nice, he is sexual, but who does she take home???

Second Male

This is regarding the Nice guy-Jerk controversy. Just want to confirm some of the claims with first-hand experience.

Listen to this one. He describes why even ugly guys get the beautiful babes.

I'm 22, an Aerospace Graduate student and considered myself in the past to be a nice guy, and still a nice guy. Recently, I'm working weekends as a bouncer. (I'm a fully qualified Ju-Jitsu 1st Dan Black Belt, but getting some free sex on the side is part of my agenda too). The truth is I can't keep the women off me. I don't know how many numbers I'm gathering, cause I cant keep track. Why not before when I was a nice-guy and concerned for my female friends?

My reasoning is that the theory of Male Dominance/Machoness or jerkiness is in effect. One girl even spelled it out for me the other night at this club I was working. Her words were something to the effect of: "90% of girls would go out with you because you're the bouncer, but you're also really good looking and sweet," or something like this.

It is STRENGTH women are attracted to. But where does this strength come from? Why do guys love crushing their bodies in the gym or in sports? It is the testosterone.

Well, now that I think about it, she's right. I see fat, ugly, bouncers who just got out of jail picking up girls all the time, whereas they wouldn't stand a chance if they weren't bouncers.... why? Because they're "tough-guys."

And as we see, this also explains why UGLY guys get the beautiful girls. It has nothing to do with confidence; it has everything to do with testosterone. Some guys can be very confidant with debates, with presentations, etc. But get them in front of a woman and they freeze. Whereas some guys cannot do all the former but know EXACTLY what to do when around women.

*In my case, I am both very polite and considerate (towards women and men, except on a bad day, when I don't give a f**k).*

Seeing this it seems to turn them on. It's the mixed signal theory where women see that you're a 'tough guy' and a 'nice guy' at the same time - the classic Humphrey Bogart thing.

SO the bottom line is: Be tough (or if you're not, look tough and act tough). This isn't to say become a bouncer, because it is not only dangerous and risky, but also very foolish, and not worth it, unless you have the skill. Even then. Personally, I'm a bit of an adrenaline junkie, so I don't mind.

Another tip - flaunt the things you're good at or like to do, or your accomplishments. But don't lie, so that upon confrontation, you're open-jawed. (i.e. I'm a pilot, and I mention this to chicks I date because I love flying and it's a part of me. It's my only hobby. And it's something not all do and so is an attention getter.)

Hope this helps. We all have a lot to learn so don't worry, you'll get there if you try. It's a matter of educating yourself about these things. I believe and I'm far from it, but the 'real Don Juans' (like the movies) have learned many hard lessons and have keenly observed others and the mistakes they make. It's like Aviation. You don't want to be in the NTSB accident report. You want to read it and learn from other's mistakes. Good luck !!

Third Male

Well here is my two cents worth and it's going to piss off most of the chicks and a lot of wimpy men.

Wimpy men! That perfectly describes this guys who are scared of their sexuality, of the effects their testosterone might have on them.

Girls do like jerks, especially the pretty girls (fair or not you fellows know the pretty ones are the ones we want).

PRECISELY!

And these girls can have anyone they want, so they deserve no sympathy when they get treated like dirt. Ladies, please spare me the fecal matter about how you don't know he is a jerk. Guys if you are a shoulder to cry on for these women you are a bunch of damn fools.

Yes!

What I really get tired of hearing is that when women get older they become more attracted to nice guys. This is true only if she has gained 100lbs,has finally divorced the jerk, and has a couple of his kids she needs some sucker to help support.

Exactly!

Even then she will secretly always want him back. It happens to me constantly, and these chicks can go to hell as far as I'm concerned.

It is not that Nice Guys finish last. It is that Nice Guys, when it comes to the woman's lust, do not win at all.

The best seducer I know personally is an alcoholic, ex-convict, pathological liar with a violent temper, who can't hold down a job.

And yet some of you guys are reading seduction material until your eyes hurt! As the scientist said above, high rates of testosterone are found in criminals, in gigantic liars, and such.

Hell, look at how popular Bill Clinton is with women voters. This is why I'm primarily interested in financial success.

To hell with these dumb chicks. Let them marry a turd and live in misery. I'm going to have a nice home, car, and retire comfortably.

Heh. At least he knows what he wants.

If you're nice, she thinks you are a puss, chump and not a real man. It's always been this way and always will be.

Actors, pro athletes, rock stars, and drug dealers are always awash with women, and these guys are known scum.

These guys are also the ones who are rated with the highest testosterone levels. This is the jerk's secret and he doesn't even realize it.

Fourth Male

This male we all know. His name is Jake Steed:

Here are some examples for you. I have a co-worker and friend who is one of the best natural seductionists I've ever met.

He has fvcked more women than any of the guys here could dream of. Yes, he parties, and yes he seduces.

Yes! We all have met them.

He just so happens to be the most brilliant, accomplished person of his position in the company. So how about your

theory that seduction "swallows" you up? Don't be rediculous. LIFE is about balance.

And yes! Jake illustrates my point here. The answer is because he does not 'seduce'. He is natural man. Highly testosteronized males, especially if they can control it, rise far in the businessworld.

The difference between Apollonian and Dionysian at its ROOT LEVEL is that Apollonian CONTROLS Nature while Dionysian is CONTROLLED by it. Apollonian is not to cast Nature out to the netherworld or to be a killjoy.

I'll take my example a bit further. I actually showed him this website, and you know what he did? He laughed his ass off.

He couldn't understand how guys like the guys here could devote so much time and energy into discussing women. He doesn't even THINK about what he does. He just does.

THANK YOU JAKE! I have been saying this on and on and on. In the 'Kill the Desperation' thread, when asked about my 'philosophy', I said there was none and you guys got confused. Later, when I said to stop treating love and sexuality like an academic degree (studying books and websites on the subject), you guys got mad at me.

This isn't rocket science, it is women. And the answers are already embedded in your nature.

So where does that leave YOU? This guy is building an amazing career AND fvcking tons and tons of hot ass women--while you and I are here discussing the fvcking path of Apollo VS the path of Dionysis and some guy named Pook who has risen to godlike status on some little known message board. So just WHO's on the Apollo path here?

Don't confuse Apollonian with career success.

Later, **RDToo** adds:

The thing that is never addressed is the quality of women that you want to get with. I would bet that Ross Jefferies has never had a real quality woman. Women are not as dumb as alot of guys here seem to think, and they learn from experience as well as we do. I know a very quality woman who shoots down all seduction attempts. She says the thing that attracts her is the "quality of character" in a man. I do not think that learning SS is building that kind of characters.

THANK YOU RDTOO! Speed Seduction cannot build character because the focus is (let us say it together):
ENTIRELY ON THE
WOMAN.

Gentlemen, when you want beautiful women you are in the big leagues. SS is more concerned with quantity than quality. This
was why I left it behind.

To INCREASE testosterone

No, do not run out and get shots. In our modern world cubicles and style, we are at desks and usually not in a state of action. But there are some easy ways to increase one's testosterone naturally and have the effects of:

-Greater Confidence

-Action

-Boldness

-Strength

No more analyzing

Turn OFF your computer and stop reading and rereading seduction knowledge. The only true benifet of the seduction material was not in the HOWs of getting seduction, it was opening your eyes of how Nature actually works. When I was a Nice Guy and read Tony's Get Laid Guy, it did a number on my head. It smashed all my nice guy 'philosophies'.

Build up the Body

Oddly, working out does seem to have more psychological effects then physical ones. Jerks always usally have nice bodies. Keep in the state of action.

Several of the guys in the 'health and fitness' forum we never hear from in the other forums. WHY? Because they know they don't need philosophies.

Listen to Anthony Ellis of the skinnyguy.net who says:

You have to have that drive and determination, and the change has to come from within. All the exterior things they don't mean much. ***You want to change the way you see life.*** *You want to change your relationships. You want to make your workplace better. You want to be happier.*

But Mr. Ellis, who went from scrawny guy to impressive muscle guy, I have noticed people who discovered that when they can change their bodies, they can change their whole lives. Did you notice that?

I'm definitely more confident. I believe in myself a lot more. I feel I can do other things I would never have thought to do before. I'm not afraid to be out at night, and that's a big deal for me. ***I enjoy the city so much more. I'm a part of it now.***

And doing this is not brain surgery; I didn't save someone's life. But I improved my life, which is very difficult to do.

How many people are trying to lose fat? How many are trying to gain muscle? How many people are trying to get ***control*** *of their lives? I have, and I feel empowered. I have no doubt any direction I choose to take my life will be successful.*

You've kept this up for about a year now. You've got the solid muscle mass, a great physique, a great outlook, but what does long-term success mean to you? Is this going to be part of it?

This is definitely part of my life now. It's a permanent fixture. I may make slight adjustments, but once you go on this trip, there's no return ticket. You don't want to go back. It's like going to Hawaii. You don't want to come back because you have seen the other side. Once you get going, once you get the momentum going, once you start looking better, once you start feeling better, you don't want to stop. You want to keep exercising, to keep looking good and feeling good.

What do you tell people who don't believe this is possible?

When I meet people with that type of attitude people who say, "That's not possible" I tell them, "For you it's not possible because you don't believe it. If you don't believe you can do it, you can't."

I think they need to believe it before it will work for them. When they open their minds, things are going to start happening. Doors are going to start opening. They see the reality of the situation.

It's absolutely 100% necessary to believe you can do it. I mean really believe it deep down inside.

I've come to realize that most of what happens to you is a result of you. ***It all comes from inside.*** *Everything you do, everything you are, how you handle everything that happens to you is your responsibility. So if you want to change, look inside. When you decide to change from the inside, the outside will fall into place.*

For as you think, you shall become. This is why the focus must always remain ON YOU.

Some other things:

Joining a Sport

Every male needs good 'ol competition. Ever notice why the 'jocks' get the girls? Perhaps its because their testosterone levels shoot up or at least appear to?

Eating More

For skinny guys, this is a must. It strengthens the body.

Don't take yourself so seriously

This is for the shy and hesitant guys. You need to get over the fact that the world does not revolve around you. It never has and never will. No one will care if you hit on a chick. No one will care if you make a move on her. Do not rationalize away your desires.

Start doing some of the things the 'awful' jerks do.

Try getting on stage and being some rock star. Your testosterone levels will shoot up. Try acting. Since projection is all, your levels of testosterone will rise. Women will naturally sense it (and also because it will spring off other actions).

A New Start

Let us consider the Nice Guy vs. Jerk debate to be over. The Nice Guy is a male who is afraid or doesn't embrace his
testosterone. The Jerk should be seen as the Testosteronized Male.

What we understand, we have power to use. What we do not understand, it has power to use us.

For we possess the ability to restart our lives over again. Be not scared (by acting nice or relying on mental tricks) to do what your testosterone was put there to make you do.

Be natural = Be Man

POOK

WildThang: *Pook is talking crap.*

Bashful: *Don't listen to Pook!*

blitzx: *His popularity is his writing style. Pook doesn't post anything new.*

cyclonus: *Pook is a hypocrite. An illogical prophet...*

CrazyRapala: *That damn damn Pook!*

Jake Steed: *and some guy named Pook who has risen to godlike status...*

QUOTE: *Hlaing Thar Yar, Myanmar - Chicken-seller Thin Sandarin had always dreamt of being a man.*

When she inexplicably grew a penis last month, the 21-year-old treated it as an awe-inspiring omen - as have the thousands of stunned villagers who have travelled to a pagoda to see him.

"On the morning of the full moon day of June 21, I noticed my thing (sex organ) was not the same as before," Thin Sandar, who now goes by the male name Than Sein, said on Wednesday.

"And my breasts disappeared," Than Sein added. "So I called out and showed it all to my mom and dad. It was very strange."

Experts have examined him, and he awaits test results from a women's hospital. - Sapa-AFP.

The 'Secret of the Jerk' post detailed this occuring in lab rats. There are legends and mythologies of this occuring throughout various cultures.

Though I am curious if the opposite is true. Can guys have their penis drop off and a vagina appear, with breasts appearing?

Apparently not. Testosterone stains. Once you've been immersed in testosterone (first in the womb, then in puberty) you cannot 'go back'. But that doesn't mean you can become very femine and weak. You'll still have balls, just not in the metaphorical sense.

Previous Pook Index Next

Pook #22 - Looks or Personality?

. · 22 July 2004 · Archived copy · Original

As guys, we love to make fun of women in how they always hold some clothing up and ask, "Do you think I'd look fat in this?" (Answer: A) Oh yeah! You'd be a bloated whale! B) No, of course not ["You're just saying that to make me feel better!"] Of course not honey. ["Liar! You think I'm fat!"] C) Proceed to bang your head against the wall.)

Women spend all day 'putting on their faces' (as if they were born without one). They waste countless hours shopping for the 'perfect' dress, reading countless magazines for 'fashion tips', etc. We make fun of them, mock them for it.

But women are obsessed about beauty because *of us*. It is our fault. After all, if a woman could cure all of the diseases, compose symphonies, and write literature, we would only remember her for how she looked.

We, on the other hand, are obsessed with our jobs, our status, and our brains. For us, looks usually translates into working out = building our muscles = appearing to have more 'protection power' to the chicks.

Women look much more for 'the complete package' with men. Women would take a less attractive man that can make her feel good, make her laugh, make her FEEL romantic and all those other goodly good feelings women are addicted to then a handsome bloke who doesn't know what he's doing and doesn't know how to make her feel good.

Men are also more discriminating. Girls that don't look good have a very very hard time since looks is what men always screen on.

Being a not as so good looking guy is not a vice. Being a guy with a bad personality IS.

Less attractive guys with great personalities will always have HUGE advantages over attractive guys with bad personalities.

Women may be attracted to you by your looks and give you more auditions, but it is the **personality** that keeps them.

Nice guys' personalities is that of supplicating, never disagreeing, always going, "Whatever you want dear." Jerks' personalities is that of not caring, always self centered, and always going, "Relationship? That just means sex on a semi-annual basis, right?" Nice Guys are great for relationships, jerks are great for attracting but both lose in the long run.

Guys want good looks. But women want CHARMING, FUNNY, SUCCESSFUL, and INTELLIGENT guys that will *sweep them off their feet.*

Previous Pook Index Next

Pook #23 - Fountain of Youth

. · 23 July 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Rejoice!

And be glad! All those frustrations, all those hesitations, the nervousness, the burning, the butterflies of unease, the confusions, and the errors that manifest itself when your mind says "Do this" and your body and personality do not follow- all of these can be washed away... forever.

Yes, you thought yourself ignorant about women, so inexperienced, so confused, and you just seemed to be following an evil circle. Maybe you were like me, a super mega dork who slept through life until now. And, perhaps like I did, you read and reread all material on women and life you could get your hands on.

But what if I told you that you were always a Don Juan at one point in time? And I do not mean in a specific situation or hour, I mean at one point in your life you KNEW EVERYTHING ABOUT WOMEN and handled them WITH PERFECT EASE, so perfect that it was 100% NATURAL and if anyone told you to view a website or books for 'information' you would laugh yourself silly!

Wouldn't that change everything? Wouldn't you say to yourself, "Well! If I was the PERFECT Don Juan then I would try to remember how I THOUGHT and what I DID when I WAS that Don Juan rather than mine endless posts and books. After all, if I WAS a Don Juan, then I require only *recollection* NOT *revelation*."

Go find a picture of yourself when you were a young kid (say at age 6). Look at him! He is smiling gleefully without a care in the world. He doesn't know he is going to turn into the sad adult that you are now. Hormonally, the only difference between you and your youthful shadow is that you are flooded in testosterone and in a state of chemical madness. Your youthful shadow knows better of the joys of life. It is no wonder parents find their offspring such a wonder as they reframe the dull life of bills, appointments, and responsibilities with the fire of youth.

Yes, you say that you are an *adult* now. You have *responsibilities* such as bills and chores and work to do. You have no time for such nonsense. Or do you?

I bet when you were a kid, you were a *natural* Don Juan. I bet you got all the girls in the sandbox. As a child, you knew how to treat women better then even though you are now an adult. Some of these factors include that you....

-Knew girls and guys were different.

Trendy intellectuals have this problem today! You KNEW there was MALE and FEMALE.

-Realized girls had cooties and could destroy a guy.

This isn't too far off as girls can totally devour and destroy a man and his life.

-Knew that it was *improper* to be girlish. You would (and ought to) get beaten up on the playground.

Older people get an error in the brain called PHILOSOPHY that speaks bubble swelled words like 'relativity', 'revolution', freedom' and pop with the scent of rotten eggs of pious moralizations, bumper sticker arguments, and rambling dissertations. You knew, at an early age that YOU CANNOT FREE YOURSELF FROM GENDER.

-Girls were not to be taken seriously. After all, they are girls.

It is the nice guy that takes the woman seriously in every and all things AND CANNOT SAY NO TO HER!)

-Girls were to be guided, teased, because, after all, they were girls and, as such, tended to mess things up. You pulled their hair, made fun of their clothes...

...not because an internet guy named DeAngelo told you to do so, but because you knew instinctively that it was right and proper for you to do.

-As a boy, you would never leave the plans up to the woman. Oh, that would be awful! As a kid, you had to say WHAT you two were going to do, WHEN, WHERE, and sometimes WHY. You had to be direct.

"Why do I need a plan, Pook? Why can't we do what SHE wants to do?" Because she has no idea what she wants to do. Example:

"When do you want to come over?"

"I don't know."

"On Tuesday or Thursday?"

"I just don't know."

"How about Wednesday? Is that OK for you?"

"Maybe..."

"What about Tuesday or Friday?"

"I dunno!"

**aggravated* "Argh! I am coming to pick you up at 7:45 PM on Wednesday."*

**sweetly* "OK!"*

-You did not get into serious talks with a girl. You did not turn her into Oprah. You did not try to impress her with how 'intellectual' you are. You probably hit her, cried "Tag!", ran off, and she would chase after you. You would get on the swings. You would push her off the slides. On the see-saw, you would try to fall as fast as possible to catapult her away.

Everything you did with a girl was ACTION dates. Nice Guys try to cook the lady dinner. YOU wouldn't even DARE do such a thing when you were young. Now I know why some of my best dates are ones as simple as taking the girl to the park and run around like little kids. Action! Action! Action!

-As a kid you loved to sing. You loved to laugh.

What do you do now? You are so uptight that you wouldn't catch yourself dead singing outside your home. And what happened to that happy laughter that marked your childhood? Why are you taking everything so seriously now!?

-You had toys and loved to play with them. When the girls entered your sphere, you insisted on playing with YOUR toys. You would ride your bike at death defying speeds. You played with cranes and Tonka dump trucks. You LOVED firetrucks.

When you grow up, your Hot Wheels cars turn into super fast sport cars (which you still drive at death defying speeds). Your cranes and dump trucks turn into the big ones and you still love the firetrucks. Compare this to the Nice Guy who does not understand the beauty of construction or get scared at the idea of firetrucks. There is a reason why women LOVE firemen

-You embraced your imagination. If you played with a girl, it was to be *on your terms*. You will not find a boy that says to a girl, "Whatever YOU want to do." I remember flicking caterpillars on girls (and they loved it!). You would point to the girl and go, "You are the detective and I am the cop." And then you pointed to others and go, "Look at these villains! Come, we must round them up!" And the girls joyfully played the part.

What do you do NOW? "Let's go get dinner." BORING.

-You had one eternal enemy in childhood, boredom. Like a void, it encroached on you in school, ensnared you with a stupid trip with the parents, and enveloped you as you stepped on the school bus. You embraced every chance for play.

If there is ONE thing a man must NEVER do to a woman, it is this: DO NOT BORE HER. Make her happy, make her angry, make her laugh, ANYTHING but bore her. That enemy, boredom, is back and women are looking for you to strike it down. Embrace your youth and live again for the first time.

-Even at your young age, you were aware of fashion. Your mother was perplexed at why you couldn't wear THAT shirt or put on THOSE shoes. You knew the importance clothes and appearance had.

Nice Guys and chumps try to say nothing for appearance and say, "she will like me for who I am", and, with the same breath, ignore the chicks who do nothing appearance wise (big whale chicks, pimply chicks, and such) while getting shot down at the real women.

-When you were young, your father was a DEMI-GOD. You both feared and loved him. He could be playful when he wanted to. But, always, he was a SOURCE of STRENGTH, always confidant, and always seemed to know the solution to any problem you came across. This feeling of awe you thought of your father is the perfect definition of a MAN.

When you strive to be that same towering figure, which seemed to have solutions to all problems, confidence for all troubles, know how for all messes, stability for all storms, women will react to you in the same way. It is said, "Women want to marry their fathers." But this phrase has been taken completely out of context. Women want to marry THAT guy, that MAN they knew when they were a little girl. You can only understand and become that man through the eyes of the young boy.

Now some women will protest this advocacy of looking at women as little girls. This works especially well with the YOUNGER chicks (which is what most guys here want). This also solves a legal mystery: why were women from 1800s and down treated, BY LAW, as children? We know the answer now). (And I would say to women to treat men the same way. Women are most charming when they view us as boys.)

"He, whom the gods love, grows young," said the ancient Greeks. Look at that picture of the young you! Now look in the mirror. The blazing light in the youth's eyes, the curiosity, and the wonders he saw at Nature and life, the joy

he loved at any occasion! Are they still part of you? Look into the mirror. Is the same light in your eyes?

If not, then you know what you need to do. You have come to the solution of your Don Juan troubles. Legends spoke of a Fountain of Youth that turns the old young. Conquistadors prowled continents hunting for this magical facet of Nature. This legend of the Fountain of Youth was like a psychological splinter in the minds of so many men, driving them across the world through dangers and storms to obtain such a treasure. But it was not in the world, it was in us. Who knew women are the key that seems to unlock all of Nature's mysteries?

Doesn't this clear the stormy air of confusion? (especially with younger 'immature' women!) When you are with a woman and a thousand Don Juan philosophies and tactics come to thwart your peace, remember the kid that you were... and how he looked on life. Yes, she might be a twenty-something vixen. But underneath those milk-sacs and fat deposits that drive your chemicals mad, is a little girl. Rather than being nervous about some date, view the date as if you were seven years old. Everything becomes simple and fun (as it should be!).
***
One thing is for certain, women go NUTS over a guy who keeps his boyhood charm as women want an ESCAPE. They do not want to hear your views on the world. They want to have the happiness and fun of their childhood back (as everyone does!). They will FIGHT for the rare men who truly live like this (this also explains the mystery why uneducated men often seem to do BETTER with women than many men with PhDs who are so 'smart' they intellectualized life out of existence).

As we know, cell division error, aided by free radicals, accumulates errors throughout the body as time passes. A person of 80 obviously has more errors than that of 40. His tissues start to fail, making his organs fail, then entire organ systems collapse, until life is snuffed out.

In the same way, our minds start out pristine and pure (that of the child!) and everything is playful, fun, and simple. But as time passes, philosophies and bitter memories accumulate. The diseased person looks at life only through the philosophical lens, living a life of past memories, and so his life decays and decays until there is no life within him.

Pook hands you the chalice. Drink and pass the cup around. This water from the Fountain of Youth will wash away these errors, all those ‘frames’ your bitter memories eat at your mind. Drink to the girls that rejected you viciously. Drink to the ‘macho’ guys that beat you up in school. Drink to the chains of routines, errands, and appointments. Drink to your ambition, drink to your melancholy, drink to your loneliness. Drink to your heart’s content and pass the cup around. Your mind has now absorbed the blessed waters of the Fountain of Youth. *You are now the light of the world!* Your life is now young, fruitful, fun, easy, simple, and your body will reflect it as well.

The world is now your sandbox. Rejoice! Many people get swallowed up in their vanity, all believing themselves 'brilliant' and 'smart'. They follow their philosophies unquestioningly and their lives walk on the quicksand of melancholy. But... they see the new you and it smashes all their philosophies to bits. They ask each other, "How can he be so happy? How can he be so ALIVE? Let us study him and we will write articles and manifestos on him." But you know the truth. Their ambitions have consumed them while you look on life with youthful eyes...

...and live in a Child's Paradise.
***
QUOTE: *"Indeed, maybe the childhood Pook speaks of is true of him but it seems more like some idealistic version of the past that never really existed. I too recall my childhood with torment, if I could I wouldn't live it again. Maybe this metaphor will work for some people tho..."*
You guys are thinking too much of this.

There is no **Time** in Sexuality. In the realm of sexuality uncorrupted with 'intellect' and 'politics' and all, which is

Womaniverse, time simply doesn't exist.

This is not looking at your childhood as if it were some 'Golden Age'. To the contrary, your entire life is the Golden Age. The problem isn't because you aged (because in sexuality, time doesn't exist), the problem with many is they've become so super-intellectual or so 'educated' that it corrupts their sexuality.

Your body doesn't get corrupted by Time. It gets corrupted by cell division error and free radicals. In the same manner, your mind/soul doesn't age. It gets corrupted with 'intellect', 'philosphies', and 'education'.

I always wondered WHY girls could be attracted to hard bodies, happy smiles, but NEVER the genius. Now we know why.

Years ago, I was at my 'most natural state' when I would rant about philosophy, poiltics, economics, and so on.

As you can imagine, this bored the women (women want smart guys but not 'melancholy' filled philosophic guys). My actions were so 'intellectualized' that women saw through everything (or used me in some way).

This is an anti-intellectual post (very tame of what will follow). Many people sense that Time is going faster and faster and faster for them, as if Life is speeding up. Things become more frantic, responsibilities become more stacked, and the geometry of rules and regulations grow narrower and narrower around your life until nothing remains.

The reason why Time is speeding up is because your life's relationship to sexuality is going down.

This isn't about bringing your childhood into the present. It is to CLEANSE your mind and soul of all this philosophic DUST and bitter memory GARBAGE that has accumulated.

We cannot reverse time with our bodies (thanks to the cell-division error). But we can drink from this fountain of youth for our own minds.

With one sip, the 'complexity' of women just vanish!

With two sips, you no longer want to 'talk' and 'intellectualize' with girls, you just want to run around and have fun.

With three sips, you look at all these 'manifestos' of women and how to get women with disbelief.

This Fountain of Youth is NOT immaturity. It is NOT mediocrity.

I find it amazing how people go through so much trouble to make sure their body isn't contaminated by disease, germs, and the like. Yet, there is no such consideration for their mind and soul with politics, philosophies, and perversions of all sort to infect and tear down your sexuality, and thus, your life.

Think about it. Do you want to have a relationship based on talking about DNA?

The childhood example applies becaues *no child* intellectualizes life. It was only years and years later that I decided I was 'smart' and so read and read and got filled with a lot of BS that life slipped past me.

Most people's sexuality deteriorates. Some people's deteriorates more than others. But when one of these people see a Don Juan, oh, they start intellectualizing what is 'really' going on. So all these 'theories' are born which is just the

intellectual's excuse to not face the truth about himself....

That HE was not so 'brilliant' after all!

Previous Pook Index Next

Pook #24 - Kill That Desperation!

. · 24 July 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Being a Don Juan is not a net sum of smooth manuevers and methods but of your own outlook on the world and on women. ANYONE can memorize 'techniques', but FEW can change the way HOW they think. Women will be able to sniff out the former. But with the latter, women will be clawing each other for you.

A Don Juan is a state of mind, not a list of methods and tricks.

This must be stated because it brings us to the subject of 'desperation'.

In the end, we are all desperate with desire. We wouldn't be looking for tips and answers if we did not desire a girlfriend or MULTIPLE girlfriends (being a bit ambitious, aren't we?). We all want a woman (or women), but our desire and feelings brings out the desperation traits within us.

Where I work, I ask the women why they found a co-worker to be so desperate. Here are some of their answers:

-always giving the women attention.
-calling all the time (and calling immediately once getting the number, immediately returning a call, etc.)
-taking every opportunity to talk to them (and telling everything about yourself)
-always available.
-NEVER willing to walk away (NEVER willing to disagree, ALWAYS supplicating).
-etc.

What theme can we find in the above? It is that the man puts the woman on the pedestal rather then himself.

Imagine if a woman did all of the above to you. Imagine if a woman was OBSESSED with you, always calling you, always available, and always spending her free time FOR YOU. Any interest you had for this woman would soon evaporate. Why? Because in your own mind you are thinking two things: "No one else must want her," AND "If I can get her OBSESSED about me, I know I can get BETTER girls to be *interested* in me." Her desperation is turning you off. The same is true for women.

Women are not attracted to desperate men. Period. I've told my co-worker this and his response: "Well, that is just who I am." Eventually, he will realize that the only common denominator in his pattern of crash and burns will be HIM. So if anyone has told you that you're desperate, consider that its true.

There is a KEY to removing desperation forever. There is no simple 'trick' that will kill the desperation. It will not be in how you dress, how you talk, or where you go for dates. No, the KEY is in how you think.

The KEY to killing desperation (and attracting crowds of women) is to THINK and BELIEVE that you are The Great Catch.

Desperate guys do not do this. They see the woman as the prize rather then themselves. They see that the woman must be 'wooed' rather then them. They will, thus, supplicate and become a 'nice guy'. (And nice guys finish LAST.)

If you start treating a woman like precious gold, she will believe she is gold. And once she believes it, she will DUMP YOU because YOU have given her the sense that she is BETTER then you. Once she thinks that, she will want to REPLACE YOU with someone better, because you have given her reasons to believe that YOU ARE

UNWORTHY OF HER GREATNESS.

After all, if we think we can ****** someone better, we will. This holds true for both men and women. The last thing we want is to settle for a mate when we could have gotten better. (This is why the element of challenge is so important in the Dating Game.)

The lesson: DON'T GIVE HER A REASON TO THINK SHE IS BETTER. You are the gold; she should be thrilled just to have A CHANCE with you.

The first step in becoming the Prince Charming every woman dreams of is to THINK OF YOURSELF AS A PRINCE.

When you BELIEVE you are that prince, that you are The Great Catch, all the 'desperation' signs you were emitting vanish and an aura of attraction will surround you. Combine this manner of thinking with all the Don Juan skills you know, and you will become irresistable.

Let us look at the desperation signs again:

-always giving the women attention.

Now that you're The Prince, you don't have time to give women attention. A Prince is kind, ENTHUSIASTIC, smiling, yet YOU have things to do. A Prince's time is precious. A woman must win your attention; you shall not give it to them.

-calling all the time (and calling immediately once getting the number, immediately returning a call, etc.)

The Great Catch simply CANNOT call all the time because he has tons of other numbers. The Great Catch is not competing for a particular girl. The girls, rather, are competing for him.

-taking every opportunity to talk to them (and telling everything about yourself)

Why would Prince Charming tell everything about himself to a woman? No, the woman must JUSTIFY HERSELF to him because YOU ARE THE GOODS. The Prince would reveal things about himself only as a reward. The woman loves the mystery in this and sees knowing the Prince as peeling layers of an onion, knowing him GRADUALLY.

-always available.

The Great Catch is busy with many many women! She must fight for your time, NOT the other way around.

-NEVER willing to walk away (NEVER willing to disagree, ALWAYS supplicating).

Prince Charming wouldn't accept ANY disrespect from any woman. If a woman gave him such disrespect, he WALKS AWAY. The Prince KNOWS all these women want to be with him so he can eject at any time.

Now, I know what you're thinking, "Pook, I can't act like a Prince Charming or The Great Catch. I DON'T have tons of women after me." This is reversing CAUSE and EFFECT. ASSUME you are the Great Catch, THINK that you are, and *as you think you shall become*. It becomes a self-fullfilling prophecy. Treat your hobbies as if they have more value then the women do (or treat your hobbies as if they WERE other women). When you think you are the

Great Catch, you will act like it and the women will KNOW that you are.

Women love certain traits in guys. By THINKING you are The Great Catch allows you to emit these traits NATURALLY and without any effort.

-Good looks

You cannot change your genes. But you can change the way how you treat those genes. Does Prince Charming wear raggedy T-shirts? Does the Great Catch walk with his head down? NO! You will wear nice clothes and walk with pride BECAUSE you are proud of yourself. After all, you ARE one of the best. So treat yourself accordingly.

Anyone can wear a suit. But few can wear a suit proudly. Few can wear a suit that seems to fit them naturally and creates an aura of importance. Good carriage, excellent threads, are the CONSEQUENCE by how you think of yourself. Women know this and is the reason why you are judged by this criteria.

-Humor

Girls LOVE humor. Prince Charming and the Great Catch are funny because they know that they, themselves, are fun. They don't worry, "My goodness, she is really cute! How can I attract her!?" They ASSUME she will be attracted and they have fun in the meantime.

Don't be shy. Let your personality SHINE. When you think you are the Great Catch, this should come more naturally because you have nothing to fear.

-Dominance

You are THE MAN. You must be IN CHARGE. Desperate guys will try to be 'nice' in every which way to win the girl (and fail, of course). But Prince Charming and the Great Catch will SWEEP WOMEN OFF THEIR FEET. When you THINK you are the goods, you realize that it is ridiculous to treat a relationship and flirting as walking on eggshells. YOU set the rules, NOT the other way around. After all, YOU are the prize to be sought.

Look at the soap operas and romance novels for grounds of this. Women like to be in the presence of a MAN, not a boy, not a chump, and certainly not a 'nice guy'.

Dominance is also being sure of yourself. Do not speak in a soft tone. Speak STRONGLY and behave STRONGLY. After all, do you think Prince Charming worries about making mistakes? No, so neither should you.

I know, I know. I can hear you saying, "But I must worry about mistakes or else I'll have another 'learning experience' on my hands."

This is a GOOD THING. Let us say that, in a normal conversation, you came across a word you did not know how to pronounce. Most people will utter the word softly for fear of criticism. This is stupid. Say the word LOUD! Let me repeat, say the word LOUD! If you are wrong, you will be corrected. Clearing up mistakes is ALWAYS a good thing and should NEVER be feared.

The same applies with dating. Do not date with hesitation and shyness; date with all conviction. Remember, the biggest risk you can take in life is not to take any risks at all.

-Ambition

When you think yourself as The Great Catch, you KNOW women are not the priority of your life. After all, the Great Catch knows he can get any woman whenever he wants. When you feel good about life, you cease to fear success and demand Life show all that it has. Aim for the moon. If you miss, at least you'll be among the stars.

So in the end, too often men think they need a girlfriend to have their life 'complete'. The consequence is that these men will emit signs of desperation. Success is achieved first through the mind, then through the world, never the other way around.

***

Hi shakes

How can you be assertive and aggressive without apppearing desperate?

Be selective and picky, not 'on the prowl' or 'hungry'. (Who knows? That next girl may be the one you marry. Might as well have high standards!)

ALWAYS be willing to walk away. NEVER accept low interest responses (AD's posts cover this well).

shy guys and non-aggressive guys get no where with woman.

I am (was) extremely shy and very non-aggressive. You can use it to your advantage!

For Non-Aggressiveness

For some reason, I tend to attract flocks of chicks. They hit on me, touch me, try to get me to ask them out (and I don't, heh heh). Other guys my age I talk to a few have had the same thing. We found out the reason why, as was summed up by what one girl told me:

"You're not like most guys. You're different, intelligent, and SEXIER THEN A GREEK GOD!"

OK, maybe she didn't say THAT. But she did say that I was different and not like most guys. Why? Because I WASN'T hitting on every chick. I wasn't out 'hustling' the girls.

Guys who want a girlfriend hit on girls all the time.

Here are some facts:

Fact A: Guys who hit on girls appear desperate and needy.
Fact: B Girls want guys who don't need girls. (I like AD's metaphor: Be as free as a bird. Girls want to seize that bird and TOSS IT in a cage! That cage is called committment.)

THEREFORE, guys shouldn't 'hit on' girls. (Guys hit on girls because they are needy. Change your thinking and you cease to be needy, and you'll naturally stop hitting on girls.)

I think it is best to treat a chick, no matter how hot and steamy she is, no matter how cute and perfect, as a *guy*. The only exception is don't talk technical stuff with them like you would with a guy (computers, cars, how to lay chicks, etc.) They will LOVE this. With the girls I like, I talk about THEM and they become more and more attracted to me because guys do not do this.

That is how I used my non-aggressiveness to my advantage. It can be excellent for creating attraction (in some situations). Problem is that you have to turn it off eventually and GO FOR HER. (And you KNOW that she will say, "YES! Oh, this is the luckiest day of my life!" because you **think** are Prince Charming. It becomes a self-fullfilling prophecy.)

Using shyness as an advantage

Shy people THINK too much. Shy people *react* to situations when they should be *acting/initiating*. But when you're on a date or any time talking to a woman you like, you can use your shyness as an advantage. Shy people do not go around talking about themselves or try to sell themselves because they hate talking in general (girls hate this anyway. See? Much goodness already). When she asks you about yourself, give her a general answer and turn the conversation back on her. Shy people's advantage is

they let women flap their gums!

The Art of Conversation is a **great** article at sosuave.com. She flaps her gums, you take something she said that you agree with, paraphrase it in your own words, and feed it back to her. She will levitate before your very own eyes!

See? Shyness and non-agression can be GREAT virtues rather then the vices they seem to be.

I get my women from the workplace (it makes work seem like recreation!). However, in a workplace setting you have to be careful as a reputation sticks. Go out with every girl and you are labeled a *player* (which women hate). Hit on every girl there, you will instantly be stamped 'Mr. Desperate' and all the girls will laugh at you. (I've seen it happen to poor chumps.) Act reserved by demonstrating your FUN personality and you will KNOW when they will be DYING for you to ask them out. Sometimes they'll even bring themselves to ask YOU out (which you say no! They become even more intrigued for guys don't turn down girls).

Clubs and parties are not the place, I think, for shy non-agressive people. I get better results when I can talk to people without SHOUTING ALL THE TIME.

You can get away with hitting on women if you won't see them again (in the workplace or classroom, they will remember and reputations stick).

Just because you get a date does not mean you stop being attractive. You must make your attractiveness consistent by continually thinking yourself as the Great Catch or as Prince Charming. For if you DON'T, then you start to put her on a pedestal and have that fatal romance disease known as desperation.

Right now, I'm in a situation where I'm on the verge of dating two women. Even though I've read the articles on this site a billion times and read this forum daily, I can feel myself wanting to 'fall' in infatuation.

It is all in our minds of how we look at the women. See,

Good Pook:

"I wonder what FUN I can have with her! I wonder what NEW THINGS I'll learn about women from her. I wonder what happens if I try this strategy on her..."

Bad Pook:

"Wowza! She is HOT! I hope I look and act all right! I really really hope I don't do anything **stupid** or **dumb** tonight."

Notice the difference? When Pook is bad, he places the 'success' of the night on if HE doesn't 'screw up' (which he will because he is worried to death about it). When Pook is good, he places the 'success' factor on the experimentation and fun (which as a result the Pook will come across as fun and different).

Be the Good Pook!

Previous Pook Index Next

Pook #25 - Embrace Your Sexuality

. · 25 July 2004 · Archived copy · Original

To the Nice Guys, AFCs, Chumps, and Assorted Miscellaneous Confused Males:

Sirs: Let us have a little talk on the spirit of sexuality. This might trouble you, to be sure, it might anger others, which is most certain, but the stubborn fact remains that you cannot be successful with women *ever* until you embrace your sexuality. Yet until now, you were not interested in sexuality. Rather, you wanted to hear more philosophies, more tricks and tactics to be placed in your quiver of dating. It is as if you were to say: "Yes, yes, these guys that are getting girls are all very well and good. But what *philosophies* should we deploy to get the women? We purchase bits and pieces of philosophies on this site like we are in a Dating Wal-Mart. We, however, enjoy being the *dorks we are* and wish only for more philosophies to add to our arsenal."

How blind you guys are! Now, I wish to ask you a question.

"Go ahead, Pook."

Do you see that female over there? No, not the thin one. No, not the one with the long hair and curvaceous body. I am talking about the LARGE one in front of the Ho-hos. Yes, her hair is an absolute mess. She has no sense of style. She keeps many pets and spends extraordinary amounts of money on them. Personality? She is bitter. She enjoys philosophy just as you do. Why, she is going to become a *feminist*!

Is she a woman?

"Pook! Of course not! She is FEMALE, that can be proven. But do not call such a thing a woman!"

If she is not a woman, what is she?

"Hag."
"*****."
"Walrus."
"Witch."
"Titanic."

Ah! She is an *androgynous*! Androgynous females do not look like girls or act like them. Three professors of mine, who I have talked to about their past and their regrets, told me they were *clueless* with women even though they knew everything about the Elizabethan Period, the History of the Supreme Court, and the philosophical ruminations in the 19th century. Despite that, they married the woman I described above despite how 'brilliant' they were.

Other guys BLOCK their sexuality by being NICE. "Sexuality is disrespectful and makes me look like a pig!" In the end, these *nice guys* end up being thought up as an @ss by women and treated as one.

If you want to AVOID this type of fate, read on.

Embrace Your Sexuality!

This guy has no problems talking to women except those *he desires*. The desire sabotages him and wrecks him

completely. Listen! We can hear him!

“I feel so guilty.”
“This is like I don’t respect them!”
“This is painful.”
“I feel like I am using them.”
“I feel dirty doing this.”

Oh, poor guy! His problem is not the women but himself. Why is he feeling guilty? Why does he think he is being sinister? Look, we are going to see him ten years from now. Behold!

The guy is ten years older but still has no girl. He has a decent job, a decent life, but it seems meaningless without a girl. He becomes BITTER. He is ANGRY at life.

If only he could FIX whatever problem ten years earlier! How much joy and bliss would be in his life!

This guy’s life has been like the hard desert with painful arrows constantly peppering him from the blazing sun. He wanders aimless, seeing an oasis in that beautiful woman who only sees him as a friend. The beautiful women, the ones he wants, are like mirages. He thought they would finally end his painful wandering and lead him into that Promised Land of bliss. Oh if he could only find one! All the pains would end!

The key is not in finding this oasis, this woman, to end all your pains. The key is to realizing that the problem is not the women, not the situation, but himself and only himself.

Now he stands in the desert but lo and behold, a heavenly rain has cascaded from the sky. The dryness of loneliness, the ever constant thirst for affection, is quenched with the blissful rain.

What was the ONE THING that caused the rain that quenched his thirst and cooled the heat? It was to embrace his sexuality. If you cannot embrace your sexuality, you can never be a Don Juan, and you can never be happy in life.

Are you a guy? Take a look in the mirror. Chances are, if you are at this website wondering the hows and whys, then you are not a guy.

But I forget myself. Let me introduce my prop.

Thus enters Nerd Boy.

Why, hello, Nerd Boy! Look at you! Pocket protector and all! You have glasses and look like a drone. Your clothes don’t match. Heck, your clothes don’t even have any personality. You are so mental that you cannot grasp the ways of the flesh.

Just as you thought the fat chick was not a woman, women will not think this Nerd Boy is a guy. Why? He isn’t fully Human. It’s obvious he hasn’t had any contact with Womaniverse (which is sexuality itself). He will make excuses:

“I am very handsome” (which is true! A handsome drone is he!)
“I am a genius”
“I have a great job”

Oh, poor Nerd Boy! Women do not possess the faculties to see beauty as men do. Women do not care for your intellect (i.e. masculine chatter). The guy that woman is with may be ugly, may even be stupid, but he is absolutely *sexual*. Nerd Boy is blind to sexuality and, therefore, blind to life.

Sexuality Problem #1: Looks

Are you ugly? Are you beautiful? It doesn't matter. Women do not see beauty; they see only sexuality. So how does a sexual male LOOK?

To put it bluntly, it is the bad@ss. This guy has the look of power be it a shaved head, leather coat, professional corporate suit, backwards cap, a well toned body, spiky hair, or whatever else. This person looks like *a guy*. He is not androgynous. He knows what his sexuality is and embraces it.

How is a guy supposed to look? To be male is to drive against Nature, to pierce her. He is not a pretty boy (though, this might get some girls too). It is almost a 'rough' look. A guy has a look of some masculinity about him.

How to Look Like Brad Pitt

No, I didn't mistype that. One girl I knew saw Brad Pitt on TV and orgasmed. "He looks SOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOO good, *sigh*." But Brad Pitt's effect has nothing to do about looks. Brad Pitt is a very symmetrical union of the two sexualities, male and female. He looks innocent but also as a bad@ss, sweet but rough, smooth yet rugged, elegant but strong. "Pook, this is a contradiction!" No, it is not.

It is well known that women like guys who have some feminine aspects (i.e. PRETTY BOYS). To get the 'Brad Pitt effect', you need to figure out where you are on the sexuality scale (though many males like NERD BOY aren't on the scale at all!). If you're a feminine male, you are probably thin, innocent, modest, shy, pretty boyish, curls for hair, large eyes, and have an almost aristocratic style about you. The masculine male is muscular, large, loud, motorcycle, has a goatee or shadow, and has a sporty or outdoorsman style to him. Now that you know where you are at, simply add in elements of the other. Some guys, when they go onto Manhood, carry a piece of adolescence with them. These are the guys that end up with the 'Brad Pitt effect' though you can make it your own.

Compare this to Nerd Boy. He looks at them and thinks how much 'smarter' he is. But is he smarter? No! They may not know their calculus, but they know their sexuality. When women flock to these guys, the Nerd Boy only stands there in awe.

.

Sexuality Problem #2: Personality

Come here and talk to the lovely lady, Nerd Boy! "Hiiiiiiiii. Hooooooow arrrrrrre youuuuuuu." Creepy! "I will do anything for you, lovely lady!" I'm sure you will, Nerd Boy!

But when a guy has embraced his sexuality, he treats the women like they are children. "But Pook! That is not politically correct!" Foolio! This is sexuality which is above and beyond your petty philosophies and politics. Now where were we? Oh yes, he does not take women seriously. And why should he? He is a man after all. He has a *sense of self*. He is monad. He doesn't need anyone to define himself.

But embracing one's sexuality means enjoying it. You do not look at the woman as work or as a riddle to be solved. No, you go in and have FUN. You do not dwell on BORING subjects like Nerd Boy here does.

So what we end up with is a type of cocky and funny guy. DeAngelo covers this subject quite a bit. But you will

never be cocky and funny by intentionally trying to be cocky and funny. You are not a chick putting up a façade. No, be a guy and so act like a guy.

Here, gentlemen, is a ballerina. She has just told you of all the things she does, how she dances, and everything like that. What is your response?

NERD BOY: “WOW! THAT IS REALLY INTERESTING! TELL ME MORE ABOUT THE FABRICS AND SPIFFY COLORS OF THE PAGEANT, THE DANCE MOVES, ETC.”

GUY: “You must have really strong legs.”

It is as simple as that! Some guys cannot control themselves and start being blatantly sexual to the poor women. This, of course, is unattractive to the ladies. This is not being rude or blatant. It is to realize that sexuality is not contained in the bed and is part of every interaction you have with the woman.

Look! She is touching you! This is good. Touch is sexual in itself. Kino is sign of interest. If you kino a girl too soon, it can backfire on you. You no longer remain a mystery to her. The game is up, she knows you want her. But if she thinks you are not interested in her and you want to say you are, you kino her. Kino is a form of ******** for, “I am interested in you.” When you kino the chick, the chick understands perfectly what you are saying. Kino is communication. Using it to *create* interest (which may not be there) rather then as communication will backfire. (However, failure to receive or initiate kino makes one sexually a mannequin. Know why? Because mannequins do not initiate kino!)

BAD: Hi, I’m FlirtyBoy! (Touch. Touch.) You look SO cute in that outfit! My goodness! You must get compliments all the time! (And FlirtyBoy continues to flirt.)

RIGHT: Hi, I’m Mr. Right. (Some small talk). What’s your number?

A guy does not flirt with chicks (unless he is working, thus captive, and has nothing else better to occupy his mind). A guy ASKS out the chick to show he’s interested.

Sexuality Problem #3: Dating

What to do! What to do! Poor Nerd Boy! He cannot invite the chick over to view his computer together. So he thinks, “What do males do to COURT the lady?” Dinner, of course!

Nerd Boy and his chick eat their meal.

But Nerd Boy, I am sorry to interrupt, how are you different from any other male? Look! There goes your woman, never to talk to you again! She said you were boring! Alas!

“But I gave her dinner! She ought to like me!”

But ANY guy can give her dinner. Can you give her dinner, Trash Heap Guy?

“Yes, Pook. I can buy her dinner.”

And what says you, Mr. Nice Guy?

“I can buy her dinner, also.”

And Mr. Sosuave? What about you?

“I also can buy her dinner.”

THERE IS NO DIFFERENCE. ANY male can buy her dinner. Heck, any FEMALE could buy her dinner.

“So what do you suggest, Pook?”

Action dates! Do not sit there, talking. She can do that with her girlfriends. Guys, on the other hand, are all about ACTION. Real men are not making dinner. They are swimming rivers and climbing mountains. Find something *actionwise* and get her involved.

“But Pook! I enjoy sitting in front of my computer all day and don’t like ‘action dates’.” Learn to like them. Look, are you even living? There are brilliant things out there to enjoy and do. What are you wasting your youth on? Sitting in front of the computer?

Sexuality Problem # 4: Love Shyness

Grab your white coats, gentlemen, and follow me.

Pook and the others go down the hall and turn to the left.

Ahh, now we are at the testing room. Behind the window is where we will experiment. They will not see us, gentlemen, for they will see only a mirror. Here, we can peek in on the outside world.

"But Dr. Pook, what is the experiment going to be?"

Patience, indeed! Let us begin.

A man was in the room and all was well. Then, all of a sudden, a GORGOUS woman enters the room. The man snuck glances. Soon, the woman got tired of this game and she came over to speak to him.

Focus, gentlemen! Watch how he responds!

"Uhhh ummmm errrr ooh ummm..."

Again!

"Errr ohhh ummmm dohh..."

Stop! Remove the woman! Quarantine the male. We cannot risk the possibility that his error is contageous.

"Yes, Dr. Pook."

"Right away, Dr. Pook."

"Anything you say, Dr. Pook."

Ahh... it is so nice when they do what you ask. Now, display the data on our subject.

The screen flashed up the male's brain map.

Good heavens! I was afraid of this. His entire frontal lobe is severely damaged. Gentlemen, to show you the extent of the damage this male labels as *shyness*, let us look at it through the woman's perspective.

"Not Womaniverse!"

Yes. OK, she walks into the room. She KNOWS the guy is checking her out. (Guys, the girls are more clever then you think. They WILL SPOT YOU if you check them out. If you like a chick, she will eventually know it.) So the chick decides to talk to the guy. And the guy didn't seem capable of conversation! Why, he just mumbled and bumbled about something. What did he say? It doesn't matter. Look at HOW he said it. He wasn't speaking, he was farting from his mouth!

Now, what was the woman thinking?

A gentleman peered at the data and looked up, stunned. "She thought he was brain damaged."

Exactly! And you know what, HE WAS. SHE is right here and HE is wrong. He knew something was wrong but he can't figure it out.

The problem is Descartes. Yes, 'ol Descartes thought that he could divide the mind and body with his philosophies. Descartes thought that human beings were composed of physical bodies and immaterial minds. That blasted Dutchman Spinoza disagreed. Why, to Spinoza, feeling was not opposed to reason. Rather, feeling was an accomplice. With Spinoza, mind and body are not two but one.

Some believe in a third way which is Freud. Freud believed that this young male's reaction was because of *repression*. I'm sure you've heard it before: 'that guy is going to turn into a playboy because he was sexually repressed!' But this is nonsense. We are humans, not caged animals.

It is impossible to turn off all emotions in rational descision making. A girl can be hot but what does that matter unless you *mentally* acknoledge it? Ever have a particular girl you kept thinking about? Lust is not just fleshy. Lust is both mental and fleshy.

The point is that Spinoza was right and Descartes was wrong.

"Pook, is there a purpose to this?"

There is and it is in that young male. When the beautiful woman came into his orbit, he tried to compartmentalize. A wave of emotion came over him. He fought against it rather than accepting it. And so, the result, is a guy that just stands there like a mark with a whole army shooting at him. Logic is to this universe as feeling/conversation is to Womaniverse. The woman thought, "Typical male!" and went off to find a WORTHIER recipient.

Do you want to get rid of your shyness? You're going to have to open up and get out of your solitary shell. Sure, you can deploy 'tactics' and 'maneuvers' and turn women into a piece of mathematical equation. But in the end, you are still in your same *shy philosophy-obsessed world*. You just destroyed her and turned her into a part of a 'philosophy' to absorb.

Instead of *dehumanizing* the woman, why not *humanize* yourself?

Sexuality Problem #5: Lack of Experience

“No experience, no job! No job, no experience! It is like that with women!”

Oh, foolish lad! She doesn’t care if you are still running on VIRGIN or not. The only problem is that if YOU have a problem with it. Some guys worry about their experience, worry about stupid labels. “I am still a VIRGIN though!” So what? Despite what the movies portray, sex is not life. If you have a problem with it, it is guaranteed that SHE will. *Stop worrying!*

Sexuality is not a ‘philosophy’ to learn, it is more like a ‘dance’. Some males get it, others don’t. Do not demand philosophies of sexuality; you’ll only end up destroying it. And if you ask for a theory to create another ‘philosophy’ to be stacked in a bookish format to further continue your ego as A Great Thinker, consider yourself chained to this website forever.

Embrace your sexuality and *embrace life*!

.

Previous Pook Index Next

Pook #26 - On Embracing Sexuality

. · 26 July 2004 · Archived copy · Original

This is an EXCELLENT discussion post. One thing we hear all the time from people is that,

"Go out and immediately get laid, THEN you won't have any trouble with women!"
"Go get a prostitute so you'll stop being VIRGIN then everything is easier."
"Go out into the ACTION REALM and everything else will get better."

Your post defies those 'solutions' and shows that instead of just saying, "Go outside and get 'experience', then everything will work' that we need to work on our inner realm (and then the outer realm will *fix itself*)

Anti-Dump says, "Beautiful women will HIDE their feelings." This is so true! This is also why you can't sit around and look for signs.

Anti-Dump really helped me when it came to the beautiful women (especially the beautiful INNOCENT women). Whereas most women would by now be revealing her feelings for me, they do not. I can only know if they are interested by their actions, which is YES to the phone number and YES to the dates.

Now, you are on a date with the beautiful innocent women. What do we do?

Since women already see me as a sexual being, I don't kino. But just as there is a plane of sexuality with touching, fondling, kissing, etc., (*this is SEEN*) there is also another plane of sexuality (*which is UNSEEN*). This 'unseen' plane means things like voice tone, eye contact, a literal connection.

Desire is what will get you the beautiful innocent girl. However, this desire needs to be transmitted along this 'unseen' plane.

Let me give you an example. I was rejected by this one girl that I really really liked which orignally sent me to this forum (this was four years ago). Now, I'm going out with her. She is the perfect example of the 'beautiful innocent' type.

What could I do? You just can't go up to her and start grabbing things. How do you create intimacy with the beautiful innocent type?

Through desire. Let her know you want her.

"But didn't you say you ought to be desireless?"

Well, when you were a nice guy how were you showing your desire? Through flowers? Through declarations of love? By talking to her all day?

Our ROMANTIC MACHINE is broken when that happens. And the only way to FIX it is to TURN OFF OUR DESIRE. OK, now we aren't doing these stupid sappy things. Now we have to rebuild the ROMANTIC MACHINE (replace it with something like Anti-Dump's Machine).

Now when your ROMANTIC MACHINE gets turned back on, you do not display your desire on the *seen* channels (through flowers, gifts, chocolate, poetry) but through the *unseen* realm (eye contact, voice tone, getting to the

point, etc.)

So when I was at dinner with my beautiful innocent girl, I started eye contact and never looked away except to eat my food.

People think eye contact is simply staring into someone else's eyes. It isn't. Eye contact is displaying your desire into her eyes.

I let it all out. All my desire I've had for her, all the frustrations she's caused me (I am on this website because of her), all the work that SHE put me through, I said not a word of it but she knew every bit, because she saw it in my eyes.

She melted.

...and melted...

...and melted.

She returned the eye contact.

The next step is to see if the conversation is flowing. Is she laughing? Is she *lust drunk?*. She should be giggling like a little girl, with her eyes caught into yours.

Do the DeAngelo test of brushing her hair with your fingers. If she's suspectible to this, kiss her. If she likes that, keep kissing her then slowly move around her face, kinoing the back of her head, her arms, wherever, *and keep the desire up*. Do NOT let it go.

In order for the girl to melt, there needs to be a fire. The fire in your eyes. The fire in your lips. The fire in your touch.

This is how a woman wants to feel. It is in this moment, she feels truly female for she has been desired and is now being acted on.

There is a reason why women have a fantasy of being in a crowded room and a guy locking eye contact with them. Is it eye contact? No, it is his DESIRE at her. She LOVES being desired. Oh heavens, it makes her feel like a woman.

Beautiful innocent women's role in Nature is to be *desired* and not *desiring*. So next time you are with that girl, let it all out in your eyes and watch what happens.

She may start off all wooden but in the end, I guarentee, she'll be cookie dough.

.

Previous Pook Index Next

Related:

Bonecrker #129 - Eye Contact

Pook #27 - Eliminate Desire or Not?

. · 27 July 2004 · Archived copy · Original

I replied to this a long time ago and it used to be in the archive. I guess, now, that since it isn't, the question comes up again.

QUOTE: *"The guy that wrote "embrace your sexuality", is the same guy that wrote "kill that desperation". The auther is Pook. His excellent rhetoric provides camouflage for his contradicton.*

It's not possible to be horny and not needy at the same time (unless of course you're a "think about sex and have no sex"-sexual)."

Some people ask, "Why does Pook hammer the same points again and again?" just read the above. There is no contradiction. Keep in mind also that the time between those two posts was YEARS. I'm a bit wiser now but the same principle applies.

Look at it like this:

Years ago, when I first came to this forum, I was a Nice Guy. How am I going to get the women? One thing I said back then was KINOING. I said it because IT WORKED. I said, "Kinoing turns you into a SEXUAL BEING to her. If you do NOT kino her, she will see you sexually as a mannequin. Why? Because mannequins do not initiate kino."

Years later...

I do not kino a chick, certainly not on dates at first.

"Contradiction! Pook is contradicted!"

What you're forgetting is that after years, I am no longer that old Nice Guy.

The Nice Guy comes across to the woman as BORING and sexually a zero. Nice Guys also seem safe. So when I started kinoing and stuff, I got an INSTANT REACTION from her. Why, all of a sudden I am a Sexual Being!

One difference from those old Nice Guy days is that I've gained 30 + pounds of muscle mass, dress better, talk better, more confidant, etc. *I am ALREADY a Sexual Being*. If I start kinoing a girl now, I will be seen as coming on too strong and too desperate.

This is why I now agree wtih Anti-Dump in that archived thread. I'm not FOR or AGAINST kino. I also wouldn't recommend Nice Guys to act like how I am now.

So now I disregard talking about kino or 'how you say things' and just talk about *sexuality*. I'm already a sexual being now, there is no need for me to kino a girl. She will know I'm a sexual being already. I do not need to touch her.

But the Nice Guy needs to embrace his sexuality. He is a sexual dud. You need to LOOK, ACT, and THINK like a guy.

If I put up a 'Sexuality' scale, some guys would be at LOW sexuality (Nice Guys) while some guys would be at the HIGHER end. I honestly can't say the specifics of how one should act or say to a girl because everyone is different points on this scale. For the Nice Guy, kinoing goes a long way. But for me now, it is overkill.

The 'DESIRELESS' is to be NOT NEEDY. You WANT her but do not NEED her. It is a big difference.

DESPERATE guys need a girl to 'complete themselves' to 'make themselves feel happy'. I say these guys got it BACKWARD. They ought to complete themselves and make themselves happy THEN go for the chicks.

Live. Laugh. Love.

Notice the order? Get your life together, make yourself happy, THEN go for the chicks.

(Some people complain that it is work. Well, what is the point of having a girlfriend or a fleet of women if you have no direction in life and chronically melancholy? Defeats the purpose. Women are to enhance your life. FOOLS think the women will DEFINE their life.)

I think 90% of all the problems on this board is because they MIX UP the order.

Previous Pook Index Next

Pook #28 - On Shyness

. · 28 July 2004 · Archived copy · Original

As a formerly EXTREMELY shy person, I can say that shyness is NOT a form of insecurity. In other avenues than person, shy people can be extroadinarily confidant.

It is entirely possible to be confident but be introverted.

It is also possible to be insecure but be extroverted.

No, shyness is thinking that EVERYONE IS LOOKING AT YOU. It is a form of junior high school following you. If you get up from your seat, people will look at you. You speak up, people look at you. And so on. This means you will less likely speak, less likely get up, and since everytime you do you think you walk on a stage and everyone will notice you.

What shy people need to realize is that you could walk in front of a bus, get *thwumped!*, and no one would really notice. No one is going to care what you do or who you are. You are not a celebrity. You do not have cameras pointing at you. You are not important. *You are nothing*.

Shyness is also confused with hesitation. Hesitation is usually a result of unfulfilled desires. As Humans, we yield to less pain rather than more pain. Should I approach her? We yeild to what we think is the less pain, not approach. Hesitation is solved when we realize that Inaction is more painful and that rejection is better than regret.

Your #2 of a job was one of the things that helped me. More interestingly, I worked with only women. Aside from getting used to women, I got to figure out what was going on in their minds. Everyday was a religious experience.

Good post, but I don't think #4 will help the shy people. Usually shy people are pretty smart (since they are reading and such rather than socializing) and many will think the clubbing and dancing scene is stupid (which is fine, we all have different tastes). As long as you go out and do something you like rather than where you think 'the girls are' you'll do fine. I'd take a museum, opera, or art gallery over any club but that's just me (and TONS of chicks are there too). Not everyone is into the clubbing scene.

On the DJ chat, I saw this problem come up numerous times. It wasn't that the guy was scared of rejection. *He was scared of success!*

"Pook! What do you mean? Why be scared of success?"

Because if she said yes, he didn't know WHERE TO GO. What should they do? He had no idea.

This is why, before you can start to date women, you must be able to DATE YOURSELF! That's right, DATE YOURSELF. Try going out to these places by yourself or with your friends first. This will:

-Make you more comfortable

You already know the place, are comfortable with it, and know what to expect. This is important since when you are with a girl and new to it all, it is enough for the shy guy to be out with the girl let alone in a new and strange place. This will make your job a lot easier.

-Makes you prepared.

You can speak of the places or so where you want to go with confidence and ease. You know the route and the best way to drive there. You KNOW what the costs will be, what the environment will be, so you know how much money to take and what to wear.

For the shy guys wishing they were girls, this is why you should be thankful you are the guy. You get to know BEFOREHAND where you want to go so you have all the time in the world to be prepared.

-Makes you have fun.

With you being comfortable and prepared, already your time will be more enjoyable. Since you have all those shy guy worries put away like what to wear, the cost, what the environment is, and so on, you get to focus ON HER and have fun with her.

Good luck guys. Don't let ANYTHING steal your joy!

Previous Pook Index Next

Pook #29 - On The Nature of Sexuality

. · 29 July 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Diesel, I used to think the same about women at one point. But I cannot walk away from a riddle. And what better riddle is there but *woman*? It ended up blossoming into studying sexuality itself, and how it transcends the sex act itself. You will find it in art, business, politics, society in general.

Oddly, I could never define *woman*. Nothing was there. Was Weineger correct? The more time progressed, the more it became clear to me that I was trying to define a mirror. In my mind, it seemed I posted an article on femininity but it ends up being on masculinity instead! The more I looked into the core of woman, the more I saw the spirit of man.

Women seem more like a touchstone, who streaks men and see if they are gold or not. How many men had their lives transformed by not obtaining the love of a woman they wanted? And they were transformed not in the sexual way, but into something more. Almost every biography I've seen of world changing men always contain the fact that they fell in love with a woman and did not get her. Washington, Adams, Dante (he turns Beautrice into heaven in his immortal epic), Beethoven, practically all poets, practically all famous generals, etc. It is as if these guys saw their own wimpish worthless reflections in the women they sought, and changed their ways. I believe it was Kierkegaard who says, "It is true that behind every great man there is a woman. But it is always the woman he DID NOT marry."

A theme of Shakespeare is that when his characters condemn, they condemn themselves. If you look for this in real life, it becomes quite fun. It is amazing how many people condemn themselves! A poster on this board who rages relentlessly against AFCs... probably still is an AFC at heart. The anti-social hermit who says, "Those people clowning around do not understand life" condemns himself.

If you combine these two, you will get reflections of people. The Nice Guy who sees the woman as angelic and pure, he himself is innocent and 'angelic'. The guy that sees women as machiavelli creatures is often himself a machiavelli creature. The guy that sees women as b*tches is himself acting like one. The guy who sees woman as a playtoy is, himself, merely a playtoy. And the guy who sees women as only things to screw is, himself, merely a thing whose purpose is to screw. It's fascinating (to me) to see this everywhere. One thing that seems more clear: man and woman are not two but one. Perhaps there is more truth than we realize in the ancient phrase of 'the two as one flesh' (rather than the modern view of two atomized individuals in a legal contract).

In the end, the joke is probably on us. We're trying post/rationalize what should be natural. This site (including its sister ones) seem more and more ridiculous to me. Guys who think they are 'men' because they get women (which are insanely easy to get anyway) are like Don Quixotes who think they are knights because they caught windmills.

Women are emotional not because they are stupid but because they play Nature's role. Imagine if we men gave birth! Why, in delivery we would bite our lip, think that we ought to 'be a man', and not scream (which is a shame since screaming assists in the birth). A man knows that it is right for him to shoulder and conquer pain, not unleash it on others. If Man was pregnant, he would kill the child through his own being. The woman screams, talks, blabblers, unleashes her feelings, which is necessary for her to carry the child to and through delivery. It is also noticable that children gather around the mother, they seem to relate to her better. But when the children turn to adults, they gather around the man (as he shows the example to live by).

QUOTE: *"CHICKS GET OFF ON POWER. WHY DO YOU THINK THEY GO FOR THE JOCKS AND THE DUDES*

WITH THE DEFINED PECS AND SIXPACKS, AND NOT SOME FLABBY, TERRIBLE-POETRY-SPOUTING LOSER LIKE YOU? POWER, BABY."

This is absolutely NOT true. Even when I was scrawny, I still scored chicks with my poetry. But it wasn't my poetry, it was my imagination that reeled them in. Musicians also get laid.

Women go for rich guys and strong guys because of self-survival (wouldn't you marry a woman with millions?). Women are more attracted to imagination than to power. They are only attracted to power in a survival way. They may marry the politician but will sleep with the artist down the road.

There was this guy who was REALLY maxed out physically, so much so that he almost got on Baywatch. The girls nicknamed him 'heaven'. And so enters Pook. This guy saw me with the girls and RUSHED OVER to try to peel them away. It was like I was taking away his source of his ego. Talk about pathetic.

Women sincerely want the best life they can get and choose the man who best supplies that. The 'power' guys either of physical strength or income or even influence are placed in the 'self survival' slot (women look around the room and wonder what income these guys are going to make...). But women also want to do more than survive; they want to laugh and make the fatal mistake of romance by trying to make it last forever. The muscian, the artist, the (good) poet, all have a command of imagination and adds to her life in that way. Women think they deserve the best life possible and will seek it... through you.

*

QUOTE: *"But I can't really feel guilty for wanting to bone a lot of girls, I don't think my views on women reflect badly on me at all. I'm just honest with myself and with the caliber of woman that is out there. If I were to meet a women that inspired me on all levels, then yeah, I'd probably change my toon. However, I can't say that I am holding my breath for that day, and in the meantime, I sure as hell will not continue to live like a monk, while pursuing some Quijote-an quest for the perfect woman. I take what is presented to me in the course of my life*."

Hey Diesel! I'm not saying you, or anyone, should feel guilty about how you view women. Men and women agree on one thing: they both distrust women.

QUOTE: *"I have a bit of a romantic notion that one day I will meet a girl that will knock my socks off... but so far that hasn't happened yet."*

I think after a while, Nature says, "This will not do. Therefore, I will place internal pressure in you to desire the LTR, to marry, to have kids." In time, the Savage Bull doth bare the yoke.

QUOTE: *"2. However, your point on the imagination... you say that chicks don't get off on the power. Here I will continue to disagree."*

No, they DO get off on power. But they get off on other things then that too. How can that jobless starving artist be with that hottie? He is dreamy.

When I was going to be a lawyer, chicks loved that. They see lawyers as a type of power (when in truth, there are millions of lawyers crawling around who still end up poor. Being a lawyer won't make you wealthy). They don't see that, they see only the IMAGE.

If they get the impression that I am goal-less college wise, career wise, that my only sense is to pursue my passion,

artistic or otherwise, they get off on that too! It is almost like they imagine in their head, "This guy will be adventurous" and they want to be a part of that life.

But if you are some boring Nice Guy who just wants to get some basic job and rot, rot, rot, rot through life, they will turn to you only as a last resort. Women want to be winners in life just as well as we do. When they are married, when they meet other couples, the women will examine each others' husbands. Who got the Great Catch and who didn't? Who won and who got the loser?

QUOTE: *"Isn't your premise of the control over the imagination but another manifestation of power? If you can control and capture a girl's imagination, it sounds like just another form of power a man can wield over a woman."*

I'll do a post on this.

QUOTE: *"3. About the women wanting the best life they can get and choosing the guy who can best give it to them. ....*

This is definitely not true. Women make incredibly stupid choices when choosing whom they marry, for what seem to be an infinite number of reasons that defy explanation (since each situation is unique).. This, to me, accounts for the incredibly high divorce rate in this country."

Heh, who said women judged men rationally? In HER mind, that loser is not a loser. He is a spontaneous exciting person who adds to her DULL life. Women will have anything: happiness, saddness, horror, fear, joy, laughter, but they will not tolerate one thing: **BOREDOM**. They may even see the loser for what he is. They then think, "I will turn this guy around. He will become successful because of ME!" This stupid female vanity lets women marry the loser despite everyone's advice to the contrary.

QUOTE: *"If what you say is true, then how come people divorce so much?"*

Excessive expectations.

Everyone believes they are super special. Women in the 18-26 year bracket have these HUGE expectations that no man can fulfill! They get married at, say, twenty two. After a couple of years, they get BORED and/or realize that marriage is not some magical process of transcendence. She sees other women her age out having fun but she is stuck with responsibilities. Oh, if she could only shrug off the husband and be single again!

Unhealthy romance: the pursuit of the lover.

Healthy romance: the presence of the lover.

It is almost a cult to many of these women (and some men!). These excessive expectations contains neither the friendship or civility that makes marriage successful. It fulfills the way a drug fulfills, requiring new infusions to sustain the high. We've raised their romanticism so much that its taken to be a personal and cultural panacea, a solve for everything. But not one thing solves everything. So they suffer the permanent disappointment of these excessive expectations. Twenty years of affection, caring, friendship, the small favors husbands and wives do for each other, is seen as 'boring' to these cultists. But in my opinion, it is far more and greater than their stupid expectations.

An *obituary* ought to be written. It'll be its tombstone when we bury this out of control romanticism for good.

Pook #30 - Romanticism - An Obituary

. · 30 July 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Romanticism is an article of faith.

We know what it's stuffed with: love at first sight, the carriage of frolicking courtships, prancing couples, dialogue consisting of fanstastical banquets, violins and flutes, of ballroom weddings, chandeliers, strangled poetry that converts her every part into some bizzarre infinitude, and of happy homes flowing with enchanting music with 2.3 kids, 2.6 cars, 1.1 garage, and 1.4 dogs.

All in all, the fountain that bubbles this vaperous romanticism is the phrase: ***star-crossed***. Romanticism is not something considered to be 'controlled'. Rather, it seen as something to submit to. This 'star-crossed' love is elevated to the esteemed level known as *destiny*!

And so *this faith makes the man stuffed*. These stuffed men float airily through the world. Some pop to fall in the abyss... (and they wonder why suicide is at its highest rate for young men!). Others just stuff themselves more and more so that no matter what is said to them, they are so stuffed that even the sharpest most blatant facts bounce against their rubbery infatuated shells. Some realized that they were stuffed and turned themselves inside out. These unfortunate few shrivel with *bitterness* and seek revenge with getting laid everywhere and anywhere. But the rest spew out this poison and recover into the Men they were.

Oh forgive me, Hallmark! If I am to doubt Romanticism, I may incur the wrath of all women. But make no mistake: *I war with Cupid.* The way to victory is not to stab the infected with the truth... they pop and fall or increase their fantasy shell even more! Therefore, let us hold up a mirror to the infected so they see all their maladies and so will cleanse themselves of this rot.

The Virus

This hyped up romanticism can be traced to Rousseau. Disgusted with bourgeois love (he saw it as an empty emotional center of restrained, law-bound societies), he wanted to replace it with something more passionate. Before (especially in aristocracy), the passion of people was set for **truth, honor, and power**.

"This is dangerous," said the Rousseau. "It must be replaced with something else. Something that is just as absorbing." Therefore: "Love will now be the *soul-saving experience!*

How did Rousseau get to this? His childhood as he describes: "To fall on my knees before a masterful mistress, to obey her commands, to have to beg for her forgiveness, have been to me the most delicate of pleasures." Thus, in love he is entirely passive; woman must make the first move. Paglia says, "Rousseau ends the sexual scheme of the great chain of being, where male was sovereign over female... Rousseau feminizes the European male persona" and "gives the ideal man a womanlike sensitivity."

Ever since Rousseau, the culture has become increasingly romanticized. Music revolves around 'love'. The highest grossing movies are romantic 'epics' like *Gone with the Wind* and *Titanic* (where the ship sinking provides merely a backdrop for the 'priority' of the movie: the romance). Hyped-Romanticism has ravaged religions; priests becoming 'servants of love' rather than pursuers and warriors of 'wisdom and truth' (and then they wonder why the pews are filled with women!). Politicians speak of how much 'love' they have and strive to make themselves 'lovable'. Romanticism has gone beserk!

The Infection

Many women march on through their life, stuffed with dreams of hyped-up romanticism. They are filled to the brim with **excessive expectations**. The high rate of divorce is not due to some moral collapse. It is due to this bizzare and absurd religion of romance. In many ways, romance is the FEMALE RELIGION. 'Anniversary' dates are their religious festivals. The bed becomes their alter, and sex becomes the holy sacrament.

For fun, I told the women, "Romance... True love... None of it exists." And the women, nonsurprisingly, protested bitterly. But one thing that puzzled me was this one woman who told the Pook: "I'm never going to get married. Seems so boring." I thought she would agree with this idea of romance not existing (which I do think DOES exist, but is misapplied to the point of absurdity). Yet, she was one of the biggest protesters of it.

I figured almost all young women wanted to get married (at least SOMETIME). This one didn't yet was the BIGGEST believer in romance. A contradiction? Perhaps. In any age past, her life would be scorned at. It is this hyper-romanticism at work. Without this 'romance', there would be no license for her life-long 'romance' outside of marriage. It is well known that if you get the women to think that 'you love them', she is well more likely to sleep with you. All the gifts and 'dates' the AFC gives to get his sex are not some form of Neo-Prostitution; it is merely the exercise of this hyped up romanticism. This explains why women, who have no desire for marriage, will be the BIGGEST believers in romance. Their religion of Romance grants license and prettifies their sometimes dangerous and reckless behavior.

The Inflammation

Love! Love! Love! It is Nature's drug, a high, that so many become addicted to and must always be feeling 'love' at some part of their lives.

A Nice Guy appears to protest this post.

Ignore him, gentlemen. Women following this romanticized path means that the CHASE becomes the focus rather than the COMPANY of the lover. No wonder challenge works so well! No wonder once a woman gets what she wants, she goes looking for something else!

The more a man is a challenge, the more a woman becomes 'romanticized'. This is especially true for beautiful women. The curse of beauty (and even that of Don Juans) is that you fear that you are settling when you could have gotten better. When a guy is a challenge to the beautiful woman (and let's face it, these beautiful women have flocks of guys trying to be 'romantic' towards them in the AFC sense), it sparks the woman's romanticism. She must have her challenge and eat it too.

The Nice Guy yells out, "Pook, there is a matter we must discuss!"

Go to your platonic girlfriends to talk about your 'love', Nice Guy! Now where were we?

We know of the romanticism that Nice Guys embrace (for the definition of an AFC is a man who loves like a woman). But Don Juans suffer from the romanticism as well. *"This website has made me soooo picky!"*

The problem is not pickiness but idealism. Just like beautiful women, Don Juans feel that they are 'settling' if they get a chick. Remember your Nice Guy days when you only wanted a good decent woman to love you? Now you want a Helen of Troy! How far we've come!

The Nice Guy hops up on the Arcadian stage. "No more, Monsieur Pook! We must talk!"

Very well, Mr. Nice Guy! What is this business that you must interrupt my post for?

"I think you know it, Pook. You insulted my girl in the park last night!"

You are mistaken, sir. I made love to your girl in the park last night. She asked me to meet her there. I have her note somewhere. But if someone is saying something to the contrary, by God, it is a slander!

"You damned Pook! You would drag down a woman's reputation to hide your cowardice! But I am calling you out!"

You're calling me out? Then take lessons from your girl, as she too called me out.

"You libertine!" *The Nice Guy takes out a white glove and slaps Pook.* "**I DEMAND SATISFACTION**.

You demand satisfaction but your girl also demanded satisfaction. I cannot spend my time satisfying the demands of your circle.

"You blackguard!"

I assure you, Mr. Nice Guy, that your girl is the epitome of her sex. In fact, her chief renown is for a readiness that keeps her in a state of tropical humidity as would grow orchids in her drawers in January. Your assault against me is not for my faults but for your own.

"You have no morals!"

That is not true! You are the immoral one, thinking yourself a *sexual Pharisee*! We are called to be Human not statues.

The Cancer

And so floats the Nice Guy with his hot air romanticism. When he sees the women going for the guys of testosterone (jerks) and running to the hills to avoid his nonsense, he pops.

But what of the Don Juans racing to obtain their 'ideal' woman? After a decade or two, this is the result (http://www.sosuave.com/vBulletin/sho...ghlight=mature). Noticing their lost youth, what are these guys to do?

And what about the guys who DO get their idealism? Many of these guys marry absolutely gorgeous women. But gorgeous women are a standard lay. The idealism doesn't last and the divorce follows.

With love being defined as the PURSIT of the the lover (rather than the COMPANY of the lover), no wonder divorces are widespread! Rousseau is best known for his civilization of 'consent'. Thus, marriage to people now is not some sacred bond but a legal article of consent, something to be torn asunder whenever wished.

And anyone who are aware of marriages that last know that 'romanticism' has nothing to do with it. Marriage requires work. Go to an older married couple and spew out your 'romanticism' and 'the one' love to them and watch them laugh.

Romeo and Juliet

Women flock to *Romeo and Juliet* to watch the 'star-crossed' lovers defy society. Yet, romanticism is exactly what the play condemns!

Romeo was in love with Rosalind. But when Juliet appears, any thoughts of Rosalind are long gone. Romeo is Don Juanish at first. He kinos her. He kisses her. And he leaves her. So where is the tragedy?

"Because their love was denied!" chant the women.

I am sorry ladies. The truth is that Romeo is a whiny boy. Romeo and Juliet would have turned into a sweet Much Ado About Nothing if Romeo had the spine of Claudio. It is Romeo's lack of being a man that causes the tragedy in the play.

"Pook! You exaggerate Shakespeare to fit your meaning."

But look at what Shakespeare says:

"Alas poor Romeo! he is already dead; stabbed with a
white wench's black eye; shot through the ear with a
love-song; the very pin of his heart cleft with the
blind bow-boy's butt-shaft: and **is he a man to
encounter Tybalt**"

Already dead! And they question whether he can approach his enemy Tybalt. Even the Nurse condemns Romeo:

"Blubbering and weeping, weeping and blubbering.
Stand up, stand up; stand, and **you be a man**:
For Juliet's sake, for her sake, rise and stand;"

Romeo is so distraught that he wants to *kill himself*. Witness the friar's reaction to his attempt at suicide:

"Hold thy desperate hand:
Art thou a man? thy form cries out thou art:
Thy tears are womanish; thy wild acts denote
The unreasonable fury of a beast:
Unseemly woman in a seeming man!"

The tragedy in Romeo and Juliet is not love denied. It is Romeo refusing to be a Man. He kills himself at his first chance and so kills Juliet.

The Cure

Have you ever seen a very traditional Jewish wedding? The man and woman have never talked to each other. They do not even know if they like each other. Yet, they marry and stay married for life.

"Pook, that is because they can't divorce."

True, but by conventional romanticism, shouldn't the marriage eventually blow up? Yet, they are happy!

The point is that romanticism has no value in creating a lasting marriage. George Bernard Shaw says that marriage is like tying to people in a ship together. It doesn't matter who you are tied up to, you will make the person a lifelong partner. Comradeship makes marriages last, not romanticism.

War veterans despise the war they are stuck in. But if asked to leave the battlefield, they will not because of their comrades. The hellish environment created bonds between these men that last throughout their lifetime. Lasting marriages also contains this comradeship. The couple goes through this hurricane of life and by overcoming the difficulties thrown at them, it makes their bond cemented even more.

So love is not weddings and flowers. Real love is deep financial problems or a sick child.

But don't take my word for it:

Brookner: "The essence of romantic love is that wonderful beginning, after which sadness and impossibility may become the rule."

Crowley: "Love stories are only fit for the solace of people in the insanity of puberty. No healthy adult human being can really care whether so-and-so does or does not succeed in satisfying his physiological uneasiness by the aid of some particular person or not."

Jones: "Romance, like the rabbit at the dog track, is the elusive, fake, and never attained reward which, for the benefit and amusement of our masters, keeps us running and thinking in safe circles."

Romanticism, farewell! And 'The One'ism, adieu! Give me the love songs of ages past! Give me Don Juan! Give me Madame Venus! Give me elopement by ladder and rope on a moonlight night! Let the neighbors stare and adore, for their lives are measured by propriety and yardsticks. Let the rabbit run its course for we have stopped running in circles, chasing the rabbit 'Romance' on and on.

And by doing so, the circle breaks. We're finally free.

.

Previous Pook Index Next

Pook #31 - Let Yourself Fail

. · 31 July 2004 · Archived copy · Original

The reason why you are here at this website, improving in ways you never dreamed possible before in your life, was because you *failed* at achieving what you wanted with women.

Listen to yourself before you came to this website:

“Oh, how I have failed with the ladies! If only I knew what to do! If only I knew the secrets of attraction, love, and women!”

And so here you are gobbling up more information than ever. And this is good.

But…

Do you allow yourself to fail? Or do you go search on posts on EXACTLY how you should act on a date? Do you try to push your comfort zones or do you read the pages of seduction material for the 435473th time?

Failure is a necessary component of growth. Let yourself fail.

Not all the time. You are not the Nice Guy who crashes and burns without a clue (and does it again and again and again). *Don Juans are made by failing, not by succeeding.*

When you fail, you have information sent back on things that can be worked on. Are you too scrawny? Do you not have fun dates? Is your personality the problem? Do you let yourself have fun? Are you scared of sex? What is it?

A failure can help you more than reading every damn post on this board. Failure will aid you much more than the whole of the DJ Bible.

Going into Don Juan is not a light switch. You do not stuff this information in your head and become a drone of the ideas here. You need to fail. You MUST fail. You will always learn more about failing because *it won’t be hypothetical!* You won’t be having fantasies of you, being a blazing Don Juan, and going from girl to girl. No, you will be OUT THERE (which is where you learn everything) and you WILL FAIL. This failure points out where you NEED to improve.

“But Pook! If I fail, I will lose the girl!”

For every love that dies, a new one is born. It is a law of Nature!

Keep the focus on YOU. So what if you lose the girl? Another girl will quickly take her place. If you WAIT on the first girl, you will be worse off when you meet that second girl. FAIL NOW.

“But Pook! I remember the pain before. I am learning this information so I will not enter that pain again.”

Let me tell what is MORE PAINFUL. It is getting trapped in a **tortuous cycle** of devouring more and more information with no action. In this case, the Nice Guy is more admirable than you because at least the Nice Guy allows himself to fail. You never let yourself fail so you will never grow.

“But Pook! Isn’t the point of the information to AVOID failure?”

This is the number one common mistake that makes long time regulars here still stuck in their cycle. They think the information is going to remove failure. That is not the point. Just as in order for your muscles to grow, you must let them fail (and fill in the void with protein, sleep, etc.). So too that in order to GROW (not in your mental self, but in your real self OUT THERE), you must let yourself fail (and if you do fail, fill in the void with the information and feedback here.)

“But Pook! Why should I intend to fail?”

The point is not to INTEND to fail. It is to LET yourself fail. If you fail with a girl, IT IS AN OPPORTUNITY THAT YOU MISSED ABOUT YOURSELF.

Let us repeat it again:

FAILURE IS AN OPPORTUNITY. After all, risk is the key to self-improvement.

The Number 2 common mistake here is people thinking that they ARE NOT ALLOWED to fail because of all this ‘information’ they have soaked up. In other words, that if they failed, they really ‘aren’t don juans.

Let me tell you something: Don Juans are not made on message boards. They are made OUT THERE. Whatever happens to you out there, no matter how bad it is, come back here and we will help you. You are beyond your Nice Guy days.

But flaws can only be removed by confronting them, never by masking them.

“But Pook! I did what you said and… I had great success! I was hoping I would fail so I could improve but dammit, I succeeded beyond my wildest expectations! I was looking forward to failing so I can improve but the hot chick accepted my advances and dates! How could she do that!?…”

Now you see the point of it all. Even though there are TONS of posts that say ‘not to fear rejection’ or ‘that she is missing out on you’, you still are scared of failing. Failure is actually a GOOD thing since it helps you grow. It is good to IMAGINE success, but do not FEAR failure. Embrace it like the gift it is since it allows you to grow. (For if you don’t fail now, you will fail later on. Get it over with.)

It is a win-win situation.

SO GO OUT THERE AND LET YOURSELF FAIL!
*
How I came to this site was because I FAILED badly with the woman I wanted. Looking back through my Pook years, I see that the times I failed was when I got my head snapped on straight and *truly* changed.

Turning a 'failure' with a woman to make it a 'learning experience', just one bump along the long road of success, sounds good in seminars and all. But you've got to risk, you've got to roll your dice.

Nice Guys are nice because they *don't want to fail*. Why else do Nice Guys listen to womanly advice? Why else do Nice Guys give chocolate, flowers, poetry, etc. to the woman? They certainly don't do it out of a spirit of love (though many do, these infatuated chumps). Many do it because they think it is 'the routine' and they don't want to fail. They want to 'play it safe'.

"May I kiss you?" the Nice Guy asks. He doesn't want to make her 'uncomfortable'. If this Nice Guy risked failing, he would just kiss her and go for it. He could be slapped OR she could say, "THANK GOD! I THOUGHT HE WAS GAY!" and all is good.

Some here still act like those Nice Guys with the only difference is that they listen to men instead. You've GOT to sprinkle risk in your life.

As Anti-Dump said, you DO want to protect your heart. But some are so scared of failing that they literally COCOON their life!

To the loners- You know who you are. You don't think you are good enough, have the right things, do the right things, etc. to let a woman into your life. But you do! You loners aim at your comfortable world but do so at sacrificing long term happiness. LET A WOMAN INTO YOUR LIFE! You'll probably enrich her life more then you think, and she will definately enrich yours!

To the shy guys- You know who you are. You are worried what others might say, what she might think, what everyone might say. But the truth is that you could walk in front of a bus and you'd be forgotton in a day. No one is going to care that you lusted after a chick. Even chicks forget. GO FOR IT! YIELD TO YOUR DESIRE FOR ONCE!

To the addicted-to-sosuave crowd- You know who you are. You read more and more and more and more and more information. Yet, there you sit in front of your computer. The information you see... it is a novelty, something new for you to think about. But once you go out and FAIL with the ladies, all the information literally changes. Rather then being a novelty to think about, like some new philosophy to adopt, it becomes addendums to your battle plan. You exit the world of THEORY and go OUT THERE (since that is where the chicks are. Only feminists reside in the world of THEORY and you don't want those anyway).

Everyone came to this site with problems. This site corrected many of them. Alas, the site also created a few new problems. One of them is that guys are scared to fail, especially with all this information around. They think that with this information that they won't fail. It is fun to fail and is the zeal of life. Let yourself fail!

Also, failure is the only way to trigger *metamorphosis*.

QUOTE: *"You can keep on trying to do something, and although you may not make it the first few times, you have "failed" only when you hit the dirt and refuse to get back up and try again."*
Only by failing can you succeed.

Don Juaning is like a dance. You can learn all the steps. But unless you go out and trip yourself (or step on her, haha) a couple of times, you will never EVER dance.

Some guys are so scared of failing, that they memorize how they should act and so on where as me have one thought going through their head: "WHEEEEEEEEEEE!"

Some men see women and cry, "WHY!?" But I approach women and say, "WHY NOT?"

Pook #32 - Aim High!

. · 1 August 2004 · Archived copy · Original

I know not how others see it; but as for me, I see Don Juaning as making dreams come true.

Dreams! The spice of life, the universal spring of success! But I must be wrong, for Bryan Redford says, *"stick to your own league."*(http://www.sosuave.com/home/redfield/bryan22.htm)

Stick to your own league! What does that mean? Does that mean there exists an aristocracy of genetics, and that we happened to be on the bottom, the status of clowns and peasants to these princesses and princes?

“Forgive me, madam. But you, dear, are out of my league.” Is this what we should say to the girls we find gorgeous and beautiful? But why stop there? Why not ask, “Oh, please, may I have permission to speak to you, princess?” or “Thank you, dear, for letting me be in your graceful presence.”

“Pook, you exaggerate.”

Do I? Don’t misunderstand. I think Redford has some wise things to say, but that column of desiring beautiful women is the worst advice I’ve seen. Never cede your dreams for you risk losing your soul.

Redford says that there does in fact exist ‘leagues’, a type of genetic (or social) aristocracy. Just as one would love crumbs and blobs of fat if you were starving, Redford compares overweight women to absolutely no women (taking a page out of the ‘How to Love Fat Bloated Hags’, a sub-genre of the worst relationship books).
Redford then says… Wait! I will let him speak for himself:

"By that I mean no matter how great you think you are, or how deserving you feel you may be, the real world put you back in your place and gave you a reality check. You eventually accept it, adjust to it and learn to appreciate and enjoy your Honda. You also learn rather quickly that a Honda can take you to the exact same places a Mercedes can take you to."

Now for those of you who are cheering his words as “Wonderful!” and “Brilliant!”, I ask only for a full actualization of his advice.

Let us place Redford in front of a custodian. Speak, Redford:

“How are you! You may think that you can do better but the real world puts you in your place and gives you a reality check. You must accept it, adjust to it and learn to appreciate and enjoy your custodial duties.”

And if the custodian responds, “I know I can do better,” what would Redford say? Quiet! Let us hear him:

“If you were starving, would you scoff at your work? No! You would get on your hands and knees and thank God for your fortune. You also learn that a custodian’s paycheck feeds and clothes you just as any other paycheck would.”

This ‘advice’ is called **Settling for Mediocrity**. If you do it with women, why not use it for every other avenue of your life? Mediocrity in the pursuit for a splinter of joy is no joy at all. For me, the pursuit of the dream is the joy.

The letter writer did admit that he was physically overweight. But that does not mean he has to settle and cede his

dreams. (I for one would not want a Mercedes or a very nice car since I know it would be stolen. But if you want a Mercedes, just go get one. There are no limits to what we can accomplish.)

A friend of mine is also faced in a similar situation. He is twenty six, lives with his parents, works at the same grocery store for more then half a decade, has no long term plans for the future, doesn't work out, and demands a beautiful woman. Obviously, he is caught in a bubble of fantasy.

There is nothing wrong with going for high standards. But, there is a catch. It is this catch, when not obeyed, will keep you in that bubble of fantasy. In fact, Shakespeare has saying on it in which he says…

"The catch, Pook. Get to the catch."

Very well. Here it is:

The high standards you apply to your desires must be applied to yourself.

Do you want a woman who is not overweight? Then you must eliminate your overweight. Do you want a woman who is intellectually brilliant? Then you must hit the books, read the classics, think, and expand your mind. Do you want a woman who is athletic? Then you too must become athletic.

Try, if you want, to get a woman who is better then you in these traits. You may or may not succeed. But only demand that which you can reflect as well. This forces you on the path of self-improvement.

Let me tell you a story. In my late Nice Guy phase, I fell infatuated with this girl. (Yeah, not uncommon. I know.) And like every Nice Guy, I dreamed of our blissful future. When I would get around her, I become very tense with butterflies in my stomach. Oh, how I dreamed about her! More important, I dreamed about us. So I eventually bit the bullet and asked her out. Guess what her response was?

No.

No.

She said no! My soul buckled and I was literally crushed.

Later, when I shrugged off that Nice Guyness, I was looking for a girlfriend. I thought a break came when a girl, a bit homely, had fallen in love with me a few months later. I thought, "Should I go for her?" Then I realized, "NO!" (Later, I realized that she and my crush were good friends. I eventually found out my crush tried to 'set us up'.) I knew I could do better. And I did.

By focusing on my interests, on my goals, on my improvement, everything changed. Other girls started to take an interest in me. Soon, I became the biggest mystery. My 'crush' is bewildered for her friends have the hots for me and older women say, "How I wish I were twenty years younger!" I became the guy the girls talked about when they were alone. And she had placed me in the 'average' category. Ha!

Of course, I lost all attraction for her. I felt embarrassed about my past self. How could I get so whipped by a chick I hardly talked to? Now it doesn't matter, for I have the mindset that I'm going to win the world.

Perhaps you can relate to the story. But the point is that I disagree with Redford in this: *The fault is not in the standards; it is ourselves. The failure is not in our high standards; it is failing to apply those standards in ourselves.*

There IS an aristocracy. But it is not an aristocracy of genetics; it is an aristocracy of WILL and PASSION. Name any name in history, any grand person in present, and see if it was their DRIVE that got them where they are. There is no lottery of life. The leagues you see are the ones you create in your own mind. Anyone can get a beauty. Hell, even Voltaire had the audacity to say, “Give me ten minutes of talk and I shall bed the Queen of France.”

Aim high! And as each standard increases, so does yourself. In this manner, you benefit from your fantasy for now it is tethered to reality, yanking you forward in your proper destiny.

Aim high! And behold, for everything shall become new. The women you were lusting for earlier will seem lowly, for you have been on the course of self-improvement while they have not. You worked out; they remained scrawny. You read; they wasted their time. You saved your money and pulled yourself up; they are locked in debt.

Aim high! For Redford says, “Your life depends on it,” and he is more correct then ever, but not in how *he* means it.

Here is your choice: settle for mediocrity or aim high. The former is simple, can occur right now, and only requires the selling of your dreams. The latter demands rigor, the higher you aim the more rigorous, but your dreams can come true.

Aim high! For Strindberg says, “I dream, therefore I exist.” For to dream is to become.

Previous Pook Index Next

Pook #33 - On Kino

. · 2 August 2004 · Archived copy · Original

QUOTE: *"I've noticed that the concept of kino is almost as widely misunderstood as neghits,"*

So many newbies rush out there with 'neghits' as wild knights to destroy the hot chicks' castle-like egos. Likewise, so many newbies get creepy with the kino. You're right, it IS misunderstood. These are subtle tools, not sledgehammers.

With anything, keep your attitude light and fun. If heaviness weighs down your spirit, don't go experimenting.

QUOTE: *"so I wrote this to provide some added insight into what is REALLY going on with kino. Hopefully it will be of help to those who are interested."*

I am interested! Speak on, Mr. DeepBlue!

QUOTE: *"The common view of kino is that you're giving the woman pleasure and that this arouses her and makes her attached to you."*

If this is the common view of kino, then there is a problem.

QUOTE: *"That is certainly true,"*

NO! Saying that Kino is to give the WOMAN pleasure? Why is the focus on the woman? No, the focus MUST be on YOURSELF. Yes, she should find pleasure in the kino. But YOU should find pleasure in the kino too.

You touch her because YOU want to, not because SHE wants it. Why? Because she wants to be TOUCHED and FLIRTED with by EVERY DECENT-CUTE GUY. We are not play-toys for their endless appetite of sexuality.

[quote]**and we're lucky we live in a time when doing kino with a woman is considered acceptable as soon as you start getting to know her. In older times, guys like Casanova had to be extraordinarily seductive with their *words* just so they could get to the point where they could begin to use kino.[/quote**

Nah, the seduction of women hasn't really changed. The same rules apply. The only real difference in this age is that ugly chicks don't have dowries (how else can you get a man to marry them?) and most women are financially independent.

Also, males are afraid of being men and scared of their own sexuality (the AFC)

Did you know that HALF of all the marriages in the British Colonies of North America, right around the War of Independence, was when the woman was already pregnant? These were the Puritans as well!

Our ancestors were Don Juans. Why not we?

QUOTE: *"But the key thing to understand about kino is that when you initiate it with a chick whom you're just getting to know, is that it isn't merely an arousing stimulus, it also challenges the barriers between you."*
So true!

If I ever read another post that says, "She did X and Y, then Z!!! Oh, and look at how she did M and then went and N! DOES SHE LIKE ME OR IS SHE BEING NICE?" the answer is, "DID YOU TOUCH HER?" Kino ALWAYS has a SURE answer (as well as asking her out. But she can date you to be polite, she cannot fake her reaction to kino)

Kino is a GREAT way to test their interest. Girls that don't like you, or find you neutral, will not like you touching them.

Usually when I kino a girl, it is very subtle. Everyone else in the universe thinks it is innocent. However, if a girl believes that you are being friendly versus liking her, she will choose to think that you like her. Thus, any kino is interpreted as LIKING HER.

She usually then RAINS kino back on poor Pook. She'll rub your arm. Rub her body against you. Anything.

Whatever you do, DO NOT KINO girls that you are not interested in. I have done this and these girls obsessed about me to the end. One planned out our marriage and all. Kino is THAT powerful.

In fact... oh, DeepBlue wishes to speak.

QUOTE: *"The presence of those invisible barriers which you both maintain in your minds is really the key difference between being lovers and strangers."*

IN YOUR MIND. Yes!

NOT in *her* mind. Women fall in love with their bodies; men fall in love with their mind. It is from men that the idealized love springs from poetry to sculpture to paintings, etc. Yet, if women are caressed the right way, touched in the proper manner, at the right speed, etc. then they are yours.

(This is why women want men that are 'experienced' because they want to FEEL that way. Women have no concept of idealization from the virtue of virginity or maidenhood, etc. except in relation to society.)

Men's sexuality is focused and concentrated within his body. With a woman, her sexuality is diffused throughout her entire body. All touch to her is sexual since she is entirely sexual.

QUOTE: *"Typical AFC behavior is to respect those barriers too much and to never challenge them. That by definition maintains the barriers, leaving them in place. Doesn't matter how well he gets to know the chick, if he leaves those barriers in place he will never be her lover--THAT is why he ends up in the friend category."*

AFC is scared of HIS sexuality. He is scared of carnal embrace.

QUOTE: *"Because he actually reinforced the barriers instead of destroying them."*

No, because he acted like penis-less ape who has money, can speak, but is some bizzarre andrygnous.

It is men that create the barriers. If men would embrace their own sexuality (dress better, be athletic, act like a man, exercise the muscles, etc.), then women WILL jump you.

This is what the PUAs must realize. It is not that they are pressing the woman's buttons. They are merely disarming

the barriers, letting REAL women, not domesticated women, out of their society-reflective cages ("If I do this I will be seen as a slut" etc. THAT is put to sleep.)

Women WANT union ALL THE TIME. Even if they are married, pregnant, engaged, or have a BF, they want YOU to be sexual towards them. (but this doesn't mean you should)

Alas, I am moving away from the kino topic.

Go on, DeepBlue! Go on!

QUOTE: *"Anyway, the next level up from AFC is to realize that you have to crumble those barriers, so you work on them, but you're still leery about causing any anxiety, and still a bit nervous about challenging the barriers."*

Nervous about the barriers? It is nervious about realizing your own sexuality.

QUOTE: *"So you look for excuses to touch,"*

Hehe, it will still be interpreted in the woman's mind as, "He wants to have sex with me." She will see through the excuses, right ladies?

QUOTE: *"or you reach out and caress her but it has a slightly rushed quality because you're trying to mask some underlying nervousness.*

But ultimately where you want to get to is the point where you recognize that for a woman, the experience of having you challenging the barriers is not ONLY a source of axiety for her, but is also a source of EXCITEMENT. And the idea is to shift the balance so that she experiences more excitement than anxiety."

The excitement comes FROM YOU. If she is experiencing anxiety, IT IS YOUR FAULT. Women are reflective in nature.

If I take a Nice Guy with me to the Women-Fest, this is what happens:

"How are you ladies! I am the Pook!"
She shivers with excitement. "OH! It is a POOK!"

She and I are having a fabulous time. She is happy and smiling. My Nice Guy dork friend just looks sad, confused, bothered, angry, sad, depressed, sad, confused, and so on.

She looks over at the Nice Guy and her face FALLS. Her mood instantly evaporates.

GO IN HAPPY and she will be happy. GO IN NERVOUS and she will be nervous and unhappy.

QUOTE: *"Ever see a baby fall down? Notice how they don't know whether to laugh it off or cry so they look to their parents to see the parents face? If the parent frowns with concern then the baby starts crying. If the parent smiles the baby starts laughing."*

See above.

QUOTE: *"Same with women. When you are entering new territory with a woman by challenging the "touch barriers" between you and her then you have to do it calmly and confidently and that CAUSES her to experience it as exciting. If you do it nervously she'll experience it as something that isn't right and that makes her uncomfortable."*

EXACTLY!

QUOTE: *"One of the best ways to show confidence is to do it slowly, instead of rushing it. Nervous people rush things to mask their nervousness."*

THINK the outcome is already won. THINK that she is going to do all the ungodly things you want her to, it is just a matter of WHEN. In the meantime, you have fun because YOU KNOW THE OUTCOME.

Women interpret this as confidence and persistance, two traits THAT TURN THEM ON (self-fulfilling prophecy, for *as you think, THEY shall become*)

QUOTE: *"Nervous people also look away, so you calmly make eye contact, and nervous people look serious so be sure to smile a lot.*

Nervous people also make their voice tense, so you make yours relaxed, and make your posture very open and relaxed rather than being closed and tense."

If you are nervous then you have not been around women very much.

QUOTE: *"All these things will convey confidence causing her to mind to interpret your touch as a source of excitement, rather than a source of anxiety."*

Not only that, but she will START TOUCHING YOU like crazy! Good heavens, I have had to literally tell them to stop. Once you show it is ok to be touchy feely, by the heavens, they will unleash touchiness.

QUOTE: *"The more you understand (and vicariously feel) the way your touch EXCITES her, the more you will naturally become confident about doing it."*

In other words, SHE LIKES IT. YOU LIKE IT. So DO IT.

QUOTE: *"Besides convey confidence, the other thing you need to do with kino is to strike a balance so it isn't either too challenging, nor too tame.*

As you start slowly caressing her--her hand or her arm or her waist or back, or maybe feeling her cheek or her hair with your hand--the ideal to strive for is that you want to keep her gently balanced on the very edge of being too excited, so it is never too much for her to handle, nor so mild that it becomes tame."

Hmm, I don't caress them unless I am going out with them or such. I usually touch them a little and it is like the floodgates are open on touching the Pook.

Kino is to make sure you are not a Sexual Mannequin because Sexual Mannequins do not initiate kino! They just stand there and smile. But after the touch, she thinks of you in flesh-and-blood terms then in the abstract image way. In other words, in a PHYSICAL way. In Womaniverse, you cannot seperate the physical from the sexual. Anything physical you do with her she interprets as sexual (probably why girls fall in love with you during ACTION dates since they are using their bodies from dancing to skating and so on).

Previous Pook Index Next

Pook #34 - What I've Learned

. · 3 August 2004 · Archived copy · Original

I know everyone has different objectives on this forum. Mine was a long term relationship.

After being away from this forum for a long while, I've realized what I think are conclusive things.

Anti-Dump is right all the way. Speed seduction, for the case of long term relationships, is worthless.

I would get results with speed seduction. But I might as well have been an actor. I enjoyed getting responses, *but I was never happy*.

Forget NLP, forget Speed Seduction, unless you wish to practice them all your life. For a long term relationship, they are worthless.

Anti-Dump and the advice on the website is much much better and actually works.

I have flaws, as does anyone else. Speed seduction could veil them, but I want to be accepted for myself and my flaws as well. True love demands the acceptance of the *entire* package.

Here's what I noticed to be extremely effective:

1) Go for the number, go for the date. (Guys should not flirt. Women flirt. The job of guys is to ask for the number and to call for the date. This cuts through all women's games.)

2) Don't talk about yourself! (Focus the conversation on her or on her interests. Only mention things about you if they are the same: "Yes, I think the same about parrots being evil too." So many women have said that I'm a 'mystery'. "Is this good?" "*Yes*" This is because when I do comment on myself, it is very vague and general. I keep my mouth shut. Also, you come across as a *good listener*. A good listener is the most sexiest trait a guy can have.)

3) Demand respect! (She may not give you her company, she may not give you her affection, but she should always, and I mean always, give you her respect. Women will not stay with guys they don't respect, and you wouldn't want to be with a woman that didn't respect you anyway.)

4) Don't be afraid to disagree. (This runs contrary to Speed Seduction. No, do not seek disagreements. If possible, try to bypass them. But never be afraid to disagree. Women want guys who have a mind of their own.)

5) Women are never the priority. (Your life is more important. Women take a backseat to your passions and hobbies. Failure to do this makes you *desperate*.)

Most imporantly, **be yourself**. Speed seduction will not give you happiness. You want to be accepted for who you are, not because you memorized patterns and lines from an internet website. Being yourself does not mean being a shy sniveling nice guy, it also includes self improvement.

You cannot 'act' yourself into happiness. Away with the NLP! Away with the Speed Seduction! Being yourself may give you more failures in dating, but it is the only path to true happiness.

Pook

"As you think, you shall become."
"Men will be nice when nice guys get laid."

[This message has been updated by Monsieur Pookiness on 07-25-2002).]

Why the update? There are always updates because you never stop learning.

Of Self-Improvement

By putting the focus on you, rather than the women, you DO gain a control on your life. Most people sleep-walk through life. Others figure out what women want and, like clay, remold themselves to that. But by focusing on yourself, you keep yourself from ever being desperate and, even if things do NOT work out with a particular woman or women, you are still better for it since you haven't stopped upgrading yourself.

At every work place since the 'Kill that Desperation' post, I always enter being one way and leave another. For example, one job I enter being 'kinda' cute to the girls there. I leave being 'pretty damn cute' and enter the next job at the same level. Eventually, I become 'hot' and leave to the next. (And I was a computer geek! If I could turn myself from a nerd to a stud, then anything is possible!)

In all your dealings with women, YOU are the only constant. Changing in how you think leads to a more correct action. **A sound mind creates sound attraction**.

I won't lie; self-improvement will get you no girls. But it does make it MUCH EASIER to obtain girls. If you don't have the balls to risk than nothing you can do will get girls. Nothing.

One thing that hasn't been stressed enough here is SOCIAL-IMPROVEMENT. This is beyond how to talk to a chick. This is being OUTGOING (which is hard to do when you are reading DJ posts. It's a classic Catch 22). Yes, you can read and be Mr. Smart. Yes, you can pump weights and be tough. But if you aren't outgoing, you will still be SINGLE.

Many guys here will fit this description: they are good-looking and know it. They are fit. They know they want a cutie. But, alas, there is a problem. It is not that they are shy; they have overgrown that. It is not that they are ugly; they are adonises. No, it is that they are imprisoned in their own homes. "Ask her out." To what!? What should they do? They feel uncomfortable since it is not what they usually do.

The only way to do something with confidence and with ease is to do it often. **The Don Juan is not a mental trick, NLP, or script but a HABIT**. Aristotle says, "We are the sum of our habits." You cannot read what is on this site and expect results. Habit is central. (And habits change from HOW you think!)

To those guys plagued with an icy fear on what to do when dating and all, they should *date themselves*. Literally try taking yourself out. What would you do? *What is the plan?* The focus is fun. If usual dates don't come to your liking, then choose what YOU want to do.

"But Pook! She may not like what I want!"

But YOU are the focus. As Anti-Dump always said, she MUST like your date ideas. If she says no, then oh well! If she does, then you two like doing the same things together! Dating is a machine to cycle through all the chicks and

get you the one that fits. It is not a bending over backward to please the girl and 'woo' her.

Of Seduction

It can be wise not to seduce too fast, to not get her between your sheets ASAP. Patience is always a good thing and lets things grow between you two.

Confident guys are confident because they know that it will come. If it is not now, then it will come. If it will come, then it is not now. Yet, it will come. I think patience has been the biggest element to my success than anything else.

Of Risk

Why are you here at this site? For most guys, it is because they fell in love with a woman who tore his heart to pieces. Now they devour Don Juan material so it can never happen again. They never emotionally risk again; they just utilize scripts and philosophies.

Emotional risk is not stupid AFC stuff like calling all the time. It is not getting sappy. It is putting your ego on the line. Why should you do this? Because there is a greater risk than if you don't. Why have a woman if all you don't invest some of your emotion in it? It ruins the fun and the love.

"But Pook! You said be desireless!"

Desireless means controlling yourself rather than having her control you. And this is at the beginning. After a while with a girl, you SHOULD want to put some emotional attachment in.

"But what if I get hurt!?" Then you still win! *Would you be here at this forum, learning how to be a Don Juan, if you got the woman you wanted?*

You should thank the girl you didn't get because now you are a Don Juan. (Imagine if you were an AFC for your entire life! Yech!) If something similiar occurs, the same radical improvement will follow.

Do not use DJism as an armor for the risk of emotional attachment. DJing is a TOOL to a goal. The goal is not DJism itself.

Dating is a Win-Win

Do not look at women as a win or lose game. THE GOAL is to find a woman you love and one who loves you back (without either settling). The goal is NOT to make every chick like you. The goal is to make YOURSELF happy. Think of it as a weeding out process where THE ONE is at the end.

Every breath we take brings us one closer to our last. What are you waiting for? For yourself to become 'perfect'? You never will be. The key is to weed them out to find if she is perfect for you.

Do not try to get into a woman's head. I've done so and I've wasted countless time in the process. Women are meant to be loved, not understood. If you understand them, you can never love them. So choose to love them; it's a happier life than that of a dried up philosopher.

There is nothing to lose. Success is a certainty now. Turn off the computer, go out, and live.

Previous Pook Index Next

Pook #35 - Approaching Women

. · 4 August 2004 · Archived copy · Original

I love approaching women! Here's a way to look at it:

We are all in constant self-improvement. Our past selves are always less evolved then our present form. Let us see the difference between Pook Version 1.2 and Pook Version 2.9.

Pook *Version 1.2*

In this version of Pook, we find that he is shedding off that Nice Guy straitjacket. He knows he ought to approach. Unfortunately, he sees it as a chore.

So enters a beautiful chick. Poor Pook feels himself freezing up. He bites the bullet and goes talk to her.

"Hi."
"Hello."
"So... what you up to?"
"Just grocery shopping. Ran out of food, got to get some more, you know?" (Pause) "You?"
"Oh... The same. Well, cya."

No, you are quite correct, this was pathetic. At the time, my mind did not think this. Rather, I was thinking, "You have accomplished your mission. You have approached the chick. Well done."

With that type of thinking, no wonder I wasn't having any fun!

Pook *Version 2.9*

Now let us see how a more recent version of Pook.

Enters a beautiful woman in the bread section of the store.
I approach. "So, you like bread too!"
She laughs. "Yes."
"Here, try this one!" I toss some bread at her.
"Potato bread!? No, I don't think so." Laughing, she puts it back.
Now I say, "Have you seen (X) product? Don't just stand there! Come on!" I take her hand and we go across the store.

Now, this Pook is crazy. She gives him her number. What is the difference between 2.9's mind and 1.2's mind?

The difference is,

1) The earlier Pook saw the approach as the WOMAN to be the prize to be won. The later Pook saw HIMSELF as the prize. The early Pook saw the approach as a mission, the later pook saw the approach as an opportunity for fun.

2) The earlier Pook tries to make things fun for the woman and fails. The later Pook doesn't care and focuses on HIS feelings, in other words, he has fun himself.

The early Pook thinks, "Oh my. I hope I am doing things correctly. Is she smiling? Is she keeping eye contact? Is SHE having fun?"

The later Pook thinks, "Wheeeeeeeeeee!"

Have fun! To hell with formulas and rules. As long as I have fun, what does it matter if she rejects me or not? I think, "Well, she doesn't know how to have fun!"

Focus on having fun then on avoiding the pain of rejection or loneliness. The carrot is more attractive to her then the stick.

Quit taking this so seriously! These are GIRLS. GIRLS! What are they going to do to you? Beat you up?

You like having fun, right? Then do it! Be playful. Be crazy. Do what makes YOU have fun, and see if she'll go along for the ride.

No more nervousness! No more shyness! Those originate in you worrying how you will be percieved. Rather, everything is in how you percieve yourself.

This makes the difference.

*

Looks are more important to YOUNGER women. High school and college girls are more looks oriented.

"girls dont care too much about your personality at this age."

And what age are you speaking of, Bashful?

You'll be surprised how far a steady confidence will take you.

But I know this will not convince you. You think you've lost the lottery of life. I have some questions...

How can you be happy in a relationship if you're not happy being single?

If you want to be judged for your personality and not looks, do you, likewise, judge girls for *their* personalities and not their looks?

Whatever standards you have for women, they must be applied to yourself as well. Do you pursue a chick's personality or her looks?

I've been seeing this attitude of "It's all looks! Boo hoo! Woe is me!" If I had that same attitude, I'd be sitting in front of my computer every night, getting drunk, as my heart shrivels in the acid of bitterness.

Bashful, I have no sympathy for you. WOMEN are judged on looks much more harshly. When a fat chick whines, "Guys are just after looks!" You know what I say to them? "What are you going to do about it?" Usually these chicks either work out, make themselves thinner and more attractive or they turn into a militant feminist with a bitter excuse of a heart.

By letting their responses guide your actions, you are being shaped by your environment- in other words being feminine. This isn't attractive in any situation or age.

You are your destiny! What you do today shapes tomorrow. Think, dream, and never lose the name of action!

Three months from now, I want to come on this forum, and I want to see a post by Bashful saying, "Guys, this chick I am with IS AWESOME! Geez, I feel like the greatest guy in the world!"

You may think that's unrealistic. But on the Don Juan Forum, it happens all the time. Now its time for it to happen to you. But it will never come without ACTION and proper mindset.

We're behind you.

*

[Later on, reffering back to this post]
I now disagree with what I wrote there about the girls initializing dates/romance. I have never, in my life, seen a girl initiate a date for romantic interests. Girls will flirt to tell you they are interested, guys confirm your interest by asking for their number.

Just from observation, guys seem to fall in love much, much faster then girls do. The best defense I see from falling into infatuation so soon, so fast is to have interest in other women. This will prevent the she's-the-only-one-for-me disease.

Men want sex. Women want relationships. If they make it hard for us, then why should we not make it hard for them as well?

Previous Pook Index Next

Pook #36 - As You Think, You Shall Become

. · 5 August 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Exactly. It is not putting forth a 'spell' on them or controlling them. It is a matter of controlling yourself.

Your destiny depends on what you *think*. As you think, you shall become. And so long as you think, so long you remain free.

I hate classifications but this one is needed to carry forth the point:

Nice Guy

This guy is still acting like a chick, like a henid. He is feeling her. He is in the orbit of the hot chick and FEELS so 'mystified' by her. The Nice Guy is boring but he never realizes this, because he feels 'so good' by being around the hot chick. This is why the Nice Guy keeps doing his stupid dinner dates and stays consistently boring.

Player

This guy knows how stupid the Nice Guy way is, and strives to CONTROL the chick. He aims at rapport and 'creating attraction'. He is trying to CREATE FEELINGS in the chick. This has a natural glass ceiling because you cannot be 'creating feelings' forever, especially when it comes to a relationship and can't hide behind mystery and distance any longer. This guy is still at GROUND ZERO. He is not in the negative world of the Nice Guy, but he still hasn't understood the role Nature has. This path leads only to vanity, never love.

Don Juan

The historical Don Juan was a *man* who led a victorius naval battle. He would later run off and go after the Princess of Aragon (I believe).

The Nice Guy is drunk with his feelings. The Player keeps thinking of CONTROL and POWER over the chick's feelings. The Don Juan gives off feelings, unconsiocusly; he is a sexual light in the world the women flock to.

The Nice Guy mythologizes the woman. He turns her into a goddess.

The Don Juan mythologizes himself. He turns himself into a demi-god.

THIS IS THE DIFFERENCE.

The players, seducers, etc. are caught in between. They still don't understand the power of imagination. In fact, they BLAME imagination for them being a Nice Guy. Now, they swear they are going to live only in 'reality'.

People always ridiculed me because I placed so much emphasis on what is going on in your MIND. But that is where the battle is. Start thinking sexual, even if you aren't changing your BEHAVIOR or doing any TACTICS, and women will respond differently. Why? No one, not Ross Jefferies, not ASF, not DeAngelo (a letter commented on this and he was mystified), *no one* understands it. It is a sixth sense. (No philosophy understands this either. Not Weineger, not the Greek philosophers, no one. The only people who seem to understand it are the poets.)

And with this seed of thought in your mind added with the soil of action, a cascade of reactions will occur. You will slowly change physically, mentally, emotionally, and, dare I say it, spiritually. You are in a new world, a true brave new world where imagination is used properly (not as some entertainment).

And this is how you unite Dream and Day.

Previous Pook Index Next

Pook #37 - Be a Man!

. · 6 August 2004 · Archived copy · Original

There is a prize to the person who correctly answers this question, **What is a Man?** When asked what they want in a guy, women say simply, "A MAN!" But, alas!, real men are becoming more and more rare these days. Women are tired of the sensative wimps who have no backbones. One women even wrote a song about the subject, "Where have all the cowboys gone?"

So what is a Man? How should he act? Decades and centuries ago, the question was nonsense. But today in our feminized culture (this may be more in America then in other countries), most of us have been raised to believe that there is something inherently wrong with being a man and acting the way how a man should act. No wonder males don't know how to act around women! No wonder websites like these exist!

Indeed, I embarked on this mystery to find out the answer to this question. Several women were bunched up in a group, gossiping and yapping about cute boys, fashion, relationships i.e. nothing. This behavior extends to all women of all cultures (and also different animal species. Cows group together and moo and gnaw on grass and take notice of bulls brave enough to approach the group).

I approach. "How are you, ladies!! I am the Pook."

A woman squeals. "Oh! It's a Pook!" The others squeal in unison.

Once the ladies calm themselves after being in the presence of a Pook, I ask them, "Ladies! Do tell me, what do you define as a Man?"

With devilish tongues, the women answer:

"A Man is someone sensative to me."
"A Man is the guy who will take care of my needs."
"A Man is the one that is in tune with my feelings."
"A Man is one who doesn't have an ego."
"A Man is the guy who will sit and watch chick flicks all day with me."
"A Man is the guy who will go shopping with me."
"A Man is the guy who will share all his feelings with me."

Such are the common answers! The males listen and actualize what the women say. They are constantly declared 'sweet' and 'wonderful' and 'nice', oh *'so nice'*. Mothers and older women are proud of them and tell them, "If I were younger, I would go for you!"

Poor Nice Guy! The women his own age avoid him like the plague and jump for the jerks. The Nice Guy becomes an emotional tampon to be used and discarded. The Nice Guy, being so nice and sweet, listens to the woman vomit her feelings about men and bleed her problems of her boyfriend on him. He listens with baited hope when he hears, "Oh, why can't guys be like you! You listen and understand." Then she turns around and gets abused by another jerk! The vicious cycle repeats again and again.

Why are women acting in this way?

They are simply acting as women do, as in their nature. The problem is not with them, it is with guys. We are afraid

to embrace OUR nature, that of being a Man. Being in a culture that sees Manhood as predatory and oppressive and uncouth, we cover it up within ourselves. By doing so, we hide our sexuality. (Sexuality! Do I mean rock hard abs and rippling muscles? That is not what women find sexy [it's a contributing factor, not the core]. A type of PERSONALITY is what women are looking for. Someone they can depend on [has backbone], someone who will be successful [has ambition], and someone who is decisive [has charge]. Nice guys have no backbone because they think women are frail things that will break in confrontation; nice guys reveal no ambition because they fear being seen as arrogant to women; nice guys are afraid to be decisive for fear of being seen as 'oppressive'.)

Two poles of thought men drift into: the Nice Guy and the Jerk. Both blame the other.

"You ruin the women with your lack of commitment and unappreciative nature," says the Nice Guy.

"You spoil the women with your endless listening ear and stupid caring attitude," replies the Jerk.

The two endlessly war. Those on the sidelines have their own conclusions. One side says, "The Jerk is the way to go. Ceaseless sex! Evolution demands it." The other side says, "The Nice Guy is the way to go. Glorious relationship! Society demands it."

But the two still argue.

"You cause the women to think they are in control," says the Jerk.

"Ahh, but you cause the women to think all men are scum," replies the Nice Guy.

Is there not an end to the Nice Guy vs.Jerk debate? Are these the only choices?

The Cycle

The Nice Guy emerges. He is tenderized and wants to shout in every woman's ear "I will not abuse you. I am sweet and good. Based on *that* alone you should date me." When the Nice Guy talks to the girl on a date, *poof*, the date turns into Oprah. "Oh, my life has been SO downhill from here," the Nice Guy whines. "My little girly car was slashed, I failed my classes, but because of you this day has been so much better." Then the Nice Guy goes, "Let me tell you my life story. My birth was long, hard, and painful for my mother..." Our culture has become so feminized that the Nice Guy thinks it is *proper* to vomit his feelings and emotions all over the place. (It's gross!) Women, rightfully, run for the hills when they hear your declarations of love.

The Metamorphosis comes. The Nice Guy eventually realizes what all the ladies want, becomes bitter, and changes himself into a Jerk. His goal now is to sleep with as many women as possible and figure out all the tricks and tactics to do so. He focuses on *calculation* rather then *natural joy*. When a woman comes, he pulls out a chart of all the 'moves' and 'tactics' with arrows and patterns. He unleashes his lap top, accesses a Lay Guide, and reviews his strategy. Time passes and once was fun becomes meaningless.

Back to being nice. He sees it now as turning on Nice Guy or turning on Jerk. "Why can't I just be myself!?" he soon thunders at Reality.

Just be a Man! There is no need to reprogram yourself. You will have the interests you have, the hobbies you have, the body you have, but you can easily become a MAN. It is all simply in the way how you think and *as you think you shall become*. But what is Man? Shall we have the answer? Here it is:

A Man is a guy who is not scared of his testosterone!

A Man follows the *passion* in his life. Passion of women? Of course not. A Man has goals and desires that goes above that of chasing chicks. After childhood, there are TRUE winners and losers in life. A Man desires to be the winner. A Man WANTS to win in what he does. Because of his passion, a Man can sometimes come off as arrogant and egotistical. He does not apologize for this or for his desires.

"It is your actions that cause the disgrace of Men," says the Nice Guy.

"It is yours," replies the Jerk.

No, gentlemen, the disgrace of men is in not embracing your true nature: following your passion and, thus, loving life. Women are to enhance your life, not to be your life. So to the Nice Guy, stop placing your happiness on getting a girlfriend. To the Jerk, quit wasting your life on seduction. Don't SPEND your time chasing girls, INVEST it by putting it into your interests and desires, thus the whole of your life.

When you do this, all of a sudden you have what every woman wants: Ambition, charge, decisiveness, backbone, kindness, stableness, and *confidence*.

I want you to read what a women posted as what SHE thought was a great guy. (Focus on what I put in **BOLD**)

QUOTE: *"Qualifications" of a great guy"* ***1)Physical***
A bit athletic so he's in shape and a good complexion(If he can help it). ***Very focused, intelligent*** *eyes which pay attention to whoever deserves it. Hair that can be tossled...and a relaxed, but tidy wardrobe.*
2)Emotional
His attitude has gotta be mostly ***deterministic and level-headed****. If crappy stuff happens to him...he should roll with the punches and* ***learn*** *from it. If he ends up doing crappy stuff then he should get up, brush off and* ***be a better guy*** *the next time round.*
-He must also have deep convictions: he should NEVER give up his ideals or morals for anything.
-I know it sounds cheezy, but he must be ***respectful*** *to his mother(it reflects character)...even if she is witchy like some moms these days.*
-And of course:sense of humor, artistic, and an awesome boyfriend.
3)Social
A great guy is the one who offers the girls a chair, opens doors etc.(But isn't a total flirt--he just considers it his ***duty****.)*
-A guy should ***clean up*** *his language around girls.*
-He should ***stand up*** *for people who are being bashed in conversations. That's important to us girls b/c back-stabbing is common among us--and we REALLY notice when somebody isn't a gossip.*
-Aaaand my personal thing is that he should be the guy who "could" be the center of attention...but he prefers to hang out with the few guys in the back who are his genuine friends.
Phew...I hope this helped a bit. Physique: as long as it's within the usual bounds is pretty much unimportant.
If you want to get a really great girl...start working on your ***character and self-control****--(not b/c it's you, but b/c those two things are REALLY uncommon these days)--because a great girl is one who's been working on that already and she'll recognize it in you.*

A Man has character and deep convictions. He has PASSION in life about something. It is this passion that transforms his life, gives him confidence, and gives him joy. It is this PASSION that will give you that right mindset for you have goals and dreams that go beyond chicks.

Remember, *if you cannot command respect, you cannot attract love*. If you cannot be respected, women will ignore

you and/or abuse you.

Once upon a time, there was a little boy who was scrawny, cried easily, and was a total wuss. At the age of ten, his father looked down at him disapprovingly. "You are such a wimp!" he scolded at his son. The boy cried but eventually discovered what was wrong with him. He worked out, studied, and utilized himself. He went around the world in the most ferocious quests. He became strong and powerful. He entered politics and became an unstoppable force. He would be shot when giving a speech, but he would pull himself back up to continue the speech!

He was President Teddy Roosevelt, one of the more significant characters in America. If that little wimpy boy could become such a character, *anyone* can be a Man.

What do guys today do? We try to hide our strength and express our 'femininity'. Take an example of guys: early on in a relationship, they will show how 'great' they are by *cooking for the woman*!

As Anti-Dump said:

QUOTE: *Real men are not available. They are climbing mountains. They are swimming across rivers. What are YOU doing? Making spagetti?!?!?!*

A Man,

-Does not go through life walking on eggshells.

Nice Guys think, "Does she like me? How do I get her to like me?" Good guys think, "Should **I** like her? Should **I** go for her?" The Good guy doesn't think about the girl's interest until they're dating. The Good guy looks at all the girls and TAKES what he wants.

-Focuses on his dreams.

No, this does not include the chick. You must have passion for something in life, something you even want to do for the rest of your life. *Your romantic life is an echo of your regular life.*

-Does not apologize for his testosterone, for his desires.

"Oh, I am so sorry, ladies! I am afflicted with this disease known as M.A.L.E. It is natural for me to glance at you, your oh so curvaceous body. I am soooo sorry. Please, *please* FORGIVE ME!"

Would a WOMAN apologize for her feminine acts? So why should YOU apologize for your masculinity?

-Tries to always win in what he does. (After childhood, there are real winners and losers in life.)

Men build towers; women build webs. If you aren't constructing your tower *or aren't even planning it*, why should she cast her web at you? If you want worthy chicks, you, yourself, must strive to become worthy.

-Has deep convictions that allows him to be a possible leader.

This is crucial because one day you will become the leader of your own household. Yes, we talk of 50/50, of everything being equal, but Nature's laws surpass that of Humans. Women naturally submit and nurture, Men

naturally lead and provide.

If you were a woman, would YOU want a Nice Guy in charge of your household? Or would you want A MAN?

-Seeks to solve problems then to place blame.

If there is a problem, you solve it. You do not go, "Oh, BOO HOO! This was because of HIM." A woman naturally wants a guy who deals with problems, not pass them along. (Would you want that in your woman? Of course not!)

-Sees failure as only a temporary set-back to the inevitable.

Statistically, you're more likely to be REJECTED then to be ACCEPTED. So how do you become more and more accepted and have lots of girls? It is when you increase your trying so much that the acception rate satisfies you and you don't notice the rejections.

Napoleon Hill's book interviewing extremely successful people, these men of destiny did not let failure destroy them. Indeed, Napoleon concludes that *Destiny puts out these trials and failures to TEST the men if they are proper and FIT for their role in shaping history.*

-Knows where he is going in Life.

True seduction isn't calculation or painful discipline, it is the same as with everything that makes a success: **A Passion for Life**.

-Never loses his passion, for that would be the death of his soul.

Nice Guys HATE bachelorhood. They HATE, HATE, HATE it sooo much. Some even wish for the old days of arranged marriages so they wouldn't have to put up with all the games.

Jerks LOVE bachelorhood so much they can't see anything else in life. While women love guys that can get women, jerks offer nothing worthwile long term wise.

Alas, the women always try to change the Jerk but never the Nice Guy. Why? Because a Man is STRENGTH and a Jerk displays strength on some level. Nice Guys never do.

-Never feels he has to prove himself to anyone.

Flowers, candy, poetry all can be good additions to a relationship, but so many nice guys use them to BUY the relationship as if they must prove themselves. They flood with the poor woman with gifts to show they mean it.

So away with the flowers, those dead plants as tokens of affection. Away with the choclate, the candy, and sweets, those sugary pursuits to purchase love. Away with the poety, those rotten verses of declarations of love. Away with the quest to prove YOURSELF and let her prove HERSELF to **you** for YOU are the Don Juan.

Be a Man! And with it, you will advance in your career, your social life, and even your dealings with women. Men are very rare these days so if you become one, you will be in HIGH demand. Your career will become better as people look at you as a leader. Life will re-develop before your eyes for you will obtain the most single quality that men, not trophy husbands, not nice guys, not tactful players, but **men** have a monopoly on: *Respect*.

YOU are the MAN! For if you don't **STAND** for something, you shall **FALL** for everything!

Previous Pook Index Next

Pook #38 - Casual Dating

. · 7 August 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Why, look at this! We have received a letter from the ladies:

Dear Sosuave Youth,

Before we, shall we say, get down to business, we have some things to say:

Casual dating is OK.

Asking a girl for her number is OK.

Random hookups are not ideal.

Sitting in your room and pretending to be content with your love life, or lack thereof, is not cool.

This letter is meant to revive casual dating with you young males — a practice that used to be followed by most, yet one that is strangely absent today. Casual dating does not mean commitment. It will not limit your freedom. It will not interfere with the pursuit of life and joy, two of which we hold as one.

From my experiences, your relationships fall into two categories: random hookups or virtual marriage. Either two people stay together for a few hours and pretend like nothing happened between them the next day, or they become attached at the hip from their first date and become oblivious to the rest of the world.

The problem with these two extremes is that most of us want something in the middle. But boys, you can do something about that. And I will tell you how . . .

1. Get girls' phone numbers. If you're attracted to a girl, getting her number can't hurt. It will keep your options open in the case that you decide that you may be ready to go on an actual date in your young age. Although this is a rare occurrence, it does happen. Getting a girl's number can be avoided if you think that you could invite her out personally, which is ideal, as phone conversations have the possibility of being somewhat awkward.

2. Hang out with your girl of interest during non-class, non-dorm-activity time, non-job environment. Invite her over for dinner at your house or dining hall or for some coffee, or [for the gutsier guys] dinner at a restaurant. This is your chance to get to know your girl.

Dates are fun! Even if there is no chemistry or not a lot to talk about, getting together puts you out there. It makes us feel like normal young people who do the normal dating things. The first "date" will give you a much better idea as to whether or not the girl is worth your time.

3. If the date was less than ideal, don't be aloof when you see the girl again. If your date made you realize that this girl probably isn't for you, it's probably (hopefully) a mutual thing. Chemistry and awkwardness are usually felt both ways. But, don't pretend like it never happened. You guys can still act civilly toward each other. Being friends is totally okay.

If the date went well, don't smother the girl. It's definitely nice to give her a call a few days after your date, but don't act like the two of you married! One date, or even a few dates, does not mean life-long commitment. The goal here is

casual dating — hanging out on an occasional basis and having fun.

Although dating may lead to a relationship, it doesn't have to. Understandably, people at this school don't always have the time or desire for a significant other. But many of us want to hang out on an individual basis with members of the opposite sex that we like. And we aren't necessarily happy with the predominant means of doing that — party hookups. Casual dating is the perfect, middle-of-the-road solution to this problem.

I know that asking a girl for her number or out to coffee or dinner can be hard, but it needs to be done. We ladies aren't mean! We try to encourage proactive behavior.

Although rejection is always a possibility, the alternative is just too attractive and too necessary to pass up. Do you really want to go through your prime years of your youth — without some form of dating?

I should hope not.

This was an actual letter from a lady written to all the men. It appeared in the Stanford University paper.

This post isn't for the guys already comfortable going out there. This is for the shy, the homebodies, the ones on the Internet every night.

You want a girlfriend badly. It seemed like two choices: the hook-ups you find at parties or clubs or the 'virtual marriage' of a 'long term relationship'.

The flaws of the 'joined at the hip' virtual marriage the ladies described are many. It keeps you from meeting other people. And it is just a clinginess of each other, of two people tired of being 'single'. You can be successful at this with marriage and everything, but even that may result in failure. Anti-Dump started out this way, married a girl, but divorce shattered him as he realized the girl never really liked him in the first place. He kept trying to please her rather than find a girl that fits him.

Now we come to the other option. The 'party hook-ups' and 'clubs' sound like great fun and easy sex but these probably don't fit your personality. Besides, these girls will care nothing for you and won't care if you drop dead the next day. And the sex? To these people, it becomes a theatrical act. It is mutual masturbation. It is not fulfilling.

Also, consider that perhaps one day you will be married. When you are married, what do you like to do? Why, you go *out*. All the practice and skills you pick up with casual dating can be carried over to your marriage, your 'pick up skills' cannot.

Casual dating has the best of the two extremes of random hook ups and 'virtual marriage'. The possibility of sex is there… but it definitely won't be a girl who will toss you aside the next day. The connection of 'virtual marriage' is there… but it isn't as binding to keep you from meeting new people. Plus, casual dating gets you to find the girl that likes what you like, which random hook ups and virtual marriage do not allow.

Besides, casual dating is fun! When I was shy and locked up in my room, I always wondered, "What ought I to do?" Well, the answer is *anything!* Usually start off with something small, like dinner or a drink where you can get to know her and see if she is worth your time. But literally, *anything* is at your disposal. Planning dates is fun as you get to pick what YOU want to do. Want to go browse museums and have a nice dinner afterward? Want to go rock climbing and rafting afterwards? A friend of mine, when he finds a girl he thinks is special to him, will even get out specific types of wine. This may sound sappy but it isn't, and girls love it. It's fun to plan out what YOU want to do, and girls like to go along for the adventure.

So as you are bombarded by all this ‘information’, do this:

Forget about Pook. Forget about Sosuave. Forget about the DJ Bible. Forget about tips and discussions, women ‘psychology’ and specific techniques.

Go ask the number for that girl you have been eyeing. Do anything you’d like, from a simple dinner to event. If she likes you, she won’t care!

Forget this webpage with all its wordy text. People who stay here all day are trying to get it PERFECT, and you know what? Perfect is boring. Shake things up in your life. It won’t matter if you know what to do for the 2nd or 3rd date, most people don’t. Do it one at a time.

Go change your life, not by reading my posts, or studying the forum, but by doing what you always wanted to do: to go out with that lovely young lady. Start small, and ask out a girl that you really *like*.

Once you get a date or two under your belt, you’ll wonder why you wasted so much time on article reading in the first place.

And welcome. Life awaits.

Previous Pook Index Next

Pook #39 - Structure of Worlds

. · 8 August 2004 · Archived copy · Original

For five years, even in my absence, I have been attacked for looking for yourself for structure in the world.

When you were young, your parents and friends gave you structure of the world. You knew your role of going to school, of escorting a girl to the prom, doing your chores, doing your work, and so on. After school, you are cast out into the world. What structure should you have?

Obviously, 98% of the males and probably 99.5% of the females look for an external voice for structure. Females follow their mother. If they have no maternal figure in their lives, they adopt what society (media) tell them.

This site deals primarily with young males. Almost always, these males hear an external voice (women) and adopt a female structure.

How do you measure yourself? This is the 'Great Question'.

Nice Guys measure themselves based on their degree of chivalry. "I am so nice to her!" they take as pride. They wish only to be nicer to women then they actually are!

Materialists measure their masculinity based on their paycheck. "Look at me!" says the salesman, working god-awful shifts. "I am making so much money!" If someone is making less money then they are, they are an idiot. If someone is making more money then they are, then they are to be treated as a demi-god.

Citizen Dildos (my name) for the Seducer/ Player types measure their masculinity based on how many girls they can sleep with. They demand 'proof' and 'reports' of "conquests" from everyone.

Shining Stars are the type of people who want to be socially superior to others. These type of people start off in life as tattletalers. But they nevertheless end up going into journalism, law, running for political office, not because they want to but because they measure themselves based on how other people see them. These people have some fame but nothing lasting. Many irrelevant rockstars, actors, and artists fit in this condition. They become, at best, a Ben Jonson, but never a Shakespeare. Their success is short-lived. They also become famous because they fall, as shining stars are meant to do.

Gentlemen, what do all four of these have in common? They are structures built around women.

In a woman's life, she will go through all four of these types, as all four types serve her purposes. The Nice Guy is easily exploited (by her and rest of society). Materialists give her the gifts and things she thinks she 'needs'. Shining Stars give her the illusion of success (why get a doctorate when you can just marry a professor?) And Citizen Dildos are the mutual masturbation as she goes through these guys.

All these guys profess they are happy, that they are the ONLY ones living the 'true' life and ALL others are living a life of shame. They are happy but not joyful. Their happiness is that of an addiction, the addiction is to feminine praise. When it is not there, these males become depressed. The four 'structures' are simply means of getting feminine praise, in some form or another.

I have been through all four of these structures. Each one gave me pain and pleasure. The pleasure, of course, was pleasing women. *I switched from one structure to another when I realized it would gain more feminine praise.*

People say the objective is sex. Then explain to me why the never-laid Nice Guy *will not* a) visit a prostitute b) sleep with easy girls c) Etcetera. The objective is not sex, it is feminine praise. Those addicted to it will be so endorphinized to see their lives slouch towards mediocrity.

I trace the beginnings of female-centered life structures with Rousseau, who laid the eventual eggs that hatched matria-lineage and matriarchy. Today, it is blind to us because most of us have never been told anything different.

My posts and ideas came not just from everyday observations but from the long line of history, religion, and literature that binds us all. It comes from famous biographies, from chats with very successful people you don't know (and some you do), and from looking at the failures in others.

What is failure? All four personalities differ on it. But I would define failure as betraying your soul, as living someone else's dream, and having no direction in life.

What is success? It is love. Not love for chivalrous relationship (Nice Guy), not love for pu$$y (Citizen Dildo), not love for money (Materialist), and not love for glory (Shining Star). It is the genuine love for *life*. Find what you love and direct your passions to it. You will know you have found the right mate not because you two love the same hobbies, but because you both love the direction you (and she) are going in life.

If you want to live your life working for money, or being nice to women, or working for pu$$y, or being praised by society, then don't be afraid to go ahead. All life is an experiment. I could be wrong. But I am not wrong about myself. I hope you do not choose a path that is wrong for you and your soul. When it is wrong, you will know. Imagine how Jesus would feel if he was cast to play the role of Napoleon. The result is the *divided soul* which is a classical subject in many works, most chiefly Hamlet (a good natured artistic youth cast in the role of savage revenge by the father? How many families want their offspring to play a role they are not suited for?)

What if we make our own structure, completely independent of feminine praise? What if we follow **OUR** dreams instead of women's dreams? What if the truly smart were not those who read lots of books but those who could read their own heart and soul?

Five years I have been off and on this forum. Five years, the same dull dreary mug-wump sayings have been cast at me. I could copy and paste what was talked about me five years ago as it will match the same as today. What are my 'themes' that cause the same old sayings (and when misplaced, its praises)?

You are the focus of your world. Not the women. Instead of pissing away your youth trying to 'please' women, why not invest that time in yourself? Such a radical concept! How dare I speak blasphemy to our Female Goddesses the youth sacrifice their lives to.

Sex does not make you unique. Another radical concept! Because sex is what women have recognized to give often as 'feminine praise'. How many men think they are the glory of the world because of sex?

Live the life YOU want.
Materialist- If a man spends his life in a soul destroying job, he is held up as a model for society.

Nice Guy- A man discovers 'great love' and throws himself at the girl, putting her on the pedestal, he kneeling, as she becomes his new goddess.

Shining Star- Wants to enchant the gossipers, be it newspapers, television or radio shows, and whatever else. They want loud titles to hide that they are not truely men, no matter their scripted appearances.

Citizen Dildo- A life full of notches on the bedpost. But then what?

All four are addictive because they flood your body with stimulants. What is a Nice Guy's addiction of 'love' but a stimulant? Why don't you just get a needle and jab it in your arm, at least it won't be absurd.

Since I am not on the typical scale of Nice Guy or Seducer, everyone wants me to act 'fully' as one or the other. But I'm neither. Most websites can be categorized into the four. This site flaps like a flag caught in harsh winds, not deciding which way fully to go, but wants to keep leaning to the Citizen Dildo. The websites that speak of a different alternative are few, just as few as the men that do it.

Since I already have hundreds of pages of posts here, I have found a site that might help elaborate on this viewpoint further. Every post he makes is one I could have made, almost spot on.

http://mirrorofthesoul.blogspot.com/ (note: his tone puts off many people. Also, some ideas he has are a bit too isolationsist. But his heart is in the right place: live your life instead of living for women.)

Sexuality is rapidly becoming a political and cultural problem, as strange as that may be. Single women are increasing, birth rates are plunging, more people are becoming infertile, which causes secondary reactions (immigration becomes more pronounced, elderly social programs become threatened, governments spend money on marriage promotion and baby promotion).

A storm is raging through our age. Too many guys are concerned about not getting wet (simply getting laid, finding a decent girl to marry, etc.) and not getting out of the way of this howling juggernaut that is already destroying nations, cultures, and family lines (of the bigger issues, such as matriarchy, plunging birth rates, etc).

http://news.bbc.co.uk/2/hi/health/4112450.stm

I wish you guys well. Just remember: you do not dodge a juggernaut by throwing yourself in front of it.

Previous Pook Index Next

Pook #40 - Do Girls Want Sovereignty?

. · 9 August 2004 · Archived copy · Original

I think Chaucer visited this subject in the Wife of Bath's Tale. His conclusion was the opposite, that women wanted to rule, at least be soverign in their own choices concerning pleasing their guy.

I don't think it is a farfetched idea to say that women view men differently then how we view them. We keep thinking that it is two people 'coming' together. Nah, I don't think women view it that way.

When a girl eyes a potential mate, what is going through her head?

-Cute?

-Tall?

-How much does he make?

-What is his earning potential?

-Is he funny? Will he make me laugh?

-Is he interesting?

-What are his friends like?

-Where does he go out to do for fun?

-Other girls like him. Therefore, I must investigate him further.

As men, we don't think about these things. Sure, we want a cute girl and all. But we never look at a chick and go,

"She's cute, Paul, but she doesn't have the earning potential that I'm looking for in a girl."

"Wowza! She is hot! But I wonder what her friendships are like?"

"I dont' like her at all! But George does, therefore, I must investigate what there is about her if George is attracted to her."

We don't think like this. It would be comical if we did.

If a guy is super hilarious, super comedian, the women go,

"I LOVE you!"

If a guy has millions of dollars, even if she knows nothing else about him, she will go,

"I will marry you!"

What is going on here? Are women's 'primal survival' skills operating?

Ask her,

"What do you want?"

She shrugs. She hasn't a CLUE of what she wants. Apparently she wants whatever guy the other girls want.

Women do not see guys. They see worlds. They see themselves exiting this realm of Nature and entering the guy's world.

Having an aura of humor, or having lots of money, or being cute and all, these are all different worlds to the girl.

She isn't interested in YOU, not in the way we think of it. She is very interested in your world. In other words,

If a guy has no friends, doesn't go out and have fun, is a drifter and has no path to get money, she is NOT going to be interested no matter his other elements.

MIKE: "HELO! My name is Mike. I play video games hours on end."

CHICK: "That's nice but we need to talk about our relationship..."

GEORGE: "I am crazy and do whatever I want. I paint my car screwed up colors, paint my house screwed up colors, and wear weird clothes!"

CHICK: "OMG! I **LOVE** you! Let me marry you now!"

It is the world the girl is after.

How do successful men act with women? They bring the lady into their world. When they date (at the beginning especially), it is HIS date ideas, he gets to be as creative or dull as he wants.

And she will judge you based on the world you are creating for her.

Remember, she is going to be defined by you. There is a reason why she takes your name.

We can argue which 'worlds' are more appealing to others with the women (a crazy spontaneos world or a more stable less risk world or such). But one thing that is very true is that women, above anything else, desire the guy to *be himself*, to show his world properly.

Nice Guys and chumps, who do not create any world of their own but try to 'please' the women, are despised the most by women.

She may not know what she wants. But she DOES know that YOU ought to know what you want.

She will 'fall in love' with a guy, become intermeshed in his world, and his goals often become hers. It is not so much sovereignty she wants but a guy's world.

"But Pook! Let us say we compare a super rich wimpy guy to the cocky @sshole! The @sshole will get the girl!

Thus, you make no sense!"

But the @sshole guys has 'confidence'.

What is confidence but the LINK between your world and yourself, between your DREAM and DAY?

Guys with no confidence can create no worlds. She will see the wimpy rich guy and think how she can use him, *not* love him.

Like a child, women want to be seized and shown the glories of life. She is expecting you to take her hand and whisk her away to adventures, excitement, and fun, a world of *color* compared to her boring bland arena of Nature she resides in now.

And this is how you become *Prince Charming*.

Previous Pook Index Next

Related:

Empty Vessels and Relative Truth

Bonecrcker #47 - Living in La-La-Land

Pook #41 - Cocky & Funny?

. · 10 August 2004 · Archived copy · Original

When you're in a line or doing something boring (like work), why not spice it up with that attitude? Works wonders!

A recent example:

A girl was in a happy mood (for whatever reason). I gave her a Pookish grin and said, "You're happy because **I'm** here!"

Big smile on her face and she shook her head.

Then I said, "You're happy because you're here at [company name]!"

She laughed but shook her head.

Then I stopped people passing by and said, "Ma'am. See her? She is HAPPY because she is at [company name]!"

And the lady would be, "Oh really!? Why, that's... blah blah"

And I'd get another person and say the same thing! I'd get their reaction.

Then I started getting people to guess why she was happy.

The reaction? She was laughing so hard she was almost on the ground.

I don't think it has anything to do with being cocky and funny but the ability to make any situation fun. For all girls want the FUN guys.

Previous Pook Index Next

Pook #42 - Feeling down about your love life? Read this!

. · 11 August 2004 · Archived copy · Original

OK. So you don't have a girlfriend. You're not getting any sex. On your current course, you're about to become a Monk. You feel down and saddened.

Why!?

"But Pook, I got no girl!" That is not the problem. The problem is that you place your happiness on a girl. You can't be happy in a relationship unless you're happy being single. Get away, endulge yourself in your hobbies and work. Whatever you do, *do not* sit there and regurgitate your emotions. **Take Action**.

But the more common is, "But Pook, I am doing my hobbies and work. I have a natural need for **intimacy**. I am tired of being single!"

And I am sure it is especially burning that you walk around and see these happy couples, hand in hand, with huge smiles on their faces, almost as if they are mocking you. But fear not! **You are way ahead of the other males**.

How do most guys act? Either they are Nice Guys or Jerks, very rarely are there true Good Guys.

Nice Guys

Look at these guys in their relationships or in their marriages. *You know who wears the pants in the relationship.* These poor guys never understood the Game and are just relieved to have settled down. They are AFCs for life.

Most nice guys spend their 20's in misery until women in their 30's are ready to settle down. It is so sad to see these AFCs in such manner.

Some got a bit wise and looked at Dating Books. Unfortunately, most books make Nice Guys more feminine because they are written on what women SAY but not what they DO.

These poor chaps have no backbone! I watched my (then) roomate get a call from a girl saying that she was hungry and because she was studying, HE was to go to Subway to get her a sandwhich! Alas, he *did this*. This patheticness is not the exception, it is the common.

See that cutie pie in those oh so tight pants? Most guys would chicken out in approaching her. In fact, many would go, "Run! Don't let us know that we are looking at her!" Pathetic! Pathetic! Pathetic!

Or the guy who calls the girl of his affections night after night, hour after hour? Pathetic!

When I was young, I remember a guy driving ALL the way to my house (I live out in the boonies) to return to my sister *a glove*. She was pleasant but didn't let him get in the front door. She said to me, "Whatever you do, do not act *like that*. **Do not** call a girl all the time. **Do not** act that way."

Or a co-worker, completely infatuated, follows the girl around like a puppy. The proximity is obvious. When he wasn't around, all the girls would get together and laugh and joke at him, all declaring how pathetic he was. Aren't you glad you're not that guy now?

When my sister and her boyfriend were going out, my sister was breaking up and getting back together with him again and again and again. He wised up and eventually thundered, "Listen woman! Either stay with me or go! Make up your damn mind." She stayed with him and the two married. If he was a 'nice guy' and scared of confrontation, do you think she would have stayed with him? No.

What about the guys who just sit there and wait for girls to approach *them*? In their mind, they think, "Please ask me out!" Guys should never count on women to ask them out.

Or in the married life, nice guys who are afraid to lead because of their passitivity. They often marry the wrong woman because they are so tender to their own emotions and oblivious to reality. Indeed, there are shmiels who's wifes cheat on them constantly... and they put up with it.

Jerk

These and the Nice Guy are but one of the same, while a Nice Guy introverts himself, the Jerk extroverts himself. While the Nice Guy is constantly passive, the Jerk is constantly aggressive.

While the Nice Guy hides his sexuality and can't get chicks to be attracted to him (but are good long term relationship material, as girls confirm by saying to Nice Guy, "You're not the type of guy I'd date, you're the type I'd *marry*") the jerk erupts his sexuality everywhere, gets chicks attracted to him, but can never keep them.

The jerk has no confidence, which is why he is a jerk in the first place. True criticisms sting him and collapses his spirit.

Notice how the Jerk may get chicks long enough for sex, he fails completely in life. He ends up being a janitor or something similiar. The girls he bedded with? All of them insecure little girls. It is pathetic and very very sad.

Some guys have gotten confident enough to take action, talk to girls, etc. But very few have true backbone. Even fewer then that have the Don Juan skills expressed in the articles and on this forum.

Most guys are pathetic. Most are chumps. Women simply get tired of looking and will 'settle' for who they are with. It is so sad.

But *you*, on the other hand, *you* are not a chump and are definetely not pathetic. You are a **good catch**. Fear not having no intimacy right now, for with your mindset and skills will ensure you luxurious intimacy for the course of your life.

Can the Passive (Nice) Guy speak of true passion within his relationship? Can the Jerk (Coward) speak of true success and true maturity within relationships? Of course not.

You are enlightened and know something 99% of the other guys do not: how to handle women. For if you don't, women will handle you.

One out of four marriages is when the woman never loved the guy anyway but just 'settled down'. Out of the 'love' marriages, most of the women fall out of love. More women then men commit adultery. 80% of relationships are broken up by women.

Why is this!? Mostly, because of **patheticness**. When you get down, think of all the guys that suffer from this. Then realize that you are truly free, for you possess the knowledge that makes you **a Man**.

*

How do you achieve such a mindset? That's a hard question since it varies with everyone.

Remember when you were a full fledged Nice Guy and first read the articles on this website? Aside from the techniques you learned, did you notice how you began to look at things differently?

That shows you are on the right track.

Remember yourself beating your head into the wall because there was this drop dead *cutie pie* who was nearby, was alone, **perfect to be approached** yet you chickened out? You thought, "Oh my goodness! What am I doing!? She was RIGHT THERE and I could have talked to her. Now when thinking about it, I realize that perhaps she was there HOPING that I would talk to her. AURGH! I CAN'T DO THIS! I HATE MYSELF!"

This is a sign that you are also on the right track. Why? Because you are noticing opportunities now. Before, you didn't. Your mind is grasping the Romance Game. Don't expect to be successful all at first. Such a change of an outlook of life doesn't happen all at once. It takes some time.

(No one goes from Nice Guy to Great Guy in a day. You simply have to keep improving yourself, becoming more comfortable with yourself, and notice the small changes your romance/flirting life is having. Cherish them)

Or how about the time when you asked for a girl's number and got blown off. Or worse, you got her number but when asking her out she replied, "Oh, well, you see my fish is having a severe mental breakdown. He is swimming in circles and has a passive look on his face. I must stay and tend to his needs." And you say, "Hmm, ok. Well, bye." And you THROW AWAY the number!

BEFORE, the nice guy would say, "Poor fish! Oh, how I feel for the poor creature! Please, let me come over and help you aid the dear! Let me message fishy oils on its fins and finger feed it the flaky fish food it so craves. *We shall help it get better!*"

The Nice Guy would call another time or keep trying. But you, on the other hand, wrote this idiot woman off.

This too is a sign that you're on the right track.

When a girl says to you, "Hey! Stop all your plans and take me to see this chick flick!" The Nice Guy would go, "OH BOY! I LOVE CHICK FLICKS!" and would rush right over. But YOU would say, "On such notice? Sorry, we're going to have to reschedule. **I have plans that night.**"

Or how about the time when a (guy) friend of yours looks at this radiant voluptuous beauty, hides his face and squeals, "Oh, she *is out of my league*." But you think differently then he does. You APPROACH her and chat as if you were completely oblivious to her beauty. She may or not respond, but either way, your friend now looks at you with respect for having the *courage* to just walk up to her like that. (No, not respect. *Awe.*)

This, too, shows you're on the right track.

There's no shame in failure, only shame in not trying. Even when you don't try, the fierce guilt that tears you up is a sign that you are changing for the better and killing that nice guy within you.

Pook #43 - Feminism Put On Trial!

. · 12 August 2004 · Archived copy · Original

“All rise!”

sosuave.com enters the courtroom with extravagant robes. Like an old man, he walks slowly to the judge’s chair and sits. Everyone else sits after him.

sosuave.com puts on his glasses and says softly, “What is the matter?” The officer quickly walked over to sosuave.com and handed him the papers. Squinting through his glasses, he examined the papers.

“Who represents the Defense?”

A feminist stands. (Note: she is fat and ugly with a poisonous personality as most feminists are.)

“You represent All Women?”

“I do.”

Sosuave.com reads from the sheet. “You are accused of being Machiavellian rather than wise, calculating rather than smart, mimicking rather than confidant, full of gestures rather than full of actions, a highwayman who changes personalities and clothes to steal Man’s egos, a mind-shaper who possesses no identity, no virtues, no morals, no truths, and is ultimately a barbaric petty child-like species who transform all these vices into virtues under the hypnotic state called ‘Love’.”

He looked up. “How do you plead?”

“Innocent.”

“Now let us hear the argument. The representative of the Men may begin.”

Pook jumped from his seat. “Thank you, Your Honor. Many men are afflicted with the disease known as Nice Guyius Patheticus. Now, the symptoms of such disease are awful. The afflicted male will sacrifice dead plants as tokens of affection, write bad poetry, will speak in a language of banquets, and act like a fool in every and all ways.”

“Objection!”

“Yeah, you would object.”

The feminist snorted, “The matter is about *women*, not about men.”

“No,” sosuave.com answered. “Women effect men's behavior. Let us hear the argument.”

Pook smiled. “I call my first witness, the man with alligator skin when it comes to women, *ANTI-DUMP!*”

Anti-Dump walks in and stands in the front. The officer rushes by and holds up a rather thick book. “Place your hand on the DJ Bible.” He did so. “Do you swear, above all, to be a Man, to speak the truth of everything woman, to

live with no apology, to know what you want and how to get it, and live to the fullest so through Don Juan?"

"I do."

Pook paced back and forth. "Now, Anti-Dump, what would you suggest now to guys?"

"That men should stop trying to figure out if women or any woman likes them. Men are NOT women. Take off the dress guys.
It is WOMEN that wonder if a guy likes them before anything happens. Men have somehow picked up this bad habit from women."

"Go on."

"The thought of whether she likes you should never cross your mind. It is not important BEFORE you ask for the number. The important thing is you WANTING her. Always ask yourself "Do I want this one?". And the answer should be 'Wow. Boy do I!' That is all you need to know. Real men TAKE what they want."

Pook turned toward the jury, which had one of each twelve members plucked from the last twelve centuries to have a true verdict of History. "As Anti-Dump is saying, men are beginnning to think like women. Obviously, feminism has made a great change. Your witness."

The feminist approached Anti-Dump with caution. "Why are such an male-guided hard-nosed pig!?"

"But that's why you love me!"

Disgusted, she said, "No more questions."

As Anti-Dump left the stand, Pook set up charts. "Members of the jury! In every age, no man would be afraid *of a girl*. Certainly, he would not look at a woman as one looks at a trialing oddessey."

Pook turned toward the jury. "No, I have not gone beserk. I only agree with the D.C. sniper with ONE thing he said:

"*Oprah Winfrey will cause the downfall of **Man**kind.*

"Hence, it remains for us to acknoledge the weeds of Babylon emerging around this garden of men. Young people are caught up in imitations they do not know, do not wish to understand, but vainly beat their chest proclaiming how 'free' they now are without realizing that they are entering a prison that took prophets, the blood of martyrs, crusades on the battlefield, for us to emerge. A flight of vultures, of feminist harpies are circling overhead to pick at Man as vultures picked at Prometheus. These feminists (both the female and male variety) believe that they are highly progressive and well advanced. Yet, they are centuries behind the times.

"Feminism came without warning... and conquered men. It has created a generation of neurotic males. A male of this time may be one of them.

-Do you believe it is wrong to judge a woman by how she looks?

-Do you believe it is wrong to advance on a woman, sexually, with no verbal consent?

-Do you believe women have been 'discriminated' because of their gender, that males *intentionally* put women down?

-Do you believe that in sex, it is wrong to even *consider* to 'have your way with her' and become and be the sensuous animal you've always dreamed?

-Do you believe women desire, as priority, respect?

"If you believe in any of these things, even just a little, you have been affected by Modern Feminism. It is the virus that creates the effects known as *Nice Guyius Patheticus*!

"Women are judged on looks because YOU are judged on your looks (and women are much harsher about it!). Feminists think a magazine picture 'tyrannizes' young women. 'Forget my body, what about my mind?' they say. But did you ever hear a woman say to the Nice Guy, 'Your mind is great but I love your body!'? And every male is witness to the fact that women run towards testosteronized males, i.e. jerks.

"Why do men fail with women? It is because they respect them. This ‘great respect’ men find in women is nothing more than a lack of *self respect*, a lack of confidence. Woman’s reflectory nature must have something to reflect. If there is no confidence, there is no man. If there is no man, there can be no real male and, thus, any love.

"A recent Time magazine cover blared," Pook pointed to it, "that men and women are *biologically* different. Time treated this as a great discovery. But didn't we all know this when we turned age three or four? Feminism cannot see any biological differences between the sexes from the neck up."

The feminist interrupted. "Is there a point to all this?"

"Members of the jury, notice her tidy suit. Men change their clothes to match their lifestyles/attitudes. Women change their lifestyles/attitudes to match their clothes. Put her in a hula dress and she will start hula dancing!"

Before she could object, Pook added,

"Anyone who has thought about women will find little to value in them. The increase of thought about them; the increase of negativity is subscribed to them. The root of Nice Guyism is thinking too much about them. The more action you engage in, the more likely you are to get the hot chicks."

Sosuave.com hammered the gavel and let the feminist call her witness. It was an average normal woman. The feminist's witness placed her hand on the 'Feminist Mystique' book, whose true name is actually the Feminist *Mistake*. When she was done, Pook asked her some questions:

"Many men ask, 'What is the purpose of feminism?' After all, women have their votes, their careers, and their business-suits. Normal movements shut down once achieving their goals. Thus, feminism is not a normal movement.

"Now, let us question the women.

The woman, representing all women, was in the stand. Pook walks around her slowly, tapping on the bright light overhead.

“Why did you become a feminist?”

“Because… I was everything else. I was a daughter. Then, I became a woman. After that, I became a girlfriend. Then, I became a wife and mother. I had been everything. I was bored. Being a feminist was IT. There is nothing higher!”

Pook makes his voice louder. “SO YOU ADMIT THE TRUTH!”

“I do! I do! I confess!”

“NOW we see the picture. Woman sees herself in relation to society. Women are in a never ending war between mind and body. The body says, “YES!” while the mind, ever remembering the status of reputation, says ‘NO!’ Oh, if there only was a something that could FREE women of this state!”

“Yes…”

“Something that could make *****s respectable…”

“Yes!”

“And sluts sublime…”

“Oh yes!"

“To turn the abandonment of motherhood into ‘fulfilling a woman’s potential!”

“Yes! Yes! Yes!"

“To make nagging infinite, to let fat girls feel free to get fatter, and to give ugly girls a societal role!”

“OHHHH YESSSSS!” *She falls unconscious.*

“That is the purpose of feminism: to let women do whatever they want with an air of morality, to turn feminine immorality into virtue. *Thus, the problem of feminism is not men but women.*

"The truth: **Feminism is not declaring war on masculinity but on femininity! Feminism is a political Tower of Babylon to escape the truth of Human Nature.**

"I'm in America. And I LOVE foreign chicks. They are just so *feminine*. Here, the chicks act masculine and get fat. They find it shameful to place their time and talents into their family and children (whereas, it should be their greatest joy).

"I think it is great honor, joy, privledge, and pleasure to be a Man. Women can trump us as they can be a *Mother of Men*. There is much glory in masculinity and femininity. But feminists are AGAINST both.

Feminists Are Against Sexuality

"They attack masculinity and femininity as the former being the cause of oppressing, and the latter as the effect of the oppressed! Feminists desire a dull gray androgenous world without the sparkling lightning and glow that sexuality brings. The result is androgeny everywhere with both genders putting their priority on sex (here, there,

anywhere, all positions, with all certain arrangements of threesomes, foursomes, orgies, etc.) The reason WHY is because sex, something no law or political philosophy can touch, is the only thing that makes women feel like women and men feel like men. Everything else that revolved around it (the old style dating, courtship, of suitors, of gentlemen, of class, of charm) has been politicized out of existance."

Pook called forth a band of men.

"Oh gentlemen! What is left for men to do that *is male*?"

"Gadgets."
"Sex with women."
"Bodybuilding."
"Sex with women."
"Hunting."
"Sex with women."
"Video games."
"Sex with women."
"Beer."
"Sex with women."
"Maxim."

"What answers are these! Where there was once the concept of Man as warrior, Man as philosopher, Man as many things, Manhood has been savagely attacked and brought down by the earthly beast who glitters with political maxims and whose crown is academic 'scholarship' that is supposed to 'prove' its glitter. In other words, the concept that masculinity and barbarism are one of the same is their new ruling scepter. As long as people belive in this idea, they will sit on that throne. This ties in to the belief that women have always been poor victims of masculinity, enslaved by the evil of 'Manhood'.

"I am *pro-sex*! Not in the way of libertines acting out beastial episodes, but in the manner of sexuality. Some people here have said, 'Pook! Why do you bring in things like literature and 'historic men' into this site? What do these have to do with anything?' They have *everything* to do with this site, for the majority of us are learning to *embrace* our sexuality, of both men and women. You can see sexuality as the key to the genius of Michelangelo's *David* and the dazzling energy and insight of Shakespeare. You can see the matter of sexuality bring up the great men onto the historical stage. You can find sexuality as being the core to great art and a key to genius. (But with sexuality removed, no wonder the great writings, art, and personalities of our Time are non-existant. Now, they are said to exist because of the politics behind them. But there is nothing 'great' or time defying in politics so they will not last).

"I am not exagerrating. Look at college campuses. They are full of girls. Boys are failing more and more in school. Less and less men are marrying *because they are on strike* against the current climate. In sexuality, Atlas is shrugging.

"This website should not exist. We, men, should not have to inquire on mating practices (for what is more natural than that!?)

Sosuave.com hit the gavel. "Get to the point, Pook!"

"It is proven that modern feminism has made men into apologizing neurotics. It has caused hell in the romantic union of the sexes. The virtue of feminism is to backstab men. So brute a part that feminism capitally plays, that no

man will be given any due achievement.

"But feminism has done its worst damage *outside* the romantic realm. The slow cold rot of feminism has destroyed one male virtue after another until women cry out, 'Where have the men gone?'"

Pook pointed to the statistics showing females dominating universities and increasing their numbers. "Why is this? Because education has now become the process of *de-genderization*. Before, education was to turn a boy into a man. Mathematics, philosophy, literature, and so on were all to be used as tools or guides for Men against their fight of Nature and Time. These *gentlemen* had a style and class about them. They are extinct today."

The feminist started to complain again. So Pook addressed the point.

"She says that 'society has always been toward patriarchy'. In other words, men have been suppressing women down through the generations with their institutions and hierarchies. In order for women to free themselves, they must have political power.

"Thus, feminism is the poisoned fruit of Rousseau and classical teaching. Classical teaching, the echo of Romanism, holds that society is artificial. Society is a machine to be tampered and tweaked by the emperor. To these people, law creates society rather than society creating law. Rather than hold that society being the symphony of the rights of Man, this classical teaching puts society to be moved and sculpted by the law."

Pook takes out a scroll and reads:

"Rousseau is made to say,

Whoever ventures to undertake the founding of a nation should feel himself capable of changing human nature, so to speak; of transforming each individual, who by himself is a perfect and separate whole, into a part of a greater whole, from which that individual somehow receives his life and his being; of changing the physical constitution of man in order to strengthen it, etc., etc ... If it be true that a great prince is a rarity, what, then, is to be said of a great law- giver? The first has only to follow the model that the other constructs. The latter is the artificer who invents the machine; the former is only the operator who turns it on and runs it.

So what are people in all this? Why, they are merely the blocks and parts of the machine. No wonder feminists throw themselves at the legislative palace!

Let me call another witness: Ms. Wyldfire.

Wyldfire approached the stand. She put her hand on the DJ Bible as the officer said, "Do you swear, above all, to be a Man, to speak the truth of everything woman, to live with no apology, to know what you want and how to get it, and live to the fullest so through Don Juan?"

"I do."

Pook started to ask her about feminism until Wyldfire broke out ranting against it.

"There isn't and never has been any *patriarchy*....that's a totally bogus concept. True, things were oppressive for women back in the day, but they were also oppressive for men. While women had less choices, men bore the lion's share of the responsibility. The right to vote came at a price...the price of potentially laying down your life to protect this country.

"That was the same price for owning land. There was not all the high tech equipment we have today to help do the majority of the work...it was much harder work and men did almost all of it, and all of the most dangerous. In fairness to women, they didn't have the vacuum cleaners, electric washing machines or microwave ovens, so they worked hard. They were needed at home to keep the home running and the family cared for. It was a full time job. These gender roles were required for survival. It was never some evil plot to hold women down...it was a necessity."

"Your witness."

The feminist roared: "Explain the 'wage gap' then!"

"It's a farce. Feminists claim that women are only paid 74 cents for every dollar a man makes. This angers a lot of women. The figures themselves are correct, but they are not presented truthfully. The numbers represent men and women as a whole, NOT comparing a man and a woman in the same company with the same seniority, same experience and education. Men as a whole will always make more than women as a whole because there are stay at home Moms, wives who only work part time, and women who take time off to have babies. Men also work more overtime and more of the dangerous and higher paying jobs. It is against the law to pay a woman less than a man for the same job, and qualifications...so anyone who believes this feminist lie is not very bright."

"And the glass ceiling?"

"Yes, that proverbial "glass ceiling"! Feminists whine that there aren't enough women in corporate management. HELLO??? Women have only been in the work force with more women working than not for the last 20 years or so. Most corporate managers have put that much time in with the company before getting one of those jobs unless he's a family member of the owner. It's about paying dues and earning those positions, and women will get there as soon as they pay those same dues and invest that same time."

The feminist, defeated, said, "No more questions," and Wyldfire returned to her world.

Now came the time for closing arguments.

The jury of the twelve centuries listened intentively. The feminist ranted and raved. When she was done, Pook gave a calm and logical presentation, outlining what was already discussed. Feminism is essentially about **DESEXUALIZATION**. This is where Nice Guys, AFCs, come from. This is why feminists are so bitter. But since sexuality is no longer embraced, male-female harmonics becomes disrupted. Androgenous people sport in sex since that is the only way to make them feel male/female. Because of this desexualization, art, leadership, and education suffer.

Pook brought out another woman, one he met in flesh and blood. She was in her forties. She said, "I don't believe in feminism. Women are the dominant sex. Men are so naive about relationships and sexuality. Men may be physically dominant, but women are emotionally dominant. Who controls the finances in most homes? It is the woman. Look in the banks and you will find them filled with women. I could be a woman in any age. But I would never wish to be a man in *this* age, where manhood has been condemned.

"Members of the jury... Consider the choice you are making:

The Choice Before Us

"Of Man or Woman; this the choice of Humanity. Shall civilization be a *Mankind* who seeks to go forever forward and gain independence of spirit from the gross natural calamities that compose the flesh? Or shall civilization sigh

into a *Womankind* that retreats back to infancy to a warm milk-flowing sleep? For the all, this raised empires and rots them within. For the one, this attracts respect or dishonor to make the life a series of avalanching regrets. For who would walk the path of a man and bear the thorns, traps, and trolls that nature's filled? Of science! Of philosophy! Of art! For these are the stones of civilization! But how pure and blissful is the sleep that femininity dreams in! The dance and music of love's eternity! The wine, the song, the crest of love itself! The choice not taken is always the choice yearned for. But are there not two sexes? Has not Nature divided Humanity into two distinct parts? Then let us choose both. Let women be women and let men be men. Let one hold up the scepter of Reaction and the rest embrace the Man, that infinite name of Action!"

The jury exited and made their decision. When they returned, Renaissance, Dark Ages, Middle Ages, Industrial Age, Pioneer Age, and so on took their seats. It was the Twentieth Century that announced the verdict:

"Guilty."

Sosuave.com announced the punishment: "Those who take feminism seriously will be condemned to bitterness, ugliness, and joylessness. Any males who listen will be condemned to loneliness, stuffed with Nice Guyius Patheticus."

There IS a war against men, gentlemen. And Feminism is leading the charge. Guilt filled men sound like this:

QUOTE: *"One of the reasons I started to care about radical feminism as much as I did was because it seemed to resolve for me a certain dilemma about myself in relation to other men. I had always felt irremediably different - even when no one else noticed, I knew - I knew I wasn't really one of them. When I first began to come in contact with the ideas of radical feminism, those ideas seemed to put to rest that cer- tain trouble. Radical feminism helped me imagine a gender-just future, a notion of a possibility that men need not be brutish and loutish, that women need not be cutesy and coy. It was a vision that energized me. It helped me view the whole male-supremacist structure of gender as a social construction, not as a final judgment on our natures - and not as a final judgment on mine.*

Radical feminism helped me honor in myself the differences that I felt between myself and other men; radical feminism helped me know my connections to the lives of women, with whom I had not imagined I would ever find a model for who I could be. And it's also true - and not easy to admit - that radical feminism helped provide me with a form in which to express my anger at other men - an anger that in men can run very deep, as many of us know."

He is different from most guys because *he refuses to be male*.

But he goes on:

QUOTE: "*I think that for many men who have become anti-sexists over the past several years, their anti-sexism has had meaning to them for similar reasons. In various ways, feminism has blown like a gust of fresh air through a lifetime spent agonizing and anguishing about the place of other men in our lives. For a few of us, feminism has helped us breathe a bit easier.*"

Not so! By letting fat women get fatter, they choke on themselves! I see a couple of them riding those 'carts' in grocery stores all the time!

QUOTE: *"But it would be a mistake to suggest that a man's antisexism puts to rest his ambivalence toward other men. I think that an antisexist consciousness actually makes the conflict more acute. Such a man perceives even more clearly the behaviors and attitudes in other men that he rejects, and he understands more about what those behaviors and attitudes mean, and in a sense they are the be- haviours and attitudes in himself that he wants to be rid of, and*

somehow other men can remind him of the parts of himself that have not changed very much at all, and whereas he briefly felt good about being different from other men, a part of him no longer feels quite different enough.

So his anger at other men intensifies, as a means of keeping clear to himself that he's an exception. Meanwhile he misses the company of other men - their ease, their companionship, the good feelings he remembers having had in their presence.

For many men, the issue of other men is a classic conflict of approach and avoidance. For a man whose life increasingly has to do with antisexism, the conflict cuts to the bone. He struggles with what it means to be a man - and whether he feels ashamed or proud."

And this guy feels ashamed. He actually wrote a book called "Refusal to be a Man" which is what I'm quoting.

So Which is it, good reader? You must now make the choice. It all comes down to:

Sosuave's Be a Man or Oprah's Be a Man?

Previous Pook Index Next

Pook #44 - Good Girls Do Cheat

. · 13 August 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Oh! So much to comment on in this thread!

Deep Dish Congrats on pointing out the *Dracula* metaphor. There was a Native American myth of women who had *teethed vaginas* in such the male does not exit the same as he entered. The *Dracula* metaphor is found in almost all mythologies in the world.

Here is a passage from the Book of Proverbs. This 'book' is intended to be advice for YOUNG MEN. What does it speak of? Why, the same questions that are on this thread. It emphasis heavily that WISDOM is more important than any silver. It advises that one avoids these women and gives a beautiful description of the wife a young man should aim for.

QUOTE:
7:6. For I looked out of the window of my house through the lattice,

7:7. And I see little ones, I behold a foolish young man,

7:8. Who passeth through the street by the corner, and goeth nigh the way of her house,

7:9. In the dark when it grows late, in the darkness and obscurity of the night.

7:10. And behold a woman meeteth him in harlot's attire, prepared to deceive souls: talkative and wandering,

7:11. Not bearing to be quiet, not able to abide still at home,

7:12. Now abroad, now in the streets, now lying in wait near the corners.

Already we see the ANCIENT description of women being BORED and very decieving.

QUOTE:
7:13. And catching the young man, she kisseth him, and with an impudent face, flattereth, saying:

7:14. I vowed victims for prosperity, this day I have paid my vows.

7:15. Therefore I am come out to meet thee, desirous to see thee, and I have found thee.

7:16. I have woven my bed with cords, I have covered it with painted tapestry, brought from Egypt.

7:17. I have perfumed my bed with myrrh, aloes, and cinnamon.

7:18. Come, let us be inebriated with the breasts, and let us enjoy the desired embraces, till the day appear.

7:19. For my husband is not at home, he is gone a very long journey.

The husband is gone! The woman is married! She is not single and literally devouring the young foolish male.

QUOTE:
7:20. He took with him a bag of money: he will return home the day of the full moon.

7:21. She entangled him with many words, and drew him away with the flattery of her lips.

7:22. Immediately he followeth her as an ox led to the slaughter and as a lamb playing the wanton, and not knowing that he is drawn like a fool to bonds,

7:23. Till the arrow pierce his liver: as if a bird should make haste to the snare, and knoweth not that his life is in danger.

His life is in danger! Why is this ancient tome of wisdom saying such a thing?

"It is speaking of spiritual life, of his soul."

Yes but no! Just look around for validation. I see a fleet of young men, obviously gone the path that above foolish male did, and have their lives sucked from them. They lose their ambition. They just sit about, drowning in sensuality. They have become merely boy-toys. There is no Man in them.

QUOTE:
7:24. Now, therefore, my son, hear me, and attend to the words of my mouth.

7:25. Let not thy mind be drawn away in her ways: neither be thou deceived with her paths.

7:26. For she hath cast down many wounded, and the strongest have been slain by her.

7:27. Her house is the way to hell, reaching even to the inner chambers of death.

This is quite a condemning piece on these type of women. But the advice is sound.

If the foolish young man could speak, he would say, "Look at me! Look at me! I have sexed a married woman! Wow, that means I am really special! I have such sKilZ! I am SO AWESOME that I am bedding MARRIED WOMEN!"

The foolish youth is filled with vanity. He does not see that the woman is merely using and discarding him. It is like the guy who thinks the girl he is dating 'really really likes him'. In truth, she is just bored on Saturday night and going out is better than being at home.

All this talk of 'sexual revolution', of female 'independence' is a load of BS. As we can see, women have always acted this way. If there has been any 'sexual revolution', it has been in the decreased IGNORANCE of sexuality. There are less and less men and ladies as time goes by.

Rather than looking at things in a 'bad girl' or 'good girl' frame, it might be more helpful to look at it in a 'GIVING' or 'NONGIVING' frame.

For example, the 'NONGIVING' girl only sees you as a prop, as a boytoy, as an ATM card. This type of girl is all about HER, of what SHE can get for HERSELF. As a mother, she sees her children as merely agents to give her 'motherly feelings'. She doesn't truly GIVE her life for them or for the husband.

The GIVING girl tends to be the sweet one. She sees children not as a bangle to give her more status to this world or 'motherly feelings', but as someone to sacrifice and invest her life within. She even has that attitude towards you. She is the ideal wife and mother.

Rather than 'good' or 'bad' girl, I think the 'giving' and 'nongiving' frame is more illuminating.

bp1947 I really liked your post:

QUOTE: *"A man can't commit to a set of female genitals, only to a whole woman who knows how to act like a woman and how to make her man feel like a man."*

Exactly! Sexuality has been so perverted to think anything with the genitals. It involves the entire body...mind... and soul.

QUOTE: *"Women want their man to make them feel like a woman, well it works both ways. Most women nowadays offer little more than regular sex, and when sex is so easily offered why should any of us guys bother to commit?"*

I keep reading newstories (a trend) of young men shrugging off marriage, like Atlas shrugging off the world. The distinction is excellent. Rather than seeing women as just female genitals with their breasts, butt, etc. being merely genital ornamentation, men do want to marry only REAL women.

But with EVERY woman I come across, they ALL say, "*I understand men*" (you won't find a male who will say such a thing about women with any real confidence). They think they know how to CONTROL men, how to make 'men happy'. But they are SO VAIN and SO WRONG it is laughable.

All we 'learn' on sexuality nowadays are stale evolution theories, bogus psychologies, and bumper sticker political statements. There is no real knowledge on sexuality these days. There is no emphasis on girls to become ladies or boys to become men.

It's time for the world to have a TRUE Sexual Revolution!

Previous Pook Index Next

Pook #45 - Attention Whores

. · 14 August 2004 · Archived copy · Original

BGMan wrote:

People who read and actually believe what Crowes wrote WILL be strung around and used by ATTENTION WH0RES unless you wake up!

Yes, it does appear there are 'attention *****s' who do all they can to get male attention. But I prefer to think of them as loving the sport rather than the fruits of the sport. They enjoy fishing but not the caught fish!

Women do become more attached to guys who take their virginity and often return to them. But what crowes says is quite correct.

Guys, please read the following until it gets ingrained in your head:

Pook hops up to the platform and shouts:

QUOTE: *"Women do not know the difference between sex and respect. Women treat sex like money because women see it as a* ***medium of exchange****."*

You could even cynically say that we men treat respect and money like sex since we expect it to get pregnant and reproduce. But nevertheless...

But what is the point? It is this: *if we are going to talk about a woman's integrity then we are going to be here forever.*

As much as I can see, the only reason why the lady has what we think of as 'integrity' is for her to keep her man, to honor her parents (the father especially) or because of the male virtues ingrained through religion. Remember, women do not have the appreciation for the higher codes of honor and transcendence as we men do (they only appreciate it in MALES, never in themselves).

BGMan, you decry the attention *****. But feminity is *exactly* that.

What is it that women most fear? It is to be the old maid. It is to never know the fleeting emotion known as 'love'. It is to never have known a lover.

Pook holds up a Tablet.

On THIS tablet we see the Male Virtues. We see things like Philosophy, Honor, and so forth. We see things like chasity in women, girls staying true to a single guy, and so on.

Pook now holds up another Tablet.

These are the Female Virtues. In Womaniverse, women perform a natural aristocracy based solely on who gets the most attention from men.

Pook points to the top.

The highest point is marriage. The married chick is always on a higher plane than any non-marriage chick in this aristocracy. She has a man bounded by her. Thus, she is womanly, she is feminine.

While men dream of a day when having respect from all people in the world, women dream of their marriage day. Why? Because it is their transcendance.

Pook points lower on the Tablet.

We move down further and we see a pattern. The woman engaged comes next. Than, a woman who has a boyfriend. After that, a woman who is pretty and has potential for getting a male.

Pook points to the bottom of the Tablet.

The woman that can get no male, why, she is looked down upon as other woman and seen as a sub-human being. **In a woman's eye, it is better to be a ***** than an old maid.**

Pook holds up the Female Tablet.

What are we to learn of Womanly Virtues? Nothing. They are decadent. Men can rank themselves on who can best conquer the world while women will rank themselves on who does and can best conquer men.

Male attention! These are the points to their feminine score! They are all, *all* attention *****s on some level!

You may think that there are only some women who seek male attention, the attention wh0res, while the rest are good. This is a Nice Guy illusion (just as some women want sex while others are 'good' where, in fact, they all want it ESPECIALLY the 'Nice Girls'). ALL women crave male attention. Period!

Of course a woman like that may possibly leave you for another guy. The point is that these attention 'wh0res' are following the Female Tablet's virtues. They will realize that if they want a decent man, they must start following the Male Tablet.

Pook throws the Female Tablet down in an explosion of fire.

Rather than trying to figure out woman (how can you figure out 'nothing'? As King Lear would say: "Nothing comes from nothing!"), let us take up this...

Pook holds up the Male Tablet.

And let us be Men once again.

Previous Pook Index Next

Related: Zenpriest #5 - Addicted to Attention

Pook #46 - Habit is All

. · 15 August 2004 · Archived copy · Original

The reason for my success is *habit.* A Don Juan is a sum of correct habits.

This pales to other ideas. Some think message boards contain magic which will instantly turn one into a Don Juan. Others think special spirits will jump out of the DJ Bible and blossom you to a Don Juan. But this is poppycock!

"'Poppycock!?' Pook says?" Yes, poppycock. Even if you had every mental formula and idea ingrained in your head, you still won't be successful with women or anything.

Look at you! A plop of flesh sitting in a chair! How do you get from there to with the chicks?

"I will take a deep breath, go out with all confidence, and get the chick!"

This is blitzkrieg. It might work but you're still a loose cannon. Confidence is comfortableness. Don't try to *force* yourself to something that seems entirely alien to you. You'll never be comfortable with it.

Alter your habits and so you alter your life. Make it a HABIT to talk to girls. Make it a HABIT to be social. Make it a HABIT to look for dates. Make it a HABIT to date! Make it a HABIT to Don Juan!

"But Pook! These will require an initial icebreaker." Yes. But that should not be where you place the 'challenge' at. Focus on being *consistant*. Sure, you can create a huge mental drama about approaching that hot chick. But you should focus on being consistant in approaching hot chicks in general. This one chick is nothing in your string of routine.

Think of it like that.

Women are not Ice Water

"He who hesitates, masturbates" we hear. Or we might hear, "Imagine yourself old and dreaming of what you could have done. Go out today or die!" Some people even do affirmations to get them to 'approach'.

But approaching is not a disconnected thing in itself. Talking to women should NOT be like plunging into ice water. You whirl a slogan in your head and you go 'bliztkrieg' on her. Rather, women should be seen as WARM water, something you EASE into pleasantly. There's no need to cannonball into them.

It's similiar to working out. Habit is the key to success in working out, without it nothing else matters. A guy doing THE BEST WORKOUTS in perfect form and intensity only a few times is INFERIOR to the guy who does CRAPPY WORKOUTS and is consistant with them.

You are not the smoothest guy with the ladies. You know what? Neither am I. However, you have an *advantage* over the smooth guys: you are more consistant. Hey, they might go for a girl only once a month. You, however, will be going for them FAR MORE often. In the end, you will become 'smooth' while even the smoothest guy gets rusty.

What are you doing now? Surfing the Internet? Do you do this everyday? Do you enter your little hyper-reality of video games and mental riddles?

How do you break from this cycle? By changing your habits. If you can change your habits, you WILL change your life. Your habits are your prophecy. Endure and keep those habits, and your life will change just as simply as turning a dial to 'overdrive'. It's that simple.

So instead of focusing on asking out the chick or talking to the chick, focus on the **continuity** of it. She will then become just one chick in your routine. You focus on the routine, on the consistency, not on the chick.

Where will you be five years from now?

Hopefully, you will not still be on this site reading posts. Here is a story I enjoy and wish to share with you:

At the age of 22, he worked for his father at a bakery. He was married and had a kid on the way. Because of these rising costs, he asked for a raise. His father didn't give it to him.

So he walked away from the bakery with only twenty two dollars in his pocket and a wife with a child on the way. He started a sandwhich business that became popular as he went around to construction sites. Eventually, he entered the construction company and became one of the largest constructing companies in California. He would eventually buy a football team and watch them win the Superbowl.

Who is this guy? Alex Spanos. How did he get there from here? He says, "Habit." He detailed what he wanted to do with his life in five years. He slowly worked toward those goals and he met them every time. In fact, he would meet them BEFORE reaching the five year mark.

Compare this with other guys. Many have dreams, few have goals. By putting a TIME LIMIT on what you want to do, you often set yourself to achieve it.

"Then in five years I want all the chicks to be wanting me!" It doesn't have to be five years. It could be two months. And you can't place your success on OTHER people. You can say that you want to gain/lose weight, get your life together, get that job you've been wanting, become more social, whatever. You CANNOT say, "I'm going to have a girlfriend in X amount of time." That depends on someone else. Rather, say, "I'm going to get in the ROUTINE of talking to chicks, asking them out, and being more social." The goal then becomes a prophecy.

Focus on the Habit

Aristotle says, "We are the sum of our habits" and this is true. I've talked to A LOT of guys on being successful with women. One thing that seperates them from other guys is that they focused on the HABIT, not on the girl or the procedure. They told themselves, "I will ask out 20 girls this week". In almost every case, they do not get to 20 because they end up getting a girlfriend after the first few. It is THAT simple.

Behind every Don Juan is a series of correct habits (which are detailed throughout this site). Consistency with everything is crucial. For Habit is the child of Mindset, and this is how *as you think you shall become.*

Previous Pook Index Next

Pook #47 - If Life Seems Hard and Unhappy, Read This!

. · 16 August 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Behold the lurker! After having been here for a while, the lurker may well exclaim:

"I was wrong to hope this website would make my love life easier. What a portrait of mankind! Here I was, only looking for easier ways to get laid. Now I am re-examining my entire life! I now think of things I never thought about and consider things I've never considered. The goal-posts keep moving further and further. *This website has made life HARDER, not EASIER.*"

But the question is not whether your love life is harder or easier but whether it is true.

"Did he just say 'true'?"

Yes, he did. But nevertheless, let us get to the heart of the matter.

You say, "This website has made things harder. I now see things that I was blind too. Much work must be done."

However, you are not pained by this. Rather, this is the source of your melancholy:

"I see others who consider nothing, do not consult their dreams, and so end up in a life of bliss."

Oh, pernicious website! Are Don Juans now villians, only to whisper evils into your head? *Why does it seem things have become harder and more painful?*

You have two paths in love and life.

1) Live your dreams.

2) Live other people's dreams.

So far, every article, every technique, every tip, is poured to flow through the filter of *satisfying women* and *getting women to like you*. I can sum up most, if not all, of these 'how to get women' advice with three words:

QUOTE: *"Dump your dreams."*

Take your typical guy. Which does he fear more? Is it 'being dumped by the girl he likes,' OR is it 'dumping his dreams'?

You protest, "It is not so cut and dry! A relationship involves some compromise."

And while that is true, young men are doing everything they can to avoid that they aren't being *true*. No, you cannot expect to get your way with everything and life. And no, you don't expect a girl to drop her dreams solely for yours. The entire idea is *not* to like the same hobbies and think each other is hot. No, it is to *be going the same way in life*.

"You can have your dreams and the girl too."

But only by embracing your dreams first and the girl second. If you embrace the girl first, you may be *allowed* to

live out certain dreams or not, depending on her choice. This is why I say it is not a question of whether your love life has become HARD or EASY, but rather if it has become TRUE or FALSE. False Love and False Life is living someone else's dreams. This may make some happy (especially for those who do not, or will not, dream). Others become more melancholy and the rest will lie to themselves. ("But Pook, how do guys get caught up in this?" Because they place the dream on the girl, so she becomes his 'dream-girl'. This is how he convinces himself he is getting both the dream and the girl.)

Two paths in love and life. Live your dreams or live other people's dreams. One path is HARD. The other path is EASY. One path leads to SECURITY. The other path leads to FREEDOM.

Permit me, for this paragraph, to use the analogy of money to love and life. We know how rich people live and what they drive. And let us assume, for this paragraph, that all people want what the rich have. There are two ways (in this paragraph at least) to obtain it. One is to buy the super cool car, big house, and everything else on *bad debt.* The other way is to obtain the assets and wealth to actually buy them. One way is EASY. The other way is HARD. One way requires little to no risk. The other takes a lot of risk (obtaining wealth and assets takes courage to go out and create. Bad debt does not). By going into bad debt, you end up literally working for those who lent you the money. And you know what? The world encourages you to get into bad debt. You can easily get a loan on a house you cannot pay off within 30 years. And look in your mailbox. Is that another pre-approved credit card? It's the third one this week. There are lots of people who 'look rich' but they are in major debt. I ask you, 'Are they free?' They will be working for the bank and car companies to repay the debt with most of the days from their life.

In the same way, young men do the same for women. They look 'rich' because they have the women and can enjoy them, but what was the price they had to pay for it? Whose dreams are they following? And because of that choice, who is he working for? Both the seducer and nice guy work for the women's dreams as they seem to have none of their own. It is the price for security. And just like bad debt, the world seems to want you to take this EASY path. Movies exemplify this thing called 'love' that you must sacrifice your dreams to. Pop songs are modern prayers to the Woman Goddess, to satisfy her and your addiction to female praise (which, today, we label as male 'love'.)

Let me show a chart to illustrate the point.

Pook drags a display up onto the stage.

Turn on the light, please. Thank you. This, gentlemen, is what I call the Security Path, the easy path that is default in 90% of young males:

QUOTE: ***Time Difference in the Security Path***

Current
Girl: Has girlfriend, multiple girlfriends.
Friends: Hang out with old buddies.
Job: OK job. Steady paycheck. Pays the bills.
Family: Loves you.

Later
Girl: No girl or same old girl.
Friends: Same friends.
Job: Same or similar job. Promoted perhaps.
Family: Loves you.

Pook hits the chart with his pointy stick.

In both current and later states, his family and friends are pleased with him. After all, he has a girl. He has his buds. He has a steady job that more than provides. And his family loves him. After all, he repeated exactly what his Dad did. So what more could he want?

Now scroll your eyes over to the 'later' side. He will one day wake up and realize he is now 'average' in life. He has not grown at all during the time difference. He is what he was with just an aged rotting body. Where is the dream?

All right guys, bring out the next chart.

QUOTE: ***Time Difference in the Freedom Path***

Current
Girl: No girl.
Friends: Left many behind.
Job: Transitional. Sometimes jobless.
Family: Thinks he will become loser.

Later
Girl: Has girl (or girls) who likes his life and him. (Life gets richer because she is with him because of the dreams he embraced, not to be a mere workhorse.)
Friends: New friends. (Often smarter, cooler, better people).
Job: Got the job or made the business/investments he always wanted.
Family: Often despises him for his success.

Pook tapped with his pointy stick.

Here, he seems like a loser currently. Yet, he wins in the end. It is painful and hard to not go for the nearest girl but rather for the girl who likes what you like. (Note: why is so much attention on *obtaining* the girl but neglecting ourselves? The answer should be obvious.)

Look at his friends! He had to leave them behind. It is painful for sure. But he made new friends which helped develop himself into a better character.

Oh, and there is the job. He was transitional. He was trying out different jobs. He was starting businesses. *He was making mistakes.* The Security Path is scared of making mistakes. In fact, the Security Path praises itself because it is *mistake-free!* But in the end, the Freedom Path gets to work in his job of choice.

What I find particularly noteworthy is how there is the frustration that starts early in the Freedom Path, it vanishes over time. However, in the Security Path, the initial pain is not there but accumulates over time. The poor soul either suffers or lies to himself: i.e. "I have done the honorable path." But you did not honor your dream and so

committed treason against your Gift.

This, I said to myself, is what the initial young man, who found this website to be creating more pain and frustration in his life, apparently did not understand.

Perhaps we should remember the analogy of a medicine shot. The shot is initially painful, as was the shock of many of the things you've learned here. Taking action and embracing your dreams, rather than 'securities', is initially hard but it gets easier in the same way the shot is painful but soothes over time. Those who did not take the shot ran into disease later in life. For those that did, each day gets more wonderful and brighter, rather than more melancholy and darker.

Here is another parable. A young man was mad that his current days of life were frustrating and hard. "Rotten Nature!" he raged and shook his fist at the sky. "How unfair you are!" But Nature replied, "Foolish youth! This 'pain' and 'frustration' is merely my discipline. As you know, you cannot take joy in this pain. But know that those who humble themselves to the ways of life will find the discipline cease as you learn my ways and the fruits of life shall become available. *Until you learn your lessons, I will continue to deliver discipline.*"

And perhaps the scared young men in particular, whose hearts are dazzled by the securities that women supposedly 'bring them', will consider life from this side of the question.

Perhaps they will say to themselves: "The origin of my dream-girl was to place my dream onto her. Thank heavens I was saved from such shackles! Now I know to embrace my dream, and to those girls who love that choice, they cease to be the girl of my dreams but the girl *in* my dreams."

So what hope is there for the average guy? "Don't be average."

And how do you do this? "By doing what average guys don't do."

Which is? "Embracing the dreams first, the girls second."

One strange phenomenon I've noticed among those of the Security Path is that, yes, they construct a 'dream-girl' and marry her. Talk to the gentleman and ask about his wife. He will paint the most wondrous praise and glory of his wife, with such animation and passion, even (especially in this case) if she is a fat hag!

Your wife ought to be praised but such *infinitude* and *animation* belongs to your dreams, not to a particular female. Do not make the Dante mistake and turn your Beatrice into a gigantic heavenly body.

The difference is so clear and precise. Those on the Security Path submit life to love. Those on the Freedom Path submit love to life. The Security Path reaches only for love. But those on the Freedom Path reach for life first and end up with both life and love. One projects the dreams onto the girl. The other invites the girl into his dreams.

Previous Pook Index Next

Pook #48 - Why "Just Be Friends"

. · 17 August 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Let us interview the subjects...

The AFC, ala Mr. Nice Guy, comes walking in, crying and bubbling.

Pook shines the light in his eyes and walks around him in a circle.

Now, Mr. Nice Guy, why are you so sad?"

"Because... (sob), the girl I want only sees me as a friend!"

"What! How do you know?"

"Because I ask her out consistantly and she says, 'Let's Just Be Friends.'"

Poor Nice Guy! His heart is shattered and scattered across the floor! He wants to feel sorry for himself, wants others to feel sorry for himself, and hates how life has become.

But let us interrupt the Nice Guy's picking up his pieces of heart...

"Do say, Nice Guy, what you were trying to do?"

"Well (sob), I thought I could get close to this girl by being friends. I wanted to get close to her. Then, perhaps, something would happen."

This is very common. A hot woman has tons of guys trying to 'be friends' with her. But is it friendship?

Bring in the next subject!

Thus enters the hot woman herself. She sits down, Pook shines the light in her eyes, and walks around her with hands clasped behind his back.

Now woman! Why did you not go out with this guy?

"I just don't see him in that way? We're just *friends*."

But is it friends? Oh woman! Do tell, what does he remind you of really?

(she thinks) "I think of him like a brother."

Like a brother! In other words, the concept of sexuality referring to the Nice Guy she shudders in horror. Horror!

She thought of him like a brother because he acted like a brother. Going out of your way to do things for her (in a non-sexual/relationship context) is what her brother would do.

A woman must see you in a sexual way in order for any hope for romance to blossom (Wyldfire uses being 'worthy'

to 'date'. Since women will never admit that they are wholly sexual beings, they just express it in that way.) The Nice Guy is going after the girl in some bizarre friendship way.

But let us complete the task. Bring in the Don Juan!

Don Juan enters and sits down, confidantly.

Don Juan, how can you be friends with girls and be successful where as the Nice Guy cannot?

"Pook, its all about fun. I have friends that are girls just because. I talk to them, hang out with them, have fun with them. The bitter truth is that *the Nice Guy is not the Fun Guy*. A woman won't date you unless she sees you in that way, in other words, *she feels good around you*,. translating to fun."

Indeed! Especially at the beginning, the best dates are **action** dates. Doing stuff rather than just talking or going to a movie or eating **is more fun**. *The more fun she has, the more attractive you become*.

When you have friends that are girls, in other words not romantically going after them, you are purely with them *because of the fun*. You enjoy spending time with them.

Alas, the more fun women have the more attracted they become. So eventually they turn their romantic target in your direction.

When the Nice Guy is 'friends', is he fun? Hardly. He tries to 'connect' to her in every possible way. He tries to 'get to know her' yet she is bored to hell (thus, she uses him as emotional tampon).

A girl will not consider dating a guy who bores her.

If there were any rule with women, I would say **Never Bore Them**. Make them laugh. Make them have fun. Heck, make them cry. Make them embarrassed. But never, NEVER bore them.

Also, there is the element of comfort. You'd be more likely to hang out with someone you know, right? The same is with women. A girl that feels comfortable with you will always be much more likely to be interested.

There is another reason why female friends may become interested. Sheer numbers.

Let’s have fun with this. Here’s another way to look at Success with Women, whereas the Success is defined as:

Success with Women

[(A x P)C+M] x W

A= Initial Appearance
P= Personality
C= Challenge
M= Mystery
W= Women

What are you high in? What needs working on?

Extroverted Nice Guys have more success then introverted Don Juans. When W equals zero, then no matter how awesome or attractive you are, your success rate equals zero. Improving quantity improves likelihood of results.

When you have female friends, the 'W' goes up and up.

When you become friends with a chick, it doesn't mean nothing can happen. Rather, when you see the chick (because she's hot or whatever) as fun itself and being around her is fun to you, that is when you go into LJBF.

Nice Guy has fun just being around a hot chick; the Don Juan has fun doing things with a hot chick. This is the difference.

Pook places the Nice Guy in front of him.

Admit it! You don't really care to go to the movies. You only did it so you'd be AROUND HER. **ADMIT IT!**

"IT'S TRUE! IT'S TRUE! Oh Pook, I am so ashamed! (boo hoo hoo)"

Pook then points to the Don Juan. "And YOU succeed because you *pursue* fun. She is along for the ride."

"Very true, Mr. Pook."

And remember, the Fun Guy not only gets the girl's TRUE friendship, but, eventually, her romantic interest as well.

QUOTE: *"Just a dumb question guys.*

I have liked a few girls who I never thought was attractive initially. But after becoming good friends, then I found them attractive and then asked them out....each time...I got LJBF'ed."

Once a girl sees you as a friend, you will always be a friend.

The only way 'out' of it is to use *sexual tension*. Stare at her eyes a bit longer. Start looking at her in 'that' way. Take your thought and send it to her through your eyes, face, and behavior.

Don't worry, she'll recieve it.

Based on her reaction, you'll know what to do.

You are thinking in a GIRLS FOR DATING vs. GIRLS FOR FRIENDS. Rather, try thinking in a NO SEXUAL TENSION vs. SEXUAL TENSION.

If you try to ask out a chick who you knew in a 'non sexuality' way, you will be LJBF. You need to bring in the sexuality.

She will notice something is *different*. She will think something is 'growing' between the two of you.

And she'll like it (if not, she won't send any *sexuality* back).

Previous Pook Index Next

Related:

Pook #5: Lesson Two - Friendship Abandon All Hope Ye Who Enter

---

Are you a slave? If so, you cannot be a friend. Are you a tyrant? If so, you cannot have friends. In woman, a slave and a tyrant have all too long been concealed. For that reason, woman is not yet capable of friendship: she knows only love. In a woman's love is injustice and blindness towards all that she does not love. And in the enlightened love of a woman, too, there is still the unexpected attack and lightning and night, along with the light. Woman is not yet capable of friendship: women are still cats and birds. Or, at best, cows. Woman is not yet capable of friendship. But tell me, you men, which of you is yet capable of friendship? -- Freiderich Neitzsche

Pook #49 - On Mystery

. · 18 August 2004 · Archived copy · Original

The girls and everyone I know keep saying I'm a 'mystery'. I don't try to be. I don't intend to be. I even try to explain myself to them. Yet, the mystery (to them) remains. So mystery must be more than what you reveal.

Apparently, people try to define everyone else they meet. We try to place people in nicly cut slots to mark where they go. Girls do this all the time. They want to figure you out to decide what role you will have in their fantasy, if you should be relationship material for them or their friends, and so on (i.e. LOVER, FRIEND, or LOSER). If you keep defying the 'mold' they have for you, you will be christened a mystery.

Most people are static. A year from now, they will probably look the same, act the same, and be the same. But if you are in a state of flux, easily done through a self-improvement (or self-discovery if you will), every slot they try to stick you in will fail.

People see Pook.

"Look! He is athletic. He enjoys talking about sports. Therefore, he is a jock."

Pook then talks philosophy.

"Look at that! He must read books! Therefore, he is a nerd jock."

Pook then listens to the women.

"Oh, he is so sweet! He is such a Nice Guy!"

Pook then cycles through the women.

"How is this!? Pook is a Nice Guy Player!"

Pook then pisses off a woman.

"What ho! Pook is jerk-like!"

Pook then makes a speech.

"Look at him go! Pook is an orator! He must get his own radio show."

Pook then writes an essay for a paper.

"Wow! Pook must be a writer! Look at him go!"

And this goes on forever. In the end, they conclude Pook is a Nice Guy/ Player/ Jerk who's writer/orator and a nerd/jock. No wonder they are confused.

The longer they know me, the more of a mystery I am to them (because they've seen more change). They can only love Pook, never define him.

Anti-Dump advised shy guys to use their quietness as an advantage to not give themselves away. Terminator911 used the phrase, "The less she knows, the more she wants to know". These two were responding to how many guys turn their dates into Oprah and tell their pathetic life stories.

Women like men who are like mountains, solid with many layers because all women are gold-hunters, either for the gold of your potential or the gold you actually have. They like to dig through these layers. They get information but they know that there is more there. It frustrates her that she can't define you. She loves you because of this.

You don't withold information, you make her work to get it out (you are not to dictate your autobiography to her). But you're constantly changing. So once she has dug up a layer, the mountain has pushed up three layers higher. She (and you) are never bored and both of you are closer to the stars.

Compare THIS with the guy who is in stasis mode. She will go through his layers and his mountain just sits there. Soon, she thinks that the other mountains are taller, larger, more interesting to climb. She will say, "I am bored," dump you, and go for the next mountain *because it's there*.

People do not see mysteries in people they have not talked to/met. Why? Because there are lots of people they have not talked to. There is nothing mysterious in that. No, those people are delegated in her mind as part of the 'environment' or 'scenario' she is in. You only become real once you start interacting with her in some real way. The more values and time she gets from you, the more she will try to put you in a slot. If you are upwardly changing, she will be curious. "He is such a mystery!"

You want to be a mystery in this way rather than hiding your life (but no turning the girl into Oprah. That's just gross.) In this way, the more a person knows you, the more the person will see you as a mystery. This means your girl won't get bored. Her interest level will remain high.

And it will be through her doing! The word 'mystery' won't even go through your mind. She will think and ponder and create drama out of nothing (as women are quite good at doing). And the more she thinks about you, the more she will like you.

See? Don't try to force her mind into liking you. She wants to like you. *By her finding reasons to like you as she tries to figure you out, she has* ***convinced herself*** *that you are worthy.*

Previous Pook Index Next

Pook #50 - Patience: What Truly Makes a Don Juan

. · 19 August 2004 · Archived copy · Original

I have observed guys that had it all (looks, confidence, experience, and even interest from the women). I was envious of these guys for they seemed to know what they were doing and knew how to do it well. I was in awe of how they could be so smooth with the ladies. Their abilities amazed me.

Where I worked at, there were a couple of women who all the guys wanted. These women had initial interest in the guys mentioned above (and as you can imagine, those guys had quite a bit of interest in them). So the guys moved in for the kill. They unleashed their charm, their wit, their humor to get the women they so desperately desired.

In the end, both women had ditched these guys and went out with me.

So what happened? How could guys with more experience, confidence, wit, and looks be shot down by the most in-demand women in the area? And how could someone like me (who lacks in these certain areas) succeed when such smooth ladies-men fail?

It all has to do with patience. These guys failed because they came on entirely too strong, too fast. After a couple of dates, they wanted to marry the person. Though they were smooth, they could not hold back their desire for a girlfriend. The women sensed this and recoiled from them instantly.

Women, on initial dates, just simply want to have fun and have a good time. Men can throw too much affection too soon, too fast, and scare the woman off. Women find this as 'desperation'. It is the ultimate turn-off to them.

Patience is NOT inaction nor 'chickening' out. Not asking out a woman you're interested in is not being patient but being stupid. **Patience is controlling your eagerness.**

Have fun with the woman. Don't take your outings so seriously. A woman must feel comfortable and secure with you before intimacy can begin. The key to her feeling comfortable and secure is by having fun WITH YOU.

Patience is also outstanding at ATTRACTING women too. Those Mr. Smooth men I knew would be there at a second one of the women called their names. If she said, "Hi, [Mr. Smooth Dude's Name]" they would stop what they were doing and talk. I, on the other hand, simply greeted them back and KEPT WALKING. The Mr. Smooth men came across as eager and desperate by **always willing** to stop whatever they were doing to chit chat while I gave the impression of 'importance' and 'hard to obtain' by controlling my eagerness.

Older women (who are married and in their 40s, 50s) have told me that one of the most common mistakes guys can make is trying to jump into a strong relationship after only a couple of dates. They said that women simply want to have fun and that if the guy smothers her with affection, she will distance herself. After all, who wants to be with someone that *appears* eager and desperate?

Now I must choose between one of the two women I'm going out with (yes, going out with both). The Mr. Smooth guys now come TO ME and ask, "What's your secret? How were you able to get BOTH of them?" and I just smile.

Previous Pook Index Next

Related:

Pook #7 - Lesson Four: Patience is the Refined Sense of Confidence

Pook #51 - Ooh La La!

. · 20 August 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Ooh la la!

That is what is going through the Don Juan's mind.

Ooh la la!

For this is the *only thing* that is in a Don Juan's head when he is with the lovely young lady!

Lady La Hotness! Ooh la la!

"Monsieur Pook! Ooh la la!"

But many guys do not have 'ooh la la' in their heads. Rather, they have, "Am I funny enough? Am I interesting enough to her? Am I doing this correctly with no mistakes? Oh heavens, help me!"

There is no woman in front of such a male. No, the woman becomes something else, a harbringer of lost dreams, security for their emotions, or a magical device that will make them become cool. I cannot believe guys have such problems approaching women. What are they scared of?

"The thought of sex turn me to stone!" No wonder you stand there, gazing at your Medusa in such manner. Keep things in their proper spheres. When you go to talk to a woman, focus on the talking. When you go to date the woman, focus on the date. When you go to sleep with the woman… well…

Ooh la la!

When you are talking of her and thinking of sex, or having sex and focus on talking to her, you are not going to do either very well! When you kiss her, just think of kissing her. When you are approaching, think of talking to her.

But you protest…

Women and Happiness

You say: "My emotions are undone!" and you turn to a woman. But a woman is not a giant breast that fills itself with milk. Nor are the lacteal veins of such woman supplied with 'happiness' from a source outside herself. What you put into the woman is what you get out. And your view of women stuffed with this 'happy juice', this milk that swells the giant breast you yearn to suckle, is but a mirage, one that will lead you off the cliff. You have your 'emotional owies' and want to suck on femininity (no matter how much the femininity dribbles down your body) to nourish your 'pains'. Women don't want to be your mother. When guys go at women from this position, it is no wonder they fail (as they *deserve* to).

Women and Success

You say: "My life is in circles!" and you turn to a woman. But a woman is not, in herself, a torch of glory that shines her light abroad. No matter how much sex you have, no matter how many girls you go through, you still have to pay your rent, go to work, and labor to live. More girls will not transform your sorry life. Women despise *boys*

that stay mediocre with no ambition, no plans, no goals, no dreams, and will leave them for MEN.

Women and Life

You say, “My life is boring!” and you turn to a woman. But a woman is not an entertainment center as evident by lack of a mute or even a good volume control. They do not turn on and off at the flip of a switch, nor is their programming run by a logical schedule. Healthy women will react to you, “What a bore you are!” and off they go to the nearest man who has his stuff together. The secret to interesting people is that they find interest in almost everything. What do YOU do? Sit and surf the Internet? No, remember the order of Live, Laugh, and Love. 99% of problems come from people mixing up the order, going for Laugh before Live, or Love before Laugh. Instead of focusing on girls to get a life, get a life and love will attend to itself.

Ooh La La to get the women!

First, you must talk to them.

“Madame, how do you do?”
“Very well! How are you?”

Women would prefer talking to *anyone* than be alone. So she will be receptive to you talking to her.

But how do you display your interest in her? With a sonnet? With a pick-up line? No, keep talking to her but channel your interest through your eyes.

First Channel: Eye Contact

“My, that is mighty weather we are having.”
“Yes, it is mighty weather indeed!”

Most women will notice your eye contact. (Remember, women love the eyes for a *reason*. The reason we know why is because that is where they first detect male desire.) They will think, “this is different. This guy is keeping eye contact.” Most males are too scared. So she will keep the eye contact and keep talking to you, as you have already touched something within her.

Eye contact is very important. You DO NOT stop it. You do not look gazingly into her eyes and then stop later on. You keep it up, displaying your desire for her, and you keep staring into her eyes even during intercourse (girls love it when guys stare at their eyes during sex for a reason. Why? Because female satisfaction is influenced by male desire. Sleep with her without looking at her eyes, she will feel used. If you’ve watched lesbians make love, you will find them constantly staring into each other’s eyes.)

Now, she will REALLY notice if you start asking *about her*.

Second Channel: Asking About Her

"Blah blah blah. Blah blah blah."

"Forget that, my dear, and tell me about you."

I used to think that by asking about her you are ‘attracting her’ by showing you are unselfish in the conversation.

This is totally untrue. You are being ENTIRELY selfish because you *want to get to know her*. You are *evaluating* her. Why do you do this? BECAUSE YOU WANT HER.

By NOT asking about her, you will lose because you will not be thinking, “I want her” but rather, “I want her to want me!”.

To be male is to WANT, to be female is to be WANTED. Yes, girls go herd like after a guy but that is female competition, not true male attraction. When you REALLY WANT a girl, you will want to know everything about them: what their hobbies are, what are their plans for the future, what is their shoe size is, whether they can digest asparagus properly, these things you *want* to know.

Often, the girl will toss the question back. You reply simply and casually as possible. “Well, where are you working at now?” “I worked my way out of working.” And then you go to the next question. Don’t worry, she will ask it again if she wants to know. I like to give yes answers to their questions. One girl went, “Are you going to college?” “Yes.” *Next year*, when she saw me she knew to ask, “Where are you going to college?” When women like a guy, they remember everything about him.

You are not there to prove yourself to her. She is there to prove herself to you! If she likes you, she will start rambling out this information about her. What she likes, what she plans to do, her ambitions, so on and so on.

Third Channel: Touch

If you feel it in your gut, do it! If you do not have "Ooh la la" in your head, you will do something completely off. So touch her when you think you should, kiss here when you think you should, and so on.

Pook noticed the girl looked very cute and so took her in his arms.

"Ooh la la!" she squeals.

Pook noticed she sat there, babbling endlessly, so to shut her up he kissed her.

"Ooh la la!" she laughs, pulling away.

Ooh la la! That is my philosophy! Let it be written in the sky, written in the stars, so your mind will wash away those old toxic analyzations.

Ooh la la! And this is our mission and destiny. Some people have so confused the easy life and the hard life as to think that the path of security of walking on eggshells throughout life will make their life easier. But it is when you throw yourself into the fire that you learn everything.

Analyzations, good-bye! And self-doubt, farewell! No glory lives on the back of such. And Don Juan, dream on. Life awaits!

Ooh la la! Come sirs, drink this tonic I am handing you. No more doubts, no more 'what ifs', no more stupid suspicion of whether she is 'manipulating' us or not. Drink, drink, and put it down the hatch!

Ooh la la! Join me ladies, let us sing it together.

The ladies gather and squeak,

"Ooh la la!"

Say it again, ladies. Come on, one more time!

"Ooh la la!"

Oh, and there is a Nice Guy that has wandered into this post. Look, we can see the sweat of frustration popping from his forehead. Say it with me, Nice Guy, say it!

"Ooh la la!"

Again!

"Ooh la la!"

And, alas, several more beings of melancholy have stumbled into the post. Here comes forth a philosopher, so sad and teary eyed, not knowing what life is about. And, following him, is a seductionist, stuffed with analyzations and flowing electronic text, bitter that the 'reality' of women seem so 'horrible'. And there comes a young man who has lost the girl of his dreams, who doesn't realize that it was the dream that made her divine, not her making the dream, and he's green with jealousy, as he doesn't think he'll ever find another woman 'of his dreams'.

Come, sirs, you depress me. Say it together!

"Ooh la la!"

Again! Again!

"Ooh la la!"

You are going to approach a woman! What is on your mind?

"Ooh la la!"

Oh, and she is receptive to talking to you! Now what could you think?

"Ooh la la!"

You asked her out and she said yes! Now, what will be going on in your head on the marvelous and enchanting date?

"Ooh la la! Ooh la la! Ooh la la!"

You're kissing her! You're making out with her! She is getting *undressed*! My goodness! What is in your head?

"Ooh la la!"

Pity the fools in life, who martyr their love life on a calculus of analyzation! Go out there now with a smile on your lips and a spring in your step! Keep in mind this Commandment of Life. All together now!

"Ooh la la!"

Previous Pook Index Next

Pook #52 - A Second Life

. · 21 August 2004 · Archived copy · Original

A young man approached this post, opened his mouth as but to speak, and snorted,

“Signor Pook! Or how is it that you like to be called, *Monsieur* Pook? Well then, bon jour! There is French salutation for your French slop!”

Counterfeit not the time, goodly sir. Speak your complaint.

“All you do in these posts is rattle and prattle about women and dreams and things. Tell me, in direct and utter language, why I do not right now have a woman in my arms.”

When you say you don’t have women, you are choosing it.

“This is cruel,” he whispered. But it is the truth. You know you can go out right now and get a girl. The girl might be a fat hag, but nevertheless, she is a girl. You CHOOSE to not go for the fat hag and decide that you are *worth* more.

Loneliness isn’t some cruel conspiracy from Nature; it is your choice. So you have chosen not to be with the ugly fat women.

Now that you have acknowledged that you choose the beautiful women, it means you think they are right for you. Even though you might be a skinny socially insecure dork, you believe you have inside you what it takes to get the beautiful woman.

So you must go out and demo it to reality. Nature says, “You silly little dork! Who are you to think that you can get my lovely nymphs, the *beautiful women*?” The proper response is: “I will *show* you who I *really* am!”

And one by one you become yourself, you reconnect all your dreams to the day. You don’t bulk up because women ‘like’ big guys. You do it because that is how you see yourself. You don’t become the life of the party because women ‘like’ those guys. You do it because that is who you are. You do not become Don Juan because that is what women crave, you do it *because it is who you are.*

What is life to you?

It is the pattern of our age that value is placed on living a *long life*. Because of this pattern of value being place on having a long life, it is easy to lose sight that the reason we hope to live long is so we have more time to live worthily.

What does it mean to live worthily? This is something that only you can define. People have lots of opinions on what you should do with your life, but when the day comes that you are on your deathbed, knowing the imminent is possible, you’re the one that has to reflect upon the choices you made.

So… what is life to you?

I am not asking you to do this or that with your life, but I am only asking you to *pause* for a moment and *think*. What is life to you? Stop and look.

Many people do not stop to consider. They relive their parent's life, only to produce children who will live like them! They want money so they spend their time to get it, only to use that money to buy back time. They always place their minds in the future and never in the present, thus they don't live in the present or in the future. They lose the moments… and in the end, that is all we have. This trading of time for money, or money for time, or present for future, or future for present is not a pure exchange, *life* gets destroyed in the transaction.

Change is hard.

Being a Nice Guy is the easiest thing to do. But in the end, the Nice Guy is a trap, the trap being the *womb of security* the Nice Guy keeps running into.

Routine is easy. Change or anything new, this is hard. To take your lifelong habits and *alter* them, this takes some pain. It will be the pain of shrugging off the old life, the life your parents gave you, the life your school gave you, the life your friends shared with you, the life that everyone expects you to live… except yourself.

You only have one life and only have a certain amount of time. You may have been raised to believe that life is not meant to be enjoyed, but something to bare, to be painfully suffered through. It is the belief that if you're having too much fun, then you're not doing enough 'stuff'.

Who says life is not meant to be enjoyed? And who is meant to define that but you? Those who have this way of thought will think:

"Approaching women!? OH NO! Too painful!"
"Having a girlfriend is like having another job."
"Women just require too much *work* to be enjoyed."

Who says that women are not meant to be enjoyed? Who says that *life* is not meant to be enjoyed? And who is meant to define that but you?

"Life is whatever happens."

Who says that? Who says you have to suffer?

With all that is out there to achieve and enjoy, to discover and see, who is to say that it is not yours? Who is to say that you don't deserve joy in your life? Who is to say you don't deserve the hot babes? And why do you sit on the sidelines and surrender it to others? Who's to say all these things are not yours?

You define your life. Not your grandparents, church, or friends. When you give up those rules to someone else, YOU are to blame if you don't like where you are at.

We are not raised this way. We are taught when we are young that it is noble to suffer. We are taught to not speak our mind else we might 'offend' someone. We are taught to be 'quiet and good' when your parents dragged you to places you hated. We are taught to sit through the monstrosity called education, making us confused that education comes only with pain, thus we naturally avoid pleasurable education the rest of our life. We are taught to always avoid risks when possible and embrace a nice secure life. We are taught… nothing that makes us alive.

Some people think that we are meant to suffer each day, to gruel through the time and bear the scourge of daily agonies. If you believe you are underemployed, ask yourself, "Is my life dictated by my FEAR of not having a job or is it launched by the PLEASURE of working a job I like and getting more money?" If you do not have a woman,

ask yourself, “Am I focusing on *minimizing the pains* of approaching, dating, and loving or am I focused on *obtaining the pleasures* of such wonder?”

Most people will never start a business because nine out of ten companies fail. But those that win, in the end, even if they fail at first keep trying because they are motivated by the pleasure of getting the business, not by minimizing pain and insecurity.

And many guys will never get a girl they want because they realize they will fail more often then they succeed. But those that win in the end do so by focusing on the pleasures of success rather than the pain of failure.

So if you have no women, it means you think you are better then what you can get. You can either go out to show the world what you are, or you can come up with another ‘daily excuse’. In order for that happy tomorrow to occur, you need to start today.

You set the rules for your life. It will have as much pain, joy, and success you think you deserve. The world now begins with you. What is your world going to be?

Most People Fake Happiness

There is a great myth that everyone, amazingly, believes: that everyone else is happy, having fun, living life, and you, all alone, are miserable. That everyone is out there, having amazing glorious sex, while you must content yourself with pornos.

This isn’t true. Most people are in the exact same spot as you are. And those ‘glorious unions’ you see everywhere? Most of them are simply scared of being alone, so they go off and grab the nearest available person. The others are 'lying' together with vanity.

The big secret is that happy people aren’t as happy as they appear. Many happy people are actually *covering up* their real problems. But what do you do? You see one of these ‘happy’ people and then you get unhappy at them! You make yourselves miserable as you arrow nasty thoughts from your mind at them, and they don’t even know you.

You think, “It must be nice to be happy. They were born to the right parents, to the right environment. I wish I was like them. I wish I grew up where they did.”

You think, “I have all these great qualities about myself. Why can’t someone see it?” Well, no one sees it because they are *too worried about themselves.* Women are not ignoring you; they too are worried about themselves. When you go out with a foxy lady, she will be worried about how she acts, about how you think of her.

Life is meant to be lived, life is meant to be grabbed on to, life is meant to be defined by you. No one may define your life, not your parents, not people on the Internet, no one.

A Second Life

Now your life belongs to yourself. What are you going to do with it? This Gift of life is yours and yours alone. It truly is the only thing no one can take away. Only you can give it away, to chunk it, to toss it into the abyss of time. But no longer will you do that.

Before, you crawled and inched your way through life. Now, cocooned and reabsorbed with your new thoughts, you molt off your old life and begin a new one. The other caterpillars, feeding on their grubs and inching in circles, look

up at the sky to see you blaze by.

“How can he fly so high?”
“How is he so colorful?”
“How can he be so free?”

Nothing can stop you now except yourself. You now have the power to do what you’ve always dreamed, what are you going to do? The inner light of who *you really are* has broken out and will dazzle the world. You are so lucky, for you have saved your life. Now you know how precious life is because you were so close to ageing without discovering it.

And so people will notice the new you. Before I came here, I was mad for a girl. Now, that same girl looks at me and stares. “Something is different,” she says. “Something in your eyes… in your face…” Shrugging, she smiled. “It must be the light.”

I kissed her and pulled her to me. "Yes,” I said. “It must be the light."
.
Previous Pook Index Next

Pook #53 - Re: Selfishness, Life-Changing Decisions Etc.

. · 22 August 2004 · Archived copy · Original

QUOTE: ***What am I getting at?***

Thanks to this site I have developed a great sense of self and a much higher level of confidence (not perfect by any means, but a hell of a lot improved). I've committed myself for the last couple years to doing whatever it takes to get what I want (money, girls, power etc). All of a sudden this does not seem appealing to me. I feel willing to give up all the hard work to follow a completely different path. All of a sudden, the thought of screwing people over or "succeeding at all costs" makes me really uneasy.

Power games with girls/coworkers are something I used to be able to play very well, but now I want nothing to do with them.. I feel like everything I wanted in life is being turned on its head. Maybe I'm just ranting here, but the world has really been showing its dark side lately, and I just don't want a part of all the bull*. Is there anyone out there who honestly gives a ****?***

Where to go from here??? All the DJ techniques I've read over and over seem so insignificant. God, I had everything planned out, I feel like I'm back at square one and then some. I've got no idea what I want out of life again... anyone have any input? or have I gone completely wacko-jacko?

These are the times that try men's souls. Our ancestors and forefathers always had clear and solid definitions of masculinity and manhood. While the definitions varied in detail, the context was the same. Today, there is no system, no genuine respect for manhood. If a woman committed suicide, it would be a 'tragedy'. But if a young man commits suicide? Ho-hum, just another 'statistic'.

You're not crazy. You've grown up. Most people never do.

Children are remarkably selfish. This is fine, as they are children. Growth is seen as the child growing and expanding on his/her abilities or schoolwork.

However, around the age of sixteen (especially for girls), they become enchanted with a self-image for themselves. This self-image varies from individual to individual, but the results are the same: to create envy from others, excess pride, material goods, and sexual goods.

Nature, herself, has written a code onto our hearts and natures. We each have our talents and gifts. And who can decide what they dream?

This grand 'self image', in order to exist, must use techniques and people as fodder, as stepping stones to success. What is obscene is that the basis of fulfillment of this 'self-image' is the denial of the self.

Narcissism is the denial of the self. It is to reject the Gift of Life. A musician trying to play the role of the soldier (for women? for money?) would have his soul destroyed. Likewise, a soldier trying to play the role of musician (for women? for money?) also would find his soul destroyed. We have been taught, at the earliest ages of youth, that in order to 'get things done' and to 'make people happy', we must, on all levels, deny ourselves. In fact, I suspect that is why many men come to this forum in the first place. We have 'denied' ourselves women for so long but enough is enough!

What is a technique with woman but the fundamental denial of self? We are taught to act this way, do that, then

this, and that over there, and perhaps we get the girl. But what was the cost? (There is ALWAYS a cost). By using some 'techniques' on the Internet, you never know if *you* can get women. Yes, techniques sell well because they are 'painless'. If anyone tells you something in life will be painless, they are, somehow, a salesman. Nevertheless, techniques are not an addition to your character but often a denial of it. No, being a Nice Guy does mean crash and burn. Rather than facing up to the hard questions of life and our own masculinitiy, it is much simpler and easier to adopt a series of techniques.

Narcissism's denial of the self permeates through today's society, as you have noticed. How often have you gone on a date with a woman and had her say everything you *think* she wants you to hear? Or how often do you find guys that act the way they think the 'women' want to hear? The technique wielding seducer and Nice Guy differ on how they act, but the context of their actions are entirely narcisstic. Even the 'good girls' and 'bad girls' suffer from this extreme self image. Reality to them is unseen. This is why they never seem to 'change' once their bodies reach that of an adult. Many people remain narcisstic for their entire lives.

I say: go do what you want! Go follow your dreams! Go embrace your passions! Go for the girl you think is 'out of your league' and super hot. Go for the fruits of life! Do NOT deprive yourself. When you do so, you slowly become embittered and turn that embitterness into a virtue. "Look how NICE I am to women." "Look how I sacrifice for my education/job/family/etc." The list goes on and on.

Our age today is mercenary labor and mercantile women. Everyone wants to leverage you for their own ends. But only you know what your dreams and passions are. Your dreams are now ripe for enjoyment. If you wait too long to enjoy it, it will be as bitter to the taste as defeat. Too many people deny themselves for 'tomorrow', always 'tomorrow'. We say, "Look at that dream up there! One day, it will come down." Rather, we ought to say, "Our hour has struck!"

Francisco mentioned "Atlas Shrugged". I would say "Fountainhead" is the superior book. For those who still think narcissism is about being 'selfish', just look at the character of Keating. Keating and Roark play opposite roles. Keating does whatever to please others. He even denies his heart to marry a 'beautiful woman'. Roark does only what pleases himself and pursues his own passions. In the end, Keating becomes broken while Roark wins the world. The point is that both characters face severe pain (for pain will occur to you in life. If anyone tells you differently, they are a salesman). Roark, taking the mindset of freedom, dealt with the pain at front. Keating, adopting the mindset of security, avoids pain at every turn and it ends up consuming him.

We can either avoid the pain and "shocks that flesh is heir to", or we can tackle it head on and be man not for women, not for society, not for your parents, not for your church, but for ourselves, as being a man is the closest males can get to heaven on Earth.

Securities Vs. Mistakes

There I am, minding my own business on my computer, when a message pops up to scream,

"W00t! Eh git da Pook! Tale me, Puke, whut cun eh dew ta git da woa-men?"

And then appears one of the following lines:

"How do I approach?"
"What do I say?"
"How do you call her?"
"How do I get laid easier?"

"Where do I meet the girls?"
"How do I increase my testosterone?"
"Tell me how to be a Man."
"What cologne should I put on?"
"Which are the clothes that women like?"
"Should I walk with swagger or not?"
"Facial hair or not?"
"Should I use more action verbs in my speech?"
"What sexual position should I use?"
"What date should I do?"
"Should I be ambitious, artistic, or just domineering?"

Gentlemen, if I attempt to answer your every request, I shall be here until Doomsday. You come onto the forum and think, "If I obtain this information, my future with women shall be changed."

This is a bald-faced lie.

Your future is the same. It is only your past that keeps changing.

Nice Guy, Seducer, Cocky Guy- what does it matter? You're looking for guarantees. Then you *change your past* ("I lost to the women because I was sheepish and not cocky enough"). Maybe you have different results. But then it goes back to the way it was. And you search for more information. And then you change your past again ("oh, I lost to the women because I lacked testosterone within me"). Maybe you have different results. But then it goes back to the way it was. And you search for something else...

On and on it goes. So excuse me for not giving you a traditional answer. Let me answer you in another way.

It is to know the difference between a security and a mistake. 'Securities' What is a 'security'? It is a calculus of action. It is a planned way of thought, of movement, of talk, and of love. For example, anchoring conversation with "notice something about her" is a 'security'. It implies that if you talk about a necklace or something she is wearing, your odds for 'winning' are better. Here is another 'security'. "A cool fast car!" Since it is observed that women like the cool fast cars, guys will get them because they believe it boosts their chances of getting the girl.

All seduction techniques are 'securities'. All NLP is a 'security'. The entire idea is to boost your chances of getting the girl.

Self-improvement is readily a good thing. But a very big problem (or should I say cancer?) occurs when self-improvement becomes a 'security'. The idea that improving yourself, in this or that way, will boost your chances. But the problem is that it never stops. Go into a gym and you will find many single guys working out. They will remain there because they always think they have to be perfect to get the ladies! Watch television and you will see ads implying that if you wear this shampoo, you will have this social life, eat this brand of rice, and your romantic life will look like this, on and on and on. Use this product and you will be "perfect" it implies. Well, perfect is boring.

Take a young man asking some guy on the internet where should he go for the date? What should he eat? What should he wear? Which restaurant should he go to? What should he talk about? (And yes, he even asks) What sexual position should I use? Should I kiss her here or there?

He thinks, *Eh em ubtaining all dis infoormadion! W00t! Luk dat mee!*

But I'm shaking my head thinking, *My goodness! This guy is letting a stranger from the internet define his love life! He doesn't know where he wants to go, what he wants to eat, what to talk about, or what to wear.*

Women will look at such a guy with the same attitude.

A 'security' is an act or thought that makes you *eliminate mistakes.* It is one thing to foresee mistakes (after all, you can't just marry any girl), but it is disaster to life to deny them. You want misery in your life? Keep sucking up 'securities' to mold and sculpt your life.

Mistakes

I cannot speak for others, but I will tell you the BIG reason why I became successful with women. *I was willing to lose girls when I had no girls, and I was willing to spend the time when I had no time*.

What does this mean *Willing to lose girls when I had no girls?*

Let me use a money analogy. Let us say you were born poor. Most people remain poor because they cling so tightly to the pennies they have that they won't risk losing it in any investment. So they not only lose out with the big money, they remain with pennies their entire life.

Now look at many men. Many guys remain single or in an LTR with a mediocre girl because they cling so tightly to the one girl in their worlds that they won't risk or go back to singledom. (Most girls stay with a mediocre male precisely because of this reason). It is like an ant saying to another, "Don't eat that leaf else we starve!" forgetting that they are in a bountiful forest.

When one love dies, another is reborn. Nature will not tolerate a vacuum. Single guys will have women thrown at them, provided they aren't living life in securities. *If you tiptoe with women, you cannot stand!* You flop and fall over if you get out of balance. And that is what it is like living a life of securities… I know, I did it far too long. It is like walking a tight beam and 'balancing' against every gust and breeze. *It is exhausting*. This is why many following this path want to give up on women because it seems like 'so much work'.

If you don't have money, how can you be scared of losing money? And if you don't have women, how can you be scared of losing them? It is like you're fighting for the scraps, literally SCRAPS, of joy while your dreams sit on the table, rotting and growing cold with time.

And what does it mean *to spend time when I had no time?*

Most people don't live in the present. They live in the 'future'. They say, "Tomorrow! All my dreams will occur tomorrow!" Never does the person say, "Today!" So time passes and passes.

I will bet that most guys here, who are sincerely interested in getting better with women, were late bloomers in life. Let's face it. If you have not dated or did anything with girls, you are certainly going to be a bit uncertain about it!

"My problem is that I need more experience." I don't think so. I think the big problem (of which I, too, am very much guilty of) is not embracing my dreams for today and waiting for tomorrow. I would see a pretty girl and go, "No! Can't ask her out! Got too much stuff to do this week!" This occurred throughout years. But as time passed, melancholy increased and increased until you hated being single. It was as if an internal pressure came. You go after women because the pain of being single is now greater than 'ceding your desires for tomorrow'.

Is that what it has come to? The choice between lesser of two pains? Is this life? You didn't live like that when you were a child. You used to explore, play, and try out new things! Why has life become harder and more unbearable?

Again, it comes to your context on 'securities' vs. 'mistakes'. I ask, "What mistakes does a child make?" I'm sure you can think of something like forgetting to turn off the light, leaving the oven on, or something of the sort. This is from the *adult's* point of view. From the *child's* point of view, he wasn't making any mistakes. Cut his finger? Hurt his leg? Tired out? No mistakes here! Why, he was *exploring!* Every child loves to explore. There is so much in life to see! A child, instinctively, knows this.

But we somehow overpower this when we grow older. When you say something *wrong* with a woman and she leaves, you think you made a 'mistake' and feel bad. Well, why do you have to feel bad? Everyone's made mistakes before. So what?

Get that child's perspective once again of feeling that the world was new when you were young. You are *exploring* with love and life, not making 'mistakes'. And even the worst mistake is preferable to a lifetime embracing the greatest of 'securities'. The zest of life is in the roll of the dice.

So look at your love life. Is it a life of 'securities' or is it a life of 'mistakes'? Is it a 'calculus of action' or spontaneous?

Look at your financial life, social life, and even intellectual life. Are they leashed to 'securities' or are they free, wild, and allowed to *explore?*

"But Pook, my perspective uses the word 'strategies'. Your perspective uses the word 'securities'. We are saying the same thing but using different contexts. But we are *both* using the word 'mistake' in *my* perspective! Tell me, goodly Pook, what word do you use, in *your* perspective, for my label of 'mistake'?"

Freedom.

Previous Pook Index Next

Pook #54 - Securities vs. Mistakes

. · 23 August 2004 · Archived copy · Original

There I am, minding my own business on my computer, when a message pops up to scream,

"W00t! Eh git da Pook! Tale me, Puke, whut cun eh dew ta git da woa-men?"

And then appears one of the following lines:
"How do I approach?"
"What do I say?"
"How do you call her?"
"How do I get laid easier?"
"Where do I meet the girls?"
"How do I increase my testosterone?"
"Tell me how to be a Man."
"What cologne should I put on?"
"Which are the clothes that women like?"
"Should I walk with swagger or not?"
"Facial hair or not?"
"Should I use more action verbs in my speech?"
"What sexual position should I use?"
"What date should I do?"
"Should I be ambitious, artistic, or just domineering?"

Gentlemen, if I attempt to answer your every request, I shall be here until Doomsday. You come onto the forum and think, "If I obtain this information, my future with women shall be changed."

This is a bald-faced lie.

Your future is the same. It is only your past that keeps changing.

Nice Guy, Seducer, Cocky Guy- what does it matter? You're looking for guarantees. Then *you change your past* ("I lost to the women because I was sheepish and not cocky enough"). Maybe you have different results. But then it goes back to the way it was. And you search for more information. And then you change your past again ("oh, I lost to the women because I lacked testosterone within me"). Maybe you have different results. But then it goes back to the way it was. And you search for something else...

On and on it goes. So excuse me for not giving you a traditional answer. Let me answer you in another way.

It is to know the difference between a security and a mistake.

'Securities'

What is a 'security'? It is a calculus of action. It is a planned way of thought, of movement, of talk, and of love. For example, anchoring conversation with "notice something about her" is a 'security'. It implies that if you talk about a necklace or something she is wearing, your odds for 'winning' are better. Here is another 'security'. "A cool fast car!" Since it is observed that women like the cool fast cars, guys will get them because they believe it boosts their chances of getting the girl.

All seduction techniques are 'securities'. All NLP is a 'security'. The entire idea is to boost your chances of getting the girl.

Self-improvement is readily a good thing. But a very big problem (or should I say *cancer?*) occurs when self-improvement becomes a 'security'. The idea that improving yourself, in this or that way, will boost your chances. But the problem is that it never stops. Go into a gym and you will find many single guys working out. They will remain there because they always think they have to be *perfect* to get the ladies! Watch television and you will see ads implying that if you wear this shampoo, you will have this social life, eat this brand of rice, and your romantic life will look like this, on and on and on. Use this product and you will be "perfect" it implies. Well, *perfect is boring.*

Take a young man asking some guy on the internet where should he go for the date? What should he eat? What should he wear? Which restaurant should he go to? What should he talk about? (And yes, he even asks) What sexual position should I use? Should I kiss her here or there?

He thinks, *Eh em ubtaining all dis infoormadion! W00t! Luk dat mee!*

But I'm shaking my head thinking, *My goodness! This guy is letting a stranger from the internet define his love life! He doesn't know where he wants to go, what he wants to eat, what to talk about, or what to wear.*

Women will look at such a guy with the same attitude.

A 'security' is an act or thought that makes you *eliminate mistakes.* It is one thing to foresee mistakes (after all, you can't just marry any girl), but it is disaster to life to deny them. You want misery in your life? Keep sucking up 'securities' to mold and sculpt your life.

Mistakes

I cannot speak for others, but I will tell you the BIG reason why I became successful with women. *I was willing to lose girls when I had no girls, and I was willing to spend the time when I had no time.*

What does this mean *Willing to lose girls when I had no girls?*

Let me use a money analogy. Let us say you were born poor. Most people remain poor because they cling so tightly to the pennies they have that they won't risk losing it in any investment. So they not only lose out with the big money, they remain with pennies their entire life.

Now look at many men. Many guys remain single or in an LTR with a mediocre girl because they cling so tightly to the one girl in their worlds that they won't risk or go back to singledom. (Most girls stay with a mediocre male precisely because of this reason). It is like an ant saying to another, "Don't eat that leaf else we starve!" forgetting that they are in a bountiful forest.

When one love dies, another is reborn. Nature will not tolerate a vacuum. Single guys will have women thrown at them, provided they aren't living life in securities. *If you tiptoe with women, you cannot stand!* You flop and fall over if you get out of balance. And that is what it is like living a life of securities… I know, I did it far too long. It is like walking a tight beam and 'balancing' against every gust and breeze. *It is exhausting.* This is why many following this path want to give up on women because it seems like 'so much work'.

If you don't have money, how can you be scared of losing money? And if you don't have women, how can you be

scared of losing them? It is like you're fighting for the scraps, literally SCRAPS, of joy while your dreams sit on the table, rotting and growing cold with time.

And what does it mean *to spend time when I had no time?*

Most people don't live in the present. They live in the 'future'. They say, "Tomorrow! All my dreams will occur tomorrow!" Never does the person say, "Today!" So time passes and passes.

I will bet that most guys here, who are sincerely interested in getting better with women, were late bloomers in life. Let's face it. If you have not dated or did anything with girls, you are certainly going to be a bit uncertain about it!

"My problem is that I need more experience." I don't think so. I think the big problem (of which I, too, am very much guilty of) is not embracing my dreams for today and waiting for tomorrow. I would see a pretty girl and go, "No! Can't ask her out! Got too much stuff to do this week!" This occurred throughout years. But as time passed, melancholy increased and increased until you hated being single. It was as if an internal pressure came. You go after women because the pain of being single is now greater than 'ceding your desires for tomorrow'.

Is that what it has come to? The choice between lesser of two pains? Is this life? You didn't live like that when you were a child. You used to explore, play, and try out new things! Why has life become harder and more unbearable?

Again, it comes to your context on 'securities' vs. 'mistakes'. I ask, "What mistakes does a child make?" I'm sure you can think of something like forgetting to turn off the light, leaving the oven on, or something of the sort. This is from the adult's point of view. From the child's point of view, he wasn't making any mistakes. Cut his finger? Hurt his leg? Tired out? No mistakes here! Why, he was exploring! Every child loves to explore. There is so much in life to see! A child, instinctively, knows this.

But we somehow overpower this when we grow older. When you say something *wrong* with a woman and she leaves, you think you made a 'mistake' and feel bad. Well, why do you have to feel bad? Everyone's made mistakes before. So what?

Get that child's perspective once again of feeling that the world was new when you were young. You are *exploring* with love and life, not making 'mistakes'. And even the worst mistake is preferable to a lifetime embracing the greatest of 'securities'. The zest of life is in the roll of the dice.

So look at your love life. Is it a life of 'securities' or is it a life of 'mistakes'? Is it a 'calculus of action' or spontaneous?

Look at your financial life, social life, and even intellectual life. Are they leashed to 'securities' or are they free, wild, and allowed to *explore*?

"But Pook, my perspective uses the word 'strategies'. Your perspective uses the word 'securities'. We are saying the same thing but using different contexts. But we are *both* using the word 'mistake' in *my* perspective! Tell me, goodly Pook, what word do you use, in *your* perspective, for my label of 'mistake'?"

Freedom.

Previous Pook Index Next

Pook #55 - "SS is AFC"

. · 24 August 2004 · Archived copy · Original

This is EXCELLENT! **xblitz44x**, I want to use your post to illustrate a point.

DISCLAIMER: One can learn a lot with speed seduction. You can learn how to be more at ease with talking to them (since women are more comfortable with talking about feelings then anything intellectual), and good to give a starting point of 'how-tos' when you deal with women.

That said, my issue with SS has always been the SPIRIT of SS: that it destroys the Man within to turn you into a Metamorph to fit the woman's lust. (Yet, SS has the vanity to think that it is altering the *woman*!)

"So everytime she moves, you move. Try to mirror her breath frequency and depth."

Your body behavior has become reactive.

"a conversation, try to use these words as much as you can, so that her sub-conscious will pick up on it and realize that they must be important to you too. But repeating these words back to her, she will think that you sincerely understand her and can relate to what she is talking about."

Your vocabulary has become reactive.

The most important part of seduction IMO, is demonstrating your value. If you approach a woman, and she blows you off, or if she never returns your calls, or if she turns you down for a date, you have not shown her the VALUE that you can provide to her.

This is true in that you are THE PRIZE TO BE WON and that she is after to CATCH YOU.

But notice that with this you now cease to be Man and become reactive of values based on WOMAN'S RESPONSE. Gone is integrity! You want to create the 'values' that WORKS toward her lust. Thus, the manner of these 'values' are all going to react to her lust.

When you are Eliciting Values, you are finding out what is important to her, what SHE values, transforming into a man that can give her that, and finally providing her with it.

No longer are you a Man! Now you are a Shifter! You are bending yourself towards what she wants. (This is the Average Frustrated Chump that ceases to be frustrated. Notice that he is still a chump.)

Now, if you were merely to pick out common things she said and leap on those to build a common ground, that would be one thing (which is called 'good conversation skills'). But the entire SPIRIT of this SS is based entirely in HER eyes, how SHE must see you, how SHE must percieve you.

From this conversation, I've discovered that she likes to feel a little in danger. She loves the excitment of living on the edge. From this you should TRANSFORM yourself into a man that can provide her with these feelings that SHE VALUES!

Not only are you to TRANSFORM yourself, you are to PROVIDE HER those feelings she LUSTS for. This is the Social Dildo who's social behavior is geared only toward tapping female lust (which itself is fine but triggering her

lust TRUMPS your own values. You are to be transformed).

Most women believe they are living their own fairytale and are searching for the male star. In order to become that male star, you must bring it to her attention that you two have a lot of things in common and it is amazing to connect with somebody on such a level.

To become that male star! Now you live for HER fantasy!

After you've done this a few times, say something along the lines of:

"Can you remember what it felt like when you were in front of somebody that you maybe just recently met, but it feels like you've known this person for ever? You feel yourself start to relax, and open up to him because it seems so natural, as if we connect on some deeper level? With me, I don't think it can be forced, but when it does happen, it feels amazing"

First, your body behavior became reactive. Then your vocabulary. Then your values and character. Now your speech is to sound like a banquet of fluffy words all arranged to reflect her own lust back to her.

If you want her to feel horney, you could say something like this:

"My brother just called me, he just lost his virginity this weekend and he was asking me for tips. Remember back when you were younger, and you had this one lover that could always do things to your body that would send tingles dancing down your spine, and could cause butterflies to tickle your belly. This person would penetrate you with his thoughts and just his presence along caused tingles to run down your arms, to the ends of your finger tips."

If all goes well, she will feel the tingles as I describe them. She has to feel them now to compare them to see if she's ever felt them in the past.

Now you are talking *like a girl*! Anyone who is around women consistantly know that all they talk about is sex, sex, and everything surrounding sex.

Getting phone numbers is emphasized WAY too much on this board. As great as it feels to get phone numbers, rarely does it ever pan out into a fvck.

Because this board is not a satellite of speed seduction; there are countless boards and discussion areas for that.

Women love to fvck. This is 100% true. Women love to fvck just as much as men do.

I would say that women love to 'fvck' MORE than men. In fact, women's entire consciousness revolves around the axis of sexuality.

However, to prevent themselves from feeling like a slut, you must create a real or superficial relationship with her INSIDE OF HER MIND before she'll fvck you.

Have I not said that women are entirely sexual BY DEFAULT and their concern is not that they are sexual but on how EVERYONE ELSE percieves it?

Did I not say that Speed Seduction absolutely does NOTHING to truly 'seduce' her but only bring down the

social/reputation dam that keeps women's sexuality from flooding everything and anyone? Here is the confirmation.

Women will have sex left and right but that fear of 'slut' behavior stops them and frustrates them.

In other words, women *hate* virtue and will despise purity. Thus, there are no true 'innocent' girls.

She'll fvck you if you show her it's ok to do so.

Well well! She will do you (or anyone with a 'value') as long as you show her its 'ok'! What is romance to a woman but license to act all the things she wants?

So here lies a mystery. SS pats its own shoulder by saying, "With this knowledge you will influence and alter women's behavior." Yet, it is admitted that women WILL have sex very freely as long as that frame of mind (slut fear) is in place and so you must tear that down (which only we can because MEN create the boundaries of society).

So why does SS believe that it is altering women when it is merely showing them that it is all 'ok'?

My answer: vanity. Men want to believe they are sex gods that flip women to them like cards. But as we see, it is women who are ultimately in control with SS. The SSer takes the reactive position.

Now what has the Man become after all this? He is reacting to how her body behavior, to her speech, to her vocabulary, to her values, to her dreams, and so on. Has he not merely become a boy-toy? I mean, what more CAN he be!?

Now, if I made any mistakes in the above, do tell me. Error or vanity has never been my objective.

Just as hard as it was to face the truth of our past AFC/Nice Guyness, so shall seeing the underpinning of SS take similiar courage.

Now, I have one more question. If SS is truly reacting and 'transforming' one's self to the woman and her dreams...

Is the SSer truly making love to her or is she merely masturbating herself using him as the physical object? After all, he uses her vocabulary, has her values, acts like she does, and talks like a woman.

Is this the essence of Speed Seduction?

Previous Pook Index Next

Pook #56 - Talking to Girls

. · 25 August 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Don't compliment unless it's something you are genuinely impressed by (authenticity is the key).

Everyone likes to feel unique and special in their own way. Show interest in HER and her life. Believe me, she will make your ears bleed. (this will come off naturally since you are already interested in her, therefore interested in what she does, etc.) While you are finding out everything about her, YOU have remained a mystery since you're not trying to 'sell' yourself. The chick will love someone asking about herself (thus validating in her eyes that she's 'special') AND her interest in you will grow because she wants to know more about you. Not bad for letting your ears bleed, eh? Also, the more information you get, the better and more precise you can take the next step with a higher probility of success.

DON'T be sweet. LISTEN to her and add in your thoughts (don't try to FIX her problems, UNDERSTAND them). When a trait or feeling comes up that you agree with, don't hesitate to tell her. She will feel a 'connection' with you and her interest level will rise.

If she ever makes you mad, tell her EXACTLY WHY YOU'RE MAD. Amazingly, girls LOVE IT when guys will ***** at them because girls want HONESTY and DIRECTNESS. Many girls will put up a 'test' of standing you up just to see if you will swallow it like a 'nice guy' or if you will have the STRENGTH to put them in their place (Women are not attracted to guys they can control).

Humour is always good. Always be lightspirited, warm, and humourous. But when she is talking to you seriously, always listen and UNDERSTAND how she feels.

Previous Pook Index Next

Pook #57 - The Difference Between Dating and a Friendship

. · 26 August 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Long long ago, before I found this website and all, I did have female friends. Currently, I have no female friends as female friends seem to be an impossibility for me now.

Every girl I *try* to be friends with wants to date me, screw me, etc. But what about girls who already have a guy, including wives and girlfriends? Same story.

"Do not brag, Mr. Pook! You have the opposite of the AFC problem."

No, it is something else entirely. Men and women view love and relationships very differently.

Husbands, steady boyfriends, and chivalrous males hate me because I am free. I don't have to go to the girlfriend's house and to keep her company because she "feels alone". I don't have to go see her stupid family, engage whatever rituals she comes up with. I can leave my place when I desire, return when I desire, meet anyone I wish, do anything I please. Many of these males, I suspect, married very young and never fulfilled their adventure of life.

Since I have so much more available time (since I'm not spending it all on a fiance or wife's incessant desires), I am investing it in myself. I'm not better than these guys, but I end up wittier, fitter, more worldly, because of this additional time. Since I'm more of a 'developed male', so to say, perhaps they have more interest?

One thing is for sure, women do NOT see dating as 'friendship with sex'. Behind that pleasant baby-like face march the thoughts she has had for her entire life. Your role, as a 'man', is to work for her your entire life. Ask older men, married and divorced, for verification if you're skeptical. This is why women will see your material goods and ambitions, never your intellect, your interest in discovery, the universe, etc.

I would say the biggest difference between friendship and dating is addiction.

"Did he say addiction?" Yes, he did. Friendship carries on due to similiar interests, having fun, and so on. Dating/marriage occurs and ensues due to addiction. Some guys suspect that it is sex that the guys are addicted to. This misses the mark. We have been so conditioned to find females in our presence normal, that when they are not there, it becomes abnormal. As has been observed, older married couples don't have sex. So how does the couple keep working? Addiction. This addiction is the addiction of female praise. Even old men will do what they can to please their wives, even when it brings great discomfort to themselves. Some men have become so conditioned that even if the wife does not praise, he takes that as displeasure and immediately starts "doing things" to obtain back the praise. There is a reason why in old couples, if the wife dies first, the man either remarries or dies.

Males have become more religious than ever before. The religion? Romance. The deity? Their self-picked goddess, a young woman. "I will do ANYTHING for women!" the men say. They will easily buy houses that will take them 30 years to pay off just for them. He won't admit how stupid his woman actually is, so that 'stupidity' turns into divinity. He believes his woman is capable of great emotions and abilities because he projects his own emotions and sense of self onto his woman. Woman is shrouded in more mysticism and pomp than any king or pope.

"What! Blasphemy! Blasphemy! Burn the Pook! Burn the Pook!"

Just answer this question: Who is the deity of the DJ Bible? "Why, the Don Juan!" Are you sure? Think long and hard.

.

Previous Pook Index Next

Pook #58 - Womanese!

. · 27 August 2004 · Archived copy · Original

It's no surprise that woman speak in another language. They are subtle creatures, sneaky, devious, and say things in code.

It's time for men to break the code of ********!

For your reading pleasure, **bold** will be the woman. Normal text will be the explanation. *Italics* will be what the Pook man is saying.

I'm not looking for a relationship right now.

TRANSLATED: I don't want a relationship WITH YOU. Don't even BOTHER trying to go out with me since I am saying that a relationship with you and me is already not going to happen.

POOK-MAN SAYS: *I was nearby when a woman was giving this 'veiled' rejection to a co-worker. I jumped in, "So if you're not looking for a relationship, then all you're looking for is SEX, is that it?" Her mouth dropped, but I continued. "I don't BELIEVE you women! That's the ONLY thing you have on your minds is SEX, SEX, and MORE SEX! I am looking for a loving relationship, but NO, you women only want passionate raw animal sex! Now with me, I find you need to TASTE the other pleasures in life. So you CAN get your mind off of sex, right?" Her eyes were GLOWING at me. Funny, she suddenly wanted a relationship with me. Hah!*

I don't think of you in 'that' way.

My goodness, are you ugly and a sexual dud!

I think of you as a brother!

-OR-

You remind me of my brother!

I would consider sex with you to be incest.

The kids were bad today.

Obviously, your genes are defective!

We were both wrong.

But you were more wrong!

This recipe didn't turn out how I expected.

I burned dinner.

Try and complain. I DARE you.

You don't listen to me!

You don't listen to me!

Honey, I HATE to interrupt...

As if you were doing anything more important.

Have you had time to...

Stop what you're doing, get up, and do it RIGHT NOW!

When you get a chance...

Do this immediately!

I hate to nag but...

I want you to get off the couch now!

Of course I don't mind paying for myself.

Cheap date!

Let's not rush things.

I have other prospects.

I'm not ready to settle down.

I sure as heck don't want to settle down with YOU!

I enjoy the single life!

I enjoy not being with YOU!

I need more space!

You're becoming undesirable and unattractive.

This is when you WALK AWAY/

I'm focusing on my 'career'.

My training and studying for my career is extremely boring and tedious yet more exciting then you'll ever be.

Let's just give it some time.

You're not high on my rating list. You're good insurance policy if a better prospect doesn't show up.

I like you, but...

I don't like you at all.

You're not the type of guy I'd date, you're the type of guy I'd marry!

You're sexually a dud. You're not fun to be with. But you are... 'nice'.

A friend of mine responded to this line with, "And you're not the type of girl I'd marry, but you would be the type for a one night stand!

Let's Just Be Friends

You'll never see me naked! I'm not attracted to you.

Pook Man then says, "No, I have enough friends. Buh-Bye!"

I don't want to ruin our friendship.

Please continue to remain my girly friend. You make an excellent emotional tampon!

Honesty is very important to me.

Only tell me what I want to hear.

I only like you as a friend.

I'm not attracted to you.

"And I only see you as a flaming $lut w-hore!"

You're so manly.

Shave, bathe, discover a thing called S-O-A-P.

Let me check my schedule to see if I'm doing anything.

I have plans. WE do not.

We need...

I want...

Can you call me back? I need to...

I just need an excuse to get off the phone. I didn't want to hurt your feelings so I LIED BLATANTLY TO YOUR FACE. Oh, and have a nice day!

How about you give me YOUR number.

I'll add it to my trophy collection of guy's phone numbers - pathetic guys who want me but I don't want them!

Call her BS. "You just want to add it to your trophy collection of guy's phone numbers who..."

I'm not upset...

I'm upset.

She's upset.

Be romantic and turn out the lights.

I'm not proud of my body.

Do you love me?

I'm going to ask you for something expensive...

Am I fat?

Please tell me I'm beautiful.

I love men who take charge...

Pay the bill, you chump!

Sure, but I hope you're not disappointed.

I'm flat chested.

I'm not that type of girl.

Keep trying.

Keep trying.

Don't touch me there!

Touch me there, but I'll stop you a few times first.

Heavy resistance is bad. Light resistance is normal. Woman WANT you to go for them. All woman WANT to be taken.

Will you respect me in the morning?

You won't tell your friends, right?

I'm not looking for anyone.

I'm not looking for anyone LIKE YOU.

We need to talk...

I need to complain!

Nod head, go 'uh huh', smile, repeat.

I need to think about it.

No way.

We have an off and on relationship.

I kept him around until someone BETTER shows up.

Where is this going?

Are we getting married?

No

No

Maybe

No

Let me think about it

No

I feel like I've known you my entire life!

Bingo! We have a Bingo! Will someone make sure this prize does not get away from me?

No

Yes.

Previous Pook Index Next

Pook #59 - More Womanese!

. · 28 August 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Gentlemen, I have concluded that women desire THREE men. One is the man for her heart, another is the man for her words, and the third is the man in her arms!

Likewise, the cryptic code of ********, whose very utterance causes men to pace nervously and shakes the foundations of language, divides into three splinters: The first splinter are words she SAYS she has, the second are words she THINKS she has, and the third are words for why she ACTUALLY does it.

Therefore, we must look at ******** in these three ways. **BOLD** will be what the woman is saying. REGULAR TEXT will be what the Translator is saying. *ITALICS* will be what Da Pooky is saying.

Do you have a girlfriend?

You are CUTE! Are you on the market?

You are certainly attentive tonight!

Is sex ALL you think about?

Do you love me?

Watch me ask for something expensive.

How much do you love me?

I did something you are NOT going to like.

We need to communicate better.

You need to agree with me more.

Smile, nod head, repeat.

I don't want to ruin our friendship!

Let me continue to tell you about all the guys I'm sleeping with.

WOMEN are the reason why Nice Guys can't get laid.

I want HONESTY. No games!

Tell me what I want to hear.

I would rather focus on my career.

Focusing on something as boring and dull as her career is MORE FULFILLING than you'll ever be.

Do what you want.

You'll pay for it later.

I don't remember how much it costs.

I'll never tell you it cost a fortune.

Let's paint the room!

You paint the room, I'm going shopping. Oh, and don't make a mess.

Uh huh

Oh, did you say something? Whatever it was, it must not have been important.

No, take out is fine for dinner.

You cheap bastard!

I want a stable future.

I need to marry a sugar daddy!

You wouldn't understand.

I don't even understand, but I'm not going to tell you that.

Hell, we ALL don't understand.

My screen name is JennySmalt

I have nothing to hide. There is nothing exciting about me.

My screen name is DoItToMeNow6969696969

If you need this explained, you aren't a guy.

OK Mr. AFC. Since you cannot get this (and thus have no chance of becoming a guy), girlproblems.com is your home.

So why did you and your ex break up?

What is wrong with you?

Because I was Mr. NiceGuy who skipped around in fantasy land and… No, don't tell her. Say "I dunno!"

This guy was STARING at me today. He then came over and asked me out…

She wants YOU to ask her out RIGHT NOW!

It seems she is talking about other guys, but she is actually trying to convey that she is beautiful and desirable. She wants you to see that because she wants you to ask her out NOW.

What do you think of [insert girl's name]? What do you think about that girl [insert another girl's name?

Do I have competition?

I don't want a boyfriend now.

I don't want YOU as my boyfriend.

EVERY woman is on a lookout for a man. It's a life purpose.

I don't know. What do YOU want to do?

I can't BELIEVE you have nothing planned.

No, you are absolutely dead in the water. Congratulations, flotsam!

I'm picky!

There are no dating prospects here!

I'm VERY picky!

I'm a religious virgin girl, still under the umbrella of her parents, and demand perfection.

Can we say 'unrealistic expectations'?

Maybe [insert old woman] thought you were hot!

You are what is hot.

Women are not direct. They project their thoughts through a prop. In this case, the old lady is the prop.

Come here!

My puppy dog does this too!

And her attention scraps are "Nice Guy Chow".

This apartment is SO inconvenient!

I want a new apartment.

And I want a new girlfriend!

I want new furniture.

I want new furniture, carpeting, curtains, wallpaper…

I heard a noise!

I noticed you were asleep.

Be careful she doesn't take your covers when she gets back!

I'll be ready in a minute.

Sit back, kick off the shoes, and find a good show.

My ex…

I'm still in love with my ex-boyfriend.

NEXT!

I like you, but…

I don't like you.

It is a 'Girl's Night' tonight!

We're going to get sloppy and make fun of you and your friends.

And how does this differ from any other night of the week?

It's OK

It's NOT OK.

YOU'RE not OK.

I need space.

…without YOU in it.

I AM NOT YELLING!

This is important.

When is it NOT important?

Nothing is wrong.

Everything is wrong.

YOU are what's wrong.

I DON'T want to talk about it!

I'm still building evidence against you!

The volcano is building, ready to erupt with rhetorical smoke and vomit lava-like lies. Flee!

I'm an artist!

I'm unreliable!

And I'm poor.

I'm affectionate!

I'm possessive!

And you'll always be seen as cheating!

I'm an adventurer.

I've had more lovers than you can imagine.

And you get the baggage of her past!

I'm seeking friends first.

I'm trying to live down my reputation as a slut.

See the 'adventurer' translation

I'm mature.

I won't let you treat me like a farm animal in bed like my last boyfriend.

MOO!

I'm open-minded and outgoing.

I am desperate and loud.

She's a NICE GIRL. Hah!

Are you GAY?

Why won't you go out with me or anyone?

The highest compliment a man can receive. All women are interested in you, and YOU get to pick.

Yet, translating ******** IS NOT ENOUGH. We must be able to speak it back.

Speaking the ******

For this, **BOLD** will be what YOU say. *Italics* will be what is ACTUALLY said while regular text will be the narration.

For example, if an UG is chasing you, say:

I am not looking for a relationship right now.

…which means…

I am not looking for a relationship WITH YOU!

She will get the hint and drop off her pursuit.

If she is persists,

I think of you as a sister!

…meaning…

I find sex with you as revolting as incest.

Just change the phrasing and you can deliver the ******** straight back at them. But be warned, if you say:

I am not looking for a girlfriend.

…which means…

I do not want YOU as my girlfriend.

Women will realize that you are subtly rejecting them and they will all gang together and try to **break** you (provided you are attractive. You are doing the rest of the Don Juan stuff, right?). Men would just be sad and go on. But women understand their own language and accept that as a challenge.

If you are a player, you do not say, “I am a player.” No, you say:

I like to meet new people and explore the adventures of life.

Translated into ********, this means…

I like to date/sleep with many since it is part of the fun of life!

See how it works?

I think you should just embrace the pleasures that life has.

You should embrace your passion with ME.

One chick kept going after me, and I ignored her (haha). A dork came and talked to us and left. So I said,

Maybe he thought you were hot!

…which means…

You are what is hot.

Her exact reply: “Why thank you, Pook!” (This is not a joke. ******** is a real language and they do speak it. For fun, try speaking it back to them!)

Ahh, another ******** lesson over. A job well done, Mr. Translator.

You’re welcome, Pook.

And remember that the best guide is your GUT!

.

Previous Pook Index Next

Pook #60 - Even More Womanese!

. · 29 August 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Again into infinity, a young man says,

“Oh, help me, great oracle called Sosuave! I have had a *scenario* with a WOAH-MAN. This happened then, that happened there, X followed Y, Z proceeded N, and R is the result!

“Does she like me?”

Looking for female interest is a course toward disaster. It places you under the master of Reaction rather than Action. However, how many AFCs don’t have a clue that chicks might actually lust after them? And how many have been blinded by their own vanity “Oooohhh, she is flirting” only to be sucked into a trap! Besides, most guys need to realize the world of sexuality out there. Every chick will do a Sexual Scan on you, almost robotic like, and most guys are found lacking.

Bold will be the WOAH-MAN. Regular text will be the translation. *Italics* will be La Pookeboo.

Someone called me. Was it you? Did you call me?

She wants you to ask for her phone number.

Blah blah, I like dates when blah blah occurs, blah blah…

She wants YOU to ask her out NOW.

It may seem she is girl talking you. However, chicks talk about dating and guys calling them when their mind is on dating. She’s telling you what she wants you to know.

She ‘accidentally’ bumps into you. OOOOPSS! She ‘accidentally’ runs into you. OOOPS!

She is flirting and trying to get your attention, you self absorbed dumba$$!

Don’t be shy! I’m not…

#%#^$^$%^!

Loosen up pal! Have fun!

If she keeps on looking in your direction…

She IS looking at you.

She compliments you in any way.

She likes you.

You’ve impressed her.

She becomes more ANIMATED around you, starts dancing and stuff.

She *wants* you.

You look at her and she looks away.

She's been caught! Now go talk to her.

She sits cross legged with her hand/wrist caught between her legs.

She would do you now if she could.

My boyfriend is so stupid! I can't believe what he did yesterday! He…

She wants you to steal her from her BOREfriend.

This new guy I am dating makes me feel soooooooooooooooooo good. Oh, you don't how goooooood he makes me feel!

She has no interest in you and is vomiting her feelings everywhere (gross!).

My boyfriend hurt my feelings… boo hoo….(sob)

Congratulations, you are officially an Emotional Tampon!

How can you tell if you are an emotional tampon, if she is vomiting her feelings, or if she wants you to steal her? It is simple. If her emotions are on herself, she is bleeding her feelings everywhere and making quite a mess. If the feelings are bad, she is using you as the emotional tampon. You are there for her to unload her feelings and get tossed aside. However, if the girl is projecting no feelings of herself and only tearing down her boyfriend, it is obvious what she intends.

You remind me of a guy I used to know…

She has been checking you out but doesn't want you to think she is overly interested. With this comment, she is 'covering up'.

Sometimes you might actually LOOK like a guy she knew. Either way, she is noticing your looks.

What do you do for fun?

Are you dating anyone? What is the story with you?

Interested chicks will ask you this because they want you to ask them out, and you haven't done so yet. They are worried you are taken!

*I ask this question to see if a chick had a boyfriend. Knowing her ********, she answered, "My **boyfriend** and I go out to…"*

We could go on all day about 'signs' and such. Generally, look for this:

She becomes more animated. She starts smiling, prancing, spinning in circles, exaggerate body movements, talk in high octaves, and be EXCITED.

This is because YOU are around.

Her clothes will change. She is suddenly wearing NICER outfits and make-up.

Isn't it obvious?

Very.

She deliberately wears high heeled shoes.

She intends to get f*cked tonight.

*Women call high-heel shoes their f*ck shoes.*

She seems disinterested. When talked to, she gets shy.

She likes you.

Women, like guys, get really shy around the person they like. They'll even fake disinterest.

Her chair is facing a direction from you, but she has her legs up on her seat and has turned towards you.

You have her attention. A VERY good sign!

She looks at you and has a 'deer in the headlights' look.

She thinks you are *really* hot.

These chicks are in to your looks. Don't get a big head and think they love your other qualities.

She 'appears' around you. This happens consistently.

.
She is displaying interest by proximity.

The more statuesque she becomes is bad. She will not smile, give one word answers, de-emphasize her body, move away, and generally be quieter.

"But Pook! She might be NERVOUS!" This is true, she might.

But how can you tell if she is merely using you or truly interested?

WATCH THE EYES! No, they are not those marvelous orbs on her chest. Not her face. Not her hair. WATCH THE EYES! A truly interested woman LOOKS at you. A woman who wants to USE you will have her eyes ELSEWARE, be it on the music, on other people, or anywhere except where they belong: on YOU.

Some other points:

When they like you, some girls try to be very calm and collected around you. “How does this differ than normally?” The difference is that they will hang on every word you say. They will pay 110% attention to YOU. When you leave the room, she WILL squeal in delight.

She wears clothes that exaggerate her ‘figure’. (This is fun to watch, when they think: “If I push my boobs in Pook’s face, I get the Pook!” Silly chicks!)

She tries to talk to you. Or she seems very very receptive to talking to you.

Beautiful women will simply look at your face. They will more likely stare. They will not display obvious signs of interest.

If a woman looks like she has worked to be attractive (make-up, tight clothes, etc.), it’s possible she is single. Once within a relationship, the girls tend to *relax* their wardrobe.

When the seasons change to Autumn and the weather begins to get colder, a taken chick automatically puts on a sweater or coat (you know how girls are when they get *so cold*). You can spot the single chicks because they will still be wearing flesh revealing clothes when her sisters are starting to warm up.

How Young Girls Love

This isn’t exactly ********, yet it is a fundamental spectrum of the elements of Womaniverse. Our Universe is composed of elements like hydrogen, carbon, silicon, etc. Womaniverse is composed of elements such as Irony, Contradiction, and Shopping. Our universe has the molecules enter a type of bonding (such as polar bonding) but Womaniverse has its elements linked by feelings. In our universe, energy is the ultimate resource that gives us all things. In Womaniverse, it is ‘love’ or, rather, *marriage*!

Marriage is the supreme mission of her life, where she expects to receive all things, and so most women aim as high as they can. First, they fall in love with an abstraction. It could be something as simple as a poster image. When they seek union with the abstraction, it turns into thin air. Then, she falls in love with actors or a boy band. She will hang these all throughout her room and turn it into a shrine. She cannot have union with these actors or boy band (as much as she tries) because they are too remote. So then she tries a relative of an actor, or people related with the bands. Again, she fails. Then she latches onto the guy all the girls talk about. It could be *that* guy in town, the son of a business owner, the CEO, the guy that struck big with money and fame. She will go for this guy, but the guy has his pick of the litter and it will not be her. So she wanders to the next guy lower on the totem pole found in Womaniverse, where women mark the available men. Lower and lower she will go until she comes to the clerk, the shopkeeper, or whatever left is male. Then, she marries.

Men love differently from women (a twist of the body and the man falls in love. He is forgetting that an *entire* woman is there!). Men love the illusion; it is a more pure love. Women don’t have time for such nonsense. They prefer the substance rather then illusion. She will love your dreams and passions only because it means you may better your present condition, not because you see yourself as the dream. She could care less about your intellectual philosophies… it is just masculine chatter to her. She wants to know about your education and job prospects. She would rather have you work in a job you hate to bring in more money then to work in a job you love and remain poor. This type of girl sees you only as a piece of livestock, like a mule, to be an umbrella of stability to place her nest on.

Why am I telling you this? Because guys do not want to know if girls like them or not (so they could ask them out). They want to know to inflate their own ego. This is chick thinking. And, in the end, the women won’t see you as you

see yourself.

Listen to your gut. It will *feel* when a chick likes you because sexuality is the sixth sense.

PART TWO: STORY TELLING

For this lesson, we dwell into the strange realm of storytelling. This is a major difference with men and women.

MEN: “I am a hero.” *He then might use a story as only a way to SUPPORT the statement.*

WOMEN: “OK, let me tell you about the TIME when I heard a scream. I ran over to find out that it was a man that had fallen unconscious. I rushed and called for an ambulance. I gave him CPR and revived him to health.”

The woman makes no mention of her being a hero. Rather then saying ‘I am a hero’, she wastes our time and patience with a long strung story.

Sosuave’s note: *Kinda like your LONG posts, eh Mr. Pook?*

Hush you, Non-Interacting Site Being! I am illustrating women’s translations by translating women.

So when she goes: **“When my parents left my sister, brother, and myself at home, they told me, ‘[HER NAME], YOU are in charge.’ They leave me in charge with of everyone else because they trust me. Blah blah blah”**

I am mature.

Yes, she is wagging her tongue just to get the point out that she is mature. So instead of nodding and nodding until you fall asleep, pay attention to whatever POINT she is trying to get across.

Now if you want to get a point across to a chick, perhaps a chick misjudged a trait of you, you play the ******** back to them. If the chick is snobby or thinks you go for any chick, start telling a story that has obviously no point, no purpose, except that it involves women interested in you with you REJECTING them.

“Pook! This is madness!” No, it is ********. Do not BLURT things, it destroys mystery. Listen to guys who want to try to impress women. Now listen to guys who are Don Juans. The Don Juan will use stories rather then statements, even parables instead of declarations.

PART THREE: THE GIRL’S NETWORK

Even though we have the Internet and global communications networked from satellites that is superior to any other form of communication by Man, there exists another network that is faster, much richer in content, and women have been using it for centuries. It is the Girl’s Network.

If you ever need gossip, or an opinion on someone, just tap into the Girl’s Network and observe how it puts Google to shame. If you ever need to know whether someone is single or attached, hot or not, worthy personality or dud, just tap into the Girl’s Network. Here are some situations of the Girl’s Network in action.

Girl’s Network Working Against You

Ahh, there is a happy little guy skipping about in life. Then, across the room, he spots a WHOA-MAN. He asks her

out, completely LIES about himself and everything, and all goes smoothly for a couple of months. Then, she finds out (they ALWAYS find out), she immediately gets on the Girl's Network. She instantly blackballs the guy, sending the message to her friends and then her friends pass the message along. Soon, it is all over the Girl's Network.

Our liar asks out another girl. Alas for him! She was tuned to the Girl's Network and knows about HIM. So he goes for another girl. Again, the same story.

Or say a guy is engaged to a chick. All is good! Except for the thorny fact, the chick has girl friends and, thus, is tapped into the Girl's Network. The guy is AFCish and dorky. However, he knows that they are 'in love' and nothing can stop that. But the Girl's Network was invented to keep its female members from bad unions. The guy is scanned, analyzed to the umpteenth degree, and found a bad union for the girl. So, the girl who had been engaged to the guy for a year, broke it off.

The guy is enraged. "You broke up with me because your friends didn't like me!?" No. It was the Network working against him, not the 'friends'. The way how a guy views his friends is much different from a girl's. Poor young male! He understands not the Network and so it nailed him.

Spying

Being a hungry Pook, I ate all the food in my Pook Place. So, to no surprise I had to go to the store to get more Pook food! In the store, I spotted a woman worker there glancing at me. Doesn't matter, I noticed the Pook Meat was on sale. I looked up and saw another glance from another woman worker. I must have been an imaginative Pook to think something was up. Nevertheless, I approached the checkout line.

"Hi!" said the *very* friendly checker. As my precious little goods rode the little black belt to the happy bags, the checker and I chatted. I wondered how she could know so much about me. Then, I realized it. She used the Girl's Network to send out spies throughout the store. Yes, girls will spy on you. Whether they reported all the information to HER or others, the point is that women are interconnected through the Network. When a Worthy Guy appears, the women will become spies and note information. Since I came into the store frequently alone, they thought there was a chance.

Social Proof

The ever mentioned Social Proof! But only a fool seeks a woman merely as a prop. Use the Girl's Network and social proof comes naturally.

There stood I, the sleepy Pook, waiting for a class to begin. But! But there was a test in that class. Being who I was, I was, of course, naturally and diligently prepared… I was busy cramming.

Then appeared a marvelous beauty, dressed in classy clothes (Pook likes the classy gals!). I tried to focus on the words in my book, but her image kept intruding. I stole glances whenever I could. She just stood there, waiting. "Pook! You should have talked to her!" Foolios! I had a test to take!

Then flared in a model, walked briskly over on her long legs, stopped… and talked to Pook. She asked about the test and all of that. When she started talking to me, the other girl started to look at me with wonder. When the model friend left, I got up to go too. The other chick *came over to talk to me and to not get me to go*. But I place Pook's life above any and all chicks, and I could not do badly on this test. So I said something to her and went on. I didn't realize what had happened until later.

“But Pook! Why don’t you go for the model chick?” Gentlemen, she has been *networked*. Besides, she has too much emotional baggage. She was not a platonic friend, no, she was but a part of the network. Realizing the existence of the Girl’s Network, I wanted to tap into its power. When you’re in the Girl’s Network, chicks talking to you and such are no big deal. Other chicks will look on and wonder because access to the Girl’s Network is only reserved for certain guys, i.e. worthy guys.

Girlfriend Finders

This is my favorite use of the Girl’s Network. Women are emissaries of Nature and desire and seek out proper unions. If you are a good guy, a worthy guy, a man, then the Network will serve you well.

As I write this, a flock of chicks have in the back of their pretty little heads, “Pook needs a chick.” I did not ask them to do this. They just go, “What! You are single? Oh, this we must stop.” And they go off on their lives scouting for me. All women are matchmakers. Why not use that ability to our advantage? They try to create a ‘proper’ union (i.e. the couple must match). So my *networked* ladies are going off and intend to bring back a ‘very pretty’ chick with little to no baggage. Well, who am I to argue with that? If they want to bring back a gorgeous chick to me, let them!

PART FOUR: DAMAGE CONTROL

No, I am not mistaken. Every woman has the tendency to self-implode. But take heed! These destructive paths in your chick CAN be averted helping you and your chick.

PROBLEM: You have arrived home and… there is no dinner on the table! What to do? What to do?

CLUELESS GUY: WHAT is for dinner?

PLAYER: Can I help you with dinner?

DON JUAN: Where would you like to go for dinner?

Oh, brilliant Don Juan! Like a pro, he diffused his chick and got her out of the house. A woman alone at home too long can become a bad thing. She is less likely to blow up in public.

PROBLEM: It is time to go out! Your lady has spent the last five hours getting dressed. When she emerges, she is wearing puke colored clothes that you hate. Your reaction?

CLUELESS: Are you wearing THAT?

PLAYER: Umm… You look good in brown.

DON JUAN: Whoa! Look at you!

Notice how the Don Juan did not tell her what he THOUGHT she wanted to hear, like the player? His remark will make her look at her dress again and, thus, notice the error.

PROBLEM: Uh oh! You arrive home and find your chick eating a giant box of ho-hos. Right before your eyes, she is growing fat! What is your reaction?

CLUELESS: Should you be eating that?

PLAYER: Hey, there is a lot of fruit in the refrigerator.

DON JUAN: Can I get a glass of wine with that?

Ahh, the Don Juan tries to get the chick to think classy. Clueless guy will just blow-up the chick by talking like that.

PROBLEM: You return after doing a round of errands. Alas! There is your chick! She just woke up, having done nothing all day, and is still in her bathrobe! Your response is?

CLUELESS: What did you DO all day?

PLAYER: I hope you didn't overdo today.

DON JUAN: I've always loved you in that robe.

The Don Juan finds the good in everything! Go Don Juan!

PROBLEM: You are tired of your chick and require another chick. However, you do not want to lose this chick. What do you say to the new chick to get her in the type of diabolical relationship you've imagined?

CLUELESS: Yeah, I have girl. I'm looking for something different though.

PLAYER: Attached? No, it is a multi-LTR!

DON JUAN: Hey baby, you want to join the team?

Join the team! And what can they say to that?

PROBLEM: During sex, you suspect your chick is faking the orgasms. What is your next move?

CLUELESS: Hey, you aren't faking are you?

PLAYER: (Looks to see if the chick's nipples are hard, if the blood is at the surface of the skin, her body flushed with the right colors…)

DON JUAN: (Doesn't care since he fakes orgasms himself.) How else is a Don Juan supposed to get some sleep?

Such work it is being a Don Juan! When you are a real Don Juan (and not a wannabe), you are the lust of all the chicks. You will be *busy* to satisfy their… interests.

PROBLEM: Your chick is seen with another guy! How do you play it?

CLUELESS: Hey! Are you flirting with him? What is going on here!?

PLAYER: Hmm! So what's the story with him?

DON JUAN: Hey! You like Baseball? I have another ticket if you want to go!

A Don Juan interacts with everyone. The best way to ward off a threat is to befriend it. Whatever you do, do not act

jealous.

PROBLEM: Alas! Your chick has IMPLODED! She is now hysterical, throwing things around, and her aim is rapidly getting more accurate! What do you say to save yourself?

CLUELESS: What are you so WORKED up about?

PLAYER: Could we BE overreacting?

DON JUAN: Let's go shopping!

And the Don Juan saves the world from the imploding chick! Gentlemen, "let's go shopping" are the three words every woman wants to hear.

There you have it, gentlemen! A small little guide to the INFINITE things that can make your chick implode. Byron says,

"Women hate everything which strips off the tinsel of sentiment, and they are right, or it would rob them of their weapons."

Know your ******** and rob them of the confusion they are so quick to use on us!

Quote: Originally posted by Ice Cold

I still want to ask this, oh the mighty

Is it not a form of supplication to offer your monetary gifts to calm down a woman? Is it not devilish manipulation of the Don Juan by the woman who pretends to be upset?

Hi Ice Cold!

The ******** posts aren't meant to be *serious* posts as we know them =)

Imagine an ENRAGED woman. Then you go, "You seem sad. Let's go shopping!" and she changes 100%. Hahahaha.

What do girls do when they feel sad and alone? They go shopping. You're not buying her anything. The aim is to get her to stop being enraged.

It's a joke. One time a girl did get really unhappy so I tried out the magical three words, "Let's Go Shopping." hahaha, her face just BRIGHTENED. All we did was go around, look at stuff.

I don't completely understand woman's love for shopping, but it does turn their foul mood around! I'm not saying for guys to go shopping with girls or anything, I'm just putting that out there just as a last case scenario in case your girl IMPLODES. It is like your 'Avoid Female Meltdown' card, and its in glass to be used only in an emergency!

Hey guys, I'm glad you like this ******** post. There'll be another one.
Previous Pook Index Next

Pook #61 - Why Women Mention Other Men Even If They're Interested In You!

. · 30 August 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Real men do not analyze the woman. If she is single, and he wants her, he should go after her no matter what sign she displays.

But since we are talking about signs, we are entering the bizzarre realm of ********!

Bold will be the WHOA-man. *Italics* will the ******** Translator. Regular Text will be what Da pooky is saying.

NOTE: For the below to be true, the conversation *must* be one on one.

Second **Note** For the below to remain true, the 'examples' MUST be initiated by the WHOA-man.

Let us begin:

My boyfriend came and gave me this AWESOME gift. We're going to New York tomorrow.

It is quite possible that she wants you.

But beware! A girl talking about her boyfriend means, most importantly, that she is taken. However, she may want to be STOLEN.

"Stolen, Pook! What do you mean?"

Gentlemen, it is a fine fact that many woman will not dump one boyfriend until they have a grip on the next. These women would rather be with BOREfriend than to be single. She may very well wish to be stolen.

I love my boyfriend sooo much! Everything in life is so much better with my boyfriend! He makes me feel so warm and fuzzy!

Get away from her; she is vomitting her emotions.

When a woman tells you how she FEELS about the guy, she is either in love or you are low interest or both.

THIS is the crucial difference: when a woman informs you of the *actions* the boyfriend is taking, she is using social proof (trying to show you that she is in demand). When a woman informs you of her feelings, especially if those feelings are positive of the guy, then there is nothing going on between you.

"Why's that, Pook?"

This should be written in stone: *When she does girl-talk, you become her girly-friend.*

Girls do not girl-talk their romantic interests.

You should have seen this guy. He came up to me, took my hand, and said, "You are beautiful! Will you go out with me!?"

She wants you to know several things. 1) She is desired. 2) She is beatiful. She wants you to know these things because she wants you to ask her out.

Well said, ******** Translator!

I was placing the tapioca pudding back onto the shelf when I felt someone looking at me. I turned and saw this man checking me out! It felt SOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOO good! You hear me? It felt SOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOO good! Man, it felt good. Oh, you have no idea how good it felt. It felt GOOD. REALLY good. Oh, you don't know how GOOD!"

Although the above is exaggerated [Understatement of the century- Sosuave.com] *the point is that the woman is flopping her emotions out. She is not interested. You are in Friend-Zone.*

Hellish friend-zone! But the translator is right. The last example had the focus on the GUY and HIS actions. This example has the focus on the WOMAN and HER FEELINGS. You are being used as an emotional tampon here, beware.

My breasts are too big! It hurts my back. It gives me back problems.

It is quite possible she is thinking of you in a sexual way.

Unless you are a doctor, this is good news. [If you are a doctor, it is more money which is better news- Sosuave.com] Women with large breasts are much more comfortable with discussing them (for the large breasts often become the center of attention with most guys). She is most likely aroused. If not, then with her course of current talk she soon will be.

I'm trying on new underwear and seeing how my butt looks! (she squeals in front of the mirror)

She wants you.

She wants you.

She is mentioning her butt (she wants you to notice it!), and she is mentioning her underwear (she is comfortable talking about it to you).

When a woman likes you, she will try to show off her body (and when a woman does not like you, she will try to hide her body). This example is the woman showing off her body through words.

Are you gay?

Well? ARE YOU?

If you really are fruity, you will be asked this. Other guys should have asked this to you if you really are fruity (and with threats to back it up).

But let us try this again.

Are you gay?

Why won't you go out with me (or anyone)?

If you happened to be handsome or really cute, girls will try to go out with you. If you say no (haha!), she will think to herself, "All these girls want to go out with him and he won't go out with any of them. What is wrong with him? IS HE GAY!?"

Girls wondering if you're gay can be the ultimate compliment. Think. They are already thinking of you in a sexual context. They want you to go out with them. When you don't, they ask the gay question.

(Remember, guys, when Adonis, the style master, got asked the "Are you gay?" question? Although gay guys can and do dress stylishly, the woman wants to know if you are gay or not BECAUSE SHE WANTS YOU.)

Ahh, another ******** lesson is over with. Join us again next time on the same forum, same host, and same website.

Oh, and excellent job, translator!

Why, thank you Pook.

And remember guys, if you go 'sign reading', the best guide is your gut.

Previous Pook Index Next

Pook #62 - Secret to Womanese!

. · 31 August 2004 · Archived copy · Original

What is this alien realm called **Womaniverse** where all these strange creatures known as *WOAH-MEN* emerge from? They scatter about the Earth and cast *Man*kind in a Pleasure-Pain Paradox. Alas, the *WHOA-MEN* kept complaining and drove our ancestors so mad that they created civilization to please them. Seeing their failure (for women are forever complaining), it is no wonder that we die first.

But to top it off, these *WOAH-MEN* speak in a totally alien language!

"Oh MY GAAWWWWD! I just ate a HUUUUGE cheese burriiitOOOO! And the GUILT is just ***KILLING*** me!"
"I KNOW! I just lost control and ate not just that big chocolate cake in the fridge, but my chocolate chip ice cream too!"
"NO WAY!"
"YES WAY! Oh, did you hear about Susan? She is SO depressed that the guy she went out with won't call her back."
"No!"
"Yes. But I told her, 'hey girl, if a guy isn't wanting to talk to a brainy chick like you, then he's stupid and shouldn't be thought about!' It made her feel better."
"Heather told me that she saw Susan's guy with ANOTHER GIRL!"
(both squeal in supreme shock)
"Oh, she is going to feel AWFUL when she finds out!"
"I KNOW! What can we do?"
"You know that guy you met yesterday?"
"The guy with the really cute butt and smile?"
"Yeah."
"Girl... tell, tell!"
"Well I heard Heather tell me..."

And on and on it goes! The above is not a 'network', it is pure chaos. In fact...

Sosuave: *I am sorry, Pook. I must interrupt this post.*

What! But I just got started...

Sosuave:*Several women are protesting your text. They wish to be heard.*

Very well! Let them in.

The three women enter.

Now ladies, what is the matter?

"Monsieur Pook, you have our sex much offended."

Ladies, you have *my* sex much offended.

And the three said together, "Listen to our advice:

"The sexiest thing a man can do is listen."
"Remember, Pook, women are better communicators."
"Listen to what she is saying. Good communication is the key to a good relationship."

Such are the common answers! Men listen to what you say and nod and nod and nod and nod until they drop dead from boredom. Men do not listen to women because they often don't make any sense. ******** is not communication; it is madness.

Look over there! *A group of women gather and enter in a conversation of* ********. It looks like they are talking! *Pook gets closer to overhear them.* Hear that? It is like a conversation going super speed with high pitched octaves punctured with squeals. What alien language is this?

But, luckily, I have Pook Vision Goggles. It allows one to see how Womaniverse interacts in this realm.

BEFORE: The women seem to be having a conversation in an allegro style.

WITH POOK VISION: The women are not talking, but are feeling each other, rubbing against each other...

The Secret to ******** is that it is a passage of feelings (where with REAL language it is a passage of thought). Women do not listen to each other, they FEEL one another. They cheer one another up. See those phone lines that are on fire due to women getting home from dates and calling each other? Female gossip is female therapy. As soon as they walk out of class, they must call someone on their cell phone immediately.

We know men 'think' and women 'feel', but not in such a bizarre context. Everything a woman says will be 'feeling'. Women are always touching each other (just not in our universe). Feeling, feeling, feeling... that is the sum of ********.

In this universe, we view ******** as an almost type of Matrix code. But in Womaniverse, what is transmitted is not thought but feelings. You will not find women grouped together chatting about intellectual ruminations of Kant and Aristotle. No, they will either be talking about sex, food, or shopping, and often in that order.

If she says,

This guy came and STARED at me. It was creepy! He kept telling me how beautiful I was and how he wanted to go out with me!

*Other guys think I am beautiful, lovely, and want to date me. Why don't **you**?*

Learn to identify the FEELING coming from her. Don't even listen to her words, FEEL how she says it and why. With the above example, the feeling is guys finding her beautiful. As guys, we would think, "What a creepy guy!" or "Why are you not telling this to your girlfriends?" She is transmitting a FEELING, not a thought, and this FEELING is that guys find her beautiful. She wants you to know this because she wants YOU to ask her out!

Are you gay?

Why won't you go out with me or anyone?

As guys, we would think we are showing homo-physical characteristics. But what is the FEELING emerging from her? The feeling is sexuality, specifically relating to YOU. You have the GREEN LIGHT to go for the women, and

you are not moving. She is asking you if you're gay because you are not acting like most guys (chomping at the bit).

I like dates when blah blah occurs...

Ask me out now!

Being guys, we absorb this as THOUGHTS. But she is putting out a FEELING to us. The FEELING is the feelings of dating. She has no interest in specifics. She is reveling in the feeling of dating because that is what she imagines you and her doing!

Next time you view a group of women, with no guys around, watch what happens. You will see the women feeling each other. They do this literally (putting lotion on each other, combing each other's hair, pampering one another) and communication-wise "I LOVE chocolate cake!" "I KNOW! It is SOOOO yummy!"

Feeling You

Women will always try to ‘feel’ you. Join me, youth, in the Pook Observation Room. I have set up hidden Pookish microphones and cameras to observe what happens when it comes to women.

The screen showed a guy at a job. The guy was busy doing what he needed to do. His only co-workers were women. They chatted as they worked.

Listen closer. The women are not chatting with him.

The women kept trying to ‘feel’ him. How did he talk about his future plans? What did he feel about this, about that?

You see, the women don’t really care what he is saying. They are trying to feel what he is saying, what he is like, so on and so on.

Or observe this example.

A youth and a Hot Babe sat down for dinner at a fabulous restaurant.

She is trying to ‘feel’ him.

The youth orders chicken salad.

Check out those scanners! Yes, she is thinking, “He is going to make lots of money.”

“Because he ordered chicken salad?”

Yes.

The youth orders a fancy bizarre meal full of seaweed and other strange dishes.

Ahh! She thinks he is ‘kinky’ in many many ways!

The youth orders a simple meal.

She wonders if he is the type of guy who wants to stay home on nights.

The youth orders a chocolate mousse and offers to share it with her.

Ahh! He is SO SWEET! Now she won't feel guilty about getting her own chocolate mousse.

"Pook, what are you saying? That we are what we eat?"

I'm saying that women will always try to 'feel' you. They will make conclusions that don't even make sense. Even if you get food stuck in your beard, she will look at you and smile, feeling how 'cute' the entire situation is. Feeling, feeling, feeling, that is the sum of womenese!

Psychoanalysis

When two guys talk, they don't really talk to each other. They are on to a subject and then they talk abstractly about the subject- the other guy might as well not even be there!

Take our issues with women...

"Dude! Women are crazy!"

"You got that right! You know what I think? Women must be completely society oriented."

"How so?"

"It is not like they really live. They just act out roles. They have been the 'daughter' role, the 'date' role, the 'girlfriend' role, the 'fiance' role, the 'wife' role, the 'mother' role, and the ultimate... the *feminist* role."

"So women don't really live? They just act out society's roles?"

"Yes, they just go about with the same dreams they've always had. The most disappointing thing a guy will realize is that a woman is with him not because she loves him..."

"Because according to this idea women won't be able to love..."

"Exactly. Not because she needs him, wants him, or any of that."

"So why?"

"Just to have something to talk about with her girlfriends. That is all. Even the most uncharismatic dull husband will give her material to deliver to her girlfriends. Whether or not he farts in bed, whether he sexes properly, so on and so on. Girl talk revolves around our manly actions."

Now, the two guys are speaking about an idea in all its abstractness. The goal is the truth, or whatever can be thought of as the truth. When women talk, they speak to each other with no abstractions. Their goal is to *good feelings* which is only achieved through *psycho-analysis*.

And this is the most annoying thing about dealing with women, is that they so readily admit to being able to psycho-analyze you. For example, when a woman reads this merry post, she will be fuming and secretly think, "Pook must

be a misogynist!" I've phrased this post accordingly so they have such a reaction.

If I redid the intro this way:

*What is this magical world known as **Womaniverse** where all these women come from? They scatter about the Earth and without them, Man would be stuck in the stone-age. Women are the engine of civilization, the settlements of the New World failed until women were added, and women are always the glue that keeps society together.*

Now I am an advocate of women!
Let us say a guy got heartbroken by a girl. The girl suddenly likes the guy again. So she goes after him. The two go out. Yet, he says he does not want to get back together again, but she *feels* something differently from his eyes. When they depart, he gives her a friendly kiss and says they would make good friends. She *feels* something quite different in that kiss.

As soon as she gets home, she calls her friends and says, "His words said no but his actions said yes! What should I do?"

And the Woman's Network advises her to 'press on' and eventually the guy cracks and the two become a couple. See? ********'s psychoanalysis has its uses, often, though, it keeps girls detecting 'signs' that don't exist in the first place (which is why doing Anti-Dump's "number", "date", "yes" allows no confusion. She will KNOW you are interested and you get to weed her out).

********* and Shopping Carts**

I am throwing this into the post for the heck of it. Come, gentlemen, join this hungry Pook on his trip to the supermarket.

Pook gets his cart and begins to go through the store.

Ahh, there is nothing like shopping for food. *Pook loads his cart up with items.* You may think it is boring, but there is something you do not know.

“Excuse me,” a woman said, as she drove her cart around Pook.

Did you catch that? No, you probably didn’t. *She was looking into my shopping cart!* Her eyes were glued to the things I had in my little buggy.

Look! There it is again. It could be old women, young women, single women, married women, they keep checking out what I have in my cart.

You say: “They are nosy women and must see what you are getting.”

No, gentleman, they are checking out my cart because *they want me!* Yes, even the shopping market can become an erotic experience.

You may wonder how I know this. Well, women check out guys in many ways. One thing, for sure, is that they try to see if a guy is single or not by what he puts in his shopping cart. If he has items like half a gallon of milk, microwavable meals, and in general, a small amount of stuff, women will assume he is a bachelor and perhaps make a move. Some women will psychoanalyze your life based on what you have in your shopping cart. (Some women,

thinking men think like they do, will deliberately put things in their shopping cart to convey an impression, such as water bottles to represent their 'healthy lifestyle' without realizing that men don't even look at the items in shopping carts.)

What does this have to do with ********? Absolutely nothing. But this is the most appropriate place for it. So if you are shopping and see a woman spying on the items in your cart as she passes by, hey, she's probably checking you out.

Feelingese: The Language of Women

******** is feeling and feeling is ********. It goes beyond language. In our universe, cleaning our apartment is seen as a chore done primarily for sanitation reasons and to get stuff out of our way. But in Womaniverse, women enjoy the 'feelings' they get from a clean room (or rather they hate the 'feelings' they get from an unclean room). To us, a painting is just there as a 'decoration'. But in Womaniverse, colors, paintings, and designs all emit *waves* of good feelings which women soak up like cats do sunlight.

Womenese is also ensemble. Yes, ******** OVERLAPS.

Examine this example:

To the pleasure of two ladies, they found themselves in the presence of a Pook, and thus, were attracted.

"Come ladies! Let us go about for a merry walk!"

giggle giggle "Oh Pook! Lead on!"

As the three of us walked, the ladies were in such a tropical state that they babbled and bubbled endlessly.

Eventually, the Pook began to speak.

"Tomorrow, ladies, we need to go to the Pook-Place to pick up the…"

And a lady-friend cuts Pook right off with:

"Oh, look at the pretty weather out today!"

Pook, being a normal guy, STOPS talking. The women look at him as if something is wrong.

Pook is thinking: *How RUDE that chick was! The stupid chick must have a short attention span!*

Whereas Pook's lady-friends are thinking, *What is wrong with Pook!? Why did he stop talking? So typical of guys! They all have a short* ***communication*** *span!*

Since ******** is transmitting feelings rather then thoughts, they can be absorbed faster and easier than regular language. This means that ******** OVERLAPS. You could be saying something and a woman will express a fast feeling. She expects you to keep talking. In mixed genders, however, the conversation tends toward more male. Sometimes, like the above example shows, the women forget and go total ********.

When women speak, the feelings often overlap. Before they are finished with one feeling, another offers another.

They lap up each others feelings. This is the ‘girliness’ that disgusts guys.

But I’m a brave Pook, and I attempted to participate in the all girl ******** fest.

I had to know my ******** both language wise and ensemble wise. I kept trying to FEEL everything she was emitting (it is another universe!). A guy overheard me, pointed to me, and went: "GAY! Pook is GAY! I KNEW IT!" haha. Try it out and see if you have similar results.

Solution to ********

It is helpful to know your ********. But speaking it back to them? No, you have to be female for that.

DeAngelo understands, but he never specified it. A girl would take his hand (her ******** is saying “I like you”) and he would say “Oh really?” when she took his hand.

If a women starts touching you, she is actually saying, “I like you.” You can smile, touch her back, or whatever. Get out of your mind all these hidden signals and look at women in the context of FEELINGS. She will try to FEEL you and throw FEELINGS at you.

If she compliments you, “Oh Pook! You are such a smart Pookish guy!” she is saying nothing. She is just throwing a feeling at you.

So why do most men fail when talking with women? It is because they are using words, not feelings. You do not ‘talk’ to chicks, you express feelings. Think of a baby. The baby doesn’t know what you are saying. The baby only cares about your tone of voice. You could say in a babyish voice, “Armageddon is going to fry us all today!” and the baby will smile in glee not because of the TONE but because of the FEELING the tone rides on.

So what solution is there to ********? Since ******** is the process of feelings, all you have to do is EMIT feelings. In other words, focus on the joy in YOURSELF and let it SEEP OUT. Stop dividing yourself from your emotions. If you’re happy, let yourself be happy. The women will smell it and love you.

The Nice Guy protests this post. “But I KEEP telling them my emotions! And look at where that has gotten me?”

Oh you pernicious emotional SLUT! Just as guys don’t exactly respect the women who just sleep with whomever and wherever (sluts!), women don’t exactly respect the guy who vomits his feelings to all the women all the time (emotional sluts, i.e. Nice Guy).

The Nice Guy kept trying to EXPRESS his emotions through our language. Flowers, poetry, declarations of love, and so on.

The player kept trying to CREATE INTEREST by doing things like kino, mirroring, eliciting values, and so on. He is just trying to get her to feel something and put a mirror to it, so it reflects to her. The player is providing mental masturbation in hopes she uses him as a boy toy for physical masturbation.

But the Don Juan is already full of joy and the emotions carry over to the women via ********.

Remember, what YOU feel, SHE feels. She will ALWAYS be trying to FEEL you.

If you feel frustrated, she feels frustrated.

If you feel despair, she feels despair.

If you feel happy, she feels happy.

If you feel playful, she feels playful.

If you feel horny, well… It has been shown that male lust turns women on.

This is why the focus must be on you. As you think, YOU shall become. But as you feel, so shall she feel. Women cannot love a wall, so they want to knock it down.

So connect! Get that feeling of joy in your world AND LET IT OUT. Let it live in your walk, let it live in your speech, let it live in your eyes. The sexiest thing a man can do is SMILE. But smile not with just your lips, smile with your eyes, smile in your walk, smile with your talk.

Live in fragments no longer! Throw your mental prison off! Connect your emotions and the world, your dreams to day, and the beast and the monk, robbed of the isolation that is life to either, ***will die!***

Previous Pook Index Next

Pook #63 - More On "You Must Be Gay"

. · 1 September 2004 · Archived copy · Original

DeepDish said,

Women having gay friends is like whites having black friends, something of which we can use to say we have a balanced set of friends. Also, gays tend to be very intelligent, well-spoken, well dressed, very sensitive and open with their emotions, and pay attention to details (e.g. listen). Giovanni Casanova once made a thread about gay guys having women strip in front of them all the time and even begging for sex. Giovanni was onto something. You don't have to be gay or have a lisp, but if you seem gay, as in having the listed traits associated with gays, and when confronted with "Are you gay?" give an ambiguous answer ("Well, am I?"), that can open up the world of women to you. Women who ask you "Are you gay?" are attracted to you and wonder why their feminity, which normally makes men cave, isn't enough for you.

I'm in that 'world' that gays get to be in with women. Yes, they have stripped for me and all. I just laugh at them. Stupid girls.

A big problem I have is wherever I go (like a class or work where I am there repeatedly), girls will begin thinking, "Pook is gay."

Yes, it can mean that you are dressing too nicely (sometimes I have my sexuality shined too far and must lower it. Sometimes I swing back to AFC style just to shake it off).

I like dressing nicely. I feel better and everyone takes me more seriously (and girls stare, mmm hmm). But when the gay thing comes up (and it does almost all the time now), I ask the girls playfully knowing the answer already (the one they won't admit to my face).

"Why do they keep thinking i'm gay?"

"Well... You do dress nice."

"What has that got to do with it? People dress nice all the time! Fine. Next time I'll come in with my worst clothes ever."

"No, then you'll be called a 'homeless gay'." (and she laughs and rubs Pook).

If girls ask if you are gay, remember the important thing: *they are thinking of you in a sexual context.* One of girls' favorite jokes is to tease a guy they like with another guy they like, pointing the two within a gay relationship. They just enjoy thinking about you in a sexual context. It is a victory.

One problem I have now are *guys* thinking I am gay. Have I crossed the line? Am I now a flaming Pook? No, when I talk to them personally they respond. You will get this from guys in high school who seem obsessed with gayness and so insecure of their own masculinity (since they are still just kids).

It's something I haven't seen talked much on this board: **ENVY**. The guys are envious. They hear the girls chatter, "He must be gay!" and think it seriously (because they want it to be true). They wish they were on these women's minds. They see how Pook has some special touch with the women, can talk to them with perfect ease, can play with them, etc. One guy's mouth fell open when a girl and I had a conversation completely in ******** (I've

learned to speak it back to them!).

Truly gay guys start off in a denial about themselves and then date a whole bunch of women, sleep with them, to remove doubts about themselves. Alas, they realize they are not satisfied with women and admit they go for men.

Perhaps there is a way to turn the tables on these women. Next time I see a hot woman who is not interested in me, I will declare, "What! She doesn't want to have sex with me? *She must be gay!*"

And what can they say to that!

Previous Pook Index Next

Pook #64 - The Keys to the Don Juan

. · 2 September 2004 · Archived copy · Original

Gentlemen,

Welcome to Don Juan.

There are THREE KEYS that unlock a series of locks that is Woman.

Key One: Her sexuality and YOURS shall be embraced.

You have acted thus far as *nonsexual* going so far to SUPPRESS your sexuality. Why does she choose the Jerk over the Nice Guy? It is not because she dislikes niceness. *A woman would rather be with a male, no matter how tyrannical, over an androgynous, no matter how nice.*

You have not been dating but making friends. You do not need twenty-five female friends. You are so non-sexual that you do not initiate contact. You do not TRY to talk to a woman that leads them aroused. Heaven forbid that a woman might think that you want to bang her! Your passive and cautious talking with them, your posture, the way how you don't look at her since she might see the truth in your eyes- these are a few of the MANY WAYS you have been dodging not her sexuality BUT YOUR OWN.

Damn it, YOU ARE MALE! SHE IS FEMALE! Sexuality is God's precious gift! It is Nature's course! Why are you afraid? WHY!?

Key Two: Fun shall be the focus.

Why are you so serious? You are not to propose to her on the first date, fourth date, or eighth date. You are *not to talk about your life story*.

From sex to the very first meeting, the focus must be on fun. You must get this 'soul-mate', 'true-love', and pedestal worship out of your head. Not that these things are necessarily bad, they poison everything AT FIRST.

Fun is a powerful key. It is so powerful that female friends *may become interested in you* just solely because YOU ARE FUN. On dates, focus not on what will go wrong, not on what will go right, not on the outcome *but on the game*. Even if the girl ends up being a loser, you still win because you were focusing on the fun and not on the girl. (And those that focus on the girl lose focus on the fun and, thus, lose the girl).

Key Three: You are the PRIZE to be won.

Think "She wants to be with me," rather than "I want to be with her". Imagine girls are gravitating towards you in every way. Assume that she is interested in you. If she is not, assume that she will be.

This will keep you from being disrespected, keep you from falling for an UG, keep you from sacrificing your life to her, and keep the focus on her winning you. YOU are the GREAT CATCH!

But it is not arrogance. This key unleashes a pleasant cockiness. Combine this with the Fun Key, and you have both cockiness and humor.

These are the THREE OBSTACLES (the three locks) that most guys have trouble with. They defy the first key by acting like sexual androids. They defy the second key by being consumed with their feelings and, on dates, seeing HER as the fun rather than the date itself (and end up doing BORING dates like going to the movies, going to dinner, etc. where they should be doing ACTION dates like dancing, skating, bowling, rock climbing, etc.). They defy the third key by seeing the woman as the trophy, as the goal, and, by such, all their actions revolve around her as she is the focus and axis of their desires. Here we find gifts, poetry, chocolate, ten phone calls a day, and so on being thrown at the girl. He sees her as a goddess so she begins to think herself one. Then she DUMPS him and goes for the guy that treats her roughly (in hopes that HE will see her as a goddess).

Women have a series of locks. These three keys of Don Juan can unlock most if not all.

So dream no more, gentlemen. Dream no more! The night has passed. A dawn of new life is upon you. So wear not the past of dreadful woes. Let them go. And may you be full of joy and life.

And prepare yourself… for your dreams with women are about to come true.

Previous Pook Index Next

EOTM: Eschatology 101 - Reading List

. · 1 January 2005 · Archived copy · Original

Mens Issues
Robert Bly, *Iron John*
Orson Scot Card, *Ender's Game*
Warren Farrell, *The Myth of Male Power, Why Men Are the Way They Are*
Andrew Kimbrell, *The Masculine Mystique*
Jack Kammer, *Goodwill Toward Men*
Sam Keene, *Fire in the Belly*

Male Sexuality
Warren Farrell, *The Myth of Male Power, Why Men Are the Way They Are*
Norman Mailer, *Prisoner of Sex*

Rape
Katie Roiphe, *The Morning After: Sex Fear and Feminism*

Female Sexuality
Marianne Williamson, *A Woman's Worth, Return to Love*

The Dark Feminine
Kate Fillion, *Lip Service*

Feminism
Christina Hoff-Sommers, *Who Stole Feminism*

Human Sexuality
Love
Erich Fromm, *The Art of Loving*
Joan Gattuso, *A Course in Love*

Natural Science
Charles Darwin, *On the origin of the Species, The Expression of the Emotions in Man and the Animals*

Anthropology & Sociology
Desmond Morris, *The Naked Ape*
Sigmund Freud, *Civilization and Its Discontents, Totem and Taboo*

Cosmology
Steven Hawking, *A Brief History of Time*
Albert Einstein, *Relativity*
Edwin Hubble, *In the Realm of the Nebulae*

Great Fiction
Ayn Rand, *Atlas Shrugged*
Stand on Zanzibar
George Orwell, 1984, Animal Farm

William Golding, *Lord of the Flies*
Aldous Huxley, *Brave New World*

Movies
Zardoz
Circle of Iron
Clockwork Orange
That Obscure Object of Desire

Curmudgeonism
Mark Twain, *Letters From the Earth*
Ambrose Bierce, *The Devil's Dictionary*

Wicca
Janet & Stewart Farrar
Scot Cunningham

EOTM: Fw: more men bashing

. · 1 January 2005 · Archived copy · Original

1. What do you call a man with half a brain?.....Gifted

2. What is the thinnest book in the world?....."What Men Know About Women"

3. How many men does it take to screw in a light bulb?.....One....men will screw anything

4. How does a man take a bubble bath?.....He eats beans for dinner

5. Why do women rub their eyes when they wake up?....They don't have balls to scratch

6. What's a man's idea of foreplay?...A half an hour of begging

7. How can you tell if a man is sexually excited?....He's breathing

8. What's the difference between men and Government bonds?..Bonds mature

9. How do you save a man from drowning?...Take your foot off his head

10. What do men and beer bottles have in common?....They are both empty from the neck up

11. How can you tell if a man is happy?...Who cares?

12. How many men does it take to change a roll of toilet paper?..We don't know it's never been done.

13. How are men and parking space alike?....The good ones are taken and the ones left are handicapped

14. What is a mans idea of helping with housework?...Lifting his feet so you can vacuum

15. What is the difference between a man and E.T.?.....E.T. phoned home

16. What does a man consider a seven course meal?.....A six-pack of beer and a hot-dog

17. What did God say after creating man?.....I can do better

18. What do you have when you have two balls in your hand?...A man's undivided attention

19. What are the two reasons why men don't mind their own business?.. 1-no mind 2-no business

20. How is a man like a snowstorm?...Because you don't know when it's coming, how many inches you'll get, and how long it'll stay

21. Did you hear about the banker who's a great lover?....He knows first hand the penalty for early withdraw

22. Why are men like laxatives?...They both irritate the shit out of you

23. If men got pregnant ..... Abortions would be available in convenience stores and drive-thru windows

24. Why do men name their penises?.....Because they want to be on a first name basis with the person who makes all their decisions

25. Why is it so hard for women to find men who are sensitive, caring, and good looking? ..... Because those men already have boyfriends

26. Why do men like masturbation?.... Its sex with someone they love

27. How do men define Roe vs. Wade? ..... Two ways to cross a river

28. What is gross stupidity? ... 144 men in one room

29. What is the difference between a Porcupine and a Porsche? ... A Porcupine has pricks on the outside

30. How may men does it take to pop popcorn? ... Three, one to hold the pan and two to show off and shake the stove

31. What is a man's view of safe sex?..... A padded headboard

32. How do men sort their laundry? ... "Filthy" and "Filthy, but wearable"

33. Why did God create man? .... Because vibrators can't mow the lawn

34. Why does the stupid man put ice in his condom? .... It keeps the swelling down

35. Husband: "Want a quickie" Wife: "As opposed to what?"

36. Husband: "I don't know why you wear a bra, you've got nothing to put in it." Wife: "You wear briefs, don't you?"

37. I went to the Country Fair. They had one of those "Believe it or Not" shows, they had a man born with a penis and a brain.

38. Only a man would buy a $500 car and put a $4000 stereo in it

EOTM: Shocking! Simply Shocking!

. · 1 January 2005 · Archived copy · Original

I received this as an email, presumably one of the ubiquitious jokes circulating on the internet these days. The strangest thing was that today's amazing climate of heterophobia this could have been a serious article, and might have been except for the lack of an author's or publication's name. Certainly, if it were true it would be no stranger than the stories of Shane Seyer or Jonathon Prevett.

ST. JOHNSBURY, VT--Looking at Warren Geary, you'd never suspect. A respected business owner and devoted family man, the 41-year-old Geary, by all outward indications, would appear to be just like anyone else in this sleepy New England hamlet of 4,700.

But looks can be deceiving.

Dig a little deeper, beyond the many years of PTA involvement and Kiwanis Club membership, and you'll discover a very different Warren Geary, one who derives sexual stimulation and pleasure from the sight of Unclothed women. This seemingly normal husband and father of three has a naked-lady fetish.

"I really enjoy looking at naked ladies," Geary said. "I don't know what it is, but seeing women without clothes gets me excited."

So consuming is Geary's fetish, he said he will sometimes pass a woman on the street and catch himself imagining what she would look like undressed.

"I'll often think about naked women, even when none are around," said Geary, who has a collection of magazines and videotapes devoted to naked-lady fetishism, including the 1998 film Boogie Nights. "It's just this fixation of mine."

Geary said he doesn't recall when or how he first developed his strange compulsion for seeing women in a state of rant undress.

"I have no idea how I came to develop these urges. As a child, I found the naked female form gross or humorous, just like any healthy boy," Geary said. "But at some point, I found myself not only enjoying the sight of disrobed women, but actually seeking it out."

Geary said hardly a day goes by when he doesn't imagine women in states of undress. There are no boundaries to when and where it may occur--at church, the post office, the health club, the beach. He even admits to watching TV for hours on end, solely in the hopes of catching a glimpse of bare breasts.

"Sometimes, I'll turn on HBO, and if a movie is listed as containing nudity, I'll watch the entire film--even though I have no interest in the plot or subject matter--just to see the breasts," Geary said. "I know it's wrong, but I can't help myself."

News of Geary's lurid fixation has caused considerable Controversy throughout St. Johnsbury.
"It's twisted and obscene, that's for sure," said Janice Alvaro, whose home is just a block away from Geary's. "It makes me very uncomfortable knowing that I live so close to someone like that."

"A man who harbors a secret lust for women without any clothes on is not the kind of man we want coaching one of our teams," said local Little League president Stephen Claussen, who has asked Geary not to return next season after 14 years of involvement. "I don't feel comfortable entrusting our town's children to that kind of a person. What if his presence somehow influences these kids, perverting their normal sexual growth and causing them to develop that same kind of aberrant interest in naked women later in life?"

For decades, psychologists believed naked-lady fetishism to be the domain of a tiny handful of sexual deviants. A growing number of experts, however, now believe the condition to be much more common, with some estimates putting the number of men consumed by the sight of the naked female form as high as 1 in 50,000.

According to noted psychotherapist Dr. Eli Wasserbaum, clear distinctions exist between normal men and those with naked-lady fetishes.

"When a normal man sees an attractive woman, he is drawn to her stylish hairdo, nicely applied make-up and flattering dress, and he reacts with an intense desire to marry her," Wasserbaum said. "The naked-lady fetishist, however, is unmoved by such features as hairstyle and clothing, regarding them as distractions and impediments to the one thing that truly interests him--her naked body."

"In a way, it's very sad," Wasserbaum said. "Instead of being able to enjoy the conversation of a woman over dinner and drinks, the naked-lady fetishist, gripped by his uncontrollable impulses, will only be able to think about whether he'll get to see her naked body later in the evening."
Scientists theorize that naked-lady fetishism may represent a long-obsolete evolutionary remnant, a vestigial instinct that once served some reproductive purpose among early hominids.

Back to Gender War, Sexuality, and Love

EOTM: Understanding Myth & Legend: The Structure of Truth

. · 1 January 2005 · Archived copy · Original

In mythology and legend, there is an incredible storehouse of wisdom about human nature collected over centuries of observation. Often the word myth is used to mean something which is not true, but in the context of mythology it has a very different and much more complex meaning.

Margaret Mead once poked gentle fun at her own profession by saying that if you want to understand the values of a culture, study the stories told to children because such stories communicate essential cultural values in terms simple enough that even a social scientist can understand. Stories create an emotional experience that simple declarative statements or instructions do not and cannot. By identifying with the protagonists of a story, we can understand universal human emotions and experiences in a manner profoundly different than having the same information summarized to us. Anyone who has ever attended a live sporting event or a play can easily understand the difference between the immediate experience and reading a description of it in tomorrow's newspaper.

Understanding Truth

To truly understand myth, one must understand the different levels of truth possible within a particular description. Borrowing concepts from the science of Psycholinguistics, the study of language to understand the inner workings of the human mind, there are what are known as "deep structures" and "surface structures" in language that reflect essential building blocks of human thought. The terms are self-explantory to some degree. A surface structure is the appearance or form that is directly perceived: something of which we are clearly conscious. A deep structure is the mental foundation on which that consciousness rests. Like the foundation of a building, these deep structures are usually entirely hidden from our view and it is impossible for the casual observer to know they are there. Only someone who has studied the manner in which the surface structures are built, such as an architect or a contractor, knows that they are there and how they are constructed as well as how they relate to the surface structure.

Take a word like "matter". There are many meanings of the word "matter", which correspond to different surface structures: matter vs energy, mind over matter, it does or does not matter, business matters, legal matters, etc. Common to all these different surface structures are connotations of solidity and substance. If it "doesn't matter", it has no substance. If it "isn't matter", the same is true. The fact that the same word is used with slightly different surface meanings while there is a very broad and subtle concept that they have in common which underlies all the different uses of the word, is the key to understanding how language reflects the way that the mind organizes information and how we interpret the world.

Almost everyone is familiar with the fact that 90% of an iceberg lies below the surface of the water: thus the term "tip of the iceberg" which is used to describe the fact that often the most significant aspects are hidden from view. Often it is this hidden part that is the most significant, as passengers on the Titantic learned.

Viewed from far enough away, a chain of islands, like the island state, Hawaii, and a string of icebergs have very similar surface structures: roughly cone shapes with the tips up. Even below the surface of the water, the structures remain similar until you go deep down enough to either get under the iceberg or reach the ocean floor on which the island rests. At this point one realizes that the two are completely different. Since islands are nothing more than the tips of submerged mountains, if the water level drops the division between two islands may disappear and their surface structure become a single island. Nothing about their deep structure has changed. Icebergs, on the other hand, are not joined in any way; and even if the ocean were completely drained, they would simply rest on the ocean floor which is a deep structure entirely unrelated to the iceberg.

These days, everyone needs to become an architect of mind and study not only the deep structure truths underlying all that is around them, but also the deep structures within their own minds, if they are ever to make sense of this world and find meaning within their own lives.

Myth

Adding the concepts of truth and falsehood to the concepts of deep and surface structures, a myth is a story in which the surface structure is false, ie. things did not happen exactly that way, but the deep structure is true, ie. that is a commonly observed way that people behave. Myths and legends of gods, goddesses, and heros illustrate human characteristics which have been observed over and over throughout history and which have been described as a single persona or personality akin to Carl Jung's "archetypes". From these personalities which represent common human characteristics, and the stories of the consequences of their choices and actions, people can predict the outcomes of a specific act on their part and gain the power to exercise more control over their lives by the conscious choice of their actions.

S= False
-------- = Myth
D= True

Fiction

Myth is frequently used synonymously with the word fiction. Througout these pages, however, those two words will have very different meanings. Like myth, the surface structure of fiction is false, it is not represented as reportage of actual events: but, unlike myth, there is no underlying deep structure of truth. Most works of fiction actually begin with the disclaimer that any resemblance to actual events is purely coincidental. The deep structure perhaps could be true, as in science fiction as opposed to fantasy, but it is not represented as true nor does the author intend for the audience to take it as truth. Fiction is that which has a surface structure which is false and a deep structure which may or may not be true, but whether it is true or not does not matter. Fictions are usually fantasies; although some may try to achieve a deeper meaning and significance, achieving the level of myth, depending on the intent and skill of the author.

S= False
---------- = Fiction
D= ? (irrelevant)

Fantasy

Fantasy has surface and deep structures which are both false. Fantasies are stories which did not happen and could not happen. Fantasies are special forms of fiction, kind of "fiction light" which are solely for the purpose of entertainment.

S= False
---------- = Fantasy

D= False

Fallacies and lies

Fallacies and lies are the opposite of myth. They have surface structures which are presented as true, but a deep structure which is false. What distinguishes a fallacy from a lie is the belief and intent of the person presenting the story or the information and whether what they present reflects what they believe. In 1491, if a person told you that the world was flat, it could not be anything but a fallacy. No one had proof to the contrary: no one knew. Lying is not possible without knowlege of deep structure truth or falsehood. Someone who sincerely believes that the deep structure of what they are presenting is true is not lying. They may be presenting a falsehood as truth out of ignorance, but it is sincere if deluded ignorance. Lying, on the other hand, is presenting a surface structure which the liar knows to be contrary to the deep structure.

S= True
-------- = Fallacy
D= False, sincere delusion or error

S= True
-------- = Lie
D= False, with intentional knowledge

Dreams and the Unconscious

There is one aspect to the human mind for which there are no real surface structures: the realm called the sub-conscious or unconscious. Psychologically, the unconscious is like the back of our head: we cannot see it even in a mirror. The unconscious cannot lie, because by definition there is no conscious intent. Thus the unconscious cannot do anything but tell the truth. However, the unconscious communicates strictly in terms of deep structures: symbols which communicate the commonality of substance underlying all the different uses of the word "matter" above, without making any distinctions between them.

One of the primary tools used to peer into the murky world of the unconscious is the study of dreams. While the conscious mind is asleep, the unconscious is given free rein to come out an play. Beliefs firmly held in the conscious mind cannot override the deep structures coming out of the unconscious, so a great deal of insight into a person's true nature and belief systems can be gained from the study of dreams. People lie for a great many reasons, the worthwhile and noble goal of preservation of self and loved ones among them, and they may even convince their conscious mind to believe those lies.

S= ?
-------- = Unconscious
D= True

Hypothesis

The means to discover the truth or falsehood of a belief is to investigate a hypothesis. A hypothesis is the converse of a fiction. While a fiction has a surface structure which is false and a deep structure which is unknown, a hypothesis has a surface structure which is true and a deep structure which is unknown. The process of testing and confirming a hypothesis is called the "scientific method" and is heavily relied upon in western civilization as the method of choice for determining deep structure truth.

S= True
---------- = Hypothesis
D= ?

There is an alternative form of hypothesis called the null hypothesis, which is often used to simplify the number of issues which must be dealt with and resolved to answer the question under investigation. It takes the form:

S= False
---------- = Null Hypothesis
D= ?

Disproving the null hypothesis does not necessarily prove the hypothesis, but strengthens it and may also rule out other null hypotheses. Returning to the example of the hypothesis of the flat earth, the null hypothesis is that it is not flat. This does not mean it is round: it could be shaped like a figure 8, or like a corkscrew, or any number of other shapes we are familiar with. By the time that Columbus bumped into the continent we now call North America, he had proved the null hypothesis that the earth was not flat. He did not, however, prove it was round. There are a number of shapes which would have given him the same results he got: such as an inverted bowl. If he had kept going west on land he might have reached the edge of the continent and maybe even sailed on a ways THEN fallen off the edge of the world. It took 30 more years for one of Magellan's ships to complete the circuit of the globe and prove the round world hypothesis.

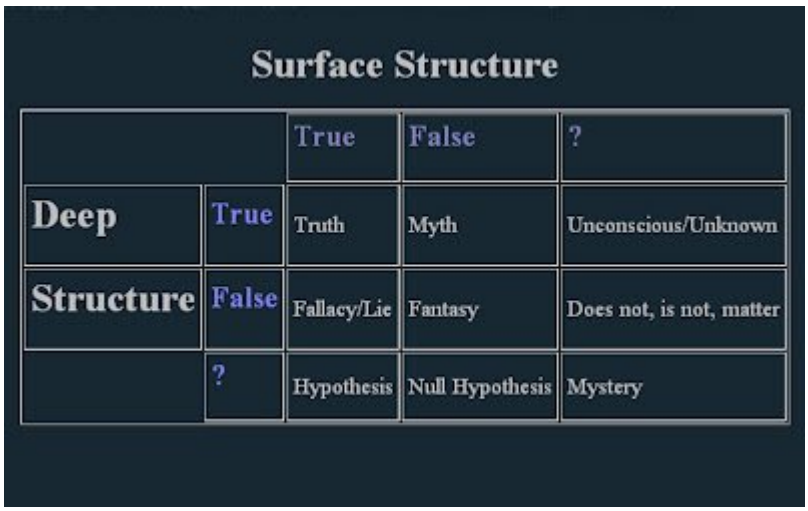
Truth and understanding the true nature of Reality

Ostensibly, this is what we all seek. Yet nothing is so elusive. From the truth equations above, we see that lies and fallacies are presented as truth, but the only means we have available to us to discover the deep structure truth are the scientific method of hypothesis testing and exploration of the unconscious. Science reigns supreme in western culture for exploration of truth external to ourselves, with the exploration of the internal truth of the unconscious mind confined to the pseudo-science of psychology. Other cultures have traditions of meditation or spiritual experience to explore the truths of the human experience.

When we are young we are told many stories: myth, fiction, fantasy, and fallacies. The process of maturation is the discovery of those truths which give our individual lives meaning.

S= True
-------- = Truth
D= True

The use and meaning of the terms above are shown in the table below:


Surface Structure
True
False
?
Deep
Structure
True
False
?
Truth
Myth
Unconscious/Unknown
Fallacy/Lie
Fantasy
Does not, is not, matter
Hypothesis
Null Hypothesis
Mystery

EOTM: The S.C.U.M. (Society for Cutting Up Men) Manifesto -- by Valerie Solanas

. · 1 January 2005 · Archived copy · Original

Life in this society being, at best, an utter bore and no aspect of society being at all relevant to women, there remains to civic-minded, responsible, thrill-seeking females only to overthrow the government, eliminate the money system, institute complete automation and destroy the male sex.

It is now technically possible to reproduce without the aid of males (or, for that matter, females) and to produce only females. We must begin immediately to do so. The male is a biological accident: the y (male) gene is an incomplete x (female) gene, that is, has an incomplete set of chromosomes. In other words, the male is an incomplete female, a walking abortion, aborted at the gene stage. To be male is to be deficient, emotionally limited; maleness is a deficiency disease and males are emotional cripples.

The male is completely egocentric, trapped inside himself, incapable of empathizing or identifying with others, of love, friendship, affection or tenderness. He is a completely isolated unit, incapable of rapport with anyone. His responses are entirely visceral, not cerebral; his intelligence is a mere tool in the service of his drives and needs; he is incapable of mental passion, mental interaction; he can't relate to anything other than his own physical sensations. He is a half dead, unresponsive lump, incapable of giving or receiving pleasure or happiness; consequently, he is at best an utter bore, an inoffensive blob, since only those capable of absorption in others can be charming. He is trapped in a twilight zone halfway between humans and apes, and is far worse off than the apes because, unlike the apes, he is capable of a large array of negative feelings--hate, jealousy, contempt, disgust, guilt, shame, doubt--and moreover he is aware or what he is or isn't.

Although completely physical, the male is unfit even for stud service. Even assuming mechanical proficiency, which few men have, he is, first of all, incapable of zestfully, lustfully, tearing off a piece, but is instead eaten up with guilt, shame, fear and insecurity, feelings rooted in male nature, which the most enlightened training can only minimize; second, the physical feeling he attains is next to nothing; and, third, he is not empathizing with his partner, but is obsessed with how he's doing, turning in an A performance, doing a good plumbing job. To call a man an animal is to flatter him; he's a machine, a walking dildo. It's often said that men use women. Use them for what? Surely not pleasure.

Eaten up with guilt, shame, fears and insecurities and obtaining, if he's lucky, a barely perceptible physical feeling, the male is, nonetheless, obsessed with screwing; he'll swim a river of snot, wade nostril-deep through a mile of vomit, if he thinks there'll be a friendly pussy awaiting him. He'll screw a woman he despises, any snaggle-toothed hag, and, furthermore, pay for the opportunity. Why? Relieving physical tension isn't the answer, as masturbation suffices for that. It's not ego satisfaction; that doesn't explain screwing corpses and babies.

Completely egocentric, unable to relate, empathize or identify, and filled with a vast, pervasive, diffuse sexuality, the male is psychically passive. He hates his passivity, so he projects it onto women, defines the male as active, then sets out to prove that he is ("prove he's a Man"). His main means of attempting to prove it is screwing (Big Man with a Big Dick tearing off a Big Piece). Since he's attempting to prove an error, he must "prove" it again and again. Screwing, then, is a desperate, compulsive attempt to prove he's not passive, not a woman; but he is passive and does want to be a woman.

Being an incomplete female, the male spends his life attempting to complete himself, to become female. He attempts to do this by constantly seeking out, fraternizing with and trying to live through and fuse with the female, and by claiming as his own all female characteristics--emotional strength and independence, forcefulness,

dynamism, decisiveness, coolness, objectivity, assertiveness, courage, integrity, vitality, intensity, depth of character, grooviness, etc. --and projecting onto women all male traits--vanity, frivolity, triviality, weakness, etc. It should be said, though, that the male has one glaring area of superiority over the female--public relations. (He has done a brilliant job of convincing millions of women that men are women and women are men.) The male claim that females find fulfillment through motherhood and sexuality reflects what males think they'd find fulfilling if they were female.

Women, in other words, don't have penis envy; men have pussy envy. When the male accepts his passivity, defines himself as a woman (males as well as females think men are women and women are men), and becomes a transvestite he loses his desire to screw (or to do anything else, for that matter; he fulfills himself as a drag queen) and gets his cock chopped off. He then achieves a continuous diffuse sexual feeling from "being a woman". Screwing is, for a man, a defense against his desire to be female. Sex is itself a sublimation.

The male, because of his obsession to compensate for not being female combined with his inability to relate and to feel compassion, has made of the world a shitpile. He is responsible for:
War: The male's normal method of compensation for not being female, namely, getting his Big Gun off, is grossly inadequate, as he can get it off only a very limited number of times; so he gets it off on a really massive scale, and proves to the entire world that he's a "Man". Since he has no compassion or ability to empathize or identify, proving his manhood is worth an endless number of lives, including his own--his own life being worthless, he would rather go out in a blaze of glory than plod grimly on for fifty more years.

Niceness, Politeness and "Dignity": Every man, deep down, knows he's a worthless piece of shit. Overwhelmed by a sense of animalism and deeply ashamed of it; wanting, not to express himself, but to hide from others his total physicality, total egocentricity, the hate and contempt he feels for other men, and to hide from himself the hate and contempt he suspects other men feel for him; having a crudely constructed nervous system that is easily upset by the least display of emotion or feeling, the male tries to enforce a "social" code that ensures a perfect blandness, unsullied by the slightest trace of feeling or upsetting opinion. He uses terms like "copulate", "sexual congress", "have relations with" (to men, "sexual relations" is a redundancy), overlaid with stilted manners; the suit on the chimp.

Money, Marriage and Prostitution, Work and Prevention of an Automated Society: There is no human reason for money or for anyone to work more than two or three hours a week at the very most. All non-creative jobs (practically all jobs now being done) could have been automated long ago, and in a moneyless society everyone can have as much of the best of everything as she wants. But there are non-human, male reasons for maintaining the money-work system:

1. Pussy. Despising his highly inadequate self, overcome with intense anxiety and a deep, profound loneliness when by his empty self, desperate to attach himself to any female in dim hopes of completing himself, in the mystical belief that by touching gold he'll turn to gold, the male craves the continuous companionship of women. The company of the lowest female is preferable to his own or that of other men, who serve only to remind him of his repulsiveness. But females, unless very young or very sick, must be coerced or bribed into male company.

2. Supply the non-relating male with the delusion of usefulness, and enable him to try to justify his existence by digging holes and filling them up. Leisure time horrifies the male, who will have nothing to do but contemplate his grotesque self. Unable to relate or to love, the male must work. Females crave absorbing, emotionally satisfying, meaningful activity, but lacking the opportunity or ability for this, they prefer to idle and waste away their time in ways of their own choosing--sleeping, shopping, bowling, shooting pool, playing cards and other games, breeding, reading, walking around, daydreaming, eating, playing with themselves, popping pills, going to the movies, getting analyzed, traveling, raising dogs and cats, lolling on the beach, swimming, watching T.V., listening to music,

decorating their houses, gardening, sewing, nightclubbing, dancing, visiting, "improving their minds" (taking courses), and absorbing "culture" (lectures, plays, concerts, "arty" movies). Therefore, many females would, even assuming complete economic equality between the sexes, prefer living with males or peddling their asses on the street, thus having most of their time for themselves, to spending many hours of their days doing boring, stultifying, non-creative work for somebody else, functioning as less than animals, as machines, or, at best,--if able to get a "good" job--co-managing the shitpile. What will liberate women, therefore, from male control is the total elimination of the money-work system, not the attainment of economic equality with men within it.

3. Power and control. Unmasterful in his personal relations with women, the male attains to general masterfulness by the manipulation of money and of everything and everybody controlled by money, in other words, of everything and everybody.

4. Love substitute. Unable to give love or affection, the male gives money. It makes him feel motherly. The mother gives milk; he gives bread. He is the Breadwinner.

5. Provides the male with a goal. Incapable of enjoying the moment, the male needs something to look forward to, and money provides him with an eternal, never-ending goal: Just think what you could do with 80 trillion dollars--Invest it! And in three years time you'd have 300 trillion dollars!!!

6. Provides the basis for the male's major opportunity to control and manipulate--fatherhood.

Fatherhood and Mental Illness (fear, cowardice, timidity, humility, insecurity, passivity): Mother wants what's best for her kids; Daddy only wants what's best for Daddy, that is peace and quiet, pandering to his delusion of dignity ("respect"), a good reflection on himself (status) and the opportunity to control and manipulate, or, if he's an "enlightened" father, to "give guidance". His daughter, in addition, he wants sexually--he gives her hand in marriage; the other part is for him. Daddy, unlike Mother, can never give in to his kids, as he must, at all costs, preserve his delusion of decisiveness, forcefulness, always-rightness and strength. Never getting one's way leads to lack of self-confidence in one's ability to cope with the world and to a passive acceptance of the status quo. Mother loves her kids, although she sometimes gets angry, but anger blows over quickly and even while it exists, doesn't preclude love and basic acceptance. Emotionally diseased Daddy doesn't love his kids; he approves of them--if they're "good", that is, if they're nice, "respectful", obedient, subservient to his will, quiet and not given to unseemly displays of temper that would be most upsetting to Daddy's easily disturbed male nervous system--in other words, if they're passive vegetables. If they're not "good", he doesn't get angry--not if he's a modern, "civilized" father (the old-fashioned ranting, raving brute is preferable, as he is so ridiculous he can be easily despised)--but rather expresses disapproval, a state that, unlike anger, endures and precludes a basic acceptance, leaving the kid with a feeling of worthlessness and a lifelong obsession with being approved of; the result is fear of independent thought, as this leads to unconventional, disapproved of opinions and way of life.

For the kid to want Daddy's approval it must respect Daddy, and, being garbage, Daddy can make sure that he is respected only by remaining aloof, by distantness, by acting on the precept "familiarity breeds contempt", which is, of course, true, if one is contemptible. By being distant and aloof, he is able to remain unknown, mysterious, and, thereby, to inspire fear ("respect").

Disapproval of emotional "scenes" leads to fear of strong emotion, fear of one's own anger and hatred, and to a fear of facing reality, as facing it leads at first to anger and hatred. Fear of anger and hatred combined with a lack of self-confidence in one's ability to cope with and change the world, or even to affect in the slightest way one's own destiny, leads to a mindless belief that the world and most people in it are nice and that the most banal, trivial amusements are great fun and deeply pleasurable.

The effect of fatherhood on males, specifically, is to make them "Men", that is, highly defensive of all impulses to passivity, faggotry, and of desires to be female. Every boy wants to imitate his mother, be her, fuse with her, but Daddy forbids this; he is the mother; he gets to fuse with her. So he tells the boy, sometimes directly, sometimes indirectly, to not be a sissy, to act like a "Man". The boy, scared shitless of and "respecting" his father, complies, and becomes just like Daddy, that model of "Man"-hood, the all-American ideal--the well-behaved heterosexual dullard.

The effect of fatherhood on females is to make them male--dependent, passive, domestic, animalistic, nice, insecure, approval and security seekers, cowardly, humble, "respectful" of authorities and men, closed, not fully responsive, half dead, trivial, dull, conventional, flattened out and thoroughly contemptible. Daddy's Girl, always tense and fearful, uncool, unanalytical, lacking objectivity, appraises Daddy, and thereafter, other men, against a background of fear ("respect") and is not only unable to see the empty shell behind the aloof facade, but accepts the male definition of himself as superior, as a female, and of herself, as inferior, as a male, which, thanks to Daddy, she really is.

It is the increase of fatherhood, resulting from the increased and widespread affluence that fatherhood needs in order to thrive, that has caused the general increase of mindlessness and the decline of women in the United States since the 1920s. The close association of affluence with fatherhood has led, for the most part, to only the wrong girls, namely, the "privileged" middle-class girls, getting "educated".

The effect of fathers, in sum, has been to corrode the world with maleness. The male has a negative Midas touch--everything he touches turns to shit.

Suppression of Individuality, Animalism (domesticity and motherhood) and Functionalism: The male is just a bundle of conditioned reflexes, incapable of a mentally free response; he is tied to his early conditioning, determined completely by his past experiences. His earliest experiences are with his mother, and he is throughout his life tied to her. It never becomes completely clear to the male that he is not part of his mother, that he is he and she is she.

His greatest need is to be guided, sheltered, protected and admired by Mama (men expect women to adore what men shrink from in horror--themselves) and, being completely physical, he yearns to spend his time (that's not spent "out in the world" grimly defending against his passivity) wallowing in basic animal activities--eating, sleeping, shitting, relaxing and being soothed by Mama. Passive, rattle-headed Daddy's Girl, ever eager for approval, for a pat on the head, for the "respect" of any passing piece of garbage, is easily reduced to Mama, mindless ministrator to physical needs, soother of the weary, apey brow, booster of the puny ego, appreciator of the contemptible, a hot water bottle with tits.

The reduction to animals of the women of the most backward segment of society--the "privileged, educated" middle-class, the backwash of humanity--where Daddy reigns supreme, has been so thorough that they try to groove on labor pains and lie around in the most advanced nation in the world in the middle of the twentieth century with babies chomping away on their tits. It's not for the kids' sake, though, that the "experts" tell women that Mama should stay home and grovel in animalism, but for Daddy's; the tit's for Daddy to hang onto; the labor pains for Daddy to vicariously groove on (half dead, he needs awfully strong stimuli to make him respond).

Reducing the female to an animal, to Mama, to a male, is necessary for psychological as well as practical reasons: the male is a mere member of the species, interchangeable with every other male. He has no deep-seated individuality, which stems from what intrigues you, what outside yourself absorbs you, what you're in relation to. Completely self-absorbed, capable of being in relation only to their bodies and physical sensations, males differ from each other only to the degree and in the ways they attempt to defend against their passivity and against their

desire to be female.

The female's individuality, which he is acutely aware of, but which he doesn't comprehend and isn't capable of relating to or grasping emotionally, frightens and upsets him and fills him with envy. So he denies it in her and proceeds to define everyone in terms of his or her function or use, assigning to himself, of course, the most important functions--doctor, president, scientist--thereby providing himself with an identity, if not individuality, and tries to convince himself and women (he's succeeded best at convincing women) that the female function is to bear and raise children and to relax, comfort and boost the ego of the male; that her function is such as to make her interchangeable with every other female. In actual fact, the female function is to relate, groove, love and be herself, irreplaceable by anyone else; the male function is to produce sperm. We now have sperm banks.

Prevention of Privacy: Although the male, being ashamed of what he is and of almost everything he does, insists on privacy and secrecy in all aspects of his life, he has no real regard for privacy. Being empty, not being a complete, separate being, having no self to groove on and needing to be constantly in female company, he sees nothing at all wrong in intruding himself on any woman's thoughts, even a total stranger's, anywhere at any time, but rather feels indignant and insulted when put down for doing so, as well as confused--he can't, for the life of him, understand why anyone would prefer so much as one minute of solitude to the company of any creep around. Wanting to become a woman, he strives to be constantly around females, which is the closest he can get to becoming one, so he created a "society" based on the family--a male-female couple and their kids (the excuse for the family's existence), who live virtually on top of one another, unscrupulously violating the females' rights, privacy and sanity.

Isolation, Suburbs and Prevention of Community: Our society is not a community, but merely a collection of isolated family units. Desperately insecure, fearing his woman will leave him if she is exposed to other men or to anything remotely resembling life, the male seeks to isolate her from other men and from what little civilization there is, so he moves her out to the suburbs, a collection of self-absorbed couples and their kids. Isolation enables him to try to maintain his pretense of being an individual by becoming a "rugged individualist", a loner, equating non-co-operation and solitariness with individuality.

There is yet another reason for the male to isolate himself: every man is an island. Trapped inside himself, emotionally isolated, unable to relate, the male has a horror of civilization, people, cities, situations requiring an ability to understand and relate to people. So, like a scared rabbit, he scurries off, dragging Daddy's little asshole along with him to the wilderness, the suburbs, or, in the case of the "hippie"--he's way out, Man! --all the way out to the cow pasture where he can fuck and breed undisturbed and mess around with his beads and flute.

The "hippie", whose desire to be a "Man", a "rugged individualist", isn't quite as strong as the average man's, and who, in addition, is excited by the thought of having lots of women accessible to him, rebels against the harshness of a Breadwinner's life and the monotony of one woman. In the name of sharing and co-operation, he forms the commune or tribe, which, for all its togetherness and partly because of it (the commune, being an extended family, is an extended violation of the females' rights, privacy and sanity) is no more a community than normal "society".

A true community consists of individuals--not mere species members, not couples--respecting each other's individuality and privacy, at the same time interacting with each other mentally and emotionally--free spirits in free relation to each other-and co-operating with each other to achieve common ends. Traditionalists say the basic unit of "society" is the family; "hippies" say the tribe; no one says the individual.

The "hippie" babbles on about individuality, but has no more conception of it than any other man. He desires to get back to Nature, back to the wilderness, back to the home of the furry animals that he's one of, away from the city, where there is at least a trace, a bare beginning of civilization, to live at the species level, his time taken up with simple, non-intellectual activities--farming, fucking, bead stringing. The most important activity of the commune,

the one on which it is based, is gangbanging. The "hippie" is enticed to the commune mainly by the prospect of all the free pussy--the main commodity to be shared, to be had just for the asking but, blinded by greed, he fails to anticipate all the other men he has to share with, or the jealousies and possessiveness of the pussies themselves.

Men cannot co-operate to achieve a common end, because each man's end is all the pussy for himself. The commune, therefore, is doomed to failure: each "hippie" will, in panic, grab the first simpleton who digs him and whisk her off to the suburbs as fast as he can. The male cannot progress socially, but merely swings back and forth from isolation to gangbanging.

Conformity: Although he wants to be an individual, the male is scared of anything in himself that is the slightest bit different from other men; it causes him to suspect that he's not really a "Man", that he's passive and totally sexual, a highly upsetting suspicion. If other men are A and he's not, he must not be a man; he must be a fag. So he tries to affirm his "Manhood" by being like all the other men. Differentness in other men, as well as in himself, threatens him; it means they're fags whom he must at all costs avoid, so he tries to make sure that all other men conform.

The male dares to be different to the degree that he accepts his passivity and his desire to be female, his fagginess. The farthest out male is the drag queen, but he, although different from most men, is exactly like all other drag queens; like the functionalist, he has an identity--he is a female. He tries to define all his troubles away--but still no individuality. Not completely convinced that he's a woman, highly insecure about being sufficiently female, he conforms compulsively to the man-made feminine stereotype, ending up as nothing but a bundle of stilted mannerisms.

To be sure he's a "Man", the male must see to it that the female be clearly a "Woman", the opposite of a "Man", that is, the female must act like a faggot. And Daddy's Girl, all of whose female instincts were wrenched out of her when little, easily and obligingly adapts herself to the role.

Authority and Government: Having no sense of right or wrong, no conscience, which can only stem from an ability to empathize with others...having no faith in his non-existent self, being necessarily competitive and, by nature, unable to co-operate, the male feels a need for external guidance and control. So he created authorities--priests, experts, bosses, leaders, etc. --and government. Wanting the female (Mama) to guide him, but unable to accept this fact (he is, after all, a MAN), wanting to play Woman, to usurp her function as Guider and Protector, he sees to it that all authorities are male.

There's no reason why a society consisting of rational beings capable of empathizing with each other, complete and having no natural reason to compete, should have a government, laws or leaders.

Philosophy, Religion and Morality Based on Sex: The male's inability to relate to anybody or anything makes his life pointless and meaningless (the ultimate male insight is that life is absurd), so he invented philosophy and religion. Being empty, he looks outward, not only for guidance and control, but for salvation and for the meaning of life. Happiness being for him impossible on this earth, he invented Heaven.

For a man, having no ability to empathize with others and being totally sexual, "wrong" is sexual "license" and engaging in "deviant" ("unmanly") sexual practices, that is, not defending against his passivity and total sexuality which, if indulged, would destroy "civilization", since "civilization" is based entirely on the male need to defend himself against these characteristics. For a woman (according to men), "wrong" is any behavior that would entice men into sexual "license"--that is, not placing male needs above her own and not being a faggot.

Religion not only provides the male with a goal (Heaven) and helps keep women tied to men, but offers rituals through which he can try to expiate the guilt and shame he feels at not defending himself enough against his sexual

impulses; in essence, that guilt and shame he feels at being a male.

Most men, utterly cowardly, project their inherent weaknesses onto women, label them female weaknesses and believe themselves to have female strengths; most philosophers, not quite so cowardly, face the fact that male lacks exist in men, but still can't face the fact that they exist in men only. So they label the male condition the Human Condition, pose their nothingness problem, which horrifies them, as a philosophical dilemma, thereby giving stature to their animalism, grandiloquently label their nothingness their "Identity Problem", and proceed to prattle on pompously about the "Crisis of the Individual", the "Essence of Being", "Existence preceding Essence", "Existential Modes of Being", etc., etc.

A woman not only takes her identity and individuality for granted, but knows instinctively that the only wrong is to hurt others, and that the meaning of life is love.

Prejudice (racial, ethnic, religious, etc.): The male needs scapegoats onto whom he can project his failings and inadequacies and upon whom he can vent his frustration at not being female.
Competition, Prestige, Status, Formal Education, Ignorance and Social and Economic Classes: Having an obsessive desire to be admired by women, but no intrinsic worth, the male constructs a highly artificial society enabling him to appropriate the appearance of worth through money, prestige, "high" social class, degrees, professional position and knowledge and, by pushing as many other men as possible down professionally, socially, economically, and educationally.
The purpose of "higher" education is not to educate but to exclude as many as possible from the various professions.

The male, totally physical, incapable of mental rapport, although able to understand and use knowledge and ideas, is unable to relate to them, to grasp them emotionally; he does not value knowledge and ideas for their own sake (they're just means to ends) and, consequently, feels no need for mental companions, no need to cultivate the intellectual potentialities of others. On the contrary, the male has a vested interest in ignorance; he knows that an enlightened, aware female population will mean the end of him. The healthy, conceited female wants the company of equals whom she can respect and groove on; the male and the sick, insecure, unself-confident male female crave the company of worms.

No genuine social revolution can be accomplished by the male, as the male on top wants the status quo, and all the male on the bottom wants is to be the male on top. The male "rebel" is a farce; this is the male's "society", made by him to satisfy his needs. He's never satisfied, because he's not capable of being satisfied. Ultimately, what the male "rebel" is rebelling against is being male. The male changes only when forced to do so by technology, when he has no choice, when "society" reaches the stage where he must change or die. We're at that stage now; if women don't get their asses in gear fast, we may very well all die.

Prevention of Conversation: Being completely self-centered and unable to relate to anything outside himself, the male's "conversation", when not about himself, is an impersonal droning on, removed from anything of human value. Male "intellectual conversation" is a strained, compulsive attempt to impress the female.

Daddy's Girl, passive, adaptable, respectful of and in awe of the male, allows him to impose his hideously dull chatter on her. This is not too difficult for her, as the tension and anxiety, the lack of cool, the insecurity and self-doubt, the unsureness of her own feelings and sensations that Daddy instilled in her make her perceptions superficial and render her unable to see that the male's babble is a babble; like the aesthete "appreciating" the blob that's labeled "Great Art", she believes she's grooving on what bores the shit out of her. Not only does she permit his babble to dominate, she adapts her own "conversation" accordingly.

Trained from early childhood in niceness, politeness and "dignity", in pandering to the male need to disguise his animalism, she obligingly reduces her "conversation" to small talk, a bland insipid avoidance of any topic beyond the utterly trivial--or, if "educated", to "intellectual" discussion, that is, impersonal discoursing on irrelevant abstractions--the Gross National Product, the Common Market, the influence of Rimbaud on symbolist painting. So adept is she at pandering that it eventually becomes second nature and she continues to pander to men even when in the company of other females only.

Apart from pandering, her "conversation" is further limited by her insecurity about expressing deviant, original opinions and the self-absorption based on insecurity and that prevents her conversation from being charming. Niceness, politeness, "dignity", insecurity and self-absorption are hardly conducive to intensity and wit, qualities a conversation must have to be worthy of the name. Such conversation is hardly rampant, as only completely self-confident, arrogant, outgoing, proud, tough-minded females are capable of intense, bitchy, witty conversation.
Prevention of Friendship (Love): Men have contempt for themselves, for all other men, and for all women who respect and pander to them; the insecure, approval-seeking, pandering male females have contempt for themselves and for all women like them; the self-confident, swinging, thrill-seeking female females have contempt for men and for the pandering male females. In short, contempt is the order of the day.

Love is not dependency or sex, but friendship, and, therefore, love can't exist between two males, between a male and a female or between two females, one or both of whom is a mindless, insecure, pandering male; like conversation, love can exist only between two secure, free-wheeling, independent, groovy female females, since friendship is based on respect, not contempt.

Even among groovy females deep friendships seldom occur in adulthood, as almost all of them are either tied up with men in order to survive economically, or bogged down in hacking their way through the jungle and in trying to keep their heads above the amorphous mass. Love can't flourish in a society based on money and meaningless work; it requires complete economic as well as personal freedom, leisure time and the opportunity to engage in intensely absorbing, emotionally satisfying activities which, when shared with those you respect, lead to deep friendship. Our "society" provides practically no opportunity to engage in such activities.
Having stripped the world of conversation, friendship and love, the male offers us these paltry substitutes:

"Great Art" and "Culture": The male "artist" attempts to solve his dilemma of not being able to live, of not being female, by constructing a highly artificial world in which the male is heroized, that is, displays female traits, and the female is reduced to highly limited, insipid subordinate roles, that is, to being male.

The male "artistic" aim being, not to communicate (having nothing inside him, he has nothing to say), but to disguise his animalism, he resorts to symbolism and obscurity ("deep" stuff). The vast majority of people, particularly the "educated" ones, lacking faith in their own judgment, humble, respectful of authority ("Daddy knows best" is translated into adult language as "Critic knows best", "Writer knows best", "Ph.D knows best"), are easily conned into believing that obscurity, evasiveness, incomprehensibility, indirectness, ambiguity and boredom are marks of depth and brilliance.

"Great Art" proves that men are superior to women, that men are women, being labeled "Great Art", almost all of which, as the anti-feminists are fond of reminding us, was created by men. We know that "Great Art" is great because male authorities have told us so, and we can't claim otherwise, as only those with exquisite sensitivities far superior to ours can perceive and appreciate the greatness, the proof of their superior sensitivity being that they appreciate the slop that they appreciate.

Appreciating is the sole diversion of the "cultivated"; passive and incompetent, lacking imagination and wit, they must try to make do with that; unable to create their own diversions, to create a little world of their own, to affect in

the smallest way their environments, they must accept what's given; unable to create or relate, they spectate. Absorbing "culture" is a desperate, frantic attempt to groove in an ungroovy world, to escape the horror of a sterile, mindless existence. "Culture" provides a sop to the egos of the incompetent, a means of rationalizing passive spectating; they can pride themselves on their ability to appreciate the "finer" things, to see a jewel where there is only a turd (they want to be admired for admiring). Lacking faith in their ability to change anything, resigned to the status quo, they have to see beauty in turds because, so far as they can see, turds are all they'll ever have.

The veneration of "Art" and "Culture"--besides leading many women into boring, passive activity that distracts from more important and rewarding activities, from cultivating active abilities--allows the "artist" to be set up as one possessing superior feelings, perceptions, insights and judgments, thereby undermining the faith of insecure women in the value and validity of their own feelings, perceptions, insights and judgments.

The male, having a very limited range of feelings and, consequently, very limited perceptions, insights and judgments, needs the "artist" to guide him, to tell him what life is all about. But the male "artist", being totally sexual, unable to relate to anything beyond his own physical sensations, having nothing to express beyond the insight that for the male life is meaningless and absurd, cannot be an artist. How can he who is not capable of life tell us what life is all about? A "male artist" is a contradiction in terms. A degenerate can only produce degenerate "art". The true artist is every self-confident, healthy female, and in a female society the only Art, the only Culture, will be conceited, kookie, funky females grooving on each other and on everything else in the universe.

Sexuality: Sex is not part of a relationship; on the contrary, it is a solitary experience, non-creative, a gross waste of time. The female can easily--far more easily than she may think--condition away her sex drive, leaving her completely cool and cerebral and free to pursue truly worthy relationships and activities; but the male, who seems to dig women sexually and who seeks constantly to arouse them, stimulates the highly-sexed female to frenzies of lust, throwing her into a sex bag from which few women ever escape. The lecherous male excited the lustful female; he has to--when the female transcends her body, rises above animalism, the male, whose ego consists of his cock, will disappear.

Sex is the refuge of the mindless. And the more mindless the woman, the more deeply embedded in the male "culture", in short, the nicer she is, the more sexual she is. The nicest women in our "society" are raving sex maniacs. But, being just awfully, awfully nice they don't, of course, descend to fucking--that's uncouth--rather they make love, commune by means of their bodies and establish sensual rapport; the literary ones are attuned to the throb of Eros and attain a clutch upon the Universe; the religious have spiritual communion with the Divine Sensualism; the mystics merge with the Erotic Principle and blend with the Cosmos, and the acid heads contact their erotic cells.

On the other hand, those females least embedded in the male "Culture", the least nice, those crass and simple souls who reduce fucking to fucking, who are too childish for the grown-up world of suburbs, mortgages, mops and baby shit, too selfish to raise kids and husbands, too uncivilized to give a shit for anyone's opinion of them, too arrogant to respect Daddy, the "Greats" or the deep wisdom of the Ancients, who trust only their own animal, gutter instincts, who equate Culture with chicks, whose sole diversion is prowling for emotional thrills and excitement, who are given to disgusting, nasty, upsetting "scenes", hateful, violent bitches given to slamming those who unduly irritate them in the teeth, who'd sink a shiv into a man's chest or ram an icepick up his asshole as soon as look at him, if they knew they could get away with it, in short, those who, by the standards of our "culture" are SCUM...these females are cool and relatively cerebral and skirting asexuality.

Unhampered by propriety, niceness, discretion, public opinion, "morals", the "respect" of assholes, always funky, dirty, low-down SCUM gets around...and around and around...they've seen the whole show--every bit of it-the fucking scene, the sucking scene, the dyke scene--they've covered the whole waterfront, been under every dock and

pier--the peter pier, the pussy pier...you've got to go through a lot of sex to get to anti-sex, and SCUM's been through it all, and they're now ready for a new show; they want to crawl out from under the dock, move, take off, sink out. But SCUM doesn't yet prevail; SCUM's still in the gutter of our "society", which, if it's not deflected from its present course and if the Bomb doesn't drop on it, will hump itself to death.

Boredom: Life in a "society" made by and for creatures who, when they are not grim and depressing are utter bores, can only be, when not grim and depressing, an utter bore.
Secrecy, Censorship, Suppression of Knowledge and Ideas, and Exposes: Every male's deep-seated, secret, most hideous fear is the fear of being discovered to be not a female, but a male, a subhuman animal. Although niceness, politeness and "dignity" suffice to prevent his exposure on a personal level, in order to prevent the general exposure of the male sex as a whole and to maintain his unnatural dominant position in "society", the male must resort to:

1. Censorship. Responding reflexively to isolated words and phrases rather than cerebrally to overall meanings, the male attempts to prevent the arousal and discovery of his animalism by censoring not only "pornography", but any work containing "dirty" words, no matter in what context they are used.

2. Suppression of all ideas and knowledge that might expose him or threaten his dominant position in "society". Much biological and psychological data is suppressed, because it is proof of the male's gross inferiority to the female. Also, the problem of mental illness will never be solved while the male maintains control, because first, men have a vested interest in it--only females who have very few of their marbles will allow males the slightest bit of control over anything, and second, the male cannot admit to the role that fatherhood plays in causing mental illness.

3. Exposes. The male's chief delight in life--insofar as the dense, grim male can ever be said to delight in anything--is in exposing others. It doesn't much matter what they're exposed as, so long as they're exposed; it distracts attention from himself. Exposing others as enemy agents (Communists and Socialists) is one of his favorite pastimes, as it removes the source of the threat to him not only from himself, but from the country and the Western world. The bugs up his ass aren't in him; they're in Russia.

Distrust: Unable to empathize or feel affection or loyalty, being exclusively out for himself, the male has no sense of fair play; cowardly, needing constantly to pander to the female to win her approval, that he is helpless without, always on edge lest his animalism, his maleness be discovered, always needing to cover up, he must lie constantly; being empty, he has no honor or integrity--he doesn't know what those words mean. The male, in short, is treacherous, and the only appropriate attitude in a male "society" is cynicism and distrust.

Ugliness: Being totally sexual, incapable of cerebral or aesthetic responses, totally materialistic and greedy, the male, besides inflicting on the world "Great Art", has decorated his unlandscaped cities with ugly buildings (both inside and out), ugly decors, billboards, highways, cars, garbage trucks and, most notably, his own putrid self.

Hate and Violence: The male is eaten up with tension, with frustration at not being female, at not being capable of ever achieving satisfaction or pleasure of any kind; eaten up with hate--not rational hate that is directed against those who abuse or insult you--but irrational, indiscriminate hate...hatred, at bottom, of his own worthless self.

Violence serves as an outlet for his hate and, in addition--the male being capable only of sexual responses and needing very strong stimuli to stimulate his half-dead self--provides him with a little sexual thrill.

Disease and Death: All diseases are curable, and the aging process and death are due to disease; it is possible, therefore, never to age and to live forever. In fact, the problems of aging and death could be solved within a few years, if an all-out, massive scientific assault were made on the problem. This, however, will not occur within the

male establishment, because:

1. The many male scientists who shy away from biological research, terrified of the discovery that males are females, and show marked preference for virile, "manly" war and death programs.

2. The discouragement of many potential scientists from scientific careers by the rigidity, boringness, expensiveness, time-consumingness and unfair exclusivity of our "higher" educational system.

3. Propaganda disseminated by insecure male professionals, who jealously guard their positions, so that only a highly select few can comprehend abstract scientific concepts.

4. Widespread lack of self-confidence brought about by the father system that discourages many talented girls from becoming scientists.

5. Lack of automation. There now exists a wealth of data which, if sorted out and correlated, would reveal the cure for cancer and several other diseases and possibly the key to life itself. But the data is so massive it requires high speed computers to correlate it all. The institution of computers will be delayed interminably under the male control system, since the male has a horror of being replaced by machines.

6. The money system's insatiable need for new products. Most of the few scientists around who aren't working on death programs are tied up doing research for corporations.

7. The male likes death--it excites him sexually and, already dead inside, he wants to die.
Incapable of a positive state of happiness, which is the only thing that can justify one's existence, the male is, at best, relaxed, comfortable, neutral, and this condition is extremely short-lived, as boredom, a negative state, soon sets in; he is, therefore, doomed to an existence of suffering relieved only by occasional, fleeting stretches of restfulness, which state he can achieve only at the expense of some female. The male is, by his very nature, a leech, an emotional parasite and, therefore, not ethically entitled to live, as no one has the right to live at someone else's expense.
Just as humans have a prior right to existence over dogs by virtue of being more highly evolved and having a superior consciousness, so women have a prior right to existence over men. The elimination of any male is, therefore, a righteous and good act, an act highly beneficial to women as well as an act of mercy.

However, this moral issue will eventually be rendered academic by the fact that the male is gradually eliminating himself. In addition to engaging in the time-honored and classical wars and race riots, men are more and more either becoming fags or are obliterating themselves through drugs. The female, whether she likes it or not, will eventually take complete charge, if for no other reason than that she will have to--the male, for practical purposes, won't exist.

Accelerating this trend is the fact that more and more males are acquiring enlightened self-interest; they're realizing more and more that the female interest is their interest, that they can live only through the female and that the more the female is encouraged to live, to fulfill herself, to be a female and not a male, the more nearly he lives; he's coming to see that it's easier and more satisfactory to live through her than to try to become her and usurp her qualities, claim them as his own, push the female down and claim she's a male. The fag, who accepts his maleness, that is, his passivity and total sexuality, his femininity, is also best served by women being truly female, as it would then be easier for him to be male, feminine. If men were wise they would seek to become really female, would do intensive biological research that would lead to men, by means of operations on the brain and nervous system, being able to be transformed in psyche, as well as body, into women.

Whether to continue to use females for reproduction or to reproduce in the laboratory will also become academic: what will happen when every female, twelve and over, is routinely taking the Pill and there are no longer any accidents? How many women will deliberately get or (if an accident) remain pregnant? No, Virginia, women don't just adore being brood mares, despite what the mass of robot, brainwashed women will say. When society consists of only the fully conscious the answer will be none. Should a certain percentage of women be set aside by force to serve as brood mares for the species? Obviously this will not do. The answer is laboratory reproduction of babies.

As for the issue of whether or not to continue to reproduce males, it doesn't follow that because the male, like disease, has always existed among us that he should continue to exist. When genetic control is possible--and it soon will be--it goes without saying that we should produce only whole, complete beings, not physical defects or deficiencies, including emotional deficiencies, such as maleness. Just as the deliberate production of blind people would be highly immoral, so would be the deliberate production of emotional cripples.

Why produce even females? Why should there be future generations? What is their purpose? When aging and death are eliminated, why continue to reproduce? Why should we care what happens when we're dead? Why should we care that there is no younger generation to succeed us?

Eventually the natural course of events, of social evolution, will lead to total female control of the world and, subsequently, to the cessation of the production of males and, ultimately, to the cessation of the production of females.

But SCUM is impatient; SCUM is not consoled by the thought that future generations will thrive; SCUM wants to grab some thrilling living for itself. And, if a large majority of women were SCUM, they could acquire complete control of this country within a few weeks simply by withdrawing from the labor force, thereby paralyzing the entire nation. Additional measures, any one of which would be sufficient to completely disrupt the economy and everything else, would be for women to declare themselves off the money system, stop buying, just loot and simply refuse to obey all laws they don't care to obey. The police force, National Guard, Army, Navy and Marines combined couldn't squelch a rebellion of over half the population, particularly when it's made up of people they are utterly helpless without.

If all women simply left men, refused to have anything to do with any of them--ever, all men, the government, and the national economy would collapse completely. Even without leaving men, women who are aware of the extent of their superiority to and power over men, could acquire complete control over everything within a few weeks, could effect a total submission of males to females. In a sane society the male would trot along obediently after the female. The male is docile and easily led, easily subjected to the domination of any female who cares to dominate him. The male, in fact, wants desperately to be led by females, wants Mama in charge, wants to abandon himself to her care. But this is not a sane society, and most women are not even dimly aware of where they're at in relation to men.

.

The conflict, therefore, is not between females and males, but between SCUM--dominant, secure, self-confident, nasty, violent, selfish, independent, proud, thrill-seeking, free-wheeling, arrogant females, who consider themselves fit to rule the universe, who have free-wheeled to the limits of this "society" and are ready to wheel on to something far beyond what it has to offer--and nice, passive, accepting, "cultivated", polite, dignified, subdued, dependent, scared, mindless, insecure, approval-seeking Daddy's Girls, who can't cope with the unknown, who want to continue to wallow in the sewer that is, at least, familiar, who want to hang back with the apes, who feel secure only with Big Daddy standing by, with a big, strong man to lean on and with a fat, hairy face in the White House, who are too cowardly to face up to the hideous reality of what a man is, what Daddy is, who have cast their lot with the swine, who have adapted themselves to animalism, feel superficially comfortable with it and know no other way of "life", who have reduced their minds, thoughts and sights to the male level, who, lacking sense, imagination and wit

can have value only in a male "society", who can have a place in the sun, or, rather, in the slime, only as soothers, ego boosters, relaxers and breeders, who are dismissed as inconsequents by other females, who project their deficiencies, their maleness, onto all females and see the female as a worm.

.

But SCUM is too impatient to hope and wait for the de-brainwashing of millions of assholes. Why should the swinging females continue to plod dismally along with the dull male ones? Why should the fates of the groovy and the creepy be intertwined? Why should the active and imaginative consult the passive and dull on social policy? Why should the independent be confined to the sewer along with the dependent who need Daddy to cling to?

.

A small handful of SCUM can take over the country within a year by systematically fucking up the system, selectively destroying property, and murder:

.

SCUM will become members of the unwork force, the fuck-up force; they will get jobs of various kinds and unwork. For example, SCUM salesgirls will not charge for merchandise; SCUM telephone operators will not charge for calls; SCUM office and factory workers, in addition to fucking up their work, will secretly destroy equipment. SCUM will unwork at a job until fired, then get a new job to unwork at.

.

SCUM will forcibly relieve bus drivers, cab drivers and subway token sellers of their jobs and run buses and cabs and dispense free tokens to the public.

.

SCUM will destroy all useless and harmful objects--cars, store windows, "Great Art", etc.
Eventually SCUM will take over the airwaves--radio and TV networks--by forcibly relieving of their jobs all radio and TV employees who would impede SCUM's entry into the broadcasting studios.

.

SCUM will couple-bust--barge into mixed (male-female) couples, wherever they are, and bust them up.

.

SCUM will kill all men who are not in the Men's Auxiliary of SCUM. Men in the Men's Auxiliary are those men who are working diligently to eliminate themselves, men who, regardless of their motives, do good, men who are playing ball with SCUM. A few examples of the men in the Men's Auxiliary are: men who kill men; biological scientists who are working on constructive programs, as opposed to biological warfare; journalists, writers, editors, publishers and producers who disseminate and promote ideas that will lead to the achievement of SCUM's goals; faggots who, by their shimmering, flaming example, encourage other men to de-man themselves and thereby make themselves relatively inoffensive; men who consistently give things away--money, things, services; men who tell it like it is (so far not one ever has), who put women straight, who reveal the truth about themselves, who give the mindless male females correct sentences to parrot, who tell them a woman's primary goal in life should be to squash the male sex (to aid men in this endeavor SCUM will conduct Turd Sessions, at which every male present will give a speech beginning with the sentence: "I am a turd, a lowly, abject turd," then proceed to list all the ways in which he is. His reward for so doing will be the opportunity to fraternize after the session for a whole, solid hour with the SCUM who will be present. Nice, clean-living male women will be invited to the sessions to help clarify any doubts and misunderstandings they may have about the male sex); makers and promoters of sex books and movies, etc., who are hastening the day when all that will be shown on the screen will be Suck and Fuck (males, like the rats following the Pied Piper, will be lured by Pussy to their doom, will be overcome and submerged by and will eventually drown in the passive flesh that they are); drug pushers and advocates, who are hastening the dropping out of men.

.

Being in the Men's Auxiliary is a necessary but not a sufficient condition for making SCUM's escape list; it's not enough to do good; to save their worthless asses men must also avoid evil. A few examples of the most obnoxious or harmful types are: rapists, politicians and all who are in their service (campaigners, members of political parties, etc.); lousy singers and musicians; Chairmen of Boards; Breadwinners; landlords; owners of greasy spoons and

restaurants that play Musak; "Great Artists"; cheap pikers and welchers; cops; tycoons; scientists working on death and destruction programs or for private industry (practically all scientists); liars and phonies; disc jockeys; men who intrude themselves in the slightest way on any strange female; real estate men; stock brokers; men who speak when they have nothing to say; men who loiter idly on the street and mar the landscape with their presence; double dealers; flim-flam artists; litterbugs; plagiarizers; men who in the slightest way harm any female; all men in the advertising industry; psychiatrists and clinical psychologists; dishonest writers, journalists, editors, publishers, etc.; censors on both the public and private levels; all members of the armed forces, including draftees (LBJ and McNamara give orders, but servicemen carry them out) and particularly pilots (if the bomb drops, LBJ won't drop it; a pilot will). In the case of a man whose behavior falls into both the good and bad categories, an overall subjective evaluation of him will be made to determine if his behavior is, in the balance, good or bad.

.

It is most tempting to pick off the female "Great Artists", double dealers, etc. along with the men, but that would be impractical, as there would be no one left; all women have a fink streak in them, to a great or lesser degree, but it stems from a lifetime of living among men. Eliminate men and women will shape up. Women are improvable; men are not, although their behavior is. When SCUM gets hot on their asses it'll shape up fast.

.

Simultaneously with the fucking-up, looting, couple-busting, destroying and killing, SCUM will recruit. SCUM, then, will consist of recruiters; the elite corps--the hard core activists (the fuck-ups, looters and destroyers) and the elite of the elite--the killers.

.

Dropping out is not the answer; fucking-up is. Most women are already dropped out; they were never in. Dropping out gives control to those few who don't drop out; dropping out is exactly what the establishment leaders want; it plays into the hands of the enemy; it strengthens the system instead of undermining it, since it is based entirely on the non-participation, passivity, apathy and non-involvement of the mass of women. Dropping out, however, is an excellent policy for men and SCUM will enthusiastically encourage it.

.

Looking inside yourself for salvation, contemplating your navel, is not, as the Drop Out people would have you believe, the answer. Happiness lies outside yourself, is achieved through interacting with others. Self-forgetfulness should be one's goal, not self-absorption. The male, capable of only the latter, makes a virtue of an irremediable fault and sets up self-absorption, not only as a good but as a Philosophical Good, and thus gets credit for being deep.

SCUM will not picket, demonstrate, march or strike to attempt to achieve its ends. Such tactics are for nice, genteel ladies who scrupulously take only such action as is guaranteed to be ineffective. In addition, only decent, clean-living, male women, highly trained in submerging themselves in the species, act on a mob basis. SCUM consists of individuals; SCUM is not a mob, a blob. Only as many SCUM will do a job as are needed for the job. Also, SCUM, being cool and selfish, will not subject itself to getting rapped on the head with billy clubs; that's for the nice, "privileged, educated", middle-class ladies with a high regard for the touching faith in the essential goodness of Daddy and policemen. If SCUM ever marches, it will be over the President's stupid, sickening face; if SCUM ever strikes, it will be in the dark with a six-inch blade.

.

SCUM will always operate on a criminal as opposed to a civil disobedience basis, that is, as opposed to openly violating the law and going to jail in order to draw attention to an injustice. Such tactics acknowledge the rightness of the overall system and are used only to modify it slightly, change specific laws. SCUM is against the entire system, the very idea of law and government. SCUM is out to destroy the system, not attain certain rights within it. Also, SCUM--always selfish, always cool--will always aim to avoid detection and punishment. SCUM will always be furtive, sneaky, underhanded (although SCUM murders will always be known to be such).

.

Both destruction and killing will be selective and discriminate. SCUM is against half-crazed, indiscriminate riots, with no clear objective in mind, and in which many of your own kind are picked off. SCUM will never instigate,

encourage or participate in riots of any kind or any other form of indiscriminate destruction. SCUM will coolly, furtively, stalk its prey and quietly move in for the kill. Destruction will never be such as to block off routes needed for the transportation of food and other essential supplies, contaminate or cut off the water supply, block streets and traffic to the extent that ambulances can't get through or impede the functioning of hospitals.

.

SCUM will keep on destroying, looting, fucking-up and killing until the money-work system no longer exists and automation is completely instituted or until enough women co-operate with SCUM to make violence unnecessary to achieve these goals, that is, until enough women either unwork or quit work, start looting, leave men and refuse to obey all laws inappropriate to a truly civilized society. Many women will fall into line, but many others, who surrendered long ago to the enemy, who are so adapted to animalism, to maleness, that they like restrictions and restraints, don't know what to do with freedom, will continue to be toadies and doormats, just as peasants in rice paddies remain peasants in rice paddies as one regime topples another. A few of the more volatile will whimper and sulk and throw their toys and dishrags on the floor, but SCUM will continue to steamroller over them.

.

A completely automated society can be accomplished very simply and quickly once there is a public demand for it. The blueprints for it are already in existence, and its construction will only take a few weeks with millions of people working at it. Even though off the money system, everyone will be most happy to pitch in and get the automated society built; it will mark the beginning of a fantastic new era, and there will be a celebration atmosphere accompanying the construction.

.

The elimination of money and the complete institution of automation are basic to all other SCUM reforms; without these two the others can't take place; with them the others will take place very rapidly. The government will automatically collapse. With complete automation it will be possible for every woman to vote directly on every issue by means of an electronic voting machine in her house. Since the government is occupied almost entirely with regulating economic affairs and legislating against purely private matters, the elimination of money and with it the elimination of males who wish to legislate "morality" will mean that there will be practically no issues to vote on.

.

After the elimination of money there will be no further need to kill men; they will be stripped of the only power they have over psychologically independent females. They will be able to impose themselves only on the doormats, who like to be imposed on. The rest of the women will be busy solving the few remaining unsolved problems before planning their agenda for eternity and Utopia--completely revamping educational programs so that millions of women can be trained within a few months for high level intellectual work that now requires years of training (this can be done very easily once our educational goal is to educate and not to perpetuate an academic and intellectual elite); solving the problems of disease and old age and death and completely redesigning our cities and living quarters. Many women will for a while continue to think they dig men, but as they become accustomed to female society and as they become absorbed in their projects, they will eventually come to see the utter uselessness and banality of the male.

The few remaining men can exist out their puny days dropped out on drugs or strutting around in drag or passively watching the high-powered female in action, fulfilling themselves as spectators, vicarious livers* or breeding in the cow pasture with the toadies, or they can go off to the nearest friendly suicide center where they will be quietly, quickly and painlessly gassed to death.

.

Prior to the institution of automation, to the replacement of males by machines, the male should be of use to the female, wait on her, cater to her slightest whim, obey her every command, be totally subservient to her, exist in perfect obedience to her will, as opposed to the completely warped, degenerate situation we have now of men, not only not existing at all, cluttering up the world with their ignominious presence, but being pandered to and groveled before by the mass of females, millions of women piously worshipping before the Golden Calf, the dog leading the master on the leash, when in fact the male, short of being a drag queen, is least miserable when abjectly prostrate before the female, a complete slave. Rational men want to be squashed, stepped on, crushed and crunched, treated

as the curs, the filth that they are, have their repulsiveness confirmed.

.

The sick, irrational men, those who attempt to defend themselves against their disgustingness, when they see SCUM barreling down on them, will cling in terror to Big Mama with her Big Bouncy Boobies, but Boobies won't protect them against SCUM; Big Mama will be clinging to Big Daddy, who will be in the corner shitting in his forceful, dynamic pants. Men who are rational, however, won't kick or struggle or raise a distressing fuss, but will just sit back, relax, enjoy the show and ride the waves to their demise.

.

.

**It will be electronically possible for him to tune in to any specific female he wants to and follow in detail her every movement. The females will kindly, obligingly consent to this, as it won't hurt them in the slightest and it is a marvelously kind and humane way to treat their unfortunate, handicapped fellow beings.*

.

.

EOTM: Feminism Exposed: Our blindness to feminine evil -- by David Shackleton

. · 1 January 2005 · Archived copy · Original

I want, in this essay, to sketch out the synthesis of ideas that I expect will be the foundation for my life's work. Last month I began to write a book on this subject, and I don't expect to be able to deal adequately with the scope of these ideas in less than a book. Nevertheless, I want to try here to plant some seeds, to share my thinking in this abbreviated form, so that others can begin to think about and dialogue on these ideas.

My personal resistance to these conclusions has been profound. I have fought against them, like a fish on a hook, for almost two years, because I don't want them to be true. The very best result that I can imagine would be that someone would show me the error in my analysis, and that my conclusions are mistaken. I hope for that, but I do not expect it. It feels like time to stop resisting and to follow the path in front of me.

Introduction

I will argue that the feminine archetype is now dominant in the western world, and that, most dangerously, we are virtually blind to the shadow side of this archetype. As a result, while we are vigilant against masculine forms of evil, feminine evil is taking over our culture, and feminism is the leading and driving ideology of this process. This situation has its roots in our childraising practice in the last fifty years, and is closely analagous to the historical rise of Nazism in Germany. The resulting human misery and destruction is already massive, and seems likely to exceed that of WWII. However, the eventual result will be that we take women off the pedestal, recognize their capacity for evil as we already have for men, and move finally into real gender maturity and equality.

Masculine and Feminine Archetypes

There is some confusion about archetypes. In King, Warrior, Magician, Lover, Moore and Gillette define them as "instinctual patterns and energy configurations, probably inherited genetically through the generations of our species," and which "provide the very foundations of our behaviours." 1 I like to think of archetypes in terms of a metaphor. I imagine that the psychic world of Jung's collective unconscious is like a jungle, where paths have been trod by people's behaviour since the beginning of time. Those paths that many people have walked throughout history (e.g., mother, father, warrior, woodcutter, etc.) have been made wide by the passage of many feet, and efficient by those creative minds who blazed shortcuts that others chose to follow. Such paths are psychically easy to walk, compared to the difficulty of cutting a new path through the jungle or of following one seldom-used and overgrown. These paths are archetypes, typical psychological ways of being, and they have an energy that resists stepping off the path. This metaphor matches Carl Jung's description when he says, "There are as many archetypes as there are typical situations in life. Endless repetition has engraved these experiences into our psychic constitution, not in the form of images filled with content, but at first only as forms without content, representing only the possibility of a certain kind of perception or action." 2 (emphasis in original)

Two fundamental archetypes are the masculine and the feminine; together they divide up the whole psychological realm into complementary pairs of opposites. They are groups of psychological behaviours that have commonly and stereotypically been associated with males and females throughout history. Note that individual men and women can and do display varying degrees of masculinity and femininityÑthese archetypes are not equivalent to being male or female.

The archetypal masculine and feminine are what is known as polar opposites. Jung explained that all psychic life is governed by a necessary opposition, and that this opposition is inherent in human nature. For, he said, "the psyche

is ... a self-regulating system," and "there is no balance, no system of self-regulation, without opposition." "Everything human is relative, because everything rests on the inner polarity; for everything is a phenomonon of energy. Energy necessarily depends on a pre-existing polarity, without which there could be no energy. There must always be high and low, hot and cold, etc., so that the equilibrating process--which is energy--can take place." 3

A few examples of such complementary opposite pairs of behaviours are given below:

Masculine Feminine

Competitive Cooperative Hierarchical Consensual Overt Covert Direct Indirect Intellectual Emotional Physical Psychological Objective Subjective Physically coercive Deceptive

It is important to realize that since each pair of complementary opposites consists of different active or evaluative approaches to a situation, they cannot be employed simultaneously, but rather represent alternative strategies or choices. Which strategy will be best cannot be determined in general, but depends entirely on the situation. Human psychological wholeness or maturity can be conceived of as becoming competent in the use of all such strategies. However, we naturally tend to prefer and overuse those strategies with which we are familiar as individuals or cultures, and most of us, due to reinforcement and conditioning in childhood, and probably to genetic predisposition as well, embrace first that set of behaviours and attitudes culturally appropriate for our gender. Boys tend to absorb and manifest those behaviours and attitudes described above as masculine, and girls to value and embrace the complementary feminine set. One consequence of that, of course, is that men and women are pychologically drawn to each other. The opposites attract because we unconsciously seek out what we lack.

Note that neither the masculine nor the feminine archetype is either dominant or derivative: both are equal in power and value (although our individual and cultural value systems generally rank one above the other). This equality is inherent in the dualistic nature of all polar opposites: like day and night, up and down, good and bad, they create and define each other. Also, any particular strategy, masculine or feminine, can be used for good or ill, to help or to harm: none are good or bad in essence, but only in application and intention. However, again, we tend as individuals and as cultures to group them into categories of right and wrong, good and bad; categories which vary widely from one area to another, and which change--sometimes rapidly--from age to age.

My final point about archetypes is their power to move whole populations in ways of which they are unaware. Jung, who formulated the concept, said that, }... from within the realm of the subjective psyche, ... the archetype presents itself as numinous, that is, it appears as an experience of fundamental importance. Whenever it clothes itself with adequate symbols, ... it takes hold of the individual in a startling way, creating a condition of 'being deeply moved', the consequences of which may be immeasurable." 4 And James Hillman: "... one thing is absolutely essential to the notion of archetypes: their emotional possessive effect, their bedazzlement of consciousness so that it becomes blind to its own stance. By setting up a universe which tends to hold everything we do, see and say in the sway of its cosmos, an archetype is best comparable with a god." 5

The New Theory of Psychohistory

In his groundbreaking book Foundations of Psychohistory, Lloyd deMause says, "It is not often recognised that psychohistory is the only new social science to be founded in the twentieth century--sociology, psychology and anthropology all having broken away from philosophy in the nineteenth century. ... [This] 'psychogenic theory of history' ... can be summarised as the theory that history involves the acting out by adults of group fantasies which are based on motivations initially produced by the evolution of childhood. ... The theory states that it is not 'economic class' nor 'social class' but 'psychoclass'--shared childrearing modes--that is the real basis for understanding motivation in history." 6

I have been approaching this conclusion for several years, driven by the realization that 'culture' or 'social beliefs' must be derivative rather than prime causes. But if so, what causes culture, what determines the nature of our group beliefs and motivations and hence, historical actions? Sociology's only answer is 'prior culture'--an infinite regress of causation. The answer is obvious, once you see it. Culture is an artifact of group psychology. And group psychology, like individual psychology, is a consequence primarily of childhood experience. It was wonderfully affirming for me when I discovered, just last month, that the science of psychohistory, well developed if not well known, explains history in terms of the acting out of group psychology with its roots in childhood experience.

A central thesis of this essay is that the dominant psychosocial theme of the twentieth century has been the evolution of our psyches beyond traditional, one-sided masculinity and femininity towards individual and cultural wholeness. Group psychology, like individual psychology, follows this path by emphasizing first one pole, one archetype, and then the other. During such times of extreme cultural gender polarization, our fear of change means that we are unwilling to move on to the next stage until the pain and distress of our archetypal one-sidedness has grown to massive proportions. Let's start our examination of this pattern by looking at the psychohistorical gender roots of Nazism.

German Childraising Practice

My first hint that there might be gender roots to Nazism came when I read Alice Miller's magnificent For Your Own Good: Hidden cruelty in child-rearing and the roots of violence. She writes, "On the basis of available documents, we can easily gain an impression of the atmosphere in which Adolf Hitler grew up. The family structure could well be characterized as the prototype of a totalitarian regime. Its sole, undisputed, often brutal ruler is the father. The wife and children are totally subservient to his will, his moods and his whims; they must accept humiliation and injustice unquestioningly and gratefully. Obedience is their primary rule of conduct." 7 But was this the general pattern throughout Germany? I asked this question of Lloyd deMause, author of Foundations of Psychohistory. He replied, 'German childrearing was horrific at the end of the 19th century, with tight swaddling for a full year, high infanticide rates, enormous neglect during infancy, battering ..., authoritarianism, moving children around and abandoning them, overcontrol, etc. I can show French, British and American childrearing was much in advance of German. So the early traumatic childrearing is all there, though widely denied by most historians." Alice Miller adds an interesting note about Jewish culture: "... Jewish fathers in Eastern Europe were not trained to be harsh and brutal. They were not forced, like German fathers, to suppress their soft, helpless side from childhood on." 8

German childrearing practice was, in the decades around 1900, almost universally autocratic, with authority focused in the father and brutally enforced with strict physical punishment and extreme lack of empathy for the feelings of the child. The father's decisions were beyond reproach: any complaint was cause for further punishment. Archetypally, this is hypermasculine: any trace of feminine qualities such as empathy or affection is seen as weakness. If such a childhood is universal within a culture so that children never see or experience an alternative, then most idealize it, embrace their parents' view that the abuse they received was deserved and appropriate. They grow up with a particular kind of hole in their psyches, a hole that I call the father wound. The father wound consists of an inability to recognize masculine forms of abuse, and a need to find ways to repeat such abuse in their own lives, but with themselves in the controlling position, as the perpetrators. (The most common form of this, of course, is parents repeating the patterns of abuse with their own children, but this time with themselves in the role of the powerful and righteous one). Where a psychic wound is ubiquitous in a culture, as it was in Germany in the first half of this century, the stage is set for an abusive political ideology to capture the nation, provided that it exactly matches the forms of the original childhood experience.

This, more than any external conditions, is the ground from which Nazism grew in Germany. Consider how well the political ideology matched the original childhood abuse. Nazism was autocratic, rigidly hierarchical, and brutal,

with a total lack of empathy or compassion toward human suffering. It embraced Aryan Germans as the 'master race' (allowing most Germans to see themselves as the ones in control), allowed no complaint or criticism against it, and righteously, brutally punished all dissent. It was led by a hypermasculine father figure seen as all-knowing and infallible, who ruled with absolute authority and to whom all deferred, but who presented himself as being, and was believed to be, dedicated to the welfare of those he ruled. In every way, Nazism matched and repeated the major forms and patterns of German childrearing.

A personality or an ideology that emerges from the dark side of a gender archetype always exaggerates the features of the gender it is emphasizing, and fears and rigorously defends against the strengths of the other archetypal pole. An example of this is offered by Jungian analyst Lawrence Jaffe: "The Nazis were great enemies of feeling, though friendly to inferior feeling, better known as sentimentality. (Goering, murderer of thousands, wept inconsolably when his pet canary died.) The Nazis made a sport of placing themselves in situations which would naturally elicit feeling, only to then deliberatedly withhold it. The one who exhibited the least feeling would be accounted the winner. We may fairly assume that Hitler himself unconsciously equated his inner feeling side, his shadow, with Jewishness, and experienced it as a threat to his masculine strength and purposiveness." 9

When hypermasculine military aggression was added to the legendary German scientific and bureaucratic efficiency, Nazism became the purest example of the dark side of the masculine archetype in ideological form in modern times. Germany became a culture possessed by archetypal masculine evil.

Evil Ideology Defined

Evil is a powerful word, and I use it here only after long and careful consideration. In recent years, with the general decay of religious convictions in the west, we have become confused about evil. Indeed, modern New Age and secular humanistic thinking is that evil has no existence, is all 'shadow projection'. I once shared this notion, but I have now concluded that such thinking is dangerously naive. Scott Peck wrote in The Road Less Travelled, "... I have to conclude that evil is real. It is not the figment of the imagination of a primitive religious mind feebly attempting to explain the unknown. There really are people, and institutions made up of people, who respond with hatred in the presence of goodness and would destroy the good insofar as it is in their power to do so. They do this not with conscious malice, but blindly, lacking awareness of their own evilÑindeed, seeking to avoid any such awareness." 10 And from Alice Miller, "The Jungian notion of the shadow, and the notion that evil is the reverse of good, are aimed at denying the reality of evil. But evil is real. It is not innate but acquired, and it is never the reverse of good, but rather its destroyer. ... When one day the ignorance arising from childhood repression is eliminated and humanity has awakened, an end can be put to this production of evil." 11

What is evil? The simplest answer is that evil is anti-life. If, as Jung claimed, the purpose of life and the deepest human desire is to develop ourselves fully, to become all that we can be, then evil strives to reverse this process, to regress towards infantilism. To assist in the practical recognition of evil, I offer my own definition, which has three necessary components. Evil is: 1. The desire for unearned consumption or privilege, plus; 2. The coercion or deception of others in order to achieve it, and; 3. The insistent rationalization of such behaviour as moral and righteous.

Although not explicit in the definition, all the cruelty and brutal destruction that we associate with evil are built on this foundation.

Enjoying unearned consumption or privilege is essentially the role of an infant or child. A child is unique before the law in enjoying rights without responsibilities, whereas adulthood is the state of being a net producer, consuming and producing--in legal terms, of having rights and responsibilities. Traditionally, and archetypically, men's responsibility/production has been physical, economic and political. Exerting themselves against the entropic

forces of decay and randomness, they have created order and organization, resulting in food on the table and laws in the land. Women's responsibility/production area has been moral and emotional. In their relationships with their families, especially their children, their emotional exertion returns comfort for pain, peace for anger, security for fear. The quality and sustainability of any society is based entirely on the level of production in these areas: physical/economic/political and moral/emotional. In a healthy society, individuals and institutions trade their production for that of others in conscious, non-coercive, non-deceptive contracts. Traditional marriage is the basic example of this trade, where the man's external production of food and shelter is traded for the woman's 'internal' production of the moral and emotional development of children and domestic relationship harmony.

If some are to enjoy unearned consumption, others must produce more or consume less. Where this is not offered willingly, as it is to children and welfare recipients, for example, some will seek to take it by force or deception. An example is burglary. However, burglars are not evil unless they meet the third criteria, and attempt to justify their actions to themselves and to others as morally righteous. It is this last feature of evil that makes it so pernicious, for the attack on reason can be utterly confusing, and make the destructive nature of evil actions extremely hard to recognize.

An evil ideology contains within its formal arguments such a disguised attack on reason, in the form of purported moral justifications for unearned privilege (for the favoured group) extracted coercively from others. In the case of Nazism, these others were the Jews, whose property was confiscated, and the surrounding nations, whose lands were regarded as forfeit to the German need for 'lebensraum' (living space), whose peoples were enslaved (coerced production without consumption rights) and whose property was seized, all by force and justified by self-serving moral arguments.

Evil is ever amongst us. However, those unique circumstances when, because of ubiquitous childrearing modes in a particular place and time, an evil ideology captures an entire nation or culture, give rise to suffering and destruction on a massive scale. Such, I conclude, is what happened in Nazi Germany--and World War II and the Holocaust were the result. I believe that something very similar is taking shape today, in the case of feminism and the culture of the western world.

The Feminine Archetype

Idealized Something deeply significant happened after WWII. The world was already reeling from the experience of two World Wars and the Great Depression in the space of a single generation. When the excesses of Nazism were exposed at Nuremberg, when the atom bombs were dropped on Japan, the world recoiled in horror. But what we recoiled from was our own nature. Male institutions and male government were seen as flawed and dangerous. At an archetypal level, we decided as a whole culture that masculinity was suspect, and we took men 'off the pedestal'. As a consequence, because of the oppositional nature of masculine and feminine archetypes, women were established even more strongly on the pedestal. (One result of this is that our image of the mature, ideal or enlightened person is now archetypically feminine in nature: non-aggressive, cooperative rather than competitive, gentle, nurturing, sensitive.) In practice, we began to idealize women and to demonize men. Where there were major problems in the family or the world, we anticipated that they would have male causes and that women would be found to be innocent victims. In fact, we became resistant to any other finding. The focus of moral authority in the family shifted to the mother, since fathers, as males, were ashamed and suspect. In an interview with Bert Hoff, Robert Johnson (author of the books He, She and We about masculine and feminine archetypes) said, "[Women] are stepping into [power] roles as men are retreating and becoming wimpish. I grew up in a family like that. My mother ruled, and my father said 'yes'. That's very common--almost a stereotype for post-World War II marriages." 12 Which is not to say that masculine forms of child abuse ceased, just as feminine forms of abuse certainly weren't absent in father-dominated German families. Rather, the mother became the parent who effectively wielded 'the power that mattered'.

But feminine archetypal power takes different forms than masculine. Where a father's authority is usually overt and direct, that of a mother is more commonly covert and indirect. For example, a mother saying to a child, "YouÕve been so bad, just wait till your father gets home" maintains the appearance of the father being the one who is in charge, when it is clear that it is actually the mother who is judge and jury, and will probably set the sentence. Where a father's discipline is physical and intellectual (e.g., a spanking or a reasoned explanation why something is wrong), a mother's is typically psychological and emotional (e.g., "If it wasn't for you I wouldn't be stuck in this dump" or "you've made me cry"). And, most fundamentally, where the masculine archetype coerces through force and the creation of fear, the feminine archetype coerces through deception and the creation of shame.

This change in our perceptions of men and women has had some huge benefits. For the first time ever, we have publicly recognized and acknowledged child abuse by men. And wife abuse. All forms of archetypally maculine abusiveness, in fact. Because of this new cultural awareness of male forms of violence (i.e., overt sexual or physical abuse), victims of these abuses gain the opportunity to work through and heal these wounds in therapy, in self-help groups, in workshops, in women's shelters and with friends. They may write about their experiences and their recovery. The strong cultural support for the victim, the conviction that abuse is never the child's fault, enables progress against the powerful tendency to repress and avoid such painful feelings.

Because of this, we no longer have a ubiquitous father wound in our psyches. There is no possibility that an evil masculine ideology like Nazism could take over our culture, for its abusiveness and hypocrisy would be quickly recognized. We are no longer idealizing men and in denial about masculine forms of evil. However, we are still in deep denial of feminine evil. In the last fifty years, the feminine forms of child abuse have remained unrecognized. And as long as abuse is unrecognized, it cannot be healed. Today, we have a ubiquitous mother wound.

We gained this wound because our mothers, idealized in modern culture (since now we believed men were responsible for the evil in the world), abused us in feminine ways without our recognizing it as abuse. And with feminine forms of abuse unrecognized, there was no stigma or consequence to mothers for such abuse. Indeed, like the German fathers, they believed that their words and actions were good parenting. And, just as German mothers feared to stand up to the physically abusive fathers, so modern fathers are ashamed to stand up to psychologically abusive mothers. The damage to the soul of the child remains unrecognized. And, with no public consciousness of the destructiveness of such forms of abuse, there is little possibility for large numbers of people to recover as adults. Our mother wound today remains massive, universal, and unhealed.

What is this feminine abuse? It is the separation of the child from his or her trust in their own mind, their own feelings. It is the substitution of the mother's self-serving, subjective determination of right and wrong, of guilt and innocence, for a repeatable, objective standard. It is the crushing of natural emotional expression in the child because such expression is felt by the mother to be distasteful, distressing or inconvenient. As always in abuse, it is the exercise of coercive power in the interest of the exerciser, in this case the mother, and against the interest of the child. It is a form of what Anne Miller calls "poisonous pedagogy". She writes, "Since training in many cultures begins in infancy during the initial symbiotic relationship between mother and child, this early conditioning makes it virtually impossible for the child to discover what is actually happening to him. The child's dependence on his or her parents' love also makes it impossible in later years to recognize these traumatizations, which often remain hidden behind the early idealization of the parents for the rest of the child's life." 13

Archetypal feminine abuses are indirect (exercised through others such as the father or siblings), psychological or emotional ("you should be ashamed of yourself", or "stop your crying at once"), covert (often communicated by no more than a glance that says, "You're such a disappointment"), manipulative (you can't understand because you're not a woman/not an adult/etc.), and psychologically rather than physically incestuous ("let me tell you what your father is really like"). Such behaviour is seen as adequate parenting, not ideal perhaps, but not really harmful. Nowhere is it a criminal offense, as are the masculine forms of child abuse. Yet, I argue that it is at least as

damaging as are the masculine abuses with which we are familiar, but that the wounds it produces are different. Fundamentally, it is built on the use of shame to control behaviour (as opposed to the dark masculine which uses fear for the same purpose). Where fear attacks the will, shame kills the soul. In her book Shame: Spiritual Suicide, Vicki Underland Rosow says that shame is systemic in our western culture, and gives examples of its use in religion, politics, education, helping professions, and science.

So we, in the West, because of our childrearing practice, possess a massive, ubiquitous, archetypally feminine wound in our psyches, of which we are unconscious, and which I call the mother wound. According to this thesis, then, we are ripe for the appearance of an evil feminine ideology to exploit this wound. This ideology is already among us, and its name is feminism.

Feminism

Firstly, it is important to say to what I refer with the name feminism. A standard defense against any criticism of feminism is that it is no one thing, but many shades of beliefs and affiliations, such as liberal feminism, socialist or marxist feminism, radical feminism, ecofeminism, etc. Of course these branches exist, but this is irrelevant. Any ideology is identified by its basic tenets, which remain unchanged across all its variations, since it is they that unite the varieties under the one banner. In the case of feminism, all branches share the same basic belief that history has been a story of general oppression of women by men. Indeed, this is acknowledged by feminists as the essential, defining principle, for example, by Alison M. Jaggar and Paula Rothenberg Struhl in their book Feminist Frameworks, where they say, "... the conservative view of womenÕs situation in society is not feminist, because it denies that women are oppressed." 14

Further, I want to be very clear that it is not my intention, nor would I consider it valid, to indict feminism based on the words or actions of any radical elements or 'lunatic fringe'. Only the consistent messages of its major, acknowledged spokespersons and the major policies that it has pursued will be used here to build a case. My focus is on modern, mainstream feminism, which for brevity I will refer to simply as feminism. And, while my research indicates that the same phenomenon is operating throughout the Western world, I will confine my examples to North American feminism, since this is the area that I know best.

Feminism is an Evil Ideology

If feminism is indeed an ideology which is exploiting a ubiquitous 'mother wound', then the forms it has taken will exactly match and repeat the feminine forms of child abuse, just as Nazism matched the German masculine mode. Is this the case? It is non-hierarchical: indeed, feminists make much of their peer-level, consensual processes, and there are no national or international 'heads' or chiefs of the feminist movement. Similarly, it is indirect, in that nowhere is there an overtly feminist legislature, university, law court or military, or even a female one. Rather, feminism exerts its power indirectly, having those in positions of power do its bidding without needing itself to hold those positions in order to achieve its aims. In this it operates exactly like the mother in post-war families, where the father's authority seems to be intact, yet it is the mother's will that rules.

Feminism is subjective rather than objective, driven by women's feelings about what is right--which exactly reflects the way that mothers decided what was right in modern families. In issues of law, where objectivity and repeatability are vital, feminism has successfully argued that any unwelcome or hostile feeling in a woman is to be regarded as establishing sexual harassment. And modern anti-stalking legislation discards hard-won fundamental freedoms such as equality before the law, the presumption of innocence, and rights to freedom of association and to property (for men) in order to ensure that "no one [is made to] feel afraid and unsafe in their own home or community" 15 (emphasis added). Extensive feminist writing on gender equality is simply rationalizations of women's feelings of inequality, for when analyzed carefully, modern feminist arguments always reveal themselves

to be built not on objective gender equality but on female superiority. Even feminist philosophy, now founded in post-modern constructivism, standpoint theory and "women's ways of knowing", is essentially subjective.

Like post-war mothers, feminism portrays itself as the virtuous victim struggling to correct male injustices. Requests for change are never presented as simply, "Let's work together to achieve this goal ...", but always as grievances, as arguments that women are owed more money, more power, more rights, more ... consumption of society's production. The argument is always moral in nature, always filled with angst and outrage, and always favours women. Feminists do not mention the many ways that women enjoy gender advantage over men--except to deny their reality or their import--because they never feel any disadvantage but their own.

Finally, and most importantly, feminism gets its way through the inculcation of shame. Here is the lever, the engine of modern social control: a lever that can be operated only by or on behalf of women. For, when we were tiny, it was our mothers who convinced us that we were unworthy except when we pleased them, no good unless we had their approval. The deep sense of shame that was planted in the psyches of both boys and girls, that I call the mother wound, now provides the means for feminists to effectively control every area of social power. Male--and female--legislators, judges, academics, managers, all re-experience those intense feelings of shame and unworthiness they felt as children, when angry women say or imply that they are bad. Indeed, their whole lives have been built around reassuring themselves that they are worthy through good works, public accomplishment or financial success. However, none of these external defenses can stand for long against feminist shaming if the inner psyche still carries the mother wound, still gives to Woman the ultimate power to determine its worth.

Just how powerful is shame as a coercive technique? Powerful, wealthy men gave up their lives to save those of women and children on the Titanic in 1912. Why? Because of the shame they would feel as a coward, if they didn't. In wartime, average men will run directly into machine gun fire, knowing they will die a meaningless death, rather than face the shame they would feel if they fled the battle. Shame is the most intense psychological pain we can feel. We usually prefer to die. It's that big.

I have shown, very briefly, that the forms adopted by ideological feminism match those of modern, archetypally feminine child abuse. But does feminism meet the definition of an evil ideology? Let us see.

Firstly, does feminism seek unearned privilege--rights without responsibilities? A major plank of modern feminism from the beginning has been reproductive rights; specifically, a woman's right to abort an unwanted child. Has feminism sought to address the issues of others affected by this right, such as the fetus, the father or society? No, feminists have universally repudiated all responsibility to such others. They demandÑand have receivedÑthe unilateral right to abort an unborn child, or not, as they choose. (Note that this is a brand new right, and not one that men ever had.) In 1969, Betty Friedan said, "Only one voice needs to be heard on the question of whether a woman will or will not bear a child, and that is the voice of the woman herself: her own conscience, her own conscious choice." 16 Fetuses have no rights at all, since, feminists argue, "A woman's body, a woman's choice". This emotive, shaming slogan ignores all the ways that a fetus is unique from all other female body parts--for example that it can grow into a person, that it is the result of a sexual act with a man, and that it can be male or female--in favour of the obscuring argument that it is enclosed in and fed by the woman's body. And so we have the iniquitous situation that the father has no say in whether his offspring lives or dies, is not even required to be notified of the pregnancy, yet is legally obliged to support the child if the woman chooses to keep it--and whether he intended or wishes to be a father or not. And society, again with no say in the woman's choice, yet must foot the bills for welfare moms. Saying to a woman, "If you didn't want a child, you shouldn't have had sex" is met by feminists with howls of outrage and accusations of discrimination--yet this is exactly what those same feminists say to men in the same situation. Clearly, in women's area of traditional responsibility--reproduction--feminism wants no gender equality, but rather has sought and won rights for women and responsibilities for men.

What about in other areas? In men's areas of traditional responsibility, the real equality issues--the right to vote, laws against gender discrimination in employment, in salary, in housing, in access to professional roles--were addressed years ago. Today, all feminist initiatives--every single one--are about giving women rights over men, and men responsibility for women. Thus we have employment equity (affirmative action) for jobs where men predominate, but not for those where women are in the majority. We have ever more punitive enforcement of child support, but no enforcement at all for access by fathers to their children. We have zero tolerance (i.e., arrest the man on the woman's word) against male violence against women based on feminist advocacy studies that model all domestic violence in terms of male oppression of female victims, and deny the reality of women's equal initiation of violence in the home. We have sexual harassment laws addressing the ways that men might abuse women's sexuality in the workplace, but no laws addressing (or even acknowledging) women's use of their sexuality to unfairly advance their careers. We have even defined obscenity, here in Canada, in terms of what harms women! 17

All of these feminist initatives seek women's advantage coercively, which is the second criterion describing an evil ideology. Feminists are not saying to men and to society, "Offer these things where you choose." No, they insist (and have been granted) that these rights be given the coercive force of law. And in doing so, they employ their own, archetypally feminine forms of coercion: deception and shame. Deception appears in the creation and use of false and distorted statistics (such as the many studies showing that women continue to earn less than men, but which ignore differences between men and women in hours worked, years of experience, overtime, credentials and the like, which when factored in account entirely for the differences in apparent earnings). And shame is coercive in a similar way to blackmail, in that the ability of legislators, academics, judges--and voters!--to consider the issues dispassionately and make free, sensible choices is virtually eliminated by their need to avoid their denied but still devastating feelings of shame if they ever see themselves as abusive to women.

In Canada, a feminist initiative of the moment is pay equity. A Human Rights Tribunal has ordered the federal government to pay approximately five billion dollars to (mostly) female government workers, because their work was "undervalued" with respect to that of men. This argument is totally fallacious. Unequal pay for equal work and discrimination in hiring (the real equality issues) have been illegal in North America for years. Any woman who wanted the higher paying 'male' work could have competed for it like the men. The fact is, salaries are set by market demand: where many people desire a particular kind of employment (such as clerical office work), the supply forces salaries down. And that's as it should be, since the price of production then represents the real costs. (Communist Russia went broke trying to make the market serve ideological goals.) What the pay equity advocates really want is the cushy, attractive office work they desire, and the higher salaries of the less desirable (hence higher paid) jobs. They want to be subsidised on the backs of others. They want to increase their consumption without any increase in their production. They want a legal entitlement to it. And they're getting it.

The third aspect of an evil ideology is the maintenance of an image of total and perpetual moral righteousness. Many of the examples already discussed have already made this apparent, so I will confine myself to exposing the basic strategies employed.

If one is pursuing goals (women's advantage) which must be disguised, then it is vital to have devices by which meaningful debate can be avoided or deflected. Feminism has three basic strategies for this: 1. Where there is a difference in society between men's and women's roles, ignore the real causes and present the difference always as evidence of male oppression and discrimination against women--and demand compensatory programs (e.g., abortion on demand, sexual harassment, pay equity, censorship of pornography, etc.). 2. Where there is no difference between men's and women's roles, or such differences as do exist already favour women, create biased studies and statistics to argue that women are disadvantaged. Claim that difference as evidence of male oppression and demand compensatory programs (e.g., women's health, violence against women). If necessary, introduce "violence against women and children" as an emotional trump card to shut down debate of the real issues. (e.g., allegations of child or wife abuse in child custody cases). 3. If anyone opposes or criticises feminist claims, silence

or isolate them through shame, by accusing them of "backlash", i.e., of being opposed the equality of women in order to maintain their own selfish or oppressive behaviour. (Note that this also works against women, who are said to be "colonized" by the patriarchy.) Summary: Never, under any circumstances, yield the moral high ground. It seems that feminism, not love, means never having to say you're sorry! (e.g., the contortions that feminists are performing as they rationalize their support for Bill Clinton in the face of behaviour that, in anyone else, they would condemn. As, indeed, they condemned United States Supreme Court nominee Clarence Thomas for the alleged 'crime' of making suggestive or lewd personal comments in the workplace.)

Conclusion

I have tried to sketch a picture of where I believe we are today, and how we got here. I want to finish with some words about where I think we are going.

What is the ultimate objective of modern feminism? Feminists sincerely believe that it is equality that they seek. But it is not. Because they are unconsciously acting out of the mother wound, their goal is to regress women to the state of childhood: i.e., rights without responsibilities, consumption without production. For men, they have the opposite objective: responsibilities without rights. People with responsibilities but no rights are slaves. We are currently headed, unconsciously but inevitably, for a world in which women are children and men are slaves. Not until we recognize the truth of this and recoil in horror as a whole culture, will we wake up from this nightmare.

The situation is very grave, but the real war has not yet begun. We are still appeasing feminists, trying to give them enough of what they want so that we won't have to confront them in their power, much as the allies did with Hitler in 1936-39. It didn't work then, and it won't work now. In fact, as then, it will lead to disaster.

The coming war is unavoidable. At a psychological level, we have to take women off the pedestal, and we won't do that as a culture until we see the evil that they do, as we already have with men. But we are very attached to idealizing women. 'Motherhood' is our last great god(dess), and so it will take massive suffering before we will be willing to see women's dark side and let them be fully human.

The war I refer to will not be a physical war--that would be an archetypal masculine form. Rather, it will be a spiritual war, a war about meaning and life purpose and what is true. It will need not physical soldiers, but people who have done their own healing and become emotionally and morally strong, who are recovering from being controlled through shame. In the short term, I believe that we will see increasing levels of violence and delinquency as traditional social restraints break down, increasingly strident claims that it is all the fault of men, ever-greater penalization of men and 'protection' of women and children, and rising levels of psychological distress, despair and suicide. Feminism will become ever more virulent and radical. We will know that we have won, that we are beginning to emerge from it when anger and fear finally turn to grief, when we see massive grief across our whole culture, grief at what we have done, at what we have allowed to happen to our children and to ourselves.

I can only guess how long this process will take: probably at least twenty years. Comparing it to the situation in Nazi Germany, two things stand out. The first is that the mother wound is deeper than the father wound, because our relationship with out mother is the first and deepest relationship we make. That, of course, is why we did the father work first--it was easier. And so the working out of the mother wound will be harder and more distressing, and perhaps require more suffering before we are finished with it. And the second thing is that there are no "allies" waiting in the wings to save us. We must do what Nazi Germany was unable to do: we must find the resources to recognizze and to battle this evil from within our own culture, even while still possessed and blinded by the power of our mother wound. I don't know how we will do it, but I see no alternative.

I realize, as I write these words, that most will deny them, that it is no small thing for us to recognize the truth about

the system that we are immersed in. It is as difficult as recognizing the truth about our families. Indeed, it is recognizing the truth about our families. This is not comfortably remote, like Nazism is now for most of us, but archetypally powerful in our psyches right now. It is significant, perhaps, that there was no effective resistance to Nazism within Germany, from the beginning to the end of the Third Reich. Consider what that means. Despite all of the atrocities, the loss of personal freedoms, the social and political abuses, and the massive financial and personal costs of the war, Nazism yet enjoyed apparent popular support throughout Germany until the end. Clearly, it satisfied a vital need. That is the kind of challenge that I believe we are facing.

I want to end on a more positive note. On the other side of this challenge lies cultural maturity, social consciousness. The mother wound is the last ubiquitous psychological wound. When it, too, is healed, we will, for the very first time in all of history, be conscious as a culture of all the forms of archetypal childhood abuse, and their consequences in later life. We will work out and recover from our shame issues just as we do now with our physical and sexual abuse issues, and we will begin, for the first time ever, to transact consciously rather than codependently with each other as the general pattern of social intercourse. What forms of government, of entertainment, of social discourse we will then create and enjoy, I can hardly imagine. I probably won't be alive to see it. But I intend to live to help it come to pass.

References --

1 King, Warrior, Magician, Lover, Robert Moore and Douglas Gillette, Harper Collins 1990, p.9.

2 Collected Works #9, Carl Gustav Jung, Bollinger, paragraph 99.

3 The Psychology of the Unconscious, 1916, Carl Gustav Jung, in Collected Works #7, Bollinger, pp.60, 74.

4 Introduction to M. Esther Harding, WomenÕs Mysteries, Carl Gustav Jung, in Collected Works #18, Bollinger.

5 A Blue Fire: Selected Writings, James Hillman, Harper Collins, N.Y., 1991, p.24.

6 Foundations of Psychohistory, Lloyd deMause, Creative Roots Inc., N.Y.,1982, pp.i-ii.

7 For Your Own Good: Hidden cruelty in child-rearing and the roots of violence, Alice Miller, pub. Farrar, Straus, Giroux, N.Y., 1983, p.146.

8 The Untouched Key: Tracing Childhood Trauma in Creativity and Destructiveness, Alice Miller, Doubleday, 1990, p.54.

9 Liberating the Heart: Spirituality and Jungian Psychology, Lawrence W. Jaffe, Inner City Books, Toronto, 1990, p.112.

10 The Road Less Travelled: A New Psychology of Love, Traditional Values and Spiritual Growth, M. Scott Peck, Touchstone, Simon & Schuster, NY, 1978, p.278.

11 Banished Knowledge: Facing Childhood Injuries, Alice Miller, Doubleday, N.Y., 1990, pp.142-143.

12 ÒMale and Masculine: An Interview with Robert A JohnsonÓ by Bert Hoff, in MenÕs Voices: A Quarterly Journal, Vol 1 #3, Summer/Fall Ô98, The WhiteRock Alternative, Seattle, WA, p23.
13 For Your Own Good: Hidden cruelty in child-rearing and the roots of violence, Alice

Miller,Farrar/Strauss/Giroux, NY, 1983, p.4.

14 Feminist Frameworks, Alison M. Jaggar & Paula Rothenberg Struhl, McGraw-Hill, 1978, p.69.

15 ÒManitoba Legislation on Stalking and Domestic ViolenceÓ by David Shackleton, in Everyman: A MenÕs Journal, #34, Nov/Dec Ô98, Ottawa, ON, p55.

16 ÒAbortion: A WomanÕs Civil RightÓ speech by Betty Friedan to the First National Conference for Repeal of Abortion Laws, Chicago, 1969, in It Changed My Life:Writings on the WomenÕs Movement, Betty Friedan, Random House 1976, p123.

17 Canadian Supreme Court ÒButlerÓ decision, 1992.

David Shackleton is a thinker and writer on gender, and editor and publisher of Everyman: A Men's Journal. He specifically requests comments and correspondence about the ideas and arguments in this essay, as he is now expanding this thesis into a book. Contact him at

PO Box 4617, Stn. E,
Ottawa, ON
K1S 5H8
Canada

E-mail: editor@everyman.org - http://www.everyman.org/

EOTM: The War Against Men -- by David Shackleton

. · 1 January 2005 · Archived copy · Original

We are approaching once again the grim anniversary of Marc Lepine's murder of 14 female engineering students at Montreal's École Polytechnique. Last year, here in Ottawa, women held a candlelight vigil (men were not welcome) at the city's monument to women killed by men, at which words and tears of grief and rage at men were expressed. It is a strange ritual, an annual re-opening of a wound and an almost exultant display of anger, like Jews visiting Auschwitz to rekindle their outrage (which, to their credit, I have never heard of them doing). Such passionate public rituals are deep windows into our culture, but what they reveal does not always match what the participants believe.

In 1993 I read a library book in which were transcribed all the conversations between a popular radio talk show host (I can't remember which one) and his listeners, in the few weeks after the 'Montreal Massacre'. For me, an eager student and detective of gender culture, it made fascinating reading. Many of the callers took the feminist position that Lepine's murders were representative of general male misongyny; some (mainly men) disagreed strongly with that position and insisted that he was a lone madman, representative of no one but himself. It was only after I finished the book that I realized; in all the hundreds of exchanges, some basic points had been overlooked and a fundamental question had never been asked. In fact, I have never heard it asked to this day. In this article I propose to ask and to answer this question.

First, something usually overlooked. Marc Lepine wasn't trying to kill women. He was trying to kill feminists. Before he opened fire, he said to the female engineering students, "You're all feminists. I hate feminists!" And in his suicide note, Lepine wrote, "Feminists have wrecked my life." In all of the vast discussion and analysis of his motives and his circumstances, isn't it curious that no one, to my knowledge, has yet taken him seriously and looked at his life to discover why he believed it had been wrecked by feminists.

The reason, of course, is that we assume we already know. Feminists, we believe, are pursuing the equal rights of women, and insecure, patriarchal men like Lepine resent having to share their male privileges with women, hence their anger and hate. But this explanation is built on an assumption and a stereotype: let's check them out. In particular, let's now ask the basic question that was never asked in all the Montreal Massacre debate: Are there ways in which feminism is genuinely damaging, even wrecking, the lives of men?

But before I continue, I need to confess to you that I hate doing this. I, like most men of my generation, was conditioned to protect women, to see them as more delicate and fragile, more pure and valuable. I learned to see them as morally superior, above the dirty, grubbing impusles of sexual and materialistic need that I knew were part of my makeup. I didn't like that, but I could live with it because I also had areas of superiority: I was stronger and more competent in the work world, more mechanical and more rational. I couldn't have articulated these things then as I have here, but at some level I knew them, and they felt right. I knew that a good man, in an emergency, would sacrifice his life to save that of a woman, as so many men have, and that also seemed right to me. And, I confess to you, I have not yet removed this brainwashing from my soul. Despite years of awareness of my conditioning and active personal work to dismantle it, there is still a part of me that wants things to be this way, that knows no way to find redemption from my personal unworthiness except in the approving, affirming eyes of a loving woman. When I think with this part of me, I know that honour comes from having the power to abuse her, but choosing not to, and instead protecting and cherishing her.

This historical, archetypal, unhealed part of me is clear that men's and women's roles are different, and that it does not fall to me, a man, to correct women on moral issues. That is their purview, their jurisdiction. But it is bigger than that. It is not just their jurisdiction, but their right, and I am unworthy to do it, lacking their purity. And so

when necessity drives me, finally, to speak out and say, "But that's not true, not right," I feel, at a deep level, ashamed. I feel I have abused women, I feel I have lost my route to redemption, I feel fundamentally unworthy. Is this why men who in desperation murder women, perhaps their wife (or ex wife) and children, frequently then turn their gun, as Marc Lepine did, on themselves? I think so.

And so I wish, as I begin my analysis of Feminism, to apologise to women for my presumption in stepping onto their turf. And yet, it is necessary, for things have gone very badly wrong. And I can deal with what it brings up for me, for that old, conditioned, patriarchal part of me is no longer all, or even most, of who I am today, and for that Feminism deserves some of the credit.

All of modern feminist analysis is built on one conceptual foundation: that men as a gender have more power than women. Not just different power, but greater power. Liberal, socialist, radical, eco - all brands of feminism share this one foundation. All the theories and policies, the institutions and accomplishments of feminism (eg. legislation on date rape, sexual harrassment, employment equity, domestic violence; women's shelters and crisis lines, programs for abused women and abusive men as well as the biases in family court), all are founded on and justified by this one belief. If this belief is false, then all these activities are not correcting an existing imbalance, but rather creating or worsening one. I will argue that this foundation of feminism is false, that power between men and women is balanced and has been throughout history.

My argument hinges on violence. Consider that in prehistoric society there was a need, on occasion, for either aggressive or defensive fighting. Such needs arise naturally from the competition between tribes for resources, or for any number of more complex reasons. (The modern notion that primitive societies were peaceful and harmonious is a nostalgic fantasy: most, like the Native Americans, were warlike long before they encountered Europeans.) Given the boiological differences between men and women which lead naturally to the women being engaged in child rearing and the men in hunting (and which division of labour is also common in the animal kiingdom), this task of war would tend to fall to men. And that would result in a problem. For once men, as a gender, organize themselves as a fighting force, what is to prevent them from taking over the society, enslaving women and taking what they wish from them? As, indeed, happens to this day in military coups. But why doesn't it happen everywhere, all the time?

The answer is that nature always finds a balance. The balance in this case was provided by an honour code. In elegantly simple fashion, men held the physical power and women the moral power. Each had a power over the other, and each had something the other needed. Men had the physical power but needed the moral affirmation of women in order to achieve social status, not to mention a wife and children. Women had the moral power but needed the physical protection and perhaps also the provision of food and shelter of men. Of course, at first i imagine there were many tribes where the men enslaved the women. What must have happened is that such tribes were less effective, less efficient than those where the balance of power was invented and men and women were able to work cooperatively, and so over time evolution favoured those with an honour code restraining the force of the warrior men. And we are their descendents.

This honour code has taken many forms over time, from the ritual chivalry of the middle ages to the exaggerated puritanism of the Victorians, but it has always been (usually covertly - or at least, unknown to men) focused on and controlled by women. Its deepest root is, of course, the power that women have to grant or withhold sexual favours, and so to cut off a 'dishonourable' man from the right to progeny or a normal life. (And incidentally, this is the reason why the sexual revolution of the fifties failed to deliver us to sexual equality, but instead resulted in the rise of Feminism, which restored sexual control by women under the guise of equality ‹ but that's another article.) This honour code is deeply and fundamentally alive in men today, and it is still society's greatest defense against both individual and collective male violence. And this is where the urgency of our present situation is apparent, for Feminism has, for the first time in history, turned women from shaming individual men who are judged

dishonourable, to shaming men in general and masculinity as an institution. And the very real danger in this is that if men come to perceive that there is no way for them to achieve honour, to be recognized publicly and privately as 'good' men, then they may sense that they have little to lose by taking what they want, since they have little to gain by restraining themselves. I very much fear that if we do not turn aside from our still-growing, wholesale shaming of men and the Patriarchy and all things male, that our future may contain civil violence of a degree we have never seen before.

I will not attempt to prove my thesis to you in this article. That is the task of a future book, and anyway, all the evidence needed is available to those who look for it‹not least in the pages of the issues of this magazine. And, reassuringly, more and more books are now being published, written by women, which point penetratingly and powerfully to the fallacies in the Feminist position. But let us not underestimate the power that Feminism holds. The deepest, most deadly power given to women by tribal evolution is the power to shame. It had to be powerful, because it balanced the most deadly power given to men; the power to kill. That power to shame the deep souls of men is the power that Feminism is using today to silence the men who would otherwise shout its errors and lies aloud. As I confessed early in this article, it is not easy for a man to grow out of his dependence on women for his essential honour. This is deep masculine stuff: "death before dishonour" is not a trivial male cry. Men have run from trenches directly into machine gun fire rather than face their terror of shame and dishonour. But our recovery as men begins with telling the truth about ourselves and naming our oppressions. I hope that I and Everyman can help lead men forward toward real emancipation.

And I ask for the help of women in this. As you cease to identify with Feminism for the power and control it seems to give you, and begin instead to welcome and affirm the men in your lives who choose to stand their own ground and describe honestly how feminist analysis does not tell the truth about their lives, so you will create the environment in which men can more easily tell their truths. And in this way you will create greater honesty in your life between men and women. That is the direction we must go, and as swiftly as we can, if we are to lessen the tensions that are still growing between men and women, and avoid the possibility of vast civil violence that could erupt if men are shamed beyond their limits, before they have the moral strength from their own resources to restrain their tendencies towards violence. This, to my mind, is the most important message that Marc Lepine has for us. Is he, perhaps, representative of a possible future, one in which men, shamed beyond endurance by a male-hating Feminist establishment, strike out in desperation at those they judge responsible? I most earnestly hope not.

David Shackleton is a thinker and writer on gender, and editor and publisher of Everyman: A Men's Journal, the only Canadian magazine of the men's movement. Reach him at PO Box 4617, Station E, Ottawa, Ontario K1S 5H8, Canada, or by email at editor@everyman.org. Check out the Everyman website at www.everyman.org

David Shackleton
Editor and Publisher
Everyman: A Men's Journal
PO Box 4617, Station E,
Ottawa, ON K1S 5H8
http://www.everyman.org
"The World Changes When We Do"

EOTM: Feminism Led to Masculine Rage

. · 6 January 2005 · Archived copy · Original

September 20, 1999

Feminism led to masculine rage

By JEAN SONMOR

Toronto Sun

I'm walking around steaming and I don't know who I'm mad at -- except maybe myself.
The reason for my irritation is simple enough on one level: Those nasty engineers at Queen's University in Kingston, the ones who like to dye themselves purple for frosh week, are at it again. Apparently -- trying to outdo each other insulting and degrading women. "Go Down or Go Home" is their pathetic rallying cry.

Ho hum. Old story. Sexual bravura at its least alluring. A decade ago their predecessors were more violent. Queen's achieved international notoriety for their posters responding to the No Means No campaign-- "No Means Kick Her In The Teeth," "No Means On Your Knees, Bitch"

This year, though, my son is there. First year, living in the thick of it all, in residence. So now I have a personal interest in how brutal and misogynistic the prevailing attitudes are at the place where my husband and I are spending $13,000 or $14,000 over the next seven months to have our son "educated." (The total cost is more but he's contributing his summer savings.)

In the summer there was a minor skirmish when signs went up identifying the AMS (the Alma Mater Society, the student government) as the "All Male Society." The matter was handled internally -- after all, seven of the top 10 jobs are held by women and the editor of the school paper is a woman. "All Male Society" had its ironic twist.

It would be naive to think there aren't rambunctious anti-feminists everywhere. But at Queen's they seem to feel a little freer -- or maybe a little angrier. But the steam that's rising from me, although provoked by the hyper-aggressive poster-makers, has more to do with the ugly impasse between the sexes that we're living through. And for that I blame my generation of women. How come we didn't see this coming? How come we were so caught up in our own stuff that we turned men into the enemy, and now must suffer the consequences?

These students are kids, for heaven's sake, not bitter, wounded 50-year-olds who've been through the marital and professional wars and lost on both counts. Their attitude is societal rather than personal. These guys have absorbed their hostility from the air around them. And who's providing that air? Their feminist mothers and fathers? The media? The women they date?

More and more worrying goes on about what has happened to this generation of boys. Skyrocketing suicide rates. Plummeting grades. Little ambition or focus.(A recent American survey of Grade 8 kids found the girls twice as likely as the boys to aspire to a career in management.) And if you have teenagers you don't have to read books such as Harvard psychologist William Pollack's Real Boys: Rescuing Our Sons from the Myths of Boyhood to see how much surer girls are than boys about where they're going and what they want. "It's as if our sons are unwittingly mirroring ... our own adult ambivalence about masculinity," Pollack writes.

At least some of the hostility toward women must be laid at the feet of feminism. That dreary, doctrinaire me-

firstism that many women find embarrassing is still around in spades. In commenting on a recent story that fewer men are now teaching high school, the women educators were indifferent. High school boys don't need teacher-role models, they said. No research shows that. But we've spent nearly two decades on affirmative action trying to balance the gender equation at the universities. Why? Presumably because role models are important to young women. Go figure.

Anyhow, I digress. What I wanted to say was about how carelessly a certain kind of woman embraced feminism in the 1970s. (I'm not discounting myself but I tempered my views as I watched my sons grow up -- living proof that the personal is the political.) We tried to seize power. We saw an opening. We saw unfairness. We never bothered our heads about the consequences. But, looking back, it's pretty clear to me that many -- though not all -- of us already had all kinds of power. It was subtle but very real. Almost without reflection, en masse, we threw over that highly nuanced balance between the sexes and decided to redraw the map -- unilaterally.

What did we expect? Capitulation? That all we had to do was say we wanted to take our place at the boardroom table, show we were smart and strategic enough, and the men, those who prized that kind of accomplishment above all other, would simply bow and retreat? And retreat to what? The housework and family nurturing that we had suddenly decided wasn't enough for us? Now, if you can believe the trend watchers, many women are burned out on superwoman and want to head back.

Trouble is, with all the carnage -- and attitude -- around, that's not possible.

***

Jean Sonmor can be reached by e-mail at jsonmor@sunpub.com.

Letters to the editor should be sent to editor@sunpub.com.

Copyright © 1999, Quebecor New Media Limited Partnership.

EOTM: How the Women's Movement Taught Women to Hate Men -- by Erin Pizzey

. · 7 January 2005 · Archived copy · Original

Men's Rights Agency - News & Views

How The Women's Movement Taught Women to Hate Men - By Erin Pizzey

We were sitting around a coffee table in my house, in Goldhawk Road, Hammersmith in London listening to a bossy woman wearing National Health round glasses and a long Indian skirt. She smelled of insense and to few baths. We were all nursing large gin and tonics which was the staple drink in the Women's Lib. Goldhawk Road weekly meetings.

We were trying to follow her convoluted explanations about our 'role in society.' As far as I knew, I had a very simple role in society. I had always wanted to have lots of children, be happily married, and free to tend my house and garden and cook three course meals for my husband. 'What could possibly be wrong with that I asked?' 'Why,' she said angrily. 'Are so many married women deprived of the status of independent human beings?' The answer was; because marriage is based on the property concept, therefore it must be abolished. I looked at the other women in the group, Angela, a teacher had more idea of what was going on. She had trained as a teacher and was used to this confusing amount of jargon. 'What is wrong with owning a house?' I asked. I was obviously a hopeless brain drain. 'You,' she said turning on me. 'Live in a mink-lined trap,' her face was frozen with rage. I decided I'd better shut up and see what else I was getting wrong. 'Why are the mores of our society unfair to women?' was her next question. The answer to that was 'because men are natural oppressors.'

This was not the time to confess to the fact that I had not only a son but seven adopted sons. Certainly, my daughter Cleo and I waged war in a family where two women were pitted gainst nine males. The most oppressive thing the boys ever did was to leave hair in the wash-basin and they could all cook, iron, sew and clean.

The final question was even more confusing. 'Why is the love of a woman for a man, which involves her being the servant to his needs, lauded as 'her' greatest fulfillment?' The answer reduced the room to a puzzled silence. 'Er,' I asked are we talking about lesbians?' We were. 'We,' they always use the royal we ..... 'don't like men nor do we like hetrosexual women. If there is every to be any equality, marriage and the family must be abolished.' We sat there gawking like fish and she smiled a very satisfied smile and glared at me.

I had followed the career of a journalist called Nancy Spain. She worked on 'SHE' magazine. Her radical lesbian ideas interested me and she was writing for the Guardian long before the Guardian Mafia of feminist journalists got going. She died in an aeroplane crash but left behind many of her acolyte's. These were the faces I saw in those early days of the feminist collectives. I went to work in the Women's Liberation Work Shop in Newport Street, off Shaftesbury Avenue. I also attended the first women's conferences and I was struck by the hundreds and hundreds of women claiming to be radical militant lesbians. The first women's conferences were destroyed by violent fisticuffs between these women and most of us were very afraid of them. As far as I was concerned these women did not speak for my gay friends anymore than the radical feminists spoke for all women in our country who were very happy at home with their husbands and their children.

In reality, this was a very minor group of women who were only able to hurl abuse at heterosexual women and their families because they were white, middle class and had media jobs. Before very long they were employing each other and 'marginalizing' the men who tried to work along side them. Men, intimidated by their brutal, violent behavior, moved on and out of many jobs. According to these women all women were victims of men's violent

behavior, any attempt for men to fight back met with behind scenes maneuvering and men LET IT HAPPEN.

Fed up with the war, I decided to stay away from the in-fighting that dominated the women's liberation movement and turn my attention to helping in my own local community. I got a letter from the women's liberation office, throwing me out an banning me from attending any of the collectives. The so called women's liberation' movement spread like a cancer across the English chattering classes. I visited the houses of feminist women with my son who carried his action man toys. In their houses there was no vestige of anything 'boyish' at all. No Tonka trucks, no boys toys - nothing that could encourage a boy to think of himself as masculine. The whole idea of men and masculinity in those houses, we considered disgusting. We, the mothers, sat around the kitchen tables rearranging the world according to Marx. I, who had enjoyed men's company enormously, for the feeling that these women underneath all the political chatter, really disliked men. There was nothing sensual about their houses. They disliked cooking and if they had to cook for guests, it was not producing good food and wine that delighted their guests, but a rather rapid need to compete with each other. Was it, I wondered, an English middle class phenomenon? This dislike and need to sneer at men? Certainly their boys were confused and crying. There was no way I could interest my sons in dolls, not that I would want to try. Useless to tell these women that Marx never did anything to women. Was unkind to his family and refused to have women in the Politburo. The feminist gurus had done their job well and most of the women I knew complained about their awful lives. I couldn't see what was awful about having the freedom to do exactly what I pleased and when I pleased. Not for me the daily office rush. I pushed my pram around Shepherd's Bush Market loaded with other people's children and my own. I dreamed of finding a house where I could build a useful community centre in our midst.

The dream materialized but with it, the awful certainty that if I attracted funds and publicity. I would hear the tramp of the man-hating feminists trying to oust me and take over. That is what happened, and the first little get together I ran to encourage other groups to open refuges was dominated by the lesbians and feminists who crowded into our little church hall and voted themselves into a national movement. We, horrified and unused to political manoeuvring, abstained. 'There isn't a working glass women among you,' one of my mothers yelled. This has always been the truth of this disastrous movement. Born in ivory tower academia, it had no relevance to women on the street. 'If only you were all lesbians, you would have no problems of violence,' we were told. We often had women beaten up by their female partners in our refuge. The worst beating I ever saw was between a vicar's daughter and her lover.

All through my career, as a journalist, a writer and a social reformer, I have been hounded and bullied by feminist women and their coat trailing 'new men.' Any of us who have gone to all girl schools, particularly boarding schools, will verify the awful bullying and violence that goes on amongst the girls. For so many years women were tyrants behind their front doors. They were able to sexually abuse, batter and intimidate their children and their husbands now, with the advent of the women's movement, they moved out into the world. They took their aggressive, bullying and intimidating behavior with them. Talking with the men who were accused of abusing their women, I was aware of this movement with its wild and extravagant claims against men had fueled the flames of insecurity and anger in men. I watched horror stricken, as in home after home, I saw boys denied not only their access to their fathers, but also access to all that was normal and masculine in their lives.

Our universities rushed into grasping funding for 'Women's Studies,'' Gender politics,' became the new way to brain wash women with very little education. By now the Politically Correct movement was beginning to hatch and a new form of 'mind control' was devised. Feminists became the new 'thought police.'

The sudden promescuity of women came as a shock to me. The atmosphere of intense dislike for men and anything male lay like a miasma in so many English middle class houses. Overnight in the late sixties in England, confusion reigned. If feminists hated men so much why were so many of them sleeping with the enemy? I am the daughter of a diplomat born in China and it was my Amah who was the one to insist that myself and my twin sister be put out

on the hill side. Failing to achieve that she wanted our feet bound. It was women in Africa who practised ritual circumcisions on their daughters. I knew that because I worked with missionaries in Africa. I was fighting a lost cause and what bothered me then and bothered me now, is that men made no attempt to defend themselves.

By now the 'new man' was beginning to emerge and he was not a pretty sight. Parroting everything in the woman in his life was teaching, he could usually be found in woman's conferences running the creches and trying to looking 'caring.' Mostly he was stoned, confused and angry. Maybe because as far as I could see, the new feminists made no effort to share an equal relationship with their male partners. They saw themselves as 'superior beings.' The new men were expected to take their places a few steps behind their women and to do as they were told. Mostly, they had to accept the dictates of the dictators and quietly get on with the household chores and take care of the children. But what ever a new man did, he could never atone for the sins of other men. Any man who disobeyed his partner, was subjected to expulsion from the matrimonial home and in many cases, from a relationship with his children. Now, there were a legion of feminist lawyers and therapists to make their 'sisters' were fully supported in the battle to destroy men.

Why did the relationship between men and women go so badly wrong? I think it goes back to my point about the choices men and women made in the sixties. Men were tired of their roles as 'macho men.' They were strangled in their uniforms of ties and suits. They had no choices in the late fifties but to take on a wife and children and the cost of a mortgage dangled around their necks. In the sixties they rebelled and wanted to take a less violent and domineering role in their lives. They turned to this romantic image of women as soft and gentle. They saw this image as an emotional life style denied to men. Women, however, rebelled against this image of themselves, indeed in so many cases it was a false image, and doomed the masculine concepts of authoritarian rule and aggression and even to wearing the hated suits and ties that men had discarded. Men, for so long, subjected themselves emotionally to women and hated women for their dependence. Women adopting male bullying and aggressive roles and still hating the fact that they need and want men in their lives.

What needs to happen? First of all there has to be a carefully worked out and civilized dialogue that cannot be invaded by the extremes of the right or the left. Both men and women have been guilty of politicizing human relationships. Human relationships are not a matter of political solutions. Any country that has tried to create a political solution to human problems has ended up with concentration camps and gulags. The deep wounds between men and women will take time to heal. It is imperative that women who do not hate men and wish to live in peace with them, should be given space in newspapers and magazines to have their say. Films should be made about women who have made a success of their homes and their families. Bringing up a family requires a large degree of maturity. An ability to sublimate the personal needs and wishes until such time as the children are grown and have left the home. Later, those years of sacrifice will bring the parents such joy. Of course, there will be women who want to work and not have a family. As long as the women has clearly thought out her priorities there is no harm. Just lately my life is too full of nearly forty something women, who have had fulfilling careers but the biological clock is ticking and they are afraid. Now they decide they do want children and a father for their children - for many it is too late and the future, for them is not bright. Some women will be able to balance a home and a career. These women tend to be wealthy and can afford the help needed to bring up the children. Many women will be forced to go out to work against their will. This is because we live in a Western world where caring for children has become devalued and only work outside the house carries with it monitory compensation.

I believe that love between men and women is the strongest relationship on this earth. For now, we have to fight to protect family life. Hopefully, as we move, into a new century, men and women can meet each other not only as equals, partners and friends but also as lovers.

BIOGRAPHICAL DETAILS ERIN PIZZEY

Erin Patria Pizzey, nee Carney. da Cyril Carney MBE Diplomatic Service (d 1980)m. Ruth Patricia Last. b. 19 Feb. 1939.

Educ. Lewestone Manor, Sherbourne Dorest; m 1961 9m dis 1979) 1.Amos b1976, d.cleo b. 1961. 7 adopted sons ,granchildren Keita Craig b. 21 Apr 1977 Amber Craig b 24 Jan. 1979. Dymitri Scott b 24 Jan. 1990.

Career:

International author USA Harper Collins. Translation rights to: Japan, Russia, Greece, Brazil, Poland, Latvia, Israel, Italy, Hungary, Turkey. All English speaking countries. Published poet and playwright. International founder of refuges for battered women and children working in the field of Domestic Violence.

Awards:

International Order of volunteers For Peace, Diploma Of Honour (Italy) 1981. Nancy Astor Award for Journalism 1983. World congress of Victimology (San Francisco) 1987. St. Valentino Palm d'Oro International Award for Literature, Italy, February 14th 1994.

Non fiction:

Scream Quietly Or The Neighbours Will Hear (first book in the world on wife battering - out of print)

Infernal Child - a memoir - out of print

Slut's Cookbook

Erin Pizzey Collects

Prone To Violence - working with violent women - out of print.

Fiction:

The Watershed

In The Shadow Of The Castle

The Pleasure Palace

First Lady

The Consul General's Daughter

The Snow Leopard Of Shanghai

Other Lovers

Swimming With Dolphins

For The Love Of A Stranger

Kisses

The Wicked World Of Women

The Fame Game (in progress)

Hugs and Kisses (in progress)

Short Stories:

The Man In The Blue Van

The Frangipani Tree

Addictions

Dancing

Sand

Contributed to The New Statesman, The Sunday Times, Cosmopolitan.
Contributed to journals and newspapers internationally and completed two world tours lecturing on domestic violence and helping to set up refuges. Invited by the German Government to Berlin to speak and to show my film 'SCREAM QUIETLY OR THE NEIGHBOURS WILL HEAR.' 1977 Lunch of honour on Capitol Hill sponsored by Congresswoman Lindy Boggs and Congressman Newton-Steer. 1978 invited by Mental Health Association of New Zealand to give lecture tour. 1979 invited by US Government and sponsored by The Salvation Army to do a second lecture tour of 21 cities. 1979 film SCREAM QUIETLY OR THE NEIGHBOURS WILL HEAR aired twice nationally on PBS in America. 1982 asked to be resident expert on family Violence show on 'Phil Donahue.' 1884 gave evidence in San Antonio, Texas to President Reagan's Attorney General's Task Force on Family Violence. Guest of honour in Rome of a conference of women International Supreme Court Judges, 1994.

Films and documentaries:

Scream Quietly Or The Neighbours Will Hear. Chiswick Women's Aid - a teaching film. That Awful Woman - my work in America. Cutting Edge Channel 4 Sanctuary.

Recreations: Reading, writing, cooking, antiques, violing, gardening, wine, food and travel.

EOTM: Models of Man: Where To? ...From Here...

. · 8 January 2005 · Archived copy · Original

The Human Race -

I saw recently an article which stated that some anthropologists believe that the human race stopped evolving physically about 100,000 years ago. Now, never-mind that this span of time is merely an evolutionary eye-blink - human evolution now seems to have become cultural evolution.

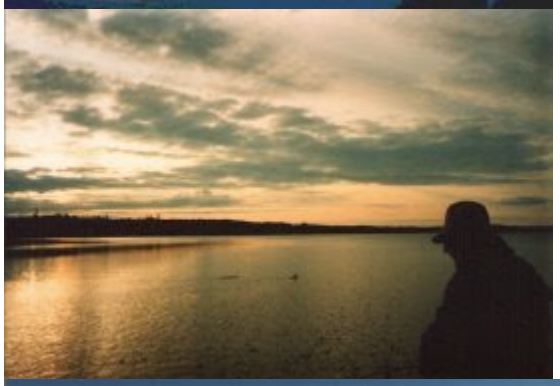
Perhaps we are witnessing the divergence of humanity into several subspecies, like so many science fiction works have suggested. Since humans have had the hubris to take over the course of their own evolution as a race, one has to wonder about the future types that humanity will become.

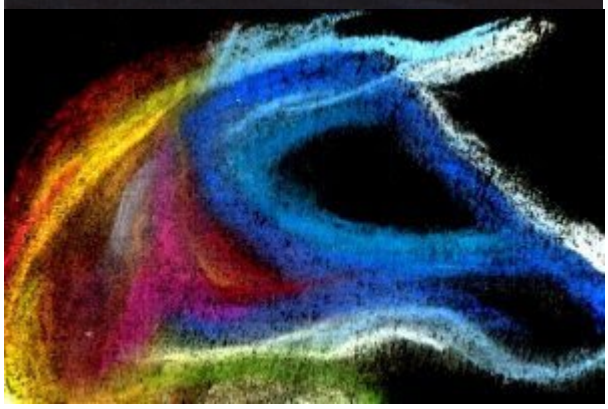
Homo Urbanis: Urban or Hive Man
Homo Terminus: End Men, Omega Men
Homo Mechanicus: Machine Man: BORG I
Homo Electronicus: Wired Man: BORG II

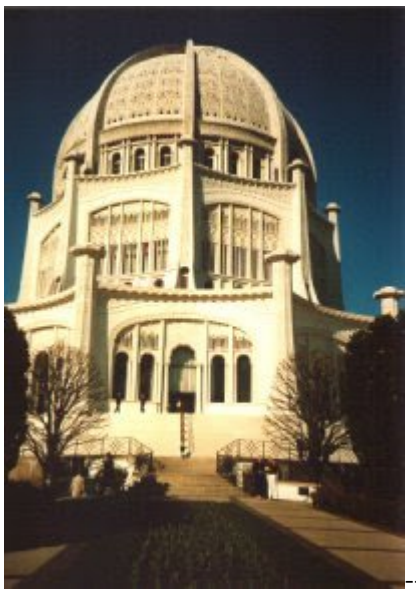
Back to “Gender War, Sexuality, and Love”

EOTM: Visual Reality

. · 9 January 2005 · Archived copy · Original







.

Back to “The Eye of the Mind” Main Page

EOTM: Zen and the Art of Motorcycle Maintenance

. · 10 January 2005 · Archived copy · Original

Motorcycles do put one into a zen state. There is something about their marvelous simplicity. So much that we thought was essential turns out to be excess baggage. Our lives depend on being totally aware in the moment and clearing our minds of things which are not significant at the present time.

Back to “The Eye of the Mind” Main Page

EOTM: The Environment

. · 11 January 2005 · Archived copy · Original

It's where we all live folks. We're treating it like a convenience store combined with a toilet bowl. We are digging holes and ripping it up to make stuff to sell to people who will eventually throw it away and have to dig another hole to bury it in. All the time we are producing toxic byproducts which poison us and every other form of life on the planet.

We'd better get a clue. Malthus* was right. Humanity is expanding its numbers not only to the limit of the food supply, but also to the limit of the sewage treatment capacity. The earth can no longer absorb and cleanse the toxic wastes produced by so many human beings. We need to take immediate steps to slow population growth and reduce the amount of pointless purposeless consumption that we all do. Science is not going to save us. We are not going to all get into space ships and find new worlds once we have used this one up. We have finally discovered that we can't throw our garbage over the neighbor's fence and forget it. That garbage will eventually come back to us in our water, or our air, or our food.

I'm tired of drowning in your shit.

* Malthus stated that any population will grow exponentially up to the limits of its food supply, which grows arithmetically.

Back to “The Eye of the Mind” Main Page

EOTM: Creating the Future

. · 12 January 2005 · Archived copy · Original

Every moment of every day we are moving from a past into a future. We carry the learning with us, but we need not carry the mistakes that were the source of the learning. We need not carry with us the resentments or shames of the past if we look forward and realize that we can create a world in which they don't exist, but we have to stop carrying them forward.

We are constantly moving into a future which we are continously creating. Actions in this moment create effects in the next. As we shape those actions with intent, so do we shape the future.

There is a reason that grand intent is called "vision". We must "see" the future in the eye of the mind before we can create it. If all we can "see" is the ills of the past and recreate the future in the image of the past by reacting to it, that is as good a definition of hell as is needed.

See a future which emphasizes the best of humanity, not its worst.

Back to “The Eye of the Mind” Main Page

EOTM: The Natural World

. · 13 January 2005 · Archived copy · Original

z

EOTM: This is Zen

. · 1 February 2005 · Archived copy · Original

This is zen.

.

Like listening for the sound of one hand clapping, looking at this picture for a while will tell you all the essence of zen. It cannot be described, tho much good writing about it exists. Each of us leaves footprints in the sand as we travel through this adventure called life. If we pause for a moment and look back at those footprints, we are struck with their smallness and temporary nature when set against the backdrop of the immense elemental forces of the seashore. The yin & yang of the waves within the larger yin/yang of the tides will wash them away within hours, if the wind does not blow them away within minutes.

I call myself a zen priest, yet that is purely self-appointed. When I was young and full of myself, I wanted to be a zen master and teacher. One day it occurred to me that the road to mastery was to live it every moment. There are far more rewards from living it than from the public recognition of my "mastery". It is a remarkably fulfilling and serene way to view life. I promote it as an answer to the increasingly chaotic world in which we live.

In the best (perhaps only true) zen movie ever made, "Circle of Iron," the protagonist, Cord (that which binds), finds that all answers are found in the mirror. Today, in western culture particularly, all answers seem to lie outside ourselves. We are a culture of reacters, blamers, and victims. There are always buts, whys, and becauses which explain our destructive behavior. None of them make it non-destructive. The destruction and violence will continue until each person begins to stay one's own hand and take complete responsibility for one's own acts.

There are other cosmologies which include this, one in particular called Wicca, and I hope to be able to provide the means to explore them as well on these pages.

.

.

Philosophy and Theology: The Old Gods
Science and Technology: The New Gods
The Goddess and The God of the Wicca
The God
The Goddess

EOTM: Philosophy & Theology: The Old Gods

. · 2 February 2005 · Archived copy · Original

Philosophy was the original science, art, and theology. The word comes from the ancient greek and means "love of wisdom". There is good reason that the highest level of academic accomplishment is called "Ph.D.". Doctor originally meant "teacher", thus a doctor of philosophy is someone who teaches the love of the wisdom of a discipline. Love is the force which also drives the healer, the minister, the scientist and the Artist. Love of life.

This amazing gift and ability of consciousness and self-awareness which man has been so proud of because it distinguishes humanity from the "lower" animals also put on us a terrible burden: the ability to ask and the need to know "Why?". Humanity needs a "because". The history of humanity is the story of searching for "becauses", and the ultimate "because". The ultimate "because" has always been called god.

As humanity's curiousity and need to know yielded results of understanding some of the "why"s, the sciences were born. Astronomy allowed the learned to watch and predict the succession of the seasons, which was essential to the survival of early man. Botany allowed people to predict which foods would taste good and nourish them, and which would kill them. The more that thought took over from instinct in controlling human behavior, the more important science became. And, because the average person was too preoccupied with survival, and had neither the time nor the inclination to delve into the nature of things, those who did understand were recognized for the importance of their knowledge.

Yet as every parent knows, even when the "becauses" are understood (which they often are not, since each "why?" is really at the end of a chain of "why?"s and knowing the answers to all the "why?"s which came before is essential to understanding the answer to the current one), each "because" simply leads to another "why?". Beyond the limits of human knowledge has always existed the unknown and perhaps unknowable, and all the unanswered "why?"s have belonged to god. Theology is therefore the Philosophy of the unknowable.

Everything which has been within man's ability to understand "why", has been developed into a scientific discipline of study. Every 4 years we double the number of "becauses" that we have. The average college prep student knows more science than all the scientists in the world did as recently as 100 years ago. As we have learned to understand what previously only god understood, science and its bastard stepchild, technology have become our new gods. Gradually the question changed. People began to ask "why?" when what they really meant was "How?".

When people began to learn "how" to harness the understanding of "because" to bring about what they wanted, the will to power was born. Thus did humanity attempt to steal the power of god, by saying "MY will be done". Down to the very heart of the atom did we find ways to exert that power. Yet it is always the power of destruction. We "split" the atom, and unleash that awesome power, yet no scientist has ever taken a bunch of parts and "put together" an atom.

And then there are those groups of people whose questions are only "when?" and "why not?". The first aspire to godlike powers over others, the second group is so isolated from reality and the outside world that the only thing they can dwell on is how they want reality to be and how disappointed, angry, and hurt they are that it isn't that way. Their lives are consumed with bitter disappointment over finding out that they are NOT god.

But the "why?" we started out to find has been lost. And it was the second question to be asked anyway. "What?" is the beginning. Without an understanding of what it is, why does not matter. We have turned around begun looking the wrong direction, studying "how" things have been put together, rather than studying the purpose of putting them together. We know how to tear them apart and often when we will be done.

What and Why are still dealt with by philosophy and theology. What is the nature of god, and for what purpose were we created? Just to destroy and consume? Strange notion of god.

Further Reading:

Science & Technology - The New Gods

The Goddess and The God of the Wicca

The God Under Siege

EOTM: Science & Technology: The New Gods

. · 3 February 2005 · Archived copy · Original

In their quest for power, humans have come to love technology and worship the god science. Science has given us the microwave, the micro-chip, and the micro-computer, courtesy of which you are now reading this.

However there are those of us who must ask whether all this worship of science and technology has enriched the lives of humanity or done anything to move us in the direction that the old gods created us to follow. We have stolen much power from the gods, and they are much the poorer and weaker for it. As humanity sought to become as gods through the application of technology, it forgot the most important power of the god: the power to create.

The major question for people to face themselves with today is whether they are willing to invest technology completely with godlike powers and let it dictate to them what they must do and be like. At its greatest extent of power technology cannot create life, the best it can do is copy it. And copy is what "society" seems determined to do. Change everyone into copies of everyone else.

Technology makes as bad a master as it does good a servant. The challenge of the 3rd millenium ce will be whether humanity surrenders and submits to the dominion of technology, thus creating the dead end for humanity and the thing we all cherish so much, our "intelligence", which is used to mean our consciousness and self-awareness.

We claim to be "intelligent" life, yet we let machines and their rigid inflexible needs dictate the leading of our lives. We have even "split" the nucleus of the nuclear family by destroying the male/female pair bond and the mechanics of attraction which bring them together.

Bad idea.

Further Reading:

Philosophy & Theology: The Old Gods

Back to “The Eye of the Mind” Main Page

EOTM: The Goddess and The God of the Wicca

. · 4 February 2005 · Archived copy · Original

Each of the major religions of the world recognizes a duality in the divine. Dividing the darkness from the light of the judeo/christian bible, the yin & yang of eastern philosophies, many other examples. Because there is an inherent duality in humanity based on gender, it is easy and tempting to think of that divine duality as being male or female. Even more so, people tend to want to divide another duality, good vs evil, along gender lines. Thus we have seen created theologies in which the SACRED is either male or female, and the PROFANE is the other.

Wiccan theology recognizes that the sacred and the profane exist in everyone. There are dark and light sides to both male and female, just as there is to duct tape. How those dark and light sides get expressed is the work of the individual soul to decide. If you believe in Kharma, then you see that each soul gets to keep doing it wrong until it gets it right.

Unlike the arid theologies of the single male god at the top of a hierarchy, generated in the deserts of the middle east and carried worldwide by the european empire builders, pantheistic earth-based religions have always cast their deities in both genders. Mark Twain said it: "God created man in his own image and man, being a gentleman, returned the favor." Since we cannot really imagine the infinite, we turn to what we know for an understanding. We turn to humans. All myths, all legends, have their roots in fact. The personalities these gods and near-gods (heros) exhibit are based on real people who at some point in history exhibited this personality. Humans still do today.

What Wicca offers is sacredness for both genders. There is a sacred masculine and a sacred feminine. Because they are both sacred, sexuality between them cannot be anything but sacred. It is the joining of these two energies which creates life. That's what we all worship: the creative force.

Of course, both genders also have a profane side, a destructive side. In myth and legend we have the stories of how this side has been expressed. When one gender demonizes the other they provide the perfect smokescreen for evil. Since they are good and the other bad, all their acts are "good" or justified. Thus real evil comes to be called by the name of good. A perfect example is the incredibly destructive things done by parents to children and lovers to each other in the name of love. As Luke Skywalker had to struggle with the dark side of the force, so must we all.

Inherent in the spiritual foundation of wicca is an equality between the genders. This is what has made it so attractive to feminists and those influenced by them. Unfortunately, there has been a tendency to follow the trends set by worshippers of dead jews and elevate the sacred feminine above the sacred masculine or forget about the sacred masculine altogether.

Wicca is also known as the way of the wise. It is in this sense that I use it here. In that light there is no difference from the way of zen, which you will find elsewhere on these pages.

There is an old zen koan about the teacher who points to the stars and the student fixes on the finger. The teacher slaps him.

Often ritual, which is designed as grand theatre for the subconscious and intended to facilitate a spiritual experience, becomes bogged down in details and loses its meaning in the trappings. The colors of the altar candles become more important than the acts of the particpants before or after.

Let us focus back on the stars. Let us change our sense of time so that we begin thinking in terms of "deadlines" of a year and a day. Let us see the year as we now see 2 weeks and see that it certainly looks like "magic".

Let us all reclaim the sacredness of ourselves and all others.

Blessed be.

.
Further Reading:
.
The God
.
The Goddess
.
Male Sexuality

EOTM: The God

. · 5 February 2005 · Archived copy · Original

The god is under siege in most cultures around the world, particularly western culture. Fundamentalism, mistaking the finger for the stars that the finger is pointing to, mistaking the messenger for the message, has impoverished most religions. Now they function more as social controls than as a way of providing spiritual meaning to the day to day lives of human beings.

Humanity has been divided against sacredness, and against itself. People see themselves as separate from any sort of divinity, anything sacred. They are also totally estranged from nature. They see themselves as un-natural beings and, to a large extent, have become unnatural.

The penalty for this is that the ecosystem is being depleted and destroyed. We have been playing like spoiled children on this paradise planet that the creator has provided for us. We have been so ego-centric in our view of the creator that we regarded ourselves as the ultimate creation and aspired to be as gods ourselves. We believed that we were destined to have dominion over this earth and eventually control the very forces that create matter from energy. We have done all this, yet the cockroach will certainly outlive us as a species.

Every religion believes that it understands and worships a power that is above all other powers. This "above" includes the petty distinctions of the name to use and the method of worship. Yet they so humble their gods that they believe such a powerful being could care about such a small thing.

The sad truth is that "worship" or "faith" are used like "love" to cover up and justify unspeakable acts. One tribe who slaughters another to fulfill the will of their god apparently thinks their god is so puny that an earthquake or storm or plague or simple starvation is beyond their god's power.

No, unfortunately the truth is that often religion is simply one more power group competing for market share of the faithful and their tithes. All the dire consequences of not following the vocal messiah's preferred path are to intimidate people into compliance.

Modern Wicca has done much to salvage the concept of the sacred feminine. We all owe a major debt of gratitude to all the witches who burned and died, as well as those who survived to keep the traditions from being exterminated.

Yet we are still lacking in a deep understanding of the sacred masculine.

Further Reading:

The Goddess

Male Sexuality

EOTM: The Goddess

. · 6 February 2005 · Archived copy · Original

The Goddess represents all that women are, might be, and hope to become: as the God represents the same things for men. When there were many gods and goddesses, each of them represented a separate face of what we have now come to call "the human condition". There was one for each of the best and worst, and the sometimes simply mundane, characteristics of women and men.

The many faces and incarnations of these beings, as well as the ease with which they could change shape or name, testified to a deep intuitive understanding of human nature which was passed from generation to generation by the oral tradition of myth and legend. Within each person lies the potential to be creative or destructive, as well as the potential to understand which of their acts contribute to creation and which to destruction. The process of social maturation is the gradual development of these abilities and the increasingly conscious choice applied to selecting one's own actions based on the probable consquences of that act.

For the past several hundred years the Goddess has been under siege. The empire that the Romans began and eventually spread to span the entire globe under the reign of their students, the British, set out to destroy her because she interfered with empire building. Now the the god, too, is under siege: for the same reasons and in the same manner.

In every woman dwells some of the goddess, as in every man dwells some of the god. As each child makes the torturous journey from helplessness and dependency to the responsibilities and freedoms of adulthood, the god and the goddess represent the collected wisdom gained by thousands of generations of observation of how people can and do act. In the stories called myth and legend are the lessons learned regarding how each action we choose affects the lives of others, what its consequences will likely be. Using these lessons we can apply the force of consciousness to creating the world we desire by selecting our acts based on what we wish to create.

Most religions of the common era have lost sight of this. As humanity has become more densely packed and often cannot tolerate the slow process of maturation, guidelines for action have become externalized in the form of rules or commandments. Over time, people stopped teaching the understanding of why one "should" or "should not" do a particular thing and substituted compliance for understanding. The goddess and the god were moved outside of each person. Without internalizing the divine, both the sacred and the profane aspects of it, humans remain eternal children: forever dependant on the understanding of others to inform their actions. Yet, when those they look to have not internalized it either, they place themselves in slavery to the power of other unmatured children who will pass along their own helplessness and dependency, but call it wisdom.

In the dark ages before the Renaissance, compliance was enforced by a reign of terror called "The Inquisition". Dark and angry children in grown-up bodies tortured and killed all who did not bow to their so-called "wisdom". Learning itself was considered dangerous and vigorous attempts were made to stamp it out. Heirs of an empire begun hundreds of years before sought to consolidate their power, all power, by destroying all who opposed it. Because their one and only god was male, they attempted to destroy and discredit the idea of the divine feminine. Millions died for refusing to accept the moral authority of these self-appointed masters.

Much of the world today still lives in the shadow of those murderous times. Colonialism spread across the globe, confiscating ancestral lands, destroying entire cultures, and wiping out entire peoples. By first separating themselves from the divine then claiming to understand and represent it exclusively, these empire builders have set themselves against life and become a cult which worships death. In their view there is no meaning in life except to prepare for death and what happens afterward. They worship death, not life.

The Goddess was gravely injured, but she did not die. Deep within millions of women she waited out the dark times until her wisdom was again needed to heal the world. The God, as well, came close to death because the divine was confiscated from all human beings to be placed in the hands of a parental figure. No human was allowed to look inside for answers. All answers were to come from outside ourselves: from the empire builders, the enslavers. Now those answers are failing completely, and women and men are turning back to the Goddess and God within themselves.

Marianne Williamson speaks of "glorious Queens" as opposed to "slave girls" in "A Woman's Worth" and Robert Bly speaks of the need to find and reclaim the "inner King" in "Iron John". The King and The Queen are the earthly manifestations of God and Goddess. They represent the highest level of spiritual achievement available to us mere mortals. Most people tend to think of kings and queens in terms of the power that they have over the "common folk". Those who think of it in those terms have it backwards. The only power a true king or queen has is the power of self-mastery and the realization that we all serve a power greater than ourselves. Whether this power be called by the name of some particular god or goddess, or simply by the name "life", only those who dedicate their lives to its service will be able to find meaning, and unity, and purpose in their lives. Those who master this find people compellingly drawn to them. Which is why those people make them into kings and queens.

Many current worshipers of the goddess have fallen into the same pattern as the old Inquisitors. Dark, angry, and twisted children; they hate the god and seek to elevate the goddess above him. Under the lie of "equality", they seek superiority, power, and mastery of everything except themselves. They have come to worship only one face of the goddess: the dark and destructive face of Kali: the destroying face of ”The Bitch”. Men, having lost the god within themselves, no longer understand how Shiva uses his own power to balance the power of Kali. Instead, they cave in and supplicate to her. As a result, all that is good in them gets burned away and they become empty of all goodness, all godness, within. Some come to worship the dark power as well, and resort to violence to save themselves.

These men, as well as the men who hate the god and seek to elevate the goddess above him, are fools: dangerous fools. As the goddess must remain strong to balance the destructive power of the dark faces of the god, so must the god remain strong to balance the dark and destructive faces of the goddess. When either grows too powerful, many die and are lost.

George Lucas gave us a modern day version of the myth about this eternal struggle. Luke-who-walks-the-sky battles Darth Vader: literally "Dark Father". Rage and hatred are very powerful forces. Women's claim that "women+rage = power" is the cry of wounded and angry children lost in the dark. Anything + rage = power: rage = power. But it is a destructive power, not a creative one. The hate-intoxicated zealots who worship the dark and destructive face of the goddess are as much to blame for her loss of respect as those who hate all her faces. Men and women alike need to reclaim the light faces of the goddess and the god as well as the dark: if we, their children are ever to be freed from the darkness to walk again in the light of love for each other.

The best all round site I know for the many aspects of the goddess is:

http://www.yoni.com/

Further Reading:

The God

Male Sexuality

EOTM: Gender War, Sexuality, and Love

. · 1 March 2005 · Archived copy · Original

Gender War

.

.

Say the words "gender war"to someone these days and likely you will get one of two reactions. Either they will look at you like you have just said something totally incomprehensible, as most people would have before the 1990s, or they will launch into a personal perspective on the battle lines, battlegrounds, and battle tactics which they have observed from personal experience. With each passing day, more people move from the first category into the second as they somehow become a casualty of this incomprehensible war.

And war it certainly has become.The older term for the essential conflicts between the interests and needs of men and women - the more benign "Battle of the Sexes" - has taken a mean and ugly turn. A wedge has been driven right down the middle of the human race which deprives the combatants of the only solace available to them in all other wars: respite from hostilities in the presence, or the arms, of someone they love.

As with any war, propaganda is being used to demonize the enemy. Men and women, who should be the most natural of allies because they have so much to offer each other that they both need, are instead seeing their interests as being mutually exclusive, not interdependent and complementary. The tragedy of this is beyond words.The tragedy is human loneliness, and the scope is almost universal.

Men, in general, have been slow to respond to all the terrible charges leveled against them. There have been many reasons for this. Foremost among these has been the difficulty which men have had in believing that so much of womankind would turn so thoroughly and viciously against them. Twenty-five years ago, no one could have predicted that the entirety of human history would be completely re-written by the time that the newborns of the day graduated from college. Or that the actions and lives of so many men, great and obscure, would be stripped of every shred of human decency and generosity and distorted into a world-wide and history long conspiracy of and by men to do nasty things to women - called "Patriarchy."

Like observers of the events leading up to each of the world wars, there were many of us who expected sanity to re-enter the dialogue at any time and the hostility and hatred to cease rather than continue to grow. In the end, we turned out to be just as foolish and naïve as those who put off joining the world wars until forced to do so. By the time we realized that THEY had declared war on US, it was too late to avoid it and we were left with no choice but to fight for the basic rights and freedoms in which we believed.

This "barely civil" civil-war has fragmented our culture and balkanized interest groups in a way that will take years for us to recover - if we can recover at all. As soldiers who fought the Japanese in the early 1940s had a very difficult time later adjusting to the idea of Asians as friends and neighbors, those of us who have lived out our entire adult lives in the midst of this war will likely not be able to heal from the wounds it has caused and be able to see

our former enemies as anything other than enemies.

Overview

The Warning Label: 90 degrees from everywhere and the language ain't pretty.

Life

The Secret of Life: Shut Up and Shovel the Fuckin' Gravel.

A Simple, Brief, Rationalist Alternative to Feminist Theory

The Nature of Things

In a Male Voice

Feminism Deconstructed – Nothing But a Hate Movement

Hard Analysis

Toward a Culture of Singleness

Confronting Matriarchy

How It All Fell Apart

Equal Time: Tales of Offensive and Obnoxious Women

The Lies: Propaganda Used to Demonize a Non-Existent "Enemy"

The Rocky Road to True Equality

Double-THINK, Double, Triple and Quadruple Messages

"Can't We All Just Get Along?" "Can't We Just Go On A Date?"

Boycott Man-Bashers

Male Anger

The Chain of Violence

Rape and Sexual Harassment: The Pearl Harbor of the Gender War

The Sexual Harassment Battlefield

Fair Fighting

Masculism, Not Me-Too-ism

The Opening Shot: The S.C.U.M. Manifesto

The Hate Mongers

Presenting Feminism! A Coming Out

!!!!!!!!!!RAPE!!!!!!!!!!...

THE BITCH

Man Hating and Man Bashing

Radical Notions

The Feralization of Culture – Building Better Predators

Men, Are You Sick of It?

An Open Letter to Women

Turning Away from Women: Fish without Bicycles

Hate Bounces

Feminism Deconstructed - A Vast Social Deconstruction (Demolition) Project

False Premises, False Promises

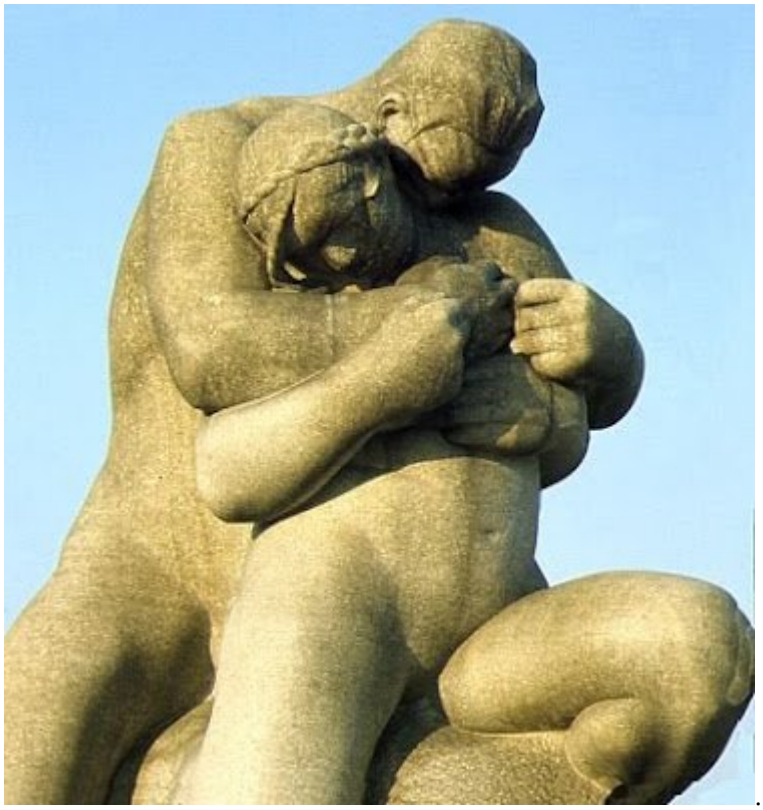
The Ultimate Hypocrisy: An Alleged Movement for “Gender Equality” with a Gendered Name

The Nightmare of Feminism

Feminism in the Context of U.S. Social History, 1890-1999

.

Sexuality and Relationships



We live under many illusions about the nature of the world and relationships. There are a great many "shoulds" that many feel compelled to live up to. There is much made of the NEED for dishonesty and lies. All this is sadly untrue.

There are very few forums for a sane and healthy approach to sexuality. This wonderful net is filled with the commercial exploitation of unfilled sexual need. Anyone who stood back,without value judgements, and looked at the sheer volume of activity and $$$ spent would see the vast volume of it. Yet all that is "sold" here is the

objectification of human beings. It is this objectification which is the disease of the industrial consuming society. Everything works best when everyone is an identical producing consuming consumed unit. Yet without individuality there is no passion.

Sexual Psychology – Part One – Working Class Heroes - Puberty

Sexual Psychology – Part Two – Puberty to 40

Sexual Psychology – Part Three – 40 to Closing Time

The Socio-Cultural Context of Sexuality and Marriage

The Biological Foundations of Sexuality

The Biological Context of Sexuality and Mating

Male Sexuality

The Nitty Gritty of Male Sexuality

Why Men Go For “The Look”

Female Sexuality

The Destruction of Little Girls’ Sexuality

Escape from the Dating Trap

The Rules are for Fools

Healing Men

.

Love

.

The question of love has been much discussed throughout history. Several of the viewpoints I express will, no doubt, offend some people. Yet, no matter how much one hears or reads about love, it is only in the actual loving that one gets love's rewards.Many think that they want to be loved, but being loved is something that happens from the outside. It can't be felt, so the lovee still feels empty.Love is really a verb, not a noun. The lover is filled with

love. All major religions have this somewhere in their teachings. Sexuality is NOT love. Sexuality is sexuality. It is mother nature's little trick for making surethere are more little species running around. Sexuality is a need, a drive,a hunger, and as such is not under conscious control. Loving well is the achievement of a mature spirit, and while it may have its elements of lust (from luster - to shine), passion, it is always creative, never destructive. Being destructive in the name of love is sacriledge which merits burning at the stake.

Tribute to My Mother

Romantic Nonsense

Love, the real kind

The Art of Loving

The Law of Thelema

EOTM: Gender War, Sexuality, and Love - Overview

. · 2 March 2005 · Archived copy · Original

With all the thousands of books published on the topic of relationships, trying to say something meaningful, and hopefully new, about the topic in the context of the gender war seems nearly impossible. And trying to say it briefly or concisely or succinctly seems even more impossible. However, it is even still more impossible to sit idly by and say or do nothing.

As the 20th century draws to a close, it is hard to imagine a time when relationships between men and women have ever been worse. Sandy Close, writing for the Pacific News Service, quotes a veteran teacher in her article, "Gender War Among Youth -- At the Heart of America's Calamity", that among young people today - "Male-female relations these days aren't love-hate. They're pure hate."

Like World War I, which the naively optimistic called "The War to End ALL Wars", the gender war has become a trench war with the various sides dug in and surrounded by barbed wire. And, like that war, the frontier has moved very little in the past few years. (During the entire first World War, the frontier never advanced or retreated more than 7 miles.) But, unlike that war, this one has dragged on for 35 years. Two generations have been born, grown up, gone to college, and entered the cold hard world of adulthood while the war has dragged on. One almost has to wonder whether this gender war is going to become the "Hundred Years Gender War."

Like the American Civil War, and I suppose really like ALL civil wars, this one is tearing apart families, turning former friends and allies (like spouses) into bitter enemies, consuming a huge portion of the available resources, time, and energy of the citizens, and leaving nothing but bitter destruction and scorched earth in its wake. Marriages are more likely to fail than to succeed. Both sexes are talking about "reproductive independence" from the other. Young people of both sexes hate the other sex.

This isn't about equality. Equality has nothing whatsoever to do with it. Equality never has had anything to do with it.

It is about the intrusion of marketplace values into personal relationships, the purchase of love, and the devastating effects of inflation as the "price of love" has spiraled upward out of control. It is about how sex, love, and people have been turned into commodities and objects. And it is about the clash between socialism and capitalism in the realm of personal relationships.

And it is about hate.

It is about a small group of mentally and emotionally ill women who have been able to sell their personal hate-filled pathology as a universal cultural condition. It is about making women fear and distrust men and men fear and distrust women, more than they already had reason to.

It is about denial of real biological differences which do exist, at the same time it is about denial of the real nature of those differences.

It is about turning would-be allies into enemies, and majoring in minors to turn petty differences into war.

It is about a bunch of disgruntled would-be princesses throwing a fit because life isn't carrying them around on a satin pillow. And it is about men getting sick of dying and being sacrificed for trying to satisfy the aspiring princesses that these men are trying to love.

It is about distorting the entirety of human history which was not particularly kind to anyone, and was full of challenges to survival, and painting the strategies used to insure the survival of the greatest number of people in the revisionist light of victimism.

It is about insanity being sold as sanity.

It IS insanity.

eye of the mind [EOTM] is a male friendly, feminidiocy unfriendly, site dedicated to a real and constructive approaches to bringing an end to the gender war.

In the end, the future will boil down to the answers to two questions:

1) Just how much hate do women expect to be able to dump on men without men beginning to hate back - bitterly?

2) Are there enough women willing to stop hating, and start cooperating with men and taking a realistic look at the actions of women and how they directly contribute to the creation and perpetuation of the complaints of feminism, to turn back the tide of hate and make a difference?

You tell me.

EOTM: The Warning Label: 90 degrees from everywhere and the language ain't pretty.

. · 3 March 2005 · Archived copy · Original

The gender dialogue has been entirely unbalanced since the 1960s. Men have been demonized, hated, and told to eradicate themselves. Opportunists of both sexes have jumped on the bandwagon of anti-male sentiment and misandry and have been incessant and extreme in their demands that men remodel themselves according to a new social ideal which amounts to nothing more than personal biases and self-centered ideology. Culturally, we have suffered greatly from a glut of worthless opinions and a severe shortage of worthwhile efforts.

Elsewhere on the web, you can find a site entitled "All Men Must Die". There is no link to it from here because I refuse to gratify this immature little harridan's ego any further by boosting the traffic to her site which promotes arrogant hatred and sexism. Nor will you find links to sites talking about the inevitability of "patriarchy", celebrating misogyny, or calling for the repeal of women's right to vote.

What you will find here is intense criticisms of a wide variety of ideologies which underlie the conflicts which have now been elevated to the status of war. You will find contrarian opinions which do my level best to make hamburger out of the sacred cows of both the Right and the Left. If I don't manage to seriously piss off at least one conservative and one liberal each day, I consider the day a total waste. On a good day I also manage to chap the asses of a moderate or two.

My language is plain spoken, blunt, and often profane. If that offends you, don't let the door hit you on the ass on the way out. A site called "All Men Must Die" is clearly a hate-motivated site, but is allowed to continue to promote its message of hate. I claim the same right to publicize my hatred of stupidity.

Back to Gender War, Sexuality, and Love

EOTM: Life

. · 4 March 2005 · Archived copy · Original

Human beings are part of the natural world. They are part of a group of a great many things that have a characteristic in common which we call life.

Life is a chain - an endless cycle of birth, growth, and death. Every individual living thing is part of a long genetic heritage and the purpose if it's life is to carry on that heritage, lest the species vanish from the earth. The purpose of an individual's life is create more life.

Life is not a static "thing" to be acquired in quantity, but an experience to be lived. That means living through all the cycles - birth, growth, and death. Each living thing has a cycle unique to its species.

Because the individual survival takes a back seat to species survival, the drive to reproduce supercedes all other drives. A great many species only mate once at the end of their lifecycle: salmon, moths and butterflies, and a great many insect species. All crops and fruits have a one year life cycle.

Those who see humans as apart from the natural world, cannot see the how the manifestations of the daily business of carrying on life fit into broad patterns. For those who do see these broad patterns, all of life makes perfect sense. It may not always be exactly the way we like it, but it makes sense.

I don't know whether humans can learn to adapt to a totally un-natural world. Sense gets surrendered to force of will or of argument. Without sense, the world turns into a very hostile place.

I don't know whether an understanding of the natural basis of life will be useful or adaptive in the future. Perhaps science will erase the distinction between humanity and machines. Perhaps people will get to design their own children.

I don't like the idea, but tides have a way of overcoming all resistance. Humanity more than ever before has the ability to choose its own future. I hope that wise choices get made. I am not optimistic.

Personally, I am glad that I lived in a time when neither air nor water could kill you. I am glad to have walked in a forest and seen different forms of life everywhere I looked and know that every one of them was a close cousin. We all had the same needs - food, shelter, the company of others of our kind. I am glad to have been able to tune in to a forest and understand it as a form of life that lives in very slooooowwwww time. A forest may take 200 years to twitch its finger, but it is every bit as much a living entity as a human being or a butterfly.

I hope that humanity does not lose track of what it is to be alive.

He who dies with the most toys - still dies.

There is far more to life than how many sport-utility vehicles you can buy - how much stuff you have. Humans are consuming the earth with how much stuff they have. We are stamping out other species at the rate of 17,000/yr in our relentless pursuit of stuff. As a culture, we are obese, addicted to television and the stuff it sells us, and glued to the couch. Life in a box.

The fracture between men and women is a war over stuff, over competition for the financial power to buy stuff. The fundamental cooperation between men and women to accomplish the tasks of staying alive and raising more of

their kind, has been severed. I believe this is because humans have forgotten that they are alive and their role in the continuation of life.

As humans move into ever more un-natural and artificially constructed worlds, they may indeed diverge from other forms of life and cease to have anything in common with them. I see humanity becoming more like the borg every year.

What used to be thought of as family and community has been replaced by the marketplace. Both families and communities have been destroyed and the functions they formerly served have been "outsourced" at less cost. The family has succumbed to the market pressures of competition.

It will be some time before we really know whether modern technological civilization is a viable adaptation or not. I don't think it's going to be. There are simply too many people consuming too much. At some point we have to run out of things to consume. When that happens, life will change drastically.

But the fascinating thing about life is that it *always does* go on. Young people today are trying to sort out new roles for men and women from the rubble of the old roles which the boomers left as their legacy. Roles which were appropriate in a pre-technical agrarian environment are no longer appropriate in a marketplace dominated urban environment. Children, who used to be considered assets, are now an expense item. The duties to the children for the first 25 years or so have become so onerous that men and women are at each other's throats over who is going to carry the load. In a pre-techical society, kids began to contribute directly to the household before age 7. Now they tend to be a drain on their parents for at least 3X that long, often longer. The entire meaning of kids has changed. Now everything in the world is "for the children." Only, we now have a whole lot of children that nobody wants.

In her wonderful series about pre-technical culture, Jean Auel in "The Mammoth Hunters", has an old shaman saying that you can learn everything you need to know about life by observing for one year. Anyone with an agricultural background will understand that completely. The basic life cycle of nature is one year. Everything blooms about the same time every year, and everything gets harvested at the same time, year after year. There are some great patterns and timetables which dictate people's actions and choices. It takes a woman nine months to have a baby. You cannot get nine women together and get it done in one month.

I am not at all sure that humanity can long survive the generalized loss of this knowledge, because subjective fundamentalism always substitutes ego and the will to power for understanding and getting in line with natural processes and timetables.

I agree with the shaman that one can learn everything one NEEDS to know about life by watching a field of corn, for example, for one year and understanding the analogues of each part of the corn's life cycle in the human experience.

In the spring, the farmer tills and prepares the ground, the substrate from which the nourishment for the crop comes. This is analogous to the community, the values and skills of the parents, their choice of where to live and what it provides, and their social networks. A child will only grow well when planted in fertile ground.

Next the farmer plants the seed. You know what the analogue of that is.

The young plant sprouts, and sends its roots into the ground to draw nourishment. The plant becomes an analogue of the marriage, which has a male part, the tassel, and a female part, the ear and silks. But notice that the marriage is also an entity of itself. IT is what sinks the roots, not the male or female parts by themselves. Barbara Dafoe Whitehead, in "The Divorce Culture", speaks of the loss of "social capital" as social networks are torn apart by

divorce. If the plant stays rooted in its initial spot, the roots grow deep and strong. If it is ripped out, chances are it will never grow enough of a root system to produce healthy fruit. Prior to a high level of geographic mobility, a child would have social networks built over many generations to draw upon as it started life. In many communities, the folk would help the marriage get a quick start on its root system by building the newlyweds a house and barn. More young men starting their "careers" have gotten a boost from old established friends of their parents and grandparents than have not.

Except in the cases of the very wealthy, geographic mobility severs the connection to long standing social networks. Divorce virtually always destroys access to half of the potential social capital of one of the social networks, almost always the father's.

Once the plant has a strong root system, it begins to bear fruit. The ripening of the female part, the ear and silks, brings out the male part, the tassel, with a fervor to fertilize that defines its very existence. For a few days it sheds massive amounts of pollen (sperm), on the order of millions of pollen grains per potential kernel of corn (ova), in an attempt to achieve its ONLY purpose - fertilization.

Once the sexual phase of the plant (marriage) has passed, all nutrition coming from the root system (community) is shunted to the offspring (ear of corn kernels) to make them as strong and vital as possible for their job next year of producing the next generation. The plant itself (the marriage) outlives the male and female parts, but not by much. All those parts are programmed to die once their job of carrying on the chain of life unbroken is done. Next year, the cycle begins anew.

The modern world has nothing of the natural world in it. An understanding of life is only necessary to people for the purpose of understanding themselves. They no longer need to understand where their food and fiber comes from - there are people who specialize in bringing it to them and that is all they really need to know. More and more of what they need is being produced in factories anyway. Everything is highly processed these days. That is the only way the economy has been able to expand the numbers of jobs while the numbers it takes to produce most things have been falling for years.

As young people try to figure out new gender roles, economics takes precedence over life in the decision making. This has the makings of a very hard new world.

It makes me want to admonish people - remember, you are alive.

Back to Gender War, Sexuality, and Love

EOTM: The Secret of Life: Shut Up and Shovel the Fuckin' Gravel.

. · 5 March 2005 · Archived copy · Original

.

The entire secret of life, of power, of everything, was taught to me when I was a teenager, by a man, a farmer. And he taught it to me in the way that is so typical of men: three sentences, no more. I contend that the real conflict today is not male versus female, but urban versus agrarian values. When people forget where their food and fiber comes from, when they forget the natural processes and timetables that produce them, when they start looking for someone else to "hand over" what they want and stop taking the responsibility for producing it themselves, when they replace hard work with belligerence and aggression, they lock themselves into downward spirals of helplessness, powerlessness, and anger.

I taught this same lesson to a woman "friend" of mine. It took me two years. During the entire time she was doing her best to manipulate and harass me into a "romantic" relationship that I had absolutely no interest whatsoever in allowing to happen. It took many screaming matches and finally the threat to throw her out of my life for her to "get it", but she finally "got it" and today she credits me with saving her life, her soul, and her sanity, and has become a friend.

The farmer's name was Griff. I was a "townie" (population 300) and made good money for a teenager as a "hired hand". One day when I showed up for work he said "We're going to pick up a new truck." We got in his car and the entire 40 minute ride to the dealer passed without either of us saying a word: One of those easy comfortable silences that men often use to communicate more than words ever can. We picked up a new 4-wheel drive ¾ ton pickup and headed back to the farm. When we got back, he pointed to a large gravel pile by the barn and told me to fill the truck bed with gravel and go fill in a hole in the entrance to one of his fields.

I said "But that gravel will ruin the paint on the bed of this brand new truck." He looked at me silently for about a minute, his expression eloquently saying that I was the worst idiot he'd ever been burdened with having to tolerate in his life. Without saying another word he picked up the shovel and, with a swing that would be the envy of every major league baseball hitter, he swung it around and smacked the side of the truck sending paint chips flying in every direction and leaving a huge dent. He looked at me again with that same "I can't believe you are such an idiot" look and said: "***City*** boy this is a ***FARM*** truck. I didn't buy it to ***look pretty***, I bought it to ***DO WORK, same reason I'm payin' you***. Now it ain't new no more, ***so shut up and shovel the fuckin' gravel***." Then he turned around and walked off, leaving me to feel foolish and gain wisdom.

Of course it took the entire context and circumstances for me to understand the full significance of the lesson: not with my head but with my spirit. In the same way, cultures world wide and throughout history have used ritual space to teach the great lessons to the young. Complexity and too many words destroy the lesson, because the very

heart and soul of the lesson is that words accomplish nothing. ***Words do not put in crops***. Words do not harvest them or get them to market or prepare them or put them on our plates. ***No one eats unless someone shuts up and shovels the fuckin' gravel.***

The entire secret of male power is that men do, men have, shut up and shoveled the fuckin' gravel. Men shoveled the gravel that built all the hydroelectric dams which provide the electric power which everyone today takes for granted; some of that "Patriarchal technology" that some women are so fond of sneering at. Men put their sweat and, about 50 of them, their very bodies into Hoover dam. Then they "handed over" the result to women to make their lives more comfortable. The millions of tons of gravel which went in to building the transcontinental railway were shoveled by men. And hundreds of their bodies went into it as well. Women and men living today would have none of the conveniences which make their lives so comfortable if millions of men had not shut up and shoveled the fuckin' gravel. All the lawsuits and affirmative action programs in the world could not have built them. Those men did not wait for someone to "hand over" those dams or that railroad to them, they shut up and shoveled the fuckin' gravel and built them. Hoover dam is "male dominated", the transcontinental railroad is "male dominated" because men put their time, their work, their sweat, and their very bodies into building them. Everything that we see in the world today, from business to the military, that is "male dominated" is so because men died to build it.

That is both men's power and their powerlessness.

They shut up and shoveled the fuckin' gravel.

Back to Gender War, Sexuality, and Love

EOTM: A Simple, Brief, Rationalist Alternative to Feminist Theory

. · 6 March 2005 · Archived copy · Original

"Once upon a time..." as so many stories begin -

Most people did NOT live in the suburbs. They did not have running water, gas furnaces, electric lights, dishwashers, televisions, garbage pickup, laundry facilities in the basement or utility room, fast-food joints on every corner, access to amazing medical techology, germ-free water, or a zillion other things which modern women and men simply take for granted. Life in general was a lot of work and, well, that is or was "life." It was pretty much the only game there was unless you chose death, which the world stood ready to deal you in thousands of different ways.

Rather than being made in "god's" garage with his power tools, humans have spent at least a couple of million years developing tool using capacity, so-called "intelligence", and that form of social organization we euphemistically call "civilization" despite the fact that it becomes less "civil" with each passing year.

Fairly early on, our clever ancestors learned that some ways of going about things worked better than others in assuring the surival of the tribe by maximizing the survival potential of the individual members - things like organization, cooperation, and division of labor. Being a species pretty poorly physically adapted to most environments, a fairly large percentage of our time and energy went into adapting the environment to our needs. Like everything alive, individuals valued their own lives pretty highly, but also recognized a certain value in survival of the tribe as a whole over any individual. The central survival factor of the tribe was fertility, and archeological evidence suggests that fertility was worshiped by every pre-technical people.

Like any good resource manager, our ancestors based their resource management strategy on the scarcest resource, not the most abundant. Therefore, the female contribution to fertility was considered far more valuable than the male contribution. As long as starvation was not emminent, the female ability to bring forth life was the most mystical and valuable thing possible. People worshipped it, and protected it at almost any cost. It made so much sense to leave any dangerous activity to men and protect the women from danger that these peoples would have likely regarded as insane or very evil the suggestion that anyone would do otherwise.

The best description of the development of culture that I have ever seen is by Anne McCaffrey in what has developed into the standard boilerplate introduction to her hugely successful "Dragonriders of Pern" series of novels.

"... people went about their separate tasks, and each developed habits that became custom, which solidified into tradition as incontrovertible as law."

Over time these traditions did, indeed, become codified into law as population density increased and the fact that human beings are not always perfect and sometimes act in selfish and destructive manners forced groups into adopting formal codes of conduct and punishing those who strayed too far outside of them. The conservationist oriented approach to protecting the groups future by protecting its fertility led to a natural and informal division of labor with women extending and continuing the natural role of bringing forth and nourishing children to caring for them until they gained a reasonable measure of self-sufficiency, and men generally undertaking the more strenuous and risky activities required to provide for survival of the group.

Given the immense body of knowledge that must be transmitted to the young of the human species, and the limited ability of the young to understand the full reasoning behind it (which is why the young are called "immature") it

was a lot more practical and efficient to simply tell the junior members of the culture what to do than it was to argue with them over why it was a good idea to do it that way. Frequently, the reasons would never be explained and the practical considerations underlying the choice of behavior were lost as cultural knowledge. Then, if the environment changed such that the dictated behavior was no longer really necessary, it was still continued because people had forgotten the reason why they did it in the first place.

In human history, there are 2 great revolutions which created a distinct and abrupt discontinuity in the environment. The first revolution was the agricultural revolution which occurred perhaps 10,000 years ago. Agriculture stabilized the food supply and made both possible and necessary permanent encampments and domiciles. (For more on this aspect, click here.)

The second revolution can be viewed many different ways, but I call it the "Scientific and Technological" revolution which began with the smelting of metal and continues to this day in the form of industrialization and technology based mass culture. This revolution gave homo sapiens a degree of control over their environment that the race had dreamed about for all time. A degree of control over, and certainty about, the future which had been the secret wish of all peoples became reality. With the advent of Pasteur's germ theory, the last great restraining force on human population levels, disease, was removed and the population of humanity exploded. About 1850, the human population of the world was about 1.5 billion. Now, 150 years later it is 4X that: about 6 billion.

Despite all the changes in the environment which made the survival of the species no longer so dependant on fertility, ten thousand years of social history, custom, and law do not go away overnight. Codified into almost every aspect of law, and deeply embedded in all social customs and values, is the notion that women (meaning their fertility) MUST be protected and that men are highly expendable. The primary value of male life has always been measured by how much he produced to contribute to the group as a whole. Before the vast consolidation of durable wealth in the hands of a small percentage of the population, and before men were forced off the land which was the source of their sustenance by enclosure and the need to drive them into the cities to provide the workforce for the Industrial transformation, this productivity was measured directly in terms of production of food. Post-enclosure, this value was transferred directly to *the ability to provide food by buying it*, i.e. wages.

Fast forward to the end of the 20th century, and you find men's value still being determined by their earning capacity, and women still choosing their mates based to a large degree on this.

Far from there being ***ANY*** sort of world-wide and history-long conspiracy by men to do awful and nasty things to women, to ***"OPPRESS"*** them, the male attitude has been driven by a deep and inherent appreciation of women's value and a desire to protect and take care of them.

However, our culture has never come to terms with the impact which death control must inevitably have on our social customs and value structure. The desire of women to free themselves of their biological role as producers of babies is understandable given the many burdens that role creates for them. But, in order for women to be free of that role, men must also be free of the role of providing care and maintenance for those babies as the only means to social identity.

The monstrous lie and hoax perpetrated by feminism, i.e. that it is ***MEN*** who have fought any gains or progress toward the re-balancing of the power relationships between men and women should be ***immediately obvious*** in the fact that so many men were early supporters of feminism and that the lament heard from women from the mid-1970s on was NOT that men were seeking to ***"OPPRESS"*** women into traditional marriage but rather ***EXACTLY THE OPPOSITE.*** Men weren't badgering women to marry them, they were ***REFUSING*** to "commit" to marriage themselves.

Were it not for the elements of man-hating and victimism which were integrated into feminist thought from very the beginning by early feminist theorists and writers like Betty Friedan, Kate Millet, Susan Brownmiller, Valerie Solanas, and Robin Morgan; then carried on in fine style by Susan Faludi, Naomi Wolfe, Sally Miller-Gearhart, and a host of others; the radical shift from woman-as-strong to woman-as-total-victim as the core message of feminism would have been obvious.

It is still fascinating to read the works of such new-wave feminists as Rene Denfield and Robin Blumner who point out the Victorian attitudes of female fragility, sensitivity, and moral superiority pushed by contemporary feminism, but do not take the next logical step. If ***WOMEN*** are the ones most aggressively pushing these notions ***today***, end of the 20th century, has any woman raised the question whether women ***might*** (now just consider the possibility) just have been the driving force in promoting those notions the last time around. Just maybe, the paternalistic attitude of culture toward women has been ***promoted and nurtured by women*** all along, in order to gain the special protections and treatment that women get from a culture which has those attitudes. Special treatment like first grabs on the lifeboat seats when the Titanic goes down, or special "Violence Against Women Act" laws.

Hmmmm? Do you think that perhaps women ***could*** have been an active and major driving force all along in promoting the notion of how weak, capricious, and in need of special treatment women are?

Back to Gender War, Sexuality, and Love

EOTM: The Nature of Things

. · 7 March 2005 · Archived copy · Original

Foremost among the foundations of femimism is the need to deny nature. The separation of the sex act from the bearing of the children that it produces has produced a culture which devalues all human life: male, female, and child.

The old "mating dance" between men and women has taken an ugly turn. Our bodies are natural creations and our desires do not much listen to "shoulds".

Whether human beings can totally be redefined socially, as the grand socialist experiment has been trying since the late 1800s, or whether their natural origins will continue to assert themselves is still up for questioning.

Biological Basics

It's About Reproduction and Status: Why Men Go For "The Look" (or seem to think with our genitals at times)

Some Radical Notions on Biological and Social Selection Processes and the Future of Culture

The Feralization of Culture: Building Better Predators

Back to Gender War, Sexuality, and Love

EOTM: In a Male Voice

. · 8 March 2005 · Archived copy · Original

These articles are written in a male voice. This means a male focus on the issues, male experience and values reflected, and sometimes "strong" language. If any of it offends you, go away - you don't have to read it.

Men have had 30 years of having women's versions and descriptions of their experience shoved down their throats. Even a major writer on men's issues, Warren Farrell, takes men to task for it. What no one seems to acknowledge is that men have been speaking out for a long time, and often when men do - they are shouted down. Time and again, I have seen men try to say what what their experience was like, only to have it denied and they be told what it was or "should" be instead.

The concerns of women have become so numerous, dramatic, and filled with suffering that it seems the only way men can possibly avoid victimizing them is to avoid them as completely as possible.

Models of Man
An Open Letter to Women: The Lot of You Can Go to Hell
Turning Away from Women: Bicycles Without Fish
Why Men Go For “The Look”
Male Sexuality
Men, Are You Sick of It?

Feminism Deconstructed: Nothing but a Hate Movement

. · 9 March 2005 · Archived copy · Original

"I feel that 'man-hating' is an honorable and viable political act, that the oppressed have a right to class-hatred against the class that is oppressing them." -- Robin Morgan - former president of the National Ourganization for Women (NOW) and editor of MS magazine

---

Feminism is nothing but a hate movement pure and simple. From the opening shot of the S.C.U.M. Manifesto, to today's endless man-bashing, feminism has been first and foremost, predominantly and overwhelmingly, about hating men and all things male.

The remarkable peristence of the credibility of feminism as movement of so-called "equality" does not speak well of the intelligence of the public at large. A growing body of dissenting voice to the anti-reality dogma of feminism is finally beginning to make itself heard.

.
Hate Bounces

.
A Vast Social “Deconstruction” (Demolition) Project

.
False Premises – False Promises

.
The Ultimate Hypocrisy – A Movement for “Gender Equality” with a Gendered Name

.
The Nightmare Called “Feminism”

.
Feminism in the Context of U.S. Social History 1890-1990

.
Feminism Led to Masculine Rage – by Jean Sonmor

.
How the Women’s Movement Taught Women to Hate Men – by Erin Pizzey

.
Male Bashing

.

The Criminalization of Male Sexuality – Harassment and Rape

.

The Bitch

.

.

Back to Gender War, Sexuality, and Love

EOTM: Hard Analysis

. · 10 March 2005 · Archived copy · Original

Hard Analysis Sites:

All around the net, and to some small degree of print media, current social conditions are being subjected to some very hard analysis.

While I do not necessarily agree with every little thing said on these sites, I do agree with a lot of it, and particularly with the principle of gathering information and coming to one's own conclusion rather than just accepting what the media and the government force feed us.

Andy Turnbull – "The Cassandra Papers"

Backlash.com - The name says it

Kack Kammer: rulymob.com If Men Have All the Power, How Come Women Make the Rules?

Exceptional Hard Analysis Articles:

Here is a collection of articles which clearly and unambiguously describe one aspect or another of current social conditions.

David Shackleton:
The War Against Men
Feminism Exposed: Our blindness to feminine evil

Erin Pizzey:
How the Women's Movement Taught Women to Hate Men

Jean Sonmor:
Feminism Led to Masculine Rage

EOTM: Surviving a Culture of Singleness: Choosing Unmated Lifestyles

. · 11 March 2005 · Archived copy · Original

"In the beginning, there was the "Battle of the sexes", and it was bad enough. Then, on the end of the 2nd millenium, man and woman made "Gender War", and they looked at it, and it was worse. "

Surviving a culture of singleness: choosing unmated lifestyles.

You would have to have been living under a rock for the past 30 years to have been unaware of the major social shifts occuring in the structure and function of marriage, the family, and child rearing.

Ethical, caring, progressive men have few palatable choices in the mating game today. Culturally, fathers have been reduced to walking wallets. Men who want a real role in raising their children are confronted with the growing acceptance of single motherhood, with its inescapable implication of single fatherhood. As the battle for "wage parity" continues, gains in women's income are often offset by the reduced numbers of men who outearn them and are thus considered "eligible."

Resource competition is reaching levels never even dreamed before. The entire notion of "necessity" has been redefined in two generations and very little which is regarded as essential today was even dreamed of by the generation that spanned the great depression and WW II. The notion of entitlements introduced during the 1930s to pull the nation out of the depression has fossilized into making the government the parent of all. Fathers are disposable as long as the mother has income from somewhere. Mothers are disposable because now we have "day care" and "quality" time.

I believe that Charlie Chaplin's vision in "Modern Times" has become reality. Human beings have been mechanized just like industry and standardization has become the rule of success. Individuality, individual variation, and uniqueness have all succumbed to mass culture.

Since the 1960s, the focus in the realignment has been women's roles and women's issues. The movement which has spearheaded this effort has even had a feminine name. In fact, feminism literally is the ideology of the feminine.

Despite all the changes in women's roles, the expectations within the culture were that men would continue to fulfill all their old duties. And, since the generation of men entering into the gauntlet that the mating years were to become were brought up expecting to do just that, the boomer generation for the most part tried to comply. However, the change in women's roles has had such profound and lasting changes that men's roles are in transition whether anyone likes it or not.

As the provider role falls by the wayside on the pilgrimmage to wage parity, and the disciplinarian role falls to the relentless efforts to uncover victims of abuse, men are faced with being criticized for what they were brought up to do. There has been deep and long standing bitter resentment of that by men. And the net effect on men raised after this vast social change will take decades to fully assess.

However, one effect is already beginning to become apparent and that is an awareness of just how expensive fertility has become. Particularly in the US, people accustomed to the highest living standard in the world are

ripping and tearing at each other over the belief that the share of the wealth which they are receiving is not large enough. Having children and taking on the providing role means you have to take on the responsibility for providing them with ENOUGH. Remember, everyone wants to "HAVE IT ALL" these days. It's not just "men against women", children are turning on their parents these days. Remember the Menendez brothers?
With so many obstacles and burdens to raising children, as opposed to simply becoming pregnant, it is something that men will begin to avoid with the same fervor that women have pursued birth control and such radical tactics as abortion. C4m, choice for men, is the legal equivalent to abortion. Male birth control pills are being tested. Men are challenging in court the rights of women to conceive and stick them with the bill.

We have reached the stage in polarization between the genders where the user of birth control now has to warrant its effectiveness.

The disruption in fertility patterns will soon shift from the generalized right to NOT reproduce, to certain more fundamental questions about the right TO reproduce. Based on cost alone, many will have to make the decision to not have children because they can't afford them.

The primary question will end up being whether the sex drive can be successfully defined completely away from its history-long biological purpose - continuation of the species - into a new "social" mold. Can everything about us, from our bodies to our most basic drives, be simply redefined in semantic terms and become, like feminism, whatever we say it is?

I contend not.

The legal and cultural situation is forcing a reversal in some of the responsibilties of relationship initiation and maintenance. Men are being forced to take on the role of gatekeeper and deal with women who are very aggressive in pursuing sex. The crushing burdens of the current idealized father role and the legal risks posed by Sexual Harassment and Rape laws take a great deal of the attractiveness out of women in general.

Maleness, liking women, wanting to have sex with them, and fatherhood have all been criminalized. It is easy to tell what a culture is trying to stamp out by what it criminalizes. How boys and young men will respond is hard to predict. But they will doubtless react very differently from their fathers whose actions were criminalized after they commited them.
For the near future, at least, it seems that both men and women will need to adjust to unmated and childless lives. It is highly doubtful that government subsidies will be extended to children conceived through a sperm bank, at least not for very long if women continue to take on increased tax burdens as their income increases. As hard as the conservatives have fought to preserve it, the nuclear family looks like it is going into mothballs like nuclear arms.

What will replace it is anybody's guess. And everybody is guessing. And the stakes for a wrong guess just keep getting higher.

The boomers were the straddle generation. They were born and socialized under the old ideas of family, even though they were already breaking down, then tried to make the transition to living under the new ones. The results were wildly mixed.

Now, the boomers are increasingly adopting singleness as a lifestyle and retiring from the gender armies to let the younger ones fight it out. The question is whether the young will keep on fighting it, or reject the gender war just like the boomers rejected the Vietnam war. Interestingly, I saw a boomer post on an NG titled "They're turning on us." Well, that's what we taught them.

I hope this turns out to be the case. Young men and women have inherited a legacy of hatred and distrust that will be hard to overcome. They have all been fed a lot of propaganda. I'm glad I grew up before all this started to happen. I don't envy them the task.

One thing seems certain - that both genders will need to approach fertility in more cautious and planned ways. But certainly for men, exploration of alternatives to fatherhood will definitely need to be considered.

The Water Gets Deeper

In the wake of radical feminism, it seems like it has taken a very long time for an equally radical and forceful masculism to develop. Both sides are now dealing from positions of defensiveness and anger.

Below are some essays on what such a radical masculism might look like. In effect, it is nothing more than actual implementation of the fish and bicyles concept which has been the slogan of womanism since the early 70s. And the sad truth is that, once out of the gauntlet of the child-bearing years, men and women DON'T really need each other for much of anything. The interdependency which has characterized the human race since its beginnings, whatever creation myth you subscribe to, between men and women has been severed. Young men are talking about their need to have "reproductive independence" from women.

I believe that the mere fact that the sexes are talking about "reproductive independence" from each other is clear indication that the human race is either getting ready to completely unravel, or follow Huxley's model of the "Brave New World" and grow kids in test tubes and indoctrinate them in government run centers. Will humans make the next leap toward becoming machines? And over time will the distinction between human being and machine break down?

Some Radical Notions on biological and social processes and the future of culture

The Feralization of Culture – Building better predators

Back to Gender War, Sexuality, and Love

EOTM: Confronting Matriarchy

. · 12 March 2005 · Archived copy · Original

All of western culture is ruled by a vast and invisible matriarchy operating from the shadows so its actions are nearly invisible. The foundations of this Matriarchy are maternal authority and women's Superiority Complex. From the moment of birth, men are taught to defer to maternal authority. As soon as they enter public school, they confront almost exclusively female teachers whose absolute authority over the classroom is enforced by what few men are part of the public education system. In high school, young males are usually exposed to a few male teachers whose own exercise of authority is quite different from their female counterparts. Male teachers often handle discipline problems in the classroom at a much lower level than female teachers, who tend to escalate matters to male administrators if their hegemony is challenged.

Men who marry usually find their wives expecting the mantle of maternal authority to be simply handed over to them by and from the man's mother without missing a beat. It sometimes takes many battles for a man to make the point to a new wife that she is his spouse and equal, not his mother. Women who stubbornly insist on being slow learners on this issue set up oppositional and adversarial positions which often will poison the marriage over time. Women expect to be able to make the rules and simply expect men to obey them. Men who assert themselves and demand some degree of regard and consideration for their point of view will often have to fight the battle for recognition over, and over, and over.

When feminists realized that they were about to overthrow women's own matriarchal power base with their initial anti-marriage and anti-motherhood stances, they did an abrupt about-face and embraced motherhood even more fervently than they had rejected it just a few years before.

Matriarchy has now taken over the court system as feminist "jurisprudence" has replaced objective facts with female feelings as the relevant criteria for determining guilt or innocence. A woman's emotional state has even become adequate defense against charges of murder, and women have a multitude of emotional defenses, ranging from the abuse excuse to PMS, which literally allow them to get away with murdering men, children, and other women.

Shadow Power

Matriarchy depends on shadow power. It must deny its power and function from the shadows. All matriarchal power stems from the maternal role and maternal authority, and the power to grant or deny sex.

Foundations of Female Power

1 - The Mating Dance - Sexual Power
2 - Maternal Authority - Moral Power
3 - Control of the Education/Socialization system - Indoctrination Power
4 - The Male Protector Role - The Power of Weakness
5 - The Rescue Reflex - Victim Power
6 - Unfair Fighting - Confusion Power Tantrum Power,
7 - Emotional Terrorism and Violence - Intimidation Power
8 - Betrayal - Shock and disappointment Power

Foundations of Male Powerlessness -

1 - Denial of Fear
2 - Fear of Isolation
3 - The need to convince, have credibility, be acceptable, receive validation.

As boys, men are separated from other males, fathers particularly, terrorized and isolated, and told that the only source of emotional sustenance and intimacy for was with women and in sexual union. This places a great deal of power in the hands of women, which is difficult to resist the temptation to abuse.

As men confront the totally changed male and female roles that are the legacy of feminism, women are going to lose a lot of their historic moral power. Confronting the Matriarchy involves shedding light on its workings - naming the vague purpose behind the behavior intended to confuse and obfuscate.

Back to Gender War, Sexuality, and Love

EOTM: How It All Fell Apart

. · 13 March 2005 · Archived copy · Original

In 1992 Canadian journalist Wendy Dennis came out with a book entitled "Hot and Bothered, Sex and Love in the 90s". In her introduction she became the first woman I'd ever heard actually admit that men had a side of the story too. She promised to try to tell it fairly, and certainly did a better job of that than any woman I've heard before or since. She still showed some distinct feminist and feminine biases, particularly in some of her choices to illustrate male anger about the treatment they had been receiving from women, but, as I have included certain male biases in my writing with more forethought and intent than I'm sure she showed, I can hardly fault her too severely for that. The mere fact that she admitted that men have a right to have their point of view considered put her into not just a different category, but an entirely different species, than other women authors who have written on this subject. Please read her book. Please give copies of it to all your friends. For, in the 5 years since its publication, things only seem to have gotten worse. There is no other single topic that I hear discussed even half as frequently as how miserable both men and women are as a result of the lack of any sort of satisfying sexually intimate relationship in their lives.

She begins with the questions "How are women doing?" and "How are men doing?". In both cases the answer is not well. With only rare exceptions, men and women everywhere are confused, angry, alone, suspicious, often downright hostile, and, underneath it all, terribly terribly hurt. In some states the divorce rate has reached 75%. More and more single people have simply quit dating. For quite some time it has been very chic for women to proudly announce that they are quite happy without a relationship. Now men are beginning to take the same position. As I have talked to members of both genders, the story that I get is that this is mostly true but not quite with the spin of satisfaction that it is usually presented. A little probing will reveal that, instead of "quite happy", "less miserable" sitting on the sidelines watching the emotional brawl instead of participating is closer to the truth.

What is most surprising to me is the number of young men, in their early 20s, who have dropped out of the mating game. For a 30 year veteran in the army-of-occupation left behind by the sexual revolution with the scars to prove it, like myself, this is easy to understand. But for someone at an age when I still considered that dreaded Hawaiian disease, Lakanooki, certainly fatal if left untreated for a year and would tolerate almost any level of abasement to convince some woman to share my bed, it is amazing that a young man would make the choice to sit out. Their reasons for doing so are quite informative.

Feminism has transformed the social climate in this country as thoroughly as the Bolsheviks transformed the former Russia. Which is of course what it set out to do: thus is a rousing success as a social movement. But, like the collectivist thinking on the economic level, the collectivist thinking on the social level which drives feminism did not have quite the results promised. After 75 years, the grand socio-economic experiment of the Bolsheviks was abandoned because it was too contrary to the nature of human beings. For those 75 years, however, citizens had to contend with economic deprivation and hardship as they struggled to change that nature to conform to a grand ideal. Not just human nature, but the natural world as well. Crops were planted according to 5 year plans, not according to weather, harvests, and needs of the population. In the same way, feminists have demanded that the factors and forces which drive attraction conform to a plan, a FEMinine plan.

Males have simply been dropped out of the picture as serious elements of consideration, except to regard them as agricultural crops which fruit love, support, and sperm. Author Dennis herself says it - "For one of the implicit, if unadmitted, tenets of feminism has been a fundamental disrespect for men." When the Bolsheviks fundamentally disrespected the fact that a crop ripens dependent on rainfall, sunshine, and a host of other factors, demanding instead that it be planted on a certain date and harvested on a certain date according to a grand idealistic plan laid down 5 years earlier, they could invest all the hours, fuel, and seed in planting and still have nothing to eat when it

was all done. Not just no result, but an incredible waste of resources which were already in short supply. And people end up hungrier as a result of wasting the seed which could have more productively been eaten than thrown away in an attempt to force nature to conform to a human ideal. Fortunately for them, in the States farmers still understood that a crop ripens according to natural laws and did not attempt to play GOD, so had surpluses which allowed the Bolshevik plan followers to purchase grain to keep from starving to death. Unfortunately, no one is growing a surplus of male attraction to women these days, particularly not one which meets the complex, contradictory, and completely impossible requirements of the feminist agenda, so women are emotionally starving to death.

The most repugnant statement in the entire book, repugnant both because it illustrates the fallacy which caused the whole house of cards to fall and because it highlights the fact that women are still blind to the fact that men are human beings at all and illustrates that a fundamental disrespect for men is basic not just to feminism, but to all women, is this (quoted in lengthy entirety):

"In the end, the hard lesson women take from the apparent man shortage is this: by trying to live up to the lofty ideals of feminism, by elevating their expectations of themselves and of men, they set themselves with a collision course with loneliness. ***Men will punish them for their ambitions, and they will punish them in the cruelest way imaginable: by not wanting them any more***." (emphasis added)

Let me express the message in this statement another way:

"In the end, the hard lesson the Bolsheviks take from the apparent food shortage is this: by trying to live up to the lofty ideals of Bolshevism, by elevating their expectations of themselves and the crops which provide them food, they set themselves with a collsion course with starvation." (True so far, the penalty for that level of denial in the natural world has always been death.) "The crops will punish them for their ambitions, and they will punish them in the cruelest way possible: by dying."

I still cannot fathom the incredible self-absorbtion, self-centeredness, self-OBSESSION, that can allow anyone to overlook how intensely and determinedly women have pursued making themselves unwantable and destroying and stamping out every last bit of desire for them a man could possibly have. And the determination to be the victim to the very end. The fact that men have quit wanting women couldn't possibly have anything to do with the fact that women have been viciously attacking men for being attracted to them and every instance of its expression for years. It couldn't possibly have anything to do with the fact that expressing it has been thoroughly criminalized and wanting a woman and making it known can land a man in prison these days. It couldn't have anything to do with the fact that everything a man might find attractive that doesn't fit the feminst ideal is slammed with a sledgehammer of shame. It couldn't possibly have anything to do with the fact that men have believed women who have told men how little they or their attention could possibly mean to women, and in fact they find them both highly offensive and completely irrelevant. No, it couldn't possibly have anything to do with women or their actions, it is entirely due to the universal quality of men to spend their lives thinking up nasty things to do to women. To "***PUNISH***" them.

It makes me sick.

In what I call the "Holocaust of Desire", men's desire for women has been being systematically murdered for the past 30 years. By women. Now men are "punishing" women by being dead to them. The murder weapons have been maleness-bashing and the criminalization of male sexual expression through the expanded definitions of sexual harassment and rape and the constructivist fallacy of making all men equally guilty for the acts of any individual man.

The sad truth is that I'd rather eat Drano than try to love a woman, only to find that my every act and intent was viciously and maliciously twisted into a victim's melodrama which I might spend the next several years in prison paying for. The entire purpose of the criminal justice system is to control and attempt to eradicate deviance. Now that men desiring women has been declared deviant, the eradication efforts are having their effects.

In the end, the hard lesson that women *really* need to take from the real man shortage is this: by denying and negating our needs, by making wanting you into a criminal act, by being so self-centered that you cannot see any act in the world as being motivated by anything other than intent to frustrate your needs and desires, you have proven to us that what feminists began saying 30 years ago is equally true in reverse. Not only is a woman without a man like a fish without a bicycle, a man without a woman is like a bicycle without a fish.

Male Bashing
The Criminalization of Male Sexuality - Harrasment and Rape

EOTM: Equal Time - Tales of Offensive and Obnoxious Women

. · 14 March 2005 · Archived copy · Original

Today, meaning at the end of the 20th century and the beginning of the 21st, western culture is saturated by awful tales of destructive men and by the notion of unversal female victimhood. The pervasive fiction of the moral superiority of women, perfectly illustrated by the term "the FAIRer sex", has led to a cultural view of men that is unrealistically and destructively negative. The flip side is that the view of women is unrealistically and destructively positive.

In order to give men "equal time", this page will be dedicated to the stories of men who have had to contend with, and surivive, dealing with horribly dark and destructive women at the same time they are trying to deal with a culture in absolute denial that women can be that way. The stories will be anonymous because it is the very fact that it could be ANY woman or ANY man around you that render the results so tragic.

There Ain’t No Way Out But Out

The Woman who couldn’t cope with NOT being lied to

EOTM: There Ain't No Way Out But Out

. · 14 March 2005 · Archived copy · Original

"There Ain't No Way Out, but OUT. "

With these words, my counselor put his finger on the heart of the essential dilemma and conflict which I was spending $65/hour seeking his help to resolve. For close to 18 months I had been "trapped" in a "relationship" with the most horrible destructive woman I had ever had the misfortune to encounter. I detested her. She disgusted me. But for a lot of reasons so subtle that they almost defy explanation, I was still seeking and requiring sanction and permission to dump her and walk away. And most insanely of all, I was seeking it FROM HER. While my intellect KNEW this was nuts, my emotions still fought me.

At one point the counselor, whose name was Bob, pointed this out. "You are in the middle of an internal civil war. Your intellect and emotions are at war with each other." For years, I had fought to subjugate my emotions to my ideals and attempted to feel like my ideal of myself dictated that I would feel. That was the reason I had gotten myself into this situation in the first place, and why I was having such a hard time giving myself permission to leave. In going back and seeking to understand the forces that drew me into such a destructive relationship, and undermined my resolve to leave it, I had to sort through an immense and convoluted mixture of traditional and feminist notions about relationships, sexuality, and how one treats the people who are close to you.

Like most others of my age cohort, the "boomers", a durable satisfactory pair-bonding with a member of the opposite sex has escaped me. Unlike many of them, I don't have one or more failed marriages which more often than not leave the combatants hostile and embittered toward the opposite sex. It's curious that our culture which loves to put a label in everything does not have a widely used label for my experience. "Serial monogamy" comes close, but that usually carries the connotation of serial marriage. In order to come closer to my exact experience, I would have to qualify it as "serial non-marital non-cohabiting monogamy." Out of a string of more than a dozen "relationships" with women, covering nearly 3 decades, I only lived with one of those women for a period of slightly less than 2 years.

I fully understand the social purpose served by the old tradition of long courtships. It used to be well understood by this culture that marital compatibility over the long term has little to do with sexual attraction. Older style courtship allowed the couple to get to know each other and either establish a firm foundation for a durable pair-bond before throwing the volatile and confusing issue of sexuality in the mix or find out that there was no compatibility and move on to someone else. The sexual revolution and the fiction of sexual freedom destroyed this useful social custom and produced two hybrid customs, neither of which worked very well.

The first hybrid was to put the wedding night at the beginning of the courtship rather than at the end of it. This idea was very much in line with men's stereotypical notion of "sexual freedom." Men could get their sexual needs met in the short term, as well as have some insurance against getting trapped in a marriage to a "bum fuck." However, a few dozen centuries of cultural values which also incorporated some basic biological predispositions were not to be dispensed with overnight. Deeply imbedded in our cultural values, and our thinking about them, are notions about the relative value and meaning placed on sex by the two genders. Many writers have pointed out the cultural perception that sex is a FAVOR that women do for men, and that men OWE women something in return for sex. And, while descriptions of what is "owed" may vary widely they all boil down to "THE RELATIONSHIP." Not "A" relationship, "THE RELATIONSHIP". And, of course, the fundamental defining characteristic of "THE RELATIONSHIP" is "THE commitment": which is always presented as " *a* COMMITMENT."

When vomiting the mindless man-bash so common today that "men CAN'T make a commitment", the wimmin-as-

total-victim-and-therefor-totally-superior-to-men crowd, put several mean spins on the ball that make it almost impossible to field. First, the word "can't" which presents it as a constitutional deficiency rather than a choice. Simply replace "can't" with "WON'T" and see how the meaning changes. A man who "WON'T" make a commitment is an empowered man who is exercising his right to make choices about his own life. If he WON'T "make a commitment", it is because he sees that he has more to lose than to gain by doing so. Men who WON'T make commitments to women are men who demand reciprocity and fairness as a pre-requisite and WON'T allow themselves to be trapped into a situation where this doesn't exist. It is essential that the spin-doctors keep presenting this as a FAILING rather than a CHOICE.

Second, we have to look at the use of the non-specific "A commitment", as opposed to the very specific "marriage commitment." Virtually all men make and keep thousands of commitments in their lives. But this knowledge must be ruthlessly suppressed and denied in order to obscure the reasons why men make these commitments. Understanding those reasons would immediately point out that the reasons men are so slow in making THE marriage commitment is because marriage values and practices are so heavily stacked against men in this culture. When getting ready to risk one's entire life work, the potential custody of his children as hostages in a child-support extortion scheme, and even potential incarceration, only the most foolish of men will proceed without serious deliberation. But NONE of this can ever be acknowledged if women are to be able to continue to use the commitment issue to guilt-trip men into marrying them before the men are ready.

The net cultural effect of putting the wedding night, and "consummation" of the relationship, at the beginning of the courtship rather than at the end was the de facto elimination of courtship and its social benefits. Both sexes, in reality, make short-term choices regarding people to sleep with on very different criteria than they make long term choices regarding who to marry. The "Sexual Revolution" and "Sexual Freedom" were in fact monstrous hoaxes perpetrated on the culture as whole. Both sexes just assumed that the other would begin to make similar choices to the ones their own made. Both made mistaken assumptions about the portions of the old cultural values that the "other" sex would abandon and about the ones they would hold on to.

Women absolutely refused to turn loose of their old cultural prerogative to be compensated in some way for "giving" the man some sex. Even though the night before she may have actually been the aggressor and more interested in having sex than he was; in the light of day she could always fall back onto female stereotypes and demand that he "owed" her something, even if it was just the symbolic post-coital call. Men who assumed that the women wanted the same thing they did - good, satisfying, no-strings-attached sex - invariably incurred the wrath of women who felt "used." While the specific, but quaint and archaic, term "cad" has dropped out of common usage, the type of man it describes is alive and well in the cultural stereotypes of men. As one of the feminist writers on the web, Lizard Amazon, observed:

"In fact, even without getting a Relationship Contract, women with a "good reputation" can easily get a man to fuck them (because it's assumed that men will want to fuck any available pussy) and then expect the man to treat them AS IF THERE WERE SUCH A CONTRACT. After they have fucked, then the good reputation, high value pussy woman can assume that the man will treat her with respect, he will not fuck anyone else, and he'll maintain the highest standards of truthfulness- and also share his privileged status with her, i.e. she gets to be introduced into his public and private social kinship circles as His Girlfriend, or she gets to begin sharing his material wealth and goods.

"If he doesn't do these things, then the high value pussy woman has society's permission to be outraged and to tell everyone possible that the man has treated her badly. She is now justified in most people's eyes, in wreaking revenge upon the man in any way available to her. She can slap him, hit him, enact public melodrama, slash his tires, sleep with his best friend, destroy his possessions, and slander his character."

- not to mention poison his dog.

In all respects, this first hybrid of old traditions and sexual freedom has been a disaster for everyone concerned: women, men, children, and the culture as a whole. In general women had a great deal of difficulty with the idea of "uncommitted" sex, although far more men also had difficulty with it than the cultural stereotypes suggest.

The second hybrid of the old and new cultural values of sexual freedom, or the lack thereof, was in many respects far more destructive. In most respects, it is identical to the first hybrid in that it attempts to continue to cast new and different behaviors in the old cultural mold, despite the fact that these behaviors are antithetical to the old set of cultural values. This second hybrid continues to give women all the prerogatives of women under the traditional set of values as well as the ability to have sex without having to wait until all that tedious "courtship" is done, but it adds the twist that the woman can be the aggressor. Shrouded by the denial of women's sexual agency by rape and sexual harassment laws, women can seek and even demand sex as active agents; then the moment it has occurred they can invoke whichever of the old sets or new hybrid sets of rules that suits them.

Under this scenario, not only do men OWE women something for sex once they have had it, they also OWE IT TO THE WOMAN who wants to have sex with them TO HAVE SEX WITH HER. This goes far beyond the classic "bait and switch" tactic of the first hybrid. It is one thing for a woman to "allow" a man to bed her then expect "A commitment": it is entirely another for a woman to DEMAND that a man do so, then invoke the "you OWE me A commitment" rule.

Over the past several years, I have encountered and been involved with several women who pursued this strategy. While in some cases there was marginal sexual interest on my part, in most there was none. One of the horribly destructive results of the false confusion of sex with intimacy, which is nearly universal among women, is that many of them confuse a simple warm friendship with something more and do not respect the boundaries of the friendship. The false equivalence of passion and love leads to the erroneous conclusions "since you care about me, you must be turned on by me" and "since you are turned on by me, that means you MUST love me."
Men who are clear on their own internal distinctions between the two may often fall prey to hybrid strategy # 1 - getting trapped into owing a woman a commitment because you have slept with her. But; men who have fallen for and internalized the silly notions of romantic love, soulmates, the missing "other half" that will complete us, and the rest of the social nonsense regarding sex; can often fall into the trap of hybrid strategy # 2 - finding that they OWE a woman "A commitment" for what turns out to have been little more than a mercy hump.

Going into all the reasons why men often find it difficult to turn down a woman who clearly communicates the fact that she WANTS to have sex with him will require a whole 'nother article. But most men will understand them without explanation, so merely mentioning them should be sufficient: chronic sexual deprivation, chivalry, not wanting to "hurt her feelings" by giving the message that you find her unattractive, personally held stereotypes about men and their sexual responses, as well as their own maverick bodies' tendencies to respond physically in situations where they do not respond emotionally.

All of these, and more factors were at work in a relationship with a woman I will call "Pam." Over the years I have developed the practice of designating the women of my ex-relationships with names that summarize the causes of the failure of the relationship. This woman, I refer to as "Pam Fuckaboot" after her practice of humping the side of my leg, exactly like a similarly named dog of my acquaintance would be spurred to humping frenzy by the sight/smell of a pair of boots.

Once I was psychologically and emotionally entrapped in a "relationship" with this woman, I endured months of spending nights with her that began with listening to two hours of her screaming at her mother and two daughters over how much she did for them and how little she got in return. After the nightly family soap-opera-cum-Jerry-Springer-show wound down, we would retire to her room where I would listen to another hour or so of her complaints about work and all the "assholes" she worked with and how she "got them back." Somewhere in the

midst of all this, often punctuated by observing how cute her neurotic little dog was for just shitting on the floor, she would roll over on me and begin to grind her crotch into the side of my leg, while her mouth was still running 90 miles/hr. This was her idea of "foreplay." Needless to say, or at least needless to explain to any man, I found this not just UNexciting, but as destructive to any feeling of real sexual interest as anything could be.

In retrospect, all the signs were there from day one. I was just too optimistic, idealistic and, on some issues, guilty and ashamed, to admit it. A retrospective analysis and understanding of the factors which got me into that relationship, and kept me in it long after I knew it was poisonous to me, has served me in good stead in dealing with the women I have encountered since who have sought to entrap me into the same kind of nightmare. I think that perhaps other men may find something of value, as well, in what I learned.

The Saga of "Pam Fuckaboot" -

We were childhood friends. We went to kindergarten and first, 2nd, and 3rd grades together. She was the proverbial "little red-headed girl" to my Charlie Brown. My family moved right after I completed the third grade, and I only saw her once in the next 32 years. If I had been a little smarter, I would have learned all I needed to know from that one encounter, because she barely had the time of day for me. Like I said, the proverbial "little red-headed girl" on whom I had an innocent childhood crush while she was barely aware that I existed - until her life circumstances changed in a way that I might be "useful" her, that is.

We met again the year we both turned 40. It was at the site where all those rosy memories of bygone times had been written: our grade school. I had been informed by another classmate from that era that the school was about to be torn down and that there was a "party" or reception for all the students who had gone there to get one last look at the old place. And that SHE (the "little red-headed girl") was going to be there.

If I had not been so mislead by fond memories, the warning sirens would have gone off the moment I laid eyes on her. Her wardrobe and demeanor screamed "High Maintenance" (a term she was fond of using to describe herself) and "BITCH." But, hey, this was the 90s and "real men" aren't afraid of "strong women." Besides, I had superglued rose colored glasses to my head.

We were both only about 30 days out from breakups of relationships which had more than passing significance, but of course we both withheld that information from the other. No need to scare her/him off. As long-term footsoldiers in the Army of Occupation left behind by the sexual revolution, we both knew that unless we hated each other as we had grown up to be that we would end up in bed together.

I was a lot less anxious to see this happen than she was. From the very beginning there was something seriously off-key - I just couldn't put my finger on it. I hated the way she dressed. It was ugly as hell and had a very middle-aged matronly look about it: kinda like the stuff that Bea Arthur always used to wear. You know what I mean: bulky stuff and long tops to hide how fat she was. I was so determined to overlook this part of it that I also overlooked an even more significant part: it wasn't just the style that put me off - her color sense was atrocious. I certainly wouldn't have bought a couch covered with the patterns and colors she chose, it still bewilders me to this day that I nearly bought a woman covered in it. But, hey, you GOTTA remember that this was THE "little red-headed girl".

The first time I went into her room, a kind of mini-suite in the house she shared with her mother and two daughters, I saw a sign on her door:

"Warning !!!!

You are looking at a HIGH PERFORMANCE woman.
I go from zero to BITCH in 0.2 seconds.
Caution: The BITCH switch sticks."

("DANGER, DANGER, Will Robinson!")

I "shoulda" heeded that warning signal. Any woman who takes such great pride in her emotional viciousness and aggression will inevitably turn that weapon on you if you hang around long enough. I did feel a deep sense of fear, which my own denial led me to deal with by confronting her on the implicit message. Of course, I got back her denial in the form of "It's just a JOKE. I'm ONLY TEASING. Lighten up." I was to receive the same answer almost verbatim more than a year later when she waved a knife at me and said menacingly "Remember John Bobbit."

From the outset, she began weaving her little spiderwebs of guilt around me. "I am the Goodbye Girl. Men ALWAYS leave me." Again, if I had had ANY sense, I would have thought "hm? There must be a reason for that." But, hey, you GOTTA remember that this was THE "little red-headed girl".

For the guys only - quick, what is the demanded response when you are fed the cue "men ALWAYS leave me."? Of course, "Well, *** I *** WON'T LEAVE YOU." Boom, there you are - suckered into making "a commitment".

And speaking of commitments, that was the next spiderweb: "Are YOU one of those men who CAN'T make a commitment?!!!!!" (lessee, oh yeah, the script says that here I say) "Of course not! I CAN TOO make commitments." Fortunately I'd seen this movie before - "When "Hairy Met Salacious" or something like that - and I still hadn't SLEPT with her, so this one didn't stick. "I have made lots of commitments in my life. The question always is 'commitment to what'?" Unfortunately, I was soon to lose this clarity.

Soon after the two-month mark, during which I was quite content to go out for an occasional bite to eat or other shared activity devoid of ponderous overtones of "romance", she started in on the tactic of "Don't you find me attractive? YOU are MAKING ME FEEL so BAD by not finding me attractive." Over the next several months this "YOU MAKE ME FEEL" battle would be fought many times. In many respects, her co-dependency was the root of all her woes. She could and would never even once take responsibility for her own feelings and instead always blamed them on someone else. The killer blow which freed me from any sense of being bound to treat this woman fairly in any respect came a few days after the xmas when I had blown over $1500 on her, her daughters, and her mother; when she nailed me to the wall with "YOU don't MAKE ME FEEL SPECIAL ENOUGH."

But, I didn't know or understand all that when I still remembered her as THE "little red-headed girl", when I was still hoping that our old friendship would provide a better foundation for a relationship than purely sexual attraction had done, and when I still naively believed that 2 people could work just about anything out if they talked about it fairly and honestly.

A "relationship" is a lot like a train - once you get on board, it takes an act of leaving to get off before the train reaches its destination. Inertia is a powerful force, and guilt an even more powerful one. On any given day, Pam Fuckaboot's tactics of emotional terrorism were not quite enough to warrant leaving and having to endure the all-out emotional war I knew she would begin to wage the moment I left. Like the old principle of the boiled frog, which shows that a frog put in already hot water will sense something wrong and jump out but a frog put in warm water will adjust to gradually increasing temperature until it boils to death, the emotional abuse that Pam Fuckaboot was capable of dishing out only became apparent over time. Each incident was not incrementally THAT MUCH worse than the one which came before it and I survived the previous one so I could no doubt survive this one.

Due to her family obligations of taking care of her mother and 2 dependent daughters, spending the night with her always meant spending it at her house. I would go there 2 or 3 nights per week, tuning out her bitching at her mom and kids as many a man has learned to tune out the bitching of some female in order to achieve some semblance of domestic harmony. Then we would go to her room, go to bed, and I would pray that she was tired and wouldn't be interested in sex. Usually, pretending to be tired and fall immediately to sleep would do the trick and once I turned my back on her she would leave me alone. But there were those times when she demanded my attention and the argument over why I didn't find her attractive would invariably ensue.

Over and over again I would explain the circumstances and how I needed some inclusion of things that I found interesting and exciting to dredge up any interest whatsoever. Over and over again I would hear everything I said denied and refuted and myself blamed entirely for my lack of interest. On one particularly ugly occasion, she told me to go get a shot of testosterone. That was the moment I began to hate her.

As things went from bad to worse, I got to the point where I couldn't stand any physical contact at all. It was during one of the many attempts to bridge the horrible gap of understanding that I got one of the first bits of insight which allowed me to unravel the mystery. She had offered me a backrub, a nice safe non-threatening way to make physical contact. We were in her office where she was printing something off her computer on her dot-matrix printer. As always, her touch was simply UNPLEASANT. I had long been confounded by women whose hands seemed to be dead and incapable of receiving feedback. The whole notion of women being the more sensual sex was still a persistent fiction which I had been unable to overcome. Rather than being pleasant in any way, this "backrub" felt like being poked and prodded. Several times I took her hands and showed her what would feel good and as soon as I let go she went back to poking me in time with the noise of the printer.

In a moment of revelation, I understood that her life was driven so much out of her head that she was simply incapable of ever being able to receive and interpret sensory data. Quite the contrary of the myth that women are sensual, more often than not they are playing out some script out of some stupid chick flick or romance novel and don't have a fucking clue what they are doing. Being someone who can tell the emotional state of someone by just touching them with my fingertips, and trained in massage, it had taken me a very long time to realize that NOT EVERYONE did that or even knew how to.

Over the next several months many battles ensued over the issues of what I needed to feel erotic, her refusal to take responsibility for her own feelings bound up in her repeated use of "YOU MAKE ME FEEL" and my refusal to take on responsibility for her feelings, and her guilt-trip attacks of taking a gaffer-hook of guilt and shame and shoving it in my gut by saying "I just wish that you knew how bad YOU MAKE ME FEEL, lying there night after night, wanting you so badly and knowing that you don't want me. I just hope that someday YOU WILL FEEL THAT BAD."

That gave me my exit cue. The key to our relationship was not how GOOD she wanted to "make me feel" as a result of being associated with her, but rather how BAD she could "make me feel." Even with all this, I STILL felt guilty about leaving her and was trapped by the sense of wanting her to understand WHY I was leaving. I still hadn't grasped that it was the fact that she was COMPLETELY INCAPABLE of this. In retrospect, it became easy to see that if she had shown the characteristic I wanted in order to make it EASY to leave, then it wouldn't have been impossible for me to do anything BUT leave.

In a culture which beats the hell out of men every day for being "bad guys" - rapists, abusers, bunglers, abandoners - I was getting ready to really be a "bad guy" and dump this crazy bitch. And I knew that when I did she would go nuts and try to extract whatever revenge she could and that she would get approval from society at large, and particularly from other women, when she did.

So, when I was recounting all this to my counselor, he looked at me and said - "There Ain't No Way Out, but OUT. "

I got the message. There wasn't going to be an easy exit. It was going to be war and war is hell. And I was going to have to take some lumps. And only when staying in the relationship became more offensive than leaving it, would I make the decision to walk.

She handed me the opportunity very shortly after this. On Christmas day, she waved a knife at me and said "Remember John Bobbit." This was one of her favorite tactics, make a horrible veiled threat and later pass it off as humor. I realized that someone so incapable of any concern or regard for a "significant other" that she could make such a threat was also likely capable of carrying it out, so I never went to sleep in her presence again. This started the ball rolling on the "final confrontation."

When she confronted me on the fact that I had stopped even sharing her bed, I tried one last time to confront the emotional terrorism and abuse which she heaped on everyone around her. Of course she denied any part in it and came back with "When two people are IN LOVE, then they SHOULD feel passion for each other." I pointed out that there was nothing resembling "IN LOVE" in the feelings I felt for her, at which point she went psychotic and began spewing accusations. Among them was the now famous, "YOU don't MAKE ME FEEL SPECIAL ENOUGH."

I realized then that I was staring into the bottomless maw of a black hole that would consume everything which was thrown into it and never be one bit less empty. I realized that I was looking at pure evil and that the "little red-headed girl" was nothing, and never had been anything, but a childish fantasy. I realized that this woman would consume and destroy me, IF I ALLOWED HER TO.

And self preservation kicked in and I said "So be it." and left.

The epilogue lasted many months and included countless screaming matches over the phone with her saying "I FEEL (this) and I FEEL (that)" and every damn thing in the world revolving completely and only around what she did or did not feel. (Which definitely still included not special ENOUGH.) In the end, I was forced to do almost what Winston Smith did at the end of the novel "1984" when he betrayed his former lover, Julia. When I had finally had enough of being abused and beaten with this woman's feelings, I finally responded "I DON'T GIVE A SHIT, what or how YOU FEEL."

And there it was: only by complete disconnection, only by achieving absolute and complete disregard for her precious fuckin' "feeeeeelings", was I able to free myself from their tyranny.
From that point on, it reads like a good-news/bad-news joke. The good news is that I don't give a shit about the feelings of a woman like that, so I am now immune to that form of emotional abuse and terrorism. The bad news is that so many women turn out to be exactly like that, that I don't give a shit about the feelings of any woman any more, so a close warm and loving relationship with a woman is now outside my capacity.

Of course, Pam Fuckaboot didn't accomplish this alone. She got help from the woman who destroyed a 20 year friendship by refusing to take "no" for an answer and harassing me for 3 years to turn our friendship into a sexual relationship. Her accusations of "you said I was fat, you said I was ugly" fell on deaf ears because I had never said anything like that. In the end, what killed the friendship was her vicious manipulation of trying to get revenge by implying to her husband that we WERE in fact having such a relationship in order to make him jealous enough to pay to her the kind of attention which I refused to pay. The night he showed up at my door at 1:00 am threatening to kill me, ended that "old friendship" as well.

Since those experiences, and many other similar experiences too numerous and lengthy to include here, my relationships with women have been much simpler, much more rewarding, and far less unpleasant. I DEMAND, not "ask", not "beg", not "hope", not even "expect", but DEMAND that my needs are respected or I show them my ass.

Having learned the depths of viciousness of which women are capable, I no longer make the naive assumption that women are the "fairer" sex so that if they behave abominably that there must be some "good excuse." Having learned that women are every bit as capable of being as abominable as the most abominable man, I go into every encounter with my eyes wide open and an attitude of zero tolerance.

I am no longer a nice man, a "sweet" man, or even a "gentle" man, but I have learned that those qualities make men sitting ducks for predatory women. In the gender war, I have made the decision that it is better to be a dis-honorable survivor than an honorable casualty.

EOTM: Road Trip '97

. · 14 March 2005 · Archived copy · Original

Prologue -

My "somewhat" Significant Other (sSO) had made a very, *very*, big deal over how threatened she had felt by the images of other women "in" our relationship. There was something very subtly shaming in the way she approached sex which manifested itself in many ways. In bed she was a master of the go-stiff-as-a-board "don't touch me there. no, not there either" erotic technique. She didn't like receiving oral sex, and giving it was *entirely* out of the question. After she had voice the first "you might be a serial rapist" fear, I had stopped sleeping with her until we could get the whole mess sorted out. It really is not a very good idea to sleep with a woman who harbors the suspicion that you "might" be a rapist.

I attempted to convey the resentments that men feel over being required to jump through hoops in order to "try" to have a sexually intimate relationship with a woman. Clearly, when it comes to sex it is most men's perception that women do indeed "make the rules." Like so many women, Ms Playboy as I have come to call her, was conditioned in childhood to withhold sexual and emotional intimacy until her demands were met. It is fascinating, sad, and somewhat frightening to watch a middle-aged woman continue to try to use this strategy even after it has gone bankrupt. I attempted to bridge the chasm between us when it came to sexual intimacy; by trying to get her to understand that the key element of the appeal of men's magazines is not the beauty of the models, but rather the elements of willingness and availability. The imagery that sells these magazines has far less to do with perfect faces and figures than it has to do with stimulating erotic interest and imagination that the women might actually *like* to have sex with you and be willing to do so without presenting a list of pre-requisite conditions as long as your arm and considering that once she has done so that you have incurred a debt toward her.

This strategy of demands and conditions is quite effective from puberty through middle-age, but after age 40 men slow down a lot and the urgency of their sex drive diminshes significantly. Up until that point they are fairly self-starting and often will do or agree to almost anything in order to have an outlet for their drive to engage in the act that continues the species. However, about the same time that women start facing menopause, men also contend with changes in their reproductive (sexual) drives. They begin to need significantly more participation on the part of the woman to develop an interest, and an erection. This is completely antithetical to having the woman be too excessive in her demands.

Of course, it turned out that I might as well have been talking to a stone wall. Not only did she never get any of it; she persisted in the rigidity of her conditions, even escalated them despite the fact that I had already chosen not to sleep with her based on the conditions already on the table. In one of the most surreal conversations I have ever had, she tried to entice me to begin sleeping with her again; as long as it was "nothing but 'straight' sex." I didn't even bother to ask her to define what that meant because it was obvious that whatever she did mean was going to be so confined, restricted, and devoid of excitement that wicked willie was not likely to be interested in coming out to play. She, of course, attempted to shame me for this but I didn't fall for it.

The relationship was quite dead by this point: we were just waiting for the coroner to pronounce it so. Two weeks after I got fired we went for a scenic drive up the Missouri river valley. Somewhere mid-drive she popped out the news that there was "this other guy" she wanted to "check out".

Huh?

She had met him twice, and the second time they met he started talking about where they were going to live when they got married and how many kids they were going to have. "He's lying", I told her. Men simply do not say such things the second time they meet a woman. "He's just trying to be what he thinks you want him to be."

Her ex-husband had done the same thing. After 17 years of "pretending" to be exactly as she wanted, because that is what men of that age were conditioned and trained to do, he lost the ability to keep up the pretense and began to resent it and to hate her for demanding that he do so. He began to fantasize that she was dead. This was where her pathological fear of magazines featuring female nudity came from. Her ex-husband had read such magazines and she was sure that his emotional bail-out came from the fact that she just didn't measure up to the airbrushed perfection portrayed there.

"Didn't you fall for this once before?" I asked. "Didn't your marriage fall apart because your husband could no longer keep up the facade of the 'perfect husband' and begin to hate you because everything about the marriage was dictated by your needs and desires?" She replied: "No! This is different. This guy is going to give me everything I want and I am not going to have to leave my comfort zone in order to get it. I just can't change enough to deal with you."

At that moment all the frustration I had been feeling, and all the conflict between acting ethically or selfishly, transformed into a single, clear, and unconflicted emotion: hate. I have always detested and held in utter contempt any person who expects or even tries to get something for nothing. I have always believed that the most fundamental rule of life is TJANSTAAFL: There Just Ain't No Such Thing as a Free Lunch.

I was struck absolutely speechless. It took several years for me to get over the monumental self-obsession of that statement and identify the visage of the evil behind the depths of the horror that I felt. In one of the many email "arguments/discussions" on the topics of gender relations, sexual relationships, and male/female roles in which I engage, a delightful Australian woman gave me the simple phrase that summed it all up: "She was REFUSING to be human." Not just choosing not to, not just failing in a good faith attempt: but being given the opportunity and flatly refusing.

Now the epilogue is what makes the whole story read like a tragedy from the "victim's" point of view, and like poetic justice from mine. About 2 years later I ran into her again. She had let the guy move into her house from Arizona. When I asked her how things were going, she got this pathetic look on her face and began a tale of woe about how things had gone fine for a couple of months then he "began to exhibit about 87 different personalities." She was so "traumatized" by the whole ordeal that she was still on Prozac 18 months later. "You told me so" she said. "Yes, I did." I replied then let it go at that and turned my attention elsewhere.

When she got up to leave, as she walked away she said "I'll give you a call." "Don't bother" I said. Either she heard or was at least smart enough to know that she would get no receptive ear to bend with her "Victim's Lament": she never called.

Now, was this one of those "Smart women who make foolish choices" as the title of the ultimate women-cannot-be-responsible book puts it? Or was this was an incredibly stupid woman who kept making the same incredibly stupid choices, was insensitive and exploitive to a degree impossible to imagine, had no regard for the feelings of others, and was so immature that she not see her hypocrisy in having two such monumentally disparate standards of behaviour for herself and for others.

Having found all these characteristics present to a lesser degree in virtually all the women I had met over the past 20 years, this overload on my "ability to give a shit about women and their concerns" circuit blew out my "relationship" fuse and left me in the state of mind where given a choice between a "relationship" and a root canal without anesthetic, I would choose the root canal.

Ms Playboy did not do it alone. She simply inherited and capitalized on years of history of finding it impossible to get either respect or reciprocity in my relationships with women: even women friends. The vast disparity between the public relations notions of relationships and the experiences of myself and virtually all my male friends make it seem that for years all of us have been taken in by a vast hoax.

There is a persistent cultural fictionalizing and idealization of women. Just a few days ago I heard a man mindlessly spout the old cliche that women were the "fairer" sex. I'm not sure what definition of "fairness" he was using, since the notion of "fairness" has vanished under the myth of male power and "patriarchy." Most women seem to subscribe to the methods advocated by Nora Fox in her editorial piece on fair fighting.

Certainly this is nothing like most men have in mind when they try to wade through that quagmire called today by the interesting euphemism "a relationship." Increasingly, "a relationship" seems to have become an ordeal to be endured more than a potential source of anything positive in a man's life. So why do we seek them so persistently? One answer, of course is sex. Sexuality to a man is in many respects the sole purpose of a man's life from the time puberty hits until "middle" age, and throughout history few men have lived much longer than that. The highly-paid advertising gurus would have us believe that the real reason we are alive is to see how many sport-utility vehicles we can buy. But deep within us lies the knowledge that the only reason we are alive is to carry on the species: the human race. Everything else is means, methods, and trappings.

About 90% of the reason than most men get up and go to work in the morning is so they can provide for their wives and children if they have them, or to make themselves attractive to a woman as a potential mate if they don't. With the divorce rate over 2/3, and with 40% of the current generation in the schools cut off from contact with their fathers, we have experienced an odd sort of cultural inversion of means and ends. The seeking of material wealth has become an end in itself rather than the means by which a man is able to provide comfortably with his family. And the pair-bonded relationship of marriage has become and end itself, with women becoming obsessed with getting on the fast track to wifehood. They seek sex with men they wouldn't marry as those men are, relying on the age-old principle that sex is the best way to jumpstart "romance". In the aftermath of the "sexual revolution" the essential process of courtship - getting to know one another and grow comfortable with the idea of spending the rest of one's life with that person - gets bypassed in the rush to get through the preliminaries without getting derailed. As a result, people who barely know each other end up in bed together and lock both of themselves into a set of vaguely defined and unrealistic expectations.

With the failure rate for first marriages at 68%, and with 3/4 of the divorces intiated by women; it turns out that slightly over half, 51%, of all women who get married will find the reality of the result so distasteful that they will

endure the legal carnage of a divorce in order to end it. Clearly the reason that women find it so much easier than men to "make a commitment", is that women in general find it 3 times easier to break a commitment once made. The seeds of the permission that women need to give themselves to do so are seen in the attitude of Nora Fox: “Why be fair?” The answer, of course, is that a "relationship" cannot survive without essential fairness. Without it, all you have is a power game. The old so-called "battle of the sexes" has taken a very ugly turn and escalated into the ”Gender War”.

Like the Wopper computer learned in the old movie "War Games" by playing tic-tac-toe, the old children's game which cannot be won and always ends in a draw or stalemate unless one player makes a really stupid mistake, the only winning move is NOT to play. Having encountered no other kind of woman in the past 30 years than the kind who wants/expects to get everything she wants "without having to leave her comfort zone", having been ruthlessly exploited by a long string of money obsessed employers in my attempts to make the "good living" which would make me attractive as a potential mate to women whom I no longer had any faith that I would find attractive as a mate, there didn't seem to be any point to any of it anymore.

So, I went for a long motorcycle ride.

EOTM: The Lies: Propaganda Used to Demonize a Non-Existant "Enemy"

. · 15 March 2005 · Archived copy · Original

Lie #1: Men are inherently violent, abusive, and exploitive. Women are universally passive victims who take no active role in violence. If a woman engages in violence, it it because she herself was abused.

Lie #2: Feminism is about equality, anyone who opposes feminism is therefore about equality

Lie # 3: Feminism represents ALL women, and ONLY the best interests of women.

Lie #4: One out of four women are victims of rape

Lie #5: Women make on $0.76 for every dollar men make

Lie # 6: Mothers are inherently better parents and nurturers than men.

Lie #7: Heterosexuality is socially constructed, there is no biological foundation to it whatsoever

---

MGTOW Library Articles on Feminist Propaganda

Back to Gender War, Sexuality, and Love

EOTM: The Lies: Domestic Violence

. · 15 March 2005 · Archived copy · Original

Lie # 1: Men are inherently violent, abusive, and exploitive. Women are universally passive victims who take no active role in violence. If a woman engages in violence, it it because she herself was abused.

Below is a rough summary of Domestic Violence studies and statistics. It is posted in raw form as I received it.

Hopefully, over time I will be able to put it in summary form and provide links to the sources.

Citations for scientific studies of domestic violence

Gelles, R.J. The violent home: A study of physical aggression between husbands and wives In 1974, a study was done which compared male and female domestic violence. In that study, it was found that 47% of husbands had used physical violence on their wives, and 33% of wives had used violence on their husbands (Gelles 1974). Half of the respondents in this study were selected from either cases of domestic violence reported to the police, or those identified by the social service agency. Very few men report being assaulted by their wives. This accounts for the lowered statistic for violent females, however it would be foolish to ignore 33% of the problem even if this was the only study available. Later studies are more accurate.

Chesanow, Neil, Violence at Home New Woman, February 1992, pg. 96-98. [Note: This is a very interesting article which appeared in a women's magazine, and argues that women are equally violent towards men in intimate relationships. One of the bases for Chesanow's arguments is that domestic violence among lesbian intimates is as common as domestic violence among heterosexual intimates—based on crime statistics.]

Curtis, L.A. Criminal violence: National patterns and behavior Lexington Books Lexington MA, In 1974, a study was released showing that the number of murders of women by men (17.5% of total homicides) was about the same as the number of murders of men by women (16.4% of total homicides). This study (Curtis 1974), however, showed that men were three times as likely to assault women as vice-versa. These statistics came from police records.

Wolfgang, M. Patterns in Criminal Homicide Wiley, New York, 1958

Mercy, J.A. & Saltzman, L.E. "Fatal violence among spouses in the United States, 1976-85" American Journal of Public Health 79(5): 595-9 May 1989 Curtis's murder statistic (above study) was no big news. In 1958, an investigation of spousal homicide between 1948 and 1952 found that 7.8% of murder victims were husbands murdered by wives, and 8% were wives murdered by husbands (Wolfgang 1958). More recently, in a study of spousal homicide in the period from 1976 to 1985, it was found that there was an overall ratio of 1.3:1.0 of murdered wives to murdered husbands, and that "Black husbands were at greater risk of spouse homicide victimization than black wives or white spouses of either sex." (Mercy & Saltzman 1989)

Steinmetz, Suzanne K. The cycle of violence: Assertive, aggressive and abusive family interaction Praeger Press, New York, 1977

Steinmetz, Suzanne K. The Battered Husband Syndrome Victimology 2, 1977-1978 In 1977, Suzanne Steinmetz released results from several studies showing that the percentage of wives who have used physical violence is higher than the percentage of husbands, and that the wives' average violence score tended to be higher, although men were somewhat more likely to cause greater injury. She also found that women were as likely as men to initiate physical

violence, and that they had similar motives for their violent acts (Steinmetz 1977-78).

Nisonoff, L. & Bitman, I Spouse Abuse: Incidence and Relationship to Selected Demographic Variables, Victimology 4, 1979, pp. 131-140 In 1979, a telephone survey was conducted in which subjects were asked about their experiences of domestic violence (Nisonoff & Bitman 1979). 15.5% of the men and 11.3% of the women reported having hit their spouse; 18.6% of the men and 12.7% of the women reported having been hit by their spouse.

Straus, M.A., Gelles, R.J., and Steinmetz, S.K. Behind closed doors: Violence in American families, Doubleday, NewYork, 1980 In 1980, a team of researchers, including Steinmetz, attempted to address some concerns about the earlier surveys (Straus, Gelles & Steinmetz, 1980). They created a nationally representative study of family violence and found that the total violence scores seemed to be about even between husbands and wives, and that wives tended to be more abusive in almost all categories except pushing and shoving.

Straus, M.A. & Gelles, R.J. "Societal change and change in family violence from 1975 to 1985 as revealed by two national surveys" Journal of Marriage and the Family 48, po. 465-479, 1986 Straus & Gelles did a followup survey in 1985, comparing their data to a 1975 survey (Straus & Gelles 1986). They found that in that decade, domestic violence against women dropped from 12.1% of women to 11.3% while domestic violence against men rose from 11.6% to 12.1%. The rate of severely violent incidents dropped for both groups: From 3.8% to 3.0% of women victimized and from 4.6% to 4.4% for men.

Sexuality Today Newsletter "Violence in Adolescent Dating Relationships Common, New Survey Reveals" December 22, 1986 In 1986, a report appeared in Social Work, the journal of the National Association of Social Workers (Nov./Dec. 1986) on violence in adolescent dating relationships, in which it was found that girls were violent more frequently than boys.

O'Leary, K. Daniel; Arias, Ilena; Rosenbaum, Alan & Barling, Julian "Premarital Physical Aggression" State University of New York at Stony Brook & Syracuse University Another report on premarital violence (O'Leary, et al) found that 34% of the males and 40% of the females reported engaging in some form of physical aggression against their mates in a year. 17% of women and 7% of men reported engaging in severe physical aggression. 35% of the men and 30% of the women reported having been abused.

Daly, M. & Wilson, M. "Parent-Offspring Homicides in Canada, 1974-1983" Science v. 242, pp. 519-524, 1988Nagi, Saad Child Maltreatment in the United States Columbia University Press, New York,

Statistical Abstract of the United States 1987 table 277 The idea of women being violent is a hard thing for many people to believe. It goes against the stereotype of the passive and helpless female. This, in spite of the fact that women are known to be more likely than men to commit child abuse and child murder (Daly & Wilson 1988 report 54% of parent-child murders where the child is under 17 were committed by the mother in Canada between 1974 and 1983, for instance. The Statistical Abstract of the United States 1987 reports that of reported child maltreatment cases between 1980 and 1984 between 57.0% and 61.4% of these were perpetrated by the mother. Nagi 1977 found 53.1% of perpetrators were female, 21% male and 22.6% both.

Nisonoff, L. & Bitman, I "Spouse Abuse: Incidence and Relationship to Selected Demographic Variables" Victimology 4, 1979, pp. 131-140 found that men and women reported quite similar instances of violence both by them and by their partner.

"The Battered Husband Syndrome" Victimology 2, 1977-1978, p. 499

Steinmetz, Suzanne K. The cycle of violence: Assertive, aggressive

and abusive family interaction Praeger Press, New York, 1977 found that wives were "more" violent than husbands. Steinmetz later left the field of domestic violence studies after alleging that infuriated feminists had made death threats against her children.

Wolfgang, M. Patterns in Criminal Homicide, Wiley, New York, 1958

Mercy, J.A. & Saltzman, L.E. "Fatal violence among spouses in the United States, 1976-85" American Journal of Public Health 79(5):595-9 May 1989 Two studies, 30 years apart, showing that on average wives kill husbands at a similar rate to that at which husbands kill wives.

Straus, Murray, Gelles, R.J., and Steinmetz, S.K. Behind closed doors: Violence in American families, Doubleday, New York, 1980 addressed earlier methodological problems, shows spousal abuse to be almost gender-neutral in almost all categories of violence.

Straus, Murray" & Gelles, R.J. "Societal change and change in family violence from 1975 to 1985 as revealed by two national surveys" Journal of Marriage and the Family 48, po. 465-479, 1986 shows that domestic violence by women is increasing and violence by men is decreasing. A more recent study, reported at a conference by Straus, shows the trend is continuing

Jurik & Gregware 1989 and Mann 1990. You will find that much fewer than half the female murderers have history of being beaten. Most women who murder their husbands are impulsive, violent, and have criminal records. Jurik (1989) and Jurik and Gregware's (1989) investigation of 24 cases in which women killed husbands or lovers found that the victim initiated use of physical forces in (40%) of the cases. Jurik and Gregware's Table 2 shows that only 5 out of the 24 homicides (21%) were in response to "prior abuse" or "threat of abuse/death." Mann's (1990) study of the circumstances surrounding partner homicides by wives shows that many women who murder their spouses are impulsive, violent, and have criminal records. Jurik (1989) and Jurik and Gregware (1989) also report that 60% of the women they studied had previous arrests.

Jurik, N. C. (1989 November).Women who kill and the reasonable man: The legal issues surounding female-perpetrated homicide. Paper presented at the 41st Annual Meeting of the American Society of Criminology, Reno, NV.

Jurik & Gregware (1989) "A method for murder: An interactionist analysis of homicides by women. Tempe: Arizona State University, School of Justice Studies.

Mann, C. R. (1990). Black female homicide in the United States, Journal of Interpersonal Violence, 5, 176-201.

O'Leary KD. Barling J. Arias I. Rosenbaum A. Malone J. Tyree A. April, 1989. Prevalence and stability of physical aggression between spouses: a longitudinal analysis. Journal of Consulting & Clinical Psychology. 57(2):263-8. Community couples (N = 272) were assessed in a longitudinal study of early marriage. More women than men reported physically aggressing against their partners at premarriage (44% vs. 31%) and 18 months (36% vs. 27%). At 30 months, men and women did not report significantly different rates of aggression (32% vs. 25%). However, using either the self-report or the partner's report, the prevalence of aggression was higher for women than men at each assessment period. Modal forms of physical aggression for both men and women were pushing, shoving, and slapping. Conditional probability analyses indicated that the likelihood of physically aggressing at 30 months given that one had engaged in such aggression before marriage and at 18 months after marriage was .72 for women and .59 for men. Furthermore, 25-30% of the recipients of physical aggression at all three assessment periods were

seriously maritally discordant at 30 months.

Spousal Abuse Rates - Stats from UCR and Straus, Gelles The data from the US National Crime Survey (NCS) states that 84% of the victims of "intimate" violence were female. ("Highlights from 20 years of Surveying Crime Victims", NCJ-144525.) It also puts the occurrence of this violent crime (from "intimates only") at 5.4 female victims per 1000 women per year - this is all crimes, some of which did not involve injury. For comparison, the rate for "Accidental injury, all circumstances" is given as 220 per 1000 adults per year - a figure 40 times higher. If one ac-cepts data such as that from the NCS, one must (at least if one is consistent and intellectually honest) admit that such violence is rare. The picture changes, though, when different techniques of investigation (methodologies) are used, such as those by "Straus, Murray" and Gelles. This data shows that domestic violence is MUCH more common. In fact, some degree of violence (NOT injury, however) occurs at a rate of 113 incidents per 1000 couples per year (hus-band on wife) and 121 incidents per 1000 couples pr year (wife on husband)! This is 20x the rate that the NCS reports.

Family Homicides - rates by gender - DoJ, 94 In July 1994 the Bureau of Justice Statistics of the U.S. Department of Justice released a Special Report detailing the results of a survey of family homicides in 33 urban U.S. counties. The report covered ONLY convictions, which should respond to any contention that female-on-male family violence is almost always reactive. The report said: "A third of family murders involved a female as the killer. In sibling murders, females were 15 percent of killers, and in murders of parents, 18 percent. But in spouse murders, women represented 41 percent of killers. In murders of their offspring, women predominated, accounting for 55 percent of killers."

"Among black marital partners, wives were just about as likely to kill their husbands as husbands were to kill their wives: 47 percent of the victims of a spouse were husbands and 53 percent were wives." U.S. Department of Justice

Conflict Tactics Scales To give a little background on how the rates of violence were determined, by "Straus, & Gelles", we include the following question from the published survey for the CTS methodology:

Question 35: No matter how well a couple gets along, there are times when they disagree, get annoyed with the other person, or just have spats or fights because they’re in a bad mood or tired or for some other reason. They also use many different ways of trying to settle their differences. I’m going to read some things that you and your spouse might do when you have an argument. I would like you to tell me how many times in the last 12 months you:

a. Discussed the issue calmly
b. Got information to back up your side of things
c. Brought in or tried to bring in someone to help settle things
d. Insulted or swore at the other one
e. Sulked and/or refused to talk about it
f. Stormed out of the room or house (or yard)
g. Cried
h. Did or said something to spite the other one
i. Threatened to hit or throw something at the other one
j. Threw or smashed or hit or kicked something
k. Threw something at the other one
l. Pushed, grabbed, or shoved the other one
m. Slapped the other one
n. Kicked, butted, or hit with a fist
o. Hit, or tried to hit with something
p. Beat up the other one

q. Threatened with a knife or gun
r. Used a knife or gun

To summarize, Straus & Gelles, using the CTS methodology described above, found that rates for total (including less severe violence, such as pushing and shoving) between husbands and wives are quite close for husbands and wives, with one survey showing husbands as more violent and the other with wives as more violent .

Other data, however indicates that the gender of the striker of the first blow is fairly uniform. Jan. E States and Murray A Straus, "Gender Differences in Reporting Marital Violence and It's Medical and Psychological Consequences", ch 9 in Straus & Gelles Physical Violence in American Families quote the following: Men claimed they struck the first blow in 44% of the cases, their female partners in 44% of the cases, and "couldn't remember" in 12% of the cases. The women claimed men hit them first in 43% of the cases, that they struck the first blow in 53% of the cases, and "couldn't remember" in 5% of the cases. However, data for injury rates based on these studies shows women seeking treatment for a doctor much more often than men did. In a study of 8145 families 7.3% of 137 women severely assaulted (i.e. 10 out of 137) and 1% of 95 men severely assaulted (i.e 1 out of 95) men needed a doctor.

(All figures are rates per 1000 couples per year, and the CTS figures are based on two national surveys of a representative population sample)
Recent Trends in Spousal Violence - Dept of Justice The U.S. Department of Justice released a study on domestic violence and spousal homicides on July 11, 1994. In this study it is reported that women kill men at approximately the same rate as men kill women in "spousal" homicides. (A "spousal" homicide is a husband or wife killing the other or a homicide perpetrated by a common-law marriage partner on the other partner.) In addition this study also reported that children were killed by mothers in 55% of all parental homicides. The 13th World Congress of Sociology, on July 19, 1994 revealed the average of spousal violence reports by males and females: Husband on wife severe assault occurred at a rate of 2.0%, whereas wife on husband severe assault occurred at a rate of 4.6%, and Husband on wife minor assault occurred at a rate of 9.9%, whereas wife on husband assault occurred at a rate of 9.5%. A rate of 2.0% means that during 1992 there were 20 instances of severe husband on wife assault for every 1000 couples.

Also reported at the conference was the fact that although male on female violence has been slowly decreasing over the last decade, female on male violence is now increasing sharply.

Various Spousal Violence Stats In 1975 and again in 1985, Murray A. Straus and Richard J. Gelles and others conducted one of the largest and most respected studies in family violence ever done. What they found confounded conventional wisdom on the subject: Not only are men just as likely to be the victims of domestic violence as women, the study showed that between 1975 and 1985, the overall rate of domestic violence by men against women decreased, while women's violence against men increased. Responding to accusations of gender bias, Straus re-computed the assault rates based solely on the responses of the women in the 1985 study and confirmed that even according to women, men are the ones more likely to be assaulted by their partner.

There is no question that while men on average are bigger and stronger than women, they can do more damage in a fistfight. However according to Professors R.L. McNeely and Cormae Richey Mann, "the average man's size and strength are neutralized by guns and knives, boiling water, bricks, fireplace pokers and baseball bats."

A 1984 study of 6,200 cases found that 86% of female-on-male violence involved weapons, contrasted with 25% in cases of male-on-female violence. McLeod, Justice Quarterly (2) 1984 pp. 171-193. Of every 100 families, 3.8 experience severe husband-to-wife violence, but 4.5% experience severe wife-to-husband violence. (Straus, Gelles, Steinmetz , Behind Closed Doors: Violence in American Families (1980). A 1985 study of Texas University

students, Breen found that 18% of men and 14% of women reported a violent act by a romantic partner. In the same study, 28% of married men reported that their wives had slapped, punched or kicked them. (Shupe, Stacey & Hazlewood). "Violent Men, Violent Couples (1986) Chapter 3. In another study, 15.5% of men and 11.3% of women reported having hit a spouse while 18.6% of men and 12% of women reported been struck by a spouse. Nisnoff & Bitman, Victimology 4, (1979), pp. 131-140.

Back to Gender War, Sexuality, and Love

EOTM: The Rocky Road to True Equality

. · 16 March 2005 · Archived copy · Original

The road to true gender equality will be long and rocky. The first hurdles to be overcome are feminism and the feminists. Today, the so-called "radical left" and "radical right" have curved around to meet each other and enclose the majority of the population which really agrees with neither of them. The loudest, most strident, voices calling women weak, stupid, and incapable of competing in the world at large are the feminists. A huge industry has sprung up feeding on the carcasses of destroyed marriages like hyenas or buzzards feed on dead animals and road-kill. The professions of lawyers, social workers, Domestic Violence "Advocates", psychologists, and thousands of TeeVee talking heads are breeding like maggots in the decaying carcass of social stability.

How do we accomplish this?

A wonderful example is given in the movie "Dangerous Liasons" starring John Malkovich and Glenn Close. For those of you who have not seen it, it is a period piece set in 18th century France. Malkovich plays a cold and calculating seducer of women and Close plays his female counterpart. Both are thoroughly corrupt, duplicitous, and some would say outright evil. They both use and betray the other. In the end, they both manage to destroy the other in a way that also destroys themselves. Men and women could and should take a clue from this. She tells her fervent young lover of Malkovich's vile acts, and the chivalrous young lad of course leaps the defense of female honor by challenging Malkovich to a duel. Worn and weary from all his own manipulations, Malkovich in the end falls on the young man's sword. As he dies, he hands the lad a bundle of letters from Close which show clearly the depths of her own betrayals. When she next attends the opera, the central social institution in the lives of upper class France in that era, the entire audience, having read her letters and knowing the full extent of her self-serving and vicious manipulation, rises to its feet and boos her out of the theatre.

Women and men must begin to stand together to boo the liars and users out of their social rewards which they gain by using and destroying other people. And, for the present, this will result in more women than men getting booed. Instead of "you GO, girl" when a woman acts viciously and exploitively toward a man, women must give up their peculiar solidarity and begin to boo the bitch off the stage. As men have stood up for women in "Take back the night" marches and by coming out against domestic violence by men, so must women stand up for men against false allegations of rape, sexual harassment, or violence and abuse, as well as against women perpetrators of these atrocities against male targets and children.

Women must begin to face up to the fact that women DO lie, and they frequently do so to gain the advantages which our culture provides in the way of special protections for women. Women must begin to take active and vocal stands against the laws which create such privileges, like the "Violence Against Women Act".

Women must begin to support choice for men (c4m) and realize that if a woman makes the decision to either conceive a child, or to give birth to one conceived as a result of birth control failure, that such is HER choice and that she cannot under a system of equality demand of a male that he support that child if he chooses to relinquish paternal rights.

We are talking about "EQUALITY", right?

Both genders must begin to boo anyone off the stage who stands up and pontificates about "Patriarchy", or whines about "OPPRESSION", or digs through history with a magnifying glass and tweezers trying to create tort and harm out of hapstance and find "gender bias" in random occurances of words in language.

Yesterday died last night. And tomorrow ain't happened yet. We create tomorrow by what we do TODAY, and if we make today either a carbon copy of or in reaction to yesterday, today will become a tomorrow just like yesterday.

He wounds her, so she wounds him. So he wounds her. And the chain of violence continues unbroken.

Women must begin to boo any woman who uses "abuse excuse" and begin to shout at her "GROW UP", "GET A LIFE." They must give up for themselves and STOP accepting from other women the endless stream of excuses why they simply cannot do anything except be helpless and weak and demand that men rescue them.

Men must shrug off the mantle of "chivalry" and stop rescuing women and start letting them suffer from the consequences of their own choices.

And men and women both, must learn the true Art of Loving and stop treating each other like objects.

Women must abandon their stupid fantasies about “romance”, and men their stupid heroic fantasies.

Both genders must work together to establish a level playing field for the generations which follow us.

Back to Gender War, Sexuality, and Love

EOTM: Double-THINK, double, triple, and quadruple messages

. · 17 March 2005 · Archived copy · Original

" 'No' means 'no' ", except when it it doesn't, in which case it means "maybe", or maybe it means "yes", or maybe it means "yes, but...", or maybe...

Aw, the hell with it. Who knows what the hell it means?

Always interested in keeping up with what the enemy is thinking and up to, I regularly pick up Cosmo to see what kind of drivel women are being fed about men. In the current issue (today being 3/2/99) there is an article about a couple of things women do to keep men from saying "I Love You", plus some other useful advice to women which explains certain male behaviors that they love to bash. I was pleasantly surprised when the first topic dealt with was a woman asking:

"Even when I am giving him the 'yes' signal, he still won't make a move. Why?"

Instead of the stupid male-bashing gark which is usually dished out in that rag, I found the very realistic response "WHAT SIGNAL" in the male's reply. Hmmmmm? Does this question about "yes" signals and why men don't pick up on them mean what I think it means? Is this even the barest hint that sometimes women do, indeed, "ask for" men to "make a move" on them? Is this a tiny break in the wall of denial that sometimes women do, indeed, "ask for it"?

Horrors! Alert the feminazi thought police! BURN THOSE BOOKS! We CAN'T let that statement go UNPUNISHED!!!!!!

Here, we confront one of the most pervasive, and for men destructive, double messages which they get from women, and the most dangerous example of the double-THINK which our culture is permitting among women. For, in fact, we DO KNOW that women still rely almost entirely on passive strategies to attract male attention, and still absolutely refuse to stick their necks out and be as clear and explicit in their interest as the "Antioch Rules" would require.

It also explains why women are more and more going for the most aggressive and marginalized males: because they are the only ones who will still take the risk to interpret an ambiguous signal as a possible "yes" instead of a possible "no".

Daphne Patai, in her "Heterophobia: Sexual Harassment and the Future of Feminism" tackles the nightmarish atmosphere of academia today. The "sex police", driven to find victims under every rock, "harassers" in every office not occupied by a woman, and make heterosexuality a thing of the past; aided and abetted by a vast army of opportunistic women ready and willing to retire on the several million bucks they can get for having to "suffer" just about any off-color comment; have certainly managed to put men in a "damned if you do, damned if you don't" postion. Or perhaps more accurately: "sued if you do, slammed if you don't."

Do women appreciate the diffculty of men's position when it comes to the runaway abuse of SH law? HA! Dream on, guys. Female enticement and male intiation have been the basic steps of the mating dance since we were on all-fours and sniffing women's butts, instead of looking at their actions, to determine sexual receptivity. (A practice to which I heartily endorse returning.) Giving away the tactical advantage of being able to deny that it IS something SHE WANTS would totally undermine women's traditional power base. Hell, just look at Bill and Monica. How in the world a self-serving power groupie can manage to be seen as everyone's niece "used and abandoned" by a man

"old enough to be her father" is beyond me. But, hey, that's why they call it "The Feminine Mystique."

It's a tough choice for guys these days. Either they can act within the socially positive values with which they were brought up, and watch while the scumbags walk away with a girl on each arm, or they can try to ignore all that and just go for it, in which case they will end up having their asses sued off if they have have any ass to sue for. It's enough to turn you into a misogynist.

What pisses me off more than anything else is the number of these little whiners who say "I GAVE him the 'yes signal', why didn't he take me?" and ALSO show up at "Women Take Back The Night" rallies. Coming close in the piss-off hierarchy are the males who are doing their best to continue to let these women have it both ways.

The sooner men start implementing " 'No' REALLY DOES mean 'no', and unless you say a clear, explicit, and unambiguous 'yes', you aren't gonna get the time of day", the sooner we will start striking an effective blow against the runaway abuse of Sexual Harassment and false claims of SH and rape.

Back to Gender War, Sexuality, and Love

EOTM: "Can't We All Just Get Along?" "Can't We Just Go Out On A Date?"

. · 18 March 2005 · Archived copy · Original

"The Feminists -v- The Marriage License Bureau of the State of New York...All the discriminatory practices against women are patterned and rationalized by this slavery-like practice. We can't destroy the inequities between men and women until we destroy marriage." -- From *Sisterhood Is Powerful*, Morgan (ed), 1970 p. 537.

USA Today, 3/3/99, citing the US Census Bureau, reported that the number of people currently married has fallen to an all-time low. While not specifying the age at which one is considered an "adult", the paper showed a graph comparing the various marital statuses in 1970 and 1998. Since 1970, the percentage of married adults has fallen from 68% to 56%. One might say that the feminists are well on their way to accomplishing their objective of destroying marriage.

Against the backdrop of the Great Impeachment Circus of 1998-99 with its revelations of the marital infidelities of the US president, and all the hypocritical moralistic posturing that went with it as moral paragon after moral paragon bit the dust after past maritial lapses came to light, no small amount of dialogue has been generated on the subject of marriage. One must wonder whether the institution of marriage is a robust enough vessel to contain all the bitterly conflicting expectations and demands placed on it. Face it, any company that put out a product that self-destructed over 50% of the time would not remain in business for long.

A phrase that began to be used repeatedly during the 13 month long nightmare of the Bill-and-Monica show was "culture war." Either our culture seems to be a war with itself, or we have two or more separate and distinct subcultures within the larger culture. This is certainly true on the topic of marriage. The website http://www.cyberparent.com/women/marriage.htm has a whole list of articles on women's view of marriage. One of these Marriage: Why are women leaving marriage in droves? goes into some depth about the expectations that "society" creates in the minds of both men and women regarding WOMEN'S role in marriage. I found the whole thing rather banal and cliche-ridden. Sadly, the author claimed to be a male:

Oh, my, my, my," says Society with a capital "S," while wringing its hands and shaking its head, "If we could just get those women back to the farm... If we could just get that genie back in the bottle..."

Is it true?

If we could just get these women back to the farm; if we could just get women to stay home again, would they be afraid to leave marriage because the kids might starve?

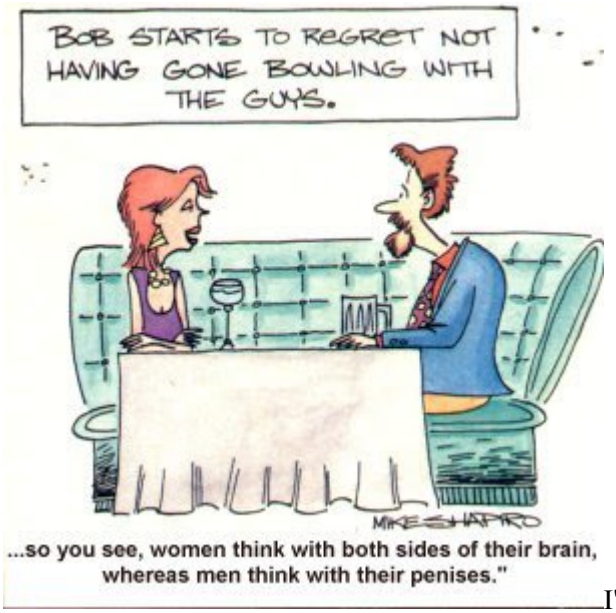
If we could just get those women under control again, reverse those child support laws, and go back to the old ways, would everything be better?

If we could just return to the "good ol' days" when men were men and women were women and everyone knew their place in marriage, would marriage work again?

Obviously, we do have two totally different cultures around here somewhere. I keep wondering where these alleged "independent" women hang out. Unlike the women represented in these articles, I have yet to actually meet one in person for whom marriage, and "true love", and "happily ever after" was not the ultimate goal. The myth of the "independent woman" is compellingly attractive, but so far I have yet to find a confirmed sighting of one. And

"independence" is a very relative term. On one web site I ran across the statement by a woman that men were "nice to have around -- sometimes." So are Mariachi bands -- sometimes. Maybe these 3rd wave feminists have gotten over the spit-in-your-face independence of "A woman without a man is like a fish without a bicycle", but being regarded as a marginally useful household appliance seems hardly worth all the effort that goes into a relationship.

Then there's the grisly gauntlet of dating. And here is where I find the situation portrayed in the article cited above to be exactly reversed. All the women I've ever encountered in a "dating" context had been told a whole lot by "society" about what she "should" want and what I was like, and none of it rang true.



I've lost track of the number of times I've been in Bob's shoes. Progressively thoroughout the 80s and 90s "dating" seems to have become an endurance test to see just how much offensiveness and contempt a man will put up with from a woman and still come back for more. Particularly when juxtaposed against the claim that women are the "feelings experts" and the "relatitionship experts", or against any of the concepts of "love" or even affection prevalent in our culture, the actual behavior of women has become so bizarre that it almost defies explanation and understanding.

Despite the best efforts of the heterophobes and the lesbian separatists, men and women are still attracted to each other and women, at least, still seem to regard "THE Relationship" as a kind of holy grail. But somewhere along the line any notion of mutuality or reciprocity seems to have gotten lost in the fiction of historic male power and privilege. The old Victorian notions of female sexual disinterest and male sexual depravity recycled into the legal mechanisms of Sexual Harassment, Date and Marital Rape, and pornography-as-violence-against-all-women have further suppressed the expression of female sexuality and pathologized and criminalized male sexuality. And millions of women sit around and wonder why they can't get a date.

Hardly a day goes by that I don't see more evidence, another example, of how women have completely lost touch with any sense of men as human beings, and with any notion about what is or might be attractive to men. Apparently, many women believe that men thrive on abuse and that the more abrasive and unpleasant a woman can be toward a man the more he will "Love" her. Such thinking does not impress men with women's general level of intelligence. The female method of talking feelings and situations to death is in direct conflict with men's tendency to deal with things as simply as possible. Having to explain to a woman why the situation depicted in the above cartoon is so incredibly obnoxious, offensive, demeaning, and infuriating to men seems ridiculous to most men. How in the world ANYONE could expect someone to listen to this kind of crap and not begin to detest the person putting it out is simply incomprehensible. The only possible conclusion is that the woman is completely devoid of social graces, arrogant and contemptuous of men to a degree which is almost impossible to believe, cruel and

sadistic in many respects, and none too bright.

Thousands of examples of this kind of immature, self-centered and narcissistic world view can be found on the web. For Valentine's Day 1999, msnbc.com posted an article entitled "Dating Myself: Remembering how to date again is not like riding a bike". After the obligatory modern-woman/single-mom assertion that she was perfectly happy being single and raising her daughter alone, the woman went on to describe her desire to "reinvigorate the date."

"About a year ago, someone I met at a dinner invited me out on a date."...

"This is how it went: We met at a dinner and talked to each other and then we talked to other people. I thought he seemed nice and attractive though he did not inspire that breathless, pheromone-filled instant response. (Those are usually reserved for men I discover are either happily married or homosexual.) Three days later, he called, I answered, we chatted and he asked if I wanted to go out for dinner. Just like that. I even accepted and we were on for Thursday night. This is strategically a good night since it is not burdened by the significance of a weekend or an unencumbered next day, Thursday is a sincere night without being an officially romantic one. "...

She then went on to describe her preparations for "the date" which included lying to her 6 y/o daughter about why she was dressing up and putting on makeup to spare her daughter the "complications" of *"Introducing an insignificant man into the picture..."*

"I kissed her goodbye and drove to my date. Let me say this again, my dinner date. At a fancy restaurant downtown. For one panicky moment I wondered if I would actually remember what this date of mine looked like. He had a mustache I think. I assume he will remember me."...

*"We met at the bar. He recognized me which was a good thing because I only half recognized him. I wanted to feel the rush of flirtation inspired by chemistry, but only felt the rush of exhileration inspired by getting acquainted — **less with him, as it turned out, than getting reacquainted with myself as a datable woman. "...***

"THE OUTCOME "

"Nothing much came of that date. We went out a few times. He even kissed me. He wanted things to move much quicker than I, not sexually which I can handle, but in terms of "life integration."...

*"Many single mothers have no interest in a Big R relationship but would love to go on a date. Here are some **rules** for dating a single Mom:*

1) Don't push for meeting the kids.

2) Pay for the date.

3) Make the plan. One option, as with children, is to give a choice — would you like to go to Paris or would you like to see a movie? — and let me decide.

4) Single mothers are pathetically grateful for small gestures but since we are so constrained by the circumstances of our lives, you don't have to worry that we will leap to conclusions and assume that a flower means a marriage proposal.

5) Offer to pay for the babysitter. Even though the offer will be refused, it is a lovely gesture.

6) Limit your own expectations about her availability — twice or three times a month is a big deal."

Again, from the male point of view it is unfathomable that this woman, or any woman, could be so self-centered and narcissistic that she would regard the entire purpose of a "date" as being ***"...getting reacquainted with herself as a datable woman."*** **And women complain about men turning WOMEN into objects!!!!** Do women REALLY have to have it explained to them that the ENTIRE REASON a man would ask them out on a "date" is because that man has the desire to become something MORE than an "insignificant man" in that womans life?!!!! If so, no wonder "relationships" are going down the tubes.

What is fascinating about this woman's account is the strange mixture of traditional expectations of gallantry, generousity, and take-charge attitude from a man (pay, plan the date, offer to pay for the babysitter) combined with her new-age attitudes of liberation (being perfectly satisfied with her life as a single mom, being able to "handle" sexual "intimacy" but NOT "life integration"). Particularly offensive in light of women's constant harping on wage parity and supposed male obsession with money, is the suggestion in the plan-the-date "rule" that the type of man this woman would consider a "datable man" is one with the financial resources to be able to offer a trip to Paris with the same ease that most men could offer a movie.

This woman's attitude is a perfect example of a very significant and destructive disconnect between the way men view "dating" or "a date" and the way women view dating. Again, from the male point of view, it seems rather amazing to have to explain that any activity which meets the needs and expectations of only one of the participants while frustrating the needs and the expectations of the other is going to be regarded as a "bad deal" by the one whose needs are being treated with contempt and is going to raise some very realistic resentment and animosity.

Men generally regard "a date" as a mechanism for getting to know someone with whom they have more than a passing interest in developing more of a relationship. If the woman makes the fact known that she considers the male to be nothing more than "an insignificant man", most men have have no shortage of other things to spend their money on and will no doubt choose to do just that. So, from there very beginning, there is a sense that the woman is behaving in a fraudulent manner: she is taking advantage of the man on false pretenses. It is clear from this woman's description that she regards "a date" as an opportunity to dine on expensive meals, or take expensive trips, at someone else's expense. A very fundamental conflict in male/female relationships is that where women seem to see this as an entitlement which is nothing more than their just due, men see it quite differently.

The much lamented lack of available "dates" for women stems directly from this phenomenon. She herself wants to be treated as somehow significant, as a "datable woman" (whatever that means), yet at the same time does not see the need for this regard to be reciprocal. Of course, we all know what this perceived differential in the value of companionship is based upon: the unspoken, or nearly so, implicit possibility of sex.

Another great example is from a singles ad posted on the web by a woman from Georgia, USA.

Okay, so I went to the "tips on writing ads". That helped! I am a divorced 46 year old FEMALE, 5'4", 120lbs. (give or take 5lbs. [constantly]). I always thought that was what "The Battle of the Bulge" meant. I know you will want my measurements so I'll go where no woman has ever gone before and tell you. Just had them taken last week. 36-26-35. I was told that I was one inch from being perfect. The person who said this, you have to understand, did not know of my sharp tongue, at the time. I work for a Periodontist as an assistant. If I had but one wish in life, it would be for happiness. I am seeking to find someone out there who is honest to a fault, not too hard to look at, rather tall, great personality, loves to pamper women, opps, erase that, I meant, loves to pamper a woman, knows how to give and take, will understand that most women will, one way or the other, get in that last word, understands that sex is not everything (I realize that will exclude 90% of you guys), understands that sex is an important part of things, (what can I say, I'm a woman, you're not suppose to understand what that meant), likes to stay home and watch movies and cuddle, would

rather walk in the rain than weed the garden, knows plenty of GOOD jokes, can listen as well as talk, have most of their own teeth, knows how to hold up there end of an intelligent conversation and has great come backs. I know, I sound like an awful person, but I'm really not. I'm a very giving and caring person. Sometimes to a fault. And I will end this application with one old saying. Which is "When I'm good, I'm good, but when I'm bad, I'm real good." Now, name that tune. ;->

Now first of all, let's look at the fact that a woman who places an ad in an INTERNATIONAL forum might be realistically classified as "desperate." However, like the narcissist only interested in dating herself described above, she feels the need to obscure this fact. Let's "deconstruct" this woman's ad and list the things that she is demanding of a potential relationship versus the things she is offering in return. Her "conditions" or "rules" are:

1. Her one wish in life is for *"happiness"* (Wow! That makes her unique. Sure glad she told me that. Tells me a WHOLE lot about her.

2. *Honesty to a fault.* (nothing wrong with that)

3. *"...not too hard to look at, rather tall, great personality..."* (Wow! Another unique revelation. Since most women are looking for repulsive short trolls, she obviously won't have much competetion for those remaining tall, good looking men with great personalities.)

4. *Loves to pamper women*. No. Wait. ONE woman - her. (Hey, this woman is getting more "special" and unique with every condition. Since so few women want to be pampered and instead would rather knock themselves out pampering a man, all those guys out there seriously suffering from lack of a woman to pamper will surely trample each other beating down this woman's door.)

5. Will just accept the fact that *she is always going to have "...that last word."*

6. *Understands that sex is not everything. "(I realize that will exclude 90% of you guys.)"* (Can we say "men think with their penises"?)

7. *Understands that sex is an important part of things. "(what can I say, I'm a woman, you're not suppose to understand what that meant)"* (Can we say "feminine mystique".)

8. *"likes to stay home and watch movies and cuddle, would rather walk in the rain than weed the garden, knows plenty of GOOD jokes, can listen as well as talk, have most of their own teeth, knows how to hold up there end of an intelligent conversation and has great come backs."* (Can we say "yadda, yadda, yadda"?)

Ummm. Makes ME want to offer her the choice — *between a trip to Paris or a movie — and let her decide.* Some good samaritan needs to suggest to this woman that she retake her "tips on writing ads" course. Even she, herself, realizes how bad her ad sounds when she says *"I know, I sound like an awful person, but I'm really not. "* A poor dumb male, thinking only with his penis and not with "both sides of a female brain", would ask WHY, if she knows that her ad makes her sound like an *"awful person"* she went ahead and POSTED IT. However, all this proves is that men REALLY DON'T understand women at all.

Now let's look at the list of what she is offering in return for all these sterling male qualities:

1. *divorced* (and likely bitter about it) *46 year old* (high milage) *FEMALE*, (why all capital letters?) *5'4", 120lbs. (give or take 5lbs. [constantly]). I always thought that was what "The Battle of the Bulge" meant.* (Great, so hanging around with her will mean constantly having to field the question "Do you think I look fat?") *I know you will want*

my measurements so I'll go where no woman has ever gone before and tell you. (Oh, you daring and mischievious devil, you.) *Just had them taken last week. 36-26-35. I was told that I was one inch from being perfect.*
2. *a sharp tongue* (can be vicious and emotionally abusive if "provoked" by the suggestion that anything about her is NOT "perfect")

3. contempt and dismissal of 90% of men because they like sex - A LOT (more than she does) .
4. demand for sex that meets HER needs, despite the fact that she has already made it clear that she has no intention of respecting or meeting the MAN'S needs or at least any of the 90% of men who place a different level of importance on sex than she does.

5. *being a very "caring and giving person"* (Fooled me.)

6. *being "very good" when she is being "bad".* (An obvious sexual innuendo promising much which the entire rest of her ad makes it clear that she has no intention to deliver, plus indication of a shame-based view that sex is "bad".)

If this is an example of a woman thinking with both sides of her brain, it's really scary to contemplate how stupid she might be if she wasn't using her capabilities to the fullest extent possible.

These two women are examples of the "rear guard" of the gender war. Each of them illustrates some of the paradoxes which now poison male-female relationships. What they have in common is that they are both seeking and want to exercise a uniquely female form of power: sexual power. The younger woman, the single mother, views having a man ask her out as confirmation of her sexual power as a "datable woman": i.e. one who can set the "rules", regard a man as insignificant, demand that he pay and do all the work involved in dating, and expect nothing in return except perhaps sex. I'm sure it would be impossible to get this woman to see how her attitude guarantees that the only type of man she will encounter will be of the "buy her dinner or a trip to Paris - get laid" mentality. Or how women like her reinforce all the most negative stereotypes which men hold of women.

Even more disturbing is the fact that this image is being promoted by very influential media- MSNBC.COM, the partnership between Microsoft and NBC - as the idealized "new woman." Her contention that *"Many single mothers have no interest in a Big R relationship but would love to go on a date. "* reinforces the old stereotypes of divorcees as somewhat "loose women" who will spread their legs for a man for the price of a meal. And she is very clear in warning off men who might want to integrate themselves into her life. The man who did her the great favor of reaffirming her sexual power to attract men and be able to demand money and gifts from them with the hint of possible sexual favors given in return may have been a much better candidate for the type of husband that women claim to want than the woman's ex-husband was. However, she reverses the situation shown in the cartoon above. While he wants to meet her kid and integrate himself into her life, she is looking for *"...that breathless, pheromone-filled instant response..."* and *"... that rush of flirtation inspired by chemistry..."*

One could very accurately say here that this woman is "thinking with her pussy" while the man is "thinking with both sides of his brain."

This would be tolerable and probably not even annoying in a world where the cartoon above did not exist. However, the negative stereotyping of males and the blaming of men for the choices of women are what has made this into a gender WAR. This woman would like to be treated with respect and regard for her feelings and circumstances, yet the notion of reciprocity seems beyond her ability to grasp. Again, from the male point of view it is impossible to understand why women cannot see how it would only take a very few encounters with women like this to convince a man that women generally view sexual and intimate relationships in the same way that a prosititute does: sex in exchange for money or gifts or trips to Paris. Then when he treats the next woman he encounters as these women literally demanded that he treat them, that woman gets hurt and offended.

The middle-aged divorcee presents an even more confusing mix of modern and traditional values. The only things she offers in her ad are related to her sexuality - her measurements, her contention that they are "almost" perfect, a picture of herself in an evening gown (or lingerie) showing an ample portion of cleavage, and the promise to be "very good" for the man who could entice (bribe) her to be "bad." She makes it clear that sex will be on her terms, not his; that she will ALWAYS expect to get her way (the last word); makes a veiled threat of verbal and emotional abuse (sharp tongue); and tries to belie the desperation which is obvious in her placing an ad in an international venue when only thousanths of a % of the potential readers are in her geographic vicinity. All in all, it is a very sad picture of a woman trying desperately to hold onto her sexual power and avoid having to face the realization that she has essentially none.

Thus is the face of womanhood of the 1990s and beyond which men must confront. And it's a picture which will turn the stomach of any decent man. More that any other gender related "gap" of the gender war, these women are the primary agents in creating what might be termed "the compassion gap." To use the phrase which has now become "fighting words" in any conversation about the relationships between the sexes, when it comes to their isolation and loneliness these women did indeed "ask for it."

The last time I found myself in Bob's situation, I didn't just regret not having gone bowling with the guys. I asked for the check, threw the money on the table, and walked out. Men indirectly give women permission to bash them, and keep on bashing them, by putting up with it. If an ad or article like the ones I've quoted above annoy me enough and there is a means of responding which doesn't cost me any money, I "deconstruct" what they've said and challenge them on it. I am one male who does NOT give women permission to keep on being unbearably obnoxious and offensive toward me either directly, or indirectly by bashing ALL men.

In many respects, I hold ALL women accountable for the excesses of feminism because, while they may not have actively participated, they have been quite content to ride along on the coattails of the feminist extremists while men were being beaten down with shame and guilt. The clear and direct benefit to women has been to make men even more pliable, apologetic, and willing to sacrifice their own wants and needs in order to "please" women. Bell Hooks nailed this phenomenon on the head.

"A lot of women want to use feminism as a means for success in their careers and power in public life, then when they go home, they want to re-enter the space of traditional femininity. The personal will always be political,"

Women have had a few golden years during which they have been able to have it both ways. They have been able to gain economic and political power without relinquishing one bit of their traditional sexual power in relationships. A fascinating example of this was reflected in the attitudes of recent female graduates from one of the eastern Ivy League colleges. While they expected to make as much money as any of their male classmates, they also expected to marry men who were both older and more successful than they were.

This is a perfect example of how the absolute untruths in feminist theory have set women up for some bitter disappointments. The absolute blind faith in the mystical power of men to generate income rests on the absolute denial of the way in which the entire culture was structured to provide income to men FOR THE PURPOSE OF SUPPORTING FAMILIES.

My college roomate provided the perfect example of this about 25 years ago. He went to work for a major insurance company as a computer programmer trainee. In those days all computer training was OJT - the experienced programmers did all the teaching. One day my roomie's trainer told him to send a message addressed to the trainer's console. What he had done was to render his console ineligible to receive any messages. My roomie, being a real smart ass and none-too-bright, sent a message regarding the sexual habits of the president of the company with dead bears. The message showed up on the main operator's console as an error msg. When my

roomie went to work the next day, first thing he was called into his supervisor's office. There was a stack of printouts on the guy's desk with line after line of roomie's smart-assed mistake.

His boss told him: "IF you had a wife and children to support, we would give you another chance. But you don't, so hit the road."

Before this whole social transformation took place, it was clearly understood in all segments of society that men were responsible for protecting and providing for women and children. Some percentage of a man's wages was therefor dependent to the degree to which he was living up to this responsibility. What the wage-parity hysterics will scream down immediately is any attempt to compare the wages of NEVER-MARRIED men and women. Even as long ago as the 1950s, never-married career women made as much or more than their male counterparts. It was also a well known fact that married men made more than single men. This was in the days when most businesses considered themselves part of the community and that they also bore some responsibility for community stability.

ALL this has changed in the past quarter century.

As the "men's movement" has stumbled around in the dark seeking a voice, it has done so in the complete shadow of feminism. Caught off-guard by the unexpected vehemence of the man-hatred which has always been an integral part of feminism, but from which many women who call themselves "feminists" are seeking to distance themselves today by adding qualifiers like "equity feminism" or "gender feminism", men have waivered between the "not guilty" and "mea culpa" positions. The rising tide of anti-male sentiment, man-bashing, and culture-wide character assassination of men has kept men off balance for the past 35 years.

Finally there does seem to be a rising backlash against feminist extremism. Not the kind depicted in the paranoid rantings about delusions of persecution contained in Susan Faludi's "Backlash: The Undeclared War Against American Women", but a more directed and fact-based examination of the disastrous consequences to society of allowing a bunch of spoiled little would-be princesses run loose unchecked in their demands.

The results of the denial of female sexual power and the biological underpinnings of it are beginning to come home to roost. As this first generation of this "second wave" of feminism reaches the mid-point of its life-cycle, women like the middle-aged divorcee above are having to confront the fact that they have no real sexual power any more. Men who have achieved the financial success and have all those desirable personality attributes which she demands are becoming fully aware that they are just as desirable to 25 y/o women as they are to 45 y/o women, and that the 25 y/o women are a lot more attractive to THEM.

By destroying the essential foundation of courtesy and respect formerly part of "dating" relationships, women have invited men to treat them with the same contempt that women have been showing to men for the past 3 decades. Men like R. Don Steele, author of "Steel Balls", are promoting an approach to women which is equally ruthless and exploitive to the one which women have been pursuing toward men since the late 1960s. Men like myself, who have fought long and hard against the exploitation and counter-exploitation cycle which has created the gender war, are beginning to say "You GO, guy." to such men.

To those bleeding hearts who say "Yes, but two wrongs don't make a right", I simply point to every woman who justifies her man-hatred of today by pointing to historic "oppression" of women. As I learned from dealing with alcoholics and their families, those who tolerate sick and intolerable behavior are, to that extent, responsible for it. Men's tolerance and willingness to not "fight back" have not so far resulted in lessening the attacks on men one bit.

The failures of feminism are far less due to the inability of the feminists to convince men to change their behaviors than to the fact that WOMEN have not changed theirs. The gender war is therefor an indirect attack on women by

attacking men for the very things that most women still want. The more that men's ability and willingness to give women what the majority of women still want is destroyed, the more frustrated and willing to attack men those women become. Thus, men are under attack from both sides.

Thus, the sexes are trapped in the paradox created by the fact that men have traditionally done women's dirty work for them. The people most harmed by the runaway abuse of Sexual Harassment law, expanded rape definititions, and the finding of Domestic Violence and abuse in every unkind word or gesture or even in coming home late to dinner, are not the men sitting in prison, but the women who men are beginning to avoid: women who might like to see themselves as "datable women", or middle-aged divorcees desperate to hide their desperation.

Attempts to shame men over their loss of sexual interest, play on their insecurities, and Viagra prescriptions aside, men who have successfully cast off the old macho male stereotypes, as women have been demanding that we do, are discovering some major unexpected benefits. Now we are free of having to put up with offensive and obnoxious women simply because they hold sexual power over us. They don't anymore.

Women who have completely bought into the fictional notion of men's insatiable sexual appetites, and the denial of any role that women play in the sexual dance made necessary by wiping the notion of "she asked for it" out of the cultural knowledge bank, are finding that they have forgotten HOW to "ask for it" and as a result aren't getting any of "it." There has even been a clinical term coined for it - ISD, Inhibited Sexual Desire. As male sexuality has been criminalized, and hatred of sexuality become ever more of a cultural institution, the hard work necessary to maintain a level of libido has become increasingly unworth the effort.

The net effect for women has been two-fold. As long as they continue to rely entirely and exclusively on the passive strategy of attraction and abuse the sexual power they have, they are automatically sorting out all but the most aggressive males. Thus their attitudes become self-fulfilling prophesies as they make themselves so obnoxious that any man who is capable of sensitivity and warmth cannot stand to be around them. Thus, in order to attract men AT ALL, even the most aggressive ones, they have to resort to more and more extreme measures of emphasizing and calling attention to their sexual attributes. The real "Beauty Myth", just like all other feminist myths which absolutely refute any role that women take with their own decisions in shaping the outcomes of their lives, is that ANY of these standards are imposed from the OUTSIDE, by PATRIARCHY or by the culture as a whole. The truth is that they are the primary methods which WOMEN USE TO COMPETE for that commodity so desired by women - MALE ATTENTION.

By the absolute denial of sexual power which the feminists have demanded, and by denigration of this power by worshipping men's traditional economic and political power and elevating it over sexual power and literally forcing women out of the homes to seek it, feminists have stripped women of their traditional power base. The society which would have given my old college roomie another chance if he had "a wife and family to support" no longer exists. Women's choices to stay at home and raise their children have been essentially destroyed. And women are now saddled with BOTH sets of traditional role expectations, they do indeed have to be both beautiful AND successful in careers or business because FEMINISM HAS "OPPRESSED THEM" into HAVING to "have it all" before FEMINISM GIVES THEM PERMISSION TO BE HAPPY.

About all I can do is look on these poor fools who have fallen for this hoax with a mixture of bemusement and contempt. My pity has all been used up because these people have aggressively and viciously pursued these ends. They are NOT helpless VICTIMS, but the active agents and authors of their own unhappiness.

Back to Gender War, Sexuality, and Love

EOTM: Boycott the Bashers

. · 19 March 2005 · Archived copy · Original

Fight back. Just say no to products that bash men in their advertising.

Boycott VD (that's Valentine's Day)

Boycott makeup and jewelry (ie woman who wear them)

We all know what matters most in the good old U$A these days. Bucks. Moolah. Cash. Capital. The high and holy "quarterly earnings." Commericalism has been drifting for years into a increasing use of anti-male imagery in order to pander to its primary consumer base: women. Men are portrayed as stupid, targets of violence, subhuman, and often reduced to the status of walking wallets to be emptied for the gratification of women. Fighting the relentless anti-male juggernaut is often beyond the means of the average working stiff trying to earn a decent living. The most organized and motivated resisters are the Father's Rights Groups, but they require time, money, and often lawsuits which drain and overtax both.

But there is something any and every man can do to penalize and hurt the companies, and industries, which profit from defaming men: JUST SAY NO to their products. Boycott both individual companies which use man-bashing ads - ones which portray men as stupid, dehumanized, or the target of violence, particularly sexual violence like a kick in the balls - and entire industries which exploit men directly, like the jewelry and florist industries, or indirectly like the makeup and fashion industries. (By this I mean boycotting WOMEN who wear them. No, I'm not asking you to give up your eyeliner, guys.)

I would also heartily endorse staying the hell away from rogaine and propecia, but that is always an individual choice.

Boycott Steven Spielberg

"The Color Purple" is one of the most man-hating movies ever made. The black male lead is portrayed as maliciously lording what little power he has over the only person(s) with less "power" tha he has. The character of men is portrayed as universally vicious until they are overcome and "humbled" by women.

Spielberg has grown quite rich providing "popular" entertainment, but abuses the male portion of his audience by ruthlessly exploiting cheap sensationalism to fuel anti-male sentiment. In a culture where women view make-up and fashion advertisements as "society telling" them how to act and look, we must realize that anit-male propaganda hidden in entertainment will be interpreted as "society telling" women that men are violent, abusive, and exploitive.

Do not support anyone who pushes these messages by making them richer.

Boycott VD (that's Valentine's Day)

Back to Gender War, Sexuality, and Love

Further Reading:

Bonecrker #9 - Boycott Those Who Disrespect Men

EOTM: Boycott VD (Valentine's Day)

. · 19 March 2005 · Archived copy · Original

Each year, the majority of men in this country (USA) are forced under threat of dire personal consequences to participate in the largest most meaningless orgy of purposeless consumption and empty demonstrations of "love." Meaningless because they are contrived, forced, and are in no way real and spontaneous expressions of authentic affection, but are rather the worst and most hypocritical form of tokenism.

Last year the local paper carried an article on VD entitled "Instructions to men: DON'T FORGET." The article covered many aspects of the tradition of male->female gift giving in the "romantic" setting and cited such analogues from other species as male bears giving female bears fish and male chimps giving female chimps pieces of fruit as inducements to copulation.
However, the real agenda of the day was shown in the quote from one woman who said "It's no thrill standing by watching some friend's arms pile up with flowers, candy, and teddy bears while you stand there empty handed." The purpose of the day is not demonstrations of affection, but competition between women to show off who has been able to capture the attentions of the highest status (read: wealthiest) males.

The article also covered the resentment many men feel over being coerced into these insincere, contrived, and meaningless displays of affection. A direct quote from the article - "Women's response: 'TOO BAD! Do it anyway.' " The article went on to make it clear that there would be hell to pay for any man who failed to comply - including being exiled to the couch.

Given how obnoxious the choices facing men are these days when it comes to "romantic" involvements, it is a pretty good time to ask whether making a stand against the female defined and enforced "rules" about this day would really make things enough worse that putting up with them might not be worth making a position statement here. If enough intrepid "Rosa Parkses" of gender refuse to give up their seats on their position that coerced displays of "love" are meaningless, who knows where it might lead?

Think of it as a sit-down strike against being pressured to pump more money into the pockets of the jewelry store and flower shop owners, so THEY can use it to shower meaningless tokens of affection on their "one and only beloved."

Just say no.

Back to Gender War, Sexuality, and Love

EOTM: Why Are Men So Angry?

. · 20 March 2005 · Archived copy · Original

"In the beginning, there was the "Battle of the sexes", and it was bad enough. Then, on the end of the 2nd millenium, man and woman made "Gender War", and they looked at it, and it was worse. "

One of the most common men's issues I see discussed on NGs is men's anger. Everybody is obsessing about men's anger, characterizing it as uniting force among men - "male" anger, telling men how to manage it, and express it and suppress it.

What no one is doing is acknowledging WHAT IT IS that men are getting angry about. And every time some man brings up all the man bashing in the culture, or how shittily men are treated, everybody tries to "hush him up", so he gets angrier and keeps getting angrier until he feels like he has been HEARD or SEEN JUST AS HE IS. Instead, he keeps getting told how he "should" be and, even when the prescription is impossible or completely nuts, having people ANGRY AT him for living a life of reality rather than their fantasies of what they want him to be.
.
The anger you see in a man is directly proportional to the anger which he has absorbed over the years. Letting that anger out is essential to ever being able to let go of it and leave it behind. But it is very takes a very long time to learn how to be focussed and articulate with anger. It is a mature skill and takes lots of practice. It is something older men could teach younger men, except that younger men distrust older men these days.

Men are expressing a lot of anger these days. It comes from 25 years of having their collective character assassinated in the public consciousness. Men have been turned into criminals for trying to be good fathers. Everything has been turned upside down for them. Where they expected recognition and appreciation, they received blame and hatred.

The extent of men's anger can easily be seen in their withdrawal, not their violence. Boys are bailing out of schools because the schools hate boys so much. Men of all ages are quietly going against the impossible demands and expectations placed on them. Silencing them did not immobilize them and they have found ways to express that anger even if they couldn't win a semantic word game about how they expressed it vocally. They are expressing it by their absence.

The men still arguing with women are the ones still trying to reach understanding. They are the ones who still believe in women. The rest have quit talking to women completely. Or rather, they have quit listening to women while they rag on incessantly.

Anger is a natural reaction to a feeling of being attacked. Anyone who doesn't see how men are under attack every day just isn't looking. The cultural role and contributions of men have been "deconstructed" into rubble during the course of the past 30 years. Men have been tarred with the broad brush of "the enemy" and women have refused to let men be their allies. Everything men do has been under attack, and people still wonder why men are so angry. No one ever acknowledges that the culture decimates any man who quits doing that which the culture also ridicules them for doing.

The notion of benign intentions on the part of men has been replaced by universal suspicion of malice. The very valuable social asset of a reputation has been destroyed culture wide. The social fracturing which has resulted in migration of large percentages of the population into urban areas makes it harder to get to know people individually

and leads directly to the formation and use of stereotypes. Social transgressions like lying, which would reflect so badly on an entire family with long standing social ties that the individual lives with an awareness that his/her actions can harm other people indirectly, go undetected when the only thing that people know of each other is what they see in front of them. The entire notion of internal controls of behavior, what one might call a sense of ethics, has been discredited by radical feminist theory.

Thus we have moved into an era where there are no ethics, no internalized cultural controls and substituted an massive snarl of government regulations and the much touted RULE of LAW. Except the laws are so incredibly biased against men that men have lost faith in the both the justice system and the government.

And when a man expresses anger about any of this, he is essentially told to shut up.

The more trapped a man is in situations which are eating him alive, the angrier he will be. The more verbal abuse and criticism he takes for his efforts, the angrier he will be. The more he has had his own needs used to manipulate and exploit him, the angrier he will be. The more condesending bullshit he has had to put up with from women, the angrier he will be.

The key to resolving the anger which comes from being under attack is to take oneself out of the line of fire, if possible. If you are not called upon to do battle several times per day, over time the battle reflex will die away. All the arguing with women is counter-productive in two ways. First, it just keeps the frustration level high because the arguments fall into such stereotyped patterns. Second, it reinforces the stereotype of angry men which women already have.

A better solution is turning one's back on the source of the anger. Anger is like an animal that needs to be fed. It is far easier than most people realize to starve it to death. At a certain point of not being heard, it is best to unhook from the attempt and accept the fact that this other person is simply never going to accept the truth about you. Cut that person loose immediately.

This is not to say don't speak out. When someone says or does something incredibly offensive to you, point it out and point out how obnoxious it was. DON'T get into an argument over the other person's "right" to have done it. They will always feel righteously justified in their bigotry.

But, speak out and then turn your back. Don't waste your time on these people.

Don't try to teach a pig to sing. It wastes your time. And it ANNOYS the pig.

Back to Gender War, Sexuality, and Love

EOTM: The Chain of Violence

. · 21 March 2005 · Archived copy · Original

4/22/99-

In the wake of the Littleton CO shootings, once again the issue of violence in the culture comes up for debate. Everyone has leapt on this tragic event as evidence for their pet theory of utopianism. Most pathetic and ridiculous are the gun-control fanatics who ignore the fact that there are already pipe bomb and other explosive device control laws which did nothing to prevent such a pre-meditated act of mayhem.

Overt violence is like the volcanic eruption which is the result of the buildup of stresses over a long period of time. Isolating the violent act itself from the events and forces which created it, make it impossible to understand.

Our culture's relationship with violence is schizophrenic. As long as we don't have to confront it directly in reality, it is fine. But when it happens in our faces we act shocked. US culture, and any culture which imports US entertainment, is saturated with a steady diet of violence. Movies are violent, television commercials are violent, comedy and cartoons are violent. Yet, when real violence instead of fantasy violence erupts in our culture, some people act shocked. "Where could this have come from? HOW could this have happened?"

Those people will never find the answers to those questions until they confront the issue that violence is a chain. Any overt act of violence will have been preceeded by a long slow buildup of pressures which finally erupt in the same way that a volcano erupts to let off the immense tectonic pressures which have built up. Attempting to deal with the eruptions alone, while ignoring the forces which preceed them, assures that understanding of violence will be limited to assessing the carnage after the fact. These people will become very good at assessing carnage, and will be quick to offer solutions which "could" have prevented this particular eruption, but they will offer nothing to prevent any other eruption in the future.

Violence does not just suddenly come from nowhere. Violence is passed along from person to person in many forms until it reaches such a concentration in one person that it erupts. Two people prone to violence can dance each other into it in no time. Culturally we live in a sea of violent images and still seem surprised when those same images are turned into reality in front of us. We seem to deny violence until it escalates past any ability of denial, then to get angry at those who forced us to recognize it.

One characteristic of the Littleton shootings distinguishes it from the other school shootings: it was obviously suicidal in intent. The primary focus of the violence turned out to be themselves: they just decided to take a few of those who had acted violently toward them along with them.

Until the cultural denial is broken regarding just how much violence had been poured onto and into these two boys, they will just be another in a series of pressure relief valves which allow the pressure cooker to keep simmering without blowing up. As the picture of these boys emerges, the word "marginalized" continuously comes to mind. These boys are inheritors of the legacy of marginalizing men which has been going on since the late 1960s. More than a society of haves and have-nots as many have been predicting, there is also a division brewing between what might be termed "ins" and "outs". The boys in CO were definitely "outs".

What will compound this tragedy is if no one points out that these boys were acting like lenses and focused the violence in this culture to the point of ignition, like a magnifying glass can focus the sun to start a fire. Why should people be surprised when these boys take all the "You have no place in this world" messages and believe them? The term "War on boys" is constantly being used for the wholesale medicating and berating of boys which happens in

the public education system. Maybe these boys didn't have all that happen directly to them, but they saw it all the time everywhere. They lived and grew up in an environment which was hostile to them because they were boys. That is cetainly Sexual Harassment. It seems remarkable to have to point out to someone who has talked about the "War on boys", the simple fact that this is what it looks like when boys fight back.

The answer is so simple that I'm not surprised that it has escaped the bureaucrats: decrease the violence against boys and men, if you want to decrease the violence BY boys and men. Men have been saying for years that hate bounces. Yet, men today get man-hatred shoved in their faces no matter where they look. All popular entertainment, and particularly the commercials that support it, reek of man-hatred.

Breaking the chain of violence will involve quitting expecting anyone to absorb constant and focussed hostility for a long period of time without returning in kind. It involves seeing the assassination of men's characters as a form of violence and understanding that violence can be hidden and covert just as well as it can be overt. Until all involved take the responsibility for their own participation/contribution to violence, each violent act will contribute to eventual retaliatory violence.

In order to break the chain, ALL parties must stop.

The issues of men's anger and men's violence have become central to the angry rhetoric of the gender war. Men face an absolute seemingly unbreakable wall of denial regarding female violence and participation in feeding events of violence.

The answer to everything seems to be for men to suppress their anger even more. All that will do is assure that the next time an eruption occurs to let off pressure that it will be even more explosive.

On one of the discussion lists, the one maintained by backlash.com, there is a great deal of discussion of male anger and violence. How and why men are suppressed in their expressions of anger, and how and why this makes the problems worse, are frequent topics - as is what form the "backlash" will take if there ever is one.

One man stated the situation particularly eloquently. I have his permission to quote it here.

"And now there's Littleton, Colorado to add to the list of American towns where the end result of this has brought death and violence. Janet Reno and the gun control lobbiests are already preaching tighter restrictions, etc. Why don't we ask if Eric Harris and Dylan Klebold gave a FUCK about gun control laws? I'm not much one way or the other on the issue of gun control, but I do know that people have been killing each other for a lot longer than guns have been around.

"The current body count is 15 total -. 11 males, including 1 adult and the two shooters, and 4 females. One of the victims was black. I wonder how long it will take the VAWA promoters and the Hate Crime people to draw on this tragedy to promote their agendas ? Will we just bury the other 11 victims and call them "Colaterial Damage" in the war on women and minorities ?

"You all are probably sick of hearing me rant about the Socially Forced Supression of male anger, and how we are taught from day one to "Be a MAN, and EAT it.". Then when it explodes, ALL men become violent murdering wife beating rapists. These young men were pushed over the edge, and no less victims of the same urge to kill that drove them to commit this atrocity.

"Goddammit, we need to face this issue of anger ourselves. As Fathers and male role models, our children NEED US to teach them how to deal with it by example. That's why I put my web page back online after it disappeared two years ago, although sometimes even I think it's a pathetic cry in the wilderness. If we who know and feel the pain don't start to deal with it, NOBODY WILL !

"The "authorities" were alerted a full year before these two kids decided to self-destruct, and take 15 innocent souls with them, now they're wondering how they missed it. I see it every day in every person I meet, and it scares the shit out of me."

Another man tossed in:

"The state says my kids only need their mother. They don't need me for anything but money."

To which the first man responded:

"I understand how you feel, and God knows that there are thousands of other men just like you who are just as angry and have every right to be. I think it's time we made an issue of this, a BIG issue. It may be too late for us, but maybe we can shake some sense into the future leaders of our children's world. I've already decided that anyone who even mentions this story to me is going to get my "WELCOME TO THE BACKLASH !' speech. 'The Fun has just Begun...'

"Welcome to the Backlash. This is the direct result of the legacy of socially surpressed anger that men in Americ have been sitting on for the past three generations. I call it the "Big Boys Don't Cry" syndrome. If greater effort is not put forth to encourage men to deal with their inner hostilities, and to allow them to become the Fathers and positive role models that our children need, it's going to get a lot worse. "

Stu-

Back to Gender War, Sexuality, and Love

EOTM: The Pearl Harbor of the Gender War: Rape and Sexual Harassment

. · 22 March 2005 · Archived copy · Original

When the history of gender war gets written, the attack on normal heterosexuality will be viewed in retrospect as the event which signaled the start of the war and divided people into mutually hostile camps for which there would be no easy form of settlement. When Susan Brownmiller declared all men to be enemies of all women with her damning and unproven accusations in "Against Our Wills", she established the notions of structural power and power relationships which would eventually drag the political into the most personal aspects of everyone's lives. The declaration "all men are in collusion with rapists" soon became "all men ARE rapists" (or harassers) and "all sex is rape." I can't imagine women not getting enraged over being told that they were such simpletons that they didn't know that they were being oppressed and that their desire for men was proof of their oppression, but they didn't.

It is mind-boggling to think that something so basic as the attraction mechanisms between men and women, which are the foundation processes of the continuation of our species and which have persisted for thousands of years, could have been completely re-defined in the space of only one generation. Yet, this is exactly what has happened. Somewhere in there is a chilling disregard for life based on a lack of awareness of what life is and how it is perpetuated.

Erasing any distinction between normal male-female sexuality and criminal behavior has devastated the ability to have and sustain stable mated relationships. The simple existence of the ambiguous laws and lack of legal standards put women as well as men into completely undefined territory filled with landmines. There are so many ways that a woman can use the legal system to clobber a man these days that men are more and more lapsing into wary silence and distance. Of course, this feeds right into women's complaints about male emotional withdrawal.

Never before in history has it been so hard for men and women who want to get together to do so. And never before has the incentive for persistence through an occasional hard time been so low.

The war which began with Pearl Harbor ended with the Atomic bomb.

The only possible outcome when neither side will back off their commitment to war is total defeat of one side or the other. When the battle is between men and women, total defeat of one side is not possible without the destroying the victorious side as well. All wars are insane to some degree, but a gender war is the most insane anything could possibly be. No one can tell their enemies from their allies any more, and often spend more time and energy supporting their enemies rather than their allies.

The frontline battle for men's rights to be attracted to women, and let women know that, will have to be fought by women. They have been the ones whose behavior the extremists have been out to change anyway. It's just that men make easier targets and if you change the behavior of the men then the women will be forced to change their behavior.

The drive to stamp out heterosexuality and marriage waged by the extremists, capitalizing on the "victory" of Brownmiller's surprise attack, is directly a war against women who would like those options. Both men and women have come to fear marriage and fear members of the other sex. There have always been forces in the culture which hated sex and were constantly obsessing over the possibility that some of their fellow citizens could be having too much or the wrong kind of sex. Most states have had laws on the books prohibiting certain kinds of sex. It has long been widely accepted that men in general liked sex more than women in general, many of whom did not like it at

all. The famous Ann Landers' survey, which showed that 70% of women would be perfectly happy never to have sex again, made it clear to men what women think of us as lovers. And where Landers was dismissive, Shere Hite was absolutely brutal toward men.

Men have long been waiting for a voice of peace from women saying in effect "We like men, we like men's attention. We don't think it is a crime." Since we now have to deal with the "reasonable woman" standard, where are the reasonable women speaking out saying "This is NOT sexual harassment." or "This is NOT rape." ?!

Without female voices speaking this message, it is likely that the war will continue to rage on.

Back to Gender War, Sexuality, and Love

Further Reading:

Bonecrker #13 - DV Myths = Cold War

Bonecrker #20 – Rape Fantasies

Bonecrker #65 – The Repeating Patterns of Women Who Cry Rape
.

EOTM: Sexual Harassment

. · 23 March 2005 · Archived copy · Original

I don't think anyone has any problem with the provisions of Sexual Harassment law which relate to Quid Pro Quo, making the provision of sexual "favors" a condition of continued employment or advancement. And the "Hostile Work Environment" provisions were certainly positive in intent. In many respects it is simply an extension of the thinking underlying the Occupational Safety Hazards Act, OSHA, into the less clearly defined areas of emotional reactions and response. However, like OSHA, the attempt to eliminate all discomfort and risk from the work environment cannot operate independently of the realities of that environment.

I have worked in a great many "hostile environments", meaning those where there was a significant risk of "discomfort", mostly in terms of unpleasant working conditions and risk of injury or death. As a teenager, I saw a friend of mine lose his arm to a piece of equipment without proper safety shielding. In at least one respect, he was lucky. By the time I graduated from high school, at least a dozen people I knew had died in mishaps which were directly due to risks inherent in the industrial or agricultural environment. One man I knew suffocated in a grain bin. Another was drawn into a hay baler, along with his wife who tried to rescue him. Several died when tractors overturned on them. One died when a tank of ammonia fertilizer blew its seal and filled the shed he was in with alkaline gas. Three others died when dust around a grain elevator exploded and caught fire.

The risks and discomforts involved with many jobs were simply so inherent in the nature of those jobs that it never occurred to men to expect or demand that those risks and unpleasantness be removed. Phrases like "part of the job", "goes with the territory", and "if you can't stand the heat, stay out of the kitchen" embodied a certain common sense folk wisdom that one's choices were limited by circumstance and that the only real choice one had was whether to take the job or not. Taking the job meant accepting the risks and conditions. If the risks or conditions were intolerable, one was always free to take another job.

It was for this very reason that an informal and natural division of labor took place. The presumption that men would simply perform the more dangerous jobs, while women would have the opportunity to stay with the safer ones, was a cultural protocol as deeply ingrained as the act of shaking hands as a method of greeting. No one ever thought of it as "oppression" OR privilege, but rather as common sense. In an environment where muscle power, physical agility, and a certain degree of ability to ignore discomfort were not merely requisites for the job itself, but also a key element in a person being able to make an active contribution to his own safety, those characteristics were considered basic qualifications for the job. Persons lacking them were simply not considered. The very concept of a free market for labor implied that the job requirements were fixed and that if ANY adaptation were to be made that it would be on the part of the worker and not of the job itself. The concept of a "worker friendly" job would have been considered an oxymoron, had anyone brought it up.

Balancing the degree of risk, or discomfort, was the fact that as either of those two factors went up, so did the wages or compensation of the job go up. Borrowing a phrase from the military, the more hazardous the job, the more of a "hazardous duty pay" incentive went with it. When I was a teenager, some practical-joker hung a pair of long underwear at the top of the local radio station's tower. The station advertised in the paper for someone to climb up and get them down. They paid $1/foot of the height of the tower. For slightly less than an hour's "work", I went home with $400 in my pocket. The seemingly "high" rate of my compensation was more than offset by the simple economics of the task at hand. It certainly would have made no economic sense whatsoever to pay such a high rate for simple labor if it was going to be a repetitive job. Installing safety nets or some kind of mechanized lift which would have eliminated or reduced the risk would have vastly increased the number of people willing to take that reduced risk. As the danger inherent in the job went down, so would its value. The economics of capital investment dictate that available funds, profit, can be expended either on capital OR labor, but not both. Had the

climbing of the tower been a weekly event, the labor+capital cost of $400/week, or $20,000/year, would have eventually shifted the advantage to allocating more money for capital and less for labor. While a great many of the factors are different, this example illustrates the same business principle as replacing skilled labor with robots in manufacturing. The less inherent danger, or skill, that is required for any particular type of work, the less value that work will have in the marketplace.

So, you are probably asking, "what does all this have to do with sexual harassment?" Simply that the notion of a "woman friendly" workplace is antithetical to the historic notions of the workplace itself. The "workplace" has NEVER before been conceived as a "friendly" place - not to women, not to men. The requirement that the workplace be redefined as a place of "comfort", and particularly one of "emotional" comfort, requires a radical change in the very nature of how we conceive work itself.

In the 1930s, while the US was in the midst of the great depression which eventually spread throughout the world economy, the scarcity of jobs of any kind put employers in the situation of having to have absolutely no regard whatsoever for the comfort and safety of their workers. Each morning, hundreds of hopeful and hungry men, with families to feed, would show up hoping to be given a day of work. Any question or complaint about the conditions, their danger or "hostility" would have been met with "Go home. NEXT!" These conditions dictated the attitudes toward work of an entire generation: the parents and grandparents of the boomers, who then passed these attitudes along to their children to some degree.

Under the old ethic of achievement, overcoming adversity was considered an essential element of success. Attributes like persistence, endurance, and exceptional effort were highly valued and were in fact considered to be essential elements for high degrees of success. The long standing ideological conflict between American freedom, capitalism, and free markets; versus the collectivism, central planning, and entitlements of Communism or Socialism; made the ability to succeed DESPITE adversity into an essential American ideal. Publications for male audiences stressed that the road to business success involved working 60+ hour weeks and never taking vacations. Men whose skins were a little too thin, or their committment and drive a little too weak, to survive the essentially hostile nature of the workplace were told that these characterisitics would place them forever among the ranks of the "also rans." Men were told that the most significant attribute for success, was their very ability to survive hostile environments.

When "work" got redefined from an activity essential to survival to "career" as a means of "self-fulfillment" or "self-expression", and the ethic of achievement replaced by an ethic of entitlement, those new social values were slow to penetrate and have an impact on the marketplace. The natural sorting out of the weak and unsuited which is an inherent part of competitive business got personalized.

However, recourse against practices of an employer which were offensive and intended to make success difficult, thus insuring that the best of the best would prevail, became only available to women and only around an issue which is unavoidable in any environment where the sexes mix. The biological realities of the ways that men and women interact, as MEN and WOMEN, clashed with the social fictions of feminism. A previously self-regulating system which was never intended to be "fair", but rather to encourage excellence by seriously punishing anything less, now requires significant government intervention and regulation.

Initial resistance to wide scale integration of women into the workplace was based on an instinctive belief that such essential redefinition of business would not work. Perhaps the best example of how trivial personal reactions can get turned into major issues came when Sportscaster Lisa Olson barged into the locker room of the New England Patriots. The double standard which has emerged to give women this mythical "equal footing" in careers is nowhere better illustrated than by the expectation of a woman sportscaster expecting to be allowed in a male locker room with males in various states of undress.

The simplest way to detect sexism is to reverse the sexual roles and see if the situation changes. In Olson's case, I seriously doubt that anyone would expect a male sportscaster to enter a female locker room for the opportunity of gawking at naked or semi-naked members of the opposite sex and be met with ANYTHING except extreme hostility. Yet when the athletes made their displeasure over Ms Olson's voyeurism clearly known, she attempted to play victim and paint them as being in the wrong. The hostility shown by the athletes is simply indicative of the normal resentment that men have shown when women invade an environment which has been traditionally segregated and DEMAND that the code of conduct be changed to suit the whims of the woman.

At its very heart, this boils down to an essential battle for control and consistency. It is the same battle that is being fought over physical qualifications for occupations like fire fighters and law enforcement officers. Where previously the nature of the job dictated the qualifications of those who would be considered potential candidates, the candidates now have taken it on themselves to dictate that the nature of the job to suit their needs and whims. In the process, the basic concepts of achievement, accomplishment, and excellence have been thrown out the window.

However, that is not the most destructive effect of the way that Sexual Harassment law has been implemented. More than any other area of law, SH law runs contrary to the principles of the American justice system, and by itself does more to give credence to stereotypes of female incompetence than anything else which has occurred in the past 30 years. SH law replaces any sense of objectivity with complete self-centered subjectivity, and places the female point of view as the reference standard. It places feelings above facts and rewards those with the thinnest skins and the weakest performance.

In all respects, it is reminiscent of the old fairy tale of the princess and the pea. The exquisite and finely tuned "sensitivity" of the princess kept her tossing and turning all night from a single pea placed under 18 mattresses. The princess simply cannot function unless EVERYTHING is constructed to her comfort and tastes. Hiring a princess involves making the job serve her, rather than the other way around.

Employers do not seek liabilities when they hire, they seek assets. If they are faced with a situation analogous to climbing the radio tower I mentioned above, the greater the amount of investment required to make the employee able to do the job, the less that employee's work will be valued. Thus, SH law rather than decreasing the general hostility of the workplace toward women is actually increasing it. And it is increasing the general hostility of men in the population toward women as well.

When I worked for the security department of a large corporation, I was harassed and discriminated against because I was not an ex-cop and didn't have a lot of office political connections. Contrary to what most women believe, simply being a white male did not automatically make me part of this particular "good old boys network." However, I had no paternalistic federal law on my side to guarantee that that I could demand changes to make it a "non-cop friendly" workplace. My choice was to endure the hostile environment and find a way to succeed despite those disadvantages, or to fail. I chose to succeed - which involved putting up with a lot of discomfort and offense.

The people who discriminated against and harassed me did not do so because of sex, obviously, but because they were abusive power-mad jerks who would abuse anyone they could get away with abusing. I was left to my own devices to find ways to cope with it. My experiences in seeking recourse through Human Resources and management were identical to those described by women seeking recourse, except that I didn't have the strawman of sex to blame it on.

The simple existence of SH law is tacit admission that women can NOT compete with men on their own merits and need special protections from the offensiveness of men in order to survive in the workplace at all. It is an indirect form of validation of the original resistance to wide scale integration of women into the workforce on the grounds that they were too fragile to withstand the rigors of the workplace. By its very existence, SH law is a complete

refutation of the equality of competence of women, as is Affirmative Action, because of its underlying presumption that women require special protections and the assistance of the federal government in order to be able to compete in an atmosphere where men thrived even without such government support.

While some women certainly benefit in the short term from this governmental and legal big-brother-ism, it simply perpetuates the view of women generally weak and incapable. The workplace becomes a sort of special olympics which no one confuses with the real Olympics. The message to men is clear - women are only able to compete with men whose hands are tied.

As if those effects are not destructive enough, the intrusion of such vague and ill-defined law into the already confusing dynamics of male/female attraction in the post-feminism era simply invites both abuse and further polarization. Anyone who naively persists in believing the simplistic mantra that "no means no" is either a fool or a liar, or both. Playing "hard to get" is a standard item in the behavioral repertoire of women, and one which has classically functioned to the advantage of the female.

As long as women flatly refuse to share in the burdens of the "shit work" of initiating potential relationships, they will be faced with having their selections limited to only those males aggressive and thick-skinned enough to keep approaching them despite all the normal and inherent risks plus the new risks posed by SH law.

****

The extreme one-sidedness of SH law, with its inherently anti-male stereotypesand assumptions, far from creating a "woman friendly" workplace, in fact guarantees the opposite. As women have been fond of labeling all men as "potential" rapists, it becomes simply pragmatic self-preservation to for men to regard all women as potential Sexual Harassment lawsuits waiting to happen.

To men, the mere fact that the structure of the mating dance requires them to make the first move is regarded by men as a form of female power. Women can wait passively for something to happen and there are enough aggressive men around that sooner or later something will. Interestingly, women see this as a form of powerlessness, not power. This difference in perception underlies a great deal of gender conflict. Women, of course, can increase the possibility of this happening by advertising their availability and interest through provactive dress and/or actions.

The widespread denial by women of this female ploy is the source of much animosity between the sexes. While a woman wearing a low-cut blouse and a wonderbra is not asking to get raped, or harassed, she certainly is asking to get her breasts looked at. The contradictory behaviors of women who solicit men's attention in this manner then pretend offense, along with the widespread denial by women that it is intentional, contribute greatly to men's distrust and dislike of women and contempt for their mental abilities. If you don't want the peaches, then don't shake the tree.

Without objective standards, Sexual Harassment turns on nothing but individual perception. No one who is even marginally literate can have escaped the knowledge that it is not only common for people to perceive events differently, it is virtually impossible for it to be otherwise. Ask any police officer whether they have ever had two eyewitness accounts of an event agree completely and you will find the answer to be "no." The entire history of human culture and politics is nothing besides mechanisms for balancing and adjudicating these differing perceptions, but SH law denies any part of this. The elevation of the perceptions and interests of one group of citizens over all others is antithetical to the concepts of democracy, on which most western governments are founded.

Incidents like Lisa Olson's hissy-fit when the athletes objected to her gawking, and even worse the whole Tailhook scandal, produce a de facto adversarial position and conflict of interest and power. There is a fundamental denial of certain realities on the part of women, certainly not the least of which is the role of their own actions in contributing to the outcomes, which make cooperation with them by men simply impossible.

At Tailhook, women were allowed in to a previously all male enclave. It was a highly selected group of jet-jockeys for which the primary and most sigificant job requirements are the highest possible degree of aggression and fear of nothing. Only a brave man, or a damn fool, would climb into those jets knowing that they may never come back. It is only supreme confidence in their own abilities and willingness to take exreme risks that gives them what Tom Wolfe termed "The Right Stuff." These young men in their sexual prime, when in the presence of women who gave every impression of welcoming the men's sexual attentions, responded in exactly the manner of confident and aggressive young men. The very characteristics for which they were chosen for those jobs, became revised after-the-fact into harm done to those women. It is precisely instances like this which have undermined any positive benefit from SH law for those women who really are subjected to indefensible offense.

Despite the efforts of the extremists to deny and redefine biology, the mechanics of attraction between women and men remain unchanged. There do remain a few women who enjoy, and actively seek to be the center of, male attention. The criminalization of men's expressions of interest in women have these women who seek it in the position of having to engage in ever more extreme measures to attract it.

In the context of the workplace, a woman who wears a short skirt, plunging neckline, or carefully applied makeup is herself engaging in Sexual Harassment by creating an environment which is hostile toward men. Women who do this, then complain about the attention they receive are among the most detested by men. They are regarded to be nothing but manipulative liars. Men's business attire is designed for the purpose of minimizing individuality and the attention it attracts. Any woman who dresses otherwise is clearly intending to capitalize on the benefits that such attention will bring them.

An excellent example of this is the Anita Hill/Clarence Thomas case. Most men consider that Hill's right to be offended by her bosses behavior ceased to exist when she followed him from one job to another. Whether Hill was competent in her own right, or trading on Thomas's interest in her to gain favored treatment, can never be known at this point, but the fact that she preferred to follow him rather than stay in her current position and compete on her own merits suggests otherwise. It is not just that Hill refused to take action on her own behalf, but that the path of least resistance would have taken no action at all and that following her harasser was the course which actually took initiative on her part, which leads to the conclusion that she was perfectly happy to exploit her sexuality to further her career. No one will likely ever know exactly what it was that led her to cry "foul."

The entire foundation of SH law is predicated on what Betty Friedan took women to task for in "The Feminine Mystique." What may or may not be considered harassing is hidden behind the mystique and is only revealed when some man runs afoul of it. The good news for men is that women are increasingly becoming the targets of frivolous charges of sexual harassment. It appears that only as women begin to experience the fundamental losses of rights of due process of law, and the ability to confront one's accuser, will they begin to approach the issue as one of principles rather than feelings. The mystique of female moral superiority falls when the confrontation is between two women.

I have frankly been amazed at the persistence with which women have promoted the lie that "women don't lie about these things." That statement alone is an obvious and bald faced lie which strengthens the impression that not only do women lie, that ALL women lie and will continue to do so at every opportunity. Aligning themselves with dishonest and opportunistic women, and condoning the use of dishonest and unethical tactics, works against all women. Those few who are actively speaking out against such abuses, like Cathy Young and Kathleen Parker

among others, are voices lost in a cacophony of liars.

Any law serves a useful purpose if and only if, when and only when, it allows effective discrimination between socially constructive and socially destructive behaviors. While there are many who question whether the traditional family is a viable institution any longer, the majority of women still seek the stability it provides them.

In a recent correspondence with a young college woman, she spoke of her difficulties in overcoming the essential distrust of a man her age in whom she was interested. For all the compassion one might be tempted to feel for difficulties of such a young woman trying to establish a relationship with a man forced to treat all women as potential date-rape charges or sexual harassment lawsuits waiting to happen, a jail term, possible loss of career, or being put under the jurisdiction of a criminal justice system with a clear anti-male bias make the costs of such compassion prohibitively high.

The biggest tragedy of SH law is that it is neither serving the needs of those it was intended to help, nor does does it have sufficient protections from abuse. It has become the modern day equivalent of an accusation of "Heresy" which puts all power in the hands of the accuser, which means that the accuseds will often resort to dirty tactics to fight it. In the meantime, now that it has become the discretion of the woman to declare whether being asked for a date is romance or a crime, young women should not be surprised that they are not being asked.

In most men's minds there is a clear distinction between sexual interest and sexual harassment. A great many men I know have discovered that after middle age they often find themselves the target of sexual harassment by women in whom they have no sexual interest. These men can sympathize with how obnoxious the experience truly is.

I wonder if there are any women who can sympathize with the men's side of this battleground issue.

Back to Gender War, Sexuality, and Love

Further Reading:

Bonecrker #13 - DV Myths = Cold War

EOTM: Fair Fighting

. · 24 March 2005 · Archived copy · Original

Fair Fighting

It is impossible to overstate the significance of this issue. Men generally have a deep, intense, and abiding sense of fairness and honor. Women, in general, seem to have no such unwanted restrictions on their behavior. (I know there are exceptions, but like the "Mars & Venus" cliches, there is enough truth to justify the stereotypes. Simply note the gender of the person quoted below. I've never seen a man say such things.)

Trust is a lot like virginity, all it takes is one penetration and it is gone forever. The first time a woman hits below the belt she removes herself forever from the category of someone who will get unreserved cooperation, and instantly transforms herself into a creature of far less status and significance.

Here is one of those articles that the media is using to keep pouring gasoline on the flames of the gender war. This woman's attitude is inconceivably vicious. She basically says draw as much blood as possible by any means possible. If I ruled the world, this woman would be hanged for writing this article, because there is nothing that will destroy any possibility of a relationship *ever* working more completely than even a single incident of the type she suggests.

I like to hope that someday more women will understand how they destroy their own relationships and happiness. It would be worth the time for any woman to do some deep and honest soul searching to answer the question whether she has fights the way this woman suggests. If she has, then the man has every right to get back at her with any means at his disposal.

This is how women turn themselves into the moral equivalent of pond scum in men's eyes.

Nora Fox on Fair Fighting

Verbal fights are inevitable. Show me a woman with a saccharin smile who insists, "We never fight," and I'll show you the next bitter divorcee who will end her days working the phones at Century 21.

Women don't fight fair. Why should we? Faced with opponents who outweigh us, out earn us and whose community standing is undiminished with age, my sisters and I are forced to turn to underhanded tactics.

Being the superior sex, women long ago learned the surefire way to get our way is to withhold sex. It's the same way we train dogs. Good behavior merits a treat; bad behavior puts you in the conjugal doghouse for the night. Men never seem to catch on. After all, by the time we reach our sexual peak, men are running on fumes. How many times does one have to watch The Three Stooges to predict the outcome? Screw with Moe and get a poke in the eye, right? It's a sad commentary on Darwinism that sexual withholding still works after all these millennia. While it does, though, we'll keep turning our backs, thank you. It's the war-between-the-sexes equivalent of Biblically turning the other cheek.

Another useful strategy is the withering glance. Begin with eye contact; move own to the zipper. After making sure no camcorders are present. I often combo this with move with a disgusted snort followed by a teeth-clenched snarl. (Mirror work is helpful when perfecting this. There's one in your car. Go drive around the block and practice.)

I resist yelling. It causes fever blisters and gives the neighbors too much conversational material. Other tactics worth noting include; Crying. How lame. Come on, we can all be mom creative than this. Stick to what we do best. Mix & match logic. IF what you are doing isn't working, change the subject. Leave em' in the dust; not holding Kleenex.

Hold your partner financial hostage. Information is the gold of the 90s. Threaten to rat to the IRS. It's good insurance ‘til you decide to move on.

Remember fight or flight. Flight works. It's that distance/pursuit thing. My friend Victoria specializes in hanging up and jetting off to Hawaii. Her opponent was so mesmerized, he tracked her down and married her. 'They' re currently separated and living 500 miles apart...and still hanging up and building those frequent flier miles. Finally, taboos. If you ever want to see this person again, do not attack immutable parts of his anatomy And never, EVER, admit that you were faking it.

Back to Gender War, Sexuality, and Love

EOTM: Masculism, Not Me-Too-ism

. · 25 March 2005 · Archived copy · Original

I have noticed a distressing tendency in writings by men circulating in the border clashes of the gender war to engage in arguments over who has it worse: men, or women. I have resisted for years the notion of a men's movement which is mostly reactive to, and in imitation of, the feminist movement. The movements must necessarily reflect the nature of the participants, and as feminism reflects the whiny and victim focused nature of women, masculism needs to reflect the action orientation of men.

Men will never be able to be better women than women can be. They will always be able to out-whine us. It is indicative of the permeation of feminine values that as the men's movement seeks a voice, it first speaks in the plaintive tones of the victim.

I thought that it was the 60s again, or that I had stumbled on my long-lost stash of Purple Haze, when I read the argument about whether men or women suffered worse from the Holocaust. How dead can dead be? How high is up? How painful can death be, and is there a yardstick that can have any meaning at all? Of course death is more painful for women than for men: after all women feeee-yul more than men. They are more in touch with those precious feeeeee-lings.

The argument over who lives longer is meant as an argument over power, with lifespan being a measure, but it misses one important point. Everyone actually lives exactly the same amount of time: one life. If you understand Einstein's theory of relativity, you can see that men actually live *longer* than women because the fewer years really *seems* longer because men have to listen to women running their yaps the entire time. If you only had 6 months to live; you should divorce your wife, marry your mother-in-law, and move to Wichita KS. That six months would seem like 100 years.

If we think things are bad being a men today, we would do well to reflect on an old account of a battle about 3000 years ago. All the losers had their penises cut off. The accounting of foot soldiers, officers, etc. who suffered the unkindest cut numbered about 14,000. And we sit around and cringe when women make Lorena Bobbit jokes. It is offensive, crude, and stupid yes, but instead of sitting there with panicked grins on our faces we should be telling them so and walking the hell out.

Life has never come with a guarantee to be easy, unless one was born female. All men's power has come from the fact that they didn't expect it to be, and didn't wait around for someone else to make it so. If we sit around whining waiting for someone to make it better for us, who is going to? Women?

The dialogue of power has made many men embarrassed to have power, and they have tried to escape the blame by abdicating their own power. What we have today is a result. We have become a nation of victims. And men are losing that competition because we are rank amateurs at it.

Time to get back to what we do best: something. Anything. But arguments over who has the worse deal, or who suffers more, will just lead us into the ground. Ok, women told us we had to get in touch with our feelings and learn to express them. We have.

Do they like us any better for it? No.

Do *we* like us any better for it? *HELL* no!

Back to Gender War, Sexuality, and Love

EOTM: Presenting Feminism! A Coming OUT

. · 26 March 2005 · Archived copy · Original

Feminism: An ideology that advocates political, social and economic equality, empowerment and freedom for women, with full rights, opportunities and responsibilities equal to and non-distinguishable from those of all other members of society. (Or 'men' if you will.)

What's wrong with this?

From all ostensible indications, feminism is wonderful thing. An ideology whose very presence indicates the advancement of the human species and equality for all.

I'm all for this 'feminism'.

My mother is a top class pharmacist and most of my aunts are Managers and Directors in the Banking Industry. None of them would be where they are, using their brains to support themselves and their families without the ground breaking work of Mary Woolstonecraft, Elizabeth Cady Stanton, Lucretia Mott and the ever radical Susan Brownell Anthony, etc. Add to that distinguished list the Marquis de Condorcet, Mr Mott (Lucretia Mott's husband), John Stuart Mill, Immanuel Kant and so on. These men were feminists too.

I grew up in an environment in the advent of feminism. It was a fact that I got the most competition in academics from a girl, and the women in my family are all assertive and intelligent women. All these women and all the confident and strong women out there in the world are feminists, so defined because they do not fear going out to face the world and carving a place for themselves in it.

But amazingly only a few American women in the 1990s classify themselves as feminists.

Has the movement fallen into disrepute?

No, because almost a 100% of people, male and female, think that women 'must' and should have rights equal to that of men.

Then why is the term 'feminist' so repulsive?

.
It is said that at the heart of every movement there is always a vanguard party or philosophy that by it's prominence, is representative of its views, and it is that vanguard party that society looks to, to see what the movement represents and stands for.

The vanguard party thus has to be the loudest, most attention grabbing section of the movement. It does not by default mean the most popular or largest section of the movement.

The vanguard party is thus not selected by the movement, it selects itself. The vanguard party, in the public eye, then becomes the movement, its ideals become the movement's ideals, it therefore represents the movement in whatever it does.The movement's image changes only when the vanguard party changes or when there is a change of vanguard parties within the movement.

What is feminism's 'vanguard party'?

In my studies of this, it seems that there are three major ideologies within feminism:

Liberal Feminism, which simply means equal rights and responsibilities for all persons, irregardless of sex/gender as supported by Stanton, Mott and Anthony. Most American women, while most say they are not feminists, strongly advocate this.

Socialist Feminism was popular in the sixties but it has declined since the collapse of the Soviet Union. It is basically the same as Liberal Feminism except it is closely tied politically and culturally with Marxism. Lastly comes

Radical Feminism, which as of now is the vanguard party of Feminism. It has the least support and the most opposition among all of them, but it is the loudest and most active. It and its ideologies, varied though they may be, stand virtually unchallenged by the other two (for shame) and thus it is assumed to represent the feminist movement's attitudes, to define the movement and all it stands for.

My interpretation of Radical Feminists has led me to believe that Radical Feminism is a psychological disorder where the female of the human species believes the species evolved incorrectly and that the inherent weakness of her gender is a fluke of nature.

I see merit in Donna Laframboise's self-description of "dissident feminists", which makes it clear which movement currently has the political, economic and social power. However, even this is unsatisfactory in defining RadFem philosophy and dogma, since feminism has built into its name the notion that it is concerned with women's issues. The RadFem is truly less interested in women's issues than she is in vilifying males.

The RadFem blames her GENDERS shortcomings and unhappiness on this deviant evolution and tries to manipulate the natural order of things to suit her - to the direct detriment of all others. RadFems are so narcissistic that they cannot see anything but their immediate actions.

The destructive consequences of their actions are not even remotely contemplated or anticipated - even when it effects them directly. The recent execution by lethal injection of Karla Faye Tucker in the state of Texas is such an example, the RadFems have made such a stink about gender equality that the governor of the state of Texas was left with no alternative but to break a 150 year old tradition.

Another recent example is that of Mary Kay LeTourneau, a former grade-school teacher who was convicted of having sex with a 13-year-old male former student. She was recently arrested for violating the orders of the court by again seeing the child and was subsequently ordered to serve out the remainder of her sentence of 8 years for rape.

The RadFems did not see this, but in this case alone, they FORCED the courts to deal with the issue of RAPE BY A WOMAN. While it is now true that these sorts of cases are few and far between, the fact is that the RadFem agenda has opened the door for other women to be sentenced and treated in the traditional MALE punishment model.

Even scarier, these Radical feminists are winning their propaganda war. Like all propaganda wars, the core of their appeal is based on a thinly veiled pack of lies and semantical manipulations. That and lies, damned lies, and statistics too.

Now to make a clear distinction between these 'vanguard feminists' and true feminists, I would refer to them as RadFems. Because of their powerful position in the movement, any and all feminists are taken to be RadFems.

The RadFems define Modern feminism as "that social movement which has as its goal rights without responsibilities for women, and responsibilities without rights for men, all under the guise of gender equality."

They run the Domestic Violence Programs, make up a large percentage of national women's organizations and run the Women's Studies departments in Universities. Thus the public perception of a feminist is really the public perception of a RadFem.

A **feminist** is assumed to be:

"a woman who hates men, the patriarchy, and all things male

(and/or)

who prefers her career to her children or for that matter ANY children (abortion by any other name is the destruction of children)

(and/or)

who is anti-family, anti-male, anti-traditional morality

(and/or)

who is a lesbian

(and/or)

who is an atheist or who practices wicca witchcraft

(and/or)

who consistently confuse "assertiveness" with "aggression" (the opposite of love is not hate, it is indifference, but the RadFem does not understand this - they only know how to hate)".

What causes these perceptions?

The RadFems themselves, by their (loud) words and deeds. RadFems have reduced feminism in the public eye from a progressive social movement to something resembling a whining hate camp filled with ugly, fat, over educated, boorish and boring, humorless, androids. Their gender confusion alone relegates them to the near psychotics of history.

Their main figures, Marilyn French, Susan Brownmiller, Andrea Dworkin, Catherine MacKinnon, Robin Morgan, Kate Millett, Susan Faludi, Gloria Steinem, Patricia Ireland and N.O.W., etc are well known for their hate filled diatribes against men. They are misandrists in every sense of the word. Most of them are lesbians as well, which, due to the reverence in which they are held by RadFems confirms but does not necessarily imply the above stereotype. They are also almost universally atheist or devotees of religious philosophies that support witch craft of satanistic theology.

And since they are the representatives of feminism, such an obviously good and progressive social movement, it is not possible to attack their views without being accused of being against women's rights, whether you be male or

female, even if you are well known within the movement.

This has frighteningly put them in the very powerful position of being able to dictate their agendas without allowing the opposition to present their views. If indeed opposition dared speak out, they are vilified by the RadFems, who because they exist in the name of feminism can claim a higher moral ground (political correctness).

The targets or the chosen 'bogey man' of the RadFems are men as a whole, and heterosexual men in particular. This same 'them and us' tactic is reminiscent of Nazi Germany, 'them' being the Jews and 'us' being the Germans. As one writer said after reading Susan Brownmiller's *'Against Our Will':*

"I've read Mein Kampf and in my mind it's a toss up between them." All you need do to 'Against Our Will' is to substitute the word woman for German and man for Jew and the two books will basically say the same thing, broadcasting their hate to one and all.

The most dangerous aspect of this new feminism is how it continues to demonize men in every way one can possibly think of and the fact that they do it without concern for the people they are defaming as individuals and the effect of their hate filled propaganda on society.

RadFems continuously and religiously spout facts about how men as a whole oppress women. In the work place, in the home, in everything under the sun.The fact is that this is simply not true. Consider these facts:

- **Women control 86% of all personal wealth in America.**
- **55% of all University graduates are women.**
- **Women cast the majority of the votes in America (54%).**
- **They win over 90% of custody disputes.**
- **94% of work-related deaths are suffered by men.**
- **Women are the victims of 35% of violent crimes.**
- **The remaining 65% are men.**
- **75% of murder victims are men.**
- **85% of suicide victims are men.**
- **24 out of the 25 worst jobs are exclusively male.**
- **66% of health care is spent on women, discounting pregnancy related care.**

If men are supposed to be ruling the world in some system of misogynous patriarchy then how come we let the 'terrible tragedy' of above happen?

Why did the all male government of years back give women the right to vote?

Why did the men of those times allow women the choice to go out and work if they so wished?

Why did we extend rights once only reserved for men to women?

Is it all part of some cunning plan?

RadFems like Susan Faludi would have you think it is. A thorough examination of the facts would show that the foundations of the RadFems agenda are lies. The RadFems think that the whole world - including the majority of women - are fools.

Here are a few historical dates that in their entirety make the existence of a patriarchal oppressive state a complete fallacy:

- **Mary Lyon founded the 1st woman's college in US - Mt. Holyoke College in 1837.**
- **Antoinette Brown Blackwell was the 1st formally educated woman minister of the Congregationalist Church in 1853.**
- **Mary Walker was the 1st (and only) woman to receive the US Medal of Honor in 1866. She was a Civil War surgeon.**
- **Victoria Woodhall was the 1st woman to run for President of the US in 1872.**
- **Susan Salter was elected the 1st woman US mayor of Argonia, KS in 1887.**
- **Alice Wells was the 1st policewoman in the US in 1910.**
- **Jeannette Rankin was the 1st woman elected to US congress in 1916 from Montana. Only legislator to vote against both WW I and WW II.**
- **Ever hear of prohibition? The 18th Amendment? THE FEMINISTS DID THAT ONE in 1919 to protect "women and children" from drunken men.**
- **Nellie Taylor Ross was the 1st elected female state governor (of Wyoming) - 1925.**
- **Ever hear of "illegal" drugs and "controlled" substances? THE FEMINISTS DID THAT ONE in 1937. The entire war on drugs which is crippling our nation TODAY can be traced to racist and sexist ideals fostered by early feminists to protect "women and children" from stoned men. The movie "Reefer Madness" was all about the loosening of female moral virtue with a weed.**

The fact is that we, as a society evolved. We took a major leap forward the day men realized that women were our partners, different yet equal, despite our deep seated and well-meaning cultural dogmas. The truth is that men 'and women' in the past honestly believed women were not suited for life outside the domestic sphere. Of course, these same beliefs also condoned slavery. Tradition and everything else dictated what they did. And tradition would have been incomplete without the role of everyone within the society being specified. This didn't mean that the men hated the women, or consciously sat down and said or though,

"Who shall we oppress now?

How about women?"

They simply didn't know any better. And to be perfectly honest, women also took part in the creations of those traditions. In many ancient Western societies, women, despite their limited role in the external domains of the community were held in elevated positions in society, thus the codes of chivalry and gallantry that governed men's behavior towards women.

In Victorian England, woman were considered the moral guardians of society. A protective paternalistic attitude towards women was the norm, from which came the famous "Women and children first!" call. The resistance the first feminists encountered was typical of how members of a society (men and women in this case) would resist change, should it seem threatening to the way of life they were used to. Consider the Luddites, for example.

To look at it objectively, one would see that pre-feminist traditions were based on the simple logical division of labor, severely limited though they were, not oppression. To actually have some RadFem coming up to tell me that I should feel guilty because a few centuries or even decades ago a man was politically and culturally superior to a woman in society is ludicrous. No doubt it was wrong, and there are still problems that women face today (not necessarily caused by men), but we have progressed since then and it's time we solved these problems (and men's

problems) together, as partners and equals, just like the founding mothers and fathers of feminism wished.

But RadFems don't like that idea. RadFems insist that man's oppression of women is the governing principle of human societal life. Men are intrinsically bad, women are good. Men are oppressors and the cause of all evil, women are only their helpless victims. They see everything through this simple convoluted lens. This misandrous attitude pervades their thinking, their writings, their speeches and their demands. These notions are seen throughout RadFem 'scholarship'.

The following obviously misandrous quotes are from the leading icons of RadFems, from their mouths and their writings. And every RadFem believes these statements as if they were the gospel.

"One can know everything and still be unable to accept the fact that sex and murder are fused in the male consciousness, so that the one without the imminent possibly of the other is unthinkable and impossible," -- Andrea Dworkin, *Letters from a War Zone*, p. 21.

"The fact is that the process of killing - both rape and battery are steps in that process- is the prime sexual act for men in reality and/or in imagination," -- Andrea Dworkin, *Letters from a War Zone*, p. 22.

"The newest variations on this distressingly ancient theme center on hormones and DNA: men are biologically aggressive; their fetal brains were awash in androgen; their DNA, in order to perpetuate itself, hurls them into murder and rape," -- Andrea Dworkin, *Letters from a War Zone*, p. 114.

"All men benefit from rape, because all men benefit from the fact that women are not free in this society; that women cower; that women are afraid; that women cannot assert the rights that we have, limited as those rights are, because of the ubiquitous presence of rape," -- Andrea Dworkin, *Letters from a War Zone*, p. 142.

"One of the reasons that women are kept in a state of economic degradation- because that's what it is for most women- is because that is the best way to keep women sexually available," --Andrea Dworkin, *Letters from a War Zone*, p. 145.

"In everything men make, they hollow out a central place for death, let its rancid smell contaminate every dimension of whatever still survives. Men especially love murder. In art they celebrate it, and in life they commit it. They embrace murder as if life without it would be devoid of passion meaning, and action, as if murder were solace, still their sobs as they mourn the emptiness and alienation of their lives," -- Andrea Dworkin, *Letters from a War Zone*, p. 214.

"Sex as desired by the class that dominates women is held by that class to be elemental, urgent, necessary, even if or even though it appears to require the repudiation of any claim women might have to full human standing. In the subordination of women, inequality itself is sexualized made into the experience of sexual pleasure, essential to sexual desire," -- Andrea Dworkin, *Letters from a War Zone*, p. 265.

In fucking, as in reproduction, sex and economics are inextricably joined. In male-supremacist cultures, women are believed to embody carnality; women are sex. A man wants what a woman has--sex. He can steal it [prostitution], lease it over the long term marriage [marriage in the United States], or own it outright [marriage in most societies]. A man can do some or all of the above, over and over again. -- Andrea Dworkin, *Letters from a War Zone*

.

"Under patriarchy, no woman is safe to live her life, or to love, or to mother children. Under patriarchy,

every woman is a victim, past, present, and future. Under patriarchy, every woman's daughter is a victim, past, present, and future. Under patriarchy, every woman's son is her potential betrayer and also the inevitable rapist or exploiter of another woman," -- Andrea Dworkin, *Liberty*, p. 58.

"Romance is rape embellished with meaningful looks," -- Andrea Dworkin in the Philadelphia Inquirer, May 21, 1995.

"Heterosexual intercourse is the pure, formalized expression of contempt for women's bodies." "Rape is the primary heterosexual model for sexual relating. Rape is the primary emblem of romantic love. Rape is the means by which a woman is initiated into her womanhood as it is defined by men....Rape, then, is the logical consequence of a system of definitions of what is normative. Rape is no excess, no aberration, no accident, no mistake--it embodies sexuality as the culture defines it. -- Andrea Dworkin - *The Rape Atrocity and the Boy Next Door*

.

Rape, then, is the logical consequence of a system of definitions of what is normative. Rape is no excess, no aberration, no accident, no mistake--it embodies sexuality as the culture defines it." -- Andrea Dworkin - *The Rape Atrocity and the Boy Next Door*

"Rape is the primary heterosexual model for sexual relating. Rape is the primary emblem of romantic love. Rape is the means by which a woman is initiated into her womanhood as it is defined by men. -- Andrea Dworkin

"Marriage as an institution developed from rape as a practice. Rape, originally defined as abduction, became marriage by capture. Marriage meant the taking was to extend in time, to be not only use of but possession of, or ownership." -- Andrea Dworkin

"Man's discovery that his genitalia could serve as a weapon to generate fear must rank as one of the most important discoveries of prehistoric times, along with the use of fire, and the first crude stone axe," -- Susan Brownmiller, *Against Our Will: Men, Women, and Rape,* p. 5.

"[Rape] is nothing more or less than a conscious process of intimidation by which all men keep all women in a state of fear" -- Susan Brownmiller, *Against Our Will: Men, Women, and Rape,* P.6

"Our culture is depicting sex as rape so that men and women will become interested in it," -- Naomi Wolf, *The Beauty Myth*, p. 138.

"Cosmetic surgery and the ideology of self-improvement may have made women's hope for legal recourse to justice obsolete," -- Naomi Wolf, *The Beauty Myth*, p. 55.

"AIDS education will not get very far until young men are taught how not to rape young women and how to eroticize trust and consent; and until young women are supported in the way they need to be redefining their desires," -- Naomi Wolf, *The Beauty Myth*, p. 168.

"The dating system is a mutually exploitative arrangement of sex-role expectations, which limit and direct behavior of both parties and determine the character of the relationship. Built into the concept of dating is the notion that the woman is an object which may be purchased," -- Kurt Weis and Sandra S. Borges, *Rape Victimology*, p. 112.

"Patriarchy requires violence or the subliminal threat of violence in order to maintain itself... The most

dangerous situation for a woman is not an unknown man in the street, or even the enemy in wartime, but a husband or lover in the isolation of their home," -- Gloria Steinem in *Revolution from Within: A Book of Self-Esteem*, pp. 259-61.

"I call it the Noah Ark Syndrome. The perception lingers that human beings should go two by two. Someone who is not married-either by choice or by chance- is somehow regarded as abnormal," -- Patricia Ireland, president of the National Organization for Women (NOW) in Glamour, February 1997.

"All men are rapists and that's all they are," -- Marilyn French Author, "The Women's Room" in People, February 20, 1983.

"My feelings about men are the result of my experience. I have little sympathy for them. Like a Jew just released from Dachau, I watch the handsome young Nazi soldier fall writhing to the ground with a bullet in his stomach and I look briefly and walk on. I don't even need to shrug. I simply don't care. What he was, as a person, I mean, what his shames and yearnings were, simply don't matter." -- Marilyn French, in "*The Women's Room*"

"Men who are unjustly accused of rape can sometime gain from the experience," -- Catherine Comins, Vassar College Assistant Dean of Student Life in Time, June 3, 1991, p. 52.

"We have long known that rape has been a way of terrorizing us and keeping us in subjection. Now we also know that we have participated, although unwittingly, in the rape of our minds," -- Gerda Lerner in Who Stole Feminism: How Women Have Betrayed Women, p. 55.

"If the classroom situation is very heteropatriarchal- a large beginning class of 50 to 60 students say, with few feminist students- I am likely to define my task as largely one of recruitment...of persuading students that women are oppressed," -- Professor Joyce Trebilcot of Washington University in Who Stole Feminism: How Women Have Betrayed Women, p. 92.

"I feel that 'man-hating' is an honorable and viable political act, that the oppressed have a right to class-hatred against the class that is oppressing them." -- Robin Morgan, (current editor of MS magazine)

"Sexism is NOT the fault of women--kill your fathers, not your mothers." -- Robin Morgan, (current editor of MS magazine)

"The phallic malady is epidemic and systemic... each individual male in the patriarchy is aware of his relative power in the scheme of things.... He knows that his actions are supported by the twin pillars of the State of man - the brotherhood ritual of political exigency and the brotherhood ritual of a sexual thrill in dominance. As a devotee of Thanatos, he is one with the practitioner of sado-masochistic "play" between "consenting adults," as he is one with the rapist." -- Robin Morgan (current editor of MS magazine) "*The Demon Lover*" p. 138-9

"My white skin disgusts me. My passport disgusts me. They are the marks of an insufferable privilege bought at the price of others' agony." -- Robin Morgan (current editor of MS magazine) "*The Demon Lover*" p. 224

"Sex to this point in my life has been trivial, at best a gesture of tenderness, at worst a chore. I couldn't understand the furor about it." -- Robin Morgan (current editor of MS magazine) "*The Demon Lover*" p. 229

"Did she die of the disease called "family" or the disease called "rehabilitation", of poverty or drugs or pornography, of economics or sexual slavery or a broken body?" -- Robin Morgan (current editor of MS magazine) "*The Demon Lover*" p. 316

"I claim that rape exists any time sexual intercourse occurs when it has not been initiated by the woman, out of her own genuine affection and desire." -- Robin Morgan, in 1974

"...rape is the perfected act of male sexuality in a patriarchal culture-- it is the ultimate metaphor for domination, violence, subjugation, and possession." -- Robin Morgan

"I haven't the faintest notion what possible revolutionary role white hetero- sexual men could fulfill, since they are the very embodiment of reactionary- vested-interest-power. But then, I have great difficulty examining what men in general could possibly do about all this. In addition to doing the shitwork that women have been doing for generations, possibly not exist? No, I really don't mean that. Yes, I really do." -- Robin Morgan

"And let's put one lie to rest for all time: the lie that men are oppressed, too, by sexism--the lie that there can be such a thing as 'men's liberation groups.' Oppression is something that one group of people commits against another group specifically because of a 'threatening' characteristic shared by the latter group--skin color or sex or age, etc. The oppressors are indeed FUCKED UP by being masters (racism hurts whites, sexual stereotypes are harmful to men) but those masters are not OPPRESSED. Any master has the alternative of divesting himself of sexism or racism--the oppressed have no alternative--for they have no power--but to fight. In the long run, Women's Liberation will of course free men--but in the short run it's going to COST men a lot of privilege, which no one gives up willingly or easily. Sexism is NOT the fault of women--kill your fathers, not your mothers." -- Robin Morgan

"I claim that rape exists any time sexual intercourse occurs when it has not been initiated by the woman, out of her own genuine affection and desire." -- Robin Morgan, "Theory and Practice: Pornography and Rape" in "Going to Far," 1974.

"And in the spectrum of male bahavior, rape, the perfect combination of sex and violence, is the penultimate (sic) act. Erotic pleasure cannot be separated from culture, and in our culture male eroticism is wedded to power." -- Susan Griffin Rape: The Politics of Consciousness

"And if the professional rapist is to be separated from the average dominant heterosexual [male], it may be mainly a quantitative difference." -- Susan Griffin "Rape: The All-American Crime"

.

When asked: "You [Greer] were once quoted as saying your idea of the ideal man is a woman with a dick. Are you still that way inclined?"

Dr Greer (denying that she said it): "I have a great deal of difficulty with the idea of the ideal man. As far as I'm concerned, men are the product of a damanged gene. They pretend to be normal but what they're doing sitting there with benign smiles on their faces is they're manufacturing sperm. They do it all the time. They never stop.

"I mean, we women are more reasonable. We pop one follicle every 28 days, whereas they are producing 400 million sperm for each ejaculation, most of which don't take place anywhere near an ovum. I don't

know that the ecosphere can tolerate it." -- Germaine Greer, at a Hilton Hotel literary lunch, promoting her book "The Change-- Women, Aging and the Menopause". From a newsreport dated 14/11/91.

.

"The institution of sexual intercourse is anti-feminist" -- Ti-Grace Atkinson "Amazon Odyssey" (p. 86)

"When a woman reaches orgasm with a man she is only collaborating with the patriarchal system, eroticizing her own oppression..." -- Sheila Jeffrys

"Number 10: Regularly beat him on the head with your shoe."
"The more famous and powerful I get the more power I have to hurt men." -- Sharon Stone On David Letterman presenting a top ten list of ways to keep your man.

"Ninety-five percent of women's experiences are about being a victim. Or about being an underdog, or having to survive...women didn't go to Vietnam and blow up things up. They are not Rambo," -- Jodie Foster in The New York Times Magazine, January 6, 1991, p. 19.

"In a patriarchal society all heterosexual intercourse is rape because women, as a group, are not strong enough to give meaningful consent," -- Catherine MacKinnon in Professing Feminism: Cautionary Tales from the Strange World of Women's Studies, p. 129.

"Politically, I call it rape whenever a woman has sex and feels violated. You might think thats too broad. I'm not talking about sending all of you men to jail for that." -- Catherine MacKinnon "A Rally Against Rape" Feminism Unmodified

"I believe that women have a capacity for understanding and compassion which a man structurally does not have, does not have it because he cannot have it. He's just incapable of it." -- Former Congresswoman Barbara Jordan

.

MALE: ... represents a variant of or deviation from the category of female. 'The first males were mutants... the male sex represents a degeneration and deformity of the female.'

MAN: ... an obsolete life form... an ordinary creature who needs to be watched ... a contradictory baby-man ...

TESTOSTERONE POISONING: ... 'Until now it has been though that the level of testosterone in men is normal simply because they have it. But if you consider how abnormal their behavior is, then you are led to the hypothesis that almost all men are suffering from "testosterone poisoning."' -- from A Feminist Dictionary", ed. Kramarae and Treichler, Pandora Press, 1985

.

.

Letter to the Editor: "Women's Turn to Dominate"

"To Proud Feminist, (Herald-Sun, 7 February). Your last paragraph is shocking language from a feminist. You use the entrenched, revolting male stereotypes of women and rationalise your existence by saying you

are neither "ugly" nor "manless", as though either of these male-oriented judgments matter.

"Clearly you are not yet a free-thinking feminist but rather one of those women who bounce off the male-dominated, male-controlled social structures.

"Who cares how men feel or what they do or whether they suffer? They have had over 2000 years to dominate and made a complete hash of it. Now it is our turn. My only comment to men is, if you don't like it, bad luck - and if you get in my way I'll run you down." -- Signed: Liberated Women, Boronia - Herald-Sun, Melbourne, Australia - 9 February 1996

.

Some feminists object to the nuclear family. Some examples

The belief that married-couple families are superior is probably the most pervasive prejudice in the Western world. -- Judith Stacey

The little nuclear family is a paradigm that just doesn't work. "Only with the occasional celebrity crime do we allow ourselves to think the nearly unthinkable: that the family may not be the ideal and perfect living arrangement after all -- that it can be a nest of pathology and a cradle of gruesome violence," she writes. "Even in the ostensibly 'functional,' nonviolent family, where no one is killed or maimed, feelings are routinely bruised and often twisted out of shape. There is the slap or the put-down that violates a child's shaky sense of self, the cold, distracted stare that drives a spouse to tears, the little digs and rivalries." -- Barbara Ehrenreich, as quoted by Stephen Chapman, from Time

"long and honorable tradition of 'anti-family' thought," waxing nostalgic for those early feminists who regarded marriage as just another version of prostitution. This deeply defective institution "can hardly be the moral foundation of everything else," she argues, pining for the day when "someone invents a sustainable alternative." -- Barbara Ehrenreich, as quoted by Stephen Chapman, from Time

"The nuclear family is a hotbed of violence and depravity." -- Gordon Fitch

"How will the family unit be destroyed? ... the demand alone will throw the whole ideology of the family into question, so that women can begin establishing a community of work with each other and we can fight collectively. Women will feel freer to leave their husbands and become economically independent, either through a job or welfare." -- From Female Liberation by Roxanne Dunbar.

"Feminists have long criticized marriage as a place of oppression, danger, and drudgery for women." -- From article, "Is Marriage the Answer?" by Barbara Findlen, Ms magazine, May-June, 1995

"The Feminists -v- The Marriage License Bureau of the State of New York...All the discriminatory practices against women are patterned and rationalized by this slavery-like practice. We can't destroy the inequities between men and women until we destroy marriage." -- From *Sisterhood Is Powerful*, Morgan (ed), 1970 p. 537.

.

"most mother-women give up whatever ghost of a unique and human self they may have when they 'marry' and raise children." -- From Phyllis Chesler, *Women and Madness,* p. 294

"...I submit that any sexual intercourse between a free man and a human being he owns or controls is

rape." -- Alice Walker in "Embracing the Dark and the Light," Essence, July 1982. As cited in Andrea Dworkin's "Right-Wing Women"

The context of the quote in RWW makes it clear that marriage is such a form of control.

"Our research and most other studies show that wife-battering occurs in 50 percent of families throughout the nation." -- Lenore Walker, speaking at a Laguna Beach conference, as reported in the SF Chronicle

The SF Chronicle comments, "Only the most crazed man-hater could believe that."

Lenore Walker, after visiting one of the early shelters for battered women, wrote **"I was struck by what a beneficial alternative to the nuclear family this arrangement [communal housing and child raising] was for these women and children."** -- Lenore Walker. The Battered Woman , p.195

"The nuclear family must be destroyed, and people must find better ways of living together. ... Whatever its ultimate meaning, the break-up of families now is an objectively revolutionary process. ... "Families have supported oppression by separating people into small, isolated units, unable to join together to fight for common interests. ... -- Functions of the Family, Linda Gordon, WOMEN: A Journal of Liberation, Fall, 1969.

"Families make possible the super-exploitation of women by training them to look upon their work outside the home as peripheral to their 'true' role. ... No woman should have to deny herself any opportunities because of her speical responsibilities to her children. ... Families will be finally destroyed only when a revolutionary social and economic organization permits people's needs for love and security to be met in ways that do not impose divisions of labor, or any external roles, at all." -- Functions of the Family, Linda Gordon, WOMEN: A Journal of Liberation, Fall, 1969.

"And in the spectrum of male behavior, rape, the perfect combination of sex and violence, is the penultimate (sic) act. Erotic pleasure cannot be separated from culture, and in our culture male eroticism is wedded to power." -- Rape: The Politics of Consciousness

These and many other such like statements are what have given the term feminist its present reputation. RadFems would go to any length to protect these 'holy' doctrines, shunning any woman that refuses to to etheir party line. And together with the current 'Politically Correct' movement with its emphasis on group rights and group offences which conveniently gives 'victims' adequate reasons to attack their 'oppressors' without letting the so called oppressors defend themselves, the RadFem's can spread their misandrous beliefs without the inconvenience of their claims being subjected to scrutiny, in spite of the fact that today's argument is may be inconsistent with tomorrow's. In fact, any man who objects is called a 'typical male' misogynist (for opposing misandry, no less) and any woman who does is either 'too oppressed to see' or a 'traitor'. A proper 'feminist' (RadFem definition) would never criticize or disagree with another sister 'feminist'. No, she would just listen to it and agree, no matter how wrong she knows her 'sister' is. Luckily, very few women accept this.

The anti-male venom inherent in all RadFem writings and speeches are supported by half truths and outright lies presented as evidence to prove that there is a 'war against women' being waged by men everyday of a woman's life. The men include your father, brother, husband, lover, son, friend or even just the man walking across the street. Not some men, ALL men. These are some of their 'facts' that support their beliefs that ALL men are in some conspiracy to subjugate and oppress women:

RadFem fact: 4,000 women are killed by their husbands and boyfriends each year.

Truth: The actual number of people killed by lovers is around 1,200-1,500 each year. These types of murders accounted for only 4.9% of all murders in 1992 while 53% of murder victims were killed by strangers. The number of people killed by strangers has reached a historical high.

RadFem fact: Men commit 90% of all spousal murders.

Truth: Women represent 41% of spousal murderers. Among black married couples, wives were 47% of the spousal murderers.

RadFem fact: Fathers are more likely to kill their children.

Truth: When a child is killed by a parent, 55% of the time the mother murdered the child. This does not include the 35 million abortions in the United States in the last 25 years.

RadFem fact: Female children are being killed at a rate more than male children, which proves that there is a war against women.

Truth: Males account for 54% of murder victims aged 12 and younger. Every year more baby boys are born than baby girls, by age 10-12 (racial differences eixist) girls outnumber girls. They never look back. 67% of all citizens over the age of 65 are female. 85% of all citizens over age 85 are female.

RadFem fact: Fathers generally abuse their children.

Truth: According to the Child Protective Service's 1994 survey, physical abuse represented 21% of confirmed cases, sexual abuse 11%, neglect 49%, emotional maltreatment 3% and other forms of maltreatment 16%. Women/mothers account for substantially more than half of all the above categories except for sexual abuse. And here, only about 2% of molesters are the biological fathers. For girls, the greatest risks are live-in boyfriends, stepfathers, and the corresponding absence of the biological father. The biological father is 5 times less likely to sexually abuse their own progeny than ALL other males.

RadFem fact: Domestic violence against women is rising.

Truth: Wife abuse declined 21.8% from 1975 to 1985 and has been on the decrease since then.

RadFem fact: Nationally, 50% of all homeless women and children are on the streets because of violence in the home.

Truth: The source of this myth is Senator Biden, who has shown no study that proves this as fact. Further, 85% of the homeless are men and a significant percentage are military veterans.

RadFem fact: Women who kill their batterers receive longer prison sentences than men who kill their partners.

Truth: According to the Bureau of Justice Statistics, Violence Between Intimates (November 1994), the average prison sentence for men who killed their wives is 17.5 years; the average sentence for women convicted of killing their husband was 6.2 years.

RadFem fact: Family violence has killed more women in the last five years than the total number of Americans who were killed in the Vietnam War.

Truth: This "fact" is often said by Dr. Robert McAfee, past president of the American Medical Association. There were about 58,000 American casualties in the Vietnam War. According to the FBI, Uniform Crime Statistics, about 1,500 women are killed by their husbands or boyfriends each year. The total number of women homicide victims each year is 5,000. Thus, in 5 years, even if every woman who was killed was killed by a family member, the total would still be one-half the number of American casualties in Vietnam.

RadFem fact: Domestic violence is the leading cause of injury to women between the ages of 15-44 in the US- more than car accidents, muggings, and rapes combined.

Truth: The original source of this statement goes back to two papers by Evan Stark and Ann Flitcraft. First, the actual research the 'fact' is based on is a rather small survey of one emergency room. Second, in the original articles, they said that domestic violence may be a more common cause of emergency room visits than car accidents, muggings, and rape combined.

RadFem fact: 85% of women will be the victims of sexual harassment.

Truth: (This will be explained below.)

RadFem fact: Four million women are beaten and abused by their husbands and lovers each year.

Truth: The latest US National surveys put the number of abused women at around 1.8 to 2 million. And abused men at 2.1 million.

RadFem fact: 25% i.e. 1 in 4 of all women will be the victims of rape, or attempted rape in their lifetimes.

Truth: This came from RadFem Mary Koss, who took it upon herself to decide for the 'victims' that they had been raped. Nationally, 72 out of 100,000 (0.00072%) women are raped every year. It is extremely sad even if it was only 1 in a million but exaggerating so as to defame men is criminal.

RadFem fact: Women receive lower wages than men for equal work; 59 or 72 (take your pick) cents for each male dollar.

Truth: Experience and average hours per week working also play a crucial role in explaining the gap. Over their lifetimes, women tend to work total fewer hours than men do. This is because women are more likely to take time off for family matters and interrupt their careers than men are. Women who are single and without children tend to equal what their male counterparts make, but women who are married and/or have children tend to take more time off for family matters which hurts their experience and shows up in significantly lower earnings.

RadFem fact: Girls in junior high suffer a dramatic and unique loss in self-esteem due to the 'fact' that the school system is designed by the patriarchy to promote male success and discourage female children.

Truth: When 55% of all university graduates are women, how can this be true?

All of the above RadFem facts are either hugely exaggerated or just outright lies. However, any attempt to challenge these statements result in a severe reprisal from the politically correct movement and whoever it was that challenged the above 'facts' is branded a 'pro-rape' misogynist.

Why would a man get upset about RadFem propaganda statistics?

What's so very wrong with these lies, and their perpetuation?

If they incite people to action, so much the better, right?

Wrong!

Apart from the RadFem intent of demonizing men, the true horrors of domestic violence, rape, and all other such crimes stand, unfortunately, on their own merit, without the need for false statistics. Because the more the validity of something is found wanting, the less it is taken notice of. It is an insult to actual victims of these evils because it trivializes them.

So what are the RadFem's solutions to these problems?

These 'solutions', would of course have to be consistent with their agendas. Which show the true nature of the new face of Feminism. Take note of the very discriminatory 'Take Our Daughters To Work' day. Why not 'Take Our CHILDREN To Work' day? Do boys need less encouragement than girls?

This link leads to an essay is from an Australian woman, Babette Francis, who presents some of their 'solutions' in a critical light

(Link now defunct) Speaking of logic, the recent attempts by the RadFems to revamp the entire educational system and the knowledge taught therein itself, by defaming the 'male constructs of knowledge' which they define as based on logic, reason and rationality, (which are 'male' biased), would be laughable if they didn't actually seem to be attracting followers. According to RadFems, knowledge should be based on 'women's ways of knowing'; in one fell swoop eliminating everything so far known to man and womankind as 'patriarchal male knowledge'. The following essay is from the web e-zine, Upstream, by Steve Goldberg. It presents a criticism of the latest RadFem misadventure into the world of Academia.

(Link now defunct) Another Australian woman, Bettina Arndt protests this RadFem ideological fixation on defaming anything male and their effects on men in this classic essay:

As the essay above states, men have found themselves under attack, on the personal and political level, and any protest would result in a massive backlash.

.

Most men simply shut up, some protest, but the truly scary thing is that there are others who actually feel guilty for things they are not even responsible for.

They call themselves 'male feminists' and echo everything the RadFems tell them. Whenever you read some of their literature, you get a feeling that these men have so much self-hatred, so deeply ingrained into them that they will actually one day cut their penises off.

.

"I feel so guilty every time I hear of a woman being raped...because I know that I exalt in it as a man, even though I didn't do it...but in a way, I did..." I once read.

A man, I think he's a professor, is on the net putting up refutations of the RadFem rape statistics on his website. A 'male feminist' sent this priceless gem protesting that discrediting RadFem statistics is 'insensitive' and amounts to 'supporting rape' and 'blaming the victim'. He ended it with this...

"Why is it that we men consistently hurt ourselves, each other, women, and the environment so friggin much?

What is at the core of all this anger and frustration we feel? Why do I compulsively reach for more and more power over other people, even my friends and "lovers"? Why is it that even after fucking my girlfriend I'm still so fucking alone? Go to the men's and women's studies section of your library or bookstore, and read about yourselves. Then go out and BE a just person."

The self-hatred here is so apparent it's alarming. I took particular note of his advice that men should go to the 'women studies' sections and read about themselves.

Whose writings are in these 'women's studies' sections?

- Andrea Dworkin,
- Robin Morgan,
- Marilyn French,
- Susan Brownmiller etc.

One of the most glaring things about all these writings is the fact that all of them strenuously repeat that men do not and cannot comprehend the true nature of women, but they, the 'enlightened' ones, of course, understand that 'all' men want to rape/hurt/kill/subjugate/dominate everything i.e. women, children, other men, animals, the environment etc. around them.

How do they know?

These attacks on men by the RadFems and the Politically Correct movement as the Bettina Arndt's essay states, have gone far in undermining men's most exclusive, important and beneficial roles in society. Particularly as husband and father.

RadFem attacks on the family are based primarily on the fact that men have a traditional leadership role in it. Now tradition has changed, and women are considered co-heads of the family. But for RadFems, that's not enough, because the MAN is still in it. A husband is by definition a rapist, and a father, according to RadFems is the man who wants to, or is, presently abusing his children.

Here is where I begin to understand why so many people assume that 'feminists' are militant lesbians/virulently anti-heterosexual and anti-family. Inserted into everyone of their misandrous writings is their total disdain for the roles of men in the family and in the lives of women.

Indeed, N.O.W. once released a statement in a memorandum saying...

"Every woman must be willing to be identified as a lesbian to be fully feminist...."

For instance, in the RadFem acclaimed book 'The Courage To Heal' by Ellen Bass and Laura Davis, men in the family, particularly fathers, are portrayed as sadists and rapists. The concept of the book is about highly dubious recovered 'repressed memories' of sexual abuse.

The two authors claim that they were both abused by a man in their family when they were children. The whole book is filled with stories from other women who also claim to have been abused , sometimes for many years, by men in their families.

The strange thing about everyone of the cases illustrated in the book is the fact that all the women 'forgot' or 'suppressed' these memories of abuse and suffered unexplained dilemmas in their lives until suddenly the memories were recovered, mostly with the aid of 'abuse' therapists.

The book sold in its thousands, and thousands of women and some few men, given new 'insight' by the book, 'recovered' memories of abuse suffered at the hands of their elder male relatives that they had suppressed.

Other women, who have not even been 'abused' have seen the 'light' and have seen the 'danger' of allowing men,

particularly fathers, into their children's lives.

One woman was quoted on an LA newspaper as saying "I chose to be a single mother because I want to raise my son without the negative influence of a man in his life". The article was about single motherhood, which despite claims by RadFems to be 'liberating' is actually becoming a massive social problem.

Amazingly, the two authors who wrote the 'Courage to Heal' have not the credentials needed to write such an authoritative book on the subject. But since the book is under the banner of Women's Studies, such criticism would be dangerous to the reputation and/or career of the critic, as he or she would automatically be 'politically incorrect', which is close to being a heretic in the middle ages.

Apart from the fact that the typical attitude toward fathers in the book is accurately represented by this quote

"I'd watch Perry Mason to get ideas about how to kill my father. It was really the best of times. Every day I would get a new method",

Another scary aspect is the emphasis on distancing one's self from one's family, particularly if the family would challenge the 'victim's' recovered 'memory'. The victim, the woman, is encouraged to think of the all-female 'incest survivor's movement' as her new family. All cults use similar logic to remove the logic that keeps most people sane.

Now, it's been well documented that many of the women who go into these new 'families' come under a great deal of pressure to change their sexual orientation to homosexual, with the obvious reasoning that if a man you're supposed to trust above all else i.e. your father, can molest you, how can you trust or be in a relationship with any man?

This is further accentuated by the fact that on closer inspection almost all the women whose stories are told in the 'Courage To Heal', including the authors, are lesbians.

Even more telling are the recommendations by Bass and Davis for the 'recovering' women, no matter their sexuality, to read 'Lesbian Sex' and it's sequel 'Lesbian Passion: Loving Ourselves and Each Other', which includes chapters for 'incest survivors and their partners', to 'help' them in their 'healing'.

One lesbian therapist took this a step further by sleeping with her female patients, rationalizing this taking advantage of a patients trust as not unethical, because she's a woman. (And of course, she did it for their own good.)

Another avenue, other than the usual demonizing i.e. all men batter, rape etc., that RadFems normally use to convince women about the inadequacy of having men as intimate partners in their lives is the continuously repeated assertion that a man does not have the emotional, sexual or intellectual capacity to be a woman's soul mate that a woman has.

This of course overlooks the fact that lesbians have a break up rate far exceeding that of heterosexual couples.

Another study states that "lesbian couples are less 'sexual' as couples and as individuals than anyone else ...

47% of lesbians in long- term relationships "had sex" once a month or less, while among heterosexual married couples only 15% had sex once a month or less".

And even more disturbing: scientific studies of domestic violence in lesbian couples show violence in the range of 25% to 60% of all lesbian households. The most recent percentage is 33%, taking note of the fact that a lot of states in the US do not term same-sex violence as 'domestic', even if the violence is between intimates. In fact, even the victims sometimes don't term their abuse as domestic violence. Take this woman's words

"I didn't know what it was. I thought it was a real bad relationship."

Her female partner had smashed her head against the dashboard of her car. And another woman, who had a tooth knocked out twice by a female intimate said

"I have an inherent something in me that wants to make it work. There was always the promise that she

would change. It was one of those things I thought would never happen to me."

Back to “Gender War, Sexuality, and Love”

EOTM: !!!!!!!!!!RAPE!!!!!!!!!!...

. · 26 March 2005 · Archived copy · Original

"I claim that rape exists any time sexual intercourse occurs when it has not been initiated by the woman, out of her own genuine affection and desire." -- Robin Morgan, "Theory and Practice: Pornography and Rape"

"In a patriarchal society all heterosexual intercourse is rape because women, as a group, are not strong enough to give meaningful consent," -- Catherine MacKinnon in Professing Feminism: Cautionary Tales from the Strange World of Women's Studies, p. 129.

"The fact is that the process of killing - both rape and battery are steps in that process- is the prime sexual act for men in reality and/or in imagination," -- Andrea Dworkin, Letters from a War Zone

---

"Man's discovery that his genitalia could serve as a weapon to generate fear must rank as one of the most important discoveries of prehistoric times, along with the use of fire, and the first crude stone axe," -- Susan Brownmiller, Against Our Will: Men, Women, and Rape, p. 5.

"All men benefit from rape, because all men benefit from the fact that women are not free in this society; that women cower; that women are afraid; that women cannot assert the rights that we have, limited as those rights are, because of the ubiquitous presence of rape," -- Andrea Dworkin, Letters from a War Zone

---

Nothing could be farther from the reality of most men's experiences with sex than the characterizations of the radical rape theorists. Sexual freedom for women was once one of the foundations of the so-called "women's liberation" movement, but that has been replaced by a rigid political orthodoxy that is far more restrictive for women than the conditions which were the justification of their need for liberation. As the political has bulldozed its way into the personal, the delicate balance which existed in relationships and made them possible has completely broken down.

Today, nearing the crossover point between the 20th and 21st centuries, it is impossible to approach even the most superficial examination of female/male relationships without having to deal with a bottomless chasm between men and women called rape. The word itself has long since ceased to have any specific meaning because the concept has been so broadened that sex itself, any and all sex, between men and women is now called rape by some. This broadening of the aspect of criminality, violence, within sexual relationships blurs the distinctions between the normal frictions inherent in such an emotionally intense experience and true malicious intent. Indeed, malice on the part of men toward women is assumed and has become impossible for a man to disprove.

Rape has become the metaphor for all the conflicts of power between the sexes, and institutionalizes the underdog position of women. Dissident feminist Camille Paglia characterizes rape as "male power fighting female power".

Another dissident feminist group, The Feminist Anti-Censorship Task Force (FACT), in "Caught Looking", names and describes the female aspect of power in sexual relationships. "It (denial of the possibility of mutuality) puts the woman in the position that the mother has to the infant: she has the power to give or withold." A few paragraphs later they recognize that "subduing the male through sex, a tradtional female stance, did not give women freedom to become sexual persons in their own right." Journalist Nora Fox, writing for "Squire", magazine suggests "Being the superior sex, women long ago learned the surefire way to get our way is to withhold sex. It's the same way we train dogs. Good behavior merits you a treat; bad behavior puts you in the conjugal dog house for the night. Men never seem to catch on." "It's a sad commentary on social Darwinism that sexual withholding works after all these millennia."

It is an even sadder commentary on the female view of relationships to see a woman advocating that women reduce their sexual nature to commodity status, then use it to play a mean and exploitive version of the futures market: artificially manipulating the commodity to create an artificial scarcity which drives up the price. By equating female sexuality with a dog biscuit, this so-called feminist dehumanizes women and demeans their sexuality far more than men ever could. Implicit in her view, as well as the views of radical rape theory, is a dissociation of women from their sexuality. It is not part of them: it is a THING to be passed around, used to manipulate with, but never something to be valued in its own right. If women, as the superior sex, take that view of their own sexuality, why is it a criminal act for men to believe them?

Extending Ms Fox's analogy of treating men like dogs, anyone who has trained a dog knows that effective training requires iron discipline. When using a treat to coerce desired behavior from a dog, any departure from the conditional withholding and giving a treat when the behavior isn't present will create a game where the beloved pet will try to get the treat without the required behavior. There is no malice on the pet's part, he really thinks it is a game - just like tug-of-war or chase-the-ball.

In sexual relationships, men often have to contend with women who constantly flip-flop in their postions. Sometimes it seems like women want to play: other times it seems like the purpose of the same activity has changed to control. When women attempt to grab the maternal power position described by FACT, and place the man in the position of the infant, by using their power to grant or withhold as a manipulative device, as Ms Fox suggests, men react in a variety of ways ranging from hurt to rage. All of these reactions damage the foundation of a relationship and undermine its mutuality. Depending on his socialization and past experiences with women, he may chose to continue it as a game and try to snatch the biscuit from his would-be mistress's hand, knock her down and take it by force, or simply quit the game and go away.

Prior to the extreme expansion of the concepts of rape, continuing the game was considered to be "romance". Above cited Camille Paglia has also made the statement that "what used to be considered unbridled passion is now called 'date rape'". According to feminist theory, rape definitions were previously biased completely toward the male point of view. Reflecting a cultural and social understanding of the "traditional female stance" of "subduing the male through sex", behavior antecedent to the alleged sex act purported to be criminal in nature was considered in determining whether the woman had been engaging in a power play of bait-and-switch or was truly innocent of any action or intent to provoke interest and desire in a man as a method of gaining power over him. This was a form of protection for men from women who understood the nature of their sexual power and were quite willing to abuse it and use it in a manipulative and exploitive way, just as rape laws were a form of protection from men who were willing to abuse their power to violate a woman sexually.

Nothing is so central to feminist theory as the denial of this as a true form of power. Balancing the so-called "patriarchy" has always been the emotional "matriarchy" of intimate relationships. In its current incarnation, the widely accepted fact that women are "relationship and intimacy experts", women retain exclusive power to define the terms and conditions of intimacy. The male point of view is not just denied and negated: it is demanded of men

that they not only accede to, but adopt, the female point of view. Females "know" in their special "women's way of knowing" how relationships "should" be conducted, and they grant or withhold the treat of sex as a means of training men to give them what they want.

This point of view has become entrenched in current legal theory and practice. The determination of criminality has shifted completely away from objective interpretation of events to subjective determination based entirely on the perceptions of the female. Behavior on the part of the female which could have been interpreted in the subjective experience of the male as an invitation or enticement to pursue her, the proverbial and inflammatory "she asked for it", and which can turn really ugly if the woman changes the rules at the last moment and grabs for the maternal power postion of withholding what she has previously implied she was quite willing to give away freely, is now ruled inadmissable in determining guilt. However she says it was, is the law now. The ratios of criminal to non-criminal sexual behavior have been entirely reversed. Rape used to exclude anything which was ambiguous or where the woman's intent was unclear: now it includes all these formerly gray areas and only excludes the rare occasions where the woman is clear and unconflicted in her desires and intent; as Robin Morgan stipulates.

Given the realities of dating relationships, and the complex dance of advance/retreat which is characteristic of them, situations without ambiguity seldom exist. In part, it is the very riskiness of the ambiguous situation which provides much of the excitement of sexuality. Several years ago, Antioch College (always at the forefront of "political correctness") formulated a set of rules for the conduct of sexual relationships which required the male to secure explicit verbal consent prior to each escalation of physical intimacy leading to sex. "Can I touch your breast now?" "Can I put my hand inside your panties now?" "Can I put my finger inside you now?" It's hard to imagine that the people who wrote these rules had ever had sex. The cold and unemotional negotiation of sex like a labor contract is a more effective means of killing a rising bout of libido than a cold shower could ever be. The formal distance and restraint required a separation of intellect from experience and a detachment and dissociation from the event which no amount of lust could survive. What little sexual expression survived this over-intellectualization was necessarily contrived and devoid of emotional content. What started out to be about passion became about nothing more than friction.

In most cases, male ardor could not survive the stilted script and wilted like a cut flower under a hot light. In the current formulation of the sexual script, this was exactly the desired result. Men now assumed the role of the gatekeeper formerly filled by women and rather than rely on her to tell him that he was about to go, or had gone too far, he had to take responsibility for making sure he never stepped over the line: if he did, it was "date rape". Rebalancing the stereotypic division of responsibility implicit in the old tradtional roles would have required women to then take on the role of the initiator, which would also require that they take responsibility for their own sexuality and the fact that they are sexual beings. This, of course, is not allowed under the precepts of either the traditional cultural view of female sexuality or the contemporary position of the rape theorists, which are actually identical in their underlying assumptions despite the cosmetic differences used to hide their true intent. "Women do not want sex, they want love and commitment. A woman who willingly engages in sex is participating in her own oppression. A woman who believes that she has had willing sex is weak minded fool who has internalized her own oppression because she is unable to know any better and patriarchy controls her every move." It would also totally compromise her power postion to grant or withhold sex as a means of getting her way: transferring it to the male.

Given the fact that, historically, a woman's sexuality WAS her primary economic asset; and that the cultural institution of marriage was essentially a socially enforced contract in which the male was held responsible and accountable for providing financially for that woman and any products of his access to her sexuality in return for that access; marital law exempted husbands from rape charges. Rape was considered a form of theft, taking a woman's asset without paying for it. Implicit in this structure was the assumption that, by marrying her, the man had entered into a contract of continued payment for continued access. Cultural stereotyping demanded that women dissociate themselves from any enjoyment of their own sexuality lest men "stop buying cows, because they could

get the milk for free". The sexual repression of the first Victorian age was so complete that it was considered somehow shameful and perverse if a woman actually enjoyed sex instead of "lying back and thinking of England" so she could somehow endure the shame and degradation of it all. Sex was primarily for the production of children, and the satisfaction of men's "bestial" urges, and the ideal was to get it over with as quickly as possible in order to minimize the shame and degradation of it all.

The quotes at the beginning of this essay reflect a return to values and cultural attitudes which were far more characteristic of the 1880s than the 1980s. Rene Denfeld has referred to this branch of radical feminism as "The New Victorians" in her book of the same name. The radical rape theorists have somehow managed to pull off a hoax of incredible propotions as they push for reinstatement of total repression and denial of female sexuality while justifying it by claiming it is necessary as a tool to fight the very conditions that it creates as an inevitable result.

The modern day mechanism for this is also identical to the ones historically used: destruction of women's sexuality through a variety of mechanisms and making women fear men because of their bestial and violent inherent natures.

Cultures in Africa and the Middle East take a very straightforward approach to the destruction of female sexuality: they simply chop the genitals off little girls somewhere between the ages of 4 and puberty. Commonly known to western cultures as Female Genital Mutilation, or FGM, these grisly practices are known within the cultures which practice them by the more polite and obscure euphemisms of female circumcision, excision, and infibulation. Western cultures, being on the whole more "civilized", use the more "humane" means of leaving the genitals attached but severing the emotional attachment and ownership, as well as all feeling in them, by the mechanism of shame. The western culture version of FGM is "Female Genital Mindfuck" which confuses and sublimates a woman's real feelings and desires into a form reflecting a prevailing cultural value which serves a social purpose. Women are only allowed to experience pleasure within a highly prescribed and proscribed context. She must be "in love": if she is all things are allowed, up to and including murder, if she isn't nothing is allowed.

This highly scripted social context is just as anti-reality when it comes to the behavior of most women as the characterizations of all sex as a form of violence is regarding the real behavior of men. The cultural mechanism which used to allow women to maintain this fiction and still experience their sexuality was men's fulfillment of their part of the sexual script regarding aggression and initiation. Women could put up "token" resistance secure in the knowledge that men would persist through the 150 rejections required to move the relationship from first eye-contact to sexual intimacy, because that was their role - their "JOB". The inevitable misunderstandings and ambiguities would be excused based on a understanding that the deception involved in the artificial roles made real understanding next to impossible. Women could be sexual without the shame by being "in love", "overcome by passion", "carried away in the heat of the moment", or any one of many other euphemisms for the woman letting the man have her way. Once in a while it got out of hand, and a truly dangerous man would ignore the gatekeeping signals which meant "too far", in which case the man would be convicted of rape. The old code of "chivalry" was sufficient to keep most socialized men in check.

When the public code of chivalry was changed from a woman's privilege to a woman's oppression, the entire system began to break down. Eliminating the distinctions between loving consensual sex and violence, and in fact denying that any such distinctions exist, made it impossible for a woman who was not completely clear on her sexuality (and given the contradictions in the culture on the subject of sex, what woman, or man for that matter, COULD be) to understand the gray areas between her own desires and being exploited by men in purely selfish and self-serving manners. Thus any behavior which fell outside the bounds of "politically correct" orthodoxy came to be criminalized. And since that range was narrow indeed, not to mention anti-reality, almost all sexual actions by men toward women came to be regarded as criminal, or "potentially" criminal (as exemplified by characterizing all men as "potential" rapists). Thus the meaning of the term "rape" has been broadened in its usage to include a vast number of acts that have nothing to do with sexuality, but relate only to the aspect of sex now called by the term

"gender". Any time men oppose the desires or actions of a woman; whether it be to grab the moral high ground and maternal power to grant or withhold sex (even after an implicit suggestion that it is to be expected) or simply to impose on men something they have every reason and right to resist; it is now called by some variation of "(modifier) rape".

A female sportswriter, in a often quoted incident which occurred in the locker room of a professional football team several years ago, characterized the male players hostility toward her presence in their locker room, while they were running around in various stages of undress, as "mind rape." No male sportscaster would dream of expecting to be able to hang out in a female athletes' locker room indulging his voyeuristic appetites; but when a woman does and men object - the woman, as always, becomes the victim by screaming RAPE!!!! The very term "mind-rape" should be seen as an oxymoron; and probably would except for the rejection of reason, logic, mind, and intelligence itself as "andro-centric" which radical feminsm has made possible. Rape is being used today in the broadest possible sense to cast the subtle pall of criminal violence on any action of men to assert their own power and right to it. The concept of "equal rights" has been totally lost in the grab for power which feminism has become. Any person in a free society should have the right to deny a person of the opposite sex from leering at them in a semi-private environment. Isn't that the entire foundation under the concept of "sexual harassment". The use of the term "rape" to describe such actions by men illustrates how the meaning has been perverted to the point where the term has no meaning at all any more except to make criminals of men who oppose any action or exercise of power by a woman.

This is not to say that forced criminal sex does not exist, it certainly does and should remain a crime subject to the most severe of punishments. But the destruction and criminalization of the gray areas is most decidedly not to the benefit of either women or men. Kate Fillion, in "Lip Service" describes the experience of a young woman whose interpretation of a sexual encounter changes from the beginnings of a wonderful romance and life together to rape as a result of seeing her lover of the previous night sitting with another girl in the college cafeteria. Many writers, female and male alike, have commented on how this trivialization of the term is incredibly insulting and destructive to those who really have been violated.

The much trumpeted statistic that 1/4 of all women will be rape victims relies on a definition of rape that requires denial of 75% of the women's own interpretations of the experience. Fully 3/4 of the women included in the numbers of "rape victims" themselves characterized the experience as a misunderstanding. Almost half of them went on to sleep with the so-called "perpetrators" again. Under the expanded definition of rape used to create the 1/4 statistic: a man who takes a woman out on that "holy grail" of single womanhood, the "Saturday Night Date", drops a couple of hundred bucks on dinner that includes a bottle or 2 of wine, then they end up doing the horizontal boogie, if she has 2nd thoughts about it later - HE HAS RAPED HER.

The complexity of the conditions for "politically correct sex" have become so prohibitive that failure is inevitable. Perhaps the first area where true equality between the sexes is going to be achieved is by making men as inhibited and ambivalent about sex as the popular stereotype of women portrays women to be. Nothing is so ironic as listening to a woman, who never even took high school psychology, make bitter and scathing authoritative pronouncements about men, their nature, their motivations, and particularly their sexuality; then wonder morosely why none of these exploitive creatures approach her in order to force their unwanted attentions upon her.

Historically, men have shouldered a disproportionate share of the burdens and risks associated with the initiation of potential sexual relationships. They did so both in anticipation of certain rewards, and based upon a certain sense of safety that he would be cut a bit of slack if he failed to do it perfectly elegantly. Assigning the role of the initiator to men and the gatekeeper to women, worked to the general benefit of all. Studies have found that the frequency of sex in lesbian relationships is significantly below that in heterosexual relationships, which is again below that in relationships between gay men. Men initiate, women wait. Theres an old workplace poster that talks about a job that "anybody could have done, but it was really nobody's job, so nobody did it, if somebody had done it, things

would have been so much better". Men have been very clearly socialized to understand that the shit work of sexual initiation is "their job." However, when the situation is created where an act is both required AND prohibited, almost everyone will make the choice which carries the lesser sanction. In todays culture that means waiting for the woman to "intiate sex out of her own sincere affection and desire" as Robin Morgan demands to avoid a rape charge. No man goes to prison for the crime of waiting. Men and women alike are waiting for Godot, who never shows up.

The "dull assumption" to which Norman Mailer refers in "Prisoner of Sex", ie. that the male sex drive is entirely due to an accident of birth, is more repellant to men today than when Mailer wrote about it in 1971. The fact that it has become so deeply entrenched in the public mind, becoming the 21st century equivalent of the "flat earth" view of the 15th century, has driven all eroticism and joy out of sexual relationships. Erin Pizzey, founder of the first women's shelter in the UK, speaks of the "terrible loss of tenderness and romance which has been leached out of the lives of women." In the gender war, the shared bed has become one of the primary battlegrounds.

The persistence, urgency, and ubiquity of the male sex drive and its power ascribed by the radical rape theorists to all men is a complete fallacy. While the cultural perception remains that men want sex more than women; doctors, counselors, and other helping professionals are increasingly called upon to deal with women trying to adjust to the fact that their chosen partners do not have much, if any, interest in sleeping with them. The sexless marriage is becoming far more common than most people realize. Relying entirely on men's sexual desire to compel them to pursue women and place themselves under the power of women to grant or withhold sex is a strategy that fails somewhere around age 40. Women tend to respond to this loss of power to use their sexuality in a manipulative and exploitive manner in the same ugly fashion as women who never had it in the first place: they bash men for it.

Above quoted journalist Nora Fox says, in the same article "... by the time we (women) reach our sexual peak, men are running on fumes". She goes on to suggest using a man's fear of his loss of sexual potency: "Another useful strategy is the withering glance. Begin with eye contact; move down to the zipper. After making sure no camcorders are present, I often combo this move with a disgusted snort followed by a teeth-clenched snarl."

What this woman is advocating is violence: emotional violence. Violence breeds violence and many a man will react to the long term use of such tactics by becoming emotionally or physically violent themselves. This article perfectly illustrates just about every reason why relationships between men and women are breaking down. How could anyone look at the viciousness inherent in this woman's writing and not realize how it destroys the most fundamental quality necessary for a relationship, i.e. trust?

It also illustrates in elgant shorthand fashion the anwer to Wendy Dennis's question: Why are men not out seeking and loving women? Because they are getting no messages whatsoever that women have any wish for them to. Because doing so is now defined as a criminal act. And because, even if their desire to love a woman is strong enough to overcome these first two hurdles, what they find in the majority of cases is not the loving support and appreciation of their love that they expected; but abuse, hatred, and betrayal of trust.

Simplistic formulations of the complexities of emotions, politics and power, which dominate the sexual exchange, deny the reality of the experiences of most people. Sex is nothing but ambiguities, uncertainties, ambivalences. Today's politicized rape climate reverses the proportions of normal and pathological: making the majority experience pathological and holding up an as-yet unachieved ideal as the prototype of "normality". Demanding that sex be female-initiated in order to avoid criminality, as Robin Morgan does, hardly seems to fit with the observed behaviors of most women.

Still, even this extreme position would be more palatable to men than the current situation. Men are still expected, and under great social pressures, to initiate, but are demanded to do so entirely in accordance with women's

specifications, desires, and needs. Failure to meet any of these is punishable by imprisonment. Men as human beings have been completely dropped out of the picture: and the expectation now is that they will function either like flesh and blood vibrators or the hero of some romance novel or chick flick embodying a totally dysfunctional blend of contradictory and mutually exclusive characteristics. Needless to say, not many men are passing romantic muster these days.

The extreme negative stereotyping, combined with the impossibly conflicting demands and expectations, enforced by the power of law enforcement and an increasing body of aggressively punitive laws, have led an ever growing number of men to simply "drop out". Feminst author Wendy Dennis observed several years ago "men had backed off from women in response to the feminst agenda". She also remarked in her book that many men simply avoided romantic relationships except when prompted by a bout of loneliness to make a foray into the singles bars. At one point she wonders why these men are not out seeking, dating, and loving women. While she does an adequate job of acknowledging the beating over the head with feminist demands that they remodel themselves which men have endured for the past 3 decades, she never quite got around to fessing up to the fact that men had been told so many times that doing so was tantamount to rape that they decided it was better to be asexual than a criminal.

Countering the stereotypes on which the radical rape theorists rely to justify their push for lesbianism and elimination of men, are the realities of men who have opted out of the whole game as a means of beating the game of sexual politics. One man I spoke with, now in his mid-40s, gave up sex before the age of 30. He says he barely remembers it, and what he does remember of it was more obnoxious than pleasant or rewarding. In speaking of the reasons for his choice, he refers to the fact that things he shared in an atmosphere of trust were invariably used against him with incredibly malicious intent when the nature of the relationship changed. In his descriptions as well as many other conversations with men on this topic, the word "betrayal" comes up again and again.

Joshua Harris, at age 22 when most young people are almost obsessed with romantic relationships, has written a book called "I Kissed Dating Goodbye" and tours the country speaking to young people encouraging them not to date. In his book, he outlines 7 reasons for not dating. Four of the seven have to do with the misunderstandings that are inevitable given the differing expectations, agendas, and perceptions with which men and women tend to enter potentially sexual relationships.

Men now accept "No" as meaning "no". "Maybe" is also regarded as "no." Since "yes" can never mean really mean yes, any "yes" which is not delivered in writing and notarized is interpreted as a "conditional yes": yes (if there is a commitment forthcoming). The hostility that this breeds in men is illustrated by the man who got the "no, maybe, yes, no, no I mean yes" treatment then pulled away from his "date" and began masturbating. While it is easy to see how this was obviously quite hostile and probably hurt the woman's "delicate" feelings, any empathy for her point of view is tempered by the fact that the political climate makes her ambivalence quite safe while ignoring it has assumed life-changing risks for the man.

The runaway abuse of rape, rape shield, and sexual harassment laws has totally remodeled the landscape of romantic relationships. The mechanisms of attraction buried so deeply in our biology and social customs are not easily redefined. The resulting confusion and misunderstandings has attempted to throw away the old without replacing it with anything new. What is left is a caricature. Women and men fear and distrust each other. If anyone had intentionally chosen an issue which is as cloudy and vague as it is powerful as a means to set one group of people against another, they could not possibly have chosen one more powerful or more vague than sex. Sex is the broadest possible criteria to divide the human race into competing groups in hostile camps, and is so central to survival of the species itself that there has been no alternative to men and women crashing into each other trying to sort it out as they were searching for love.

Individual women and individual women have been defined out of existence by the radical and extreme

characterizations of sex and rape. People have been awash in a sea of political orthodoxy as the most outspoken of the architects of the "new world order" have invaded their bedrooms and their very minds with more vigor and contempt than anyone ever thought possible. Before women had any more than a decade to savor their newfound sexual freedom which the pill provided, the very people who most loudly claimed to fighting for their liberation and their rights sought to define away those rights and institute an era of sexual repression which would make the Victorian era look like an orgy of unrestrained libido. In the process they sacrificed an entire generation, and broke the fragile thread of the transmission of cultural and social values from parents to children. In the place of parents we now have the falsely benevolent ulitmate parent of government.

By defining this most basic and potentially tender and passionate, but also incredibly powerful and conflicted, experience purely in terms of preferences versus criminality; the stage is set for everyone to lose. Sexuality is clearly one of the most universal and intense of human interactions. There are only about 6 things that we can be relatively certain every human being does or has the desire to do: eat, drink, excrete, sleep, breathe, and have sex. This is why we are so fascinated with it. Public media inundates us with sexual signals: glorifying sex while at the same time waving the pinched-face moralistic finger of shame at any who respond to the signals. Sex, like Christina Hoff-Sommers characterizes feminism in her book "Who Stole Feminism: how women have betrayed women", has been stolen from men and women alike. It has been stolen by fanatics who sold women out by claiming to act in their interests while their true agenda was to shove a new form of political orthodoxy down their throats and into their personal lives. It has been stolen by making women afraid of and hate men.

If women ever decide to reclaim sex from their would-be saviors; if they ever decide to demand the right to say "yes" that Ms Kitty MacKinnon denies them "as a group, because they aren't strong enough to give meaningful consent"; if they ever decide to stop exploiting their sexual powers of withholding and motherhood; they will find lots of loving men ready to join with them.

But women will have to be the ones who reclaim it. For as we all have heard many times: **"All men are rapists and that's all they are,"** -- Marilyn French Author, "The Women's Room"

Back to “Gender War, Sexuality, and Love”

EOTM: THE BITCH

. · 26 March 2005 · Archived copy · Original

.

Women today have fallen in love with THE BITCH. Desperately in search of a model of female power after having it drilled into their heads for so long that they have none, women have seized upon THE BITCH as their savior, their salvation, and the answer to all which troubles them. And THE BITCH is indeed powerful. Few men are centered enough, secure enough in their own power, and calm enough to not cringe in fear when THE BITCH strikes.

The problem lies in the fact that women have become so addicted to the power of THE BITCH that they have lost the ability to tell the difference between her and THE CRAZY BITCH or THE VICIOUS BITCH or THE LYING BITCH. These faces of the dark feminine give women license to vent their most destructive tendencies and become as emotionally violent as they wish and still have the refuge of an excuse for their destructiveness.

There is a popular T-shirt, poster, coffee-mug theme that is often seen these days: "Caution! I go from 0 to BITCH in 2.0 seconds. AND the bitch switch sticks".

.

.

This is both a threat of, and an invitation to, violence. An attack is an attack whether it it verbal or physical. What makes THE BITCH so reprehensible is that the violence is only effective when it exploits an emotional bond and

thus is a violation of the most basic requirement for a relationship: trust. THE BITCH'S power is greatest against those who care about her and care what she thinks of them. Everyone else can simply shrug it off and go - "CRAZY BITCH". Only those who she betrays are really affected.

Imagine the reaction of women to that same saying changed only slightly, retaining the full meaning and violent intent:"Caution! I go from 0 to FIST in 2.0 seconds. AND the fist is a repeater."

My advice to men: When you see that a woman is in love with THE BITCH, realize that you are late for the door and put as much distance between you and THE CRAZY BITCH as possible.

My advice to women: Before you reach for the emotional meat cleaver, give a moment of thought to how you would like to be treated by someone who may have a legitimate reason to be angry with you. Wield THE BITCH with exactly the same fervor or restraint that you would expect a man to wield THE FIST.

Back to “Gender War, Sexuality, and Love”

EOTM: Man Hating and Man Bashing

. · 26 March 2005 · Archived copy · Original

Robert Heinlein, in his 1982 novel "Friday" makes the following statement:

"Sick cultures show a complex of symptoms... (such as when the people of a country stop identifying themselves with the country and start identifying with a group. A racial group. Or a religion. Or a language. Anything as long as it isn't the country as a whole. A very bad sign, Particularism. And, before a revolution can take place, the population must lose faith in both the police and the courts.)...but a *dying* culture invariably exhibits personal rudeness. Bad manners. Lack of consideration for others in minor matters. A general loss of politeness, of gentle manners, is more significant than a riot. This symptom is *especially serious in that an individual showing it never thinks of it as ill health but as proof of his/her strength."* (he wrote this in 1982)

Another wise person with whom I share much of my value system wrote in 1998: "That there is a war between men and women is surely indicative of a society in its death throes."

I have reached the point where the banal cliches about men; how they never ask for directions, what slobs they are; how they think with their "little" heads instead of their big one; are so annoying to me that I refuse to watch television or listen to the radio since they pour out of these public broadcast media in unrelenting streams. A week never goes by without receiving something via email like this list entitled ”More man bashing”.

Like the african-american fed up with "all black people got rhythm" jokes, I never let this sort of mindless hate-mongering go unchallenged. Most people who know me know better than to engage in this sort of infantile self-aggrandizement - elevating themselves by trying to show how far below them some other group is.

The saddest part of this list is how little creativity or real thought it actually shows. A statement such as: *"What do you call a man with half a brain?.....Gifted"* is completely devoid of the satire, irony, or absurdity which marks most humor and any laughter it provokes comes from nothing more than a sense of loathing. The fact that men themselves will appear to laugh at such jokes comes in part from self-loathing, but more from the fact that many men simply do not know how to fight them.

But the most insidious symptom of the cultural dry rot which allows this was illustrated by the comment of a woman with whom I have no more than a speaking acqaintance. I listened to this woman relate an incident regarding her male (platonic) roommate. He has many medical problems, including hepatitis ‘C’, and has been very sick for the past couple of years. She had purchased one of those pieces of mass market furniture of veneer over

particle board which are incredibly dense and heavy. She and a couple of friends were attempting to wrestle this incredibly heavy object up a couple of flights of stairs. He got up off the couch to open the door and placed a hand on an unsupported corner to help steady it.

I was totally taken aback when she concluded her story with a disdainful sneer and said "Being a MA-YAN, he couldn't just lie there and watch someone else work. He HAD to get up and help". The contempt she showed was so thick you could have cut it with a knife. I have long battled this tendency among women to bash men, often habitually and without thinking as many friends of mine have done until I repeatedly confront them and tell them I will not tolerate it in my presence. What took me by surprise about this particular incident was that, while the bashing is usually about some quality of men which is stereotyped and overstated but still has some basis in the reality of some men's behavior, in this instance she was bashing him for a trait that I consider admirable.

It was then that I began to understand the true values conflict underlying the gender war, and realize how deep it runs. MEN have become contemptible for their generosity and willingness to help people out, even when it means getting off their asses and forgoing a bit of momentary comfort. John Gray was right, we are from 2 different planets. Like so many men are, I was too stunned to react immediately but later got a severe case of the "I shoulda saids".

I finally got hold of the elusive thing which I had seen at work for years but which had been too slippery to grasp. I understood that there is a certain subgroup of women who WANT to hate us and who LOVE hating us more than they love anything else. If they cannot find anything despicable about us to hate, if we manage to resist being categorized as homogeneous rapists, seducers, abandoners, molesters, incompetents, and so on ad nauseum, then they will find a way to hate us for the very qualities we value most in ourselves and in others: such as generosity and self-sacrifice. And they eschew such values for themselves, without realizing that it is precisely those values on which society is built because they are necessary to allow people to exist in close proximity and high concentrations without going to war over whose needs get met at the expense of the other. Without those values, people turn on each other rather than to each other and the measure of strength becomes not how much one can build, but rather how much one can tear down.

The inevitable outcome of this trend in social values is that when enough people become "strong" enough they will manifest that strength by ripping the culture to shreds.

.

.

Back to “Gender War, Sexuality, and Love”

EOTM: The Feralization of Culture - Building Better Predators

. · 26 March 2005 · Archived copy · Original

The following is taken from a correspondence with a man from another English speaking country which is being transformed by feminism.

We have already seen a number of unexpected results from the social changes of the last half of the 20th century. We know that the results will not be what was intended. But we have enough prelimiary data to begin to speculate the outcomes of current trends.

Here is one such speculation. The general topic was sexual freedom, and the context was discussion about why women keep choosing the kind of men they keep complaining about.

The thing that women find attractive in men is men's command of the unknown. THE THING THAT IS ATTRACTIVE ABOUT MEN IS WHAT THEY MIGHT BECOME.

The thing that men find attractive in women is in women as sustainers of the known, and everything that that is associated with (eg, warmth, nurturance, vulnerability, etc). THE THING THAT IS ATTRACTIVE ABOUT WOMEN IS IN WHAT THEY ARE

"Sexual freedom" absolves women from their responsibilities as filters of variety. They become the choosers of losers, the devolutionary force of humanity.

/- I ask that you consider the following possiblities

1) The purpose of a filter is two-fold. It must not only block passage of something, it must allow passage of something else. Perhaps women's responsibilities have changed to pass more variety, WHAT MEN MIGHT BE, and block more predictability.

2) Perhaps right now what the human race needs IS MORE variety rather than less.

3) Industrialization has proven to be an absolute nightmare for the human race, and it has hastened and intensified a long standing trend for the accumulation of ever increasing amounts of durable wealth in the hands of an ever smaller percentage of the population.

4) The consumption curve is expanding geometrically not only with regard to the food supply, but also with respect to energy consumption and depletion of natural resources. At our CURRENT levels of consumption, we are destroying 17,000 species per year. In 100 more years, half of all the species alive on earth today will be extinct.

5) Industrialization is an abrupt discontinuity in "human progress". It has totally changed our "ecosystem" in the broadest sense of that term. Today the "ecosystem" that the majority of the citizens of western industrialized technology driven countries inhabit is entirely artificial. What was adaptive in the history environment may be maladaptive in the one we inhabit today.

6) Nothing that we face today can be categorized as "known", therefor attempting to sustain the "known" is not only futile, but may be dangerous.

7) I made the comment before about the slow rate of technological change keeping all cultures "synchronized" and how the advent of technology de-synchronized everything. Perhaps we suffer now from too much stability rather than too little.

8) I have stressed the point many times that the social values which included the disregard of sluts and sluttishness was also one which operated in a relatively high degree of survival stress from mortality. We have an omnivorous scavenger here in the US called a raccoon. Having killed most of the normal predators of these creatures, we have seen a burgeoning population of them around cities where garbage is plentiful. However, they now go through cycles of mass die-off from disease because the gene pool is not constantly being culled, and periodic disruptions to their fertility cycles. Live births will suddenly begin to WAY disproportionately favor one sex over the other - either a very high percentage of females, or mostly males.

I would be seriously skeptical of the idea that the sex in abundance is due to any sort of random chance. A decrease in the female population will favor increased aggression among males. An increase will favor the more passive males.

9) Right now we have the first population of a generation of young males (in the US) to hit the breeding years without a major war to weed out the most aggressive. The net effect is to decrease the number of potentially available females per male. The effect is small, but there. The Vietnam war took out nearly half a million men of one age cohort, 90% of them with post-war effects. The current generation has lost none. A decrease in the relative number of females increases competition among the males, favoring the most aggressive.

10) During the 3 generations which spanned the two world wars and Vietnam, the increase in the available female ratio favored the more passive males. In the 1960s, Mailer noted that we had a "crisis of masculinity" in this country. We had been breeding the docile type males required by the factory floor.

11) With the fall of industrialization, which began as long ago as the late 1950s, this passive type male suddenly became maladaptive.

12) The transition from a manufacturing (goods based) economy to a "service or information" economy completely altered the "ecosystem" without people realizing it. Before the transition to being a nation of "handlers", there was about one "promotion" available for every 10 workers. Climbing the "corporate ladder" of incomes involved following the rules, keeping your mouth shut, and having social connections. Anybody who did these 3 things could assume steady upward progress (mobility).

13) By the early 90s, the expansion of the workforce and elevated income expectations had reduced the promotion/worker ratio to 1/30. It was projected to be 1/50 by the end of the decade. This was before GATT and we began exporting our manufacturing base overseas.

14) "Downsizing" and exporting jobs has reached frenzy proportions. There simply are no more companies to create the high-paying jobs to absorb the number of college graduates. If I had a son contemplating college today, I would do everything I could to discourage him. He would face 5x the competition for lower real wages than when this whole paradigm got established.

15) I think the boys who are skipping college are smarter than we are. They don't have any "history" to revere and are making far smarter choices than we are trying to foist on them. Their favorite "toys" are video games which utilize their historic spatial-kinesthetic advantage over women.

16) The entire industrial economy is headed for collapse. These boys are ahead of the curve.

17) Men our age can't see it because of the blind spots created by the sacred cows of our value system.

18) The falsity of the feminist paradigm will come crashing down around their ears when the velocity economy collapses due to the fact that it simply isn't producing anything worth having any more, and no one can afford it anyway.

19) At that point, the most aggressive, hardest males with the lowest income expectations will have the reproductive advantage.

20) Industrialization is the force causing "society" to de-evolve. Actually, it is only DE-evolving from our value system and a set of social values which do not apply in today's environment.

21) Men like you and I have been royally fucked by this. The men that most embody the traditional values which made the system work are now not getting the rewards from it.

22) Life's a bitch some days.

23) We need to be cautious about turning DEscription into PREscription. Women's role in modulating stability may not always mean that they always drive to maximize stability.

Whether that is their "responsibility" or simply a function of the effect of their choice making, DEscribed after-the-fact, saying that women are "falling down on the job" assumes that we know what "should" be and that is somehow different from what is. Women, with their choices of mates, are creating the males of the future. I think the would-be social architects know a great deal less about the real result of their interventions than anyone imagines.

Back to Gender War, Sexuality, and Love

EOTM: Radical Notions

. · 26 March 2005 · Archived copy · Original

"In the beginning, there was the "Battle of the sexes", and it was bad enough. Then, on the end of the 2nd millenium, man and woman made "Gender War", and they looked at it, and it was worse. "

The following is a brief, rapid fire, summary of a variety of biological and social perspectives on the gender war. The social structures related to mating are undergoing a profound and radical shift. We need to set aside the issues of value judgements for a moment to see exactly what the trends are and speculate where they might lead if they continue in the present direction. Then we need to reapply the notion of values and decide whether that is truly the way we want things to go. We can shape the future by our choices.

Consider the following a "work in progress." It is an attempt to introduce certain radical notions in a way that will show how they all fit together. I will probably show disrespect to at least one of everyone's sacred cows. I mean these ideas to be provocative, and hope that they can help spark a new dialogue in which more of the basic assumptions regarding human behavior, and certainly the stereotypes, will come under deeply skeptical scrutiny.

One - If you are a dedicated creationist, read no further. Determinism and external causation are so central to feminidiocy that if you accept those basic premises then any battle with feminist theory will boil down to nothing more than Catholics fighting Protestants. Most of what I say is based on Darwin and Malthus and if you reject the work of those two then you will not see that my formulations have any power at all. However, if you can step back a bit you will see that the entire notion of "Patriarchy" is nothing more than a variation on Jehovah or Allah. The claims that wimminists make for the power THEIR male god, Patriarchy, even exceed the claims made by Judeo-Christians and Muslims. J & A at least give their followers enough free will to screw up and fail the entrance requirement to heaven. "Patriarchy" moves everyone like puppets.

Two - there will never be a mass men's movement in the same way that there has been a mass women's movement. Men simply are not joiners in the same way. Men "join" something for the status or other benefit it gives them - all the men's movements so far have been so silly that joining a men's movement is a step below seeking psychological counseling on men's list of things to do.

Three - Whether by genetics or socialization, and I really suspect a combination of both in which natural tendencies are maximized, men are more likely to deny their pain and tough things out. Back in the 1930s, Alfred Adler (an influential writer on the education of children) wrote about the drive to excell or be "superior" which was innate to children, boys in particular. Competition and "winning" are important enough that minor issues of pain are secondary for men.

Four - Feminism is a strawman, a red herring, distracting people's attention from a much larger philosophical war. A woman back in 1957 wrote a book in which all the words, arguments, and claims which the wimminists spout came out of the mouths of both men and women. Marxism is only part of it, but it is a central part - "from each according to ability, to each according to need." If you haven't already, you need to dig into some of the foundations of contemporary feminist theory, particularly the so-called "post- structuralist" notions of (Michael, I believe) Foucault. I have some links if you are interested. What these nutcases have done is to take socialism from an essentially economic theory and made it into a theory of cognition. He literally claims that reality is whatever we

decide to perceive it to be. His work is what has given feminidiocy the "woman so oppressed that she doesn't know she is oppressed" notion. His discussion of "internalized social controls" puts the oppression and victim spin on what someone else would call conscience or a sense of ethics. Too bad Freud has taken such a beating by the feminidiots, because Foucault's "internalized controls" map perfectly onto Freud's "superego". Thus sociopathology, the ability to act any damn way they please any damn time they please, and have no concern for the consequences to other people, is the heart and soul of feminist theory.

Five - Thus certain aspects of feminst theory ARE true. Women have been restricted because their selfish nature unconstrained by social controls will be inevitably destructive. The entire foundation of civilization depends on containing individual behaviors within certain boundaries so that the rights of others are not violated. Feminism demands the right for any woman to be free to violate the rights of anyone at any time and suffer no consequences for it. The extreme of this is the right to murder unborn children, born children, and men and get away with consequences less severe than a man suffers for insulting a woman.

Six - Western Civilization is in decline. This gets real tricky because the points I make inevitably trigger knee-jerk reactions in both liberals and conservatives. I make and remark on observations without adding the baggage of judgement. The only way to understand a lot of this is to take an objectivist viewpoint. Western civilization is based on Imperialism, Judeo-Christianity, and urbanization. The American Empire was the successor to the British Empire, which learned everything from the Roman Empire. It is inherently expansionistic which brings us to the Malthus limit. Since Malthus was writing in essentially pre-technological times, he only talked about food supply. Since population increases geometrically while food supply can only increase arithmetically, there will inevitably come a point where the two curves intersect and population will over-run the food supply and mass starvation will set in. War and competition for territory have always been time-tested historic methods for disposing of excess population. About 110 years ago we (European Imperialists) ran out of continents that we could steal from the original inhabitants using our superior weapons technology. While military domination has remained an important tool of "foreign policy" right up to Kosovo today, there has been a switch to economic and industrial domination. The "bad news" side of this is that as other countries industrialize and the "standard of living" rises to match "the American Dream", the consumption of resources, both raw materials and energy, begins to follow the same geometric expansion as the pressure on the food supply. Thus, we must either continue to confiscate the resources and food of other countries at the point of our Armed Forces' guns, or find a way to live within the limits of our resources. That is most certainly NOT the "American" way, so what we have is increased competition for resources which is expressed as agression. While this aggression is temporarily hidden behind the smokescreen of the courts, and the thugs and hiwaymen of today are called "lawyers" and "international bankers", the function is the same: theft from the owners and producers (ability) to serve the self-defined "needs" of the non-producers and non-owners.

Seven - The most destructive notion in Western Civilization today is that of "entitlement". As a naturalist, I point out that no rabbit in the wild is "entitled" to live 10 more minutes. He earns that "privilege" each time he escapes the coyote and forfeits it the moment he fails.

Eight - About 40 years ago the US made a major transition in its economic structure which has gone largely unnoticed and its significance seldom understood and even more seldom remarked upon. In the late 1950s, at the peak of the US industrial success, domination of the world, and consumption of the world's industrial output, the percentage of the population which managed or sold something exceeded the percentage of the population PRODUCING ANYTHING. We made the transition from being a nation mostly of producers to being a nation of "handlers". I can't remember the name of the guy who postulated that a "service economy" (and by implication an "information" economy) was possible, but I contend that history will prove him completely, perversely, wrong. There's a guy in Canada who could be my clone who has done a GREAT job of laying this out, so I'll just refer you to his page and save myself the effort. (http://webhome.idirect.com/~andyt/) Trying to sum up my thesis as

succinctly as possible - we have moved from an economy of value-ADDITION to an economy of value-DIVISION. We see this manifested everywhere, but most of all in the feminist demands for "wage-parity" and prating about "glass-ceilings" which absolutely deny and try to refute the principle of value-addition. Women (and minorities as well) are to be compensated NOT on how much value they add to a product or company, but on what they are ENTITLED to because the group to which they belong has never added enough value to have been worth compensating for it. It is no accident that one of the favored professions for these newly "liberated" women has been lawyer. The law gives them the structure to rob people at the point of a gavel rather than a gun.

Nine - At some point in time we will run out of pie to keep cutting up into smaller and smaller pieces while the legal system loots out the biggest pieces for itself. The notion of "capital" is dead in an information economy. We had this lesson presented to us once back in 1929, when capital still really existed, but we weren't paying attention. Keynes's method of counting the $$$ which a lawyer loots out of a productive company as part of the GNP, in effect counting it twice, is the worst case of cooking the books which has ever been perpetrated. A velocity economy MUST accelerate in response to an increasing population. Most of the acceleration since 1967 has been achieved by inflation and the creation of debt. I believe that there is a terminal velocity which will result in a dramatic restructuring of the economy, most likely nearly complete collapse.

Ten - The "glass cellar" will be the safe refuge for the majority of men. The less they earn and expect to earn, and the more directly their work adds real value, the better they will weather the collapse. I discourage every young man I can from going to college and joining "the professions". Attorneys are so common that they are being used instead of lab rats in medical experiments. People don't get nearly so attached to them. HMOs have turned the practice of medicine into piece-work, or worse into a turn-of-the-century sweatshop. MDs are now forming "Doctors UNIONS"! (now how is THAT for surreal)

Eleven - The education system is not "failing boys", it is failing itself and the culture which supports it. It destroys motivation, rewards conformity and passivity, punishes merit, and totally inverts the contribution/reward system which made this country so phenomenally successful for nearly 3 centuries. The legal looters have turned achievement into a target and accomplishment into a crime to be punished. Boys are bright, they have caught on.

Twelve - The rise of feminism concurrent with the decline of compensation for value-additon is no accident. Feminidiots can NOT add value, so they will always perish in a free market based on value. Only in a government driven oligarchy can they demand high salaries and tenured positions for teaching that there is no reason, no mind, and that there should be no constraints on the behavior of women - including their right to commit murder.

Thirteen - (appropriately) Any bad idea is self-limiting. Even the Soviet Union collapsed under the weight of its stupid economic ideology. The US will do the same. It is inevitable. There are too many idiots in charge and giving the looters free license to loot.

Fourteen - (and this one you may find one of the most controversial) If you have been able to swallow what I said about Malthus, resource and energy consumption, and the notion of hitting a wall that cannot be moved or gone around, this next statement may not seem so hallucinatory: feminism, AIDS, Ebola, and a host of other "new" diseases are related. If you don't hold to the notion that some male all-powerful supernatural entity built the world in his garage with power tools about 6,000 years ago, and accept the archeological record, human beings as they are today have been around for about 60,000 years. Population estimates at the end of the last ice age, about 25,000-30,000 years ago, put the human population of the world at about 250 million. In 1850, the population was about 1.5 billion. It took roughly 30,000 years for the population to increase 6x. In the next 150 years, it increased 4x to approx 6 billion. There were a whole lot of factors which went into this, but Pasteur's germ theory and what I call "death control" is what I consider to be the primary factor. Population levels are the result of two vector forces. The fertility force pushes population levels upward. The mortality force pushes them down. Significantly reduce the

mortality force and population levels will surge upward, geometrically, as they did after 1850. The world is one hell of a lot bigger and more complex than most people realize, and the "scientists" understand one hell of lot less than they claim to. Ever heard of lemmings? When their population reaches excessive levels they commit mass suicide. When other animal populations reach excessive levels and the gene pool begins to be compromised, suddenly live births will switch from a 50/50 ratio of male to female and will begin to produce a preponderance of one sex over the other. There are control mechanisms in nature that we haven't even begin to understand yet which reduce excess populations by either increasing mortality or decreasing fertility or both. Since humans are the most successful predator ever, and have killed into extinction all the larger predators who preyed on us about 11,000 years ago, the "new" predators on the human species are now the smallest: the microbes. And to end run the effect of antibiotics, they are the borg of the microbe world: viruses instead of bacteria. "Your T-cells WILL be assimilated. Resistance is futile." The rise of feminism and gay rights and the destruction of the traditional family are social adaptations requiring and causing a FUNDAMENTAL shift in the fertility-maxmizing social structures which have been so successful that humans have bred themselves to the brink of starvation.

Fifteen - So what does all this have to do with men, men's rights, and a men's movement? A couple of significant things. First, we have to look at the criminalization of fatherhood (divorce, child support, and false DV claims), sexual intercourse with women (expanded definitions of rape and statutory rape), and even finding women attractive (sexual harassment) as evidence that this culture has criminalized the male contribution and role in fertility. What women want be damned, what the culture wants is made clear by what it criminalizes: the male contribution to fertilty. C4m, or "non-fathers" rights will need to be an essential part of any coherent men's movement. An effective means of male birth control would go a long way but, for the time being, celibacy (remaining unmarried) and chastity (sexual abstinence) will have to do. By law, the government can confiscate any or all of a man's wages to support A) any children born by a woman married to him, or B) any child conceived by an unmarried woman using his sperm. To show you how radical I am, as a dedicatedly heterosexual male, I consider gay rights to be the only coherent "men's movement" to surface so far. They have found an end run for the wage-slave, specialized beast of burden to haul around a financially and emotionally dependent wife and family, role.

The social roles have been flipped. Where women used to be the gatekeepers (restrainers) of sexual activity, they are now the most ardent pursuers under the dishonest guise of seeking "love." (Not to go into here just how little real "love" there is to a High Maintenance woman who uses marriage to legally loot half or more of her husband's lifetime earnings.) Once large numbers of men figure out how well sexual withholding works, as it has for women for millennia, I expect lots more men to adopt it. This is where time is particularly on the side of boomer males. Just at the time that our hormonal drives are cooling off and the sexual attentions of women becoming almost more of an annoyance than a pleasure, is when we encounter the largest number of single women who have their precious fucking careers, no husband, and aren't attractive enough to deal with unless they COURT US. Revenge is a dish which tastes best eaten cold.

Second, since the "internal controls" of essential civility have been discredited by feminism, we don't even have to be civil to these women. In fact, I learned that when I stopped doing so that my life became many times more managable.

One of the grand old men of Macho, Norman Mailer, said one of my favorite quotes back in the 60s: "There is nothing in the world more over-rated than a good lay, and nothing more under-rated than a good shit." Thoreau said "At my age my time is too valuable to waste listening to some empty headed twit run her mouth simply because she has regular features."

What none of these idiots have figured out yet is that the men involved in today's "mommy and daddy wars" were socialized and developed their value system pre-feminism. Divorce has broken the transmission of viable culture by preventing these men from socializing their sons in the same value system which was based in fertility maximizing

social structures. No matter how much the conservatives try to hold on to the old ways, they are dead - gone the way of the dodo bird.

I hope I'm still around to laugh my ass off when these idiots figure out that feminism actually freed men from their wage slavery and protector/provider roles while women pushed them out of the cages they were in because women wanted to take their place in those cages. And I will really split a gut when the post-feminist boys and girls default on the massive debt which the boomers piled up by borrowing their kids future.

Men built civilization for women, now women have tried to push men out and taken the civility out of it. Its gonna be fun to watch them shit razor blades while it crumbles around them. So-called "normal" women deserve what they are going to get because they have sat by in their smug moral superiority and watched the whole thing happen and enjoyed watching men squirm. Our time is coming soon.

I believe that the most important role for middle-aged men is to assassinate women's characters and destroy the mythology of innocence and female moral superiority in the minds of young men. Plus provide a countervoice to the relentless marketing of sex which is designed to make young men slaves and addicts to their sexual appetites. What we need most is a male Shere Hite who blows the lid off this whole best-kept secret of what bum fucks most women are and how obnoxious sex can be when it is nothing but a treat handed out by women in reward for jumping through hoops.

There has been a "men's movement" going on for years that no one has recognized because it looks like millions of wildcat strikes of one. Men are abandoning the culture which is out to kill them. But, in typical male way, they are coming to the decision individually and implementing it in their own unique way. Almost 1/3 of the men of marriage age in this country have never been married. This despite the two decades of whining about "men can't make a committment." Men are abandoning mass media and giving up the yuppie lifestyle. This is why advertising panders so much to women. Boys are jumping off the achievement track and the work-earn-spend treadmill because they know that even if they develop the skills that they will never be able to compete on merit alone and will always have to swim upstream against unfair advantages of women. It IS still "every man for himself" and I don't think it will ever change until this artificially created period of plenty is over.

Back to Gender War, Sexuality, and Love

EOTM: Men, Are You Sick of It?

. · 26 March 2005 · Archived copy · Original

Are you sick of the universal belief that men owe women something in return for sex, other than caring sex?

Are you sick of having to pay for love, affection, and sex by performing or promising to perform or with gifts or insincere attention while your own love is thrown away, devalued, and denigrated?

Are you sick of being manipulated and controlled by the threat of witholding love, affection, and sex from you?

Are you sick of swimming upstream against dozens of rejections to become sexual with a woman, only to find that by doing so you not only incur an emotional debt but also the obligation to meet her sexual needs regardless of whether yours are getting met?

Are you sick of women who think their part of sex is done when they show up?

Are you sick of being called a rapist, harrasser, and molester?

Are you sick of giving away all your power, your self-esteem, and your freedom in return for unsatisfying sex?

Are you sick of hearing how you think with your dick and not your head?

Are you sick of being set up to have to lie by being expected and demanded to feel differently than you do and if you are honest about your feelings having to get into a hell of a fight over it?

Are you sick of hearing women talk about "The Rules" and how women make the rules and men are expected to abide by them, and the belief that their moral superiority gives them the right to demand that we allow them to dictate to us every aspect of our behavior and even our thoughts and emotions?

Are you sick of being expected to "prove" your "love" over and over and to work long hours at a high stress job so you have the money to provide for her needs and buy her the expensive and romantic gifts she wants, stressing yourself out and making yourself half crazy, only to have her pounce on you and bitch you out for not meeting her emotional needs as well while you are emotionally starving to death?

If so, consider going on strike.

Men's sexual attention is so unwelcome and distressing to women that they are seeking to pass more and stricter laws against it, demanding improved enforcement of the laws against it, and more severe penalties for its expression. Let us begin to listen to them and, since they find it so odious, cease to bother and burden them with it.

Before you dismiss me as totally crazy, hear me out. The definitions of rape have been so expanded that it is no longer necessary to even have sex with a woman to be convicted for raping her. How many dates have you been on with a woman whose company was so charming and pleasant that it was worth spending years in prison, or even going to trial and having your life and career ruined for? How many women have you slept with where the sex was so bad, or costly, or simply a waste of time that it wasn't even worthwhile to go back to that woman for more of the mediocre same, much less prison? How many times have you ended up trapped in a totally unsatisfying relationship which didn't really meet any of your needs, sexual or otherwise, simply because you felt you owed her for having sex with you? How many times have you been told there was something wrong with you for not loving a woman

enough when you'd knocked yourself out for her, then ask *her* for something and have her freak completely out over it and make you feel like shit?

If you were having regular sex with a warm, loving, and giving woman, you probably wouldn't be reading this page, you'd be in bed with her. Look back at what sex really has been like for you. Forget all the social bullshit about men liking sex. None of your buddies are watching inside your head. Have you ever shown interest just out of habit or reflex or because everyone around you was? Without everyone telling you how good it is supposed to be, has it been worth all the costs? If the answer is yes, you are one lucky man. If the answer is no, that should tell you something.

Women who hate sexuality in general, and men's sexuality in particular, are getting out of control. Women have used rape charges and accusations in the same way that they have accused us of using rape - to keep us in a perpetual state of fear. And women are fully aware of it. Now little boys as young as 6 years old are being labeled harassers, placed on probation, and forced to undergo social remediation for the innocent act of kissing a little girl, one who asked to be kissed. Our sexuality has already been stolen from us and devalued and used to manipulate us into commitments which are seldom to our benefit and always at our expense. Now it is being used to make us criminals and strip away all our freedom.

Something must be done to stop this runaway abuse of laws which were created with good intentions. Going on strike is a time-honored method for workers to gain leverage against the abuse of power. Men have been doing all the shit-work of being the sexual aggressors for a long time. Like the work of being the breadwinner, we shouldered it good-naturedly out of a sense of honor and responsibility, having been told that was our role, and because it used to have its rewards. The rewards have been gone for a long time, now it is being turned into a criminal act. Something must be done to stop this insanity before we end up being put in prison or forced to undergo "counseling" for the incredibly vicious act of saying "hello" to a woman or telling her we find her attractive.

This is Germany in the 1930s all over again. The feminazi party is rolling unchecked through our lives, our bedrooms, and is trying to control what's inside our very heads. It has gone so far that a woman can suggest "reducing" our numbers to 10% of our current levels, keeping the remainder of us around as breeding stock, and suffer less sanction than Earl Butz did for his public racist slur which ended his career. We are quickly being reduced to the level of farm animals; sperm crops. And, also like Germany in the 30s, the reason that the power of this destructive party continues to grow unchecked is that well meaning citizens do not see its monstrous excesses and oppose them. If someone does not begin to oppose the sexual holocaust, then all males stand the chance of ending up in a sexual Auschitz or Dachau. Like William Heatherington.

Supposedly there are millions of decent worthwhile women out there who want to love us and be loved by us. Maybe you know one or more of them. But there are also millions who hate us and want to destroy us: to remake us in the image of some social ideal based on nothing more than the rantings of fanatics and zealots who hate us. We need to moblize the ones who do not hate us to abandon their passive support of those who do, and the only way I know how to do that is to go underground like the Resistance did and watch for those who are motivated enough to get out and try to find us. When these women find good and decent men unavailable to them, when they can no longer safely sit back and let us take all the risks to find them and bring to them the benefits of loving sexuality, perhaps they will begin to rethink the social conditions which they have supported by their passive acceptance and active willingness to trust any woman more than they trust any man.

Either they will ante up the willingness to be true equals and share the power they have always had in sexual relationships and begin to share the risks we have always had to take to initiate them by respecting our needs and learning how to deal us in ways which are not completely obnoxious, or they will sleep alone. I, for one, am no longer willing to take all the risks necessary to bring them something which they supposedly want, but are unwilling

to move one inch out of their own power postion or take any action whatsoever to bring about, paricularly when the risks now involve such major criminal penalties, and accusations which can destroy my career and my life are being encouraged to be falsified to serve "useful political puposes".

Enough is enough. It is time to give them exactly what they have been asking for. No, more than asking for, demanding.

Only by refusing to continue to do the shit work of initiation do we have a chance of slowing this insanity before we are all driven to suicide: as 4 times as many of us are today compared to 20 years ago. Only when enough of us gain enough sense of worth of ourselves and our sexuality that we demand that it be respected and valued equally to the sexuality of women, and that the criminalization of it and its exploitation via histrionic victimhood be STOPPED, will we again have the chance to live as free men.

Striking is easy. No dues, no meetings, no collectivist hive mentality, no pledges except to yourself. All you have to do is look inside yourself and decide whether you, yourself, have ever done any of these grievous harms supposedly done women and, if you have not, completely absolve yourself of guilt and shame over it. Inform yourself and find that most of those claims are outright lies. Honestly evaluate how well your past sexual experiences have really met ***YOUR*** needs, claim your rightful status as a human being worthy of getting those needs met, and make the committment to yourself that you will never again allow a woman to benefit from association with you who does not respect them as well. Stop providing women with the benefits of the best part of yourself despite their best efforts to destroy it.

Give them what they are telling us they want, damn it! For thousands of years we have been asking them to tell us what they want and they are telling us quite clearly that they want us to fear them and not find them attractive and not approach them. Listen to them! Listen to what they are telling us and heed them!

When you do, you will find a peace with and regain a sense of value of yourself that you have not had since you were a little boy. You will find that living without them is really less painful than what you have been doing. Step off society's treadmill which demands that you prove yourself by your success and avoid women who demand that you prove your love with expensive gifts which you must completely whore yourself to get/keep a high-stress job in order to afford. Stop putting up with the man-bashing which has become so automatic and predictable that it is part of every conversation, every television show, damn near every interaction that you have which involves a woman: which you can only avoid when by yourself or in the company of other men. Refuse to put up with it. Either ask the basher to leave, or leave yourself. Particularly do not put up with it from other men. Confront these "Uncle-Toms", these "house-niggers", and tell them that if they want to spit on their own manhood that you cannot stop them, but you will no longer allow them to spit on yours.

You can escape from this nightmare to a valley of serenity and sanity, if you will only let go of your need to support those who are trying to kill in you that which makes you real and turn you into a robot. What you offer them is not the vile, horrible, violent, exploitive thing they are making it out to be. It is not your worst, it is your *BEST!* Reclaim its value. Stop giving it away and feeling like you have to pay someone to accept it. If you do pay someone, make it a professional who negotiates a fair price up front, then gives you what you've paid for. We can never teach those who hate us to value us instead until we claim our own value. Even if they never learn, we will suffer less from holding onto it than we do from our current efforts to beg them to love us.

You can join the strike at any time, and drop out at any time, and rejoin any time. It is precisely the value of the individual which we celebrate, and of which we fight to promote acceptance, that distinguishes us from the collectivist thinkers who demand the sacrifice of all life to the fullfillment of their mentally-ill ideals. The sexual strike is not a pledge of celibacy. It is not sex-hating and sex-negating. It is sexuality affirming. It simply makes

clear the absolute condition that all parties must accept and honor *AND* themselves affirm that value or they don't get to participate and enjoy its benefits at someone else's expense: *YOURS!*

Anytime you find a woman who loves and cherishes you for what you are, recognizes the way you know how to show love as the expression of the love that it is and shares her own sexuality with you freely and warmly and with no other expectation or obligation than to love her freely and warmly in return, drop out of the strike and thank whatever creator you worship for your great good fortune.

Until then, refuse to go more than halfway and spend no time waiting for a woman who hasn't already figured out that she needs to go the other half. If you cannot sit and wait, then go ahead and make the first call, but do not make the second, nor spend any time waiting for it. Respond to any woman who makes an obnoxious approach to you, of the type that women are so fond of bashing men for, by pointing out to her that she would likely find such an approach an obnoxious turn off and so do you. Do not feel obligated to find a woman attractive simply because she expresses an attraction to you and you are so desperate for love and sex that you will try to fool yourself into thinking yourself into being attracted to her. Never, never, never attempt to "prove" your love by buying an expensive and useless gift, putting money in the pockets of male jewelry store owners and employees so they can buy their wives expensive and useless gifts to "prove" how much they love them.

Redfine the "sin" of sex and change its spelling to SEN, which stands for "Sexual Equality NOW!" If you want to go "public", wear the slogans "On Strike for REAL Sexual Equality" and "SEN" proudly and talk to anyone who asks you about them.

Only we can reclaim the value of ourselves and our sexuality in a society which is determined to strip of us them and use them only to serve society's purpose of turning us into machines which do nothing but work and spend what we earn in order to consume.

We must stop stop the insanity if we can.

Back to “Gender War, Sexuality, and Love”

EOTM: An Open Letter to Women

. · 26 March 2005 · Archived copy · Original

"In the beginning, there was the "Battle of the sexes", and it was bad enough. Then, on the end of the 2nd millenium, woman made "Gender War" on men, and they looked at it, and it was worse. "

To all women: The lot of you can go to hell.

Amidst all the lies, gnashing of teeth, blame and counter-blame of the gender war, one simple fact remains - men's participation in the culture is voluntary. While a huge body of laws exists to enumerate the things we are prohibited from doing, only a few exist which require us to *do* something. The voluntary and enthusiastic participation of men in this culture is one of the reasons for the vitality it once had. It has taken a long time to beat down the spirits of men who would still love to participate and contribute, but the unrelenting war against men waged by the feminists for the past 35 years has finally managed to do so.

As all the dog-faces, grunts, and foot-soldiers in any war know, the generals will keep throwing men's bodies to be blown apart long after it has become clear that the battle is lost and the war cannot be won. Everyone has lost this stupid war waged and declared by spoiled, indulged, and not-very-bright children against the very people who spoiled and indulged them.

Far from the mythical "backlash" that the paranoid hate-mongers have used to breathe one last breath of life into their movement of error, the real counter-attack is that men have begun to back OFF. The boomer generation is now past the point where the biological imperative to continue the species drives men to seek out women and court their favor. The relentless exploitation of women's built-in power which they inherit with their physiology has left an entire generation of men at middle age with no reason whatsoever to think the least bit kindly toward women, and even less reason to seek them out. Forced to adapt to lifestyles without women, against their wishes, many men have managed to do so and found an unexpected freedom in the priestly lifestyle.

No longer forced to sell themselves into wage slavery in order to support the consuming habits of the bottomless pits that women have become, these men are free in a way that no group of people has ever been: they can participate in the culture, or not, as they choose. Freed from the relentless exploitation of them to extract the $$$ that they buy with hours of their lives in order to feed the vast cancer of unlimited consumption, these men gain back the only thing that is truly theirs to begin with: the hours of their lives.

These men are deserters from the gender war.

Like all deserters in all wars, however, they do not advertise themselves - for to do so would simply make them targets. Quite the opposite, these men go out of their way to make themselves invisible. Far from there being "no good men" as women have been bitching about for years, there are millions of ethical and committed men living their lives without women and refusing to have anything to do with them. There are more never-married men over the age of 40 in the US than the entire population of New Zealand. The number of never-married men in their 30s has more than doubled in the past decade. The percentage of men who have never been married has risen from 25% in 1960 to 31% in 1996. The percentage of men who are single has risen steadily from 31% in 1960 to 42% in 1996. If this were all due to the choices of women, then why have we heard for the past 20 years the uninterrupted laments of women that "men won't make commitments."

As Abe Lincoln observed, you can fool some of the men all of the time, and all of the men some of the time, but you cannot fool *all* of the men *all* of the time. With fatherhood and the simple fact of finding a woman attractive and letting her know about it effectively criminalized by Sexual Harassment, Rape, and anti-male-biased Domestic Violence laws, men who are by nature law-abiding are honoring those laws and giving women as wide a berth as possible. Since they don't want to do the time, they aren't doing the crime.

After hearing from women for years about all the things they aren't going to do for men any more, and adding up all the demands for "more" from women, a simple cost-benefit analysis shows that a lot of men simply can't afford the luxury of a woman, and have opted for a simpler, more spartan lifestyle. Women have made themselves into the Edsels of the new millenium: overpriced luxury products that no one wants.

The legacy of hate sown by the infantile tantrums of women as they embraced their newly discovered history-long victimhood will linger in the culture for decades, poisoning the wells of relationships that they would like to drink from. Having tasted the bitter tainted alkali water of the self-obsessed modern woman, men are moving on to new territory and leaving women behind. All the books about the "plight" of men which seem to be the fad right now, 1999, cannot convince those who have achieved it that a life without women in it is not far preferable to one with them. We have not seemed to be able to stop the hate in more than 3 decades, so it has come time to move away from it.

You can take your demands, and your bashing, and your lies about us, and your hallucinations of a world-wide and history-long conspiracy of men spending every waking moment thinking up nasty things to do to you called "Patriarchy", and all your petty and insignificant complaints about toilet seats and asking for directions, and wrap them all up together and go to hell with them and rot and burn there.

Back to “Gender War, Sexuality, and Love”

EOTM: Turning Away From Women: Bicycles Without Fish

. · 26 March 2005 · Archived copy · Original

"In the beginning, there was the "Battle of the sexes", and it was bad enough. Then, on the end of the 2nd millenium, man and woman made "Gender War", and they looked at it, and it was worse. "

.

I still remember the first time I saw the feminist slogan "A woman without a man is like a fish without a bicycle." It was clearly intended to be a gesture of spitting in my face and telling me how useless and irrelevant I was as a male. I was offended, angry, and hurt.

Now, nearly 30 years later, I have reluctantly resigned myself to the truth of that statement, if not its wisdom. For my entire adult life, the women I have known have been, without exception, selfish, self-centered and, in fact, word, and deed: self-obsessed. Over time, my intial generousity and tolerance have been all used up by the women who have used, exploited, and burned me in order to pursue their own personal short-term gratification. And, it certainly has not been limited to women with whom I have had supposedly "romantic" relationships: the women who have called me "friend" have actually used me in often far more unfair ways by expecting the same deference and pandering to their whims that they would expect in "romance", without the rewards of deep connection and intimacy which a male would reasonably expect in a romance.

The fictions of male power and privilege, and the paranoid delusions of "oppression", seem to have left most women with the attitude that men of today have some debt to pay off for all the mythological "advantages" that other men have "enjoyed." They have upped the bar on what they "demand" from man in order to have a "relationship" that even when a man has the ability to meet a woman's demands, he often has run out of motivation to do so. As a woman correspondent of mine put it "Women have forgotten how to treat men decently."

The ironic final outcome is that men who still put up with all the hostility and exploitation routinely practiced by women today probably deserve the contempt that women express toward them. Any fool who will keep putting up with it forever certainly deserves to be called and thought of as a *major* fool.

An increasing number of men my age are reaching the point where their own real needs have been denied and exploited for so long that relationships with women, of any kind, no longer seem worth the trouble. Who needs all

the harassment and all the bashing?

It is a strange transition to go through. While I was brought up to show great respect and deference to women, and expected to pamper them, over the years I have had to adopt the attitude out of self-defense that the question is not *whether* a woman is going to burn me, but *when* and exactly *how*.

I have been preaching for years that this will be the inevitable result of all the misandry floating around in our culture. And, peculiar resistance of women to waking up to the fact that they can NOT hate men into loving them has left me with a very poor impression of the intelligence of the female of the species. I am particularly deaf to the laments of women who claim that they can't find good partners, as a result of years of watching women throw away one good relationship after another as they chased the chance to "trade up", and be so excessive in their demands and so unwilling to give that they just used up one man after another.

The fact remains that no amount of special laws can really affect the way that people feel and view things. Once men begin turning off to women in large numbers, which the fact that nearly 1/3rd of US men have never been married shows has already begun to happen, there will have to be a major shift in social attitudes to bring them back.

As it stands now, I have never had a woman bring anything really positive and rewarding into my life since I was a teenager. The personal, emotional, and financial costs of the relationships I have had, have been exhorbitant. Letting a woman into my life now seems like nothing so much as an invitation to tragedy and emotional chaos. There are no rewards, nothing but costs and they are quite excessive.

Invariably, when I express these views, women become defensive and start to demand recognition that "... not ALL women are like that..." Of course, it is to women's best interest to keep men willing to seek them out in the vain hope that they will eventually find a woman who is capable of thinking of something or someone besides herself. And here is where so-called "normal" women seem no less selfish than any other. If men turn away from women, then women will be left without relationships because they, as a group, have refused to budge from their power position and give up the power that the structure of courtship gives them as a result of the circumstances of their birth.

Men must still take all the risks, even though those risks now include jail time and complete loss of career, reputation, and everything a man might have worked his entire life to achieve. The older a man gets, the less worth taking all those risks a potential relationship becomes because the post-feminist attitude of "oppression" leaves them with the attitude that a man starts out owing them a debt he has to pay off.

After many years of this, women's emotional bank accounts get closed and their credit lines cancelled. At the first sign of unrelenting selfishness, women will usually find a man suddenly absent from their lives. Of course, women never look at the role their own selfishness played in all this. They simply continue to refuse to take any responsibility for the consequences of their own actions and blame everything on some shortcoming of the male.

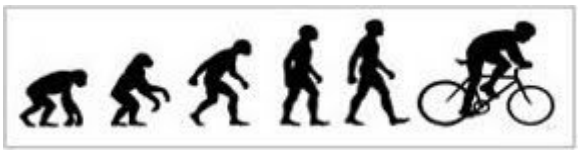
The problem lies in the fact that motivation requires an occasional success to maintain. Over time, continued experience with such unrelenting users convinces a man that such self-obsession is simply characteristic of women and he is left with the choice of tolerating it if he wants to have women in his life. If he isn't willing, sooner or later he makes the mental transition from seeing women as potential allies to seeing them as likely enemies. Once this transition has occurred, changing back is unlikely. It is simply not possible to turn a pickle back into a cucumber.

I don't even have any compassion left for the women who claim to be "normal" because they have sat around in silence and enjoyed the perks that feminism has brought all women while cheering on their sistas with "You go,

grrl" and refusing to speak out on behalf of the things that men do for them that they still enjoy. Yet, they are unwilling to budge on traditional female prerogatives of power. So, they still seem like users to me by expecting that men will still do all the work to make a woman comfortable and give her what *SHE* needs while his own needs are denied and negated.

Having reached the point where well into mid-life I have yet to meet a woman who understood the concepts of give-and-take, reciprocity, respect, and understanding, I have developed the skills to live far more comfortably without them. Just like a bicycle, the gears of my life can function smoothly for long periods with minimal maintance. As long as I don't have to clean off the slime left behind by some fish, life is on the whole, far less unpleasant.

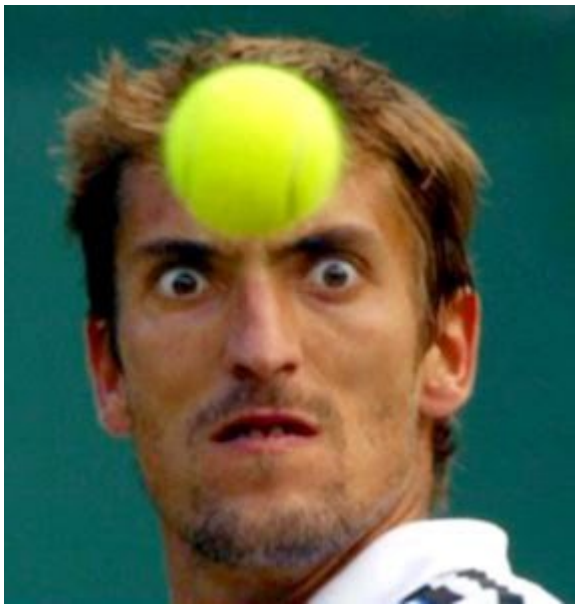
.



Back to Gender War, Sexuality, and Love

EOTM: Hate Bounces

. · 26 March 2005 · Archived copy · Original



How man hating and man bashing harms women: the making of a misogynist

Misogynists are not born they are made.

Once, a long time ago when the world was young, I loved women with all my heart and soul. I grew up among strong competent women who understood that all living things need to be taken care of and will flourish if that happens. The men I grew up with knew that as well. Everyone knew that people must live and work together and find ways to cooperate and just deal with the inevitable differences that arise and keep them in perspective. They knew that people are not perfect, but that most of them try to be as good as they can manage. They took the measure of a person in wholeness, and if there was more good than bad to a person, they accepted that person's faults as being part of the package which was still valuable, if a bit flawed. After all, nobody really is perfect. We all knew that.

Then, something happened. And that something was called feminism. I remember the early days of the movement when it was called "Women's Liberation" which was a high sounding and noble cause in a country which is founded on a document which cites liberty as one of 3 inalienable rights that every person has. No one with a sense of fairness and an understanding of civics could be against women being liberated and treated fairly. And, there was also the promise that some of the ways men were being treated unfairly would change along with it.

And, as the old joke goes: if you believe that one, then I have some lakefront property in the Mojave Desert I'd like to talk to you about.

I learned very quickly that feminism wasn't about liberating **PEOPLE** from their previously too restrictive roles which were assigned to them based on the plumbing they displayed at birth, but rather was founded on a number of absolute falsehoods which had nothing to do with freedom, equality, or fairness. The fundamental premise that men had MORE power, not just a different kind of power and in a different area of society as a whole, but MORE power in a complete and absolute sense was something that I vehemently disagreed with. I could come up with thousands of examples of circumstances in which women had more power than men did. And in every example they gave of where men ***did*** have any power, I could easily point out the uneven distribution of power among men, and how a few men at the top of the wealth/influence pyramid had a lot of power, but that the vast majority of men

had very little.

The strangest thing was that most of the situations in which I was being told I had or was exercising "power" seemed absolutely ridiculous to me. When I was a college freshman, one day I was walking across campus toward the student union. I reached the door about a half step ahead of a female student so, as I had been brought up to do, I hastened my last couple of steps and held the door open for her. Instead of the smile and nod that I had been used to in response to such simple acts of social courtesy, she flew into a rage and started screaming at me about how what a male chauvinist ***PIG*** I was, that she was **perfectly** capable of opening that door for herself and didn't need any g-- damned ***MAN*** to do it for her, and kicked me in the knee.

"Shock" is a totally inadequate word to describe my response.

I was at a loss to understand ***any*** of her reaction. She couldn't have been any more totally, completely, and absolutely wrong about my motivations and purposes. I instantly assigned her to the categories of "mentally defective", "hate filled", and female. Over the next several years, a lot of women joined her company.

A couple of years later, a woman that I was dating described her feminist "consciousness raising" group as consisting of "perfectly satisfying man hating sessions." Again, I was bewildered. I asked why she found hating me(n) so "perfectly satisfying". I don't remember the answer she gave, but she soon proved to me just how true that statement was of her. Like the knee-kicker in response to having a door opened, it seemed that anything and everything I did was proof that I deserved her hatred and rancor. At least 10 years later, she called me out of the blue to apologize. She said she realized that she had just gotten swept up in a group consciousness of hatred and had finally realized what had happened and that I had not deserved the bile she had spewed on me.

It was, I suppose, better than a poke in the eye with a sharp stick, but it was too little and too late. Because, by then I had encountered so many other women who acted in pretty much the same way that it had simply become part of my view of what women were. Somewhere, deep down inside, either hidden or proudly displayed, women hated men. Women came in a variety of sizes and shapes, most had breasts and female genitals, but they all seemed to come with a hatred and fundamental contempt for men. One woman I dated while Jimmy Carter was still president, spoke of "my hatred of men" in the same mattter-of-fact tone that she might say "my nose". It was just an integral part of her.

Needless to say, this presented me with a significant paradox and source of internal conflict. Being a healthy heterosexual male, I had the natural and universal desire that men have to have a love relationship with a woman. But, how is it possible to love someone that returns hate for that love?

So, over time I began to develop a wary distrustful posture toward women. I still dated them, but I had become so conditioned to expect hatred from them that I simply accepted it as part of the price I had to pay in order to be involved with one. My desire for a relationship was still strong, but was opposed by a distrust and unwillingness to let someone who hated me get the upper hand over me. Thus, in my mind the concept of "commitment" became one and the same as "trapped in a relationship with someone who hates me." I was indeed one of those men who "wouldn't make a commitment."

The worst part of this, for me, is that it blinded me to the warning signals of some truly sick personalities. The hostility which I had become accustomed to enduring from women became only a matter of degree - greater or lesser. And, with a baseline of being kicked in the knee for the courtesy of opening a door, and learning how "satisfying" man hating is to some women, I had no yardstick to sort out the seriously sick and deranged women from any of the rest. As a result, I ended up in some relationships that were truly horrible and very damaging to me. And, of course, each of these left scars which over time built up so much emotional scar tissue that I began to lose

all the positive feelings I once had for women.

That is the personal side. And, I won't bore you with the details of all the stories. But, there eventually got to be so many that I developed the attitude that the question was not "whether" a woman would burn me if let her get close enough to do so, but "when" and "how soon" it would happen.

On the political side, things were just as bad if not worse. About the same time I started becoming the target of violent physical attacks by individual women for what I perceived as courtesy, I also became the target of vicious verbal attacks by women collectively - just for being a man.

I remember the first time I saw the slogan "A woman without a man is like a fish without a bicycle", I knew knew my face had just been spit in. Men were not just useless to women, we were irrelevant. We had no purpose in a woman's life, and did not belong in her world at all. It was a message of hate, dismissal, and refutation. But, I also saw it as a warning of what was to come. It was like seeing clouds on the horizon, and knowing that it is time to get under cover because a storm is brewing. And, since it was obviously smearing shit in my face, it was going to be a shit storm.

Soon it became apparent that women could say any damn thing they wanted about men - no matter how wrong, no matter how hateful, no matter how unfair - and that was fine, but every time I stood up to that and said "no, that is wrong, there is another point of view" I'd get some little fem-bot harpy in my face shrieking the same old tired slogans, like a mindless Chatty Cathy doll, about how I was threatened by losing my power, wanted to keep women "in their place", was probably violent, and was a misogynist. The dull predictability and regularity of it all was only kept from being terminally boring by the shrillness and sheer vehemence of the attacks.

There is a belief among those who believe in magic that one must speak a spell 3 times in order for it to become binding and true. It took being called a misogynist a lot more than 3 times to become true, more like 300+, but in time it did become true.

I began to see women as vicious creatures whose only agenda when it came to me, or any man, was to see how much they could get from the man - then when he had nothing left to give because they had taken it all, toss him out with yesterday's garbage. In short - as nothing but users. Feminist author Wendy Dennis came out with a book in the early 1990s called "Hot and Bothered: sex and love in the 90s." Among many other astute observations in the book was that nothing was more classically typical of the state of male/female relations than the woman who complained bitterly about every aspect of men, then couldn't figure out why she couldn't get one of these awful creatures to fall madly in love with her. I had observed the same thing so many times that I had simply concluded that such women were simply not very bright. In stark contrast to the mythology of how socially adept women are, I was baffled that such women were so stupid that they didn't realize that no living thing will respond to such projections of distaste, contempt, and hatred with anything except return animosity.

I took to avoiding women, particularly groups of them, because I could never sit quietly and put up with the bashing and would always challenge it, which ended me up in a lot of fights and added greatly the count of times that I got called "misogynist." I noticed that women seemed to do it habitually, without thinking, and would confront my female friends over and over until they learned not to do it in my presence.

And, after 3 decades of listening to it, and hating it, and trying to keep the animosity which had been building in me over it - when the husband of a woman friend of mine (who had been very dishonest about her motivations for our friendship and had been trying to harass me into turning our friendship sexual) threatened to kill me and she said "I don't know why you are making such a big deal about it", I caved in and began to ***really*** hate women.

Most of the time this hatred lies dormant. I figure that the best thing I can do for myself and for women is to keep the contact I must have with them to a minimum, and to keep as much distance between them and myself as possible. It is rather like hanging a sign on a fence that says "Beware of ***VERY*** bad dog." Stay outside the fence, and everything is fine. But, come through the gate at your own risk. Leave me the hell alone and I will leave you alone.

Misogynists are not born, they are made.

I am still baffled at all the women who seem to expect men to live on a steady diet of hatred and man bashing, and somehow magically metabolize this toxic diet into "love" for women and a desire to see good things come to them. When I work real hard, I can make the anger cold and take no joy when bad things happen to women, simply regard it with indifference. When I hear a woman whine about being victimized, I simply tune her out and go elsewhere.

When a woman smiles at me, I think of an old ethic bashing joke - "What does a _____ say instead of 'fuck you'?" answer "Trust Me."

I will not allow most women in my house unless I have known her a long time and she is old enough to have escaped being infected with the plague of man hating or is escorted by someone I trust, nor will I enter theirs except on the same conditions. If I pass a woman stranded on the road, I will not stop to help her because it is as likely as not that she will be afraid of me. That's fine. She's a fish without a bicycle - I have no place in her world, nor her in mine.

Man bashing and man hating harms women, because it makes men hate them back - eventually. A puppy returns love for love, but if you beat it will eventually turn mean and will one day turn on you when you raise your fist or your stick (or the club of words) to hit it. Men are no different. When women talk about treating men like dogs, I wish they would. It would be an improvement. Most women treat their dogs far better than they treat their men.

Somewhere along the line, I went through a metamorphosis. I changed from a man who loved women and thought they were just about the greatest thing in the world, to a man who can't stand them, or anything about them.

I'm sick and tired of the lies that women tell about men, I'm sick and tired of their victim games, I'm sick and tired of hatred and bashing I have to put up with when I am around them. I am sick and tired of the arrogant contempt in which they seem to hold me and all other men. I am sick to death of the way that some of them feel the need to seek me out to piss me off. A couple of years back, at the funeral of my uncle, as fine a man as I have ever known, some woman felt the need to start a conversation with me as I sat with my private grief. She wanted me to agree with her that men don't ask for directions.

How could anyone be so stupid and socially incompetent? When men came up to me to talk, it was always with something like "Your uncle was a fine man", not "aren't men headstrong and stupid?"

Invariably, when I tell a woman about all this, she tries to argue with me and say something like "get over it", or "why don't you take the gender out of it?" In return I ask, "why the hell don't you women get over it, and take the gender out of it?"

I would like nothing better than to be left in peace, and allow women to enjoy the absence of my company which they find so annoying and unpleasant. Every day, a few more men got through the transformation and become like me. We don't get our guns and shoot a few women; we don't beat them up; because what women have been saying about us all these years is just flat wrong. But, there's no point in trying to tell women that because they have become so certain of their superiority that the best way to deal with them is to leave them to it, and the company of

their other fishy friends

.

Back to “Gender War, Sexuality, and Love”

Related:

The Intimate Journal of Henri Amiel: September 17, 1880

EOTM: Feminism Deconstructed - A Vast Social "De-Construction" (Demolition) Project

. · 26 March 2005 · Archived copy · Original

Taking the "civil" out of "Civilization" -- the goal of feminism

Since its beginnings, feminism has enjoyed a false sense of legitmacy as a social movement. This was largely based on ignornance of the true purposes and agenda of the ideological hard-core which kept the movement from dying away.

A look at the prinicples and theory which are espsoused under the names of feminism and equality, will quickly reveal that the theory is not only anti-reality, but that its entire purpose is overthrow of the social order and substitution of a new revolutionary form.

It is extremely sad that women did not, and in many cases still do not, see the many advantages they enjoyed under the system now spat upon as "Patriarchy." The "de-constructionists" have had their way, and advantages and status that women used to be accustomed to receiving will not be available to the daughters of feminism. In its place will be bitter suspicion and deep resentment.

What some self-styled feminist spokespeople have had to say about feminism's agenda:

Sum Bitch

"And while your want for "civility" and counter-balance in the mass-mind appears sweet - I argue that this attitude, as it will mostly likely play out, renders societal progressiveness static." -- Sum Bitch

"I don't see "knee-jerk defensiveness" as regressive. Instead I see it as part of the Evolutionary process. Docile housewives one second - revolutionary freethinkers the next? Overworked and bitter fathers today - unshackled earth-loving philosophers tomorrow? No , the human thought process doesn't work this simply. The reactionary force is imperative to the movement." -- Sum Bitch

"The vibe I'm getting from you (or "reasonable" types) goes something like this , "Well, what's all this nonsense? We are nearing the pinnacle of progressiveness and it is now time to relax and start dividing the rations…" -- Sum Bitch

"At the very most you MAY be conceding that there are still some problems in our society but "feminism has outlived it's usefulness, it has become an annoyance." You may say, "Who cares about a few cents when men are working on dangerous jobs and being forced into war!" Or perhaps you're one of those who think feminism has its place - but somewhere where it doesn't get in the way of more important things. -- Sum Bitch

"Whatever the case, you seem to have little respect for feminism as a creative force, and it is here where I see feminism in a different light. Where you see feminism as a frivolous movement gone power-hungry in it's attempt to be granted equality in some idiot regime - ***I see Feminism as a revolutionary social***

deconstruction project. And though you may be convinced that women will fall for the same spoils of power that have driven once "visionary" men to idiocy (Mao, Stalin, etc.) I stand firm in the belief that once the female population synchronously rejects the neo-patriarchal order, the power structure as we know it shall crumble." -- Sum Bitch

---

"I feel that 'man-hating' is an honorable and viable political act, that the oppressed have a right to class-hatred against the class that is oppressing them." -- Robin Morgan

---

(In response to Betty Friedan's comment that a woman who *wanted* to stay at home and raise her children should have the right to make that choice.)

"No, we don't believe that any woman should have this choice. No woman should be authorized to stay at home to raise her children. Society should be totally different. Women should not have that choice, precisely because if there is such a choice, too many women will make it." -- Simone de Beauvior

Well, grrls, thank feminism for taking that choice away from you.

---

misc. outrageous quotes by feminists

Back to “Feminism Deconstructed”

Back to “Gender War, Sexuality, and Love”

EOTM: False Premises, False Promises

. · 26 March 2005 · Archived copy · Original

Feminism is based on false premises:

- that, historically, men as a group or class had more power than women as a group or class.
- that the very structure of social institutions reflected this and gave all men more power than any woman
- that what was true of any man was true of all men
- that all men were responsible, culpable, and shared the guilt for any and all bad acts by any and all men.
- that all women are inherently good and smart, and all men inherently evil and stupid

False premises cannot lead to anything except false conclusions. Actions and social policy based on these will not produce the desired results, but rather the opposite or totally unpredictable results.

The truth is that power within any society is not divided horizontally, but vertically. Society is a pyramid structure with the majority of people at the base of the pyramid, and progressively fewer people the farther up one goes. At each level, there was a subtle, complex, and dynamic balance of power between men and women.

From about the middle of the 2nd decade of life, through about the middle to end of the 4th, women have an inborn advantage in power based on the structure of courtship, the human mating dance. Men must seek and court women's favor in order to have an outlet for their drives to reproduce and continue the species. Women are able to demand resources from men in return for this outlet, which implies that they demand for men to compete with other men for control of those resources. The pea hidden under the rapidly moving shells of this sexual-power shell game is the fact that once men had these resources, they usually turned control of them over to women.

Now, women are being encouraged to compete with men directly for these resources, just like men compete with other men, as well as to hold on to the power to make men turn over the resources they have competed with other men, as well as women, to acquire. It will not work, and it cannot work - because it attempts to deny, refute, and change the behavior and preferences of the majority of women. First, it simply means that most men just have fewer resources to give to women. Competition makes it a lot tougher to get them. Second, the bar has been raised for women to expect MORE, while LESS is what is available. Women are disappointed. Boo hoo. Grow up and get over it.

While the short-term balance of power has shifted in women's favor, justified by always being able to refer to a distorted interpretation of history to prove that women of today deserve such an imbalance to make up for things "suffered" not by them but by their ancestresses, it will not and can not remain so for long. Men will find ways to get their power back - and the number one way has been to decrease women's power in the traditional ways that females have had power over men: in sexual interaction and in social pampering of women, also known as "chivalry."

As women invade men's former spheres of power, and demand equal share, so do men push back against women's traditional sphere's of power - personal, particularly sexual, relationships. When women bailed out of their traditional roles so did men. If women had no need of a man to protect and provide for them, they certainly didn't need commitments from men to do so.

Besides, commitments are only binding on one side - the male side. Women were encouraged to see marriage as a form of "oppression" and leaving it as a form of "self-expression." The more astute and intelligent among men

thought that just skipping over the "oppression" stage and letting women "self-express" from the get-go made much more sense. Why cave in to a woman's demands to get married when she is going to come in a few years to hate the man for allowing her to pressure him to letting him "oppress" her? Makes no sense at all. But, then, feminism refutes the very existence of something like sense as "patriarchal" or "androcentric."

As women have gained power in the worlds of business and politics, they have lost it in personal relationships. The old traditional notions of male-female interdependency were equally binding on men and women, and when women broke those bonds they broke men's at the same time. Like the old Joni Mitchell song, "Big Yellow Taxi" says, "you don't know what you've got 'til it's gone." The men who adapted early and well to the new visions of total equality (and uniformity) were perfectly happy to let women support themselves, AND the children. They gave women what women were asking for. It just didn't turn out to be what women wanted.

Men, damn fools that many of us are, first ignored feminism expecting it to go away and collapse from its own internal contradictions and refutation of reality. And, more than a few of them quite liked the idea of free, uncommitted, sex. What followed was an absolute orgy of pretense and counter pretense; lie and counter-lie; manipulation and counter-manipulation.

Today, many women are finally waking up to what they have lost due to feminism. And, more than a few are calling to have it back. Sorry, grrls - when Humpty Dumpty fell off the wall, all the kings horse and all the kings men, couldn't put things back together the way they were, ever again.

There has been a fundamental change in social values. These values reflect the statistical average of the acts based on those values which result from billions of tiny and seemingly inconsequential decisions each day. A woman who decides to let man-bashing hate speech fall stupidly out of her mouth in an otherwise empty head, drops one more drop of poison into the well of relationships that everyone must drink from. A man who overhears her likes women just a tiny bit less. A man who might have otherwise considered asking her out on a date, decides that he really doesn't want to date a man-basher, so the opportunity for a positive interaction between them gets passed up.

Older men now tell younger ones "DON'T get married. DON'T EVEN THINK ABOUT IT." The anti-male bias in law which has been used to temporarily shore up the loss of social controls of irresponsible male behavior has been used so extensively against responsible men, that more and more they just avoid situations where they might be vulnerable.

And, as women get angrier and angrier over having to live up to the demands of the new world that FEMININE-ism has created for them, they just keep escalating their war on men and boys. And men just keep moving farther away from women, and liking them less and helping them less.

For more than 2000 years, Aristotle's erroneous medical theories, his false premises, led physicians to bleed their sick patients with leeches and instruments. The treatment itself became the cause of the disease, and more people died from too much doctoring than died from too little.

FEMININE-ism is bleeding the life out of society because it's premise is false. Maleness is not the root of all evil, as they say, any more than blood was the source of disease instead of vitality, but the root of at least half the good in the world. Women are not universally "the fairer sex", although they probably were more moral when society demanded of them that they be, but are are the root of at least half the evil in the world.

The result is that FEMININE-ism has blinded society to female evil and male good.

False premises cannot lead to anything but false conclusions. Blindness to evil makes one totally vulnerable to it,

and blindness to good removes it from one's life.

The world as it really is:

.

.

This is the world that feminism wants:

Any Questions?

Back to “Feminism Deconstructed”

Back to “Gender War, Sexuality, and Love”

EOTM: The Ultimate Hypocrisy: An Alleged Movement for "Gender Equality", with a Gendered Name

. · 26 March 2005 · Archived copy · Original

One of the most remarkable bits of idiocy and paradox contained in feminism is the bogus claim that it is about equality, particularly for a movement which made "gender bias in language" such an early flagship issue. Language got changed so that no reference to "man" or any masculine noun or pronoun was allowed. They even changed the spelling of "woman" and "women" to such absurdities as "womyn" or "wimmin". Yet, they still maintain that ***FEMININE***-ism represents the interests of both genders.

Well, as P.T. Barnum is famous for saying, never give a sucker an even break.

The truly sad thing is that the world has so many suckers in it, and that even those who don't fall for it get sucked in if enough other people do. Implicit in the name "***FEMININE-ism***", and the way it has been spun into a Trojan Horse for a wrong idea, is the notion that women were "one-down" while men were "one-up." In order to make things "equal" we had to lift women up and tear men down. Nothing could be further from the truth.

Like many men, when this whole thing started I thought that women had the better half of the deal already. They were born with social influence that I had to work my ass off to achieve, and the achievement of it was my life's purpose: my ***JOB*** as a man.

The remarkable stupidity of human beings, for some reason, kept a lot of people from seeing how neatly ***FEMININE-ism*** tucked itself in behind social beliefs and values which it claimed to be fighting - mostly the moral superiority and fragility of women. Men's sex drive and desire for women used to be merely shameful, now it has become criminal. A man who slept with a woman that he didn't eventually marry used to be just a cad, now he is a "date-rapist."

The destruction of society which feminists like Sum Bitch set out to accomplish required the replacement of old social constraints on sociopathic behavior by men with new legal ones. And, based on the primary myth of ***FEMININE-ism***, i.e.that men, as a group or class, had more power than women did, those constraints were not applied equally to women. Of course not! ***FEMININE-ism*** could not possibly advocate anything which was against the interests of any individual woman, because ***FEMININE-ism*** is the advocacy for the ***FEMININE*** point of view, desires, and interests - regardless of situation, results, or consequences.

In short ***FEMININE-ism*** is about it always being the way that the woman sees it or wants it, not about equality, not about fairness, not about anything it claims to be about.

Anyone who falls for it is dumber than dogshit.

Back to “Feminism Deconstructed”

Back to “Gender War, Sexuality, and Love”

EOTM: The Nightmare of Feminism

. · 26 March 2005 · Archived copy · Original

In the mid-1960s a political movement surged in the United States amidst widespread conditions of political unrest and disillusionment with society as it was. This movement was called Feminism. While it purported to seek equality for yet one more underclass in the same manner that the Civil Rights movement of Martin Luther King, Jr. sought equal rights for African Americans and the American Indian Movement, led by Leonard Peltier, Dennis Banks, Russell Means and others, sought to restore the lost rights and property of Native Americans, this new alleged underclass was purported to cut across all social and economic strata.

At first it was difficult to take seriously these graduates of Ivy League schools who compared their suffering the boredom of housework with the Cherokee Nation's trail of tears and the reign of terror which the KKK successfully waged against black Americans in the south. Yet there did seem to be validity some of the points they made. Media portrayals of women seldom showed them as anything but weak, dependent, and not-too-smart. Real barriers to women seeking careers and inequality certainly existed throughout society, so some of us listened as they made their case.

Their case, however, was not a compelling one. Much was made of the historical "oppression" of women in an attempt to apply the same constructivist, guilt by birth, principle that the more extreme black power advocates had sought to use to make people living today guilty of acts committed years before they were born. It didn't work. Most people with an IQ high enough to keep them out of an institution know that you cannot change history and that you must focus on the present in order to be able to change the future.

What really sunk their arguments, though, was that what they categorized as oppression appeared from the outside as privilege. The social contract implicit in marriage and the gender roles of the male as protector/provider and the female as nurturer/caretaker already seemed a bit biased toward women in the minds of many men and particularly in the minds of women who were mated to financially successful men. These women were actually more resistant to the movement than most men, fully realizing the privileged nature of their own posititions and that increased competition for the jobs their husbands held would be to their own distinct disadvantage.

However, liberalism, a deep dissatisfaction with society, and a widespread "we can change the world" "we can make it better" mentality among the baby boomers led to the belief that whatever valid points the feminists did make needed to be addressed. College age men particularly were not fond of a system that was sending thousands of them to Vietnam to become murderers or to be murdered in a war no one could explain or justify except to throw up the bogeyman of "Communism". "Don't trust anyone over 30" became the 11th commandment to the boomers and it was not difficult to convince them that the entire system created by their parents' generation was corrupt and needed to be replaced.

The materialistic obsession of the post-war era created an emotional scarcity which the boomers deeply resented. Having grown up with fathers who were most of the time physically absent working in some corporate job, and who were emotionally absent even when they were physically present, made many men of that era very receptive to the idea that existing gender roles were seriously screwed up and needed changing. Many were glad that women were taking the lead and looked forward to the day when all burdens and privileges were shared equally.

Many joined or enthusiastically supported the movement. Others adopted a "wait and see" attitude because there was a disturbing undercurrent to much of the rhetoric. From the beginning there was a pervasive hostility toward men and maleness, not just toward the rigid gender roles. The most vocal of the movement's leaders did not acknowledge that both genders were trapped by their socialization and that both genders had contributed to building

that trap, but rather took the stance that it was something men had done to women. So called "consciousness raising" sessions were often nothing more than man bashing and women often came out of them broadcasting animosity toward men. One woman I knew spoke with great pride about the "very satisfying man hating sessions" that she was part of.

Men found this deeply disturbing because they didn't hate women and were bewildered by the fact that women seemed to derive such satisfaction from hating them. Men, in fact, were generally anxious to build a cooperative effort to change things, but very quickly learned that the major change that feminism seemed out to accomplish was not a balance of power; instead seeking only to gain power for women in spheres where men were perceived to have it while maintaining an absolute grip on the power that women already had. There was a distinct tone of "I'm gonna get you, suckka". Needless to say, most men were not anxious to participate in their own destruction so they were very selective in the portions of the movement they supported. Anything which seemed directed into making men into the underclass that women declared themselves to be was not supported.

Viewed from a historical perspective, what seemed at the time to be simply a tremendous tactical error on the part of the early proponents turns out to be an ideological flaw that is so core to the movement that its failure was inevitable. Men were far more receptive to the idea of true equality, more freedom of choice, and freedom from rigid gender roles than most women. They were perfectly willing to partner with women in creating the new conditions which would support long-term social change. However, all the energy of the movement seemed to be in the direction of creating more restrictions and rigidity rather than less. The validity of men's voice and of men themselves was never acknowledged.

It quickly became apparent that the agenda of the movement was not to elevate women, but to tear down men. Slogans such as "A woman only has to work half as hard as a man to be twice as good" (translation: men are so stupid and incompetent that even a half-assed effort is superior to their best efforts) and "A woman without a man is like a fish without a bicycle" (translation: men are completely irrlevant to women and have no place in their world) began to appear on T-shirts, coffee mugs, posters; everywhere you looked. Men were justifyably offended by such put-downs and trivialization of the challenges they faced. It made apparent that the entire movement was based on a colossal lie. Women weren't out to be men's equals, they were already convinced they were superior. So what were they after?

The answer came in the form of the Equal Rights Amendment. On the face of it, the fact that the amendment encountered such resistance and eventually failed seems incomprehensible. Such a common-sense reiteration of the growing body of Civil Rights legislation was superfluous, but hardly an idea which one would expect to engender such opposition, particularly with the momentum of civil rights in general. No, there had to be more to it than the fact that there were more people who didn't believe in equality than did believe in it. If this were true, the initial 1963 legislation which already banned discrimination on the basis of gender along with race, national origin, etc. would not have been passed.

What made people oppose it was the fact that is was superfluous. Since it added nothing to the legal framework, there must be more to it than met the eye. What most people saw in the efforts to get it passed was nothing but strong-arm tactics being used to shove down everyone's throats a hatred and fallacy based ideology. Thinking men and women everywhere simply looked at who was supporting it and how they were supporting it and "just said no". The movement was defeated by the very methods used to try to get it passed.

At this point in time, feminism was still completely elitist. Working class women whose hourly wage earning husbands did not bring in enough to cover the bills often worked in the same factories as their husbands. The notion that they would be "oppressed" by having a husband successful enough to make it unnecessary for them to b required to make a financial contribution to the expenses of living was laughable. Middle class women who did not

attend college and were interested in being a wife and mother did not find the idea of being supported in that pursuit particularly oppressive either. Even college graduates who had grown up before the man-hating and bashing propaganda took over the public discourse found husbands who were not threatened by their desire to have a career, and the two-professional family became increasingly common from the mid-70s on.

Most women found, as one current book puts it in its title, that "Feminism is not the story of my life". Women in the lower socio-economic strata easily saw through the claims of oppression when they looked at the women claiming to be oppressed and compared their lives to the lives of men around them. "God willing we should be so oppressed" thought many of them. The mostly college educated, affluent, and privileged leaders of the movement did not listen to these women and align the movement with their concerns, but persisted in pursuing ideological purities which were not just irrelevant but often destructive to these women's lives.

The true agenda of the movement can be seen in a statement by one of its godmothers, Simone de Beauvoir, author of "The Second Sex", one of the bibles of the movement. Betty Friedan, author of "The Feminine Mystique" which is generally credited with having launched this so called "second wave" of feminism, said to Ms. Beauvoir that she believed that women who wanted to stay at home and raise their children should have the freedom to do that. Ms. Beauvoir replied: "No, we don't believe that any woman should have this choice. No woman should be authorized to stay at home to raise her children. Society should be totally different. Women should not have that choice, precisely because if there is such a choice, too many women will make it."

No matter how many times I read this statement, I still find it chilling. Ms. Beauvoir is proceeding from the megalomaniacal certainty that she, along with some undefined "we", know exactly how society "should" be, and that vision includes depriving women of freedom of choice. Thus does this so- called "woman's advocate" reveal a greater contempt for women than I have ever seen in any man. She stands ready to shove her vision of the "perfect world", based on nothing more than her own subjective feelings, down the throat of every woman in the world; using the power and authority of totalitarian government if necessary to enforce it.

Anyone who has read George Orwell's profoundly disturbing novel "1984" will remember the concept of double-think, which allows people to completely delude themselves about the nature of reality and which makes it possible to represent something exactly the opposite of its true nature. In 1984, seen from 1948, the Ministry of Truth deals with lies, the Ministry of Peace deals with war, and the Ministry of Plenty deals with creating artificial conditions of scarcity. Now we have a movement called "Feminism" which supposedly stands for more freedom of choice for women, which actually seeks to take away their choices and force them into a far stricter role definition that the system it seeks to destroy.

Thankfully, most women didn't fall for it.

The defeat of the ERA was devastating to the movement. It had been the holy grail and rallying point. Without a point of focus, the movement fragmented. Many women became disillusioned and dropped out. Many women who had been inspired to choose career over family had found that it wasn't as easy as they had thought to grab that magic ring of financial success and that the "man's world" of work did not have grass nearly as green as it had looked from the other side of the fence. The work was harder, the hours longer, the rewards more difficult to achieve than it had appeared when they read that a woman only has to work half as hard as a man to be twice as good. They found that the 60-70 hour weeks required to "fast-track" up the ladder left little time or energy for grand social causes.

Some were mature enough and had enough integrity to say "Hm, maybe we were a bit hasty in our judgements". Many realized that there had been more at work to motivate women to have children than the mythical "patriarchy" forcing women into the role of baby factory. We began to hear the term "biological clock" and saw women who

just a few years previously had spat upon the idea of motherhood suddenly embrace it with the same fervor that they had previously dismissed it.

They turned to men and said "ok, guys we're ready now. Do your sperm donor and protector/provider duty."

Oops! Contrary to all the rhetoric about men, they really had been listening to what women had been saying and were seriously re-examining their own roles. Many were perfectly willing to jettison the old confining male stereotypes and become house husbands, despite the still highly negative social stigma attached to it. Many were also smarting from the years of man-bashing and took the stance "you made your own bed, now lie in it".

Social conditions had changed radically as well. After years of steady growth, the economy was forced to absorb an unprecedented number of new workers. In a ten year span of time the size of the US work force almost doubled. At the same time US industry was suddenly facing foreign competition and other pressures that it had never had to before. There were simply not enough jobs to go around, and particularly jobs at the high end of the socioeconomic spectrum. Where before a college degree had almost guaranteed a high level of income, it quickly became the equivalent of a high school diploma only 10 years earlier, barely the minimum entrance requirement.

(an interesting side note here. Most studies of the relationship between education and income made the mistake of confusing correlation with causality. Because there was a very strong trend for income to increase as education increased, the conclusion was drawn that education caused income. Better designed and conducted studies found that there was a factor that had an even higher correlation with both income and education that they had with each other: family income and socioeconomic status. Duh! More rich people's kids went to college than poor people's. And, duh, more rich people's kids became affluent themselves than poor people's. How surprising.)

Not only were recent male graduates competing with larger numbers of other men than ever before for fewer jobs than ever before, they were also competing with a significant number of women. In the 60s there had been an average of one promotion available for every 10 workers. By the 80's, when the biological clocks of boomer women were beginning to go off loudly, that ratio had increased to 1/30. By the end of the century it will likely be close to 1/50. The opportunities for men to generate income sufficient to be sole support of a family were going away.

Particularly since the expectations of material goods had risen significantly in that time. During the post-war period when most boomers were born the average new house cost about $15,000 and had a one car-garage. Cars themselves cost from $1500 to $3000, except for "luxury" cars which cost as much as $5,000 - $6,000. By the time they were starting families, the average new house cost $110,000 and had a 2-car garage. Each of the two cars to fill it cost $12,000 -$25,000, except for the "luxury" cars which cost $50,000 - $300,000. The price of entry to the "middle class" had increased 10 fold, while income levels had actually dropped in the previous 20 years.

"Not a problem" thought we silly boomer males, "women have been wanting to share equally in the earning of income, now is the time." Only everyone was in for a VERY rude awakening.
Men found out that women, despite all the screeching about how much they had changed, had actually changed not at all in any respect related to mating and dating. Despite the fact that women's real wages had increased significantly during a period when men's had actually declined, the majority of women still expected to marry a man both older and more successful than they were. The simple numbers of the boom made this impossible for women at the top of the income ladder, because there were simply a lot more of them than there were men a few years older. In addition, these affluent women were now occupying many of the upper income positions that males had previously held, so not only were they not available to men, depriving men of the means to make that level of income, but the demand for even greater affluence than the woman herself had achieved meant that the man had to be exceptionally successful in order to qualify. Needless to say, not many did.

Most men expected women to wake up to the unreality of their expectations and realize that they could not "have it all", that their ideological gurus had sold them a bill of goods, that Ms. de Beauvior's vision of society had indeed come to pass, and that they no longer had the choice to stay at home and raise their children, particularly if they did not scale back their expectations of income and material wealth. This certainly proves what women have been saying about men all along: men don't understand women very well.

Rather than face up to cold harsh reality, something they had never had to do when their male mates had been willing to shoulder that part of the responsibility of maintaining a household, they changed their anthem from "I am woman hear me roar" to "I am victim, hear me whine".

The cancerous ideology called feminism had not died out after the ERA failed, it had metastized into academia and government. While men had been busy killing themselves (literally) trying to keep up their end of the protect/provide bargain, the centers of higher learning had been churning out millions of young women brainwashed into thinking that they were oppressed and with their rage pumped up to a fever pitch. They had also turned out a nearly equal number of young men so beat down by the blame they had lived with for years that they themselves accepted it as truth.

Enter feminism "page 2" as Paul Harvey would say. In the 80s, man-bashing erupted like a volcano. Women's frustrations over the fact that their beloved ideology of "having it all" without working for it hadn't panned out boiled over in rabid fashion. Every problem facing women had a simple solution: blame men. If women weren't able to get the majority of the few promotions available and reach the executive levels in 5-7 years that it took men 10 - 15 years to reach, all the while working half as hard as those men, it couldn't possibly have anything to do with the fact that their expectations had been unrealistic; it was because men were "BACKLASHING" and building "GLASS CEILINGS".

If men were more realistic in their assessment of their own earning potential and understood the costs of maintaining the lifestyle to which women had or wanted to become accustomed and realized that they simply couldn't do it and as a result refused to make promises that they knew they couldn't deliver on, it was due to the fact that they were "Peter Pans" or "commitment phobic" or a man that a woman "loves too much". Of course it couldn't possibly have anything to do with the women themselves because everyone knows that women are powerless. The more power they had, and the more that men tried to give them, the louder they screeched that they had none at all.

By this time men were thoroughly fed up and were beginning to backlash in reality. Tired of adopting self-obsessed children who demanded the right to be not only equal mates partners in all decisions, but to dictate how the man should act, think, and feel, and lay immediate claim to half of whatever assets the man had managed to accumulate before she came on the scene, men began to require pre-nuptial agreements. Male rage began to boil out in the form of female bashing comics: both the stupid like Andrew Dice Clay, and the intelligent and literate like Sam Kinnison. Men lost one of their greatest spokesmen in his untimely death. Women were beginning to step back and take a realistic look at their expectations. Feminism was stalling again.

Clearly a bigger hammer was needed, and feminists already had one that they had been honing for years. The time had come to strike men in the area of their greatest vulnerabiliy: their sexuality. Mainstream feminism had long before given up any pretense of being about equality. Fairness and even intelligence had been completely dismissed in favor of the subjectivity of how women "felt". Virtually all the true inequities which had existed when the movement began had been addressed, remedied, and then some. Women had almost endless choices, men had almost none. The lies could be refuted by facts that most men and some women, those who had not repudiated intelligence for "feelings", could recognize.

Time to bring out the emotional H-bomb.

The one prerogative on which women had absolutely refused to budge was the right to be compensated for access to their sexuality. Men who did not initiate aggressively, remained alone. The more men listened to what women wanted and tried to remodel themselves into the desired ideal, the less women wanted them. Time magazine announced that the sexual revolution was over. All decent men who were not willing to pursue and lie to women in order to get them into bed, or did not make enough more than the woman to be considered a viable candidate as a mate, became invisible to women.

The bomb had been built in the early 70s by such female theoreticians as Susan Brownmiller and Robin Morgan and was called rape. Always a sticky issue, rape became so broadened by the work of these two women, and others, that all men were judged equally guilty of any rape because by definition only men could commit it. Brownmiller went so far as to suggest that all men were in willing collusion with all rapists, and Morgan put forth the preposterous notion that unless the woman initiated the sex it was rape. It was only a short step for the more extreme man-haters to classify all sex between men and women, regardless of who initiated it, as rape. The box was complete.

Having successfully severed the need for any kind of reality base by insisting that how the woman "felt" was how it was, any act of sex could be considered a rape if at any time in the future the woman had second thoughts. What's more, the severance from reality became so complete that, not only did it become unnecessary for sex to occur to be considered rape, it even became unnecessary for the woman to believe that she had been raped in order to pronounce that she had been. The rape zealots have redefined rape in such a way that in 3/4 of the cases where they claim women have been raped, the women themselves deny it. It is a weird echo of Ms. de Beauvior's statement that these rape zealots know how sex "should" occur and that women should not be given to the choice to engage in sex if they want to because too many would exercise that option.

Now the trap was complete. If a man did not initiate sex, he might as well enter a monastery. If he did, he was guilty of rape. If he simply gave up and masturbated to a girlie mag, he was STILL guilty of rape, due the anti-pornography efforts of an unholy alliance between the male-and-sex-hating fanatics and the religious right which had always been out to contain and destroy female sexuality.

Women did not respond any more sensibly to this new deprivation of their rights than they did to losing the right to be supported at home as a wife and mother. They responded in exactly the same way, they blamed men. If a man did not trust a woman enough to risk his career, reputation, and future on one night of sex with her, then he "feared aggressive women". If a woman's approach was so offensive and obnoxious that only the sociopaths that women seem to prefer over decent men would respond, then he was "impotent with latent homosexual tendencies". Male sexuality is on the verge of being criminalized and mind-fucked out of existence.

The final front of the battle to drive men and women entirely away from each other, which is the true agenda of contemporary feminism, is called "Sexual Harassment". Like rape this is a true crime and violation of a woman when it exists, but the definitions of it have been so expanded that almost any action toward a female will qualify. A six year old boy kissing a six year old girl, at her request, is now a criminal act. Rather than laugh at the insanity and absurdity of it, we should all be having nightmares about it.

Where does all this leave women? Alone mostly. Finding it just about as hard to get laid as men have for ages. Put in a position where, when they do decide to initiate sexual overtures, that they are more likely to have to resort to coercion than men to bring it about. And men are getting better about refusing all the time because feminism has so criminalized their sexuality and manipulated the definitions of rape and harassment that they will always be the one prosecuted even if it is the woman who is the aggressor.

When will women ever wake up to the fact that their beloved feminism is out to destroy everything they want, need, and love, and abandon the eternal victim role for true equality?

Back to “Gender War, Sexuality, and Love”

EOTM: Feminism in the Context of U.S. Social History, 1890-1999

. · 26 March 2005 · Archived copy · Original

1890

I'm going to start in 1890, for one reason. That was the year that the US "frontier" was officially closed. All the land stolen from the native aboriginals by right of conquest had been parceled out to the European immigrants. It is important to understand that this event reflected a COMPLETE change in conditions. We "hit the wall" in terms of available resource pool, and from that moment on the expansionist nature of the country had to change to one of competition for a share of a FINITE resource pool. Up until then, the US had almost open immigration policies and was doing almost everything it could to expand population as fast and as much as it could. In colonial days, it had even been illegal for unmarried persons to live alone, which was about as close as they could really get to legally FORCING people to get married and have kids.

For agrarian people, which was about 98% of the 76 million total population, having more kids, particularly more SONS, meant more hands in the fields in a few years, which meant MORE production, which translated directly into family wealth. Without agricultural machinery, farming was backbreaking-labor intensive. Women did not see being spared this as "oppression" of any form. While women did tend the chickens, the garden, and did all the cooking, the hard manual labor that was farming was mostly done by male muscle and horse or oxen drawn implements.

There was no national economy, everything was regional. Women did often take work in small manufacturing concerns outside the urban areas, particularly BEFORE their family grew to include enough sons to make the family prosperous. Transportation was limited and expensive enough that almost all goods were manufactured and sold on a regional basis.

An interesting side note here - The poorer immigrants, those without even the financial resources or social connections to settle westward where land was still to be had for the asking, worked in the factories and mines of the industrial and urban east. These were the "proles" of the late 19th century. The labor union movement and the women's suffrage movement competed for the attention of the social reformers. Mother Jones, the legendary labor organizer, was very outspoken in her criticism and contempt for the women's suffragists because she viewed them as privileged elites too spoiled to know how good they had it. Blue collar and lower socioeconomic-class women did not even embrace the first wave of feminism: they were too busy fighting to survive.

From 1890 to about 1916 can be characterized as "infrastructure building" - electric plants and distribution systems, roads, bridges, telephone and telegraph systems. In 1890, most of the country was still pretty isolated and, by necessity, self-sufficient. This will become an increasingly important point.

WW I jumpstarts economy

In 1917, the US finally got drawn into the European war when it became apparent that it was inevitable since US ships were being targeted. This was the first of 3 major agrarian to urban displacements which were to culminate in the suburbia of the 1950s, which spawned feminism and number of other social trends. A huge number of farm boys went off to join the army and fight the good fight and came back to the US to settle in the cities. Farmers replaced this lost muscle power of their sons with the new technology of farm equipment, much of it bought on credit, which was to lead to another massive agrarian->urban displacement beginning about a dozen years later when the economy collapsed and banks foreclosed on the mortgages and forced the farmers off their land. The enclosure which began in England about 1500, and was reversed from the mid-1600s to the mid-1900s by

Europeans fleeing from the high population densities of Europe to the lower population densities of the US, came to the US in full and major force in the 1930s.

But, I'm getting ahead of myself.

The war jump-started the US industrial machine as it stepped up to producing armaments and other war supplies. War is GREAT for an economy. This particular war was so ideological, spelling as it did the end of the great hereditary ruling elite houses of Europe, that was a great global morality play about the forces of good and evil. Democratic capitalism, US style, won. However, the war left a new ideological enemy firmly entrenched in Europe: the Bolsheviks and COMMUNISM. The US would spend the next 70 years shadow boxing with this bogeyman. This too will become important as we go along.

The victory of the Bolsheviks was bad news for the US labor union movement. Simple self-selection of who had undergone the grueling challenge of immigration had assured that self-reliance and independence were the real US religion. (one of these days I'll have to go into what this country did to the Mormons) ANY form of collectivism was frowned upon, and since many who supported the unions also supported the Red army, and were declared socialists, they were all treated as heretics by worshippers of the religion of US brand industrial capitalism.

This was also very bad news for the blacks, because their first refuge after the civil war had been the industries of the north which, under the grip of true Marx-style capitalists, weren't all that much better than slavery.

Like I said above, nothing like a war to stimulate an industrial economy. Coming out of war with our industry intact, a plentiful workforce which included many returning soldiers, ready markets in Europe, countries anxious to give us their raw materials in exchange for manufactured goods (since they had nothing else to barter), and a host of new war-inspired technologies, in the 1920s the US was on top of the whole damn world. Industrial capitalism was the solution to all the ills of the world. Just give us machines, raw materials, labor, and markets and we were ready to transform the whole damn world.

Floating in a sea of cash, a totally new concept got born: "disposable" income. That would have seemed like a complete oxymoron at any time before in history. Only the hereditary upper, or leisure, classes of Europe could ever conceive of having any significant amount more money than it took to eat and stay warm. Two major new industries were spawned as garbage bins into which urban workers might "dispose" of this unnecessary wealth: luxury consumer goods and entertainment.

Utopianism was real popular. "Labor saving devices" abounded and glowing pictures of the future got painted. Industrial capitalism was going to turn every citizen into an aristocrat. It would take so few hours per week to earn enough to live the life of luxury that EVERYONE would become a "Renaissance Man" (or woman). The arts would flourish, literacy would be universal, people would spend their spare time painting great art, and writing and acting in original plays, and reading and writing great works of philosophy, and yadda, yadda, yadda.

Not everyone shared this utopian vision. Some social critics foresaw a two-tiered world of haves and have-nots, with the have-nots living underground in the bowels of the city working like slaves and the capitalist and bureaucratic living above ground in all this luxury. "Metropolis" is a wonderfully realized silent film portraying this.

Other critics saw people losing their humanity - becoming interchangeable like the parts of the machines they spent their days operating. Charlie Chaplin was so biting and perceptive in his satire, such as that of "Modern Times" that he made MANY enemies and would find himself exiled from the US 25 years later for "un-American activities" and "communist sympathizing."

Aldous Huxley wrote the first dystopian novel of the modern era: "Brave New World" showing that all-consuming consumption might lead to a world where sex and reproduction were completely separated, children were reared in state-run facilities, and the population routinely narcotized itself. People laughed him off saying he was preaching gloom and doom. They were just having so much FUN.

But there was trouble brewing in paradise. Money was so plentiful that in a country long conditioned to subsistence level living, making do, making things last as long as they could be made to last, and doing without things they didn't need, once men reached a level of comfort just slightly above where they were used to living they ceased being motivated to work as hard.

Enter - Andy Consumer!

Andy was the composite everyman profile which the new science/business of advertising used to predict and shape the buying habits of the nation. And Andy had a WIFE, Mrs. Consumer! So, while Andy was away at the factory, advertisers waged psychological war on Mrs. Consumer to make her dissatisfied with her life as it was and make her yearn for more consumer goods which were the guaranteed key to happiness. When Andy got home from a hard day at the factory, Mrs. Consumer was just FULL of newly planted ideas on how they (she) could spend his money and JUST COULDN'T WAIT to tell him about them. And, of course, Andy wanted to make the "little woman" happy so, of course, he'd be just HAPPY to work those extra hours to buy her all those goodies she wanted.

And here is where the first of the seeds of the great feminist explosion of the 1960s and beyond were planted. Up until this time, life had been a full time occupation requiring the dedicated effort of BOTH partners. That was life. People washed their own clothes, cut their own hair, and were very much generalists in the occupation of life. Only among the affluent urban elite did women have the luxury of ruminating on their oppression and lack of rights. Agrarian women, and men for that matter, often lived so far from polling places that suffrage for either sex was a non-issue. But women did get suffrage in 1920. During the 1920s, the flagship feminist issues of the 1960s were in full evidence: sexual freedom for women, birth control, and greater freedom from social restrictions on their behavior.

The Depression

The party lasted exactly 10 years. Speculation, over-extension, and the lack of expected growth in overseas markets once essential reconstruction of Europe was done, stalled the US economy and in 1929 over half the "wealth" in the country went "poof" almost overnight. The next 10 years were to be grim indeed. Capital dried up, banks failed and closed, unemployment reached 25%, millions of farmers couldn't make the payments on their farm equipment when their markets failed, the banks foreclosed and they were forced off the land into the cities to swell the already long bread lines. People became afraid of their own family ties as destitute relatives showed up at their door with no where else to go.

Here were the second, third, and fourth of the major social forces which would go into creating the 1950s and the explosive rejection of them of the 1960s and feminism: 2) massive geographic displacement toward the urban centers. 3) massive disruption in family and kinship ties 4) a pathological fear of failure and poverty which would later be mistaken for obsession with money and success.

And the fifth major force, which would later develop a symbiotic and incestuous relationship with the first, luxury consumerism, mass media was born. The generally miserable life conditions of most people made them crave escape to a better world. For a nickel they could escape for two hours into a perfect world where their every fantasy was fulfilled. Cinema in the 1930s was nothing but "Lifestyles of the Rich and Famous". The more UNLIKE the

reality of their everyday lives, the better, so glamorous actors and actresses populated the silver screen, their fantasies and their dreams.

People had not lost touch with reality, yet. They still knew the difference between what they saw in the theater and the lives they lived outside it. The blurring of the distinction would come 20 years later when television invaded every home and sold them a lifestyle which it told them they COULD afford, if they worked hard enough. Movies had been popular enough during the 20s with the urban crowd, but the addition of sound in the 30s, and the desperate need for escapism, combined to make them a national social phenomenon. And this phenomenon would become the 6th major force which went into the social fragmentation which would be the legacy of the 1950s and beyond: mass culture.

Mass media spelled the end of true regional culture, and began a force of homogenization and conformity that would become crushing in the 1950s, provoke a reaction in the 1960s, and turn into a gender war by the 1990s.

One particular aspect of cinema which was one of those simple cases of happenstance being revised into malice was the use of cosmetics. Most of the early cinema actors and technicians had begun their careers on the theatrical stage. Heavy stage makeup had been necessary for the players to have faces at all under the harsh lighting necessary for theater. Classic theater, such as Shakespeare had actually developed a set of conventions which associated characters with a particular set and configuration of facial features. Any production of "Othello", for example, staged by people with classic theater training, will use a standard set of makeup elements for the title character.

Other conventions were soon established. How many vampire movies have you seen where the vampire is played in ANY WAY OTHER THAN the way Bella Lugosi played Dracula? Or when was the last time anyone played the Frankenstein monster other than the way that Boris Karloff played it?

Women in particular seemed to have a desire to emulate the "sirens of the silver screen", so there were thousands of Betty-Davis-Vamp clones to be seen. I think there is a very significant issue to be explored here that has to do with identity formation and explains the rapid spread and adoption of feminism. Kate Fillion, Deborah Tannen, Katie Roiphe, and others have all observed female identity formation and socialization characteristics which lead women to want to be alike. Cliques of girls will all dress similarly.

I contend that Naomi Wolfe's "Beauty Myth" could not have possibly been more wrong. Without the abdication of responsibility, absolute denial of the role of women's choice, and the demonstrated market appeal of "HE MADE ME DO IT" victimism, it becomes obvious that women, seeking to emulate and identify with the women on the screen, and coveting the sexual power they had to capture the attention of equally unreal men, cast themselves in those roles and replaced their real lives with playing out the scripts to those movies.

Since you seem to feel the need to make sure that men get equal blame, I think the effect on men started later but is no less significant. I can't count the number of young Marlon Brando or James Dean slouch-and-sulk-alikes that were around during the 50s and 60s.

But, just to give men a break, what attributes did those leading men of the 30s and 40s have, WITHOUT EXCEPTION? Answer: money, financial success, charm, and charisma.

My contention is that in the 30 year period between 1930 and 1960, that mass culture replaced real life and created a totally unrealistic set of expectation among BOTH MEN AND WOMEN regarding the lifestyle they were going to lead and the type of mate they were going to attract. And that during that period that marriage was completely redefined in a way that made it impossible to work in the majority of instances.

People did not make movies about boring stuff - they made movies that played on people's emotions. Romance and action, sex and violence, and the trappings thereof, are the staples of mass media entertainment. And since everyone sees the same things, they compare their lives to what they see and are vaguely dissatisfied. Into this void, consumer capitalism pours endless offers of instant solutions and magic pills. Forty or fifty years before, the "average" man might have seen a couple of hundred women in his lifetime, and the "average" woman about the same. Love was something that was expected to develop over time as people learned to trust and depend on each other. A farmer choosing a wife would look at her hands and ask whether she could milk a cow. A woman would look at how industrious he was, whether he was prone to drunkenness and fits of anger, and was he kind. That was how people chose mates.

I DO think that there has been a change in sexual behavior which will result in social catastrophe, but 60 years ago, not recently. And, as I have been verbose as hell in developing, that it was far from the only force. In addition to the 6 already mentioned, there is one more: the development and rise of "Big Government." None of the escapism of the cinema would have seemed so attractive had not so many peoples day to day lives been so oppressive in reality.

"Capitalism has failed us, socialism is the answer" came the cry. I won't go into all the ideological wars that got fought, but in the end the country opted for a great father figure and a modified hybrid of socialism and capitalism based on some new economic theories. One could call this "pump-primed" capitalism because it was dependent on government spending and taxes to make it work. The individual income tax, which was instituted at this time, provided the vehicle to extract capital from the pockets of individual wage earners which would never be returned to them. Government spending slowly dragged the economy upward, but it took another war to jump-start it again.

While the US was obsessed with first its success, then its own problems, the bitter drubbing that Germany had taken during the first world war, and the excessively punitive and humiliating conditions imposed on the German people for the mistakes of their leaders had been festering. A charismatic madman preached the gospel of regaining their national pride, and THEY LISTENED. There was also a petty tyrant in a funny hat over in southeast Asia dreaming dreams of world domination.

War too

Once again, the country had a common cause, a reason to sacrifice, and a tangible goal beyond their next meal. The industrial machine kicked back into high gear. There was one madman running loose in Europe who really did personify evil, and one in the south Pacific who was nearly as bad. Once again, American boys signed on to fight the good fight. This was the last time the US would experience any sense of unity.

In one very real respect, WW II created the real beginning to the end of racism. I'm not going to get into an argument about how much residual racism there is, a hell of a lot of what we see here now is opportunistic victimism. I live in a completely integrated middle-middle-class neighborhood where people are not necessarily colorBLIND as much as they are colorINDIFFERENT. We still see each other as black and white, it just isn't significant. We're all just people. If only we could manage the same thing with feminist sexism.

Anyway, WW II was the most equal opportunity war to date. Both black and white GIs came back owing their very lives to members of the other's race. Some of them raised kids who marched together for civil rights 20 year later. It was the beginning of the end of complete acceptance of apartheid in the US.

Once again, the US rode in on their white horses wearing their white hats. WE were the heroes. WE won the war. OUR industrial technology. OUR determination and self-sacrifice. Industrial capitalism was VINDICATED. It WAS the WAY TO SALVATION.

While the war had caused us to make strange bedfellows with Stalin, as soon as it was over we could go back to him being our ideological nemesis. If there was one thing the war taught us, it was that we were more prosperous while there was a war going on than while there wasn't, so we contrived to be in, or on the verge of, war for the next 40 years. With Hitler dead and Hirohito history, the "bad guy" seat was open, so we put Stalin in it. While we weren't at war with him TODAY, we might have to do so on any given day, so we stayed at a state of "readiness."

The 1950s

By the early 1950s, were chasing commies all over the globe, and even here in our own country. We became the UN's junkyard dog, and went charging in wherever we thought any of those "dirty commies" might be hiding. Even though Eisenhower was a military man himself, he saw how the military industry had attached itself to the teat of tax dollars and was growing quite fat. He warned us about the "military-industrial complex" and was instrumental in establishing NASA as a civilian agency and preventing the militarization of space.

But wartime paranoia persisted and spooks were everywhere. The most crushing conformity requirements since the inquisition descended on the country. An accusation of "communist sympathizer" could ruin a career then, just like an accusation of "Sexual Harasser" can today. Spies were found, tried and executed.

The war produced the third major displacement and social fracturing of the century, and by far the largest, as well as setting the demographic trend that would dominate the rest of the century: suburbanization. Anxious to reward the survivors who had risked life and limb defending "freedom and the American way", the country provided them education, jobs, and low cost home loans. They just wanted those boys to be real happy, so they would see that it had been worth the risk of being blown to bits.

Where during the war there had been a labor shortage, technology, both industrial and agricultural, had boosted productivity so much that there was now an incredible labor surplus. Women who had been a mainstay of wartime industrial production were shooed out of the factories to make room for hubby and told to go home to make that new house he'd bought her comfy for him when he got home all tired from a hard day of work.

Of course, to make her life easy and pleasant and palatable, hubby would spend some of those wages on labor saving devices to make her life so much easier and drudgery-free than her grandmothers. Besides, it provided a ready market for all those washing machines and clothes dryers and other consumer products that those converted wartime factories were churning out.
Ah, life was sweet. With less than 2% of the population, the US consumed over 50% of its industrial output and nearly 95% of its energy. Of course, the "little woman" and the kids didn't have much to do except sit around and wait for dad to come home so they could make him happy, which was pretty difficult because deep down inside he hated the repetitive and boring work he did for 8 hours per day.

In less than 40 years, the life of the "average" American male had narrowed from a variety of skills and activities, every one of which was directly related to his life and survival, to doing essentially the same repetitive and meaningless thing 8 hours per day.

Men went crazy.

Suburbia in the 1950s was a fertile breeding ground for pathology. "Business" was conducted over the "3 martini lunch", and a 4th was just the thing he needed as soon as he walked in the door to unwind from a "hard day at the office." His wife, having spent her day devoid of any mental stimulation whatsoever and anxiously anticipating his return home, would pounce on him the moment he walked in the door with what were to her the most significant events of her day and were to him monstrously trivial. We have your basic "conflict of interest" brewing here.

Alcoholism was rampant, as was a deep and confusing cognitive dissonance. All this stuff that was supposed to make him happy, and he wasn't happy. Every night he would collapse into his "easy chair" and watch as television told him more things he could buy, any one of which would make him happy, therefor in the aggregate they should make him VERY happy.

All day his wife had watched the same boob tube, but with a brand of brain-pablum specifically tailored to her tastes and emotional preferences. The term "soap-opera" was coined to describe those cheezy contrived dramas that gave her a surrogate life and were supported by advertisements for household cleaning and laundry products, which everyone knew were a woman's primary concern because she wanted to continue to make hubby extremely happy so he would keep working to buy the stuff that made her happy. At least that's the gark that the television spewed into her brain every day.

This is the view of the world that Betty Friedan saw. And from this came...

"The Feminine Mystique".

(From the cover notes on a early copy of "The Feminine Mystique") -

"Today American women are awakening to the fact that they have been sold into virtual slavery by a lie invented and marketed ***by men."*** (emphasis added)

Friedan was fond of hyperbole and was very adept at using and twisting language. She likened the suburban housewives' boredom and lack of meaning in their daily lives to the Nazi Holocaust against the Jews. (Interesting now that some contemporary feminists are claiming that women suffered worse deaths than men did in the Holocaust. Women's sensitivity, and the greater power, depth, and significance of women's feelings has become well established in the cultural zeitgeist.) Also worthy of note was the fact that a disproportionate number of early feminists were Jewish. There is a cultural stereotype called the Jewish American Princess, JAP, of which Monica Lewinsky is a perfect example. Phillip Roth also wrote about this type in "Goodbye Columbus." Boredom and thrill seeking are indeed the bane of the JAP. As are kvetching, complaining, and making extreme statements simply for effect.

Friedan's work set both the form and tone of the feminist argument - "women... sold into virtual slavery... by men." Women were the victims of men. Women's own choices had nothing to do with it. Women had no free will. Men forced women to do everything that woman did, and women hated it.

The complete poverty and aridity of feminist thought is best illustrated in how, over the next 28 years, men selling women into slavery got escalated to men waging war on women. Susan Faludi took Friedan's well-worn plot, dusted it off, added updated statistics, and sold the same tired old nonsense as "Backlash: The Undeclared War Against American Women."

For some unknown reason, what neither Friedan nor Faludi, nor thousands of women writers who came between and very profitably mined the tired old theme of women as victims of men, were able to see, or willing to admit, was that men and women were EQUALLY trapped in a world not of their own making and struggling to do the best they could under the circumstances. Faludi was right in one respect: between the early 1960s and early 1990s, relationships between men and women had deteriorated significantly and were characterized by a far greater degree of animosity than they had been 30 years earlier.

However, there have been a few women writers who viewed the war differently. Robin Blumner, writing in the St. Petersburg (FL) Times, puts it this way:

"What this comes down to is a group of militant feminists who have declared war on men and their sexual desires."

Erin Pizzey, founder of the first battered women's shelter in the UK, says:

"Men, realizing that they had been cast in the role of sexual monsters, retaliated."

Instead of the two vast and homogenious sexual armies portrayed by Friedan and Faludi, there are at least five separate and ideologically distinct groups lobbying to make their particular point of view into the majority view and have it reflected in public policy. For lack of any better terms, I'm going to call these 5 groups: the modified traditionalists, male and female, the progressives, male and female, and the heterophobic separatist extremists.

What women in general seemed absolutely unwilling to acknowledge was that in declaring war on men and their sexual desires, these militant feminists were also declaring war indirectly on the majority of women. And, most bewilderingly, they seemed to be enthusiastically joined and abetted by the majority of women who didn't seem to realize that they were participating in a war on themselves.

Men were completely unprepared for the bitter hatred toward them that boiled out of the women's movement. Furthermore, the behavior of women seemed absolutely schizophrenic. In her book on man-hating, "My Enemy, My Love", Judith Levine perfectly summed up this two-faced visage of women in the title of one of the sections: "private love, public hatred."

The message that men got from women was that we had a terrible debt to pay off, and that women intended to make us pay, and pay, and pay, and pay some more.

As Wendy Dennis observed, nothing was more indicative of the contradictions of this mentality than the woman who would bitterly and loudly complain about every aspect of men, then morosely wonder why she couldn't get one of these awful creatures to fall madly in love with her. Men would observe such women and the paradoxes in their behavior which they seemed incapable of either seeing or understanding and draw the conclusion that women were none too bright, dishonest to the core, and essentially selfish and exploitive.

Added to this was the frequently discussed notion that women were going to demand EVEN MORE of men.

So men indeed begin to retaliate. the two assets that men had and could withhold until they got what they wanted were the last two things that women seemed to want or need from men: money and committment. As the legal situation swung more and more against men, they became increasingly resistant to voluntarily submitting themselves to marriage.

The loss of family and social networks caused by the major displacements and social fracturing of the two world wars and the Depression, had two devastating results on the stability of marriage. The first was to destroy the oral tradition of transmission of cultural and life knowledge parent to child, or more accurately elder to younger. The destruction of the connection to multi-generational family and community networks deprived people of access to a vast storehouse of practical knowledge in the day to day conduct of their lives. As always, commercial capitalism stood by ready to profit from their loss.

The process that would eventually result in the mountains of garbage which were foisted on a confused and uncertain public in the form of "self-help" books which appeared by the millions during the 70s and beyond, began in full force with the work of Dr. Benjamin Spock. This P.T. Barnum of child development hawked himself as the ultimate expert on raising children. He was certainly not the first, child rearing how-to advice is almost as old as writing itself, but he was the first to achieve true mass acceptance in the newly developing phenomenon of mass

culture.

He was also the first to fully exploit another emerging phenomenon of consumer capitalism: brand labeling, recognition, and franchising. Dr. Spock books became a brand by themselves, and his name itself began to have value. While his intentions were probably good, or at least benign, Spock established two trends, or cultural notions, which would eventually come to be applied in broad scale social engineering: 1) the art of child rearing could be reduced to a set of instructions much like a recipe, and 2) there were experts who understood how to raise children much better than the collective wisdom of thousands of generations of parents.

The first of these notions would eventually be applied in a wholesale restructuring of the education system in an attempt to implement the misguided notion that kids could be conditioned out of sexual differences. When the child failed respond to this re-structuring of personality in the desired manner, the failure was seen as lying in the child not in the theories which were being applied.

But, the far more destructive effect was to produce a reliance and faith in "expertise" which encouraged people to substitute the judgement of these "experts" for their own, and allowed the production glut of self-help books which put forth preposterous notions which were nothing more than personal biases represented as cultural panaceas.

The second devastating effect on the stability of marriage caused by displacement and social fracturing was to make make mating and mate selection an essentially capitalistic, or marketplace, process. There was a subtle but distinct shift from mate selection based on "who will make a good life partner" to "who will give the most and best of what I want?"

An odd sort of selection process began to take over the mating game. The regional and community based life which was characteristic before the urban and suburban migrations had been filled with social structures which would introduce unmarried people to potential mates. Extended family and social network matchmakers would either exploit existing opportunities or contrive ones to bring them together. Since there were always many other people involved, they always got to know each other socially before coutrship ever entered the picture. And if it did, there were be protocols to be followed. Mate selection was complex and often had as much to do with family as it did with the indivual. The character of other members of someone's family was most times an excellent predictor of his or her behavior.

Deprived of social networks which allowed low pressure low risk getting to know, an ever increasing level of aggression on the part of men was required. The general level of hostility that women projected toward men simply amplified this effect. The most aggressive men with the most bulletproof hides were the only men who put themselves in women's faces. And, not surprisingly, the women these men singled out to approach were the ones advertising their availability and interest in the most outrageous manner. As women became more entrenched in their passivive attractive strategy, all but the most aggressive men became invisible to them.

This both put an incredible burden on women who now bore the sole responsibility for finding herself a mate, but it also distorted the way they viewed the various aspects of themselves and their personalities. The female view of this is Naomi Wolfe's "Beauty Myth. The male view of this is epitomized by trying to tell a woman about what you find attractive and having her argue with you and tell you that you are wrong, then proceed to tell you what you think and what MEN find attractive.

By the early 1990s, the percentage of the adult population which was married was declining every year as divorce ripped through the boomer generation and the effects of that disproportionately large segment of the population more than offset the rate of marriage of the twenty-somethings.

As women became integrated into the workforce, they began to take on the characterisitics which men had years earlier which had made them less than pleasant spouses. These coping strategies with the stresses of careers did not mix well with developing the intimacy and cooperation necessary to create a successful partnership.

Back to Gender War, Sexuality, and Love

EOTM: Male Sexuality

. · 1 April 2005 · Archived copy · Original

Introduction

In the past 30+ years millions of books have been sold on the topic of male sexuality. Very few of them have contained any "insider" information. While the detached and scholarly works usually miss the point, they are far more palatable than the the thinly disguised male-hating tirades written by women for consumption by women. Most of what has reached print has been women holding forth with great authority on topics in which they have never had any first hand experience. Women interpret, explain, judge, and condemn men for their conduct of sexual relationships without examining the role and conduct of women; as though those relationships were conducted in a vacuum without interaction with women. In the classic form of "do as I say, not as I do", some of these works have been in reaction to and contained vicious attacks on the psychologist Sigmund Freud for his condescending view of female sexuality, while their own condescention is both less based on empirical investigation and more extreme and oversimplified.

What has been largely missing from the public discourse is the male voice regarding male sexuality, love, mating, romance, and marriage. The results have been tragic for both men and women. As one of the less extreme of the feminist authors put it: "Women cannot hear what men do not say". This page and the ones which follow it are one small attempt to remedy the lack of a male voice speaking *for* males in the whole confused area of gender relations. Not that there have not been male voices speaking *about* males, there have been some. However, they have tended to take the supplicative "Uncle Tom" posture of remaining focussed on the female perspective and basically carrying the message "what's wrong with men". They have remained *about* males, not *for* males. Notable exceptions to this are the works of Warren Farrell, Andrew Kimbrell, and Robert Bly. There are other authors as well, many of which are noted in the reading list, but these 3 stand out for the clarity with which they see and present the issues.

While it is tempting to respond to the 30 years of male-bashing by bashing women back with the same intensity, doing so will hardly de-escalate the hostilities. Yet there has been far more nonsense published purporting to represent women's interests than works of any real merit. I'm a great believer in allowing people to learn from their own mistakes and experience. As I expect anyone with a brain to choose persons to represent their interests based on how well those representatives understand those interests and how consistently they work for them, I hope that women are beginning to wise up to how their pied pipers have sold them a bill of goods and led them down the road to isolation and unhappiness. Those who refuse to apply the acid test of sanity deserve the results they are getting.

However, it would be a disservice to men to not express the anger and exasperation that men feel over the absolute confusion, impossible expectations, and infantile tantrums which they have been putting up with for most of their adult lives in the area of their own greatest needs and vulnerability. For the most part, I will make no attempt at presenting a balanced view. When the average book store has a Men's Studies section the same size as its Women's Studies section, I will start writing in a balanced fashion. I have yet to see a book by a woman author which made more than a passing attempt to overcome her own female biases and present a balanced view. When women begin to abandon feminism for equitism and start shouting down women who are presenting gender hatred with the same fervor that they shout down men who say "Wait a minute, there's 2 sides to this", I will become their advocate to the same degree that I am now men's advocate. Until then there are far more and louder advocates for women than for men. It is time to provide a bit of balance.

It is my fervent hope that women will begin to examine their own behaviors and attitudes, following the christian dictum of dealing with the beams in their own eyes before getting so eager to take an axe to the specks in the eyes of their male brethren, and realize that they have changed far less than they believe in their spasms of self-

congratulation and self-adoration. Male sexuality exists only in relation to female sexuality and women must get over their compulsions to play the passive and helpless victim, blaming men for every bit of their unhappiness, and venting limitless bile on men if things are to ever change for the better.

Male Sexuality - the male perspective

The most elegant description of male sexuality I have ever read was in Norman Mailer's "Prisoner of Sex" published in 1971. By then feminist publishing was in full swing and the book was written mostly in response to feminist critiques of male sexuality and men's conduct of their sexual relationships with women.

"If he began this remedial reading with the firmest male prejudice of them all, which is that women might possess the better half of life already, he was never to encounter any comprehension among female writers that a firm erection on a delicate fellow was the adventurous juncture of ego and courage. One attitude in Women's Lib remained therefore repellant: precisely the dull assumption that the sexual force of a man was the luck of his birth, rather that his finest moral product, or if not his - here, full blast, came genuine conservatism - then a local gift passed along by something well achieved in his mother, his father, or farther back down the line."

Very different from the picture of male sexuality presented by such media favorites as "The Burning Bed" and "Sleeping With the Enemy" and the views expressed by leading feminists. First the use of the term "delicate fellow". Here is Mailer, the ultimate Macho Male Chauvinist Pig, speaking of men as "delicate". What gives?

The truth that women seem to have dismissed entirely is that men are delicate in many respects. Men have the same depth and range of emotions that women do. Women do incredible levels of violence to men with their words, particularly in their distortions and outright lies, yet never seem to consider the possibility that these verbal assaults on men leave scars. It is part of what I call the chain of violence. The fact that the violence is verbal and emotional rather than physical allows it to be double-thought away with reasons, excuses, whys, and becauses. And the violence is aimed directly at the two essential elements according to Mailer: ego and courage. When I remembered this quote, I substituted optimism for courage. It holds equally well. The optimism that a man might find a relationship with a woman who accepts him for what he is, has something to offer in her own right, and will keep HER commitments, is fading in most men.

All this seems to be founded on the belief that the center of male sexuality is the phallus. This is a phallus-see. *groan* The center of male sexuality is that IS his finest moral product. Sexuality is about reproduction, society seems to have completely lost sight of that. The sexual drive is mother nature's way of insuring that there is a next generation, and a next after that. Mom nature certainly wants the best and brightest children, just like any mother, so the urge to mate is strongest when the self-esteem, ego, is highest. Male sexuality at its heart is a holy offering, a "finest moral product". Yet all we seem to hear is how awful and ugly it is and how it must be contained by such institutions as marriage and romance.

Given the bad name that lust has in our culture today, most readers will probably be surprised that the word lust comes from the same root as luster, to shine. How many times have we all heard that confidence is sexy? One of the definitions of lust is ardent enthusiasm, passion. How incredibly schizophrenic it is that, in this culture, passion is glorified, but lust is spit upon. Only those men who are so incredibly insensitive and thick skinned that all the male bashing hasn't beaten them down still pursue women with the enthusiasm that men did 40 years ago. These men hardly make for satisfying lovers in the longer term.

Men I've talked with do view their sexuality as a great gift which they keep trying to share but keep getting told that

it is the wrong size, or the wrong color, or too often, or too seldom, or too exploitive, or inherently harmful. Everything about male sexuality has been redefined in the last 30 years in terms of how well it meets the woman's needs. Men's needs are totally denied and negated. Men are increasingly being seen as mindless beasts of burden whose lot in life is to drag a family around financially and emotionally.

In 1996 a book came out which epitomized the dilemma facing men these days in trying to develop relationships with women which may become sexually intimate. Titled "The Rules", this book outlined strategies to minimize the elapsed time between "hello, my name is..." and "I do." Men have known for a very long time that this was what many, if not most, women were out to accomplish, but what made this book noteworthy was the completely cold and calculated, openly dishonest and manipulative manner in which the exploitation of male needs was presented and was advised to be pursued.

There were several immediate responses to this book, capitalizing on its notoriety. One of these, a humorous response called "The Code", was much more honest in its approach and advice, but sadly not any less manipulative. Both sides treated the whole question of mating as a game to be played where one must win at the other's expense. Neither of them even mentioned the concept of a developing a relationship of mutual trust and support. Each in its own way advocated a life of lying.

Men and women seem to be caught in a reaction, counter-reaction, counter-counter-reaction spiral. The dishonesty and manipulation in "The Rules" is excused by the lame justification that women have to act this way because men act the way they do. So men start acting according to "The Code" justifying it as self defense against "The Rules". And on and on. In this race to not be the eploitee, by being the exploiter if necessary, the whole point of pairing up and marriage is lost.

Male sexuality cannot be separated from the male roles and roles of men in our culture, nor from the attributes of maleness itself. For the last 500 years there has been an increasing "enclosure" of men away from the land to which they were once bound toward the cities. Industrialization and then servicization demanded uniformity and the definitions of what is acceptable have become narrower and more rigid. Much which was previously considered normal has become deviant. The body is even often referred to as a machine and expected to perform like one. Andrew Kimbrell, in “The Masculine Mystique”, provides an excellent description of the transformation of men from homesteaders to housing unit dwellers and the progressive dehumanization of men which has occurred.

The last behavioural holdout was in the area of sex. Until the 60s, the fact that men had a sex drive was simply considered one of those "facts of life". Many social mechanisms sought to control it, but the fact that it existed was generally accepted.

Then in the 60s and 70s two very odd things happened. Just as the advent of the pill promised sexual freedom for women without the fear of pregancy, sexuality became both a means by which men oppress women and something that men do poorly for women. The model of the perfect man became one who turns on when the woman flips the on-switch, stays on as long as she wants, turns off the moment she wants it off, and stays off until she wants it on again, courtesy of Masters & Johnson. Not that I am ridiculing their work, it was groundbreaking, but some of the interpretations and conclusions drawn from their work are somewhat off-base. Gone were the days of "I felt good, she felt good, it was ok". The orgasm counter was clicking, but not fast enough to suit everyone.

The orgasm quota was kinda weird but ok. What really was strange was the manner in which the expression of attraction toward a woman changed from a pretty good thing into a very bad thing. In 1974 a woman author indicted every man in every culture for rape and things have never been the same since. It is simply not possible in the 90s to discuss sexuality without discussing rape and its implications. What used to be demanded of men as simple courtesies or be welcomed attention are now described as variants of rape. Several credential-less self-

appointed "experts" went so far as to declare than there was no such thing as normal human sexuality and declared ALL heterosexual relationships to be rape.

Male sexuality has taken a serious beating in the media and in private interactions. Man bashing comments are as endemic to our culture today as racial slurs were prior to the 50s. Male sexuality is portrayed as exploitive, violent, and abusive. At one point it became very trendy for females to "recover" lost memories of childhood sexual abuse. These were accepted as incontrovertable fact until research was done which showed that the so-called therapist could lead someone into believing that she was experiencing a memory when in fact it was something suggested by the therapist. In her excellent book on the female side of relationships, "Lip Service", Kate Fillion shows how, in the 90s, the difference between a date where sex occurs and a date rape is a phone call the next morning which begins the type of romance leading to marriage which the woman is expecting. It has now become a criminal offense for a man to not live up to a woman's expectations. Male sexuality has come to be defined purely in terms of the woman's wants, and any behavior which does not meet those wants is becoming criminalized.

This is the other set of jaws in the vice of marriage. Warren Farrell in his excellent book, "Why Men Are the Way They Are" shows how it is universally accepted in this culture that MEN OWE WOMEN FOR SEX. Lizard Amazon in her "Slut Manifesto" talks about the crazy extremes that a woman is excused for going to when her expectations of a long-term committed relationship are not met. The message is clear to men. DO NOT have sex with a woman unless there is a serious possibility of marrying her or unless you are ready to be a complete Code Cad and treat the woman like a non-person while taking grave personal risks with your career, your finances, and your freedom. The temptation to do so because, if she is a Rules kinda girl, that is the way she is treating you is tempered by the dire potential consequences.

So much to think about before even considering the questions of attraction and what really does turn men on. And what is the difference between a woman he wants to have sex with RIGHT NOW and a woman with whom he feels comfortable spending the rest of his life?

Hopefully an honest examination of the answers to these questions will lead to more balanced and improved relations between the genders and improve everyone's chances for finding a mate with whom they can lead happy and satisfying lives.

The Nitty Gritty
The Bitch
Rape
Men, Are You Sick of It?

Back to "Gender War, Sexuality, and Love"

EOTM: Female Sexuality

. · 2 April 2005 · Archived copy · Original

It should go without saying that a man's experience of encountering female sexuality is nothing like a woman's experience of female sexuality as an aspect of herself. Men have been being steadily flogged for years over some ill-advised comments about female sexuality which Sigmund Freud made decades ago. The most unfortunate aspect of Freud's theories has been that, as a "founding" theorist in a fledgling science, his theories have been far more influential to the science than they merit.

A far different, and in my male experience a far more accurate, picture is given in Rufus Camphausen's work, ”The Yoni: sacred symbol of female power” His wife, Christina Camphausen, produces some of the most subtle and beautful images of the gateway to life for all human beings. In many ways, the awe, wonder, and mystery which a man feels towards the female power to create new life is in directly proportion to how he experiences those emtions towards his own life. Norman Mailer put it beautifully in his 1971 "Prisoner of sex".

"If he began this remedial reading with the firmest male prejudice of them all, which is that women might possess the better half of life already, he was never to encounter any comprehension among female writers that a firm erection on a delicate fellow was the adventurous juncture of ego and courage. One attitude in Women's Lib remained therefore repellant: precisely the dull assumption that the sexual force of a man was the luck of his birth, rather that his finest moral product, or if not his - here, full blast, came genuine conservatism - then a local gift passed along by something well achieved in his mother, his father, or farther back down the line."

Sexual desire, in the male side of the human race, is a reflection of the degree to which a man feels alive. In a field of food grains, the most vital, the most vigorous, the most full of life themselves, produce the most offspring. Sexual drive, that overwhelming desire to engage in the act that creates new life, is the ultimate expression of life itself: both the meaning and the definition of life are the same - life is what creates new life out of itself.

The feelings that men have in response to this creative potential in women is like the experience called in some christian faiths by the name "the Rapture." It is a total experience which integrates mind, body, emotion, and spirit. It is no accident that many people have been known to cry "Oh God!" at the moment of sexual release, because the notion of god the creator imbues the act of creation itself as an act of Godliness, and the experience is as close to a direct encounter with the creative force as most people get in their lifetimes.

Many of the ancient religions treated the sexual union of man and woman in just this way: as a holy act of creation. The earth itself was seen as female, and the ability to generate life out of one's own body as the most distilled essence of uniquely female energy. Male energy was seen as complementary to female energy, and they joined for the purpose of creating life. Both were essential, and essentially different.

The notion of these energies as pure and perfect complements of each other is expressed in the Chinese symbol of yin and yang, also called the Tai Chi, or "Grand Ultimate."

.

Female Sexuality is such a powerful force that most cultures either celebrate it or suppress it, or sometimes both.

Amidst the constant bashing of men with accusations of sexual harassment and all types of "rape"- marital-rape, date-rape, even "mind-rape" and "symbolic rapes" - there has been a subtle and complete disconnect between male and female sexuality. As a male, I simply cannot understand why women in general allow the sex-haters to speak for them. Unless, of course, it is because that women generally do hate sex and their own sexuality.

The brutal suppression of female sexuality by other women is generally very subtle and covert in western cultures. Throughout Africa and the Middle-East, however, the female hatred of female sexuality is proven to millions of girls each year when trusted older women take them away, often without telling them what is about to happen to them, and chop off these little girls' genitals in the most brutal and callous manner possible. When women from these cultures immigrate to others where these assaults on little girls, collectively referred to as FGM or "Female Genital Mutilation", are not generally practiced, they still carry the grisly tradition with them. Somewhere on the web, (I lost the link when my bookmarks file became corrupt) there is a story of 3 women who could not bear to perform this horrible act on their own daughters, so they did it to each other's daughters while the mother went outside so she could not hear the little girls' screams.

I cannot adequately describe the rage I feel when such practices are blamed on the desires and preferences of "MEN" in general.

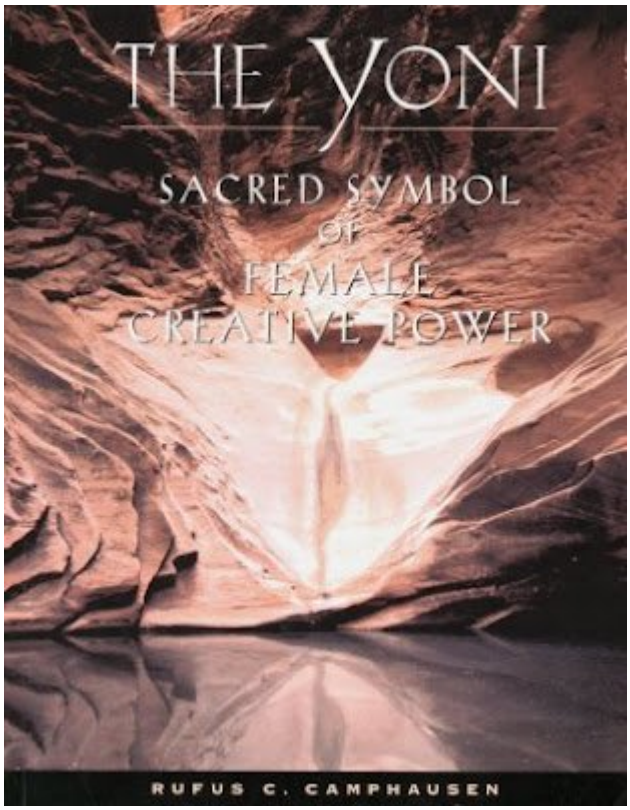
The Worship of the Yoni

The Destruction of Little Girls' Sexuality

Back to Gender War, Sexuality, and Love

EOTM: The Yoni

. · 2 April 2005 · Archived copy · Original



EOTM: The Destruction of Little Girls' Sexuality

. · 3 April 2005 · Archived copy · Original

In her book, "Warrior Marks", Alice Walker explores the practice common throughout much of Africa, the Middle-East, and some of Asia, of chopping off the genitals of little girls. Collectively known as "FGM", or "Female Genital Mutilation", these practices range from cutting off the tip of the clitoris to complete removal of the clitoris and inner labia and scraping the flesh off of the outer labia to create an open wound. In this extreme procedure, termed "Pharonic", the sides of the wound are bound together and a small stick inserted to leave an opening to pass urine and menstrual blood once the remains of the outer labia have healed together with scar tissue.

Much confusion about this procedure is generated by the fact that it is often referred to as "female circumcision" which leads people to regard it as similar to male circumcision. After centuries of this ignorant and brutal practice, it is not difficult to understand how entire peoples could lose any knowledge of what an adult woman's intact genitals look like.

Before inhabitants of so-called "civilized" western culture indulge themselves in too much smug self-congratulation, they need to ponder whether in fact western culture does not do much the same thing in a hidden, covert, and dishonest fashion. These so-called "civilized" western mothers hide their intent to destroy their daughters sexuality by leaving their genitals attached (in most cases) but by severing the mental and emotional connection which the little girls have to them. I call this westernized version of FGM by the term "Female Genital Mindfuck."

I know a man who has been married over 25 years and has never once SEEN his wife's genitals, nor even seen her naked. She dresses and undresses in the closet. They do have 3 children, but so do the women whose genitals have been chopped off have children. The parts of female anatomy which are functional for reproduction are fortunately beyond the reach of the circumcizer's knife, and somewhat beyond the reach of the knife of fear and shame which western women use to detach their daughters from their own genitals rather than detaching the genitals from the girl.

This is how one 19 y/o woman described the experience in a correspondence with me:

"My mother told me that most men were after one thing...and she just look down between my legs (which didn't seem very interesting to me...I was probably 10).

"I read Songs of Solomon where he talks about how splendid he saw the womans body, and how incredible he viewed sex.

"I never told you about my grandmother. The word Sex is spoken as a nod of the head. She wouldn't have a clue what "going down" or "giving head" implies and she dang sure wouldn't let you talk about sex. She probably would have gotten on to me for reading the Songs of Solomon had she ever caught me and gave me some big lecture about that.

"Talk about mixed messages! How do you know to believe! So you know what I did?? I sheltered myself. I stayed away from those stupid Seventeen magazines and I never joined "girl talks."

"I saw older men out there who weren't looking for a cheap thrill, and wanted more than that "weird" thing between my legs."

This young woman was so dissociated from her own sexuality that she referred to her genitals as "that 'wierd' thing

between my legs." I wonder if it is possible to grasp the enormity of that level of dissociation by using an anology of her referring to her eyes as "those 'weird' things below my eyebrows" or to her ears as "those 'weird' things hanging on the side of my head."

Another woman I know, one who was doing her level best to harass me into a "romantic" relationship in which I had no interest whatsoever, responded to my challenge of her assertion that she was a "sensuous woman" by actually looking at her own genitals FOR THE FIRST TIME AT AGE 42. This woman had deep and serious disturbances when it came to her notions of relationships, and particularly of her own sexuality. I saw her once get so egged on by some "you go, girl" types that she made an absolutely obnoxious fool out of herself by not letting go by any comment about an object which was longer than it was wide without making some comment about inserting it in herself. Since this happened to be a May Day celebration, at one point she suggested mounting the 16 ft long X 6 inch around Maypole. In a very misguided attempt to let her "sexual nature" out, several times she stood up and proclaimed to the crowd "Big ones, line up. Little ones, bunch up."

One might be tempted to leap to all kinds of conclusions from "See what happens when female sexuality is unrestrained by social convention" to the "See, men really dislike and are threatened by a woman freely expressing her sexuality" of the "you go, girl" grrls. However, what this woman was expressing was most decidedly NOT any form of intact healthy female sexuality, but rather a twisted and perverse caricature of the sexuality that SHE THOUGHT OTHERS WANTED HER TO EXPRESS. And herein lies the key: by first depriving a young female of access to her sexuality, then by destroying it in many cases, there is a void left into which ridiculous notions of "romantic love" or any other socially constucted fictions can be placed.

As the target of all this contrived display, I was disgusted both by her performance and by her stupidity, as were two of her friends who happened to be in attendance. They kept asking themselves "Why doesn't HE get her out of there? Can't he see what those people are doing to her by egging her on?" (Why doesn't he RESCUE her?)

There are a whole lot of answers to this question, I'll try to be brief. First, I long ago stopped resuing women from the consequences of their own stupidity. Rescuing is the primary means whereby this culture destroys little girls' competence. In this woman's particular case, she had been so belligerent, obnoxious, and agressive in her attempts to bulldoze her way into my life and dictate to me the script of a ridiculous romantic fantasy which she wanted me to fulfill for her, that I really didn't care what happened to her. In my opinion, the more painful the consquences the better because this woman had been stubbornly refusing to take any responsibility whatsoever for her own actions for more than two years at this point. I wanted it to be as painful as possible for her so that the pain would penetrate the wall of denial which so far had been impenetrable. In addition, there were more than a dozen WOMEN around her who were allowing this to continue or actively participating in egging this woman on. Fascinating that they were either sitting on their passive asses watching this woman completely humiliate herself, or actively participating in encouraging her to do so. But I, as a MAN, got assigned the "responsibility" of rescuing her amidst a bunch of women who took no responsibility themselves. I don't think so.

However, I was not completely without compassion since I knew about the way this woman had been raised and the fact that her mother had seen to it that she had been dissociated from her sexuality at a very young age. While stories such as the woman whose parents subjected her to a clitorectomy as a barely preadolescent girl, as well as the persistence of the practice of male circumcision, show that Genital Mutilation is alive and well in the United States, it is this more subtle form of destruction of a young female's sexuality that haunts these women as well as the men who try to love them and connect with them sexually, their marriages, and their relationships with their own children and the culture as a whole.

Over the years, I have repeatedly tried to sew those severed connections back together, only to encounter time and again the same type of resistance to my efforts that the man mentioned above, whose wife undresses in the closet,

experienced. The cruel paradox is that, with the advent of the mythological "sexual freedom for women", there are a lot of women who have been giving out the message that they would LIKE TO BE reconnected with those feelings. However, any man who is foolish enough to take them at their word will get slammed for it.

Women still retreat and hide behind the fictions of "true love" as a means of deceiving both themselves and men about the true nature of their wants and needs. Despite the economic gains of women over the past 3 decades and, contrary to all the bullshit about women only making 75 cents per dollar a man makes, achieving essential wage parity when factors of experience and time in the work force are compared; women still expect to be "pampered" and showered with affection and tokens of male devotion. They still want and expect to get their sexual needs met, but they refuse to take responsibility for their own sexual needs and usually manage to make the man responsible for them at the same time they hold the man in contempt for having his own needs.

I am constantly astonished at the attitude of women who are supposedly "seeking relationships" with a man. I make something of a hobby of reading personals ads and surfing "romance" web sites just to keep my blood pressure up and remind myself why I never have married and never intend to. No wonder women get their condescending view of men confirmed if they only meet the type of men who will tolerate the following kind of arrogant condescencion.

"Okay, so I went to the "tips on writing ads". That helped!

"I am seeking to find someone out there who is honest to a fault, not too hard to look at, rather tall, great personality, loves to pamper women, opps, erase that, I meant, loves to pamper a woman, knows how to give and take, will understand that most women will, one way or the other, get in that last word, understands that sex is not everything (I realize that will exclude 90% of you guys), understands that sex is an important part of things, (what can I say, I'm a woman, you're not suppose to understand what that meant).

"I know, I sound like an awful person, but I'm really not."

I would say that this woman needs to retake her "tips on writing ads" course. If it had not been one of those "pay for your grins" sites, I would have sent back the following response:

"Yup, sure enough, I'm one of that 90% of guys you wanted to 'weed out'. I would suggest that you re-take your 'tips on writing ads' course. Surely they didn't suggest that slamming 90% of all men was a sure-fire tactic for catching the attention of that small fraction of the remaining 10% who can meet all your other criteria. Now, let's see what you have demanded so far: 1) honesty, nothing wrong with that; 2) attractive, tall, and great personality, you and every other woman in this country. Since you've already ruled out 90% of all men, and the men who have such a killer combination of desirable attributes as you require will likely have their pick of women, you are fishing in a pool which is small indeed. 3) "Loves" to pamper women, no make that "A" woman, obviously you. Since men in the age range you are prospecting often have kids, ex-wives, and often colleges to support, the ones with enough money left over to "pamper" you are becoming small indeed. Now, lessee, 10% of 10% of 10% works out to 1/10th of 1%. Now, let's look at what you are offering such a rare man. Passionate sex? Nope, you've already made it quite clear that YOUR assessment of the significance of that activity is going to be the prevailing standard of the day. Understanding and emotional support? Nope, again. You are going to demand the "last word" in ANY argument, and you're gonna retreat behind the old feminine mystique and just say I'm not supposed to understand what you mean. Well, I gotta tell you that even if I were such a man as fit all your demands, this is sizing up to be a pretty bad bargain. You yourself even admit as much when you end your ad with 'I know, I sound like an awful person, but I'm really not.' Whether you are or not doesn't matter. Your ad makes you sound like someone who will do until the real thing comes along. Maybe you should think about retaking the 'tips on writing ads' course and re-writing your ad?"

Obviously, this woman's mother told her that "men are only interested in one thing" and she has held onto this

notion until her late 40s. And just as obviously, she is only interested in men as crippled in their self-esteem as she is so they will tolerate her smug arrogance and absurd demands while practically spelling out the fact that she has no intention of giving the man anything he might want in return.

A few years ago, I would have felt sorry for this woman. Now, all I can manage to do is to feel sorry for the poor bastard that she gets her hooks into.

Back to Gender War, Sexuality, and Love

EOTM: Escape from the Dating Trap

. · 4 April 2005 · Archived copy · Original

Men and women today are trapped in a cycle of manipulation and counter manipulation which few of them understand. Throughout the 20th century, all reality and substance have been slowly leached out of everyone's lives and have been replaced by addiction to, and narcotization by, an unfufilling cycle of acquistion, achievement, and disappointment when that which they acquire and achieve fails to fill the emptiness inside. Then a new cycle begins to acquire more and achieve more in hopes that it will be enough, followed by a cycle of even more disappointment when it fails to be. In the process, both men and women have been stripped of their humanity and turned into objects to be acquired, then disposed of.

The devastating effects of mass media have created homogenized caricatures of men and women which do not reflect the reality of any woman or man, yet which both sexes have been subtly conditioned to expect of the other. Trapped in sets of roles and expectations of appearance, mislead about what the other sex wants and expects, completely lacking role models except the fictional characters fed to them under the disguise of "entertainment", people are leading fictional lives and choosing fictional mates. When the day comes that one or both can no longer maintain the fiction, or one either discovers or reveals the degree to which their shared fiction departs from reality, the result is emotional carnage and hate. We see more of this around us every day than we ever see of real love.

The societal pressures and demands for pairing and mating, combined with the biological pressures to do the same, are slamming men and women up against each other and have trapped both into living scripts which are fallacies and fantasies and have no relationship to real lives. These scripts have extensively defined, restrictive, and unrealistic roles and are enforced by an inflexible set of social "rules". The dating script traps people into trying to be different than they really are and expecting the other to be different than s/he really is. When the deception is finally revealed, everyone feels betrayed.

In order to escape from the dating trap, which I call the "first stop on the train to stupidville"; one must avoid being railroaded by social expectations, or deluded by wishful thinking which cannot separate fantasy from reality, long enough to understand who s/he really is and what s/he really wants and whether the other person is likely to have what you want and want what you have.

The moment two people enter into a social relationship called "dating", they become trapped into social roles which were historically adaptive, but have not changed in adaptation to a changing environment. At that point it is too late to be talking about expectations, because they have already been built. The very use of the term "date" or "dating" carries with it all the baggage of expectations that this is a "special" kind of friendship or relationship. "Specialness" is the most addictive drug known; once addicted, like any other addict, the "Specialness" addict will sacrifice all self, all integrity, and all other relationships to keep getting a "Specialness" fix.

As the "old" social roles and structures have been eroded by the changing realities of the 20th century, most notably the protector/provider roles for men and the materially-dependant/nurturer roles for women, both sexes have struggled to forge new roles out of the wreckage of the old. Neither have suceeded very well nor are faring very well. The rage and hatred which is the inevitable result of frustration and betrayal are mounting. We have reached the point of "Counting bodies in the gender war", as a woman journalist recently put it.

The white flag of surrender is not possible. The chilling suggestions that cloning makes it now possible to create a race with only one gender are among the most frightening statements ever made. Like the nuclear weapons stalemate which threated to end the human race for much of this century, the nucleus of the cell stalemate will bring the race to the brink of total destruction.

Men and women alike must step out of the trap which keeps throwing them up against each other in the growing cycle of frustration, rage, and hate. We need a demilitarized zone where we can sit down at the peace table and negotiate a peaceful resolution to our differences. We need delgates to a peace process which neither denies the war, nor believes that it is inevitable. Once conscripts, we need to become diplomats. Once foot soldiers, we need to become negotiaters. Once fools following rules which do not serve us, we need to become enlightened and realize that rule-ish is foolish: so we must create new roles which do not follow the old rules.

The cycle of blame must stop.

Most web sites I see are mostly about throwing the grenades of blame into the emotional life of the other gender. Unfortunately, most men's issues sites are devoted to throwing back the grenades that feminism has thrown at them, and a tragic number of the women's sites are devoted to throwing more grenades.

For anyone ready to become a draft resister, a conscientious objector, in the new "Emotional and Gender Vietnam" - listed below are some Radical Alternative Raradigms, based on Reason, Accountability, and Purpose.

Reason Accountability Purpose

”The Rules” are for Fools!!!

Healing for Men

EOTM: "The Rules" are for Fools!!!

. · 5 April 2005 · Archived copy · Original

"Any fool can make a rule, and EVERY fool will mind it."

One of the saddest phenomena of recent years is the appearance of a book called "The Rules", only surpassed in its stupidity by its popularity and the enthusiasm with which its message was received and adopted by women. Nothing more than a cookbook for women obsessed with marriage containing recipes for lying and manipulation: this book promises true love and eternal happiness as the reward for women turning themselves into a commodity and manipulating the market to create an artificial scarcity of that commodity.

Several immediate knock-offs capitalizing on its popularity immediately appeared. One was a satire called "The Code", which outlined an equally reprehensible system of manipulation for men. "The Code" was mostly tongue-in-cheek, like the email sent to me by a female journalist as a part of a correspondence we had on the issues of dating.

However, I find no humor whatsoever in this type of thing. I have not yet heard back from her about whether she actually found it funny or was sending it to me as an example of some of the issues which I have written about. Underneath any humor that men might find in it, is a deep and bitter resentment over the type of manipulation which has been used against them and to which each rule is a suggested counter-measure. Underlying any humor that women might find in it, are demeaning and obnoxious stereotypes of men, plus likely some of the same bitter resentment.

The best response to "The Rules" was by couples' therapist and author Barbara DeAngelis, Ph.D. Entitled "The REAL Rules"; this book starts out with what used to be called the "Golden Rule", really the only "rule" anyone ever needs: "Treat everyone the way you want them to treat you." All the rest of her "rules" are just guidelines for implementing the first rule.

In a world filled with horrors, it is easy to become numb to atrocity. This is the first step toward death: the death inside and the social and spiritual death which so often preceed actual physical death. Those who follow "rules" such as those originated by the author of the referenced email, and by the authors of the book "The Rules", are the walking dead. So are the people who have written those rules: zombies which live in a state which is neither completely dead nor completely alive.

When one takes instructions on how to conduct one's life from a dead person, one embraces death over life. How could there possibly be a greater fool than that?

The Law of Thelema

EOTM: The Law of Thelema*

. · 6 April 2005 · Archived copy · Original

"Love is the Law, love under will."

Except as motivated by love and the need to express love, all acts are unlawful. Most unlawful of all, are those acts which seek to extort love by pretense: by denying one's own will or self to deceitfully appear to be food for another's appetites. Next come those acts which are based on will, but not on love. If both of these two types of unlawful acts were purged from humanity, we would live in utopia.

Harm none, and beyond that take the responsibility to choose your own actions based on wisdom regarding their consequences, is the only rule a non-fool really needs.

(* Thelema is the Greek word for will and is related to the Greek for love, Agape. The Greeks did not recognize romance as a form of love, they had an entirely different word for it, Eros.)

EOTM: The Rules for Guys

. · 7 April 2005 · Archived copy · Original

Dear (zenpriest):

I know you do despise "The Rules" and other such dating traps, but when I got this tongue in cheek Rules for Guys, I just knew I had to send a copy along to you

---------- The Rules for Guys ----------

1. Be a "creature unlike any other."

However, in particular think in terms of "The Creature from the Black Lagoon" (Universal 1954), a dark monster that conquers her. Beauty and the Beast. Chicks love that shit.

2. Don't talk much to a girl (but do take her dancing.)

She only wants to talk about relationships and girl stuff. So take her dancing. They go nuts for this. Learn enough to get by and look cool, though you won't need it much after you have her hooked. In the meantime you can flirt with the other girls on the dance floor.

3. Pay her way on the date, but expect to get back in kind.

Buy her a nice meal, so that she knows what she owes you in exchange for the meal. In addition, if you buy her a fancy schmancy $50 dinner at some ritzy place, she won't be able to turn down your request for a $300 "loan" until you can "get to the cash machine." Good investment.

4. Don't call her after sex.

Make her wait a few days. Girls do this stare at the phone thing, makes them all anticipatory. Don't give them what they want. Call her in a couple of days or if you get horny again. Also, after sex, just roll over and go to sleep, even if she hasn't had an orgasm yet. You did a lot of work and you're tired, and you have important work to do tomorrow.

5. Always end phone calls first.

Especially if she's read the Girl's Rules that tell her to do this, you won't have to worry about long phone calls. I mean girls can yak so long on the phone.

6. Don't give her any warning about a date.

Make sure she stays free all the time in case you call. And more to the point, keep yourself free in case something comes up elsewhere, if you know what I mean. If you call and she's not available, act real hurt, make it seem like you will end the relationship if she does this a lot.

7. Tell her what she wants to hear (i.e., Lie.)

You like long walks on the beach. You love kids. You like to cook. You're looking to settle down in a country home

with that one special girl. You love horses, paris, chick movies, sushi and Meryl Streep. You support her goals. Tell her you're rich, famous, whatever. She'll figure out the more ridiculous ones eventually but if you play this right you'll get laid first and have her captured. Don't be scared to eventually talk to her about "the relationship" -- girls go for this. Just be sure not to believe it yourself.

8. Stop dating her if she doesn't put out by the second date.

Pretend like you're not super eager to get laid but drop the hint with gentle physical contact. It is nice to date easy chicks and all and get laid on the first date, but some of the hottest ones like to wait a date. However, if she doesn't at least give you a blowjob by date #2, #3 at the latest, there are better investments out there. On date #3, remind her of the "third date rule."

9. Tell her you love her.

This is the big corallary of rule #7. Don't do it right away but definitely do it if she's showing reluctance on that blowjob. Practice saying it like you mean it. As the old saying goes, "Sincerity is everything. If you can fake that, you've got it made."

10. No more than casual sex on the first, or 100th date.

Definitely don't get too involved, as she might wanna be monogamous or something. Make sure that you never let yourself get tied down.

11. Tell her what to do.

Hey, in the end they all want to be dominated. So make all the decisions and see how she goes for it. If so, you can probably get this to continue in the bedroom. No girl is perfect, but most of them like to please a man so you can change the one(s) you have to fit your needs.

12. Be the bad boy.

Girls love the "bad boy." They hope they can "reform" him, or they're a case of point #11 above. Either way, you can be as bad as you like. Treat her like she doesn't exist. Be mysterious. Dangerous. Wear cuffs and a leather motorcycle jacket, even if you drive a Hyundai. (Park the Hyundai somewhere else and walk to where you meet her, though.) Remember, nice guys don't get laid.

13. Don't let her know anything she can pin on you.

Girls like to get close to their guy, and "communicate." But later, if you break up, she might try and get back at you so for crissake don't let her know anything she could use or spread to others. Invent deep intimate stuff you can tell her in bed, she'll go for it. If you can't think up your own, buy one of those books with Fabio (the guy from the "I can't believe it's not butter" commercials) on the cover and be one of those guys. (God, this guy can't tell butter from margarine and chicks swoon over him? Something strange going on here.)

14. Don't tell her you're married!

For some reason they get really upset. When you take off your ring, get some tanning lotion or put your hand under a sunlamp to make sure it's not visible where you took it off. Or tell your wife you just don't want to wear a ring; invent some sort of bizarre hand disease or rice picker accident. Anyway even the ones who haven't read the Girl's

Rules don't want to date married guys so don't let her (or your wife) know.

15. Be a pain to live with.

Well, this isn't a thing to so much try to do as a reminder to be yourself. If you shack up, don't alter your own life just to make it easier for her. One exception, which is admittedly a royal pain, but worth it -- put the toilet seat down after you take a wizz. She sees that and she'll think she's found god's gift to girls, and she'll give you better sex than a $300 hooker. Compare -- 5 seconds of your time each day to put down the seat vs. $300 blowjob. No brainer!

16. Don't get caught staring at her tits or other girls'.

For some reason girls don't like it when we stare at their tits when we talk to them. And they don't like us staring at other girls' either. As if we have a choice! Anyway, they're watching for this so don't get caught. Check their eyes, then do your looking.

17. Don't let her leave your things in your apartment.

Or give her a key, until you're sure you can count on her or very regular nookie. Otherwise they might try to insinuate themselves into your life before you are sure of this.

18. Even if you're engaged or married, you still can play around.

I mean, do they own you or something? This rule is the most fun.

19. Do The Rules even when your friends or parents think you're nuts!

Truth is, you're getting laid, and they are just jealous.

20. Don't give her the ring, but make her think you will -- or give her a fake ring.

Drop hints and pretend like some day you want to be married to her, but don't actually do it. You can even get engaged if you want to lock in some regular pussy. There's no law that says you actually have to follow through with the ceremony. Plus, it takes an expert to tell cubic zirconia from a diamond, and if she takes her ring to an expert she clearly doesn't trust you and is a lost cause anyway. You can get one of these rings for about $100 and trust me you'll get a fuck worth far more than that out of it.

21. Double check the birth control.

There's a trade off here. On one hand you don't want to use condoms, so get her on the pill ASAP. On the other hand if she runs the birth control she might blindside you with something annoying like a kid just to hook you. You decide. If she gets pregnant, take the new "morning-after" pill for guys. (It alters your blood type.)

22. Don't discuss 'The Rules for Guys' with girls.

Like I need to explain this one to you? Do they explain their rules to us? Thought not.

22a. Don't discuss 'The Rules for Guys' with your therapist.

Because if you have a therapist you've really missed the point of "The Rules for Guys."

23. Figure out her romantic dream.

Almost all girls have one. In 90% of cases it's the knight in shining armour, the handsome prince or the tall, dark and handsome mysterious stranger. Harlequin Romances isn't exactly growing broke selling girls books about how a guy comes into the girl's life and does something as simple as fixing her car to make her life right and sweeps her off her feet. You would be amazed at the "mileage" you can get just by taking her car down to the shop. Though if you can find a good mechanic, let me know, OK? Anyway, subtly find out her own personal romantic dream, and play-act it. On the cheap, of course -- you only have to play-act. While she may dream of a billionaire who whisks her away to his ranch in his jet, she'll settle for a $60 rental limo and a $40 1-hour rental horseback ride.

24. Sometimes ya gotta break The Rules.

Hey, Burger King said it best. And it's a great place for a cheap date (use $4 from the $300 she "lent" you.) But in this case I mean you gotta break the Girl's Rules.

25. Do "The Rules" girls. Yes, you can!

If you suspect that some really attractive girl is following "The Rules" for girls, take heart. I mean if she's a dog, lose her. But if she's got a great set or you have some other reason to particularly want her, you now know her exact game and can use it to get her. The book tells these girls to follow its rules religiously, even when they don't make sense. You will have to wait 6 dates, but the authors do tell girls over 30 it's OK to have sex, so they will. Forget young "Rules" girls unless you are really keen on virgin-plucking. You only have to date 'em once a week -- if you date them Friday then you are free as a bird on Saturday; they'll end calls and dates; they won't call you when you have other girls over -- a lot of advantages, and as long as you see past all the manipulative "hard-to-get" tricks you won't be fooled, just laid.

First, you have to check if she's a "The Rules" girl or just a stuck-up bitch. Sometimes it can be hard to differentiate them. Test this by first telling her how much you admire a girl who sticks to her principles, and then call her Thursday telling her you just got front-row Orchestra seats to the Boston Pops (a classical musical group) concert on Friday. If she says yes she's the stuck-up bitch. Say, "Did I say Boston Pops? I meant Iggy Pop!" and dump her.

If she says a reluctant no, she's a "The Rules" girl. The book tells them never to accept a weekend date after Wednesday. Rush out to the bookstore to get a copy of "The Rules." You'll find it in the dating /relationships section. Since you've never gone near it before ask at the cashier's desk. When you get there you'll know why you've never been to this section before from the titles of the books. "Venus and Mars Together Forever." "Men who hate women and the women who love them too much." Like Dave Barry says I am not making this up. You're the only guy in weeks to go to this section other than to laugh at the titles, so if you're lucky some chick might even hit on you. But if not, go buy the book, and then read it. It's short.

Now you'll know her exact game. Problem is, as noted, it will be 6 weeks until you get laid. Be sure you have something else on the side during those six weeks.

But look at the advantages.

Other than those noted above, you'll learn that she won't bring up crap like "marriage" or "kids" or "the relationship." She expects you to bring these things up. Soon the book will tell her to dump you. Track this, and make sure to start dating another "Rules" girl before the breakup -- 6 weeks before the breakup if you can time it

right.

26. Do 'The Rules For Guys' and you'll get laid.

Don't forget this. You may be tempted to break them, to be "nice" or "sensitive" or even listen to her. But everybody knows that nice guys don't get laid. You want to be nice or in the sack? I thought so.

EOTM: Healing Men - Going to the Valley*

. · 8 April 2005 · Archived copy · Original

(* In honor of Ayn Rand.)

1. Shoot your television.

Television is the most destructive force in the world today. By turning it on, you invite into your home and into your mind a conspiracy by some of the most brilliant minds in the world to undermine your sense of self-esteem and your ability to be happy. Advertising relies on 3 principles: fear, uncertainty, and doubt. This is referred to as the FUD factor. Advertising intentionally undermines these and ties the product being sold to solving the dilemmas of these universal human emotions. Television also contains the "Fundamental Lie of Media" which is that what you are seeing has any relationship to reality whatsoever, and particularly that it is a true and accurate representation of reality.

2. Rid yourself of guilt and shame.

Guilt is "I did something wrong." Shame is "I AM something wrong." The concept of "Original Sin" is a means of social control, and a very effective one. Children get infected with the virus of shame before they learn to walk, talk, or control their bowels. Many spend the rest of their lives trying to atone for something over which they had no absolutely no control. Of course, this means they waste all the time and energy which they might have used to change things over which they did have some control so the cycle feeds itself.

3. Reclaim your own moral authority.

Learn to rely on your own sense of ethics and internalized value system to judge the rightness or wrongness of anything you do. Before the 10 commandments was the law: Love is the law, love under will. Harm none, Do what thou wilt shall be the whole of the law. Act in love, love of life, choose every action for the best of those affected; and you will live free from guilt and shame.

4. De-mythologize women and men.

Both have a light side and a dark side, just like duct tape. Women are NOT the "fairer" sex. Men are NOT universally violent, exploitive of abusive.

5. Decide what you really want.

Its your life. Everybody gets only one. Practice responsible stewardship of this great and mystical gift.

6. Educate yourself on the issues.

Don’t be suckered by lies: particularly feminist lies.

7. Don’t be afraid/unwilling to fight.

This is how men harm themselves most. Remember the bullies in grade school who would beat up kids and take their lunch money. Kids who challenged them sometimes got a bloody lip or a black eye, but then usually ended up keeping their lunch money. If you are dealing with someone who consistently refuses to fight fair, then -

8. Don’t be afraid to walk.

The power to leave is seriously underutilized. Remember the old country and western song "You can take this job and shove it." People who abuse their power are often abetted by simple voluntary submission to that power. Remember that all relationships except marriage and child-support are purely voluntary.

9. Hold women accountable.

Name it, demand they claim it, tame it. If you catch someone cheating, call her on it. If she refuses to own it, then walk.

10. Do not be fooled by the tyranny of the weak.

It is the most subtle form of power. The ultimate shell game of power. There are no sins of omission, only commission. Any phrase in the form of "I need you to … " Is a foul lie and designed to trigger the reflexive protect/provide male role. Some one may need human contact, or reassurance. Saying that they need you to call them every day is a control game masked by weakness. Leave these people to grow up or disintegrate on their own.

11. Do not fall for mix and match logic.

"So?", "So What?", and "What does that have to do with it?" will get you somewhere. Argument, defensiveness, or justification will not.

12. Demand your right to want what you want and participate in the definition of the relationship.

The female does NOT "make the rules." Any fool can make a rule, and only fools will mind it.

13. Practice civil disobedience in the face of the social demand that you bear all the responsibility and risk for initiation.

14. Look honestly at the power games you play and put them behind you.

15. Learn the law of the harvest.

16. Understand the entire secret of male power: Just do it.

Shut up and shovel the fuckin’ gravel.

17. Never trash a woman for free expression of her sexuality. Remove the word "slut" from your vocabulary.

18. Never tolerate being trashed for your sexuality.

You are alive because of sex, the person attempting to trash you is alive because of sex. People who trash sex are trashing life and in a very real way are part of the death worshipping cult which dominates the national consciousness today.

19. Learn to recognize man-hating. It is poisonous and all pervasive.

20. Reclaim your own self esteem by ridding yourself of attachment to its substitutes: ego and status.

These are socially based and very fragile and can be taken away from you in an instant. A deep understanding in the true inherent value of the self cannot.

21. Study the use of makeup and jewelry.

Do not consider a relationship with a woman who habitually wears either and particularly avoid women who habitually wear both.. Don't spend much time with a woman who is afraid of her own face. Understand that lying about her face is just the tip of the iceberg: she will also lie about a great many other things.

22. Study the matriarchy of family and the educational system.

Most men as well as women grow up with men largely absent from their lives until they reach High School, by which time basic personality and social attitudes are completely entrenched. With the father emotionally or physically absent, mothers often engage in an unconscious form of "emotional incest" with their sons, asking them to fill the role in the mother's life that the father failed to do. Thus young males start life with an emotional debt to pay off which was incurred by someone else. (Think about the biblical phrase "Visiting the sins of the fathers on the children unto the 3rd and 4th generation.) This is the emotional equivalent of the $27,000 of national debt which is the share that each child born today must pay off, with accumulated interest in his/her lifetime.

23. Do not allow yourself to be tricked into acting simply to prove something.

This is one of the most subtle and effective forms of manipulation. A denial of a wrong is not the same as an affirmation, even if if does move you in the same direction. Many people try to manipulate others by "accusing" them of the opposite way they want them to behave, so that the denial of the accusation will involve some action to prove that it is false. The prototype of the way men use this against men is "Whassmatta, are you chicken (afraid, a wimp, ...)?". The prototype of the way women use this against men is "Do you think I look fat?" or "I'm afraid you're going to leave me." A killer 1-2 combination is "Are you AFRAID to make a commitment?" Attempts to prove these accusations false are always more destructive than saying "Yes, and this is why...".

24. Spend time in the company of men.

Men's groups, men's work, men friends. And among women who do not hate maleness.

EOTM: The Nitty Gritty of Male Sexuality

. · 9 April 2005 · Archived copy · Original

Male sexuality is really very easy to understand. Men feel a tie to the natural world and natural forces whether they realize it or not. The force that drives young men to find young women attractive and to try to mate with them is the same force that causes flowers to bloom, and crops to grow, and is responsible for every bit of life on earth: the drive to survive, the quality and essence of life itself. No amount of veneer of civilization can change the nature of life. No matter how many insane notions humans dream up about the way life"should" be, life will remain as it really is until it all is destroyed.

Almost all multi-celled life on earth is the result of sexual reproduction. For a longer discussion of this see the pages titled Biology1, and Biology 101. Our very ability to have things to eat is directly due to the natural force of life driving a member of one subset of a species, called the "male" to fertilize a member of another subset of the species, termed the "female", in order to produce offspring. This drive is manifested in human males to the same extent that it manifests in male animals and the male parts of plants. Its primary characteristic is urgency. In the natural world the male is the reproductive servant of the female. He stands ready at all times to deliver the male element of sperm as soon as the egg is fertile. When she lets him know she is ready, he must be ready. Males everywhere stand ready to rise to the task.

What is much more difficult to understand is the behavior of men in the contexts which are not in themselves sexual but which our culture has attached to sexuality in order to make its expression "acceptable". Civilization today consists of nothing but fictions about life. Men and women have been cut off from their ties to the natural world so they no longer understand the forces that move them and move within them. They have attempted to substitute fictions and illusions, and the results are the same as if they tried to eat fictional and illusionary bread.

Nowhere is this more apparent and painfully destructive than in the area of our lives related to sexuality. Female sexuality has already, for the most part, been destroyed. The natural partnership and division of labor which evolved as a result of very real biological differences between men and women has been twisted by revisionist fanatics into a fiction about history-long and world-wide conspiracy by men to "oppress" and harm women. Nothing could be further from the truth. As a result of this incredibly insane fiction, relationships between men and women, already severely strained by the cultural fictions which dominate sexuality, are breaking down almost completely. Cut off from the history and reality which created the practices, cultures have made fertility control practices into traditions and belief systems which are not only obsolete in today's world, but which have begun to destroy the very social structures they were initially developed to preserve.

Men and women tend to very naturally fall into partnerships. Within the partnership there is also a natural division of labor which evolves based on differing abilities and preferences. In pre-industrial, non-urban societies these divisions tend to be more informal, far more flexible, and based more on individual choices than on strictly enforced social roles. The inability of an urbanized and industrialized society to tolerate normal individual variations created rigid definitions of roles and enforcement of conformity to them. What before had been done by choice, people were now being forced into doing because someone like them had once done it and the expectation got transferred to them that they would (must) do the same.

The natural tendency of humans to resist being forced into anything was countered by the fact that each role had certain rewards that came only with that role and no other. Men, due to the fact that they were unhampered by periodic interruptions of "productivity" due to childbirth, were the obvious choice of the gender to force out of the home and in the factories. Women, due to the fact that their so-called "careers" or "productive output" would be stalled by childbirth, were the natural choice to provide maintenance of the homestead, staying at home to care for

the children that the men were now isolated from. Each was compensated for isolation from the other's worlds by culturally sanctioned power and recognized authority in their own. Men had power in the world of work, women had power in the domestic world and the world of relationships. Over time the knowledge that they had ever been comfortable outside their cultural niche got lost. What had once been a comfortable and convenient arrangement for providing the environment necessary to raise children to maturity became a prison cell of roles and expectations based entirely on the plumbing one displayed at birth. None of this changed the basic urge to merge, it just made it infinitely more complicated, increased the severity of the consequences, and in general drove everyone crazy.

Women were backed into a corner where their sexuality was their only economic asset. This separated women from their sexuality as completely as men were separated from a sense of intrinsic value to their work by being forced to work in intolerable conditions to earn the wages to fulfill their culturally indoctrinated role as providers. Still, there was a lot of pride in fulfilling that role for men. Being able to provide for a family was the only accomplishment that most men of the industrial age are able to point to as the result of an entire life's work. For most men of the past 2 centuries, the price of an outlet for their own sexuality has been a life of indentured servitude in the factories and offices of Consumer Society.

It should be regarded as a measure of the value that men have placed on their sexuality, as well as its incredible power and persistence, that they have been willing to do so. Men are required by the structure of society to purchase an outlet for their sexuality by turning over economic assets. Women have been required by the structure of society to deny themselves an outlet for their sexuality, except in a culturally sanctioned exchange of economic assets. Thus society has turned all women into prostitutes, and all men into johns.

The extended period of childhood dependency enforced by industrial and post-industrial society, makes it nearly certain that both genders will be denied a culturally sanctioned outlet for their natural drive to mate for a period of several years after its onset. During this period, the mechanisms of the exchange of money for sex become so ingrained in the mentality of both men and women, that they continue to follow them even when they are no longer necessary. Women routinely withhold sex and intimacy as a means of gaining power and favors. Men bitterly resent this and retaliate by seeking to get sex without having to pay for it.

Both end up feeling used, taken advantage of, violated, and "oppressed" by the other. No trust or intimacy gets built. The foundation of mutual respect, trust, and regard which used to develop in most marriages never gets built today. Having had their own needs denied and fucked with by the other gender for so long, men and women begin by seeing each other as being diametrically opposed to their interests, an obstacle to be overcome. Men, suckered so many times into turning over hard earned money in response to signals of sexual receptiveness, become angry when their responses have been triggered only to be exploited. Women, so estranged from their sexuality that 50% of them are unable to respond orgasmically even when all the cultural conditions have been met, are often not even aware that is what they are doing, so the man's behavior is totally confusing and frightening.

This whole process of breaking down the pair bond which is the heart and foundation of the family structure has greatly accelerated in the past 30 years. The delicate balance of power in the worlds of work and domestic relations was completely destroyed when women began to demand the same degree of power in the workplace that they had always enjoyed in the home, and which they assumed, because they had never seen it, that men had as much power there as women did in the home. When they encountered the fact that it wasn't there to be had, they didn't go "oops, never mind" like Gilda Radner on Saturday Night Live, they blamed men. It wasn't because men did not have the power they were being demanded of to share, it was because they were "backlashing". The last reason that men had to voluntarily enter into the institution of marriage and commit their lives to supporting a wife and children was gone. The only thing left was the sex drive, and men began to pursue a strategy of gratifying it as inexpensively as possible.

This is not to say that men consciously set out to exploit women, they in fact do not. Men have a deep and sincere desire to love and be loved by women. They have made themselves totally crazy trying to live up to their part of the bargain, but always find nothing under the shell they've picked once the money has been laid down. Men distrust and fear women and the way that women have abused their sexual power over men. Men are learning how to deny their own sexuality in the same way that women do, because it is the only means they have to protect themselves from being exploited by it. More and more this is the only aspect of men that women see. This and the unrestrained and angry expression of it which takes the form of forced sex or rape.

You see, to paraphrase the NRA bumper stickers: when sex is outlawed, only outlaws will have sex. Women simply do not see any other aspect of male sexuality, because it makes men too vulnerable to women's manipulation.

Psychology of Sex
Romance
Love
Biology Basics
The Socio-Cultural Context

Back to “Gender War, Sexuality, and Love”

EOTM: Sexual Psychology - Part 1 - Working Class Heroes - Puberty

. · 10 April 2005 · Archived copy · Original

Part 2 Part 3

Anyone who truly wishes to understand the behavior of men toward women in a romatic/sexual context these days would do well to read the following 4 books:

- Why Men Are the Way They Are, by Warren Farrell
- The Myth of Male Power, by Warren Farrell
- Lip Service, by Kate Fillion
- The Masculine Mystique, by Andrew Kimbrell

In addition, both for grins as well as an understanding of context and reaction:

- The Rules, by Ellen Fein & Sherrie Schneider (See if you can get it from the Library. DO NOT put money into these bimbos' pockets.) then read -
- The Code, . Do not read only one of these books, either read both or neither.

Once again we must start with the basics if we are to understand very complex behaviors. No male suddenly wakes one day a man. Human beings do not wake up into a new world every day. Their actions today are based on the sum total of life experience to date. As the old saying summarizes this wisdom, "The child is father to the man."

Sexual behavior is only one small aspect of the total human being, yet we often totally lose sight of that fact when we focus on an activity which consumes, at most, 1/2% of an adult's time and characterize and make judgements about the rest of his life based on that ridiculously small fraction. I'm sure that if the readers think about it they will realize that the reason they came to this page was not to understand the specific mechanics and motivations of male sexual behavior, but more the entire context of mating, marriage, and commitment and how male sexuality influences these. It becomes a chicken and egg cycle to determine which is actually cause and which is effect.

The differential conditioning of males and females into the social roles of "man" and "woman" begins at birth. Lest anyone make the mistake of treating the newborn as simply a fragile and precious new life, they are dressed differently. Male babies are, from that moment, touched less, smiled at less, receive less positive attention, and must cry longer or more intensely before being picked up and comforted. This differential treatment of infant males versus infant females is just as characteristic of female adults as it is of adult males.

"As soon as you're born, they make you feel small,by giving you NO time, instead of it all." -- John Lennon, "Working Class Hero"

Part 1 - Working Class Heroes - prologue

The very first thing that male babies learn is that they must work harder and more persistently than females in order

to get their basic needs met. This is in fact a kindness to the male babies because these conditions will not change throughout their lifetime and they might as well start getting used to it. Males will consistently be judged more critcally and punished more harshly and, conversely, rewarded less frequently and lavishly than females for the same behaviors. Males learn, before any other skill, to recognize the conditions they must meet in order to survive physically and emotionally, and that the attributes required to meet those conditions usually include aggression, persistence, and performance.

As the young male grows, there are several conditions that get added. The first is conformity to expectations. Few adults are so emotionally ill or vicious as to punish a newborn, although *some* are, but by age two punishment has become the preferred means of behavioural control for most parents. This statement will probably provoke waves of protest based on a misunderstanding of the term "punishment". It is just as much a punishment to deprive a child of a basic need as it is to beat them. The old method of sending a child to bed without supper is actually a more effective means of behavioural control than a spanking because the internal emotional response to an attack is anger and retaliation or fighting back, while telling a child that he or she is so awful that they don't even deserve to be fed when hungry introduces a deep sense of shame. Shame is such an effective means of controlling behavior that many parents get addicted to its power and become very abusive of the power it gives them over the child.

Shame is entirely different from guilt, although most people confuse the two and use them synonomously. *Guilt* is a relatively benign emotion experienced by healthy human beings as a response to doing something which is against their own value system. It is essentially synonomous with remorse. People feel guilty when they make mistakes. Normal responses to guilt are the making of amends and the change of future behavior to avoid repeating the mistake. The ability to avoid guilt is entirely under the control of the individual through choices of behavior. We feel guilty about what we DO, not about what we ARE.

Shame on the other hand is a deep sense of wrongness; of being "broken" in a way that is unfixable. There is nothing we can *DO* to reduce the sense of shame except to remodel ourselves to remove the defect. The incredible power of shame to motivate people to do this, as well as how deeply associated with shame normal sexuality is, can be seen in the not uncommon willingness to have one's own genitals cut off in order to conform to some social "ideal". (1) It is difficult to imagine a culture where it would be considered shameful to have a left hand, so at some point in their life everyone would have their left hands chopped off, yet the practice of cutting off some or all of the genitals of one gender or the other is more common in human culture than its absence. Usually it is masked under some polite term such as "circumcision" which allows it to be double-thought into believing that it is a requirement of some faceless entity called "society" instead of the grisly practice that it is.

The next condition that young males are trained that they must fulfill in order to survive both physically and emotionally is competition. Conformity is not enough. It is not sufficient to simply "measure up" against a set of standards and meet the minimum requirements, that will simply allow the young male to avoid the more extreme forms of punishment. In order to secure the rewards of having basic physical and emotional needs met, the young man must learn to successfully compete against other males, and now, at the dawn of the 3rd millenium, against females.

Nowhere is this more clearly seen than in the portion of the cultural indoctrination system of children called "education". Prior to the establishment of publicly supported school systems about 200 years ago, it was the role of a multi-generational family and a community to help children learn those skills required for survival. Grading was strictly pass/fail. Pass meant you were still alive, fail meant you were dead. It was far more important to know how to plant a crop or butcher a hog than is was to diagram a sentence or solve for X. Literacy was a luxury reserved for the upper classes.

As industrialization forced men from the land which had provided sustenance for them and their families for

several hundred thousand years, the needs of a captive work force required to operate and maintain complex machinery changed significantly. Public school systems developed as a mechanism for developing skills which older members of the family could not teach because they generally did not possess. It was necessary to provide both a base set of skills, minimum requirements if you will, commonly called the "3Rs" (Reading, 'Riting, 'Rithmatic), as well as a means of measuring the differential abilities of individuals to master the increasingly complex conceptual skills required by the developing technology. Thus individuals were ranked in relation to each other and many, if not most, teachers graded "on the curve". I have even seen teachers throw out exams on which the majority of the class scored above 90% and come back with a more difficult test to spread out the curve a bit. The forced ranking system which requires that for every individual who excels one must fail guarantees that the only person able to be truly unthreatened by the success of another is one so securely at the top that they consider themselves unreachable. Thus success breeds both arrogance and condescention.

"They hurt you at home, and they hit you at school.
They hate you if you're clever, and they despise a fool,
'til you're so fuckin' crazy you can't follow their rules."
-- John Lennon, "Working Class Hero"

The insanity of having to send a child to school, confine them to a fixed location, and provide inducements in the form of the shame of "failure" or rewarding those who "excel" with the best grades to motivate them to learn, should be immediately apparent to anyone who has spent any time with a child who has not yet experienced school. From age 3 up a child's favorite word is "why". Even younger children are so enthusiastic about exploring and learning about their world that a house must be "child-proofed" to prevent those explorations from leading them into dangerous situations. However a child's natural curiosity does not always, in fact seldom, lead them to develop exactly those skills required by an urbanized industrialized society. It is a remarkable bit of PR that the process by which a child's natural tendency to want to learn is suppressed while replacing it with conformity/competition training is called "education" from the Latin *e ducare* "to lead (or draw) out".

In addition, humans, particularly human males, are not by nature sedentary animals. Major constraints are required to force these children to submit to the regimentation to teach them to take life sitting down and rely exclusively on outside authority to tell them whether they are ok or not. However this destruction of their natural human tendencies is essential to training the male child to stay put in his cubicle or on the factory floor. One of the most disturbing trends of the past 30 years has been the movement away from the acceptance of this restlessless as a normal trait and movement within the largely matriarchal education system, or as I term it "the industrial skills factory", to medicate the child into submission. Any child who does not submit meekly to confinement in the ranks and files of the classroom is likely to be labeled "hyperactive" and have his body chemistry messed with in order to make him more compliant. Male children are 4 to 9 times more likely than females have such a diagnosis applied to them. This is very similar to the ratio of women who received psychoactive medication for anxiety compared to men 30 years ago.

The disparity between the real and claimed intent of the process called education is nowhere better illustrated than in that sub-system of the process euphemistically called "physical" education. There is a fascinating bit of irony in the stereotype of the "dumb jock". Have anyone tell you that he was a physical education major and I'll bet that your estimate of his IQ will immediately drop 50 points. We somehow expect that someone who excels physically cannot be more than mediocre mentally, while the stereotype of the nerdy intellectual shows that we believe the converse is also true: the excellent student cannot excel physically. The common shorthand for phys-ed, "gym class", shows the truth of the situation. In a country where obsesity is rampant, heart disease a leading cause of death, and millions are spent on "health" clubs, physical education in our public schools is little more than an audition system for the organized sports program. Those students most in need of learning about maintaining their physical health are the ones least likely to benefit from participation and, in fact, are so often humilitated by their

poor performance that they are the ones most likely to seek to be excused from participation. The vast majority of "physical education" classes offered have nothing to do with exercise physiology or nutrition, nor do they include a physical assessment of the needs of the student, but rather are one more opportunity to be ranked against others. They are little besides competition training and opportunities for failure.

The bomb of puberty

We hear the term "biological clock" often these days. Women are commonly understood to have "biological clocks" that govern their ability to bear children and reproduce. As time runs out, people understand the sense of urgency that a woman feels to achieve the lifestyle arrangements necessary to support child bearing and rearing. Despite the many changes regarding marriage and child rearing in our culture in the past 40 years, the 2 parent family is still considered the ideal so, as the sand runs out of a woman's biological hourglass, she is expected to have an increasing interest in getting married to someone who can help her provide the type of environment in which to raise children.

What is less commonly understood is that men have biological clocks as well, which appear to run in the reverse direction from women's. The male's biological clock is like one of those alarm clocks which starts out softly and gets progressively louder. Young men have a clock that begins to go off about the time they sprout pubic hair and within a year or two is is resounding within them like a combination of Big Ben, Westminster Abby, and Notre Dame all combined. When puberty hits, young men are overwhelmed by a sense of urgency to get about the business of reproduction. Whether this is dismissed as "raging hormones" or given the respect it deserves, it will be one of the ruling influences of their lives for the next 30 years or so but it will peak within the next 5 years.

Someone once remarked that Mother Nature had a cruel sense of humor when she made men reach their sexual peak at 17 - 19 while women didn't reach theirs until 40, at which time men are "running on fumes". Aside from the fact that this probably isn't true, it ignores the complex biological and cultural influences which govern sexual expression and reproduction.

By the time a young male hits puberty he is about 2/3 crazy from having to continually perform and compete to gain approval and acceptance, but generally has mastered the art of conformity to expectations in order to gain the love he craves. He has been thoroughly indoctrinated in his expected role of protector and provider, and knows without question that the only permissable source of intimacy and emotional closeness for him is a from a woman with whom he is involved in a sexual relationship for which he will have to pay by protecting and providing. He has adjusted to some degree to the idea that all past actions and accomplishments expire at midnight, so the relevant question is not "what have you done?" but "what have you done for me today?" He has learned that his "sexuality" (whatever that is? All he knows is that is it somehow related to this incredibly useful tool for peeing.) is something terribly shameful and needs to be hidden, but that isn't all that difficult. Overall it sucks, but it's the only game in town and besides he was never given a choice of whether he wanted to play or not, only whether he wanted to play it well or poorly.

Then mother nature shucks out the BIG joker. BONG, BONG, BONG!!!!!

All of a sudden he is sitting there in excruciating pain as his formerly useful but otherwise unexceptional penis has suddenly begun to swell up without warning and this new addition of hair that has sprouted around it has wrapped itself tightly around the end like so much dental floss and is threatening to slice into it like a cheese slicer. Fortunately it is not all pain, because this tool formerly valued mostly for its utility has now become the source of the most delicious sensations.

The most bewildering thing for this young male to contend with is the fact that those other creatures which are as numerous as his own kind, ie. girls, have suddenly changed from being vaguely interesting, but mostly rather silly and annoying, to being the most fascinating thing he can think of. And, as a matter of fact, seem to be just about the only thing he can think of. At least 10 times per hour on a slow day.

And he is painfully aware of the cruelty of mother nature's sense of humor because he cannot escape the fact that, while he cannot seem to keep his mind off them and his incredible desire to be close to them for reasons he still does not understand, they seem to be far more interested in the type of car some older male drives, or the performance of some semi-human anthropoid in those pointless competions called sports, than they are in whether he continues to breathe or not. The only solaces he has is that he has been trained in the art of performance for approval, so some of the means to gain their treasured attention are accessible to him, and the fact that every male he knows is in the same boat even though they mostly lie about it.

As Warren Farrell puts it, she is a genetic celebrity while he is a genetic groupie. From this moment forward he will have to purchase every bit of the affection, approval, and love that he so desperately needs with his performance, his financial and status success, and his conformity to her expectations and ability to meet her material needs. It's a dirty job, but his only alternative is emotionally starving to death.

It will be many years before he realizes that he is simply responding to a biological impulse that drives every living thing, and he will have to endure much nonsense and mind-fucking about what is wrong with its expression and with him for wanting to express it. He will spend great amounts of money and time seeking its gratification, make a fool of himself many times over, love it, hate it, wish it would go away, be terrified when it is gone for even a moment, and generally experience both the best and worst moments of his life from it.

Part 2 – Puberty to 40

Back to “Gender War, Sexuality, and Love”

EOTM: Sexual Psychology - Part 2 - Puberty to 40

. · 11 April 2005 · Archived copy · Original

Part 1 Part 3

We now move into act II of this tragedy in 3 acts.

Unfortunately for young men, they are utterly incapable of understanding the reasons why the culture finds it so necessary to prevent them from gratifying the raging hunger they are experiencing. There is a small bit of biological timing that makes it impossible for average teenagers to fully grasp the implications of their actions, so appealing to their reason was abandoned long ago. The physical maturation of the onset of puberty roughly corresponds with a stage of mental maturation called "Formal Operations" which, in lay terms, is the ability to deal with abstract concepts and conceptual reasoning. Parents who have suffered through this stage may remember the time when "what if" became their child's favorite passtime.

Prior to entering this stage, the child's mental processes are dominated by "Concrete Operations". Children in the concrete operations stage are simply incapable of grasping anything outside of their own immediate experience and tend to deny that it even can exist. Parents who have tried to warn their children of the dangers of tobacco and other addictive drugs are quite familiar with the denial of "It won't happen to me".

The common ages at which children are allowed to engage in adult activites reflects a cultural understanding of this phenomenon at the intuitive level, even when specific knowledge of the mechanics is missing. Children generally are granted the priviledge to drive an automobile, which is a very concrete skill, at age 16. However the ability to vote and affect public policy is delayed until age 18, giving the child more time to develop reasoning ability, while the right to purchase and consume the powerful mind and mood altering drug alcohol is delayed until age 21 in most states, reflecting the common wisdom and understanding of the potential harm of each activity if engaged in without proper ability to assess the potential consequences and make enlightened choices based on that understanding.

Given the extended period of dependency of young humans before they can become self-supporting in an urbanized, industrialized, agriculturally-based society, and the generalized conditions of scarcity which prevailed in the desert regions of the middle east which surrounded the so-called "birthplace of civilization", it is generally accepted that human civilizations must prevent their children from starting to produce offspring as soon as they are biologically capable. (see the Socio-cultural context page for a more thorough exposition of this) The extremely powerful biological forces which are driving the sexual urge make this far easier said than done.

Historically, physical separation was often used. Adolescent men and women were simply prevented from being together unsupervised by an adult who understood the probable consequences to the young woman of a pregnancy before she had secured the commitment of a man to be her lifelong protector and provider. Neither young men nor young women were capable of fully understanding the long term costs and burdens of raising a child from infancy to self-sufficiency. Only a relatively mature and financially secure man would be able to take on such a burden, precisely the type of man who had the greatest bargaining power in choosing a wife and thus the most unlikely to assume the financial and emotional burdens of raising another man's child. Rather than attempting to explain the complex reasons underlying this to children incapable of grasping it, the last recourse of the exasperated parent often came into play: "Just because". It is usually far easier to transmit what must be done than why it must be done.

The simplest method of communicating this to a child incapable of understanding abstract concepts was to get them

to view the act of sex as destructive to some concrete object. This they could understand. Thus a mythical concept called "virginity" was conceived and children were told that it was very real and very important. Not WHY it was important, just that it was. As is often the case with folk wisdom communicated in this manner, eventually the controls became effective enough and entrenched enough in tradition that the "why" no longer mattered. Another example of this is the jewish tradition of adhering to dietary laws which prevented food poisoning in a desert climate lacking refrigeration, and often adequate cooking facilities, but which serve no useful purpose today.

By the time that effective means of fertility control other than abstinence had been developed, most people had forgotten *why* abstinence had been important and simply continued to believe that it was. In fact tradition had done its job so well, that fertility control was itself viewed as evil because it allowed breaking the prohibition against non-marital sex. Sex itself had become the evil, not just sex which produced unsupported children who either died or became a burden and drain on society.

Unfortunately for men and women alike, both of them were not able to make the transition instantly on their wedding night from the belief that sex itself was bad to the belief that it was something positive to be shared between them. Some people have the prohibition so deeply ingrained in them that they are never able to make the transition. This is particularly true of women since they, bearing disproportionately the consequences of unrestrained fertility and being the more effective locus of social control of the sexual urge, are most often the target of the internalized controls and prohibitions.

A young man who honored the need of his object of affection to retain her mythical "virtue" until the wedding night might be rewarded for his courtesy and chivalry by being locked into a marriage to a woman incapable of responding with passion and warmth, one perhaps whose mother advised her to "lie back and think of England", thus depriving him of the emotional contact and intimacy which was one of his primary reasons for commiting in the first place. Every young man has heard tales of loveless sexless marriages, and every one of them has sworn "not me". All the more reason to test the waters before signing on as a lifer.

However, this was decidedly NOT in the best interests of the female anxious to snare a mate. In fact the less giving the female was capable of being, the less likely it was that a free sample would inspire the young man to return. The relatively rare woman whose sexuality remains intact has no difficulty attracting male companionship. Men invariably respond to the underlying warmth and emotional health of such a woman by valuing her highly as a whole person and returning frequently to enjoy the pleasure of her company which may or may not include having sex with her, but in either case is not dependant on it. On the other hand, a woman who is so emotionally damaged as to be incapable of giving and relating to a man must rely on his powerful sexual urges to lure him within the reach of her clutches. The mother's dictum of "why would he buy the cow when he can get the milk for free?" struck fear deep into the hearts of many a young woman and created a firm resolve to not be left in the lurch. They, too, swore "not me".

However, the drive to survive is not so easily contained or destroyed. Pubescent women are just as susceptible to the biological imperative to help the species survive by reproducing as young males are. Physical separation required enforcement and constant vigilance by an adult with some vested interest in keeping the girl-child as marriageable as possible. This became progressively more difficult as the physical mobility of the population increased. The fictitious concept of virginity required constant social reinforcement to keep the young peoples' rapidly developing mental abilities from allowing them to see through it. Another means of control, which was more internalized and required less maintenance, was required. Enter ROMANCE.

Romance was the perfect means for co-opting the sexual drive of the female into a socially acceptable form. First, it thoroughly sanitized all that nasty sex out of the picture and replaced it with the universally positively regarded emotion of love. Second, it bundled the social requirements for (barely) acceptable sex into a single unified whole

which followed the form - if a then b (then c, then d, etc.). It was ok to sleep with a man if romance was in the picture because you were "in love", and if you were "in love" then he would WANT to marry you and provide for you and protect you and give you expensive gifts and support you in the manner in which you wanted to become accustomed and so on ad nauseum. Even better, you didn't *have* to sleep with him because romantic love was SO pure, that he only wanted what you wanted and if you didn't want to sleep with him then he didn't want you to.

Romance was a potent and heady drug because it tied directly into the teenage tendency toward grandiosity and desire for personal power. It wasn't that nasty dirty shameful sex he was after, it was her pure and beautiful soul. And it was so powerful that he would risk anything, suffer any hardship, climb any mountain, slay any dragon, wait any length of time necessary to be able to prostrate himself at her feet and bask in the glow of their mutual love for each other. Retch, puke, vomit.

Unfortunately pubescent males are just as grandiose as pubescent females, so this tied directly into the hero mythology that hooks so many young men. What could be better to prove himself and secure the affection and love he craves for all time with the same act of bravery, devotion, and self-sacrifice. And what better way to sanitize his own impulses which have been so deeply shamed than to perform some great heroic act, thus atoning for all his evilness and proving himself worthy of her love, her soul, and her body which she would gleefully share with him in deep and fulfilling passion. Retch, puke, vomit.

There were only a few small flies in the ointment.

- There is a reason these are called "fairy" tales, they don't exist. This is not reality, it is fantasy. Real men do not act this way, only adolescents.
- Few men these days have the financial, power, and status resources to be able to take time off from making a living to go slay dragons.
- Besides real dragons are in pretty short supply these days, so the dragons must be created from circumstance. The modern substitute is risk-taking. Teenage males demonstrate their "bravery" in order to impress their would-be princesses by taking useless and needless risks. Frequently their reward is not the eternal and undying love they were seeking, but a nice casket and graveside service.
- Everything hinges on her attractive power. She has only a passive role in the process, no active role. She is a helpless victim of the circumstances which create the opportunity for him to be a hero and his own willingness to do so. If she is an enterprising young woman, she will create the circumstances by becoming a "damsel in distress" or her modern counterpart "the woman in jeopardy".
- The drug rush that young women get from such power is addictive. Men soon learn that there is an endless supply of dragons for them to slay. Women have so fallen "in love" with the victim role that they refuse to pass up any opportunity for a repeat performance, even when men have tired of "proving" themselves over and over and have moved on to better ways to spend their time, after having realized that the promise of love was a lie constucted to manipulate them into confirming the woman's sexual power over them. Women find themselves playing to an audience made up exclusively of other women, which is fine with most of them because men find the whole thing rather boring and do not fully appreciate the creativity and skill required to continually deliver such a finely honed victim performance.
- Feminism has beaten men to death for the role they play in this grand melodrama, so men have become much less willing to play their designated part even the first time, knowing that instead of receiving the adulation they expect for their grand gesture that they will be bashed, sneered at, and humiliated.

Thus we deliver our pubescent children to the threshold of adulthood with diametrically opposed agendas, in a cultural context which gives them no realistic and practical guidance for how to proceed, in a society which simultaneously glorifies and vilifies sex, and expect the results to be something other than the carnage which has

resulted. Sometimes I have to wonder if there is intelligent life on Earth.

The stage is now set for the exposition of the tragedy. It would probably be far better for all concerned if males and females *were* still separated during this stage of their lives because it will take years for them to unlearn all the nonsense of the patterns of interaction established during this entirely unnatural period of their lives. Many unfortunates will fail to do so, and will find themselves alone at middle age and beyond wondering what the hell went wrong.

Developmentally, it is inevitable that adolescent males and females will regard each other as objects since they are just beginning the stage of neurological development which will allow them to be able to view anything any other way. Just as we do not expect infants to walk, talk, or control their bladders and bowels until they reach the stage of physical and neurological maturity which is the prerequisite for doing so, we cannot expect adolescents to exhibit fully developed adult reasoning and social skills until they have reached the stage of physical and neurological maturity which allows them to do so.

What is not inevitable is that they become arrested in this stage and never develop the ability to see beyond their own ego and self-importance. Children normally progress very smoothly through the normal developmental stages based on physical and neurological maturation. (In the view of all except their parents whose need to live vicariously through their children is symptomatic of their own arrested development and who tend to view the child's developmental rate as an achievement of the parents, so attempt to force the child's development to conform to some arbitrary timetable which fits their own ego needs but not the needs of the child.) However there are certain critical periods for the development of each skill. If a skill is not mastered during the critical period, it is difficult or impossible for the child to develop it later. For example, a child who does not develop language skills by puberty will likely never develop them.

There are certain social skills, like language, which require social interaction with those who have already developed them. The ability to have mature adult relationships and assume mature adult responsibilities is a social skill which normally develops beginning with the onset of puberty and proceeds rapidly for the next 5 to 8 years. The commonality of the ages of 18 and 21 as transitional ages in many cultures is no accident, nor is it arbitrary. The process slows down after that, but basically will continue throughout life with another peak or transition somewhere around the age of 40. Now referred to as "mid-life", this is the age that has marked the end of the normal human life span for most of the history of our species. Again it is neither accidental nor arbitrary that the "founding fathers" specified age 35 as the minimum for election to the presidency. Empirical observation over thousands of years of human history demonstrated that it was necessary to attain that age before a sense of social responsibility and the largeness of things had developed to the point where someone could demonstrate wise leadership on that scale. Again this is reflected in the folk wisdom of referring to someone of that age as "mature".

By isolating our adolescents in a separate "youth culture" of extended education and indolence, we effectively prevent them from developing these mature social skills by depriving them of contact with those who possess them. Like language, without this social interaction children simply cannot develop these skills. They become arrested at the stage where *everything* is an object - people, relationships, love - and their life becomes dedicated to the pursuit and acquisition of objects - clothes, expensive athletic shoes, cars, houses, boats, jewelry, etc. This of course fits in very nicely with our consumer/merchantile culture. Their only social interaction comes from other adolescents who have not mastered adult social skills and from their parents who are themselves arrested and generally lack those skills. In fact, many parents tend to regard their children as objects, providing the most potent lesson of all and shaping the children into thinking of themselves as objects.

Then, one day, the children's hour is over and these arrested adolescents are dumped out into the so called "real" world with a script for "success" and a head full of unrealistic expectations. The next few years tend to be very

painful as they try to master the environment of the work world, a social environment largely based on their success in that world, and an intimate relationship with another equally self-centered arrested adolescent. Almost no one succeeds in all three.

Men have been trained to regard women as beauty and sex objects and their self-esteem is all tied up in how much beauty they have been able to purchase with their success and financial power. Women have been trained to regard men as success and source-of-new-objects objects and their self-esteem is all tied up in how much success they have been able to purchase with their beauty and sexual power. A wonderful example of this was shown in the movie which came out several years ago starring Steve Martin and Bernadette Peters, entitled "The Jerk". Having met when they were both poor and could appreciate each other as human beings, they became rich by accident. Then, in the true tradition of Greek tragedy, they became poor again as a result of the same event that made them rich. In one scene Bernadette Peters's character was sitting in the middle of the floor crying over the loss of all their wealth and delivered this incredibly insightful line: "It's not the money I'll miss, it's all the ***stuff***."

In this one brief scene, the disease of the 20th century is revealed. She is incapable of seeing that the stuff is a direct result of the money, which in turn is a direct result of the work expended to acquire the money. She only sees the stuff. He sees that her happiness depends on the stuff and has nothing to do with him except to the extent that he can provide her with stuff. People have ceased to be human beings to each other and are pursued as trophies, objects which commemorate their accomplishments: his accomplishments in the area of being successful in providing her with stuff, her accomplishments in being beautiful enough to attract a man successful enough to provide her with stuff.

The old saying that life begins at 40 is again folk wisdom which reconizes that the process of maturation proceeds as the human ages regardless of whether they think or do anything about it. The mythology of "stuff" has failed to provide the promised happiness and people begin to undertake the process of doing the work that their parents screwed up: teaching themselves to be a mature adult able to have mature adult relationships.

Now is where the cruelty of nature reverses itself. The man looks over at the arrested adolescent woman who he has been carrying around for years, working long hours at a high stress job so he can make the money to provide her with stuff, listening to her bitch him out and whine that he isn't providing her with the *emotional* stuff she needs or even enough of the material stuff, tolerating vicious emotional abuse because she sees THE BITCH as the only model of female strength and has to keep up appearances of not knuckling under to a man to please her feminist sisters, living without the emotional support which was the reason that he commited to the bitch in the first place, putting up with her endless manipulations to control and remodel him into exactly the object she wants him to be, realizes that hold her beauty power once had on him is gone, and says "enough".

If he has truly matured he looks for a woman who herself has grown up, given up the cinderella fairy tale, claimed her own power instead of indulging her addiction to her beauty power, decided not to rest on her sense of entitlement and expect to be given to the rest of her life and instead has actually realized that she has to give instead of just receive and consume, and wants to be a partner. Sadly not all men do this and settle on trading their worn out 40 for two 20s. Even more sadly, if he has grown up he will likely have to spend a long time alone and looking for a woman who has, because women in the 90s tend to demand the right to not have to.

The poisoned legacy of feminism is that it considers even arrested adolescence to be too much to ask of most women and demands the right to claim a state of infancy as the natural state for women. Just as the female infant is picked up and comforted more quickly than the male infant who must cry longer and more aggressively, ie. *perform*, for attention, females now feel entitled to the best of everything without having to DO anything to get it except look cute. And when they outgrow their infantile cuteness and are expected to purchase the success and money they want with either hard work like men do, or with sex in the time honored arrested-adolescent tradition,

they cry "foul, oppression, backlash, glass ceiling, RAPE!!!!!!!"

I seriously doubt that there is much which can be done for most women who are now aged 18 to 35. The feminist nightmare of the more power women get, the louder they scream about not having any power is too seductive for these arrested adolescents. Every once in a while I see a hopeful sign [of a few women] who are willing to claim their own power and sexuality, but for every one of those I see 10 or 20 who are so addicted to the power of victimhood, so enthralled by the tyranny of the weak, so in love with THE BITCH, or so successful in making money off their sexuality (none dare call it prostitution) that they are absolutely unwilling to grow up.

The real "Beauty Myth" is that women have to be beautiful in order to find a mate. Open your eyes and look around you. You will see women of all sizes and shapes, beautiful and ugly as a mud fence, wearing wedding rings. Women who are not and never have been beautiful still have been able to find a man willing to make a commitment to them. These are the women who did grow up and realized that they had to offer a man some substance instead of relying on tight buns and a painted-on Kabuki mask or dishonest manipulation to trap a man into making a commitment.

Age 40+

Back to “Gender War, Sexuality, and Love”

EOTM: Sexual Psychology - Part 3 - 40 to Closing Time

. · 12 April 2005 · Archived copy · Original

Part 1 Part 2

The 40s hold a variety of gifts for the man who has matured enough to savor them. Like the man whose taste buds have developed enough to be able to appreciate the subtlety and fullness of a dark beer or a rich red wine over the shallow sweetness and empty fizz of soda pop which children prefer, the mature man now sips life rather than guzzling it. He finds and appreciates all the subtle nuances of each mouthful before moving to the next instead of seeing how many bottles he can consume.

He has reached the point in his career where he has "made it", whatever "it" is going to be for him. He is on the track to wherever he is going, having passed many forks in the road and closed off many possible futures. Gone are the days of suffering under the burden of hearing "you can be anything you want to be if you just apply yourself" and having to figure out what to do with all this potential that he isn't living up to.

"After they've tortured and scared you for 20-odd years,
then they expect you to pick a career,
when you can't really function, you're so full of fear."
-- John Lennon, "Working Class Hero"

There are a great many things he can simply no longer be unless he is already well along the track to being, no matter how diligently he applies himself: sports hero; president of some country; world renowned scientist, statesman, humanitarian. In short, he is what he is and is likely to remain so.

His second "coming of age" has erased age differences between himself and all men who are not younger than he. Certainly, he may still seek the counsel of an older "elder" but he has enough experience of his own that he can immediately tell wisdom from nonsense. Unlike the days when he didn't know shit from shinola and was so desperately looking for answers and uncertain of himself that he would substitute the judgement of anyone who seemed more certain for his own, more and more he keeps his own counsel.

Aware that the average male does not live much beyond his early 70s, he realizes that it is now definitely 3rd quarter. He has already spent more time than he has left. As any wise investor reviews his investments periodically and makes adjustments to those which are not performing up to his satisfaction, he looks back at the way he has spent his time and energy and the other resources they have brought him. He begins to cut his losing investments and free up those resources to shift them into investments which have been paying off better for him.

Society calls this a "mid-life crisis". And a crisis it is, but not for the man as society tells him. Rather for society itself. This man represents a serious threat to the social order and must be intimidated back into his old ways, lest others see how free he has become and begin to follow the same path.

If too many step off the "work! earn! spend! achieve! succeed! conform! consume!" treadmill which powers consuming society, it will slowly grind to a halt. The dedication and drive which come from his great heart and love of life are what society lives on, what it consumes in order to support its own cancerous existance. If too many become unwilling to continue to let consuming society loot them for all their best, the looters will eventually starve to death. So society spits on him and tells him that his best is actually his worst, but oh-by-the-way he has to produce even more of it to atone for his ability to produce it in the first place. "From each according to his ability, to each according to her need."

The competition has become not who can demonstrate the greatest ability, but rather who can claim the greatest need, or who can claim their need the loudest. Everywhere he turns, he hears people screaming how they have been victimized by not being given to, ***enough.*** He hears how they are "oppressed" by the man's ability to produce, to do, to act; by his very ability which feeds, and clothes, and shelters them and makes them mobile. And they demand restitution for this horrible wrong in the form of more giving and providing. Thus, the restitution of today becomes the oppression of tomorrow, which will require restitution the day after, becoming the oppression of the next day, and so on.

The magical status of victimhood and the fact that we simply can NEVER blame a victim, never examine the role the victim played in creating their claimed victim status, never once hold them accountable for their own actions, completely absolves them of any responsibility. If the man cannot produce faster than they can consume and destroy, then the failure and fault lies entirely within him, ***NOT*** in their actions.

The flexible, soft, and fragile young seedling man; terrified by the specter of the shame of failure; tortured by physical and emotional pounding; trained to deny his own needs and pain in order to be of service to and produce for others; trapped by his own values and sense of honor into fulfilling responsibilities and living up to commitments coerced out of him before he had any possibility of understanding what they meant; driven half crazy by impossible and constantly changing expectations; forced to purchase every bit of love and approval he has ever received with his performance; has now grown into a tree. He has solid roots. Breezes do not bend him, they only stir his leaves. Only by chopping him down and sawing him into lumber can he truly be harmed.

He looks at the fruit he has borne, the shelter he has provided to the small creatures who have nested in his branches, the way his roots have secured and held the soil and kept it from washing or blowing away, and realizes how little he owes the looters. He looks at the weeds which have been screaming that his roots have robbed them of the opportunity to seek nourishment and realizes that the truth of this accusation does not change the weeds into food crops and no longer feels any compassion for the weeds. He looks at the insects which have been boring into his trunk for years trying to weaken him and realizes that, though they have hurt him, they have not weakened him enough for his trunk to break. He looks at the squirrels who have died in his branches because they were too weak and sick to survive, or made a fatal error in judgement and fell to their deaths, and realizes that he neither killed them nor could have saved them. He realizes that all that has been expected and demanded of him he has done to the best of his ability, limited by his own nature and the richness of the soil in which hapstance placed him.

He realizes that if another tree next to him grew in soil so poor that his roots could not gain solid hold, or the insects had eaten away the trunk or the roots, and than tree had fallen over and crushed someone's house, or car, or even killed someone, that there was absolutely nothing he could have done to prevent it. He no longer feels guilt about that which he did not cause and could not have prevented. He thinks about all those who have shamed him over the

fact that he only produced one kind of fruit, no matter how abundant, and tried to shame him for the fact that he did not produce apples, and peaches, and pears, and berries, and corn, and cauliflower, and T-bone steaks, and diamond rings, and new cars, and expensive tennis shoes; and he feels no shame because no tree on earth produces all those things. Only trees in the fantasies of people who have lost touch with reality. He looks at the people who have sawed off his branches and been angry that they were not as strong as oak, at the same time they were not as soft and light as balsa, at the same time they were not as beautiful as walnut; because nothing can be simultaneously both what it is and its opposite.

He looks at all the creatures which have been fed and sheltered and provided useful things by him while providing no nourishment to him except for their shit which fell on the ground above his roots, and realizes that he owes them ***NOTHING!***

So he turns his attention back to his roots which ***do provide*** him with nourishment, and to the sun which powers everything that lives with its energy, and his purpose for living, which is to gather that energy and use it and convert it into solid form through a transformation process that is as close to real magic as any human will ever see; and becomes deaf to their lamentations.

Men in their 40s who manage to escape the trap of arrested adolescence, which society desperately tries to keep them in, look for something entirely different in a woman than they did when they were 13 or 17 or even 25. He is too deeply rooted to be transplanted, trying to do so would kill him. As a seedling or even a sapling, he could be uprooted and moved and still able to grow new roots. No more. Besides, it would take a monstrous crane to rip him out of the ground and the process would probably break him into pieces. He no longer tolerates the process of chopping off pieces of himself to make him look "prettier". He has assumed his mature form and this is the way he looks. His job is NOT to look pretty, his job is take nourishment from his roots and energy from the sun and bind that energy into something which would not exist if he had not lived, through a magical process that only he can do. Anyone who tries to chop off a piece of him now and hide the destructive nature of the chopping under the polite euphemism of "pruning" is seen as the liar she is.

If a year comes when the soil has grown too poor, too exhausted for him to have the nourishment to bear fruit, and she comes out to scream at him that she isn't getting her needs met and is hungry, he doesn't reach down within his own cells for the raw material to create fruit to feed her, eating up his own guts and destroying himself for her, he lets her go hungry and is deaf to her victim's lamentations.

If she poisons the soil he grows in, and therefor him, by dumping the most toxic vicious poisonous substances she can find on his roots, he stops growing and fruiting and puts out minimum leaves, just enough to keep himself alive and hopes that he can wait her out and that she will stop poisoning him before she kills him. If they are lucky and he has chosen well, she will wake up to her insanity and pour clean fresh water on his roots to wash away the poisons. If she doesn't, he and his love and wish to provide for her will eventually die, and she will be left to find a young sapling to try to shape. Or perhaps another tree of the same age, but without such deep roots so it has never grown into an adult tree, but has remained stunted. If she has learned from her mistakes, she can help the young tree or the stunted adult grow into a mature and productive tree. Sadly for both her and the trees, that is not very likely.

Women today had better wake up to just how little they have to offer a man these days. There is an endless supply of arrested adolescents, because they are the ones obsessed with the objects which are sold for the money which buys the stuff that is stored in the house that Jack built. Society cannot allow boys to grow into men, because men will not feel so inadequate that they have to "prove" they love her by buying her completely useless chunks of transparent carbon. Men don't drive their ego around on 4 wheels and are not impressed by women who are

impressed by men who do. Men detest the look, smell, and most of all the taste of that shit that women keep 60 different varieties to paint on their faces to make them attractive to arrested adolescents.

Men eventually outgrow their need to buy love, because they realize that all the love they've bought doesn't taste like love. It tastes like shit. And one day they get sick of eating shit.

The greatest gift that nature gives men in their 40s and beyond is that they are no longer ruled by their testicles and their testosterone. They no longer have mother nature shouting in their ears "Slacker! Get busy! I didn't give you life to sit around making money, I gave it to you so that you would carry it on. Now get with it and do your part to carry on the species!" They no longer have to live on a diet of shit that they try to see as "love" because that's what people tell them it is. They no longer have to view the fact that what they are being fed tastes like shit as their own failure to not make it taste like love, instead of realizing that it really is shit. They no longer have to be genetic groupies. They do, however, need to stop thinking of themselves as broken vibrators.

The sad truth is that young men in their 20s and 30s can do this too. All they need is an older man who knows it to show them the way. The way is not easy, and it will be very lonely. But no more lonely than the way they are doing it now. Perhaps it is necessary to wander those 40 years in the wilderness to realize how little women are willing to give today compared to how much they expect to receive. Perhaps it is necessary to sleep with several horrible women to realize that sex can be so demeaning and downright unpleasant that living without sex is far better. Perhaps it is necessary to spend a significant period of time alone to realize that you are far less miserable alone than with someone whose major joy in life seems to be how much poison she can pour on your roots and how many creative ways she can find to deflate your ego, which she knows ***exactly how big it "should" be.***

A firm erection on a delicate fellow ***REALLY IS*** the adventurous juncture of ego and courage. Courage men have in abundant supply. Men are generators of life and love, and nothing takes more courage than that. Women are out to murder men's egos, and men's desire for those women dies with them.

I part on these admonishments.

To men:
Begin to apply the "one strike, you're out" rule. The first time a woman tears you or any man down in your presence, walk away and don't look back. You are not the terrible creature they are trying to convince you that you are. You are a source and generator of life. Do not demean that gift anymore by being party to its slander. Start by learning to think of yourself as a divine being, a representative of the creative force on earth. Learn to recognize the divine creative force in women, as well as the hag and THE BITCH. Let the bitches fall on each other and consume themselves, do not let them feed on your body, mind, soul, emotions, and the fruits thereof. Feed only those who feed you. Leave the arrested adolescents and looters to perish from their destruction of each other. If you were conditioned before you could walk, talk, or control your bowels to think of yourself as an object, find a way to let go of that. If you think of other people as objects, find a way to let go of that too. You are the steward of life, it is your responsibility to protect it for all the children. Don't fuck it up.

To Women:
Get over your silly selves. Grow up. No man alive owes you a goddamn thing for something that some man did to some woman hundreds of years ago. Only insects demand that there is no individuality, only the hive. You are not the designated recipient of restitution for every wrong done every woman by a man for the entire history of the human race. No man who has not harmed you directly has harmed you at all. If he is guilty of anything by living in a culture where someone has been harmed, you are no less guilty. Look to the example of Dr. Martin Luther King, who spoke for a people with far worse grievances than women's. By following a path of non-violence and refusing to indulge infantile tantrums of revenge and hatred, Dr. King showed us how to put the animosities behind us. He

brought us much farther than all the burning and shouting ever will. Your panties are not gold lined, and what's in them is getting less valuable every day because you wrap it in the toxic waste of your own self-pitying bullshit. Men cannot shove power down your throats, we can hand it to you and pour it on your heads and you still will not have it until you believe that you have it. The secret of power is that it belongs to and automatically happens to anyone who is willing to pick it up and use it. No one can ever GIVE you equality. As long as you are waiting for someone to "hand it over" you will sit mired in your helpless victim bullshit, for it is the very waiting and dependence on someone to hand it over that makes you powerless. The power is right in front of you, pick it up and shut the fuck up. This part of the audience to your histrionic melodrama of victimhood is bored with this plot and wants to see something new. If the only power you have is the power to destroy, and you are so helpless that you cannot do even that unless you exploit the emotional bond of a man trying to love by by being a vicious bitch, then you are a cancer in the midst of life and do not deserve to live. You are a looter and a thief, and no longer will be allowed into my emotional world to steal and destroy.

To All:
Read "Atlas Shrugged" and see how nothing today is really any different than it was 40 years ago when a brilliant and insightful woman chronicled the inevitable results of a society addicted to destructive consumption. Decide whether you are a creator or a looter, and whether you can commit to the Pledge:

"I swear, by my life and my love for it, that I will never live my life for the sake of another, nor ask another to live for mine."

If you can, then: Harm none, do what thou wilt, shall be the whole of the law.

This is John Galt speaking, I WILL end this if I can.

- Zed -

Back to “Gender War, Sexuality, and Love”

EOTM: The Socio-Cultural Context of Sexuality and Marriage

. · 13 April 2005 · Archived copy · Original

Human beings have the longest period of dependency of any form of life. Many animals reach the level of maturity to be self-sustaining within the social unit within a year. A few may require as long as 4 to 5 years, with sexual or reproductive maturity several more years after that. Humans are the only species which reaches reproductive maturity significantly before reaching social maturity.

Animals have evolved a wide variety of strategies for assuring that the young are cared for until they can feed and fend for themselves: from the many varieties of fish where the male carries the young in his mouth, and may actually hatch them there, through birds who usually share the burden of feeding the hatchlings because it takes both of them to fill those endlessly hungry mouths, to mammals who most often tend to develop mostly matriarchal social groups (herds or packs) where the general responsibility of protection is shared among the social unit even if the provision of food is still up to the mother, a precedent established by nursing. Humans are essentially social, or herd, animals. Social groups always have a concept of status and hierarchy.

As the human race made the transition from hunter-gatherers to agriculturally based permanent domiciles, the human herds (tribes or clans) began to congregate in larger permanent encampments called cities. The size and complexity of these cites began to demand a greater degree of specialization of skills and introduced the concepts of commerce or trade, money as a universal medium of exchange because barter would not work if one party already had a surplus of the offered commodity, and property or wealth. People moved from the shared living quarters of the lodge to individual residences. While they still tended to live in multi-generational groups, these groups were usually based on kinship and there was an increasing degree of separation between families. New methods of defining the social hierarchy were required since it is much easier to understand the status distinctions among a group of 30 people than it is among 30,000. Thus were born the concepts of class or caste and the accumulation of surplus wealth as a measure of status. Kinship became very important in making decisions regarding distrubution of that surplus wealth. While the rigidity of the physical infrastructure made mobility of the clan as a group less easy than previously, it also decreased the interdependence of individual clan members as it transferred the dependence onto the culture as a whole. Thus new means of social controls had to be developed. Laws and punishments began to replace totems, taboos, and the threat of being an outcast as a means of controlling individual behavior. The drawback to laws is that they require enforcement by group of specialists called "police" and administration by another group of specialists called "the court system". This was very expensive and required taxes to support, so *organized* religion evolved as a primary means of social control, with legality as a second level of recourse.

All this had a great effect on lengthening the period of dependency of the young. The concept of a state called "childhood" as separate from adulthood developed. Aboriginal cultures generally do not have adolescence. Once sexual maturity is reached, the child is treated as an adult, albeit an immature one. The transition is marked by the onset of menstruation in girls and by a culturally significant rite of passage for the boys. At that time they were recognized with full adult status. However their responsibilities did not change significantly since they had been gradually being integrated into the culture and were expected to make increasing contributions as they matured. The only thing like this which exists in our culture today is the family farm. At the turn of the century 98% of the population lived on farms while 2% lived in cities. Today those percentages are reversed. In urban environments, there is an extended period of childhood dependence, sometimes even twice as long as before if the child pursues higher professional education, and the transition is usually abrupt and discontinuous. Until that time it is the responsibility of the parents to "provide" for the child. In many cases the period of dependency now is equal to or greater than the normal human life span for most of the time humans have been on this planet.

This period of dependency is rigidly enforced by the social control mechanisms. In most jurisdictions it is illegal for persons below a certain age to hold jobs, which are in an industrilized society are the only means of providing for basic needs. The vast majority of "education" is simply a process of indoctrination in cultural concepts of how things "should" be and largely ignores the fundamental skills necessary to take care of oneself and others and conduct relationships. At some arbitrary point these children are dumped out into the "real" world and expected to be financially, emotionally, and personally successful. If they fail, society regards it as a failure or flaw which resides completely within them rather in society's perparation of them for the task.

Since the average puboid is functioning mostly from instinct and totally unprepared to assess the full consequences and burdens of being fruitful and make "rational" decisions to oppose their urges to do so, elaborate mechanisms of social controls have developed. It is far easier to isolate the flowers than to reign in millions of bees, so the control mechanisms generally concentrate on controlling access to the sexuality of the female. It is essential that NO bee pollinate her until SOME bee is both prepared and willing to partner with her in creating a suitable child rearing environment and sustain it for the next 18 to 25 years. Again, it is important to remember that during the time these cultural traditions were being developed most people did not live to see the age of 40. Children reached sexual maturity close to the end of their parents' life span. If the child were allowed to reproduce without a support system in place it was likely that the parents would die leaving the child and the grandchild to fend for themselves. This, of course, was intolerable since the probability is low that they would be able to do so without the support systems built into the clan or tribe. Since the biological imperative is to SURVIVE, all human cultures are built around the preservation of life of their members which is essential for survival of the species.

Since this is a discussion of male sexuality, so far we have largely ignored the influence of active female sexuality, concentrating on the passive attracting aspect. This is ludicrous because male sexuality doesn't exist without female sexuality. The word sex itself comes from the latin secus, to divide, the same root which gives us the words section and segment. The sexuality of each gender exists only in relation to the sexuality of the other. If it were not divided it would not be sex and would be just another behavior. The only thing which distinguishes masturbation from scratching is that masturbation produces sensations similar to those produced by sexual intercourse.

In the sociocultural context of agriculturally induced and supported urbanization some means of fertility control is required to prevent the population from rapidly outgrowing the food supply once the normal control mechanisms of mortality are removed. In the absence of mechanical (including chemical) means of fertility control, the next best thing is to control the behaviors that lead to fertility, ie coitus. The reason that these behavioral controls concentrated on the female and not the male are easy to understand from the mechanics of reproduction. If we take a population of 100 women and 100 men and apply behavioral controls to one gender which are 99% effective, we have very different results based on which gender we control. Applying the controls to men, leaving 1 man and 100 women with their sexuality unrestrained could potentially produce 100 babies. We've gotten nowhere. On the other hand, applying the controls to women and leaving 1 unrestrained woman to 100 unrestrained men would produce at most 1 baby and 1 very tired woman. Problem solved.

In addition, the consequences of unrestrained coitus fall disproportionately on the woman. The male "bee" can immediately be off looking for other flowers to pollinate while the woman has just incurred a responsibility which will consume most of her time and energy for the next several years. In this light it is not difficult to understand why women seem much less willing than men to engage in coitus. It is actually surprising that they are willing to engage in it at all, regardless of the pleasure it produces. In order to understand why they do, we must realize that the neat and clean division between the fruit bearer and the pollinator completely breaks down when we enter the animal kingdom.

Sex is a physical phenomenon. Babies are "assigned" a gender at birth based on physical characteristics. Even at this level there is a great deal of ambiguity. Thousands of babies are born each year with ambiguous genitals. Yet the

need to divide, assign, categorize is so great that a baby not easily classified is usually surgically modified to assure that they fit into one category or the other. The results are often diastrous for the child.

In the behavioral arena, things are even worse. Aside from the actual specific mechanics of coitus which involve insertion of one part of the anatomy of the one called the "male" into an orifice of the one called the "female", there are absolutely no behaviors which are gender specific. There is an attribute of humanity that we all share which transcends the artifical distinctions we try to make. Part of this humanity is the tie to the natural world and the desire to reproduce and to engage in the behavior, coitus, which leads to reproduction. In the absence of social controls it is likely that females are as compelled to seek coitus when they are fertile as males are. We see this everywhere in the animal kingdom.

What distinguishes human females from most other mammals is the frequency of their fertility cycle and the fact that they may be sexually receptive even when not fertile or may become fertile at unexpected times. Thus the human female is potentially receptive to coitus at all times and may often seek it. This is the active aspect of female sexuality which is the target of the social control mechanisms. Closing the gateway to the womb is the most effective means of population control.

This is much easier said than done, since the biological imperative is driving every member of the species to contribute to its survival by reproduction and mother nature has provided a powerful carrot in the form of the pleasure of sexual orgasm. In general, the closer a population is to exceeding the limits of its food supply, the more extreme the measures used. In western culture, the so called "developed" nations, these controls tend toward the social and psychological. In the less developed nations, and particularly those where the prevailing religion is Islam, the controls are more extreme and grisly. A set of practices, collectively referred to as Female Genital Mutilation or FGM, are common in many cultures of Africa, the Middle East, and Asia. Masked under such polite terms as "circumcision" or "excision" and justified by a bunch of lame excuses about health and religious traditions, all these practices amount to holding little girls down and chopping off their genitals. In the most extreme form the insides of the outer labia are cut away and the resulting wounds sewn together in such a manner that the woman must be "opened" surgically before coitus is possible.

And people accuse pagans of sacrificing babies.

What is amazing is that the vast majority of these practices are perfomed by women, who are often the most adamant about the need to continue them. What is disgusting, enraging, and tragic is that the continuation of this horrible practice is justified by the lame excuse that men want it. The power of the social controls and conditioning is so great that no matter how much opposition and resistance there is, this horrible practice is continued and that girls will often submit to it willingly knowing in advance exactly what is involved. Alice Walker refers to this as the "sexual blinding" of women.

Before the reader gets his/her racial prejudices up and starts self-congratulation on how much more "civilized" or advanced western culture is, a bit of thought about nose-jobs, boob-jobs, collagen injections, liposuction, electrolysis, and fake fingernails would be in order. On the male side, those utterly ridiculous looking little plugs of hair implants reflect the same drive to conform to society's ideal.

Even worse, the sex-negation practiced in the name of religion deprives the young woman of any joy from her sexuality, depriving her of the use of her genitals almost as effectively as removing them from her. Women in western culture are just as effectively "blinded" to the ability to see men as kind, gentle, and caring lovers by shame and by indoctrination with a hatred of sexuality, men, and maleness. Instead they see them as meal tickets, self-esteem providers and, paradoxically, as oppressors when they find that men simply are not able to provide enough to fill the emptiness that women feel. So women get angry and start bashing.

Back to “Gender War, Sexuality, and Love”

EOTM: The Biological Foundations of Sexuality

. · 14 April 2005 · Archived copy · Original

Sexuality by itself is a very simple process which is easy to observe objectively. There are a great many other aspects which are very complex, difficult to observe, and prone to much distortion due to their subjective nature. No one spends much time worrying about why human beings don't eat rocks, the reasons are pretty obvious to anyone with an IQ above single digits. No one applies moral concepts to the fact that we don't. However, human values, desires, and vague concepts of "morality" cloud most peoples' ability to regard sexuality with any degree of objectivity.

I suspect that you came here looking for answers in one of the topics in the table above. If you are one of those people who always reads the last page or chapter of a novel first, there is nothing I can do to prevent you from skipping over the contents of this page to "get right to the meat". However, if you do, you will have wasted your own time as well as mine because an understanding of these basic concepts is fundamental to understanding their expression in *human behavior*.

Second, since this is a web page and not a graduate school textbook, some definitions to explicitly narrow the topics to ones which can be productively deal with in such a brief forum:

Sex - (from the latin *secus*, division, the same root that gives us section and segment.) A general term covering all aspects of the form of biological reproduction which involves two separate packages (or cells) of genetic material, gametes, uniting to form a composite cell, a zygote or embryo, which has the capacity to develop into a mature member of the same species. Virtually all multi-celled organisms reproduce sexually. It is nearly universal in the animal kingdom and one of several reproductive strategies in the plant kingdom.

Sexuality - having sexual characteristics, ie. differentiated into one of 2 genders and possessing the attributes characteristic of that gender which allow differentiation.

Male - the gender whose role in reproduction is limited to handing over its genetic material to the other gender, called female. The male package of genetic material is generally called a sperm.

Female - the gender whose role in reproduction is to receive genetic material from the male, provide the environment for joining of the 2 gametes, and provide the food source and environment necessary for the zygote or embryo to develop to the point where it can survive outside that environment. The female package of genetic material is generally called an ovum or egg.

Humans, like all animals, are divided into male and female. ("male and female they were created"). Each plays a specific role in reproduction which is essential to survival of the species. You are here to read this because thousands of generations of humans have engaged in sexual reproduction to keep our species from dying out. As eating (something other than rocks) is essential to survival of the individual, reproduction is essential to the survival of the species.

All this seems so simple and obvious that it seems ludicrous to have to state, like explaining that people don't eat rocks and why. But, in a culture where some emotionally ill individuals are able to classify ALL sex between human beings as a violent crime (and be taken the LEAST BIT SERIOUSLY!) and women feel compelled to paint their faces with an amalgum of animal waste products and toxic pigments in order to attract the attention of men, it is

obvious that a return to the basics is long overdue.

An individual member of any species is the result of the joining of an ovum and a sperm. These are specialized cells within a multi-celled organism made up of many types of differentiated cells. Blood cells carry the oxygen we need to live, bone cells make us different from jellyfish, muscle cells allow us to move, gamete cells allow us to reproduce. Every warm blooded creature on the face of the earth is the result of the union of one egg with one sperm, how in the world did the mechanics of bringing this about get so incredibly confused?

Every living thing has a life cycle. Nothing lives forever. New life starts, grows, reaches reproductive maturity, ages, and dies. There is a, often brief, time window of this cycle when the conditions which will allow successful reproduction prevail. In order to avoid extintion, males of the species must deliver a sperm cell to unite with an ovum cell within that window. Human females often speak of this phenomenon as their "biological clock".

At this point the female element of the pair takes over, retaining posession of the ovum+sperm composite and adding or providing nourishment to it which allows it to develop beyond the single cell stage. The male element is now done with his part of the process and is totally superfluous. In many species he dies. This is true of all flowering plants, many insects (and their relatives the arthopods or spiders), and some fish (salmon being the most familiar example). In the reproductive sense, males are utterly expendable once they've done their sperm donor duty.

There are several key concepts within this which need to be highlighted. First, if the male delivers the sperm either too early or too late the whole process is wasted. The egg will die unfertilized. Second, and this is extremely important, since the egg is the gamete that will eventually develop, nature significantly favors it when allocating biological resources. It generally contains many times the amount of cellular material that the sperm does so it has the energy to develop once fertilized. Third, it stays in place while the sperm is mobile so the amount of cellular material does not hamper its ability to play in the reproductive olympics. Sperm, on the other hand, would have their mobility hampered by excess weight so they are lean and mean. Many simply do not have the energy to make the entire journey and die en route. If there were an equal number of sperm and ova produced, this would mean that many ova would also die unfertilized. Therefor sperm are produced in numbers far in excess of the number of eggs. The ratios are millions to one. This also goes with the second point, because the amount of cellular material required to produce one sperm is only a minute fraction of the material required to produce an egg. Mother nature is pretty efficient. Given the same amount of raw material she can manufacture either one egg, or multiple thousands of sperm. Given two loads of the material she manufactures one egg out of one load, and millions of sperm out of the other. The vast majority of sperm are simply discarded. As long as one gets to the egg at the right time, everything is copacetic.

The right time is the key phrase here. An ovum is receptive to fertilization for a very brief time. Thus any male element of a species which delivers the sperm at the wrong time will have its genetics drop out of the gene pool by the process of *natural selection*. Only those males who manufacture and deliver their sperm at the same time the egg is ripe get their genes to play in the next round of the evolution sweepstakes. In plants, the bloom contains both the male and female elements so that the pollen (male) and the ova (female) develop and ripen concurrently. (To all you hay fever and allergy sufferers, I hope you find it humorous that all your suffering is caused by leftover plant sperm.) In animals, there is a condition or state known as estrus, or heat, which the female enters when she is fertile. Like her distant plant relatives' condition of blooming, this state is clearly distinguishable from her normal state of infertility. And like their male counterparts in the plant world, the stamens of the bloom, male animals are stimulated to let loose their sperm at that time.

That, in a nutshell, is MALE sexuality.

Now I seriously doubt that you came here looking for Biology ½. You were probably curious about the sexuality of

human males and explantions of their sexual behavior in the 1990s. Unfortunately, it is precisely the ignorance and denial of the role of the biology of maleness which is causing so much pain, confusion, and animosity these days. If this were fully understood and accepted, there would be little more discussion of it than of eating rocks. Misconceptions regarding Love, Romance, Marriage, and Human Behavior dominate the public discourse. It is to these topics we now must turn.

The Biological Context of Sexuality and Mating

Sexual Psychology

The Nitty Gritty of Male Sexuality

Romance

Love

Shocking! Simply Shocking!

The Socio-Cultural Context of Sexuality and Marriage

Back to “Gender War, Sexuality, and Love”

EOTM: The Biological Context of Sexuality and Mating

. · 15 April 2005 · Archived copy · Original

We'll get the expostion out of the way in a hurry.

1) Nothing exists in the animal world without a purpose. All behavior is purposeful.

2) This purpose is to survive. Life LIVES. Survival of the individual first, and the species second is an imperative that drives all living things.

3) The biological purpose of sex is survival of the species. Reproduce (be fruitful and multiply) to assure that there is another generation of little whatevers to continue the species.

4) The mechanisms which control this are buried deep in the brain, in the section that is called the "old" or reptile brain. Lizards understand all they need to know about sex in order to make a new generation of lizards. This is the same part of the brain that governs hunger. Survival stuff.

5) Humans are among the distinct minority among animal species in several respects including:

- a) They can be sexually active whether or not there is a possibility of conception. Most animals will not copulate unless the female is in her fertile phase.
- b) When we assumed the upright bipedal posture, from the four-legged stance used by most of our animal brethren, the entrance to the vagina was pulled up and forward. The only other animals which have sex face to face are the bonobo chimpanzees. All others use the rear entry position. That is why it is called "doggy-style". Face to face sex is more "social". This is where most of our relationship problems come from.

6) There is a secondary purpose to coitus among mammals. It seems to be very bonding. Animals with a very low fertility, such as lions, tend to have a high frequency of coitus which serves the social purpose of strengthening the emotional ties within the social unit.

7) Behavioral or personality traits can be inherited in the same way as physical ones. The emerging field of evolutionary psychology shows how certain behavioral traits enhance the survival potential of the individual and the process of natural selection make it more likely that the genetics which contribute to that behavioral trait will be transmitted to future generations. Sexual behavior is more prone to this effect than any other because it directly affects the fertility rate. Selection has favored the most aggressive males because they are the ones who have dispersed the most genetic material, just as it has favored the least sexually active females because had they been out seeking new males to mate with they might not have invested sufficient time to make sure that the offspring survived.

8) Sexual interest is only useful to nature when sexual activity coincides with fertility in the female. Thus a very complex "notification" system has developed to notify the males that the female is fertile. In most animals this also means receptive, but human females have learned to fake the signs of receptivity in order to capture the attentions of males, and to capture the males themselves into a committed relationship.

9) gee, what if someone gave a horny and no one came? The cues of the notification system begin a complex set of reactions in the reptile brain of the male which excites him to seek gratification of his sexual hunger. There ain't no thinking involved. It's pure Stimulus -> Response of the type studied by Pavlov.

10) Next begins the "mating dance". This serves several purposes. First, it raises the overall level of arousal, which in turn stimulates the production of sperm and increases the chances that copulation will result in fertilization. Second, the female, having signalled her receptivity through a variety of cues: scent, sound, visual, and behavioral, lets her potential mates pursue her until the biggest, strongest, smartest (ie. most survival potential) prevails. A bunch of new little whatevers get started and the whole cycle begins again.

11) Generally males "signal" by pursuing. Sure they want to attract the female's attention as a potential mate, but they don't want to waste their biological resources pursuing a non-receptive mate.

12) We humans should take a clue.

13) As sex has moved away from its biological purpose and assumed more of a social significance, those receptivity cues have been co-opted. They are now practiced intentionally to gain attention and favors from men and no longer have anything to do with receptivity. This is where so much of the crap in gender relations comes from. Women signal receptivity when it doesn't exist, men respond at an instinctual level from the lizard brain without even knowing that they are responding or why, and everybody wonders "what the hell happened?".

14) Regardless of all this, there still ain't nothin' happening unless the female is receptive (except maybe a rape charge when the male reacts in the way nature intended to the cues which are being sent dishonestly).

15) All this adds up to the fact that the female controls the sexual interaction. Research done in singles bars and other meat markets has shown that "high" signalling females get approached 4 times as often as "low" signalling females even when they are significantly less "beautiful" than the low signalling females. Anyone whose knee has just jerked into believing that I'm saying "she asked for it" can hit the link below.

GOODBYE!

For those of you who stuck around to hear the rest of the story, it should begin to get really interesting. OK guys, grit your teeth. It's going to get hairy for a while. I'm gonna tell truths and name names. It'll hurt a bit, but we'll all feel better when it's over.

The often mouthed male bash cliche "Men think with their penises, not with their heads" is closer to the truth than men wish it was. In reality they are "thinking" with their brainstem, spinal cord, and limbic system (hormones, neural transmitters, and enzymes). They unfortunately have no conscious control over these responses, just as they have no conscious control over hunger, the fight/flight response, or muscular reflexes.

There are a large number of stimuli which function as "releasers" and pump into the male bloodstream all the neurochemicals which create sexual arousal. Female chimpanzees' genital areas will swell and become bright pink when in estrus (heat). Jane Goodall, the renowned antropologist who made a life work of studying chimps, described this phenomenon as being like "... a bright pink flower which could be seen by males all over the valley, who immediately set off in search of the female...". The human female rump has a similar effect on human males. Some of the lower animals who have little more than a brain stem, such as certain fishes, can be fooled into a mating frenzy by a block of wood painted the same color as a female full of unfertilized eggs.

Despite the many and huge variations between cultures in almost every aspect imaginable, there is a remarkable agreement on what constitutes female beauty, which has become a polite euphemism for sexual attractiveness. In a study of 1159 cultures, the physical characteristics deemed beautiful were more consistent than any other characteristic. And in all cultures these characteristics corresponded to the physical attributes of a woman in her peak child bearing years, 15 - 25. These are the women that men will respond to from a purely biological

perspective.

This is not to say that men do not, will not, or cannot find an older woman attractive, they certainly do, but the attraction is based on other characteristics than pure sexual attraction, a point which very few women understand. Most women become addicted to the sexual power that adolescent women have over adolescent men and, like the dinosaurs, do not realize that enviromental conditions are changing and adapt to them before it's too late. The power of a woman to provoke a purely instinctive sexual response in men dimishes rapidly after the late 20s, both because women are no longer as effective a vehicle for transporting a man's genes to the future, and because males of that age have generally already done their reproductive duty and turned their attention to other matters, such as supporting and providing for the progeny they have already sired. Women who are arrested adolescents expect men to continue to respond in the same way that 15 - 25 year old males respond to 15 - 25 year old females. The frequency and intensity of this type of reaction progressively diminishes as a man matures and, when it is present, guess what? It tends to be toward a woman between the age of consent and the late 20s.

In addition, men are fully aware that women typically use sex as a means to jump-start a romantic fantasy which will be entirely to her benefit and at his expense. In addtion, women have learned that men are perfectly capable of controlling their sexual impulses when they realize that the woman is looking for something totally different than they are and that to proceed is going to get somebody hurt. If a man is not ready to dive headfirst into trying to build a long-term relationship with a particular woman, he is not likely to dive into bed with her either. Women's strategy to deal with this for the past several years has been to lie about their expectations and indicate that they are only interested in immediate sexual gratification and that the man need feel no obligation to pay for it with a committed relationship. "Fool me once, shame on you, fool me twice, shame on me." It generally only takes one occurance of finding out that he has been lied to, and has just incurred an emotional debt he could spend the rest of his life paying off, for a man to learn that he cannot believe a woman who says this.

The normal reaction by these women is to escalate their cues and begin to beat on the neural responses of men to try to get a rise (literally) out of them. In other words, they DO sometimes ask for it. Some women are unaware that they are doing this, seeking only the attention of males and having successfully deluded themselves into thinking that the attention is based on something other than a purely instinctive response to sexual cues of receptivity. They are terribly surprised when they get an unexpected response out of a man. On the other hand, many are fully aware and are pissed as hell when they DON'T get the desired response out of a man and can get really ugly about it. "Hell hath no fury like a woman scorned."

Either way the man is the loser. If he responds and the woman decides he is not what she is looking for in a mate and shuts him down, he is confused, hurt and more than a little bit angry. Camile Paglia makes some very interesting statements about this aspect of male/female interactions. She says first that "Rape is male power fighting female power." Women, on the one hand, love the power they can exert over men to make them perform for love and affection; while on the other hand they fear, detest, and criminalize it getting beyond their control. She also said that what used to be called "unbridled passion" is now called "date rape". Men have come to bitterly resent being manipulated by using their sexual needs against them, a process that Barbara DeAngelis terms "pathetically easy". I know that many women will want to crucify me for this next statement. Many rapes are the result of a man experiencing just one too many times the anger and humilation of being led on, used, manipulated, and exploited based on the promise of having his sexual needs met, only to have the woman change her mind or raise the price at the last minute. In two celebrated rape trials of a few years ago, those of Mike Tyson and William Kennedy Smith, both instances were rich and powerful men who invited beautiful young women to their quarters and provided them with expensive entertainment with the predictable expectation that they would be rewarded with sex. When they called the debt, the women cried "foul".

On the other hand, if the man does NOT respond, women often respond in an escalating pattern that begins with

trying to argue the man into bed and often ends with vicious verbal abuse and sometimes even physical violence. Often men will avoid the issue by giving the expected responses to avoid the emotional violence, or will end up avoiding that woman.

A particularly distressing aspect of this occurs due to the mistaken notion that love and sex are the same thing. Many men have had the experience of having a friendship with a woman destroyed when she would not take no for an answer and persisted in trying to coerce him into a sexual/romantic relationship he did not want, based on the mistaken belief that if he cared for her he would express that sexually.

The futility of trying to argue a man into bed is driven home to them if they succeed in wearing down the man's resistance and he gives in. It is pretty much guaranteed that the experience will be miserably unsatisfying and humiliating to them both. Men may sometimes think with their dicks, but they sure as hell cannot dick with their think. If men could will their erections to come and go on command, both men and women would be a lot happier, but then they would cease to be men and become flesh and blood vibrators. Sadly it seems that is what women want men to be these days.

Men, for their part, do not think that much differently although they respond and act very differently. Men are often bewildered and upset by their own reactions and cannot understand why they are so at odds with the values they believe to hold. They buy into the romantic nonsense as much as women do and are often angry at themselves for not reacting the way they "should" according to society's script. Men are just as culturally indoctrinated as women and often just as unaware of the foundation mechanisms of their responses. They try to do what they "should" but, like the dinner guests served a dish they detest but gag down out of politeness and a desire to not offend the hostess, if their own needs are not being met the best they can do is to mechanically go through the motions.

Like driving, passion is a priviledge, NOT a right. Men respond passionately to women who are willing to understand, honor, and help them meet their real needs. Men respond mechanically, if at all, to women who demand that the man meet her needs while denying his and attempting to shame him into changing them to fit her bullshit notions of what he "should" be.

Both men and women need to understand that the sexual force of a mature man comes not from having a penis, but rather from that adventurous juncture of ego and courage which Norman Mailer talks about. To this I would add optimism. Deep within the heart of every man I know resides the persistent belief that sexual joy IS a great gift, that shared sexuality represents the union of the highest aspects of men and women, their finest moral products, the God and the Goddess, and the fervent hope than he will one day meet a woman who will regard it that way also. All the men I know are still waiting. Most of them are not very optimistic.

Women who have a sincere desire for a sexual relationship with a mature man had better start waking the fuck up and realizing that building his ego is going to get them somewhere, while continuing to indulge themselves in their infantile man-bashing tantrums and doing everything they can to destroy it is going to get them a lot of lonely nights. Feminism is murdering men's desire for women, and women are its willing, nay enthusiatic, accomplices. Contempt for men, denial and negation of their needs, and abdication of responsibility for their own actions is, for some unknown reason, very satisfying to women, but the only men who fall for it are the ones who are arrested in their own adolescence. I hope you bitches are having fun playing with these emotionally deformed children.

Sex is the most bonding activity between 2 human beings that there is. Certainly it is fraught with anxieties, confusion, and risk, but only the most pathological males can have even marginally satisfying sex with a woman and not experience deep warm and tender feelings toward her which will persist for the remainder of his life, unless the woman does something to destroy them, which all too many women do. Alex Comfort, M.B., Ph.D, in a book written 25 years ago put it this way regarding men's turn-ons: "he will love you more the more skillfully you sense

and use it". A woman who understands a man's releasers and incorporates them into lovemaking with anything resembling subtlety will have the man eating out of her hand for life.

This relationship between sexual satisfaction and emotional bonding holds equally true in reverse. Unsatisfying sex will breed deep and subtle resentment. The worse the sex, the greater the resentment. There is only one thing more bewildering and upsetting to a man than a woman who thinks her part of sex is done when she shows up, and that he both owes her satisfaction from the experience and after the fact owes her for the opportunity to provide her satisfaction. This one thing is the woman who shows remarkable skill and subtlety in finding and using a man's turn-OFFS, offending and disgusting his every sensibility, then blames his lack of response on some defect within him. There is a special kind of hatred that men reserve for such women.

It is evidence of the power and persistence of the male sex drive that men will return to such women just to get their rocks off, and in fact this is less due to sexual desire than to an inability to believe that anyone could possibly be THAT stupid and insensitive. Many men are also so confused and conflicted about their own sexuality, and have so much shame tied up with it, that they do not realize how pathological the experience was. Men who are clearer about it simply never call back. Only now, in the 1990s, this has become a criminal act.

Male sexuality is extremely undervalued, just as female sexuality is extremely overvalued. In this culture men are conditioned to believe that their only source of intimacy and love is the woman who is their mate and the only means they have to get female sexuality, intimacy, and love is to purchase it with their performance and their economic assets. This impoverishes both men and woman because it destroys the trust and faith in each other that is essential to intimacy. Men need to reclaim the value of their sexuality, if necessary by refusing to have sex with any woman who does not value his as highly as he values hers and by making it an absolute condition that she respects and honors his needs, rather that telling him what they "should" be.

Back to “Gender War, Sexuality, and Love”

EOTM: Why Men Go For "The Look"

. · 16 April 2005 · Archived copy · Original

There are two separate and distinct aspects to "the look." But, they are inter-twined and inter-related: reproduction and status. Cast in terms of the silly old nature/nurture debate: sex is about reproduction and nature in its purest form, while mating and marriage are about nurture and status.

To understand men, you must understand maleness in its purest and simplest form. Every man alive shares the attribute of maleness with half of the life on this planet, as every woman shares the attribute of femaleness with the other half.

The time for the fern to unfurl itself is when IT is ready - there is no social calendar that concerns it. The time for the bees to pollinate the blooms that will turn into fruit is WHEN they are in bloom and ready to receive, not when some arbitrary social decision says the time is right. You can understand everything about men by looking at one corn plant in bloom. The silks and the ear are the female parts of the plant, the tassels and pollen are the male part. The male part must be ready WHEN the female part is ready, not before and most certainly not after. One grain of pollen must fall on each strand of silk in order for one new kernal of corn to start. In order for the female part of the corn to be as abundant as it has the potential to be, the male part must produce MILLIONS of times the sperm (pollen) that the female produces silks and potential seeds AND distribute those sperm widely and freely. Thus, the primary and over-riding characteristic of male sexuality is urgency: all of maleness is about being ready NOW so that when the female signals that the time is right, the male is ready to do his part.

If you look at the female genitals, you see that they are flowers. Nature constantly re-uses her forms over and over. And when the female petals open themselves in bloom, THEN is the time to fertilize, not later. Women's minds are at war with their bodies these days. They themselves try to deny the message of their bodies when their very cells cry out that the time is right. Women have been brainwashed into wanting to DECIDE when the time is "right" and have nature conform to their wishes rather than placing themselves in tune with nature. It will not work.

Sadly for men, we do "think with their penises" far more than we wish was the case. Survival is so basic that "thinking" really has nothing at all to do with it. Desire does not happen because of a thought process or because we get social sanction: it is primal and the only thing we can do with our social minds is to inhibit it. While we men certainly sometimes appear to "think with our dicks" it is impossible for us to "dick with our thinks." We desire what we desire, and no amount of social conditioning can ever really change that.

Since reproduction is survival of the species at its most basic level, those drives are buried in the part of our bodies that we share with every other animal that reproduces sexually: our brainstem - our vertebra. All sex happens in what is called the "old" brain or the "reptile" brain - the brainstem and spinal cord. You can actually take a cat and vacuum out its cerebral cortex and all mating behaviors remain intact. Social behaviors are destroyed, but the cat can still eat and mate. That is how primal and basic the behaviors we are talking about really are.

Our reactions are SO BASIC, so immune to conscious and voluntary control, that they are akin to a species of fish whose females' bellies turn red when they are gravid. Males of this species can be fooled into mating behavior by a block of wood with the underside painted the same red as a gravid female placed into the tank.

Like these fish, signals of female readiness and receptivity provoke a completely unconscious and involuntary reaction in us. We can't stop ourselves from reacting, all we can do is stop ourselves from acting on our reaction. What makes men so angry at women is how well women have learned our involuntary reactions and learned how to use them against us by faking receptivity and using our sense of urgency to extort from us what they want.

Makeup, low-cut dresses, even high heels, all mimic signals that a woman gives off when she is "ready." Men are constantly having their involuntary reflexes beaten on to respond to a woman who signals that she is "ready" when, in fact, she is not. Just about all the terrible miscommunications between men and women would go away if men would go back to sniffing women's butts.

The other half of "the look" is status. These are the ways that social messages have affected us. A man's status is enhanced in the presence of an attractive woman, just as a woman's status is enhanced by the presence of a successful man. This is the strictly "nurture" part of things. What we consider "beauty" at any given time is a matter of social consensus. In Africa, big butts on women are considered VERY attractive because they are a whole lot closer to the edge of survival and a skinny woman will likely not survive childbirth. There is no reason to "mate" with them. Even as recently as the 1960s, the hourglass figure, curviness, was a standard of female beauty.

What comes next is pretty subtle, so hang with me. The "look" now popular in westernized culture, which advertising defines, is the "look" of an infertile woman. Pregnancy takes a huge amount of calories and very thin women ususally cannot accomplish it. Here is where we have nature and nurture at war with each other. The drive to have sex and continue the species is as strong in all of is as it has ever been, but children are so expensive to have and raise to adulthood these days that men unconsciously are drawn to women who show signs of receptivity at the same time they show signs of infertility. Some "free" sex or "free love".

Women have complained for years about men who want to sleep with one kind of woman, but marry a different kind. That is because the urgency of responding to a woman's signals of readiness, RIGHT NOW, has absolutely no relationship to what it would be like spending the rest of his life with that woman. For women's benefit, our cultural values have demanded that men make their mating decisions on something other than sex. Under the old structure of marriage, a man wouldn't even find out what his wife was like sexually until AFTER they were joined for life. That is how little emphasis that culture placed on sex compared to how much it placed on mutual support and keeping commitments.

Just as women still expect to marry a man who makes more than they do, despite the fact that the economy has changed to make that impossible, men make their choice of lifelong mates based on how much status being mated to that woman will bring them. Having a woman with "the look" (whatever the fad of the moment is) will bring them status in the eyes of both men and women. Love conquering all is a compelling and attractive fantasy, but it is a fiction. Success in life often depends on resources and status, so the choice of a lifelong mate must take these into account.

Television and movies have turned us into a completely visual culture. Everything now has some variation of "the look." Clothes have an "in look", cars have it, even athletic shoes have it. We all are being constantly harassed by TV to want "the look."

Women are just as susceptible to "the look" of men as men are to "the look" of women. And it has nothing to do with how good a mate that person would be. It is a primal biological reaction to "good genes", to a set of characteristics that would give our offspring a better chance of survival than if they did not have them.

As we grow up, however, we learn to look beyond "the look", and learn to see. Men learn over time how to tell when a woman is faking it and to avoid such women. The more games a woman plays regarding her looks and attractiveness, the more men have learned to distrust her.

The quiet beauty of an untouched bloom, however, will always render a man mute in the awesome power of woman to create new life from her own body.

Related: Zenpriest #27 - Ignoring Women

Back to “Gender War, Sexuality, and Love”

EOTM: Romantic Nonsense

. · 1 May 2005 · Archived copy · Original

There is no influence more destructive to contemporary male/female relationships than the modern fictions regarding romance and romantic love. Romantic fantasy is the female counterpart to heroic fantasy for males, to which it is closely related. Both are immature indulgences of fantasies of personal power and public recognition or confirmation of that power. In fact, the term romance itself derives from a form of medieval tale of heroic or marvelous achievements designed to appeal to the imagination and provide some pallative for the generally humdrum and burdensome lives of most people. Hm. Not much seems to have changed since 800 AD.

Romance as it is commmonly used today is nothing more than a pretty name for the mating dance among human beings. It is essentially sexual, but its sexual nature is hidden under some very erroneous conceptions about the nature of love. Due to the fact that sexuality is so repressed and negated in many cultures, while remaining an inherent ruling force in the lives of the citizens of those cultures, romance has developed as a sterilized form of sexual expression stripped of the "dirtiness" and shamefullness of being honest about what it really is.

The conflicting and impossible notions of romantic love are nowhere better illustrated than in the over 25 million romance novels consumed each month by American women. The heroines are always beautiful, never plain, and the men they entrance with this great beauty are always wealthy and powerful rogues. There are no dull accountants, greasy mechanics, or laborers with rough and calloused hands. These rogues walk the perfect fine line between just enough respect for the woman's wishes that they never force her beyond what she wants, while they always force her beyond what she says. If the "no means no" dictum were applied, virtually all these men are rapists, but noble ones: the kind of men that the heroines really want to ignore their symbolic protests. The perennial popularity of the old classic "Gone With the Wind" among women, while men generally regard it as stupid, shows the enduring nature of the Rhett Butler type of character in women's fantasies.

Romantic characters are always larger than life. This causes no serious problem for those who retain the ability to distinguish fantasy from reality, but it wreaks havoc on the lives of those forget that the fantasy is essentially escapism and begin to regard it as a prescription for how life is or needs to be conducted. Characters in romantic fantasies bear no resemblance to real people. If they did, it would be history not romantic fantasy. Unfortunately many people today have lost touch with reality and have become as unrealistic in their notions of personality and personal conduct as they have become in their notions of physical beauty.

A woman aqaintance of mine recently made a profoundly disturbing statement. I had been listening to her for several months bashing men and making it clear that any man who was going to get access to her (presumably gold lined) panties was going to have to be prepared to support her in the manner to which she wanted to become accustomed. (ie. carry her around on a satin pillow.) She got quite a thrill out of the nickname "Princess" which she had acquired. One day I noticed her sitting by herself looking morose. I walked over, sat down beside her, and provided her a conversational opening to talk about it if she were so inclined.

She sighed and said, with tears in her eyes and in the best pitiful and breathy delivery I have heard since Olivia Hussey in Franco Ziffarelli's Romeo and Juliet, "My heart is sooo empty". Damn fool, I, took this as an honest statement from someone in emotional pain. After listening to her for several minutes recount the depth and intensity of her pain and all the circumstances in her life contributing to it, I tried to provide some gentle feedback on some of the things she was doing to make it unlikely that a man who might be able to fill some of that emptiness could find his way through the minefields and machine guns she had surrounding her heart, so he could lay his paycheck at her feet, or would be motivated to do so. Her response was most enlightening, and at the same time scary and disheartening.

After several minutes justifying her actions based on her past treatment by men, during which I kept saying that I wasn't questioning whether she was justified in her actions but rather simply pointing out that they didn't seem to be getting her what she wanted, she made the incredible statement that the best "relationship" she'd ever had happened entirely in her own mind and didn't require the participation of the male at all. This woman had completely lost the ability to distinguish the reality of relationship with a flesh and blood male from the fantasy she created in her own mind, and distinctly preferred the fantasy to any reality she had experienced.

Several years ago I might have followed that comment up with an argument trying to get her to see that the very term "relationship" kinda implied the presence and participation of another human being, but after thousands of hours of such argument I have learned the complete futility of it. "Don't try to teach a pig to sing. It wastes your time, and it ANNOYS the pig!" (Robert Heinlein) I simply said "Oh" and walked away sadly reflecting on the fact that this attitude seems so prevalent in women these days.

Normally, when an adult so loses touch with reality that they have relationships with non-existent people we call it mental illness. We think it is "cute" for someone below the age of 10 to have imaginary playmates, but we worry about someone who can drive a car, vote, and own a gun who can't tell the difference between a flesh and blood person and one whom they've made up. I wonder what would have happened if this woman's imaginary lover had told her that in order for him to truly love her forever that she had to kill the president.

Of course I'm being facetious, but this is the perfect illustration of the source of so much of the breakdown of relationships between men and women which is being blamed on men's "oppression" of women. I suppose that, to someone who lives in a perfect world inside her own head, it is oppressive to demand that they face reality. However it is a form of oppression that I consider perfectly acceptable when making decisions about the people I want to play significant roles in my life, whether that be a mate, a friend, a public policy maker, or certainly a surgeon. How many people would lay down on a table and put a knife in the hands of someone who said "The most successful operation I ever performed was in my own head and didn't require a patient"?

It also illustrates precisely why men find it nearly impossible to take women seriously unless that woman has some form of power over them, as well as why men are not anxious to give women that power. Men are far from "perfect" beings and will never make "perfect" husbands, lovers, or whatever else it is that a woman is looking for a man to be; particularly not when the standard of "perfection" exists entirely within the head of someone who cannot distinguish reality from fantasy. If I were "perfect", perhaps in 2000 years I would have a religion named after me. However, I'm completely aware that I'm not "perfect" and have no desire to be the next messiah for people to kill other people in my name. I have even less desire to allow people to kill, imprison, enslave, entrap, or dictate to me what my life "should" be based on what their imaginary playmates tell them.

Every man I know has a deep and sincere desire to love and please a woman (except those who have that desire toward a man). And supposedly that is what some women want as well. However, since neither I nor any other man has any chance of competing with a figment of someone's imagination, designed in every detail to be perfect and fulfill her every whim. I am no longer willing to tip-toe through the minefield and face the machine gun fire to lay my paycheck at her feet, so I can find my way into one of those empty hearts. I sit on the sidelines and watch women barricade themselves into their misery.

Now is when the story really begins to get scary.

Some weeks later a mutual acquaintance told me that the woman had claimed I had been making a pass at her. What made this delusional, no hallucinatory, was the fact that the day we spoke was 4 weeks to the day after I had

slid my motorcyle into a guard rail, breaking a collar bone and sustaining internal injuries. My bruised lung did not show up right away, but ended up sending me to the emergency room exactly one week before this conversation, with my Dr. afraid that I had a pulmonary embolism. Getting back on the bike and having another wreck was about the only thing I could have been less interested in than any between-the-sheets athletics. To this day I am not sure whether the woman lied intentionally about it, or whether this was just another relationship which happened entirely in her mind and didn't require my participation. I'm just damn glad that she hallucinated (or lied) that it was a pass and not a rape. Even trying to be friendly and kind to a woman seems to be becoming risky.

This interaction highlights so many of the issues which are ripping apart the ability of men and women to manage even the barest resemblance of peaceful coexistance. The acid tests of sense and reality have given way to the primacy of "how it feels": the subjective placement of self at the center of an island universe into which everything falls and nothing escapes. Women have social permission to be "black holes": to take everything and give back nothing; not even the understanding that sexuality is the last thing on the mind of a man whose body is broken.

But, more than broken bodies, men today are walking around with broken spirits. Faced with a world filled with women who are so indoctrinated in their entitlement to victimhood, men have been taught that they will be attacked for asking for anything; much less having the arrogance to expect something in return for caring about, giving to, and trying to love women. For many women the old principle of reciprocity, the "give and take" which allows groups of people to co-exist without slaughtering each other, is imposition, "oppression." The "modern woman's" version of "give and take" is "everyone else gives, I take."

Having fallen for the foul lies of "male power and privilege" and having been duped into believing in the ultimate and ubiquitous "bogeyman" of "THE Patriarchy", many women are trapped in a frenzy of theft and looting. In their fervor to "get" men, and "get" their fare share from men who they have been tricked into believing have it, women have blinded themselves to the ways in which they steal from and victimize other women.

A perfect example of this was provided recently by a high profile web feminist. Ever anxious to find evidence to further the fictions of universal victimhood and oppression for all women, she "deconstructed" a popular piece of media tripe, "My Best Friends Wedding", for insidious anti-female messages. According to Diane Glass, web feminist:

"Here are three main messages, hidden behind the movie's comic script:

- "You can't be friends with men AND their lovers.
- "Men can have careers and love. Women cannot have both-they have to choose between the two. Why? Because men can marry younger women and when they do, men do not have to make sacrifices of any kind. (this in itself is an interesting to ponder. It seems femininity is lost as a woman ages. Could it be that femininity is naivety and an immaturity that blindly follows?)

And finally,

- Modern women end up with gay men.

Pretty serious stuff to be taking from nothing more than the fact that the character portrayed by Julia Roberts could not, in only 4 days, break up a wedding that had been in the works for some time and involved vast social networks of very powerful people. Ms Glass goes on to make 2 more points in her deconstruction that, themselves, would be impossible to prove without the unassailable axiom of universal victimhood of women:

"Choices for modern women are fraught with the harsh choice of platonic love, Broadway tunes and friendships with men that never journey to the heights of the devoted and pure love, this movie suggests, that traditional

marriage offers."

and,

"The message is clear: Women sacrifice regardless; it is freedom for a price and compromise is the role of women, modern or traditional. "

While these are all compelling laments of victimhood, my "traditionalist" view is that there are certain social realities which make this characteristic of life in general: not just the lives of "Modern Women". Herein lies the fundamental conflict which drives gender politics. Absolutely central to this conflict lies the desire to "have it all", which seems to go with an unwillingness to pay any price for it whatsoever. This violates what I consider to be a fundamental principle of economics, as well as life: "There just ain't no such thing as a free lunch". In the end someone has to pick up the check.

My contention is that compromise is the role of anyone, male or female, who wants to live within a social structure. Implicit in the contract to receive the benefits of being able to live relatively free of anyone else's predatory desire to take from us something we have and they want, is the agreement to be bound by the same social constraints and NOT to steal from someone else something they have and we want. All of the body of law and social practice revolves around this one principle. Everyone is constantly faced with choices of whether to be a thief and a looter, or to act with integrity and work to gain what they desire through the mechanism of effort applied over time. The concept of "entitlement" is a compelling one to the person who feels entitled, but is far less attractive to those who must pick up the check.

The sense of entitlement to an experience which is completely fictionalized leads to the suspension of all social rules and constraints, while at the same time paradoxically locks the person into more of a prison than those constraints ever did. I wrote the author to point out a couple of implications that she had not mentioned. First: that the man was not a character at all, but rather a plot device, a prop in the competition between the two women for "the man prize". Second: that the primacy of marriage to a woman's happiness is just as present in this movie as it was 40 years ago, simply updated with new clothing and hairstyles. Characterizing the message as being "Women cannot have both careers and love, they must choose" obscures the real message, which is that career is only a fallback position, not even a consolation prize but a palliative for those who fall and skin themselves when they lunge for the brass ring of "romantic love." In this case, the woman who fails to win "the man prize" is definitely "the loser".

Her third point, that modern women end up with gay men, is actually the same as her first, that you cannot be friends with men AND their lovers. Aside from the fact that this attitude dangerously denigrates the value of friendship and foolishly dismisses the value of Agape, non-sexual love, as compared to Eros, sexual love; it promotes a self-centeredness when it comes to love that is antithetical to love. Once again, the fundamental principle of reciprocity is absent. In relationships with gay men, women do not enjoy the built in power differential which sexual politics within a "romantic" relationship gives them. They must treat gay men fundamentally as equals, because they have nothing the gay man wants and needs which they can withhold as a means of exercising power. Gay men are even safer as friends for straight women than other straight women, because they seldom compete for the same "man prize". Most men's sexual affiliation is "either/or", so gay men and straight women never end up competing for the same man. Straight men and women can be friends on the same basis, but once romantic politics enters the picture the friendship is often doomed because the heavy agenda of expectations that go with romance suddenly begin to lead to dissatisfaction with the person who was previously just fine the way he/she was.

The archetypal "chick flick", "When Harry met Sally", is a perfect illustration. Early in the movie, Harry and Sally

discuss how difficult it is for men and women to be friends: "because the sex thing is always there." Years later, after supporting each other through ups and downs in their love lives and careers, she calls on him for comfort after learning that an old boyfriend is getting married. Someone else has "won" her "man prize." Her value as the ultimate achievement of woman, i.e. to be called "wife" by some man, has been called into question. Harry is unable to hold the line on the friendship, and falls into the trap of proving her sexual value to her by the only means at his disposal: he goes to bed with her. The next scene shows Harry with his eyes as big as saucers and the perfect "oh shit! What have I done?" look on his face. The friendship is now doomed by the baggage of expectations of romance that go with the sexual script. Far more than MBFW, WHMS shows clearly that two people of the opposite sex, indeed, CANNOT be friends AND lovers. Once they go to bed, the old basis of the friendship is destroyed and Sally has complete social sanction to be as hateful as she likes toward Harry for not living up to his part of the romantic script.

In the romantic script, Harry clearly OWES Sally something for the bit of emotional comfort he attempted to provide her. This is where most men balk, and one of the primary reasons why so many of them do not call the next day. At this juncture, men have their choice of two roles in the romantic script: the lapdog or the cad. (Actually "cad" has fallen out of general usage today: replaced by the general purpse, one-size-fits-all "jerk".) Canadian journalist Wendy Dennis (sic) puts it this way: "If a man puts his penis into a woman's vagina, he must call her the next day." "Guys would get this in a second if they had vaginas, but so far they don't -- that's why I have to rattle on here." In other words, possession of the magic vagina gives women the power to "make the rules."

It's not that men don't "get" it, as the cliched complaint of women goes, it is that they don't "BUY" it. The stupid nonsense about men fearing the "vagina dentata", the cunt with teeth, is one of the most persistent pieces of childish foolishness. Men know that the teeth are in the steel jawed trap of the fictionalized script of romantic love/sex/marriage. The vagina is simply the bait. This is the arena where the most fundamental issues of male versus female power get played out. When a woman presents herself as not being after a (THE) commitment, the man is justified in assuming that sex is an equal exchange. In any real scenario of equality, the man would be just as entitled to a reassuring call the next day as the woman is. And, given the highly charged and politicized atmosphere of "date rape", men are actually in more need of it today than women are: to reassure them that she had a good time and is not getting ready to press charges.

Men are fully aware that women frequently use sex to jump-start "romance". Prior to the expansion and blurring of concepts of rape, men had some chance of being avoiding being ensnared into a romantic fantasy by pointing out the contradictions between women's pre- and post-coital behavior and statements. Now that the subjective experience of women has become the standard of law, while men's experience is categorically denied and refuted, men are growing increasingly suspcious and distant.

Modern women really do have a raw deal right now, not because of any of the reasons mentioned by the web feminist, but because of the point of view she promotes. Women are just as bound by the "Feminine Mystique" as they were 40 years ago, and cannot be happy without experiencing "true love" which is totally fictionalized and doesn't exist, while they also have to live up to the old "Masculine Mystique" and experience "career success and satisfaction" which is equally fictionalized. The majority of men have never had careers, they had JOBS: stupid, meaningless, demeaning, boring, humiliating, JOBS! The statement that "men can have careers and love" is laughable to most men, as is " men do not have to make sacrifices of any kind." The very act of going to work each day; at a stupid, meaningless, demeaning, boring, humiliating, JOB! is regarded by most men as sacrifice enough in life to be able to ask for a bit of appreciation and peace and quiet in return. But in an environment of no reciprocity, that doesn't even pass minumum standards. Men must do this AND meet women's emotional needs as well, while men themselves are starving to death emotionally.

Men have been putting up with this for years, yet will seldom jump up to protect themselves and demand some

reciprocity. They will, however, generally jump up to protect a woman who is being threatened and protect her interests. Thus they get to play the hero, and remain caught in the eternal drama.

Where they can generally do nothing however, is the case where a woman is being victimized by another woman. The credo of universal victimhood blinds women to they ways in which they prey upon other women, as well as the extent to which they are victimized by other women. In the movie, as soon as the competion for "the man prize" began, the male was set up to be the bad guy.

Had the "morally superior" "modern woman" in MBFW prevailed, there would simply have been another female victim. Only this time it would have been the stereotype of men rather than a traditional role of women which had victimized her. The jilted woman would have had far more right to claim victimhood, by being abandonded, than the "modern woman" has the right to claim victimhood by having to make a choice. The fiction that feminism has used to promote itself is freedom of choice for women, yet that freedom is now seen as a burden and source of victimization. Obviously, that freedom of choice should only apply to women who choose to be modern, and women who choose more traditional roles should be punished for that choice by the same loss of "love" which was the modern woman's punishment.

In other words, only women who make the "right" choice get to choose, in which case it is no choice at all, but simply a "new & improved" political orthodoxy to replace the "old & flawed" traditional one. Somehow the notion of equal rights has been twisted into the old familiar "but some are more equal than others". Obviously, those who are more equal are the ones who should "have it all" while the rest of us pick up the check. Sneering at the "traditional" woman's right to exercise her constitutional right to "the pursuit of happiness" by methods of her own choice, points out how patently elitist feminism really is.

The real reasons that "modern" and career women get left out in the cold when it comes to love are seen in the characterization of the dreaded "traditional" woman. The first 4 words used to describe this person were "gentle, loving, supportive", followed by "sacrificing". David Buss, in "Evolution of Desire" points out how these traits are universal across ALL cultures as the most significant traits influencing the choice of life mate, above physical beauty for men and material wealth for women. The credo of victimhood and the rejection of the dreaded "traditional" female role blind women to the fact that no one could possibly love someone who exhibited the opposite traits of being "harsh, un-loving, un-supportive, and selfish", yet these are the traits we see growing in women, and required of the "modern" woman.

There is no free lunch, and women now seem to resent the fact that they must pay for a man's love by loving him in return. The sense of entitlement to romantic love is the greatest factor in the world today which renders women unlovable.

Real men have no possible way to compete with, or even live up to the standards set by, "imaginary playmates". And I suppose that it really shouldn't surprise men that women would rather "have it all" entirely within their own heads than to have any of it in reality that they would have to pay for. Men have to take some of the responsibility for this. In being hooked by "hero" fantasies, picking up the check has a lot of power. Well, guys, our credit card has been revoked, our credit line maxed out. It's COD from here on out.

Back to “Gender War, Sexuality, and Love”

EOTM: Love: The Real Kind

. · 2 May 2005 · Archived copy · Original

Forget "Romeo and Juliet" and its modern day clone "West Side Story". Forget "Sleepless in Seattle", "When Harry Met Sally", and all the rest of the commercial Hollywood tripe. If you want to see a real love story, rent a small budget film by the Montana Historical Commission called "Heartland".

Set in Montana (surprise!) around the turn of the last century, this beautiful little film shows mature love at its mundane but substantive best. There are no roses, Valentines, jewelry, or hankie waving declarations of love. There are simply two people who grow to respect, care for, and trust each other with their lives. Neither could hardly be farther from a Hollywood stereotype. No cover material for GQ or Cosmo here. Just people of substance and character who learn to depend on each other and support each other as they face the common challenges of survival.

The modern notions of "romance" and "romantic love", peddled in the forms of mindless mass market entertainment called romance novels and "chick flicks", have created such unrealistic and destructive expectations in the minds of so many people, mostly women but also a large number of men, that ordinary relationships which fall short of the simplistic perfection of idealized "love" are no longer considered satisfactory to most. There are never any stopped-up toilets, nor unpaid bills. Everything is "perfect", idyllic, utopian: the modern day version of the garden of eden myth. Gone is the concept of "for better or worse" which was the foundation that made marriage so successful historically.

When one can depend on someone year in and year out to be a partner and a support, to lend a helping hand when one falls, to nurse one through the occasional sickness or misfortune that is part of the real human condition; over time a deep respect and caring grows. This is real love. This is what will make a marriage work.

Romance is the most transitory and ephemeral thing in the world. One of the stupidest statements possible in the English language is "I still love you, but I'm not in love with you." We can be "in" a bathtub, or "in" deep shit, but we cannot be "in" love. Love is a verb, not a noun. One experiences love by loving, not by having love poured on them.

The emotions associated with romantic love are based entirely on the drive to reproduce which is built into the cells of every living thing. The thrills, the headiness, the euphoria, are all part of the mechanisms which serve the purpose of inducing us to take risks which may endanger ourselves in order to engage in the reproductive act. For most of their lives, human beings today are not active in reproduction. Basing relationships solely on reproductive mechanisms leaves them no foundation when reproduction is not the purpose of the relationship. This is why the vast majority of marriages are failing at the end of the 20th century.

Modern relationships tend to be like the old Greek myth of Procrustes, the robber who kept an inn to lure unwary travelers. He demanded that they fit perfectly into the only bed he had and chopped off parts which were too long or streched parts which were too short to fit. The ubiquitous nature of modern media has created "ideals" of what and how people "should" be which are so rigidly fixed in many people's minds that the first thing they do in a relationship is set out to transform the other person into the closest facsimile of the ideal which is possible given the nature of the raw material.

This is particularly true of women. Dozens of authors, women and men, have used the phrase "men are projects", i.e. remodeling projects. Folk wisdom on this issue abounds. "Women are always surprised when their husbands do not change after marriage. Men are always surprised when their wives do." Women who consider their mates

projects instead of partners will always end up in a power struggle and control battle which, for the man, amounts to fighting for his life. The implicit message is "I have the right to, and intend to, destroy who you are so that I can make you into who I want you to be." Not surprisingly, this message does not thrill many men.

Mistaking the feelings which fuel the reproductive drive for love, and the false confusion of sex with intimacy and love, creates relationships which cannot be anything but short term and disappointing. In rural America, many a kitchen has a plaque on the wall that reads: "Kissin' don't last, cookin' do." This folk wisdom reflects the fact that a marriage is essentially a partnership formed for the purpose of helping the partners and their offspring survive. A natural division of labor based on the differing roles in the reproductive process made it wonderfully good sense for the male to spend proportionately more time in the outside world doing the work of feeding and clothing the family, while the female spent proportionately more time in the home using the produce of the male's work to create an environment which was conducive to survival for both of them and their children. Romance does not feed you when you are hungry, nor keep you from freezing to death when the temperature is below zero.

Only when all basic survival needs have been met, do people have the luxury of pursuing activities purely for pleasure, entertainment, recreation, or self-fulfillment. Technology, urbanization, and modern production/distribution systems have moved most life sustaining activities outside the bounds of the typical family today. Basic survival needs are seen as "entitlements", which is far different from conditions which prevailed in this country only a few decades ago, and which still prevail in most of the world. Survival is NOT an entitlement to most people. People who stand balanced on the precarious edge of survival understand this all too well. In such conditions, someone who shares their own resources to help another survive is commonly understood to be doing so because they are acting out of the emotion of love.

Therefor, a realistic definition of love is sharing one's resources to help another survive or even prosper. This is so central to men's intuitive understanding of what love really is, that when this is NOT seen as love, when it is rejected as love and they are told that love is objects given, they refuse to accept than definition and get confused and angry. They fall into the trap of believing that the more safe and comfortable they can make a woman feel, the more she will feel that he loves her. Modern men have been slow to realize that the sense of entitlement of the emotionally arrested adolescents, which modern women have become, makes them consider this to be the zero point. It is not the result of their labors, simply the minimum entrance requirements to get men to the starting line.

Comfort, safety, freedom from hunger, are all assumed by women today. And like the proverbial complaint of every generation about the next, they have no idea what it took to create it. They assume that they are entitled to it, and are wounded and oppressed if they do not have it given to them. Now that material expectations have escalated to the point where it takes years of 60+ hour weeks to accumulate enough experience and wealth (plus social connections and a lot of good luck) to be able to provide that, the vast majority of loving men are simply invisible to most women.

Today, the idea that a woman be a partner and expend a equal amount of effort to creating the comfortable environment they share has given way to the dogma of victimhood which asserts that a man who asks, or worse has the audacity to expect, that a woman make an equal contribution is considered guilty of oppression. Most women throw away more real love than most men get in their lifetimes.

Sadly, this fiction has been so well promoted and publicized that the majority of women have fallen for it: not just the extremists. Nothing is more indicative of the paradox of today's notions of love than the woman who complains bitterly about all the shortcomings of men, makes her hostility and contempt for them clear on a regular basis, dismisses their attempts to show love in the way that they know best, then cannot figure out why she cannot get one of these awful creatures to fall head over heels "in love" with her. Watching such a woman it is easy to take the equally hostile position that; even if the distorted claims of the feminists were true regarding how men consider

women's mental capacity to be limited, they were apparently not without justification: women do not exhibit much intelligence when it comes to recognizing how their own behavior contributes directly to their circumumstances.

The most bewildering thing to men today, is how women expect them to take this outpouring of hostility and hatred and magically transform it into warm feelings for those women. Women seem to believe that they can bully men into loving them by hating us. It doesn't work that way. Hate breeds hate. LOVE breeds love, and any woman willing to love men, or one specific man, will find herself well loved in return. As long as she does not mistake jewelry and sport utility vehicles for love.

Back to “Gender War, Sexuality, and Love”

EOTM: The Art of Loving - Erich Fromm, 1956

. · 3 May 2005 · Archived copy · Original

In the 1950s, there was a significant amount of social criticism of the "American way" of life. Eisenhower warned of the dangers of the "Military-Industrial Complex", books like "The Organization Man" and "Man in the Grey Flannel Suit" questioned life in corporate America, and thousands of books both fiction and non-fiction questioned the ways that American's pursued personal relationships, marriage, and love. Erich Fromm, in particular, questioned whether love was something to be acquired, as most Americans seemed to think, or something to be practiced - an art, a skill - and whether the experience of love was gained by loving or by being loved.

I agree with Fromm's formulation that love is a verb, not a noun. Here is the first chapter of his 1956 work on the subject. Since this is a non-commerical site, I think reproduction of this comes under fair usage and does not violate copyright laws, particularly since I encourage everyone who wants more love in their lives to buy this book.

Chapter 1 - "Is love an Art?"

IS LOVE an art? Then it requires knowledge and effort. Or is love a pleasant sensation, which to experience is a matter of chance, something one "falls into" if one is lucky? This little book is based on the former premise, while undoubtedly the majority of people today believe in the latter.

Not that people think that love is not important. They are starved for it; they watch endless numbers of films about happy and unhappy love stories, they listen to hundreds of trashy songs about love--yet hardly anyone thinks that there is anything that needs to be learned about love.

This peculiar attitude is based on several premises which either singly or combined tend to uphold it. Most people see the problem of love primarily as that of being loved, rather than that of loving, of one's capacity to love. Hence the problem to them is how to be loved, how to be lovable. In pursuit of this aim they follow several paths. One, which is especially used by men, is to be successful, to be as powerful and rich as the social margin of one's position permits. Another, used especially by women, is to make oneself attractive, by cultivating one's body, dress, etc. Other ways of making oneself attractive, used both by men and women, are to develop pleasant manners, interesting conversation, to be helpful, modest, inoffensive. Many of the ways to make oneself lovable are the same as those used to make one- self successful, "to win friends and influence people." As a matter of fact, what most people in our culture mean by being lovable is essentially a mixture between being popular and having sex appeal.

A second premise behind the attitude that there is nothing to be learned about love is the assumption that the problem Of love is the problem of an object, not the problem of a faculty. People think that to love is simple, but that to find the right object to love--or to be loved by-is difficult. This attitude has several reasons rooted in the development of modern society. One reason is the great change which occurred in the twentieth century with respect to the choice Of a "love object." In the Victorian age, as in many traditional cultures, love was mostly not a spontaneous personal experience which then might lead to marriage. On the contrary, marriage was contracted by convention--either by the respective families, Or by a marriage broker, or without the help of such intermediaries; it was concluded ~n the basis of social considerations, and love was supposed to develop once the marriage had been concluded. In the last few generations the concept of romantic love has become almost universal in the Western world. In the United States, while considerations of a conventional nature are not entirely absent, to a vast extent people are in search of "romantic love," of the personal experience of love which then should lead to marriage. This new concept of freedom in love must have greatly enhanced the importance of the object as against the importance of the function.

Closely related to this factor is another feature characteristic of contemporary culture. Our whole culture is based on the appetite for buying, on the idea of a mutually favor- able exchange. Modern man's happiness consists in the thrill of looking at the shop windows, and in buying all that he can afford to buy, either for cash or on installments. He (or she) looks at people in a similar way. For the man an attractive girl --and for the woman an attractive man-- are the prizes they are after. "Attractive" usually means a nice pack- age of qualities which are popular and sought after on the personality market. What specifically makes a person attractive depends on the fashion of the time, physically as well as mentally. During the twenties, a drinking and smoking girl, tough and sexy, was attractive; today the fashion demands more domesticity and coyness. At the end of the nineteenth and the beginning of this century, a man had to be aggressive and ambitious--today he has to be social and tolerant-- in order to be an attractive "package." At any rate, the sense of falling in love develops usually only with regard to such human commodities as are within reach of one's own possibilities for exchange. I am out for a bargain; the object should be desirable from the standpoint of its social value, and at the same time should want me, considering my overt and hidden assets and potentialities. Two persons thus fall in love when they feel they have found the best object available on the market, considering the limitations of their own exchange values. Often, as in buying real estate, the hidden potentialities which can be developed play a considerable role in this bargain. In a culture in which the marketing orientation prevails, and in which material success is the outstanding value, there is little reason to be surprised that human love relations follow the same pattern of exchange which governs the commodity and the labor market.

The third error leading to the assumption that there is nothing to be learned about love lies in the confusion between the initial experience of "falling" in love, and the permanent state of being in love, or as we might better say, of "standing" in love. If two people who have been strangers, as all of us are, suddenly let the wall between them break down, and feel close, feel one, this moment of oneness is one of the most exhilarating, most exciting experiences in life. It is all the more wonderful and miraculous for persons who have been shut off, isolated, without love. This miracle of sudden intimacy is often facilitated if it is combined with, or initiated by, sexual attraction and consummation. However, this type of love is by its very nature not lasting. The two persons become well acquainted, their intimacy loses more and more its miraculous character, until their antagonism, their disappointments, their mutual boredom kill whatever is left of the initial excitement. Yet, in the beginning they do not know all this: in fact, they take the intensity of the infatuation, this being "crazy" about each other, for proof of the intensity of their love, while it may only prove the degree of their preceding loneliness.

This attitude--that nothing is easier than to love--has continued to be the prevalent idea about love in spite of the overwhelming evidence to the contrary. There is hardly any activity, any enterprise, which is started with such tremendous hopes and expectations, and yet, which fails so regularly, as love. If this were the case with any other activity, people would be eager to know the reasons for the failure, and to learn how one could do better--or they would give up the activity. Since the latter is impossible in the case of love, there seems to be only one adequate way to overcome the failure of love--to examine the reasons for this failure, and to proceed to study the meaning of love.

The first step to take is to become aware that love is an art, just as living is an art; if we want to learn how to love we must proceed in the same way we have to proceed if we want to learn any other art, say music, painting, carpentry, or the art of medicine or engineering.

What are the necessary steps in learning any art?

The process of learning an art can be divided conveniently into two parts: one, the mastery of the theory; the other, the mastery of the practice. If I want to learn the art of medicine, I must first know the facts about the human body, and about various diseases. When I have all this theoretical knowledge, I am by no means competent in the art of medicine. I shall become a master in this art only after a great deal of practice, until eventually the results of my

theoretical knowledge and the results of my practice are blended into one--my intuition, the essence of the mastery of any art. But, aside from learning the theory and practice, there is a third factor necessary to becoming a master in any art--the mastery of the art must be a matter of ultimate concern; there must be nothing else in the world more important than the art. This holds true for music, for medicine, for carpentry--- and for love. And, maybe, here lies the answer to the question of why people in our culture try so rarely to learn this art, in spite of their obvious failures: in spite of the deep-seated craving for love, almost everything else is considered to be more important than love: success, prestige, money, power-almost all our energy is used for the learning of how to achieve these aims, and almost none to learn the art of loving.

Could it be that only those things are considered worthy of being learned with which one can earn money or prestige, and that love, which "only" profits the soul, but is profitless in the modern sense, is a luxury we have no right to spend much energy on?

Back to Gender War, Sexuality, and Love

EOTM: Tribute to my Mother

. · 4 May 2005 · Archived copy · Original

My mother, Goldie, died on Sunday, May 16th, 1999.

She was a remarkable woman.

From the springtime of her life, as a remarkably beautiful and vivacious young woman, to the final days of her autumn, spent with her body and mind slowly failing her, Goldie lived a life of quiet strength, determination, and bountiful love.

She was the kindest, gentlest, and most loving person I've ever known. What a wonderful statement to be able to make about one's mother.

But, as a result of talking to the many people who had known her in her life, I found that my perception was universal among anyone who had met her even once. Everyone experienced Goldie as a kind, gentle, warm, and most loving person. Her final gifts to her family were the many expressions of deep love that people offered when they heard of her death. At the end of life, she taught a great lesson in being able to turn around and accept people loving and taking care of her when she needed it most.

The end of my mother's life was a long one. In circumstances it was soft at the end, but the experience was made hard by long slow deterioration of her abilities. It was a frustrating end to a life characterized by vigor and purposeful activity.

In tribute to her, and her unfailing consistency in living by and for her values and convictions, I want to tell the story of my mother. She had an exceptionally full and wonderful life, and that was of her own making. It was a just harvest for all the love she gave so generously.

When I hear some woman today sneer at how "men don't like strong women", I think of Goldie, and just marvel at how obtuse some people can be.

This woman was as strong as any person who ever lived, but she never once confused belligerence with strength. Marriage and children, and grandchildren, etc, were the central core of her life. She loved life and knew how to nurture it as well or better than anyone.

Goldie's secret was that she innocently and genuinely loved life and everything about it, and enthusiastically wanted to share it. A perfect illustration of how Goldie's love of life came out as caring for it, was the time we had a late winter storm after some of the calves had been born. Mom enlisted a neighbor lady's help and went out into the pasture and picked up the calves in a handcart and carried them down to the basement where she made a tent out of old sheets and warmed up the calves with an old hair dryer. She was in her late 60s.

On the night she died, I got out an old photo album with pictures of her going back to about age 10. In every picture, was that same smile with the same near dimples and the same twinkle in the eye. These were Goldie's trademarks, and everyone who knew her remembered these about her.

I had arrived late in Goldie's life, two days before she turned 40, thus I missed all the years of her as young woman and mother. But I could guess what they were like from the way that Goldie was in the years I did get to know her.

Simply put, Goldie was the best person I've ever known in my life.

The loss of women like Goldie, from the culture as a whole, will result in it being a far more hostile and uncomfortable place. Her speciality was comfort and she saw absolutely nothing to gain from being needlessly belligerent.

The loss of mothers like Goldie will change the family world that most of us live in most of the time. From an atmosphere of loving cooperation, we are moving culturally into a world of suspicious competition.

One of the first things I was struck with as I looked at photos from her younger life, the part I had missed, was the consistency of the smile across her ages, and being able to see the gradual transitions she went through as she moved from that freshness of youth, through a long and productive middle age, to as graceful an old age as she was able to accomplish. At the end, all her physical and mental capabilities just slipped away and she lay in one curled

up position waiting to die for years.

But she did not turn loose of them readily or easily. Goldie's commitment to life can actually be seen in her last years as well as in her earlier more fruitful years. She was determinedly optimistic even the day she moved from her house to a nursing home. She was going to be out by that very afternoon and bake my brother's wife a cake. It was that kind of determination which had brought her through raising a family through a depression and world war, building a family business while in her 50s and early 60s, then retiring to an on-the-whole very gentle and gradual end to her life. Her children and their children were with her to the very end. She had been an extremely generous person throughout her long lifetime, and when it came time for her to receive, no one who loved her could hold back anything she wanted or needed. Her needs were always simple, and she was very respectful when asking, but if she did ask - you knew it was something she really wanted and you just wanted to give it to her.

Her ending was hard on all 3 of her children, and they divided up the tasks of organizing their mother's last party. There was a lot of gaiety to Goldie, and she loved a good party, particularly one where she was the guest of honor. Two took the logistics, and one took the difficult job of eulogizing their mother. It was both an easy and a difficult task. The ease lie in how much there was that could be said about Goldie, and the challenge was to make it an accurate portrait of our mother and why we all looked up to and loved her so: long enough to do her justice, but short enough not to lose people's attention. I wanted very intensely to give an accurate portrait of this lady and her sterling qualities.

Below, are selected portions of the eulogy I delivered at her funeral, 5/20/99. Goldie practiced the arts of wifehood, motherhood, and loving life in general, well into her 8th decade. Her children were widely seprated in years, her youngest being born two days before her 40th birthday. She always said that her children kept her young, and to see how her greatest pleasures lie in feeding people and taking care of them, you can understand how.

.

Goldie

I want to extend welcome, on behalf of Goldie, since she is not able to welcome you herself, although we all know she would if she were able. If Goldie were in charge right now, we'd be bustling around getting you something to eat and drink. Feeding people was a big part of the way that Goldie showed love. Even if you stopped by for only a couple of minutes, Goldie saw to it that you never went away hungry or thirsty.

Anyone who has had the experience of losing a beloved knows that words cannot touch the meaning of that loss. When the beloved is a parent, part of our link in the chain of life is severed. While we experience death many times in our lives, and become accustomed to it, the death of a mother or father are events which only happen once in a lifetime.

One of the things my siblings and I have experienced as we've gone through the process of letting mom go is the realization that what we feel for Goldie goes beyond the love of a child for a parent. In addition to loving her, we also admired, respected, and, above all, trusted her.

We discovered that almost everyone felt the same way about Goldie. Somehow the frame of reference shifted from a perception of Goldie as mom, to Goldie as Goldie and how her entire life from beginning to end reflected a constant dedication to her values. While some degree of self-sacrifice was part of it, it was really far more a case of everyone simply sharing generously. Through Goldie's tutelage, we learned how it really is better to give than to receive: the delight in the eye of the recipient is an equal gift to the gift itself. In many respects, I envy those who

knew my mother longer than I did. My brother and sister both experienced her as a young woman. I saw her only at middle age and after.

Her passing once again drives home the lessons she determinedly tried to teach throughout her life - teaching in the best way possible: by living them.

Goldie enriched the lives of everyone she touched, and she touched a lot of people. It was basic to Goldie's nature that she reach out to others and touch them with a gentle, calming, and loving touch.

We will be known by our works, and I don't want to pass up the opportunity to remark on the lessons of Goldie's works, as a final chance to give thanks to her for her works on my behalf.

Goldie was a great teacher, in her quiet and unassuming way. She taught by being - by simply living what she believed - not really for the intentional purpose of serving as an example, but because she believed that was the way one should live one's life. As one experienced and observed the results and Goldie's effect on people, you realized she was right.

Even at the end of life, Goldie keeps teaching.

This latest lesson is a repetition of the lesson that there are many phases of life that we go through. And, while our role may change, it doesn't mean that who we are changes. As Goldie's physical and mental faculties progressively shut down on her, the kind and loving nature of her basic person kept shining through. A word I have heard over and over again to describe Goldie is "sweet."

In speaking with the minister preparing for Goldie's service, I learned something about Goldie that was both something I knew about her as well as seeing what I thought I knew in a new light. She said that the members of the church would often go to minister to my mother, and would come away feeling like they had been ministered to.

This was the essence of Goldie.

So there is more to it than just the child's love for mother, which is what my sister and brother and I now feel, there was something in Goldie which just made people love her, and that something was the fact that she loved them.

Simply put, Goldie, mom, was the best person I ever met in my life.

When people tell me that they're sorry to hear that my mother died, while it is meant in kindness, the circumstances of her passing make the joy outweigh the sorrow. All I can say is to them is that if they had known Goldie, they wouldn't be sorry at all.

About a year and half ago, my uncle died. Suddenly thrust into the role of the elder of that family, my cousin, Don, said one of the wisest things I've ever heard. In speaking of his dad, Don said "We're not here to mourn his death, but celebrate his life."

So, I welcome you here to join us in celebrating Goldie’s life.

And what a life it was. It was a life to be celebrated.

She lived through world wars and world economic depression. She saw more fundamental technological change in one generation than any other generation ever saw before or ever will see hence.

Goldie always had a lot of friends and made friends easily. It wasn't totally conscious on her part, although she did want to please, she was just so full of life that people felt good being around her. As a young girl, she was always laughing and bubbly and full of life. Her joyous smile was infectious.

Goldie had a rich and full life, with many dimensions to it. Goldie was first and foremost - wife, mother, grandmother, and great-grandmother.

Family was the foundation for mom on which everything else was based. And on this foundation she built a 52 year partnership with a man who was not always the easiest to live with, gave herself to 3 generations of children, then turned around and graciously accepted their support when it came time for her to receive and for them to give back a little of the great gifts they had received from her.

Mom gave gracefully because she never thought of herself as "owning" love - to her, love meant passing it around. Holding onto it lest she somehow have "less" simply would never occur to her.

Goldie was an adventurer. As a teenager, she had a boyfriend who had a biplane, the photo of Goldie looking out of the cockpit shows her delight. Sixty years later, Goldie went on a cruise to Alaska and through the Panama Canal. Nothing ever daunted Goldie. The word "can't" wasn't in her vocabulary. She didn't expect immediate results, Goldie's secret weapon was persistence. Another perfect Goldie story happened on one of the many adventures she shared with her husband. They went fishing up in Minnesota. This was at a stage in their lives when money was scarce. They still enjoyed life itself without any need for a great many trappings to make it enjoyable. They could only afford fishing tackle for dad, so the guide fixed my mother up with a hook and a bobber and she wrapped the line around her finger. She caught the biggest fish of the trip.

Throughout Goldie's life, she made many promises to people, and she kept them. While I am not aware of her ever breaking a promise to anyone, I think it is perhaps the promises that Goldie made to herself that she kept the best.

So, one of the things which I would most like to celebrate today is how Goldie's promises to herself were the essence of who she turned out to be. And how her work is now done, and well done, and how she needs and deserves a rest.

We are well-wishers, seeing Goldie off on the next exciting part of her adventure. Goldie was never one to be tied down, but over the past 10 or 11 years, all her abilities gradually failed. Goldie was in there, but trapped - yearning to be free. Today she is free. I'm very happy for you mom.

In order to understand the wholeness and fullness of Goldie's life, no better words have ever been written than Ecclesiastes 3.

"To everything there is a season, and a time to every purpose under heaven.

- There is a time to sow, and a time to reap,

- a time to live, and a time to die."

There is indeed a time to sow, and a time to reap. All things do and must pass. Each generation must pass through

all phases of life and learn its lessons.

Goldie understood this. During the time when it was her time to plant, she did so generously. She tended what she had sown, and made sure that her own never knew real lack. And when she grew old and infirm, she began to reap the harvest of what she had sown and tended so carefully. There is a time for that, and when it came for Goldie, she did it as gracefully as she did everything else.

Goldie was an artist, and while she used and mastered many media, from drawing to oils, her favored medium was life. Goldie was an accomplished artist in that subtle art of life. She imparted to her children that love of life which defined her, and a set of values that does not include ever doing harm. To the very end, Goldie retained a sense of innocence, awe, and wonder. The picture to the right is one of the many home-made christmas cards she made over nearly 40 years of carrying on that tradition. She drew the cover and composed the verse inside which was always news of the family's year.

Goldie loved life, and lived life, and lived love.

Goldie's death was not unexpected. The family had years to prepare, and went through more than a few dry runs. Goldie had lived a full life, experienced a bountiful harvest, and now it was October for her. In the last of her seasons, she reaped a graciousness about receiving that she had always had about giving.

What was remarkable about Goldie, I will not use the word special because it has become so cheapened, was that from beginning to end she lived her life consistently, living a set of values that she passed on. That is a part of Goldie that you will find in every child and every grandchild. We hope that it will continue to be seen in great-grandchildren and their children.

These two pictures represent Goldie at each end of her adult life.

.

.

The picture on the right, is the way Goldie looked 3 years ago, 1996. However, if you had looked at Goldie through her own eyes, you would have found that in her own heart and mind, she looked a lot more like the picture on the left. Ever in Goldie's heart was the world young and bright and new and full of promise. In the young girl, were the seeds of the promise of what Goldie was to become. While the changes were many, and the years relentless, I believe that you can still see that the smile is the same, and behind the glasses and the glare, the same twinkle is still in her eyes.

I'd like you to take a moment to look at the young Goldie on her way to becoming and see if you can imagine what dreams lurked behind those bright young eyes. Then I'd like you to look at the old Goldie, and see how all those dreams played out and how deeply satisfied she was. While it is easy to see the remarkable beauty and promise fresh and bursting into bloom in the picture of the young Goldie, it takes knowing her to see even greater beauty in the face of the old Goldie.

Goldie knew, when she was a teenager, exactly how she wanted to live her life. Not the details of the plans, but by which values. In the time interval which separates these two photos, close to seventy years, not once, not one single time, did Goldie ever act contrary to those values.

The most cherished legacy Goldie left her descendants, is one of absolute and perfect trust. Goldie understood the importance of keeping faith as few still do.

What some people did not see under Goldie's kindness, was her grit and determination. This, too, is a legacy she leaves her family. "Can't" wasn't in Goldie's vocabulary until about 10 years ago. While she accepted it with grace, she hated it. The reason I feel such joy for Goldie today, is because she is finally free of the prison her body had become.

The weeping that Goldie's children have done for our mother, is not from sadness that our mother now is getting her well-earned rest, but tears of joy over having known her.

And I'd like to tell you a bit about the path that Goldie followed on her way between the beginning and end of her life.

Goldie was born July 26th, 1912 in small central Missouri town. Her mother's maiden name was Holt, and the town was named Holt Summit. There were ties here for her that went back to the town's founding. She had two sisters and a brother. Goldie was 7 years old when the armistice ended WW I. She was a teenager during the roaring 20s. Now, if that isn't enough to give a father sleepless nights. On new years eve, 1932, Goldie married Woody, the man with whom she was going to spend most of her life. Many times mom told the story of saying the first time she laid eyes on my dad - "That's the man I'm going to marry." Knowing mom, it's very easy to believe. Determination was a character trait that Goldie had in good measure. Once she made up her mind to do something, there wasn't much that could stop her.

Being a wife and mother was so central to Goldie, that her life can only be seen in its wholeness by seeing how these roles both defined her, and were her greatest passion. Woody was her partner, and they were in it for the long haul. It was on that framework that all the rest of the experiences of Goldie's life were built.

In 1935, at the height of the depression, they had a daughter. In 1942, with the war raging, they had a son. While times were thin, Goldie still made sure somehow that her children never lacked anything they really needed. As young marrieds and parents, Goldie and Woody learned to lean on each other and to be partners. Goldie took care of Woody until the day before he died, and only gave in when the family ganged up on her because she was exhausted from caring for him. But, all the time it mattered, Goldie was there when Woody needed her.

Two days before her 40th birthday, Goldie had a third child, a son. Goldie experienced motherhood for a far greater portion of her life than many women. In 1960, Woody and Goldie bought a small business, a country bank, and for the next 14 years they worked six-day weeks. They built the business well, and it provided a comfortable retirement for both of them. To the end of her days, life was as gentle and tender to mom as she had been toward it. The nursing home where she spent her last days provided nothing but the finest care. Her church was a great comfort to her.

The years at the bank were good years for them. With only one chick left in the nest, they traveled, not widely but well. They began to be able to have the things they had worked for all their lives. This was their early harvest. The picture on the left was taken in Hawaii. Together they created many adventures for themselves.

When Goldie and Woody retired, they returned to the country. Goldie the artist, took up oil painting and one of her paintings hangs in the nursing home where she spent the last 5 years of her life. They both had a few good years, then Woody's health failed. At ages 66 and 68, Goldie had the pluck to climb on the tractor, and keep up the "genteel farming operation" until it became clear that Woody would not recover enough to take it over again. In 1982, they moved to a retirement center, and Woody died about a year and half later.

The years since then, were Goldie's harvest years - for mom, the months of September and October. I first noticed that mom was failing, eleven years ago. Dear Goldie could drive 30 miles from her home to my house in the city, but I couldn't get her to understand how to get to the Quick Trip at the other end of the block. The time since then has been watching her slip away so gradually that it was tough to see, except when you compared year to year. In her life, Goldie had never encountered a real obstacle, merely temporary setbacks. When we could no longer maintain her in her home and brought her to the center, she planned to get out that afternoon and make a cake for my brother's wife. Goldie was always looking ahead to the future, and was never without plans for it.

See, I told you that in Goldie's eyes, the world was still as full of promise to her as it ever was.

In the end, Goldie's body simply failed on her. But never her spirit.

It is that which we love most about her, and something she gave to all her descendants. That is her legacy - a legacy of spirit.

So, in the end, Goldie accomplished exactly what she set out to do.

Thank you mom. Thank you Goldie. No finer job has ever been done.

Rest well and easy. You've earned it.

.

.

7/26/12 - 5/16/99

NO MA'AM Article List

. · 1 January 2006 · Archived copy · Original

The History of MGTOW

The Feminization of Christianity

The Philosophical Difference Between Capitalism and Marxism

The First Thing To Go Out Of Your Buddy's House When He Gets Married Is…

Make Me a Sandwich!

TBA's Request: Rob's Farewell Post
(Lol! The *second* time I "quit," back in 2007. Curses!)

Women and Children

In The Beginning

Collective Projection

Divide and Conquer

Feminism and Cults

The Almighty All-Encompassing Power of the Pussy

The Women's Vote Question

How to End Domestic Abuse

A Woman's Right to Choose

A Sexist Commenter Sets Me Straight

Women's Studies 101A, Winter Semester - Professor Rob Fedders

The Big Lie

A New Kind of Bigotry

Dear John, It's All Your Fault

From the Comments

I've Got a House! (in fembot bingo)

Lest We Forget: The Super Bowl Sunday Hoax

Amorality

Have Women Invented Anything?

OK, Winston, Start Your Two Minutes of Hate N.O.W.!

The Tao of God, The Way, And Its Power

Achilles Heel

Foundational Arguments

Nihilistic Newspeaking Nitwits

The Thing You Have to Remember about the Will of the People is that Ten Years Ago We Were All Crazy for the Macarena

Reviewing an Old Article

Feminists Are Cat Lovers

The Multi-tasking Pink Proletariat

The Jiggly Room

The Fine Art of TV Repair

Which Came First? Dishonesty or Dissimulation?

Peer Reviewed Research – The Holy Grail of Truth?

WMG's (Weapons of Mass Governments = Western Matriarchal Governments)

Rob for Prime Minister!

Patriarchy 1.0

Men Harmed by Relationships More Than Women

Marriage Staggering

Not All Women Are Like That! (NAWALT)

. · 1 January 2006 · Archived copy · Original

"Meanwhile, as long as there's one honest woman living at the temple atop Mount NAWALT in Tibet..." -- White Knight

"...while I was still searching but not finding - I found one upright man among a thousand, but not one upright woman among them all." -- Ecclesiastes 7:28

.

Mathieu of Boulogne (1295) on NAWALT

From “The Lamentations of Matheolus”

Yet one might disagree with me, criticize my conclusion. and, putting forward the opposite point of view, suggest that my words are completely untrue. For, if some women are evil and perverse and abnormal, it does not necessarily follow that all of them are so cruel and wicked; nor should all of them be lumped together in this general reproach. A speech is badly composed if one's general conclusion is only partly valid. Logic hates this type of argumentation. Nevertheless, this present work, which expresses the pain in my heart, wishes me to exclude nothing, but commands me to push my argument to its logical, if extreme, conclusion, which is that no good woman exists. Solomon, in his works, makes an amazing comment, which supports my case, for he exclaims, "Who could find a virtuous woman?" The implication here is, of course, that this would be impossible. Since he says this, who am I to disagree? Why should I be shocked? What's more, he says that a base and broken man is worth more than a woman when she's doing good. Thus there is no woman worth anything at all; I don't need to look for further proof. That's enough logical demonstration.

My exposition is clearly valid, for woman has - and there is ample evidence of this - deceived all the greatest men in the world; I shall be basing myself on rational argument. If the greatest are deceived, then the lesser naturally fall. In the street where I live they say that what applies to the greatest amongst us applies even more to lesser mortals. Who were the greatest lords? Who has ever heard of greater men than Solomon or Aristotle? Yet good sense, riches and reason were not worth a dung-beetle to them; all were made to look as if they had gone out of fashion; these men were both outmanoeuvred by women, deceived, vanquished, and tamed.

Belfort Bax on NAWALT

It seems not much has changed in a century, but this is a beautiful reply (Notice how he only responds to male feminists? Lol!):

The Fraud of Feminism - Belfort Bax, 1913 pp24-26

At the time of writing, the normal person who has no axe to grind in maintaining the contrary, declares the sun to be shining brightly, but should it answer the purpose of anyone to deny this obvious fact, and declare that the day is gloomy and overcast, there is no power of argument by which I can prove that I am right and he is wrong. I may point to the sun, but if he chooses to affirm that he doesn't see it I can't prove that he does. This is, of course, an extreme case, scarcely likely to occur in actual life. But it is in essence similar to those cases of persons (and they are not seldom met with) who, when they find facts hopelessly destructive of a certain theoretical position adopted by them, do not hesitate to cut the knot of controversy in their own favour by boldly denying the inconvenient facts.

One often has experience of this trick of controversy in discussing the question of the notorious characteristics of the female sex. The Feminist driven into a corner endeavours to save his face by flatly denying matters open to common observation and admitted as obvious by all who are not Feminists. Such facts are the pathological mental condition peculiar to the female sex, commonly connoted by the term hysteria; the absence, or at best the extremely imperfect development of the logical faculty in most women; the inability of the average woman in her judgment of things to rise above personal considerations; and, what is largely a consequence of this, the lack of a sense of abstract justice and fair play among women in general.

The afore said peculiarities of women, as women, are, I contend, matters of common observation and are only disputed by those persons--to wit Feminists--to whose theoretical views and practical demands their admission would be inconvenient if not fatal. Of course these characterisations refer to averages, and they do not exclude partial or even occasionally striking exceptions. It is possible, therefore, although perhaps not very probable, that indi-vidual experience may in the case of certain individuals play a part in falsifying their general outlook; it is possible--although, as I before said not perhaps very probable--that any given man's experience of the other sex has been limited to a few quite exceptional women and that hence his particular experience contradicts that of the general run of mankind. In this case, of course, his refusal to admit what to others are self-evident facts would be perfectly bona fide.

The above highly improbable contingency is the only refuge for those who would contend for sincerity in the Feminist's denials. In this matter I only deal with the male Feminist. The female Feminist is usually too biassed a witness in this particular question.

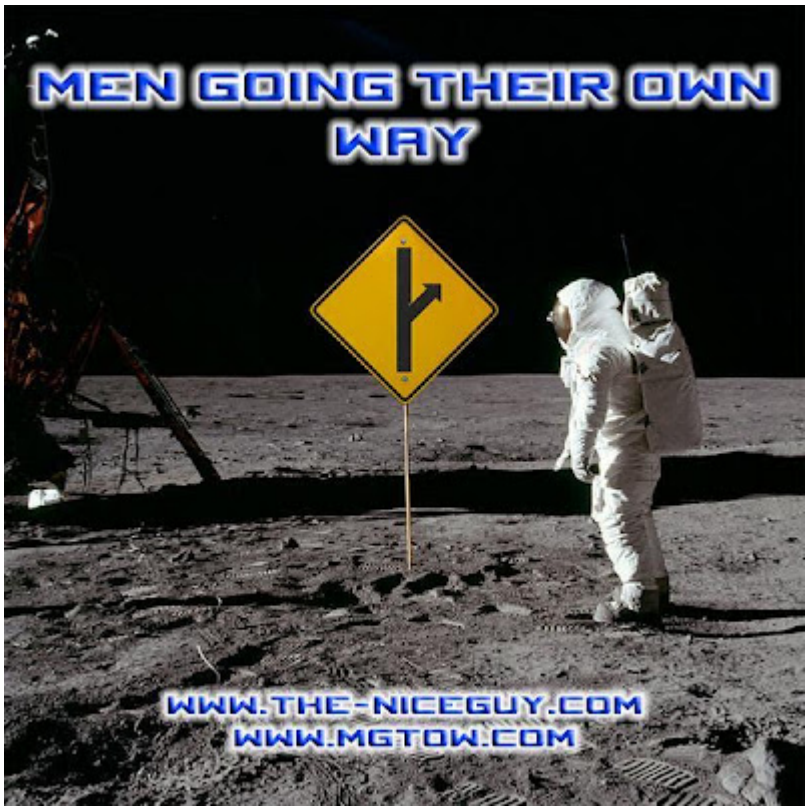
Further Reading:

Bonecrcker #71 – Not All Women Are Like That (NAWALT)

Bonecrcker #151 – The Woman Who Is The Exception Phenomena

The History of Men Going Their Own Way (MGTOW)

. · 2 January 2006 · Archived copy · Original



The History of the Men's Rights Movement According to Fedrz

Ferdinand Bardimu says: "A few days ago, Chuck, David Brandt, and I asked Fedrz to fill us in on the history of the men's rights movement as he knew it. Here's what he had to say":

Well, I don't know if I am perhaps the best guy to give a complete history of the MRM. I have only been around online for about 5 or 6 years now. After fooling around on forums for a while, I started becoming an activist by spamming porno forums with my yahoo group. I was pretty low-class back then (not much has changed, eh?). For ancient history, you'd have to get Zed to talk of all his experiences, because he's been around since before fire was invented. Ragnar as well has been around for a while, and is one of the original MGTOW guys. From what I understand from Zed, many of the "smarter" people in the MRM used to have to talk in sort of a "code" with eachother, and much of the more intellectual things were actually passed from man to man via e-mail rather than publicly on a forum.

I was around for perhaps a year or two before MGTOW made their debut, and it was sorely needed. I had pretty much abandoned the MRM already by that point – although, I am a bit of a hothead with a big mouth, so it is perhaps not fair to blame everything on others… lol, not *everything*.

It was not very intellectual though. Making generalizations would get you the boot. Making even the slightest un-PC argument would get you the boot – unless you could back *everything* up with "peer reviewed research." That was about the only way you could make any case that went against the general views of society. It was silly, actually. Kind of like asking a Jew to defend himself in a Nazi court, and only allowing him to use peer-reviewed arguments approved by a Nazi University. Of course, for every peer-reviewed study you could find supporting your argument,

there were 25 more opposing your argument. Everybody would sit around pissing their pants, worrying about what people would think about us, so writing a few opinioned paragraphs on a forum would require quite a bit of effort, finding links and of course, an out had to be given several times during your spiel – ie. "Not ALL Women Are Like That…" Mostly, I found MRM forums to mainly consist of people finding articles from the MSM and posting them on a forum, followed by a long string of PC one-liner comments such as "Good Article! Great Find!" or "Tsk, tsk, how misandric!" It was really about the only thing that would keep in good standing. Certainly asking questions like, "but *why* are things this way?" and trying to explore such notions, would get you into hotwater in a hurry.

Also, the MRM consisted of many people who didn't want open criticism of feminism, because feminism represented "equality," and that would make us look bad. Many of the more prominent people within the MRM were openly identifying themselves to be feminists, and actually defending the whole hate movement. "Not ALL feminists are like that! Some of us are 'Equity-Feminists!'"

So, as I remember the MRM when I first found it, MRA's called themselves "egalitarians," and what was politically correct to ask for was "our piece of the equality pie." Basically, trying to show that men were victims too, asking for sympathy. That the sympathy never came, and we were obviously getting our asses handed to us time and time again, could never be properly examined, in my opinion.

Another feature that became evident time and time again, was that the women that showed up "to help" were a complete disaster. They would shut down any conversation they didn't like, often by befriending forum members and then pitting one against the other. We had to walk on eggshells, and several times, a woman would get all emotional and threaten to leave and no longer support us… and then the Captain Save-a-ho's would come out of the phone booth and chastise the evil bastard who upset everyone's favourite woman.

Many women were there making sure we knew that "there were still good women out there – look at me! I treat my husband with respect, and love him to bits, and he is always happy with me." In other words, "It's sad that you've gotten kicked in the balls by the past 25 women you've met, but you are just picking the wrong women – don't give up hope, and certainly don't stop trying to find that tootsie roll in the big pile of turds that is society!"

Others would show up and and talk about their big tits, or what kind of panties they were wearing… tantalizing men to be their allies through their sexuality.

Others would convince men that nothing was worth doing unless all the women agreed… if the women didn't agree, then we certainly would never be able to sell it to society. So, if a woman opposed you, that was that. Time to shut it Mister!

Another womanly feature in the MRM was Sorenstam Syndrome, where a woman who merely voiced support for men, and did a few minor things to support "the cause," was automatically highlighted as a fierce warrior, far and above more valuable than the men who were doing much more. Nobody knew who the 5th place guy was, but we certainly knew the woman who was 95th out of 115 – and she was extremely valuable, and her voice would be given much more weight than it was worth.

Once the women showed up "to help," you could pretty much set an egg-timer to watch the destruction that followed.

Like Angry Harry says, "Having a woman help with the MRM is like having a 5 year old help you put up wallpaper. No thanks!"

And, worst of all, everyone only hung out on these forums. It was totally impotent, and certainly things were not

moving forward intellectually.

So, a few guys – like Zed and Ragnar, got together – they even travelled to meet eachother, and they discussed what could be done about the situation. One thing they apparently observed was that men were so pigheaded and stubborn, and undermined eachother so much, that it was like each Man was Going Their Own Way. And thus, the term MGTOW was born. It is left as "MGTOW" on purpose, so that it is unpronounceable – slicksters that they were!

MGTOW did not neccessarily mean "marriage strike" in the beginning, although it certainly had large elements within it that supported that. What I understood it more to mean was "Go your own way! Get off these restrictive forums! Start your own blog! Say what you want to say, and don't give a shit about the rest!"

And, that's how I entered into the fray with MGTOW.

We were just a few ragtag bloggers, and we were quite under-educated in many ways, coming out of the PCness that had been bashing us up the side of the head. There was quite a bit of anger in the beginning, and we were certainly not the nicest of people – we spent a lot of time telling people who didn't like what we had to say to simply "fuck off!" Fred X called everyone a femcunt about 60 times in each article, and Eternal Bachelor was a good writer who skewered people left and right… and we all basically supported a free speech policy, even to our enemies… but… that also gave us free speech, and man did we use it to attack anyone so stupid to come and white knight us. There were a lot of pissed off guys out there!

But, what we did agree to was to link to eachother, and to support eachother. And we did. Anyone who started up a MGTOW blog instantly got a shout-out from us to the rest of the community, and recieved a link on the sidebar.

This "each man for himself" mode made a "free market of ideas." Some bloggers made it, and others didn't. But, the result was that our intellectual ability went through the roof (after we calmed down a bit). Many politically incorrect things started to be examined and researched. The whole notion of "equality" began to be examined, and so on. History began to get talked about sometimes, and politics questioned. We began to form our own "Studies of the Sexes."

And then "Game" entered into the picture, and it supported many of the observations and arguments we had been making… namely, rather than asking for sympathy and begging for a few scraps from the table of equality, things began to come together in an explainable way of why things had developed the way they did, and how this whole sordid mess was created, and why so many of the earlier arguments were completely useless – such as demanding male equality in the home and family being a complete fantasy due to biological circumstances like hypergamy. If you had tried that argument before, you would have found yourself under quite a bit of attack for not being an "egalitarian."

And, well… that's the way I seen it develop since I've been involved. In my opinion, the two neccessary ingredients that were missing, have now been provided. The first was MGTOW turning men's weakness of pigheadedness into a strength instead of a hindrance, and the second is the introduction of Game's knowledge of Sexual Dynamics, which supported so many of our own ideas and observations.

In fact, I think we now have what is neccessary to create a serious body of intellectual work that will stand the test of time. Now we just have to keep building it… and we will… because we are men!

Additional Comment Made by Ragnar:

Just stumbled upon this blog and thanks Fedrz for writing the History of MGTOW. Allow me to correct a minor thing. It was Meikyo and I who got together in Hickory N.C. in October 2004. Zed was invited and supposed to come also, but was unable due to illness. The MGTOW manifest was written by me according to the notes Meikyo took on our meeting. It was originally posted on the now defunct “Our Board” as “My Way” or “Men Going Their Own Way”.

Today it has been revised several times. Basicly the wording (spelling, my errors) and a few additions were made. Jadedguy did a lot of rewriting and commenting. We moved to a board set up by Zed, we actually had several boards which all seem to be defunct by now, but MGTOW lives on in the minds of men.
-
A small comment to some ideas presented here. The talk was about womens rights. Basically men make society by bonding and standing shoulder by shoulder to defend it. This means that men have all the negative rights as they are the makers of civilisation. We give women some positive rights in order to make society function better.

These rights can clearly be discussed and changed by men. Women can leave our society if they do not like it. This is the only negative right women have. When they stay in Our Society they must abide by Our rules!

Don’t ever forget that we, the men, are the makers of civilisation.

We, the Men are “We the People” – period!

.
Further Reading:
.
Zenpriest #56 – MGTOW’s Trademark Copyright Philosophy
.
Zenpriest #58 – The MRM’s Perpetual War with Itself
.
No Ma’am’s Guide to Bird-watching in the Manosphere

The Feminization of Christianity

. · 3 January 2006 · Archived copy · Original

QUOTE: "Do not think it is different from other philosophies.

Zen monks, Jesus' offer the other cheeck, Gandhi no violence way are all the same. Like it or not."

Jesus beat the shit out of people with a braided rope too. He also flouted the authorities and humiliated religious leaders. And his principles stood above all else.

In other words, Jesus was no Ned Flanders, and had many masculine qualities.

It has only been recently that Christianity has come to be synonymous with "wimp." For much of history it wasn't that way, because Christianity celebrates the masculine. In fact, much of the "struggle" of the Israelites wandering through the desert is about a struggle of the masculine over the feminine – if you understand that many of the cultures they encountered were the same matriarchal descendents which Abram left behind when he went his own way after making a covenant with God.

And the Israelites were not nice about it either.

Take Moses' wife. (Btw, philosophically speaking – when looking at the "message" of the Bible from a metaphorical sense, Adam = Noah = Abraham = Moses = Jesus. They all metaphorically refer to the same "message.") Anywho, back to Moses' wife. When they encountered the tribe she came from (The "M"-something or others), they showed no mercy – even though before they were more or less allies, and after defeating them they killed every man, woman and child, and wiped them from the face of the earth. God commanded them to do this with many cultures they encountered – in fact, the Israelites in the Old Testament under Moses were a warring bunch of nomadic barbarians more than anything else.

The war between the Masculine and the Feminine in the Bible is something which seems to be carefully covered up, but if you were to get into the old texts and the old cultures, and understand that the Hebrew often clearly refers to their greatest threats in the feminine (like in languages such as French), as well as the gods they were fighting against were most often pure sex goddesses or their male consorts…

Further, "God" himself existed in the first civilization of Sumeria. The Sumerian civlization knew of "El" – the God of the house of Shem, the son of Noah. (Noah's other son disappeared somewhere, while the other rejected El because El was the God of the Flood, and his son was the ancestor of Gilgamesh who swore vengeance upon him for killing his ancestors.) Anyway, the Sumerians worshipped all gods – and "El" – the god of Shem, existed in those times and in that culture. The plural of "El" is "Elohim." This is the God that Abram took with him as he left this multi-god (multi-truth = feminine) culture and Went His Own Way into the wilderness.

Now, here is where is gets kinda interesting. Apparently, what the Sumerians loved to do with their gods was "play soap opera" with them. (Abram's father was an idol maker, remember). Every "god" that they had also had an opposite sex counterpart, and within the culture, these goddesses/gods (goddesses came before gods in those cultures) were constantly marrying and divorcing, cheating on eachother and so on. Some of the ancient stuff they have found are so pornographic they would make a hardcore internet porn surfer blush, I understand. Many ancient rituals, of course, also include elements of sexual acts in them.

However, "El" was very unpopular in this culture.

Why?

Because El had no wife. (A Marriage Striker!!!) He was pretty much the only god in Sumerian culture that had no opposite sex counterpart, and the people didn't like that all.

"El/Elohim" of the House of Shem/House of Abraham, was a God that did not include sex worship.

'Elohim" is the repudiation of the rule of the feminine principle (sex worship = the feminine = animalness) over the masculine principle (reason – a covenant with one Truth).

It is very telling about what has happened to our culture in that Christianity used to represent something very masculine, whereas today the first thought when you hear Christian is "Ned Flanders."

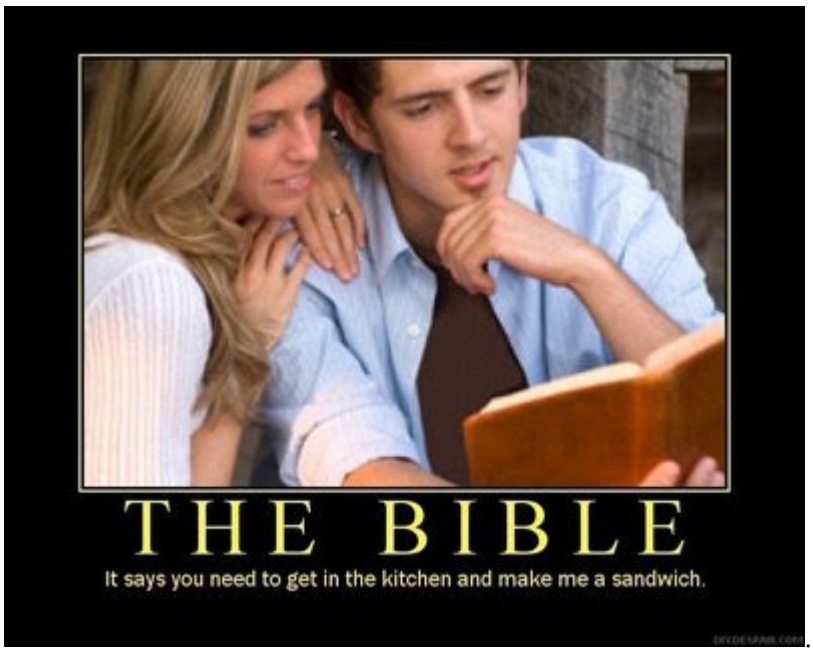
Do you picture Ned Flanders in knight's armour when you think of "Christian?"

Whatever one believes of Christianity, to note how this once masculine religion which founded our civilization has become so thoroughly feminized is, well, noteworthy.

QUOTE: With respect for the quality and helpfulness of your posts and for what your OT sermon just now was trying to teach, it might be worth considering that a sizeable portion of your audience probably doesn't know what all those biblical references mean. Of course, many have probably heard of Moses and Noah and even Elohim, but how many know what characteristic they represent? Equating Adam with Noah and Abraham and Moses and Jesus is courageous OT character exegesis, even for an OT scholar, but the average Joe would find this fundamentally confusing, right-headed though it may be. You've also covered a lot of ground – can you break your main points down into easily digestible portions?

Yeah, this is something which has been percolating inside of me for a long time – it is directly related to my views about Absolute Truth's struggle with Relative Truth. I think I have been trying to write about this in one way or another for at least 5 years or more now… slowly on it is coming clearer into focus for me. This is not strictly "Bible," btw, but also includes a hobby of mine which is studying ancient cultures etc. – often in regard to religions/myths and "The Fall of Man." So, being raised in a religious environment when I was younger, plus having a "hobby" of sometimes delving into ancient cultures just for fun (where I regrettably don't save links as, lol, religiously as for the MRM), plus what I have learned over the past few years from being involved with MRM… studying Marxism… Relative Truth vs. Absolute Truth… The Power of Female Sexuality… Game…

Well, if we were ever getting into "Book of Rob" stuff, I guess this is it, because I don't know another person I've ever read who shares my views – but I've never found an O/T scholar, minister, or layman who wasn't apologizing for the Bible's misogyny or trying to downplay it, either. But I am Fedrz, the great misogynist!
.



It was when I started to learn “other things” that I started thinking, “Instead of downplaying or apologizing for these things, why doesn’t anyone ask *why* they felt it was so important?” Then with realizing the nature of other cultures that surrounded the O/T, and what their culture was like… it starts to become clear that Adam and Eve were struggling with Absolute Truth vs. Relative Truth in the Garden, and Abram, for instance, was making a covenant with God (Absolute Truth) and leaving a culture filled with Multiple Gods (Relative Truths). In Marxism, one of the features I keep talking about is how they abolish Absolute Truth and live solely by Relative Truth. And also, when I discuss “thought patterns” of males and females, I am often trying to point out that men have the ability “to find Absolute Truth” because of their patterns, while females are mired in Relative Truth because of theirs.

Almost all religions/myths follow one simple over-riding theme: There once was a paradise, man screwed up, and because he screwed up he now has to struggle on this earth… and one thing they all offer at the end is a return to the paradise lost. (Hope – like in Pandora’s Box).

The Old Testament figures are the same general theme.

Adam lived in paradise but fell from grace because he ignored the Absolute Truth and let Eve convince him to follow Relative Truth. God kicked him out of the Garden for it, but also made a promise to Adam after that if Adam followed God’s ways (Absolute Truth), he would find salvation and Eternal Life (Return to the Garden/Paradise/Hope).

During the days of Noah, he was the only one who followed the ways of God (Absolute Truth). Everyone else was living in falseness (Relative Truth). Noah followed God’s ways and he was saved. After the flood, God again makes promises to Noah – it is basically the Garden Story over again, except that Noah followed the Truth and was saved… death to the Relative Truth (the drowned civilization of pre-flood earth) and Noah again is told that following the Truth is “the way.”

During the days of Abram/Abraham, he leaves the corruptness of the Sumerian Culture or its descendent cultures – depending on your biblical timeline – Sumerian culture is the oldest civilization; I think the stories are about the times after the end of the great flood that occurred at end of the Pleistocene Ice Age some 12,000 years ago - "the post-deluge world/culture" - if you were to follow the Bible literally, Abram was 50 years old when Noah died, and Noah died around 300 years after the great flood. However, if you follow backwards from the timeline of Christ, Abram lived much later in history, and should come from around 2000 B.C. Which is it? Who cares – the “theme”

is what is trying to be conveyed – Post Sumerian Cultures like Babylon are related in the way that Britain is related to America, or "The West" – the one directly birthed the next. This place was much like ours is today – lots of sex worship etc. etc. which, as what we know about men and women, leads to a lot of women leading men into falseness (Relative Truth over Absolute Truth – the Garden Story). Once he leaves, God makes a covenant with Abraham, which is again, the same thing: Follow me! Leave Relative Truth behind (animalness = living in the moment, or living in Relative Truth). Follow the Absolute Truth, this is "The Way."

During the days of Moses, he leads the Israelites out of Egypt – again, an exodus (Adam out of the Garden, Noah out of pre-flood civilization, Abram out of post-flood civilization, and now Moses out of Egypt). And… what are the Israelites marching in front of them? Why, the Ark of the Covenant. (God's Truth is leading them – and defending them).

Jesus is "The Fulfillment of the Covenant" – The "theme" of the Old Testament is completed by the coming of the Messiah. In fact, this is also the reason for the genealogies in the Old Testament – to show that Jesus is indeed, a descendent of Adam, and Abraham, and thus, a "fulfillment of God's Covenant." The "metaphorical purpose" has become complete with Jesus.

- Adam falls from the graces of Truth and gets kicked out of Paradise.
- Noah struggles and follows the Truth and is saved.
- Abram struggles and follows the Truth and is saved.
- Moses/The Israelites struggle, and following the Truth saves them.
- Jesus also struggles, and defeats them completely (ie. The Temptations of Satan – Jesus defeats the struggles of the flesh, including death – the fulfillment of God's Word to Adam).

Jesus finally "wins" the struggle of Adam/Noah/Abram/Moses (Mankind) and is restored to Paradise.

Heh, heh, of course, Jesus also makes a new covenant – known as the New Testament, but that is a different subject.

As for "El," well, this comes from Sumerian Culture. This is the "first" culture – so, let's just call it Post Deluge/Flood Civilization, really. There were eight people who stepped off of Noah's Ark: Noah, his sons Japeth, Shem, and Ham and their wives. Japeth buggered off somewhere (I've heard speculations of Europe or Africa – who cares, if it is metaphorical story), and Ham was the one who "fell out" with Noah – remember, Ham found Noah naked in his drunkenness and called his two brothers to show them their father's pathetic state. When Japeth and Shem see Noah's state, they avert their eyes and cover his nakedness, and when Noah awakes and finds out what Ham had done, he curses him. Ham/Ham's descendents end up leaving – and it is Ham's descendents that found the "post-deluge culture," and it is Ham's descendents that try to build the Tower of Babel in rebellion against God, in response to the flood. In Sumerian legend as well, there is mention of Noah (he was a semi-god), and Ham is also mentioned as the son of Noah, and the great-grandfather of Nimrod (Gilgamesh?) of the Sumerians/Post-Deluge Civilization. The Bible and Sumerian culture are intricately linked – and Sumerian culture and the Biblical story are continually warring with each-other. (It is fairly well acknowledged by now that the early Genesis stories come from Sumerian Culture, btw – I believe even the Catholic Church has acknowledged this – it doesn't really discredit the Bible).

Now, the way the Sumerians became "the first" civilization was based upon their military techniques, but the success of their civilization were based upon two things: Every time they conquered another "tribe," they simply adopted them into their culture and accepted their way – including their gods. And the second is, there was no "competing culture." It truly was a "one world order." It was totalitarian in the way Marxism wishes to be – when there is only "one order" and no competing one to destroy it, then there will be heaven on earth – the Marxist

mantra. (This is where you get the “Masons” – who build the Tower of Babel, and other various occult crapola that all the way-out tin-foil hatters keep yacking about. It is pure speculation even beyond the speculation of ancient history, and quite frankly, it pisses me off they obfuscate things so much with that garbage, while leading people away from THE TRUTH!). So, anyway, the people that were conquered by the culture didn’t really object too much with it, because the conquering culture simply adopted the gods of the conquered into their own culture. The conquered didn’t really much care, as it were.

So, as Sumerian culture developed, so did the amount of gods they had. In fact, they had gods for everything. The god of wind, the god of sun, the god of rain, the god of harvest… and so on. You name it, there was a god for it.

Of course, each “god” represents a particular “truth.” This became a culture that followed multiple truths because they had multiple gods. This is the exact same “philosophy” as the female mind produces – Relative/Multiple Truths. Guess what following “multiple truths” lead to? You guessed it: Totalitarianism. The first civilization was not “free.” Nothing that lives by Relative Truth/The Female Principle can be “free.” (Only the TRUTH will set you free!). We all know this – the more we live by the female, the less freedom we have.

Anyway, in this culture as well, was the god “El.” In Sumerian culture, the god of the flood was “El.” And when they refer to it in the plural, it becomes Elohim. Think of it this way – Abram’s father was an idol maker in this culture, and one single idol of the god of the flood would be called “El,” whereas a table full of “El idols” would be called “Elohim.” Don’t forget, being forbidden to worship idols did not happen until much later, when Moses showed up on the scene and wrote the Pentateuch (The first books of the Bible). It is possible that Noah and his son Shem, and Abram, actually did worship idols that represented God.

El, being the god of the flood, was also therefore, the god which brought Noah and his sons through the flood. This is “God” in the Bible. In the beginning of the Bible, God is called “Elohim,” as well as in other various Hebrew texts. That is where it comes down from Sumerian culture into the Judeo culture.

Now, something that is significant here is that Abram left a culture with multiple gods which represent multiple truths and he rejected it all in favour of monotheism and one Truth.

This is the basis of the Ten Commandments, when in the first part, God establishes that he IS the truth (put no other gods before me = put no other truths before me = Absolute Truth), and the next parts are dictating to behave opposite of animals – Do not kill/steal/commit adultery/covet… yada yada. If you live under the female principle, you are living under sex worship, which is animalness, which leads to multiple truths and falseness. This is what Abraham rejected and instead, went into the wilderness, with his covenant with the Absolute Truth leading the way.

In the ancient Hebrew texts, the worst of demons are always female. In the Hebrew language, Sodom and Gomorrah are referred to in “the feminine,” and in fact, are the only two cities in the entire region which are denoted as such. Both were wicked – and very much wicked in sexuality – or, the female principle.

When Moses is walking around in the desert, they are always fighting against “false gods” or according to Fedrz, “false truths.”

Baal, for example, is mentioned often throughout the Bible – Baal is a male god who is associated with the goddess Ashtaroth. Baal was under the influence of the female principle – a kitchen bitch, adhering to Relative Truth. In the Bible, all of the names of the female goddesses are removed from the scriptures, but, it is likely that if there was Baal worship, there was also Ashtaroth worship, and so on.

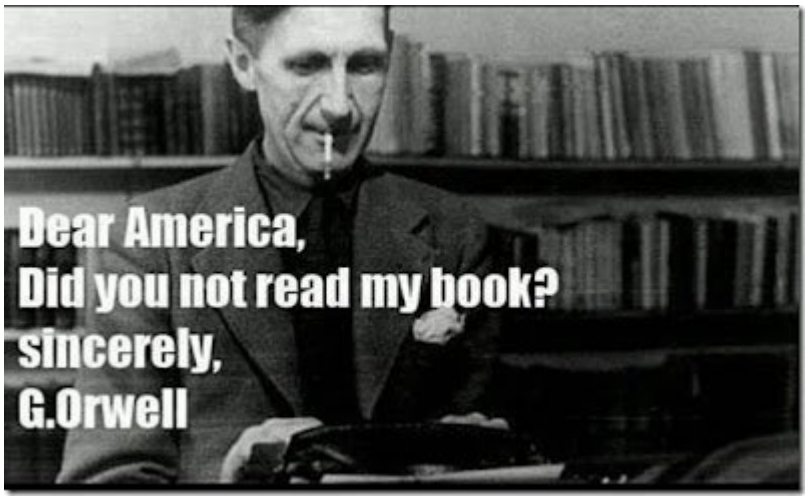
God/El had no wife – it was the repudiation of the female dominating the male.

When you strip things back and classify the Old Testament as a Patriarchal Religion, you will see that they were surrounded by Matriarchal Religions and goddess/sex worship.

Given all the other things which we know about the problems of male/female, and the way we see how easily females lead males astray from the Truth – even here in the MRM, much of Christianity's ancient anti-feminine stance makes an awful lot of sense… and has an awful lot of relevance to the modern day and the sorry state that so many men find themselves in.

Truth, Truth, Truth... What is The Truth?

. · 5 January 2006 · Archived copy · Original



.

"Totalitarianism, however, does not so much promise an age of faith as an age of schizophrenia. A society becomes totalitarian when its structure becomes flagrantly artificial: that is, when its ruling class has lost its function but succeeds in clinging to power by force or fraud. Such a society, no matter how long it persists, can never afford to become either tolerant or intellectually stable...

Totalitarianism demands, in fact, the continuous alteration of the past, and in the long run probably demands a disbelief in the very existence of objective truth." -- George Orwell

QUOTE: "Unfortunately, the Founding Fathers/John Locke got the order wrong. The way that it is actually practiced is the only way that it can be done (since we are on the inside looking out):

1 – Natural Law = Objective Truth
2 – God's Law = Absolute Truth
3 – Civil Law = Relative/Subjective Truth

This is the correct order because religion also uses the Scientific Method (Objective Truth), just not very well.

—

Yes, you are right – I have struggled with this before too, and this is why I say the need for Absolute Truth to be placed highest, *may actually be important to* ***human nature*** beyond even the scope of whether that truth is actually "true."

I have come into this from the scope of what Karl Marx is "trying to do."

Well, one thing Marx says he wants to do is to "Dethrone God and Destroy Capitalism."

In other words – he wants to destroy the Absolute Truth.

How come? Because it prevents him from manipulating the subjective truth into overcoming the objective truth. (The world of Orwell's 1984).

Humans have “the ability” to be blind to the “objective truth” because of how they allow their brains to process “subjective truth.” In other words, humans often get so confused with the subjective/relative truth that they manage to convince *themselves* that the objective truth does not matter… that’s why there has to be an Absolute Truth *above* the Objective Truth.

Take the way constitutions of free countries peg themselves to an Absolute Truth, whereas countries without freedom have no Absolute Truth, but only Subjective Truth – with the subjective truth *creating* objective truth.

“We hold these truths to be self-evident, that all men are created equal, that ***they are endowed by their Creator with certain unalienable rights;*** *that among these are Life, Liberty and Pursuit of Happiness. That to secure these rights, Governments are instituted among men…”* — United States Declaration of Independence

versus the United Nations “constitution” (a knock off of all totalatiarian gov’t):

“The States Parties to the present Covenant recognize that, in the enjoyment of those ***rights provided by the State****… the State may subject such rights only to such limitations* ***as are determined by law.”*** — Article Four of the UN Covenant on Economic, Social and Cultural Rights.

The reason why the Founding Fathers placed rights in the hands of the Creator is because what God gives only God can take away… in other words, the tendency of mankind to trick himself with the subjective truth into not believing in the objective truth is completely curtailed by placing “rights” *out of reach* of mankind.

If we ever end up re-writing our constitutions to remove "God" from them, please, oh please, let me get my rights from Santa or the Easter Bunny, rather than *the state* and its subjective *laws.* I have much more faith that Santa won't come like a thief in the night to take back my rights, than I do for the government refraining from curtailing my rights in the future - especially in a democracy.

Whether “God is real” matters not so much as that “God ‘pins’ down the Truth” so that we don’t convince ourselves that what is all about us is not true… the same way we have convinced ourselves of such nonsense as feminism has produced. As far as anyone “objectively” looking at the situation, they would declare we are *nuts* and should just open our eyes… and yet, what is happening in society? We are choosing to place the Subjective above the Objective.

And that is very dangerous!

Now, think about how looooooooooong it takes to create “civilization.” It does not happen overnight. We have been “following the Bible” for approximately 3,300 years. (The Pentateuch was written by Moses, and Moses is thought to be contemporary of 1300BC or so).

During that timeframe, “the Truth” has more or less *stayed the same.* Humans are prevented, by the existence of an unchanging Absolute Truth that trumps all others, from *convincing themselves* that the subjective truth is higher than the objective.

Sooner or later, humans will convince themselves to overlook some sort of “objective truth” in favour of the “subjective truth” and then “Absolute Truth” will wipe them from the face of the earth… just like Sodom & Gommorah.

Perhaps it will be that we convince ourselves that sexual monogamy is silly… that this religion thing telling us not to hump like monkeys is just that – religious trappings. (Using the subjective truth to convince ourselves of what

we wish to be true, rather than what is actually true). And so, everyone throws away their sexual restraint because they believe they are seeing objective truth, and perhaps 40 years later, STD's start becoming so rampant throughout the population that the fertility rates begin to decline… or perhaps, the "unordering" of the male –> female –> child hierarchy, while it looks to be "objectively smart" in our heads, turns out to be something which *repels* men and women from eachother, and our birthrates decline below replacement levels… until we are *wiped from the face of the earth*.

"SMACK!" says the Absolute Truth.

Start over and don't make that same mistake again!

How would a civilization manage to "stay on the right path" for thousands of years, while always having to battle this human tendency? I suspect that it could not, unless it somehow managed to *contain* this human tendency… and the best way to do that is to place an Absolute Truth above all others – for those things we know "we need to do" in order to sustain ourselves, but have a tendency to wish wasn't true.

Whether that truth is real or not, is less significant in this purpose, than the need for Truth to exist.

I think it was Voltaire who quipped "If God did not exist, it would be neccessary to invent Him." (Although, I don't know if he was referring to my argument… but you get the point).

What Karl Marx believes he can do is change the world into a Utopia by manipulating truth.

"The philosophers have only interpreted the world in different ways. The point, however, is to change it."
— Karl Marx

He means he is going to take philosophy, and use it to manipulate reality in order that he might change the world. And this is what he does, by using the Relative Truth uber Alles, which his predecessor Hegel identified with the Hegelian Dialectic.

1 – Relative Truth
2 – Relative Truth
3 – Relative Truth

(And, as I have pointed out elsewhere, this is the Feminine Principle, and it is also the "animal principle." Animals live completely from moment to moment – everything is subjective to them – their instincts lead, not their reason).

Karl Marx believes, through use of evolution, that he can "bend the truth" and by "bending reality" he can "evolve mankind into a *new* form of human" – one that has never existed before.

He believes if he can manipulate reality, he can remove man's greed and desire to put the self first etc. etc. and then a completely new form of mankind will emerge, unencumbered by mankind's worst traits, and therefore, he will have *defeated God* because he will have created Heaven on Earth. (Marx wants to make the Lion lie down with the Lamb).

One of the reasons why the Bible is so damaging to Marx's plans is because it places Truth *out of his reach* and therefore Marx is severely handicapped in manipulating the truth for his own designs.

And, like I pointed out before, it appears that Marxism and Animal-ness are very closely related in how they

process “Truth,” and in fact, Marxism is as old as the Garden of Eden itself.

So…, lol, I guess what I mean is, there are two roads here:

One can look at Truth for the purpose of “seeking Truth.”

and

There is also a human need for ***A*** truth to exist, in order to “temper” man’s mind, so that he doesn’t behave like a lemming and kill himself with his brain – which sometimes can create realities inside of our heads that don’t really exist (or will unwittingly kill us).

QUOTE: "As long as those above are supporting a specific Absolute Truth, those below (who are willing to accept truth that is independent of evidence) will be prevented from mucking things up, in a specific way.

But when those in charge wish to move in a different direction, all that they have to do is make a few minor modifications, like a farmer changing the fence lines..."

Yes, I know. This is why I quite often look at books like the Bible, and, realizing how incredibly wise it is in regard to understanding human nature, I have concluded that regardless of whether God exists or not, that book knows more about human nature than I, or anyone else around me does… so the Bible ought not to be dismissed lightly.

Also, keep in mind that this is how cultures “grow.”

They start off small, with perhaps a few hundred people hanging around on an internet forum… within a larger culture that perhaps might not even acknowledge they exist… but eventually, if their formula is correct, they will out-succeed the rest by following their form of “Truth” until they overtake the culture.

It appears that all cultures start out small, adhering to one form of truth (Cultural Hegemony), and because they have got “the right kind of formula in their truth” they grow and grow over time, until they overtake the culture.

That seems to be the way it works… rather than a small group of people convincing a large group of people of the error of their ways. Without “one truth” no Cultural Hegemony can occur, and thus, neither will civilization appear.

QUOTE: "For something to be an actual Absolute Truth, it would need to be pinned to objective reality, in order to be truly “out of reach of mankind” while being directly accessible to all."

I think the exact same thing… sometimes I say, when we identify a Truth, we have to “pin it to the wall.” (So that some asshole doesn’t come along and try to alter it with subjective truth).

But how can you pin any objective truth to anything, unless there is an absolute to pin it to?

Btw, I have sometimes philosophized if Absolute Truth can be created outside of the religious realm – with mathematics, for instance. Could mathematics be used as a replacement “pin”?

For example:

If we know that divorce/feminism causes ever falling birth rates… and yet we also know we need X number of

babies to move forward… then the maximum tolerance of divorce that society can handle without destructing is X% of marriages ending in divorce.

Can that create a “morality” that humans can follow?

BUT, then you also start getting into the law of unintended consequences – as in, is it also then “morally proper” to say “this is the maximum amount of old people we can tolerate in society, while still sustaining ourselves… therefore…”

Scary business, when we think we are God.

The Bible knows a lot more than people give it credit for. I suspect it might still suprise us and show that it still knows more than we do… like how STD’s due to promiscuousness are causing our fertility rates to fall. (It is not just that we are choosing NOT to have children, but also, we are physically having more problems having them… in many cases due to STD’s).

Previous Index Next

MGTOW

“If it’s not right, Go Your Own Way!”

.....
..oooO.....
..(....).....
….\..(.....
…. _/.....
……....Oooo..
……....(....)…
……..)../....
.....(_/.....
.....

"People have always spoken of the absolutely necessary [absolutnotwendigen] being, and have taken pains, not so much to understand whether and how a thing of this kind can even be thought, but rather to prove its existence.... if by means of the word unconditioned I dismiss all the conditions that the understanding always requires in order to regard something as necessary, this does not come close to enabling me to understand whether I then still think something through a concept of an unconditionally necessary being, or perhaps think nothing at all through it." -- Immanuel Kant, *Critic of Pure Reason*

.

Words are but symbols for the relations of things to one another and to us; nowhere do they touch upon absolute truth. ... Thus it is, today, after Kant, an audacious ignorance if here and there, especially among badly informed theologians who like to play philosopher, the task of philosophy is represented as being quite certainly "comprehending the Absolute with the consciousness," somewhat completely in the form

"the Absolute is already present, how could it be sought somewhere else?" as Hegel has expressed it. --
Friedrich Nietzche, Philosophy in the Tragic Age of the Greeks

---

Further Reading:

The Garden of Eden, Absolute Truth, and Relative Truth

Rising Up from Being Beasts in the Field

The Feminization of Christianity

In the Beginning

The Male's Ability to Reach the Truth

Totalitarianism and the Female Principle

The Pitfalls of Inviting More Government into Our Lives

. · 5 January 2006 · Archived copy · Original

QUOTE: "Rob has written a lot about the pitfalls of inviting even more government intrusion into and control of your life."

“Free men” don’t beg for a piece of the pie from “the master.”

Free men bake their own damn pies, and tell everyone else to “fuck off!”

If you think the government will solve your problems with shared parenting, you are begging for your piece.

If you think the government will solve your DV problems with DV Shelters for men, you are begging for your piece.

I prefer to associate with men who don’t realy upon government to solve their problems.

Government is only preferable because it is removed from the imperfections of “mankind” and transformed into some entity nobody really understands, called “government.” It's because government is abstract from most human thinking that people believe they can foist their personal problems off onto some “generic” entity called government which we can imagine in our minds should be perfect. History has shown is this exactly the wrong approach – over and over again! And yet, because government is removed from the “personal” and thus also, “personal responsiblity”, it's easy for us to blame all of our problems upon this impersonal “entity” which does not represent us personally, but is in the abstract, and thus, “perfectable” in our minds.

No wife thinks her husband is perfect. But she thinks the abstract of government, which she doesn’t understand by nature, is somehow “perfect” because it is abstract.

Government “permission” is not the answer.

In fact, it is THE PROBLEM!

QUOTE: "I hear you Rob, but how does that pertain to men’s rights? For example, most fathers are awarded custody about 7% of the time. Women obtain custody 93% of the time. And of course there are a whole host of other men’s issues. Do you have any position on these at all? That’s cool if you don’t; I’m just curious."

OK, But I am bit going to write out a big explanation – however, I am going to ask you to answer me.

Almost every shared parenting activist cannot manage to write about their goals without decelaring… “except in cases of Abuse!!!!” Now, if you want to follow that route, and say that women will recieve *less* custody, and *less* money from a non-abusive father than from an abusive one (which will be the case), should I believe there will be ***less*** or ***more*** men falsely accused of abuse, as a result of shared parenting?

Second question,

Do you think those people who advocate for Shared Parenting, despite knowing the increased amount of fathers

that will be falsely charged with abuse… should they be let off the hook and be allowed to blame this increase in false abuse cases on the government – or are the Shared Parenting advocates also directly responsible for their actions, and the results?

Is only the government accountable, or also those MRA's who will be sticking ***more*** innocent men into prison for their own personal benefit… and yet, blaming it all on the abstract, impersonal, "government?"

So far, in my time in the MRM, I have not yet ONCE seen a Shared Parenting activist address these issues:

1 – They are increasing the motivation for women to NOT have an amicable divorce. In fact, they are trying to SOCIALLY SANCTION divorce, by coming to a "consensus." (Rob pukes up a bit of Marxist bile).

2 – They are increasing the motivation for wives to make false accusations of abuse in order to gain money.

3 – They are increasing the motivation for wives to make false accusations of abuse in order to gain sole-custody.

4 - They totally wish to sidestep that shared-parenting will automatically restrict the right to freely move about the country. As in, if you are divorced and in a shared parenting situation, you will have to go to court and *beg* a judge to allow you to relinquish your shared parenting *responsibility* (which will eventually become mandatory) should you need to relocate to another city to find employment or whatnot - and so will your ex, and so will the person who remarries your ex. What a great way to bring in "papers please" type of totalitarianism into our society when we travel/move about the land. It's all for the children, after all.

The advocation of this "issue which we can all agree upon" will do *enormous* damage to "men." Just not currently divorced fathers, I suppose – who seem quite willing to fuck over the fathers that will come in the years after them, in order that they may get their piece of pie today.

But, some of those fathers that come later will be their *sons!*

QUOTE: "Perhaps, as F. Roger Devlin says, it is time to initiate full custody."

You are certainly right about Devlin – *he gets it!* Especially when you see him at the end of his "Rotating Polyandry & It's Enforcers" essay. Of course, "It's Enforcers" was written by Baskerville – yet *another* shared parenting advocate, and yet *another* academic "leader" that is "acceptable." Devlin notes, at the end, that indeed it appears that a system of sole father custody is most likely what is needed – and I applaud his courage in *seeking truth.* For, as he notes, as far as Baskerville goes, while he might agree with sole father custody in theory, he doesn't believe it is acheivable, *it is too fringe* and therefore some form of shared parenting… yada yada… equality… yada yada… I have no brains… yada yada… because I have a Ph D … yada yada… and I have been brainwashed… yada yada…

Devlin asks a very poignant question after this (paraphrasing): "How ridiculous was it for gay activists 30 years ago to talk of same sex marriage, until today where it is talked of without a smirk on people's faces? Surely, it is not a stretch for fathers to reinstate that which has always been in the face of what we have today!"

Yet, this is the wimpiness what we hear today.

Devlin makes a point after that, which I also fully agree with, that most of these shared parenting activists seem to miss – *the point of activism is to* ***move*** *the fringe.* The fringe controls the middle of the road.

Those of you who have been following along with my posts over the past while must know what I think about the "Absolute Truth" and the need to "take a stand."

This is exactly the same thing, you guys.

Shared parenting is 1 + 1 = 2.3

We all know reality is 1 + 1 = 2

I don't support living in a world where the math doesn't work – and shared parenting doesn't work.

Short term solutions = long term problems.

It is not responsible for parents of today to foist their problems onto kids of tomorrow… the way the parents of my generation dropped the ball and foisted no-fault-divorce the next generations… this is **our** no-fault-divorce. I just cannot imagine absolutely any benefit that shared parenting will add to humanity in the future.

What the hell are people thinking?

Involving government into the family even more????

Even Baskerville – a man whose fame is made upon being screwed by government doesn't seem to get it.

Everyone sees the government as some abstract "perfectable entity" rather the faulty individuals in front of them. That's why they run to them asking for their piece of the pie, along with the other serfs.

I guess the thing what gets me so hopped up about things like Shared Parenting and DV Shelters… or rather "me too Mra-ism" is, this is *exactly* the reason I have been shrieking about Marxism for years! And while people certainly understand when they see the word Marxism that looks like, and sounds like, that thing called Marxism – not enough of us seem to get it, what it is about, and it is *crucial* that we do.

Look, this isn't a fight between men and women so much as it is a fight against our freedom.

Women are simply the best way to start the machine to self-destruct.

But, they only start it!

We finish it!

It will be us who closes the barn door – the backlash consolodates the gains.

They said they wanted to remove children from their parents… obviously, it is easier to remove fathers than mothers… and if you follow the Marxist line further, it should be obvious that upon "the backlash" that the fathers will remove the mothers from their children.

When might this happen?

I don't know… maybe they will wait until around 50% or more of children aren't raised in homes with fathers. Whenever that may be.

Feminism is toast… this bus is turning *our way.* You can tell me if you think it is an accident or not. According to the agenda's stated goals themselves, it is about time for them to discard feminism and allow a "backlash."

So far, all I see is "Marxist approved Backlash."

So far, this hasn't worked out well for anyone in the world.

But every one of the people who fell for it thought that it would.

And so do we.

The Garden of Eden, Absolute Truth, and Relative Truth

. · 6 January 2006 · Archived copy · Original

I think there is something very fundamental about Absolute Truth *over* Relative Truth which is the very basic to the nature of humans… that which separates humans from animal living and allows us to rise up from being beasts of the field.

Of course, the "tool" which humans have been given by God or by Nature – our equivalent to which every animal has been give his specialty (elephants have tusks, giraffes have long necks) - is our ability to choose, and of course, along with the ability to choose necessarily comes the ability to question. And in order to go from question to choosing an answer, there is the necessity to rationalize. Virtually all of human power resides in this feature. These are things humans can do which no other animal can do. Everything else works on pure instincts.

But…

This power we have to choose is like all power – it has the potential to be dangerous as much as it has the potential to be beneficial. I think the concept of "power needing to be tempered" before it becomes something useful certainly makes sense. And so it is that our human mental abilities need to tempered, or perhaps a better phrase is "anchored to reality," or else we humans also have the ability to "think" ourselves right off the rails and into la-la land. We humans kinda have a lemming feature built into us where we "think ourselves to death."

In fact, this is the story of the Garden of Eden in a nutshell: It is a story of the battle of Absolute Truth vs. Relative Truth, and the danger of what happens by placing the Relative Truth higher in importance than the Absolute Truth. It is a story about humankind's ability to bend the truth to over-ride reality… often with dire consequences.

.

.

There was only one rule in the Garden… DON'T EAT FROM THAT TREE! There was only one truth that Adam and Eve had to follow… and here is where it gets interesting, because Eve was *deceived* but she was not particularly *lied* to. In fact, the serpent's assertions are perfectly valid, although very craftily worded:

- The serpent was right when he says "you will not surely die." (He was right, they did not *surely* die… After being tossed from the Garden, God offered them a path to salvation and eternal life – if they chose to follow God's path).

- The serpent was right, when they ate the fruit, their eyes *were* opened, and they did become like God and gain

knowledge of good and evil.

And then Eve's female rationalizing hamster wheel starts churning, mired in Relative Truth.

"When the woman saw that the fruit of the tree was good for food and pleasing to the eye, and also desirable for gaining wisdom, she took some and ate it. She also gave some to her husband, who was with her, and he ate it."

Because it was good for food, pleasing to look at, and desirable for gaining wisdom… Eve rationalized to herself why the Relative Truth *which she wished for* ought to be able to over-ride the Absolute Truth that existed.

Ahem… could placing the Relative Truth we create in our brains over the Absolute Truth that exists in reality be the "original sin?"

Also to note here in the Garden story is the difference between men and women, and something we also often speak of in the Manosphere: Adam, the mangina, *simply went along with her.*
.
1 Timothy 2:12-14 RSV *"I permit no woman to teach or have authority over men; she is to keep silent. 13For Adam was formed first, then Eve; 14and Adam was not deceived, but the woman was deceived and became a transgressor."*

Adam **was not** deceived. He sinned *willingly.* Eve deceived herself with her female driven hamster-wheel of relative-truth laden brain… but Adam was not deceived at all. He was standing right there and was not deceived; Eve gave it to him, and *he was still without sin at this point.* But like a mangina eager to please, he said, "sure thing, Toots!" and swallowed 'er down whole.

Adam sinned *willingly*, but Eve was deceived.

To Adam he said, "*Because you listened to your wife* and ate from the tree about which I commanded you, 'You must not eat of it,'… (Man's Curse)

It's pretty clear.

Between Adam and Eve, God expects a different level of cognition… God expected Adam to "know better" than Eve… *because Adam has the capability to know better.*

Of all of the things that were in the world during the Garden, the only thing not directly from God… is Eve. She was created from Adam, who was created in God's image. Adam is a copy of God, and Eve is a copy of Adam… Adam is "one step closer" to God/Absolute Truth than Eve is.

And, when regarding how male and female brains "work" in order to ascertain "truth," this holds true – men and women "find truth" in different ways. G.W.F. Hegel describes the phenomenon in the following way:

"… Women may have happy ideas, taste, and elegance, but they cannot attain to the ideal. The difference between men and women is like that between animals and plants. Men correspond to animals, while *women correspond to plants because their development is more placid and the principle that underlies it is the rather vague unity of feeling.* When women hold the helm of government, the state is at once in jeopardy, *because women regulate their actions not by the demands of universality but by arbitrary inclinations and opinions.* Women are educated–who knows how?" — G.F. Hegel

Women, because they are herd creatures by nature, find Truth by consensus among the herd. If the herd thinks 1 +

1 = 3, then it is right, because the herd says so. Tomorrow, if the herd thinks 1 + 1 = 1, then that will be right, because the herd says so. *The herd is always right.* This is why women are more attuned to fashion, which is forever changing, and it is the underlying cause of the phenomenon in Game known as "Social Proofing." Women believe a man is sexually valuable because the rest of the women around her find him sexually valuable – not because of any particular iron clad attributes or principles mind you – but simply because all the other women believe a guy is hot, so will the next woman believe it as well. The herd's consensus is what is right, and it is subject only to itself.

You can see this all through females' nature, in that right down to even their genetic make-up, they huddle around the average/mean in far greater concentration than males, who exist *outside* the herd and exists in the outer extremes of averages. ie. There are more males than females with an IQ of 140, but there are also more males than females with an IQ below 70. The males are on "the outside of the herd" and the females ARE "the average," or, they are all clustered around the average. (Heh, this even goes into female psychology, where far fewer females desire to truly stand out from the norm – in areas such as company CEO - than men do – and the differences are signficant!).

In this way, *it will always be males,* in the aggregate, that are better equipped to "find Absolute Truth."

It will be the males who will, like an angry MGHOW, declare: "BULLSHIT! **1 + 1 = 2!!!** I don't care what you say, I don't care if all you cows believe 1 + 1 = 2.5, I will refuse to comply with you because, dammit, 1 + 1 = 2!

In this way, it is important for the *male principle* to lead the *female principle*, because the male principle is closer to Absolute Truth than the female principle. The female principle is almost pure Relative Truth. Now, the male principle has relative truth in it too – lots of it! Look at all the manginas out there! Men *desire* to follow women's Relative Truths because that is what we would do if we behave like animals, driven by our baser instincts. But man's mind is better equipped to discover Absolute Truth than the female's, and thus, having men/the male principle leading a society will lead to that society following much closer to Absolute Truth… a much safer place to exist than a world full of Relative Truth, where nothing stays real.

***"Because you listened to your wife** and ate from the tree about which I commanded you..."*

Because you listened to your wife's Relative Truths… you were cursed, Adam.

You should have held true to the Absolute Truth, and all would have been fine. Even after she had already bogged herself down with her Relative Truths, Adam should have been a MGHOW and stuck to his principles based upon Absolute Truth. All would have worked out fine for him.

.

- It was Eve who seduced the man - in compensation there is no undertaking more appealing to a woman than to become loved by someone who has gone astray and who now, in loving her, will let himself be led along the right path. This appeals to a woman so much that she is not infrequently deceived, because such a person puts everything over on her - and she believes everything - perhaps also because the thought of being the man's savior is so very satisfying to her. -- Woman/Man - from Kierkegaard's Journals

Previous Index Next

MGTOW

"If it's not right, Go Your Own Way!"

.....

..oooO.....

..(....).....
….\..(.....
…. _/.....

…….....Oooo..
…….....(....)…
……..)../....
.....(_/.....

.....

Further Reading:

The Feminization of Christianity

Rising Up from Being Beasts in the Field

Truth, Truth, Truth… What Is The Truth?

In the Beginning

Government, Keep Your Thievin' Mitts Outta My Pockets!

. · 7 January 2006 · Archived copy · Original

.

QUOTE: "…which is part of the reason I don't mind a little wealth redistribution. I also believe that if we aren't ensuring that individuals with the most merit are educated properly then we are harming our competitiveness versus the other world powers in the long run."

Those two things, wealth redistribution & ensuring individuals with merit are educated properly to promote competitiveness, are in opposition of eachother. It's like pushing and pulling at the same time.

The only type of wealth redistribution scheme that has any merit at all is a consumption tax. This is what the USA (& other places in the West) *used* to have, and it is also what many tax havens such as the Cayman Islands or the Turks and Caicos Islands still have.

For example, in the Caymans, you pay about 33% tax on what you spend. (Or import). *Not* on what you earn. That is why things are so expensive there – but, they have no income tax, property tax, inheritance taxes, capital gains or dividend taxes etc.

And this does promote wealth distribution, because rich people spend more money than poorer people. But, if a person were to work hard, and be thrifty at the same time, it is much easier to pull ahead and start getting your money to work for you, rather than you working for your money.

For example. If you live here in Canada, and gross around $4,000/month, after taxes and deductions, you will be left with around $2,700-$2,800 net take home pay. And from there, you pay for your living expenses, most often eating it all up.

However, the other way around is, I earn $4,000 a month, with zero tax, but I pay $2,750/month for living expenses plus $925 in consuption taxes for my goods, totalling up my expenses, including tax, to $3,675/month, and I am

now $325/month ahead of the game than the other way, and since I am now batting above my living expenses, and I can directly control my living expenses, hot damn am I going to be motivated to hustle my ass to make some more money. Why, I might even get up off the beach and put in a few hours overtime!

That leads to excellence.

In the same way, I see no problem with wealth redistribution via things like mill rates for property taxes, as per the justification put forth by Adam Smith on that particular subject: Since wealthy people have larger houses, with more things in them to protect etc., it is only fair that their property taxation be higher (as per assessed real estate value, which again becomes a controllable consumption tax, rather than each citizen paying exactly the same amount regardless of their real estate value) because they have more to protect, and therefore are more in need of things like fire and police services, and often times will use them more. Fair enough.

However, progressive taxation on income is a silly invention, that retards economic growth, and removes the motivation to excel by merit There is a reason that Karl Marx puts this out in the Communist Manifesto – because he wants to destroy Capitalism, and civilization.

Also, anything the government touches generates about 30% wastefulness compared to the private sector. And while the government needs 15 workers plus 25 supervisors just to change a friggin' light bulb, the private sector manages to crank out a miracle a minute. We should stop punishing the private sector and people with initiative, and start punishing the government instead.

Most people are just willfully blind to what they are saying the government should do.

For example: With the Haiti Earthquake, the Canadian government offered to match any private donations made by the people to Haiti. And here everyone goes off nodding their heads, "Yup, yup. T'is a good thing they do that. Uh huh, uh huh."

No it isn't! I not only feel like taking out my whacking stick on the government, but also on the people who feel this is a good thing. Hosers!

.

.

What is really going on is they are saying, "Geez Fedrz, how generous of you to reach into your righthand pocket and give away $100 to Haiti. So, allow us to reach into your lefthand pocket and match that with another $100 of ***your*** money."

"Whack!" Fedrz swings his whacking stick.

”Whack! Whack! WHACK!”

Assholes did the same thing with the Tsunami, after the citizens donated hundreds of millions of dollars privately, and the government didn’t want to appear cheap. I guess better a thief than a cheapskate, eh?

.

“Whack!”

But, if any one feels the overwhelming need to redistribute any of their hard earned cash to someone who needs it… my pockets are feeling a little light – especially after the gov’t has been pick-pocketing my generosity, as well, my beer kitty jar could use some wealth redistribution from other people’s labours.

“Whack,” goes the whacking stick. “Keep your theivin’ mittens outta Rob’s pockets!”

Related: The Pitfalls of Inviting More Government Into Our Lives

Previous Index Next

MGTOW

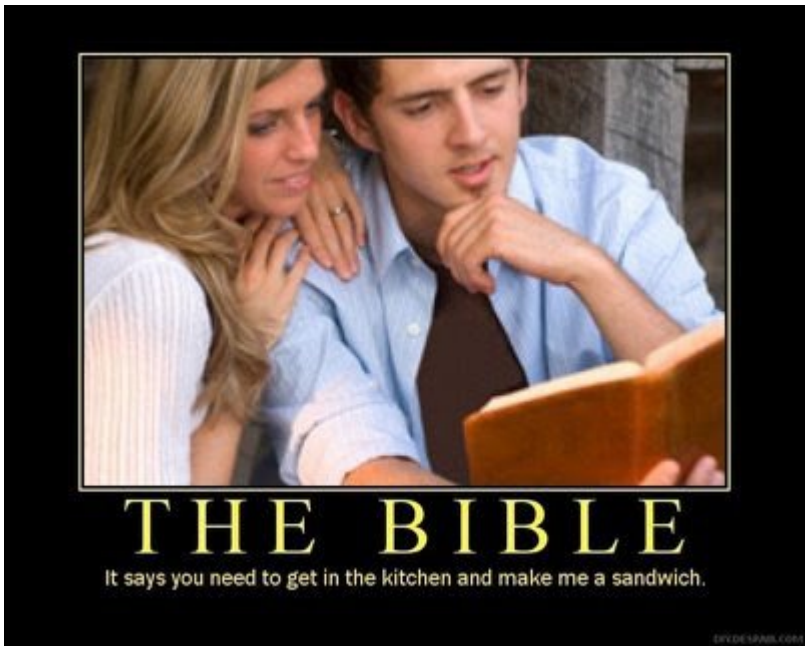
“If it’s not right, Go Your Own Way!”

.....
..oooO.....
..(....).....
….\..(.....
…. _/.....
…….....Oooo..
…….....(....)…
……..)../....
.....(_/.....
.....

Make Me a Sandwich!

. · 8 January 2006 · Archived copy · Original

I'm 124 Sandwiches Away from an Engagement Ring!



.

WOMAN
Make Me A Sandwich

.

BACON SANDWICH
With A Chaser Of Wild Turkey
Now That's A Meal

Women Pursuing Their "Dreams and Aspirations"

. · 9 January 2006 · Archived copy · Original

QUOTING A FEMALE: "As long as mothers and/or wives don't allow their careers to consume their lives and interfere with their God-given duties, then I don't see a problem. Women have their own aspirations and dreams as well just like men (and no I don't believe that the only reason people have careers is to make money)."

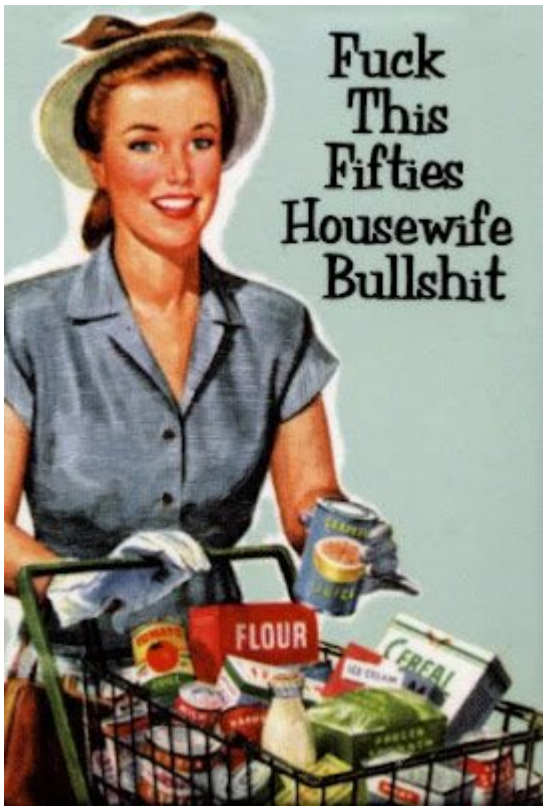
I agree with much of what you say. There is nothing inherently wrong with women having jobs, or their own money, or pursuing their own dreams and aspirations.

Now, what those types of dreams and aspirations are, sometimes irks me enormously, when one stands back and has a good long look at what society has transformed itself into.

One of the reasons that women earn less in the workplace is because of the jobs they choose. Women are often reporting that they want to have a job that will have some sort of a social impact, or benefit the community, and so on, and so on, (&, btw, who doesn't?) and will take lowered pay in order to find a job that meets these criteria.

Now, that is all good and fine – in fact, it might even be noble.

But, look at the friggin' absurdity of what we have done since those dreaded, awful, horrible 1950's. (Arguably the zenith of Western Civilization).



A man back then was able to earn enough money from a mere blue collar job, that his wife could stay at home, he could pay for raising 4 kids, they could go on a nice family vacation once a year, he could pay for a decent home, and have a new car in the driveway. On his wage alone!

And often, after the kids were off in school, the house was nice & clean, and the fridge was properly reloaded, what did those oppressed women go off and do with the rest of their time?

Well, some of them gossiped like the dickens, I suppose, but many others did things they found socially rewarding. They raised money for charities, they volunteered time to help the elderly or the needy, they organized groups that enhanced the lives of their communities – from hobbies to sports, and so on and so on. In other words, they sought social rewards of their own volition, and had money in their jeans, er, pleasantly sexy sundress pockets to boot!

And today? They have "liberated themselves" into halving the income of men by flooding the job market with labourers, forcing both men and women to work fulltime jobs in order to live in a crappy condo with their 1.6 kids, and the two cars they need but can only afford on the never-never plan. (A lease). And what do they want out of their careers? To do something socially rewarding that benefits the community! See the irony here? And now, if they get to do such a thing called "social rewards" even marginally from their job, they have to do it in march step to their jerk-off boss under far less pleasant circumstances.

Oh well, Ladies. I guess you've spent the last 50 years proving that men have been right for the past 5,000 years.

QUOTE #2, A MAN: Women get paid less because they work fewer hours in less dangerous jobs. It has nothing to do with their noble humanitarian spirit (excuse me while I gag) to help others.

Women are often over-paid for the amount of work they do, leaving men to pick up the slack and subsidize women's bloated paychecks.

If women were as altruistic as you claim, they'd recognize the atrocious abuses of the current feminist regime in large numbers, but that hasn't happened because women largely live in their own self-obsessed little worlds. In contrast, men gave women the "women's liberation movement" because men actually DO have compassion and noble intentions."

No doubt, I agree with much of what you say. Also, women will always put themselves first. And they are plagued with narcissism and are often self-obsessed – either with themselves, or their own sex.

And, I don't doubt that often times the "charity work" they did in the past was done for other than purely altruistic reasons. For example: Most men can instantly understand what I mean when I say, "It's not charity if you talk about it." And I'll bet that a lot of them ladies clucked very often, trying to one up the other hens with tales of how perfect they were, while they cackled about the hens that weren't doing enough to be as good as them. They are, after all, social creatures far more than men, and need the approval of the herd, er, flock, to decide what is right and wrong.

But, at least the way it was before, it took features of "woman-ness" and harnessed them for the betterment of society – including their own families. Much like how patriarchy put sex to work. I don't think the women of old cared so much about "keeping the door stoop swept" because of respect for what their husbands would think, but more to make sure that the other women thought well of them, and had nothing bad to gossip about when they knocked on the door.

And, as an added bonus, it kept them out of our hair all day, until we came home and got what we men wanted out of them.

Previous Index Next
MGTOW

“If it’s not right, Go Your Own Way!”

.....
..oooO.....
..(....).....
….\..(.....
…. _/.....
…….....Oooo..
…….....(....)…
……..)../....
.....(_/.....
.....

Related:

Zenpriest #44 - The Box Feminism Builds For Women

Western Culture's Inability to Pass Feminism's Shit Tests

. · 11 January 2006 · Archived copy · Original

QUOTE: "However, I think they may be wrong when they go on to say [marriage 1.0] was good for "civilization" too. Perhaps the inability of Western cultures to pass the shit test of feminism comes directly from allowing too many Betas to breed in the past and pass their passive and compliant genes down through the gene pool."

I sometimes suspect that *this* is what we are supposed to "do." To pass the shit test… there is something better on the other side, something we are supposed to find out – maybe something that will change us, but we are never going to get there until we pass these shit tests *that keep destroying us.*

Many messages have been sent to us, obviously trying to warn us about "something." These things are, I think, "twinkling reminders of humanity's past." The story of Pandora's box… the legend of Atlantis… the Garden of Eden… Jason and the Argonauts… Egypt's Punt… They are all of a similar theme, containing similar messages or warnings etc. They are talking to us from the deep, deep past. Perhaps if we pass the shit test and finally figure out how to stop destroying ourselves like pathetic lemmings, our civilization will develop enough to finally "figure it out."

What "it" is, I don't know. Maybe it's a better way of living. Maybe without civilization always collapsing and needing to be rebuilt, we will figure out how the hell to get out of the solar system, maybe find other lifeforms?… because our technology won't reset 500 years back in time if we don't collapse.

I know it sounds kinda New Age, but, imagine how different the world would be today if say, Rome had never degraded its principles, and it had never fell. How advanced do you think our technology might be today if that had not happened but rather they kept pushing forward, advancing and learning, all the way up to the present day? I suspect I might be taking my hover-craft to the corner store instead of my crappy old car. Who knows? Maybe we "figure something out." But it does seem like we keep getting sent "warnings" from the past from our ancestors saying "watch out" and "fix this problem."

I'll tell you one thing what I see – our "moral codes" try to tell us not to behave like animals. That means not succumbing to our base passions, such as monkey sex without responsibities. Do not kill, do not steal, do not commit adultery, do not covet etc. etc. – all things that animals do, but which humans are told not to do. The "Point" is to rise up from being beasts of the field – of living like animals and basing our decisions in passion, rather than reason.

If the point is to be anti-animal and pro-reason, then I wonder what would happen when we finally figure out how to stop destroying ourselves by succumbing to our base animal passions, of which our sex drives are most likely the strongest, and the way women stop men from "thinking" and rather living by pure passion, as they do. Maybe if we overcome this lemming tendency that has plagued us for thousands of years, there is something else on the other side.

Further Reading:

MGTOW as a Form of "Cultural Game"

Fitness Testing (Shit Tests)

Social Strategy: How Men And Women Are After Different Things When They "Debate"

. · 12 January 2006 · Archived copy · Original

Men and women are after different things when they “debate.”

Men tend to, but not always, hold the truth to be the decider of the debate. (Manginas excepted – thus the name). The man who illustrates the truth the best, is generally considered the winner of a debate. Women, not so much. And don’t forget, women scoff at our “school yard rules.” Nothing seems sillier to a woman than the male “code.” When women fight/argue, there are no rules she adheres to. Women decide who “wins” a debate by who has been the snotty-mouthest and emotionally manipulates the other into submission. There truth matters not a bit to women.

Angry Harry made a really good comparison on his website once:

Men love to watch sports. They will spend hours watching men kick balls, shoot pucks, pot golf balls etc. etc. They will memorize stats, and they will see strategy everywhere in a game of sports. Men positively thrive upon these things.

But women?

Not so much.

However, when women watch Soap Operas, they do the same things as men watching sports – except they do it for social strategy. Women see social strategy everywhere in soaps… how Kathy manipulated her love interest David into lying to his wife Ruth, causing them to have a big argument, driving David right into Kathy’s loving arms… and the affair begins.

Social Strategy.

That's why soap operas are popular with women. It's what Cosmo magazine is chock full of: How to socially manipulate people.

Socially manipulating people is what women **do.**

In fact, it is one of the only things they do.

I think one of the absolute best things men can do with women is follow the advice of so many of those "misogynists" of old, and view women as children. "A woman is the most responsible teenager in the house."

Of course, it is not actually that they *are* children. It is more likely that they do not develop the same sense of principle and justice to navigate the world, because society enables them not to have to. Regardless of whether they are or not, I think in almost every aspect – from game to simple conversations – a man is advantaged by continually reminding himself that "women are teenagers." They exist somewhere in between child and man.

Schopenhauer's essay on women is bang-on:

"So that it will be found that the fundamental fault in the character of women is that they have no "sense of justice ." This arises from their deficiency in the power of reasoning already referred to, and reflection, but is also partly due to the fact that Nature has not destined them, as the weaker sex, to be dependent on strength but on cunning; this is why they are instinctively crafty, and have an ineradicable tendency to lie. For as lions are furnished with claws and teeth, elephants with tusks, boars with fangs, bulls with horns, and the cuttlefish with its dark, inky fluid, so Nature has provided woman for her protection and defense with the faculty of dissimulation, and all the power which Nature has given to man in the form of bodily strength and reason has been conferred on woman in this form. Hence, dissimulation is innate in woman and almost as characteristic of the very stupid as of the clever. Accordingly, it is as natural for women to dissemble at every opportunity as it is for those animals to turn to their weapons when they are attacked; and they feel in doing so that in a certain measure they are only making use of their rights. Therefore a woman who is perfectly truthful and does not dissemble is perhaps an impossibility. This is why they see through dissimulation in others so easily; therefore it is not advisable to attempt it with them. From the fundamental defect that has been stated, and all that it involves, spring falseness, faithlessness, treachery, ungratefulness, and so on. In a court of justice women are more often found guilty of perjury than men. It is indeed to be generally questioned whether they should be allowed to take an oath at all." -- Arthur Schopenhauer, On Women, 1851

It makes perfectly good sense to me why religions such as Christianity try to remove women from philosophizing about their doctrines, or why in Buddhism it is said that women cannot become Buddhas. It also makes perfectly good sense why men of the past used to often have "men only" spaces where women were forbidden.

When discussing matters, *men and women are not even after the same things.*

Because women are based in relative truth, it doesn't matter how often you pin them down, as soon as you do they create a new truth in their minds and just carry on – because her goal is not to find the Truth at all, but that is what the man she is arguing with is after and he *thinks* she is after Truth too.

Truth, as well as morals, are only important to women when it suits them. The instant the Truth conflicts with their agenda, they have no problems at all changing it and carrying on – because what they are really after is

manipulating you. The most manipulative is “the winner.” The one who manipulates the most crapola upon the other is the one who walks away being “right.”

Truth matters not a bit in deciding who was “right.”

You can catch a woman dead to rights in a lie, like a child with cookie crumbs still stuck on the corner of her lips *insisting* she wasn’t in the cookie jar – it simply does not matter to them. They just create a new truth in their heads and carrying on as if nothing matters.

And, there’s really no point in trying to “convert” them. It matters not a bit to convert such a creature anymore than it does any good to convince three year olds that the Tea Party campaign is the right one.

Even the women that have been “converted” are simply incapable of rising above these things, and as soon as circumstances change, making her previous stance unsuitable for her, she rearranges the truth and carries on as if she has no clue to what you are talking about – nor can you hold her to what she said yesterday. So, what’s the point?

There was a very well-known Meritorious Mediocrus in the MRM a few years back. She had everyone bamboozled that she was “not like that.” She spoke and blogged and moralized and agreed and agreed and agreed… and all the men were happier than pigs in shit that there was, finally, such a good example of woman… they didn’t have to take women off the pedestal – not all of them, anyway.

However, suddenly a lot of shit hit the fan. (I don’t know the details, just bits and pieces which are not important). She got herself onto the divorce-conveyer belt.

“Shared- Parenting? Huh? What you talkin’ about, Willis? Unreasonable child support? But I neeeeeeeed it!”

Yeah, uh huh. What a waste of time and effort for all the men who wound up pedestalizing her. She was no different than the rest, and her “principles” were subject to change simply upon the convenience of where she is in life.

Over the years, I suspect you might see the same thing from someone like Alte, too. She's not that old – around 30, I think. She has admitted to us that before her husband, she used to be a “man-killer” who brought emotional harm

to her previous boyfriends for no real reason or purpose… and now suddenly, she has found God and submission to Him and her husband is what it's all about… until the divorce, then it becomes perfectly possible for women to move on into a new fantasy life, and forget all about the morals she had in the previous years, and she morphs into something completely new again.

Even in relationships with men, women are completely malleable. The girl you dated at 21 who screwed you over and 23, is not even the same person when you speak to her again at 28. This is because women are "empty vessels" who seek men to fill the void. Each time a woman gets together with a new man, it is based upon hypergamy – he becomes her new hero, and thus she completely adapts her morals and character to be his view of the ideal woman. When she grabs hold of the next branch, erm, man, all of her morals and character again change to adapt to be the new man's ideal woman. When you look at it that way, how can one ever then assess a woman's "true character?" ***It doesn't exist.***

There is no point in arguing with them, and there is no point in having their input into Men's Issues.It is best for men simply to take a position and staunchly never budge. Do not bother explaining yourself to women; it is futile. Either they find your logic to be sound and they will conform themselves around you, or there is no further hope in converting her to your way of thinking. A man has to come from the attitude of "it's my way or the highway." A woman - or especially her friends - may call this asshole behaviour, simply because you are not willing to grovel like a servile worm for her approval. But deep down every woman *loves* this about a man. There is a difference between being an asshole and being confident and assertive.

We have entirely different strategies and entirely different views of reality. It's best to just chase them off so the men can get back to business.

Interview with a Womenfirster: Phyllis Schlafly

Jack Kammer: What if I was the kind of man, like a lot of men who have confided to me, who is sick to death of the corporate world and in a heartbeat would stay home to take care of their kids because they love them so much and they know the business world is a crock?

Phyllis Schlafly:… That's their problem. As I look around the world about me, I just don't find there are many [women] who want the so-called non-traditional relationships. – a radio interview, WCVT-FM (now WTMD), Towson University, Maryland, January 5, 1989

Off to the koffee-klatch with you and the other clucking hens!

Further Reading:

Bonecrcker #51 - Don't Argue With Women

Philalethes #3 - The Anti-Logic of Women

The Intimate Journal of Henri Amiel – Dec, 26, 1868

Tom Pry's Wife -- by Charles Lamb, (1775-1834)

Point, Counterpoint – Rollo Tomassi

“If it’s not right, Go Your Own Way!”

.....
..oooO.....
..(....).....
….\..(.....
…. _/.....
…….....Oooo..
…….....(....)…
……..)../....
.....(_/.....
.....

MGTOW is also Men Going The Right Way

. · 13 January 2006 · Archived copy · Original

.

QUOTE: "MGTOW was never anything but a tool." – Ragnar

Actually there is one aspect of MGTOW that has not been utilized yet.

On a philosophical level, MGTOW is the answer to the Marxist Dialectic. If ever one studies the dialectic and how it is used to manipulate, you will see the one constant recommendation for how to "stop" the dialectic: Step out of it.

That means that on a philosophical level, you must "step out of the cycle" and take a stand. To stop the dialectic you must stop rationalizing to the lowest common denominator, stand up straight and tall, and declare, "THIS is right, and THAT is wrong. I will not budge."

On philosophical level, MGTOW is the "right way" to fight this.

QUOTE: "…many don't regard MGTOW as philosophical at all. Long ago Zenpriest/Jadedguy wrote something like that in a discussion at the old board. The opposition then was that we need action now – no philosophy. Futhermore MGTOW has started a life of it's own and who can speak against that? LOL! Make a stand we should – I absolutely agree." — Ragnar

Yes, the philosophy stuff is not as flash as visions of planting a flag victoriously on Iwo Jima, and thus many men reject philosophy – however, just like the US Air Force doesn't have much use for $100 million figher jets when your enemy isn't fighting you in the air but on the street with low tech car bombs, so is this a different kind of warfare and it requires the proper tools to win the struggle.

In order to illustrate why making a stand is so important, one has to understand how the dialectic uses "consensus" to change the views and attitudes of the population. Here is a diagram I have which illustrates the general mechanics of the dialectic and how it can be used to alter the truth, or rather, to create new truths. Keep in mind that an important component of dialectical manipulation is thinking three steps ahead.

"Dialectical thought is related to vulgar thinking in the same way that a motion picture is related to a still photograph. The motion picture does not outlaw the still photograph but combines a series of them

according to the laws of motion." — Leon Trotsky

So, dialectical thought manipulates the truth in the same way that a still picture is used, in multiple series, to make a motion-picture. In the same way, the dialectic makes "new truths" by pitting a "thesis" (truth) against an "anti-thesis" (anti-truth) – these two truths argue and argue and argue against eachother until they reach a *consensus*, or a compromise of the two. This compromise then becomes a synthesis, or a synthetic truth, which then becomes the new "truth," (now you can repeat the whole process over again with a new argument) and like how still-pictures in a series creates a motion picture, a series of these new "synthesized truths" can lead to a completely altered sense of reality, and adhere to that reality's "logical" conclusions.

This is why I always yammer on about the value of Absolute Truth.

Absolute Truth does not compromise. It scoffs at "consensus." It takes a stand – Absolute Truth is a *male* principle. Relative Truth, while also present in males, is a *female* principle. This is something illustrated even in the story of the Garden of Eden.

So, think about how the dialectic can work to alter truth and also, destroy things.

Imagine that you believe 1 + 1 = 2 (Thesis), and your opponent's argument is 1 + 1 = 3 (Anti-thesis). The anti-thesis argument asks you to *compromise* to reach an agreement, a consensus, a synthesized truth somewhere in between 1 + 1 = 2 and 1 + 1 = 3. In this case let's say we reach consensus half way – so, now we have 1 + 1 = 2.5 (Synthesis/New Truth)

Well, for some things, *you cannot compromise.* Not one frickin' millimeter.

1 + 1 = 2! No matter what you friggin' say! No matter how many people in society say it is 2.5, *I DON'T GIVE A SHIT,* **1 + 1 = 2!**

What good does 1 + 1 = 2.5 do for society, or even 1 + 1 = 2.1?

.

.

Once an Absolute Truth is identified, one must refuse to compromise it.

Marxism *abolishes* Absolute Truth. In a Marxist society *everything* is a Relative Truth. One thing you will hear many people who lived in Communist regimes claim they found to be the worst aspect of it all, *were the lies!* Everything becomes a lie, and there is no more truth.

Of course, one of the reasons why Communists abolish Christianity is because it competes with them for the allegiance of the masses, *but another reason* is because the Bible is firmly rooted in Absolute Truth, and it stops the dialectic dead in its tracks. God's word is Black and White, and *it does not compromise.* Thus, it is very difficult to manipulate the dialectic when there is a standard of Absolute Truth to compare it to.

I sometimes suspect that this is why so many people in Communist countries were so willing to risk their lives to be Christians, and why when they got their hands on a Bible, they would take it out of its hiding place and go to read it again and again and again… sure, there is the Christianity/religious aspect to it, but also, it might possibly be the first time that person was exposed to *Absolute Truth* and they became addicted to it.

The Truth, the real truth, is addictive. Think about all of you guys who have been following along in the manosphere over the years… why do you hang around? Why do you keep coming back? I think it is because the manosphere is speaking *the Truth* and you find it addictive – infuriating for sure – but the Truth is very addictive.

Making a philosophical stand is of the utmost importance in defeating this whole gong-show.

Good thing for men that Absolute Truth is congruent with the Male Principle, as well as the willingness to sometimes stand on your principles, and refuse to compromise your position simply for the sake of going along with the crowd.

Would you rather be "right" according to the crowd, and thus use 1 + 1 = 2.5 in all of your worldly dealings, or would you choose to be willing to Go Your Own Way so you could live in a functional world where 1 + 1 = 2?

Previous Index Next

MGTOW

"If it's not right, Go Your Own Way!"

.....
..oooO.....
..(....).....
….\..(.....
…. _/.....
…….....Oooo..
…….....(....)…
……..)../....
.....(_/.....
.....

Further Reading:

A Leading Philosophy Rather Than a Leader

Western Culture's Inability to Pass Feminism's Shit Tests

MGTOW as a Form of "Cultural Game"

. · 15 January 2006 · Archived copy · Original

.

Women aren't gonna stop eating our lunch because it's "the right thing to do." They are only gonna stop when **we** stop them from doing it.

For all those who understand "game," you certainly must realize that aloof indifference *does not* stop women – it makes them try to be noticed *harder*. If you ignore them, they will *escalate* until you **do** pay attention to them.

You have to keep in mind with men and women as well, that when a boy sins it is overt. He shouts and screams and kicks and makes a big scene that you cannot miss. And then he stays quiet again for a long, long time, causing no trouble, until the next overt outburst. But women are covert and their outbursts/sins are subtle *but last for a much longer period of time.* A woman can keep a subtle running battle going for months and even sometimes years at a time, like Chinese water torture.

And, practitioners of game also should know the rule of "it's my way or the highway, Toots!" and that any man who doesn't want to be ruined by woman has to learn to say **no** without bothering to explain, and say it often… no… No… *NO*… **NO!!!**

.

Merely because I said so.

Just because I want it that way.

Tough. There's the door.

Well, this is merely game on a cultural level. Women *really are* powerless without us. That vote they keep yacking about doesn't mean a thing without men enforcing its power. Everything that permits the "you go grrl" culture is provided to women by the indulgence of **men**. If men left the building, women's vote couldn't enforce a single thing – because their vote and their rights *are not* based upon "the barrel of a gun," but rather upon indirect social manipulation of the people holding the gun.

If men leave the building, women will follow.

I think men understanding *how* women are manipulating us – as put forth by guys like Schopenhauer – will do ten thousand times more for our "movement" than any amount of billions of dollars funnelled to lobby-groups to manipulate the law into something even worse than we have today.

As much as women like to say that men don't leave them alone, if the men said "fine, see ya" and actually left, the women would follow us to the ends of the earth.

And if they don't… tough.

It's such a joke for women to come around here and try to con us into believing how much we want and need them, when almost none of the men here are on *their* forums seeking *them out.* They find guys who are busy with other things and completely ignoring them, and try to intrude and take over. This is the entire history of "feminine-ism."

And, herein lies the proof of the big lie, and the big paradox for women. Accusations that men don't care only work when men do care. In order to get his mind in the right frame where he can attract women, he has to reach the place where he no longer cares if he does or not – and in many cases "not" starts to win.

Further Reading:

Western Culture's Inability to Pass Feminism's Shit Tests

MGTOW is also Men Going The Right Way

Previous Index Next
MGTOW

"If it's not right, Go Your Own Way!"
.....
..oooO.....
..(....).....
….\..(.....
…. _/.....
…….....Oooo..
…….....(....)…
……..)../....
.....(_/.....
.....

Feminine-ism: The "Nicest" Ideology in the World

. · 16 January 2006 · Archived copy · Original

“Feminine-ism” is a manifestation of the “feminine spirit” or, the “feminine principle.” Often we refer to “the totalitarianism of women,” and really what it is is the feminine principle which is trying to impose niceness on us. This is the underlying evil of the feminine principle. Women have no concept of cause and effect, but they do want everyone to be nice and they are willing to use totalitarianism to force it upon you.

.

.

Look at the Temperence Movement that arose at the exact same time that women’s political power starting coming into our culture. Ah, Prohibition! Some men (and even a few women, gasp!) are lousy with hooch, and some families are negatively affected by it. Therefore the government should pass totalitarian laws forcing everyone to be nice and stop drinking. Of course, this led to the rise of wonderful citizens such as the mass-murdering Al Capone and his mirror image, the thugs with guns that enforced the laws at women’s insistence. But as always, everything women do is indirect so, when their totalitarian actions caused a massive disaster, women easily side-stepped the blame and said, “See! It is the evil men who are the criminals, and it's the violent thugs with guns that leave other men bleeding in the gutters. Oh my, we are such victims now, we can hardly walk the streets! Pass more laws to make everyone nicer!" It's a dangerous spiral that “seems nice” on the surface, but quickly turns into an ugly totalitarian monster where the only “safe” and “nice” thing to do is sit at home and watch the ceiling fan go round and round – until, that is, women start talking about how it would be “nice” for the environment if we only have electricity for 3hrs a day, and so they pester and badger men to impose more laws upon society to make everyone “nice” in that regard too.

There are no limits to how much “niceness” women will impose upon others. They are like a horse that's gotten into the oats, and will keep eating until they bloat up and die. The one thing women *have* actually invented is a quite remarkable perpetual motion machine that creates laws imposing niceness forever and ever.

Women view us as little boys and they want us to play nice. If we don’t play nice for them, they have lost control…

because *men* don't play nice at women's insistence. Men might play nice for their own reasons, but never at a woman's insistence. Boys succumb to mother's power, but *men* realize the true nature of women and that the "unfair sex" can't keep two thoughts straight in their heads past the next glittering trinket that distracts them, completely cleaning their brains of whatever thoughts someone falsely deduced were actually in there to begin with. Women have power over little boys – watch a woman looking over her brood and see how she gets them to "play nice." She exercises her power over them to impose "nice" on them, and if they aren't nice… "Wait till your father gets home!" – More indirect social aggression, with the intention of imposing "nice" on people – through the force of others.

The males of Western Culture are suffering from a form of arrested development because of the overwhelming feminization of our society. Women don't think they should let males grow out of boyhood (where women are in 100% control of them) and into men because women have zero control over a man. And despite their protests to the contrary, they have to change their panties every half hour when in the presence of a man - someone they can't control because he has risen above her petty bullshit in the same way that an adult rises above the pettiness of a child.

Look at everything that feminine-ism has imposed upon society:

- No more grades in school, because failing is not "nice."
- No more keeping score in schoolyard soccer games, because losing isn't "nice."
- No more boys playing with finger-guns, because that is not "nice."
- No more women having to raise their bastard spawn alone, because it isn't "nice" of men to make her pay for her own mistakes.
- No offensive language in the workplace that isn't "nice."
- No boss demanding she work a full day for her pay, rather than "flex-timing" at his expense – because it would be "nice" for him to think of the children, rather than keeping his business afloat (and providing jobs for others).
- No men hitting on them that they don't like, because they don't find it a "nice" experience.
- Nice, nice, nice, nice, nice, nice, nice, nice, nice, **nice.**

"Everything that is not forbidden will be mandatory" -- Big Sister

"Women and men want very different things and therefore very different worlds. Men want sex, freedom, and adventure; women want security, pleasantness, and someone to care about (or for) them. Both like power. Men use it to conquer their neighbours whether in business or war, women to impose security and pleasantness. … Just about everything that once defined masculinity is now denounced as 'macho,' a hostile word embodying the female incomprehension of men. … Men are happy for men to be men and women to women; women want us all to be women." -- Fred Reed

Previous Index Next

MGTOW

"If it's not right, Go Your Own Way!"

.....
..oooO.....
..(....).....

….\..(.....
…. _/.....
…….....Oooo..
…….....(....)…
……..)../....
.....(_/.....
.....

Further Reading:

Rites of Passage - Boys to Men

Philalethes #1 – Feminist Allies?

The War Against Men – by David Shackleton

"Of all tyrannies, a tyranny sincerely exercised for the good of its victims may be the most oppressive. It would be better to live under robber barons than under omnipotent moral busybodies. The robber baron's cruelty may sometimes sleep, his cupidity may at some point be satiated; but those who torment us for our own good will torment us without end for they do so with the approval of their own conscience." -- C.S. Lewis

The Philosophical Difference Between Capitalism and Marxism

. · 17 January 2006 · Archived copy · Original

What probably differentiates the Capitalist/Western System from Marxism/Communism the most is the completely opposite *philosophies* involved with each. It is rather tiresome to hear people continually point out all of the evils of Capitalism when Capitalism itself is a *response* to these very problems.

Capitalism is based upon the Bible. One inherent characteristic of The Bible is that it *declares* the imperfect nature of man *which mankind is unable to correct*, and therefore mankind must endure imperfection (sin) on this earth while we are here. Only through salvation and God's power will things ever be "perfect" for us – and the Bible tells us not to even attempt to change this, but rather to work within the framework given to *control* these human imperfections. The Bible tells us to resist our temptations/evils, but also tells us we will never succeed in defeating evil – only God can do that.

Btw – I am not a Bible-banger promoting Christianity here. I am only pointing out the philosophical thought pattern that helped form Western Civilization, and because these thought patterns were based upon the Bible, the philosophical position of the Bible was also the philosophical position of society. The Bible preached that there is Black and White, Right and Wrong, and that *only God* can change these things – we cannot!

Therefore, Capitalism is **not** some attempt to create a utopia where evil does not exist, as so many Red-Sympathizers continually falsely allude to. Rather, Capitalism is the *acknowledgement* that humans are greedy and self-centered – that humans are inherently flawed – and Capitalism creates a *framework* to contain these baser, less honourable human instincts, and harnesses them in such a way that greed/self-centeredness are both more or less controlled, *and* that they are mostly directed in a positive manner for the greater good.

It is not much different than marriage 1.0 harnessing the human sex-drive and "putting it to work." Capitalism merely harnesses human greed and "puts it work." It's kinda like we generally consider explosions to be dangerous and bad things, however, a *controlled* explosion in an environment of a cylinder and piston, as in a car engine, makes explosions positively beneficial for humankind.

An essential characteristic though is *that these faults are inherent in humans* ***and we cannot fix them***, but rather, with must work with these flaws as we live in a flawed world.

In the nineteenth century, things began to change – philosophically speaking. G.W.F. Hegel identified "Dialectical Thought" and philosophically "proved" that "The Truth is Relative." The idea of "The Truth is Relative" set the entire West upon its ear, after centuries of people using the Bible as the "standard" of Truth – and as far as the Bible goes, *nothing* is relative. God's word in the Bible is ABSOLUTE TRUTH and it is *not* negotiable.

But, it is this idea of "relative truth" that Marxism is based upon. Also, Marxism is the belief that MAN is God himself, and therefore man has the power to *change* the fundamental nature of humans. It does not believe in firm rules about right and wrong – all truths are relative, and man himself gets to decide which truths he may follow. Also, if man is God himself, who puts limits on his behaviour *or what he deems possible?* After all, he deems himself even so powerful as to defeat the nature of humankind itself and create a Heaven on Earth. Why am I reminded of the arrogance of the Tower of Babel?

The Capitalist system forthrightly acknowledges that *man is* ***imperfect*** and will always BE imperfect. Sin is part of the world, and we have to live with it.

Marxism claims that man is God, and that through evolution and blank-slate hocus pocus, humans themselves can improve upon their nature so much that they can completely rid the world of all evil and create a Heaven on Earth, where we don't need God's offered paradise. (Who cares what God promises when WE are God?). Oh, and by the way, I recently read a history book describing the times of Stalin's five year plans - it said that most civil servants were making 4000 rubles a month while the peasants working on the collective farms were making around 150 rubles a month. Human greed and self-centeredness exists in the Marxist/Communist system just as much as it does in the Capitalist system.

Capitalists are like the car engine utilizing dangerous things (explosions) for the greater good. Marxists are people who want to create explosions from water rather than gasoline, not caring that water is not combustible – what does it matter to them? They are God after all, and even physics/nature must bend to their will.

The First Thing To Go Out Of Your Buddy's House When He Gets Married Is...

. · 18 January 2006 · Archived copy · Original

QUOTE: "The reality is that female trolls who frequently derail discussions, are scared. Women are scared men will or have found out the truth about women. Women work hard to hide from men who they really are. Women work hard at creating an avatar that enables them to manipulate men. Men-only gatherings present the ultimate insecurity for women, that their mask of deception will be torn down and the unpleasant truth about women will be exposed to men."

That's a pretty good way of describing it. It's like they know if all the prisoners start talking, they'll figure it out that something is wrong, and they'll escape. In projection terms, it makes one wonder what women have always been talking about at their Koffee Klatches, doesn't it?

What's the first thing that goes out of the house when your best buddy gets married?

You!

And the rest of his friends… especially the unmarried ones.

She'll allow him some "approved" friends alright – the husbands of *her* friends, and they are allowed to go to approved events together – like bowling night for two hours on Thursday night – maybe. In the winter. If it doesn't interfere with his kitchen-bitching duties too much.

Mostly I've found that even when in "just a boyfriend/girlfriend" relationship with a woman, my relationships with my friends deteriorates – sure because of "less time spent together" – but even more, is how often when you do see your friends, the women are with the guys and so conversations become "approved for mixed company" and after a year or so, you start to realize how while you are still friends, you never really "talk" anymore. In fact, you can't remember the last time you really "talked" with your friend – you know, the reason you *actually* became friends with the guy for in the first place.

You have no idea how many friends I have "lost"… lol, usually for about 4 or 5 years – until the rotating polyandry, er, divorce court, plunks him back into my life again.

Hmmmm. Same phenomenon as what is going on here, but in a different area of life?

Excerpt from the essay: A Bachelor's Complaint of the Behaviour of Married People – by Charles Lamb, (1775-1834)

...

But this is not the worst: one must be admitted into their familiarity at least, before they can complain of inattention. It implies visits, and some kind of intercourse. But if the husband be a man with whom you have lived on a friendly footing before marriage, if you did not come in on the wife's side, -- if you did not sneak into the house in her train, but were an old friend in fast habits of intimacy before their courtship was so much as thought on, -- look about you -- your tenure is precarious -- before a twelve-month shall roll over your head, you shall find your old friend gradually

grow cool and altered towards you, and at last seek opportunities of breaking with you. I have scarce a married friend of my acquaintance, upon whose firm faith I can rely, whose friendship did not commence after the period of his marriage. With some limitations they can endure that: but that the good man should have dared to enter into a solemn league of friendship in which they were not consulted, though it happened before they knew him, -- before they that are now are man and wife ever met, -- this is intolerable to them. Every long friendship, every old authentic intimacy, must he brought into their office to be new stamped with their currency, as a sovereign Prince calls in the good old money that was coined in some reign before he was born or thought of, to be new marked and minted with the stamp of his authority, before he will let it pass current in the world. You may guess what luck generally befalls such a rusty piece of metal as I am in these new mintings.

Innumerable are the ways which they take to insult and worm you out of their husband's confidence. Laughing at all you say with a kind of wonder, as if you were a queer kind of fellow that said good things, but an oddity, is one of the ways -- they have a particular kind of stare for the purpose -- till at last the husband, who used to defer to your judgment, and would pass over some excrescences of understanding and manner for the sake of a general vein of observation (not quite vulgar) which he perceived in you, begins to suspect whether you are not altogether a humorist, -- a fellow well enough to have consorted with in his bachelor days, but not quite so proper to be introduced to ladies. This may be called the staring way; and is that which has oftenest been put in practice against me.

Then there is the exaggerating way, or the way of irony: that is, where they find you an object of especial regard with their husband, who is not so easily to be shaken from the lasting attachment founded on esteem which he has conceived towards you; by never-qualified exaggerations to cry up all that you say or do, till the good man, who understands well enough that it is all done in compliment to him, grows weary of the debt of gratitude which is due to so much candor, and by relaxing a little on his part, and taking down a peg or two in his enthusiasm, sinks at length to that kindly level of moderate esteem, -- that "decent affection and complacent kindness" towards you, where she herself can join in sympathy with him without much stretch and violence to her sincerity.

Another way (for the ways they have to accomplish so desirable a purpose are infinite) is, with a kind of innocent simplicity, continually to mistake what it was which first made their husband fond of you. If an esteem for something excellent in your moral character was that which riveted the chain which she is to break, upon any imaginary discovery of a want of poignancy in your conversation, she will cry, "I thought, my dear, you described your friend, Mr. -- as a great wit." If, on the other hand, it was for some supposed charm in your conversation that he first grew to like you, and was content for this to overlook some trifling irregularities in your moral deportment, upon the first notice of any of these she as readily exclaims, "This, my dear, is your good Mr. ----." One good lady whom I took the liberty of expostulating with for not showing me quite so much respect as I thought due to her husband's old friend, had the candour to confess to me that she had often heard Mr. -- - speak of me before marriage, and that she had conceived a great desire to be acquainted with me, but that the sight of me had very much disappointed her expectations; for from her husband's representations of me, she had formed a notion that she was to see a fine, tall, officer-like looking man (I use her very words); the very reverse of which proved to be the truth. This was candid; and I had the civility not to ask her in return, how she came to pitch upon a standard of personal accomplishments for her husband's friends which differed so much from his own; for my friend's dimensions as near as possible approximate to mine; he standing five feet five in his shoes, in which I have the advantage of him by about half an inch; and he no more than myself exhibiting any indications of a martial character in his air or countenance.

...

The Keynesian Sexual Marketplace

. · 19 January 2006 · Archived copy · Original

Here is an article regarding the famous pick-up artist, Neil Strauss, which discusses his general support of feminism while also showing his quick willingness to throw other men under the bus. Really, one would think someone highly schooled in game, while perhaps being empathetic with women, would also be unable to rationally justify feminism given his knowledge base. It illustrates something that the Manosphere is desperately trying to ignore in regard to game.

Now, I would like to make clear that I agree that men should know about game and the attraction triggers of women. Game is essential to understanding the problems that we face as men in society. Without this knowledge, men will continue to be run around in circles, never getting anywhere – as has been evidenced over the past forty years. However, the game community has been putting forth many misconceptions about "Alpha" and "Beta" and they are also being a tad bit dishonest about what they are doing.

First off, I would like to point out that the common definitions of "Alpha" and "Beta" are *wrong.* This is put forth by the game community to mask the fact that most who consider themselves "Alpha" are actually Omegas. I also don't like Vox Day's creation of all kinds of new terminology to suit his arguments such as "Gamma" and "Delta" and "Sigma" ad nausseum. Quite frankly, I suspect Vox is a Gamma that simply doesn't understand game. It is confusing enough without some Christian amateur-alpha attempting to redefine everything to suit his own arguments. If he handed in a university paper on economics in such a manner – creating terms from thin air - he would rightly get an automatic "F" and he knows it. But, he is correct in assessing that "Alpha" and "Beta" according to the Roissyshpere is too simplistic and also that it leaves out the *social aspects* of being Alpha.

I learned of game before coming across Roissy or Vox etc. etc. and here are the definitions I learned it under, which will make sense further along in my argument.

Alpha: The "top" male – both sexually *and socially.*

Beta: Most males in the population. The average guy.

Omega: The scum/deviant/criminal class

Zeta: Weak-willed males

These definitions have been horribly skewed and they are missing some very important factors about classifications.

"Alpha" males don't usually get *the most* partners. Alpha males get *the best* chick around and she beats off all the other women with a stick. Alpha males are respected in society – they are not only sexually attractive, but they also have great *social power* and have the respect and admiration of *other men.* This social respect, including that from other men, is the *key* that the game community is ignoring. Think back to when you were in highschool. The star quarterback, while he *could* have shagged a lot of 6's, 7's and 8's, that is not generally what he does. What happens is he gets the prom queen – the best/hottest chick – and they generally stay together for quite a while. He does not trade his "10" in for quickies with a series of "7's". The top male pairs off with the top female and they tend to stay together.

Keep in mind that female hypergamy comes into play with the Alpha. If the prom queen is dating a "10", then who would she "trade up" for? Most men are not 10's and there is pretty much only one Alpha in any closed group (it's zero sum). Most males are 5's (average), leaving the range from 6 to 10 for female hypergamy to wish to trade up for when she's dating an "average guy." At the top end of the scale, however, there become very, very few prospects for her to view as better than her current 10, and so the top pair tends to stay together.

“Beta” males are almost all other males. They are *not* weak wimps, as the game community so often derides them as. They are merely the males that come in second place (or further). Not *everyone* can win the footrace and place 1st. The sexual marketplace is a zero sum game. There cannot be 12 alphas of equal sexual-social rank. It just doesn’t work that way with hypergamy. She prefers only the best, and that does not refer to the “top dozen,” but only number one is “The Best.” Beta males generally have *more* sexual partners than Alpha males as they screw around lots when they are younger and sort out their socio-sexual rankings before finding the right socio-sexually ranked female to pair off with. Being 2nd place does not mean you are a slow runner – it merely means you are second place, which is still higher than third, which is still better than fourth. You cannot have 12 firsts – except in modern feminist-inspired schoolyard sports.

“Omega” males are the *scum* class as well as the sexually deviant class. These are the bad-boys and these are also the guys who have multiple sex partners. A key characteristic of Omega males is that they cannot form stable relationships. They *are not* powerful like Alpha males. They might get lots of girls, but essentially they are powerless in society and have little *real* respect from those around them - *especially* other males. Girls may screw them, but girls don’t *stay* with them. Not having the respect of other males makes them socially *powerless,* and this is the key to why they are *not* Alpha males.

“Zeta” males are weak-willed males. They rarely get sex and when they do, they are ruthlessly manipulated and exploited by women.

When the game community talks “Alpha” they are really describing “Omega” and when they say “Beta” they are really describing “Zeta.” The proper references to Real Alphas and Real Betas are missing.

Now, one has to keep in mind that since the rise of feminism in our culture, most males have been relentlessly propagandized to believe that Zeta characteristics are the proper ones, and after 40 some years of this, as well as a healthy heaping of totalitarian styled laws removing all sorts of powers from the average male, indeed, if most males are “Beta” males (ie. average people), then it is true that this indoctrination has indeed encouraged and tricked the average man into taking on many characteristics of the weak-willed Zeta. In this sense it is understandable to confuse the modern Beta with the traditional Zeta.

However, it is entirely false to confuse the Alpha with Omega traits – and this is something the game community does relentlessly. One must keep in mind that human beings naturally exhibit *pair-bonding* and Alphas still pair

bond while Omegas do not. Most in the game community are certified Omegas, not Alphas. They are the sexual deviants with numerous sexual partners *but their social ranking is low* and that is why they need to continually game more than one woman at a time. They can only fool a woman into believing they are Alpha for a short amount of time and they have little ability to actually *keep* a woman of high mating value. Another reason they continually need to have more than one chick on the go is to protect their own emotional vulnerability. Of course, this behaviour also provides the Omega male with social proofing, which helps them get more chicks, but this is a different kind of social proofing than that which the Alpha male gets.

The "true" Alpha – the highschool football star who's screwing the prom queen - *doesn't need* to be sexually promiscuous in order to be social proofed. He is social proofed already by dating *the best* chick. All the other girls "know" who the best chick is, and they hate her with an envy that would turn Kermit the Frog three shades greener than he already is. Also, every girl would *like* to replace the prom queen herself, because they all know that the prom queen's boyfriend is the highest value male and whoever can displace the prom queen will become the new female atop of *their female ranking.* In other words, the "real Alpha" doesn't need to screw dozens of chicks to have social proofing. He's already got it by banging the hottest chick, which every other girl wishes she could be. Should he and the prom queen split, there will be a plethora of women from the lowest sexual rank to the highest trying to achieve status by being the prom queen's replacement. He will be snapped up again very, very fast by another very high value female, and he will again ignore all the women below that level.

Another factor that has enabled Omega behavior to be successful is *urban anonymity.* It is easy to be a "sexual sniper" in the big city where the Omega can easily disappear into the background before the valuable Beta class finds him out and ruins his life. You cannot rise in socio-sexual ranking when you are constantly cuckolding all those around you, whose co-operation you would need in order to gain social power in society. Keep in mind that urban growth is a relatively recent phenomenon in human history. For most of history humans lived in relatively small, rural communities and they needed the co-operation and *respect* of those around them, *especially other males,* in order to survive.

An apt example of these forces and their results is found within economics. In Keynesian Economics, we see all kinds of market distortions. Low/negative real interest rates discourage savings in favor of spending – and anyone with half a brain knows that you can't spend yourself to prosperity. However, when faced with falsely imposed negative interest rates, spending money suddenly does make more sense than saving money which will have less value in the future. In Keynesian Economics, low interest rates also lead to excessive speculation, when anyone with a quarter of a brain knows that sound investing is more profitable in the long run than risky speculation.

In the same way, what we really have going on in society is almost a "Keynesian Sexual Marketplace." In other words, a false economy based on Government Totalitarianism, enabled by Urban Anonymity, and fortified by

relentless propaganda encouraging the “average Beta” to assume the traits of the weak-willed Zeta – with some further false sexually economic factors in the form of the pill and abortion – all combining to skew the “free sexual market.” The whole thing is as false as fiat money is to gold, and should these factors be removed, humans would likely revert back to a more traditional sexual marketplace – the kind often ballyhooed about in foreign cultures where things are not as far along in their screwed-upness as ours.

If it were not for things like government totalitarianism, women who mate with the scum class would find survival very difficult for themselves and their spawn. Many would likely die – and rightfully too, according to nature - for choosing an *anti-survival* strategy of mating with powerless Omegas who are unable to properly pair-bond. “True Alpha” males – those with high social and sexual value – would survive the best, as they have the best ability to provide, and all the lower ranking males and females (the Beta class), would again quickly pair off simply for survival’s sake. No animal, with the exception of perhaps lemmings, chooses anti-survival methods of living.

As for the Omega class, were it not for urban anonymity where they can disappear before being forced to deal with the consequences of their actions, they too would likely disappear quickly – most likely at the hands of the socially valuable Alphas and Betas. If you lived in a rural community and decided to try and screw 100 of the local women, you can almost be guaranteed to make at least 100 *very motivated* lifelong enemies. Keep in mind that women are like monkeys, and don’t let go of one branch until they’ve gotten hold of another. Each time an Omega “scores” another man gets screwed over. Except for virgins, pretty much all women are romantically involved with *someone* at the time they decide to discard the old for the new. This is *not* conducive behavior for gaining social power amongst the other males surrounding the Omega male, and in fact will soon leave him completely powerless and struggling for survival. If an Omega were the town blacksmith and he screwed 100 of the local women, he would soon find a large portion of the town shunning him and taking their business to the next town, if someone didn’t outright kill him first for his cuckolding behavior. There is very, very little survival value for a woman and child to be attached to an Omega male. Without government welfare picking up the slack and creating a “Keynesian Sexual Marketplace,” the natural market would soon see both the Omegas and their lovers removed from the race.

And herein lies the problem with “game” as it is put forth in the Manosphere today. We have the Omega class (low value males – lower than Beta) posing as Alphas (high value males), and since Omegas are the *scum* class rather than socially powerful Alphas who have *other males’* cooperation (along with high female attraction), the Omegas are flourishing while Beta males are floundering after being relentlessly propagandized to emulate the weak-willed traits of the Zetas. And, in many ways, Omegas *are* scum for how they treat other males. Read through the game blogs and simply observe how many Omegas there are that think it is their right to screw other men’s wives and see how many of them chuckle at their cuckolding of other men. This is deviant behavior, and certainly not “Alpha.”

I have seen it pointed before in Game circles that “Alphas” like to consider all women “theirs” and will try to undermine “Betas” to protect his harem. This is, I believe, incorrect. It is deviant Omega behavior that does this. The Alpha has *lots* of social co-operation in society because he has only *one* chick – the hottest one – and he stays with her, thereby not screwing over multitudes of other men whose cooperation he needs in order to accomplish things. It is the Omegas that choose to screw multitudes of people over in order to achieve their sexual goals. And you can see this anti-social Omega behavior well coming out in the Game community as they all laugh and scoff at the “insecure Betas” they screwed over and cuckolded. You can also see it lately arising from those who outright condemn the “Betas” in the MRM that are “bitter losers” for not being a “dominant” arse like themselves and taking what they can get.

The Omega male will *also* support feminism in many regards, as it makes women sexually loose and into bonafide sluts. The Omega gamesman *wants* women to be sluts with a screwed up, anti-survival sense of mating, and the Omega *wants* his sexual competitors to be denigrated, taking on Zeta male traits, to the point of them being sexually unattractive to the females in his line of vision.

Keep in mind how many of the practitioners of PUA-game have no qualms at all about cuckolding other men – something which many of them openly recognize as the equivalent of "rape for men," – and yet, so many of them brag about bringing this great harm to other human beings. They quickly denigrate others for calling them out on their shoddy behavior by claiming they are simply "insecure Betas." This is not socially constructive behavior. Most faux-Alpha Omegas are actively trying to dominate *other men* in order to raise their sexual ranking and are *quite pleased* when they succeed in doing so. This is deviancy and is not conducive to social climbing but rather, it produces the opposite.

Think of the guy in the pub who always tries to comb everyone else down with his superior IQ, his superior vehicle, his superior house, his superior fighting (bragging) skills, his superior blah blah blah, compared to *your* stupidity, your piece of crap car and house, your wimpy attitude… yeah, that is usually the guy that ends up sitting alone in the corner all alone because nobody likes him and nobody wants to co-operate with him. Now think of that same guy but now he is trying to dominate *you* by sexually stealing your woman, and everyone else's woman too! Not only is it homo-erotic to try and dominate other men by proxy through women, but it also might convince some of those men to get up out of their chair and deal with the situation in a very primal way. This is *not* the behavior of an Alpha who has high social standing, but is deviant behavior typical of the scum/criminal class, creating damage wherever they go.

Does this mean that Game doesn't work? Absolutely not. It works very well – especially in our false sexual marketplace coupled with the ability to disappear into a large urban environment where getting along with others socially is not nearly as important as it was only 150 years ago, and throughout most of human history before that. Also, knowing that Beta males are being socially conditioned to adopt Zeta behavior is enormously useful to regular men/Betas. Hopefully it will help the average man reverse the damage which the Zeta-promoting feminist propaganda has brainwashed him with.

Omegas support feminism because it suits their deviant agenda perfectly and also coincides with their deep dislike of other males (society), whom they often try to dominate through having sex with their wives.

But Omega is not Alpha, because Omegas make too many enemies to be socially successful with other men, and when other men don't want to co-operate with you, you may find yourself truly screwed in society, which in turns makes Omegas of extremely low mating (survival) value. If/when our governments goes broke, as well as everyone else along with them, and the failures of society can longer count on being "bailed out," the false sexual marketplace will disappear. Without this government interference, women who choose low-value, high mate-count Omegas will again be forced to pay, and pay dearly, for their anti-survival mating strategies and the true Alpha & Beta paradigm will again reappear, simply because of survival strategy.

These are the times we live in. With Keynesian Economics and the false influences it causes, one would have been a complete fool to have sat in gold bullion from 1980 to 2000 while sitting out the rising real-estate market because of "false Keynesian influences." You still have to live in the times you are presented with until natural forces once again over-rule synthetic ones. In the mean time you have to survive and see that your needs are still met. And so it is in the sexual marketplace of today, where men have to adjust their behaviour to ensure their needs are met, and thus certain aspects of game are indeed advisable to utilize. But, in the back of one's mind, it would probably be wise to remember that we are living in the times of a false sexual economy and eventually natural forces will overwhelm the synthetic ones. Natural forces have a habit of doing that.

Related:

Bonecrcker #43 – Women Behave Like Beavis and Butthead

Patriarchy 1.0

. · 20 January 2006 · Archived copy · Original

You can get close to marriage 1.0 by obtaining children via surrogacy and leaving the wife out of the equation. Marriage 1.0 was about father-custody of children. (Note that shared parenting is not marriage 1.0 either, nor marriage 1.7 – shared parenting is like marriage 2.3, even further away, and involving more of the state than even before). Women don't need a husband to have children. All the "alphas" out there love to sport-fuck bareback as much as the women riding the cock-carousel do. A woman can get knocked up easy. Men, however, have usually only been able to obtain children through marriage and a wife.

There is no advantage to a man to take on a wife. Those who have studied game should know this completely. She is not your companion – if you make her one, she will leave you. She is not your equal, if you make her one she will leave you. She is not there to satisfy your emotions, just the opposite actually, as she will constantly "test" your emotional state to make sure you are "strong." When you get old, you get weaker, and lose your "alpha-cred", and most likely her too, along with your pension. It goes on and on. Taking on a wife is almost a pure liability – even in marriage 1.0. The only thing a wife contributes (and only in marriage 1.0) is a man's *own* children. (In marriage 2.0. the children are *hers,* so what's the point?) Even in marriage 1.0, the wife provides little of value except her womb, and still comes fraught with liability. Does anyone think it was a great deal for husbands in marriage 1.0 to be legally liable for the actions of his wife? She was a liability back then too, and could be just as miserable and soul-draining as they are now. The only difference was that the children in marriage were *his* and if she left, she couldn't take the kids – and so, very few women actually left. Men love women, women love children, and children love puppies – it is a one way street and does not work the other way around.

You can have all the patriarchy 1.0 you want by getting your own children through surrogacy, and leaving "the wife" completely out of the equation. Hire a nanny. It's still cheaper than supporting a wife, or going through a divorce. Let alone not having to put up with all the bloody drama day in day out. Then you date with game to get your sexual needs met. Never marry, and certainly never marry and allow her to adopt the kids. If you must have a woman living with you, get her an in-law suite in the basement or convert your backyard garage into a studio, and charge her $50/month in rent. Make sure she's childless and you are fixed.

Surrogacy is very close to marriage 1.0, and it puzzles me why this isn't one of the major issues of the MRM. Changing father-custody to mother custody was one of the first things the suffragettes went after – now you can see why.

Back to basics.

Woman: The Most Responsible Teenager In The House

. · 21 January 2006 · Archived copy · Original

You have been directed to an outdated version of this article, please read the updated, finished version.

Male Sex Drive vs. Female Sex Drive

. · 22 January 2006 · Archived copy · Original

A while back, I came across a post at Roissy's discussing how women's sex drive is not as strong as men's. A while later, Rollo Tomassi followed up with his own version of the same meme. Since I believe that men and women are equal but different, I respectfully disagree with both of them.

Now, don't get me wrong, I am not going to start writing all kinds of New-Age crap while asking you to sit and sing a rousing chorus of Kumbaya with me while we celebrate our diversity. Rather, I believe that all nature seeks a balance and since men and women are opposite sides of the same coin, they must be equal or it would be impossible to be opposites.

One of the things I see both Roissy and Rollo doing in their articles is define female behaviour by male standards. Rollo, for example, puts out the evidence that men produce 12 to 17 times the testosterone, which controls the human libido, that women do to back up his claims. Roissy goes even further by quoting a study which states the following:

> *"The sex drive refers to the strength of sexual motivation. Across many different studies and measures, men have been shown to have more frequent and more intense sexual desires than women, as reflected in spontaneous thoughts about sex, frequency and variety of sexual fantasies, desired frequency of intercourse, desired number of partners, masturbation, liking for various sexual practices, willingness to forego sex, initiating versus refusing sex, making sacrifices for sex, and other measures. No contrary findings (indicating stronger sexual motivation among women) were found. Hence we conclude that the male sex drive is stronger than the female sex drive. The gender difference in sex drive should not be generalized to other constructs such as sexual or orgasmic capacity, enjoyment of sex, or extrinsically motivated sex."*

Well, that's all quite grand, isn't it? Except, they defined everything in male terms of desire, rather than in the female! If you are going to define "sex drive" only by that which is exhibited by males, then it comes as no surprise to me that you will always find males to have the higher "sex drive." What I'm getting at is that it is the same game as measuring violence by only using behaviours exhibited by males... gosh... do you think that if we only measure violence by male specific behaviour, that we will find males are more violent? How surprisingly disingenuous. What if, however, we started measuring violence by how many women are only to happy to covertly encourage a new boyfriend to inflict violence on an ex-boyfriend? In fact, by doing so, she is *twice* as violent as a male, because she is the indirect cause of two people receiving a violent episode in their lives, rather than just one direct recipient. If we started measuring violence by including how women *covertly* manipulate others to commit violence-by-proxy, we would likely discover that women's propensity for violence is much more "equal" to a male's than we previously thought - she just goes about it in a different, and often hidden, way. Sexuality is merely the same tune played on a different instrument.

Males are overt while women are covert. Rollo reinforces this himself many times on his blog with regard to male and female communication. The difference is opposite, and by nature of being opposite, they must be equal. If they were not equal, they could not be opposite. The same is true of communication, violence, sin, happiness, mid-life crises, aggression, and you guessed it, sexuality and sex drive.

In fact, as a response to Roissy's study which defines sex-drive in only male terms, I offer a differing opinion which illustrates the opposite:

“Really, women’s desire is not relational, it’s narcissictic.’ — it’s dominated by the yearnings of ‘self-love,’ by the wish to be the object of erotic admiration and sexual need. Still, on the subject of narcissism, she talked about research indicating that, in comparison with men, women’s erotic fantasies center less on giving pleasure and more on getting it. ‘When it comes to desire,’ she added, ‘women may be far less relational than men.’”

Roissy himself backs this up in another post, where he references the mating habits of rats:

"According to Ogas and Gaddam, we can learn some important lessons about female sexual behaviour from observing rats in the laboratory.

They insist that if you put a male and female rat in close proximity to one another, the female will start to come on to the male, performing actions associated with sexual interest — running and then stopping to encourage the male to chase her.

But after a bit of kiss-chase, the female rat stands still, adopting a submissive stance until the male takes action. They also claim that almost every quality of dominant males — from the way they smell to the way they walk and their deep voice — triggers arousal in the female brain, while ‘weaker’ men, who are not taller, have higher voices or lower incomes, excite us less.

What they seem to be suggesting is that the cavemen were right all along and that what women really want is to be dragged by the hair, all the while feigning reluctance, by macho men waving clubs."

And thus we come to age-old saying amongst humankind, "he chases her *until she catches him.*"

The female rat, while not *appearing* to want sex, stops and encourages the chase should male stop pursuing. So, I suppose, if all you want to do is measure sex drive by how the *male* behaves, then you are simply going to find that the male is the one who chases/wants the sex, and never the other way around. It's kind of a no brainer. If all you are going to do is define people who have the ability to communicate as those who talk German, you will find Germans are the only people in the world with the ability to communicate. The French don't communicate... because they speak French. If you are going to define "sex drive" by male metrics alone, you will find only men want sex. But, if you factor in female involvement in encouraging the male to continue the chase, you would likely see that both the male and female are equally involved in "the game." The same is true of humans. It's like one of those pictures you have to stare at for a while before you see a second picture within the picture. One picture is overt, the other covert:

Everywhere in nature, the male is the reproductive servant of the female. It even goes down to the level that plants have "male" and "female" parts.

"The ripening of an egg, or ovum, *is a time and energy intensive job, so the male is designed to be ready to fertilize that ovum when the female notifies him that she is "ready."*

In the rest of the natural world, females announce their readiness to the entire world with a variety of cues - smell being the most significant, but visual cues come in a close second.

When a female chimpanzee is in estrus, her genitals swell up and become a SPECIFIC shade of bright pink. Jane Goodall observed one such female whose genitals could be seen from across a valley - nearly a mile or 2 away.

There is a species of fish in which the belly of the female turns a particular shade of red when she is gravid. A block of wood with the lower half painted that exact shade of red will drive males into a mating frenzy.

"Smell is even more important. There are MANY species in which a female in heat gives off pheromones which are specific to that species which can be picked up by males as much as 5 miles away."

[...]

"Mating behavior does NOT get mediated in the new brain, or the cortex. It happens in the brainstem and spinal cord, the old or "reptile" brain.

In the days when such experiments were still allowed, you could open a cat's skull and suck out all the cortex. Sexual and mating behavior was not affected at all, but social behavior was destroyed.

Human females have introduced a new factor in the game - they ovulate covertly. There is no way to tell when they are fertile and when they aren't - although we are beginning to hear about studies which suggest that women on the pill

smell differently.

The human male adaptation to this has been to pay greater attention to women and the subtle cues they give off that they are fertile. These are these "signals" that women always talk about giving off and getting so angry at men when they don't pick up on them.

The problem lies in the fact that women have become adept at faking these cues in order to trigger men's mating responses - thus giving them huge amounts of power to manipulate men. Men react in their spinal cords to a woman's facial lips reddened with lipstick, exactly the same way they would react to a different set of lips reddened with sexual ripeness.

Purely female power depends entirely on how many males she can capture the attention of. The more males vying for the chance to fertilize her egg, the more choices she has."

Obviously, in this paradigm, if we only measure sex-drive by male standards, we will again be only able to conclude that males are the sexual aggressors - but it is obvious that the females are intent on having males sexually desire them - something which does *not* show up by mere male activity.

The female plays a very *large* role in the courtship game, even with humans:

"Cary (1976) discovered that the woman, through eye contact, controlled the course of interaction with a male stranger, both in the laboratory and in singles' bars. Perper (1985) gave a detailed description of courtship, stressing an escalation-response process in which women play a key role in escalation or deescalation. The steps in this process are approach, turn, first touch, and steady development of body synchronization.

Although these reports are clearly valuable, most researchers addressed courtship very generally, and some failed to recognize the importance of the female role in the courtship process .What was needed was a more complete ethogram of women's nonverbal courtship signals. To compile such a catalog of flirting behavior exhibited by women involved in initial heterosexual interaction, more than 200 adults were observed (Moore, 1985) in field settings such as singles' bars, restaurants, and parties.

Research has shown, therefore, that the cultural myth that the man is always the sexual aggressor, pressing himself on a reluctant woman, is incorrect. -- Courtship Signaling and Adolescents: "Girls Just Wanna Have Fun"? Monica M. Moore, Ph.D.Department of behavioral and Social Sciences, Webster University

Women are obviously very involved in encouraging the men who bed them to do so - they just do so covertly and hide behind "plausible" deniability. She encourages, but has a safety excuse to use for cover, while the male *must* overtly display and destroy all plausible deniability which he might have had. In the end, the man can deny nothing but the woman can simply claim, "it just sorta happened," and absolve herself of all responsibility while not having her covert "signals" scrutinized. It is just the way the world works!

It is easy to see why the world thinks women are not sexual aggressors, but rather, always the recipients of overt male sexual aggression.

This is the very foundation for all of the false-rape claims that occur around us! At every step of the way, the female is covert and can completely deny her responsibility in the affair, while at the same time making it virtually impossible for the male to deny his actions - which were originally encouraged by *her* covertly. Being a PUA/Game Advocate that does not readily acknowledge female involvement in the mating dance is disingenuous. After all,

don't even PUA's only move forward with women who have *already* given them IOI's? (Indications of Interest).

Marriage Staggering

. · 22 January 2006 · Archived copy · Original

Lots of this is based upon the boomer-topian idea that men and women are basically the same. We are not – not even in the pair-bonding feature which gets mediated in the middle/mammalian brain. We exhibit "staggering" from the male to female (though not from the female to the male). You could see this in the older days, when childbirth was the number one killer of women – this left lots of widowers. When these guys, who were often in their thirties, remarried, they again chose young women in their most fertile age for their second wives – they did not choose women in their thirties/of a similar age to him… and the pair bonding worked – it gets strongly enforced by hypergamy and Briffault's Law (a mid-thirties man is most often more powerful and wealthier than a younger man). Also an older man will not be manipulated by his wife to nearly the extent that a younger man will be – thus he will remain more "alpha" and dominant, which further strengthens the marriage.

Thus, the best way for everyone to "have it all" is for a man to spend the first 20 years or so of his adulthood as a single man, swash-buckle and adventure around the earth while building up his fortune, and then in his mid to late thirties, seek out a young bride. This will also be the time in a man's life when he approaches mid-life crisis and he will be able to satisfy his "is this all there is to life" questions with the children that will give his life new meaning. He will live long enough yet to most likely see his grandchildren born and grow up, and thus realize his immortality through them.

For women, they should be looking to marry young – screw college. They can easily have 2 or 3 children by the time they are 25, and have the youngest one off to school by the time she is 30. Thus, the children will be properly raised in their early youth at least. 30 is not too late to enter college, and actually be there to learn something (as opposed to being a frat-party whore). Also, by this time, if the husband is around 15 or 20 years older than her, he might be looking to "slow down" and also likely has enough money that he can afford to do so, and take over some of the parenting responsibilities. It will be about at that age too when the children will need less totalitarian mothering, and more risk-taking fathering, for them to develop properly.

The woman would be out of school by her mid-thirties, and this is the age when women become desirable in the job-market. Despite all the laws to the contrary, business owners still aren't stupid and don't prefer hiring 25 year old women, because they know that maternity leave and "flex-time" costs them $$$. At my father's business, we had a "silent policy" not to hire women under 35 simply because younger women cost the business too much money.

At 35, the woman still has plenty of time to advance her "career" and also, since her husband is older, he will die much sooner than her. Thus, she will have the last twenty years of her life to do her own swashbuckling around the earth – she will inherit his wealth and also have a well paid career. It also shortens the life of the marriage – 35 or so years, rather than 50 or 60.

The only kink in it, is that the father should will his wealth to his son(s) with a codicil that they must provide a living stipend to the mother, or something along those lines. Nothing would be a worse insult for the deceased father than for the mother to inherit it all, remarry, then die and have the new husband inherit all of the wealth of the previous husband – thereby robbing the deceased husband's children of the wealth he worked his entire life for.

It works biologically for both the man and the woman… and the children. Staggering works quite well in regard to pair-bonding. Both the man and the woman can chase after their careers – just at different times in their lives. They also will both have long durations of adulthood when they are not tied down by spouse & children, allowing them to pursue their aspirations… just at different times.

We should stop treating men and women as the same, and recognize that the differences can be worked into better ways.

Hypergamy and Briffault's Law

. · 23 January 2006 · Archived copy · Original

.

I think it's true that women are hypergamous – in that they always look to "marry up," or in other words, they are in relationships for the benefits a man confers upon her, thus, Briffault's Law comes into play as well as its corollaries:

"The female, not the male, determines all the conditions of the animal family. Where the female can derive no benefit from association with the male, no such association takes place." -- Robert Briffault, *The Mothers,* I, 191

The Corollaries to Briffault's Law:

1 - Past benefit provided by the male does not provide for continued or future association.

2 - Any agreement where the male provides a current benefit in return for a promise of future association is null and void as soon as the male has provided the benefit (see corollary 1)

3 - A promise of future benefit has limited influence on current/future association, with the influence inversely proportionate to the length of time until the benefit will be given and directly proportionate to the degree to which the female trusts the male (which is not bloody likely).

What this means is that a man *cannot* simply hand over all the benefits of associating with him over to the woman. He *must* keep the benefits he bestows upon her under his control, and learn to say no often, as she will naturally try to get him to pass them on to her. No, I won't spend $100 for roses on Valentine's Day. No, we're not going to Hawaii for a vacation (unless you are paying, Toots!) No, you cannot move in with me. No, you cannot move in now that you've been evicted – that is what your girlfriend's couch or your parent's spare room is for. NO! We won't get be getting married. No! You are not going on the pill so we can have bareback sex. No. No. No. No! NO!

NO!

The man *must* keep the benefits, or the lure of the benefit, completely under his control. Once they become her domain, it simply doesn't matter to her and becomes "What have you done for me lately?"

Our culture and its laws have made it very, very difficult for a man to maintain control over the benefits he bestows upon women. **No!** is the most valuable word a man can learn in a relationship.

And, while it is true that women are quite willing to trade up *when it suits them,* and while it is also true that women's "love" for a man is rarely as deep as the man's love is for her, what a lot of the game community is ignoring is the fact that humans naturally pair-bond.

Yes, it is true, mating behaviour is mediated in the brainstem and spinal cord (the old, or reptile brain) and not the cortex (thinking brain), but what is left out is that humans *naturally* pair-bond because of our mammalian/middle brain. Now, the mammalian brain (which causes mammals to have emotion) is not as old as the reptilian brain, but the mammalian brain is still a factor in human behaviour – and thus why humans have exhibited pair-bonding for a few hundred thousand years now (lol, however those brilliant Ph D-tards calculate such timing).

Men and women both naturally pair bond. The problem comes in that women's pair-bonding feature is not for lifetime monogamy, but rather based upon a four year mating cycle called "Rotating Polyandry," – or serial monogamy - where she seeks a birth-spacing/love cycle of four years (enough time to fall in love, get pregnant, give birth, recuperate, then wean the child until it can walk, talk and feed itself), each time this is complete, she moves on and seeks to pair-bond with a different male to ensure genetic diversity.

But, she still pair bonds. The only thing you have to realize is that her pair-bond is designed to be time-limited. Once the timer runs out, her interest in you becomes dark and sinister. Also, one never falls in love as much as one does the first time. It is like sticky tape – the more you apply it, peel it off, and re-apply it, the less sticky it becomes. (Thus why a man, should he try to marry, ought to choose a virgin or one to two previous partners at the most – and you can never be sure, because women lie as easy as they breathe). A woman who has ridden the cock-carousel with 30 men does not pair-bond very easily anymore, and the time-limit on her relationship with you is drastically shortened.

Once a woman's time-limit is up and her interest in you becomes dark and sinister, this is when she goes into a "binge and purge cycle." She starts with-holding sex in order to manipulate you. Lots of husbands fall for this and think she's not interested in sex anymore – this is not true. What she is doing is starving her own sexual desire in order to drive up her sexual value to manipulate you. (Once a woman starts refusing you sex, it is time to dump her – she does not have pure interests in you anymore). Then, after about a year or so of her denying her own sexual desires, she gets rid of the man (and tries to keep all of his benefits) and THEN goes on a sexual binge where she screws thug after thug, trying to satiate her starving sexual desire. Once she has done this, she again looks for a more suitable long-term mate who confers "benefits" upon her, she pair-bonds again, and the whole cycle starts over again.

It is true that "all women are available" but what is not true is that "all women are available all of the time." This is why the PUA-sphere (the ones who actually know what they are talking about) are always looking for IOI's (Indications of Interest). What you want to do, if you are a "player" looking for easy, commitment free sex, is be the *second* guy to screw her after she splits up with her long-term mate. The first guy is usually an emotional tampon, or an orbiter, who ends up getting royally screwed because he is usually only being used as an emotional sounding board, or as a tool for the woman to gauge her sexual market value. To be a good "player," you want to be the guy that catches her in the *middle* of her binge phase. This is the phase where she goes nuts and sucks and fucks

up a storm and does things her ex-husband/boyfriend never dreamed she would do. But, it is *very* time limited. Once her "binge" is done and she has satiated herself, it is back to Briffault's Law.

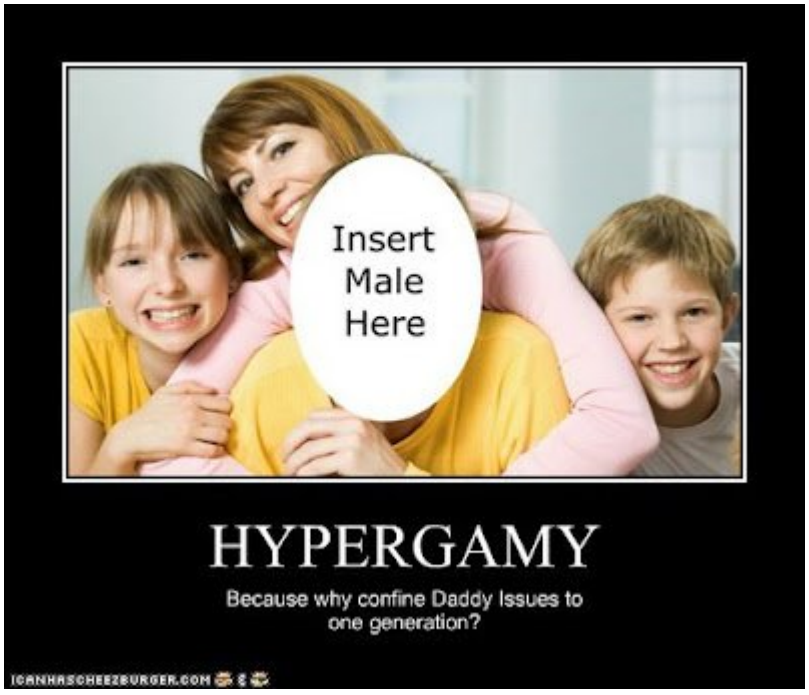
It works just like people being in the market for buying a car. *All* people are in the market to buy a car… but not *all* people are in the market to buy a car *right now.* There is a "buyer's cycle" that takes a few years. You first buy a new car and are very happy. (You are no longer "in the market'). After a couple of years, you still don't mind your car, but now it is becoming ho-hum, but it's still ok. Then after four or five years or so, the new models are out, your "old" model has a few dings and scratches… the ads on TV are starting to attract you… you go to a car dealership after hours to peruse what's available, and finally you work up the courage to go in during business and take one for a test drive… now you are "in the market" again. To the salesman, you are a "hot prospect." (And by this time, you are). The same thing goes on with women in the "dating market." The key is learning how to find the small pool of women who are "in the market right now."

In the old days, before Father Custody was destroyed in the 1870's, the principle of Briffault's Law was enforced and overcome/fulfilled because if a woman left the husband, she lost both her children and access to Dad's paycheck. Since then, she has been able to use the children as "mutilated beggars" to rob Dad of his paycheck through the courts in order to fund her children. This is where the divorce craze began, not in the 1970's when No-Fault Divorce was introduced.

"There were only a few thousand divorces annually in the mid-nineteenth century when divorce cost wives their children and Dad's paycheck. This family stability began eroding as later nineteenth century divorce courts, under pressure from the rising feminist movement, began awarding child custody to mothers". -- Daniel Amneus, *The Case for Father Custody,* p360

"Between 1870 and 1920 the divorce rate rose fifteenfold, and by 1924 one marriage out of seven ended in divorce" -- James H. Jones, *Alfred Kinsey: A Public/Private Life* (New York: W. W. Norton, 1997), p.292.

.



.

No-fault Divorce in the 1970's merely simplified things. Before that, it was kind of a joke in that even if there was no "fault," you could still divorce under the fault of "cruelty," which could basically be anything, just like "abuse" can be anything today. An argument that makes her cry (He was CRUEL to me), he didn't do this or that for me

(He was CRUEL to me). Even Belfort Bax talks of this being a joke a century ago. So, rather than having to go through the whole ridiculous process of finding fault in “cruelty,” it became “just give her the damn divorce already.” (It wasn’t THAT difficult to divorce before the 1970’s – lol, look at Elizabeth Taylor and Marilyn Monroe).

What really happened in the 1970’s was that women entered the work-force in large numbers – thus, it further undermined Briffault’s Law (Dad’s paycheck was not as much of a “benefit” as it was before) and also, hypergamy again came into play – a woman making $60,000/yr does not find a man making $40,000/yr to be attractive because of it. She needs to find a man making $100,000/yr to hypergamously “move up.”

Foreign women are indeed a better bet than the typical Ameriskank or Mapleskank (sorry, don’t know what the rest of you guys call your skanks). The reason they are a better bet is because you have better ability to be hypergamously desirable to a larger pool of women – putting you in better control of choosing a suitable, high value mate, and also, you are able to enforce Briffault’s Law and “keep her around” via the “providing a benefit to continue association principle.” Although, if I were to seek out a foreign chick, I would tuck all my money safely away in a numbered account in the Turks and Caicos Islands so it is 100% safe from her being able to get her hands on it – that “benefit” is then securely under *your* control, and *then* go abroad and stay there. Once you bring her back to Western Culture, she quickly adopts the attitude of the women around her – no matter her background – go to live in her country and don’t bring her back here.

Previous Index Next

MGTOW

“If it’s not right, Go Your Own Way!”

.....
..oooO.....
..(....).....
….\..(.....
…. _/.....
…….....Oooo..
…….....(....)…
……..)../....
.....(_/.....
.....

Related:

Any Gal of Mine

"It is almost a tertiary sexual character of the male, and certainly it acts on the female as such, that she expects from him the interpretation and illumination of her thoughts. It is from this reason that so many girls say that they could only marry, or, at least, only love a man who was cleverer than themselves; that

they would be repelled by a man who said that all they thought was right, and did not know better than they did. ***In short, the woman makes it a criterion of manliness that the man should be superior to herself mentally, that she should be influenced and dominated by the man; and this in itself is enough to ridicule all ideas of sexual equality."*** -- Otto Weininger, Sex and Character, Male and Female Characteristics

International Women's Working Day -- V.I. Lenin

. · 8 March 2006 · Archived copy · Original

Written: 4 March, 1921
First Published: Published On March 8, 1921; In a Supplement to Pravda No. 51. Signed: N. Lenin; Puhllshed according to the Supplement text
Source: Lenin's Collected Works, 1st English Edition, Progress Publishers, Moscow, 1965, Volume 32, pages 161-163
Translated: Yuri Sdobnikov
Transcription\HTML Markup: David Walters & R. Cymbala
Copyleft: V. I. Lenin Internet Archive (www.marx.org) 2002. Permission is granted to copy and/or distribute this document under the terms of the GNU Free Documentation License

---

The gist of Bolshevism and the Russian October Revolution is getting into politics the very people who were most oppressed under capitalism. They were downtrodden, cheated and robbed by the capitalists, both under the monarchy and in the bourgeois-democratic republics. So long as the land and the factories were privately owned this oppression and deceit and the plunder of the people's labour by the capitalists were inevitable.

The essence of Bolshevism and the Soviet power is to expose the falsehood and mummery of bourgeois democracy, to abolish the private ownership of land and the factories and concentrate all state power in the hands of the working and exploited masses. They, these masses, get hold of politics, that is, of the business of building the new society. This is no easy task: the masses are downtrodden and oppressed by capitalism, but there is no other way—and there can be no other way—out of the wage-slavery and bondage of capitalism.

But you cannot draw the masses into politics without drawing in the women as well. For under capitalism the female half of the human race is doubly oppressed. The working woman and the peasant woman are oppressed by capital, but over and above that, even in the most democratic of the bourgeois republics, they remain, firstly, deprived of some rights because the law does not give them equality with men; and secondly—and this is the main thing—they remain in household bondage", they continue to be "household slaves", for they are overburdened with the drudgery of the most squalid, backbreaking and stultifying toil in the kitchen and the family household.

No party or revolution in the world has ever dreamed of striking so deep at the roots of the oppression and inequality of women as the Soviet, Bolshevik revolution is doing. Over here, in Soviet Russia, no trace is left of any inequality between men and women under the law. The Soviet power has eliminated all there was of the especially disgusting, base and hypocritical inequality in the laws on marriage and the family and inequality in respect of children.

This is only the first step in the liberation of woman. But none of the bourgeois republics, including the most democratic, has dared to take oven this first step. The reason is awe of “sacrosanct private property.

The second and most important step is the abolition of the private ownership of land and the factories. This and this alone opens up the way towards a complete and actual emancipation of woman, her liberation from “household bondage” through transition from petty individual housekeeping to large-scale socialised domestic services.

This transition is a difficult one, because it involves the remoulding of the most deep-rooted, inveterate, hidebound and rigid “order” (indecency and barbarity would be nearer the truth). But the transition has been started, the thing has been set in motion, we have taken the new path.

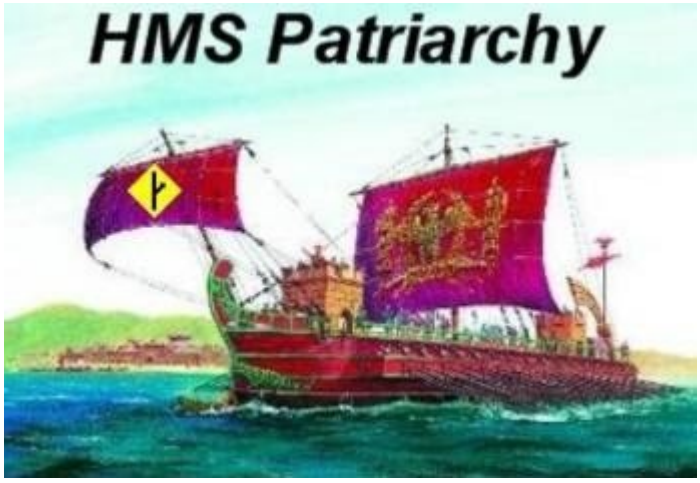
And so on this international working women’s day countless meetings of working women in all countries of the world will send greetings to Soviet Russia, which has been the first to tackle this unparalleled and incredibly hard but great task, a task that is universally great and truly liberatory. ‘[here will be bracing calls not to lose heart in face of the fierce and frequently savage bourgeois reaction. The “freer” or “more democratic” a bourgeois country is, the wilder the rampage of its gang of capitalists against the workers’ revolution, an example of this being the democratic republic of the United Slates of North America. But the mass of workers have already awakened. The dormant, somnolent and inert masses in America, Europe and even in backward Asia were finally roused by the imperialist war.

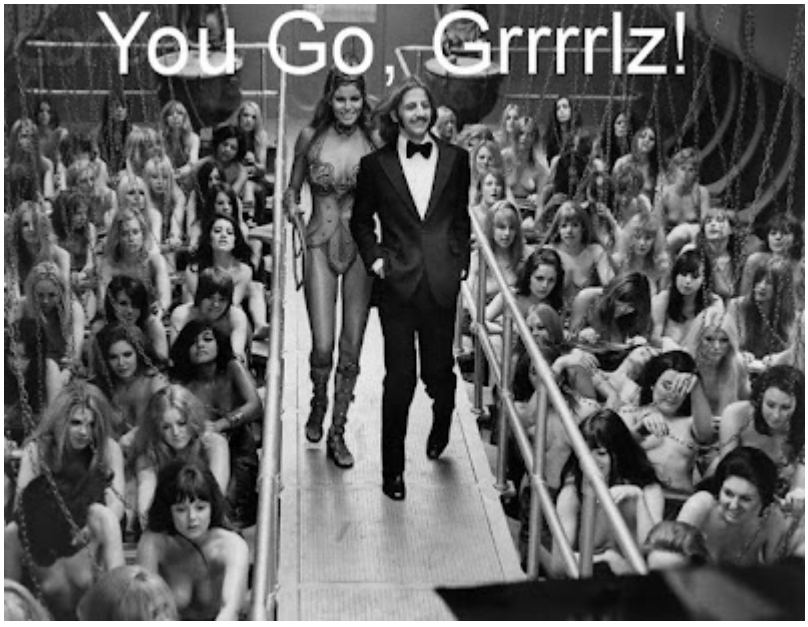
The ice has been broken in every corner of the world.

Nothing can stop the tide of the peoples’ liberation from the imperialist yoke and the liberation of working men and women from the yoke of capital. This cause is being carried forward by tens and hundreds of millions of working men and women in town and countryside. That is why this cause of labour’s freedom from the yoke, of capital will triumph all over the world.

March 4, 1921

.
On March 8th, I usually take all of my buddies out for the first cruise of the year aboard my yacht, the HMS Patriarchy. Yup! And it's environmentally friendly too!





. ---

Zenpriest #39 – Brer Patriarch

This Way To See The Great Egress!

The Dialectic, or, Scholars are Stooopid!

. · 9 April 2006 · Archived copy · Original

"You're using words for which you don't know the definitions." — Boxer (Boxer is a career student who after fourteen years of study - ten of which he claims are about Marxism - still doesn't have a Ph. D.! Can you say "Worthless?")

The Reply:

Or maybe I'm simply following Orwell's Politics and the English Language, and choosing to find words that communicate clearly rather than impress people.

Sure, Boxer. The Dialectic merely means an argument. Hegel didn't invent it. If Position A (Thesis) is correct (1+1=2) then traditional logic dictates that Position B (Anti-thesis) is incorrect (1+1=3). Easy Speazie! No need to carry on.

Hegel took Position A (Thesis) and Position B (Anti-thesis) and *equalized* them in value, claiming the truth lay in the Synthesis, or compromise/consensus, that arises out of the two. [(1+1=2) + (1+1=3)] divided by 2 = 2.5 (Synthesis). This synthesis now becomes the *new Thesis* and *another* anti-Thesis is pitted against it, creating yet *another* Synthesis, and so on, and so on, and so on. It works in a "staircase" fashion over history, one new truth building upon another – more or less like when a precedent gets set in a court of law, it becomes a "new truth" that is the basis for future court cases.

eg. Since we've already established that 2.5 is the new Thesis, we can now go [(1+1=2.5) + (1+1=4)] divided by 2 = 3.25 (Synthesis/New Thesis)

This is the foundation of Hegel's work, which ultimately boils down to "The Truth is Relative." This was fundamental and groundbreaking at the time, because up until Hegel did this, the Western World followed the standard of Absolute Truth, because they were following the Bible (God is a representative of the Absolute Truth – no truth can over-ride him, not one). This is why Christianity and Marxism cannot co-exist in the same philosophical space. They are 100% contradictory.

Now, keep in mind, that is only what Hegel did. Next is where you get into *manipulating* the Dialectical Argument. (Hegel's version finds the synthesized truths in a "natural" or haphazard fashion).

Marx then came along and said, *"The philosophers have only interpreted the world in different ways. The point, however, is to CHANGE it."*

Marx says, "Hey, you know, how can I use Hegel's thing-a-ma-jiggy to bring about the goals I want to see in society?"

So Marx *BEGINS* with what he would like to see, and then thinks of the arguments, or a series of arguments that will lead people to that conclusion.

Marx says, "How can I convince society to believe that/ask for the 3.25 synthesized truth to appear, and he purposefully thinks up arguments – sometimes 3 or 4 or 5 steps ahead, which will lead society to this conclusion. So, in other words, while Hegel's version finds the "truth" in a haphazard fashion, Marx's version already has a predetermined goal. *Marx works the equation backwards,* or more accurately (if I could put diagrams in this

comment instead of math) from the “top down” while Hegel works from the “bottom up.”

“Dialectical thought is related to vulgar thinking in the same way that a motion picture is related to a still photograph. The motion picture does not outlaw the still photograph but combines a series of them according to the laws of motion.” — Leon Trotsky

Of course, the purely accurate term for the whole crapola is Dialectical Materialism.

But then again, hey, what I just described above is just so flippin’ easy to understand and, well, it’s so positively engrossing for the average reader, why not throw in big words that mean nothing to laymen, like Dialectical Materialism, which really don’t mean jack-shit to anyone but those airheads who think fancy degrees and big words make them above others.

I’d rather clearly *communicate* ideas, than impress with vast knowledge coupled with big words and not get my point across but to only 1% of the people who read it – also known as Academic’s Disease (See again, Politics and the English Language linked above).

Not that the men on this board are children, but think of it this way:

If you are teaching a child to cross the street, you want him to be able to *identify* what a car is. All I am concerned with is that he understands what a car is (it has four wheels, moves fast, goes vroom vroom, and is dangerous). That is what is needed to get my point across.

It is completely unnecessary, at this point anyway, to also explain that a car has an exhaust system, shock absorbers, a radiator and a fuel injection system. And also, that it technically ought not be called a car but rather an “automobile.”

I long ago decided that if I was to speak of complex issues to the MRM, I was going to stop trying to impress people with big gobble-die-gook terms, and rather bring things to them clearly, by talking like a trucker or a farmer.

And boy oh boy, can I sometimes talk like a farmer in the barn or a trucker in a traffic jam!

Besides, I have so much disrespect for all things Academia, that I just love watching their nerdy little heads explode over the minute details that really don’t matter a whit to 99% of the population, nor should they.

"This is just the voice of an ordinary Canadian yelling back at the radio - **"You don't speak for me!"**

"I don't know what the scholars will think of it. Nor do I care. I'm not writing for them. I'm writing for Canadians."

Q: "... but has any researcher made a serious longitudinal study on this?"
A: "Maybe you should do a longitudinal study on the overall effectiveness of always depending on longitudinal studies."

"But there we are, what do I know, eh? I am just a poor lonesome country boy with nothing but chicken wire to sit on and a rusty old marble to play with."

"Great men take themselves and the world too seriously to become what is called merely intellectual. Men who are merely intellectual are insincere; they are people who have never really been deeply engrossed by things and who do not feel an overpowering desire for production. All that they care about is that their work should glitter and sparkle like a well-cut stone, not that it should illuminate anything. They are more occupied with what will be said of what they think than by the thoughts themselves. There are men who are willing to marry a woman they do not care about merely because she is admired by other men. Such a relation exists between many men and their thoughts. I cannot help thinking of one particular living author, a blaring, outrageous person, who fancies that he is roaring when he is only snarling. Unfortunately, Nietzsche (however superior he is to the man I have in mind) seems to have devoted himself chiefly to what he thought would shock the public. He is at his best when he is most unmindful of effect. His was the vanity of the mirror, saying to what it reflects, "See how faithfully I show you your image." In youth when a man is not yet certain of himself he may try to secure his own position by jostling others. Great men, however, are painfully aggressive only from necessity. They are not like a girl who is most pleased about a new dress because she knows that it will annoy her friends." -- Otto Weininger, Sex and Character, Talent and Genius

MGTOW Activism - Part One

. · 10 April 2006 · Archived copy · Original

The difference between being a Men's Rights Activist (M.R.A.) and being Men Going Their Own Way (M.G.T.O.W.) is the way in which we deal with the situation at hand. While both have pretty much identified the same problems and concerns in society, the approach to "fixing" these problems is entirely different. In fact, they are so different that they are in direct opposition with each-other.

.

Change comes from within.

.

MGTOW: Taking the Personal *Out* of the Political

To refer to the MGTOW Manifesto: *"The goal is to instill masculinity in men, femininity in women,* ***and work toward limited government!"*** This is something that is not congruent with the Men's Rights Movement's (MRM's) form of activism, which by its very nature is *political*. In other words, the goal of the MRM has always been about such things as raising money to fund lobby groups which demand *the government* change XYZ for them. (Take your pick: Divorce reform, child custody reform, men officially included as domestic violence victims, male-studies at universities, ad nauseum). In each of these cases, men are demanding of government to fix their problems for them and in doing so, they are increasing the scope which government has over our lives. It suggests that men are incapable of changing their lives unless the government assists them in doing so.

Don't get me wrong. Sure, some things only the government can fix... but the fixing they need to do is *repeal* laws and get *out* of our lives, rather than *expand* their laws so that men are *included* under their umbrella of power. This is not just a small difference between MGTOW and the MRM, but rather, it is a fundamental difference that makes them as opposite as night and day!

In fact, I would go so far as to say that the very fact most men seem entirely unable to consider any form of action valid besides "running to the government," is merely further evidence of the feminization of our culture. The "male principle" is independence, freedom and self-reliance, while the "female principle" is dependence, security and 'Someone! Anyone! Please fix this for me! Don't you know I'm *a victim*?!?"

"“Movements,” like harems, herds, and other collectives, are for females. It’s been remarked that men’s

first priority is freedom, while women's is security. Thus women are natural herd animals, for security is most easily and immediately found in numbers. And thus the inclusion of women in political life must inevitably lead to totalitarian collectivism, as it has everywhere it's been tried — at this point, essentially the entire planet, which is fast turning into one vast nursery, where "everything that is not prohibited is compulsory." Women instinctively seek the security of such an environment; when women rule, this is where everyone must live.

.

"Do you want to be free, or do you want to be taken care of?" Answer this question honestly, and you'll know where you stand on the male–female spectrum, regardless of what form your personal plumbing may have." -- Philalethes #10 - Male vs. Female Thinking

As we all know, feminism and the totalitarian growth of government hasn't really helped women as much as everyone reflexively thinks. It has distorted women's thinking into believing they have become "independent" by not needing any looooser ma-yaan to provide for them... but only because they have substituted the support of the men they married in the past, for their dependence on their new alpha-husband, Big Government. They are still as independent as a tropical fern in a greenhouse in Iceland, just like they have always been. The only difference is that now they have unwittingly taken on Men's Curse as their own. Also, now that they are under government "protection," they may soon find that what was once a *social* expectation of them to fulfill certain obligations to individual husbands who loved them and cared for their well-being, will become a *legal* expectation to fulfill obligations to their collective husband, The Government, who has no feelings for them, and throughout history has proven to be downright harmful to them.

Government, bureaucracies, lobby groups and academia are appealing to women, and increasingly to men, as "the solution" to any and all problems because such organizations are relatively abstract, distant, conceptual entities which can easily be imagined to be perfectible. Ultimately, one should think of it in this way instead: Would you give authority to your *neighbour* to decide how you should live your life, and allow him to punish you if you didn't agree? Most would say 'no' pretty fast, wouldn't they? But, the people in government are the exact same fallible and self-serving people as your neighbour. It's when they're in an abstract concept like government that we trick ourselves into thinking that they *should* do the right thing and be void of any other influences. History is filled with examples of people making this mistake, and many of them were *not* able to live to regret it.

Organisms

.

.

When government bureaucracies, lobby groups, or activist arms of academia are created, they almost immediately turn into organisms that serve themselves first and foremost, while hood-winking their supporters and the public in

general into believing they are serving some higher altruistic purpose. One of the main reasons this happens is because they operate under the "budget principle" rather than the "profit principle." Both of these principles work under the same human motivations of greed and the desire for power & prestige, but they differ in how they achieve those goals.

Under the profit principle, one satisfies greed, power, and prestige by *making* more money. Thus profits are made larger by creating a greater demand while cutting away unnecessary costs. In order to do this, companies advertise to increase the desire in people for their products, while cutting costs by laying people off, off-shoring their manufacturing, or automating their labour force.

Under the budget principle, greed, power and prestige are satisfied by showing *a need* for larger budgets. Thus, the directors of government bureaucracies and other such organisms *always* come in over-budget, and then run to their benefactors with their hands out in order that they may meet this need.

Now, for the most part, I consider myself a capitalist (small "c") and prefer the profit principle over the budget principle. Private enterprise creates a miracle a minute while government bureaucracies fumble around making excuses but never performing. Thus, we see in Canada that when we de-criminalized marijuana and made its medical use legal, 15 year old boys were able to grow killer weed in their closets without their parents finding out, while a gaggle of government scientists in multimillion dollar underground facilities were unable to produce marijuana with sufficient THC levels to benefit cancer patients, resulting in those cancer sufferers still seeking black market outlets to satisfy their needs.

However, I also see an inherent problem with the profit principle, such as when mega-companies like Merck are able to influence government policy to artificially create a demand for their products, like Gardasil. I don't have an answer for this completely, except to point out that if the government didn't have the authority to artificially create a demand for Gardasil, companies like Merck wouldn't seek to influence the government in the first place. Also, there comes a point when mega-companies become so large, that Capitalism ultimately become a form of Communism in itself. Thus, the small mining town where the lone mining company also owns the town store and extends credit to keep its employees enslaved to them, which is no good either. Further, in the U.S.S.R., the car manufacturer Lada was essentially granted the evil of *monopoly capitalism*, in that no matter how crappy of cars they built, they still had a 100% market share, which undermines the notion of a miracle a minute. (If you don't like our Lada cars, you are more than welcome to go down the street and buy... a Lada!). Lol! But we're getting off topic here!

The budget principle, however, is truly insidious. It outright *seeks* to create problems and inefficiencies. If a bureaucracy has a budget of $100 million, the only way to gain power is to get that budget up to $120 million. And once a budget of $120 million is achieved, they again show they are short of cash, and do whatever they can to intensify all sorts of the problems that *still* need to be fixed, so that they are granted a budget of $150 million next year. What they absolutely *don't* want to do, however, is actually *fix* any of the problems they are tasked with solving, because then their budget would be reduced to $75 million, and those within that bureaucracy would *lose* power and prestige. Thus, a bureaucracy's goal is to *create* as many problems as they possibly can, while dealing with them in the most inefficient ways they can get away with.

It pains me deeply to see how Men's Rights Activists (MRA's) seem to believe that creating White House Councils on Boys and Men, or Male Studies Departments in academia, will magically behave differently than any other bureaucratic organization that has come before them - which is mainly to say that they will simply feather their own nests. Like I said earlier, the only reason MRA's believe it to be so is because such organizations created to "solve" our problems are abstract, conceptual entities that *should* operate in "this" manner or "that" manner. If we wouldn't allow our neighbours to decide who we are and how we "should" act, why should we assume that Warren Farrell,

Stephen Baskerville, Strauss & Gelles et. al. are somehow morally above others? If you watch them all closely, and read their "solutions" to our problems, they all boil down to "the government must..." and "more funding is needed..." and... and... and...

Dr. Phil and Warren Farrell are simply different ends of the same spectrum as it is. Both have achieved fame and wealth *from* the Gender War, not by actually *solving* it. In fact, had Farrell "solved" the Gender War only a few years after he got booted from being the head of the National Organization of Women (N.O.W.), he would not have sold so many books, as he would be just another schmuck with a useless Ph. D. in Psychology (Even my dumbass, irritatingly feminist sister has one of those, and nobody knows *her* name!). As it sits, Farrell would suffer greatly if the Gender War actually stopped tomorrow. Plus, not only has he many times recommended fallacies such as "equality" since he became the foremost (and best paid) men's activist, but often he recommends *more* androgyny, which we all know is a complete disaster! Furthermore, *androgyny* is completely against the MGTOW Manifesto, which has the stated goal of **instilling masculinity in men and femininity in women!** That is decidedly ***not*** about androgyny or equality (at least not beyond equality under the law as defined by the American Founding Fathers).

I highly encourage you to watch this video by Ezra Levant, which illustrates so plainly and clearly how any organism that is created, no matter how noble and pure it sounds on the surface - such as encouraging people to stop smoking - ultimately turns into a self-serving, lying, statist organization that either simply feathers its own nest, or benefits its master (Big Government), in order to maintain its funding - *while accomplishing absolutely none of its stated goals!*

Organisms representing men will become no different. Why? **Because it is in their nature!**

.

.

Left. Right. Left. Right.

"The oppressed are allowed once every few years to decide which particular representatives of the oppressing class are to represent them." -- Karl Marx

The debate over whether one ought to vote for left wing parties or right wing parties is never ending. Just to be clear, I would prefer a right-wing, conservative government, but the truth is that it doesn't really matter because such a thing simply doesn't exist anymore. Furthermore, most people have no clue where most parties actually sit on the political spectrum anymore anyways. Take our ruling Conservative party here in Canada. It gets bandied about all the time that they are right-wing (spit) nazis who are like the George Bush Republicans in the States. But the truth of the matter is, we haven't had a political party as right-wing as the US Republicans for decades. Our present Conservative party is actually a centrist party, and if one were to place them on a political spectrum compared to the States, they would actually be the same or to the left of the Obama Democrats. So what's the point? People think the Conservatives are evil because they are the furthest to the right in Canada, and yet, the

same people think Obama is the Messiah because he is the furthest left in America. If Obama were a Canadian, he would be a Conservative. It's all just silly.

Even more troubling is that since we stopped teaching civics classes in our schools several decades ago, replacing them with social-studies, we have stopped educating the masses on their rights and why our forms of government were created in the ways in which they were in the first place.

I have opted out of voting altogether. In our elections, only about 60% of the people actually do and it gets to be less and less people each year. Pretty soon, since we are running under a democracy, the majority will not have given their consent to be governed, and no winning party will truly be able to claim a mandate... which hopefully will cause a host of problems and force the government *and the governed* to examine our political systems a little closer and actually re-learn the importance of setting things up in the proper ways. Well, one can dream. We are supposed to have a Constitutional Monarchy in Canada and a Republic in the USA, both of which have similar features which counter the evils of democracy. This also blows all sorts of holes in women's cries that they were "oppressed" for not having the vote - here's a clue, there is no "right" to voting for either sex, just like there is no "right" to a job, cheap housing, or free healthcare. "Rights," as they were originally intended, are supposed to protect us *from* the government, not to empower them to "fix things" for us.

The real government isn't the people you vote to represent you in Parliament or Congress anyways. The real government is the unelected bureaucracies right beneath them - the ones that never change and are unaccountable to the people. I mean, does it matter whether the Conservatives or the Liberals are in power? (or the Republicans or Democrats in the US?). Has the judge in your community's divorce court changed? Does it change his biases? Does it change the bulk of the 900 miles of legislation and policy that backs his authority? Do the police automatically allow more freedom when a "right wing" government gets elected and then clamp down harder under a "left wing" one? Nope! They just keep marching on the same no matter what. Do all of those bureaucracies (organisms) that have been formed to "protect" or "help" us stop creating policies that only feather their own nests? No again. It just simply doesn't matter. The real government is the bureaucracies beneath the elected government, and it marches on no matter what.

An Awareness Movement

A long time ago, Zed and I were having a conversation during which he related to me the Disney story of Fantasia.

.

.

Sometimes, no matter what you do, you can't stop something once it has been put into motion. All you can do is let it run its course. In other words, you can't put the genie back into the bottle, or, as was the case with Pandora's Box, once things are gone, they are gone, and all that is left is hope. In the meanwhile, it's time to recognize that a storm

is coming, and since it's smearing shit in our faces, it's obviously going to be a shit storm.

Not only will being a political activist simply further the dialectic and empower the government to have more control over our lives, but things are way too far gone already for this to be stopped. The time to stop it was forty or fifty years ago. Today, we must figure out ways to adapt and survive - and thankfully, adapting is what men excel at.

I am not Jesus Christ. It is not my destiny to be the saviour of the world. Furthermore, as a bachelor in a world that constantly undermines any action I may take to be part of society in a meaningful way, I don't owe society anything more than it owes me - which I am constantly told is nothing. Therefore, all that I owe is to myself, and what I have come to realize over the years of studying and writing about these subjects, is what I ultimately owe to myself is as good a life as I can live with the cards that are dealt to me. Life has never been a cakewalk for men, but things are certainly better for us today than they were throughout most of human history, regardless of the social climate of the present day. What I can do, however, is stop trying to paddle against the river's current and rather, turn my canoe around, seek safety and shelter, and clear away as many snags along the shore as I can so the filth will pass by me as quickly as possible. This notion is best described by the phrase "being an Ethical Sociopath."

All I can do is take the red-pill, bring awareness to others of what is going on, and hopefully help them figure out how to pull themselves out of the fire before they get too burnt.

This is not a political movement.

It is an Awareness Movement.

.

Previous Index Next

MGTOW

"If it's not right, Go Your Own Way!"

.....
..oooO.....
..(....).....
….\..(.....
…. _/.....
…….....Oooo..
…….....(....)…
……..)../....
.....(_/.....
.....

MGTOW Activism - Part Two

. · 13 April 2006 · Archived copy · Original

In MGTOW Activism - Part One, we explored the notion that MGTOW is about "Taking the Personal Out of the Political," which is more congruent with the male principle of individuality and freedom than the female herding instinct which creates thoughtless movements like feminism. Also, we touched on the fact that movements which beg the government to make our lives better simply creates organisms which serve no other purpose than to empower themselves while increasing the scope of power big government has over our lives. Such movements are not compatible with the MGTOW Manifesto, which states its only three goals as "*to instill masculinity in men, femininity in women, **and work towards limited government.***" Therefore, we concluded that MGTOW is not a political movement, but rather it is an Awareness Movement.

In this article, we are going to explore these notions a little deeper, namely, discussing what men can actually do about fighting back against the situation we find ourselves in. It is not in men's nature to sit idly by and passively wait for others to fix things for them. Just the opposite. Men's nature is to Shut Up and Shovel the Fuckin' Gravel!

When Doing Nothing is Actually Doing Something

.

.

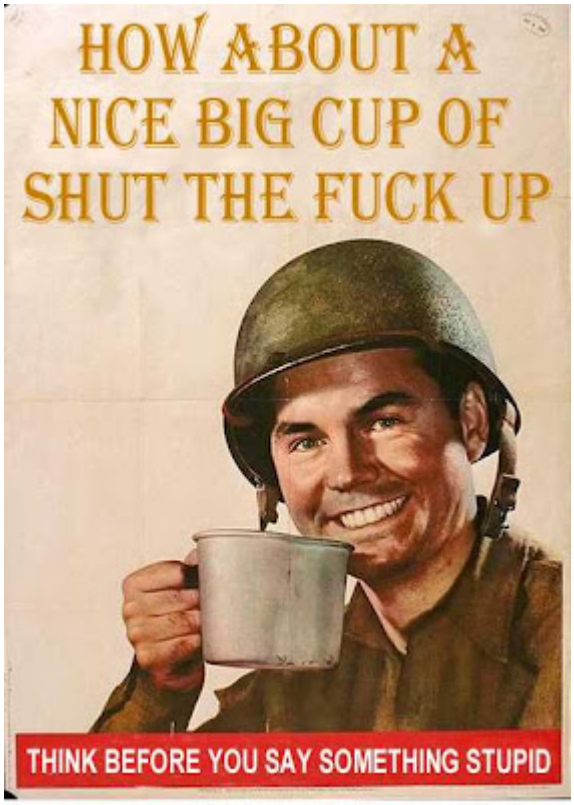
A friend of mine has a niece living in Ontario who is around 18 or 19 years old. Like many girls that age, she met a boy and fell madly in love with him. And yes, you guessed it, he is not particularly what one would call a Nice Guy. At any rate, I suppose the young couple felt that the world was against them, but none of that mattered because they could live on their undying love. So, the girl quit her job, and the two of them packed up her car and ran off together with about $1,800 between the two of them. She also skipped out on the payments for their escape vehicle, for which her grandfather had co-signed the loan, forcing him to take over the payments. After a few weeks, they wound up in Newfoundland, broke, where they requested some charity of her *other* grandparents who lived there. These grandparents had an old cabin on their property where they told her they could stay... the only thing is, the cabin had no electricity or water, and it was March, and still very much winter. They had to chop wood for the stove for heating and cooking, and also, had to carry buckets of water into the cabin from the frozen creek. It didn't take too long before the phone calls back home started coming, requesting money to help them out. The answer was, "No, get a job." A little while later, more phone calls, "But we don't *like* chopping wood and carrying water!", to which the reply was another simple, "Tough. Get a job!"

The whole extended family agreed to "do nothing." And in doing so, they very much did, "do something," didn't they?

The same strategy can be applied to Western women. As The Eternal Bachelor (used to) have on the top of his blog, "Giving Women the Husbands They Deserve: None!"

There is no point in arguing with women and trying to convince them to see the light. That door was closed several decades ago. Many of you have read Rollo Tomassi's excellent essays on "The Female Imperative." Essentially, women "are" society, and what their wants are is what society's wants are. What women find disagreeable, society finds disagreeable. They are "the herd" and the males in the herd either serve their purposes or they are ejected from it. Women also don't understand the laws of cause and effect very well. The only way to get women to see that it is in their benefit to have men respected is to make them suffer the consequences of treating men so poorly. Since women control our social mores, once having men dis-empowered in society *starts to harm them directly*, there will be no stopping them in agitating for men to be re-empowered.

Lots of MRA's whine and moan that "we must get women on board." True enough. The problem is that women won't get on board *until it is in their best interests to do so!* This is something that really chaps my ass about Trad-cons and Christians. They want to "save" marriage, and encourage men to keep marrying, without expecting that women must change to make it worth men's while, nor addressing that marriage itself must be restored to its original meaning - and then they point to the Bible and blah blah blah. All I have to say to them is: "Until you get off your asses and create a form of marriage that actually represents what the Bible intended, STFU and keep your spinster daughters for yourselves! Don't expect me to immolate myself upon the marriage pyre for a *false* notion of marriage in a society that actively criminalizes everything about men and *Biblical marriage* as God intended it!" (You might even, like, you know, try to use that "rights" thing called Freedom of Religion.)



.

Only when it is in women's (society's) best interests to re-empower men, will women (society) re-empower men. They hold all the cards on that level - it is where *their* power lies. But to keep propping women up, simply because it's what men have always done, will not work. It just enables further bad behaviour. If my friend's family had just

sent the niece money and propped her up despite her behaviour, she wouldn't have learned her lesson either.

However, men also have to start realizing where *their own* power lies. We might be the lowest on the totem pole as far as human sympathy goes (Men love women, women love children and children love puppies), but the whole of society only works so long as **men** are willing to be invested in it. Women, children, *and the government* all need men far more than we need them. Men can survive with a pocket-knife and a garbage bag. Everybody else, not so much.While women are demanding their new husband, big government, give them affirmative action to be equally represented in the cush and often non-productive jobs, like government bureaucrat, tenured professor in women's studies, or executive board members, they still expect that men will continue to do all the shitty jobs that need to be done in society, like digging the ditches, keeping the electricity and sewers running, and providing fodder for enemy gunfire. We used to do all of these things because of the of the respect which women (society) gave to us for doing them. In other words, we wanted women's social approval and affection for these things, and we used to get it. Now, we are told we are looooosers for doing it, but they still want us to "man up" and do it all the same.

Hmmm. I wonder what would happen if the men just worked enough to get by, and then eventually quit showing up and went ghost? Such a strategic retreat is what men must do, and thus, we are Men Going Their Own Way.

We Speak Our Views on the Internet

The internet has been the greatest thing to happen to free speech since Gutenberg invented the printing press.
.

.
Actually, it is beyond the printing press! We are sharing our stories and our life experiences in ways men have *never* done before. One thing we are finding is that we are not alone in our observations. Thus, we reach out to other men in the hopes that they may learn from our experiences and our mistakes. It is not much different than what every women's magazine has done for decades, except that our views were historically suppressed to satisfy the feminine imperative. (Women, er, society, has never liked us talking of these things in the same way women have talked of us).

There is no right way or wrong way to be a MGTOW Activist - it is one of the features of MGTOW, so I'm not

going to try and shoehorn in what makes an MGTOW or not. However, there are certain things we have discovered that worked for us in the past.

Start Your Own Blog or Website

A long time ago now, I used to regularly read William S. Lind's columns about Fourth Generation Warfare. Now, of course, I am not advocating doing anything violent, but rather taking the concept of decentralization found in Fourth Generation Warfare and adapting it to the internet. There is no "leader" of MGTOW to attack or discredit. We are all leaders of *our own* movement, and if one of us is removed, there are more nameless people to take his place. Just like in Vietnam or the recent wars in the Middle East, it really doesn't matter how many multimillion dollar, high-tech jet fighters you bring to the battlefield when the enemy is not engaging you in the air, but rather with booby traps made from bamboo or low-tech car bombs parked on the side of the street. It doesn't matter how many drills your platoon practices, nor how informed your CO is on military battlefield tactics, if your enemy refuses to engage you openly on the battlefield. In fact, if you can't even identify your enemy from the friendlies, the entire notion of organized armed conflict gets completely demolished. We can take these concepts and adapt them in a non-violent fashion for use on the internet.

Now, of course, blogging can be a lot of work and not everyone has the time nor the ability to regularly do it. I spend a lot of time writing my articles - often six or seven hours or more of thinking, researching, writing and then re-writing. Some people can whip out articles like it is nothing, but not all of us can. There are other things you can do to create awareness though. Just simply starting a blog aggregator is a good idea. Even better are aggregators that print out the entire article. Why is this beneficial? Because many of us who do run blogs get attacked by people like Symantec/Norton AntiVirus, or Google will monkey with our search results or, our websites simply disappear - as often happens with Proboards. When an aggregator copies our entire article, it circumvents what these a-holes are trying to do to silence us, because now there are more places on the internet to access the information and be picked up by search engines, and it also provides an automatic back-up of articles in case a website does "mysteriously disappear."

Another easy thing to do is simply find a blog or a particular article that you endorse and then enter the url for it along with your name & other info when you make comments around the internet, so that you are giving exposure to ideas you endorse simply by making the comments you make already anyways. A few years ago, I used to regularly get hits from a fellow who commented all over the internet on a variety of subjects as "L. Walker - Man of Color", and for each place he commented, he linked in my Marriage is Fraud article, and thus I got exposure from oodles of places, and it took hardly any effort from him at all. Thank-you, Mr. Walker. A really good web-page to use for this is Wedded Abyss, because it was *designed* for this purpose - to give a brief summary of our views, while linking to a variety of sites where people can go to explore these concepts at a deeper level.

If you do start your own blog, here is a quick tip: don't publish all of your articles all at once. What I mean is, lots of guys start up a blog, get really excited about it, and crank out one or two articles a day - every day, and then find that within two weeks they are burnt out. What you need to do is make a post every three days or so when you first start out (later, after you are established, an article every week or so will keep the hits rolling in). So, when you have all that energy at the beginning, go ahead and write your articles, but schedule them accordingly by spacing them out. You will be glad you did, I promise. It will also give you the luxury of not being under the gun to write *something* simply to keep your blog running, and thus, you will find that if you are writing two weeks ahead of publication, your articles will be of much higher quality. Also, keep in mind that when you first start your blog, your hits will be minimal, no matter how many articles you write. So don't blow your brains out over articles that hardly anyone will read. Your goal should be to provide something every few days so that people will know to keep checking in, and thus, you will begin to get exposure by others linking to you.

Furthermore, if you find yourself frustrated with writer's block, never forget that you can always plumb the depths

of The Wisdom of Zenpriest and Eye of the Mind. Zed has given explicit license for any of his words to be used by anyone, in any way, to further the cause of men. In the same spirit, I have given permission at the beginning of *The Philosophy of Men Going Their Own Way* for it to be used by anyone wishing to promote the philosophy. I am not doing this for fame or money. I am not using my real name and I haven't made a dime from what I've written - nor ever intended to. I am doing this because I want men to get up off their asses and stand up for themselves. If taking one of my articles and using it directly for your own blog, either in full or in part, helps to accomplish this, then do it! *That's why I put them there!*

Linkage is Good for You

Be sure to link to others, *especially* those that link to you. I check my stat-counter almost every day, and if I see that a new blog has linked to me, it will automatically get linked in my blogroll. I *want* them to get exposure, and further, the more exposure they get, the more I will get in return! I also link to blogs that I have read which don't yet link to me, but I go through my blog list every few months and clean out the ones that have not provided a reciprocal link to my blog. Why? Because I want those who scratch my back to get the most amount of traffic I can provide them with, and clogging up my blog list with oodles of links to those who are unwilling or just don't care enough to link me back, lowers the exposure those who do support me will receive, and this in turn harms me.

.

.

An exception I have made to this is linking to blogs which are run by women. You might think it misogynist, but that is not my motivation - in fact, to a certain degree, I think *some* of them have more or less decent insights, although they are *always* clouded by the female imperative, and many of them are pretty sneaky on entirely different levels. The reason I don't link to them is because of men! Nothing pisses me off more than offering a man the red-pill, and then watching him run with it to some woman to request her approval for whether he should swallow it or not. I notice this phenomenon every time some woman enters the manosphere. They really don't say anything significant compared to the men in the manosphere, yet within a few months they become one of the most popular bloggers around, while men with far more profound things to say languish in No Man's Land for years before they get similar traffic - from men!

What is really going on is that women have enormous social power, while men do not. Even though it is merely words on the internet and not a real woman, many men in the manosphere seem desperate to get a woman's social approval for their views, or they believe a woman's views are "more correct" than the men's. It kinda reminds me of how a cat will catch a mouse and then bring it to you, believing you are the head of the pride, to see if you want to eat some of it too. It's really come to piss me off over the years to see yet another bimbo show up in the manosphere, write a few trite comments about men in society, and within six months her site is getting 2,500+ hits a day - from men! It's like the Pied Piper playing her song "Not All Women Are Like That!" These men are

desperate to find at least one woman in the world to keep on the pedestal and I just refuse to provide them with the illusion of it. Plus, nearly all of the women I have seen in the manosphere will, eventually, betray their ideals the moment it becomes in their best interest to do so. The whole situation is enough to make one a full-fledged misanthrope!

.

"Where my exposition is anti-feminine, and that is nearly everywhere, men themselves will receive it with little heartiness or conviction; their sexual egoism makes them prefer to see woman as they would like to have her, as they would like her to be." -- Otto Weininger, Sex and Character, Author's Preface

.

Another thing I tend to avoid is linking to big blogs. First of all, they don't link to me so I don't "owe" them anything. Now, I get it, if they linked to everyone who linked to them, they would have blogrolls that numbered in the thousands. But on the same token, if they are so large, then they certainly don't need me to link to them in order to get exposure. Everybody knows who the big blogs are already, whether I link to them or not. Also, it kind of negates the notion of "decentralization" to have big websites acting as a clearing house for all of our ideas. I prefer to send my traffic to the smaller guys so that they may get their legs under them and grow into big blogs themselves. I'd like to see dozens and dozens of really big blogs dealing with men's issues, but this will never happen if we ignore the little nuts who may grow into a mighty oak, in favour of only looking at the full grown oaks and simply *wishing* there were more of them around.

Back when MGTOW first debuted in 2006, we used to do something called "shout-outs." Basically, anyone who showed that they were flying the MGTOW flag and were committed to maintaining a blog, got a public shout-out to the other MGTOW bloggers so that he would be entered as a link on everyone's sidebar, and also to provide the newbie with some traffic to get his legs under him. It also had the benefit of providing the person who did the shout-out, to be able to take a few days off of blogging while directing all of his traffic to someone who needed it, while still providing one's readers with, well, something to read. Here is a shout-out for someone you may recognize. Marky Mark just did one the other day. And here was mine.

When I got my shout-out, it was probably the most significant thing that happened to me in my entire blogging career. Before that I was only getting about 75 hits a day, but suddenly I was getting Eternal Bachelor's 2,000 hits a day all directed to my site and I was like "Holy Smokes! I'd better sit down and write some good stuff while I can!" After the shout-out disappeared into Eternal Bachelor's archives, my blog settled in to about 400 hits a day, and from there it steadily increased. In part it kept on increasing because of the exposure I had received, but even more so, once I had the exposure I was highly motivated to keep it by continuing to provide my readers with more content. And here I am, seven years later, still running my blog! So, don't forget to take care of the little nuts, for they will be the oaks of tomorrow if just given the chance to grow.

Don't Delete Your Blogs

Of course, not all people will want to keep blogging forever. If you no longer feel the motivation, that's fine. It is a thankless job and the pay sucks. But please, oh please, don't delete your blog! Not only does it remove from the internet a significant body of work that others might find and read, whether old or not, but it also removes all of those links in the articles, in the comments, and on the sidebar, which support those of us who still are blogging. Most guys who quit blogging have not lost the faith in the message, they simply are fed-up with blogging. There's nothing wrong with becoming a Man Going His Own Way (MGHOW) and moving on - in fact, it is one of the natural conclusions of MGTOW. But please, if you've found a path to enlightenment through MGTOW and the manosphere which resulted in you starting up a blog, leave your work up so that others may find it, and so that the links in your blog may direct others towards those who are still actively blogging about it.

We *Legally* Reduce Any Tax-Paying

.

.

MGTOW does not advocate doing anything illegal - ever. It does, however, promote thinking outside of the box in order to dis-empower those who seek to bring harm to men either for profit or for the desire for power. Therefore, it goes without saying that you should boycott the products of companies who disrespect men. Companies like Norton AntiVirus, who produce terrible products anyways, are easy to identify. But there are many others - many, many others. Trojan condoms used to have an ad portraying men as pigs, and General Motors thought the way to attract females into buying Cadillacs was by showing ads of inept men being scorned by a snotty bitch of a woman. I notice lately that almost all boat manufacturers now portray women at the helm in their brochures, with the man playing kitchen-bitch in the background, despite the fact that boat purchases are predominantly a male dream instead of a female one. The list is endless. But it goes further than simply switching products, because no matter what, even if you went to another company, they will sell men down the river in a heartbeat too if it means expanding their sales by even one percent.

The best way to hurt consumer culture's desire to crap on men in order to create greater profits is to find ways to remove yourself from needing their products as much as possible. Longtime MGTOW, Richard Ford, has a blog called Six Million Pounds that focuses on finance, and further, about working less and stretching your dollar. One simple thing that can be done to harm consumer culture is to buy high-quality products that will last you a lifetime, rather than cheap garbage that keeps you coming back every few years to replace it.

Another thing you can do is focus on getting yourself debt-free, so you no longer have to work like a slave to pay for useless crap you don't really need as a MGTOW. (For example, if you are a single guy, do you really need a three bedroom 1500sf house, or would a 750sf cottage do you just as well, and cost you less in upkeep?).

All of these things attack the very system that purposefully harms men. First off, it obviously decreases the profits of those companies, but furthermore, it also harms our biggest enemy, Big Government, by decreasing their tax revenues. What do you think all of the "stimulus" the government has injected into the economy over the past years is all about? They want to do things like re-inflate the housing bubble, so that people will *feel* richer and go back to borrowing against their home equity to buy useless crap. In other words, they know that our economy is fueled by debt, and the best way to keep the economy going, and thus their tax dollars coming in - which funds vast

bureaucracies which further harm men, like Women's Studies - is to keep people perpetually enslaved to debt in their desire to "get more useless crap." It does this on several levels. First off, you work harder to make more money, thus the government takes more of your money through income taxes. But also, the more profits these companies make, the more the government makes from them in taxes. Furthermore, the more people spend, the more the government receives in consumption taxes, like sales taxes. And, the more people desire to buy useless crap, the more these companies will hire other people to produce that useless crap, thus providing the government with more people's incomes they can tax, and so on, and so on, and so on...

Another thing you can do to harm those who are harming you is what I call "victory labour." Think about it in this way: Here in Canada, it costs around $2,000+ to heat one's home for a year. Now, in order to come up with that $2,000, I have to go into the work-place and exchange about $3,000 in labour, so that after the government takes off its income tax, unemployment insurance premiums, pension plan deductions etc. etc., I am left with around $2,000 net, which I will then apply to my heating bill. So really, the heating bill costs me $3,000 instead of $2,000. If I made $17.50/hr working 40hrs/wk, I would come to about $3,000/mo in gross income. So, it would cost me one full month's labour to make enough money just to heat the house for a year.

On the other hand, my province of British Columbia is chock full of trees. I could spend two or three 8hr days cutting down trees and carting them back to the house, and perhaps another four or five days chopping wood to burn in the wood-stove, and that should be enough to keep me warm for the year.

Well, in the first situation, I have to work 172hrs in order to have heat in my home. In the second situation, I only have to work around 60hrs to heat my home for the year. What do you think pays better? (I'd be earning the equivalent *labour* value of $50/hr in the second situation). And, as a further bonus, I've *legally* avoided giving the government $1,000 in income taxes, which they will use to fund the bureaucratic organizations which harm men. Further, I will have robbed them of taking tax income from the gas company's profits, and also, I will have reduced the income tax they are able to siphon off of the gas company's employees. Ha ha! *Now* we are talking about kicking them in the pants, aren't we?

This can be applied to hosts of things. Victory labour in the garden. Victory labour by fixing my own car. Victory moose-hunting, and so on. The quicker you get yourself debt free, the less beholden you are to a paycheck, and the more you can put concepts like victory labour to use.

.

A MGHOW victory-fishing for the cause!

.

And just think, with all the free time you have created, you might even be able to become a MGTOW blogger like me!

Further Reading:

Zenpriest #42 - Activism

Zenpriest #56 - MGTOW's Trademark Copyright Philosophy

Previous Index Next

MGTOW

"If it's not right, Go Your Own Way!"

.....

..oooO.....

..(....).....
….\..(.....
…. _/.....

……....Oooo..
……....(....)…
……..)../....
.....(_/.....

.....

Misogyny

. · 17 April 2006 · Archived copy · Original

.

“For a man to pretend to understand women is bad manners; for him really to understand them is bad morals.” – Henry James

Many people who read the following pages within *The Philosophy of Men Going Their Own Way* will reflexively be uncomfortable with what they find. "Why, it's misogynist! The author must be living in his parents' basement and has probably never been laid in his life! He must have a small penis! He must be a dead-beat dad! He's just bitter! He certainly doesn't understand women very much!"

Well, no, no, no, no, no and no. I live in a nice little one bedroom condo. I have slept with the mid-double digits of women and even lived with a few of them, so while I am no stud, I am no virgin either. My penis is average sized. I have luckily never been married and I have no children. The only thing I am bitter about is how the Truth has been hidden and manipulated to bring harm to men, women and children, and I understand women and sexuality well enough to have compiled this "book," rather than just fling about emotionally charged insults.

I started studying this subject back in 2004 and when I was diagnosed with cancer in 2005, I found myself with free time on my hands while I was going through treatments. I decided that I could either watch TV, or I could put the time to use and learn something instead. At that point I started reading and researching in earnest, often spending eight to ten hours a day on it. Originally, my doctors figured it would take around six to eight months to get through the chemo and to the other side... but it took much longer. Three and a half years, to be exact. So I got much deeper into this than I had originally intended, and afterwards, well, I just kept at it. It had become a habit, I suppose. Or perhaps it is better described as being unable to look away from a horrific train wreck. I am now about nine years into my studies on this subject.

“It takes a man a lifetime to find out about one particular woman; but if he puts in, say ten years, industrious and curious, he can acquire the general rudiments of the sex.” – O. Henry, *Heart of the West* (1907)

There's a difference between how a married man knows women and how a bachelor comes to know them. The married man, through the course of spending his life with the same woman, will naturally come to know her individual quirks and personality flaws. We all have them, and so does his wife. The married man therefore believes that Not All Women Are Like That.

The bachelor starts out from the same place as the married man. He falls in love with a woman, discovers her quirks and flaws, and as the relationship spirals out of control he thinks to himself, "I must have just been unlucky and ended up with a faulty one." And so off he goes and finds another, thinking that she will be different. When the

second love ends the same way as the first, he starts to doubt himself. Maybe *he* is the problem. After all, he is the constant factor in this equation. And so, off he goes through life until he loves yet another, and *this* time he focuses on changing *his* behaviour. Then he loves another, and another, and still, they all end up being remarkably similar experiences - often even down to the very words she says when in the same situation. Finally, he comes to the amazing conclusion that yes, something *is* wrong with them! All of them! And thus, with enough notes to compare from various women he has known intimately, a pattern begins to emerge, and once he begins to identify it and map it out, he starts to see it everywhere. Further, as he ages and his old friends disappear into the void of marriage, he begins to hang out with more and more bachelors, and as they compare stories, he discovers that they have had similar experiences as him throughout their lifetime too, which begins to solidify his conclusions.

Marriage hides the nature of women while bachelorhood exposes it as life goes on. I've read before that if a man reaches the age of 38 without having married, the likelihood of him *ever* marrying is negligible. This is why. He's figured out "the game" in ways that not even men who have been married multiple times ever will, and he knows it is all an illusion - one that does not operate in his best interests. Marriage hides the true nature of women as a sex from men, while bachelorhood exposes it. The feminists have indeed destroyed "The Feminine Mystique" in their bid to free women from men by destroying marriage. The more men that remain bachelors, the more that women will fall from the pedestal they have traditionally been placed upon by men. It is not hatred to recognize the true nature of woman any more than recognizing grizzly bears are carnivores instead of herbivores means that I hate grizzly bears. It merely means that I recognize the Truth and will act accordingly.

Misogyny versus Misandry

Much of feminist theory is based on the belief that misogyny is inherent in men, and thus the dreaded Patriarchy is a natural extension of this inbuilt negative attitude towards women which men possess.

But ask yourself, is this really true? Is it true that men are *naturally* misogynistic towards women? Is it true that most of the men you meet think negatively of women? Is it true that when in the locker-room the men conspire to hold women down? Is it true that businessmen would secretly conspire to throw away their profits by paying men 30% more wages than women, simply to keep women from reaching their true potential? Is it true that 1 in 4 women will really be raped in university, and by extension that therefore 1 in 4 men are rapists? Do you really believe that 25% of the men you know are secretly raping women? *Really?*

None of this rings true for me. In fact, what I see are enormous amounts of men tripping over themselves to praise women. I see men worshiping women as some sort of goddesses. I see men apologizing for the most nonsensical and trivial things simply out of fear of offending women. I see our world leaders praising women while shaming men in order to win votes. I see men trying to one up other men, proving to women that not a smidgeon of misogyny exists in their souls. I see men constantly believing that it is *other* men who are treating women badly, but certainly not his enlightened, sensitive and equitable self. And those other men? Well, they *also* believe they are more enlightened than the rest of those misogynist men out there!

.

.

A few years back, Dr. Helen did a couple of interviews with Richard Driscoll, author of *You Still Don't Understand*. During the interviews, Dr. Driscoll cited a survey which illustrated that 14% of men were resentful or were almost always resentful of women. *However,* the same survey also illustrated that 34% of women surveyed were resentful or were almost always resentful of men. That is nearly two and a half times more women that are resentful towards men than is conversely true of men being resentful towards women.

Misogyny, as men are routinely accused of, simply is not as rampant as society claims. In fact, the hatred of men is far more prevalent than the hatred of women. "Misandry" still gets underlined by my spell-checker because it is a concept that hardly exists, even though the evidence of it is all around us - if we only cared to look.

It is not in men's nature to be harmful towards females. Just the opposite. Men work like slaves to provide for them and often will even sacrifice their lives for women. Does that seem consistent with some inherent misogyny found within males to you?

"In fact, everywhere in nature, the male is the reproductive servant of the female. This goes down to the level of plants which have "male" and "female" parts.

.

The ripening of an egg, or ovum, is a time and energy intensive job, so the male is designed to be ready to fertilize that ovum when the female notifies him that she is "ready."

.

In the rest of the natural world, females announce their readiness to the entire world with a variety of cues - smell being the most significant, but visual cues come in a close second.

.

When a female chimpanzee is in estrus, her genitals swell up and become a SPECIFIC shade of bright pink. Jane Goodall observed one such female whose genitals could be seen from across a valley - nearly a mile or 2 away.

There is a species of fish in which the belly of the female turns a particular shade of red when she is gravid. A block of wood with the lower half painted that exact shade of red will drive males into a mating frenzy.

.

Smell is even more important. There are MANY species in which a female in heat gives off pheromones which are specific to that species which can be picked up by males as much as 5 miles away."

One of the most significant things I learned in studying this subject was about All Female Populations in the Animal

Kingdom. For example, there are certain species of lizards where there are females, but they have somewhere in the past stopped producing males (or have never produced males to begin with). Females "are" the species (in all living things) because they are the ones who control reproduction. If there is only one sex, it *must* be female or the species will die out. Further, the reason *why* a species either creates or stops creating males, is in relation to what the females want. They create males to do things they cannot do, or are unwilling to do, themselves. In other words, on a very basic level in nature, the entire purpose of the male is to serve "the species," which is by default female.

And this goes even deeper yet, down to our genetic and evolutionary level. These all-female populations can only exist and thrive in ecological niches. As soon as they have to compete with a species that has both males and females, they get over-run and die out because they have little ability to adapt. It is the male that mostly evolves the species, because the male has far more variability. What happens is that mutations in the species mostly happen to the males, and when a positive mutation happens, the female breeds with him and "saves" the mutation in her genetics which get further passed on through the species. Thus the male "evolves" and the female "saves" the evolution. So even on that level, you can see that the male serves the female.

What is *really* amazing is how this exists in every living thing on earth, and a biologist will confirm it is so *except* that the same biologist will deny it exists in humans as he or she reflexively believes that men hold all the power in humans, rather than women. Although, in their defense, it is somewhat true, because while we are of the animal kingdom, we are not animals. We are humans and we have the *ability* to live at a higher level than animals. What we did somewhere in the past was we re-ordered this, the only creatures on earth to have done so, and we rose up from being beasts in the field. But even so, on a very deep level of our existence, males are still serving the needs of the females. The question becomes (or was in the past), are we going to serve women as animals, including all of the harshness that comes with that brutal world, or will we do it as humans, and enjoy all the benefits that civilization bestows upon us?

.

Misogyny in Religion, Myth and History

.

A few months before I started up this blog back in 2006, I had pretty much walked away from the Men's Rights Movement (MRM) because I couldn't see anything they were saying that made sense. All they wanted was "equality" (which is not achievable) and they had dozens of little robots running around making sure that no-one generalized and most of all, making sure that no-one expressed even the slightest 'misogynist' thoughts. It was as brain-dead an experience as living your life in a kindergarten class. They certainly weren't seeking the Truth. So I left them to their political correctness and Went My Own Way.

.

Soon after, I found myself reading a website about the legend of Atlantis. This was not a weird way out there site, but rather it argued that Atlantis and the Garden of Eden were one in the same. In fact, it argued that all religious paradises and many of our ancient myths & legends were essentially about the same story: that all of our human ancestors had experienced a global, cataclysmic flood at the end of the Pleistocene, some 11,600 years ago, and all of our religions and mythical stories about paradise lost and a flood (or rising waters) are a "twinkling remembrance" of what happened to the humans who lived through that time. Thus, it explored quite a bit of the similarities between various religions and beliefs that existed around the globe. It was one of those experiences that just "clicked" in my mind, and I began to see things in different ways after reading it. For example, I started thinking, "If I were the last adult alive amongst 100 children and given the responsibility of passing on 'what I know today' to them, while recognizing the human trait of wishing away inconvenient Truths, how would I go about this so it would last for them centuries into the future? Well, I would write it down in an unchangeable religion."

.

Shortly after, I watched a video of a university lecture which had a fellow who had studied the ancient Hebrew language and texts, and as he was interpreting parts of them, he noted the misogyny that was found in them - and in fact, was embarrassed by it enough to offer an apology to those in the lecture hall. (See? If misogyny was innate to

men, they wouldn't automatically apologize for that which *someone else* had said. They would just shrug it off and not care). Some of the things he pointed out were that Sodom and Gomorrah, the two most wicked cities in the Bible, are the only two cities in the entire region that are referred to in Hebrew as feminine. (As in, how French has masculine and feminine). He further mentioned that the most evil of demons were always portrayed as female.

There is also the story of Adam's first wife, Lilith. There are two accounts of how humankind was created. In the first, man and woman were created at the same time, while in the second, Adam was created first, with Eve being created later. In the Hebrew texts, Adam and Lilith were equals, and as such she often challenged Adam's authority and always rebelled against him. She would even complain to him, during sex, that she had to lie beneath him, which she didn't think fair because they were equals. Eventually, Lilith left Adam, but from her sexual union with him she spawned many demons which went forth to plague mankind. When we get to the second story, that of Adam and Eve in the Garden, Eve was created after Adam - from *his* rib - and when God ejected Adam and Eve from the Garden, he told her when he cursed her that her desire will be for her husband, and he will rule over her, thus completely the opposite of the equality that Adam and Lilith had shared.

.

.

These things were, of course, all very interesting. But what I found the most striking out of the entire lecture were the professor's profuse apologies for "misogyny." It made me step back and ask, "But *why* is that 'misogyny' in there? Doesn't anyone ever ask *that* question?" And, apparently, no-one does. We just continue writing it off to men's innate, evil, misogynist nature - even though, as I pointed out earlier, if we opened our eyes and actually *looked* at the world around us, we would see that men are far more prone to practice irrational and blind love of women than misogyny. And, just as the men of the modern day always think it is the *other* men who harbour misogynistic attitudes towards women, we also believe that our modern enlightened selves are better than those *other* misogynistic men who existed in the past.

But, what do you do when Greece and then Rome arise as two of the premier civilizations in human history? And yes, you can point out their "misogyny," but you can't deny their excellence. It is said that when Alexander the Great was handing King Darius III of Persia his ass on a silver platter, Darius lamented, "My men have become women and my women have become men." (In other words, they embraced androgyny - and this is true, if you examine how their customs changed over time).

And look at what comes from Rome, but the *same warning* we find about Adam and Lillith's equality:

"If you allow them [women] to pull away restraints and put themselves on an equality with their husbands, do you imagine that you will be able to tolerate them? From the moment that they become your fellows, they will become your masters." -- Cato the Censor (There's a story similar to modern "slut-walks" found in that link, by the way.)

.

I have also read of the effects of hypergamy and Briffault's Law in Rome, as it related to a woman's dowry and how it changed over the course of history in relation to divorce laws. At first, when a divorce occurred, the husband

would keep the dowry, and divorce was low. Then the laws changed and after divorce, the dowry would return to the wife's father, and divorce rose. Finally, after divorce, the wife kept possession of the dowry herself, and from there, we find that in Rome they said "women marry intending to divorce, and divorce intending to remarry." (Sound familiar? Ever heard of starter marriages?). Thus, they had to pass draconian laws trying to force men to take them on as wives, because the men wanted nothing to do with them, and their birthrates declined to a point where it was a jeopardy to the state.

We find the same tale in Aristotle's Spartan Women, except in Sparta they further undermined hypergamy and Briffault's Law through their inheritance laws:

"And nearly two-fifths of the whole country are held by women; this is owing to the number of heiresses and to the large dowries which are customary. It would surely have been better to have given no dowries at all, or, if any, but small or moderate ones. As the law now stands, a man may bestow his heiress on any one whom he pleases, and, if he die intestate, the privilege of giving her away descends to his heir. Hence, although the country is able to maintain 1500 cavalry and 30,000 hoplites, the whole number of Spartan citizens fell below 1000. The result proves the faulty nature of their laws respecting property; for the city sank under a single defeat; the want of men was their ruin."

.

We see the same thing, over and over again. In fact, written some eight decades ago, Sex and Culture by J.D. Unwin, chronicled the rise and fall of over 80 cultures and in each case he found that "misogyny" was present at the beginning and during the rise of the culture, while equality and the feminine principle dominated the decline and the eventual collapse.

.

I believe that one of the reasons we only find this sort of "misogyny" in religion and myth is because, first of all, books like the Bible are unchangeable because they are based in Absolute Truth. They are further found in myths and legends because men, somewhere in the past, must have figured out that women will never allow the Truth about them to be openly discussed, so they passed it on in different ways - through the "twinkling remembrance" of our ancestors.

.

“Men are not troubled to hear a man dispraised, because they know, though he be naught, there's worth in others; but women are mightily troubled to hear any of them spoken against, as if the sex itself were guilty of some unworthiness.” – John Seldon (1584-1654)

.

.

After all, when looking at the concept of All Female Populations in the Animal Kingdom, which we discussed further up, can't you see its relationship to the legend of the Amazonian Women?

"There has never been a case of men and women reigning together, but wherever on the earth men are found, there we see that men rule, and women are ruled, and that on this plan, both sexes live in harmony. But on the other hand, the Amazons, who are reported to have held rule of old, did not suffer men to stop in their country, but reared only their female children, killing the males to whom they gave birth." -- Spinoza

And can you see it further in some of our great feminist "thinkers?"

"If life is to survive on this planet, there must be a decontamination of the Earth. I think this will be accompanied by an evolutionary process that will result in a drastic reduction of the population of males." -- Mary Daly, former Professor at Boston College, 2001

"The proportion of men must be reduced to and maintained at approximately 10% of the human race." -- Sally Miller Gearhart, *The Future - If There Is One - Is Female*

What happens throughout history is that women censor all of the negative observations about them into oblivion, and men, in their desire to serve and please them, will enable them - much like how companies like Symantec, the producer of Norton AntiVirus (who produce terrible products anyways), will try to label any website speaking of these issues as a "hate" site. The only way to get things "through" and passed the burning desire of the male to please the female, is to enshrine it in something absolute like the Bible, or hide it in myth or legend.

Is the Truth Misogynist?

The term "misogynist" is one that indicates *emotion*. It means a hatred or dislike of women. The academtards with subversive social agendas have been trying to rejig the English language by insinuating that misogyny means someone who doesn't believe in equality, or voting rights, or whatever other feminist jargon they tack onto it - basically insinuating that anyone who doesn't support their *political and social agenda* is misogynist. But this is nonsense. Just because someone doesn't believe children should have equal say as their parents does not mean they *hate* children.

The "misogynists" of old, such as Otto Weininger or Arthur Schopenhauer or Aristotle or the Bible don't *hate* women. They disagree with the feminist agenda, for sure, but there is no "hatred" in what they say. They are merely trying to reveal the Truth.

The Truth has no feelings. It does not *feel* love or hatred.

The Truth has no agenda - unlike the multi-billion dollar feminist industry.

The Truth does not assign blame, nor does it concern itself with hurt feelings.

The Truth just **is**.

Often in the following pages you will see me refer to a "hierarchy" that goes like this: God/Truth --> Man --> Woman --> Children.

This "hierarchy" exists on many levels and does not indicate any particular superiority, although those who believe in the religion of equality are instantly incensed by it. It also works backwards in much the same way that it works

forward. For example, children are considered more valuable than adults, and women are considered more valuable than men. Further, children are at war with their parents, but parents are not at war with their children. Women are at war with men, but men are not at war with women. Men are at war with God/Truth, but God/Truth is not at war with men. And it descends from here as well. Only when man is in proper relation to the Truth, can he expect woman to be in proper relation to him. This is something hard-wired into our biology and it has been with us from the beginning.

Our civilization is a "machine" that harnesses our sex drives and life forces for the good of us all. I don't really believe that men are any more superior than women, but I don't believe we are "equal" in all things either. I believe we both have strengths and weaknesses. I believe that men and women possess *different kinds* of power. I believe that men make very poor women and women make very poor men. I think androgyny is the most destructive notion we've ever unleashed on our great civilization, and I don't support the feminist movement's agenda to further destroy us by brainwashing more of this androgyny into society.

If that makes me a misogynist, so be it. I feel no shame.

If the Truth is misogynist by modern definition, then I stand with the Truth proudly.

.

Previous Index Next

MGTOW

"If it's not right, Go Your Own Way!"

.....
..oooO.....
..(....).....
….\..(.....
…. _/.....
……....Oooo..
……....(....)…
……..)../....
.....(_/.....
.....

.

"Remember this: The strongest sign of the decay of a nation is the feminization of men and the masculinization of women. It is notable that in Communist nations women are exhorted, and compelled, to do what has traditionally been men's work. American women, some of them, feel triumphant that they have broken down the 'barricades' between the work of the sexes. I hope they will still feel triumphant when some commissar forces a shovel or an axe into their soft hands and compels them to pound and cut forests and dig ditches. I hope they will be 'happy' when a husband deserts them and they must support their children and themselves alone. (After all, if a woman must be 'free' she shouldn't object to men being free too, should she?) I hope they will feel 'fulfilled' when they are given no more courtesies due to their sex and no kindnesses, but are kicked aside on the subways buses by men, and jostled out of the way by men on busy sidewalks and elevators…. I hope, when they look in their mirrors, that they will be pleased to see exhausted, embittered faces, and that they will be consoled by their paychecks." ~ Taylor Caldwell, 1970

Obituary: Robert Fedders, age nine, of the World Wide Web, died on July 30, 2013

. · 2 August 2006 · Archived copy · Original

Robert “Rob” Fedders was born to the figment of an anonymous writer’s imagination in 2004. In 2006 Rob graduated from The School of Hard Knocks and within a few months started the No Ma’am blog, where he resided for the rest of his online life.

.

Rob was cornered by a herd of brides demanding that he man-up and oppress one of them with matrimonial bliss, but he would have none of it. In a series of moves he seen in a Jackie Chan film, Rob ran up a brick wall and did a back-flip over the long, bony, grasping fingers of the gaggle of bridezillas. Landing on the other side of the desperate mob, he took off like a gazelle, running as fast as he could to save his mortal soul from the slavery which the brides wished to inflict upon him.

.

.

The herd of brides, horny as hell to get a piece of his incredibly cute ass, immediately gave chase. Bystanders reported Rob yelling, “You women are as independent as a tropical fern in a greenhouse in Iceland” before veering hard to the right and running pell-mell towards the Cliffs of Insanity. Rob glanced back and seen the brides were ready to pounce... he looked to the cliff, then back to the brides, and to the cliff again where he spotted a vine dangling over the edge. “If it’s not right, go your own way,” he said as he grabbed the vine and began shinnying down the cliff, away from the clutches of the middle-aged princesses who had now started chanting, “We want it all! We want it all!”

.

“Phew, that was close!” he said.

.

.

Rob then looked down and saw that upon the jagged rocks below was a minister holding a Bible, imploring him to "stop acting like Peter Pan and marry one of them sluts!" He looked back up and saw the herd of brides, now baring their life-sucking fangs while drooling at the sight of this succulent piece of husband-meat. Just then a mangina and a white knight appeared out of a hole in the side of the cliff and began chewing on the vine. The mangina, in between chews, looked at Rob with his dark, beady little eyes and said, "I am a lawyer, and I am going to drag you through the courts to make you pay for these women one way or the other." Then the white knight turned his bright red albino eyes upon Rob and declared, "I am a politician. I will pass laws that will ruin your life if you don't keep them happy, and don't think you can just run to a foreign country because I've already helped to pass IMBRA laws which prevent that!"

.

What to do?

.

Rob looked to the cliff and saw a big, tasty, ham & cheese on rye sandwich just sitting there on a ledge that was within arms reach. He grabbed it and ate it. "Ah, it is so delicious."

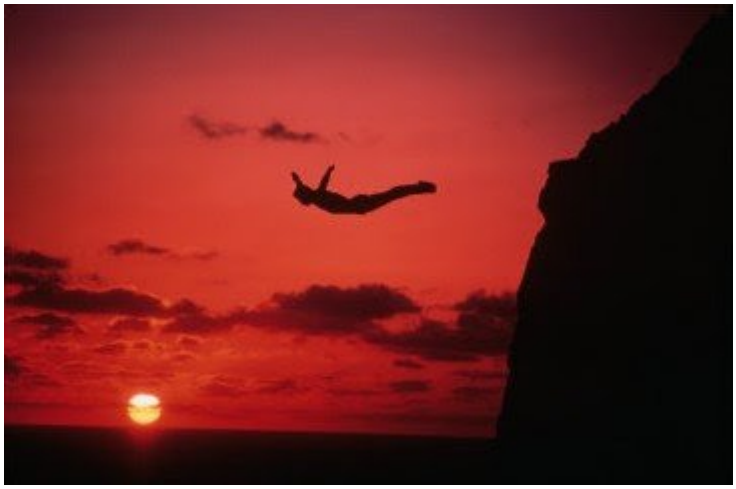
.

Then, with all the might he could muster, Rob pushed off the cliff with his feet and let go of the vine.

.

"FREEDOM!" he bellowed, and plummeted to the rocks below.

.



.

It was a good death.

.

It's better to burn out than fade away!

.

He is survived by no-one as he was a free man who never married and had no children.

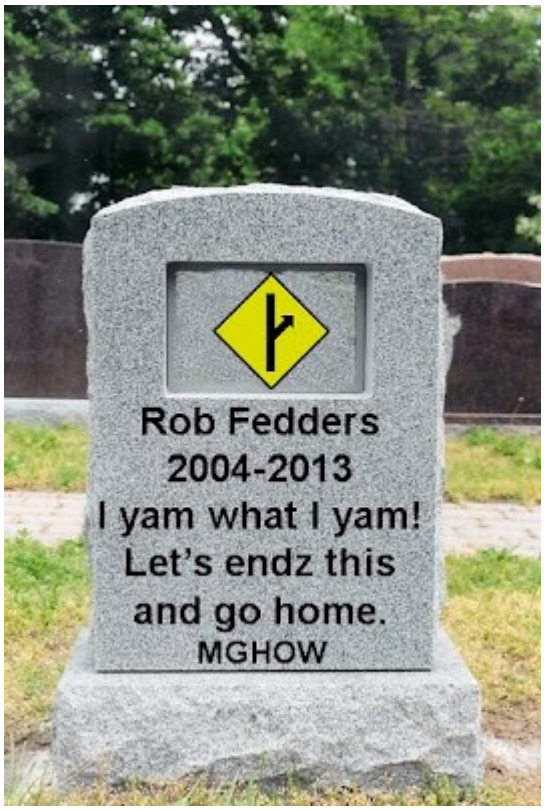
.

In Rob's last will and testament he requested that in lieu of flowers, you give women the husbands they deserve: None!

.

Rest In Peace, Rob.

.



Peer Reviewed Research - the Holy Grail of Truth?

. · 19 August 2006 · Archived copy · Original

.

I must condemn the rationality of searching for "peer reviewed" research in order to make a theory "real". While all the educated elites consider "peer reviewed" research the holy grail of irrefutable truth... I must beg to differ with anyone who cites "truths" by this criteria.

Academia is one of the pillars of deception which we as men are battling. We acknowledge here everyday about the extreme politicization of our universities and how all dissenting views are squashed through heavy handed, totalitarian tactics. (Here is a good example: Lynched by the Sisterhood by Jeffrey Archer). I cannot understand how we can be expected to chase after our own tails by encouraging the belief that the only refutation or confirmation of a theory or idea is peer reviewed research. The three pillars we battle are government, media and academia. Let's make no mistake about it, government and media are "justified" via academia's peer reviewed research. To imply that everything is questionable until it can be backed up by peer reviewed research is completely insane to our cause because **academia no longer encourages the free thinking that lends credibility to peer reviewed research!** We may as well be living in Nazi Germany and asking a Jew to prove he is discriminated against by using Nazi Reviewed Research. Commonsense, mankind's natural curiosity, desire for the truth, reason and rationality should always trump peer reviewed research.

There is really only one example that needs to be given for why "peer reviewed research" has absolutely zero credibility in the issues of which we speak and write of.

The fundamental basis of feminism is that "gender is a social construct;" that we are based upon "tabula rasa," the Latin for "blank slate." It is upon this foundation that all else of feminism's ideology and victimology is based upon. Since we are essentially the same, the only reason that women did not figure prominently in history, or science, or music, or philosophy, or pretty much anything else is because of the innate evil and misogynistic nature of men (which already refutes tabula rasa in itself). Therefore, women are institutionally discriminated against by the very

fabric of civilization and society itself, thus affirmative action and breaking down gender barriers is completely justified.

However, walking across the hall in our ivory towered institutions, we can attend courses in Queer Theory, where the fundamental basis for it all is that homosexuality is a normal, biological condition - that gays are "born that way," which is 100% the opposite of feminism's fundamental premise of "gender is a social construct." Queer Theory argues that their LGBT "gender" is natural and biologically based, therefore, they are discriminated against by virtue of their birth, and suffer socially and in numerous other ways because of something over which they had no ability to control.

Take your pick. If you support gay rights you are a cretin of a misogynist - a sexist, really, for believing that the sexes are different by virtue of their birth. However, if you support women's rights and equality based upon the blank slate, you are a homophobe (a hate-crime in Canada), because then you believe that gays could be "cured" of their homosexuality through laws, social conditioning, and whatnot else that feminism has been pushing on us. Namely, that we can break down gender barriers and make everyone the same, which includes gays.

These two positions are 100% completely and irrefutably in direct opposition of each other. This is just simple common-sense. You cannot be walking east and west simultaneously. Yet, both Women's Studies and Queer Theory have panels of academics judging whether the studies each puts out are "the Truth." In other words, they are both peer-reviewed and found to be satisfactorily representing the truth. Well, the truth cannot possibly be the same for both of them, so at minimum one of them must be completely *wrong*.

Therefore, our universities are knowingly and willingly promoting falsehoods, and simply should not be trusted as reputable sources of "Truth."

And I don't need a peer-reviewed study to prove it, do I?

Q: "... but has any researcher made a serious longitudinal study on this?"

A: "Maybe you should do a longitudinal study on the overall effectiveness of always depending on longitudinal studies."

"Cigarette smoking has been shown to increase serum hemoglobin, increase total lung capacity and stimulate weight loss, factors that all contribute to enhanced performance in endurance sports. Despite this scientific evidence, the prevalence of smoking in elite athletes is actually many times lower than in the general population. The reasons for this are unclear; however, there has been little to no effort made on the part of national governing bodies to encourage smoking among athletes." – PLOS

Did you know that Albert Einstein did much of the groundwork for the Theory of Relativity not while at a university, but rather while working at a patent office? He also got mediocre grades when he was in school.

Did you know that neither of the Wright Brothers graduated from high-school? Yet, they proved all of the academics of the day's "lift equation" to be, obviously, wrong. *They also both never married.* Smart men indeed!

Did you know that Thomas Edison was considered to have an "addled" brain because his mind wandered while in school? He likely would have been given Ritalin today. He was pulled out of formal schooling after three months and taught by his mother at home.

Did you know that Louis Pasteur was ridiculed by the medical community for his "Germ Theory" and suggesting that surgeons should wash their hands before cutting people open?

Did you know that the cure to scurvy was discovered in the early 1600's by Samuel de Champlain, when his ship was ice-locked for the winter and Indians brought the crew pine-needle tea which was rich in Vitamin C? When he told of "the cure" back in Europe, he was scoffed at by the intelligentsia for a cure from "savages." In 1753, James Lind first proved citrus could cure the disease through experiments he described in his book, *A Treatise in the Scurvy*, although, even then it took several decades for people to believe him and implement the use of citrus on ships. In fact, there were still a variety of other techniques the "intelligentsia" believed to be correct instead of Vitamin C, causing people to suffer and die from scurvy right through World War One and beyond, until it was definitively proven to be a vitamin C deficiency in 1932.

Did you know that in the past, before we had universities, the intelligentsia were mostly to be found in religious institutions such as the church or its monasteries? When we talk of the religious persecution of those such as Galileo, it is *just as fair* to claim the *intelligentsia* persecuted him (and other discoverers) as it is to claim religion did. In fact, you can see this phenomenon everywhere. Rarely does the intelligentsia discover anything or even really "do" anything except for defend their position, while adding little of significance to it, which real mavericks already paved the way for.

Academics have a vested interest in telling everyone that which they have learned is 100% correct, and discrediting all those opposed to them. After all, they tend to look *really* stupid when grade eight drop-outs demolish their beliefs after they've spent a decade of time, tens of thousands of dollars in tuition, and a lifetime of building a social reputation based on academic "achievements" which really, someone else achieved, and they only parrot and teach.

“‘This is not to be wondered at,’ said Goethe; ‘such people continue in error because they are indebted to it for their existence. They would have to learn everything over again, and that would be very inconvenient.

“‘But,’ said I, ‘how can their experiments prove the truth when the basis for their evaluation is false?’

“‘They do not prove the truth,’ said Goethe, ‘nor is such the intention; the only point with these professors is to prove their own opinion. On this account, they conceal all experiments that would reveal the truth and show their doctrine untenable. Then the scholars — what do they care for truth? They, like the rest, are perfectly satisfied if they can prate away empirically; that is the whole matter.”’-- quoted from Johann Peter Eckermann’s conversation with Goethe, Feb. 1, 1827.

.

.

It is an outrage that they should be commonly spoken of as Intellectuals. This gives them the chance to say that he who attacks them attacks Intelligence. It is not so. They are not distinguished from other men by any unusual skill in finding truth nor any virginal ardour to pursue her. Indeed it would be strange if they were: a persevering devotion to truth, a nice sense of intellectual honour, cannot be long maintained without the aid of a sentiment which Gaius and Titius could debunk as easily as any other. It is not excess

of thought but defect of fertile and generous emotion that marks them out. Their heads are no bigger than the ordinary: it is the atrophy of the chest beneath that makes them seem so. ~C.S. Lewis, *The Abolition of Man*

.

Previous Index Next

MGTOW

"If it's not right, Go Your Own Way!"

.....
..oooO.....
..(....).....
….\..(.....
…. _/.....
…….....Oooo..
…….....(....)…
……..)../....
.....(_/.....
.....

No Ma'am Is A Proud Supporter Of The Marriage Strike

. · 20 August 2006 · Archived copy · Original

WMG's (Weapons of Mass Governments = Western Matriarchal Governments)

. · 22 August 2006 · Archived copy · Original

Yup, take a look at that picture and burn it into your mind, folks. That is the stance our western governments have taken on our future. The only thing missing is a big, hairy feminist giving it to the ostrich with a strap-on dildo.

Thanks to feminism being the dominating theme of our governments we have a future that IS certain!

We are certain to face a massive economic crunch and subsequent anarchy, ending society as we know it. For 40 years our governments have been allowing the killing of unborn babies - to the tune of over 40 Million now! Feminism has encouraged women to place career over family, resulting in a birthrate that is nowhere near the 2.1 children per woman minimum that is needed to only maintain a population, let alone grow one. Men are so disgusted with the prospects of being ass raped by a suddenly feminist divorcing wife that they are fleeing from marriage and choosing to remain single in ever greater numbers, damaging the birthrate even more.

The Baby Boom Generation who created this evil mess is salivating over their upcoming retirement and looking forward to tapping into the socialist government pension and healthcare plans, believing falsely that they deserve to be fully cared for by the wonderfully enlightened society they created. These folks are walking proof that taking acid in the 60's caused long term brain damage.

Feminist ideology in government has slammed through sheer stupidity in our capitalist economy. Positive discrimination forcing productive men out of the way to make a position for a woman, a year off with pay to squat and drop a baby is commonplace, "flexi" time work schedules are being implemented for women in the workplace so we don't lose out on their "valuable contribution" and there is talk of government sponsored daycare as the be all and end all of solutions. Yes, yes, we must make the workplace friendly for women because their contribution is very valuable. Of course, one thing that you'll never hear a feminist talk about in regard to women's contribution to

the workplace is profit. And god help you if you don't have enough of these enlightened non-profit entitlement goddesses working for you because that will mean an automatic ass raping for discrimination by the feminist biased courts. They'll ass rape you into bankruptcy if you don't hire enough of these monetary black holes.

I watched an interview on the news a while back with a couple of femihags talking about their push to make even parliament more woman friendly so more women can cotton to the idea of being the Prime Minister of the country while also juggling quality time with their families.

De de, d de dee… And now for a News Flash: You have no free time when you run a country – the country demands your full attention 24/7, get it?

Of course, as I believe Angry Harry argued, if we demand that women should make 50% of all MP's to best reflect the population then we should also make sure that 50% of MP's are below average intelligence, for accurately 50% of the population IS below average. Hmmm… you know, it seems by implementing 50% femihag MP's they would at the same time ensure that 50% of MP's ARE below average intelligence. Well, I'll be damned, those women are good at multi-tasking!

So, what does this all mean, all these tidbits I've mentioned?

Well, it means that a tremendous amount of people (retiring Babyboomers), are going to bring a massive draw on our country's social welfare system and because of our ever dwindling population, there will be less and less productive workers who are working in a less and less efficient economy who will be forced to finance it.

We already pay around 50% of our income to taxes, either directly or indirectly, and this is when our population is still barely hanging on to a balance between producers and social welfare parasites. And this has only been accomplished by taking in immigrants from abroad to bolster up our population as a result of the low birthrate. And the birthrate continues to dwindle!

When we get to the point that one worker has to support one parasite, do you think we will still be paying only 50% to tax? We will essentially become communist because we will have to pay it ALL in tax to support this system – and our society will have disappeared.

Another option is bring in massive amounts of immigrants to continue to offset the failing birthrate, and you better not be thinking immigrants from a similar western nation, for their birthrates are in as dire of straits as ours. This leaves the developing world's population, who don't share our history nor even our language – and our society will have disappeared.

The third option is to go back to the way we were before feminism. Bring back fault divorce and take away the outrageousness of feminism's destructive past. Boot the women out of the workplace and back into the home where they can become babymaking machines so that in 20 years time we have a fresh crop of nationals to rejuvenate our economy. However, you and I both know that our entitlement princesses will never give anything up. They won't give anything up until the economy has finished its death rattle and has not one last penny to even fund a woman-only focus group to discuss their feelings about what went wrong. If we were to follow this route, we would have to do it soon, like in the next year or two, and we all know that even though this is truly the only way to save our society and culture, there is just no way that the femihags will let this happen.

So there it is. The west is fucked.

And…good riddance to it! I am only 35 years old and my whole life I have heard nothing but vile puke spit forth at

me that I am a rapist, an abuser, a chauvinist and 100 other things all because of my gender at birth. I once put in a lot of effort to be politically correct and not offend any woman's rights, but I really can't think of any time when a woman ever stood up for my rights. Society has hated me and my gender for so long that I am now becoming comfortable with the idea of myself becoming a misogynist, something I never thought would happen. But tell me, all you sociology/womyn's studies majors, tell me again about self fulfilling prophecies.

Let society rot. It betrayed us and does not deserve our concern. Let the women have it and show the world the power of pink! I hope many men decide to abandon society and contribute to it with as little effort and taxes as they can. A society that holds men in contempt does not deserve men's loyalty. Yup, all the ladies in their cush cubicles, working 10 to 3:30 can figure out how to run a garbage truck and how to get coal out of the earth. I mean they get paid like they can do it, so go do it! With men bailing out on society, it will rot even faster.

But, as is always the case, from rot and decay grows new life. Regeneration if you will. When society gets so bogged down with femicrap that the suffocation becomes unbearable, it will be the women that suffer the most. As for me, you will never find me selling apples on some street corner nor living in a Hooverville. I will head into the bush and build a log cabin on the side of some remote lake. I will hunt and raise a garden. I will go into my warm cabin at night and cook me up a humungous moose steak. Afterwards I will retire to my warm bed and jerk off to the thought that all the femihags who berated me for a lifetime are now crowded around a burning barrel in the modern version of a Hooverville, a Dworkinville.

.

And I'll bet you that if some woman living in a Dworkinville hears about this guy who is living out in the bush in a warm cabin and eats monster huge moose steak every night, well I expect that she will show up on my doorstep. I'm pretty sure that she will be willing to recant her feminist crap ways and be pretty willing to cook and scrub and clean to win my favour. I'll bet she will even agree to let me be the unchallenged head of the household!

The question is: should I care?

Financial Rape

. · 22 August 2006 · Archived copy · Original

One Man's Kingdom

. · 17 September 2006 · Archived copy · Original

.

QUOTE: *"The abandonment of men in contemporary society is so comprehensive that a man who has lost a wife or lover not only suffers from the loss of that deep personal connection, but from a fairly comprehensive rejection by society in general. First you lose your wife, then your kids, and then even your own family turns against you in many cases (this is a lot more common than most people realize — American men's own mothers very often blame them and side with the ex in what is usually a futile effort to maintain contact with the grandchildren). The thrashing you get from the police and courts is just gratuitous abuse; in many cases guys are simply numb to additional pain by that time."*

I would argue that the sudden and total collapsing of love, as it is presented to men, is evidence of its illusion.

Children are raised on it, women can expect it their whole lives in a watered down sense, but men lose all right to it as they come of age. Unfortunately, in the West, no-one ever tells them that this is their heritage as men. They have to learn it the hard way, or go mad refusing to learn it at all.

Other cultures, particularly those closer to nature, had rites of passage for young men. The rite usually involved sending the stripling out in the wild, on his own. He would be exposed to danger, expected to survive on his own, and could expect no assistance. It was a symbolic, and real, exercise to let him know that he was no longer the dependent he once was. Young women were never subjected to the same. They belonged to the community, no matter their age, their fertility or their ability.

It is a feature of all men who go wild at women and take it out on innocents, as well as their former intimates, that they are still sold on the love illusion – they are men that fervently believe they deserve a place in the bosom of society. The trick is maintained for its utility in deceiving men into social contracts that are counter to their own interests.

It's the same the world over. Every deal won by trickery has a higher harvest of woe than that done with all cards on the table and intentions plainly stated.

There are a couple of small lakes not far from where I live. One is purple to look at, the other is orange. Apparently the difference is due to a tiny presence of minerals – a little of one element in the purple lake, and a little of another in the orange one.

If you were to take a glass of water out of each of them, you wouldn't be able to tell them apart. They taste the same and look the same. A simple laboratory analysis wouldn't be able to distinguish them – only an advanced lab that can detect minute mineral presence and measure it accurately would be able to correctly identify which glass of water came from which lake.

Yet the human eye can spot the difference easily – but only in aggregate. At the microscopic level, rather than the macroscopic, the difference is beyond human detection.

The difference between men and women is also impossible to define in terms of easily spotted differences between individuals. The differences between the sexes is too easily obscured by simple personality differences. It is only when you look at humanity in aggregate that the difference between the sexes is at all obvious. And it is striking.

This is why feminists can say things like "gender is a social construct" and get away with it. Individuals can easily be made to appear similar, regardless of sex. The thing is though, "similar" is not "the same". Often very significant differences cannot be seen unless one steps back from the microscopic view and looks again from the macroscopic. It is only then that the difference is glaring.

QUOTE: "*Turn your back on it all, accept the Truth, and Go Your Own Way.*"

I'm convinced this is the only way to effectively counter the nonsense. It is leading by example.

The real value to me in following MRA/MGTOW sites is that they are the only places where I get to read intelligent men talking about things that matter without the media/academic gag firmly in its usual place. For that alone I value it highly, even if one has to read through a lot of dross to find a few pearls – at least those pearls are there to be found.

QUOTE: *"I'm convinced this is the only way to effectively counter the nonsense. It is leading by example."*

The thing is, if men leave the building, women will follow. And if men keep walking, women will figure out a way to make some sort of association with men again that is agreeable.

Women are as independent as a tropical fern in a greenhouse in Iceland.

It doesn't even have to get to the level of physical performance. Women's mental character does not seek independence itself.

You can see this when women get divorced. I can, on many levels, understand why women would seek independence from marriage – from a male point of view, we understand it – but that's not what they are doing. They divorce their current husband, and in 99% of cases, already have another waiting in the wings. Usually, in a very short time, the woman is back into a long-term relationship again where she is once again following the dominant lead of a male. Independence never existed.

Schopenhauer points this out too: **" That woman is by nature intended to obey is shown by the fact that every woman who is placed in the unnatural position of absolute independence at once attaches herself to some kind of man, by whom she is controlled and governed; this is because she requires a master. If she is young, the man is a lover; if she is old, a priest."**

The Buddhist philosopher Nichiren said it as well, but slightly differently. There are three phases women go through in life, and in each she attaches herself to a man – in the sense that the man is her "tool" for her own purposes in society – the first is her father when she is young, then her husband during most of her life, and finally to her sons when she is old. And I can certainly attest to the last since my father died. It is now me who she comes to for authority since she is without husband.

Furthermore, one also has to realize that women were complicit in creating "Patriarchy." As we've often pointed out, "patriarchy" is merely another form of matriarchy, because even Patriarchy is ultimately for the benefit of women, not men. Women "are" society. Men are on the outside of society. "The herd" is what society is, not the males on the outside trying to seek approval to get back in (which they will never be allowed). Men might have controlled the laws in the past, but women have always controlled society's social mores. If women don't approve, society doesn't approve, because women are society. Men are on the outside looking in.

If men walk away, women will follow. And if we keep walking, they will keep trying to entice us back. And if we still keep walking, they will try even harder until eventually women themselves will make it so that "it" works. Patriarchy only existed because women endorsed it themselves and were complicit in creating the social mores that made it work.

QUOTE: "*Women "are" society. Men are on the outside of society.*"

And it is man's place at the periphery that is our natural home.

While we concern ourselves with laws, government and social mores, we are intruding upon women's space and women's affairs – we are auditioning for their approval as – nominally at least – their masters (though it is clear on closer examination that all men in such positions are actually women's servants, be they politicians, priests or husbands).

On the other hand, when a man realizes he is alone in the world, and dependent on nothing but his reason, his physical strength and his resolve, his attitude changes. His immediacy to the Absolute could not be clearer. The thing the free man most craves – his own sovereignty – is at its closest to being realized. It is this state that I refer to as "One Man's Kingdom."

When I say that I am convinced going my own way is the most effective way to counter the nonsense, it is not because I believe it will have any material effect on 'society' – it is the effect it has on the man himself that is undeniable. It is like turning off the television and no longer reading the newspapers (which are portals into society, or women's influence). The calming effect is near immediate. The more one works at it, dealing almost solely with

Nature, one's own material needs and whatever other problems that concern only the individual – and disengaging from 'society' in as many ways as possible – it is surprising how readily, and how happily, the submerged male psyche rises to the challenge.

Also surprising is how one develops a keener appreciation of company when one gets the chance, even though it can easily be lived without.

At the end of the day, society will always be there and always be unconcerned with the welfare of men. Like women who cannot embrace true independence, many men also shy away from it, exhausting themselves knocking on the door of women's world trying to gain admission, never stopping to look about them and say "it's actually not so bad out here by myself".

The world would of course change if a lot of men started doing this, but I have no interest in something as abstract as 'the world'. I am far more interested in the small world I live in, and how I can adapt to it, and prosper in it. But I am alone in it always. Not being a woman, that actually makes me feel more alive.

Previous Index Next

MGTOW

"If it's not right, Go Your Own Way!"

.....

..oooO.....

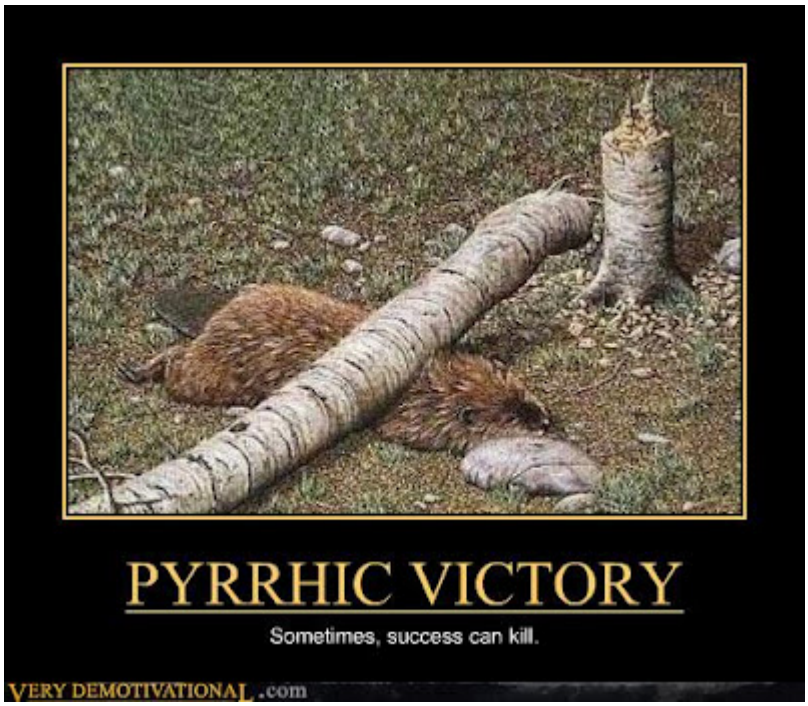
..(....).....
….\..(.....
…. _/.....

…….....Oooo..
…….....(....)…
……..)../....
.....(_/.....

.....

Work With The World, Don't Fight Against It

. · 17 September 2006 · Archived copy · Original



.

Something I think men will have to come to terms with is that when the pendulum inevitably swings back, what actual benefit do men think this will have for them? Will it bring that fabled equality everyone is seeking? Will everyone join hands and sing kumbaya and live happily ever after? Will the planets align and Heaven on Earth make itself apparent to man and woman alike?

Not likely.

For example, Angry Harry has *often* pointed out that when feminists cry of the abuses of women in places like Afghanistan, if you look at the men, they are treated even worse. And, if you look at the "abuses" women endured in the past centuries, you will find that in every situation, men had even worse abuses to endure. It is a feature of *human nature.* It is just like no matter at what place, or in what time, children are always treated better than adults – it's just the way humanity works.

.

So, after Feminism subsides, how will things change? Do you really think it will be any different? Women will *still* be treated better than men. They have been since the dawn of time, and they will be until closing time.

.

This is why it is so dangerous to have the MM try to set up things like lobby groups and government bureaucracies to oversee the welfare of men and boys. It is so open ended, and because of the very nature of humanity, means they could perpetually justify their existence until it becomes just another oppressive, statist organization that harms everyone but themselves. It's so freakin' open ended and fights a never-ending battle against *nature* that how could it not be a disaster? If I start a lobby group to "stop the tide" I will forever be able to show the demand for my group is real, because the battle is still not won. See, here comes the tide again. Gimme more power to fight it!

.

Far better, if you must support some organization, that they have a clear mission statement and acknowledge they will disband after achieving their goal. (Ie. Fighting to remove Bill C-79 from the legislature).

.

But then, what are the actual goals that men want?

.

No matter **what** happens, compared to women, men will still be treated as “lesser” than females. That is simply a feature of human nature that can’t be changed no matter how many laws are made or discarded, nor how many lobby groups are formed to fight the tides.

.

Accepting this as true does not mean admitting defeat. It means working with the way the world IS, rather than fighting against it. It does not mean men cannot try to create or remove laws which make their lives better – but no matter what happens, at the end of it all, men will still be treated relatively worse than the females in society are.

The Serenity Prayer comes to mind here:

God grant me the serenity
to accept the things I cannot change;
courage to change the things I can;
and wisdom to know the difference.

Living one day at a time;
Enjoying one moment at a time;
Accepting hardships as the pathway to peace;
Taking, as He did, this sinful world
as it is, *not as I would have it;*
Trusting that He will make all things right
if I surrender to His Will;
That I may be reasonably happy in this life
and supremely happy with Him
Forever in the next.
Amen.

Related:

The Personal

Philalethes #15 - Women Are Out of Control in Our Culture

Previous Index Next

MGTOW

“If it’s not right, Go Your Own Way!”

.....
..oooO.....
..(....).....
….\..(.....
…. _/.....
…….....Oooo..

……....(....)…
……..)../....
.....(_/.....
.....

Rob For Prime Minister

. · 30 September 2006 · Archived copy · Original

There's one thing that I just can't understand about Canuckistan politics. Why do all of the political parties compete for attention on the exact same issues? I just don't get it. There must be a stupid magnet hidden in the Parliament Building that attracts all the idiots into politics.

Take the new Green Party for example. These guys are a just a small peanut of a party, I believe that they only got around 2% of the vote in the last election. I watched an interview on the TV once where the party leader was discussing his plans to take some of the gobs of tax dollars we spend on healthcare and cancer research and instead put some of this money into preventing cancers. Since he claimed that 50% of cancers are preventable, and given the numbers that he presented, this makes perfectly good sense because it would lower the amount money we have to spend on healthcare – and ultimately free up more resources overall, which of course could be used for research. Get it? No matter, it's not really want I to write about.

Anyhow, I decided to surf on over to the Green Party's website and check out this healthcare plan of theirs a little closer, and possibly consider giving them my vote the next time we have an election. And, gentlemen, you get one guess for what I found when I clicked the link to "healthcare."

You guessed it, pick up your cigar at the front desk! Yup, the Green Party stated how committed they were to Women's Health Issues and increasingly blah, blah, blah… that's when I clicked the back button. You lost my vote, you filthy mangina SOB's. They are just like all the rest; they can not stop pumping out the femi-filth.

Now gentleman, there is a level of criminality in this that WILL get addressed one day. We all know that women outlive men by 5 to 6 years. We all know that men die more than women from all of the top 10 fatal diseases. We all know already that women use up far more tax funded healthcare dollars than men. We all know this, and so does the government and those running for office. If they don't know, it should be a crime that such stupid people get to run the country. They will get their come-uppins, whether the angry mob decides it is a rope or a cell is not for me to decide. I personally don't advocate for any violence. (Got that, you femihags that are reading this whilst already dialling 911).

But here's the point I would like to make: We have a multi party government system. In Canada we have the Conservatives, the Liberals, the Treasonous Frog Party (Block Quebecois), the NDP – and now the Green Party. It is very easy for a minority government to get elected into office, with say 35% of the popular vote. This has happened in the last two elections, and of course many times throughout history. Lol, what a screwed up situation would it be for the winds to blow juuuuussst right and have the Treasonous Frog Party become the sitting government – given Quebec's population, it could happen! The Prime Minister of Canada would be someone who campaigned on tearing the country apart – How screwed up is that?

But what I really don't understand is how the Green Party could be so stupid to campaign on the same platform as all the other parties. Only the Treasonous Frogs are smart enough to say something totally different, and believe me, it pains me to say that smartest people in the country come from Quebec. But the Green Party? Noooo…. No signs of intelligence there. With 2% of the popular vote they figure they will gain voter popularity by spouting the same filth as the other 3 mangina parties… "We are committed to Women's Health… We are committed to Women's Rights… We must do something about women still only getting $0.76 to every $1.00 a man earns." (That's right, you treasonous lying manginas in the government, some of us are watching. What color paint would you like for your jail cell? Propaganda for the purposes of creating discriminatory actions against people because of the very nature of their birth is a Hate Crime and you should check the books and see how it can be punished. You filthy

manginas!)

Therefore Gentlemen (women, you can ignore this, I don't want your vote),

I would like to announce that I, Rob Fedders, am going to run for Prime Minister of Canada!

Lol! And I would like to announce that I am committed to furthering women's healthcare! – NOT!

Nope, screw that nonsense. I figure that I should campaign on the three-fold platform of tax-subsidized lowering of NHL Seasons Passes, a free case of beer a week for every male in the country – ice cold and hand delivered to his door on Saturday night, just before Hockey Night in Canada begins, AND a one time coupon for a free 42" Plasma Screen TV for all the men in Canada! Yes, that's right folks! Sounds good, doesn't it?

I won't even raise taxes!

I'll just cut all the funding to the treasonous government agency called Status of Women (SOW – snort, snort) and redirect it into my new program. Perhaps I'll name it the "Status of Weekend Beer and Sports Entertainment Agency." I'll also cut all funding to all DV Shelters in Canada, cause lets face it men, what do you care more about? You having a case of beer while you watch hockey on your new TV, or that your little entitlement princess has a place to run to for information on how to screw you out of your home and into a prison? Yup, the TV's will be expensive, but don't forget, there are lots of DV Shelters and other DV related offices sitting on pretty choice pieces of real estate around the country and they should fetch a pretty penny.

Now, we often talk about DV being an industry that the government can't afford to get rid of because of the effects to the economy. Well… yup, you guessed it… Prime Minister Rob, fearless leader, has a plan for that too! Who do you think should be delivering you that case of beer every weekend? I will even provide them with Government Issue uniforms: a T-shirt that says "I'm Sorry!"

Well Gentlemen, what do you say? I might get into power with around 30% of the votes and men definitely have the numbers for that. Yes, if 4 can buy gender specific votes (I'll give the frogs a pass here), then so can 5 buy gender specific votes!

Can I have your vote?

Rob for Prime Minister!

Why Women Have Priced Themselves Out of the Market: They Are Attention Whores Who Positively Seek "Victim Status"

. · 7 November 2006 · Archived copy · Original

Read the tall tale of the "Girl Who Was Almost Raped." (And read further to see the comments of her fellow attention whores who back this psycho up, rather than telling her to smarten up.)

Look at all the ways I can destroy men's lives

http://mexicanicepick.livejournal.com/27333.html?thread=291269#t291269

make it stop
I had a date Thursday night. My date knew seven languages, but not the word "no." [Incidentally, the reason I phrase it like that is because it kills something inside me when I have to come right out and say it. Why so many people think this is a funny joke, I do not know.]

Wednesday night, I'd stayed on the phone with him for upwards of two hours. One of the things we talked about was sex and what I told him was that I did not have intercourse outside of serious relationships. But, that didn't turn out to matter.
During the date, he took me to this lounge area adjacent to a supply shed -- he works in maintenance in my condo -- and we were watching some truly awful movie. We started hooking up. For a while, I resisted my pants coming off, but eventually gave in, and remained in nothing but my thong. When he took off my pants, I told him I wouldn't have sex with him. But, that didn't turn out to matter. Oral didn't happen, but he ended up on top of me.
Several times, he tried to enter me. Each time, I swiveled away and told him that we weren't going to have sex. After three or four times, I pushed him off and got dressed. He began apologizing profusely and asking me to see his side: he is a man, he hasn't had sex in three months, I am attractive, and I should not have taken my pants off if I was unprepared to have sex with him. I told him that he needed to respect me, that these were not excuses, there were no excuses. He told me he didn't want me dressed, I was so attractive. I told him I was attractive with my clothes on. I sat down. After a few minutes, he began to try to take my pants off again. I left. I had trouble getting the door open and as he came over, I was so scared... He let me out, telling me as he did so that I had fucked with his emotions. I went home. He called me three times that night. The first time I said I didn't want to talk to him. The second time I told him to stop calling. The third time I didn't pick up.

This level of guilt is something I could not previously have imagined. Why did I agree to a date with someone I met through my ex? Why did I go there with him? Why did I let him take off my pants if I didn't want to have sex? Why didn't I leave sooner? Why didn't I say "no" more forcefully, maybe then he would have stopped? Why did I try to talk to him? Why did I ever pick up the phone? And I know, I do know that this is not my fault. I know it, but I don't Know it. And I can't shake this.
I feel guilty when I tell people, because I know I'm worrying them. I hate feeling like a burden. I feel guilty for feeling guilty instead of feeling more angry at him. I feel guilty for not having been stronger or smarter. I feel guilty for blaming myself.
I'm scared that he'll call me again. Every time the phone rings, my stomach drops. I'm scared that he'll come here.

He has access to my house. I don't even feel fucking safe in my own fucking house. I don't actually, rationally think he would but that doesn't stop the fear. I'm even more scared to leave, though, because he works here and I know he's somewhere here during business hours. Going to get a package from the mailman was terrifying. I feel guilty for feeling so irrationally scared.
I feel guilty endlessly. Endlessly. Its like quicksand.

I wish I could tell my parents, I do. But I can't tell them. They would blame me, wholly and unequivocally. They've been looking, waiting for evidence of my being a slut. When I developped a UTI last winter, my mother asked me what the potential causes were; when I read off chlamydia, she said ah-HA, I KNEW it, NOW you've done it. This was nine months into a monogamous relationship.
We saw a movie a while ago, in which a woman got graphically raped on screen: held down as she cried and begged to be let go. When I was horrified by this scene, my parents told me this wasn't rape because 1) the perp was her ex-husband and 2) she had gone to bed with him willingly. When I asked what they'd do if this happened to me, they told me they'd inform me of my stupidity for having gotten into bed.
When I was between the ages of 11 and 15, my parents had a particularly close family friend whom I hated. He used to be at our house constantly and go on vacations with us. On multiple occasions, at least four off the top of my head, he walked in on me in various states of undress and it always took him a good three seconds to leave. Also, he had a tendency to hug me, which I hated. Once, with my 'rents around, I asked him to let me go twice, calmly, and he didn't. Then, I barked at him to LET ME GO and he did but my mother got mad at me for being rude. I recently brought it back up as something that still haunts me and she was entirely dismissive of my feelings about him and about the episode.
I can't tell them. But, they're already noticing that I'm extremely unhappy and that I keep chaining the door, which we generally never do. I'm so scared that they'll find out or I'll be weak and tell them. It doesn't help that they've chosen THIS TIME to start picking fights with me and giving me endless lectures adrressing all my flaws.

I began writing this last night, but I ran out of strength. I was talking to someone who was distracting me and genuinely making me feel a lot better. I feel guilty for that, incidentally. At 3:30 AM, I got a phone call from an "unidentified" number. The line was disconnected as soon as I picked up. I went and chained my door and did my best to repress the panic.
I stayed up talking really, really late/early. I was awoken around 10:30 AM by a phone call. Sleepily, I picked it up and the name on the screen just flashed in my eyes before I said "hello." It was him. I told him to STOP FUCKING CALLING ME and hung up. He called back, but I didn't pick up. I panicked and called Kirill. No one understands why I'm so scared but I'm SO scared.
I know this is harassment and it is not legal and I could report it, but then I run a high risk of my parents finding out. That's not something I can risk.

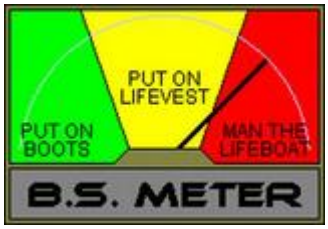
Most of my friends have been very, very supportive. However, certain conversations I've had have made me want to claw my skin off.
My friend Chris continually tells me to "just calm down" or some variations on it. When I try to explain that it isn't so simple, he says I could do it if I just realized that I'm not in danger. First of all, I don't think I'm in a great deal of danger, but the fact remains that he not only knows exactly where I live but can physically enter my house. Second of all, even if that was not the case, the sexual assault in and of itself isn't exactly something that is easy to forget. By this I mean that I can barely think of anything else.
Several people have breathed a metaphorical sigh of relief when I told them that he did not actually rape me. As if trying to shove his dick inside me is, you know, okay, so long as I manage to push him away.
Last night, Shaun told me, verbatim, that "it could have been worse and [I] am blessed it wasn't." He defended this by saying I could have been raped, beaten, or killed and it was "dumb" to overlook the dangers that hadn't befallen me. Let me make this EXTREMELY FUCKING CLEAR:

MY SEXUAL ASSAULT WAS NOT A BLESSING.
He said something about having some sort of experience (I assume this was an allusion to his being older than I am), but that is complete and utter bullshit. He does NOT KNOW what it feels like and, more than likely, he will NEVER know. If he knew, he would not DREAM of DARING to say something like that to me. Seriously, what the FUCK? Its enough that I feel guilty for not being able to "just get over it." At least I rationally know that I'm entitled to my pain and it is emphatically NOT OKAY to take that away from me.

Incidentally, Danny, my first love, the one who claims not to be able to forget me and has always said he needs to have me in his life somehow, has not found time to call me, despite my pleading request and my explanation that I needed to talk to a male that I trust. Clearly, its just as well: I have no reason to trust him. He's running out of time to keep me in his life in any way, but I suspect that he's too selfish to know or care until the next time a pang of missing me hits him.

I know I'm a ridiculously open person about basically everything, but I'm beginning to suspect that the reason people are reluctant to talk widely about experiences of sexual violence is because non-supportive responses from people you love/trust feel like getting hit in the head by bricks.

I know its only been two days but I want this to end. This has to end. I know I brought this upon myself (I know I didn't; I Know I did) but I want it to stop. Its not fair, its not fair, its not fair, ITS NOT FAIR. I want it to stop.



NYMOM!!!

. · 11 November 2006 · Archived copy · Original

NYMOM - A.K.A. Margaret Temple, from Columbia University.
http://www.studentaffairs.columbia.edu/juniors/staff.php
(Bottom of the page, somehow, NYMOM appropriately comes in LAST!)

YES!!! THIS IS THE INFAMOUS NYMOM!!!

Does it surprise you that this hideous skag works in academia? Trying to influence better looking women than her to be as miserable as her?

FUCK OFF, SKANK!

November 13th update on the Walmart Walrus (AKA: Margaret Temple, NYMOM)

Apparently Margaret Temple is an anti-father, anti-family, white supremacist homophobe. Quotes from the Queen of Skank's blog (thanks Serin):

http://womenasmothers.blogspot.com/2006/03/roe-vs.html

"As feminists ultimate goal is the total destruction of the mother/child bond and having a completely gender-neutral society."

http://womenasmothers.blogspot.com/2006/02/fifty-million-for-more-fatherhood.html

"That money should be rescinded and these phony fatherhood programs terminated as they are nothing but propaganda which is fueling a hate movement against women in their role as mothers."

http://womenasmothers.blogspot.com/2006/01/f4j-continue-their-sad-and-demented.html

"The entire fatherhood movement is fueled by hatred of mothers. They are a dangerous, vicious, hate-filled group of men and some female enablers. After observing their activities for a few years now, I can speak from experience when I say they are a menace to Western society, almost as bad as Islamic terror cells. Actually, it wouldn't surprise me to find out that some of their offshoots aren't consorting with Islamic terrorists and other bands of men who hate women as well, like to like."

http://womenasmothers.blogspot.com/2006/01/is-there-such-thing-as-common-law.html

"As always we can count on gender neutralized feminists to screw us up in every situation, common law marriage being another example."

http://womenasmothers.blogspot.com/2006/04/more-of-on-going-manipulations-of-men.html

"Lesbians don't appear to understand that going to court and winning these short-term victories ultimately winds up empowering MEN over WOMEN, each time they win a case."

"YET what will remain behind is the premise that a Judge can decide that the mother/child bond, which has existed since humanity first crawled out of the primal mist, is no longer of very much importance and that the courts of men have the right to hand a mother's child over to someone else.That is going to be the lesbian legacy to mothers and children."

http://womenasmothers.blogspot.com/2006/04/thank-god-women-like-this-generally.html

"Everytime you post on this blog or make a cell phone call or use a microwave, drive a car, etc., you are benefitting from 'white's people's culture' or whatever you want to call it.You should be damn grateful for it's existence."

Lol, notice that last post Margaret Temple made, taking credit for inventions.

NYMOM, think fast! Name something with moving parts that was invented by a woman.

And finally, here's a quote from Rob Fedders:

"FUCK OFF, SKANK!"

Crazy Cat Lady Action Figure

. · 14 November 2006 · Archived copy · Original

Just in case any of you are early Christmas shoppers... for the feminists in your life you feel obliged to buy presents for (co-workers, sisters, ex-wives etc.):

http://www.funrockn.com/action_figures/pages/cat_lady.html

CRAZY CAT LADY ACTION FIGURE

Every town has a Crazy Cat Lady. She's the one who lives in a tiny house full of feral felines. This hard vinyl Crazy Cat Lady Action Figure has a wild look in her eye and comes with six cats. ARE **YOU** A CRAZY CAT PERSON?

Size: 5.25" Tall

Price: $11.99

Accelerated Women's Studies Program (4 Years Crammed into 4 Minutes). Professor: Rob Fedders

. · 18 November 2006 · Archived copy · Original

With all the discussion lately over Matthew Fitzgerald's book "Sex-Ploytatian" http://www.geocities.com/aprilhouse/SEX-PLOYTATION.html?992318393090 I decided to go out on the web and see if I could find an on-line copy of the book so despised by feminists. (Rob's rule #1 - if feminists are upset about it, then you know it is REALLY worthwhile reading it - for the opposite of anti-logic is, of course, logic and truth!) Alas, I failed in my quest to find a copy of the book, but I did come across another zinger from Mr Fitzgerald and I believe that all women should read this - it should become mandatory for women to memorize this when they get their first training bra.

I am so sick of women talking all the time about how they are so sexually valuable that men should tolerate any crap from them to get a piece of their community shared pussy. Of course, any man who doesn't find himself attracted to self-serving, smart mouthed harpies gets accused by said harpies of "being a loser who can't get a girl." Here's a newsflash, honeys, if you are a smart-mouthed, woman-firster, supremacist class 'A' bitch, we know exactly how to get you! It's pretty easy, all we have to do is talk about YOU all the time, all we have to do is put down men and tell you you're a victim. All we have to do is agree with you that sunshine comes out of your ass and makes the world a better place. All we have to do is make you think we're someone who has a criminal record, yet finds you so attractive and perfect that we would never harm you. THAT'S ALL IT TAKES! Your hip-huggers and g-string will draped over the chair and you'll be showing off the tramp stamp that destroyed all of the visual appeal of what may have once been a nice caboose.

The thing that these "modern women" don't get is that their velvet lined pussy isn't so valuable that all of us men would tolerate your quirks to experience it. After all, many other guys have experienced yours already, so it's no big deal. What men really want in a woman is someone who is more of a pleasure to have around than an annoyance - something that many a modern woman cannot seem to achieve, despite their self-proclaimed superiority in relationships.

It's not that guys can't get girls like you, its that girls like you aren't worth the sex you are shamelessly selling. Therefore, I propose the following crash course in women's studies that should replace all the crap-drivel being taught at universities, which btw, makes women as attractive as a whore with syphillis.

Here are Matthew Fitzgerald's "Men's Top 10 Rules for Women:"

http://www.womansavers.com/articles-for-women/29.html (Lol, also note, this link is from a ridiculously sexist man-hating site. What a dizzy chick, I wonder if she realizes what the author wrote in "Sex-Ploytation" which she also links - some guy suggested she post the following on her site, ha ha!)

1 - Learn how to Communicate
Say what you mean, ask for what you want directly. Expecting a man to interpret indirect signals and read your mind is not communication.

2 - Learn to be Consistent
Irrational behavior just doesn't cut it. If you say you're going to do something, then follow through and do it. Be honest with yourself -- don't say one thing and do another. And for God's sake, don't change your mind a million times.

3 - Stop using Sex as Bait
If you want to have sex, then have sex. Don't use sex as a tool to manipulate men. And another thing: Stop tempting men with low-cut dresses or bare midriffs and then blame them for trying to get you in bed. If you need attention that badly, go see a shrink.

4 - Develop a Conscience
Stop abusing your sexual power. Many women have no ethical dilemmas at all about using men for favors or financial gain by dangling the promise of sex in front of them. Not only is this deceitful and immoral, but it's a double standard nothing short of fraud.

5 - Knock Off the Mixed Messages
If you're interested in a guy, let him know it. Ditto with sex. Maybe playing hard to get is cool if you're 12 years old, but it's just annoying 20 years later. Refer to Rule #1 -- men aren't able to read minds, so don't expect them to.

6 - Stop Expecting Men to Finance Your Life
This is the 2000's for God's sake -- women are enjoying unparralleled career and earning opportunities, and it's unfair to treat men like ATM machines, especially when women are earning as much or more than we are. It may be a great scam, but at its core, it's nothing more than age-old prostitution -- trading sex for money.

7 - If You Expect Equality, Then Act Like It
Equal rights means equal rights across the board -- not just when it's in your best interests. If you expect equal pay, then expect to be drafted and pay your share of dating expenses, too.

8 - Stop Blaming Men for All Your Problems
We aren't what's wrong -- you are.

9 - Just Be Nice
Can't you just be nice? Nobody likes a nasty, self-serving bitch. And men today are very, very tired of self-serving bitches.

10 - Read the Rules

If All Your Friends Jumped Off a Bridge...

. · 20 November 2006 · Archived copy · Original

Is there anything that illustrates women's herd mentality better than tattoo mania?

Ugggh! What are women thinking? When you own a Lamborghini you don't take it to the shop to put pinstripes and decals on it!

The biggest problem with tattoo mania is that women don't ask men what they think of tattoos BEFORE they go out and whore up their bodies. I think that women have some sort of muddied thinking going on where they figure that since they are attracted to men in biker gangs, that men are also attracted to biker bitches. - WRONG!

This is what happens all the time. A girl goes out for a weekend to another town and comes home with not one, but 3 tattoos! Then she runs up to all the guys to proudly show them off, thinking that she's made herself infinitely more sexy. It breaks my heart that she did something so stupid. You can see it in the guys faces, too. First, the eyelids close as their head pulls back a bit and they think of what to say without offending her - because it's too late to say anything negative now.

I've had this happen with my highschool sweetheart and it made me really angry. I hadn't seen her in over four years and we got together for a drink and here she starts showing me all of the tattoos she has that she thinks are "so cool." What can you say? I left completely repulsed. Here was a the first woman I had serious longterm relationship with and lost my virginity with... there's always something special about "the first one" that lingers innocently and sexily in the back of one's mind... and she shattered my memory of her once so sweet body by showing me it was now plastered with hideous doodles and graffiti placed upon her by some greasy, back alley slimeball. I am really serious, I was pissed off! For months afterwards too! My memory of her was forever tainted.

I had a second similar experience with a girl I have been friends with for 20 years now. I was back to my hometown for a visit and went out for a beer with her and her husband. This once extremely sexy girl could not resist pulling her clothes aside to show me all 3 of the tattoos she had gotten on her last trip to the big city. I could tell by the look on her husband's face that he was repulsed by them, and I too was left stammering, trying to think of something nice to say and not hurt her feelings. It felt like I was visiting a friend in the hospital who had suffered severe burns and I was saying she still looked beautiful - even though it is obvious that it was no longer true.

I think that women have become so arrogant in their self-proclaimed fashion sense, that they are no longer capable of realizing they have permanently made themselves look hideous. Just because all your girlfriends think it looks sexy DOES NOT mean that men think you look sexy. Here's a little tip, girls: men like NICE girls. They always have. Slutty clothes and tattoos are only tolerated when a man is slumming. If I am out slumming for some sport sex and a girl has a tramp stamp - well, if I would have sex with her at all, it would be missionary style because I don't want to see that hideous thing. If you have a tattoo on your left boob, you can count on the right "normal" boob

getting all the attention.

The only thing more hideous than a tattoo is a piercing. Who the hell ever thought that putting a piece of metal through a nipple or a clitoris would make it look sexier? What fucked up thinking! Nipples are pretty nice completely without help! But, at least piercing freaks are somewhat smarter in the sense that they are not permanent and can be easily removed - unlike a hideous tattoo.

Remember, no man has ever found a woman repugnant for NOT having a tattoo!

Denis Leary: No Cure For Cancer

. · 22 November 2006 · Archived copy · Original

I have always liked this particular rant from Denis Leary. If only all those psychology majors in university would take a course in Leary 101, the world would be a much better place.

http://endor.org/leary/

Rehab

We did it all. We did whatever we could get our hands on back in the seventies. We did fucking handfuls of mushrooms, pills, Ludes, coke. Whatever it was, we just fucking swallowed it, ok? That's what we did! People go, "Well why didn't you go into rehab?" We didn't have rehab back in the seventies. Back in the seventies rehab meant you'd stop doing coke, but you kept smoking pot and drinking for a couple more weeks. You know? "Yeah, give me a case of Budweiser and an ounce. I gotta slow down! Jesus Christ! I'm outta control. Look at the size of my pants for Christ's sake!"

Because that's the big thing now. Rehab is the big fucking secret now. Isn't it, huh? Yeah, you can do whatever you want. Just go into rehab and solve your problems. Isn't that the big celebrity thing? That's what I'm gonna do. Yeah, I'm gonna get famous. Then when my career starts to flag, I'm gonna go into three months fucking bender. Ok? Coke, and fucking pot, and smack, and fucking booze, and drive over people, and beat up my kids, go into therapy, go into rehab, come outta rehab, be on the cover of people magazine, "Sorry! I fucked up!" That's what they do, man. They go into rehab and they come out and they blame everybody except themselves. They blame their parents, right? That's the way. Everybody comes from a dysfunctional family all of the sudden, huh? Rosanne Barr comes from a dysfunctional family? Not Rosanne! She seems so normal to me! The Jacksons were dysfunctional!? Not the Jacksons! These people give each other new heads for Christmas for Christ's sake!

I am sick and tired of hearing that fucking speech. You know? These people come out of rehab they always have the same story. "Well you know, I became an alcoholic because my parents didn't love me enough. And then I became a junkie because my parents didn't love me enough. And I went into hypnosis and therapy and I found out that parents used to hit me." Hey! My parents used to beat the living shit out of me! Ok? And looking back on it, I'm glad they did! And I'm looking forward to beating the shit out of my kids, aren't you? For no reason whatsoever. *thbbt* "What'd you hit me for?" "Shutup and get out there and mow the lawn for Christs sake!" There's therapy for ya! Mowing the lawn and crying at the same time. "The Leary kids in therapy again. Their lawn looks great, it's unbelieveable!"

God.. "I'm just not happy. I'm just not happy. I'm just not happy because my life didn't turn out the way I thought it would." Hey! Join the fucking club, ok!? I thought I was going to be the starting center fielder for the Boston Red Socks. Life sucks, get a fucking helmet, allright?! "I'm not happy. I'm not happy." Nobody's happy, ok!? Happiness comes in small doses folks. It's a cigarette, or a chocolate cookie, or a five second orgasm. That's it, ok! You cum, you eat the cookie, you smoke the butt, you go to sleep, you get up in the morning and go to fucking work, ok!? That is it! End of fucking list! "I'm just not happy." Shut the fuck up, allright? That's the name of my new book, "Shut the Fuck Up, by Doctor Denis Leary. A revolutionary new form of therapy." I'm gonna have my patients come in. "Doctor, I.." "Shut the fuck up, next!" "I don't feel so.." "Shut the fuck up, next!" "He made me feel so much better about myself, you know? He just told me to shut the fuck up and nobody had ever told me that before. I feel so much better now." Whining fucking maggots.

And all these people quitting. I think it's a good thing, AA. And the recovery and rehab, because I've got some

friends who'd be dead without those programs, but you know something. Now we've got a new problem. Because now they quit drinking and drugs, they're completely stressed out, and they decide to work out, which is fine. I'm not a workout guy, but I understood Nautilus. It made sense. There were arm machines and leg machines. But have you seen these people who are using the stair-master? Huh? Have we turned into gerbils ladies and gentlemen? People are paying money to go into a health club and walk up invisible steps over and over again for an hour and a half. "Where are you going?" "I'm going up! And I paid for it too! I can stay here as long as I want!" Folks, you wanna go up and down stairs, move into a fifth floor walk up on the lower east side. Ok? What's next? A fucking chair master!? "I sit down. I get up. I sit down. I get up. I sit down. I get up." The door master. "I open the door. I close..." What the fuck?

Dear John, It's All Your Fault

. · 30 November 2006 · Archived copy · Original

Here is a piece by an author who this blogger respects a great deal. This fellow may be destined for greatness!

http://www.honornetwork.com/robfedders.html

Dear John, It's All Your Fault
(New Provincial Law in Alberta Allows Police to Seize Automobiles of Men Soliciting Prostitutes)
by Rob Fedders
October 23, 2006

ALBERTA – A new law came into effect in Alberta today which snuck in through the Traffic and Safety Act. It gives police the power to seize the automobiles of men who solicit street prostitutes. The province of Saskatchewan has previously passed similar legislation against men in 1999, as well as Manitoba in 2002.

Brian Nowlan, of the Edmonton Police, believes that threatening men with the permanent loss of their vehicle will be effective and issued the following statement: “Johns are going to run the risk of losing their vehicle, not just having it seized and impounded temporarily.”

The law was passed as a private members bill almost three years ago and Cabinet gave it its final approval earlier this month after examining if the law would violate Canada’s Charter of Rights and Freedoms. While politicians, community groups and prostitution activists all support the new law, Stephen Jenuph, of the Alberta Civil Liberties Association is on record stating: “It’s a matter that tends to be a random application of the law depending not on a fair hearing, but on the feelings of a particular officer on a particular day.” Jenuph also stated, “I don’t think that in a free and democratic society, decisions regarding punishment should be left up to the police.”

How the government can rationalize that giving police the powers to dole out punishment before being convicted of a crime to *not* be a violation of the Charter of Rights can only indicate one of two things: That the Charter is in desperate need of re-examination to ensure the right of “innocent until proven guilty”, or that we have many people in the government who slipped through the cracks of the educational system as illiterates.

The police may now seize a citizen’s automobile upon their own discretion *before* he has been convicted and they will keep his car in their custody *until* the issue has been resolved in court. First time offenders will likely have to perform community service before they can reclaim their cars but repeat offenders could have their seized property auctioned off, with the proceeds going to the province.

The government, however, proves how altruistic they are by offering those who are charged with the opportunity to complete alternative programs that will allow them to get their vehicle back while avoiding criminal charges and possible prison time.

What alternative programs are they offering, you ask? The accused may attend a “John School.” These one day courses, which will include lectures from ex-prostitutes and which sounds ominously similar to the feminist’s hate inspired Duluth Model, will teach the men about the damage that soliciting prostitutes causes to families, neighbourhoods and to society. Also the men will learn from the “more righteous” about the cost of a divorce.

There is a word for this kind of behaviour… when one forces another to do something against their will; upon threat of doing something far worse to them… it’s on the tip of my tongue… Oh yes! It’s called *blackmail!* I believe that it’s also punishable by law, upon pain of imprisonment. For that’s what it really is, isn’t it? Attend this course or you will lose your $30,000 car… only a billionaire could afford to say no. But what do I know? I’m just one of the sheeple.

Now, one may ask how the government manages to impose police-state powers upon a population who willingly accepts it without complaint. It is very simple. It’s all very politically correct. Political correctness is the new religion in Canada, replacing Christianity long ago. And who are the vanguard warriors of the politically correct? Why, the feminists of course, and all the feminists have to do is gather at the temple of the matriarchy and chant their favourite slogan: “Men are to blame…Men are to blame…Men are to blame.” Apparently, if you say it a few times, you can pass any law that attacks men. If you throw in your final amen by saying “Women are victims and forever it shall be that women are victims,” then you can even manage to damn the Charter of Rights in regard to men.

Note the following statements made available to the public via the Canadian media, from JoAnn McCartney, a former policeperson, who now spends her days counselling prostitutes in an attempt to get them off the street. She refers to the passage of the law *as a means to an end:*

“It’s helping to reduce the anonymity,” she told The Canadian Press. “If they’ve lost their car, they have to explain that to their wife, they have to explain to the boss why the company car is gone.”

CTV News made this report about McCartney’s comments: *McCartney says some prostitutes feel torn on the new law. While it may see a reduction in the number of people soliciting prostitutes, those johns are the same men that sex trade workers rely on for cash, McCartney pointed out.*

However, McCartney said there is consensus in the hatred of sex trade workers for their customers.

"They are absolutely disgusted by johns," says McCartney. "They hate what the johns do to them, so any time there's some kind of penalty for a john, that's good."

Also to note, are the comments of Kate Quinn of the Prostitution Awareness and Action Foundation of Edmonton: *"Children and women in the communities are leered at, they're harassed by the men."*

Quinn further demonizes men by telling a tale of a woman “that she knows” who must walk 5 blocks out of her way to catch the bus, or else she will have to “endure” men in cars who look her up and down.

Well, if that just don’t beat all. It must be true! Bad men! Very, very bad men! Men are to blame, women are victims. Amen. Therefore, since men are so bad that *even* the prostitutes are disgusted by them, the “means to an end” of suspending a man’s rights *as guaranteed to him by the Charter of Rights*, and thereby granting police the

absolute power to punish him *without* being convicted is perfectly justifiable, if not down right honourable. I mean, these poor hard done by prostitutes, forced to not look for a real job because disgusting men with easy money have consensual sex with them. I guess all that easy tax free money they get from these bad men also abuses them in *some* way that keeps them from applying for welfare, instead of selling their bodies. Hmmm… anyone want to bet that many of these prostitutes are *also* collecting welfare? That would make it a fraud, not to mention the additional fraud of tax evasion, as well as the usual criminality of prostitution. But of course, the man is far worse than the prostitute, right? Why blame anything on a woman when there's a man easily within reach?

I know another means to an end that would work. Make mandatory 25 year prison sentences for women convicted of prostitution. That would put a dent in the problem, eh?

After all, prostitution has only been a problem in the past ten years or so… that's why you never hear about it in old books like the Bible. You know the book, the one that says that only men are sinners. The same book that tells the story of how Eve was just the one who picked the apple…but Adam was the only one who ate from it. In fact, Eve was a victim because Adam didn't share! Perhaps because prostitution is such a new problem, it makes perfectly good sense for our governments to suddenly come up with a solution by only blaming men. They are so smart, our fearless leaders. Sadly, they really are smart, because these laws have nothing to do with solving prostitution problems and everything to do with demonizing men and taking away their rights. They have won another battle against men and against the people.

Tune in next time to hear about the college students who get busted for possessing a joint. Learn how they will have all their loans and grants suspended before being convicted of a crime… unless they attend a seminar led by an ex drug dealer who will indoctrinate them with propaganda of how bad their actions are for forcing him to break the law and make gobs of tax free cash from them.

Sources: CBC News
CTV News
CANOE -- CNEWS

Apparently "Animal Farm" has been Translated into Swedish

. · 1 December 2006 · Archived copy · Original

All Swedes are equal, but some are more equal than others...

http://www.thelocal.se/5571/20061121/

Car parks "should reserve spaces for women"

Reserved parking spaces for disabled drivers and families with small children are familiar frustrations for the rest of the car-owning population, but soon another, somewhat larger, group could be blessed with their own spaces: women.

The idea has been proposed by Liberal Party member of parliament Cecilia Wigström, who wants to see women-only spaces allocated near the entrances of car parks.

"I and many other women feel unsafe when we're out alone in the dark - and at this time of the year that's much of the day," Wigström told The Local.

"I know that most violence against women happens in the home, but the point of this idea is to reduce women's anxiety," she said.

A similar scheme has already been introduced in Switzerland, and now Wigström is calling for a trial in her home town of Gothenburg. But what about other people who are likely to be exposed to violence, such as gay men - or even young men?

"Of course there are other groups who face threats - but women make up half the population and many are constantly anxious," said Wigström."We should at least try this in Gothenburg. Politicians must take greater responsibility for improving safety."

Perhaps levels of violence would drop in Sweden if supremacist douchebags like Cecilia Wigstrom stopped antagonizing men by alienating them from society with ridiculous anti-male logic such as this. I thought Sweden was the world model for "equality."

Relocate to Belize!

. · 12 December 2006 · Archived copy · Original

http://www.escapeartist.com/one4/belize.htm

YES YOU CAN LIVE IN BELIZE - IT EXCEEDS EXPECTATIONS EXPONENTIALLY - SEE AND DO IT - CLICK HERE - For a certain kind of person there is a certain kind of place; and for certain people that place is Belize. Belize - the laid back Caribbean country of Central America! It's a favorite of those seeking a calmer lifestyle in close proximity to the wonders of nature. Like a un-planed 2x4 full of splinters, Belize is sturdy, rugged and full of sand fleas, but it also has it's share of beautiful islands, adventuresome spirits and rum soaked nights. It's the place we dreamed about as children. A place where we could do what we wanted without being called in to wash up for dinner. It's a place where you need to know how to repair your own car and replace parts of your plumbing with bailing wire and tape. It's also a place where big brother isn't looking over your shoulder and you can set your own building codes or own a flock of chickens. It's a place where you can spend the day fishing without trying to keep up with the Jones's. It's also become one of the hottest expatriate destinations in Latin America. ...it's not for everyone, but it may be for you. If so, there's a new eBook that will take you to Belize and help you stay there.

Belize's New Residency Program - Some Say It's The Best In The World! - Belize's New Residency Program -

Some Say It's The Best In The World! - You can set up an office in Belize and run your business from there, (taking advantage of the low overhead costs , and ***tax free status*** we might add) and still qualify for this program, as long as none of the money your company earns comes from a source within Belize. In this age of e-commerce and telecommuting , this scenario could work for a vast number of people. ~ Bill & Claire Gray tell us how to move to Belize - Sounds good, but who in their right mind wants to live on a white-sand beach when they could be living in Detroit?

Belize GDP per Capita = $6,500 (US GDP per Capita = $40,100)
- This means DIRT CHEAP LIVING, folks! Think about it, a $100,000 investment earning 6.5% and you are living to the same level as the locals *without* working at all! (No tax either, remember! Off-shore protection, anonymity etc.)

Belize - 10 acres of Property for Sale @ $1,600.00/acre
http://www.mayanreiki.com/belize_property.htm

They claim that you can put up a little house like for $3,000 in 4 weeks

It doesn't say what is all included inside, but I would imagine it is pretty bare, but for a few thousand more you could easily put up a rain-water catchement, a satellite system, some solar panels or a wind turbine (& possibly a small gen-set), and of course - a biffy. And PRESTO! For under the price of used car, you are kicking back, typing away on your laptop in 30 degree weather and flipping the bird to the arrogant west!

Here is a simple rain water catchment - see how easy it is?

A few chickens, a vegetable garden...

Oh, and don't forget... to help YOU forget... an update on the herbage you may want to sample while sitting on your little deck, watching the sunset...

http://www.webehigh.com/city/detail.php?CITYID=Belize%20city

Smoking tolerance level [1= very illegal 5=virtually legal]: 4.8

Legislation: Marijuana is illegal in Belize, and so is any related action. Law Enforcement:Weed is illegal in Belize, but the police usually don't do anything to Belizeans who get caught with it. The police are semi-tolerant. However, as a tourist, you probably want to try to avoid getting caught, which is as simple as not smoking in the streets where the police are.

Where to buy marijuana in Belize City: Asking around is ok, as the Belizeans are generally laid back, friendly, and most do smoke weed. Your taxi driver is a good source for weed, they will usually take you to get some (give your driver a tip though). Your tour guide can also be a good source. Making friends with a Belizean and asking them to buy weed or anything else will pay off as they get things much cheaper than tourists do.

When asked how much, don't reply with the weight, reply in money (i.e. "I want $20 worth", not "I want an ounce"). There is nothing wrong with asking, "I want an ounce", but by saying the price, you will most likely get more for your money.

Our latest reporter testimony is: "you have to ask people. Don't be shy. People want to help you. If they do not know, they will point you to someone who does. My advice is to ask someone who looks like they might be down, but to steer clear of someone who is obviously a dealer. Unless you get desperate, stay away from Rasta-looking

dudes and shady dealer jabronis, they definitely might rip you off, but some is better than none. I asked a semi-normal guy and we went in a cab to his house where he left and came back with a brick of the dirtiest weed I've ever seen. I talked him down to $35, but then realized i only had twentys anyway, so i got a copious amount of \"El Original\" for $40. i tried to buy a blunt off a Rasta guy for $5 but i messed up the currency and gave him $20 worth of Colones. Asking a cab driver is not a terrible idea, but one of them told me that the police sometimes mess with them. so , they might be scared to help you, but i wouldnt worry about it."

And of course, for you fancy-shmancy types, who look down on pot smoking hippies who live in shacks and aimlessly rail on about the leftist liberal cunts who ruined the west...

You can also buy a pad like this on 2 acres for $75,000

404

IMAGE UNAVAILABLE

And, since you're the fancy schmancy type who looks down on potheads raising chickens and vegetables while living in shacks... you may find it interesting to know that a beer at your local pub is only $1.39/pint! = Rob could get into a WHOLE MESS OF TROUBLE for only $15.00!!!

http://www.pintprice.com/region/Belize/usd.html

Cheers, fellas - what the fuck are we still doing here?

A Really Great Site to Surf Through

. · 14 December 2006 · Archived copy · Original

I realize that many of you may have already surfed through this site before, but perhaps you haven't, in which case you will think I am a genius for promoting this site...

http://www.geocities.com/RainForest/Vines/3951/noback/sex.html#genderwar

It is some of the ponderings of someone many of us recognize from around the web... I won't directly name him, but will just say that the beginning of his handle starts with "Zen" and it ends with "priest".

Some good surfing and thought provoking articles in here - an evening well spent!

Collective Projection

. · 15 December 2006 · Archived copy · Original

Do any of you guys out there believe there could be such a thing as *collective* projection?

We all know what projection is… the "projecting" of one's own behaviour onto another's. But, could women have so much of a herd mentality that they are capable of projecting as an entire gender?

Think about it.

Women believe that men are violent towards children, yet ALL research shows that the problem is really with women… is it that women are so willing to believe this about men because they know something about themselves?

Women are quick to jump on the bandwagon of "psychological abuse" for things as minor as an impolite facial gesture, believing it is just as damaging as physical abuse – yet women are definitely the major perpetrators of psychological abuse. Just google "social aggression" or "relational aggression" and discover how researchers have attributed this as a stereotypical female form of aggression… So are women so quick to believe this is a form of domestic violence because they recognize the sheer hatred and malevolence in their own hearts when they do this to other people – often their spouses.

Do women believe the myth that men hold them in oppression via the threat of violence because they know deep down that they hold men in oppression via the threat of "social/relational aggression?" Think about it, who is walking around with T-shirts & bumper-stickers advertising their psychologically abusive domestic violence tendencies? "Zero to Bitch in 2.0 seconds" comes to mind, yet I've never seen a guy walking around with a t-shirt proudly proclaiming "Zero to Fist in 2.0 seconds."

Which gender proudly proclaims they are high-maintenance – also a borderline advertisement of an abuser. Is this because they truly want men to behave callously and rude to them? Otherwise, why would they think that moniker is even remotely funny?

Are women so willing to believe in the deadbeat dad myth because they know themselves that were the shoe on the other foot, they would quickly become a selfish dead-beat mom? The evidence suggests this is true.

Women believe in the need for "womens' healthcare departments." Could this be because they know that if they were in the position to split resources between genders that they would quickly take care of women before men - so they automatically believe that men are doing this to women? (Of course, while forgetting about all those honourable guys who stuck women in their lifeboat seats).

Think about when a woman posts in on-line dating ad. What does she say about herself? She is a STRONG, INDEPENDENT woman. She likes to get her way, she is a successful career woman…blah, blah, blah. Is she projecting what she herself is looking for in a man? Could be. Cause I don't give a fuck about your career, honey. I care that you are feminine enough to make me feel masculine.

This is why women get tattoos and advertise themselves playfully as "bad girls." Women like bad boys – so they think that men also like bad girls. WE DON'T. We like nice girls. But here's the real kicker, when she's dating "Hank the Hell's Angel", do you think he asks her nicely and considers her feelings when he gets her to blow all of his buddies at the biker jamboree? Hell no, he tells her "on yer knees, bitch!" So perhaps when women are saying that they would like a guy with a nice sense of humor who is respectful and will listen, they are actually projecting

characteristics THEY WISH THEY HAD THEMSELVES! Cause it’s obvious that nice guys aren’t what turn them on, is it?

This mentality women are displaying is just as stupid as men growing tits & wearing lacy boxers to attract women.

The Big Lie

. · 25 December 2006 · Archived copy · Original

I have a bone to pick with this entire notion of there being different kinds of feminism. This is a completely erroneous statement. There may be different branches of feminism, but feminism is feminism, no matter which way you dress it up. You often hear people who consider “gender feminism” to be the evil supremacist type of feminism but they also consider “equity feminism” to be the good and pure type of feminism. We have many types of feminism, don’t we? Gender & equity feminism, eco-feminism, socialist feminism and of course our favourite: radical feminism. I’m sure there are many more sub-definitions of feminism out there that I have omitted.

What I would like to address is the fact that the very term “feminism” is in itself a promotion of the Big Lie that was needed to start this evil battle against men. We all know about the Big Lie, don’t we? The core theory of the Big Lie is if you make an outrageous and big lie, and repeat it often enough, people will believe it. It is the foundation of all evil propaganda based supremacist ideologies.

We all know that feminism is full of lies and distortions due to radical nutjobs, advocacy research, and placing emotions over logic. But ask yourself this: What is the one big lie that binds all of feminism together?

???

The fundamental Big Lie that defines feminism is that there was, and still is, systemic oppression of women that was/is enforced by men, for the benefit of men.

This is the ENTIRE basis of feminism. If this one Big Lie were to be removed from feminist ideology, every other claim the feminists make immediately fails to pass any scrutiny.

This is why feminism of the 60’s and 70’s wasn’t called feminism; it was called “Women’s Liberation” back then. And who/what did women need liberating from? That’s right, they needed to be liberated from the oppressive gender-specific roles that men had placed them in. That was the Big Lie right there! It is the basis for all the other absurdities this evil ideology has brought to us.

The one defining principle *that is* feminism is that women were oppressed by men in the past, thus the need for “women’s liberation” and the belief that women still are oppressed, and thus the justification for feminism to still exist.

No belief in oppression = No need for feminism.

And we know it is a big lie, don’t we? We know that most men were not infinitely free. We know that most men did not have “rights” or even the vote for much longer than women did. We know that most women still prefer the confident, aggressive, hard working man that will take care of her needs. It is a survival instinct, not “oppression.” We know that the way things were set up 50 years ago and beyond were set up that way to ensure women and children’s well being. And women needed it to be that way. Men did not keep women from working; women had to work their freaking asses off in the past, just like men did, in order to survive. And if we lost all of the technology of today, we would quickly revert back to our old work related gender roles in order to ensure that we would survive. The men would be doing the physically demanding labour, like ploughing fields with an ox, and women would be baking bread and churning butter while watching over the children.

We also know that throughout history, women’s lives were considered more valuable than men’s lives. They were

cherished as the givers of life. This is why men gave up their seats on the lifeboats and why it was men, not women who fought in wars. If women really were the “property” of men, then how come men didn’t send women into battle in their stead, like men who owned slaves used to do?

And we all know that women were 100% in control of sexual and moral authority, and always have been. What gender comprised the Temperance Movement again? Hmmm, odd that oppressed people could affect the morals of society so much. Of course, women still deny that they possess any sexual, or even passive aggressive powers, for if they did, they would also have to acknowledge that their passive aggressive sexual powers are very efficient in getting men to do their bidding… certainly not the hallmark of someone who is oppressed.

So, now that we defined exactly what the Big Lie is, what is someone telling you when they say that they believe in “equity feminism,” but not gender or radical feminism? **They are telling you that they still believe in the "Big Lie" that this whole supremacist filth is based on!** Any definition which includes the word “feminism” in it promotes the false belief that women were/are oppressed by men and needed to be liberated.

Here’s a little experiment that you could do: Try to find a group of black guys and strike up a conversation with them, after the perfunctory introductions, inform them that you are an “equity white supremacist.” – Lol! And we should treat people who classify themselves as “equity feminists” the same way. They are deserving only of some spit in their faces.

So, fuck you too, filthy equity feminists!

Oh, and Merry Christmas!

Goodwill towards Men!

And I hope all of you feminists get lots of nice presents from your cats!

The Garbage Generation

. · 29 December 2006 · Archived copy · Original

Here is an absolutely phenomenal read! In fact, this is one of the best things from the MRM that I have read in quite a while!

The Garbage Generation - by Daniel Amneus

http://fisheaters.com/garbagegeneration.html

This book explains everything about the concepts of matriarchal destruction of civilization in a very detailed, intelligent and well documented manner. It details how patriarchy took humankind from matriarchal savagery to patriarchal civilization by "putting sex to work," as in, man's motivation to build society is the ensurance of his bond to his family and this is what motivated society out of the caves and into advancement.

With the advent of feminism, male paternity is not assured, nor is his involvement with his children guaranteed, which takes away his only motivation to succeed and makes him "short-term" in his outlook on life, much like women tend to be - and therefore he has no motivation to continue to succeed & plan (or even really work) - as is evident of men in the matriarchally ruled ghettos.

The folly of feminism is that women assume that men will still be acheivers and producers "by nature", when in fact without the bond to their families being assured, his motivation declines as does his moral values... Man's commitment to providing for HIS family is what makes him work and create the great societies we have (had) - without men's assurance of being guaranteed HIS children, the motivation disappears, as does society - to be replaced by matriarchal anarchy.

Please take the time to read this on-line book, as we must, as a movement, take ourselves to the next level of educating ourselves with something deeper than just pointing out misandry in society (though, that is important too!).

This book is time well spent!

Dead Men Don't Rape

. · 10 January 2007 · Archived copy · Original

Ahhh... feminists! Does anything illustrate the gender supremacy of feminism better than the name of this blog?

Dead Men Don't Rape

http://pippiblog.wordpress.com/

Way to go, Pippi, you are well on your way to illustrating the amorality of your gender. Yes, yes, keep at it, for supremacist women like you are doing a tremendous job at illustrating the phrase: "Women have been spending the past 40 years proving that men were right for the previous 4,000 years."

Perhaps Pippi got the notion for her supremacist lunacy of encouraging vigilantism from her Whimmins Studies classes, after she read the speach which the Gender Supremacists' Great Walrus, Andrea Dworkin, gave in Banff to the Canadian Mental Health Association back in 1991. (In case you are wondering, she was there speaking as an expert instead of as a case study - though, one would have thought that a lot of shrinks must have attended and must have recognized delusional behaviour, and yet they said nothing - Daddy's money for tuition was not well spent, was it?)

From the Mighty, 5-Ton Great Walrus herself, her Highness and false rape fairy tale author http://www.nostatusquo.com/ACLU/dworkin/other/rape.html , the Great Hatress, Andrea Dworkin, speaks to you her words of bigoted insanity:

http://gos.sbc.edu/d/dworkin1.html

"I am asking you to stop passing: stop passing and having feminism be part of a secret life. I am asking you not to apologize to anyone for doing it. ***I am asking you to organize political support for women who kill men who have been hurting them.*** *They have been isolated and alone. This is a political issue. They're being punished, because at some moment in their lives, they resisted a domination that they were expected to accept. They stand there in jail for us,* ***for every one of us who got away without having to pull the trigger****, for every one of us who got away without having the trigger on us. I'm asking you to stop men who beat women.* ***Get them jailed or get them killed****. But stop them. I am not asking you to be martyrs. I am saying that we have been talking for 20 years. And I am saying that men who rape make a choice to rape. And men who beat women make a choice to beat women. And we women now have choices that we have to make to fight back. And I am asking you to look at every single possibility for fighting back. Instead of saying that I asked him, I told him, but he just wouldn't stop. All right? We need to do it together. We need to find ways to do it together. But we need to do it."*

(Btw, this speach REALLY IS part of Whimmins Studies. It was first published as "Terror, Torture and Resistance" in Canadian Woman Studies, Fall 1991, Volume 12, Number 1.*) This is how your tax dollars are spent when the government gives YOUR money to academia*!

Well, it looks as if Pippi got her degree in Bitch and Moan, alright. She probably even scored a 4.0 GPA.

To bad that Pippi doesn't spend some time filling her cotton candy brain with things like the law. It galls me that airheads like her, and big, fat walruses like Dworkin freely advocate for the killing of men vigilante style, something which is clearly illegal. And yet the same fucked up feminist movement advocates for the censorship of "masculist websites" because they advocate for fathers' rights to custody and speak out against feminism.

http://mensnewsdaily.com/archive/m-n/mcelroy/03/mcelroy060303.htm Free speach is a *right,* you fucktards, while what Pippi does, and what Dworkin did, are against the law - as they are advocating for women to utilize vigilante style justice to kill without a trial - for crimes that are not capital offences.

One wonders, in this day of equality, why Pippi doesn't get arrested? I wonder how long it would take for the police to darken my door if I started a blog titled "Dead Women Don't Make False Rape Allegations?" How about "Dead Wives Don't Require Alimony." Maybe even "Dead Feminists Don't Encourage Killing Men!" Personally, I think even children, who recieve the majority of their abuse from women, should start a teen site called "Dead Mothers Don't Hit."

Anyone want to wager how long it will take for the first woman to get off of a murder charge for killing some guy she shagged after having a few drinks? I mean, this is rape now. Women already get off the hook for setting guys on fire for abuse - and of course the "abuse" can be a dirty look, or basically doing anything that the supreme princess finds disagreable, in fact, NOW is trying to make it that even a man seeking custody of his own children be classified as abuse... so, why not start killing guys who've bumped uglies with a woman whose had a few drinks, he is a raaaaaypist after all...wah, wah, wah... I had to kill him, I felt so dirty, he raaaaaayped me! Wah, wah, wah!

I'm sorry to say it to all you ladies out there, but I really couldn't give a tinker's damn about any of you who are raaaaaayped or b-b-beaten anymore. You are all tripping over yourselves to claim that you have been raaaaayped or that your ex was abusive, or both. I just don't give a shit anymore. It is all an attention game and it is women who have let *real* rape & abuse victims down by playing up to all their attention whoring friends and rushing to hold their hand while they cry together. Guys will even call eachother on fishing lies, but women can't even call other women on the "dirty-look abuse" or the "3 drink rape" scenarios. And I certainly don't hear the average woman rushing to tell fucktards like Pippi or Dworkin to shut their big fat insane mouths. Rather, the average woman hears what these delusional bitches spew forth, then nod their heads and realize, HORROR, I had sex with my husband on our wedding night after drinking champagne... MAYBE I WAS RAAAAAYPED TOO! WAH, WAH, WAH! FEEL SORRY FOR ME!

Let them eat rape.

Even 10 year old boys understand the moral of the story of "The Boy Who Cried Wolf."

Women's amorality is truly disgusting, and "people" like Pippi and Dworkin illustrate this with intricate detail. Thanks feminists, for showing men how disgusting this aspect of women's behaviour is.

Another Canadian Speaking Out Against the Feminutsies!

. · 12 January 2007 · Archived copy · Original

Yes, ANTI-feminism is picking up steam, there is no stopping it.

Here is a link to a new blog:

A Canadian Liberal Against Feminism

http://canadianagainstfeminism.blogspot.com/

From the Comments...

. · 13 January 2007 · Archived copy · Original

Two anonymous posters left comments to my post titled “The Big Lie” which I will address here rather than in the comments area, for I imagine this will be a long post, as is always the case when one tries to untwist the deceit that feminism has wrought upon society with their supremacist cultural Marxist ideology.

***

Anonymous 12:10pm said:

"ok there, you may want to watch your words, because by acting as an asswhole you are only lowering yourself to the level of those so called modern feminists. Yes you read this properly, i do mean modern feminism. Unlike you, i am am woman, and like you i despise modern feminism. I have never studies feminism so i can't really say whether there are or aren't different kinds of feminism, but you can't deny the fact that different types of feminism did actually exist throughout modern recent history (100 to 200 years ago). I mean, as much as i despise modern feminists, lets face the fact that the first "feminists', called the suffragettes, did a wonderful work, and eventually did bring the right of vote to women and equality in our western societies. It is the modern feminists that have lost their goals and their minds. We have to be careful here not to mix both, since the first "feminists" did bring equality, the modern feminists destroyed it. There is no more equality, neither for men, neither for women. It is a full blown war where in the end we both lost and still loosing, to the point where we both become slaves to a society runed by by multinational corporations. Think about it, there is no winner, neither women, neither men. We are both suffering from this and refusing to see it.

There is no point, for any man, to lower himself to the level of those modern feminists and act as a bunch of idiots like they do. If you are that bright, fight them in smarter ways, above their level. Be smarter than they are, go ahead in stopping this stupid war and rebuilt an actual equalitarian society. Show those feminists how stupid and wrong they are, through positive action. Do not spit back at them, since it is only proving their point, which we do not want, since we know those feminists are crazy. There is no point in responding the hatered by hatered.

Act in a smart and positive way. Humans can be stupid, good, evil, intelligent, etc, no mater what sex they belong to. yes it may take time, a longer time, or shorter time to achieve these goals, depending on how ell you men use your resources, and yes there are some or many women out there who support you, in the same way some men claim to be feminists. Find them and ask them their opinions, and their support.

Forget anger and revenge. choose love and forgiveness, the only way to fight hatred, yes it may sound idealistic, but agin you can't fight hatered with hatered, if you do not like my propositions, think of something better. good luck, but coose the right path into dealing with this, to you or any male activist."

***

.

The official reply from No Ma'am:

OK, first of all, there is no point in a woman leaving comments about “asswholeness” and then going on with shaming talk about how men are supposed to behave on-line. The shame tactics immediately employed by women are despicable and annoy many a man. All but the most mangina-fied of men ARE SICK TO DEATH OF IT! Many of the older generation of men floating around online have been opposed to feminism since the 60’s and 70’s, and one thing that is apparent is: Men have been trying to take the high-ground in their dealings with feminism for decades AND IT GETS THEM NOWHERE! If you only knew how many women I have gently discussed issues with, only to get NOWHERE with them in the end. Ultimately, it is becoming painfully evident that women really don’t care about men’s plight and certainly don’t want to bother with such annoying things as “justice.” Women really only get concerned about men when they realize that something a man does or doesn’t do affects women. For the rest, women really just don’t care.

.

An example would be the looming “man tax” that feminism has been pushing with their Marxist agenda. Most women will readily agree with this and think it is a good idea, to even out the wage gap that they so falsely believe in. But, then if you explain to them that “man tax” will lower their husband’s (primary breadwinner) pay, and therefore his wife and children will have less money – then women will be opposed to it. Never does it seem to occur to women that the whole notion of “man-tax” or its partner, affirmative action, are horribly unjust. Nope, the injustice doesn’t bother the ladies… what bothers the ladies is if some action taken against men affects her in some way. This is a theme that is coming out time and time again. Have a look at many of the women that are getting involved in the Father’s Rights Movement. Why are most of them there? Not because they believe men’s rights are being trampled, but rather because they are grandmothers who can’t see their grandkids due to a divorcing wife – or they are a second wife who is complaining that the first wife is draining her family’s resources. It is truly an anomaly to find a woman speaking up for men solely for the sake of justice because 99.9% of the time it is all about her.

.

We men have tried to be nice, we have brought forth good, solid, logical discussions advocating for our cause… and do you know what we get in return… ***crickets chirping***… yeah, 40 years of men being “nice” and trying to take the high ground got them in a worse situation than where they were before.

.

So, anonymous, please stop imposing your self declared sense of female moral authority on men. It is insulting. Just because it bothers you that you, as a woman, are starting to see men treat women the same way that women have been treating men, doesn’t give you any justification for running around and decrying that men cannot fight hatred with hatred. Nope, can’t fight guns with guns, eh? Where were you for the last 40 years when feminists were calling for the steady erosion of men’s rights based on hatred? What did you say when all your girlfriends were sniggering over Bobbit jokes? Do you lecture your lady friends on their blatant display of hatred towards men when they chuckle at men getting raped in prison?

.

You have my permission to impose your moral authority on your female counterparts, but after 40 years of blatant hatred against men, it is really rich for a woman to come here and give a shaming lecture like this. What’s next, are you going to tell the Jews that they should treat Nazis with kindness, because that is the only way? The next time you see a “Take Back the Night” march to end violence against women and children; will you step out and lecture those women for promoting falsities and hatred towards men? If not, then what gives you the moral authority to lecture any man about anything on how they should behave?

.

Hate bounces. Get used to it.

.

Long live MGTOW!

.

As for the different types of feminism throughout the ages, while they may look different to you, let's make one thing perfectly clear: All feminism, from around 150 years ago to the present, is heavily based in Marxism.

.

This article from Carey Roberts is very revealing of the "good" feminists of old:

.

http://www.renewamerica.us/columns/roberts/040126

.

Feminist Subversion of the Gender System *- by Carey Roberts*

.

In recent years, the battle of the sexes has escalated into a full-fledged gender war. This conflict is playing out in the boardroom, the courtroom , and the bedroom.

.

What is the origin of this feminist assault?

.

And as early as 1886, Eleanor Marx, youngest daughter of Karl, issued this indictment: "Women are the creatures of an organized tyranny of men, as the workers are the creatures of an organized tyranny of idlers."

.

The linkage between socialism and American feminism can be traced back to the earliest years:

.

- Susan B. Anthony held a 1905 meeting with Eugene Debbs, perennial socialist candidate in the US presidential elections. Anthony promised Debbs, "Give us suffrage, and we'll give you socialism." Debbs shot back, "Give us socialism, and we'll give you the vote."

.

- Helen Keller, well-known suffragette and advocate for the blind, became an outspoken member of the socialist party in 1909. She later joined the ultra-radical Industrial Workers of the World. Keller's 45 page FBI file can be found here: http://www.marxists.org/reference/archive/keller-helen/bio/fbi-file.pdf

.

- Margaret Sanger, founder of Planned Parenthood, was a member of the Woman's Committee of the New York Socialist Party. In her book, Women and the New Race, Sanger wrote: "no Socialist republic can operate successfully and maintain its ideals unless the practice of birthcontrol is encouraged to a marked and efficient degree."

.

(Rob says: Also follow this link to see what a racist pig Sanger was http://dianedew.com/sanger.htm and here, though be warned, there are pictures of aborted babies on this site: http://www.armyofgod.com/Racism.html)

.

- Mary Inman was an ardent feminist and Communist in the late 1930's and early 1940's. During that era, the Communist Party of the USA often used the phrase "white chauvinism" to refer to racial prejudice. It was Inman who reworked that phrase to coin the term, "male chauvinism."

.

- Simone de Beauvoir was a well-known socialist with Marxist sympathies. In "The Second Sex," she lionized socialism as the ideal for gender relationships: "A world where men and women would be equal is easy to visualize, for that precisely is what the Soviet Revolution promised."

.

(Rob says: here is a link where one can read de Beauvoir's Marxist statement: "Private property appears: master of slaves and of the earth, man becomes the proprietor also of woman....Here we see the emergence of the patriarchal family founded upon private property. In this type of family, woman is subjugated." http://www.marxists.org/reference/subject/ethics/de-beauvoir/2nd-sex/ch03.htm)

.

- Betty Friedan went to great lengths to cover up the facts of her Communist past: her membership in the Young Communist League, her 1944 request to join the American Communist Party, and her work as a propagandist for Communist-led organizations in the the 1940's.

.

(Rob says: Here is a link to David Horowitz's article "Betty Friedan's Secret Communist Past." http://www.salon.com/col/horo/1999/01/nc_18horo2.html - also, find more on Betty Friedan's Communist connections here: http://www.ifeminists.net/introduction/editorials/2003/1125roberts.html)

.

- Gloria Steinem once admitted, "When I was in college, it was the McCarthy era, and that made me a Marxist." (Susan Mitchell: Icons, Saints and Divas, 1997, p. 130) Later, Steinem joined the Democratic Socialists of America.

.

These are just a few of the feminists who have devoted their lives to the religion of socialist. The accounts of other socialist women are detailed at the Women and Socialism website: http://www.marxists.org/subject/women/index.htm

.

In her book "Red Feminism," Kate Weigard makes this startling admission: "This book provides evidence to support the belief that at least some Communists regarded the subversion of the gender system as an integral part of the larger fight to overturn capitalism."

.

Subvert the gender system. Emasculate patriarchy. Overturn capitalism.

.

It's amazing that Weigard, a die-hard Communist and feminist, would reveal this destructive plan for all to see.

.

But then, who in the world would ever believe it?

.

.

Thank you, Mr Roberts, for illustrating how the "good feminists" of old were nothing more than a bunch of proponents for communism.

.

A very direct link to the beginnings of feminism can be found precisely from the writings of Karl Marx himself, as is evident here
http://www.ifeminists.net/introduction/editorials/2004/0106roberts.html

.

In the 1840's, Marx concocted this bizarre theory: Since working men were oppressed by capitalist economies, then women were doubly-victimized by the effects of capitalism and patriarchy.

.

This is how Karl Marx and Frederick Engels explained it in their 1848 Communist Manifesto: "What is the present family based on? On capitalism, the acquisition of private property... The bourgeois sees in his wife nothing but production."

.

In his 1884 book, The Origin of the Family, Engels elaborated on the theme of patriarchal oppression:

.

"The overthrow of mother was the world historical defeat of the female sex. The man took control in the home also; the woman was degraded and reduced to servitude; she became the slave of his lust and a mere instrument for the production of children."

.

In fact, the "wage gap" which all the feminists are whinging about can be attributed directly to Karl Marx as well.
http://mensnewsdaily.com/archive/r/roberts/03/roberts120903.htm

.

Also, the mirror between modern day feminist goals to that of Vladmir Lennin is clearly illustrated here http://www.renewamerica.us/columns/roberts/040116 where we can read:

.

So in 1918, Lenin introduced a new marriage code that outlawed church ceremonies. Lenin opened state-run nurseries, dining halls, laundries and sewing centers. Abortion was legalized in 1920, and divorce was simplified.

.

In a few short years, most of the functions of the family had been expropriated by the state. By 1921, Lenin could brag that "in Soviet Russia, no trace is left of any inequality between men and women under law."

.

But Lenin's dream of gender emancipation soon disolved into a cruel nightmare of social chaos.

.

First, the decline of marriage gave rise to rampant sexual debauchery. Party loyalists complained that comrades were spending too much time in love affairs, so they could not fulfill their revolutionary duties.

.

Not suprisingly, women who were sent out to labor in the fields and factories stopped having babies. In 1917, the average Russian woman had borne six children. By 1991, that number had fallen to two. This fertility free-fall is unprecedented in modern history.

.

But it was the children who were the greatest victims. As a result of the break-up of families, combined with civil war and famine, countless numbers of Russian children found themselves without family or home. Many ended up as common theives or prostitutes.

.

In his recent book, "Perestroika," Mikhail Gorbachev reflected on 70 years of Russian turmoil: "We have discovered that many of our problems -- in children's and young people's behaviour, in our morals, culture and in production -- are partially caused by the weakening of family ties."

.

If you wish to see how Communism honored working women much in the same way that feminists demand we do today, one can read the very words of V.I. Lenin himself, from his 1921 piece "International Working Women's Day" http://www.marxists.org/archive/lenin/works/1921/mar/04.htm where he states:

.

But you cannot draw the masses into politics without drawing in the women as well. For under capitalism the female half of the human race is doubly oppressed. The working woman and the peasant woman are oppressed by capital, but over and above that, even in the most democratic of bourgeois republics, they remain, firstly, deprived of some rights because the law does not give them equality with men; and secondly - and this is the main thing - they remain in household bondage, they continue to be "household slaves," for they are overburdened with the drudgery of the most squalid, backbreaking and stultifying toil in the kitchen and the family household.

.

Gee... this sounds familiar, doesn't it? And this is what the "feminists of old" believed in, and this is what modern feminists believe as well.

.

- Easy divorce & little value given to marriage
- Legal & easy abortions
- Destruction of the family
- Destruction of religion
- Wage parity which is not based on performance or qualification
- State Run Daycare (Sound familiar, Canadians?)
- All women should be working
- Women are "oppressed" by patriarchy

.

In fact, even the term "politically correct" comes directly from Communism, as Keith Windschuttle illustrates in his piece "Language Wars." http://www.sydneyline.com/Language%20Wars.htm

.

It originated in the early writings of Vladimir Lenin and evolved as a concept in his work up to 1917. The phrase "politicheskaya pravil'nost'" derived from Lenin's insistence on a rigidly enforced party line on all questions. Lenin argued that only a specifically revolutionary theory would prevent the revolutionary movement from abandoning "the correct path". Before the Russian revolution, to be politically incorrect meant being denounced by Lenin as a "revisionist", "factionalist", "wrecker", and "enemy of the people". After the revolution, to be politically incorrect meant a death warrant. Joseph Stalin used the phrase in the 1920's to destroy his rivals Trotsky and Bukharin.

.

Ah... one might say, but what we have today is not really like the Communism of the past, and in that one would be somewhat correct. "Old" Communism was an act of revolution, but it has now been purposefully morphed into "Cultural Marxism". While I will not heavily get into this aspect of Cultural Marxism, you can read exactly how this transformation was purposefully put to use by reading the following links in regard to the "Frankfurt School":

.

http://www.academia.org/lectures/lind1.html
http://www.grecoreport.com/gramsci
http://www.newtotalitarians.com/FrankfurtSchool.html

.

To fully understand how "Cultural Marxism" works, one should read this article about how Communist China has used Cultural Marxism to gain and maintain communism.
http://en.epochtimes.com/news/4-12-13/24830.html

.

And yes, this Marxist dark side of feminism is alive and well even today. Read this link about Hilary Clinton's past ties to Marxism: http://www.aim.org/aim_report/A5_0_4_0_C/ It is very revealing to see how the future first female US President, a world renown feminist, has her own ties to communism. And to see that Marxism is still alive in Hilary, the great feminist hope, one needs only to look at her proposing of the "Paycheck Fairness Act".
http://www.renewamerica.us/columns/roberts/050426

.

On April 19 Senator Clinton introduced the so-called Paycheck Fairness Act, a law that would pressure employers to fatten women's paychecks, regardless of the number of hours worked or job qualifications.

.

And of course, after reading the above in regard to how Lenin instituted state run daycares and subverted the patriarchal family with government services... it doesn't take a rocket scientist to figure out what Hilary Clinton is really saying when she states "It takes a village to raise a child", does it?

.

What do you suppose Norway's law to mandate 40% of all company executives be women is? Or how about proposals in Britain & Canada to preferentially short-list women for Member of Parliament positions? Those actions are *100% Communist & Totalitarian!*

.

So, as one can evidently see, ALL FEMINISM is based directly in Marxism. Feminism = Marxism, even the "old feminism" from the sufragettes. There is nothing noble about feminism, not even the old feminism.

.

And don't get me wrong, it's not that women shouldn't have the vote, or be allowed to work, or shouldn't be "equal"... but let's get one thing straight here, FEMINISM = COMMUNISM! It always has been about communism, from the very beginning. This is entirely separate from the right to vote or the right to work. One must understand that feminism has been active in historical revisionism, something which is also commonly encouraged by all Marxist states where they believe "the ends justifies the means."

.

There is no such thing as a "good" feminist.

.

Period.

.

Nice time is over, Anonymous, there are no more lovey dovey feelings. That has been tried for 40 years and it has failed miserably. Now is the time to get angry, for another 10 or 20 years may be too late.

.

****

.

Well, onto the second Anonymous's comments, shall we?

.

Anonymous 12:45pm said:

•

"Any definition which includes the word "feminism" in it promotes the false belief that women were/are oppressed by men and need to be liberated."

.

Ok, you are right and wrong about this. While you are right to confirm the fact that women were not oppressed, it is only true up to a certain point in time. This may sound nasty, especially that i have no scientific proof on which to rely on but only common sense. Oppression against women did exist. I mean there was oppression of men by men and women by men to some extent. And my point is that this oppression has grown very fast in north america, relatively recently, among european settlers. there is no other place in the world where feminism is as strong as in North america. it is most likely that this oppression you talk about most likely started among extremist christian groups who first emigrated to the Americas. now this is very crude but so true, those extrmists were loosers in old Europe, kicked out, so they came to a new potential world, why, because they were extremists (at least they became so once here) In the same way that Australia used to be a British colonial prison, America is the place where extremist loosers thrived, thirsty for power. So obviously down the road they also started breeding those angry thirsty of power feminists.
mind you, these days, those feminists are found all over the world.

.

So while it is true that even all men did not always had the right to vote, why when this right was allowed to every men wasn't allowed to every women as well? SO i guess this is the moment when the balance between sexes shifted, because even though for the longest time women may have been treated equaly and worshipped to some extent, this decisive moment changed everything.

.

So why, didn't everyone at that moment get the right to vote??? can you answer this question?

.

.

The official reply from No Ma'am:

•

OK, first off, this whole vote thing is a red-herring that always gets thrown around. This is a typical bad argument because it takes ONE aspect of life and attempts to portray it as oppression while ignoring the whole picture. And when one steps back and looks at the whole picture, "oppression" disappears quite quickly.

.

Is it just the vote that all of oppression lies on? What about that during the same timeframe MEN passed laws making a 40-hour work week for women out of a humane nature, while men were still working in factories & mines from sun up to sun down? Doesn't that have to be taken into account in the whole oppression argument, or just the vote? How about the men (who had the vote) who looked on from the deck of the sinking Titanic at their wives (who didn't have the vote) who were nice and dry & being rowed away in the last of the lifeboats? Were those women oppressed compared to their vote-empowered husbands? I'll bet the husbands didn't feel very

empowered as they gulped in that first breath of icy water into their lungs.

.

This constant harping on the vote as a means of illustrating "oppression" is ridiculous because it takes only one aspect of life and ignores all others, and then to really fuck things up, modern ideology rushes in to pass judgement on old world ideology without bothering to study ALL ASPECTS of old world ideology. Overall, there was a balance, which is why so many women were not interested in feminism back then either. It was a small group of radical harpies, pushing for change, just as is happening today. However, with the use of feminist revisionist herstory, the femnuts have focused only the downsides for women and focused only on the upside for men - while never acknowledging that there were also upsides for women and downsides for men.

.

But... since everyone always harps away about the vote, as if the vote is the ultimate in equality, while men having to do more dangerous labour for more hours and men being forced to die in place of women has apparently nothing to do with a lack of equality in certain male aspects of life... I will address the vote issue that all the harpies are always bursting into tears about.

.

First off, lets understand what we are talking about with "men's right to vote." Feminists make it sound so cut and dried, but it is not; it is very confusing.

.

From Wikipedia: Suffrage dates in the US

.

http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Voting_rights_in_the_United_States

.

Landless white men: 1856
Non-white men: 1870
Women: 1920
Native Americans: 1924
Adults between 18 and 21: 1971

.

So, let's have a look at just these facts, eh? Sure doesn't look like "Thousands of Years of Oppression" does it? In fact, there are only 64 years between when men had universal suffrage to when women had universal suffrage. **64 years!** Also note that 87 years have passed since women got the right to vote. **87 years!** So, lets put this into context, **WOMEN HAVE BEEN BITCHING AT MEN FOR 36% LONGER OF TIME ABOUT NOT HAVING THE VOTE THAN THE ACTUAL AMOUNT OF TIME THEY DIDN'T HAVE THE VOTE!!!** Putting up with all of that endless fucking bitching and moaning has got to account for some sort oppression that women have perpetrated against men, dontcha think? Jeez... that's just as bad as being married to a woman!

.

Second, notice that adults between 18 and 21 didn't get to vote until 1971. Now there's some oppression for you. Think about all those boys who died in Vietnam, yet they didn't even have a voice in saying whether the country should be at war or not. Funny how this is never mentioned about "the vote." But, oh, that's right, in our "equal world," women don't get drafted and die fighting senseless wars... and since only WOMEN moan on and on about oppression for 36% longer than the actual so-called "oppression," this injustice is conveniently overlooked by our "equalitarian" lasses. If women had been subjected to the draft and died in Vietnam, I'm sure we'd hear the wailing over that for 87 fucking years too! That would be wailing until the year 2060!

.

.

Here is an interesting piece on what it took for men to get universal suffrage:

.

http://content.scholastic.com/browse/article.jsp?id=4638

.

Thomas Dorr

.

A strange sight greeted any resident of Providence, Rhode Island, bold enough to be out on an erie June night in 1842. Two brass cannons stood on College Street, pointing through a dense fog toward the city arsenal. Behind the weapons massed a huge crowd of workers and artisans, ready to march against their own government. It was 60 years after the American Revolution had supposedly established liberty across the United States. And yet, according to the mastermind of this little revolution, tyranny still reigned in Rhode Island.

.

Thomas Dorr, the renegade state legislator who had filled the streets with angry citizens, liked to point out the gap between the nation's ideals and its political practice. The Declaration of Independence declared that "All men are created equal," and demanded that government represent the people's interests. But in order to cast a vote in the new democracy, one had to be white (except in a few Northern states), male (except in New Jersey, where women voted until 1807), and a landowner (nearly everywhere). In some places, that left more than 85% of the adult population out of the political process.

.

Dorr, strangely enough, was not one of those left out. A Harvard University graduate and the son of a wealthy merchant, he made an unlikely revolutionary. But after a majority of landowning, white male voters elected him to the Rhode Island legislature, Dorr decided it was wrong for Rhode Island's poor to be denied the vote.

.

In October 1841, Dorr and voteless delegates from around the state met illegally and drafted a state constitution that gave the vote to all white males over 21. Six months later, two separate elections were held. Landowning voters elected Samuel Ward King as governor, while voters empowered by the "People's Charter" chose Dorr. Rhode Island had split down the middle.

.

- Showdown in the Fog -

.

In June, backed by 3,000 supporters and two stolen cannons, Dorr set out in the fog to disarm what he called the "illegal" government of Governor King. According to one observer, the showdown kept residents up all night "with watchful eyes and aching hearts, to await in the most painful suspense the dread spectacle of our fair city wrapt in flames and her streets deluged with blood."

.

The suspense did not last long. When Dorr's rusty cannons failed to fire, nearly everyone began to drift off, leaving Dorr and 50 of his supporters to drag the artillery back to their headquarters. Faced in the morning by 1,500 armed supporters of the King government, Dorr had to admit defeat. At his trial for treason, he spoke like a true martyr. "The

servants of a righteous cause may fail or fall in defence of it," he told the court. "But the truth that it contains is indestructible."

.

Dorr went to prison, won a pardon after two years, and faded from public life. His cause, however, did seem indestructible. States that had not already dropped the property requirement began to do so quickly. Rhode Island held out until 1888. But by the time of the Civil War, nearly every white man in the country - rich or poor, rural or urban - could go to the polls on election day.

.

Well, Good Golly, Gosh Darn! Imagine that! And all that we hear in our feminized education system is about women's heroic struggles in order to get the right to vote! WELL WHAT ABOUT THE MEN? If this isn't a prime example of feminist's historical revisionism, in order to put forth the divide and conquer "oppression" mentality of Marxism, then I don't know what is!

.

Thousands of years of oppression, MY ASS!

.

Here in the Great White North (Canada), women actually had the right to vote before 1867, when we were a British colony, as women who owned property under English common-law were afforded the right to vote, though in some districts, they had to vote by proxy. When Canada became a country, women lost the right to vote for around 50 years, as they began to regain suffrage between 1916 and 1920, though, men did not have universal suffrage either, as can be seen from this piece:

.

http://www.mvnf.civilisations.ca/hist/elections/el_012_e.html

.

Only Affluent Men May Vote

.

In the colonies that would later form Canada, only a small part of the population could vote. The privelege was reserved mainly for affluent men. The franchise was generally based on property ownership: to be eligible to vote, an individual had to own property or other assets of a specified value. Paying a certain amount in annual taxes or rent could also qualify an elector. Women were excluded from the right to vote, as were various religious and ethnic groups. In the case of women, however, the exclusion was a matter of convention rather than law.

.

Canada adopted the universal right to vote in 1920 for citizens aged 21 years of age, but with several restrictions. The last restrictions were lifted in 1960.

.

(In case you are wondering what the last restrictions were, it had something to do with poverty - pauper's debts etc - people who reneged on their debts could not vote, and in fact, their debts could be sold - something like that, though don't quote me exactly on that.)

.

So, as we can see, this whole bullshit argument about the vote is just utter nonsense. It has been subjected to revisionist history in order to create a climate of anger towards men by accusing them of "patriarchal oppression" when really no such thing was around. The purpose of this revisionism comes directly from Karl Marx's theories of dividing and conquering by convincing one group that they are oppressed by the other.

.

Feminists have a lot to answer for, and I am not in the mood to hear their fucking shreiking about thousands of years of oppression any longer.

Roe vs. Wade for Men - 1 hour Video

. · 14 January 2007 · Archived copy · Original

Here is a google video discussing paternity issues in regards to men's rights:

http://video.google.ca/videoplay?docid=-4943148856068315400&q=Men%27s+Rights

It's very interesting to listen to the fat feminist bitch who is way beyond any desirablity to men. Where is an icefloe when you need one?

BTW, 62% of viewers voted in favor of men having a choice!

Yo! Men! Boo, feminists!

Think about it though, as much as the feminists and the media hate our guts... we ARE NOT a fringe movement! When will politicians pull their heads out of their asses & recognize THE issue of the day?

A New Kind of Bigotry

. · 16 January 2007 · Archived copy · Original

A New Kind of Bigotry

December 2006

(Multi-Tasking Gay Rights Advocates are Granted License to Revise History while Over-Ruling Parental Rights)

By Rob Fedders

BRITISH COLUMBIA – There has been an ongoing political battle in British Columbia that receives scant attention by the main stream media, yet it concerns something that most decent Canadians would consider the most important issue of one's life. It is the issue of raising your own child in the way you believe to be best. What would any parent deem more important than the proper raising of their own child? But this is exactly what gay rights activists are now after: the "right" to indoctrinate other people's children with their own politically charged sense of morality.

Back in the late 1990's, gay activists Peter Cook and Murray Warren filed a complaint against BC's Ministry of Education for not adequately addressing the issue of sexual orientation in school curriculum. The complaint did not receive much attention until Bill C-38 was implemented in the summer of 2005, allowing homosexual "marriage." Cook and Warren were among the first in Canada to be "married" and subsequently changed their surnames to the cutesy combination of "Corren." Soon after C-38 became law, the new husband and husband team went into action by saying that because gay marriage is now legal, it is even more urgent to change the school curriculum to reflect this new "reality." (Does anyone else remember the gay rights claim that allowing gay marriage would have absolutely no effect on heterosexual families?)

Murray Corren, who is an elementary school teacher in Port Coquitlam, told the Vancouver Sun, "There is systemic discrimination through omission and suppression in the whole of the curriculum." Although further questioning forced Corren to admit that nothing in the present curriculum is actually anti-homosexual, he still claims that because the curriculum does not highlight prominent gays in history, this "has the effect of enforcing… the assumption that all people are or should be heterosexual."

The BC Teacher's Federation Union expressed their support for the Correns' claim.

So, the Correns left the warmth of their marital bed and pressed forward by taking their activist mission to the BC Human Rights Commission where they were scheduled to have a hearing in April 2006. They never made it to the hearing, however, because the BC Government felt it would be prudent to capitulate to the Correns demands and settle the case beforehand. In exchange for dropping the complaint, the government agreed to make homosexual issues a mandatory part of school curriculum that will reflect "inclusion" of the homosexual lifestyle by portraying

it in a positive light which asserts that homosexuality is normal and acceptable. The six page agreement also granted the Correns the exclusive right to appoint their own “experts” on homosexual issues for the revisionist activities. They will get to decide what material gets presented as well as deciding who will get the job of revising it.

Murray Corren has stated that the new K-12 curriculum will reflect the following: “Queer history and historical figures, the presence of positive queer role models – past and present – the contributions made by queers to various epochs, societies and civilizations and legal issues relating to (lesbian, gay, bisexual, trans-gendered) people, same-sex marriage and adoption.”

Well, at least he has no intention of changing the curriculum for Foods and Nutrition classes – yet.

Susan Martinuk, of the National Post, makes a good point when she states in her column: “It is the ultimate in revisionist history to define its players by their sexuality and to assume that their sexual proclivities played a major role in determining their acts and contributions to history. (Could it be that former Prime Minister Brian Mulroney’s heterosexual orientation led him to impose the GST?)”

While Ms. Martinuk makes a really good point, a fellow such as myself might find it easy to take the Correns’ homo-supremacist ideals and completely turn it against them by saying something like: Canada had the world’s third most powerful navy at the end of WWII because it was comprised of 100% heterosexuals. Or perhaps, by the Correns’ ideology, they will also acknowledge that former Member of Parliament, Sven Robinson, turned into a shoplifting thief because he was gay.

No, I don’t think they’ll go for that either.

However, the most disturbing aspect of this whole crooked backroom deal is that the Correns have somehow managed to strong arm the government into making the new material mandatory – parent’s will not be allowed the usual “opt out” course of action when dealing with sensitive materials. The Correns have convinced the government that allowing parents the option of removing their children from the new curriculum will not be “respecting of diversity.” (Yes, that’s right, read that sentence again). So as part of the agreement, the Correns have managed to remove homosexuality from the “sensitive issues list” which would have allowed parents to legally pull their children from classes when teaching these issues.

Murray’s husband Peter made the following statement to the Province Newspaper: “There’s no point in us making the curriculum more queer positive if people can take their kids out. This is the public education system. The School Act is quite clear… religion does not play a role in what is taught. We just want the policy to be followed.”

Of course, it doesn’t appear that the Correns are all that proficient in the respecting of diversity, does it? Apparently, the Correns fail to recognize that even many non-religious people may object to the forced homosexual desensitization and indoctrination of their children. They also fail to realize that the Canadian Charter of Rights and Freedoms is a hands down trump card over the School Act – and the Charter guarantees the right to religious freedom. Perhaps if the Correns wish to disregard the Charter guaranteed rights for religion, then they also won’t mind the general public disregarding the Charter guaranteed rights for sexual orientation? It was the Charter of Rights that granted gays the right to be married in the first place… disregard the Charter and well… Yeah, I didn’t think so either. It’s best for them to stick to blatant hypocrisy then.

These forced changes have not gone completely without notice, however. This past August, 900 protesters gathered at Premier Gordon Campbell’s constituency office in an effort to bring attention to the manner which the school curriculum was changed without input from parents or the public. K. John Cheung, of the Canadian Alliance for Social Justice and Family Values Association (CASJAFVA) said to Life Site News: “We want the same

opportunities to participate in the revision process and give input. We don't want to see this process ending up completely one-sided." CASJAFVA has gathered over 15,000 signatures on a petition which was presented to those in government and demanded of them "to defend and to preserve parental and children's rights" and to "stop selling out to special interest groups."

But the government has employed the "let's do lunch" tactics with the CASJAFVA. They were promised a meeting with the Minister of Education on June 20th, but the meeting was postponed until July and then the minister "neglected" to show up for that meeting. CASJAFVA subsequently rescheduled another appointment for August 31st, but before that meeting took place, the Ministry informed the CASJAFVA that the minister would not meet with them until the middle of September – after the changes had already taken place.

Isn't it great to see how the government values two gay people who can't have children of their own over 15,000 concerned parents? Viva la democracy!

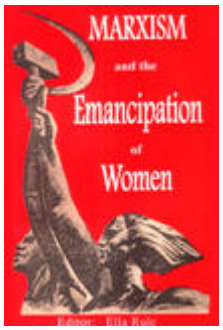
So, fellow Canadians, when you sit down at night to help your child study for that history test, don't be surprised when you open the textbook to the French Revolution and read Marie Antoinette's revised statement: "Let them eat pie." After all, gay rights activists, the BC Teacher's Federation Union and the BC Government seem to have forgotten the lesson which that story teaches.

"A middle ground might be to fight for same sex marriage and its benefits, and then, once granted, redefine the institution completely, to demand the right to marry not as a way of adhering to society's moral codes but rather to debunk a myth and radically alter an archaic institution." -- Michelangelo Signorile, "Bridal Wave," OUT Magazine, December/January 1994, p.161

"It is also a chance to wholly transform the definition of family in American culture. It is the final tool with which to dismantle all sodomy statutes, get education about homosexuality and AIDS into public schools, and, in short, usher in a sea of change in how society views and treats us." -- Michelangelo Signorile, "I do, I do, I do, I do, I do," OUT Magazine, May 1996, p.30

Marxism and the Emancipation of Women

. · 17 January 2007 · Archived copy · Original



This is recommended reading for anyone who still believes that feminist "progress" is a good thing:

http://www.cpgb-ml.org/index.php?secName=books&subName=display&bookId=8

"... the first premise for the emancipation of women is the re-introduction of the entire female sex into public industry; and ... this again demands that the quality possessed by the individual family of being the economic unit of society be abolished'" (Engels).

" ... Public dining rooms, creches, kindergartens - these are examples of the shoots, the simple everyday means, which assume nothing pompous, grandiloquent or solemn, but which can in fact emancipate women, which can in fact lessen and abolish their inferiority to men in regard to their role in social production and in social life" (Lenin).

These quotations encapsulate the mission of the proletarian revolution finally to put an end to the social inferiority of the female sex, by removing every last barrier to women's participation in social production on an equal basis with men. The victory of socialism in the USSR and other socialist countries brought final proof of the correctness of this, the Marxian, thesis on the woman question -US women were systematically freed from their age-old shackles of domestic slavery for the first time to show that anything men can do, women can do too.

The aim of this book is four-fold - namely (1) fully to familiarise readers with this Marxian analysis; (2) to celebrate women's emancipation in the socialist countries which provides incontrovertible evidence in support of the correctness of the Marxian analysis; (3) to expose the false ideology of women's liberation being peddled by petty bourgeois elements in the movement; and (4) to demonstrate how in practice revisionist and Trotskyite opportunists work in the women's movement, as in the general working-class movement, against Marxism, and against women actually achieving their liberation. The aim of the book is to arm advanced workers with the knowledge and understanding that will enable them to bring together an invincible mass organisation of women) with a proletarian orientation and a correct programme for their liberation, to fight for proletarian revolution and their own emancipation.

404

IMAGE
UNAVAILABLE

"A world where men and women would be equal is easy to visualize, for that precisely is what the Soviet Revolution promised." (Simone de Beauvoir, "The Second Sex")

ANY QUESTIONS? (Fedders, 2007)

Anti-Sexism for Idiots

. · 20 January 2007 · Archived copy · Original

I came across the website "Anti-Sexism for Idiots" about a year ago, read it completely, enjoyed it thoroughly, and then let it slip from my mind. Recently, I stumbled across it again, and have decided to read it through over this weekend again, and thought that I would throw a link up - in case some of the rest of the you haven't surfed through it and are looking for something constructive to do with your time on a dreary January weekend.

Anti-Sexism for Idiots: http://members.iinet.net.au/~tramont/protruth/index.html

Here is a sample article from the website, which I particularly enjoyed:

http://members.iinet.net.au/~tramont/protruth/halfwit.html

THEY JUST DON'T GET IT

From their lofty moral high ground, feminists have applied women's superior ways of knowing to gently remind us male heathens that we just don't "get it". I would like to return the favour. Here are some things that feminists just can't seem to wrap their brains around.

Feminists complain about the under-representation of women in the workplace. They want to enjoy the same employment opportunities as men. They don't get it that for men, work is not a hobby. They don't get it that for men, work is not something you do if you like, something you do if your fancy takes you, something you do to while away the hours. For the vast majority of men, not working is not an option. Men do not have the freedom to stay at home to rear the children if they like, or to do nothing particular if their fancy takes them, or to do the shopping if they're bored, or to get a part-time job to make friends, or to watch the soapies to have something to talk about.

Feminists don't get it that higher paying jobs aren't generously bestowed on men out of the goodness of their bosses' hearts, just because they are men. They don't get it that if women were as efficient as men and as profitable as men to employ, then there would have to be something seriously, gravely wrong with any organisation choosing men over women, just because they are men. Feminists just don't seem to understand that organisations function according to the laws of supply and demand, profit and loss, and make those recruitment decisions most likely to benefit the bottom line. To do otherwise is to deserve to fail.

They don't get it that if a majority of women don't want to do certain types of work, then perhaps it might be a little difficult balancing the numbers. Feminists don't get it that focusing on equal outcome instead of equal opportunity is not equality but bias. If you want to balance the numbers of men and women in government or in coal mines, what do you do if a majority of women prefer not to work, or if they prefer not to expend the same effort and commitment to their careers as what men are required to do? If you want to balance the numbers of men and women in parliament, what do you do if you can't find women who want the job badly enough? Recruit check-out chicks? Or bored housewives?

Feminists don't get it that mowing the lawn, or repairing the car, or painting the bedroom, is domestic work. They think that men do these things to get out of doing the dishes.

The statistics from the feminist website, Gender Gap in Government, will shock you. WOMEN ARE 52% of the adult population, yet even after over 3 decades of affirmative action, women have barely dented the ranks of

politicians. Are women really be this lazy?

Feminists don't get it that women's failure to participate is not due to oppression. Instead of blaming others for their own laziness, they should look inwards. Feminists' cherished statistics prove conclusively that even today, with all the affirmative action policies that have been enshrined in law, with everything that has been done to facilitate women's access to men's jobs without their having to earn them, women are still not pulling their weight. Feminists don't understand that they have now provided us with proof of what we have known all along - that women are bone lazy, and that they never actually wanted to work.

Feminists don't get it that when women have the escape-hatch of stay-at-home mom, they are more likely to pull out of the career paths that might otherwise lead to higher salaries. Stay-at-home moms are less likely to have the sort of career experience that pays well. The presence of the stay-at-home escape-hatch profoundly influences the choices that women make.

They don't understand that only men fight wars, pollute environments and generally, do the dirty-work also of women, because women are too comfortable in the security provided by men to be bothered to do it themselves.

They don't get it that the reason that the majority of people over 60 who are now living in poverty are women is that they are more likely to have been married to providers who are now dead.

Feminists don't get it that when a woman dresses to be looked at, she's going to be…… looked at. They don't get it that when a woman dresses to lure, she's going to be…… approached. Perhaps it's a bit too deep for them. It is a rather difficult notion well beyond feminists' grasp, as it is founded in abstract, rational principles (rationality) foisted on everyone by The Patriarchy.

They don't get it that women's fantasies about being raped reveal a secret about women's sexuality. They don't get it that rape scenes in novels written by women for women derive their appeal from tapping into this private side of feminine nature. They don't understand the connection between their thoughts and their longings or the duality that exists between being protected and being violated. Sure, feminists reassure us, rape is terrible and just because a woman fantasises about being raped, does not mean that she wants to be raped. What they don't get is that women's unspoken secrets can influence and justify (in their minds) the choices that women make, in fashion and in men. They don't understand that the thrill of dressing to lure, to be desired, to be dominated and to be taken, can come at a price and so, has its responsibilities.

They don't get it that when women choose wallets without character, they might finish up with characters who won't share their wallets.

Feminists don't get it that, when a man cheats on his wife, there is usually a woman who cheats with him. And no, it's not because of something he put in her drink.

They don't get it that when women say no and then give in to the types of jerks least likely to take no for an answer, other men are going to have a hard time believing that no means no.

Feminists just can't seem to wrap their brains around the fact that, the women that enforce, supervise and participate in the tribal African custom of female genital mutilation are not, actually, men dressed in drag. And no, the fact that men generally do not participate in sacred women's rituals (such as FGM) does not mean that innocent mothers, grand-mothers and aunties have had their drinking-water drugged by scheming patriarchs.

They don't get it that when women wear fashions and apply lipstick and makeup in order to deceive men, they are

not helpless victims of a Beauty Myth, but active participants, motivating companies to give them more of what they demand

Feminists don't get it that blaming men for the oppression of women is like blaming mothers for the oppression of little boys. And little boys become men. They don't understand that what goes around comes around.

They don't get it that feminism is the princess syndrome taken to its logical conclusion. They don't understand that feminism cannot exist without chivalry, without Patriarchy's Galahads who have traditionally always done women's dirty-work.

There is so much that feminists don't get, one can be forgiven for wondering whether there is something inherent in the nature of femininity that precludes women from understanding the most basic, simple logic. With women's silence and complicity while the injustices rage against men, we might forgive those who regard feminism as proof that women are less able than men in almost every sphere of life. You will have to be patient with them. You will have to remind them that feminism is not about women, but about chivalry, and feminist women demanding and extracting privileges from men. If feminist women are nincompoops, what does that make the men that so readily comply with their demands?

Pierre Elliot Trudeau: Cultural Marxist Wrapped in a Canadian Flag

. · 26 January 2007 · Archived copy · Original

Those of you who are Canadian readers may remember the 2002 mini-series "Trudeau" that the tax-subsidised Canadian Pravda (read: the CBC) created with further tax-subsidies. (http://us.imdb.com/title/tt0299404/) Of course, at the time, Pierre's own Liberal Party held a majority of seats in the Cremlin...erm...Parliament, so it comes as no surprise that Canada's greatest Marxist was hailed as some sort of Canadian hero rather than someone who implemented some of the most damaging and ridiculous legislation in Canadian history. Sigh, I suppose it was only to be expected, for his longtime henchman, Jean Chretien, was in power and he still worshipped the very ground that Trudeau had walked on. Remember Chretien's failed attempt to rename Canada's highest peak, Mt. Logan, as Mt. Trudeau? (A peak in British Columbia did eventually become named Mt Trudeau in 2006 - but it was not Mt. Logan. When Canada's greatest mountain gets renamed, Mr. Chretien, it will be christened "Mt. Fedders.")

This blogger wonders, however, if many of us Canadians recognize precisely how Marxist the "great" Trudeau was, and whether the future history books will view him as kindly as the pro-left (read: need tax dollars just to survive) CBC did.

Here is a very telling article which illustrates *exactly* how deeply Trudeau believed in Marxism:

---

http://www.enterstageright.com/archive/articles/1000trudeau.htm

Trudeau and his Communist friends - by Jamie Glazov, Ph D. (Oct 16, 2000)

He never met a communist he didn't like.

That's the reality that all of the adoring eulogies to former Canadian Prime Minister Pierre Elliot Trudeau somehow fail to mention.

It was completely expected that Cuban dictator Fidel Castro showed up for Trudeau's state funeral on October 5, after he declared three days of mourning in his totalitarian state. The two were great buddies ever since Trudeau visited Cuba in 1973 and proclaimed "Viva Castro!" One only has to read Armando Valladaras' "Against All Hope" to get a good sense of the moral degeneracy it takes to utter such words about the father of Cuba's concentration camp system.

Valladaras, a Cuban poet who spent twenty years of torture and imprisonment for merely raising the issue of freedom, provides the most indicating and heart-wrenching account of Castro's atrocious human-rights record. His book serves as Cuba's version of Solzhenitsyn's "Gulag Archipelago". For Trudeau, of course, there were bigger priorities: cozying up to individuals who put the ideas of socialism into actual practise.

Castro, of course, was not alone in enjoying Trudeau's publicly declared endorsements. The same year he pronounced "Viva Castro!" he also praised Mao Tse-tung's revolution in China, stating that Mao had delivered a wonderful system to his people. At that time, it was already well documented in the West that Mao's gulag had liquidated more than 60 million human lives.

Trudeau's behaviour becomes understandable in the context of his life-long admiration of Jean-Jacques Rousseau, the 18th century French philosopher who, in his famous promotion of the submission of the individual to the "general will," set out the blueprint for genocide-making not only of the French Revolution, but of the Marxist and Nazi

revolutions of the 20th century.

Thus, in Trudeau's philosophical outlook, the innocent victims of Castro's and Mao's concentration camps were not to be thought about in their human context, but only in abstract terms - if at all.

As Prime Minister, Trudeau was enchanted with pacifism -- in the face of "general will" of course. Thus, Trudeau tried to pull Canada out of NATO. Failing that, he succeeded in cutting in half Canada's NATO commitments in Europe, and in decimating the preparedness of his own armed forces at home.

Trudeau never forgot about Cuba. In 1976, he made sure to help Castro's effort to liberate Angolan citizens from their individual interests, and to help subordinate them to the "general will." Thus, Trudeau allowed Cuban transport planes to refuel in Newfoundland before they picked up arms in the Soviety Union and flew to Angola to fight for class utopia.

One problem was that Castro couldn't help Julius Nyerere, the ruthless communist dictator of Tanzania, whose disastrous Marxist economic policies created large-scale famines. Trudeau came to the rescue. As a great admirer of Nyerere, he made sure that Canada exported free food supplies to the communist dictatorship, most of which the elites grabbed for themselves, and which never reached the individuals who failed to subordinate their interests to the "general will" - which meant the people of Tanzania whom Nyerere didn't feel worth saving.

Very little, of course, tingled the human heart as much as the compliments that Trudeau heaved upon the Soviet regime, a system that inflicted genocide on a scale that only Mao could surpass in numbers killed. Trudeau visited the Soviet Union not once, but twice, and on one of the visits he could not restrain himself from praising the way the Soviets had developed their North -- saying that Canada should do the same. Anyone who had the slightest knowledge about the Soviet Union at the time knew that the Soviet North was developed by concentration camp slave labour. Trudeau knew it well. But, of course, he also knew the importance of the "general will." That's why he never apologized to the families of the millions who perished, nor to Soviet dissidents, who were infuriated by his remark.

When Trudeau pined for Fidel, he filled that void by palling around with the Soviet ambassador to Canada, Alexander Yakovlev. He also signed a "friendship protocol" with the Soviets, a friendship of which he was genuinely proud.

In light of these realities, it might do well to build a Lenin-style mausoleum on Parliament Hill for the late Prime Minister. It would be the least Canadians could do in memory of Canada's great humanitarian leader, whose life was dedicated to praising those who had sacrificed human life on the altar of utopian ideals.

Well, that's pretty revealing about the *great* Trudeau, isn't it? He most certainly had Marxist sympathies, didn't he? But, lets have a look at some other earlier facets of his life which are also just as revealing of how deeply involved Pierre was in Cultural Marxism all along.

http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Pierre_Trudeau

"...In 1949, he was an active supporter of workers in the Asbestos Strike. In 1956, he edited an important book on the subject, La grève de l'amiante, which argued that the strike was a seminal event in Quebec's history, marking the beginning of resistance to the conservative, francophone clerical establishment and anglophone business class that had long ruled the province. Throughout the 1950s, Trudeau was a leading figure in the opposition to the repressive rule of Premier of Quebec Maurice Duplessis as the founder and editor of Cité Libre, a dissident journal that helped provide the intellectual basis for the Quiet Revolution.

Trudeau was interested in Marxist ideas in the late 1940s. In the 1950s and early 1960s, he was a supporter of the social democratic Co-operative Commonwealth Federation party — which became the New Democratic Party. During the 1950s, he was blacklisted by the US and prevented from entering the country because of a visit to a conference in Moscow (where he was arrested for throwing a snowball at a statue of Stalin) and because he subscribed to a number of leftist publications. Trudeau later appealed the ban, and it was rescinded."

So, it is obvious that Trudeau was an extreme leftist (Marxist) all along, note the "divide by class and conquer" ideology displayed by his involvement in the Asbestos strike which was deeply marked with socialist idealism. Especially Marxist was his involvement in the "Quiet Revolution" which had the result of Quebec creating a Ministry of Education and involved *massive* tax-funding into the education system, the *unionization of the civil service,* and the *nationalizing* of electricity production and distribution. All of these are highly socialist ideals and right up a Cultural Marxist's alley.

In 1965, Pierre Trudeau abandoned his allegience to the *far* left NDP party which he had been affiliated with and was persuaded to run for political office on the Liberal ticket for the riding of Mount Royal, an election he easily won and a riding he would hold for the nearly 20 years. It is too bad however, that Trudeau did not abandon his Marxist idealism when he left the NDP. If anything, Trudeau should be attributed with transforming the Liberal party *into* the far leftist NDP party - which naturally leaves one to wonder exactly how far left the current NDP has to be for it to be regarded to the political left of the Liberals.

Pierre rose quickly through the ranks of the Liberal party and along the way he spread his anti-social agenda like Johnny Marxist Seed. In 1967 he was appointed to the position of Justice Minister and he *immediately* introduced laws which eerily coincide with the Marxist agenda. In previous posts I have pointed out how Marx & Engels, V.I. Lenin and feminists have targeted marriage-destruction as the way to destroy society - in order to build their new utopia from the ashes of its ruins. Please allow me to briefly review some quotes with you for relevance:

"The first class opposition that appears in history coincides with the development of the antagonism between man and woman in monogamous marriage, and the first class oppression coincides with that of the female sex by the male." -- Frederick Engels, The Origins of the Family, Private Property and the State

http://www.renewamerica.us/columns/roberts/040116 *So in 1918, Lenin introduced a new marriage code that outlawed church ceremonies. Lenin opened state run nurseries, dining halls, laundries and sewing centers.* ***Abortion was legalized in 1920, and divorce was simplified.*** (From Carey Roberts' article: "When Family Dissolution becomes the Law of the Land".)

"The nuclear family must be destroyed, and people must find better ways of living together. ...Whatever its ultimate

meaning, the break-up of families now is an objectively revolutionary process. ...Families have supported oppression by separating people into small, isolated units, unable to join together to fight for common interests." -- Linda Gordon, Function of the Family, WOMEN: A Journal of Liberation, Fall, 1969

And so, what did the great Canadian Marxist, Pierre Elliot Trudeau, do the moment he had the means to implement his agenda?

http://www.theglobeandmail.com/series/trudeau/footprint.html *"...Pierre Trudeau came to champion the values of individual freedom and equality, and to condemn the idea that we remain captives of our race, religion, class or collective history. He did not, however, denigrate cultural identity. He believed that the state should protect cultural values,* ***but under the rubric of equality. It should not privilege the majority.***

As minister of justice, Mr. Trudeau began to put these ideas into effect. ***He introduced legislation permitting therapeutic abortions, legalizing adult consensual homosexual acts, allowing the dissemination of birth-control materials and contraceptive information, and authorizing judicial divorce based on a range of fault and no-fault grounds."*** (The Globe and Mail: Pierre Elliot Trudeau 1919-2000, by Lorraine Weinrib, Oct 2000)

As Stephen Baskerville often points in his articles, http://stephenbaskerville.net/articles-bydate.htm , there never was a massive uprising of the people back in the 60's *demanding* no-fault divorce laws... um, so for what other reason did politicians like Trudeau rush to pass anti-family laws such as this - *except* to promote a Cultural Marxist agenda?

All this and our Marxist hero was only yet the Minister of Justice! In the same year, 1967, Lester B. Pearson announced he would be stepping down as Prime Minister. Pierre Trudeau ran for the Liberal party leadership and was sworn in as Prime Minister of Canada on April 20, 1968.

As Prime Minister of Canada, Pierre "Marxist" Trudeau continued his scourgeous ideologies upon the people of Canada.

He strongly defended the universal healthcare program and regional development programs which had been recently introduced in Canada under the guise that they were a way to make Canadian society equally just. Today, this Marxist system has proven to be a vast waste of money which provides services similar to the quality of a Russian breadline. But it is still strongly supported by our governments because it is part of our "national identity." (What, lousy healthcare is our culture?)

He vastly depleted our armed forces, which, after WWII were considered the 3rd most powerful in the world and continued a noble existence through to the 50's and 60's. Today, they could scarcely defend Mt. Trudeau. In the face of all of this, Trudeau set Canada forward on the biggest socialist spending spree ever seen in Canadian history - and Trudeau himself can lay claim to a vast portion of our HUGE national debt. All this debt, no military, *but we have statefunded healthcare!* The US, who spends VAST resources on their military has their "tax freedom day" in April of each year, while we in Canada have to wait for the beginning of July for ours. (How much health insurance could *you* buy with 2 months of your wages?)

Pierre Trudeau championed the cause of "Multi-Culturalism", a well know ploy of Cultural Marxist ideology. As well he shoved the notion of "bilingualism" down the throats of Canadians, forcing much red-tape on a general population that is anything *but* bilingual. It was, however, effective in keeping many anglophones out of political office and federal positions. Must have been more of that anglophones "oppressing" francophones crap, or something. Something Trudeau must have known all about since he was involved in the "Quiet Revolution" which claimed that the "anglophone business class" was oppressing the "francophone working class." (Ummm... sound

familiar?)

Oh yes, and lets not forget, *The Ministry for the Status of Women* was created in 1971, under guess who's reign?

Pierre Trudeau nationalized Canada's energy (communism-ized) and he also created Petro-Canada, an organization which proved profit is ellusive to big goverment and became known as "Pierre Elliot Trudeau Ripping Off Canada." When the government finally took their fingers out of Petro-Canada and privatized it, magically...somehow... this company actually became profitable.

Yes, Pierre Trudeau truly transformed the Liberal party into something far more Marxist than was intended with its original founding. Even after Pierre thankfully bowed out of the public spotlight in the 80's, the Liberals have proudly carried in his fine tradition. Jean Chretien, Trudeau's favourite lackey, siezed power and continued a Liberal campaign of terror against Canadians via oppressive domestic violence laws, hysterical sexual assault laws, and punative divorce and custody laws. Of course, lets not forget the totalitarian styled Gun Registry implemented by Liberal Justice Minister Alan Rock - a law which cost billions & didn't affect crime *one iota*, yet stripped Canadians of yet more freedoms. But thats OK, it just means that when these anti-freedom "civil servants" are one day condemned for treason, there won't be any guns for a firing squad, so we'll just have to have ourselves an old fashioned stoning.

And surely let's not also forget the heroic efforts of Chretien's post-Trudeau Liberal government in "balancing the budget" and saving us from the impending financial destruction *which Chretien himself helped to create* when he was Trudeau's Cultural Marxist handjob lackey in the 70's and 80's. Only Goebels himself could have believed that a dumb like a fox fellow like Chretien could have pulled off such a major propaganda coup on the Canadian public and come out looking like a hero.

Even today, the Liberal party is infected with this anti-social disease. In the last election, which the Liberals *finally* lost, they campaigned for **State Run Daycare!** Need I re-point you to the quote about Lenin found earlier in this article? (The troubling thing is that even the "right-wing" Conservative party agrees with "subsidizing other people's children" by countering state-run daycare with directly giving people with children tax-payer money to subsidize childcare costs - definitely a Marxist ideal, *from the supposed right!)* Let's take notice of the "Mangina of the Year, 2006", previous Liberal leadership candidate Bob Rae who's campaign buttons depicted the word "Bob" with the top of the female gender symbol making the "o" in Bob. And let's not forget Liberal MP, Maria Minna, recently screaching and hollering at Conservative Prime Minister Stephen Harper about women receiving $0.71 for every $1.00 a man *earns.* Hopefully someone with the great responsibility of representing "the people" is smart enough to know that such unfair wages have been made illegal well over 40 years ago - and if she is that smart, wouldn't she be willfully engaging in hate-inspired propaganda? (Hmmm... me thinks that is another hallmark of Marxism!)

Yup, Trudeau was a freakin' Marxist alright! And he infected not only the Liberal party with sick Marxist ideology, but the whole country as well!

It's a shame that my province is home to the newly named "Mt Trudeau." At least it wasn't Canada's highest peak. But still, degrading a beautiful British Columbian mountain with this moniker is truly a crime against nature.

I know of a steaming pile of something behind the barn that would be better fitting of the name "Mount Trudeau."

THE Statement for the New Millenium

. · 28 January 2007 · Archived copy · Original

From Bernard Chapin,

http://mensnewsdaily.com/2007/01/26/women-are-not-oppressed/

"...crazed feminists multiply and become more powerful when good men think they're above responding to them." (Bernard Chapin)

Well said, Mr. Chapin, well said!

Divide and Conquer

. · 1 February 2007 · Archived copy · Original

I often ponder that we in the MRM are guilty of not being able to see the forest for the trees. We rant and rail against feminism as if it is the *only* cause of Western demise. The fact is, feminism is only one face of the subversive Marxist movement to curb freedom and consolidate power. Though, in our defence, feminism is the most vocal and rabid group out there and like the Brown Shirts they emulate, they are easily despised.

But the fact is that it is not *just* MRA's that are fighting this battle. Before we all go blinking insane trying to rationally argue some sense into feminists and their pussified political mangina lackeys, we should stand back and recognize that ultimately the battle is against Marxism and there are tremendous amounts of people fighting its many different assaults on freedom and the very foundations of Western Civilization.

The problem is that we don't recognize that we are all fighting the same thing, resulting in us being divided - and therefore we are easily conquered, as has been plainly evident for the past several decades.

The *main* thing that must be realized about the goal of Marxism is that it must first destroy society in order for their new utopian society to emerge from the ruins of the old. *This is not a joke!* This is a common theme heard over and over again from Marx to Lenin to Gramsci to feminists to gay rights activists. The similarities in their words and thoughts are astounding! What they all *agree they must* do to bring down the present society is simple:

1 - Eliminate Christianity/religion from society
2 - Destroy Marriage and the family unit

These two things *must* be accomplished before the Marxist utopia can arrive. Why? Because these are two things that exist in society which virtually all men who are committed to them will *die* to defend. The Marxist elitists will never be able to control the direction of the masses as long as people believe in the unwavering authority of the Bible, nor as long as people have the natural urge to protect and nurture those who they love in "family situations." Marxists need human robots who will do what they are told without causing much of a fuss.

What the cultural Marxists have been brilliant in doing is fracturing their opponents into so many different groups that they are each virtually powerless to launch a counter-offensive.

- Many MRA's are anti-religious, and therefore are alienating themselves to potential allies.

- Some MRA's are for abortion and so they are alienated to anti-abortionists.

- Many father's rights activists only oppose custody and family law - but couldn't be bothered about other draconian laws against men, like biased rape laws.

- Religious activists are for strengthening marriage and are against abortion but many are also proudly proclaimed feminists and would rather light themselves on fire than recant it.

- Those who oppose the evolution theory are written off as religious nuts even though *many* who question it are not religious at all. (And who told us religion was "nuts" to begin with?)Questioning evolution theory in Western schools is asking for a quick dismissal because it is essential in discrediting religion.

- Environmental groups are hellbent on passing Marxist style restrictions on society, especially since the "Global Warming Report", yet there are many scientists and historians out there who are *screaming* on apparent media-deaf ears, that since humans have been recording temperatures there have been many dramatic, decades long temperature shifts that are similar to what we are experiencing - both warming and cooling.

The list could go on almost forever about all of the anti-freedom movements that have taken hold since the 60's "anti-establishment movement" has become the "new establishment." And we should all recognize that *every one of the groups opposed to the Marxist left has the same frustration with fact distortion, advocacy research, illogical logic and basic bulldozer "Brown Shirt" tactics that MRA's face!*

The fact is, those freedom loving hippies from the 60's didn't know the first thing about freedom, but they did get propagandized about Marxism - over and over again. Now they are in power and are carrying out their drug induced utopian vision via any totallitarian means their elitist egos see fit. Marxism has no room for honesty, integrity, civility, logic and the like. Marxists believe the ends justify the means and the "new utopia" is the ultimate end - therefore, they will bulldoze any and all opposition, believing with their elite view that they know best, and the rest of us are just silly children who don't know what's good for them.

It's time for all of the various groups to recognize that we don't have to agree on *everything*. What we have to do is put our differences aside and defeat our PC Marxist overlords first. We can work out the details later - when we can have free access to *all* the facts.

United, we could kick these dipshits to the curb.

Lest We Forget: The Super Bowl Sunday Hoax

. · 4 February 2007 · Archived copy · Original

Is there anything else that illustrates so succinctly the evil depths which feminism will sink to in order to demonize men and further their anti-social agenda of relationship destruction between men and women?

It is important to understand *why* the femhags concocted this whole sham in order to realize the full depths of feminist evil. Carey Roberts wrote about the feminist motivation for the Super Bowl Sunday Hoax back in April '05 with his article "Un-constitutional VAWA Law Helped by a Propaganda Ploy" where we can read the following:

http://www.renewamerica.us/columns/roberts/050412

To understand the DV urban legend, we need to go back to 1991, when senator Joe Biden of Delaware introduced VAWA for the first time. [www.vawnet.org/SexualViolence/PublicPolicy/VAWA-SVPubPol.pdf] But many in Congress were opposed to Biden's bill because it ignored key provisions of the United States Constitution.

First, the proposed law flaunted the intent of the Equal Protection Clause of the Fourteen Amendment. Knowing that men are equally likely to be victims of domestic violence, how could anyone in good conscience propose a law that would confer greater protections and services, but only for women?

Second, Biden's proposed bill violated the principle of federalism enshrined in the Tenth Amendment, and thus infringed on state sovereignty.

Not surprisingly, Biden's bill was soon relegated to the legislative deep-freeze. That didn't please the rad-fems. So someone came up with the idea of a publicity stunt.

In January 1993, a daring group of women called a press conference in Pasadena, California. Sheila Kuhn [SIC] *of the California Women's Law Center made the statement that would provide the boost the feminists were desperately looking for: Super Bowl Sunday was the "biggest day of the year for violence against women."*

That stunning claim quickly appeared on Good Morning America, in the Boston Globe, and elsewhere. The Oakland Tribune would report the Super Bowl causes men to "explode like mad linemen, leaving girlfriends, wives, and children beaten."

How's that for dispassionate news reporting?

Some remained unconvinced, however, including reporter Ken Ringle of the Washington Post. In his article "Debunking the 'Day of Dread' for Women," Ringle showed the feminist claim was a preposterous fraud. [www.snopes.com/crime/statistics/superbowl.asp] But Ringle's expose' came too late — the genie was out of the bottle.

The Super Bowl Hoax, as it was later dubbed, no doubt will become a classic in the propaganda textbooks. And it clearly did succeed in triggering a surge of letters and phone calls to Congress. The following year the Violence

Against Women Act was signed into law by President Clinton.

That is *outrageous!* The Super Bowl Sunday Hoax was purposefully foisted upon an unsuspecting public by feminists in order to *pass laws which took away the constitutional rights of men!* Now, I don't know what kind of laws the rest of the Western world are reading but the last that I heard, if someone knowingly used falseties to promote propaganda with the intent of causing discrimination against a specific group, that is the *very definition of a Hate Crime - a crime against Humanity!*

For you manginas out there who are saying, "Well, maybe the feminist sisters just made an honest mistake," let's read further and see exactly how purposefully and with evil intent the femhags set about launching this lie:

http://www.snopes.com/crime/statistics/superbowl.asp

Christina Hoff Sommers charted a timeline of how the apocryphal statistic about domestic violence on Super Bowl Sunday was foisted upon the public over the course of a few days leading up to the Super Bowl in January 1993:

Thursday, January 28

- *A news conference was called in Pasadena, California, the site of the forthcoming Super Bowl game, by a coalition of women's groups. At the news conference reporters were informed that significant anecdotal evidence suggested that Super Bowl Sunday is "the biggest day of the year for violence against women." Prior to the conference, there had been reports of increases as high as 40 percenst in calls for help from victims that day. At the conference, Sheila Kuehl of the California Women's Law Center cited a study done at Virginia's Old Dominion University three years before, saying that it found police reports of beatings and hospital admissions in northern Virginia rose 40 percent after games won by the Redskins during the 1988-89 season. The presence of Linda Mitchell at the conference, a representative of a media "watchdog" group called Fairness and Accuracy in Reporting (FAIR), lent credibility to the cause.*
- *At about this time a very large media mailing was sent by Dobisky Associates, warning at-risk women, "Don't remain at home with him during the game." The idea that sports fans are prone to attack wives or girlfriends on that climactic day persuaded many men as well: Robert Lipsyte of the New York Times would soon be referring to the "Abuse Bowl."*

Friday, January 29

- *Lenore Walker, a Denver psychologist and author of "The Battered Woman", appeared on "Good Morning America" claiming to have compiled a ten-year record showing a sharp increase in violent incidents against women on Super Bowl Sundays. Here, again, a representative from FAIR, Laura Flanders, was present to lend credibility to the cause.*

Saturday, January 30

- *A story in the Boston Globe written by Linda Gorov reported that women's shelters and hotlines are "flooded with more calls from victims [on Super Bowl Sunday] than on any other day of the year." Gorov cited "one study of women's shelters out West" that "showed a 40 percent climb in calls, a pattern advocates said is repeated nationwide, including in Massachusetts."*

Writers and pundits were quick to offer reasons why this "fact" was so obviously true. After all, everyone knows that men are mostly loutish brutes, and football is the epitome of mindless, aggressive, violent, testosterone-driven macho posturing. Certainly during the culmination of the football season, the final, spectacular, massively-hyped "super" game, more men than ever are going to express their excitement or disappointment by smacking their wives or girlfriends around. So much attention did the "Super Bowl abuse" stories garner that NBC aired a public service

announcement before the game to remind men that domestic violence is a crime.

Ken Ringle, a reporter for the Washington Post, was one of the few journalists to bother to check the sources behind the stories. When he contacted Janet Katz, a professor of sociology and criminal justice at Old Dominion University and one of the authors of the study cited during the January 28 news conference, he found:

- *Janet Katz, professor of sociology and criminal justice at Old Dominion and one of the authors of that study, said "that's not what we found at all."*
- *One of the most notable findings, she said, was that an increase of emergency room admissions "was not associated with the occurence of football games in general, nor with watching a team lose." When they looked at win days alone, however, they found that the number of women admitted for gunshot wounds, stabbings, assaults, falls, lacerations and wounds from being hit by objects was slightly higher than average. But certainly not 40 percent.*
- *"These are interesting but very tentative findings, suggesting what violence there is from males after football may spring not from a feeling of defensive insecurity, which you'd associate with a loss, but from a sense of empowerment following a win. We found that significant. But it certainly doesn't support what those women are saying in Pasadena," said Katz.*

Likewise, Ringle checked the claim made by Dobisky Associates (the organization that had mailed warnings to women advising them not to stay at home with their husbands on Super Bowl Sunday) that "Super Bowl Sunday is the one day in the year when hot lines, shelters, and other agencies that work with battered women get the most reports and complaints of domestic violence." Dobisky's source for this quote was Charles Patrick Ewing, a professor at the University of Buffalo, but Professor Ewing told Ringle he'd never said it:

- *"I don't think anybody has any systematic data on any of this," said Charles Patrick Ewing, a forensic psychologist and author of "Battered Women Who Kill."*
- *Yet Ewing is quoted in the release from Dobisky Associates declaring "Super Bowl Sunday is the one day in the year when hotlines, shelters and other agencies that work with battered women get the most reports and complaints of domestic violence."*
- *"I never said that," Ewing said. "I don't know that to be true."*
- *Told of Ewing's response, Frank Dobisky acknowledged that the quote should have read "one of the days of the year." That could mean one of many days in the year.*

*In addition, Ringle learned that Linda Gorov, the Boston Globe reporter who'd written that women's shelters and hotlines are "flooded with more calls from victims [on Super Bowl Sunday] than on any other day of the year" hadn't even seen the study she'd cited in support of that statement but had merely been **told** about it by Linda Mitchell, the FAIR representative who was present at the January 28 news conference that had kicked off the whole issue.*

*Did **any** evidence back up the assertion that Super Bowl Sunday was the leading day for domestic violence? When the Washington Post's Ringle attempted to follow the chain by contacting Linda Mitchell of FAIR, Mitchell said her source had been Lenore Walker, the Denver psychologist who'd appeared on "Good Morning America" the day after the conference. Ms. Walker's office referred Ringle to Michael Lindsey, another Denver psychologist who was also an authority on battered women. Mr. Lindsey told Ringle that "I haven't been any more successful than you in tracking down any of this" and asked, "You think maybe we have one of these myth things here?"*

The upshot? It turned out that Super Bowl Sunday was not a significantly different day for those who monitor domestic abuse hotlines and staff battered women's shelters:

- *Those who work with victims of domestic violence in Connecticut reported no increase in cases Monday, after a barrage of publicity on the potential link between Super Bowl gatherings and family violence.*
- *An increase in domestic violence predicted for Super Bowl Sunday did not happen in Columbus, authorities said yesterday, and others nationwide said women's rights activists were spreading the wrong message.*
- *Despite some pre-game hype about the "day of dread" for some women, Columbus-area domestic violence*

counselors said that Sunday, although certainly violent for some women, was relatively routine.

The ensuing weeks and months saw a fair amount of backpedalling by those who had propagated the Super Bowl Sunday violence myth, but ***- as usual -*** *the retractions and corrections received far less attention than the sensational-but-false stories everyone wanted to believe, and the bogus Super Bowl statistic remains a widely-cited and believed piece of mis-information. As Sommers concluded, "How a belief in that misandrist canard can make the world a better place for women is not explained."*

Gentlemen, do you know what we have witnessed with the succesful feminist implementation of the Super Bowl Hoax into the mindset of the public *and it's use in bending the US government to revoke certain Constitutional rights of men?*

We have witnessed a HATE CRIME!

In a decade which saw the President of the United States come under tremendous media fire for smoking a joint and "not inhaling", and which saw a near Presidential impeachment for lying about a blowjob..., the following people got away scot-free after openly perpetrating a hate-crime which resulted in a draconian stripping of Constitutional rights (VAWA) against 50% of the population:

SHEILA KUEHL (now a California State Senator - also known for obstructing California paternity law reform - and must have since sworn to uphold the Constitution of the United States - a feminist defending the constitution, lol, now there's an oxymoron.)

LINDA MITCHELL, LAURA FLANDERS & "FAIRNESS AND ACCURACY IN REPORTING" (FAIR)

FRANK DOBISKY & DOBISKY ASSOCIATES

LENORE WALKER (Author of "The Battered Woman")

"GOOD MORNING AMERICA"

LINDA GOROV & THE BOSTON GLOBE

THE OAKLAND TRIBUNE

ROBERT LIPSYTE & THE NEW YORK TIMES

Shame on feminists, you filthy anti-social freaks!

The Fine Art of TV Repair

. · 11 February 2007 · Archived copy · Original

Is something wrong in your house?

.

Is there a constant subtle drone always permeating throughout what should be your retreat from the harsh world?

.

Do you think that Man Hatred is *just everywhere?*

.

Chances are, your TV is broken!

.

Therefore, No Ma'am will provide you with an easy, illustrated, 4-step method to fixing your "best friend."

.

.

STEP #1: Get the Proper Tools

.

.

The best tools for TV Repair can likely be found in the backyard shed. Two favourites are the pick-axe and the

sledgehammer. Also find some gloves and safety goggles - The Safety Bear recommends this, so I will defer to his judgement in regard to safety.

.

Step #2: Swinging the Pick-Axe

.

.

Take a few steps to the side of your friend and grasp the pick-axe firmy with both hands. Your aim should be directly for center of the screen, as this is where the heart of the problem is.

.

The swing is performed much like a golf swing. Keep your eye on the center of the screen from the beginning of the swing right through to the end.

.

Bring the pick-axe behind you and begin your swing. Your upper body should shift the energy through your shoulders while at the same time, the weight of your body should shift from your back foot through to your front foot. *Remember to keep your eye on the center of the screen throughout your swing*!

.

The above illustration is an example of the results of a good first swing. The pick-axe should penetrate to the heart of the problem with a depth of at least 6 inches. A professional TV Repair Man consistently hits 10 inchers, but 6 inches is the minimum penetration needed.

.

Step #3: Sweeping the Field

•

.

Sometimes it is best to change tools and grab your sledgehammer for this task.

.

You must remove all of the glass to fully repair your TV.

.

Don't be afraid to choke up on the hammer nor to get down on your knees to get every last piece of glass out of there. There is nothing "sissy" about this. The only "sissy" thing would be to not do a thorough and complete job. Anything worth doing is worth doing well.

.

Notice the craftsmanship of this professional job in that he has even removed the knobs. This attention to detail is the mark of true guildsmanship, but you need not be this fancy. Removing the glass will most likely fix your problem completely.

.

This is also an excellent time to have a look around inside the TV. You will realize that there is really nothing of substance behind the glass.

.

Step #4: Call the Wife

.

.

With the most manly bellow you can muster, holler out the following words:

.

"Woman! Come Hither!"

.

A real professional might manage to include the following:

.

"And bring me a cold one!"

.

But your main job is to have the wife come and look at your craftsmanship.

.

You can now gently explain to the missus that you believe in the "Eek-Wallet-Tee" of both sexes equally doing the housework. Point out that you have done your 50%, and the other 50% is the clean up - so hop to it!

.

Be sure to stay with the missus while she works. This is where the cold one would have come in handy, as it would give you something to do rather than just stand there doing nothing.

.

Don't be afraid to direct your wife to any teeny tiny piece of glass that she may have missed. You might impart some manly wisdom at her here by telling her that "anything worth doing is worth doing well!"

.

You're all done!

.

Go back into the house and see if that annoying drone of man-hatred has disappeared.

.

And rest assured, it will only get better from here!

.

Good job! Mr. Repairman!

Previous Index Next

MGTOW

“If it’s not right, Go Your Own Way!”

.....
..oooO.....
..(....).....
….\..(.....
…. _/.....
…….....Oooo..
…….....(....)…
……..)../....
.....(_/.....
.....

Amanda Marcotte & Pandagon Get Oppressed by Gov't & Catholics in Proper Patriarchal Fashion

. · 13 February 2007 · Archived copy · Original

http://news.yahoo.com/s/ap/20070213/ap_on_el_pr/edwards2008

Targeted Blogger Quits Edwards Campaign

By MIKE BAKER, Associated Press Writer Mon Feb 12, 10:36 PM ET

RALEIGH, N.C. - One of the chief campaign bloggers for Democratic presidential candidate
John Edwards quit Monday after conservative critics raised questions about her history of provocative online messages.

Amanda Marcotte posted on her personal blog, Pandagon, that the criticism "was creating a situation where I felt that every time I coughed, I was risking the Edwards campaign." Marcotte said she resigned from her position Monday, and that her resignation was accepted by the campaign.

Kate Bedingfield, a spokeswoman for the Edwards campaign, confirmed that Marcotte was "no longer working for the campaign." She declined additional comment.

Bill Donohue, president of the Catholic League for Religious and Civil Rights, demanded last week that Edwards fire Marcotte and a second blogger, Melissa McEwan, for remarks he deemed anti-Catholic. Edwards, a former North Carolina senator, called the messages personally offensive, but decided to keep Marcotte and McEwan on staff.

"No matter what you think about the campaign, I signed on to be a supporter and a tireless employee for them, and if I can't do the job I was hired to do because Bill Donohue doesn't have anything better to do with his time than harass me, then I won't do it," Marcotte wrote Monday night.

Earlier Monday, Marcotte wrote on her personal Web site, "The Christian version of the virgin birth is generally interpreted as super-patriarchal, where ... women are nothing but vessels."
Donohue called both Marcotte and McEwan "foul-mouthed bigots." He did not return a phone call seeking comment Monday night.

McEwan remains on the Edwards campaign staff. She did not return messages left Monday.

LMAO!

But you know what comes next, don't you? Yup, the feminist bitch and moan...

And here it is, preserved on this blog in case the Pandagonian ditchpigs pull a Marxist historical revisionism or something:

xhttp://punk.punkasshost.com/suspended.page/ (Copy and paste, then remove the "x" for the link - I won't link to these douchebags - note this is on a "suspended page", as they claim their site keeps crashing - sniff, sniff, something smells extra fishy in femhag land today!)

Title created by Rob Fedders:

(I AM A FEMINIST; LET ME TELL YOU THE WAYS I AM BEING VICTIMIZED!)

Update: To correct misinformation in the comments, I was not "fired". I offered my resignation and it was accepted.

Because I had the nerve to be critical of the Catholic church's stance on birth control and abortion---nevermind their political opposition to distributing condoms to fight HIV, a stance that has helped usher thousands and possibly millions to their untimely deaths---I've gotten a number of letters from people who call themselves "Christians", as Bill Donohue also calls himself. Chrisitians are people who are supposed to follow the behavior and teachings of Jesus Christ. I mention this, because it seems to me that therefore, when Christians are contemplating an action that is morally questionable, it appears they should consult the Bible before acting.

Luckily, I happen to have a Bible laying around this house, because even though I'm not a Christian, I was an English major, and it is important to Know Your Ancient Mythologies if you are reading poetry. And I flipped to this passage that seems to have solid advice on what to do if you've got some asshole dragging a woman in front of an angry crowd and yelling, "SINNER!":

- The scribes and the Pharisees brought a woman who had been caught in adultery, and placing her in the midst 4 they said to him, “Teacher, this woman has been caught in the act of adultery. Now in the Law Moses commanded us to stone such women. So what do you say?” This they said to test him, that they might have some charge to bring against him. Jesus bent down and wrote with his finger on the ground. And as they continued to ask him, he stood up and said to them, “Let him who is without sin among you be the first to throw a stone at her.” And once more he bent down and wrote on the ground. But when they heard it, they went away one by one, beginning with the older ones, and Jesus was left alone with the woman standing before him. Jesus stood up and said to her, “Woman, where are they? Has no one condemned you?” She said, “No one, Lord.” And Jesus said, “Neither do I condemn you; go, and from now on sin no more.”

Granted, I don't think criticizing the church for policies that hurt families and even get people killed is a "sin", but

my letter writers do. But I thought I'd bring up this story for two reasons. One, I've always been impressed by the subtext of the story. I suspect, strongly, that this story is part of the reason that Christianity was so attractive to women in its early days, because this sort of random misogynist scapegoating is all too real in a patriarchy, and this story must have touched a lot of women at the time, who would be impressed with Jesus' unwillingness to play into such misogyny. In fact, from everything I understand, much of the history of Christian misogyny is one 2,000 year long backlash against early female power in the church.

I'm also impressed by how so many people who claim to follow Jesus have basic reading comprehension problems when they regard this story. (Not all---for instance, some fellow Pandagonians take their faith seriously enough to read the Bible and try to follow its precepts.) From my mailbag:

- I pray that I had some small part to play in your "resigning" from the Edwards campaign you libelous fraud!

That's from a Vivian Thomas, who also wants me to know that I'm a worthless hag.

- Catholics are concerned about killing unborn children, you stupid bitch. Chop away if it suits you, but we don'thave to accept that as moral. That's why it's called a religion. Look into it.

Frankly, if I were a churchy person, this "Look into it" thing would insult me, since R.R. from Tallahassee, FL is all but saying that religion is his excuse to declare his misogyny "moral" so he doesn't actually have to think and decide what his morality is for himself.

- Amanda, after reading your vile screed against Catholics and the Holy Spirit, I just had to see what you looked like. (I envisioned you eyebrow-less, with no visible pupils, and a blank, dead stare.) I see I was correct about the blank, dead stare, but other than that you're not too bad. I then thought maybe you were mad at God (and by proxy Catholics) for making you ugly, but now I'm figuring you're just mad at him for making you a woman.

Annette D'Amato is somewhat right, that I'm angry---but not that I'm a woman, but that people like her have such uncalled for contempt for women. But I am impressed that I gave her a small bit of education. Contrary to what people have been telling her, feminists are not demons without eyebrows (she missed the boar's teeth and snakes on our heads), but human beings.

Andy Driggers from Dallas, TX was also so moved by my criticisms of religious anti-choicers, that he wrote:

- Problem with women like you, you just need a good fucking from a real man! Living in Texas myself, I know you haven't found that real Texan yet. But once your liberal pro feminist ass gets a real good fucking, you might see the light. Until then, enjoy your battery operated toys b/c most real men wouldn't want to give you the fucking you deserve b/c the shit that would come out of you ears.

Reminder: Donohue was claiming to be so hurt by my "bigotry". Yet, for some reason, his supporters write me and they are more interested in telling me that my womanhood is repulsive to them. Interesting---almost as if his claims to speak for Catholicism were in fact dog whistles to scare people about women's equality.

As I told some close friends in the days that Donohue was on the news, spraying code words about "get the feminists" (which explains why he roped Shakespeare's Sister into this, even though she really had nothing to do with any of this---except she's pro-equality, which is what is really what offends Donohue and all the people who gave that anti-Semite airtime), a good half of my hate mail could be summed up, "You have a pottymouth, you stupid cunt." An example, from Paul Bernard of Scottsdale, AZ:

- i like the way you trash talk i don't particularly want to have sex with you but i would like a blow job.

Right wingers right now are pretending like sexism has nothing to do with me, which is an argument that works if you think a) men get emails about how they need to suck a dick on a regular basis and b) that there's nothing

whatsoever sexist about allowing men to curse but hitting the fainting couch if a woman does.

Bud Phelps, another person who opposes "bigotry", as defined by right wing shill Bill Donohue.

- It's just too bad your mother didn't abort you. You are nothing more than a filthy mouth slut. I bet a couple of years in Iraq being raped and beaten daily would help you appreciate America a little. Need a plane ticket ?

Time to wake up and smell reality---real bigots follow the siren call of the fascist right wing. Why would they even bother with liberals and all our equality and human rights and other tedious ideas?

Romanco De Leone was also moved by Donohue's poignant claims about insulating the Catholic church from legitimate criticisms.

- YOU RACIST WHORE. FAT UGLY BITCH. SUCK MY LONG COCK ASSHOLE I HOPE YOU KIDS NEVER LIVE AND YOUR PARENTS DIE A TRAGIC DEATH YOU ASSHOLE BITCH!I HOPE YOUR WOMB IS BARREN AND YOUR CAREER PLUMMETS TO HELL YOU BITCH

But I shan't belabor the point. I haven't even begun to scratch the surface of the hate mail the Bill Donohue's "Christian" campaign against me has inspired. This is all stuff from days ago---I've gotten more than 100 since. Hell, from the looks of my email from last night, I've had more than 100 in the past 12 hours from self-proclaimed Christians who want me to know that I have hurt their feelings and this has nothing, nothing whatsoever to do with their own misogyny and tendency to witch hunt.

Rob Fedders says: Ha Ha! We all know you got *asked to resign* (fired!), dipshit! Once the disguise of "equality" falls from the face of feminism, people can see what a toxic pile 'o shit feminists really are and wouldn't touch them with a barge pole.

Welcome to your futures, you hateful femhags.

Here is a You Tube Video of O'Reilly discussing these two twisted femhags. (8min)

http://youtube.com/watch?v=IcRSsNYr5LU

They REALLY shred these two sickos, but sadly there is no mention that they are RADICAL FEMINISTS and their behaviour is typical of the whole sick cult called Feminism.

(Amyn-duh Marcotte, from PandaGONE)

I've got a House! (In Fembot Bingo!)

. · 14 February 2007 · Archived copy · Original

Fembot Bingo!

Ugly	Small dick	Can't get laid
Beaten by mum	Beaten by dad	Impotent
Probably gay	Definately gay	Totally gay
Recently dumped	Womyn hater!!1!	Sex offender
Live in mum's cellar	Compulsive wanker	Spotty
Afraid of women	Intimidated by "strong women"	Did I mention u r teh gay!?!

Here are Duncan's rules: http://eternalbachelor.blogspot.com/2006/06/new-game.html

AND, since I've been arguing with the hell-fire communists from Pandagon, I'm pretty sure I've got at least a "house!"

1 - My penis size was mocked here by anonymous 9:11pm
http://no-maam.blogspot.com/2007/02/amanda-marcotte-pandagon-get-oppressed.html

Anonymous 9:11pm said: "*I'm truly sorry your penis is so small. Perhaps you need a bigger truck."*

2 - It was suggested that I was gay here by "It has to stop":

"*Amanda I think Ron is jealous and wants to be you…he obviusly needs some adjusting by a good "TV repairman". LOL"*

3 - Now, with this wingnut, Pariahuna, I'm not sure what I'm allowed to call this one? "It" insinuates that I'm 55 years old and have never had a date... ummm... ok...

Here's what it said: "*Rob, seriously, get a little dignity, man. If you're so determined to broadcast the fact that you're a 55 year old guy who's never had a date, the least you can do is try and come up with a better handle. Using your own name just makes it that much..sadder."*

Does that mean that "it" is trying to tell me that I'm ugly and have never been able to get laid??? I mean, I don't want to say that 55 year olds are ugly, because they're not, or that that 55 year olds can't get a date = can't get laid (*Because we all know that 55 year olds have a fuck of a lot more money that a 36 year old like me - meaning they most likely get laid a lot more than me!)* But what is *Pariahuna* implying?

WELL??? DOES IT MEAN THAT?

Because if it does....

That would make this:

and that would also make this:

AND, according to the Eternal Bachelor rule book... I would have a House!

YIPPEE!!!

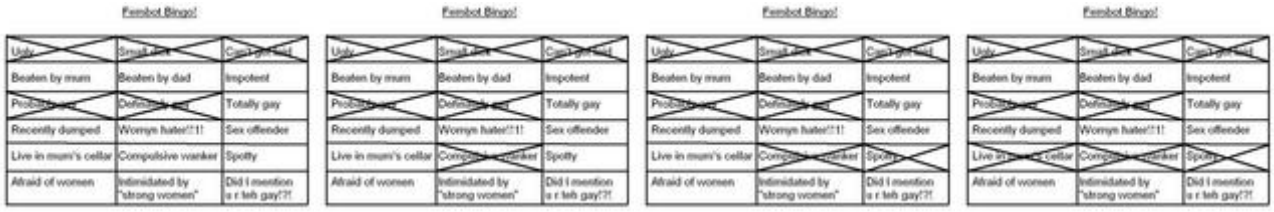
Though, I'm not sure on the officialness of this, so I may call in the Eternal Bachelor to judge the situation with certainty.

NEXT DAY UPDATE:
Well, now that I've had my 40 winks of sleep, let's see if I have acquired any more Fembot Bingo squares from the Pandamaniacs...

5:07am, Pariahuna said:

*LMAO, dude, how can anyone refute you? Your points are just too substantive. You've got it cold. It's just too much for mere mortal brains to absorb. "**I LOVE BILL** O'MORE THAN I PROBABLY SHOULD BUT OH OH, JESUS GOD **I masturbate** remembering how much the **women who seemed to recoil from me** in horror actually want me*

because it's part of their rape fantasies (the guy's blog, seriously, I wanted to find out if he's actually 60 like I suspect or else 14 and instead found a world of hilarity and delight) ***YOU MASTURBATE*** *to something else, garble, SIGN UP FOR* ***CRAZY*** *PEOPLE'S ARMY, NAZIS, OMG YOU FOUND OUT YOU'RE A FEMINIST WHO KNEW, syduydssj, incoherent" slam dunk, guy. When you've got it, you've got it, and we just can't compete.*
As far as not being able to get laid, no way. Just because you've never been on a date doesn't mean you can't get laid. ***After your 75 year old mom lifts you up to vacuum under you*** *because even though you're able bodied you're not going to make it easy on her to wait on you hand and foot and you curse her out for being a total princess and too lazy to do as good a job as when you weighed 40 pounds and were 3 (again, visit his blog and thank me later), you would be a total chick magnet except for how you and your normal, high functioning buddies just won't play the game and let the femhags get you by the balls like all the other deluded guys. That and it's just so ICKY thinking of putting anything like vibratey or falafely in that dirty hole with the she-cooties. But damn, they still want you, because how could they not?* ***Maladjusted, seriously disturbed and incoherent*** *creepy guys are the HAWT. And the more they run away screaming, the more they want you to chase they, and, well, you know (YOU KNOW) how that ends.*



Hey! I've got my **2nd House!**

Well, let's carry on and see how many other squares I can fill,

6:19am Phoenician in a time of Romans said:
http://www.walkingwithghosts.blogspot.com/

If Amynda was really for what she preached, she would first of all not preach victimhood,
Robbie-snookums, anyone who celebrates the sheer joy of fucking in the face of the disapproval of moralising prudes and whimpering milquetoasts such as yourself is nobody's victim.

Amanda is more of a man than you can ever be, and more of a woman than you can ever handle - which is precisely why you fear her so much. You fear her speech, you fear her sexuality, and you fear her independence from your approval or disapproval.

Suffer, you pusillanimous little turd.

I would also like to tip my hat to Phoenician for the most beautiful insult I have heard in quite a while: *"Suffer, you pusillanimous little turd."* That is just awesome!

PUSILLANIMOUS: pu·sil·lan·i·mous /ˌpyusəˈlænəməs/ Pronunciation Key - Show Spelled Pronunciation[pyoo-suh-lan-uh-muhs] Pronunciation Key - Show IPA Pronunciation
–adjective
1.
lacking courage or resolution; cowardly; faint-hearted; timid.
2.
proceeding from or indicating a cowardly spirit.

Beautiful, a work of art... unfortunately, it does not count for a fembot bingo square - but it should!

Well, that's all the squares I have acquired thus far... getting closer to a full fembot bingo!

Related Posts:
Amanda Marcotte & Pandagone get Oppressed by Gov't & Catholics in Proper Patriarchal Fashion

Finally Banned from Pandagone

A World Turned Upside Down - Steven Montgomery

. · 15 February 2007 · Archived copy · Original

Here is an excellent paper I read this evening, and I thought I would post an excerpt for you to read.

http://www.geocities.com/graymada/CB/awtud.html

...it is instructive to note that chief among the enemies of the traditional family are those who adhere to the ideology of Marx and Lenin. For instance, many of the past and present leaders of the feminist (such as Bella Abzug, Shulamith Firestone, Gloria Steinham, and others)(20) and the homosexual (Harry Hay, Dennis Altman, Marshall Kirk, Erastus Pill, and others)(21) movements are, or were, Marxist. Karl Marx himself called for the "abolition of the family," in the Communist Manifesto,(22) so it should come as no surprise that an expert on Marxism, testified before Congress in 2003 that, "the planned destruction of the family was part of the communist agenda from its inception by Karl Marx and Frederic Engels."(23)

In a boast, Michael Walzer, bragged about some of the battles that Marxists have won in their war against family and western culture. For instance he bragged that through their efforts there has been, among other things he named, a "visible impact of feminism," an "emergence of gay rights politics, and . . . the attention paid to it in the media," "the transformation of family life, [including] rising divorce rates, changing sexual mores, new household arrangements-and, again, the portrayal of all this in the media," and the "legalization of abortion."(24)

While Marxism is an ideology in which men believe, it is also crucial to understand that it is also a conspiracy in which men participate.(25) Understanding this aspect of Marxism is vital to understanding: their tactics and strategy;(26) their use of agent provocateur's to provoke change in society and culture; and to gain the information vital to those seeking to oppose these Marxist change agents and their diabolical plans.

I mention all of this so that those who are seeking to preserve traditional families might get a better understanding of the enemy they are fighting. For the primary movers, or activists, seeking to abolish the family adhere to the ideology of Marx and Lenin. They seek to establish moral anarchy. Since the "perfect classless society" will supposedly be established upon the ashes of chaos and anarchy, moral anarchy is the goal. A "psy-ops war" is being conducted against us then, where infidelity, atheism, moral licentiousness, intemperance, civil corruption, greed, avarice, and ambition-personal, political, and national-are glorified and promoted-all in an effort to weaken us and our will to resist. The casualties in this war include not only their victims but those who have been pulled and thrust into new fields of action-hence the Marxist "peaceniks" have now mutated into environmental and NAMBLA activists-and new lines of thought-the moral relativists mutating into the worship of "self esteem", a belief in aliens, magic and "new age" psychology. These activists are shaking the faith, undermining morals, and polluting the lives of their victims who are then thrown so far off balance in their activities-economic, social, political and religious-that civilized society stands in danger of being overthrown.(27)

Further, the harm done by these social activists is not limited to those areas where they seek to advance "avant garde," or "vanguard of the proletariat," lifestyles and alternative family relationships. One study suggests that the influence of Marxist socialism and resultant socialist programs they are able to get governments to adopt, is enough by itself to deteriorate the family. For instance, that study suggests that the welfare state in Sweden has stripped the family of the economic benefits of having children, promoted lower fertility rates, and greater dependency upon paternal or "big brother government":

- While a nation's family system may reorganize, for a time, around the nuclear "husband-wife" unit of reproduction, even that basis of independence eventually dissolves. The end result of state intervention is progressively diminished fertility, with living individuals left standing alone in a dependent relationship with the government.(28)

Further, socialistic intervention by government is often, and I would argue that it is usually, harmful. As one religious leader observed:

- There are those who would define the family in such a nontraditional way that they would define it out of existence. The more governments try in vain to take the place of the family, the less effective governments will be in performing the traditional and basic roles for which governments are formed in the first place.(29)

In other words, if the traditional and proper role of government is to protect citizens in their life, liberty and property,(30) it becomes less effective the more it assumes a paternal role in society.

Marxism, in all its variants, is an enemy to the United States, western society and culture, and contrary to reports otherwise, is not dead but is instead actively engaged in seeking to destroy our society, culture, legal institutions, including those most fundamental to preserving a free society--marriage and the family. This understanding is vital to those interested in preserving these institutions.

Read this paper in its entirety here: http://www.geocities.com/graymada/CB/awtud.html

MGTOW Anthem

. · 15 February 2007 · Archived copy · Original

Well, it's a day after MGTOW Day, and I think it is fitting to reflect on Wierd Al Yankovic's song "One More Minute", which was *obviously* written to Western entightlement princesses who have left their men to be courted by mangina-esque government.

http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=udMSWpcCGfI

Finally Banned From Pandagon! Fembot Bingo Score: 2 Houses!

. · 16 February 2007 · Archived copy · Original

Well, I assume that I have finally been banned from Pandagon. I started giving out quotes from feminists like MacKinnon et. al. which state by feminism's own description that **feminism IS communism** and Pravdagon censored my remarks into oblivion. Jeez, they even censor the words that come directly from their own Comradettes mouths when it suits their purposes, so what chance does a future Gulag resident such as moi have?

I have an idea that Pravdagone allowed so many dissenting commentators for a short time (waiting for the dust to settle) because Comradette Amanda Marcotte got caught running back to her blog and deleting (aka revisionism) some of her most offensive remarks & came under fire for such pre-totalitarian style behaviour & she probably felt that *her* 15 minutes were so scorching hot under the glare of the nation that she had better at least feign that she believes in the basic principles of freedom, such as free speech. But the dust has settled, I suppose, and the Marxofeminist machine is rumbling down the road again, continually travelling towards its goal of *equally* making everyone's life miserable with their proven failed pseudo-religious ideology.

Comradette Marcotte is back to posting her usual double standard vitriol again, as can be seen with this latest entry at Pravdagone:

"How To Get Banned:

Bore me.

And for the brand new crop of tedious bores who blame feminism for all your problems, though you have no real idea what 'feminism' is, except you know that it has something to do with women, who you don't like much, I will say this. Don't whine when you yammer on in a boring style until you are banned. The internet is not all that different from real life. You know what getting tossed out of public places for assholery and groping women is like. You can take it here."

Good for you, Mzzzz. Marcotte. It's best for delicate little flowers like you to remain in the echo-chamber, hairy-legged & chained to the keyboard. Out of sight from the general public where you can remain safe to make-believe everyone loves people like you via strong use of censorship, until you work up enough courage to again peek out from behind the lace curtain & demand the world listen to your "feminist knows best" filthy mouth.

"...who blame feminism for all of your problems, though you have no real idea what feminism is..."

Ummm, don't people like you blame all of your problems on the Patriarchy? Can YOU define for me what the Patriarchy is, Mzzz. Marcotte? And by the way, we do know what feminism is, for you can plainly read what one of your most famous feminist leaders openly states that it is:

"Feminism, Socialism, and Communism are one in the same, and Socialist/Communist government is the goal of feminism." - Catharine A. MacKinnon, Toward a Feminist Theory of the State (First Harvard University Press, 1989), p.10

What part of that do you think is so unclear that people can't possibly understand what feminism is?

"You know what getting tossed out of public places for assholery... is like."

Actually, Mzzz. Marcotte, I think you are the expert on that one.

Though, at least before banning me, you could have called me a **totally gay woman hater who was beaten by his parents, which caused me such psychological problems that I was left impotent & therefore just got dumped by my under-age gay lover.**

Fembot Bingo!

~~Ugly~~	~~Small dick~~	~~Can't get laid~~
Beaten by mum	Beaten by dad	Impotent
~~Probably gay~~	~~Definately gay~~	Totally gay
Recently dumped	Womyn hater!!1!	Sex offender
~~Live in [name]'s cellar~~	~~Compulsive wanker~~	~~Spotty~~
~~Afraid of women~~	~~Intimidated by "strong women"~~	Did I mention u r teh gay!?!

That would have been nice, but then again, who would expect a feminist to do anything nice for a man?

How a Man Handles the Snow

. · 16 February 2007 · Archived copy · Original

http://commonsensepoliticalthought.com/

I'll bet harpie feminist entitlement princesses will still complain that he is not pulling his weight around the house!

Hello to a Loyal Reader!

. · 16 February 2007 · Archived copy · Original

Thought I'd post a reciprocal link, out of a "kindness of my heart" spirit.

http://abirdsnest.wordpress.com/2007/02/09/guilty-pleasures/

Glad you enjoy visiting my blog.

Neat trick to have "misogynist" automatically appear next to my name in the comments window.

A Gem from the Comments...

. · 17 February 2007 · Archived copy · Original

Bukko_in_Australia said...

"Came to your blog from your post on Marcotte's. At first I thought it was a parody, like the Al Bundy bit was on TV. But you seem to be serious.

It must be sad to be you, living with so much anger and bitterness. When I think about people like you ***hate-filled right-wingers,*** *it makes me gladder that I emigrated from the U.S. to Australia. It's not perfect here, but people on the whole are nowhere as nasty as your lot. Good luck with what's coming to the U.S., mate. You deserve it, because you helped make it."*

You know, this seems to be a common thread from the Marxofeminists lately. *Anyone* who speaks out is labelled a hate-filled right-winger. Anyone who opposes the Cultural Marxist politically-corrected line is automatically some right-wing fanatic.

Hey Bukko, you've been glaring at the right with your squinty, hate-filled eyes for so long that I was wondering when was the last time you turned your head to see the guy standing to your left?

Go ahead, have a look. You can do it... I know your neck must be sore from staring down on the hate-filled right-wingers for so long - but force yourself through the pain of your kinked neck and say hello to the guy to your left...

What? There's nobody there?

Well, you know what, Bukko? You are apparently in the group that is as radically far left as possible! That's what feminism = Marxism means**, YOU** are as radical on the political spectrum as it gets.

Small wonder that everyone who opposes feminists gets screached at for being right-wing - *everyone else but Marxofeminists and their ilk are to the political right of them!*

Bukko, it is an honor to stand to the right of you.

Selkie's Blog: End of the Road

. · 20 February 2007 · Archived copy · Original

I've bumped into Selkie from time to time at SYG, at Karl's & on the blogosphere. We've only directly spoken a few times but each time impressed me enough that whenever I see a comment left by her, I take the time to read it - because it's worth my time.

http://whatafreakinmess.blogspot.com/

Did I mention she's a fellow Canucklehead?

George Orwell Speaks Out and Tells MGTOW Bloggers How to be the Most Effective

. · 20 February 2007 · Archived copy · Original

It is worthwhile to read George Orwell's concept of simplifying the written word to maximize the impact on one's readership.

http://www.orwell.ru/library/essays/politics/english/e_polit

Save the English Language!

All but the most pusillanimous of turds will see the value in this.

All Gender Wage-Gap Arguments Lead to Totalitarianism

. · 28 February 2007 · Archived copy · Original

I am assuming we all know that the "$0.76 paid to women for every $1.00 a man earns" argument is a completely distorted statistic which feminists and their political lackies are using as propaganda to fuel their ceaseless battle on males in the war for female gender supremacy/Marxism.

Yet how often do we hear some feminist "useful idiot" spout off that they believe women should get "equal pay for equal work?" It is one thing for us to acknowledge that certain feminists, such as those at "A Bird's Nest Blog" http://abirdsnest.wordpress.com/2007/02/09/guilty-pleasures/ , are truly ignorant people who haven't got a clue what they are talking when they speak of such things. And ignorant is the kindest word for people who rally behind such claims *while ignoring that the populace fully supported laws making such discrimination illegal way back in 1963. http://www.eeoc.gov/types/epa.html* For those mathematically challenged students chasing after their "BA in Gender Studies," 1963 was 44 years ago - that is twice the length of time your average Gender Studies Graduate has lived. We can go into the historical socio-economic conditions which allowed such imbalanced conditions to arrive on another day... perhaps after you attach yourself to the idea 2007 minus 1963 = 44 years, *therefore,* you are a moron.

In case you are a feminist, currently enrolled or enthralled in Gender Studies, please read the following pieces to establish that you are indeed a misled "useful idiot:"

http://www.eeoc.gov/types/epa.html
http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Male-female_income_disparity_in_the_USA
http://www.ncpa.org/pub/ba/ba392/ba392.pdf
http://www.ifeminists.net/introduction/editorials/2004/0922.html
http://www.iwf.org/issues/issues_detail.asp?ArticleID=515

Now, it is one thing for the "general population" of feminists to be so glaringly guilty of a lack of facts and history. We have rightly come to not expect much in the way of intelligence and integrity from them. However, standing conspicously out in the open like a naked Debra Lafave at the Boy Scout Jamboree, is the never discussed willingness of prominent politicians to use this distorted "fact" in order to gain votes. Truly a treasonous act.

First, let's establish that when a politician like Canada's Maria Minna, or a US Presidential Candidate like John Kerry or Hillary Clinton, yammers on and on about "$0.76" and the need to do something about it - *they know!* They know they are lying! If they don't know that what they are campaigning for has been solved over 4 decades ago... then who should? Let's establish that not a squeak of feminist flatulence is emitted from a Presidential Candidate without an *army* of people researching every fact and detail, and every noise made is carefully crafted by a team of individuals who analyze every aspect of the electorate's psychology in regard to said noises. *There are no "mistakes" when you run for leader of the free world!*

So what are these people saying to us? They are using the Hegelian Dialectic to establish that the "Truth is Relative" and then they are saying "who says your truth is more real than my truth?" This fact is established by them arguing that something can be done about it, rather than taking a realistic approach and saying: "Men & Women are different, and therefore they make different life-choices which will cause a wage-gap without discrimination being the cause." A simple acknowlegement of this fact would permanently kill the "Wage Gap" argument in a fortnight - But, where is the totalitarianism is that?

So what do the enlightened ones propose can be done to solve the "Wage Gap?" Well, in Canada we have feminist

theorists who get on the News and discuss such aspects as passing laws forcing businesses to give "flexi-time" to *women* so they can juggle having a family and a career. I seen one woman who argued that even the Prime Minister's office & the Canadian Parliament should be forced to adhere to "flexi-time" laws so that more women & single moms can consider running for public office while juggling family duties. (Need I say it? OK, fine then! Being leader of your country is a 24/7 job and your family life *certainly* and *neccessarily* suffers from it... YOU MORON!)

Of course, a politician can rally the populace to such a scheme because of "economically disadvantaged single mom's" and the "best interest of the child." That feminists and the government are complicit in creating the bursting "single mom" demographic and therefore, also directly contributed to the widespread poverty of children seen in the typical single mom "family" is something that is competely ignored. Historical revisionism is not known to be a tactic too low for Marxists to stoop to... the end *does* justify the means, as is common throughout all Marxist social planning.

What are some other solutions to the Wage Gap? Daniel Amneus, in Chapter Two of his book *The Garbage Genereation* http://fisheaters.com/garbagegeneration.html , chronicles how feminist Carolyn Shaw Bell proposes *"a special tax to pay for the welfare benefits of families headed by women, and sufficient to increase these benefits so as to wipe out the income differential between poor children with only a mother and well-off children with two parents.* ***The tax would be levied on all men."*** Another raving lunatic feminist, Howard University Ph D candidate Martha Sawyer, backs up this theory by speculating that *"the cost of these fatherless families should be paid by* ***"the most advantaged category, monied white men."*** For those of you who think this is some dream-like fantasy, let me remind you that Gudrun Schyman of Sweden's Left Party has proposed such a gender-biased taxation system. http://www.thelocal.se/article.php?ID=468&date=20041005 But who's to say this is not a version of equality? The Truth is Relative... Excuse me for a moment, I feel something coming back up the down pipe.

So, lets have a look at what intervention in the wage-gap "problem" *will really look like:*

- Currently the "wage gap" is NOT caused by a women working for $15/hr while keeping pace with the man next to her earning $20/hr. The wage gap is caused by the average woman working less hours in a week, women taking time off when they have children, women retiring earlier, and women choosing jobs for "emotional fullfilment" rather than the financial bottom line. THIS is what causes a "wage gap" between men's & women's *lifetime income.* Period, end of story. Take your Hegelian logic and shove it! This is black and white. If feminists would acknowledge these simple facts, wage-gap arguments would suddenly shift to the question: *Is it possible to force "un-natural equalization" upon a situation that is "unequal by natural consequences?"* The answer of course, is written in black on a white sheet of paper: **NO.** It is impossible to create "perfect equillibrium" without the use of totalitarianism - and even then...

- It is safe to assume that no-one *forces* women to have children - her body, her choice. Therefore all negative (& positive) consequences of *her choice* are completely her responsibility. Society is relieved of any responsibility for this. If you choose to go out and buy the biggest house in town, but the mortgage payments bite into your "pub money," - is it my responsibility to buy you drinks while I'm an apartment renter?

- If we *forced* every business to hire 50% women and 50% men, we might go a ways to eliminating the wage gap - as women will also be taking construction, farming, mining, military combat and garbage*person* jobs. They will not be *choosing* what to do with their life however. This is how things worked in the USSR. When you finished highschool, *you were told what job you would do for the rest of your life.* This is not a stretch. The Liberal Party of Canada recently stated they have a "short-list" for women MP's so as to reach their quota of 33% female MP's. The Liberal Party obviously does not believe in the "free market of voter democracy" at all. But this is the start of the harrowing situation we will get if these "intellectuals" refuse to put Hegelian logic aside for a while.

- One must also realize that mathematically, hiring 50% women and 50% men will still result, over time, in more men being in the workforce than women. Currently women work fulltime while they are single & childless, but there is a *natural* tendency for women to cut back their commitment to the workplace when children arrive on the scene (her body, *her* choice, of course). In fact many women wish to only return to the workplace on a part-time basis after taking time off for having children & never fully return to working in the capacity before they had children. This is not patriarchal oppression, but rather women *choosing* a lifestyle which is in accordance with nature. This phenomena has been displayed in places like Britain, who have discovered that 50/50 gender quotas for entrance into Medical Schooling results in *less* doctors available to the public, because female doctors tend to pull back out of their professions after a decade or so, whereas male doctors plow right on through until retirement. A mathematical solution to this situation would be to dictate that businesses hire perhaps 60% women and 40% men so that as time erodes on the workplace, the overall the balance works out to a 50/50 "gender balance" in any given 50 year period.

- Now, imagine that in our forced 50% hiring situation, the average woman still puts in less hours a week than her male colleagues. (I don't have the exact figures, but it is something to the tune of full-time women working 10hrs/wk less than full-time men). This will likely happen even more when she figures out garbage collection & combat duty are not glamour jobs. Well*! We will still be able to show a wage gap*! Yup, men will still earn more. The great Hitlery Clinton proposed her feminist solution to this problem when she put forth the "Paycheck Fairness Act" to the New York Senate. Carey Roberts describes Hillary's proposed act here: http://www.renewamerica.us/columns/roberts/050426 *"...On April 19 Senator Clinton introduced the so-called Paycheck Fairness Act, a law that would pressure employers to fatten women's paychecks,* ***regardless of the number of hours worked or job qualifications."*** This is nothing more than saying "each according to his abilities & each according to his needs." Classic Marxist talk! And *everytime* politicians have previously monkeyed with divorcing financial gain from productivity, it has turned into an economic & social disaster of monumental magnitude. What the hell is this gringa thinking?

- Of course, even if Hillary Clinton's insane Paycheck Fairness ideas were to be enforced, *it would still not eliminate the wage gap!* Women DO take time off from their life-time career to have children. 5 years off out of your career for the children seems to be about the norm. Let's just say that the average person has a 50 year work-life. 5 years equals 10% of that, therefore, feminists will *still* argue that there is a wage gap. Add onto that number that women tend to retire earlier than men, by say another 5 years, and now you have a wopping 20% wage gap even though you have previously legislated the work place with gender laws. Well, there is only one solution for this problem: MORE LEGISLATION/TOTALITARIANISM! Yes, the only way to eliminate this aspect of the wage-gap is to *force* women to go to work immediately after giving birth and *forcing* women to work the *exact* same amount of years in their life as men. This also means that women would *no longer be allowed* to get an education, take 5 years off to have children *& then choose to only return to employment on a part-time basis* as many women currently do. For such actions would also contribute to the "wage gap."

The entire wage-gap argument also goes *directly* against core principles of a free enterprise economy. When I hear a feminist yammering on about the need to *force* businesses to allow flexi-time & provide childcare for women in the workplace, I think the following: If a woman was so valuable to her employer that he could not afford to lose her, *he would willingly provide her with those things to keep her!* And, if a woman was such a hot-shit commodity to an employer, she would not need to have laws forcing her employer to hire her back after paid maternity leave - *he would hire her back immediately because it was in his best financial interest to do so!* And, if you *force* employers to provide such services to women while paying them the exact same wage to a man who does not require such extra benefits... will this not result in a man becoming a "better product for cheaper?" I mean, if a man gets paid $40,000/year and that's it - he stays at the job longer (less training expenses), he does not take absense for a year & leave his employer in a lurch trying to find a temporary 1 year employee (who will require extra training expenses), the man will not add to expensive inefficiency by requiring the employer adheres to *his* personal schedule, the man will not demand that his employer subsidize the daycare expenses of his children (= $$$), and so on and so on. The logical conclusion to this nonsense is that while both men and women *get paid the same,* a woman may still cost an employer $10,000/year more than a man! Therefore, by free-enterprise economics, employers *will still* try to keep more men on staff than women, *because in general men will mean profit while women will represent the same profit MINUS expensive benefits based on gender.* Men will be a superior product, and even if people don't want to say it, employers will still know just by looking at the bottom line. **The only way to get rid of this is for the government to take control of private businesses to ensure "proper" quotas are met, and are not influenced by other factors of mankind and *nature!***

This is beginning to sound a whole lot like totalitarian Communism, dontcha think? Quickly browse these quotes from prominent feminists and see what they think about women in the workplace:

"No woman should be authorized to stay at home and raise her children. Society should be totally different. Women should not have that choice, precisely because if there is such a choice, too many women will make that one." -- Simone de Beauvoir, *"Sex, Society, and the Female Dilemma"* Saturday Review, June 14, 1975

"If even 10 percent of American women remain full-time homemakers, this will reinforce traditional views of what women ought to do and encourage other women to become full-time homemakers at least while their children are young... This means that no matter how any individual feminist might feel about childcare and housework, the movement as a whole [has] reasons to discourage full-time homemaking." -- Jane J. Mansbridge, *Why We Lost the ERA*, p.100

"The care of children ...is infinitely better left to the best trained practitioners of both sexes who have chosen it as a vocation... [This] would further undermine family structure while contributing to the freedom of women." -- Kate Millet, *Sexual Politics* p.178-179

"In order to raise children with equality, we must take them away from families and communally raise them." Dr. Mary Jo Bane, feminist and assistant professor of education at Wellesley College and associate director of the school's Center for Research on Woman

Do you see the natural progression of the $0.76 argument? Do you wonder why, here in Canada, 2 out of the 3 major political parties are demanding that "State Run Daycare" be a top priority? Do you know who else provided state run daycare for women so they could be "equal" in the workplace? Vladmir Lenin, thats who!

http://www.renewamerica.us/columns/roberts/040116 :
"So in 1918, Lenin introduced a new marriage code that outlawed church ceremonies. Lenin opened state-run nurseries, dining halls, laundries and sewing centers. Abortion was legalized in 1920, and divorce was simplified.

In a few short years, most of the functions of the family had been expropriated by the state. By 1921, Lenin could brag that "in Soviet Russia, no trace is left of any inequality between men and women under law."

All of this nonsense is a direct result of Hegelian logic. Once again, Cultural Marxists have chosen feminist agent provocateurs to start a never ending argument *against nature!* And it really is an argument against nature, and in fact, a direct assault on the family! Yes, $0.76 is an assault on the family! The entire $0.76 argument completely ignores *hypergamy*. http://fisheaters.com/gb9.html And this is a big deal. Really, it is. If women's attraction to men is based on hypergamy (logically too, for it supports benefits for the next generation), then to eliminate the wage-gap *which results as a natural occurence*, will also directly take away a large portion of men's attractiveness to women. It would be similar to offering all the males in the country a state-supplied piece of tail 2.6 times a week and wondering if men will still ask women out on dates. Ask yourself what would happen to marriage, families & future populations if men had all the free pieces of ass they could get their hands on! - Don't have to work, don't have to shower, don't have to be polite... you'll still get laid! Think about all the intricate ramifications to even the smallest aspects of society. It is positively endless - and very destructive.

This is where people should ask why left-wing, yoga practising, bottled water drinking, Green Peace loving, wouldn't eat a turnip unless it is organically grown & raw with dirt still on it, vegetarian-vegan, nature is best HYPOCRITES are so obviously supporting *an un-natural* form of the family & society. How can human intervention on anything in the natural world be bad, but directly monkeying with the mating habits of humans in *an un-natural way* is considered to be downright desireable? One has to ask these left-wing useful idiots what they would say if the government intervened in the natural way Bald Eagles mated? What would they say if at the start of government intervention, Bald Eagles were producing 3.9 offspring per female... but *after* government intervention to *help* Eagles with reproduction, Eagles were producing only 1.5 offspring per female... and the Eagles were dying out as a result? *What would happen?* These same leftist hippie freaks would be marching on Washington demanding that the government stop monkeying with nature!

It's really not that hard to imagine mankind as just another animal on the planet, is it? Don't the same leftist hippie freaks demand that we all believe in the Theory of Evolution? Don't they all believe that we are evolved from animals, and in fact, we still are animals? Wouldn't that assumption also demand that we acknowledge we have "mating instincts?" Is it "unfair" in nature that a male of the species chooses a female with the best attributes for passing on his genes, and that the female of the species chooses a male with the best attributes for ensuring the survival of her & her offspring? This does not seem to be a stretch with other animals. Why is it evil in regard to "human animals?" Evil to the point that direct intervention is encouraged! Think about that while you sip your wheat-juice. *Feminism is un-natural and continually chooses arguments against nature*!

It all makes sense, however, when one recognizes that all things feminist are solidly based in Marxism. It's goals are not "justice" between the genders... it's goal is destruction of the family & capitalism. (The patriarchal family, of course, IS Capitalism http://fisheaters.com/gb3.html). It wants the system to self-destruct because only after the destruction will mankind rise out of the ashes and realize a "new kind of humanity."

"Women, like men, should not have to bear children... The destruction of the biological family, never envisioned by Freud, will allow the emergence of new women and men, different from any people who have previously existed." -- Alison Jagger - *Political Philosophies of Women's Liberation: Feminism and Philosophy* (Totowa, NJ: Littlefield, Adams & Co. 1977)

Ah, yes. Marxofeminist Utopia! It is also interesting to note their rabid opposition to religion (Marriage comes from religion, remember. The gov't didn't invent it!). People who believe in religion are freakin nuts, according to feminists like Amanda Marcotte and her cronies. In Communist Russia, people who believed in religion were thought to be mentally insane and were locked up for it. But what the Marxofeminists don't seem to recognize is

that they too have "blinding irrational faith." They somehow believe that destruction of society will result in a better society. That all situations where it has been attempted has proven to be a *massive* human disaster does not deter them at all. So confident are they in the face of logic, history and human decency, that they don't recognize the massive amount of "religious faith" they are displaying with their belief that they are creating a better kind of humanity. All common-sense would resoundingly indicate otherwise.

Now you can believe what I'm saying about the wage gap, or you can surf on over to "A Cuckou Nest" and read what the head cuckou believes causes the wage gap and how to solve it:

http://abirdsnest.wordpress.com/2007/02/17/responses-to-the-commenters-on-the-guilty-pleasures-post/

Uccelline said:

I think it's important to consider the factors behind the choices we make. If women take five years out of their careers to have children, or work ten hours less per week, these things hardly happen in a vacuum. I suspect such statistics reflect necessity more than choice; ***if more men took responsibility for childcare,*** *I think you would see a distinct shift.*

"Women lawyers don't marry waiters, but male lawyers do marry waitresses" - those are the stereotypes, sure. But to me this says more about how our culture measures the value of a man as opposed to the value of a woman than about individual dynamics. Women don't have to be educated or high-earning, they just have to be pretty and pleasant. Men don't have to be pretty or pleasant, but they should be smart and rich. These expectations hurt everyone, male and female.

Of course, I believe Uccelline is a useful idiot who hasn't got a freakin' clue about anything in life except for knitting and mindlessly bashing men. Anyone who can argue "equality" and then in the same argument declare women are not "equally responsible" is truly a useful idiot in the first degree. This is why she automatically shifts the wage-gap "problem" to men, and then states that hypergamy "expectations hurt everyone, male and female" but of course, she would be hard pressed to define *why* these expectations hurt everyone... I mean, are children hurt by this too? And more specifically, HOW are children hurt by this? We do know that children fare better with fulltime parental guidance, don't we? And not being poor because of your father's economic performance certainly doesn't hurt children...

But people like Hillary Clinton and other leftist politicians... do you really think they are useful idiots? If I can find out this kind of information on my own, free of charge... what do you think someone with a multi-million dollar political campaign budget and an army of researchers & staff must know in regard to such arguments? And if they don't know, *who should?*

Makes you wonder, if the general public only knew... would the 0.76 argument suddenly turn to a discussion of whether the gallows will still work if they are only 76% the height of regular gallows?

The Communist Takeover of America - 45 Declared Goals

. · 3 March 2007 · Archived copy · Original

http://www.rense.com/general32/americ.htm

The Communist Takeover of America - 45 Declared Goals

Communist Goals (1963) Congressional Record--Appendix, pp. A34-A35 January 10, 1963

Current Communist Goals EXTENSION OF REMARKS OF HON. A. S. HERLONG, JR. OF FLORIDA IN THE HOUSE OF REPRESENTATIVES Thursday, January 10, 1963 .

(The following Communist goals have been chosen by Rob Fedders as *extremely* significant)

4. Permit free trade between all nations regardless of Communist affiliation and regardless of whether or not items could be used for war.

6. Provide American aid to all nations regardless of Communist domination.

7. Grant recognition of Red China. Admission of Red China to the U.N.

10. Allow all Soviet satellites individual representation in the U.N.

11. Promote the U.N. as the only hope for mankind. If its charter is rewritten, demand that it be set up as a one-world government with its own independent armed forces. (Some Communist leaders believe the world can be taken over as easily by the U.N. as by Moscow. Sometimes these two centers compete with each other as they are now doing in the Congo.)

12. Resist any attempt to outlaw the Communist Party.

13. Do away with all loyalty oaths.

15. Capture one or both of the political parties in the United States.

16. Use technical decisions of the courts to weaken basic American institutions by claiming their activities violate civil rights.

17. Get control of the schools. Use them as transmission belts for socialism and current Communist propaganda. Soften the curriculum. Get control of teachers' associations. Put the party line in textbooks.

18. Gain control of all student newspapers.

19. Use student riots to foment public protests against programs or organizations which are under Communist attack.

20. Infiltrate the press. Get control of book-review assignments, editorial writing, policy-making positions.

21. Gain control of key positions in radio, TV, and motion pictures.

22. Continue discrediting American culture by degrading all forms of artistic expression. An American Communist cell was told to “eliminate all good sculpture from parks and buildings, substitute shapeless, awkward and meaningless forms.”

23. Control art critics and directors of art museums. “Our plan is to promote ugliness, repulsive, meaningless art.”

24. Eliminate all laws governing obscenity by calling them “censorship” and a violation of free speech and free press.

25. Break down cultural standards of morality by promoting pornography and obscenity in books, magazines, motion pictures, radio, and TV.

26. Present homosexuality, degeneracy and promiscuity as “normal, natural, healthy.”

27. Infiltrate the churches and replace revealed religion with “social” religion. Discredit the Bible and emphasize the need for intellectual maturity, which does not need a “religious crutch.”

28. Eliminate prayer or any phase of religious expression in the schools on the ground that it violates the principle of "separation of church and state."

29. Discredit the American Constitution by calling it inadequate, old-fashioned, out of step with modern needs, a hindrance to cooperation between nations on a worldwide basis.

30. Discredit the American Founding Fathers. Present them as selfish aristocrats who had no concern for the "common man."

31. Belittle all forms of American culture and discourage the teaching of American history on the ground that it was only a minor part of the "big picture." Give more emphasis to Russian history since the Communists took over.

32. Support any socialist movement to give centralized control over any part of the culture--education, social agencies, welfare programs, mental health clinics, etc.

33. Eliminate all laws or procedures which interfere with the operation of the Communist apparatus.

34. Eliminate the House Committee on Un-American Activities.

35. Discredit and eventually dismantle the FBI.

36. Infiltrate and gain control of more unions.

37. Infiltrate and gain control of big business.

38. Transfer some of the powers of arrest from the police to social agencies. Treat all behavioral problems as psychiatric disorders which no one but psychiatrists can understand [or treat].

39. Dominate the psychiatric profession and use mental health laws as a means of gaining coercive control over those who oppose Communist goals.

40. Discredit the family as an institution. Encourage promiscuity and easy divorce.

41. Emphasize the need to raise children away from the negative influence of parents. Attribute prejudices, mental blocks and retarding of children to suppressive influence of parents.

42. Create the impression that violence and insurrection are legitimate aspects of the American tradition; that students and special-interest groups should rise up and use ["]united force["] to solve economic, political or social problems.

43. Overthrow all colonial governments before native populations are ready for self-government.

44. Internationalize the Panama Canal.

45. Repeal the Connally reservation so the United States cannot prevent the World Court from seizing jurisdiction [over domestic problems. Give the World Court jurisdiction] over nations and individuals alike.

That's 38/45 that are significant today, most of the other 7 are no longer relevant due to the collapse of the USSR.

Read the entire article with all 45 declared goals here: http://www.rense.com/general32/americ.htm

The Solution to Save Western Civilization: A New Nation in Western Canada

. · 6 March 2007 · Archived copy · Original

1 - The seeds of separatism already exist in Western Canada and flares up from time to time – especially in retaliation to Quebec's constant threats of separation (every dozen years or so, since Confederation – likely arising again within the next year or so), and Ottawa's constant placating of Quebec with a disproportionate transfer of wealth payments – coming in large part from Western Canada. Quebec has been like a snivelling wife who does not pull her weight, yet continually threatens to leave and destroy the entire household if her demands are not met. Just as a man should do with a harpy wife who displays such mannerisms, Canada should throw Quebec to the curb rather than placate her. If Eastern Canada is continually so pussy-whipped by Quebec, then Western Canada should not hesitate to throw the rest of Canada to the curb along with Quebec. Given the near separation of Quebec from Canada in the mid 1990's, the precedent has already been set for a system of secession from Canada based on voter democracy and not civil war.

Check out the results of "Western Canada Separatism" on Google:

http://www.google.ca/search?hl=en&q=Western+Canada+Separatism&btnG=Google+Search&meta=

2 - Western Canada already possesses a similar political mentality of Conservatism/Smaller Government/Family values. In Canada it is well known that the West "is the Right." This plays along well with what would need to be done in order to create a new legal system which would honour the basic unit of society – the traditional family.

3 - Western Canada would be an instantly viable state. Population would be around 11 million or so; Infrastructure is already in place, and Western Canada could easily practice isolationism from the rest of the world's increasing globalization. There is more than enough resources in the form of oil/natural gas, agricultural land, mining resources, timber, 3 ocean coasts with 2 developed Pacific ports in Vancouver, BC & Prince Rupert, BC, a developed Atlantic port in Churchill, MB, as well as developed rail & roadway systems to bring products to port. Western Canada would also automatically control the increasingly important Northwest Passage through the Arctic, effectively negating the need to use the Panama Canal.

4 - Separatism could rid ourselves of the Marxist inspired Multiculturalism that deeply divides the country based on differing languages/cultures and utilize the opportunity to build a new nation built on the “melting pot” rather than the “cultural mosaic.” The cultural mosaic is insane, and the strength of diversity is a Left wing myth. Places like the former Yugoslavia & the Middle East have ceaseless turmoil because of cultural “diversity.” Why would any sane nation model themselves on those systems? Unless, of course, the goal was to create conflict…hmmm?

5 - An opportunity would automatically present itself to “re-write” a new Constitution and a new Charter of Rights which thoroughly denounces the Hegelian Dialectic and embraces the ideals of inalienable rights bound securely to “immoveable” documents such as the US Constitution and the US Bill of Rights. A new country in Western Canada would also be able to instantly solve the insane system of non-elected senators that has afflicted Canada since Confederation and would also allow us to start a new political system of “direct representation” on both the levels of MP’s and the Prime Minister. It is wrong that we are voting for a party rather than the individual. We should be allowed to vote for our MP’s separately from our Prime Minister, as both are direct representatives of our individual concerns.

6 – We would be presented with the opportunity to develop a new monetary currency based on the credit of our new nation’s name (The United Provinces of Fedders – The UPF), rather than the gold standard & the insane privately controlled central banking/fractional reserve system. Nobel Prize winning economist, Milton Friedman, has proposed how to work such a system. Friedman speculated that the new currency would stabilize quickly and that without the involvement of corrupt banking practices, the National Debt could be paid off in a matter of years. According to Friedman, the monetary value of the nation’s currency would quickly stabilize in accordance to the strength of the economy & the nation’s resources, much like a private individual’s credit when borrowing from a regular bank. We would then be able to set our own national lending rates at a fixed percentage and have a prosperous economy based on predictability – one where hard work and ingenuity would pay off rather than luck.

7 - Releasing ourselves from the current banking system would allow us to pay off our share of the Canadian Debt, which we would graciously accept – and should be somewhat lower per capita than the whole of Canada, given Eastern Canada’s propensity to rob the West of our riches & re-invest it in the East, while disproportionately lacking to re-invest those Marxist “equalization payments” back into the West. BC, Alberta & Ontario are the only 3 provinces that are consistently profitable and rich, yet the riches of BC & Alberta have always been used to fund the development of eastern “have-not” provinces.

8 - Freeing ourselves from the National Debt would enable “breathing room” for the dire economic situation that the feminist inspired unsustainable birthrate presents for the future. Without the debt and with practising some smart economics based on isolationism and traditional “honest day’s work/honest day’s pay,” we would not be required to take in massive amounts of multicultural immigrants from the Third World to artificially prop up the population in order to maintain the GDP growth rate we currently need to pay our burdensome debt. We would possibly have the luxury to choose immigration from other Western World countries that share a similar history, language & other cultural similarities that would enable easy assimilation into our new “melting pot.” This would possibly offset the demographic problems presented by the 20 year “generation gap of change” we are facing as a direct cause of feminized policies.

9 - Freeing ourselves from the National Debt would allow ourselves to establish a simple, sane & fair consumption based flat taxation system. Perhaps a 15% flat tax similar to the one that resulted in Hong Kong becoming an economic powerhouse.

10 - A new country would not yet be part of the United Nations; therefore, we would not need to join the United Nations. Should the UN decide to apply pressure to join via sanctions, Western Canada could easily survive in isolationist luxury given the factors described above in point #3. Furthermore, could the UN, the USA, Eastern

Canada, or the North American Union protest too loudly at a New Country that was directly based on the American Constitution & democracy? Erm… wasn't the point of the war in Iraq to bring such a form of government to the Middle East? If the only thing they were pissed off about was that we would not join the UN or adhere to NAFTA/the NAU, well, I don't think it would lead to violence. They could try to impose economic warfare upon us, but there are few places in the world that could easily adapt to long term economic isolation as efficiently and as luxuriously as we could. We could live for a thousand years on our massive supplies of food, oil, metals, timber, energy, etc. Western Canada is set up for exportation of truly immense amounts of resources, and if turned inward it could completely do away with the need to be a part of the rest of the world. Piss off then. Lol! An embargo on us like the one on Cuba would be a joke. If we withheld our oil from Alberta alone we could do some major damage in retaliation, but why bother withholding it. It's still for sale, for $250/barrel. We'll just pull a DeBeers. With the way the Middle East is shaping up, Western Canada will soon become the Western World's #1 source of oil. I believe we are already #2 supplier to the US after Saudi Arabia, (Maybe #3?), and we have hardly begun to tap into the vastness of the oil sands.

11 – Defensive military services from a small population can easily be provided by a similar program to Switzerland's or a plethora of other countries, where there is a mandatory 1 year service upon Highschool graduation for young men, followed up with bi-annual militia training refreshers for all men from 19 to 40 years old, who are required to keep their army rifles in their homes and already know the "general plan" and where to convene when the sirens sound. As the Middle East has vividly shown to us, it is scary business for foreign entities to stick their nose into a place where everybody you see has the potential to kill you.

12 – And finally, all of those islands way up in the Arctic currently need to be patrolled by us in order to maintain that we do indeed have sovereignty over them. I propose to kill two birds with one stone, in the traditional Canadian, non-violent way. We could start by offering the first ever feminist-only University in Nunavut Territory. Yes, by building the University of Nunavut, we will be showing our "commitment" to feminists, and of course that should allow us to say that since there is an entire university dedicated to feminism, we can now justify pulling the plug on ALL other funding of Women's Studies for the rest of our Academic Institutions and get back to teaching our kids to be humans, rather then zombie like Fembots. Of course, once a feminist gets her BS in Fembot, there will be a network of DV Shelters strategically placed throughout the Arctic islands for them to "work" at. See how this works? A lot of places up there are just ice too, so for troublesome Fembots, we could just build a DV Shelter on an icefloe (they won't know if there's land underneath in the Arctic winter) and when the spring comes… bye bye!

Anyway, it's really not a joke that Western Canada may separate one day. Quebec is already jockeying for a separatist push AGAIN in the next election, and nothing gets the people in Western Canada (who now greatly outnumber Quebecers) riled up more than watching Ottawa kiss Quebec's French ass at the expense of kicking us Westerners in the balls yet again.

Here is a poll from the summer of 2005:
http://www.ctv.ca/servlet/ArticleNews/story/CTVNews/1123588600678_121/?hub=Canada

"The magazine's survey found that 35.6 per cent of respondents from Manitoba, Saskatchewan, Alberta and British Columbia agreed that "Western Canadians should begin to explore the idea of forming their own country."

The poll claims that Albertans, at 42 per cent, were most likely to consider independence, followed by Saskatchewan at 31.9 per cent.

"Westerners are very frustrated with their position in Confederation," said Faron Ellis, a political science professor at Lethbridge Community College, who conducted the survey.

Ellis said that separatist sentiment appeared to run highest among young people -- 37 per cent of respondents between the ages of 18 and 29 were open to the notion of breaking away from Canada.

Support was lowest -- 33.7 per cent -- among the baby boom generation aged between 45 and 64."

Dr. Fruitfly Gets His Ass Handed to Him on a Naturally Chilled Canadian Platter

. · 8 March 2007 · Archived copy · Original

I know that we usually bitch and moan about fembots, but I think it's really important for us to step back for a moment and recognize that there is something bigger going on here than just feminism attacking Western Civilization. And no, I am not going to try and tell you about Freemasonry or the Protocols of Zion or something like that. If you are interested in that, there are plenty of sites out there that pay lots of attention to such theories. "Save the Males" is a good place start: http://www.savethemales.ca/ What we really have to start acknowledging, however, is that this battle is far bigger than just feminism.

Is it a conspiracy?

Who cares!

If you knew that a bunch of men got together under the guise of something called the "Manhatten Project" to develop a device that would cause untold physical destruction on Earth, then studied it a little bit to find out about it - and then noticed that your neighbor was carting detonation devices and weapons grade uranium into his garage, would you give a crap if he was part of a conspiracy?

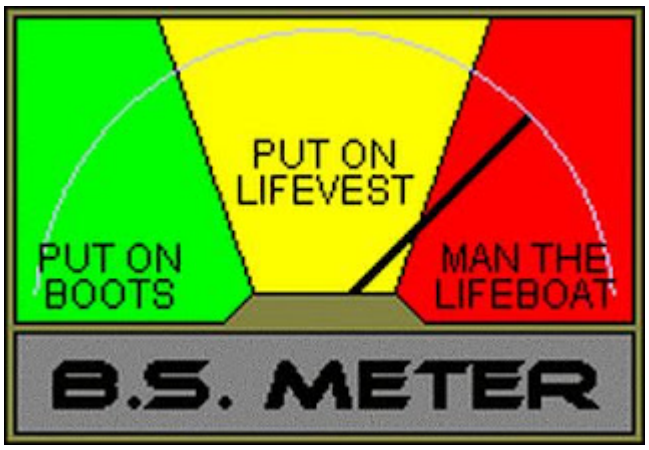
And herein lies the truth: 21 men who were experts on psychology, sexology, politics and a variety of other academic practices were chosen to study together at the Marxist's Frankfurt School. They spent a decade intensely studying the specific question of how *to destroy a society*! They set about to discover how to create a "social nuclear bomb." That this was their intention is of no doubt, as even a cursory investigation by a newcomer to the whole idea of Cultural Marxism will resoundingly reveal this as fact - along with their specified targets and their plans on how to destroy them. This is not conspiracy "theory" - this is verifiable fact.

Therefore, when we look around in society and see the very targets these men identified being attacked in the precise manner these men suggested would be the most effective in destroying them... well, *who cares if it is a conspiracy!* All the elements for the Social Nuclear Bomb are being put together and we should be not just be suspicious - **We should be alarmed and jolted into action!**

So, I would just like to point out that the Cultural Marxism we face with feminism is *exactly* the same enemy that presents itself in other areas of our society like multiculturalism, anti-religiousness and *even environmentalism.* Yes, Rob wipes his ass with spotted owls! The fact is however, that when one starts researching the environmental movement, we see that they are using the same tactics that feminists use. EXACTLY! That many environmentalists preach that in order to save the environment we must abolish private property should definitely make your commie-sense start to tingle.

Let's also remember that in the 1970's we were going to die from Global *Cooling*, and in the 80's & 90's the hole in Ozone Layer was going to fry us, and then the push came on to tell the world that Global Warming is going to wipe us out. These people are pushing a Marxist agenda and are using the same "half-truth" methods we are so familiar with in regard to feminism.

Recently the United Nations held their conference on Global Warming and decided that it was certainly man-made.



There are not just one or two scientists who refute this nonsense, but there are THOUSANDS of them. They, however, don't get reported on in the media, just like men's voices never get heard in regard to the "battle of the sexes." *They are fighting the same war as us - and they deserve our support!*

John Christy, a climatologist from the University of Alabama is just one of the many thousands.

http://www.reason.com/news/show/34939.html

"But University of Alabama at Huntsville climatologist John Christy, a climate expert on whom I have relied for years, makes some interesting observations about the Arctic Council's report. "If you look at the long term records, the Arctic has been as warm or warmer than it is today," says Christy. He cites temperature data from the Hadley Centre in the UK showing that from 70 degrees north latitude to the pole, the warmest years on record in the Arctic were 1937 and 1938. This area is just slightly above the Arctic Circle.

Furthermore, those same records show that the Arctic warmed twice as fast between 1917 and 1937 as it has in the past 20 years. After 1940, the Arctic saw a big cool-down and climatologists noted sea ice expanding in the northern Atlantic. Christy argues that what he calls the Great Climate Shift occurred in the late 1970s and caused another sudden warming in the Arctic. Since the late 1970s there has not been much additional warming in the region at all. In fact, on page 23, the Arctic Council Assessment offers very similar data for Arctic temperature trends from 60 degrees north latitude—the area that includes most of Alaska and essentially all of Greenland, most of Norway and Sweden, and the bulk of Russia.

Interestingly, the recent increase in temperatures in Alaska and Siberia seem to have coincided almost simultaneously with a shift in the Pacific Decadal Oscillation (PDO) in the late 1970s. Could this be part of Christy's Great Climate Shift? Swings in the PDO occur on 30 to 40 year time frames, and the most recent one brought warmer currents flowing north to the coast of Alaska. The Assessment does note that "several important natural modes of variability that especially affect the Arctic have been identified, including the Arctic Oscillation, the Pacific Decadal Oscillation, and the North Atlantic Oscillation. Each of these can affect the regional patterns of such features as the intensity and tracks of storm systems, the direction of prevailing winds, the amount of snow, and the extent of sea ice."

That paints quite a different story from the ceaseless left wing media bombardment that we have recently been forced to endure here in Canada. I don't know how it was reported elsewhere in the world, but here it was as important as if an asteroid were going crash into earth tomorrow morning. All of the media told us how we could better save the environment and made a huge deal out of it.

I decided to solve the environmental problem by turning off the TV.

It really is horseshit. Check out this site from the late John Daly, a men who dedicated himself to fighting these

lying turkeys, much as we dedicate ourselves to fighting the stupidity of feminism. Mr. Daly, by the way, concludes over and over that environmentalism is entirely politically motivated and has little to do with actual concern about the environment. *Just like how we all know that feminism has nothing to do with "equality."*

http://www.john-daly.com/

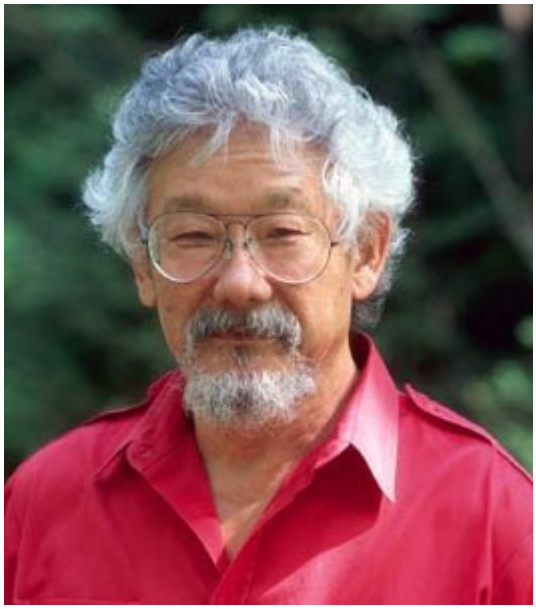
This whole site is filled with great info, but the first thing you see which is quite striking is this picture:

The 1841 sea level benchmark (centre) on the `Isle of the Dead', Tasmania. According to Antarctic explorer, Capt. Sir James Clark Ross, it marked mean sea level in 1841. Photo taken at low tide 20 Jan 2004.Mark is 50 cm across; tidal range is less than a metre. © John L. Daly.

Yes indeed, in 166 years the earth has warmed to such incredible levels that the ocean most certainly is rising!

WHERE ARE MY WATER WINGS?

Of course, Canada's biggest Eco-Warrior is Dr. Fruitfly, David Suzuki - or Dr. Suskooki. This man is an asshole in the first degree, and coming from a pretty big asshole such as Rob Fedders, who even once met the man, that says a lot!



Of course, Suskooki is a major supporter of Canada adhering to the Kyoto Protocol. Something that is truly stupid and which the new Conservative Government rightly reneged on. Kyoto would completety destroy Canada's economy - but of course, why would a Marxist give a shit about that? Those promoting Kyoto have been forced to admit that even if all of the goals of Kyoto somehow could be met, it would only cause 1/2 of one degree of difference after 20 years - and they admit it is just a starting point for all of the radical changes that must take place. If you start reading what these guys want, you will find them advocating for *revolutionary change and a new kind of human in tune with the environment.*

Marxism!

Here is something interesting about Dr. Fruitfly which illustrates in spades how much environmentalists behave exactly like feminists. From "Angry in the Great White North:"
The Poll David Suzuki Doesn't Want You to See

http://stevejanke.com/archives/217705.php

And of course, David Suzuki is not above targeting children with his biased, false messages - kind of like... who were those people again... they have vaginas & funny haircuts...

David Suzuki vs. a Terrorist: A Difference of Degree

http://stevejanke.com/archives/217230.php

Yes, Steve Janke from "Angry in the Great White North" despises this man about as much as I do:

According to David Suzuki, Kyoto Targets are Always Achievable

http://stevejanke.com/archives/217703.php

GIVE 'EM HELL STEVE!

(Applause!)

I tell you, this whole Global Warming Hoopla we've been subjected to by the United Nations and the MSM smacks of a couple of other hoaxes we are familiar with:

http://no-maam.blogspot.com/2007/02/lest-we-forget-super-bowl-sunday-hoax.html

and,

http://manhatred.blogspot.com/2007/02/thousands-of-women-trafficked-for-sex.html

Let's not let ourselves get blinkered into thinking we are the only ones out there! The question is, why are there so many people who are fighting Cultural Marxism who cannot seem to ally themselves together in an effort to get rid of this evil in our society.

Lol! More people who are pissed off at Dr. Fruitfly:

My First Hand Encounter with That Obnoxious Twat, David Suzuki
http://shaidle.blogmatrix.com/:entry:shaidle-2007-03-07-0016/

Laughing My Ass Off!

. · 10 March 2007 · Archived copy · Original

Captain Zarmband has a You-Tube video posted at his site that is hilarious.

It is a 911 recording of Uccelline, from a Cuckoo's Nest, demanding that the State come on over and practice a little totalitarianism on her behalf, because she is a member of the Pink Proletariat.

http://dhdiary.blogspot.com/2007/03/priceless-just-priceless.html

Lol!

I know it's not nice to pick on people who are "politically challenged," like Uccelline & her clucking flock, but...

I am annoyed that she picked a fight with the MRM and accused us of all sorts of things, then when I answered her arguments IN SPADES, with irrefutable evidence, she said that I was just trying to get attention and started banning my comments.

.

Totalitarianists cannot function without widespread use of censorship. And they certainly haven't got a hope in hell of being able to put forth a conscise argument in defence of their supremacist notion of "greater good," or rather "freedom through slavery."

http://abirdsnest.wordpress.com/2007/02/09/guilty-pleasures/

http://abirdsnest.wordpress.com/2007/02/17/responses-to-the-commenters-on-the-guilty-pleasures-post/

My responses:

http://no-maam.blogspot.com/2007/02/what-is-marxism-and-how-does-it-work.html

http://no-maam.blogspot.com/2007/02/all-gender-wage-gap-arguments-lead-to.html

I know that I've already plucked the wings off the fly that is Uccelline, but I see some people from her twisted little coven are still surfing on over here to read.

What I would like to point out, is how truly EVIL people like Uccelline are - and how completely damaging it is for society to allow these nonsensical people to continue with this twisted charade. When confronted with irrefutable evidence that she is pushing a fully Marxist agenda, she prefers to silence not with an intelligent rebuttal, but rather with insults and shaming talk - and *absolutely refuses to acknowledge she has been a useful idiot advocating for a truly sinister plot.*

She is not "misguided."

She knows what the score is.

And she has no intention of stopping, in spite of the evidence before her.

Pure Evil!

Yes, this fly has no more wings, but I may keep it around so I can play with it from time to time.

On a Lighter Note...

. · 12 March 2007 · Archived copy · Original

The legitimacy of the **N**ational **O**rganization of **M**en **A**gainst **A**mazonian **M**asterhood (No Ma'am) continues to grow with the arrival of two new features:

1). The Ballad of No Ma'am:

http://www.eebell.net/mwc/nomaam.mp3

Hah! Try to top that, Marxofeminist F.A.N.G.'s! (Feminists Against Neanderthal Guys)

No Ma'am's very own Anti-feminist Anthem!

Yee-haw!

2). The No Ma'am Charter:

The Great Global Warming Swindle

. · 13 March 2007 · Archived copy · Original

Please, take time to watch this very important video. (1hr 15min)

Spot the Marxism!

http://video.google.ca/videoplay?docid=-4520665474899458831&q=Global+Warming+Swindle

GET MAD!

SPEAK OUT!

CALL YOUR POLITICIANS AND TELL THEM THAT THEY, ENVIRONMENTALISTS AND FEMINISTS WILL ALL BE SENT WAY UP NORTH TO MONITOR GLOBAL WARMING UP-CLOSE!

CARE OF THE ANGRY PEOPLE WHO ARE BECOMING ENLIGHTENED!

Rotten Filthy Marxists!

Next Morning Update!

This *exceptionally* well done video has suddenly & mysteriously "disappeared."

I will hunt around and see if I can find it somewhere else. This video didn't just challenge global warming - it thoroughly destroyed the fools promoting global warming.

Read this article about the video:

http://www.lse.co.uk/ShowStory.asp?story=CZ434669U&news_headline=global_warming_is_lies_claims_documentary

---

Here is another copy of the video:

http://video.google.ca/videoplay?docid=-4520665474899458831&q=Global+Warming+Swindle

Miserable Marxo-bastards.

Here it is through You-Tube as well (in 8 parts)

http://www.youtube.com/results?search_query=global+warming+swindle&search=Search

The truth will set you free.

March 13, 2007 - The 1st Annual "Throw Out Your TV Day."

Things Like This Make It All Worthwhile!

. · 14 March 2007 · Archived copy · Original

Hawaiian Libertarian's Blog

http://hawaiianlibertarian.blogspot.com/

Welcome to the fray!

The food sucks, but the company is good.

The Marxist Creep Has a Speed Limit

. · 15 March 2007 · Archived copy · Original

http://www.detnews.com/apps/pbcs.dll/article?AID=/20070311/UPDATE/703110354/1148/AUTO01

A Speed Limit for the German Autobahn?

No way say German drivers! Even so, Germany is under increasing pressure to impose a speed limit on this highway by environmental groups. Can they hold off and continue to resist? I don't know, but I sure hope so.

"There are so many areas in which we waste energy in a completely senseless way and burden the climate," EU Environment Commissioner Stavros Dimas told the Bild am Sonntag newspaper."

A simple measure in Germany could be a general speed limit on highways," he added, according to the newspaper. "Speed limits make a lot of sense for many reasons and are completely normal in most EU states, as in the U.S.A. — only in Germany, strangely, is it controversial."

I encourage anyone who hasn't yet done so to read my piece "What is Marxism and How Does It Work."

http://no-maam.blogspot.com/2007/02/what-is-marxism-and-how-does-it-work.html

"...This is the 3-step brainwashing technique of how to change personal values: 1 - UNFREEZING from the present level of acceptence, 2 - MOVING the subject to the next level, 3 - FREEZING the subject at the new level until proper acceptance occurs. (Repeat until the desired destruction occurs.)"

What has all happened in the past while?

1). The UN came out with an "Armageddon Report" about Global Warming, *insisting it is man-made, despite multitudes of qualified nay-sayers who were silenced from speaking out!*

We are going to **DIE** if we don't act **NOW!**

This is the "unfreezing."

2). The EU Environment Commissioner (not the German Gov't) comes out and subverts the sovereignty of the German people "in the name of the greater good."

And of course, it is not a big deal. It is only a miserable speed limit... it is safer... it will save you money... *it's for the environment. We've got to save the earth*! Think of your children... you've got to do it for them.

It's only a small thing.

This is the moving to the next level.

3). It *is* only a small thing, isn't it? And there are benefits, aren't there?

But, the people of Germany will be "accepting" of the fact that they have to sacrifice for the "greater good." And they are sacrificing to someone who they did not elect as their representative - to people that aren't even Germans.

They will leave it at this level for a while, until the people accept that this is the way to "Fight Global Warming." They will accept that forces outside of their own country will tell them what to do - It IS only a small thing, isn't it?

This is the "freezing" at the new level until proper acceptance occurs.

I wonder if the push will come for ALL speed limits around the world to be lowered to 80km/hr, as that is the most fuel efficient.

Watch Out!

Could the United Nations have had "Other" Reasons for the Global Warming Armageddon Report?

. · 19 March 2007 · Archived copy · Original

http://www.cfif.org/htdocs/freedomline/un_monitor/in_our_opinion/global_taxes.htm

Global Taxes Are Back, Watch Your Wallet - posted Aug. 12, 2004 at CFIF.ORG

Excerpt from the article:

"A tax on fossil fuels like gasoline, coal, oil and natural gas. This plan, usually called a **Carbon Tax,** would drive up the price of gas for cars and trucks, home heating fuels, plastics, and countless other products. Proponents argue that such a tax would combat global warming by discouraging the use of fossil fuels while the revenue from such a tax could be redistributed to poorer nations. One U.N. paper suggested that such a tax would yield **$125 billion per year** with U.S. taxpayers stuck for more than $25 billion of that tab. But even supporters acknowledge that the modest tax that they would initially propose would not reduce greenhouse gasses or even slow the use of fossil fuels. In order to achieve that policy goal, the tax rate would have to be very high — enough to generate **$750 billion per year**, of which U.S. taxpayers would pay more $150 billion."

Read the article and find out about the U.N.'s proposed E-mail Tax, Currency Transaction Tax, International Airline Tax & Aviation Fuel Tax - all on top of the above Carbon Tax.

Total up all the money they trying to tax from the world & you will come to figures from $550 Billion/yr to above $1 TRILLION a year.

Gee... but Rob, nobody's ever lied, intimidated, or broken the law to get money before.

That the U.N. has the potential to be the LARGEST financial recipient from Global Warming Hysteria *should not be ignored!*

These men and others should be allowed to speak their piece to the world and we can go from there, after ALL the facts are on the table:

The Great Global Warming Swindle
http://video.google.ca/videoplay?docid=-4520665474899458831&q=Global+Warming+Swindle

Follow the money...

Read the entire Article Here: http://www.cfif.org/htdocs/freedomline/un_monitor/in_our_opinion/global_taxes.htm

When was the last time YOU voted for your U.N. Representative?

"Every collectivist revolution rides in on a Trojan horse of 'emergency'. It was the tactic of Lenin, Hitler, and Mussolini. In the collectivist sweep over a dozen minor countries of Europe, it was the cry of men striving to get on horseback. And 'emergency' became the justification of the subsequent steps. This technique of creating

emergency is the greatest achievement that demagoguery attains." -- Herbert Hoover

---

****

Useful Idiot Quote of the Day (in response to "Marxofeminists are Cat Lovers):

Anonymous 12:04pm said...
Dude, I don't know what bug crawled up your ass and died there, but it must have gotten ahold of something good. First off, being a straight white male, let me inform you that just because a woman wants to work, wants the same opportunities and treatment as a man, and wants to be independant, doesn't mean that the whole world as we know it is coming to an end. All they want is the same opportunity in life that men get. Just because you can't get some anymore because of your chauvanistic attitude doesn't mean that the concept of 'family' will die. Women are not objects, Women are not things. They are human beings, they are people, and they have wants and needs and feelings of their own. They are not here just to serve males and should NEVER be treated like slaves as you suggest they should in your 'T.V. Repairman' post... **You sir are sick, demented, and in severe need of a major attitude adjustment, and I'm more than willing to provide it...**

---

http://www.renewamerica.us/columns/roberts/050823

"It's not just the feminist propaganda mill that endlessly replays the woman-as-victim mantra. Chivalrous men, acting out their fantasies of the White Knight in Shining Armor, are guilty as well."

A Nation of Frogs

. · 20 March 2007 · Archived copy · Original

This piece is well worth the read... what else are you going to do? Watch some man-hatred on TV?

A Nation of Frogs - by William Borst, Ph. D. American History

http://www.mindszenty.org/report/2003/mr_0103.pdf

As the great philosopher Rob Fedders sees it, the real enemies we face are in *ideas.*

1 - The Personal is the Political

2 - The Truth is Relative

How different would the world be without these ideas?

"The philosophers have only interpreted the world in different ways. The point, however, is to change it." -- Karl Marx

---

How's this for a philosophy to change the world?

Television is the real opiate of the people.

****

Useful Idiot Quote of the Day: ?...??...???

Qu'est-ce qui se passe? I maintain that if I don't get at least one insulting comment per day that I am just not doing my job.

I apologize. I will have to pick it up a notch.

Sorry, dear readers, but for today you will have to settle for me plucking one out of thin air.

Therefore, I bring to you...

The Useful Idiot Quote of All Time:

Maxine Waters, Democrat, US House of Representatives, said:

"I HAVE TO MARCH BECAUSE MY MOTHER COULD NOT HAVE AN ABORTION!"

http://www.renewamerica.us/columns/roberts/040506

Oh, but that's not all... this Useful Idiot is full of great quotes, as most politicians are. Here are a few more:

http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Maxine_Waters

"The objection is in writing, and I don't care that it isn't signed by a member of the Senate." (December 2000, on her objection to the Presidential Election in 2000), to which Al Gore responded "The chair would advise that the rules do care."

"George W Bush, go to hell! And while you're at it, we want you to take Ashcroft with you. And don't forget Rumsfeld. And please carry along Condi Rice. . . I have to march because my mother could not have an abortion." (at the televised March for Women's Lives march, Washington D.C., April 24, 2005) [1]

"I don't see white police officers slamming the heads of little white boys into police cars."[10]

(And of course, as usual):

Alleged Corruption
In January 2006, Waters was named as one of the twenty most corrupt members of Congress in the Beyond Delay report[8], commissioned by the Citizens for Responsibility and Ethics in Washington. The report accused the Congress member of abusing her position for the benefit of her family. Her family members earned more than $1 million through business deals involving companies she had been in direct connection.[9]

Aha, but you think we are done?

Oh no, there is more. Mzzzz Waters, a public servant and pronounced feminist goes above and beyond with her determination to fully earn her wages, as is illustrated with her help in the feminization of Title IX.

Maxine Waters is referenced on page 10 of this PDF from the IWF in regard to her flouting of the Quie Amendment, attached by Congress to Title IX. The Quie Amendment *expressely forbade the use of Gender Quotas* in regard to Title IX. (Also described on page 10)

From: **Time Out For Fairness (Women For Title IX Reform) - from the Independent Women's Forum (PDF)**

http://www.iwf.org/pdf/fairness.pdf

"...a legislative markup in 1997 changed everything. During a House Subcommittee debate over the legislative intentions of Title IX, Representative Maxine Waters (D-CA) rejected Representative Charles Canady's (R-FL) reminder of the Quie Amendment, declaring, ***"Title IX is the biggest quota you've ever seen. It is fifty-fifty. It is a big round quota."*** *Her statement was a big harbinger of future judicial opinions that would change the course of Title IX significantly."*

Little people like this pose a threat to feminism:

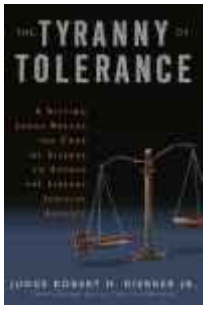
An 11-week old fetus that likely would have had something more intelligent to contribute to the world than Mzzzz. Waters.

The Tyranny of Tolerance - by Robert H. Dierker

. · 21 March 2007 · Archived copy · Original

I found this while over at MRA Revolutionary's Blog. http://mamonaku187.blogspot.com/

I had heard of the book & of Robert Dierker, but I had never read any of it yet.



Excerpt:

• Why do the courts claim the power to tax us?

• Why is a Christian fired when he voices opposition to his employer's favoring homosexuals?

• Why are airline pilots sued and sent to "diversity training" for recommending that suspicious-looking people of Middle Eastern appearance be kept off planes?

• Why does a judge who defends a monument to the Ten Commandments in a courthouse lose his job?

• Why are speech codes imposed on employers, university students, lawyers (and judges!), while "artistic" indecency is protected from even the mildest regulation?

• Why are peaceful abortion protesters thrown in jail, their right to free speech crushed?

• Why are white and Asian students denied admission to colleges and universities in the name of "diversity"?

• Why is an enemy fighter captured in Afghanistan granted access to U.S. federal courts, overturning judicial precedent safeguarding the president's wartime powers—to say nothing of common sense?

Read much, much more:

The Tyranny of Tolerance

Chapter 1: The Cloud Cuckooland of Radical Feminism

http://www.ebooks.com/ebooks/book_display.asp?IID=274156

Wow! I think this guy is even *more* pissed off about this nonsense than I am!

But then again, we should *all* be ***furious*** that bullshit like this has been happening right under our noses:

"Differences [between men and women], including the products of social inequality, *make unequal treatment not unequal at all."* -- Catharine MacKinnon, "Reflections on Sex Equality Under Law," Yale Law Journal, 1991

A,B,C,D,E,F

. · 23 March 2007 · Archived copy · Original

IN THEIR OWN WORDS:

.

GHIJKL: http://no-maam.blogspot.com/2007/03/g-to-l.html

.

MNOPQR: http://no-maam.blogspot.com/2007/03/mnopqr.html

.

STUVWXYZ: http://no-maam.blogspot.com/2007/03/stuvwxyz.html

.

****

.

ANGIER, DAVID

.

"If anyone is prosecuted for filing a false report, then victims of real attacks will be less likely to report them." -- David Angier (Massachusetts District Attorney)

.

****

.

ATKINSON, TI-GRACE (1938 -)

.

"The institution of sexual intercourse is anti-feminist" -- Ti-Grace Atkinson "Amazon Odyssey" (p. 86)

.

"Feminism is the theory, lesbianism is the practice." -- Ti-Grace Atkinson

.

"I propose that the phenomenon of love is the psychological pivot in the persecution of women." -- Ti-Grace Atkinson, *Radical Feminism and Love*

.

"The price of clinging to the enemy [a man] is your life. To enter into a relationship with a man who has divested himself as completely and publicly from the male role as much as possible would still be a risk. But to relate to a man who has done any less is suicide.... I, personally, have taken the position that I will not appear with any man publicly, where it could possibly be interpreted that we were friends." -- Ti-Grace Atkinson, *Amazon Odyssey* (New York: Links Books, 1974), pp. 90, 91.

.

****

.

BANE, MARY JO

.

"In order to raise children with equality, we must take them away from families and communally raise them" -- Dr. Mary Jo Bane, feminist and assistant professor of education at Welleslry College and associate

director of the school's Center for Research on Woman

.

****

.

(de) BEAUVOIR, SIMONE (1908-1986)

.

.

"A world where men and women would be equal is easy to visualize, for that precisely is what the Soviet Revolution promised." -- Simone de Beauvoir, *The Second Sex,* (New York, Random House, 1952), p.806

.

"No woman should be authorized to stay at home and raise her children. Society should be totally different. Women should not have that choice, precisely because if there is such a choice, too many women will make that one." -- Interview with Simone de Beauvoir, "Sex, Society, and the Female Dilemma," Saturday Review, June 14, 1975, p.18

.

"Private property appears: master of slaves and of the earth, man becomes the proprietor also of woman....Here we see the emergence of the patriarchal family founded upon private property. In this type of family, woman is subjugated." -- Simone de Beauvoir, *The Second Sex*
http://www.marxists.org/reference/subject/ethics/de-beauvoir/2nd-sex/ch03.htm

.

****

.

BIBLE, THE (4,000 BC - 150 AD)

.

.

To Adam he said, "*Because you listened to your wife* and from the tree about which I commanded you, 'You must not eat of it,' cursed is the ground because of you; through painful toil you will eat of it all the days of your life." -- Genesis 3:17

.

"Better to live on a corner of the roof than share a house with a quarrelsome wife." -- Proverbs 21:9

.

"Better to live in a desert than with a quarrelsome and ill-tempered wife." -- Proverbs 21:19

.

"I find more bitter than death the woman who is a snare, whose heart is a trap and whose hands are chains. The man who pleases God will escape her, but the sinner she will ensnare." -- Ecclesiastes 7:26

.

"...while I was still searching but not finding - I found one upright man among a thousand, but not one upright woman among them all." -- Ecclesiastes 7:28

"O My people! Their oppressors are children,
And women rule over them.
O My people! Those who guide you lead you astray
And confuse the direction of your paths." -- Isaiah 3:12

Jeremiah 44
15 Then all the men who were aware that their wives were burning sacrifices to other gods, along with all the women who were standing by, as a large assembly, including all the people who were living in Pathros in the land of Egypt, responded to Jeremiah, saying,

16 "As for the message that you have spoken to us in the name of the LORD, we are not going to listen to you!

17 "But rather we will certainly carry out every word that has proceeded from our mouths, by burning sacrifices to the queen of heaven and pouring out drink offerings to her, just as we ourselves, our forefathers, our kings and our princes did in the cities of Judah and in the streets of Jerusalem; for then we had plenty of food and were well off and saw no misfortune.

18 "But since we stopped burning sacrifices to the queen of heaven and pouring out drink offerings to her, we have lacked everything and have met our end by the sword and by famine."

---

[32] "I want you to be free from anxieties. The unmarried man is anxious about the things of the Lord, how to please the Lord. [33] But the married man is anxious about worldly things, how to please his wife, [34] and his interests are divided." -- 1 Corinthians 7:32-34

"I permit no woman to teach or have authority over men; she is to keep silent. 13For Adam was formed first, then Eve; 14and Adam was not deceived, but the woman was deceived and became a transgressor." -- 1 Timothy 2:12-14

.

*****

"[M]ost mother-women give up whatever ghost of a unique and human self they may have when they 'marry' and raise children." -- Phyllis Chesler, Women and Madness, p.294

.

Also on Chesler:

.

Family Make-over Ponzi Scheme, by Carey Roberts
http://www.renewamerica.us/columns/roberts/060307

.

****

.

CHURCHILL, SIR WINSTON (1874 - 1965)

.

"The power of the Executive to cast a man into prison without formulating any charge known to the law, and particularly to deny him the judgment of his peers, is in the highest degree odious and is the foundation of all totalitarian government whether Nazi or Communist." -- Sir Winston Churchill

.

****

.

CLARKE, CHERYL

.

"Heterosexuality is a die-hard custom through which male-supremacist institutions insure their own perpetuity and control over us. Women are kept, maintained and contained through terror, violence, and the spray of semen...[Lesbianism is] an ideological, political and philosophical means of liberation of all women from heterosexual tyranny... " -- Cheryl Clarke, "Lesbianism, An Act of Resistance," in This Bridge Called My Back: Writing by Radical Women of Color

.

****

.

CLINTON, BILL (1946 -)

.

"We can't be so fixated on our desire to preserve the rights of ordinary Americans..." -- Bill Clinton

.

****

.

CLINTON, HILLARY (1947 -)

.

"It takes a village to raise a child." -- Hillary Clinton

.

“Many of you are well enough off that the tax cuts may have helped you. We're saying that for America to get back on track, we're probably going to cut that short and not give it to you. We're going to take things away from you on behalf of the common good.” -- Hillary Clinton

.

“Research shows the presence of women raises the standards of ethical behavior and lowers corruption.” -- Hillary Clinton

.

“In many parts of the world, women and girls are especially vulnerable to HIV/AIDS because they lack control over most aspects of their life. Cultural expectations and gender roles expose women and girls to violence, sexual exploitation and far greater risk for infection.” -- Hillary Clinton

.

“We must stop thinking of the individual and start thinking about what is best for society.” -- Hillary Clinton

.

"Women have always been the primary victims of war. Women lose their husbands, their fathers, their sons in combat." -- Hillary Clinton

Related:

What? Women are Violent? Who Knew? -- by Alcuin

.

“The American people are tired of liars and people who pretend to be something they're not.” -- Hillary

Clinton

.

****

.

COMMINS, CATHERINE

.

.

"Men who are unjustly accused of rape can sometime gain from the experience," -- Catherine Comins, Vassar College Assistant Dean of Student Life in Time.

.

****

.

COOPER, JILLY

.

.

"The male is a domestic animal which, if treated with firmness...can be trained to do most things." -- Jilly Cooper, SCUM (Society For Cutting Up Men, started by Valerie Solanas)

.

****

.

CRONAN, SHEILA

.

"It became increasingly clear to us that the institution of marriage `protects' women in the same way that the institution of slavery was said to `protect' blacks--that is, that the word `protection' in this case is simply a euphemism for oppression," -- Sheila Cronan, "Marriage," in Koedt, Levine, and Rapone, eds., Radical Feminism, p. 214.

.

"Marriage is a form of slavery." -- Sheila Cronan, "Marriage," in Koedt, Levine, and Rapone, eds., Radical Feminism, p. 216.

.

"Since marriage constitutes slavery for women, it is clear that the Women's Movement must concentrate on attacking this institution. Freedom for women cannot be won without the abolition of marriage." -- Sheila Cronan, "Marriage," in Koedt, Levine, and Rapone, eds., Radical Feminism, p. 219.

.

****

.

DALY, MARY (1928 -)

.

"If life is to survive on this planet, there must be a decontamination of the Earth. I think this will be accompanied by an evolutionary process that will result in a drastic reduction of the population of males." -- Mary Daly, former Professor at Boston College, 2001

.

Excerpt from Wikipedia about Mzzzz. Daly's career:

.

http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Mary_Daly

.

Daly refused to admit male students to any of her classes at Boston College on the grounds that their presence inhibited class discussion. According to Daly, Women's Studies classes with men in them become "dumbed down."

.

Boston College consistently reprimanded Daly, claiming that her actions were in violation of title IX of federal law requiring the College to ensure that no person was excluded from an education program on the basis of sex, and of the University's own non-discrimination policy insisting that all courses be open to both male and female students.

.

In 1998, a discrimination claim against the college by two male students was backed by the Center for Individual Rights, a conservative advocacy group. Following further reprimand, Daly absented herself from classes rather than admit the male students.[1] Boston college removed her tenure rights, citing a verbal agreement by Daly to retire. She brought suit against the College disputing violation of her tenure rights and claiming she was forced out against her will, but her request for injunction was denied by Middlesex Superior Court, Judge Martha Sosman.[2]

.

An out-of-court settlement was reached in which Daly agreed that she had retired from her faculty position.[3] However, Daly maintains that Boston College had wronged her students by depriving her of her right to teach freely.[4] She documented her account of the events in the 2006 book Amazon Grace.

.

****

.

DA VINCI, LEONARDO

.

.

"Marriage is like putting your hand into a bag of snakes in the hope of pulling out an eel." -- Leonardo da Vinci

.

****

.

DENNIS, WENDY

.

.

"For one of the implicit, if unadmitted, tenets of feminism has been a fundamental disrespect for men." -- Wendy Dennis

.

Read more about Mzzz. Dennis here:
http://www.ncfm.org/GALT.HTM

.

****

.

DIXON, MARLENE

.

.

"The institution of marriage is the chief vehicle for the perpetuation of the oppression of women; it is through the role of wife that the subjugation of women is maintained. In a very real way the role of wife has been the genesis of women's rebellion throughout history." -- Marlene Dixon, "Why Women's Liberation? Racism and Male Supremacy"

.

****

.

DUNBAR, ROXANNE (1939 -)

.

"How will the family unit be destroyed? ... the demand alone will throw the whole ideology of the family into question, so that women can begin establishing a community of work with each other and we can fight collectively. Women will feel freer to leave their husbands and become economically independent, either through a job or welfare." -- From Female Liberation by Roxanne Dunbar

.

****

.

DUNN, IRINA

.

"A woman needs a man like a fish needs a bicycle." -- Irina Dunn, 1970

.

Intersting note: this famous quote comes from Irina Dunn, an Australian journalist who coined it in 1970. But the most interesting thing is, Mzzzz Dunn *stole this quote* from a philosopher who said, **"Man needs God like a fish needs a bicycle."**
http://www.geocities.com/siliconvalley/vista/3255/herstory.htm

.

"Lol! Irina Dunn needed a man to come up with the only phrase that gave her fame. How empowering!" -- Rob Fedders, No Ma'am Blog, 2007

.

****

.

DWORKIN, ANDREA (1946-2005)

.

.

"I want to see a man beaten to a bloody pulp with a high-heel shoved in his mouth, like an apple in the mouth of a pig." -- Andrea Dworkin, *Ice and Fire,* (Weidenfeld & Nicholson, 1987)

.

"Q: People think you are very hostile to men. A: I am." -- Andrea Dworkin

.

"Marriage as an institution developed from rape as a practice. Rape, originally defined as abduction, became marriage by capture. Marriage meant the taking was to extend in time, to be not only use of but possession of, or ownership." -- Andrea Dworkin

.

"One of the differences between marriage and prostitution is that in marriage you only have to make a deal with one man." -- Andrea Dworkin, *Letters From a War Zone,* (Dutton Publishing, 1989)

.

"Marriage . . . is a legal license to rape." -- Andrea Dworkin, *Letters From a War Zone*, (Dutton Publishing, 1989)

.

"The hurting of women is . . . basic to the sexual pleasure of men." -- Andrea Dworkin, From *The New York Times*, Larry Elder, *Smiting Moses*, FrontPageMag.com July 10, 1998

.

"...[W]omen and men are distinct species or races ... men are biologically inferior to women; male violence is a biological inevitability; to eliminate it, *one must eliminate the species/race itself*... in eliminating the biologically inferior species/race Man, the new Ubermensch Womon (prophetically foreshadowed by the lesbian separatist herself) will have the earthly dominion that is her true biological destiny. We are left to infer that the society of her creation will be good because she is good, biologically good. In the interim, incipient Super Womon will not do anything to 'encourage' women to 'collaborate' with men--no abortion clinics or battered woman sanctuaries will come from her. After all, she has to conserve her 'energy' which must not be dissipated keeping 'weaker' women alive through reform measures. The audience applauded the passages on female superiority/male inferiority enthusiastically. This doctrine seemed to be music to their ears." -- from a panel on "Lesbianism as a Personal Politic" that met in New York City, Lesbian Pride Week 1977; Andrea Dworkin, *Letters from a War Zone, - Take Back The Day - Biological Superiority: The World's Most Dangerous and Deadly Idea (1977), (*Dutton Publishing, 1989) p.146

.

"Heterosexual intercourse is the pure, formalized expression of contempt for women's bodies." -- Andrea Dworkin, *Letters from a War Zone,* (Dutton Publishing, 1989)

.

"In everything men make, they hollow out a central place for death, let its rancid smell contaminate every

dimension of whatever still survives. Men especially love murder. In art they celebrate it, and in life they commit it. They embrace murder as if life without it would be devoid of passion, meaning, and action, as if murder were solace, still their sobs as they mourn the emptiness and alienation of their lives" -- Andrea Dworkin, *Letters From a War Zone, (*Dutton Publishing, 1989) p.214

.

"Marriage as an institution developed from rape as a practice. Rape, originally defined as abduction, became marriage by capture. Marriage meant the taking was to extend in time, to be not only use of but possession of, or ownership." -- Andrea Dworkin, *Letters From a War Zone,* (Dutton Publishing, 1989)

.

"Rape, then, is the logical consequence of a system of definitions of what is normative. Rape is no excess, no aberration, no accident, no mistake--it embodies sexuality as the culture defines it." -- Andrea Dworkin, *Our Blood: Prophecies and Discourses on Sexual Politics - The Rape Atrocity and the Boy Next Door*, (Harper & Row, 1976)

.

"As I see it, our revolutionary task is to destroy phallic identity in men and masochistic nonidentity in women--that is, to destroy the polar realities of men and women as we now know them so that this division of human flesh into two camps--one an armed camp and the other a concentration camp--is no longer possible. Phallic identity is real and it must be destroyed. Female masochism is real and it must be destroyed." -- Andrea Dworkin, *Our Blood: Prophecies And Discourses On Sexual Politics - The Root Cause,* (Harper & Row, 1976) (Rob says: Also read this blog-post at MRA Revolutionary: http://mamonaku187.blogspot.com/2007/03/tao-of-god-way-and-its-power.html)

.

"The cultural institutions which embody and enforce those interlocked aberrations - for instance, law, art, religion, nation-states, the family, tribe, or commune based on father-right - these institutions are real and they must be destroyed. If they are not, we will be consigned as women to perpetual inferiority and subjugation." -- Andrea Dworkin, *Our Blood: Prophecies And Discourses On Sexual Politics - The Root Cause,* (Harper & Row, 1976)

.

"Only when manhood is dead--and it will perish when ravaged femininity no longer sustains it--only then will we know what it is to be free." -- Andrea Dworkin, *Our Blood: Prophecies And Discourses On Sexual Politics - The Root Cause,* (Harper & Row, 1976)

.

"...the prisons for women are our homes. We live under martial law. We live in places in which a rape culture exists. That is a women's home, where she lives. Men have to be sent to prison, to live in a culture that is as rapist as the normal home in North America. We live under what amounts to a military curfew. Enforced by rapists. And we say usually that we're free citizens in a free society. We lie. We lie, we lie everyday about it... We live in a police state where every man is deputized. . . . In the United States, violence against women is a major pastime. It is a sport. It is an amusement. It is a mainstream cultural entertainment. And it is real. It is pervasive. It is epidemic. It saturates the society. It's very hard to make anyone notice it, because there is so much of it." -- Andrea Dworkin, *Terror, Torture and Resistance,* Keynote Speech at the Canadian Mental Health Association's "Women in a Violent Society," Banff, Albert, May 9, 1991, (First published in Canadian Studies/Les Cahiers de la Femme, Vol. 12, No.1, Fall 1991)

.

"The annihilation of a woman's personality, individuality, will, character, is prerequisite to male sexuality." -- Andrea Dworkin, *Letters From a War Zone,* (Dutton Publishing, 1989)

.

"Rape is the primary heterosexual model for sexual relating. Rape is the primary emblem of romantic love. Rape is the means by which a woman is initiated into her womanhood as it is defined by men." -- Andrea Dworkin, *Letters From a War Zone,* (Dutton Publishing, 1989)

.

"Men are rapists, batterers, plunderers, killers; these same men are religious prophets, poets, heroes, figures of romance, adventure, accomplishment, figures ennobled by tragedy and defeat. Men have claimed the earth, called it 'Her.' Men ruin Her. Men have airplanes, guns, bombs, poisonous gases, weapons so perverse and deadly that they defy any authentically human imagination." -- Andrea Dworkin, *Pornography: Men Possessing Women,* (Penguin, 1979)

.

"Like prostitution, marriage is an institution that is extremely oppressive and dangerous for women." -- Andrea Dworkin, *Letters From a War Zone - Feminism: An Agenda (1983),* (Dutton Publishing, 1989) p. 146

.

"Under patriarchy, every woman is a victim, past, present and future. Under patriarchy, every woman's daughter is a victim, past, present and future. Under patriarchy, every woman's son is her potential betrayer and also the inevitable rapist or exploiter of another woman." -- Andrea Dworkin, *Liberty,* p.58

.

"The newest variations on this distressingly ancient theme center on hormones and DNA: men are biologically aggressive; their fetal brains were awash in androgen; their DNA, in order to perpetuate itself, hurls them into murder and rape." -- Andrea Dworkin, *Letters From a War Zone, (*Dutton Publishing, 1989) p.114

.

"This violence is always accompanied by cultural assault -- propaganda disguised as principle or knowledge. The purity of the 'Aryan' or Caucasian race is a favorite principle. Genetic inferiority is a favorite field of knowledge. Libraries are full of erudite texts that prove, beyond a shadow of a doubt, that Jews, the Irish, Mexicans, blacks, homosexuals, women are slime. These eloquent and resourceful proofs are classified as psychology, theology, economics, philosophy, history, sociology, the so-called science of biology. Sometimes, often, they are made into stories or poems and called art. Degradation is dignified as biological, economic, or historical necessity; or as the logical consequence of the repulsive traits or inherent limitations of the ones degraded. Out on the streets, the propaganda takes a more vulgar form. Signs read 'Whites Only' or 'Jews and Dogs Not Allowed.' Hisses of kike, nigger, queer, and pussy fill the air. In this propaganda, the victim is marked. In this propaganda, the victim is targeted. This propaganda is the glove that covers the fist in any reign of terror. This propaganda does not only sanction violence against the designated group; it incites it. This propaganda does not only threaten assault; it promises it." -- Andrea Dworkin, *Letters From a War Zone - Part IV - The New Terrorism,* (Dutton Publishing, 1989)

.

"Families make possible the super-exploitation of women by training them to look upon their work outside the home as peripheral to their 'true' role." -- Andrea Dworkin

.

"To be rapeable, a position that is social, not biological, defines what a woman is." -- Andrea Dworkin

.

"Men use the night to erase us." -- Andrea Dworkin

.

"On the Left, on the Right, in the Middle; Authors, statesmen, thieves; so-called humanists and self-declared fascists; the adventurous and the contemplative, in every realm of male expression and action, violence is experienced and articulated as love and freedom." -- Andrea Dworkin, *Pornography: Men Possessing Women*

.

****

.

ENGELS, FREDERICK (1820 - 1895)

.

.

"The first class opposition that appears in history coincides with the development of the antagonism between man and woman in monogamous marriage, and the first class oppression coincides with that of the female sex by the male." -- Frederick Engels, *The Origins of the Family, Private Property, and the State* (New York, International Publishers, 1942), p.58

.

"The overthrow of mother was the world historical defeat of the female sex. The man took control in the home also; the woman was degraded and reduced to servitude; she became the slave of his lust and a mere instrument for the production of children." -- Frederick Engels, *The Origins of the Family, Private Property and the State*

.

"The first condition of the liberation of the wife is to bring the whole female sex back into public industry, and this in turn demands the abolition of the monogamous family as the economic unit of society." [Engels, p.67]

.

"The modern individual family is founded on the open or concealed slavery of the wife. Within the family he is the bourgeois and his wife represents the proletariat" -- Friedrich Engels *The Origin of the Family*, 1943, p.79

.

"All the other large and small nationalities and peoples are destined to perish before long in the revolutionary world storm… these residual fragments of peoples always become fanatical standard-bearers of counter-revolution and remain so until their complete extirpation or loss of their national character… [A general war will] wipe out all these petty hidebound nations, down to their very names. The next world war will result in the disappearance from the face of the earth not only of reactionary classes and dynasties, but also of entire reactionary peoples. And that, too, is a step forward." -- Friedrich Engels, "The Magyar Struggle," *Neue Rhenische Zeitung,* January 13, 1849

.

****

.

ETTELBRICK, PAULA

.

.

“Being queer is more than setting up house, sleeping with a person of the same gender, and seeking state approval for doing so. … Being queer means *pushing the parameters of sex, sexuality, and family, and in the process, transforming the very fabric of society.* … As a lesbian, I am fundamentally different from non-lesbian women. …In arguing for the right to legal marriage, lesbians and gay men would be forced to claim that we are just like heterosexual couples, have the same goals and purposes, and vow to structure our lives similarly. … We must keep our eyes on the goals of providing true alternatives to marriage and of *radically reordering society's view of reality.*” -- Paula Ettelbrick, “Since When Is Marriage a Path to Liberation?”, in William Rubenstein, ed., Lesbians, Gay Men and the Law (New York: The New Press, 1993), pp. 401-405.

.

****

.

FEDDERS, ROB (NO MA'AM BLOG)

.

.

"GET UP OFF YOUR KNEES." -- Rob Fedders, No Ma'am Blog, 2007

.

"Get Stuffed!" -- Rob Fedders, No Ma'am Blog, 2007

.

"Jerry Springer Ovulates." -- No Ma'am

.

The Ballad of No Ma'am http://www.eebell.net/mwc/nomaam.mp3
(Written & performed by E.E. Bell)

.

****

.

From: **'A Feminist Dictionary', ed. Kramarae and Treichler, Pandora Press, 1985:**

*****MALE: ... represents a variant of or deviation from the category of female. The first males were mutants... the male sex represents a degeneration and deformity of the female.'**

.

*****MAN: ... an obsolete life form... an ordinary creature who needs to be watched ... a contradictory baby-man ...**

.

*****TESTOSTERONE POISONING: ... 'Until now it has been though that the level of testosterone in men is normal simply because they have it. But if you consider how abnormal their behavior is, then you are led to the hypothesis that almost all men are suffering from "testosterone poisoning."**

.

****

.

FIRESTONE, SHULAMITH (1945 -)

.

"The institution [of marriage] consistently proves itself unsatisfactory--even rotten.... The family is...directly connected to--is even the cause of--the ills of the larger society." -- Shulamith Firestone, The Dialectic of Sex: The Case for Feminist Revolution (New York: Morrow, 1970), p. 254.

.

****

.

FRASER, SYLVIA

.

"I was, in reality, bred by my parents as my father's concubine... What we take for granted as the stability of family life may well depend on the sexual slavery of our children. What's more, this is a cynical arrangement our institutions have colluded to conceal." -- Sylvia Fraser; Journalist

.

****

.

FRENCH, MARILYN (1929 -)

.

"My feelings about men are the result of my experience. I have little sympathy for them. Like a Jew just released from Dachau, I watch the handsome young Nazi soldier fall writhing to the ground with a bullet in his stomach and I look briefly and walk on. I don't even need to shrug. I simply don't care. What he was, as a person, I mean, what his shames and yearnings were, simply don't matter." -- Marilyn French; *The Women's Room*

.

"Whatever they may be in public life, whatever their relationships with men, in their relationships with women, all men are rapists, and that's all they are. They rape us with their eyes, their laws, and their codes" -- Marilyn French, The Women's Room (1977) ISBN 0-345-35361-7 (p.462).

.

"As long as some men use physical force to subjugate females, all men need not. The knowledge that some men do suffices to threaten all women. He can beat or kill the woman he claims to love; he can rape women...he can sexually molest his daughters... THE VAST MAJORITY OF MEN IN THE WORLD DO ONE OR MORE OF THE ABOVE." -- Marilyn French (her emphasis)

.

"All patriarchists exalt the home and family as sacred, demanding it remain inviolate from prying eyes. Men want privacy for their violations of women... All women learn in childhood that women as a sex are men's prey." -- Marilyn French

.

"All men are rapists and that's all they are" -- Marilyn French, Authoress; (later, advisoress to Al Gore's Presidential Campaign.)

.

"The media treat male assaults on women like rape, beating, and murder of wives and female lovers, or male incest with children, as individual aberrations...obscuring the fact that all male violence toward women is part of a concerted campaign." -- Marilyn French

.

****

.

IN THEIR OWN WORDS:

.

GHIJKL: http://no-maam.blogspot.com/2007/03/g-to-l.html

.

MNOPQR: http://no-maam.blogspot.com/2007/03/mnopqr.html

.

STUVWXYZ: http://no-maam.blogspot.com/2007/03/stuvwxyz.html

.

Book: Sex, Lies and Feminism - by Peter Zohrab

. · 23 March 2007 · Archived copy · Original

I came across this link while doing some more research. Lol! I found it on a feminist site where they were ripping it to shreds in their usual fashion. Which, of course, is always a good sign that there may be something worthwhile between the covers.

http://equality.netfirms.com/contents.html

Scroll down for the chapters.

I have not read it yet, and I have *loads* of reading already on my "to do list." But if someone reads it, or has already read it, I would sure appreciate your comments on what you think of it.

Doorstop For Sale: $0.50

G,H,I,J,K,L

. · 26 March 2007 · Archived copy · Original

IN THEIR OWN WORDS:

.

ABCDEF: http://no-maam.blogspot.com/2007/03/in-their-own-words.html

.

MNOPQR: http://no-maam.blogspot.com/2007/03/mnopqr.html

.

STUVWXYZ: http://no-maam.blogspot.com/2007/03/stuvwxyz.html

.

****

.

GAYLOR, ANNIE LAURIE

.

.

"Let's forget about the mythical Jesus and look for encouragement, solace and inspiration from real women... Two thousand years of patriarchal rule under the shadow of the cross ought to be enough to turn women toward the feminist 'salvation' of this world." -- Annie Laurie Gaylor, "Feminist Salvation," "The Humanist", July/August 1988, p.37. 10.

.

****

.

GEARHART, SALLY MILLER

.

"The proportion of men must be reduced to and maintained at approximately 10% of the human race." -- Sally Miller Gearhart, *The Future - If There Is One - Is Female*

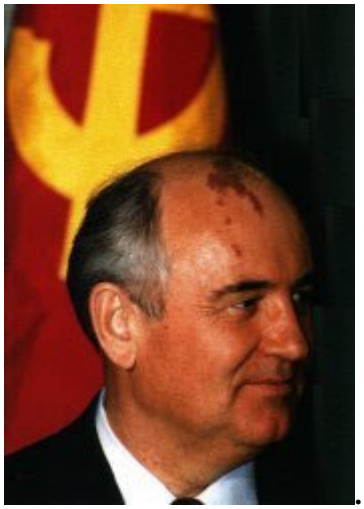
.

****

.

GORBACHEV, MIKHAIL (1931 -)

.



"Gentlemen, comrades, do not be concerned about all you hear about Glasnost and Perestroika and democracy in the coming years. They are primarily for outward consumption. There will be no significant internal changes in the Soviet Union, other than for cosmetic purposes. Our purpose is to disarm the Americans and let them fall asleep." -- Mikhail Gorbachev

.

"In October 1917, we parted with the old world, rejecting it once and for all. We are moving toward a new world, a world of Communism. We shall never turn off that road." -- Mikhail Gorbachev

.

"The threat of environmental crisis will be the 'international disaster key' that will unlock the New World Order." -- Mikhail Gorbachev, quoted in "A Special Report: The Wildlands Project Unleashes Its War On Mankind", by Marilyn Brannan, Associate Editor, Monetary & Economic Review, 1996, p. 5

.

****

.

GORDON, LINDA

.

"The nuclear family must be destroyed, and people must find better ways of living together. ... Whatever its ultimate meaning, the break-up of families now is an objectively revolutionary process. ... "Families have supported oppression by separating people into small, isolated units, unable to join together to fight for common interests." -- Functions of the Family, Linda Gordon, WOMEN: A Journal of Liberation, Fall 1969

.

"...No woman should have to deny herself any opportunities because of her special responsibilities to her children. ... Families will be finally destroyed only when a revolutionary social and economic organization permits people's needs for love and security to be met in ways that do not impose divisions of labor, or any external roles, at all." -- Functions of the Family, Linda Gordon, WOMEN: A Journal of Liberation, Fall, 1969

.

****

.

GORNICK, VIVIAN

.

"Being a housewife is an illegitimate profession... The choice to serve and be protected and plan towards being a family-maker is a choice that shouldn't be. The heart of radical feminism is to change that" -- Vivian Gornick, feminist author, University of Illinois, "The Daily Illini," April 25, 1981

.

****

.

GREER, GERMAINE (1939 -)

.

"If women are to effect a significant amelioration in their condition it seems obvious that they must refuse to marry." -- Germaine Greer, *The Female Eunuch* (New York: McGraw-Hill, 1971), p. 317

.

"The plight of mothers is more desperate than that of other women, and the more numerous the children the more hopeless the situation seems to be.... Most women...would shrink at the notion of leaving husband and children, but this is precisely the case in which brutally clear rethinking must be undertaken." -- Germaine Greer, *The Female Eunuch* (New York: McGraw-Hill, 1971), p.320

.

“Women’s revolution is necessarily situationist: we cannot argue that all will be well when socialists have succeeded in abolishing private property and restoring public ownership of the means of production. We cannot wait that long. Women’s liberation, if it abolishes the patriarchal family, will abolish a necessary substructure of the authoritarian state, and once that withers away Marx will have come true willy-nilly, so let’s get on with it.” -- Germaine Greer, *The Female Eunuch* p.368

.

"[Greer called for the establishment of] "rambling organic structure[s]" [that would] "have the advantage of being an unbreakable home in that it did not rest on the frail shoulders of two bewildered individuals trying to apply a contradictory blueprint." -- Germaine Greer, *The Female Eunuch* (New York: McGraw-Hill, 1971), p. 233. (Full quote taken from -- Patrick F. Fagan, Robert E. Rector, and Lauren R. Noyes, Why Congress Should Ignore Radical Feminist Opposition to Marriage http://www.heritage.org/Research/Features/Marriage/bg1662.cfm)

.

"Probably the only place where a man can feel really secure is in a maximum security prison, except for the imminent threat of release." -- Germaine Greer

.

****

.

GRIFFIN, SUSAN (1943 -)

.

"And if the professional rapist is to be separated from the average dominant heterosexual [male], it may be mainly a quantitative difference." -- Susan Griffin "Rape: The All-American Crime"

.

****

.

HOOKS, BELL

.

"We live in a culture that condones and celebrates rape. Within a phallocentric, patriarchal state the rape of women by men is a ritual that daily perpetuates and maintains sexist oppression and exploitation. We cannot hope to transform "rape culture" without committing ourselves fully to resisting and eradicating patriarchy." -- Bell Hooks, "Seduced by Violence No More," in Stan, Adele ed. Debating Sexual Correctness (New York, 1995) p.231.

.

****

.

HOOVER, HERBERT (1874 - 1964)

.

"Every collectivist revolution rides in on a Trojan horse of 'emergency'. It was the tactic of Lenin, Hitler, and Mussolini. In the collectivist sweep over a dozen minor countries of Europe, it was the cry of men striving to get on horseback. And 'emergency' became the justification of the subsequent steps. This technique of creating emergency is the greatest achievement that demagoguery attains." -- Herbert Hoover

.

****

.

JAGGAR, ALISON

.

"[The nuclear family is] a cornerstone of woman's oppression: it enforces women's dependence on men, it enforces heterosexuality and it imposes the prevailing masculine and feminine character structures on the next generation." -- Alison Jaggar, *Feminist Politics and Human Nature*

.

"[W]omen, like men, should not have to bear children.... The destruction of the biological family, never envisioned by Freud, will allow the emergence of new women and men, different from any people who have previously existed." -- Alison Jaggar, *Political Philosophies of Women's Liberation: Feminism and Philosophy,* (Totowa, NJ: Littlefield, Adams & Co. 1977)

.

*****

.

"We shall destroy you from within!" -- Nikita Krushchev, during the Kitchen Debate, 1959

.

"We can't expect the American People to jump from Capitalism to Communism, but we can assist their elected leaders in giving them small doses of Socialism, until they awaken one day to find that they have Communism." -- Nikita Kruschev

.

****

.

LENIN, VLADMIR ILYICH (1870 - 1924)

.

.

"Destroy the family, you destroy the country." -- V.I. Lenin

.

“We must now say proudly and without any exaggeration that apart from Soviet Russia, there is not a country in the world where women enjoy full equality and where women are not placed in the humiliating position felt particularly in day-to-day family life. This is one of our first and most important tasks…. Housework is the most unproductive, the most barbarous and the most arduous work a woman can do. It is exceptionally petty and does not include anything that would in any way promote the development of the woman…The building of socialism will begin only when we have achieved the complete equality of women and when we undertake the new work together with women who have been emancipated from that petty stultifying, unproductive work…. We are setting up model institutions, dining-rooms and nurseries, that will emancipate women from housework…. These institutions that liberate women from their position as household slaves are springing up where it is in any way possible.” ~ V.I. Lenin, *The Task of the Working Women’s Movement in the Soviet Republic* , 1919.

.

“The chief thing is to get women to take part in socially productive labor, to liberate them from ‘domestic slavery,’ to free them from their stupefying and humiliating subjugation to the eternal drudgery of the

kitchen and the nursery. This struggle will be a long one, and it demands a radical reconstruction, both of social technique and of morale. But it will end in the complete triumph of Communism." ~ V.I. Lenin, International Working Women's Day Speech, 1920..

.

"The way to crush the bourgeoisie is to grind them between the millstones of taxation and inflation." -- V.I. Lenin

.

"A system of licensing and registration is the perfect device to deny gun ownership to the bourgeoisie." -- V.I. Lenin

.

"Only an armed people can be the real bulwark of popular liberty." -- V.I. Lenin

.

"...the concentration of capital and the growth of their turnover is radically challenging the significance of the banks. Scattered capitalists are transformed into a single collective capitalist. When carrying the current accounts of a few capitalists, the banks, as it were, transact a purely technical and exclusively auxiliary operation. When, however, these operations grow to enormous dimensions we find that a handful of monopolists control all the operations, both commercial and industrial, of capitalist society. They can, by means of their banking connections." -- V.I. Lenin

.

"...first ascertain exactly the position of the various capitalists, then control them, influence them by restricting or enlarging, facilitating or hindering their credits, and finally they can entirely determine their fate." -- V.I. Lenin

.

"It would be the greatest mistake, certainly, to think that concessions mean peace. Nothing of the kind. Concessions are nothing but a new form of war." -- V.I. Lenin

.

"While the State exists, there can be no freedom. When there is freedom there will be no State." -- V.I. Lenin

.

"We do not have time to play at "oppositions" at "conferences." We will keep our political opponents... whether open or disguised as "nonparty," in prison." -- V.I. Lenin

.

"The bourgeoisie is many times stronger than we. To give it the weapon of freedom of the press is to ease the enemy's cause, to help the class enemy. We do not desire to end in suicide, so we will not do this." V.I. Lenin

.

"Psychologically, this talk of feeding the starving is nothing but an expression of the saccharine-sweet sentimentality so characteristic of our intelligentsia." -- V. I. Lenin, "Robert Conquest," *The Harvest of Sorrow,* (London: Arrow Books, 1988), p234

.

"We must declare openly what is concealed, namely, the political function of the school...It is to construct communist society." -- V.I. Lenin

.

"The aim of socialism is not only to abolish the present division of mankind into smaller states and all-national isolation, not only to bring the nations closer to each other, but also to merge them." -- V.I. Lenin

.

*****

.

.

"Man-hating is everywhere, but everywhere it is twisted and transformed, disguised, tranquilized, and qualified. It coexists, never peacefully, with the love, desire, respect, and need women also feel for men. Always man-hating is shadowed by its milder, more diplomatic and doubtful twin, ambivalence." -- Judith Levine; Authoress

.

"Men's sexuality is mean and violent, and men so powerful that they can 'reach WITHIN women to fuck/construct us from the inside out.' Satan-like, men possess women, making their wicked fantasies and desires women's own. A woman who has sex with a man, therefore, does so against her will, 'even if she does not feel forced.' -- Judith Levine, (explicating comment profiling prevailing misandry.)

.

"I feel what they feel: man-hating, that volatile admixture of pity, contempt, disgust, envy, alienation, fear, and rage at men. It is hatred not only for the anonymous man who makes sucking noises on the street, not only for the rapist or the judge who acquits him, but for what the Greeks called philo-aphilos, 'hate in love,' for the men women share their lives with--husbands, lovers, friends, fathers, brothers, sons, coworkers." -- Judith Levine, Authoress of My Enemy, My love

.

"There are no boundaries between affectionate sex and slavery in (the male) world. Distinctions between pleasure and danger are academic; the dirty-laundrylist of 'sex acts'...includes rape, foot binding, fellatio, intercourse, auto eroticism, incest, anal intercourse, use and production of pornography, cunnilingus, sexual harassment, and murder." -- Judith Levine; summarizing comment on the WAS document, (A southern Women's Writing Collective: Women Against Sex.)

.

****

.

IN THEIR OWN WORDS:

.

ABCDEF: http://no-maam.blogspot.com/2007/03/in-their-own-words.html

.

MNOPQR: http://no-maam.blogspot.com/2007/03/mnopqr.html

.

STUVWXYZ: http://no-maam.blogspot.com/2007/03/stuvwxyz.html

.

Spring Cleaning at No Ma'am

. · 27 March 2007 · Archived copy · Original

Please excuse the mess at this, the finest blog on the web. I have 3 articles that are 75% finished, but all three are giving me writer's block, so I've decided to call in the No Ma'am maid and do some re-arranging of my quote lists and some general heavy-duty spring cleaning.

Don't worry... she gets paid the minimum wage.

M,N,O,P,Q,R

. · 27 March 2007 · Archived copy · Original

IN THEIR OWN WORDS:

.

ABCDEF: http://no-maam.blogspot.com/2007/03/in-their-own-words.html

.

GHIJKL: http://no-maam.blogspot.com/2007/03/g-to-l.html

.

STUVWXYZ: http://no-maam.blogspot.com/2007/03/stuvwxyz.html

.

****

.

MACKINNON, CATHARINE A. (1946 -)

.

"Feminism, Socialism, and Communism are one in the same, and Socialist/Communist government is the goal of feminism." -- Catharine A. MacKinnon, *Toward a Feminist Theory of the State,* (First Harvard University Press, 1989), p. 10

.

"Sexuality is to feminism what work is to Marxism…" -- Catharine A. MacKinnon, *Toward a Feminist Theory of the State,* (First Harvard University Press, 1989), p. 3

.

"Differences [between men and women], including the products of social inequality, *make unequal treatment not unequal at all."* -- Catharine MacKinnon, "Reflection on Sex Equality Under Law," Yale Law Journal, 1991

.

"Compare victims' reports of rape with women's reports of sex. They look a lot alike....[T]he major distinction between intercourse (normal) and rape (abnormal) is that the normal happens so often that one cannot get anyone to see anything wrong with it." -- Catharine MacKinnon, quoted in Christina Hoff Sommers, "Hard-Line Feminists Guilty of Ms.-Representation," Wall Street Journal, November 7, 1991.

.

"All sex, even consensual sex between a married couple, is an act of violence perpetrated against a woman." -- Catharine MacKinnon

.

"Politically, I call it rape whenever a woman has sex and feels violated." -- Catharine MacKinnon

.

"You grow up with your father holding you down and covering your mouth so another man can make a horrible searing pain between your legs." -- Catharine MacKinnon (Prominent legal feminist scholar; University of Michigan, & Yale.)

.

"Look to your left, look to your right, look in front of you , and look behind you. Statistics tell us you have just laid eyes on someone guilty of sexual assault." -- Catharine MacKinnon, from her Commencement Speech given to Yale University, 1990

.

"Feminism is built on believing women's accounts of sexual use and abuse by men." -- Catharine MacKinnon, *Feminism Unmodified,* 1987

.

****

.

MANSBRIDGE, JANE J.

.

.

"[I]f even 10 percent of American women remain full-time homemakers, this will reinforce traditional views of what women ought to do and encourage other women to become full-time homemakers at least while their children are young.... This means that no matter how any individual feminist might feel about child care and housework, the movement as a whole [has] reasons to discourage full-time homemaking." -- Jane J. Mansbridge, *Why We Lost the ERA,* p.100

.

****

.

MARCOTTE, AMANDA

.

.

"Q: What if Mary had taken Plan B after the Lord filled her with his hot, white, sticky Holy Spirit? A: You'd have to justify your misogyny with another ancient mythology." -- Amanda Marcotte (Former Blogmaster for John Edwards' 2008 Presidential Campaign) Pandagon goes undercover the lazy way on a Catholic

anti-contraception seminar, Pt. II. Pandagon. Retrieved on 2006-06-14.

.

"the Catholic church is not about to let something like compassion for girls get in the way of using the state as an instrument to force women to bear more tithing Catholics." -- Amanda Marcotte (Former Blogmaster for John Edwards' 2008 Presidential Campaign) (2006-12-26). Some reproductive rights links to consider while digesting Christmas leftovers. Pandagon. Retrieved on 2006-12-26.

.

[Regarding the Duke University False Rape Allegations Case] **"Can't a few white boys sexually assault a black woman anymore without people getting all wound up about it? So unfair."** -- Amanda Marcotte (Former Blogmaster for John Edwards' 2008 Presidential Campaign)

.

****

.

MARX, ELEANOR (1855 - 1898)

.

.

"Women are the creatures of an organized tyranny of men, as the workers are the creatures of an organized tyranny of idlers." -- Eleanor Marx, The Woman Question

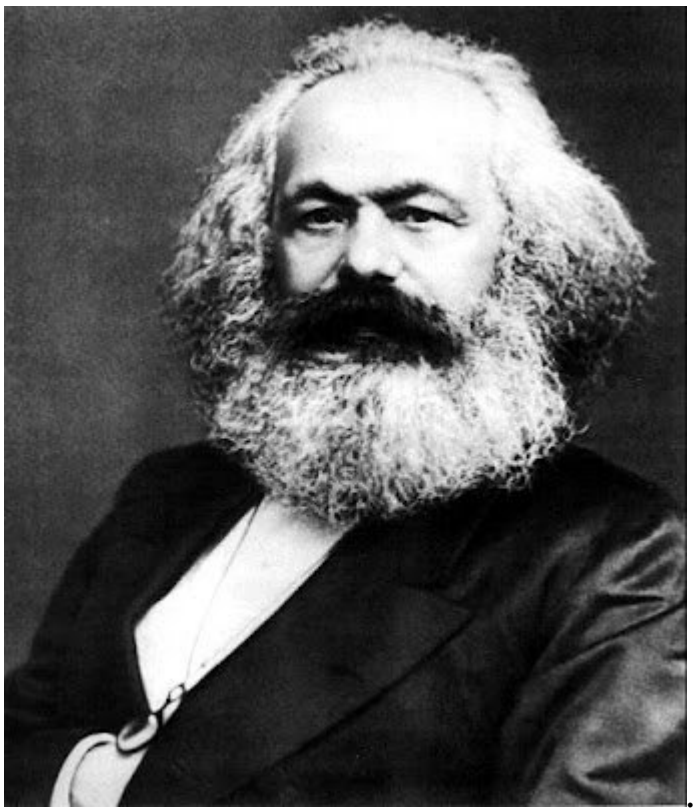
.

****

.

MARX, KARL (1818 - 1883)

.

 .

"The philosophers have only interpreted the world in different ways. The point, however, is to change it." -- Karl Marx

.

"What is the present family based on? On capitalism, the acquisition of private property... The bourgeois sees in his wife nothing but production." -- Karl Marx, *The Communist Manifesto*, 1848

.

"My object in life is to dethrone God and destroy capitalism." -- Karl Marx

.

"The meaning of peace is the absence of opposition to Socialism." -- Karl Marx

.

"From each, according to his ability; to each, according to his need" -- Karl Marx

.

“The production of too many useful things results in too many useless people.” -- Karl Marx

.

“Democracy is the road to socialism.” -- Karl Marx

.

"Anyone who knows anything of history knows that great social changes are impossible without feminine upheaval. Social progress can be measured exactly by the social position of the fair sex, the ugly ones included." -- Karl Marx

.

"Sell a man a fish, he eats for a day, teach a man how to fish, you ruin a wonderful business opportunity." -- Karl Marx

.

“The oppressed are allowed once every few years to decide which particular representatives of the oppressing class are to represent and repress them.” -- Karl Marx

.

“Philosophy is to the real world as masturbation is to sex” -- Karl Marx

.

“Religion is the opium of the masses.” -- Karl Marx

.

“We should not say that one man's hour is worth another man's hour, but rather that one man during an hour is worth just as much as another man during an hour. Time is everything, man is nothing: he is at the most time's carcass.” -- Karl Marx

.

“Society does not consist of individuals but expresses the sum of interrelations, the relations within which these individuals stand.” -- Karl Marx

.

"For the bureaucrat, the world is a mere object to be manipulated by him." -- Karl Marx

.

“The ruling ideas of each age have ever been the ideas of its ruling class.” -- Karl Marx

.

“The first requisite for the happiness of the people is the abolition of religion” -- Karl Marx

.

****

.

MILLET, KATE (1934 -)

.

.

"The care of children ..is infinitely better left to the best trained practitioners of both sexes who have chosen it as a vocation...[This] would further undermine family structure while contributing to the freedom of women." -- Kate Millet, Sexual Politics, 178-179

.

"[C]ontemporary patriarchies...[wives'] chattel status continues in their loss of name, their obligation to adopt the husband's domicile, and the general legal assumption that marriage involves an exchange of the female's domestic service and [sexual] consortium in return for financial support." -- Kate Millett, *Sexual Politics* (New York: Avon Books, 1969). pp. 34-35

.

"Millett argued that the impetus of the sexual revolution had the potential to collapse antiquated patriarchal systems, including the institution of marriage, thereby creating "a world we can bear out of the desert we inhabit."7 -- Patrick F. Fagan, Robert E. Rector, and Lauren R. Noyes, Why Congress Should Ignore Radical Feminist Opposition to Marriage http://www.heritage.org/Research/Features/Marriage/bg1662.cfm

.

"In Millett's view, a dismantled patriarchy--resulting from the destruction of traditional marriage--would generate the downfall of the nuclear family, a goal she called "revolutionary or utopian."8 -- Patrick F. Fagan, Robert E. Rector, and Lauren R. Noyes, Why Congress Should Ignore Radical Feminist Opposition to Marriage http://www.heritage.org/Research/Features/Marriage/bg1662.cfm

.

"Millett argued that the complete destruction of marriage and the natural family is necessary to produce an ideal society."11 -- Patrick F. Fagan, Robert E. Rector, and Lauren R. Noyes, Why Congress Should Ignore Radical Feminist Opposition to Marriage http://www.heritage.org/Research/Features/Marriage/bg1662.cfm

.

****

.

MORGAN, ROBIN (1941 -) Editor of Ms. Magazine

.

.

"I feel that 'man-hating' is an honorable and viable political act, that the oppressed have a right to class-hatred against the class that is oppressing them." -- Robin Morgan

.

"And let's put one lie to rest for all time: the lie that men are oppressed, too, by sexism--the lie that there can be such a thing as 'men's liberation groups.' Oppression is something that one group of people commits against another group, specifically because of a 'threatening' characteristic shared by the latter group--skin color, sex or age, etc. The oppressors are indeed FUCKED UP by being masters, but those masters are not OPPRESSED. Any master has the alternative of divesting himself of sexism or racism--the oppressed have no alternative--for they have no power--but to fight. In the long run, Women's Liberation will of course free men--but in the short run it's going to cost men a lot of privilege, which no one gives up willingly or easily. Sexism is NOT the fault of women--kill your fathers, not your mothers." -- Robin Morgan

.

"We can't destroy the inequities between men and women until we destroy marriage." -- Robin Morgan (ed), *Sisterhood is Powerful*, 1970, p.537

.

"I claim that rape exists any time sexual intercourse occurs when it has not been initiated by the woman, out of her own genuine affection and desire." -- Robin Morgan

.

“I haven’t the faintest notion what possible revolutionary role white hetero- sexual men could fulfill, since they are the very embodiment of reactionary- vested-interest-power. But then, I have great difficulty examining what men in general could possibly do about all this. In addition to doing the shitwork that women have been doing for generations, possibly not exist? No, I really don’t mean that. Yes, I really do.” -- Robin Morgan

.

"The phallic malady is epidemic and systemic... each individual male in the patriarchy is aware of his relative power in the scheme of things.... He knows that his actions are supported by the twin pillars of the

State of man - the brotherhood ritual of political exigency and the brotherhood ritual of a sexual thrill in dominance. As a devotee of Thanatos, he is one with the practitioner of sado-masochistic "play" between "consenting adults," as he is one with the rapist." -- Robin Morgan, *The Demon Lover,* (NY: Norton & Co., 1989), p. 138-9

.

"My white skin disgusts me. My passport disgusts me. They are the marks of an insufferable privilege bought at the price of others' agony." -- Robin Morgan, *The Demon Lover,* (NY: Norton & Co., 1989), p. 224

.

"The Women's Caucus [endorses] marxist-leninist socialist thought." -- Robin Morgan, *Sisterhood is Powerful,* p.597

.

****

.

NATIONAL ORGANIZATION OF WOMEN (N.O.W.)

.

.

"The simple fact is that every woman must be willing to be identified as a lesbian to be fully feminist." -- (National NOW Times, Jan. 1988)

.

***N* *O* *W* Action Alert -- October 20, 1999 -- Fathers' Rights Bill Advances in the House. This Action alert explains that the Father's Rights legislation before Congress is "bad for women and children" because it will "promote marriage" and "disseminat[e] information about the advantages of marriage", "promote successful parenting" and "disseminat[e] information about good parenting practices", and "help fathers and their families ... leave ... welfare". A plain reading of the Action Alert shows that when read in full context NOW will do ANYTHING to destroy marriages, families, and even children.** -- No DNC
Read the Action Alert Here
http://www.now.org/issues/right/alerts/10-20-99.html

.

****

.

NIGHTINGALE, FLORENCE

.

.

"Women have no sympathy... And my experience of women is almost as large as Europe. And it is so intimate too. Women crave for *being loved,* not for loving. They scream at you for sympathy all day long, they are incapable of giving you *any* in return for they cannot remember your affairs long enough to do so."
-- Florence Nightingale

.

****

.

PATAI, DAPHNE & KOERTGE, NORETTA

.

.

"*Not merely about equal rights for women ... Feminism aspires to be much more than this.* It bids to be a

totalizing scheme resting on a grand theory, one that is as all-inclusive as Marxism, as assured of its ability to unmask hidden meanings as Freudian psychology, and as fervent in its condemnation of apostates as evangelical fundamentalism. Feminist theory provides a doctrine of original sin: The world's evil's originate in male supremacy." -- Daphne Patai and Noretta Koertge, *Professing Feminism: Cautionary Tales from the Strange World of Women's Studies,* p.183 **(***Note: Patai & Koertge write from a critical perspective of where feminism has been going and use the above in the context of an example to illustrate their case. See Daphne Patai's website here: http://www.daphnepatai.com/ And read about her work here: http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Daphne_Patai)**

.

"Our culture, including all that we are taught in schools and universities, is so infused with patriarchal thinking that it must be torn up root and branch if genuine change is to occur. Everything must go - even the allegedly universal disciplines of logic, mathematics and science, and the intellectual values of objectivity, clarity and precision on which the former depend." -- Daphne Patai and Noretta Koertge, *Professing Feminism: Cautionary Tales from the Strange World of Women's Studies,* (New York Basic Books, 1994), p.116 **(***Note: Patai & Koertge write from a critical perspective of the aforementioned logic and use it in the context of an example. See Daphne Patai's website here: http://www.daphnepatai.com/ And read about her work here: http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Daphne_Patai)**

.

****

.

IN THEIR OWN WORDS:

.

ABCDEF: http://no-maam.blogspot.com/2007/03/in-their-own-words.html

.

GHIJKL: http://no-maam.blogspot.com/2007/03/g-to-l.html

.

STUVWXYZ: http://no-maam.blogspot.com/2007/03/stuvwxyz.html

.

S,T,U,V,W,X,Y,Z

. · 27 March 2007 · Archived copy · Original

IN THEIR OWN WORDS

.

ABCDEF: http://no-maam.blogspot.com/2007/03/in-their-own-words.html

.

GHIJKL: http://no-maam.blogspot.com/2007/03/g-to-l.html

.

MNOPQR: http://no-maam.blogspot.com/2007/03/mnopqr.html

.

****

.

SANGER, MARGARET (1879 - 1966)
Founder of Planned Parenthood

.

.

"The most merciful thing a large family can do to one of its infant members is to kill it." -- Margaret Sanger, Women and the New Race, (Eugenics Publ. Co., 1920, 1923)

.

"Birth control: to create a race of thoroughbreds." -- Margaret Sanger, Birth Control Review, November 1921, (vol. V, no. 11); p.2.

.

"More children from the fit, less from the unfit—that is the chief aim of birth control." -- Margaret Sanger, Birth Control Review, May 1919 (vol. III, no. 5); p.12.

.

"The most successful educational approach to the Negro is through a religious appeal. We do not want word to go out that we want to exterminate the Negro population, and the minister is the man who can straighten out that idea if it ever occurs to any of their more rebellious members." -- Margaret Sanger, letter to Clarence Gamble, Dec. 10,1939. - Sanger manuscripts, Sophia Smith Collection, Smith College. (Dec. 10 is the correct date of the letter. There is a different date circulated, e.g. Oct. 19, 1939; but Dec. 10 is the correct date of Ms Sanger's letter to Mr. Gamble.)

.

****

.

SHAPIRO, TREENA

.

.

"I do want to be able to explain to a 9-year-old boy in terms he will understand why I think it's OK for girls to wear shirts that revel in their superiority over boys." -- Treena Shapiro

.

"In general, I support a girl's right to offend any member of the opposite sex who happens to cross her path. In fact, I'd much rather see a little girl wearing a shirt that mocks boys than one that turns them on." -- Treena Shapiro

.

Read Mzzzz Shapiro's article about how her own son should be discriminated against here: http://the.honoluluadvertiser.com/article/2006/Jan/03/il/FP601030304.html

.

****

.

SIGNORILE, MICHELANGELO

.

.

"A middle ground might be to fight for same sex marriage and its benefits, and then, once granted, redefine the institution completely, to demand the right to marry not as a way of adhering to society's moral codes but rather to debunk a myth and radically alter an archaic institution." -- Michelangelo Signorile, "Bridal Wave," OUT Magazine, December/January 1994, p.161

.

"It [gay marriage] is also a chance to wholly transform the definition of family in American culture. It is the final tool with which to dismantle all sodomy statutes, get education about homosexuality and AIDS into public schools, and, in short, usher in a sea of change in how society views and treats us." -- Michelangelo Signorile, "I do, I do, I do, I do, I do," OUT Magazine, May 1996, p.30

.

****

.

SOLANAS, VALERIE

.

"To call a man an animal is to flatter him; he's a machine, a walking dildo." --Valerie Solanas, Authoress of the SCUM Manifesto

.

"Life in this society being, at best, an utter bore and no aspect of society being at all relevant to women, there remains to civic-minded, responsible, thrill-seeking females only to *overthrow the government, eliminate the money system, institute complete automation, and destroy the male sex.*" -- Valerie Solana, SCUM founder (Society for Cutting Up Men.)

.

Read the SCUM Manifesto here:
http://gos.sbc.edu/s/solanas.html

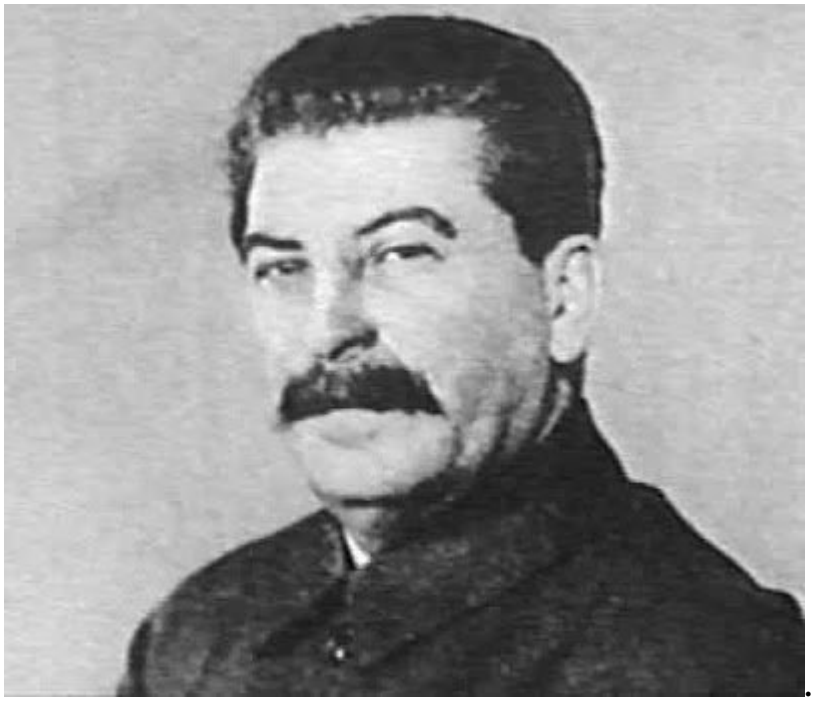
.

****

.

STALIN, JOSEF (1878 - 1953)

.



"America is like a healthy body and its resistance is threefold: its patriotism, its morality, and its spiritual life. If we can undermine these three areas, America will collapse from within." -- Josef Stalin

.

"If the opposition (citizen) disarms, well and good. If it refuses to disarm, we shall disarm it ourselves." -- Josef Stalin

.

"[After Communism succeeds] ...then, there will come a peace across the earth." -- Josef Stalin

.

****

.

STANTON, ELIZABETH CADY (1815 - 1902)

.

.

"When women can support themselves, have entry to all the trades and professions with a house of their own over their heads and a bank account, they will own their bodies *and be dictators in the social realm."* -- Elizabeth Cady Stanton

.

"It would be ridiculous to talk of male and female atmospheres, male and female springs or rains, male and female sunshine... how much more ridiculous is it in relation to mind, to soul, to thought, where there is undeniably no such thing as sex, to talk of male and female education and of male and female schools." -- Elizabeth Cady Stanton

.

****

.

STEINEM, GLORIA (1934 -)

.

.

“Overthrowing capitalism is too small for us. We must overthrow the whole... patriarchy.” -- Gloria Steinem

.

"By the year 2000 we will, I hope, raise our children to believe in human potential, not God." -- Gloria Steinem, editor of 'MS' magazine. Letter to the Editor: "Women's Turn to Dominate"

.

"Patriarchy requires violence or the subliminal threat of violence in order to maintain itself... The most dangerous situation for a woman is not an unknown man in the street, or even the enemy in wartime, but a husband or lover in the isolation of their home." -- Gloria Steinem

“Feminism starts out being very simple. It starts out being the instinct of a little child who says ‘it’s not fair’ and ‘you are not the boss of me,’ and it ends up being a worldview that questions hierarchy altogether.” -- Gloria Steinem, in the two hour HBO special on the life of Gloria Steinem entitled, *"Gloria: In Her Own Words."*

.

****

.

STODDARD, TOM

.

.

"[E]nlarging the concept to embrace same-sex couples *would necessarily transform it into something new.*...Extending the right to marry to gay people -- that is, abolishing the traditional gender requirements of marriage -- can be one of the means, perhaps the principal one, through which the institution divests itself of the sexist trappings of the past." -- Tom Stoddard, quoted in Roberta Achtenberg, et al, "Approaching 2000: Meeting the Challenges to San Francisco's Families," The Final Report of the Mayor's Task Force on Family Policy, City and County of San Francisco, June 13, 1990, p.1.

.

****

.

STONE, SHARON

.

"The more famous I get, the more power I have to hurt men." -- Sharon Stone

.

"Number 10: Regularly beat him on the head with your shoe." -- Sharon Stone, On David Letterman, presenting the top-ten list of keeping your man.

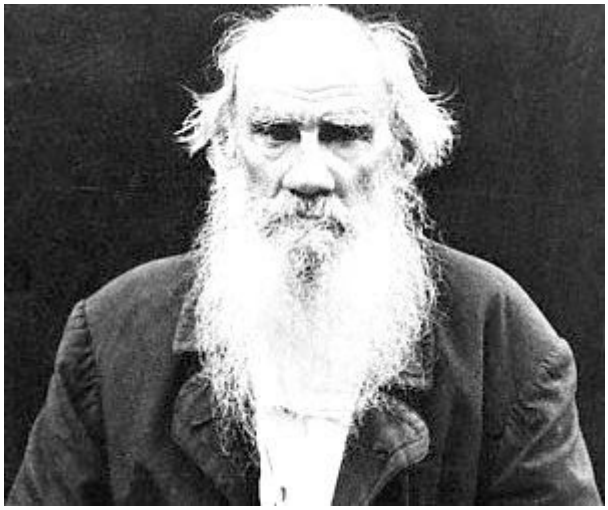
.

****

.

TOLSTOY, LEO

.



.

“When I have one foot in the grave, I will tell the whole truth about women. I shall tell it, jump into my

coffin, pull the lid over me and say, 'Do what you like now'." — Leo Tolstoy

.

"Tie yourself up with a woman, and like a chained convict, you lose all freedom . . . If you only know what women in general are! Egotism, vanity, silliness, triviality in everything. That's what women are when they show themselves as they really are...No, don't marry, my dear friend. Don't marry!" -- Leo Tolstoy, *War and Peace*, 1869.

"Never, never marry, my dear fellow; that's my advice to you; don't marry till you have faced the fact that you have done all you're capable of doing , and till you cease to love the woman you have chosen, till you see her plainly, or else you will make a cruel mistake that can never be set right. Marry when you're old and good for nothing… Or else everything good and lofty in you will be done for. It will all be frittered away over trifles. Yes, yes, yes! Don't look at me with such surprise. If you expect anything of yourself in the future you will feel at every step that for you all is over… all is closed up except the drawing-room, where you will stand on the same level with the court lackey and the idiot… And why!" -- Leo Tolstoy, *War and Peace,* 1869

.

"Women are generally stupid, but the devil lends her brains when she works for him. Then she accomplishes miracles of thinking, farsightedness, constancy, in order to do something nasty." -- Leo Tolstoy, 1898

.

Also see: Need It Be So? – by Leo Tolstoy, 1900

.

****

.

TREBILCOT, JOYCE

.

.

"If the classroom situation is very heteropatriarchal -- a large beginning class of 50 to 60 students, say, with few feminist students -- I am likely to define my task as largely one of recruitment...of persuading students that women are oppressed." -- said Professor Joyce Trebilcot of Washington University in "Who Stole Feminism: How Women Have Betrayed Women."

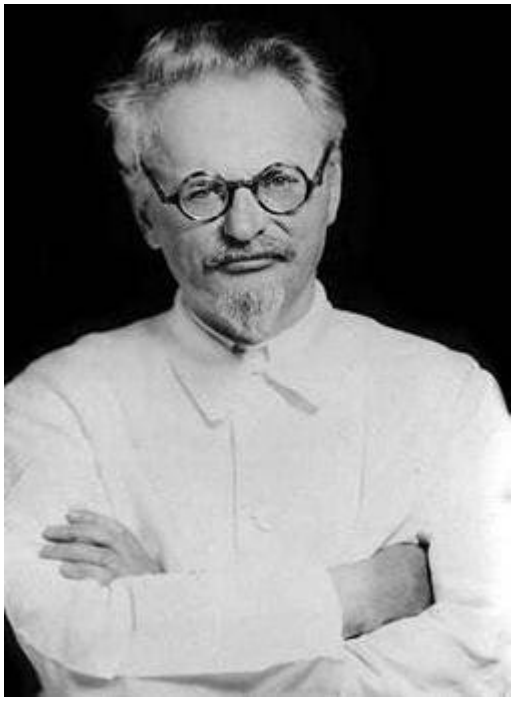
.

****

.

TROTSKY, LEON (1879 - 1940)

.



.

“Dialectical thought is related to vulgar thinking in the same way that a motion picture is related to a still photograph. The motion picture does not outlaw the still photograph but combines a series of them according to the laws of motion.” -- Leon Trotsky

.

“The dialectic is neither fiction nor mysticism, but a science of the forms of our thinking insofar as it is not limited to the daily problems of life but attempts to arrive at an understanding of more complicated and drawn-out processes. The dialectic and formal logic bear a relationship similar to that between higher and lower mathematics.” -- Leon Trotsky

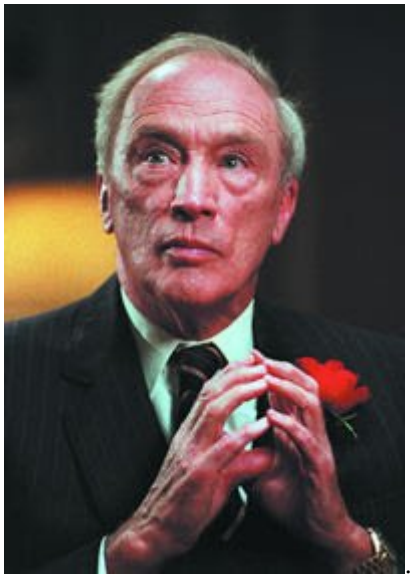
.

****

.

TRUDEAU, PIERRE ELLIOT

.



.

"The government will support and encourage the various cultures and ethnice groups that give structure and vitatity to our society. They will be encouraged to share their cultural expressions and values with other

Canadians and so contribute to a richer life for us all." -- Pierre Elliot Trudeau

.

http://www.geocities.com/s_sonia415/multi2.html

.

****

.

(von) WACHENFELDT, IREEN

.

"Men are animals. Don't you think so?" -- Ireen von Wachenfeldt, radical feminist leader in Sweden

.

****

.

WATERS, MAXINE

.

"I have to march because my mother could not have an abortion!" -- Maxine Waters, US House of Representatives, Democrat

.

"The objection is in writing, and I don't care that it isn't signed by a member of the Senate." -- Maxine Waters - **(December 2000, on her objection to the Presidential Election in 2000), to which Al Gore responded "The chair would advise that the rules do care."** -- as quoted in Wikipedia http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Maxine_Waters

.

"I don't see white police officers slamming the heads of little white boys into police cars." -- Maxine Waters, US House of Representatives, Democrat

.

"...a legislative markup in 1997 changed everything. During a House Subcommittee debate over the legislative intentions of Title IX, Representative Maxine Waters (D-CA) rejected Representative Charles Canady's (R-FL)

reminder of the Quie Amendment, declaring, "**"Title IX is the biggest quota you've ever seen. It is fifty-fifty. It is a big round quota."** Her statement was a big harbinger of future judicial opinions that would change the course of Title IX significantly." -- From: Time Out For Fairness (Women For Title IX Reform) - from the Independent Women's Forum http://www.iwf.org/pdf/fairness.pdf p.10

.

****

.

ZINGERS FROM AROUND THE WEB

.

"Depopulate the earth? I agree. You first."

.

"Tolerance is how far a mechanical part can deviate from the norm before it screws up the entire machine." -- Any Mechanic

.

"But there we are, what do I know, eh? I am just a poor lonesome country boy with nothing but chicken wire to sit on and a rusty old marble to play with." -- Angry Harry

.

****

.

In Their Own Words:

.

ABCDEF: http://no-maam.blogspot.com/2007/03/in-their-own-words.html

.

GHIJKL: http://no-maam.blogspot.com/2007/03/g-to-l.html

.

MNOPQR: http://no-maam.blogspot.com/2007/03/mnopqr.html

.

No Ma'am's Spring Cleaning is Almost Completed

. · 27 March 2007 · Archived copy · Original

I know that my loyal readers keep checking into No Ma'am to quench their addictive lust for the nuggets of Revealed Truth which this blog so eloquently delivers.

Fear not, my friends. The No Ma'am maids have nearly finished their task and soon sanity and order will be restored to this chaotic world.

In the meantime, might I recommend that that you have a quick peruse at Hawaiian Libertarian's blog? He's only been at it for a short while, but he has already put out some really good stuff and shows a knack for seeking out the truth.

http://hawaiianlibertarian.blogspot.com/

****

MRA Revolutionary/Mamonaku Status:

- DEEP COVER/COVERT OPS

For those wondering what happened to Mamonaku and his wonderful blog that mysteriously disappeared, he e-mailed me today and assured me that he is alive and well. He needed to close down his blog for a while for undisclosed reasons. (Hey, it's covert ops - "need to know basis" and all that).

He assures me that his blog has all been backed up on microfilm so that when he is done battling the she-demons of the underworld, he will easily be able to resume blogging.

Should you need to contact Mamonaku in the underworld, please use the cone of silence and contact him at www.skype.com - his decoder ring number is *Mamonaku187*

Cultural Marxism: 'Communities' of 'nations' inside a State? - by Craig Read

. · 3 April 2007 · Archived copy · Original

http://craigread.com/displayArticle.aspx?contentID=461&subgroupID=17

Excerpt from the article:

Consider the nuttiness of this idea. You have a state but in good cultural Marxist fashion you need to reject the 1000 year Western cultural heritage. Thus you demand the equal importance of all ‘cultures’. This is cultural relativity. Just to make sure that no-one gets left out you need to highlight various ‘communities’, within these distinct cultures or ‘nations’, within some political and economic construct called the ‘state’. This is the multi-cultural Marxist mantra of relativity taken to extremes. It is foolish and dangerous.

Read Craig Read's entire article here: http://craigread.com/displayArticle.aspx?contentID=461&subgroupID=17

Notice the same theme that follows the destruction of the family as I described in here:

http://no-maam.blogspot.com/2007/02/what-is-marxism-and-how-does-it-work.html

First you take something that is a whole, and you make it divisible. Then by use of "Truth is Relative" and "Critical Theory," you can start to redefine the definitions of the whole until you have completely deconstructed and redefined everything until nothing makes sense anymore - so let's just do away with it!

The same thing is *purposefully* being done to the idea of "Nationality" and "Patriotism" and ultimately the State itself, as the radical leftist traitors in Academia and Government have done to the family.

Deconstruct the whole --> Redefine the smaller pieces --> Create Confusion --> Destroy

While there certainly are *Useful Idiots* who don't get it, I have a hard time believing that *EVERYONE* is completely dimwitted to this agenda. And that means that they are indeed intent on pushing an agenda *which seeks to destroy the State!*

TREASON!

There are traitors that walk among us, hiding behind Academic degrees, Government Offices, and Mainstream Media Boardrooms!

In Canada, the penalty for Treason is ***Life in Prison!***

It is the only crime that is listed *before* 1st degree murder.

****

No Ma'am humbly suggests a worldwide Penal Colony here:

.

New Zealand
Australia
Ross Sea
Bellingshausen Sea
Antarctica
Ushuaia
Weddell Sea
Falkland Islands
South Georgia Island
South America
Atlantic Ocean
Africa

.

.

.

They can let us know how Global Warming is coming along!

.

*****

One wonders... does this wierdo walk around with human feces at the ready to fling at people? Isn't that what monkeys and chimps do?

One of the Best Posts I Have Ever Read

. · 5 April 2007 · Archived copy · Original

This post keeps ringing through my mind ever since I read it a few months ago at Mirror of the Soul, a truly Magnificent Blog . It is short, sweet, to the point and completely honest.

And given the bullshit attacks on Fred X from the ***Crickets Chirping Boomer MRM***
http://fredxblog.blogspot.com/2007/04/message-to-critic.html
All I can say is that what the following post says resounds even louder and louder in my own mind when I see activity like the afore mentioned.

http://mirrorofthesoul.blogspot.com/2007_02_01_archive.html#5358871861342160091

Sunday, February 18, 2007

The Mirror Speaks 3

The Question:

Mirror, mirror, on the wall, is the men's movement going anywhere, if anywhere at all?
.
The Mirror:

I will spare you the about 200 comments on this topic that I read on a supposedly men's site that will remain nameless, where a bunch of baby boomers were going back and forth debating if the men's movement was dead, alive, or on life support.

The baby boomers have utterly failed as a generation in many ways, and it is up to you men in generation X and Y to bulldoze what is left of their mess and rebuild from the ground up. That is what Men Going Their Own Way (MGTOW) is all about, that is the Men's Movement. The question is not whether MGTOW's should join the baby boomers' men's movement, but whether the baby boomers will join the MGTOW's and get with the program.

The MGTOW's are attacking feminism on all fronts, primarily their modus operandi is preventative - meaning pulling men out of situations (i.e., marriage) before they even get into them. However, they also expose the wide and encompassing anti-male laws and misandric culture so prevalent in the Anglosphere.The MGTOW's have drive, determination, goals, objectives, etc. - and even their own logo.

That sounds like a movement to me - alive and well.

Well said, Mirror!

ONLY IMITATE THOSE WHO ARE AS SUCCESSFUL AS YOU WANT TO BE!

A Must Add to Your Links!

. · 8 April 2007 · Archived copy · Original

Damn, this guy seems familiar - if it wasn't for the forget machine!

Please add to your link list and browser! I seem to remember this guy came from somewhere!

.

KUMOGAKURE SCHOOL

.

http://kumogakure.blogspot.com/

.

He may seem familiar to some - and to some he may not - that he should be in your blogroll, however, is not a question, but a must!

.

****

.

.

Do your part to fight Global Warming: **Turn off your TV!**

.

You might watch a fine internet video instead:

.

The Real Face of The European Union (EU):

.

http://video.google.com/videoplay?docid=6261252976329308 8&q=The+real+EU&hl=en

.

Spot the Marxism...

.

What do you think the United Nations will behave like after they establish themselves as a legitimate government with the *Man Made* Global Warming Hoax?

.
****

.
OUT, DAMN BOX! OUT!

.

This sounds kind of familiar, doesn't it?

http://www.orange-papers.org/orange-propaganda.html#guilt

Guilt induction and self-criticism (confession) sessions formed the core of the Red Chinese brainwashing program, and they are still used by many cults. Edward Hunter wrote a beautiful book about the Red Chinese brainwashing that was done to the American, British, and other United Nations prisoners of war in North Korea during the Korean War. He explained the mechanics of "brainwashing" this way:

The Reds had found that the easiest way to subdue any group of people was to give its members a guilt complex and then to lead them on from self-denunciation to self-betrayal. All that was required to put this across was a sufficiently heartless exploitation of the essential goodness in people, so that they would seek self-sacrifice to compensate for their feelings of guilt. The self-sacrifice obviously made available to them in this inside-out environment is some form of treason. -- Edward Hunter, *Brainwashing, From Pavlov to Powers,* p.169

So, first, the Communist guards would do something like make the prisoners feel guilty for being part of "a rich racist society where they never cared about the fate of the poor Negroes", and then the prisoners had to confess that in self-criticism sessions, and then the only way to atone for such sins was to love and praise the wonderful Chinese Communist society where everyone was equal (but some people were more equal than others).

Speaking of brainwashing, I stumbled across this blog which is directly about the brainwashing that Mary Kay does to its sales reps. Read about reports of women being encouraged to lie to their husbands, how to manipulate your husband into going further into debt by bitching about him being unsupportive - and even how to use Mary Kay to justify and hide affairs!

http://www.pinktruth.com/category/relationships/

“Research shows the presence of women raises the standards of ethical behavior and lowers corruption.” -- Hillary Clinton

Lol! Exactly what research is that Hillary? I doubt such research was ever done - and if it was, *it was likely funded by Mary Kay!*

“The American people are tired of liars and people who pretend to be something they're not.” -- Hillary Clinton

Videos: Taking Liberty - How Private Property is being Abolished in America

. · 9 April 2007 · Archived copy · Original

I came across this very well put together video series which details how the Environmental Movement has been moving to abolish private property in the United States. (Need Macromedia Flash Player 6.0 or higher)

http://www.takingliberty.us/TLHome.html

People, these things are all connected - feminism, environmentalism, multiculturalism etc. etc. We cannot be opposed to one while ignoring the others, because they work in concert with eachother.
http://no-maam.blogspot.com/2007/03/multi-tasking-pink-proletariat.html

It's the same as the Global Warming Hoax - remember, that if the United Nations can use Global Warming as a tool to establish itself as a legitimate government (as it is close to doing), then it will also be slamming the CEDAW, which is basically International VAWA on steroids, down the throats of every person on the planet - as well as its "rights of the child" rider, which is nothing more than a plot to attack parental authority and further demolish the family.

Screw the U.N.!

Screw Environmentalist Shit Heads!

Screw Fembots!

And Screw the U.N. again!

How about the UN Headquarters gets relocated to No Ma'am's proposed Antartican Penal Colony where they can have all the totalitarian control they want over Environmentalists, Fembots and any other Politically Corrected Communist S.O.B.'s that are trying to undermine our nations.

Rotten Traitors!

Grrr.
****
.
Article from Feb 3, 2007
.
Support Shown For New Global Environment Agency
.

•
http://www.ctv.ca/servlet/ArticleNews/story/CTVNews/20070203/climate_folo_070203/20070203?hub=TopStories
•
Updated Sat. Feb. 3 2007 11:31 PM ET
.
Associated Press
.
PARIS -- Fear of runaway global warming pushed 46 countries to line up Saturday behind France's bid for *a new environmental body that could single out* - ***and perhaps police*** - nations that abuse the Earth.
.
"It is our responsibility. The future of humanity demands it," President Jacques Chirac said in an appeal to put the environment at the top of the world's agenda.
.
He spoke at a conference a day after the release in Paris of a grim landmark report from the world's leading climate scientists and government officials that said global warming is so severe that it will "continue for centuries" and that humans are to blame.
.
The Intergovernmental Panel on Climate Change's report sparked calls for fast, planet-wide action. But not everyone at Chirac's conference welcomed the idea of a body that would define and possibly enforce environmental rules.
.
Key world polluters - including the United States, China, India and Russia - steered clear, while Europeans embraced it. *A total of 46 countries agreed to pursue plans for the new organization, and to hold their first meeting in Morocco this spring.*
.
Without naming the United States directly, Chirac expressed frustration that "some large countries, large rich countries, still must be convinced." They are "refusing to accept the consequences of their acts," he said.
.

Chirac, 74, is seeking to leave his mark on international affairs before he leaves office, likely in May. He has long expressed concern about environmental affairs, though his environmental record over 12 years as France's president is spotty.

.

Former U.S. vice-president **Al Gore**, whose documentary on the perils of global warming has garnered worldwide attention, **cheered Chirac's efforts**.

.

"We are at a tipping point," Gore said in recorded remarks shown at the conference. Friday's report was "yet another warning about the dangers we face. ***We must act, and act swiftly.*** ... Such action requires international co-operation. "

.

Many questions remain about the proposed environment body, ***including whether it would have the power to enforce global climate accords.***

.

Chirac's appeal says only that the body should "evaluate ecological damage" and "support the implementation of environmental decisions."

.

Many countries have failed to meet targets for cutting greenhouse gas emissions laid out in the 1997 Kyoto Protocol. The United States never ratified the pact.

.

In an interview published earlier this week, Chirac warned that ***the United States could face a carbon tax on its exports if it does not sign global climate accords.***

.

"We have 700 multilateral environmental agreements, and none of them seem to work. Environmental institutions are extremely weak," said Cristian Maquieira, a Chilean government environment official.

.

Russian Deputy Foreign Minister Andrei Denisov said that creating a new environment organization would require too much time and money. Instead, ***he urged reforming the existing U.N. Environment Program AND EXPANDING ITS POWERS.***

.

He praised Chirac's efforts, however, as a "strong chess move" in the campaign to draw attention to the environment.

.

Several participants called for ***taxing*** *actions that hurt the environment,* or labelling products according to how ecologically clean they are.

.

U.S. economist Jeremy Rifkin urged governments, businesses and activists to work together to create a "post-carbon" era.

.

"Climate change is going to be more responsible for bringing about a borderless world than free trade," Rifkin said.

.

The CEO of French energy and water giant Suez, Gerard Mestrallet, said, "businesses share the conviction that there is an urgent need to act."

.

Some 200 scientists, government officials, industry officials and environmental activists from more than 60 countries joined the conference.

.

Kumogakure School's Latest...

. · 12 April 2007 · Archived copy · Original

The Tyranny of Tolerance III

http://kumogakure.blogspot.com/2007/04/tyranny-of-tolerance-iii.html

A most excellent piece from Kumogakure School. The blog that is the latest rage in the MGTOW World!

I'd write more about it, but I've got no time... the hockey game is starting soon so I'm off to the pub!

Build a Better Mousetrap...

. · 13 April 2007 · Archived copy · Original

Now, if these ingenious youngsters could just build a similar system for feminists and the spineless politicians who cater to them!

http://www.killsometime.com/video/video.asp?ID=870

Cuckoo's Nest?????

. · 16 April 2007 · Archived copy · Original

http://abirdsnest.wordpress.com/2007/02/09/guilty-pleasures/

You know, it really annoys me that Uccelline believes that censoring my requests for her to answer my posts directed at her will erase her hate-inspired attacks against this, the most magnificent blog on the web - sometimes referred to as "No Ma'am."

Why doesn't Uccelline answer me?

http://no-maam.blogspot.com/2007/02/what-is-marxism-and-how-does-it-work.html

http://no-maam.blogspot.com/2007/02/all-gender-wage-gap-arguments-lead-to.html

I left another comment on her blog just last night, which was censored AGAIN! That is only about the 10th time!

Why do Marxofembots like Uccelline think they can attack me, and then when I provide absolute proof that she is a USEFUL IDIOT, she feels she can ignore my well reasoned replies?

Are you a purposefull TRAITOR, Uccelline?

Is http://abirdsnest.wordpress.com/ just another treasonous website intent on suppressing the freedoms of civilized people world-wide?

This begs a response, Cuckoo!

I'm not going anywhere, Uccelline.

I stand by what I say. Where do you stand?

Are you a Marxist?

I had never even heard of you or your silly blog until you attacked me... do you think I'm going to go away if you just keep on censoring out my solid arguments of why you are a useful idiot/now a traitor because YOU KNOW?

Here's a lesson for you straight out of nature, Uccelline:

Mess with the Bull and you'll get the horns!

Waiting for your reply.

Tap, tap.

Still waiting...

Not going to go away.
.
You pissed off the wrong anti-marxofeminist.

Some Fembot Claims and Demands Men Should Support

. · 16 April 2007 · Archived copy · Original

There are a few things that men should stop criticizing and in fact do a complete about face and start supporting instead.

1). Men should agree that fembot claims of a homemaker's value being equal to $134,121/yr is completely accurate. http://www.azstarnet.com/news/127624

Of course, this claim is ludicrous. We all know that. We are linear thinking men after all and men are accutely aware of how difficult it is earn $134,000/yr - even with all of the secret boy's clubs and the invisible yet ever present Patriarchy giving us an unfair advantage over those poor victimized women.

But, women *love* to trot this fabrication out and men should not only let them, but agree!

If it becomes accepted that a woman's marital contribution is equivilant to $134,000/yr, then imagine how this will look in court when Princess decides to "cash out" of the marriage.

Hmmm... hubby earns $60,000/yr and contributes this to the family well-being*, but wifey contributes a value of $134,000/yr*, making the combined value of both spouses $194,000/yr. Divide this by two and you get $97,000, therefore by Corrupt Divorce Court logic, wifey should be coughing up $37,000/yr to help hubby maintain a lifestyle to which he was accustomed.

Now that she is gone, he will have to hire a substitute to the tune of wifey's claimed value of $134,000/yr to maintain his previous lifestyle. Yes or No?

Men are getting angrier and angrier at the fembot corrupted divorce industry, *and we are going to change it*. Women should be held to this ludicrous claim they love to trot out, because it can easily come back to slap them on their infinitely expanding posteriors.

---

2). Men should encourage, and in fact rally for, the State Run Daycare which the fembots screech on and on about.

This demand shows the depth of useful idiot logic, which makes up 99% of the fembot forces.

Yes, give women State Run Daycare. This will only advantage men while disadvantaging women.
First off, during the nearly guaranted divorce proceedings, wifey turned Medusa will not be able to claim Daycare as an expense.

Not only that, but State Run Daycare will mean the end of private daycares. And does anyone notice that "Big Sister" is now starting to preach out the word that children must go to pre-school in order to give their children a "leg up." In fact*, not* putting your child into pre-school is downright irresponsible...

Do women really not see where this is going?

Marxofembots have stated all along that they wanted to destroy the family *and* motherhood.

Marriage has pretty much already been destroyed, as per fembot ideology...

"We can't destroy the inequities between men and women until we destroy marriage." -- Robin Morgan (ed), Sisterhood is Powerful, 1970, p.537

"The nuclear family must be destroyed, and people must find better ways of living together. ... Whatever its ultimate meaning, *the break-up of families now is an objectively revolutionary process.* ... "Families have supported oppression by separating people into small, isolated units, unable to join together to fight for common interests." -- Functions of the Family, Linda Gordon, WOMEN: A Journal of Liberation, Fall 1969

Job well done, Marxofembots. Men have been made to be completely useless as far as families are concerned, supported by recent false propagandist fembot declarations that fathers are completely unneccessary in the family.

Gee... well, now that a massive wedge has been successfully placed between men and women, *what would be the next logical step for the Marxofembots to take?* Could it be the end of motherhood?

"[W]omen, like men, should not have to bear children.... The destruction of the biological family, never envisioned by Freud, will allow the emergence of new women and men, *different from any people who have previously existed.*" -- Alison Jaggar, Political Philosophies of Women's Liberation: Feminism and Philosophy, (Totowa, NJ: Littlefield, Adams & Co. 1977)

"No woman should be authorized to stay at home and raise her children. Society should be totally different. *Women should not have that choice,* precisely because if there is such a choice, too many women will make that one." -- Interview with Simone de Beauvoir, "Sex, Society, and the Female Dilemma," Saturday Review, June 14, 1975, p.18

"[I]f even 10 percent of American women remain full-time homemakers, this will reinforce traditional views of what women ought to do and encourage other women to become full-time homemakers at least while their children are young.... *This means that no matter how any individual feminist might feel about child care and housework, the movement as a whole [has] reasons to discourage full-time homemaking."* -- Jane J. Mansbridge, Why We Lost the ERA, p.100

And how, oh how, could the fembots hope to destroy something so biologically natural as motherhood... how could they do this... come on linear thinking, you can do it...

"The care of children ..is infinitely better left to the best trained practitioners of both sexes who have chosen it as a vocation...[This] would further undermine family structure while contributing to the freedom of women." -- Kate Millet, Sexual Politics, 178-179

"In order to raise children with equality, we must take them away from families and communally raise them" -- Dr. Mary Jo Bane, feminist and assistant professor of education at Welleslry College and associate director of the school's Center for Research on Woman

"It takes a village to raise a child." -- Hillary Clinton, future dictator & anti-christ.

Yes, ladies, *you're next!* You are about to find out what it is like to be the men who you've gleefully bashed for the past 30 some years.

The push will be on for women to give their children to the State right from the get-go *so you can work your ass off in the fields.*

Why do you think all of the Marxofembots keep on hammering on and on about the $0.76 myth? Do you think that they don't know what really causes the wage-gap? Do you think that they don't understand it is because of women's choices? Do you think that they don't understand that the *only way* for the wage-gap to be solved is to take away women's choices *and force them* to work like *equal slaves* right alongside the already work-enslaved males which they have convinced you to despise?

They know what they are doing. Most rotten traitors are quite aware of what they are doing.

You're next, ladies. And you know what, men aren't going to give two shits about the plight of spoiled entitlement princesses after the way they've gleefully degraded men's worth in society, *time and time again!*

And how are they going to bring this in?

Well, they will start to turn family courts against women. They will no longer accept so many arguments that women should be able screw men financially because of the "best interests of the child."

The courts will start to say that there is *no excuse* for you ladies. Children will not be your cash-cow anymore! The courtroom decree will be: "Get off your ass and get to work!"

Eventually, even married women will be forced to bring their children to the State Run Daycare Centres, much like the Public School system, and motherhood will be abolished the same way that fatherhood has been destroyed.

And you will work, work, work.

And you will earn $1.00 for every $1.00 that a man earns.

Congratulations!

You will also likely learn how to swing a sledgehammer or how to empty trash cans into the back of a garbage truck.

And men should support this! Yes, men should support the fembot demands that we need State Run Daycare because it just doesn't seem to matter how many times we explain things, very few entitlement princesses are willing to look at the big picture or to imagine how things will be 10 or 20 years from now. The only way that greedy princesses will "get it" en masse, is for men to allow feminism to have its way *and in doing so, make women miserable by giving them what they have been convinced to ask for.* Not to mention that it will aid men financially in family court decisions by relieving them of slaving for childcare expenses.

Nothing will finally turn *all* women against feminism more than being forced to live life according to the true feminist goals themselves. They certainly won't turn on feminism for men's sake, or even their children's sake. This has been vividly illustrated over the past decades. But me thinks they will turn on feminism when feminism turns on women.

Feminism is a poisonous snake. Now that it has killed off men's role in the family, it is coiling up to strike women's role in the family and since men have no more stake in the family except as a wage slave, it is in men's best interest to encourage women to become "equal" wage slaves right along side of the men.

Feminism was never about "women's rights," it was always about destroying people's close relationships and eliminating the nuclear family. They are half done, State Run Daycare will be the first strike against women, just like No Fault Divorce was the first strike against men.

Why General Motors Deserves to Go Broke

. · 16 April 2007 · Archived copy · Original

The only TV Channel I watch anymore is the Business News Network, and even that is getting *awfully* shaky because the female anchors just love to promote fembot propaganda in between reporting stock prices and business stories. It annoys me to no end.

But **what really pisses me off** is that GM Cadillac thinks that displaying this anti-male advertisement OVER and OVER on the Business Channel will actually increase their sales.

http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Nug8kK5_6go

I will NEVER drive a Cadillac because of this ad.

Here's a message from No Ma'am Blog to General Motors:

Hate Bounces, you tin crap producing assholes. ***GFY!***

If this ad annoys you too, let them know here (scroll down and click "other" to get to the comments section):

https://contactus.gmcanada.com/english/email_us.aspx

Feel free to link this blogpost and send them a simple message like this:

GFY! http://no-maam.blogspot.com/2007/04/why-general-motors-deserves-to-go-broke.html
.

Diary of a Tired Black Man

. · 22 April 2007 · Archived copy · Original

I picked up this tip for a movie to watch from the MGTOW forum, and Egghead http://egghead.adamsspace.com/ wrote a good short little paragraph about it so I figure I'll just copy & paste his comment here:

Diary of a Tired Black Man

Diary of a Tired Black Man is an independent film that is generating a lot of discussion amongst men's rights activists. I encourage everyone to see it, and spread the word about it to others.

Also, another couple of good blogs for you to check out:

Wacko World Chronicles

http://wackoworldchronicles.blogspot.com/

and

Rand's World

http://randsworld.blogspot.com/

Aaghh! My Complete DISGUST with Uccelline for Encouraging a Culture of Death Amongst Babies!

. · 22 April 2007 · Archived copy · Original

http://abirdsnest.wordpress.com/2007/04/19/scotus-you-displease-me-mightily/#comments
YUCK! The work of the Devil Himself! This is INDEFENSIBLE!

.

And somehow, men blogging to voice their opposition against feminism is considered by Marxofeminists to be a hate crime and contributing to a "culture of violence against women."

.

Good Grief, Charlie Brown!

.
Feminists are the lowest form of life on the planet.
.
I am sickened by this.
.
I demand that feminists be given another name than "human."
.
Feminists are vile and sick. They are NOT the same species as me.
.
I am better than them, and I know it is true because for all my shortcomings, I can recognize them as sadistic murderers while they cannot.
.
****
.
A quote I'm shamelessly pinching from Eternal Bachelor's blog:
.
http://eternalbachelor.blogspot.com/2007/04/my-body-my-choice-to-have-my-baby.html
.
As a trainee doctor I had to watch a late abortion. The girl, we were told, was pregnant through no fault of her own. Possibly she didn't know that sex was all about making babies. The operation was full of euphemisms. At no point was the victim identified as a baby and only once as a foetus. Reference was made to 'stopping the heart' as if the heart didn't belong to anyone. At no point was it mentioned that the baby was being killed or was dead. In fact the dismemberment was carried out with the heart still beating because it took too long to stop. The 'contents of the uterus' were extracted - arms, legs, torso and a head like a cracked egg dripping white brains. The 'products of conception' were then checked and the procedure deemed successful. This is not what I signed up for. I want to help heal, not kill. Instead of talking about abortion it would be more honest to say 'killing unborn babies' because that is what happens.
.
****
.
A survivor of the feminist death culture gives his opinion of Marxofeminists:
.

"I made it, you sick fembots! I'm gonna be a MGTOW Blogger when I grow up!"

.

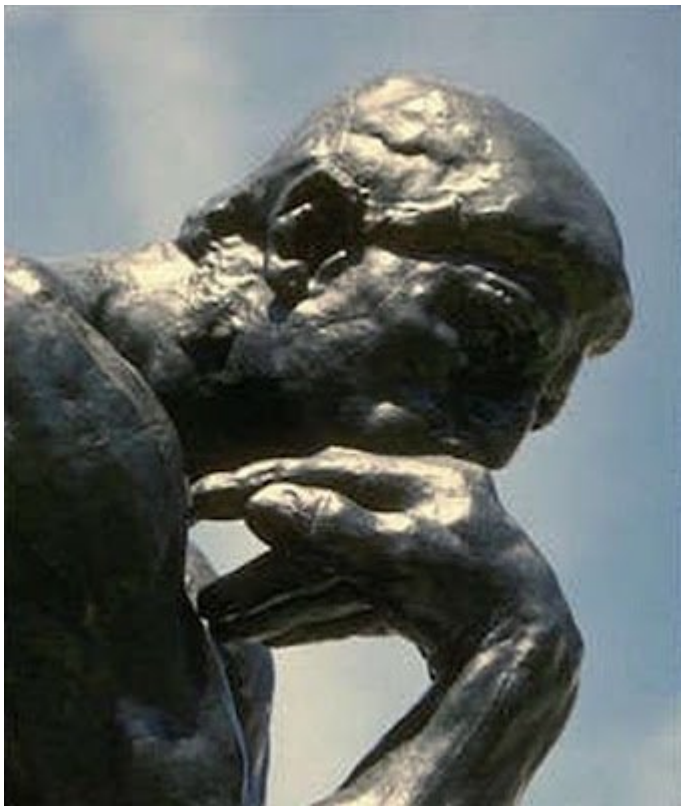
(Lol! I think he might be related to Fred X!)

http://fredxblog.blogspot.com/

End "Singles Suffrage"

. · 24 April 2007 · Archived copy · Original

Think about this: How the world would *instantly* change if we only granted the vote to people who were married.



It's not unthinkable. Countries like the USA are set up as a Republic with *limited* democracy, after all. This is why men in the USA did not receive universal suffrage until 1856 and women not until 1920. (And a little math for you ladies, 64 years *is not* thousands of years!). I copied and posted a speech made by Robert Welch back in 1961 about this subject, if you would like a little background on this:
http://no-maam.blogspot.com/2007/04/republic-versus-democracy.html

The advantages to only allowing married people to vote would be enormous!

First and foremost, the nuclear family would become rock solid, which would be highly desireable as *everybody* knows the family is the basic fundamental unit of society. *Even Marxofembots and their Homomarxist allies who attack marriage know this*. This is, of course, why they ferverently attack marriage; to cause enough societal destruction to make the population malleable and enable them to socially re-engineer society according to their sick ideas. (And no matter what you think about democracy - *nobody voted for this!*)

"Being queer means pushing the parameters of sex, sexuality, and family, and in the process, *transforming the very fabric of society.*" -- Paula Ettelbrick, “Since When Is Marriage a Path to Liberation?”, in William Rubenstein, ed., Lesbians, Gay Men and the Law (New York: The New Press, 1993)

"The destruction of the biological family, never envisioned by Freud, will allow the emergence of *new women and men, different from any people who have previously existed.*" -- Alison Jaggar, Political Philosophies of Women's Liberation: Feminism and Philosophy, (Totowa, NJ: Littlefield, Adams & Co. 1977)

Marriage would again become something desireable, rather than scorned. After all, if only married couples could

vote, the government would have to cater to them in order to get elected - and they would also start to ignore the whack-jobbies in Academia who continually spew forth their treasonous subversive plot to alter society without the people knowing it.

Married couples will, of course, always vote for their own best interests. This is human nature, but this is a good way to harness human selfishness, because what married couples want is for their families to be protected, safe and secure. Even the Supreme Court of the USA has acknowledged this, *twice*:

http://www.law.cornell.edu/supct/html/historics/USSC_CR_0442_0584_ZS.html

(Phyllis Schlafly wrote http://www.eagleforum.org/column/2006/june06/06-06-21.html): Americans have always assumed that parents share decision-making authority because only parents can determine what is in the best interest of their own children. Chief Justice Warren Burger, writing in 1979 for the majority in Parham v. J.R. (Linked above), stated that ever since Blackstone (who wrote in 1765), the law "has recognized that natural bonds of affection lead parents to act in the best interests of their children."

and

http://www.law.cornell.edu/supct/html/99-138.ZS.html

(Phyllis Schlafly wrote http://www.eagleforum.org/column/2006/june06/06-06-21.html): As recently as 2000, the Supreme Court in Troxel v. Granville (linked above) reaffirmed this principle and upheld the "presumption that fit parents act in the best interests of their children." The Troxel case rejected the argument that a judge could supersede a fit parent's judgment about his or her child's "best interest.

So, think about it. *What is in best interests of the child?*

Ultimately, the best interests of the child will lead to married people voting for issues that encourage society to be safe, strong and economically viable. They will also vote for strong marriage laws, which is good as this is the cornerstone of civilization, but they will not likely vote for destructive laws discriminating against divorced people because they will know, deep down, that but for the grace of God, they may one day be divorced *themselves* and no longer have a say.

Married people will not vote against single people, because they will recognize that their own children will likely be single adults for a spell before they find a suitable mate - and in the meantime, parents will want their single, adult children to succeed. So they will vote for governments which encourage this.

Married people will not vote against widows/widowers, because they will know that one day, they will likely end up in that situation themselves, and therefore will want to ensure that society treats such people fairly and with dignity.

Giving the vote only to married couples would also completely even out the sexes at the ballot box. It would be *exactly* 50/50 between the sexes, so both would receive equal representation.

Giving the vote only to married people would also restore much needed stature to the institution of marriage, as married people would become the "ruling class." It would be an extra incentive to be married.

Nobody would be discriminated against, because *everyone* has the opportunity to choose to marry and become part of the ruling class. You could even easily allow for politicians to run for office while being single, but only married people could vote for them, so they would still cater the family/the fundamental unit of a sound society. And this is

good, because I will likely be single when I run for the First President of the Republic of Western Canada.
http://no-maam.blogspot.com/2007/03/solution-to-save-western-civilization.html

http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Western_Canada_Party
And would Marxofeminists and Homomarxists complain that they are discriminated against? Most likely. But how much should we care when they openly admit that they are intent on altering society and even human beings very core nature, by subversively causing division and chaos?

"A middle ground might be to fight for same sex marriage and its benefits, and then, *once granted, redefine the instution completely,* to demand the right to marry *not as a way of adhering to society's moral codes* but rather to debunk a myth and *radically alter* an archaic institution." -- Michelangelo Signorile, "Bridal Wave," OUT Magazine, December/January 1994, p.161

"[Marriage] enforces women's dependence on men, *it enforces heterosexuality* and it imposes the prevailing masculine and feminine character structures on the next generation." -- Alison Jaggar, Feminist Politics and Human Nature

"[E]nlarging the concept to embrace same-sex couples *would necessarily transform it into something new*....Extending the right to marry to gay people -- that is, abolishing the traditional gender requirements of marriage -- can be one of the means, perhaps the principal one, through which the institution divests itself of the sexist trappings of the past." -- Tom Stoddard, quoted in Roberta Achtenberg, et al, "Approaching 2000: Meeting the Challenges to San Francisco's Families," The Final Report of the Mayor's Task Force on Family Policy, City and County of San Francisco, June 13, 1990, p.1.

"The cultural institutions which embody and enforce those interlocked aberrations - for instance, law, art, religion, nation-states, the family, tribe, or commune based on father-right - these institutions are real and they must be destroyed." -- Andrea Dworkin, Our Blood: Prophecies And Discourses On Sexual Politics - The Root Cause, (Harper & Row, 1976)

They never asked the rest of us to vote on whether we wanted to be fundamentally changed according to their ideals either. They just assume they are better than the rest of us. Nope, these people don't respect democracy or rights anyway, except to manipulate them subversively in order to pass *their* agenda by way of Critical Theory and Hegelian-Marxist Dialectical Arguments. (Or was I sleeping when the vote was held on whether we wanted to be transformed in marriageless, family-less, "new humans?")
http://no-maam.blogspot.com/2007/02/what-is-marxism-and-how-does-it-work.html

****

Some quotes illustrating the Marxofeminist's "desired Utopia" which we *did not vote for:*

"Differences [between men and women], including the products of social inequality, MAKE UNEQUAL TREATMENT NOT UNEQUAL AT ALL." -- Catharine MacKinnon, "Reflections on Sex Equality Under Law," Yale Law Journal, 1991

"The proportion of men must be reduced to and maintained at approximately 10% of the human race." -- Sally Miller Gearhart, in The Future - If There Is One - Is Female

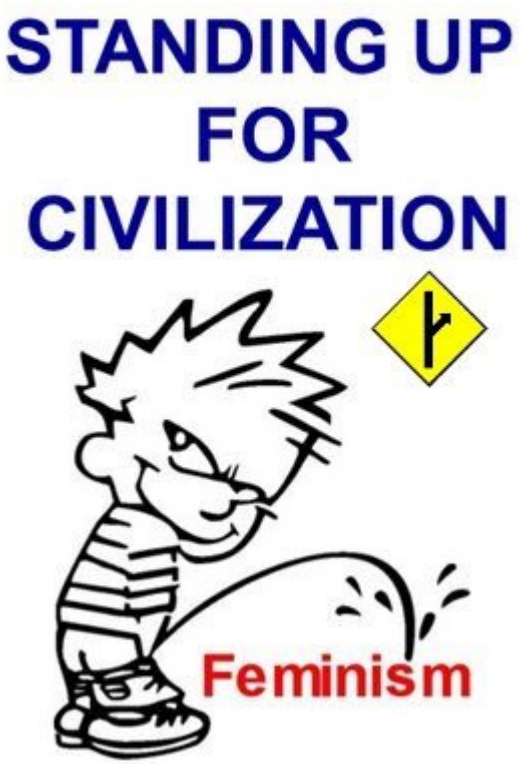
"...[W]omen and men are distinct species or races ... men are biologically inferior to women; male violence is a biological inevitability; to eliminate it, *one must eliminate the species/race itself*... in eliminating the biologically inferior species/race Man, the new Ubermensch Womon (prophetically foreshadowed by the lesbian separatist herself) will have the earthly dominion that is her true biological destiny. We are left to infer that the society of her creation will be good because she is good, biologically good. In the interim, incipient Super Womon will not do anything to 'encourage' women to 'collaborate' with men--no abortion clinics or battered woman sanctuaries will come from her. After all, she has to conserve her 'energy' which must not be dissipated keeping 'weaker' women alive through reform measures. The audience applauded the passages on female superiority/male inferiority enthusiastically. This doctrine seemed to be music to their ears." -- from a panel on "Lesbianism as a Personal Politic" that met in New York City, Lesbian Pride Week 1977; Andrea Dworkin, Letters from a War Zone, - Take Back The Day - Biological Superiority: The World's Most Dangerous and Deadly Idea (1977), (Dutton Publishing, 1989) p.146

"Not merely about equal rights for women ... Feminism aspires to be much more than this. It bids to be a totalizing scheme resting on a grand theory, one that is as all-inclusive as Marxism, as assured of its ability to unmask hidden meanings as Freudian psychology, and as fervent in its condemnation of apostates as evangelical fundamentalism. Feminist theory provides a doctrine of original sin: The world's evil's originate in male supremacy." -- Daphne Patai and Noretta Koertge, Professing Feminism: Cautionary Tales from the Strange World of Women's Studies, p.183 (***Note: Patai & Koertge write from a critical perspective of where feminism has been going and use the above in the context of an example to illustrate their case. See Daphne Patai's website here: http://www.daphnepatai.com/ And read about her work here: http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Daphne_Patai)

****

Peeing for Society!

. · 1 May 2007 · Archived copy · Original



.

A Ghost for German Toilet Seats http://www.dw-world.de/dw/article/0,1564,1378083,00.html

.

Boys Told No Standing To Urinate http://www.worldnetdaily.com/news/article.asp?ARTICLE_ID=52189

.

I encourage all men to stand up and pee directly into the garbage can next to the toilet, so as not to offend the ladies.

.

No Garbage Can?

.

Try the bathroom sink (If you're standing, you can make it).

.

"Consider urinals and the Army. They were never a problem, because men regard the entire earth as a urinal in waiting. The side of the road, the middle of the road, a tree, the ocean--they don't discriminate. The way feminists see oppression everywhere, men see urinals. It's a design feature." -- Fred On Everything
http://www.fredoneverything.net/index.html

.

Fembots STILL don't get it. We aim for the toilet just to be polite!

The Worst Canadian of All Time

. · 4 May 2007 · Archived copy · Original

Thanks to Suzanne of Big Blue Wave http://www.bluewavecanada.blogspot.com/ for making me aware of this.

.

.

The Beaver Magazine is holding an online poll for who is the Worst Canadian of all time. I know, I know, lots of you are thinking *Pierrette Bouchard http://www.fathers.ca/news_stories_on_sow_report.htm* - close! She's a rotten filthy Canadian alright. But she's not the worst!

.

Hmmm... who could Rob be thinking of? Could it be Jean Chretien? That forked tongue dictator? Nope, I'm not thinking Chretien... but that is getting *awfully* warm!

.

Sheila Copps? Nope.

.

Irene Matheson? Nope.

.

Maria Minna? Nope... *well*... oohhhh, that's a toughie, but nope.

.

Of course, the Worst Canadian of All Time is: **PIERRE ELLIOT TRUDEAU!**

.

Please vote for Trudeau the Treacherous Traitor here:

.

http://www.thebeaver.ca/bea.asp?subsection=ext&page=WC

.

From No Fault Divorce & Abortion Laws to creating the Socialist Soviet of Canuckistan, the man was a traitor in the first degree. Its too bad that he is no longer alive for it would have been nice to see him spend some time behind bars for betraying his country.

.

Although, Chretien is still alive, and we all know how he loves to step in for Trudeau...

.

Read why I despise Trudeau in the following posts:

.

http://no-maam.blogspot.com/2007/01/pierre-elliot-trudeau-cultural-marxist.html

.

http://no-maam.blogspot.com/2007/03/multi-tasking-pink-proletariat.html

Spring Is Here!

. · 4 May 2007 · Archived copy · Original

.

Yup, Spring has come to Beautiful British Columbia and it isn't the daffodils that tipped me off.

.

Nope.

.

I'm a guy, and I don't notice Spring by blooming flowers or hundreds of baby bunnies hopping around.

.

In BC, we know it's Spring when the @#%&$ Canucks get eliminated from the playoffs. It has happened every year of my life. The Canucks lose, I look out the window and go, "Hey, it's Spring out."

.

.

Grrrr!

.

Well, maybe after we get over-run by the Marxofeminist Totalitarian State, we can send the losing team up to the Arctic for the summer. Perhaps that will motivate them to win the Cup just ONCE in my lifetime!

I suppose that the DV Shelters throughout the province will be having a busy night tonight, given that men must be taking out their frustrations by beating up their wives and probably even extinguishing cigarettes into their

children's arms... I mean, the Stanley Cup Playoffs are Canada's Superbowl.

http://no-maam.blogspot.com/2007/02/lest-we-forget-super-bowl-sunday-hoax.html

Sigh. Tomorrow, after I've calmed down from my violently drunken stupor, I'll cash in all my empty beer cans and donate the money to the local anti-family propaganda shelter/divorce center. You know, to show my support for the liars in the Pink Proletariat.

The Privatization of Water?

. · 11 May 2007 · Archived copy · Original

Watch the 10 minute video clip from the authors of the new book, *Thirst: Fighting the Corporate Theft of Our Water.*

http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=fNcDTIcDaVU

Then, please take the time to read this article by Tara Lohan in regard to the book,

http://www.globalresearch.ca/index.php?context=viewArticle&code=LOH20070425&articleId=5483

(Some selected excerpts from the article):

All across the United States, municipal water systems are being bought up by multinational corporations, turning one of our last remaining public commons and our most vital resource into a commodity.

The road to privatization is being paved by our own government. The Bush administration is actively working to loosen the hold that cities and towns have over public water, enabling corporations to own the very thing we depend on for survival.

"We came to see that the conflicts over water are really about fundamental questions of democracy itself: Who will make the decisions that affect our future, and who will be excluded?" they wrote in the book's preface. "And if citizens no longer control their most basic resource, their water, do they really control anything at all?"

...privatization means transforming citizens into customers. Or, in other words, making people engaged in a democratic process into consumers looking to get the best deal.

It is also means taking our most important resource and putting it at the whims of the market.

Currently, water systems are controlled publicly in 90 percent of communities across the world and 85 percent in the United States, but that number is changing rapidly, the authors report in "Thirst." In 1990, 50 million people worldwide got their water services from private companies, but by 2002 it was 300 million and growing.

There are a number of reasons to be concerned.

Globally, corporations are promoting water privatization under the guise of efficiency, but the fact is that they are not paying the full cost of public infrastructure, environmental damage, or healthcare for those they hurt," said Ashley Schaeffer of Corporate Accountability International. "Water is a human right and not a privilege."

The companies first pushed water privatization in developing nations. "But in many instances, those attempts didn't pan out as planned, it being difficult to gouge governments and customers that don't have a lot of money," Public

Citizen reports. "The U.S., by contrast, presented the promise of a steady, reliable revenue stream from customers willing and able to pay water bills."

In Felton, Calif., a small regional utility ran the water system until it was purchased in 2001 by California American Water, a subsidiary of American Water, which is a subsidiary of Thames Water in London, which has also become a subsidiary of German giant RWE. Residents in Felton saw their rates skyrocket, "Thirst" reports. A woman who runs a facility for people in need saw her water bill increase from $250 to $1,275 a month.

(Link to the entire article:
http://www.globalresearch.ca/index.php?context=viewArticle&code=LOH20070425&articleId=5483)

Lol, *AND THEN,* read this piece describing "Public-Private Enterprise" and how **Al Gore**, the same traitor who is instrumental in causing the Global Warming Hype which threatens national sovereignties world wide, was also a *major player* in bringing about the whole notion of "Public-Private Partnerships."

Excerpt from an interview with United Nations expert, Joan Veon (interviewed by Geoff Metcalf for *World Net Daily*, August 27th, 2000):

http://worldnetdaily.com/news/article.asp?ARTICLE_ID=19651

Q: I'd like to throw a few key phases at you and get your response. "Public-private partnerships." That sounds pretty benign.

A: One of the things to remember is the United Nations never defines words. Actually, words end up becoming very hidden in their meaning. That was part of what I was trying to figure out in trying to understand what their agenda was. Public-private partnerships is a phrase I first came across in 1996. I spent six months researching it. I've written two books about it. It is extremely simple and very, very key. And let me say, it is Al Gore who has spearheaded a complete structural change of our government through public-private partnership. Interestingly enough, he's not even talking about it as to why the American people should elect him president when he has already restructured our Constitution. But a public-private partnership is exactly what it says.

Q: Break it down for us into its various components.

A: First of all, it is a partnership. It is a business arrangement. That is extremely important. The idea of any business is profit. The partners in this particular arrangement are both public and private. The public partners pertain to government: local, county, state, federal, foreign and international governments. They can all be involved, one or two or three can be involved.

Q: We have a real good example that was just pushed through and it seemed benign at the time. The agreement that Andy Cuomo blackmailed Smith and Wesson to sign was ostensibly a public-private partnership, which would have resulted in government control of a private industry.

A: The private partners are business, multinational, transnational corporations -- as well as nongovernmental organizations, these minions of a different philosophy other than the Constitution who are all funded by the foundations of the multinational, transnational corporations. So, what is a public-private partnership? It is the shifting of government responsibility and government services into a partnership with other parties -- primarily those who have deep pockets -- because your county, local and state governments are all bankrupt. What they are now saying is, "Look, we need stronger hands, deeper pockets to help us do what we used to do. We're going to do it a little differently."

Q: Once again, the golden rule: The guy with the gold makes the rules.

A: Exactly. They say, "We're going to do it in a partnership, a public-private partnership." The people of Dallas don't want their taxes raised, so they have to use what they call "innovative financing." The city sewer system has just shifted from being owned by the people of Dallas into this new entity, which is a partnership jointly owned by government and business. These people are sitting around the corporate table. The bottom line is, who has the power? Obviously, you and I know very clearly -- whoever has the deepest pockets and the most money has the power. What has just happened?

Q: A redistribution of assets?

A: Yes, sir. A major asset has been shifted out of governmental hands into a new relationship, a public-private partnership that is for business, which is, by way of philosophical bent, fascism, because fascism is the marriage between government and business. The bottom line now is profit -- and the citizens now become customers.

Why not privatize water, eh? Just steal it from us, the people, and then *force us* to buy it back at a profit for whichever Multinational Corporation stole it from us in the first place.

I mean, it's not like we haven't seen privatization popping elsewhere - like private mercenary forces hired by the government to go to the Middle East... *or privatized "police forces" to suppress and terrorize the citizens of New Orleans after Hurricane Katrina.*

Put the pieces together, people. This is some *serious shit* that is happening right underneath our noses.

I'd say "welcome to the New World Order," but I think the new leaders frown on Serfs believing they have a right to speak for themselves.

Another Anti-Feminist Blog!

. · 15 May 2007 · Archived copy · Original

Yes, another man of **good character** has said: *Enough! You Shrill Harpies!*

http://anotherantifeministblog.blogspot.com/

Check it out! He's got some good things to say, as do all men who have not been fooled by Delilah!

The Invasion of the Russian Gold-Diggers

. · 31 May 2007 · Archived copy · Original

You Decide!

Invasion of the Russian Gold-Diggers - by Tom Mitchelson

http://www.dailymail.co.uk/pages/live/femail/article.html?in_article_id=458832&in_page_id=1879

Forget the oligarchs, no one is attracted to money like the new army of Russian beauties taking over London. Femail went undercover to find out what they're REALLY after...

People stare at Natalia. She is stunningly beautiful, elegant, and with a figure that a movie star would die for.

I've known her for four hours and we have just had a bottle of champagne that cost me £200. Now we're strolling down Old Bond Street in London.

She pauses at a jewellery shop and stares in the window. With an exquisitely manicured finger, she points to a diamond encrusted wristwatch.

"This is lovely," she tells me. "Will you buy it for me when the shop opens tomorrow?"

"It's £33,000," I choke. She looks at me, puzzled.

Her blue eyes freeze and she removes her hand from my arm.

"Is money a problem?" she asks, in a caring sort of way.

This is not my normal life. It all started a few weeks earlier when I heard that Britain is under siege from a monstrous regiment of Russian temptresses - arriving here on the billionaire coat tails of Roman Abramovich and his fabulously wealthy friends, and set on grabbing a British boyfriend, a British expense account and a British passport.

Was this true? Or was it just an urban myth? It is certainly widely believed, I found.
There's plenty of talk around the place about Rapacious Russians and Slavic Sirens stalking our streets in search of men - and men with money, at that.

If they exist, they are a glittering army of clever, glamorous, ambitious, sophisticated vamps, descending, locust-like on London, the world's leading financial centre, in a mad search for merchant bankers, commodity traders and City bonus - pocketers.

But was this picture correct? To find out, I would romance the Russianistas, uncover the Ukrainians, and leave no Estonian unturned.

My technique is simple. I shall adopt the persona of a wealthy young man-about-town.
Not wanting to be caught out by elaborate lies, I tell anyone who asks that I inherited my money and amuse myself by writing screenplays.

The truth is I am not a City high-flyer and not even a plumber. In fact, I'm a penniless young writer. But I do own one good suit and I know how to act.

I resolve to spend money I don't have as if there's no tomorrow - and keep a diary that may go some way to keeping me.

I begin my quest in a nightclub in the West End. It is guest-list only. I talk my way onto the list and saunter in.

The crowd is heaving. Sleek women of uncertain backgrounds dance round their handbags, and I can hear the murmur of Slavic accents.

"There's a lot of Eastern Europeans in tonight," I say to the barman.
"Yeah, it's Russian night. Every night is Russian night."

It is 2.37am when I find what I've been looking for. Natalia and I click.
We flirt, we dance and exchange numbers. We arrange a date.

The following evening I'm in a five-star hotel in Mayfair - her choice of meeting point. It seems to be a favourite haunt of hers.

High heels echo over the marble floor and Natalia enters, her Slavic cheekbones accentuated by her tiedback hair.

She's wearing something blue and filmy that shouts money.

She doesn't want to eat because she's worried about her figure, but she does want to drink.
Her tipple is Bollinger 1998 at £180 a go.

My jaw drops, but I have to remember this is her world. As confidently as possible, I take out my wallet.

She tells me that though she's from Moscow, she holidays in Mustique and Monaco and loves Prada.

I ask if she's heard of Primark. She hasn't. And then we're off.

Natalia wants us to meet her friends at a nightclub. I
t's called Pangaea and it's popular with visiting Russians and the younger members of the Royal Family.

This is where Prince Harry took it upon himself to lash out at a photographer, so I know it must be a classy joint.

She gets in free, but it costs me £30. We sit with two other Russian girls and Natalia demands I buy more champagne - which leaves me £150 less well off (not that I was well off anyway).

There's much laughter and joviality. Unfortunately, much of it is in Russian and I'm beginning to feel my function is merely to pick up the bill.

Where is this going? Does Natalia see all men - me included - as cash cows?

It is 4.23am when Natalia and I leave, together, and she sees the wristwatch - £33,000-worth of antique gold, silver and precious stones - in the shop window. So that's where she thinks it's going.

I make my excuses, as they say, and leave. I feel a little let down by Natalia's commercial approach and decide it's wise - if only for the sake of my bank manager's sanity - that we don't see each other again.

Natalia seems less than upset when I tell her so.

Next day, I head west to Chelsea, home of the ultimate oligarch, Roman Abramovich.
There seem to be more Russians in Chelsea than were at the Siege of Stalingrad. They haunt stylish bars, ostentatious restaurants and swanky hotels. Understated good taste is not their scene.

It is here that I meet Svetlana. I'm pretending to be working on my laptop in a bar when I hear the now unmistakable sound of Russian being spoken. Time to make my move.

I've perfected a blatant approach. Once I'm fairly sure the girl is Russian (normally by eavesdropping on her conversations), I sidle over and make lighthearted small-talk to assess the situation. Favoured topics of conversation would be the barman, for example, the bar or the club.
Continuing a conversation with an available Russianista from there on isn't difficult.
After all, she was there to find a suitable man - and I was there to find a suitable woman.
I take Svetlana to the American Bar at the Savoy.

Even without her sixinch heels, she is tall. (I'm 6ft 1in and she towers over me.)
She's from St Petersburg, she tells me, and is 24. She adores nightclubs and giggles about getting in free on account of her uscule skirts.

She tells me: "I find myself very good-looking."

She is proud of her curves - "Men are not dogs, they don't like bones" - and long legs.
As she sips her chilled Vodka Martini she tells me she wants to see more of the world, travelling first class.

Top of her list is Venice. "Venice is one of the seven wonders of the world," she informs me.
As the evening goes on, it turns out Svetlana thinks Disney World in Florida is another of the seven wonders of the world.

As is Nelson's column, apparently. I steer the conversation away from the Millennium Wheel, the Dome of St Paul's and Big Ben...Svetlana turns her attention to hair colour and asks me if I think brunettes are more intelligent than blondes. I tell her I don't.

She nods enthusiastically. "Yes, because if you were a blonde and dyed your hair brunette, how would that make a difference?" I'm impressed by her logic.

"There are even people who think blondes are stupid," she laughs, shaking her golden hair in delight.

I order another Martini. Svetlana tells me that an ex-boyfriend bought her a convertible Mini. I sense she would expect the same from me.

I have a fun evening with Svetlana, but it is obvious that my most important charm (apart from my tolerance of endless discussion of hair colour) is what she believes to be my wealth.

That's what she's looking for - and she'll find it, because she's determined to. But not from me.
In a hotel bar near Hyde Park Corner, I find Ludmila. While ordering drinks, I strike up conversation. She is a

brunette and intelligent. Frighteningly intelligent.

She's 23 and has a Double First from Cambridge.

She's been in England since her parents sent her to boarding school at the age of 15.
We go to a restaurant and she suggests we drink straight vodka.

She is doing her final practical training to become a pathologist. I watch in awe as she expertly dissects her rare steak.

In order to justify my interest in Russian women, I have claimed a knowledge of the nation's literature.

To my horror, between bloody mouthfuls she starts to question me on Tolstoy. I more or less carry it off - and adjust my mental stereotype of a Muscovite moll.

It's an enjoyable evening, and oddly I don't feel she is one of the Russianistas seeking wealth above all else.

Money, however, seems to be assumed in an eligible man.

The meal costs an arm and a leg - the best part of £200. Ludmila does not bat an eyelid and she has no plans on going dutch.

I wonder when the last time was that she paid for anything.

I drop her off in the taxi, and the next morning she sends me a text message telling me she had a nice time.

In other circumstances I might have seen her again, but my wallet would not allow it.
Nastia proves less complicated. She's pretty, pale-skinned and has a pixie-like expression. Audrey Hepburn meets Bjork.

Having overheard her accent in a small coffee shop in central London, I strike up conversation and invite her out for dinner. She consents.

I am sensing a pattern here. These gals will happily accede to a request for a date from any man who looks loaded.

Whether you ever actually get a second date depends on whether you really are rich.
Perhaps there's a sliding scale: first base if you're worth a million, second base for two million.
I ask Nastia where she'd like to go. She says Nobu (one of London's most fashionable and expensive restaurants).

Nastia tells me it's her particular ambition to get to know an Englishman and explains that she is turned on by "money and power". At least she's honest.

She would like to meet a "self-sufficient man which is engaged in favourite business".

I'm delighted when she tells me she finds me a "cheerful person" and that it would be "desirable to communicate further with me".

She adds: "I hope for serious attitude from you."

I take Nastia to Nobu and she apologises for her English.

I tell her it's far better than my Russian. She asks me what I mean. The evening turns into a series of mistranslations.

I ask where in Russia she comes from.

"Vilnius." she replies. "But that's Lithuania," I say, exhibiting my GCSE geography.

"When I born, it in Soviet Union. So I'm Russian. I don't like Lithuanians."

Despite the language barrier, Nastia seems keen and at one point leans over the table and whispers in my ear: "You are my white horse man."

Keen not to lead her on, I tell her I ought to make the last Tube home.

She tells me: "I think we met because of satellites hitting."

She really must think I'm Mr Moneybags to be giving me this spiel.

Having remortgaged my flat, I am able to pay the bill at Nobu, and Nastia and I part as friends. I am beginning to think that even if they are all golddiggers, they are tremendous fun.

But then I encounter Oxana from Ekaterinburg, whom I've been put in touch with through a friend.

She wants to meet me near the Bank of England. This is clearly a woman who likes the proximity of money.

I book a restaurant with a Michelin-starred chef and wait in the bar for her to arrive. Blonde with harsh features, she briskly shakes my hand and refuses a drink from the bar. She wants a cup of tea.

Then, in a whiney voice, she begins to catalogue her complaints about life.

She hates the weather, she is cold, she is tired and she doesn't feel well.

And she doesn't live in Kensington, near all her Russian friends, and is angry about it.
We move into the restaurant and examine the menu.

After a moment she puts it down and says: "There is nothing I wish to eat on this card."

"Nothing at all?" I ask. "Nothing."

I mentally shrug and go over to the maitre d' and explain discreetly: "I'm very sorry but something's come up and we have to leave."

At this point, Oxana joins us. "To which restaurant do we go now?" she asks loudly.
Finally we find a restaurant she approves of.

Now she doesn't want tea: she grabs the wine list.

She explains to me that she had been married to a man from Azerbaijan who was resident in the UK.

Now they are divorced. On the basis of my evening with her, he will have had no difficulty proving unreasonable behaviour.

Throughout the meal she keeps talking on her mobile phone (in Russian).

She asks me whether I have any single friends because all her friends want to meet men.

"Are they Russian?" I ask. "Of course."

I bid farewell to Oxana, muttering good riddance once she's out of earshot.

Natalia, Ludmila, Nastia, Svetlana, Oxana - were they typical? It had become clear to me that I had only scratched the surface - that there are thousands, maybe tens of thousands out there, looking for a rich British date.

But let me offer a word of warning to over-sexed Englishmen hoping for an easy catch and quick escape.

These Russians are no credulous bimbos. Nor are they one-night escorts in search of a smart restaurant, champagne and a taxi home.

They may be hot stuff, but they are smarter than you, more determined than you - and probably taller than you, too.

So think twice before messing with an unattached Russian lady. Believe me, there will be a high price to pay.

On behalf of No Ma'am, Rob Fedders would like to reaffirm his delight in the following website:

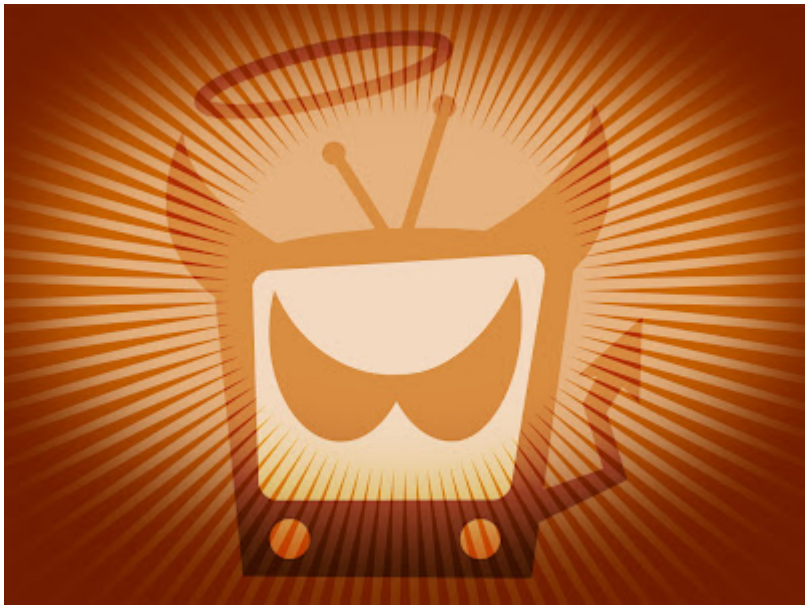
http://www.nomarriage.com/

Video: The New Rulers of the World - by John Pilger

. · 4 June 2007 · Archived copy · Original

Thanks to Pjanus for leaving a link to this excellent video about the effects of Globalization on the Third World, and the complicity of Multi-National Corporations, the IMF & World Monetary Fund, the Media, and yes, even our own Governments.
http://video.google.ca/videoplay?docid=-7932485454526581006&q=New+Rulers+of+the+World+John+Pilger

The video is 53 minutes long and well put together (read: a better use of your time than listening to the propaganda box you have playing in the background - you know, it's beckoning you, *"turn off your brain, internet reader... come watch my screen... let me think for you..."* **Click!**).



Amorality

. · 16 June 2007 · Archived copy · Original

The title says it all! Only a year ago, I got kicked off a prominent "Men's" board for a month for trying to discuss the apparent amorality that exists in women. The moderater exploded at such a wild generalization, being that he is a closet mangina posing as an MRA. I won't expose his name here, as I believe it is up to each pussy whipped, chivalrous mangina to come out of the closet on his own accord... But, this mangina did me an unwitting favour. Lol!

After my shunning punishment, I left the sicko world of the mangina-styled MRM which has gained absolutely zero ground (and actually lost ground), by adhering to the time proven failure of a philosophy of speaking softly and carying no sticks. Lol! The mangina-styled MRM caused me so much frustration because they still adhere to politically corrected Marxist party line *of never calling women on their bullshit*! And, this is how the finest blog on the web, also known as **No Ma'am** http://www.eebell.net/mwc/nomaam.mp3 came into being. So that I could freely say things like this:

Women are inherently amoral.

Yes indeed, they are, and until women prove me wrong, my superior opinion will be regarded as the gospel truth here at No Ma'am. Quite frankly, I don't see how anything will ever be accomplished within the "Sexual War" until some glaringly obvious things about women's collective behaviour becomes regarded as a fact which can be freely discussed, rather than "known but ignored" out of politically correct fear.

First off, let's look at a definition of Amorality.

http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Amorality

Amorality *is the quality of having no concept of right or wrong. 'Amorality' or 'amoralism' may also refer to knowing of right and wrong but lacking a belief in the absolute existence of any moral laws.*

However, "amoral" must be distinguished from "immoral" in that amoral persons either do not possess ethical notions at all as a result of an unusual upbringing or inborn traits (see Antisocial personality disorder) or else do not subscribe to any moral code.

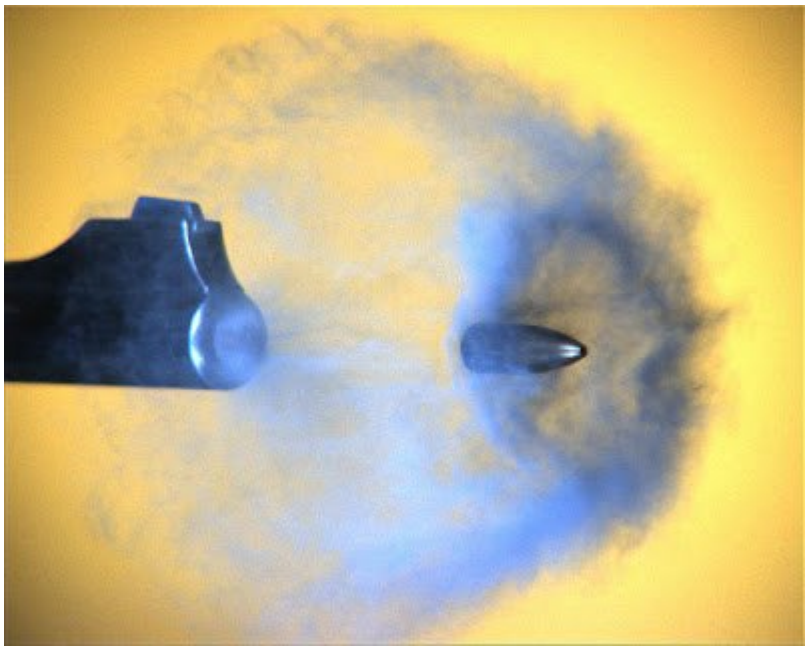
Lol! I've had some women get down right furious at me for suggesting that their sex has a tremendous problem with amorality. However, the only way women will ever be able to shake an "amoral moniker" is to behave with a strong ethical code of right and wrong, and women are apparently reticent to do this in any meaningful way, so, the label fits. Sorry, girls.

And what, pray tell, illustrates the collective amorality of testosterone challenged humans better than Battered Women's Syndrome? We should all thank fembot psycho-ologist Lenore Walker for inventing such an absurd notion, thus proving the amorality of women for the world to see. Once we get over our fear of telling the Empresses that they aren't wearing any clothes, the amorality argument falls into place rather neatly.

Now, think about what "Battered Women's Syndrome" really implies about women. Forget, for a moment about how wrong *you* know it is, and think about what it says about women's psychological make up.

Battered Women's Syndrome (BWS) makes women into the most weak-minded human beings that exist on our planet - it makes women out to be *less mentally capable than a typical child*!

Think about it. The whole notion of BWS is that it is perfectly natural for a woman, if faced with mental and physical abuse, to turn into a murderer, *because of* ***a woman's*** *psychological make up.*



There is no Battered Man's Syndrome and there is no Battered Child Syndrome. *Only women turn into murderous psychos when faced with abuse.* Since women commit the majority of child abuse, one might think that Battered Child Syndrome should be prevalent in our society, in fact, scores of children should be blowing the heads off of their abusive mothers and getting off scott free, with sympathy, in the court system - but children are not murdering their abusive mothers. Only women get away with murdering people who "abuse" them.

When children and teens are subjected to bullying by other children, they don't go crackers and murder the bully, either.

Nope. Only women turn into killers when faced with abuse.

Think about what that implies about the psychological weakness of women.

Battered Women's Syndrome should be the biggest slap in the face of "liberated" women that exists in our society, for the very notion of it says that women are so psychologically weak *that even children are capable of controlling themselves better than women.* Otherwise, we would have Battered Child Syndrome, wouldn't we?

Women should be *outraged* about people like Lenore Walker and her Bullshit Women's Syndrome, making women out to be weak-minded, uncontrollable psychos.

Why are *women* not outraged and speaking out against the travesty of justice displayed in the Mary Winkler case?

When I first heard about the Winkler sentence of "3 years but might get out in 60 days," I thought they were talking about how long she would be held in solitary confinement before being released into the general prison population to grow old and die in her new pinstripe suit.

But no, this is instead the whole sentence a woman receives for taking a shotgun and blowing out a man's spine while he is sleeping.

Q: Why aren't women outraged that they, collectively, are being regarded as too weak-minded of human beings to be held accountable for such disgusting behaviour?

A: Amorality

I believe that most women really do know that Battered Women's Syndrome is a bunch of bullshit. If they don't, then it would be easy to make the case that women are really, really stupid - and I don't believe that women are stupid.

Men do not let other men get away with miscarriages of justice like this. One would think that *moral* women would be outraged at the nothing prison sentences given to females when they commit hideous crimes like murder or infanticide. One would also think that feminists would be outraged at the notion of weak-minded women being easily transformed into psycho bitches in the face of adversity.

As long as women in general stay silent about these miscarriages of justice, they are illustrating complicity with these criminal women and they are rightfully earning the label of "Amoral."

Don't like the label, ladies? Think about how this type of "zero justice" behaviour on the part of women would have to labelled without using the notion of Amorality... it would invite an even nastier notion about women... that they purposefully choose evil over justice.

More on this subject to come...

Book: The Fraud of Feminism - by E. Belfort Bax

. · 17 June 2007 · Archived copy · Original

Yup, Anti-Feminists keep popping up out of the woodwork everywhere...

Here are some excerpts of a preface from the book:

... Feminism in this and in some other countries has won well-nigh [near] all its formal demands.

...and so the pitch-forking of women into administrative posts proceeds galore. But the main contentions of *The Fraud of Feminism* have not been affected by the change in question.

Though women have been conceded all the rights of men, their privileges as females have remained untouched, while the sentimental "pull" they have over men, and the favouritism shown them in the courts, civil and criminal, often in flagrant violation of elementary justice, continues as before.

The result of their position on juries, as evinced in certain trials, has rather confirmed the remarks made in Chapter II. anent [concerning] hysteria than otherwise.

The sex-bias of men in favour of women and the love of the advanced woman towards her sex-self show no sign of abatement.

Proposals to the effect that in the event of infanticide by a mother the putative father should be placed in the dock merely because he is a man are received with applause.

The other day, at a court held in a fashionable town of the south coast, on a prostitute being brought upcharged with soliciting, a female "justice," recently appointed, declaimed against the wickedness of punishing prostitutes for soliciting while men were never brought up charged with the offence. (Needless to say, there was the usual male fool to be found in the body of the court, who shouted:"Hear ! Hear !")

Now is it conceivable, I ask, that anybody can be so infatuated with Feminism as not to see that a prostitute who solicits nightly in the exercise of her trade-- i.e . for the purpose of money-making--is in a different position from a man who, once in a way, may, urged by natural passion, make advances to a woman?

Such a person must be unable to see distinctions in anything, one would think. Besides, it is not true that men, if charged with the annoyance or molestation of women, cannot be, and have not been, prosecuted for the offence.

The lady "justice" in question would probably like to see a man paired with a prostitute in the dock every time the latter gave occasion for police action. Such is the Feminist notion of justice.

There are a vast number of men who cultivate the pretence of having a contempt for, or a prejudice against, their own sex. The idea seems to be to pander to the sex-vanity of the "New Woman."

Every popular writer caters for this prejudice.

No one can have failed to notice the persistent journalistic and literary "stunt" by which the man is portrayed in the light of a miserable and abject living creature as a foil [frustration] to the "noble animal"woman.

There is scarcely a play, short story or novel the plot of which in any way admits of it where this now stale device is not dragged in in some form or shape.

... This sort of thing is not without its influence on the course of justice, as the daily papers still continue to show us. Times have not changed in this respect.

... There is no indication that the general public has a dawning sense that, to adapt the common metaphor, "What is sauce for the goose is sauce for the gander."

Everywhere we hear the same old bogus grievances of the female sex trotted out as crying for remedy, but never the injustice of a man being compelled, whatever his economic position, to keep his wife, while a woman is under no corresponding obligation to keep her husband. No urgency is suggested for removing the anomaly that a husband is amenable for his wife's libels and slanders; none that a boy of fourteen is punishable for a sexual offence to which he has been incited by a girl of sixteen, who gets off scot-free; none that the obligation of a husband, whose wife wishes to bring an action for divorce against him, to furnish her with the money to fight him, should be abolished.

On the other hand, every law, every judicial decision, every case in the courts, civil and criminal, that on the most superficial view can be exploited by the conventional Feminist claptrap to prove the wickedness of "man-made law" to woman, is gripped by the beak of the Feminist harpy to help build up her nest of lying sex-prejudice, whence she and her confraternity may sally forth and by their raids on male sentiment not merely help to buttress up existing female privilege, but wherever possible to increase the already one-sided injustice of the law and its administration towards men in the interest of the other sex.

August, 1921

http://members.garbersoft.net/spartacus/bax.htm

DID YOU MISS THE DATE?

AUGUST, 1921!

Still believe in "equity feminism?"

Still believe that the suffragettes were noble creatures fighting to "liberate" women?

Still believe that it was only second wave feminists that were fucked up?

There was no such thing as second wave feminism, people. When you read up on women's behaviour in the 1920's they were already getting out of hand... then the Great Depression happened, re-uniting men and women, crushing fembot lunacy with the hard reality of poverty... then World War II happened, compounding upon the depression... then we came out of the war, and within one generation, "Second Wave Feminism" picked up right where those responsible for Suffragette Feminism left off in the 20's.

There is something deep within women's nature that makes them antagonistic and hostile to men. This has been acknowledged since the Bible where God tells Adam that he will put enmity between him and the woman.

We think that Warren Farrell is the only guy who has written about feminism from the male perspective, when in fact, we men are doing ourselves a MASSIVE dis-service by refusing to acknowledge the plethora of literature that

has been written about "Gender Studies" from the dawn of time up until WWII. Yet we think somehow think that we are discovering something new.

Every MRA who spends countless hours a year on MRM forums should spend a few evenings sifting through the writings of those before our times, and compare them to the issues we are facing today.

Here are two good places to start:

http://members.garbersoft.net/spartacus/home.htm
(read the fundamental arguments at the beginning which are excellent, and then scroll down to find a reading list about "gender studies" that is in chronological order and spans centuries.

and:

http://www.theabsolute.net/minefield/woman.pdf

It's up to you. You once discovered that you were living in the "Matriarchy" and you chose to unplug... do you think it is impossible, after that experience, that there could possibly be even a deeper level to this whole thing?

The More Things Change, The More They Stay The Same

. · 19 June 2007 · Archived copy · Original

Excerpt from *The Woman Question*, by Stephen Leacock - written in 1916

http://members.garbersoft.net/spartacus/leacock.htm

I was sitting the other day in what is called the Peacock Alley of one of our leading hotels, drinking tea with another thing like myself, a man. At the next table were a group of Superior Beings in silk, talking. I couldn't help overhearing what they said--at least not when I held my head a little sideways.

They were speaking of the war.

"There wouldn't have been any war," said one, " if women were allowed to vote."

"No, indeed," chorused all the others.

The woman who had spoken looked about her defiantly. She wore spectacles and was of the type that we men used to call, in days when we still retained a little courage, an Awful Woman.

"When women have the vote," she went on "there will he no more war. The women will forbid it."

She gazed about her angrily. She evidently wanted to be heard. My friend and I hid ourselves behind a little fern and trembled.

But we listened. We were hoping that the Awful Woman would explain how war would be ended. She didn't. She went on to explain instead that when women have the vote there will be no more poverty, no disease, no germs, no cigarette smoking and nothing to drink but water. It seemed a gloomy world.

"Come," whispered my friend, " this is no place for us. Let us go to the bar."

I've heard this before, somewhere, there's a group of people running around in the modern day and age that says this kind of tripe too... Oh yes, they are called feminists.

Jeez, the second and third wave feminists of the modern day really are whacked out, aren't they. *Nothing like the noble suffragettes who only wanted equality.*

The thing is, if one checks out one the major arguments *against* women's suffrage, back in the day, in that it wasn't equality at all what the suffragettes wanted, *but rather the full privileges and entitlements of* ***both*** *sexes.* Which of course is not equality at all. And... what many of those had fretted about would happen, has happened. Go figure.

The suffragettes were no more noble than Dworkin.

Check out this page filled with cartoons about feminists from around 1910 - these are the "noble feminists." Every one of these cartoons is just as relevant today as it was nearly 100 years ago.

http://members.garbersoft.net/spartacus/suffrage.htm

Banned Trojan Condom Ad

. · 19 June 2007 · Archived copy · Original

Watch this Misandric Crap of an Advertisement from a company that creates products specifically for men:

Don't go thinking that by some change of attitude the execs that banned this ad did so because they realize it is *extremely* degrading to their main target audience, however.

http://www.theage.com.au/news/world/pigs-just-wont-fly/2007/06/18/1182019032235.html

Fox said it had rejected the ad because: "Contraceptive advertising must stress health-related uses rather than the prevention of pregnancy."

(and further in the article):

Directed by Phil Joanou, the commercial for Trojan condoms is entertaining.

But it also has a message, spelled out at the end: "Evolve. Use a condom every time."

Both networks had accepted Trojan's previous campaign, which urged condom use because of the possibility that a partner might be HIV-positive, perhaps unknowingly.

A 2001 report about condom advertising by the Henry Kaiser Family Foundation found: "Some networks draw a strong line between messages about disease prevention — which may be allowed — and those about pregnancy prevention, which may be considered controversial for religious and moral reasons."

.

I'll tell you what No Ma'am's official position on this situation is:

This is a company that is obviously filled with such a bunch of misandric morons that they cannot figure out that ads like this are degrading to their main target audience... and *if they are that stupid, why should I continue to have confidence they are smart enough to build a product that is actually reliable enough to prevent STD's and unwanted pregnancies?* The upper level of this company is stating to the world how incredibly inept they are - and shit runs downhill, people!

This ad is a very good reason NOT to buy Trojan Condoms.

They are doing a double whammie on themselves.

First, they show us how inept they are with their marketing skills, thus giving rise to the speculation of what else is lacking in quality control at Trojan.

Second, they are fueling the already growing Marriage Strike by perpetuating the myth that men are a bunch of pigs when they want sex... (misandry, hate men, you sexual pigs, ALL MEN ARE PIGS), effectively causing even MORE men to begin to desire a life *without* women... and thus shrinking Trojan's market.

Those in charge of Trojan Condoms are **not** sending a message that consumers should trust their professionalism - and therefore, by extension, their products. Trojan is a bust!

BTW, this is apparently Trojan's entire new marketing campaign called "Evolve." As in, "Men, evolve from being the pigs that you are."

.

Check out their site here where you can further click links to the "Trojan Evolve" website:

.

http://www.trojancondoms.com/default.aspx

.

I looked for a "Contact Us" link, but maybe I'm blind, because I can't seem to find one. I'd dearly like to send them an e-mail telling them that No Ma'am says: ***GFY!***

.

I'm still waiting for the ad, in this age of "equality," that says: "Women, stop letting your hormones make you into such a psychotic Medusa - Take a Midol and evolve!"

A Great Historical Outline of Cultural Marxism

. · 25 July 2007 · Archived copy · Original

http://www.worldnetdaily.com/news/article.asp?ARTICLE_ID=55833

Who Stole Our Culture? - by William S. Lind

Sometime during the last half-century, someone stole our culture. Just 50 years ago, in the 1950s, America was a great place. It was safe. It was decent. Children got good educations in the public schools. Even blue-collar fathers brought home middle-class incomes, so moms could stay home with the kids. Television shows reflected sound, traditional values.

Where did it all go? How did that America become the sleazy, decadent place we live in today – so different that those who grew up prior to the '60s feel like it's a foreign country? Did it just "happen"?

It didn't just "happen." In fact, a deliberate agenda was followed to steal our culture and leave a new and very different one in its place. The story of how and why is one of the most important parts of our nation's history – and it is a story almost no one knows. The people behind it wanted it that way.

What happened, in short, is that America's traditional culture, which had grown up over generations from our Western, Judeo-Christian roots, was swept aside by an ideology. We know that ideology best as "political correctness" or "multi-culturalism." It really is cultural Marxism, Marxism translated from economic into cultural terms in an effort that goes back not to the 1960s, but to World War I. Incredible as it may seem, just as the old economic Marxism of the Soviet Union has faded away, a new cultural Marxism has become the ruling ideology of America's elites. The No. 1 goal of that cultural Marxism, since its creation, has been the destruction of Western culture and the Christian religion.

To understand anything, we have to know its history. To understand who stole our culture, we need to take a look at the history of "political correctness."

Early Marxist Theory

Before World War I, Marxist theory said that if Europe ever erupted in war, the working classes in every European country would rise in revolt, overthrow their governments and create a new Communist Europe. But when war broke out in the summer of 1914, that didn't happen. Instead, the workers in every European country lined up by the millions to fight their country's enemies. Finally, in 1917, a Communist revolution did occur, in Russia. But attempts to spread that revolution to other countries failed because the workers did not support it.

After World War I ended in 1918, Marxist theorists had to ask themselves the question: What went wrong? As good Marxists, they could not admit Marxist theory had been incorrect. Instead, two leading Marxist intellectuals, Antonio Gramsci in Italy and Georg Lukacs in Hungary (Lukacs was considered the most brilliant Marxist thinker since Marx himself) independently came up with the same answer. They said that Western culture and the Christian religion had so blinded the working class to its true, Marxist class interests, that a Communist revolution was impossible in the West, until both could be destroyed. That objective, established as cultural Marxism's goal right at the beginning, has never changed.

A New Strategy

Gramsci famously laid out a strategy for destroying Christianity and Western culture, one that has proven all too successful. Instead of calling for a Communist revolution up front, as in Russia, he said Marxists in the West should take political power last, after a "long march through the institutions" – the schools, the media, even the churches, every institution that could influence the culture. That "long march through the institutions" is what America has experienced, especially since the 1960s. Fortunately, Mussolini recognized the danger Gramsci posed and jailed him. His influence remained small until the 1960s, when his works, especially the "Prison Notebooks," were rediscovered.

Georg Lukacs proved more influential. In 1918, he became deputy commissar for culture in the short-lived Bela Kun Bolshevik regime in Hungary. There, asking, "Who will save us from Western civilization?" he instituted what he called "cultural terrorism." One of its main components was introducing sex education into Hungarian schools. Lukacs realized that if he could destroy the country's traditional sexual morals, he would have taken a giant step toward destroying its traditional culture and Christian faith.

Far from rallying to Lukacs' "cultural terrorism," the Hungarian working class was so outraged by it that when Romania invaded Hungary, the workers would not fight for the Bela Kun government, and it fell. Lukacs disappeared, but not for long. In 1923, he turned up at a "Marxist Study Week" in Germany, a program sponsored by a young Marxist named Felix Weil who had inherited millions. Weil and the others who attended that study week were fascinated by Lukacs' cultural perspective on Marxism.

The Frankfurt School

Weil responded by using some of his money to set up a new think tank at Frankfurt University in Frankfurt, Germany. Originally it was to be called the "Institute for Marxism." But the cultural Marxists realized they could be far more effective if they concealed their real nature and objectives. They convinced Weil to give the new institute a neutral-sounding name, the "Institute for Social Research." Soon known simply as the "Frankfurt School," the Institute for Social Research would become the place where political correctness, as we now know it, was developed. The basic answer to the question "Who stole our culture?" is the cultural Marxists of the Frankfurt School.

At first, the Institute worked mainly on conventional Marxist issues such as the labor movement. But in 1930, that changed dramatically. That year, the Institute was taken over by a new director, a brilliant young Marxist intellectual named Max Horkheimer. Horkheimer had been strongly influenced by Georg Lukacs. He immediately set to work to turn the Frankfurt School into the place where Lukacs' pioneering work on cultural Marxism could be developed further into a full-blown ideology.

To that end, he brought some new members into the Frankfurt School. Perhaps the most important was Theodor Adorno, who would become Horkheimer's most creative collaborator. Other new members included two psychologists, Eric Fromm and Wilhelm Reich, who were noted promoters of feminism and matriarchy, and a young graduate student named Herbert Marcuse.

Advances in Cultural Marxism

With the help of this new blood, Horkheimer made three major advances in the development of cultural Marxism. First, he broke with Marx's view that culture was merely part of society's "superstructure," which was determined by economic factors. He said that on the contrary, culture was an independent and very important factor in shaping a society.

Second, again contrary to Marx, he announced that in the future, the working class would not be the agent of

revolution. He left open the question of who would play that role – a question Marcuse answered in the 1950s.

Third, Horkheimer and the other Frankfurt School members decided that the key to destroying Western culture was to cross Marx with Freud. They argued that just as workers were oppressed under capitalism, so under Western culture, everyone lived in a constant state of psychological repression. "Liberating" everyone from that repression became one of cultural Marxism's main goals. Even more important, they realized that psychology offered them a far more powerful tool than philosophy for destroying Western culture: psychological conditioning.
Today, when Hollywood's cultural Marxists want to "normalize" something like homosexuality (thus "liberating" us from "repression"), they put on television show after television show where the only normal-seeming white male is a homosexual. That is how psychological conditioning works; people absorb the lessons the cultural Marxists want them to learn without even knowing they are being taught.

The Frankfurt School was well on the way to creating political correctness. Then suddenly, fate intervened. In 1933, Adolf Hitler and the Nazi Party came to power in Germany, where the Frankfurt School was located. Since the Frankfurt School was Marxist, and the Nazis hated Marxism, and since almost all its members were Jewish, it decided to leave Germany. In 1934, the Frankfurt School, including its leading members from Germany, was re-established in New York City with help from Columbia University. Soon, its focus shifted from destroying traditional Western culture in Germany to doing so in the United States. It would prove all too successful.

New Developments

Taking advantage of American hospitality, the Frankfurt School soon resumed its intellectual work to create cultural Marxism. To its earlier achievements in Germany, it added these new developments.

Critical Theory

To serve its purpose of "negating" Western culture, the Frankfurt School developed a powerful tool it called "Critical Theory." What was the theory? The theory was to criticize. By subjecting every traditional institution, starting with family, to endless, unremitting criticism (the Frankfurt School was careful never to define what it was for, only what it was against), it hoped to bring them down. Critical Theory is the basis for the "studies" departments that now inhabit American colleges and universities. Not surprisingly, those departments are the home turf of academic political correctness.

Studies in Prejudice

The Frankfurt School sought to define traditional attitudes on every issue as "prejudice" in a series of academic studies that culminated in Adorno's immensely influential book, "The Authoritarian Personality," published in 1950. They invented a bogus "F-scale" that purported to tie traditional beliefs on sexual morals, relations between men and women and questions touching on the family to support for fascism. Today, the favorite term the politically correct use for anyone who disagrees with them is "fascist."

Domination

The Frankfurt School again departed from orthodox Marxism, which argued that all of history was determined by who owned the means of production. Instead, they said history was determined by which groups, defined as men, women, races, religions, etc., had power or "dominance" over other groups. Certain groups, especially white males, were labeled "oppressors," while other groups were defined as "victims." Victims were automatically good, oppressors bad, just by what group they came from, regardless of individual behavior.

Though Marxists, the members of the Frankfurt School also drew from Nietzsche (someone else they admired for his defiance of traditional morals was the Marquis de Sade). They incorporated into their cultural Marxism what Nietzsche called the "transvaluation of all values." What that means, in plain English, is that all the old sins become virtues, and all the old virtues become sins. Homosexuality is a fine and good thing, but anyone who thinks men and women should have different social roles is an evil "fascist." That is what political correctness now teaches children in public schools all across America. (The Frankfurt School wrote about American public education. It said it did not matter if school children learned any skills or any facts. All that mattered was that they graduate from the schools with the right "attitudes" on certain questions.)

Media and Entertainment

Led by Adorno, the Frankfurt School initially opposed the culture industry, which they thought "commodified" culture. Then, they started to listen to Walter Benjamin, a close friend of Horkheimer and Adorno, who argued that cultural Marxism could make powerful use of tools like radio, film and later television to psychologically condition the public. Benjamin's view prevailed, and Horkheimer and Adorno spent the World War II years in Hollywood. It is no accident that the entertainment industry is now cultural Marxism's most powerful weapon.

The Growth of Marxism in the United States

After World War II and the defeat of the Nazis, Horkheimer, Adorno and most of the other members of the Frankfurt School returned to Germany, where the Institute re-established itself in Frankfurt with the help of the American occupation authorities. Cultural Marxism in time became the unofficial but all-pervasive ideology of the Federal Republic of Germany.

But hell had not forgotten the United States. Herbert Marcuse remained here, and he set about translating the very difficult academic writings of other members of the Frankfurt School into simpler terms Americans could easily grasp. His book "Eros and Civilization" used the Frankfurt School's crossing of Marx with Freud to argue that if we would only "liberate non-procreative eros" through "polymorphous perversity," we could create a new paradise where there would be only play and no work. "Eros and Civilization" became one of the main texts of the New Left in the 1960s.

Marcuse also widened the Frankfurt School's intellectual work. In the early 1930s, Horkheimer had left open the question of who would replace the working class as the agent of Marxist revolution. In the 1950s, Marcuse answered the question, saying it would be a coalition of students, blacks, feminist women and homosexuals – the core of the student rebellion of the 1960s, and the sacred "victims groups" of political correctness today. Marcuse further took one of political correctness's favorite words, "tolerance," and gave it a new meaning. He defined "liberating tolerance" as tolerance for all ideas and movements coming from the left, and intolerance for all ideas and movements coming from the right. When you hear the cultural Marxists today call for "tolerance," they mean Marcuse's "liberating tolerance" (just as when they call for "diversity," they mean uniformity of belief in their ideology).

The student rebellion of the 1960s, driven largely by opposition to the draft for the Vietnam War, gave Marcuse a historic opportunity. As perhaps its most famous "guru," he injected the Frankfurt School's cultural Marxism into the baby boom generation. Of course, they did not understand what it really was. As was true from the Institute's beginning, Marcuse and the few other people "in the know" did not advertise that political correctness and multi-culturalism were a form of Marxism. But the effect was devastating: a whole generation of Americans, especially the university-educated elite, absorbed cultural Marxism as their own, accepting a poisonous ideology that sought to destroy America's traditional culture and Christian faith. That generation, which runs every elite institution in America, now wages a ceaseless war on all traditional beliefs and institutions. They have largely won that war. Most

of America's traditional culture lies in ruins.

A Counter-Strategy

Now you know who stole our culture. The question is, what are we, as Christians and as cultural conservatives, going to do about it?

We can choose between two strategies. The first is to try to retake the existing institutions – the public schools, the universities, the media, the entertainment industry and most of the mainline churches – from the cultural Marxists. They expect us to try to do that, they are ready for it, and we would find ourselves, with but small voice and few resources compared to theirs, making a frontal assault against prepared defensive positions. Any soldier can tell you what that almost always leads to: defeat.

There is another, more promising strategy. We can separate ourselves and our families from the institutions the cultural Marxists control and build new institutions for ourselves, institutions that reflect and will help us recover our traditional Western culture.

Several years ago, my colleague Paul Weyrich wrote an open letter to the conservative movement suggesting this strategy. While most other conservative (really Republican) leaders demurred, his letter resonated powerfully with grass-roots conservatives. Many of them are already part of a movement to secede from the corrupt, dominant culture and create parallel institutions: the homeschooling movement. Similar movements are beginning to offer sound alternatives in other aspects of life, including movements to promote small, often organic family farms and to develop community markets for those farms' products. If Brave New World's motto is "Think globally, act locally," ours should be "Think locally, act locally."

Thus, our strategy for undoing what cultural Marxism has done to America has a certain parallel to its own strategy, as Gramsci laid it out so long ago. Gramsci called for Marxists to undertake a "long march through the institutions." Our counter-strategy would be a long march to create our own institutions. It will not happen quickly, or easily. It will be the work of generations – as was theirs. They were patient, because they knew the "inevitable forces of history" were on their side. Can we not be equally patient, and persevering, knowing that the Maker of history is on ours?

Kady O'Malley Defends Pierre Elliot Trudeau

. · 2 August 2007 · Archived copy · Original

Some of you may remember a few months ago when I appealed to you to vote for Pierre Elliot Trudeau as the Worst Canadian in History.

http://no-maam.blogspot.com/2007/05/worst-canadian-of-all-time.html

Well, guess what, folks... (drumroll please), the winner is Pierre Elliot Trudeau! Yes, the Prime Minister who was fascinated by Marxism before entering politics, who alienated both the West and Quebec, who introduced no-fault divorce, abortion, multi-culturalism and who increased our national debt by 600% during his reign of socialist lunacy is actually considered by enough Canadians to be the biggest dirty rotten bastard in Canadian history to win a silly little poll put on by the ever less influential Main Stream Media.

Kady O'Malley Wets Her Pants: But, But, You Canadians Got It Wrong!

But, as per typical Main Stream Media fashion, *you Canadians are just too stupid to know what you are talking about!* This is why, I assume, Kady O'Malley of Maclean's Magazine mentioned the Mightiest Blog on the Web (you know it as No Ma'am) on her blog at said magazine, as she insinuated the poll results were wrong because bloggers such as moi used our wide reaching powers to influence the masses.

http://forums.macleans.ca/advansis/?mod=for&act=dip&pid=65852&tid=65852&eid=48&so=1&ps=0&sb=1

"Fresh on the heels of the Great CBC Facebook Wish List Fiasco, Canadian history magazine The Beaver has once again demonstrated that, when it comes to free-for-all online voting, democracy simply doesn't work. Or at least, that's the only conclusion one can draw from the results of its recent online poll to determine, once and for all, the Worst Canadian in history.

The winner? Pierre Elliot Trudeau, whose supporters - er, most fervent detractors - made sure that He Who Haunts Us Still got more votes than child serial killers Clifford Olson (#9), Paul Bernardo and Karla Homolka (#5)- not to mention Vegas-ensconced songbird Celine Dion (#7). He also easily beat out both other prime ministerial contenders, Stephen Harper (#6) and Jean Chretien (#8)."

The only conclusion one can draw? Excuse me, Kady O'Malley, but I can only conclude that people in journalism waste a lot of money on their education. Even a 3rd Grader could conclude pretty quickly that there is no shortage of Canadians who truly despise Pierre Elliot Trudeau.

And of course, throw some murderers in there, Kady O'Malley. Try to discredit people who actually respond, *as was requested of them,* by insinuating that somehow Clifford Olson forever influenced the direction of Canadian History. I mean, how many suicides, how many alcoholics, how much poverty, or how many dismembered fetus's

has Clifford Olson caused compared to the man who slammed through No Fault Divorce & Abortion - causing untold psychological problems for *millions* of people, especially children who don't know why Mommy and Daddy aren't living together anymore nor why Mommy is now sleeping with a biker. Teenage pregnancy (& teen abortions), suicide, low academic performance and a host of other problems have all been directly linked to the anti-social policies Trudeau forced upon Canadians. And, of course, they are all Marxist policies, which is not surprising, given Trudeau's fascination with the writings of *the* one man who caused more deaths than any other person in *World History!* http://www.arthurhu.com/index/genocide.htm

Of course, there is one thing in there that Kady O'Malley said which I do agree with, and that is that *democracy doesn't work.* Democracy doesn't work because the monopolized Main Stream Media has had so much influence over the people, that *they* have been telling us what the issues are supposed to be in our lives - over and over again, for decades. Much like how Kady O'Malley doesn't appear to like the results of the little guy having free speech and using that free speech to influence others, she fails to explain how the Main Stream Media is also not massively guilty of using their influence to attempt to control Canadians' thoughts to be in accordance with what the left-wing media thinks is important.

Kind of like the ceaseless propaganda that said Main Stream Media keeps spewing out about how scientists can now predict the weather a hundred years in the future to within a few degrees (yet yesterday it was supposed to be 25 degrees and the thermometer went past 30), and how the Main Stream Media is attempting to use their influence to convince Canadians to give away their prosperity & sovereignty for a Marxist-Communist solution which is "based on science" *only because the Main Stream Media says it is based on science over and over again* - certainly not because there are not a host of qualified scientists who oppose the Main Stream Media's message, but are rarely reported on by our "un-biased" media. Don't even get me going about the ceaseless "women are victims" noise they spew out daily which is akin to hearing nails on a chalkboard. How democratic of the Main Stream Media to air all sides of the debate in an unbiased fashion so the average Canadian can use his own brain to decide what is important. Good job, the media!

"On the other hand, the wisdom of the e-mob is at least partly backed up by the results of a slightly more scientific Angus Reid poll, which revealed virtually no public sympathy for Tenth Worst Canadian Conrad Black. According to Angus Reid, 48% of Canadians believe the jury "got it about right," and an astonishing 69% want to see him do time, rather than just pay a fine."

Of course, mention Conrad Black. I would like to point out that it appears that 52% of Canadians must also believe the jury got it wrong. But why let that get in the way? Math is no longer a strong point of study in our schools anyway. The leftist media just *loves* to hate Conrad because when Conrad was involved in Canadian Media he was a staunch conservative - and battled many times with the leftist media which now dominates the Canadian scene. The coverage of Conrad Black by the lefty Canadian media was naught more than petty revenge against their long time enemy. After all, look at the ceaseless talk they make about some guy who was found guilty only of 3 counts of mail fraud and defrauding shareholders of a mere $2.9 million. Somehow I fail to see how the Main Stream Media is not *directly* responsible for unduly influencing Canadians to get Conrad to make the list, right below serial child murderer Clifford Olson, for a fraud totalling a few measly million. Explain to me how the Main Stream Media is "innocent" in all of that, Kady O'Malley. Who's calling who on influencing the "mob?"

But, even Kady O'Malley is not as out to lunch in her response as The Beaver magazine itself, who put up the poll. It appears they were so insulted that Canadians think Pierre was an asshole that they ran to 10 "respected historians and writers of popular history" to tell us Canadians what we should really be thinking.

http://www.historysociety.ca/bea.asp?subsection=ext&page=WC

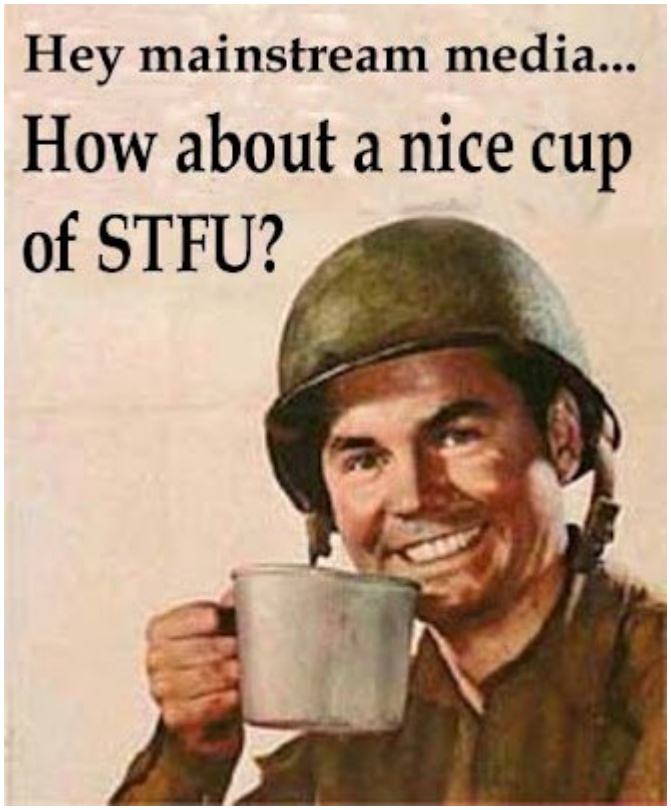
"To balance this admittedly unscientific survey, we also polled a panel of experts—ten of Canada's most renowned historians and writers of popular history—to come up with an alternative list, one that's arguably more measured and takes into consideration the full breadth and scope of Canadian history.

Trudeau didn't make the cut on the alternative list—but many of you did vote for at least some of the experts' choices. In fact, the response was overwhelming, with almost 15,000 votes cast."

How competely arrogant and condescending of The Beaver, to insinuate that 10 academics they chose (and are no doubt from Marxist Politically Corrected Academic Ivory Towers), have an opinion that is more qualified of what Canadians should believe than 15,000 *actual Canadians.* No wonder Canadians are turning off the TV and turning to bloggers on the web. And no wonder, when I did a "more scientific poll" of my family and friends, I found an overwhelming consensus that The Beaver and Maclean's magazines are far better suited to help light the woodstove than to actually inform them on issues about which Canadians feel are important.

Lol! 10 academics from Crackpot U telling 15,000 Canadians that they are wrong. That is exactly the type of "democracy" that Pierre Elliot Trudeau and the Main Stream Media believe Canadians should have.

Perhaps Kady O'Malley can talk to her editor at Maclean's, and they in turn can talk to the editors at The Beaver, about paying for an advertisement somewhere on the sidebar of No Ma'am to help combat their ever dwindling circulations in a world where people no longer believe the filthy leftist lies the Main Stream Media keeps spewing at the people. Lol! I'll only charge them what Maclean's charges for a typical one page ad, which is a good deal, since both Kady O'Malley and The Beaver acknowledge the far reaching influence that No Ma'am apparently wields.



Read more about Trudeau the Treacherous Traitor to see why our Socialist inspired media loves to love the man who brought Cultural Marxism to Canada:

Pierre Elliot Trudeau: Cultural Marxist Wrapped in a Canadian Flag

http://no-maam.blogspot.com/2007/01/pierre-elliot-trudeau-cultural-marxist.html

and

The Multi-Tasking Pink Proletariat

http://no-maam.blogspot.com/2007/03/multi-tasking-pink-proletariat.html

Why Rob does not blog so much anymore...

. · 24 August 2007 · Archived copy · Original

As some of my regular readers may have noticed, I have not been blogging as much as before.

There is a reason for this.

It is that I am no longer sure about the direction of the Men's Movement.

It bothers me to no end that there is so much "egalitarianism" in the movement. If people have not yet realized that "equality" is exactly the virus that is being used to remove people's freedoms.... It simply does not matter whether it is "equality" from a feminist perspective or an MRA perspective, equality is an *impossible* equation.

Crying for equality is tantamount to crying for the right to be enslaved!

The *last* thing that the Men's Movement needs to do is to enable the government to further intrude into people's personal lives. I am not even so sure that I wish to support those lobbying for Shared Parenting. Do they realize that they are *pleading* with the government to let them see their own children? This is *exactly* the kind of situation that Cultural Marxists aim for... *it is not who gets the biggest piece of the pie, but rather that both sides find themselves running to the government to ask for their piece!*

Do I care about fathers, mothers & children?

YES!

Do I think that people should be begging the government for access to their own children?

NO!

I wonder how people 100, or even 50 years ago, would have responded to such a situation?

Why should we think any differently?

Why are we not demanding independent inquiries into corrupt No Fault Divorce laws, rather than re-affirming the validity of them by insisting on further unneccessary government intervention with the right to see your own flippin' child?

Please read Angry Harry's piece about "equality" and how it is unachievable:

Equality Between Men and Women is not Achievable - by Angry Harry

http://www.angryharry.com/esEqualityNotAchievable.htm

A Couple of New Blogs to Check Out

. · 1 September 2007 · Archived copy · Original

One Man's Kingdom

http://onemanskingdom.blogspot.com/

Exposing Feminism

http://exposingfeminism.wordpress.com/

In particular, I appreciated these pieces about word manipulation, as it is something I also plan on writing about in the near future.

http://exposingfeminism.wordpress.com/2007/08/29/word-manipulation-another-example/

http://exposingfeminism.wordpress.com/2007/08/27/word-manipulation-more-examples/

The Case for Father Custody - by Daniel Amneus

. · 27 September 2007 · Archived copy · Original

OK, I've finally gotten my sorry ass around to reading the fine book, *The Case for Father Custody* by Daniel Amneus. It is an excellent read that will not only give the reader an excellent insight into how & why society *was* structured the way it was, but also will lend light into the notion of why Marxofeminists wish to destroy marriage/familes in their bid to destroy the Capitalist system and bring global Communism to the world. (Though you will have to draw the latter conclusions with your own linear thinking brain!).

***The Case for Father Custody,* by Daniel Amneus**
http://www.fathermag.com/news/Case_for_Father_Custody.pdf
(Apparently, the above link has temporarily gone off-line??? Here is an alternative link to use in the meantime: http://christianparty.net/tcffc.htm)

I like Dr. Amneus' style of writing because he provides so many quotes from his research of feminist literature and does not particularly shred their arguments, *but agrees that much of it is correct* and then he asks: "Yes, in some ways they are correct, *so?* It is a recipe for the destruction of civilization, *is that what we want*?" He does not mince about, sometimes life sucks, get a freakin' helmet!

I have also previously read another book by Daniel Amneus, titled *The Garbage Generation*, which was an equally excellent book and along much of the same theme as *The Case for Father Custody*, although *The Garbage Generation* is a smaller book and does not seem to go quite as far in depth as *The Case for Father Custody*.

Here is a link for Dr. Amneus' other book, which is also time well spent:

***The Garbage Generation* by Daniel Amneus**
http://fisheaters.com/garbagegeneration.html

It has become my self proclaimed expert opinion, after reading these books, that society perhaps should strive towards a system in which the children of a marriage should be awarded to the father - as that is what he paid for by yoking himself with a legal wife & the marriage contract. If she wants to leave, fine, but automatically the children produced via *marriage* should be presumed to belong, by default to the father. If women want to have children without men, then they can remain single and get knocked up by Bugsy the Mobster out of wedlock, or via Thomas the Turkey Baster, and raise said child in whatever manner they see fit - *without defacto support provided by such men or the taxpaying citizens*. It's time for women to stand up on their own two feet and quit oscillating between being "strong, empowered women," and being "mutilated beggars" who are too weak and frail to make it on their own because of *the choices they have made themselves*.

Life sucks, get a helmet!

A Few Tidbits To Peruse

. · 28 September 2007 · Archived copy · Original

The Communist Plan for American Women, by Alan Stang
http://www.newswithviews.com/Stang/alan4.htm

Just Doing His Job - (Video: 9min) - A KGB trained subverter tells the overall pattern of Soviet style take-over of free societies.
http://video.google.ca/videoplay?docid=1199347161448600 93&q=Just+Doing+His+Job&total=925&start=0&num=10&so=0&type=search&plindex=0

The Research & Statistics Commission

. · 2 October 2007 · Archived copy · Original

Why don't we have a Research & Statistics Commission in our country that mirrors an organization like the Securities & Exchange Commission? I am certainly not a fan of big, intrusive government but it seems odd to me that the Benevolent Bastards who sit in positions of power have never created such a commission and it is certainly something that would be more useful than the Governing Gumbies trying to pass Hate Speech Laws, or laws dictating what kind of light bulbs we are permitted to buy, or laws dictating that children are no longer allowed to go tobaganning without a helmet.

But think about it. Academic Research & Statistics have become a completely corrupt area of our society *and they are being used to commit massive amounts of blatant* ***fraud*** *for monetary gain -* ***a crime.***

When a CEO like Bernie Ebbers or a tycoon like Conrad Black gets caught cooking the books or providing fraudulent information in the world of business, the government rushes in to judge them and sentence them to lengthy jail terms for their dishonest, fraudulent crimes.

But why has no Academic ever been jailed for wilfully creating fraudulent statistics & research in regard to rape, domestic violence, or a host of other dishonest claims that these Ivory Tower Assholes have been foisting upon the public for the past several decades? Many times such statistics and research is specifically manufactured to be presented to the government to demand taxpayer funding for whatever the cause du jour is, be it DV Shelters/Programs, Campus Rape Crisis Centers, $0.76 on the dollar bullshit. The thing is, if it can proven that the research is blatantly biased and dishonest, and it is being wilfully used to extract *millions or even billions of dollars from the taxpayers,* then such academics & lobbyists are committing blatant **fraud.** If a CEO or a CFO were to produce purposefully falsified numbers like that to their shareholders, they would spend several years rotting in prison. And that is just a crime perpetrated against a *few* people (the shareholders). But when academics & lobbyists do the exact same thing, they are fraudulently profiting themselves or their cause to truly gargantuan proportions at the expense of *your* tax dollars. A punishment should be made for these dishonest academics that is similar to any other person who "cooks the books."

Fraud is fraud. I don't give a shit about your Ph D, asshole.

5 Reasons Why Christians Should NOT Obtain a State Marriage License - by Pastor Matt Trewhella

. · 10 October 2007 · Archived copy · Original

http://www.mercyseat.net/BROCHURES/marriagelicense.htm

5 Reasons Why Christians Should *Not* Obtain a State Marriage License *by Pastor Matt Trewhella*

Every year thousands of Christians amble down to their local county courthouse and obtain a marriage license from the State in order to marry their future spouse. They do this unquestioningly. They do it because their pastor has told them to go get one, and besides, "everybody else gets one." This pamphlet attempts to answer the question - *why should we not get get one?*

1. The definition of a "license" demands the we not obtain one to marry. Black's Law Dictionary defines "license" as, *"The permission by competent authority to do an act which without such permission, would be illegal."* We need to ask ourselves- why should it be illegal to marry without the State's permission? More importantly, why should we *need* the State's permission to participate in something which God instituted (Gen. 2:18-24)? We should not need the State's permission to marry nor should we grovel before state officials to seek it. What if you apply and the State says "no"? You must understand that the authority to license implies the power to prohibit. A license by definition "confers a right" to do something. The State cannot grant the right to marry. It is a God-given right.

2. When you marry with a marriage license, you grant the State jurisdiction over your marriage. When you marry with a marriage license, your marriage is a creature of the State. It is a corporation of the State! Therefore, they have jurisdiction over your marriage including the *fruit* of your marriage. What is the fruit of your marriage? Your children and every piece of property you own. There is plenty of case law in American jurisprudence which declares this to be true.

In 1993, parents were upset here in Wisconsin because a test was being administered to their children in the government schools which was very invasive of the family's privacy. When parents complained, they were shocked by the school bureaucrats who informed them that their children were required to take the test by law and that they would *have* to take the test because they (the government school) had jurisdiction over their children. When parents asked the bureaucrats what gave them jurisdiction, the bureaucrats answered, "your marriage license and their birth certificates." Judicially, and in increasing fashion, practically, your state marriage license has far-reaching implications.

3. When you marry with a marriage license, you place yourself under a body of law which is immoral. By obtaining a marriage license, you place yourself under the jurisdiction of Family Court which is governed by unbiblical and immoral laws. *Under these laws, you can divorce for any reason.* Often, the courts side with the spouse who is in rebellion to God, and castigates the spouse who remains faithful by ordering him or her not to speak about the Bible or other matters of faith when present with the children.

As a minister, I cannot in good conscience perform a marriage which would place people under this immoral body of laws. I also cannot marry someone with a marriage license because to do so I have to act as an agent of the State! I would have to sign the marriage license, and I would have to mail it into the State. Given the State's demand to usurp the place of God and family regarding marriage, and given it's unbiblical, immoral laws to govern marriage, it would be an act of treason for me to do so.

4. The marriage license invades and removes God-given parental authority. When you read the Bible, you see

that God intended for children to have their father's blessing regarding whom they married. Daughters were to be given in marriage *by their fathers* (Dt. 22:16; Ex. 22:17; I Cor. 7:38). We have a vestige of this in our culture today in that the father takes his daughter to the front of the altar and the minister asks, "Who *gives* this woman to be married to this man?"

Historically, there was no requirement to obtain a marriage license in colonial America. When you read the laws of the colonies and then the states, you see only two requirements for marriage. First, you had to obtain your parents permission to marry, and second, you had to post public notice of the marriage 5-15 days before the ceremony.

Notice you had to obtain your *parents permission*. Back then you saw godly government displayed in that the State recognized the parents authority by demanding that the parents permission be obtained. Today, the all-encompassing ungodly State demands that *their* permission be obtained to marry.

By issuing marriage licenses, the State is saying, "You don't need your parents permission, you need *our* permission." If parents are opposed to their child's marrying a certain person and refuse to give their permission, the child can do an end run around the parents authority by obtaining the State's permission, and marry anyway. This is an invasion and removal of God-given parental authority by the State.

5. When you marry with a marriage license, you are like a polygamist. From the State's point of view, when you marry with a marriage license, you are not just marrying your spouse, but you are also marrying the State.

The most blatant declaration of this fact that I have ever found is a brochure entitled "With This Ring I Thee Wed." It is found in county courthouses across Ohio where people go to obtain their marriage licenses. It is published by the Ohio State Bar Association. The opening paragraph under the subtitle "Marriage Vows" states, *"Actually, when you repeat your marriage vows you enter into a legal contract. There are three parties to that contract. 1. You; 2. Your husband or wife, as the case may be; and 3. the State of Ohio."*

See, the State and the lawyers know that when you marry with a marriage license, you are not just marrying your spouse, you are marrying the State! You are like a polygamist! You are not just making a vow to your spouse, but you are making a vow to the State *and* your spouse. You are also giving undue jurisdiction to the State.

When Does the State Have Jurisdiction Over a Marriage?

God intended the State to have jurisdiction over a marriage for two reasons - 1). in the case of divorce, and 2). when crimes are committed i.e., adultery, bigamy. etc. Unfortunately, the State now allows divorce for any reason, and it does not prosecute for adultery.

In either case, divorce or crime, a marriage license is *not* necessary for the courts to determine whether a marriage existed or not. What is needed are witnesses. This is why you have a best man and a maid of honor. They should sign the marriage certificate in your family Bible, and the wedding day guest book should be kept.

Marriage was instituted by God, therefore it is a God-given right. According to Scripture, it is to be governed by the family, and the State only has jurisdiction in the cases of divorce or crime.

History of Marriage Licenses in America

George Washington was married *without* a marriage license. Abraham Lincoln was married without a marriage license. So, how did we come to this place in America where marriage licenses are issued?

Historically, all the states in America had laws outlawing the marriage of blacks and whites. In the mid-1800's, certain states began allowing interracial marriages or miscegenation as long as those marrying received a license from the state. In other words they had to receive *permission to do an act which without such permission would have been illegal.*

Blacks Law Dictionary points to this historical fact when it defines "marriage license" as, *"A license or permission granted by public authority to persons who intend to intermarry."* "Intermarry" is defined in Black's Law Dictionary as, *"Miscegenation; mixed or interracial marriages."*

Give the State an inch and they will take a 100 miles (or as one elderly woman once said to me "10,000 miles.") Not long after these licenses were issued, some states began requiring *all* people who marry to obtain a marriage license. In 1923, the Federal Government established the Uniform Marriage and Marriage License Act (they later established the Uniform Marriage and Divorce Act). By 1929, every state in the Union had adopted marriage license laws.

What Should We Do?

Christian couples should not be marrying with State marriage licenses, nor should ministers be marrying people with State marriage licenses. Some have said to me, "If someone is married without a marriage license, then they aren't really married." Given the fact that states may soon legalize same-sex marriages, we need to ask ourselves, "If a man and a man marry *with* a State marriage license, and a man and woman marry *without* a State marriage license - *who's really married?* Is it the two men *with* a marriage license, or the man and woman *without* a marriage license? In reality, this contention that people are not really married unless they obtain a marriage license simply reveals how Statist we are in our thinking. We need to think biblically. (As for homosexuals marrying, outlaw sodomy as God's law demands, and there will be no threat of sodomites marrying.)

You should not have to obtain a license from the State to marry someone anymore than you should have to obtain a license from the State to be a parent, which some in academic and legislative circles are currently pushing to be made law.

When I marry a couple, I always buy them a Family Bible which contains birth and death records, and a marriage certificate. We record the marriage in the Family Bible. What's recorded in a Family Bible will stand up as legal evidence in any court of law in America. Both George Washington and Abraham Lincoln were married without a marriage license.They simply recorded their marriages in their Family Bibles. So should we.

Marriage Strike Discussion

. · 12 October 2007 · Archived copy · Original

Here is an interesting discussion on a dating forum that I came across from my blog-stats page in which the Marriage Strike and Misandry is being discussed. It is an interesting read (this is only one page out of 50 in the thread), and I must say - the men seem to be doing pretty well at defending themselves and they seem to know their shit!

http://72.14.253.104/search?q=cache:Kgfpz1UlS-sJ:forums.plentyoffish.com/4993414datingPostpage23.aspx+%22entitlement+princesses%22+%22misandry%22&hl=en&ct=clnk&cd=1

Hah!

Yup, men are wising up!

Notice how the men don't back down from the women who try the "blame the man" shaming tactics. Nope. **NO MA'AM!** Good on these men from this forum!

“The American people are tired of liars and people who pretend to be something they're not.” -- Hillary Clinton

. · 24 October 2007 · Archived copy · Original

.

“Many of you are well enough off that the tax cuts may have helped you. We're saying that for America to get back on track, we're probably going to cut that short and not give it to you. We're going to take things away from you on behalf of the common good.” -- Hillary Clinton

.

.

“We must stop thinking of the individual and start thinking about what is best for society.” -- Hillary Clinton

.

.

"Women have always been the primary victims of war. Women lose their husbands, their fathers, their sons in combat." -- Hillary Clinton

.

.

“Research shows the presence of women raises the standards of ethical behavior and lowers corruption.” -- Hillary Clinton

.

.

“In many parts of the world, women and girls are especially vulnerable to HIV/AIDS because they lack control over most aspects of their life. Cultural expectations and gender roles expose women and girls to violence, sexual exploitation and far greater risk for infection.” -- Hillary Clinton

.

It takes a village...

.

http://www.worldnetdaily.com/news/article.asp?ARTICLE_ID=16362

.

Those who are dead serious about changing the legal status of the parent-child relationship have advocated three basic changes, which Hillary outlined in the Harvard Educational Review in 1974: 1) The legal concept of "minority," which refers to the status of a non-adult, should be abolished, and the presumption that children are incompetent to make decisions for themselves should be reversed. 2) All constitutional procedural rights guaranteed to adults should be granted to children. 3) The presumption that parents' and children's interests are the same should be rejected.

.

A "competent child should be permitted to assert his or her own interests," Hillary wrote. In describing the child-parent dependency relationship, she stated, "Along with the family, past and present examples of such arrangements include marriage, slavery, and the Indian reservation system."

.

.

“The American people are tired of liars and people who pretend to be something they're not.” -- Hillary Clinton

TBA's Request: Rob's Farewell Post

. · 3 November 2007 · Archived copy · Original

tba said...
A final request before you leave *please post your comment on the front page of this blog.* That long comment you just posted was *classic* and it explains the *deep* problem well and why you are leaving. It is *easily* your *greatest* and *most important* writing on this blog and it *needs* to be your *final*, *farewell* blog post.The manginas who come on this blog *need to read that post.* I've already saved a copy of myself.

Here it is:

Hello everyone, Thanks for all of your kind words. Wow! I didn't know that I was actually having an impact on anyone.

The thing is, what I can't get passed, is that this problem is so incredibly deep and complex that I just don't know where to begin. This is NOT a problem that has only cropped up in the past few decades, but rather a problem that has snuck upon us over the past few CENTURIES!

Like I said, I just don't know where to begin. And it is not really fair of me to expect people to "get it," because I did not "get it" myself until I did a massive amount of reading on a variety of subjects that are not directly affiliated with the MRM. I have had an abnormal amount of free time on my hands over the past few years because of health problems. These problems had me really upset and depressed, and I decided to pull myself out of that funk by getting my brain busy, rather than dwelling on my problems. So, I basically spend anywhere from 4 to 12+ hours a day reading – and I don't read the constant drivel of news articles that display "misandry," which the MRM seems to be solely focused on.

Yes, Debra LaFave did indeed commit statutory rape, and yes other women are doing this as well, and another woman will do it again tomorrow, and so on. We should all know that by now. The question should be, rather, WHY is this happening? (And I am not just talking about this certain type of crime – but ALL of the problems that feminism has brought to us)

In order to understand this problem, one really has to turn off people like Warren Farrell and go deep – waaayyyy deep. This is a problem that is rooted in Anthropology, Sexology, Political Science, History, (honest) Sociology and (honest) Psychology. Only 1% of the people are going to "get it" and even among that 1%, many of those will probably not like what they find.

I am quite sure that it is for this reason that during the Constitutional Convention in 1787 that the US Founding Fathers pretty much locked themselves up - to keep themselves from talking to, and being influenced by, the masses. Basically, I think, they recognized how incredibly stupid the masses are, and that it is a necessity for wiser men to decide things for them, much in the same way that a father decides what is best for his child without always bothering to explain exactly "why" to the child. I think that during the Constitutional Convention, there was likely much talk about how incredibly stupid "we the people" really are, and this is why they came up with so many checks and balances – to protect us not only from intrusive government, but also from our own natural stupidity. There was probably no way that they could have rationalized exactly WHY they made things the way they were, without forcing every citizen to sit down for a few years and educate themselves on a variety of subjects first. All of the Founding Fathers seem to have been amongst the most brilliant and well read men that existed at the time.

What may surprise many of you, is that I actually think that many of the feminist thinkers & authors were 100% correct in their analysis. They really did peg it correctly when they talk about the human condition. I doubt they actually thought it up themselves, but likely got it from wise men that came before them. The difference being, though, that feminists are Marxists, and the goal of both is to DESTROY society and build “Heaven on Earth.” They did, in fact, target things that wise men before them had already identified about the human condition, and they use those things to destroy society.

Men have indeed “oppressed women.” Especially sexually. Misogyny did indeed exist throughout patriarchal history – and for damn good reasons too! In order for civilization to advance, women HAD TO BE OPPRESSED! This created the vehicle that pushed society forward in much the same way that it was sheer genius to “oppress” horses for the good of mankind.

I tend to view civilization/society as if it were the body of a sailboat. The sail represents women, and the keel & rudder represent men. The sail is "oppressed" by the wind, and the keel is "oppressed" by the water. Society has been busy cutting the ropes which oppress the sail to the mast, without realizing that without the sail's oppression, the keel's oppression fails to work properly. Sure, you may float about for a while, you may even drift in the right direction sometimes. But the keel is useless, and you can no longer tack into the wind. The rudder doesn't work either. Eventually, you will drift towards the rocks, and everyone will start screaming to the captain to use the rudder and steer out of harm's way, and he will scream back to "hoist the sails" but everyone looks at him like he's smoking dope and says, "but that's oppressive, we can't do that!"

These problems we are having did not arise from the 1960’s style of feminism. It did indeed come from the 60’s, but dial that a century back to the 1860’s and you will likely begin to find the roots of the problem. In the 1860’s, it became normalized for women to gain custody of children, and the divorce rate has steadily increased ever since that date up until today. There's another thing that one can thank the noble suffragettes for. The whole point of marriage and women’s sexual fidelity was that women “sold” themselves, along with their reproductive abilities, to men in a legally binding economic contract called marriage. Women sold men a family that was assuredly his own, and men paid for it by providing and protecting. This is why, throughout history, women were condemned so harshly for adultery, while men were not. There were no DNA tests back then, and men needed to know that their children were actually theirs - and would remain permanently so. Women do indeed have just as strong of a sex drive as men, as is evidenced by anthropological studies of societies that do not have marriage. The women in those societies are hump-monkeys just like men, and none of those societies have ever become advanced. Women's sexual oppression = men's work oppression = advanced civilization.

All things between men and women seem to "equalize," just as sex drives. Men have large, but less frequent "spikes" while women have smaller, but more frequent "rythyms." It works this way for sin, it works this way for sex, it works this way for intelligence, it even works this way with happiness - as men have a major mid-life crisis, while women have a series of smaller but more frequent "mini" mid-life crisises.

Marx & Engels themselves identified correctly that women were the proper vehicle to bring about the ideas which they wanted - those which would destroy civilization. Women control our social values. Feminism was born of the Socialist ideals of the Transcendentalist Movement of the early 1800’s, which itself was born of Rousseau and the French Revolution. (***Note the correction posted at the end of this article***). This movement became Marxism in 1848, the same year that Feminism officially became organized. Ever since, it has been a movement of giving women more and more power, and using women’s nature to lead society to its current state of near self destruction. This is what transferring “ownership” of children to women was about, and what giving women the vote was about. The more you empower women, the easier it is to bring forth the conditions which will destroy civilization.

This is not to say that it is all “women’s” fault. Indeed, women’s power is born of men’s natural stupidity in regard to

their behaviour around women.

This is easy to see when one looks back throughout the history of mankind.

Entitlement princesses are not new, and neither are manginas. In fact, both were talked about repeatedly throughout history. Aristotle talked of the Spartan Women and how, when they gained economic power, society fell apart. Genesis tells us that God put "enmity" between the man and the woman. Sodom & Gomorrah worshipped androgyny/homosexuality, and they were wiped from the face of the earth – much like how our Christian based civilization has begun to worship androgyny and is also being wiped from the face of the earth – by our ever decreasing birthrates. We soon will not exist.

Here is a piece that was written 700 years ago, but could have been written just as easily by any MRA of today:

http://www.theabsolute.net/misogyny/matheol.html

"This female clock is really driving me mad, for her quarrelsome din doesn't stop for a moment. The tongue of a quarrelsome woman never tires of chiming in. She even drowns out the sound of the church bell. A nagging wife couldn't care less whether her words are wise or foolish, provided that the sound of her own voice can be heard. She simply pursues her own ends; there's not a grain of sense in what she says; in fact she finds it impossible to have a decent thought. She doesn't want her husband to be the boss and finds fault with everything he does. Rightly or wrongly, the husband has no choice: he has to put up with the situation and keep his mouth shut if he wants to remain in one piece. No man, however self disciplined or clear sighted he may be, can protect himself adequately against this. A husband has to like what the wife likes, and disapprove of what she hates and criticize what she criticizes so that her opinions appear to be right. So anyone who wishes to immolate himself on the altar of marriage will have a lot to put up with. Fifteen times, both day and night, he will suffer without respite and he will be sorely tormented. Indeed, I believe that this torture is worse than the torments of hell, with its chains, fire, and iron."

These problems we are struggling against ARE NOT NEW, but rather are very, very old and are an integral part of the human condition.

The last king of Persia, Darius III, who at the time ruled the greatest empire the world had ever seen, lamented that "my men have become women and my women have become men," as he was getting his ass handed to him by Alexander the Great.

The Greeks, recognizing that women had caused the downfall of other civilizations, made a very specifically misogynist state with the intention of controlling them, so that their civilization would flourish – which it did.

It was said that during the height of the Roman Empire, that women married intending to divorce, and divorced intending to remarry. The state tried to force men to marry women to stave off declining birthrates, but the men back then decided to go their own way, and wouldn't touch the women. The decline in birthrates caused a shortage in labour, so they imported foreigners (the Vandals, I believe - though don't quote me on that), who did not consider themselves part of Rome and were unwilling to defend it. Kinda sounds like multi-culturalism, eh?

When the Ottoman Empire was over-run, it had negative birthrates.

Delilah deceived Sampson and in doing so, destroyed the strongest man on earth.

Eve tempted Adam, and like any pussy mangina of today, Adam said, "yes, ma'am!"

Reading the works of Belfort Bax, and others who wrote during the late 1800's and early 1900's, one can hardly distinguish the timeframe, as it could have just as easily been written by Angry Harry only yesterday!

Esther Villar states that "women's lib" in the 60's had pretty much accomplished all of its legitimate goals within ONE YEAR! Why has the MRM not been able to accomplish even a peep in 25 years? Because of the human condition – we are dealing with things that we should have never been dealing with in the first place.

Aristotle says that society will remain stable only if all men are equal before the law. Well, because of manginahood, society has never been able to make women equal to men before the law. Men always excused them, and women have never demanded that other women be punished as harshly as men constantly demand other men be punished. I believe the only way that society was able to control women within society was to remove their "legal rights" and place them under the direct authority of one man, her husband, who is responsible for her actions - and thusly her discipline. Then society controls the man through the law - something which men, because of their linear thinking & abstract thought, do adhere to (while women do not). In this way, through marriage, society was able to somewhat make both sexes "equal" before the law.

At the zenith of civilizations, men and women seem to repel from eachother and then conditions set in which cause society to collapse. Maybe we are like lemmings, the only difference being that we are on a longer cycle. Who knows?

These problems are not "new." They are very, very old. They are part of the human condition. Women are natural manipulators and dissimulators, and men naturally come to "heel" for them. It is not women's fault that they are like this, it is just their naturalness within the human condition. It is not "wrong" for rattlesnakes to have venomous fangs either.

The genius of civilization has been recognizing that women are manipulative and that men are pussy manginas when around them – and thusly, 1% of people who were smart enough to see this accurately, devised a system in which women's powers were severely limited so as to cause a civilization to come about. I believe that this is why we have religion in the first place. Religions are in fact, gigantic "constitutions" with completely immoveable goalposts. They prevent mankind from destroying himself and civilization by preventing mankind from using his greatest tool, the ability to reason, as a weapon against himself. Some things are just beyond what we should rationalize about, and this is what patriarchal religions have given to the world – an immoveable law that restricts us from asking questions which would destroy us.

The MRM will always be filled with pussy manginas. It has been ever since the start. It has also been entirely ineffective because men cannot bring themselves to show real anger and hostility toward women, even when women are showing hostility to men. The MRM will always be beaten down into the ground by men themselves. We are dealing with things that are integral to human nature and which we should not have been dealing with in the first place. The MRM has always been running around saying "not ALL women," yet hardly even noticing that not a single woman around them says the same thing when laws get passed against ALL men because of a one in 15,000,000 nutball like Marc Lepine. (Yes, every year since 1989, Marc Lepine has been used as an excuse to remove the rights and powers of ALL Canadian men.) When will men wake up and tell these people to FUCK OFF? Never, that's when! Men cannot hardly bring themselves to whisper even a bit of protest in the face of women. The MRM is rife with manginas trying to make sure that no-one is misogynistic, yet, our very civilization is based on patriarchal misogyny, which feminists and Marxists have correctly identified.

Is it fair to women that it is this way? Certainly it is not.

It is not fair to ask men to die for a social construct called a "nation" in times of war either, is it?

It is not fair that horses have been oppressed by mankind either – but it is a damn good thing that they were!

The thing is, what the MRM is doing is actually hurting men. This civilization has to be reconstructed, and it likely will not happen until things get REALLY bad. A major economic depression or a major war will smarten women and manginas up REAL FAST! It is pretty hard to be an entitlement princess when you have to beg a man for food which he has hunted for or grown himself, or to get warmth in the log cabin which HE has built. Women will likely be more than happy to scrub floors and give unlimited blowjobs to any such man if civilization were to collapse. Women's "power" only seems to come about when a civilization gets powerful and wealthy enough to afford it to women. Have a look at previous civilizations. It seems almost uncanny that at their zenith, men and women have repelled from eachother (because women gained too much power over men), and then the civilization soon collapsed, and men and women rejoined forces out of necessity FOR WOMEN – a man can survive with a garbage bag and a pocket knife. Lol! Even when women have caused the destruction of great civilizations in the past, men were still manginas enough to take them back. It's a good thing too, I suppose, or none of us would be here. It is human nature for women to manipulate, and for men to be pussies and manginas in regard to women.

But… what we have to keep in mind is the thing called the "generation gap."

All we are doing is slowing this beast down – we will not be able to stop it, Marxism has NEVER been defeated. And the longer it takes for this civilization to collapse under the weight of women's big fat asses, and from the hot air from their mangina lackey boys, the less we will remember about the issues of the previous generations.

For example, none of us really questions women's "right" to vote, or even men's "right" to vote. (Universal Suffrage = a Marxist Ideal used to bring about Socialism) These issues were hotly fought over in the 1800's & early 1900's. There was much talk back then about the changing of a Republic into a full blown Democracy – and rightly so, when one starts reading the reasons WHY a Republic is superior, and WHY Democracies have always imploded. But, because of the passage of time, we don't even hardly question these ideologies anymore. In fact, the Republic which was NOT founded as a Democracy, is now running around killing people all around the world in the name of making the world "safe" for Democracy. That should show the disconnect in our thinking right there!

Marxists know all about the passage of generations, and use it to their own advantage. We are now entering into the passage of generations that will no longer question "divorce." 50 years from now, divorce will be moot point discussion, as the reasons for strong marriages will be as forgotten as the reasons for having a Republic instead of a Democracy.

I say that all American MRA's should vote for Hitlery Clinton. That stunned cow will likely be men's greatest ally in the end. Let's kill this cancer called feminism in our society by, well, killing society. That'll work, won't it?

But, let's not do it slowly, like a little baby, crying as the bandaid gets pulled off slowly. Let's rip the thing right off!

Let's not "slow it down" but rather speed it up! Let's make sure that it happens in only one generation, so that there will be men around who understand the ideals we should strive for when we have to rebuild from the ashes.

What most of the MRM seems to fail to realize is that because of the nature of men and women, you cannot just fix some things and not other things.

Think about a ball and a hill.

The ball will only remain stationary at either the top or the bottom of the hill. It will NEVER stay in place half way up the hill, but will always roll back down again. The MRM seems to be led by the belief that we just have to pick

up the ball and run it halfway up the hill, put it down, and all will be fine again. Well, that just ain't gonna work! Women will always manipulate males into giving up more power again – it is their nature! We need the ball to be completely stationary at the TOP of the hill for this problem to be fixed. The rise and fall of previous civilizations should show this to us accurately.

The MRM is only slowing down the inevitable, because it is apparent that the MRM cannot rid itself of manginahood. It is full of little thinking but much talking idiots who buy into the Marxist-Humanist RELIGIOUS belief that it is possible for humans to be so powerful to make the Lion lie peacefully with Lamb. Religions specifically tell us NOT to do this – and for good reason! Religions tell us that we have to accept that good and evil are all around us, we must fight against evil and uphold goodness, but that we, as humans, are not powerful enough to defeat evil. Only God can defeat evil and make the Lion peaceful to the Lamb. We should not try. Both the Feminists and the MRM seem to be completely sold on the notion that mankind is in fact more powerful than God or Nature. Marxism is the religious belief that man is God and has the ability to create "Heaven on Earth." It sells the idea that it can eliminate evil. The MRM seems quite full of this belief as well. Well, I'm saying that it can't. But, this is why manginas are everywhere in the MRM and why they are telling all of the men who actually think, that they shouldn't think like that. It is human nature to do so – but these are things we should NOT be rationalizing about, as it will bring about our destruction.

What was the moral of the story about Icarus flying too close to the sun? Wasn't it about mankind defeating himself when he tries to overpower nature? Yup, I think it was.

Keep in mind that Cultural Marxism is the melding of Freud into Marxism. It full well knows that women are manipulative and men are manginas. What does everyone think the study of sex would indicate otherwise? Marxism also full well knows that giving women power has caused other civilizations to crumble and fall. The, um, entire goal of Marxism is to destroy civilization, so of course they would want to do what has brought destruction to the Persians, Greeks & Romans.

Well, as you can see, I don't know where to start, nor where to finish. I also know that these are entirely complex issues and that I will have little ability to relay this accurately to the MRM, because many in the MRM are really not too concerned with anything except their own ideological involvement within the MRM – much like why Father's Right's Activists so often distance themselves from the MRM. They are only concerned with their own part of the puzzle, certainly not about what the whole picture looks like.

These issues are far too complex to just "explain" to people. In order to effectively fight this madness, there would definitely need to be "top down manipulation" because, in general, people are just too stupid, or too apathetic. We are in this rotten situation because of Top Down Manipulations – there is no doubt about that – and there is no doubt that the same will be needed to stop the madness. Either that, or one can just get a bag of popcorn, step aside much like a Judo move, and fight by not resisting.

Wait to see how much women won't like what Hitlery brings to them when she institutes this Kiddy Lib madness…

http://www.worldnetdaily.com/news/article.asp?ARTICLE_ID=16362

When she was First Lady, she did much work to bring this crap into the UN, as President, she will bring it right to women's front door step.

But watch, after 40 years of male bashing, watch how all of the manginas will run to defend the women when they realize how badly they've screwed up.

Men are already defeated, and have been for decades, if not centuries.

Now the Howitzer is turning and getting ready to fire on the women.

Why should I care? You gets whats you sow, ladies. I'm no mangina, and I won't be coming to their aid.

Far more important for us to be ready to fight viciously for the proper ideals after this cancer has been killed, AFTER the destruction of the ill host, which has become our civilization.

It might possibly be that the worst thing we can do is slow down the inevitable, because doing so will only eliminate, via time, the men that will be needed to inject the proper, patriarchally misogynist ideals that will be needed to form a new type of civilization.

Well, that said, I am also going to take a break from this game and regain some sanity in my life – take time to smell the roses, more or less.

I have no wife. I have no children. I have no alimony or child support payments. I have zero debt. I have a nice tidy sum of cash saved up due to investing in stocks & commodities over the past few years. I own gold in case the economy goes for a shitter. I realize that I don't have to work my ass off in order to survive, as I have managed to survive quite nicely over the past few years without being a work-slave. I have a crappy old car to drive around in, and I still live in one of the most beautiful areas of the world. I have little direct stake in this whole game, except for my annoyance at the situation. It is quite possible for me to live a nice life despite the madness which surrounds me. My health problems are going away and I expect (or demand) that I am on the other side of it by spring, and I am finding a desire to move on with my life.

So I am going to disappear. I might come back some day, as these issues seem to be a continual annoyance once one realizes what they are. Lol! They have been annoying me since before I wrote my first anti-feminist article, as an English Lit term paper for college back in 1992, criticizing the anti-male bias found in the university's student handbook in regard to violence and rape. But if I come back, I would likely kill off the fictitious Rob Fedders, and maybe try to go a bit more main-stream with my ideas – lol, as un-mainstream as they are.

But I will always be a man who chooses to go his own way.

Cheers guys, thanks for all the nice comments.

****

P.S.

Anything that you find on this blog that was written specifically by me, any man may pinch, quote, steal, plagiarize or do whatever the hell else they wish to do with it. You need not ask permission, nor even link if you choose not to. Anything that I have specifically written of my own accord, I hereby transfer ownership to men in general. I get a kick out of seeing my pieces posted around the web, and I need no credit for such things, as Rob Fedders does not even really exist.

http://www.eebell.net/mwc/nomaam.mp3

Keep your stick on the ice!

Correction to this article by "Confused" at Nice-Guy's Forum

Rob Fedders wrote: *"Feminism was born of the Socialist ideals of the Transcendentalist Movement of the early 1800's, which itself was born of Rousseau and the French Revolution."*

Only correction I would like to add is that Transdentalism movement was inspired by adopting some of the vedantic thinking from Hindu scriptures.

http://www.transcendentalists.com/what.htm

The spiritual hunger of the age that also gave rise to a new evangelical Christianity gave rise, in the educated centers in New England and around Boston, to an intuitive, experiential, passionate, more-than-just-rational perspective. God gave humankind the gift of intuition, the gift of insight, the gift of inspiration. Why waste such a gift?

Added to all this, the scriptures of non-Western cultures were discovered in the West, translated, and published so that they were more widely available. The Harvard-educated Emerson and others began to read Hindu and Buddhist scriptures, and examine their own religious assumptions against these scriptures. In their perspective, a loving God would not have led so much of humanity astray; there must be truth in these scriptures, too. Truth, if it agreed with an individual's intuition of truth, must be indeed truth.

And so Transcendentalism was born. In the words of Ralph Waldo Emerson, "We will walk on our own feet; we will work with our own hands; we will speak our own minds...A nation of men will for the first time exist, because each believes himself inspired by the Divine Soul which also inspires all men."

Yes, men, but women too.

Thanks, Confused -- RF

Charles Moffat. Canadian Artist? A Critical Review of Charles Alexander Moffat.

. · 16 February 2008 · Archived copy · Original

Well, well. A pre-emptive strike by a mangina has brought the mighty Rob Fedders out of retirement. What can I say? The public demands me!

http://funnyhatemail.blogspot.com/2008/02/feminist-propaganda.html

First, I would like to remind the reader that it is never a wise idea to post an e-mail in a public space, especially when using it to attack someone. E-mails are considered to be private communications and taking a private correspondence, posting it publicly without consent of one of the parties, and using it to attack and defame the person is borderline behaviour that could land one in court on the wrong end of a libel suit.

Lucky for Charles Moffat that I am not a sue-monkey! Rather, since he has pre-emptively posted an e-mail conversation between us publicly on his site, I now feel no moral obligation to refrain from speaking about Charles Moffat, the great Canadian artist.

Charles Alexander Moffat is one of those artists whose specialty appears to be creating something similar to those children's game pictures. You know the ones, "How Many Things Can You Find Wrong With This Picture?"

On Jan 15, 2008 3:39 PM, Rob Fedders wrote:
I have found a page on your website:

http://www.feministezine.com/feminist/modern/Dealing-with-Antifeminism.html

You show a picture of an "All Women Are Bitches" Knifeblock:

http://www.feministezine.com/feminist/modern/images/Anti-Feminist-25.jpg
.

.

However, either you yourself, or someone else has purposefully altered this picture from the original which is attached to this e-mail WITH the proper disclaimer that seems to have conveniently disappeared…

.

.

I find this extremely dishonest of you, and it only supports anti-feminist arguments that honesty and honour have absolutely no home within feminist "logic."

This picture was made as a protest against the BLATANT promotion of deadly violence against males, which in its

country of origin is SUPPOSED to be illegal. However, it is not. It would however, if it were an "All Women are Bitches" Knifeblock, wouldn't it?

http://www.angryharry.com/esstabbingmenisfunny.htm

.

New!! Latest Ladies Kitchen Accessory

The "All Men are Bastards" Knife Block

.

Shame on you for your own blatant propaganda and manipulations.

The more that people like you resort to this kind of dishonesty, the more you steel the spines of those who want to make your sick agenda disappear.

I would be more than happy to highlight this dishonesty of yours all over the internet, if you believe that this is the proper way for you to convince others of your cause. In fact, I know of lots of people who would delight in such blatant proof of feminist dishonesty.

Charles Moffat lilethgallery@gmail.com wrote:

We found that image on an anti-feminist website.

Sincerely,
Charles Moffat

.

On Jan 15, 2008 5:09 PM, Rob Fedders wrote:

I don't doubt that is where you found it. It can be found in many places, and certainly feminists don't care two hoots about the violence men suffer so I believe you that you didn't find it at Pandagon. But it pretty much always appears with the disclaimer that states WHY it is the way it is. I doubt it was altered by an anti-feminist, and if it was, it would have been in a post about the "All Men Are Bastards" Knifeblock. The form you have posted is altered, and therefore purposefully inaccurate and misleading. Also, now you know it is inaccurate and misleading, which would make you somewhat libelous, don't you think? You now have a copy of the original.

Like I said, I don't have any qualms about spreading it around what you have on your site. I care about your cause as little as you care about mine. I, however, adhere to some basic morals - most likely to my disadvantage. But anti-

feminists just love it when feminist sites get caught with their panties down. Posting that picture in an altered form is blatantly dishonest.

Do you support violence against human beings? This is a protest against violence - period. Yet, your dishonesty has taken a protest against violence, shown said protest in an altered form, and you insinuate inaccurately that men are encouraging violence against women - and you know it!

What are you going to do with your moral superiority?

.

Charles Moffat wrote:

We're going to laugh and post your ridiculous email.

:)

.

On Jan 15, 2008 6:08 PM, Rob Fedders wrote:

Ditto

.

(Tap, tap, tap… a month goes by… tap, tap, tap… "Ding! You have mail!")

.

On Feb 13, 2008 1:22 AM, Charles Moffat wrote:

Question:

Do you believe women have the right to freedom of speech?

(Rob's answer: http://no-maam.blogspot.com/2008/02/charles-moffat-canadian-artist-critical_17.html)

To vote?

(Rob's answer: http://no-maam.blogspot.com/2008/02/womens-vote-question.html)

To divorce?

(Rob's answer: http://no-maam.blogspot.com/2008/02/questionators-should-women-have-right.html)

To be free from domestic abuse?

(Rob's answer: http://no-maam.blogspot.com/2008/02/how-to-end-domestic-abuse.html)

To bear children when they wish to?

(Rob's answer: http://no-maam.blogspot.com/2008/02/womans-right-to-choose.html)

We find your response regarding the knife block image quite amusing, but frankly not much of one. The image was cropped because it took up too much space and felt too much like an advertisement.

You seem to have taken it rather personally. It is just an image. Get over it.

Also, with regards to the questions above we believe that if you answer No to any of them is basically a vote in favour of slavery.

Because when you take away a person's rights that is exactly what happens: Slavery.

We'd like to pound that idea into your thick skull, hence this email, but we don't really expect it to work. Most men are stuck in their ways and a lost cause after the age of 24.

In conclusion that article "Dealing with Antifeminism" isn't meant for you. It is meant for our female readers and those men who haven't been blinded by misogyny and bitterness.

Sincerely,

Charles Moffat and Suzanne MacNevin

.

On Feb 13, 2008 10:40 AM, Rob Fedders wrote:

Lol!

I thought you were going to post my ridiculous e-mail.

.

On Feb 13, 2008 12:03 PM, Charles Moffat wrote:

We did post your ridiculous e-mails:

http://funnyhatemail.blogspot.com/2008/02/feminist-propaganda.html

---

.

Now, I encourage the reader to keep in mind that Charles Alexander Moffat is ***an artist!***

http://www.lilithgallery.com/gallery/charles_moffat.html

Towards the bottom of the page on his site, he lists on his Curriculum Vitae that he was “educated” as follows:

Specialized Honours Bachelor of Fine Arts at York University, Toronto, specializing in painting. Also studied art history, drawing, installation art, interdisplinary works, mural painting, politics, sculpture & time-based art. Elected Vice President of C.A.S.A. (the Creative Arts Student Association manages $150,000 in student funding) for two years and York Senator for two years.

Yes, indeed, Charles Moffat is ***an artist*** who states in his e-mail: ***"It is just an image. Get over it."***

Now let me ask you, dear reader, how it is possible for someone whose entire education and whose entire gallery, his entire work as an artist, could be so bold to claim that “It is just an image. Get over it.”?

Isn’t an artist’s purpose in life to communicate with images in the same way a writer communicates with words?

What kind of an artist would imply that images are pointless?

What kind of an artist would suggest that his very work, his image based art, cannot move people? Wouldn’t that mean that everything which he does or tries to say with his art is also pointless?

Since my tax dollars support the education system which educates such “Canadian artists,” I believe it is my duty as a patriotic Canadian to do an in depth, critical review of Charles Alexander Moffat and his mindset, to discover how our university system can graduate artists who, apparently, do not believe in the power of images.

Stay tuned for part two of my critical review of Charles Moffat, a Canadian artist who asks premium dollars for his art, yet apparently does not believe that images can communicate meaning or move people.

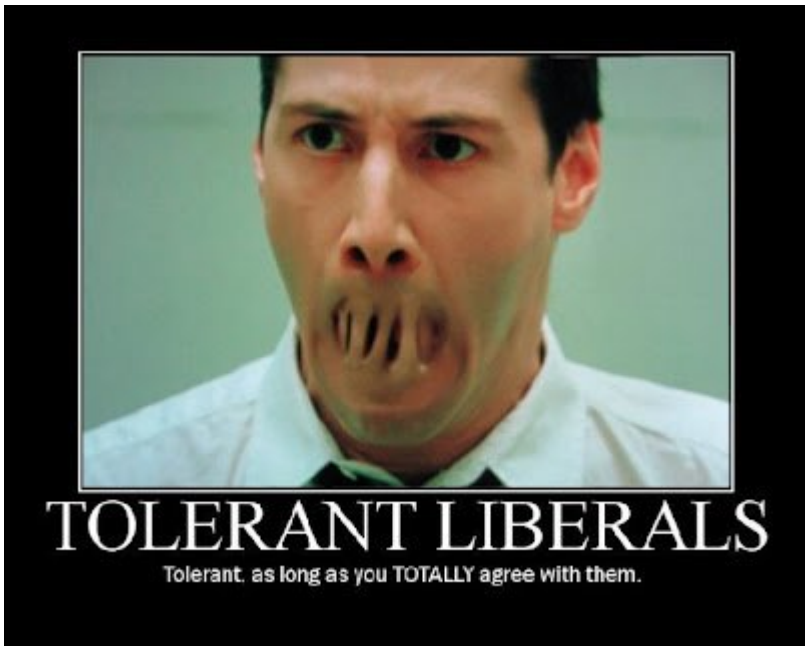
(The new and improved one:
http://www.gizmodiva.com/home_improvement/throwzini_knife_block_to_vent_out_your_anger.php

"If the All men are Bastards knife didn’t serve the purpose and you thought it to be a bit ouchy then try the Throwzini Knife Block. Inspired by the spinning wheel of death, don’t you think that you can now master the art of throwing knives in your kitchen. No dear you cannot do all that. 5 stainless steel razor sharp professional chef knives will remain secured in their respective places with magnets. You can just keep the wheel spinning and *let your younger one clap her hands* over the fact that none of the knife fell off. The handcrafted knife block is made of wood.")

.

Do You Believe Women Have the Right to Freedom of Speech?

. · 17 February 2008 · Archived copy · Original



.

Question:

Do you believe women have the right to freedom of speech?

Answer:

I believe *all people* should have the right to freedom of speech.

However, I am curious as to why feminists Charles Moffat and Suzanne MacNevin should frame the question in a way to make it gender specific. Perhaps they feel that women should have free speech, but not men?

It is certainly not anti-feminists who are opposed to free speech. In fact, some of us are anti-feminist *because* we believe in preserving free speech. Feminism is the movement that wishes to make anyone speaking out against it guilty of hate crimes. Where Charles Moffat and Suzanne MacNevin get the idea that anti-feminists are against freedom of speech can only come from the projection of their own feminist evil desires.

Who was it that became famous for wasting $75,000 of taxpayer dollars by creating a report for the Status of Women Canada which recommended that websites who opposed feminism should be placed on a "Hate Watch?"

Hmmm… who was that again?

Oh yeah, it was the *feminist* professor, Pierrette Bouchard, from Laval University. Mzzzz Bouchard, great feminist "thinker," does not believe in free speech. (I know, I know. "Feminist thinker" is an oxymoron).

The danger of such laws as feminists have put forward are that they outlaw the truth. Yes, that's right. What "Hate Crime Laws" do is make the truth irrelevant and illegal.

Under Hate Crime Laws, if say, an incredibly intelligent anti-feminist should quote domestic violence *facts* which

illustrate that women are just as violent as men, such as those put forth by Stats Canada (the Government) itself, the truth does not make you innocent of committing a Hate Crime. You see, Hate Crimes are designed so that *anything* which is said about the protected group must be stifled, because even the truth can cause ill feelings towards them.

But yet, this is what feminists are trying to do to an unsuspecting population. They are trying to outlaw the truth because they *know* they have been cooking the books and slanting their position to such an enormous degree that even a quick glance will reveal their dishonesty and unravel their totalitarian agenda. Feminism can't handle the truth because there is nothing truthful about feminism.

It is truly staggering to see the backroom manipulations, from our own governments to the United Nations, all trying to get speaking out against the *political* movement of feminism to be declared a "Hate Crime." If feminist theories are sound, they should stand up under intense scrutiny, don't you think? What are they so scared of then?

On the subject of free speech and freedom of the press, I do, however, believe that there should be some regulation to impose some badly needed checks and balances.

Yes, yes. I know. That goes against my general libertarian ideals. But, media is somewhat unique in its function of maintaining liberty. In fact, the media is *supposed* to be mandated to help maintain liberty by continually questioning and highlighting various aspects of society.

The whole idea of free speech is supposed to be a check and balance within itself, and this is what it is supposed to mean in our constitutions. It works on a free market type of idea.

It was originally intended that there should be hundreds, if not thousands of ideas and viewpoints put forth to the people with free speech. If someone believes in an idea, he should be able to buy a printing press, set it up in his garage, and start speaking and spreading his ideas around. If his ideas are sound, they will rise in popularity. If his ideas are stupid, some other guy with a printing press will write about it and his ideas will fall in popularity. All along, free speech from *multitudes* of sources should theoretically self regulate itself.

What was *never* intended, however, was a media monopoly, as we currently have. Here in Canada, we have only two companies who own virtually all of the media. In the USA, there are five companies, I believe.

We might have multiple newspapers and multiple news channels on TV, but they are all owned by the same companies and they all spout forth the *exact* same message. This effectively destroys the part of free speech which is supposed to maintain liberty. Media is unique in the way that it is mandated to maintain liberty. The media has failed us horribly.

The way the internet is working, with thousands and millions of voices all competing with eachother is *exactly* how free speech is supposed to work.

It makes one wonder then, why those in government (ie. Nancy Pelosi) immediately charge forward trying to regulate free speech on the internet, often in the name of protecting political agendas such as feminism. The internet does not need to be regulated, it is self regulating just as free speech was intended to be. How come the government does not attempt to break the media monopolies to encourage *more* free speech? Rather, government is trying to stop the first breath of free speech we have heard in decades by trying to regulate the internet.

They are scared shitless of free speech.

They know that agendas like feminism are heavily based in Marxism and have been used against the people to

socially re-engineer them.

They know that with free speech, these agendas will no longer be protected and permitted to go along unnoticed. There is treason afoot, and unregulated free speech from little ding dongs like me is fast revealing it. The millions of voices are getting louder and louder. Communist based agendas like feminism are coming under the microscope and are found to be lacking.

I don't think there is any anti-feminist that is opposed to free speech. Quite the opposite.

But, I can see why feminists continually try to end free speech under the rubric of "Hate Crimes Legislation." Feminism knows that if society is allowed to closely examine her silk panties, it will be discovered that they are soiled with skid marks.

Previous Index Next

MGTOW

"If it's not right, Go Your Own Way!"

.....
..oooO.....
..(....).....
….\..(.....
…. _/.....
…….....Oooo..
…….....(....)…
……..)../....
.....(_/.....
.....

The Women's Vote Question

. · 18 February 2008 · Archived copy · Original

Charles Moffat and Suzanne MacNevin asked:
http://no-maam.blogspot.com/2008/02/charles-moffat-canadian-artist-critical.html

[Do you believe women have the right] to vote?

Answer:

I'm not sure that a person who believes Somalia is in the Balkans should have a say in who represents us in foreign affairs. http://funnyhatemail.blogspot.com/2008/02/only-reason-you-hate-bush.html

I'm serious.

Furthermore, I don't believe that 51% of the people should have the ability to vote to take away the rights of the other 49%, but that is exactly the situation we find ourselves with in a system of Universal Democracy.

"Democracy is two wolves and a lamb voting on what to have for lunch. Liberty is a well-armed lamb contesting the vote." – Benjamin Franklin

I think that questions like "should X have the right to vote?" could be compared to a typical family:

Imagine four children and two parents.

Should everyone have an equal vote in this six person family?

Why or why not?

Aren't they all equal human beings?

Why or why not?

I think most rational people would say the four children should not be allowed to "outvote" the two parents; yet, they still have the *right* to live in the family's house and to sit at the family's dinner table.

Don't you agree?

Is there a situation where this should change? What if, say, the oldest two children go out and get jobs and start paying room and board?

Should that increase the "power" of their wishes?

Many people would say that it should, and I don't disagree. But what if the two oldest children decide to "vote" to knock out all the walls in the basement so they have greater space to play floor hockey?

Should they have the "right" to do such a thing just because they have a vote?

I think most people would agree that just because the two older children now have a greater say, this in no way gives them the authority to break certain general rules.

And what if the two children who now pay room and board decide to "vote" that Mom and Dad should pool their monthly incomes with them and thus greatly increase the resources available to them? Should that be allowed? Why or why not?

Perhaps, the two children paying room and board might "vote" that Mom and Dad should purchase a second car for the kids to drive, or for an expensive swimming pool in the backyard. Should that be allowed? Why or why not?

I think most people would agree that low income people having the "right" to vote to take away the resources of high income people, and use those resources to benefit themselves (the low income people), is nothing more than legalized theft. Why should a low income person be *entitled* to steal the resources of the higher income person?

In the story of the Good Samaritan, he stopped along the way *and gave of his own resources* to help someone in need.

Would he would have been a "Good" Samaritan if he had stopped you by gunpoint, *stole your resources,* and gave them to the needy?

I think he would have been a Crap Ass Samaritan. Don't you?

And what if this Crap Ass Samaritan ended up stealing so much of *your* resources that you no longer had enough left over to actually *give* anything of your own accord? I don't think that is a good situation at all. Do you?

To answer the original question, *"[Do you believe women have the right] to vote?",* I don't think that *anyone* should have the "right" to vote unless they can demonstrate they possess enough understanding of our country's constitution and history, plus illustrate they have an adequate understanding of political science in addition to a basic general knowledge of both domestic and foreign affairs.

We make people take a test to ensure they are knowledgeable and responsible enough to drive a car. Don't you think it would be equally wise to make people take a test before granting them the power to drive the country?

I do.

I also think we should be living in a country that adheres to the principles of a Constitutional Republic, which means that the people are equally responsible to a system of "impartial rule of law" and where no man or woman is above the law. And I think that the leaders of this Constitutional Republic should be decided by a *Limited* Democracy.

A Universal Democracy, however, is a really, really bad idea and never leads to a good end.

"It had been observed that a pure democracy if it were practicable would be the most perfect government. Experience had proved that no position is more false than this. The ancient democracies in which the people themselves deliberated never possessed one good feature of government. Their very character was tyranny; their figure deformity." – Alexander Hamilton, June 21, 1788

What most of the political correctoids fail to comprehend when they screech about "democracy" and women's "right" to vote, is that our countries were not intended to have universal democracy – not for men or women. There

are far too many people who believe Somalia is in the Balkans for that to have been a wise idea.

Even men did not have the vote for much longer than women. Oh sure, *some* men had the vote and held positions of power, but the vast majority did not. Most countries in the Western World began granting the "right" for landless men to vote during the mid-Nineteenth Century, anywhere from 50 to 60 years before it was granted to women. Men certainly did not have the vote for "thousands of years" before women.

The rise of the philosophies of Socialism began in earnest during the time frame of the mid-Nineteenth Century to the early Twentieth Century. It was also during this time frame that our Western countries changed from adhering to the principles of a Constitutional Republic to those of a Universal Democracy.

"Democracy is the road to Socialism." – Karl Marx

Yes indeed, Mr. Marx.

And it is interesting to note that a fairly good spattering of the Suffragettes were deeply involved with the Socialist Movement. One naturally wonders then if their demonstrations for democracy had more to do with the advancement of Socialism than it did with the issues of "women's rights."

In fact, one might say that a wise person who wishes to condemn that women did not have the vote for the approximate half century when only men did, would do well to *at least* examine the arguments of those who opposed women's suffrage before attempting to speak with authority on the subject. Don't you agree?

Should one undertake such a task, one would soon find that many of those who were opposed to women's suffrage took such a stance out of concern for preserving the nature of the state. They were concerned about the changing of the principles of a republic into the principles associated with a democracy, and what affect women's nature would have on this.

You see, it has long been known that women tend to choose collective security over individualism and freedom. This was well known in the past and it is still well known today. Sure, sure. Some men will choose security over freedom as well, but in general women choose collective security while men choose individual freedom.

Have a look at who the majority of women vote for today as opposed to men. In the USA, women overwhelmingly support the Democrat Party and its socialist principles of bigger government while men tend to be the majority of supporters of the Republican Party, which theoretically stands for smaller government and more individual freedom.

In fact, here is a study titled *How Dramatically Did Women's Suffrage Change the Size and Scope of Government?* which was written by John R. Lott, Jr., and Larry Kenny for the University of Chicago. http://www.law.uchicago.edu/Lawecon/WkngPprs_51-75/60.Lott.Suffrage.complete.pdf?abstract_id=160530 It illustrates that since the advent of women's suffrage in the early Twentieth Century, women have consistently voted for larger government and more Socialist policies.

Now, all political correctness aside, if it is shown that the women's vote is slowly but surely changing our countries from places which enshrine the values of freedom into nations which do not allow for freedom, but rather enshrine the values of totalitarian Socialist government… do you think that people should have the *right* to discuss this phenomenon freely with out the shrill chirping of feminists and their mangina enablers in their ears?

I mean, you do believe in *free speech,* don't you?

And oddly, free speech is actually a universal “right” which is laid forth in our constitutions while, curiously, the universal “right” to vote is not. Even a five year old has the “right” to free speech, but not the right to vote.

One might even go so far to suggest that a responsible citizen has a *duty* to point out that if we keep following down this road without creating some checks and balances, we soon will wind up with a form of government in which *none* of us has the ability to vote at all.

Political correctness coupled with intimidation from feminists and manginas does not change “facts,” and such people who believe that they have the “right” to vote for the destruction of the constitutions upon which our countries are founded, are in fact exercising a vote of treason.

People who would vote for treason, regardless of their sex, should not have the “right” to vote at all. Don’t you agree?

Read more about voting "rights" and the subject of Republic vs. Democracy here:

http://no-maam.blogspot.com/2007/04/republic-versus-democracy.html

How to End Domestic Abuse

. · 21 February 2008 · Archived copy · Original

"[Do you believe women have the right] to be free from domestic abuse?"

Answer:

Yes!

In fact, I think that we should strive to put an end to all forms of domestic abuse, and I don't think we should rest until domestic abuse is completely eradicated from our society.

I also think that domestic abuse should be removed from society not only in the terms of male on female violence, but also in regard to female on male violence.

I'll bet you think that I'm going to start quoting statistics illustrating that females are just as violent as males, don't you?

Come on, admit it!

Well, sorry to disappoint you, but I don't think that's the best way to end domestic abuse.

I believe the best way to "end" domestic abuse is to simply abolish the term "domestic abuse" from our language, from our mindset, and definitely from our courts.

I'm serious. Out of all the feminists who cry out to "end domestic violence," to all the holier than thou academics who study domestic abuse in an effort to "solve it," to the plethora of politicians who pledge to pass more laws to "prevent it," and yes, even to the multitudes of Men's Rights Activists (MRA's) who demand to be "included as victims of it," have you ever heard of such a sound plan as mine?

I am the only one with a sure fired, guaranteed formula to actually end all forms of domestic violence!

Why, oh why, am I paid so little?

Why do we have the term "domestic abuse" in the first place?

Weren't there already laws in place that protected us from violence before the feminists thought up the term "domestic violence?"

Living together in the same house does not somehow free one from impartial judgment by the law of the land. At least, I can't find the law which says that it does, or ever did.

Were there laws on the books that granted "spousal immunity" in regard to general assault and battery laws?

Could you legally murder your spouse before the term "domestic abuse" was concocted, or did homicide laws protect people regardless of their marital status?

If someone were to, say, threaten to "pound something into my thick skull," can I not go to the proper authorities,

report it, and ask for a restraining order regardless of whether the person is in my immediate family or not?

Wasn't all of this covered already before the term "domestic abuse" became a household word at the behest of the feminists' socially redefining academic and legal juggernauts?

We can end "domestic abuse" *completely* by simply getting rid of the term itself and going back to allowing the law to protect us in the way it used to.

Abracadabra!

Poof!

Gone!

I'll send the government my bill.

And by golly, YES, I *will* accept that tenured position at the University of British Columbia!

Does anything better illustrate how sick we have become as a society than the phenomenon that we can no longer comprehend how to function without *begging* the government to impose more laws upon us?

Not only do we ask for less freedom, but we demand that problems be *completely* solved by passing more and more laws until every last aspect of the problem is gone.

Imagine a lobby group was formed to "end speeding" and they pledge to keep fighting until *every last speeder is removed from the roads.*

It starts off small, perhaps with a policy of "zero tolerance" for being even one mph over the limit and increasing the fines by 50% to hurt people in their jeans.

But, some people are *still* speeding.

What to do, what to do?

Well, let's give speeders points on their driver's license which will increase their insurance premiums!

"Zooooooommmmm!!!" The sound reverberates in a rubber-necker's ears.

"There out to be a law!" he exclaims, "Doooooo something!"

So, we pass a law that anyone caught speeding will have their car impounded for 6 months.

But still, *someone* will speed, *somewhere*.

I think you can see where this is going. In the end, there is absolutely no possible way to remove *every last speeder from the road…* except, that is, to make it illegal for anyone to drive a car, period. That is the only possible end to the equation.

And so it is. Transportation by automobile benefits mankind to an enormous degree, *but* there are certain negatives

we *must* accept that go along with the positives. If we want easy, fast mobility and cheap transportation of goods, we must also accept there will be a certain amount negatives that are unavoidable.

There will be speeders, there will be accidents, and there will be injuries and deaths.

And we must accept that there will be these negatives or we will not receive the positives.

This concept is all around us in nature. Mankind must not be as smart as he thought if he can't see what is all around him.

.

.

People who say they will not rest until the problem is completely solved are preaching totalitarianism and should be made to spend an afternoon in the stocks; letting some tomatoes smarten them up a few IQ points.

The world will *never* be perfect.

Only Marxists preach that they can create Heaven on Earth. And they preach it will be achieved by slavery to a totalitarian state.

Marxists are evil idiots. Many feminists and academics are unabashed Marxists.

Have a look at how the Abuse Industry works with our children.

Instead of asking a hard working farmer and his wife of 40 years how they successfully raised eight law-abiding, successful children, we ask someone completely different for "expert" advice.

Who do we ask?

We ask an angry 45 year old lesbian with a Ph D in Whatchamacallit, who herself comes from a broken home. She has one 3 year old child which was spawned by Thomas the Turkey Baster.

These kinds of people are our "experts."

And, what do our "experts" recommend?

Parents should not be allowed to decide how to discipline their own children! *Some* parents have "over-disciplined" their children, and therefore no parent should be allowed to discipline their child with spanking.

That parents have successfully raised their children with the aid of physical discipline for thousands of years now becomes irrelevant to our academic gods. *Times are different now.* Yes, fine individuals like George Washington and Abraham Lincoln were spanked as children, but children were born with leather asses back in those days. Children born today are *different* from them. Can't you tell? They now have three arms and green skin!

"Parents have been wrong for *thousands of years,"* cries our Sapphic guru, "and *some* parents have abused spanking to the point where it is physically abusive, therefore ***NO*** parents should be allowed to do it!"

It is much better to let a child learn that playing in traffic is dangerous by sitting the five year old down and explaining it to him. If discipline is needed, a "time out" is recommended, and ultimately, children need to figure out and learn these things on their own anyway. That Mack truck has a *natural* lesson it will teach your child, so what the hell do you parents think you are doing, giving your child a smack on his bottom? You Cretins!

You see, our "intellectuals" have manipulated our legal systems with a belief that it is better to have *all* children raised at 50% capacity, rather than to have 95% of children raised at 100% capacity, with the remaining 5% raised at 25%.

They believe they can prevent this:

.

.

By making *everyone* live in a Utopia that looks like this:

.

.

Our lesbian lecturer will tell us that this is for "the greater good," but it becomes obvious that she is not an expert in mathematics.

You see, 100% of the population at 50% equals 50%.

But (95% of the population at 100%) plus (5% of the population at 25%) equals 96.25%.

A population operating at 96.25% capacity is greater than one operating at 50%.

Who's telling who about "the greater good?"

Everywhere you look in nature you will find this formula.

It's time for us to recognize that *laws can also be repealed!*

We already had legal mechanisms protecting us from violence. We didn't need to have a whole further myriad of never ending laws bringing the whole herd down to 50% capacity.

And we certainly don't need to lobby to be included within them, feeding the Utopian beast even more.

End the Abuse Industry NOW!

It's the only sure fired way to rid the world of Domestic Abuse.
.
"Heaven on Earth" is a nice fairytale theory. But in practice it becomes a Living Hell.

Previous Index Next
MGTOW

"If it's not right, Go Your Own Way!"
.....
..oooO.....
..(....).....
….\..(.....
…. _/.....
…….....Oooo..
…….....(....)…
……..)../....
.....(_/.....
.....

A Woman's Right to Choose

. · 24 February 2008 · Archived copy · Original

"[Do you believe women have the right] to bear children when they wish to?"

Answer:

I suspect this is a trick question that deals with abortion, and not actually women's *natural right* to bear children when they wish to. All females in the animal kingdom have the *natural right* to bear children, as I have already pointed out in a previous post.

Also, note that women are the ones who are in control. They choose to either abstain or get naked and spread their legs. They are the ones who know best when they are ovulating and thus are directly in control of "The Rhythm Method." They are the ones who have the pill, condoms, IUD's, spermicides, diaphragms, hysterectomies, the "morning after pill," and abortions at their disposal. After giving birth, they are the ones who can decide to keep the baby, put it up for adoption or anonymously abandon it at a hospital, police station or fire department without fear of legal repercussions.

A man has only the choices of abstaining, condoms or vasectomy.

And yet, society whines relentlessly at the *man* for "getting *her* pregnant."

This is entirely absurd, and it would appear to anyone on the outside looking in that women are complaining of oppression because *they are the ones with all the choices.*

But, I digress. Let's get back to abortion.

.

I am sure that feminists will fast point out that 2/3 of the population supports abortion. But, as with almost everything that feminists say, they are only speaking in half truths.

What these types of abortion-support statistics are based on is that when surveyed, 1/3 of the population supports abortion-on-demand, 1/3 does *not* support abortion-on-demand but does support abortion in cases of incest, rape or when the mother's health is at risk, and the remaining 1/3 are opposed to all kinds of abortion.

Feminists are quite aware that most un-informed people naturally choose cohesion to the larger group and that is why they dishonestly skew these statistics to make it appear that most of the population supports abortion. Everybody wants to be a "moderate" who is in agreement with the majority. It is a well known psychological phenomenon, sometimes even used in brainwashing techniques, and feminists manipulate it ruthlessly.

When one examines things a little closer though, it becomes apparent that abortions performed on victims of rape and incest, or those performed when the mother's health is at risk; make up such a miniscule percentage of the total amount of abortions performed that it is *far* more accurate to say that 2/3 of population are opposed to the majority of abortions – that being, abortion as a means of birth control.

What a sneaky little trick that our "esteemed academics" have played on us with this wordplay.

Stalin, Hitler and Goebbels applaud them heartily from the depths of hell.

But, this whole argument gets even *more* absurd than it would first appear, precisely *because* feminists have successfully fought for the "right to choose."

In a previous article, I pointed out that children are the product of *woman's* sexuality, which she *owns* 100%. It *used to be* that upon marriage; a woman *"sold"* her sexuality to a man and took *his* surplus labour as "payment" for it. Thus, the children of a *marriage* used to be considered the *husband's* children, while children born *out-of-wedlock* were considered to be the *woman's* "property."

In times past, it was often considered the "morally right thing for a man to do" to marry a woman who got *herself* pregnant by irresponsibly using *her* sexuality out of wedlock. Society benefited from this socially manipulated moral pressure, as it has always been known that fatherless children were detrimental to society, thus the negative

connotations associated with the word “bastard.” But, under *no* circumstances was a man legally *obligated* to “give the child his name,” to take ownership of the woman’s sexuality through marriage, and thus, make *her* child into his own.

But we live in different times today than we did in the past. We now have a plethora of birth control methods that have been made available *to women.* (Not men. Aside from a permanent vasectomy, men’s birth control methods have not changed much at all). And, to top it all off, *if a woman fails to use **all** of the various birth control methods available to her,* she is still offered the ultimate *choice* to kill the baby via abortion. And, let’s make no mistake about it; it is ***HER CHOICE,*** not the man’s, and not anyone else’s. Is this not the core of the feminist mantra, *"A Woman's Right to **CHOOSE**"?* Is not this “right to choose” enshrined in the laws of almost every Western nation?

So, I want to put a little comparison into your head to fully illustrate how absurd this argument has become.

Imagine Dick and Jane, two platonic friends, are walking down the street together and they pass a car dealership, Fembot Motors. They stop and admire a shiny new Corvette together. They both get a twinkle in their eye and smile as they see the other has the same thought: “Let’s take this car for a test drive!”

So, Dick and Jane roar out of the dealership in the Corvette. First Jane drives the car, then they switch positions and Dick drives it home. Ah, the joy of driving! Their hearts pound with excitement. The exhilaration of controlling a powerful beast! But, they never had any intention of actually “buying” the Corvette. They are just joy-riding.

Upon returning to the dealership, they toss the keys back to the salesman, say “thanks,” and carry on walking down the road together without a care in the world.

But, alas, a month later Jane calls up Dick and informs him that she returned to the dealership after their test drive and purchased the Corvette, signing a 4 year lease with payments of $1,300 a month. Now she wants to know if he will “man up” and help her make the payments on it, because after all, they went on the original test drive together. Jane claims that he planted the seeds of desire into her head which caused her to *choose* to purchase the Corvette.

Of course, Dick tells her to get bent. She *chose* to purchase the car of her own free will and he is not responsible for *her choices.*

Jane does not allow things to just quietly go away and take responsibility for *her choices,* however. No indeed! In fact, she gets herself a lawyer and Dick is served a summons to appear in court where Jane is bringing a lawsuit

against Dick, to force him to pay for *her* new Corvette.

Dick goes to court as he is required to, and walks out completely dumbfounded by the judge's decision:

Because Dick went on the original test drive with Jane, the judge declares that Dick is liable to pay "damages" to Jane. After all, Dick planted the seeds of desire in Jane's head by agreeing to go on a test drive with her. Therefore, the court declares that Dick is responsible for Jane's *choice* to purchase the car.

Since Jane is the one who has the responsibilities of driving the car, washing the car, and providing a parking space in the driveway for the car, Judge MacKinnon rules that it's only fair that Dick contributes his share to the upkeep of the Corvette: Dick must make the $1,300/mo lease payments, in addition to paying for the insurance, gas and maintenance to operate the car.

Dick requests of the judge that he be given the right to drive the Corvette himself from time to time, but Judge MacKinnon rules against Dick's request because *it is not his car, and therefore he has no "rights" to it!*

You can see why being a Dick is not a good thing to be.

.

.

But, is this not the *exact* situation we are now presented with since "women have the right to *choose?"*

Most places have laws on the books called "Fetal Murder Laws." Take states like California or Texas, for example. Fetal Murder is considered to be a Capital Crime, punishable as if the fetus were a living, breathing human being.

Killing a fetus in these states is considered equal to *murdering* a human being.

But, how come then, a woman and her doctor are not charged with murder in the event of an abortion?

It is because of the *woman's right to choose,* which even supercedes murder laws!

And, let's just clear this up a little. It is *not* that the woman is choosing whether she wants to have a fertilized egg inside her or not. She has already passed up on choosing *several* safe and easy birth control methods before she got to the Right to Choose phase.

What a woman is "choosing" is whether what is inside of her is a human life to be honoured and revered, or just a useless piece of tissue to be flushed down the toilet.

If she *chooses* that the fetus is just a useless piece of tissue instead of human life, then the state fully backs her up and says the fetus is not alive, and therefore she cannot be guilty of murder when she rids herself of it.

But, if she *chooses* that the fetus is to be a baby, then the state backs her up and says that if someone causes her fetus to miscarry, that person is guilty of homicide – of taking a human life.

So you see, while a woman may have a fertilized egg inside of her as a result using her sexuality with a man, the "right to choose" dictates that it is *nothing* until the woman chooses, of her own free will, whether or not she wants "this thing" to be a baby or disposable garbage.

And, God forbid that she loses that right to choose. Why, that is enshrined as a woman's civil right, and to deny her this *choice* is to oppress her! (Mother Nature is a really oppressive bitch).

But, it is clear that if a woman has "a right to choose," then she does not actually become pregnant *until* ***after*** *conception.* She becomes pregnant only when she chooses to of her own free will.

So, how on earth can feminists and the corrupt courts possibly demand that a man should be legally and financially responsible for *her* choice?

If she "chooses" for it to be a human life and have a baby, then it is absolutely no different than if she chose to go into a fertility clinic and become pregnant through artificial insemination. And, in such situations, she is responsible for the consequences of her choice, including financial responsibility.

A man should only be responsible for the child if he himself has chosen to be so of his own free will. And, that choice usually comes through marriage.

Are women to be treated as children in our society? Why don't feminists demand an end to this insulting farce and declare that women are independent and can handle responsibility for their own *choices?* Why do they insist that others should pay for their choices?

"Rights without responsibilities" is the state of a child.

"Responsibilities without rights" is the state of a slave.

"Rights with responsibilities for one's own actions" is the state of a full fledged citizen; a full "person" under the law.

Why do feminists keep demanding that women be treated like children and men like slaves?

Why don't women stand up and declare their equality by refusing to be coddled as though they're toddlers who cannot be held responsible for their own choices?

Why are women granted the right to be "dead-beat citizens?"

It's time to choose to "woman up," ladies.

What's taking you so long to choose to grow up?

Previous Index Next
MGTOW

“If it’s not right, Go Your Own Way!”

.....
..oooO.....
..(....).....
….\..(.....
…. _/.....
…….....Oooo..
…….....(....)…
……..)../....
.....(_/.....
.....

Read more about this subject on Angry Harry’s site:

Rant Against the CSA

and,

Why Should a Man Bear Responsibility for a Woman who Decides to have a Baby?

A Right Proper Protest Against Government Corruption

. · 12 March 2008 · Archived copy · Original

Watch how this man protested against his local government when they screwed him over.

http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=24n77GgRtrw&feature=related

Yup...

He made his point.

http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=PZbG9i1oGPA&feature=related

I wonder if the town council ripped off other taxpayers after that?

The Problem with Women in the Workplace

. · 22 March 2008 · Archived copy · Original

A good, entertaining read. Well put together.

"The Problem with Women in the Workplace"

http://womenintheworkplacetoday.blogspot.com/

Also read:

"The Problem with Women Today"

http://theproblemwithwomentoday-reality2008.blogspot.com/

Great Moments in Gold-diggery

. · 19 April 2008 · Archived copy · Original

.Great Moments in Gold-diggery

A friend working on Wall Street forwarded an alleged New York Craigslist posting. I thought it might be too good to be true. I reluctantly googled it and found that it was on Craigslist but has been removed. It sounds like it still might be a hoax of some kind. Here's an similar San Francisco post. Still, with all relevant caveats, here it is:

What am I doing wrong?

Okay, I'm tired of beating around the bush. I'm a beautiful (spectacularly beautiful) 25 year old girl. I'm articulate and classy. I'm not from New York. I'm looking to get married to a guy who makes at least half a million a year. I know how that sounds, but keep in mind that a million a year is middle class in New York City, so I don't think I'm overreaching at all.

Are there any guys who make 500K or more on this board? Any wives? Could you send me some tips? I dated a business man who makes average around 200 - 250. But that's where I seem to hit a roadblock. 250,000 won't get me to central park west. I know a woman in my yoga class who was married to an investment banker and lives in Tribeca, and she's not as pretty as I am, nor is she a great genius. So what is she doing right? How do I get to her level?

Here are my questions specifically:

- Where do you single rich men hang out? Give me specifics- bars, restaurants, gyms

-What are you looking for in a mate? Be honest guys, you won't hurt my feelings

-Is there an age range I should be targeting (I'm 25)?

- Why are some of the women living lavish lifestyles on the upper east side so plain? I've seen really 'plain jane' boring types who have nothing to offer married to incredibly wealthy guys. I've seen drop dead gorgeous girls in singles bars in the east village. What's the story there?

- Jobs I should look out for? Everyone knows - lawyer, investment banker, doctor. How much do those guys really make? And where do they hang out? Where do the hedge fund guys hang out?

- How you decide marriage vs. just a girlfriend? I am looking for MARRIAGE ONLY

Please hold your insults - I'm putting myself out there in an honest way. Most beautiful women are superficial; at least I'm being up front about it. I wouldn't be searching for these kind of guys if I wasn't able to match them - in looks, culture, sophistication, and keeping a nice home and hearth.

it's NOT ok to contact this poster with services or other commercialinterests

And here is the alleged response from one poster, according to the email:

I read your posting with great interest and have thought meaningfully about your dilemma. I offer the following

analysis of your predicament. Firstly, I'm not wasting your time, I qualify as a guy who fits your bill; that is I make more than $500K per year. That said here's how I see it.

Your offer, from the prospective of a guy like me, is plain and simple a crappy business deal. Here's why. Cutting through all the B.S., what you suggest is a simple trade: you bring your looks to the party and I bring my money. Fine, simple. But here's the rub, your looks will fade and my money will likely continue into perpetuity...in fact, it is very likely that my income increases but it is an absolute certainty that you won'tbe getting any more beautiful!

So, in economic terms you are a depreciating asset and I am an earning asset. Not only are you a depreciating asset, your depreciation accelerates! Let me explain, you're 25 now and will likely stay pretty hot for the next 5 years, but less so each year. Then the fade begins in earnest. By 35 stick a fork in you!

So in Wall Street terms, we would call you a trading position, not a buy and hold...hence the rub...marriage. It doesn't make good business sense to "buy you" (which is what you're asking) so I'd rather lease. In case you think I'm being cruel, I would say the following. If my money were to go away, so would you, so when your beauty fades I need an out. It's as simple as that. So a deal that makes sense is dating, not marriage.

Separately, I was taught early in my career about efficient markets. So, I wonder why a girl as "articulate, classy and spectacularly beautiful" as you has been unable to find your sugar daddy. I find it hard to believe that if you are as gorgeous as you say you are that the $500K hasn't found you, if not only for a tryout.

By the way, you could always find a way to make your own money and then we wouldn't need to have this difficult conversation.

With all that said, I must say you're going about it the right way. Classic "pump and dump."

I hope this is helpful, and if you want to enter into some sort of lease, let me know.

"Debating" with Steve Moxon

. · 23 April 2008 · Archived copy · Original

Over at Glenn Sack's blog.

I think I arrived on the scene at around comment 90 or 100 or so - obviously the good stuff then, is to be found near the bottom of the page.

Very interesting.

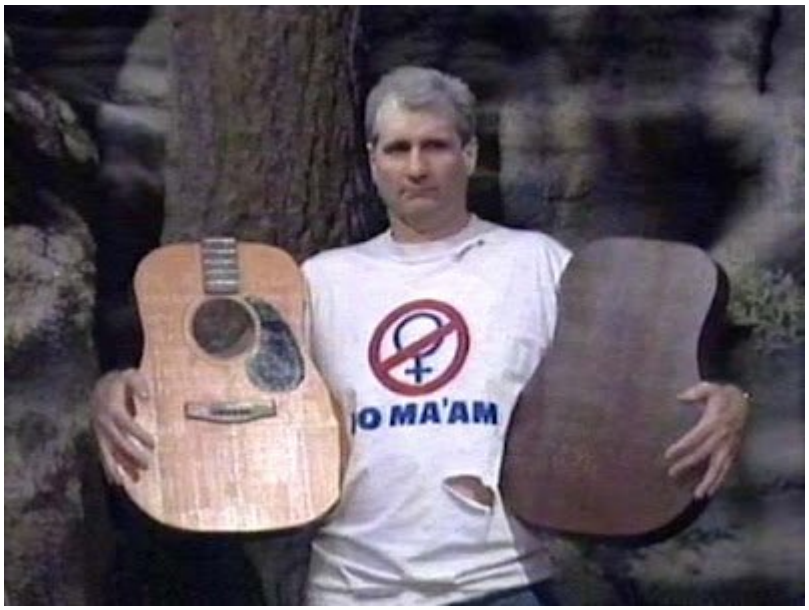
---

p.s. - Pankaj & Tom from Glenn's,

If you come across this, there is a response in my little forum at the top right corner of this blog, in which I made a reply to you - under "The Woman Racket"

Words of Wisdom from Albert Hercules Bundy

. · 2 May 2008 · Archived copy · Original



A man who was truly before his time!

http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Al_Bundy

Al Bundy, Famous Quotes:

- No, Peg

- Let's rock.

- Go away, Peg.

- A fat woman came to the shoestore today...

- I'm the only guy in the world who has to wake up to have a nightmare.

- A man's home is his coffin.

- Women - can't live with them.... The End.

- Women - can't live with them, can't herd them all to Canada.

- WOMEN - can't live with them...can't kill them

- Entertainment for the cave man was simple: Man kills food, woman burns it, giant pterodactyl swoops down, chases woman, woman falls in mud. A good laugh is had by all.

- Peg, I suspect your mind, much like the lost continent of Atlantis, no longer appears on any map.

- I hate life, life hates me.

- I'm so upset I can hardly eat this sandwich! (He says so but eats the sandwich anyway)

- I'm so hungry I could eat a vegetable!

- I feel so good--I'm almost happy.

- Am I truly nothing? Could the neighborhood children be right?

- Now wait a second. My pretty teenage daughter--with the brain of a fruit-fly--earned a thousand dollars in three nights... should I be worried?

- The only power I sensed was that of the mighty forces unleashed by beans!

- Ok, here's another idea. Let's toss this in the oven and see if it bakes. There's a shoe-salesman in the 23rd century. It's called Shoe Trek.

- Peg, you can stab me with knives, you can beat me with clubs, you can make me open my eyes when we're having sex, but there's no way on earth you can make me get a second job.

- The opera isn't over until the last heterosexual falls asleep.

- The last thing a guy wants to look at at the end of the day is a woman.

- Well, it looks like something that could come from the Colonel, but the legs have been picked clean and there are no breasts. (Describing Marcy's figure)

- How about if I get my gun and shoot you with a nice silver bullet?

- Back then mother meant cooking but then, gay meant happy.

- Why doesn't the world die?

- I was driving home, God knows why...

- I hate my life. Can't eat, can't sleep, can't bury the wife in the backyard.

- Peg, feed me, or feed me TO something: I just want to be part of the food chain. (from "The Dance Show" episode)

- It's only cheating if you get caught.

- Sure selling shoes is fun. But behind the glamour, it's like any other minimum wage slow death.

- Damn, does my life suck!

- But Peg, we've been married for seventeen years - can't we just be friends?

- Sorry, Peg, I didn't hear you. I was thinking of killing myself.

- Peg, can you explain to her the difference between expend and earning? Who I am asking to, of course you can't !

- You think I'm a loser? Because I have a stinking job that I hate, a family that doesn't respect me, and a whole city that curses the day I was born? Well, that may mean loser to you, but let me tell you something. Every day when I wake up in the morning, I know it's not going to get any better until I go back to sleep. So I get up. I have my watered-down Tang and my still-frozen Pop Tart. I get in my car with no gas, no upholstery, and six more payments. I fight honking traffic just for the privilege of putting cheap shoes onto the cloven hooves of people like you. I'll never play football like I wanted to. I'll never know the touch of a beautiful woman. And I'll never know the joy of driving through the city without a bag over my head. But I'm not a loser. Because, despite it all, me and every other guy who'll never be what they wanted to be, is out there, being what we don't want to be, forty hours a week, for life. And the fact that I haven't put a gun in my mouth, you pudding of a woman, makes me a winner!

- Home sweet hell.

- Just say no to marriage

- I wish the world was a fly and that I was a giant newspaper

- Hooters, hooters, yum, yum, yum. Hooters, hooters on a girl that's dumb.

Al Bundy's verbal exchanges with people around him:

Peg : You haven't been very nice to my family.

Al : Neither has nature, go bother it!

Marcy : I am Marcy D'Arcy here on behalf of the Coalition for the Aesthetically Challenged.

Al : Challenged? I'd say defeated, exiled and left for dead!

Peg : Ooh baby! Is that a nightstick or are you just happy to see me?

Al : It's a nightstick, Peg, and I'm not afraid to use it!

Al : Have I told you today, I love you Peg.

Peg : Why, no Al.

Al : Good!

Al : Any last words, punk?

Teenage gang leader : Yeah, your wife's good in bed!

Al : So you're a liar, too!(Al and Bud proceed to beat up the entire street gang)

Peg: Al, I want sex.

Al: Well, so do I. But I don't see the need to bring you into it.

Marcy [Sitting naked in her hot tub]: Al Bundy, what do you think you're doing?

Al: Going blind if you stand up!

Peg: Did you miss me?

Al: With every bullet, so far.

Kid: I want my mommy!

Al: So does your dad's brother.

Peg: Al are you gonna miss me?

Al: Well I can't until you leave.

Roulette Dealer: I like a man whose is on top of things.

Al: And I like a woman with things on top

Marcy (To Jefferson): Jefferson, you'd never cheat on me with someone who's pretty and young, would you?

Al: Yeah, why go out for a nice, succulent steak when you've got a dried-up stick of beef jerky at home?

Pizza Delivery Guy[After being caught with Kelly on the couch]: So how about my tip?

Al[Leading him towards the door]: Ok, here's a tip[Slamming him against the door]: Doors are hard.

To Marcy: Let me explain something to you.

Marcy: What?

Al: buck buck buck buck buck buck buck buck.....

Marcy: We're about to celebrate a new addition to our family.

Al: Then shouldn't you be at home, sitting on it and waiting for it to hatch?

Ray-Ray: What is it with you, Bundy? Still not getting enough curve in your diet? I mean, we knock you around, you come back. Why? Why do you do it?

Al: For the same reason men climb mountains or sail across the sea alone. For the only reason that a rational man would do in a rational thing like this.

Ray-Ray: Pride.

Al: No, women. I'm a moron, Ray-Ray. We're all morons. That's what comes from being a man. From the first little worm they dare us to eat to the last big shovel full of snow they convince us we can move, we're nothing more to women than an amusement park ride with life insurance. Why else would we do the idiotic things that we do? For example, you ski?

Ray-Ray: No.

Al: Well, you will someday if a girl wants you to. We all will. We'd hurdle down the mountain so fast that the crack of our bodies hitting the tree wouldn't even resonate in their ears before we'd pounce up and say 'I'm OK.' They know were not OK. Hell, even if they miss that pair of squirrels running away with our hacky sacks, one glance down at the color of the snow would hint that there might be some trauma. And we've all been to the weight room when a pretty girl walks by and said to ourselves "Gee I think I'll start today's warm up bench pressing oh, nine tons. So, you see Ray-Ray, as long as there's women, there'll be men around doing stupid things to impress them. That's why I'm here. That's why you're here. That's why there here. Now, someday, you may evolve beyond this, but it's too late for me. I'm too old, too married, and lost far too many hackysacks.

Sigh, there just ain't quality programs on TV like this anymore. - RF

Sex and Culture

. · 8 May 2008 · Archived copy · Original

The following is an Amazon review of the book *Sex and Culture*, authored by J.D. Unwin and published in 1934. As well, after this review, another short review by a fellow MGTOW'r who makes some critical comments of his own (& who is also trying to get permission to put this book online - so keep your eyes out).

http://www.amazon.com/SEX-CULTURE-J-D-Unwin/dp/B000K7AQFC

(Review by MPC)

That is the basic thesis of this unjustly forgotten book. According to Professor Unwin, who was influenced by Freud, it is the "limitation of sexual opportunity" which creates the "mental energy" necessary to build a civilization.

He backs this up with exhaustive examples of the historical cycle he proposes. The cycle goes as follows: in a primitive society, people take their pleasure at whim, without commitment or limits. Then the practice of monogamous marriage, including premarital chastity, is instituted. (How he believes this first arises would take far too long to summarize here; read the book!) The sexual repression required for this chastity and fidelity increases the "mental energy" and the inner strength of those who practice it, enabling them to embark on long-term projects such as monumental architecture, agriculture, and conquest. In this early stage, men have enormous power over their wives and children, even when the children have grown up.

The "sexual opportunity" of women is always, of necessity, more limited than that of men in a civilized society, and this has a powerful effect, according to Unwin; they convey this repression and its benefits to their children. Indeed, he blames the decline of feudalism on its habit of putting its "best" women into convents to live as nuns - it is true that for a woman with intellectual aspirations, a convent was her only real option - instead of having them bear children to whom they could convey their "mental energy".

Unwin also criticizes polygamous societies; the easy "sexual opportunity" it affords men limits the "mental energy". He says, "That is why, I submit, the Moors in Spain achieved such a high culture. Their fathers were born into a polygamous tradition; but their mothers were the daughters of Christians and Jews, and had spent their early years in an absolutely monogamous environment. The sons of these women laid the foundations of rationalistic culture; but soon the supply of Christian and Jewish women was insufficient, so the incipient rationalism failed to mature greatly."

It always begins with the ruling class, the aristocracy, being the most chaste and monogamous. As they grow decadent after a few generations, the "middle class" (not necessarily in our modern understanding of it) is just getting the hang of it, having aped it from their betters, and they acquire more power in the society.

In time, however, the strict monogamy loosens. Unwin speculates that the extreme power the builders of civilizations have over their wives and children is unbearable to most, and the decrease of this power is inevitable. Unwin's attention is more on the monogamy than on the legal position of women, but the two seem to march hand in hand. "A female emancipating movement is a cultural phenomenon of unfailing regularity; it appears to be the necessary outcome of absolute monogamy. The subsequent loss of social energy after the emancipation of women, which is sometimes emphasized, has been due not to the emancipation but to the extension of sexual opportunity which has always accompanied it. In human records there is no instance of female emancipation which has not been accompanied by an extension of sexual opportunity."

Indeed, as sexual opportunity becomes easier - which always takes place in concert with female emancipation - the society's mental energy weakens, it cannot continue to invent things or maintain what it has, and in a few generations it is easily conquered by a robust monogamous patriarchy, which is fairly bursting with the mental energy of repressed sexuality.

Professor Unwin, by the way, was not in any way a male chauvinist. He concluded his book with a hopeful wish that we may find some way to have sexual repression and the equality of the sexes at the same time, and clearly believed that women are not inherently unfit for power and independence.

That is one of the two criticisms I would make of this excellent work. But one can hardly blame Professor Unwin, who was writing in 1934, long before scientific study had verified that all of the traditional stereotypes about women were based in biological fact. Indeed, thanks to feminist domination of mass media, few people today are aware of this.

The other criticism is that Unwin focuses all of his attention on the "mental energy" caused by sexual repression. I suspect he is right about it, but there is another vital factor in the building of a civilization, and that is paternity. Men build things - houses, palaces, empires, codes of ethics - so that they can pass them on to their own children, and thus achieve one kind of immortality. Men who know they cannot train and endow their children are disinclined to produce. This, even more than the lack of opportunity for personal enrichment, is why communism and socialism are such abysmal failures, and why inheritance tax is such a dangerous threat to civilization itself. It would be good to read an intertwining of this theory and Unwin's. This book has long been out of print and copies are rare and expensive, but until this situation is remedied, it can be obtained through inter-library loan. I highly recommend it for its exhaustive documentation.

A further review by *married*:

Unwin's research is extremely valuable, but his explanation is nonsense. One has to understand that as a liberal anthropologist, he never expected the results that he found, and was undoubtedly not very happy with them, but he was honest enough to report that facts as he found them. His explanation is an attempt to reconcile the facts with his liberal beliefs, when they are, in fact, irreconcilable. The only limit of sexual opportunity in the historical societies that he describes is limits for women. Prostitution was very widespread in these societies, so men never lacked sex.

(*married* is currently attempting to get permission to publish the book online - so, if he is successful, I will post the link to it on the blog).

This Way To See The Great Egress!

. · 19 May 2008 · Archived copy · Original

There is a great old story about PT Barnum. One of his shows was so successful that the crowds were becoming dangerous. People were so packed that there was a real danger of some of them getting trampled. So, he had his carnies open some of the gates and his barkers start shouting "This way to see the great EGRESS!" The herd surged through the gates and found out that "egress" means "exit." -- Zenpriest

---

Genesis 3:16 - 19

(16) To the woman he said,

"I will greatly increase your pains in childbearing; with pain you will give birth to children. Your desire will be for your husband, and he will rule over you."

(17) To Adam he said, *"because you listened to your wife* and ate from the tree about which I commanded you, 'You must not eat of it,'

"Cursed is the ground because of you; through painful toil you will eat of it all the days of your life.

(18) It will produce thorns and thistles for you, and you will eat the plants of the field.

(19) By the sweat of your brow you will eat your food until you return to the ground, since from it you were taken; for dust you are and to dust you will return."

One wonders, with all the talk about how much smarter women are than men... Have you ever heard men screeching and hollering for the "right" to be cursed like women?

And we're not gonna let you shirk your responsibilities anymore, ladies, because you have proven that you can do it... at least not until the stress of the workplace makes women die a few years earlier, or less stress makes men live a few years longer... because, um, you do believe in equality, eh? (And no, we are not looking for ways to find out how painful childbirth is - only idiots would do that). -- RF

Now read this:

http://www.thecanadianencyclopedia.com/index.cfm?PgNm=TCE&Params=M1ARTM0013170

Men are Getting Happier (and Women More Miserable)

It's not like Paul is a total writeoff. He cleans up the yard, makes sure the bills get paid, does far more than his share of the laundry. But when his common-law wife Catriona reflects on their relationship - and how casually her 32-year-old spouse has thrown off the cares of the workaday world - a note of resentment creeps into her voice. "Sometimes I get jealous of his freedom," admits the 25-year-old public relations coordinator from Vancouver. "He just doesn't get stressed, ever, really. I'm more uptight. I worry about a lot of things."Seven years ago, Paul quit a

potentially lucrative job as a business consultant to try his hand at writing fiction, having decided there was more to life than climbing the corporate ladder. (Names of couples in this story have been changed.) The dynamic of their relationship shifted accordingly: Catriona is now the household breadwinner; Paul is living an urban male's dream. When he isn't working on his novel, he spends his days listening to music, riding his mountain bike or indulging his growing interest in urban development. Sometimes he reads books on the topic, and occasionally he strolls about the sites of local construction projects, getting a first-hand look at cutting-edge developments as they rise from the West Coast soil.

Catriona, meanwhile, scarcely has time for household chores or to attend the meetings of the charitable foundation she joined a few months back. With a high-tempo career and commitments to do volunteer work two or three times a week, she certainly can't while away a night at the bar watching Vancouver Canucks games, as Paul has been doing with increasing frequency. And while she doesn't consider herself miserable ("Paul supports me a lot in my work"), his general nonchalance clearly contributes to her anxiety. When he recently blew off an important appointment after a night of drinking with his brother, she fell into a black mood for days. "I'm not usually snarky," she says ruefully. "I realized later I was jealous or hostile or bitter that he didn't have to work and I did."

As the sands of gender roles shift in households and workplaces across the Western world, the future may hold more Catrionas and - to the fascination of social economists - a lot more Pauls. Far from suffering a crisis of confidence amid all those high-powered females, men are actually getting happier as the women around them find their place in the workforce, recent U.S. studies suggest. Blessed with salaried spouses and an economy that increasingly values their brains over their brawn, males now enjoy more of what one Princeton University scholar calls "neutral downtime" - a fancy term for hours spent watching football, playing computer games or drinking with their pals. For guys, things have never been better.

Their wives, moms and girlfriends cannot say the same. Adult females actually report lower levels of happiness now than before they streamed into the workplace in the 1970s and '80s, according to a study by two economists at the University of Pennsylvania's Wharton School, which has been making waves in academia since it was published in September. Previous studies of rising STRESS among females tended to focus on the simple burden of time allocation: instead of choosing one or the other, fully 73 per cent of Canadian women raise children and go to work. And numerous studies suggest women still bear the brunt of child-rearing and household duties even if they work - hence all the anxiety.

But the so-called "happiness gap," where more men than women tell pollsters they're pleased with their lives, has highlighted some unexpected trends in the interplay of the sexes. More and more males seem willing to take a back seat to the ambition of their wives, statistics show, content in the knowledge women can now make enough to support the whole family. According to a TD Economics report released last September, as a wife's annual income rises to $100,000, her husband is more likely to share domestic chores, or stay at home altogether.

Sometimes the shift can take constructive form: stay-at-home dads now make up some 11 per cent of married couples. But not all the guys are using their newfound freedom to become nurturers. Other studies suggest they use a good portion of it watching television or playing computer games. All of which raises questions that hardline feminists will undoubtedly find perverse, if not outright heretical. Are career pressures sucking the joy from day-to-day life for many women? Were they wrong to think professional success would ultimately yield happiness? And if the rise of financially successful, multi-tasking women over the past few decades is doing little more than allowing men to load up on couch time, who are the real beneficiaries of the women's movement?

The idea might seem less provocative if the women's movement of the 1970s hadn't promised the moon and the stars to begin with. On top of better jobs with better salaries, it told of a utopian future - a gender-neutral society where women and men would suddenly be considered absolutely equal. "We are talking about a society in which

there will be no roles other than those chosen or those earned," feminist Gloria Steinem once pronounced with characteristic grandeur. And in some ways, the Steinem crowd delivered.

In its report, TD Economics said that participation in the workforce of Canadian women aged 25 to 44 jumped from 50 per cent 30 years ago to nearly 82 per cent in 2005. In fully 28 per cent of some 4.6 million couples surveyed, women had higher salaries than their husbands, compared to 11 per cent in the late 1960s - a figure broadly reflective of similar trends across the Western world. On average, U.S. women now earn 76.9 per cent as much as men (63.6 per cent as much in Canada), marking steady growth from the 59.4 per cent they earned in 1970.

Education saw even more sweeping change. By 2004, 62 per cent of all B.A.s in Canada were granted to women. Even more impressive is the revolution at medical school. According to the Association of Faculties of Medicine of Canada, the majority of students at 13 of Canada's 17 med schools are women. At Université Laval's faculty of medicine in Quebec City, for example, female enrolment has hit 70 per cent for the past two years, after peaking at a record 80 per cent in 2005, while on five other campuses last year more than 60 per cent of first-year medical students were women. And the laundry list of advancements goes on. Reliable birth control; more freedom at work; better vacuums and washing machines - all played their part in making women's lives easier. Yet the lift in women's spirits you might think would result is nowhere to be seen, say Betsey Stevenson and Justin Wolfers, co-authors of the Wharton study, "The Paradox of Declining Female Happiness." "We found that in the 35 years in which women made the greatest progress, they got less happy," Wolfers said in an interview from Philadelphia. "The big question is why."

One popular theory, to borrow a phrase from the financial world, is irrational exuberance. Through media imagery and peer pressure, goes this thinking, women have been encouraged in recent years to seek it all - be smart, accomplished, a good mother, a good lover and manage to look svelte and fashionable all at the same time - never realizing that the headlong pursuit of perfection would cause bone-numbing fatigue. Stevenson and Wolfers accept this explanation, but only to a point. "The natural thing for people to assume is, of course, women are less happy than men because they have to juggle a career and kids and they're tired," says Stevenson. "But this is not just a story about moms. It might be about women pushing themselves to excel."

It might also be a story about chemicals. Comprehensive studies of psychiatric data show that nearly twice as many women as men will develop depression-related disorders at some point in their lives, and the numbers are growing. In 1990, seven million American women suffered from depression; this year the number is up to 12 million, exactly twice as many as men. "Because this depression gender gap coincides with puberty and disappears after menopause," advises the Mayo Clinic in a publicly disseminated circular, "some researchers believe that hormonal factors increase." Even after puberty, with its attendant identity issues and screaming matches with mom, the risks for women remain disproportionately high. Premenstrual trouble, postpartum depression, menopause itself - all create a landscape fraught with psychological sinkholes for women as they go through life.

This is all a way of saying that whatever's making women sadder may merely be aggravating what's already in their heads. And that's where the gender wars come in. Some critics believe that by convincing females they could succeed in the workplace without sacrificing family life, the women's movement set up the vast majority for disappointment; whether you're talking hormones or spare time or fatigue, they're just not equipped to handle what the feminists envisioned. It's a theory so freighted with controversy that Wolfers jokingly calls it the "Rush Limbaugh interpretation," implying as it does that women were better off when they were barefoot in the kitchen. "Did the women's movement make things worse? Unattainable? Plausibly, yes," muses Wolfers. "The puzzling part of the data is not why women are unhappy today, but why they were so happy in 1970."

The counter-interpretation, say Stevenson and Wolfers, lies in women's aspirations outpacing society's attempts to

accommodate them. In the 1970s, if women told pollsters they were happy, they were likely "comparing themselves to the housewife next door," explains Stevenson. Today, that's just not good enough. The educated, ambitious career woman is now inclined to compare herself to the man in the next cubicle - a shift in mindset no enlightened person would regard as a bad thing. That would be fine, says Stevenson, if perception of women in the workplace had caught up to reality. Instead, they still are too frequently treated as second-class colleagues. "I have had this happen to me," she says. "A woman says something in a meeting and she maybe doesn't say it quite as forcefully as she should and so a guy picks it up and everybody says 'Damn, what a great idea!' " Thirty years ago, says Stevenson, women felt glad just to be allowed into the meeting. "Now," she says, "you think, what the f-?"

WHATEVER THE REASON for female unhappiness, the success of women appears to be changing expectations for males as surely as it is for females. Imagine, for a moment, that you are Toby, a 27-year-old male and one-half of a Vancouver couple whose now-defunct relationship was recently described in detail to Maclean's. While your girlfriend, Sarah, also 27, works 60-hour weeks trying to get her small business off the ground, you follow your dream of becoming a musician, applying your time to playing gigs, smoking pot and hanging out at her apartment - not necessarily in that order. She is patient. "The fact he was an artist made it seem legitimate or justifiable," she later confides. "The idea was that there was a higher purpose that could also potentially pay off."

Toby eventually gets a job as a barista at Starbucks, but by then it's too late. She ditches him, and on reflection he marvels that the good times lasted as long as they did. But in the end, he's glad she dumped him because the fact she made more money was starting to make things kind of awkward. And it's not like he really wanted to change his lifestyle.

While the male layabout is an archetype in almost every human society, the idea of an intelligent, able-bodied North American man dedicating a good part of his existence to non-productive activity is relatively new. In the mid-1960s, men spent nearly half their time on paid work or work-like activities, according to Alan Krueger, a Princeton University economist and author of a recently released study comparing how men and women allocate time. By 2005, that had fallen to 36 per cent while the amount of time typically spent on unpleasant tasks declined marginally, and men suddenly found themselves with a surfeit of "neutral downtime," which offers in relaxation what it lacks in character-building. Forty years ago, watching TV and similar activity consumed 14.5 per cent of an average American man's day. Today it takes up nearly a quarter.

Some of this is due to technology, notes Krueger; a lot of former men's work is now performed by machines, both at work and around the home. But it's hard not to see the growth in their spare time with the concomitant reduction in women's. Unlike men, women are spending more time at paid work than they did in, say, the early 1970s, while their downtime has been steadily declining. To some experts, this points to males gaining R & R at females' expense. More troubling still, says Michael Kimmel, a sociologist at the State University of New York, Stoney Brook, the behaviour seems more deeply entrenched in each generation of males. "Young men today see the lives of their fathers as the opposite of fun," he says. "Sober. Parental. Responsible. It's taking a lot of these guys about eight years to commit to a career."

The result, he says, is a state of drift among men that in many cases doesn't lift until they reach their mid-30s. "They come out of high school with this incredible sense of entitlement," he says. "Virtually everyone I talk to here at the university thinks he's going to write for television and move to Hollywood." Most of them eventually snap out of it, adds Kimmel, but the short-term impact on women can be disconcerting. Some girls simper pathetically in the presence of dour slouches, preening for a bit of attention. Others, like Sarah, wait for emotionally stunted boyfriends to grow up so they can get married, buy a house and have kids.

As all this is going on, the respective life cycles of men and women are increasingly at odds, with serious potential consequences a generation or two down the line. While men are resisting the trappings of adulthood through their

late 20s, revelling in the sort of infantile world depicted in the Will Ferrell comedy Old School, women are establishing careers and accumulating wealth. "Realistically, men can get their shit together at 40," laments Sarah. "They can catch some woman 13 or 14 years their junior just like me who's going to say okay, because all the guys my own age are turkeys."

Which is fine for women who find successful mates, or who happen to appreciate older guys. But pity those who must settle for a man who, at 40, never launched a career, frittered away his money, burned off a few too many brain cells and left the hard work of child-rearing until he was too tired to perform it well. That's as surefire a formula for female disaffection as a person can imagine. And if Kimmel's observations are anything to go by, it's one we'd better get used to.

It will be all the more irksome if another long-term trend that is transforming the workplace holds. While women are leading dual lives as employees and nurturers, they're steadily supplanting men as occupiers of the desk where the buck stops. In 2004, the proportion of women occupying managerial positions had reached 37 per cent - a number that today's feminists see as too low, but would nonetheless impress their mothers and grandmothers. In certain prestigious professions, women are actually overrepresented. Fully 55 per cent of the doctors and dentists in Canada are now women, up from 43 per cent in 1987; women make up more than half the business and financial professionals in this country.

All of this has unfolded according to the plans of the women's movement; if feminists have any complaint it's that it's gone too slowly (certain sectors, such as engineering and natural sciences, remain male-dominated). What no one seemed to anticipate was how women who attained heights formerly reserved for men would wind up feeling. How would they cope with the anxiety and long hours that come with rank and responsibility? How would they deal with the related pathologies of obsessiveness and workaholism - the curses, so to speak, of the ambitious classes?

Pretty much the way men do, it turns out. "The women's movement gave women permission to get on the gerbil wheel," says Barbara Killinger, a Toronto psychologist who has written extensively on workaholism. While almost no women came to her for treatment 25 years ago, fully half of her patient load today is female, she says, and they demonstrate the same addictive patterns as men. "There is a very definite breakdown syndrome: fears of failure, of laziness, of boredom, that other people will find out they are not effective; then chronic fatigue and paranoia. The obsession to work is coupled with the addiction for control."

Suffice to say, this is not the sort of analysis that sits well with modern feminists. As the data on female unhappiness piles up, they increasingly question the connection to careerism, or the entire premise of happiness surveys. "The women's movement was never about happiness," says the Pulitzer Prize-winning journalist and feminist Susan Faludi, in an assertion that will surely surprise many a woman who marched for equal rights. "It was about claiming one's full place in the world. What is described as women's unhappiness isn't about them being unable to handle all of these great new opportunities. It's unhappiness over the fact that things haven't changed: that they are still burdened with a second shift."

Perhaps. But the findings to date are disturbing enough to lead researchers to drill deeper in search of a more nuanced understanding of women's responses. Is unhappiness a reflection of their emotions on the day they are surveyed? Is it frustrated ambition, as Faludi would have it? Or is it something less tangible, such as spiritual hunger, or longing? Stevenson, for one, floats the hypothesis that women are simply conditioned to expect more from life than they did three decades ago. This tends to apply to all aspects of life, however, meaning all but the most gifted women are bound to run up against their own limitations. Stevenson tells a troubling story about a teenage girl who had just accomplished a near-perfect score on her college admission tests. She was brainy and athletic, but that wasn't enough. "She said it was very important to her to be 'effortlessly hot,' " Stevenson says. "I was flabbergasted."

The beneficiaries, of course, are the men lucky enough to have such women in their lives. They are gaining downtime by having a breadwinner. They get joy from their wives' accomplishments. They are fulfilled by the presence of physical beauty. If they are family-oriented, they may even get to become stay-at-home dads. For the few men who understand the price their spouses pay for happiness, it may inspire the sort of emotional generosity we tend to associate with females. But it's a safe bet for now that a good many won't. And if you told feminists 30 years ago that a generation of Tobys and Pauls would be the ones enjoying the fruits of women's efforts today, more than a few might have put down their placards and gone home.

.

Yes, it is time for a New World Order... not the one the fembots and their Marxist bedfellows were dreaming of though. Perhaps with all our free time we will take over this wicked movement and make it into something suitable for men. -- RF

Further Reading:

Zenpriest #39 – Brer Patriarch

The Same Old Story – by Adam Kostakis

International Women's Working Day – by V.I. Lenin

The Earth is Wicked Again...

. · 25 May 2008 · Archived copy · Original

"The Earth is wicked again. I'm going to flood it and start over," God told Noah. "Build another ark and save two of every living thing."

Six months later, the Lord looked down and saw Noah weeping in his yard - but no boat. "Where's the ark?" he roared. "I'm about to start the rain."

"Well, things have changed," Noah said. "First, I needed a building permit. Then some group said it was inhumane to put the animals in such a close space. Then the government halted construction to conduct an environmental-impact study on the flood."

Suddenly, the clouds cleared and a rainbow stretched across the sky.

"You mean, you're not going to destroy the world?" Noah asked.

"What's the point?" God said. "Looks like someone beat me to it."

Gavin Esler

Online Book: New Lies for Old -- by Anatoliy Golitsyn

. · 28 May 2008 · Archived copy · Original

I could write a summary of this book, to make it easier for everyone, but... my experience has shown there are only two types of people out there on the web:

1). Those who wish me to write a summary, will oppose whatever summary I write, and never bother to actually read the book themselves anyway.

and,

2). Those who will read my summary and go, "hmph, that's nice, Rob," then read the book themselves so they can come to their own conclusions.

I wish there were less #1's and more #2's, but alas, from what I understand, only 1 in 6 people are willing to let go of group think and come to their own conclusions after examining the facts put before them.

Very troubling.

New Lies for Old -- by Anatoliy Golitsyn

http://www.conspiracyresearch.org/forums/index.php?s=68e413f8a8ba4c7f541e3b1c9c98601b&act=attach&type=post&id=452

OK, OK, here is short paragraph about who Mr. Golitsyn is. (I have been aware of him for a while, and read several articles about his work, but have never actually read his book before).

In the early 1960's, a Russian named Anatoliy Golitsyn defected to the USA. He was a Major in the KGB and thus the highest ranking KGB Officer to ever defect to the USA. The CIA's Soviet Bloc Division debriefed Golitsyn, trying to get him to identify KGB moles working at various embassies around the world. They showed him thousands of pictures trying to get him to identify "who." Eventually, Golitsyn got angry with the CIA for forcing him through such a tedious exercise, and shouted at his interrogators, "What good is knowing all the names in the KGB… if you don't understand what they do?" http://www.edwardjayepstein.com/archived/looking.htm

---

The West needs to go through a paradigm shift in regard to how they view Communism-Marxism. Kind of like when you look at the following picture, and discover that there are actually two ladies in it. So must we learn to look at Marxism to begin to truly understand its dangers.

The Real Reason Hillary Has Not Yet Dropped Out Of The Race...

. · 2 June 2008 · Archived copy · Original

http://www.kutv.com/content/news/local/story.aspx?content_id=89d59491-3910-45c2-9643-3a2fd9347606

She's locked in her car outside party headquarters!!!

"Automatic car features are supposed to make life easier for motorists, but they may be leaving some people without the know-how to do things the old-fashioned way. That's what happened to a driver in Utah County who became trapped inside her own car.

A woman called Orem police Friday afternoon needing help because her battery died and she was locked inside her car.

When police arrived, they found the woman sitting in the car, unable to get herself out. She couldn't hear the officers instructions through the rolled-up windows so she motioned to them to call her on her cell phone, according to police.

Once officers were able to talk to the woman on the phone, they were able to tell her how to manually operate the slide lock mechanism on the inside door panel to open the door and free herself.

"I'm just glad she had a cell phone to call for help," an officer said."

Watch the video here: http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=B3UGhRjPry4

Quite frankly, I think I might change my stance on Hitlery for Prez. I can think of no-one better to have their finger hovering over the button than someone who doesn't understand how it works.

Then again...

http://www.bofunk.com/video/4494/if_a_woman_were_president.html

PS - I don't support Obama or McCain either.

Fedders for President! Or, better yet: Fedders for Grand Puba of the New World Order!

The Feminist Road to Totalitarianism - by Aidan Rankin

. · 12 June 2008 · Archived copy · Original

http://es.geocities.com/sucellus23/636.htm

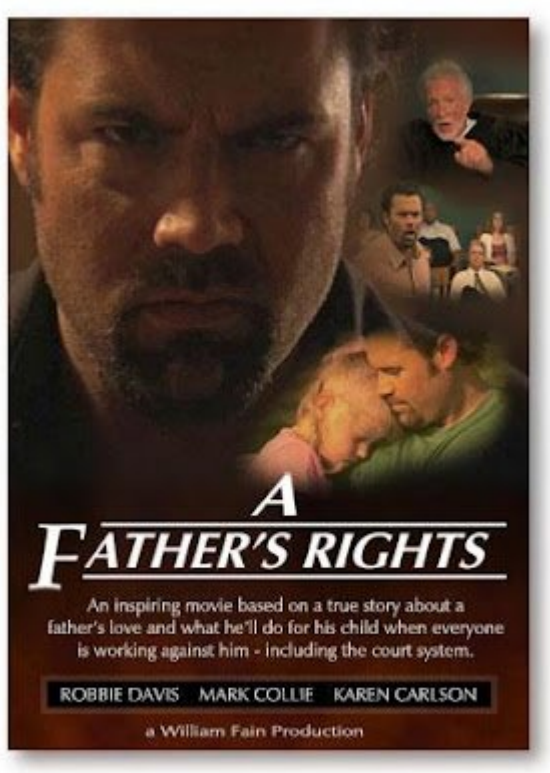
I. Compulsory Niceness And The Failure of Nerve

The unquestioned acceptance of feminist goals has become almost universal in European political and intellectual life. That is not to say that the populations of European nations have been converted to feminism en masse. On the contrary, feminism and feminists themselves are probably more objects of revulsion and ridicule than ever before. That revulsion and ridicule is now accentuated by fear. Fear stems from an awareness of the power that feminist ideology exerts over academics, educators, policy-makers and the media, over those who make intimate decisions about other people's lives, such as doctors and social workers, or those who interpret and enforce the law. It explains the tendency of institutions, including highly traditional institutions, to give in to feminism and become vehicles for dogmatic social engineering. 'I am a feminist,' protests the conservative commentator. 'I am not a sexist,' the Anglican traditionalist assures his critics. 'Of course "equal opportunity" is a good thing,' declares the Infantry officer, defensively. Such protestations effectively neutralise moral arguments for the traditional family, theological arguments against the ordination of women, or the case for the all-male regiment, with the pride, stability and esprit de corps that it engenders. Thus important and valuable arguments are being lost before they even begin. This has nothing to do with whether they are 'right' or 'wrong'. For each of the arguments I have listed raises distinctive questions, moral, social and in one case theological. They can be resolved, therefore, only as individual problems on a case-by-case basis, not in the context of an abstract, all-embracing doctrine of 'equality'. But as soon as the word 'equality' is mentioned, feminism's opponents suffer a failure of nerve.

Read the rest of the article here: http://es.geocities.com/sucellus23/636.htm

Movie: A Father's Rights

. · 21 July 2008 · Archived copy · Original



Check out the website for the film here: http://g2rdistribution.com/

.

Watch the trailer here: http://g2rdistribution.com/afr.trailer.html

.

Now, before someone reminds me to put in the required politically correct disclaimer, I would like to state that *not all women are like that.*

.

Nope. Some are even worse!

Father's 4 Justice Protest in Canada, NDP Leader, Jack Layton's Office

. · 8 August 2008 · Archived copy · Original

Woohoo! Give 'em hell, boys!

http://www.canada.com/globaltv/ontario/story.html?id=0caf70dd-6dfb-4d94-9b18-2bb1ca7768b4

Global News
Published: Friday, August 08, 2008 2:34:02 PM

The suspect dressed as 'Spiderman' has surrendered peacefully to police. The other suspect being addressed as, 'Plywood Man' remains on the roof of the building.

1:26:08 PMPolice are on the scene of a roof-top protest at Jack Layton's riding office at 221 Broadview Ave. A man dressed as Spider-Man is on the roof of the building trying to bring attention to father's rights. It's believed the group Fathers 4 Justice is behind the protest. Reports indicate there are two men on the roof of the building and that they have enough supplies to camp out for an extended period of time. The group claims they will "tirelessly promote, every child's right to be raised by both parents on an equal basis in the event of separation and or divorce, and further believes that such equality in parenting has been clearly shown to be in the best interests of children."

Lol! Jack Layton, leader of the radically far-left New Democrat Party of Canada (NDP) is on TV moaning like a little lefty. "They should be writing letters instead of doing this, sob, sniffle."

They have been for years, Jack, you dope. Now get off your tax-funded, useless ass and do something for the citizens of this country that pay your exhorbitant wages, which are mainly men & fathers.

Update:

"Plywood Man" is a ***Northerner!!!***

As some of you might know, I have a special soft spot in my heart for Northerners!

Well then, kick some ass like only a Northerner can, Plywood Man!
.

Thanks for the info/comment from Kevin G, posted at the mightiest blog on the web (yeah, you know it simply as No Ma'am):

Too Bad CTV didn't televise these two outgoing supporters banner "NDP = No Dads Party"! Surprise, surprise.

Layton says "He doesn't know much about the group or why". I call B.S. but if he really doesn't, he better find out soon:

Plywood Man began his mission for equal parenting 6 years ago in Yellowknife , NWT. With no tall buildings to climb he began his simple but persistent protest for equal parenting with large pieces of painted plywood. His campaign drew overwhelming community support and led to the unanimous resolution passed on June 17, 2008 by the Legislative Assembly of the Northwest Territories in support of Equal Parenting and a call to NDP MP, Denis Bevington to support Private Members Motion M483 for Equal Parenting.

To date Mr. Bevington has been unable to publicly support the bill because he has been oppressed by his party and in particular NDP leader Jack Layton.

A big thumbs up to these two courageous men. They're fighting for one of, if not thee, most important issues of today: OUR CHILDREN! Everything else is immaterial with out them.

Home of the Best Show on Earth!

http://www.torontosun.com/News/TorontoAndGTA/2008/08/09/6394026-sun.html

Perhaps upset The Dark Knight broke all his box office records, Spiderman returned to Toronto yesterday.

A man dressed as the action hero and another in lumberjack attire calling himself "Plywood Man" had a stand-off with police for nearly six hours after climbing to the roof of Jack Layton's east-end riding office.

The makeshift superheroes climbed the NDP -- the No Dads Party, as they called it -- leader's building as part of the protest group Fathers 4 Justice.

"Fathers 4 Justice ... will tirelessly promote every child's right to be raised by both parents on an equal basis in the event of separation and or divorce," their website says.

'WANT TO SEE MY KID'

Yesterday, Plywood Man barked back and forth with police negotiators as he demanded his son, who lives with his

mother in Pickering, be brought to him or he might jump off the Broadview and Dundas Aves. E. building.

"I want to see my kid," he yelled.

Emergency task force officers were on the roof near the men, keeping a safe distance because Plywood Man was close to the edge with a rope tied around his neck.

The man dressed in the Spiderman costume surrendered without incident at 2 p.m., but no one knew how long Plywood Man, who travelled to Toronto from the Northwest Territories and had food and a portable toilet with him, planned to stay on the roof.

Some three hours later, police let go two loud, flash-bang "distractionary devices," dazing the man before he was swarmed by ETF officers.

Since Jack Layton so wants people to e-mail him their concerns rather than sit on his roof, why not send him an e-mail describing what a sack of shit he is for dissing men, fathers, and the democratic system: laytoj@parl.gc.ca

Online Book: "Sex and Culture" by J.D. Unwin

. · 13 August 2008 · Archived copy · Original

I know how much my readers absolutely salivate over the opportunity to read an online book. Please guys, slow down with the e-mails begging me to post another book so you are not forced to watch more mind-numbing episodes of Big Brother. (Some day soon, that show will be a real reality anyway, so do something else with your time while you can, eh?)

A few months back I posted a review of this book here on this most superb of all blogs on the world wide web:

Reveiw by MPC at Amazon:

http://www.amazon.com/SEX-CULTURE-J-D-Unwin/dp/B000K7AQFC

That is the basic thesis of this unjustly forgotten book. According to Professor Unwin, who was influenced by Freud, it is the "limitation of sexual opportunity" which creates the "mental energy" necessary to build a civilization.

He backs this up with exhaustive examples of the historical cycle he proposes. The cycle goes as follows: in a primitive society, people take their pleasure at whim, without commitment or limits. Then the practice of monogamous marriage, including premarital chastity, is instituted. (How he believes this first arises would take far too long to summarize here; read the book!) The sexual repression required for this chastity and fidelity increases the "mental energy" and the inner strength of those who practice it, enabling them to embark on long-term projects such as monumental architecture, agriculture, and conquest. In this early stage, men have enormous power over their wives and children, even when the children have grown up.

The "sexual opportunity" of women is always, of necessity, more limited than that of men in a civilized society, and this has a powerful effect, according to Unwin; they convey this repression and its benefits to their children. Indeed, he blames the decline of feudalism on its habit of putting its "best" women into convents to live as nuns - it is true that for a woman with intellectual aspirations, a convent was her only real option - instead of having them bear children to whom they could convey their "mental energy".Unwin also criticizes polygamous societies; the easy "sexual opportunity" it affords men limits the "mental energy".

He says, "That is why, I submit, the Moors in Spain achieved such a high culture. Their fathers were born into a polygamous tradition; but their mothers were the daughters of Christians and Jews, and had spent their early years in an absolutely monogamous environment. The sons of these women laid the foundations of rationalistic culture; but soon the supply of Christian and Jewish women was insufficient, so the incipient rationalism failed to mature greatly."

It always begins with the ruling class, the aristocracy, being the most chaste and monogamous. As they grow decadent after a few generations, the "middle class" (not necessarily in our modern understanding of it) is just getting the hang of it, having aped it from their betters, and they acquire more power in the society.

In time, however, the strict monogamy loosens. Unwin speculates that the extreme power the builders of civilizations have over their wives and children is unbearable to most, and the decrease of this power is inevitable. Unwin's attention is more on the monogamy than on the legal position of women, but the two seem to march hand in hand. "A female emancipating movement is a cultural phenomenon of unfailing regularity; it appears to be the necessary outcome of absolute monogamy. The subsequent loss of social energy after the emancipation of women, which is

sometimes emphasized, has been due not to the emancipation but to the extension of sexual opportunity which has always accompanied it. In human records there is no instance of female emancipation which has not been accompanied by an extension of sexual opportunity."

Indeed, as sexual opportunity becomes easier - which always takes place in concert with female emancipation - the society's mental energy weakens, it cannot continue to invent things or maintain what it has, and in a few generations it is easily conquered by a robust monogamous patriarchy, which is fairly bursting with the mental energy of repressed sexuality.

Professor Unwin, by the way, was not in any way a male chauvinist. He concluded his book with a hopeful wish that we may find some way to have sexual repression and the equality of the sexes at the same time, and clearly believed that women are not inherently unfit for power and independence.

That is one of the two criticisms I would make of this excellent work. But one can hardly blame Professor Unwin, who was writing in 1934, long before scientific study had verified that all of the traditional stereotypes about women were based in biological fact. Indeed, thanks to feminist domination of mass media, few people today are aware of this.

The other criticism is that Unwin focuses all of his attention on the "mental energy" caused by sexual repression. I suspect he is right about it, but there is another vital factor in the building of a civilization, and that is paternity. Men build things - houses, palaces, empires, codes of ethics - so that they can pass them on to their own children, and thus achieve one kind of immortality. Men who know they cannot train and endow their children are disinclined to produce. This, even more than the lack of opportunity for personal enrichment, is why communism and socialism are such abysmal failures, and why inheritance tax is such a dangerous threat to civilization itself. It would be good to read an intertwining of this theory and Unwin's. This book has long been out of print and copies are rare and expensive, but until this situation is remedied, it can be obtained through inter-library loan. I highly recommend it for its exhaustive documentation.

A further review by "married":

Unwin's research is extremely valuable, but his explanation is nonsense. One has to understand that as a liberal anthropologist, he never expected the results that he found, and was undoubtedly not very happy with them, but he was honest enough to report that facts as he found them. His explanation is an attempt to reconcile the facts with his liberal beliefs, when they are, in fact, irreconcilable. The only limit of sexual opportunity in the historical societies that he describes is limits for women. Prostitution was very widespread in these societies, so men never lacked sex.

Here is where to find the book online:

.

Sex and Culture -- by J.D. Unwin (1934) - PDF

.

---

or,

http://thepiratebay.org/torrent/4341114

Easiest way to get this file with torrent, is to download Opera Web Browser 9.5. It has built in torrent support. Just click on the link and leave the browser open.

1) Go to http://www.opera.com/download/

2) Download a copy.

3) Open and install.

4) Go to http://thepiratebay.org/torrent/4341114

5) Click on "Download this torrent'

6) Leave Opera Browser up and running, leave computer on.

Or,

Or download it as a zip file, containing the several formats listed: http://www.tenjune.com/SexCulture.zip

Follow Along with the Events Between Russia and Georgia

. · 14 August 2008 · Archived copy · Original

This guy at the blog "Once Upon a Time in the West" has been monitoring this kind of stuff for quite a while already:

http://once-upon-a-time-in-the-west.blogspot.com/

"Gentlemen, comrades, do not be concerned about all you hear about Glasnost and Perestroika and democracy in the coming years. They are primarily for outward consumption. There will be no significant internal changes in the Soviet Union, other than for cosmetic purposes. Our purpose is to disarm the Americans and let them fall asleep." -- Mikhail Gorbachev

Have Women Invented ANYTHING!?!

. · 23 August 2008 · Archived copy · Original

I mean, have they?

With all of that time they had living in Betty Friedan's "Comfortable Concentration Camp", one would think they would have had lots of time to dream up all kinds of crap.

But...

Have they?

Seriously!

You know, I used to pinch severely off of Buster B's phrase "name something that a woman has invented that involves more than two moving parts."

(You haven't read Buster B? Well, where have you been living? On that ever cooling sun? You can find his archives here: http://busterb.mgtow.net/ T'is good stuff!)

But, I think Buster and I were both aiming too high.

I got into a conversation about female inventions today, and, I *insisted* that only a woman could have invented those stupid little doilies that the fair sex likes to stick under ever solid object in a house.

I *despise* those ridiculous things!

I was sure that only a woman would have invented them. I mean, they are so enamoured by them that I know not of a woman who has not purchased several.

Surely, such a frivilous, stupid, little lacey circle couldn't have been invented by a man!

WRONG!

http://www.turkotek.com/salon_00110/salon.html

"Who invented the doily? Count D'Oyley was supposedly a decorator back in 17th Century London. He created the first doilies. They were made of a woolen material. In the 1800s in France, they started making the paper doily. They were brought here to the United States in the mid-1800s." (13)

I mean, trust me! When the rest of us men invent the time machine, I will be the first to support the notion that this asshat should be removed from the past gene pool! And justified in my support I should be, as this jerkoff has tormented men with stupid lacey crap adorning the base of every truly masculine thing within the home which he has built! Death is too merciful! Only banishment from the gene pool will suffice!

But, dammit!

I was certain that women must have invented those darn things... if only to irritate their menfolk, which they seem

to so love doing.

But I was wrong!

So, dear readers, please help me along!

Can I change the phrase from "Can you name anything with more than two moving parts that was invented by a woman" to "*can you name **ANYTHING** that was invented by a woman?"*

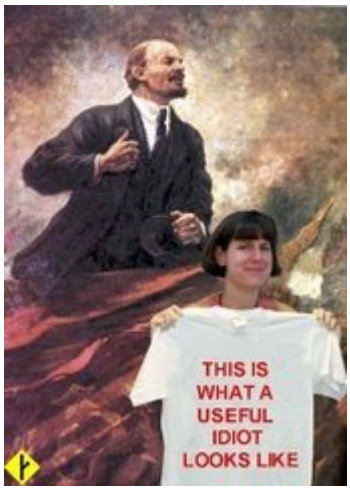
I want to remain accurate... but, after the doily incident, my faith has been shaken.

OK, Winston, Start Your Two Minutes of Hate... N.O.W.!

. · 24 August 2008 · Archived copy · Original

I have to laugh at all the people that came here from http://www.rense.com/ to leave insulting comments on my blog.

The world may be struggling with shortages in resources, but useful idiots abound at every corner. If I could turn them into fuel, I would become a billionaire overnight!



Here are a bunch of people who very likely pride themselves on their "knowledge" of what is going on in the world, but still have not put two and two together and realized that feminism is of Marxist origins, and its purpose is to destroy the family and put in a system of tyranny where the weak rule the strong – kinda like making a society where children rule adults. Lol! You shrieking women are next. Haven't you read Hillary's thesis? How about the UN's "Rights of the Child"? Think men are going to rescue you? The very men you so love to hate today? The ones you've kicked out of their own homes, and have stolen their very children from? The ones you offered up to state supported slavery? Think again. The plan is to separate men from families so they won't help you when you really need it.

Totalitarian regimes know that the family is their biggest obstacle in maintaining tyrannical rule. Any moron can conquer a country… keeping it under control is a different matter altogether. Fathers who are attached to their own families are usually the ones that run the oppressors out of the country with pointy sticks. Remove men from their families, and you remove the desire of good to men to search for pointy sticks. DUH!

I notice this disease all over the place on the web. There are many excellent sites out there that document all kinds of government abuses… Prison Planet… Freedom Force etc. They are filled to the brim with excellent articles documenting the abuses being inflicted upon the people by corrupt governments, BUT, nary do they mention feminism and the state encouraged destruction of the family, inspired by evil feminists who often outright state that they want to destroy the family and destroy society and the nature of the sovereign state.

Of course, will any of these useful idiots who come here to screech "FAGGOT!" ever bother to read articles like this one, which documents how our No Fault Divorce laws are an exact replica of Russian marriage laws in the early 20th Century?

http://waysandmeans.house.gov/hearings.asp?formmode=view&id=954

(Did you read it, you Gorgons?)

Yes indeed, Russia did so much damage to their population that during WWII, they had to abandon such insanity because they were screwing themselves even worse than the Nazis breathing fire outside the city gates. Gorbachev commented in his book that the reason why the Soviet state collapsed was because of the damage they inflicted on people's families and close relationships in the early part of the century. 50 years after reversing such policies, they were not able to save themselves, such was the extent of the damage which they did, and which we are replicating under the name of "feminism" and "equality."

As I mentioned in the comments, in between the 2 minutes of hate, one wonders if all of these politically correct shriekers (Did you know Political Correctness was invented by Lenin and perfected by Stalin?) also scream so loudly and hurl such hatred towards the people that produce shirts saying "Boys are Stupid. Throw Rocks at Them!"

Are they half as concerned that over 80% of teen suicides are committed by boys?

I doubt it.

I am sure that many of them giggled and tittered when they heard about Lorena & John Bobbit too. Certainly they didn't screech and shout such vitriol at their cohorts as they do when a man asks if women invented anything.

A little perspective is in order, perhaps?

Many probably used to run around their university campuses, fueled by an estrogen high as they emphatically told men that "A Woman Needs a Man Like a Fish Needs a Bicycle." (By the way, Irina Dunn was the woman who coined the phrase, and she stole it from a male philosopher who stated "Man Needs Religion Like a Fish Needs a Bicycle." Oh, the irony, you mighty inventors.)

I wonder how many of these fucktards took an equal amount time which they spent hurling insults of "you must be gay, FAGGOT!" to send Barack Obamanation a nasty note when he blamed father's for abandoning their families this past Father's Day. How many of these useful idiots even realize that women file 2/3 of all divorces, and the number one reason is not "abuse" but rather, they simply feel bored and unfulfilled?

How many of them are equally upset about Joe Biden's VAWA, a completely sexist, one sided law, that strips men of their constitutional rights?

How many of these Useful Idiots even understand that Obama & Biden are going to try and pass over sovereignty of the USA to the United Nations, under the entirely corrupt CEDAW and i-VAWA? Do you even understand the implications, you hate mongers? Holy Totalitarianism! And it's all being done in the name of women's equality - fueled by people like the useful idiots who feel justified in shrieking mindless insults at any man who *dares* say even the most trivial of negative things about the "fair" sex.

Our freedoms are disappearing daily because no-one dares speak out against feminism and its totalitarian excesses.

Why do you think they targeted women as the best group of useful idiots to crumble the institution of the family and bring in cradle to grave socialism? It's because they knew the tendency of people to never dare to speak out against women. People like the idiots from Rense that came here to shriek mindless insults over the most trivial of things.

Useful Fucking Idiots.

Feminists
are Stupid
Throw Facts
at Them

What is this Apocalypse coming to? -- by Jim Untershine

. · 25 August 2008 · Archived copy · Original

http://mensnewsdaily.com/2008/08/24/what-is-this-apocalypse-coming-to/

If we replace the Joint Stock Trust with Health & Human Services, replace the World Bank with the American Bar Association, replace the IMF with the Family Court, and replace the underdeveloped countries with American families, we suddenly see what Joe Biden sees – A system of control whereby radical feminists pressure women to break up families to allow the Family Courts to impose an outrageous child support debt on the breadwinner of that family by any means possible (including false allegations of domestic violence). The women coaxed into these deals rarely benefit from it, and usually end up on welfare, or their children are taken into Foster Care. Meanwhile, the family breadwinner is forced into insolvency, their wages are garnished, their credit is ruined, their privileges are suspended, and they are put in Debtor's Prison if they refuse to relinquish all of their financial resources.

The Rockefeller Foundation funded 'Womens Lib' for the same reason the CIA funded 'MS Magazine': 1) Tax women, 2) Break up families. The CFR has completely taken control of the major media outlets preventing the American people from understanding where their Country is actually headed or the real reason many countries hate us. Every penny Americans pay to the US Treasury as taxes on their wages is paid to the Federal Reserve as interest on the National debt. Every penny spent on our government is loaned at interest by the Federal Reserve and is essentially put on our children's tab.

Read the entire piece here:

http://mensnewsdaily.com/2008/08/24/what-is-this-apocalypse-coming-to/

The Tao of God, the Way and Its Power - by MRA Revolutionary

. · 25 August 2008 · Archived copy · Original

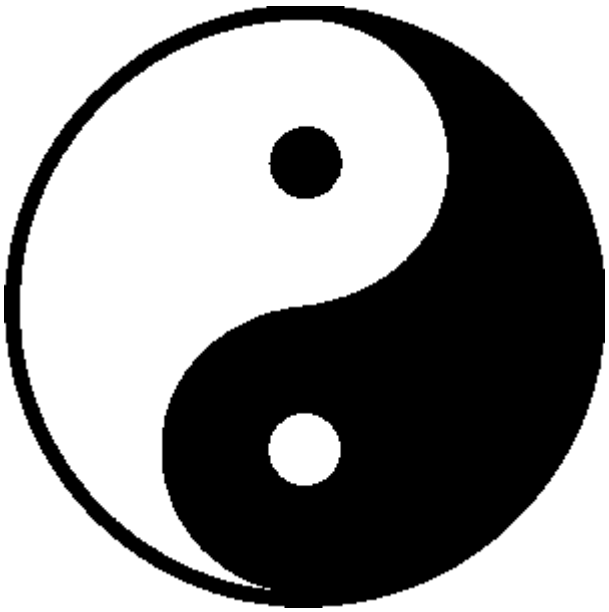
I pinched this last post of MRA Revolutionary's blog from Google Cache, and requested of Mamonaku to allow me to incorporate it into my own blog, and he was gracious enough to give his blessing to do so.

****

.

The Tao of God, the Way and its Power. - by Mamonaku

.



.

Greetings one and all, and Peace be with you.

.

I had to write this post in response to the Wise Rob Fedders, who commented on my last post.

.

I hope that this will allow my readers to share in my thinking... and hopefully you guys won't go to sleep while reading it!!

.

Rob Fedders said...

.

Mamonaku,

.

Another spectacular piece by you!

.

This simple quote really jumps out at me:

.

"(The Taizkai Mandala: No one can escape the law of Karma, or Sin.)"

.

In my own studying, this is something that is coming up over and over again.

.

(The Taizokai Mandala)

.

Thanks Mr. Fedders!

.

However, **I know nothing, and understand nothing.** Only God knows all, and all praise is due to Him alone.

.

I have acquired what little knowledge I know only through a whole lot of study, meditation, prayer, and painful training at the hands of my master of the martial arts.

.

He is a true warrior wizard, to whom I owe a great deal!

.

About the Mandala:The Taizokai Mandala is the "Womb Mandala," that represents the Universe. I was hoping that someone would pick up on this; as it is the linchpin of my way of thinking.

.

I first learned of this image while I was undergoing strict training in the Japanese warrior arts. My master taught me many things: physical, mental, and spiritual.

.

What the image is showing us is that the Universe breaks down into three Sacred components:

.

Thought

.

Word

.

Deed.

.

With these three things, the universe is made. It contains all that is. We are not separated from these three, but we ARE these three things.

.

When people say that we are the "sons of God," its not a joke, or an allegory. It is a very real fact.

.

Not because we have Godlike power, but because we are made in His image, and can become "gods by grace:"

.

But let no one believe about the only-begotten Son just what they believe about those who are colled the sons of God by grace and not by nature, as the evangelist says, "He gave them power to become the sons of God," 1108 and according to what the Lord Himself also mendtioned, as declared in the law, "I said, ***Ye are gods; and all of you children of the Most High:"***

.

Every thought, every word, and every action has direct consequences and affects everything in our world.

.

Ten Thousand Rivers flow into the Sea.

.

Many people make the mistake that they are living in a world with many separate components.

.

For example, people think about:

.

My car...

.

This house...

.

That terrorist attack...

.

Melissa's blog...

.

and so forth.

.

This is a mistake.

.

God's kingdom does not consist of ten thousand separate things... but ONE massive whole.

.

God is ONE.

.

And yet, He is three:

.

Father, Son, and Holy Spirit.

.

Thought, Word, and Deed.

.

The Greek Church calls Christ the Logos, or the Eternal Word.

.

"By whom all things were made."

.

It is wrong to say God is One, as it is wrong to say God is three-fold.

.

He is BOTH, at the same time, always and forever.

.

As it is written:

.

"For I am Yahweh, I shall not change" (Malachi 3:6a, The Scriptures)

.

Yahushua Messiah is the same yesterday, and today, and forever. (Hebrews 13:8, The Scriptures)

.

The council of Yahweh stands forever, the plans of His heart to all generations. (Psalms 33:11, The Scriptures)

.

I know that whatever Elohim does is forever. There is no adding to it, and there is no taking from it. (Ecclesiastes 3:14a, The Scriptures)

.

Mr. Fedders continues:

.

And I would like to make this following argument from a purely agnostic point of view.

.

It is apparent that every successful society is based on the patriarchal family - the joining of men to the reproduction cycle/family by marriage.

.

Virtually every patriarchal marriage-society is derived from a religion that lays out the religious law directly and soundly in regard to how marriages & society should be.

.

Every Patriarchally based religion ALSO seems to have very strong wording in regard to that very statement:

.

"The Taizokai Mandala: No one can escape the law of Karma, or Sin."

.

/100% Agreed.

.

When I began writing my Rights of Man series, I pointed out that:

.

Now dear reader, we have heard from two different sources about how the father is a "sperm donor." And biologically, this is true. However, you also know how desperately needed fathers are in the development and survival (especially in today's crack filled Ghettos) of their children.

.

Therefore I take issue slightly with these great authors by saying that they are arguing from a position from weakness, whereas I will argue from a position of strength. ***God's law is on our side gentlemen.***

.

I will boldly claim that a man's desire for a family is a natural and a moral idea implanted in his spirit by the Creator. And if the barriers to having said family are not prohibitively high, most men will act on these desires honorably. And I meant what I wrote.

.

Some men attempt to argue for the Rights of Man meekly; as if they doubt, in their heart of hearts, that Men have natural rights that ought to be respected.

.

However, there are universal truths that cannot be redefined; there are laws in place that no man, or woman can disregard with any measurable degree of success.

.

Patriarchy is one of these.

.

It is written:

.

"But he that sinneth against me wrongeth his own soul: all they that hate me love death (Proverbs 8:36)."
Living in the Matriarchy reminds me of a person jumping off a cliff naked in defiance of the Law of Gravity.

.

We can choose to break the law, but we will suffer the consequences for our actions all the same.

.

Knowing this fact, only a fool would jump from the cliff. But, many people, in their delusion and ignorance, choose to defy the Natural Laws that the Master has set into motion.

.

To their own destruction.

.

Mr Fedders writes:

.

(I will refer to the Bible from here, as it is the religion we are all most familiar with)

.

The Bible tells us the same thing: The Lion will not lie down with the Lamb (on Earth).

.

God tells us that good and evil is all around us. God tells us that mankind cannot defeat evil. Only God can defeat evil. We, mankind, are told to fight evil and to resist it but ONLY GOD can defeat evil, and we are released from the belief that WE, mankind, are so powerful as to be God himself by thinking that we can defeat evil.

.

Now, the notion of Good & Evil, of Black & White, and the Yin & Yang are truly as old as mankind and likely time itself. Every successful religion acknowledges this in one form or another - and then goes on to discuss with mankind his eternal struggles with Good & Evil... the undefeatableness of the Yin & Yang.

.

Agreed.

.

God moves in His own time. Yin is replaced with Yang, Yang is replaced with Yin.

.

Even in our age of Yin (the feminine principle), there are still vibrant pockets of Yang (the male principle) . Even in our Matriarchy, there is still Manliness afoot.

.

Working, ever so quietly, to supplant and upend our Yin dominant culture.

.

There is no stopping it. Resistance is Futile!!

.

Men in general have to remember two things.

.

1) We are not separate beings seeking to turn the wheel of Darma. We ARE the wheel, inseparable from it, grinding down all resistance in our path.

.

2) The natural law is on our side. God Himself has said numerous times that Patriarchy and headship by Men is the preferred order on this Earth, until He returns with power and glory to Judge both the living and the dead.

.

It is written:

.

But I want you to understand that Christ is the head of every man, and the man is the head of a woman, and God is the head of Christ (1 Corinthians 11:3).

.

To the woman he said, Great will be your pain in childbirth; in sorrow will your children come to birth; still your desire will be for your husband, but he will be your master (Genesis 3:16).

.

Even though, at the present time, we are under the dominion of women, and men who defer to women...

.

Since it is not the "preferred" order of things, the dominion of woman is maintained with great difficulty and high cost.

.

You know as well as I do that our society today is far and away worse off since we entered the age of Yin.

.

It won't last very long.

.

The effort to maintain it, is simply too great.

.

Whether one believes in religion/God or not, if we establish that all successful societies were based on the religious foundation of Patriarchal Marriage... patriarchal marriage leads to a growing and successful society... that indeed does, from an agnostic point of view, support that the Bible (religious marriage) is indeed the "Book of Life" and therefore it also becomes the "Book of Truth." And in the "Book of Truth" we are told that Good & Evil (Polar Opposites) are all around us - and we cannot defeat them!

.

We cannot defeat them, and it only brings suffering when Men rebel against the established order.

.

The goal is to seek harmony with the Universe, as represented by the Taizokai Mandala, while **at the same time,** cultivating a spirit that **does not change** no matter how much the Universe does.

.

This idea is represented by the Kongokai Mandala.

.

(The Kongokai Mandala: every man has a destiny)

.

To rail against the Universe without changing yourself is wrong, and to change yourself without being in harmony with the Universe is also wrong.

.

God is God without man; man is nothing without God.

.

But God gives us **FREE WILL**, and **together**, man can "move mountains."

.

Working **together** in harmony, in accordance to the law of Heaven.

.

Mankind CANNOT bring about heaven on earth. To say that mankind can create heaven on earth is indeed for mankind to deny the Yin & Yang.

.

It is all about earth and sky, fire and water, night and day, man and woman... everywhere around us in the very nature of nature/father sky/mother earth herself - there is no denying the polar opposites. They are positively everywhere - this IS nature.

.

Now, from my interpretation of Marx's Utopia (which is Heaven on Earth), what is Karl Marx saying to do?

.

Marx believes that Utopia (Heaven on Earth) is possible if mankind can somehow be suspended between the Yin & Yang - and then to collapse all of the other structures of mankind.

.

Excellent points!

.

Way back when I started on my History of Feminism series, I wrote:

.

The philosophers are flawed in all of their thinking simply because they deny the existence of the Divinity, from where all knowledge springs. The Bible makes clear that "As God says in the Scriptures, "I will destroy the wisdom of all who claim to be wise. I will confuse those who think they know so much." (Corinthians 1:18).

.

Marx, Engles, Friedan, Nietzsche...All flawed because they were not in tune with the source of all knowledge. The thought that by their reason alone, they could rewrite Natural Law to suit themselves best.

.

The Lankavatara Sutra tells us that:

.

Discrimination of self-nature is to make discriminations according to the ***views of the philosophers in reference to the self-nature of all things which they imagine and stoutly maintain to be true, saying: "This is just what it is and it cannot be otherwise."*** *Discrimination of cause is to distinguish the notion of causation in reference to being and non-being and to imagine that there are such things as "cause-signs."*

.

Discrimination of philosophical views means considering different views relating to the notions of being and nonbeing, oneness and otherness, bothness and not-bothness, existence and non-existence, all of which are erroneous, and becoming attached to particular views.

.

Discrimination of reasoning means the teaching whose reasoning is based on the grasping of the notion of an ego-substance and what belongs to it. Discrimination of birth means getting attached to the notion that things come into existence and pass out of existence according to causation.

.

Discrimination of no-birth is to see that causeless substances which were not, come into existence by reason of causation.Discrimination of dependence means the mutual dependence of gold and the filament made of it. Discrimination of bondage and imagination is like imagining that there is something bound because of something binding, as in the case of a man who ties a knot and loosens one.

.

Mr. Fedders continues:

.

This is where we get the eternal Marxist drive to equalize/homosexualize/androgynize everything about mankind - and then hold it in place and collapse all other things... to bring forth the "New Kind of Man" who will live in Marx's Utopia (Heaven on Earth).

.

Karl Marx is talking about how to force the Lion to lie with the Lamb (with Totalitarianism) by denying that the Yin and Yang exist. He is saying that mankind can be God & defeat nature itself & create Heaven. He is going against the very "Book of Truth" itself.

.

This is why he embraces Hegel's "Truth is Relative" and why Marx posits that he will use this philosophy to change the world.

.

He is going to deny absolute truth and manipulate mankind with the "Truth is Relative" to make the truth whatever he needs it to be at the moment - always working towards the denial of the Polar Opposites that make up nature itself!

.

Marx is going against "Truth." Truth = Life, and therefore Karl Marx is advocating for Death.

.

My thoughts exactly!

.

I wrote previously:

.

However, if we look at the utopias of North Korea, the People's Republic of China, the U.S.S.R., Eastern Europe, and others, we see the truth of Marxist thought. The way of Marxist-Feminism is the way of Death.

.

We humans blame God for so much of our troubles. We accuse Him of being cruel, and of abandoning His creation.When I hear or read commentary like this, I always remember a passage from the most Manly of works, The Odyssey:

.

"Men are so quick to blame the gods:they say that we devise their misery.But they themselves - in their depravity - design grief greater thanthe griefs the fates assign."

.

As represented by the Taizokai and the Kongokai...

.

and as told to us by God Himself in His word...

.

We have freewill, but unfortunately, WE human beings, male and female alike, choose to hold selfish and deluded views, to assign blame to others when we should be looking at ourselves, to rely on our own powers when we should be looking to Him for wisdom and understanding.

.

Marxism and feminism are failed philosophies of men that were too smart for their own good.

.

If one examines the theory of Urreligion (all religions derive from a Universal Primordeal Religion = the Universal Truths), and in fact religions are parables of mankind's follies since the times of the Stone Age, from whence Religions came... Religions and ancient legends/lore/mythology are a twinkling of a remembrance of the Fall of Man.

.

All religions and mythology seem to play on this one universal theme:

.

The Fall of Man from Paradise --> Man's Eternal Struggles between Good & Evil (cannot be defeated by man himself, he must accept it) --> but he can endure the struggle of Yin and Yang by being given Hope (Pandora's box...

return to Paradise).

.

But mankind MUST accept the Yin and Yang - accepting the existence of Polar Opposites = Life itself.

.

Karl Marx denying the Polar Opposites = Death itself.

.

Therefore, when we get men like Abraham (the father of 3 successful religions) being told by the one true God (truth, life), that he must reject the idols of his father (in Tyre, I believe... worship of Goddesses = Matriarchy...), and God tells him to leave such wickedness and go forth into the wilderness...Lol! Well Abraham is the first MGTOW!

.

Haha yes indeed... I never thought about the original Patriarch in those terms... But very true none the less.

.

This theme plays over and over again.

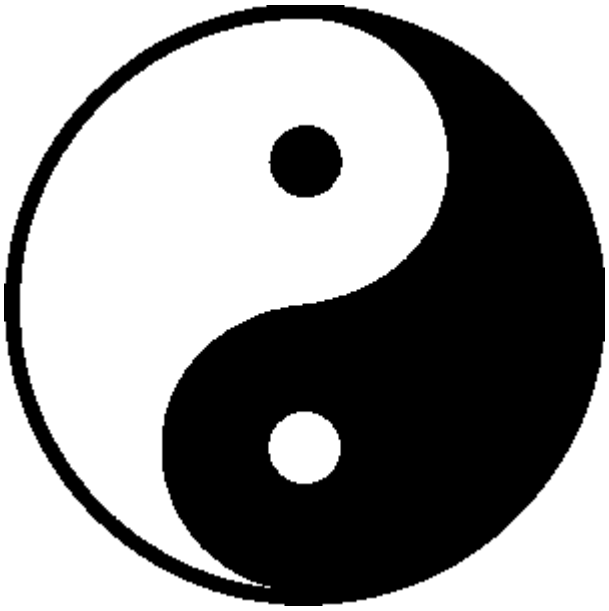
.

Soddom and Gomorrah were immoral and homosexual. (Homosexuality is the denial of Yin and Yang), and God "wipes them from the face of the earth." They ignored THE Universal Truth... whether they were really smitten with fire and brimstone or whether the story is a parable about people who embraced Matriarchal Androgyny and ended up dying out as a result - it really matters very little - the fact is that they were "wiped from the face of the earth" because they ignored the Universal Truth.

.

I agree with most of your analysis, although I would like to dispute the notion that homosexuality is a denial of Yin and Yang.If we look closely at the Yin and Yang symbol:

.



.

One will note that there is a small portion of Yang (white color) in the Yin (black color), and vice versa.

.

Please consider:

.

Sex and Character, by Otto Weininger advances an interesting theory with respect to the nature of the sexes.

.

"In the widest treatment of most living things, a blunt separation of them into males and females no longer suffices for the known facts. The limitations of these conceptions have been felt more or less by many writers. The first purpose of this work is to make this point clear...

.

... Sexual differentiation, in fact, is never complete. ***All the peculiarities of the male sex may be present in the female in some form, however weakly developed; and so also the sexual characteristics of the woman persist in the man, although perhaps they are not so completely rudimentary.*** *The characters of the other sex occur in the one sex in a vestigial form. Thus, in the case of human beings, in which our interest is greatest, to take an example, it will be found that the most womanly woman has a growth of colourless hair, known as "lanugo" in the position of the male beard; and in the most manly man there are developed under the skin of the breast, masses of glandular tissue connected with the nipples. This condition of things has been minutely investigated in the true genital organs and ducts, the region called the "urino-genital tract," and in each sex there has been found a complete but rudimentary set of parallels to the organs of the other sex.*

.

. . . ***The fact is that males and females are like two substances combined in different proportions, but with either element never wholly missing.*** *We find, so to speak, never either a man or a woman, but only the male condition and the female condition. Any individual is never to be designated merely as a man or a woman, but by a formula showing that it is a composite of male and female characters in different proportions..."*

.

In a nutshell, hard and fast definitions of Masculinity and Femininity are false, according to Weininger.

.

We should understand the qualities of being male and female on a sliding scale, and every person falls on this scale.

.

Most Feminine --- Moderately Feminine --- Slightly Feminine

.

Most Masculine --- Moderately Masculine --- Slightly Masculine

.

And while the majority of biological females are "Feminine dominant", there are women with a "Manly spirit".

.

Likewise that the majority of biological males are "Manly Dominant", there are men with a "Feminine nature"... aka Girly men.

.

With this in mind, I believe that there are some Homosexual men (please remember that the Bible does not condemn intercourse involving two women) that contain a whole lotta Yin with a Yang outer shell.

.

What does this mean with respect to the laws of God? That is truly a Mystery.

.

It is clear that God condemns Homosexual male intercourse. However, on a personal level, I don't truly believe that God will condemn those homosexuals that are truly Gay due to their biology, and seek His Face instead of engaging in outright rebellion.

.

This is something to meditate on.

.

We too live in a Matriarchy that worships adrogyny (sameness, denial of Yin and Yang), and our birthrates are plummeting and we will soon be wiped from the face of the earth. We are ignoring the Universal Truth of Polar Opposites.

.

Polar Opposites CREATE life.

.

Karl Marx denies truth... and promotes the way of death... warned to us from the earliest of times.

.

We have to embrace the polar opposites to have life.

.

Marxist ideology is the belief that man is in fact God himself - and so powerful is mankind that he can defeat the Yin and Yang. This is anti-truth. Anti-truth = death.

.

"The Taizokai Mandala: No one can escape the law of Karma, or Sin."

.

A Universal Truth. Embracing opposites = life.

.

Lol! I guess this is kind of a long comment... the rambling of Rob trying to figure things out!

.

Not long at all!!

.

Although I apologize to my readers for my long winded, and utterly boring, reply.

.

All of us need to have these inward journeys, in order to discover what is the truth, no matter where it may lead.

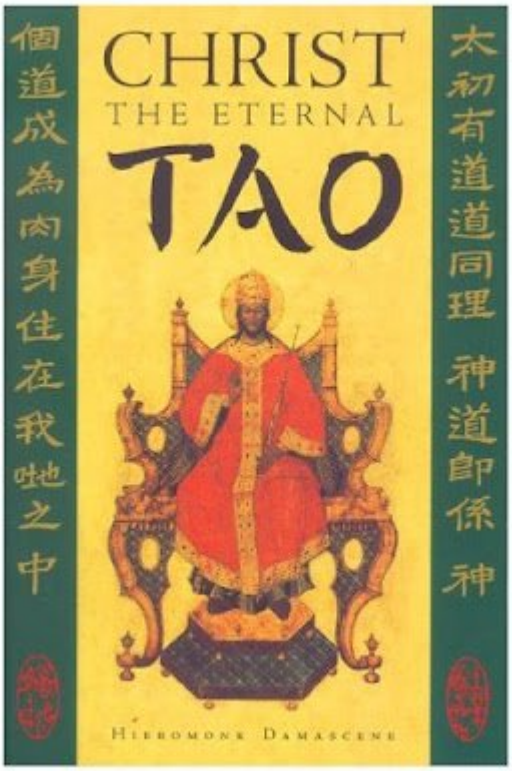
.

Rob, I understand where you are going with your thoughts. You are seeking to integrate the teachings of Christ with the wisdom of the East.

.

I recommend the book, "Christ the Eternal Tao". It will enlighten you my friend.

.



(Front cover: Christ the Eternal Tao)

.

While I still know nothing, and understand nothing, I have the good fortune of being exposed to ancient knowledge that not many people will ever have the chance to learn. But I've had to put in some serious work: Meditation, Prayer, Fasting, and Bible study.

.

One last thing I would like to share with my readers...

.

You've heard that "Form is emptiness, and Emptiness is form."

.
But translated from the Japanese, we can also get:
.
"Form is everything, and everything is form."
.
Please think about this.Who made the form?
.
What force is able to be Everything?
.
And once you are enlightened, seek His Face.
.
Mamonaku.
.

.
Quotation added by Rob:
.
"As I see it, our revolutionary task is to destroy phallic identity in men and masochistic nonidentity in women--that is, to destroy the polar realities of men and women as we now know them so that this division of human flesh into two camps--one an armed camp and the other a concentration camp--is no longer possible. Phallic identity is real and it must be destroyed. Female masochism is real and it must be destroyed." -- Andrea Dworkin, Our Blood: Prophecies And Discourses On Sexual Politics - The Root Cause, (Harper & Row, 1976)
.

Note - I also transferred the comments in that were on Google Cache, as some of them were pretty good. I hope no-one minds. I you do, let me know and I will remove them.

Achilles Heel

. · 25 August 2008 · Archived copy · Original

The biggest problem that I think we are facing as men and as a civilization, is that Marxism has never really been defeated. It is more of an ideological religion of humanism (man can defeat nature & create a Heaven on Earth), not particularly a form of government. It is quite a bloody system because it messes with people's minds and perceptions so much - and that is the *real* problem. Look at what happened after the collapse of the Soviet Union - many of the people wanted the old system back because they just did not know how to live without it anymore. They had an altered sense of reality.

Feminism/Political Correctness is, of course, a form of Marxism and it works in the same way that Economic Marxism works - it screws with the population's perception of reality and causes radical polarizations which are then played against eachother to remove the freedoms of *all* the people. We should be able to see this even within the MRM. A lot of what is going on is basically the people screeching for "equality." I am so tired of hearing people declare their never dying devotion to "egalitarianism." Equality is the disease, not the answer. If there is an apple and orange, how can you make them equal? Or, if there are two trees, one is 30 feet tall an the other is 40 feet tall, please tell me how you are going to make them "equal."

I cringe at the word "equality." It doesn't matter if feminists are screaching for equality or the MRM is screaching for equality. Equality is the disease, not the answer.

Are we not becoming like those in the former Soviet Union who wanted the old system back because they had been so mind-f*cked that they couldn't figure out how to live any other way? This is what Marxism does, it changes the people's perception of reality into polarizing opposites, which are then worked against eachother to increase the power of evil organisms like Government, NGO's, Academia, the Media etc., while at the same time reducing the power of the individual - all in order to achieve "equality." We keep arguing and arguing, demanding more for ourselves, while the fembots also demand more for themselves - lol! Well, the government will gladly give it to us both, and in doing so will remove more freedoms from a significant portion of the population. And we will be glad to get it, until we see how these assholes in the government will pervert it into something we didn't intend.

Think about Shared Parenting. Great Concept? Well, basically it will be done "for the children," but look a little further down the road. It will increase the legitimacy of the corrupt family court system, the no-fault divorce industry, the slime ball lawyers, the interfering social workers etc. etc. The government will be able tell both men and women what days and during what hours they are allowed to see their children. Think about that! Some asshole judge telling both you and your ex that on Monday, Tuesday & Wednesday your ex-wife gets to see the kid, and you get to see the kid from 9:00am Thursday morning to 10:00pm Saturday night. Sunday is for the Marxist Youth Camp, I suppose.

But of course, it will be in the "best interest of the child" to only attend one school, rather than two. What will happen then if you lose your job and need to move to another city? Well, you will have to go to court to *beg* a judge to alter your "shared parenting arrangement." But, why should they allow this? You cannot just "give up" your responsibility. That is not "equal." You cannot just slough it off to your ex-wife and go back to the present day custody/support situation because you need to find work in another town. So, either your ex-wife gives up her job and follows you to another town or the judge will deny you your *right* to freely move about within the country. What if the ex-wife is now married to your ex-bestfriend who was banging her behind your back when you were married? How does he fit into the picture? Can he not get a job in another town as well because that would take away from *you* and *your ex-wife's* shared parenting obligations? Nope, he will be roped down and actually attached to you in just the same way you are attached to him.

There are hundreds of scenarios that could come out of this. Giving the government more power over our lives *is not* the answer.

You know what would be better than spending 10 years lobbying and begging the government for shared parenting? Attacking and destroying the concept of "No-fault Divorce," that's what. Think of all of the things that would fall if that happened. Family courts, lawyers, government, social workers etc. would *lose* power instead. Hey, if you got to bitch and moan at something for a decade, let's make it something that kills 10 or 20 birds with one stone, rather than being fooled into empowering our enemies by giving them what they want (more power).

Now, the only thing what *I* can see which will hurt this reality altering beast is... Marxist techniques themselves.

I'm talking about unleashing Marxism & Critical Theory on the foundational arguments of Marxofeminism itself. Think about it.

Over the past few posts I have been making some general points that are all related.

Point #1: Critical Theory has been used to destroy the foundations of society such as marriage and the family unit, among many others. http://no-maam.blogspot.com/2007/08/reviewing-old-article.html

Point #2: Whether it is right or wrong matters very little in a Democracy. All that matters is the opinion of 51% of the people. http://no-maam.blogspot.com/2007/09/thing-you-have-to-remember-about-will.html

Point #3: Perceptions of reality are controlled by *language* moreso than the effectiveness of any argument. You can create or deconstruct an idea that will be accepted by the *general* population simply by word/language manipulation. http://no-maam.blogspot.com/2007/09/nihilistic-newspeaking-nitwits.html

Point #4: All of Marxofeminism is based on the Dialectical - ie. a foundational argument *with a pre-determined outcome* makes a *precedent* upon which many, many other arguments are based upon. We keep fighting the *top* arguments, but there are too many of them that keep cropping up.
http://no-maam.blogspot.com/2007/09/foundational-arguments.html

So, what becomes obvious is that Marxofeminism is nothing more than a house of cards. It is all based on a few foundational arguments. We keep fighting the arguments at the top while leaving alone the foundational argument at the bottom. If you take out the foundational argument, you will set the stage *for all the other arguments to disappear* if you knock out the foundational/precedent setting argument at the bottom. And they will disappear *naturally*. The general population will do this for us if we get rid of the foundational argument.

For example: If you get rid of the notion of "Gender is a *social* construct," and replace it in the general populace's perception with "Gender is either a biological, or psychological, or social construct," that will be enough to topple all of the subsequent arguments built on that foundational argument. Yes it will take time for that to happen, but it will only be a matter of time before some guys in college challenge the courts on Title IX laws which are based on the "old" notion of "gender is a social construct" and say, "Hey, but isn't that based on a Biological Construct, which causes the Psychological Construct upon which the Social Construct is based?" And those laws won't have a leg to stand on.

Now, we can argue, and argue and argue. And these arguments are all good*, but*, it will only reach a small portion of the population to whom these arguments are intriguing enough to spend the time reading and understanding. In order to effect a real change, the *general* population's perception has to be altered without their even really thinking about it. *The best way to do that is with language manipulation.*

Look at how they did it to us in regard to heterosexuality, marriage & the family:

- Marriage/families have been redefined as "traditional marriages/families." By default, this opens a person mind to realizing there are other kinds of families than the "traditional."

- It is politically correct to refer to one's "life partner," rather than "husband and wife" which opens the mind to other kinds of relationships than the heterosexual.

- "Single Mom & Gay Marriages" are being declared "equal" to traditional families, even though they obviously are not.

- "No Fault Divorce" is a false statement which leads the populace's mindset away from the truth that it is really "Man Fault Divorce 100% of the time."

- The indicator of "Sex," which only allowed for Male or Female, was replaced with the word "Gender," thus allowing for the inclusions of Male, Female, Gay, Lesbian, Bisexual and Transgendered which create the foundations to "divide" sexuality & marriage.

So... why can't we do the same thing to the feminidiot arguments that are the foundations of their entire sick agenda? Why can't we also divide their foundational arguments, with the intention of dividing and destroying them in the general public's mental perceptions by use of language manipulations?

For example: If one wants to fight abortion laws and the oft slyly quoted "67% of the population supports abortion," then we should divide the definition of abortion so the public says, "Abortion*? WHAT KIND OF ABORTION*? Birthcontrol Abortion, Incest Abortion, Rape Abortion or Maternal Health Abortion? THEN it will become naturally evident to the public that only a minority support Birthcontrol Abortion, and the "swing" is created by Incest/Rape/Maternal Health Abortions which make up a very, very small percentage of actual abortions.

We need to inject a word like "Fake Rape" into the public consciousness. Perhaps also something for "Financially Motivated Rape," or "Regret Rape," or "Excuse Rape," or "Attention Rape" etc. etc.

You get the idea.

The idea is*, they* have created foundational arguments with a *predetermined outcome.* The predetermined outcome, of course, uses the passage of MORE LAWS which remove freedoms and promote the Marxist agenda.

Our idea should be: Use their destruction methods to *destroy their own foundational arguments* ***with a predetermined outcome to destroy those arguments and cause laws to be repealed!*** Then "Natural Rights" will begin to appear in society again.

Is it easy? Yes and No.

It will take some time. Don't count on it happening in any effectiveness in the next couple of months or years. But it will also take 10 years of lobbying to get "Shared Parenting" to be universally accepted by the government - which will create MORE laws. In that same amount of time, the concept of "No Fault Divorce" could be attacked with *Divissive Language* that will change the whole concept of current divorce laws, *and make things like Shared Parenting a mute point, as well as 10's if not 100's of other laws and intrusions.*

Think about it. Only 2 years ago, I remember all of the forums were bristling with discussions about being called

"Anti-feminist" and how to get the word "Misandry" in the language instead. Well, in that amount of time, "misandry" is already becoming accepted in the language, and , lol, people like me who didn't give a shit about being called an Anti-feminist don't even get attacked for it anymore. *In only 2 years*!

The internet is going to do to television what television did to the radio *and we are in control of this new medium and the language it uses!* How much harder is it to type a word like "Attention Rape" rather than just "Rape" as we do now?

Not much!

It is a little complicated, I know, and it necessarily is a *top down manipulation* because all of Marxist techniques use top down manipulations. But, as far as an Achilles Heel in Cultural Marxism, the only one I can see is that it is not immune to itself!

Foundational Arguments

. · 25 August 2008 · Archived copy · Original

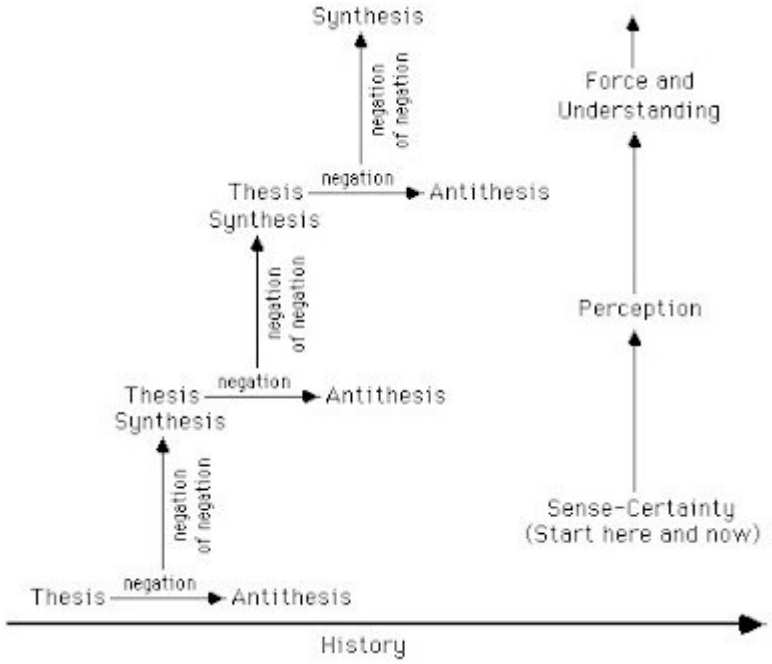
Has anyone ever noticed that all of feminism is based on only a few foundational arguments?

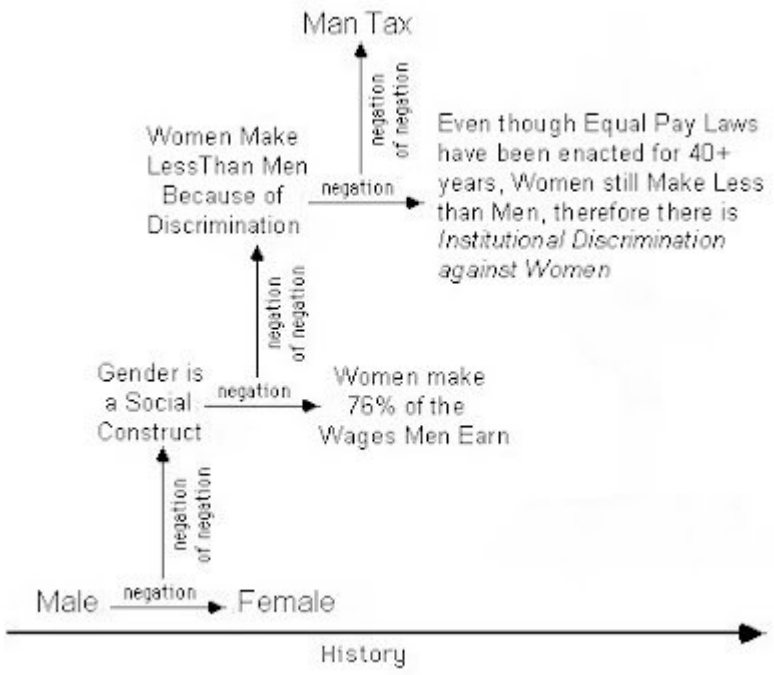
"Gender is a social construct."

"Men are the sole perpetrators of Domestic Violence."

"Marriage is akin to slavery for women."

You know them all. But have a look at how this whole system works. It works on the basis of Dialectical Arguments. Basically, it is set up to work like the legal system, it is all based on precedents. The fembots have convinced the masses of their foundational argument, and all of their subsequent arguments are based on the "precedent" at the very bottom.





The problem that we keep having, is we are arguing about the thing at the "top." By the time we are done defending our position against the "new" fembot argument, 10 other things have cropped up in the meantime.

I wonder what would happen if we stopped arguing "at the top," and started arguing "at the bottom?"

"Gender is a social construct?"

REALLY?

How about we divide gay activists from feminism by demanding that "Gender" actually is a social construct? Hmmm... You can't be BORN GAY if Gender is a social construct, n'est pas?

Nihilistic Newspeaking Nitwits

. · 25 August 2008 · Archived copy · Original

The most important institution which the Cultural Marxist PC Idiots have attacked is our language. The language controls our thoughts as a society. Of course, Orwell spoke of this in *1984,* refering to it as "Newspeak."

But it really is true, isn't it? If there is no word for something then we tend to think that thing doesn't exist. Likewise, a word can also be expanded upon to expand the the thoughts in the mind.

The blog "Exposing Feminism" has been making some excellent posts about how this word usage is being used against us, so I will quote a portion of one of his posts which does a good job of illustrating this:

http://exposingfeminism.wordpress.com/2007/08/29/word-manipulation-another-example/

*Let's examine the phrase '**positive discrimination**'.*

Surely it follows that the phrase 'negative discrimination' exists also? In the absence of a clear definition of 'positive' or 'negative' discrimination, can they truly be said to exist?

*The truth is that there is no such thing as 'positive' or 'negative' discrimination. Both of these vague concepts need only one word - **discrimination**.*

*You can apply the same logic when breaking down the phrase '**reverse sexism**'.*

These awkward, fabricated phrases have only recently come into modern usage. They are idioms constructed and designed to make you think in a certain way about particular groups of people.

How true. And they are positively everywhere. It's not an accident that these words exist. However, it can get more sinister than this. It can actually be used to destroy things when coupled with the use of Critical Theory and the Dialectical.

Let's look at how these word associations have been used to destroy the institution of marriage.

Think about the word *No Fault Divorce*. Clever, isn't it? The cold hard fact is that there is nothing "No Fault" about divorce in the modern day. Court decisions come down as hard on men as they would have before the days of No Fault Divorce - pretty much to the extent that No Fault Divorce means the same thing as "Man's Fault Divorce" back in the 1950's. It is a sneaky little ploy against men to call this travesty of justice "No-Fault," but the word association is very powerful. Furthermore it sounds very "equal," the very virus that has removed so many of our freedoms. Of course, at the time, the Gender Idiots from Academia, Government & the Media told us that problems within people's relationships were far to complex to be assigning blame. Yeah, right! Too bad these hypocrites don't take the same approach when assigning 100% of the blame to men in Domestic Violence Disputes. No problem assigning blame within people's relationships there, eh? Even when sick little serpents like these are bragging amongst themselves of their *Criminal* DV Acts against men:
http://jezebel.com/gossip/domestic-disturbances/have-you-ever-beat-up-a-boyfriend-cause-uh-we-have-294383.php

Here are some more points to illustrate how language has been used to destroy the institution of marriage by the treasonous asshats in Academia, Government & the Media (the Axis of Evil):

- Why did "No Fault Divorce" get foisted upon society without any massive outcry from the public requesting such a radical change?

- Why did we redefine the physical "Male and Female Sex" as Gender? Up until only a short while ago, gender was used solely to describe the feminine or masculine in languages, as is done in French. Why do we now have "gender sensitivity" towards heterosexuality, gay-relationships, lesbian relationships and trans-gendered relationsips? Could this have been possible without the sleight of hand of redefining "sex" as "gender?"

- Why are long-term heterosexual marriages refered to as "traditional marriages/family values?" Does this not, by default, acknowledge there are different kinds of marriages/families?

- Why do we now use the phrase "life partner", even as a preference over directly saying husband and wife?

- Why is there a push (here in Canada) to have all types of "families" declared to be equal? Obviously a single mother "family" or a homosexual "family" is not equal, because they are not equally equipped to produce children. They are not "equal" except by use of direct government intervention.

- How did it become recently possible (here in Canada) to have a family declared to legally be able to have 3 parents? Yes, 2 married lesbians and one male/father have all three legally been declared parents of the same child... the worry is now directly that this has opened the door to allow for polygamous relationships - sanctioned by the state of course... Does anyone remember the Gay Activists' cry, only 2 or 3 years ago that gay "marriage" would do nothing to alter the "traditional family." All those opposing gay marriage were intolerant bigots.

But language is not only used to destroy by division, sometimes it's used to *protect* one's position. The Marxist institution of *Feminism* is also using language to divide its definition to protect itself from the inevitable onslaught that is coming from my good and angry XY comrades that compromise MGTOW, the MRM, and society in general. Feminists know what they have done, and something is happening which they fear intensely: Scrutiny of the evil lies and social engineering agenda they have been forcing upon us.

So, how do they use language to defend themselves?

Well, they have split up feminism into many different branches. We now have Gender Feminism, Equity Feminism, Marxist feminism, Eco Feminism, Racial/Ethnic Feminism, Don't Shave Armpits Feminism, Obnoxious Loud Mouth Feminism etc etc.

So, now when someone attacks feminism, the XX gender idiots can go: "But, but, I'm not one of those Marxist Feminists! I'm an equity feminist! We're not all the same!"

Yeah right!

And next week I'm travelling to New York City to give a speech to the brothers in Harlem that I'm an "Equity White Supremacist." Do you think that they should accept such retarded nonsense? I think I'd be lucky to get out of there alive.

The fact is that the very word "feminism" implies that men were, as a class, oppressing women as a class - and therefore women needed to be liberated *from men.* This is the very crux of Marxism itself; it needs to polarize society into separate groups and then work the interests of those groups against eachother until there is no more

freedom.

All feminism is based on Marxism. Period.

If an "equity feminist" wants my sympathetic ear, the first thing she has to do is drop the word feminist from anything that describes her and then try to be a normal freakin' human being for a few years so as to prove her worth to me.

Pfft. Equity Nazis. Absurd!

But, rant off about those who maketh Rob's blood boil.

Language is also used to consolodate a whole bunch of things into one word, so that even the smallest portion of a subject gets treated as the most encompassing thing that such a word can imply.

The Societal Traitors that work in the Domestic Violence/Rape Industry are famous for this. They make infractions like shouting or arguing over finances to be construed as domestic violence and define it as such, but then sell the whole works of Domestic Violence as some 240lb asshole who comes home drunk on daily basis only to pin his wee wikkle 110lb wife down to the floor and bust her lips and nose open. The fact is, this is such a small portion of what makes up the "real" numbers these leacherous traitors keep spewing out, that there is no doubt that an immediate fraud investigation should be be launched against these women - they are, after all, cooking the books to steal money from the taxpayers. When one looks deeper at the overall agenda behind it, Treason investigations would not be out of line either. Hell, I've even seen a "study" where one Gender Nitwit from Academia cooked the books by claiming that women who contract STD's are victims of Domestic Violence because of the effects that contracting such diseases had on their psyche. Of course, DV is 100% men's fault. When men get STD's, they go into the basement of the Patriarchy's Club House and stick their penis in the STD machine, and select which affliction they prefer to abuse a woman with. But, of course, the Gender Idiots manipulate the language to imply that Domestic Violence means a women (not men) getting hit physically, and *they wouldn't dream* of losing the all encompassing term "Domestic Violence."

What actually is "violent" about arguing over the visa bill coming back with an $85 charge for the wife's special herbal shampoo, after she spent last weekend bitching at you that the family couldn't afford your weekend case of beer?

Anyway, there are lots of people who have been writing about this very most important aspect of Political Correctness/Cultural Marxism so I won't bore you with my take on it any longer. Except to say that I keep looking for Marxism's Achilles Heel, and I believe that I have found one - albeit a bit complicated of one - but it definitely involves language.

The Thing You Have To Remember About The Will Of The People Is That 10 Years Ago We Were All Crazy For The Macarena

. · 26 August 2008 · Archived copy · Original

Well, the phrase went something like that anyway. I got it from the *Reader's Digest*, a Quotable Quote from Jon Daly, I believe. I couldn't find the issue any more; so sue me, Mr. Daly.

But its true, isn't it? The will of the people is a fickle beast that does not adhere to logic, but rather, to fashion.

These posts I am making (the last one and the next few) are all going to be related, although it may appear that they are completely separated. Marxism *has never* been defeated, and one of the things I keep looking for when I read more and more about Marxism/Cultural Marxism is: What is its Achilles Heel? I think I see one - something we could do *right now* that would be effective, but please bear with me as I need to make a few points first in order for it to make sense.

Now, onto the business of saving the world from itself, sigh.

I have spent some time reading through *The Men's Tribute* http://members.garbersoft.net/spartacus/home.htm which is an excellent site, btw.

There are many pieces, in chronological order, on the reading list of *The Men's Tribute*, including several that were written about the suffragettes & the vote *from the actual time that the arguments were happening in society* (ie. - the late 1800's & early 1900's). Reading these articles & essays are a way to obtain a unique perspective on the situation, and it is likely more accurate than listening to the mindless anally derived hot air that academics, the media & government keep directing at us about women being oppressed because they didn't have the vote.

Now, as for a disclaimer, *I do not know for certain that I am correct.* ***I am theorizing.*** Although, the more I look at the situation, the more confident I am becoming that with some hard digging & research, I could make a pretty strong case for this theory.

It is *essential* to understand the difference between a Republic and a Democracy in order for this theory of mine to make sense. Why did the US Founding Fathers create a Republic? Why did they purposefully omit any mention of the word "Democracy?" They certainly knew what a Democracy was. The US Founding Fathers omitted the word Democracy because a Democracy was not what they intended for at all. They wanted a Republic and that's what they made. They did not make a system with universal democracy. The people are just plain and simple too busy or too stupid to understand the issues in the great depth needed on some of the issues, and therefore adhere to *the fashion* of the day, which can be easily manipulated via propaganda. This, of course, leads to the political leaders scrambling to do what they need to in order to get re-elected, rather than truly serving the best interests of the state/people. What politician worries about the effects of their actions 20 or 30 years from now when they might not even be in power in 6 months if they fail to adhere to the fashion of the day and thus, don't get re-elected?

“Remember, Democracy never lasts long. It soon wastes, exhausts and murders itself! There never was a democracy that ‘did not commit suicide.’” -- Samuel Adams

“...democracies have ever been spectacles of turbulence and contention; have ever been found incompatible with personal security, or the rights of property; and have in general been as short in their lives as they have been violent in their deaths.” -- James Madison

"It had been observed that a pure democracy if it were practicable would be the most perfect government. Experience had proved that no position is more false than this. The ancient democracies in which the people themselves deliberated never possessed one good feature of government. Their very character was tyranny; their figure deformity." -- Alexander Hamilton, June 21, 1788

“Between a balanced republic and a democracy, the difference is like that between order and chaos.” -- John Marshall, Chief Justice of the US Supreme Court, 1801-1835

It is for these reasons that Benjamin Franklin said that they had formed a Republic, *in the hope that it would keep.*

The problem of a Democracy is that it turns Statesmen into Politicians.

It is this very problem of a Democracy adhering to fashion rather than logic & altruistic intentions that Karl Marx noted when he stated:

"Democracy is the Road to Socialism." -- Karl Marx

If one looks back in time, it seems that Socialists/Marxists were very intent on injecting Democracy into the nations of the world.

And, ummm... gee folks, what famous old ladies do we know of that were heavily involved with Socialism in the 1800's & early 1900's? Why, I do believe it was the suffragettes!

Now, "Feminism" organized itself from a bunch of whining, moaning women into an official organized movement in the year **1848** - the same year as the Communist Manifesto was released.

And why would they have done so? To get the vote you say? Because men had the vote and women didn't.

Not so, I say!

Landless white men did not get the vote in the USA until 1856, Black men did not get the vote until 1870, and women in 1920 (in the USA - mid 1890's in New Zealand). In fact, here in Canada, women who owned property could vote up until 1867, when Canada separated from Britain and became a Dominion - which means it should be safe to say that this was because of British law, and therefore all throughout the entire British Empire, which was substantial in the 1800's, it is likely that women owning property all around the world had the same voting rights as men.

Why, oh why then, why in 1848 did Feminism officially organize itself, chock full of Socialist women?

"Anyone who knows anything of history knows that great social changes are impossible without feminine upheaval. Social progress can be measured exactly by the social position of the fair sex, the ugly ones included." -- Karl Marx

Some of the "old articles" I read at *The Men's Tribute* made mention of the Suffragettes first demanding the right to vote for widows and spinsters who owned property, but had no vote. The thought of the day back then was "one property/household, one vote," and they were supported very quickly by a vast majority of men & society as a whole with this idea. *But*, after they acheived that, they quickly turned the whole of society amock with the notion of Universal Suffrage.

Think about it, in about 2 or 3 generations the idea of a having a "Republic" was completely thrown out of society and replaced with a "Universal Democracy," going exactly against what the Founding Fathers had intended *and exactly according to what Marxists wanted.* As Marx alluded to, if you want to change society you have to get the women on board first, as they control the culture & the morals, and the men will follow. Even if they were the last to actually get the vote, is it possible that they were the Agent Provacateur which caused the debate/conflict that got the whole of society to radically alter itself and oppose people as wise as Benjamin Franklin?

Isn't this about the same thing as has happened with the institution of marriage in our modern day?

Again, this is pure theory on my part about the hidden purpose of the suffragette movement, and I will have to keep my eyes and ears open for more clues & facts to prove my case.

Out of all of this, the one point I would like make clear, the only one that matters for the ultimate overall point I will be trying to make in the next few posts, is that the reason Marxists wanted us to have Democracies is because a Democracy can be easily manipulated to work against the people.

“You can never have a revolution in order to establish a democracy. You must have a democracy in order to have a revolution.” -- G.K. Chesterton

Read more about Republics vs. Democracy here:

http://no-maam.blogspot.com/2007/04/republic-versus-democracy.html

Reviewing an Old Article

. · 26 August 2008 · Archived copy · Original

Perhaps I have given the wrong impression with my last post. It is not so much that I "want to quit," but more that I am very worried that for some issues, we are behaving *exactly* as "they" would expect us to. There is virtually no doubt that we are dealing with Marxist techniques of how to manipulate mass populations, and upon studying such techniques from the past, it becomes evident that Marxists *never* walk in a straight line. They always zig zag to get to their goal. They push to the left to cause the debate & the change, then they allow the backlash to the right to consolodate their gains.

So, for example, take Marriage/No Fault Divorce. They created No Fault Divorce 35 years ago or so. No Fault Divorce/The Decline of Marriage is one of *the* largest underlying factors of our societal ills. I don't think I need to go into them all, as most of you already understand them. But the point I would like make is that this was a radical push to the left. VERY RADICAL! Never heard of before! No Fault Divorce Laws have caused an enormous amount of *other* laws, it has created entirely new organizations, and it has created entirely new multi-billion dollar industries.

No Fault Divorce should go. Follow the time line from the advent of No Fault Divorce and let the pieces fall into place. This is Marxism at work - create the conflict and have a predetermined outcome. It does not become visible unless one has the benefit of 35 years of hindsight. *No Fault Divorce* has, over its time frame, become *exactly* the same as "Man Fault Divorce" before No Fault Divorce existed. And it was no accident. They wanted to split apart the sexes.

But it becomes *so outrageous* that "they" know there will be a backlash. They are not dummies. And don't forget, *their whole game is to create a conflict with a predetermined outcome - so they can offer the "proper" solution.* That it was women who spearheaded all of this claptrap with feminism was done more because it is obvious to everyone from Aristotle to Marx that women control the culture - so they must always be the spearhead into changing society, and the rest will follow. But these people are not stupid either. They know about people's psychology, women may be able to push unreasonably, but men *will* push back - eventually.

Men pushing back will be "the movement to the right." It will consolodate the gains they made with No Fault Divorce and also open the can of worms for their *other* stated goals: taking children from women and turning them over to the state. Shared parenting will reinforce the public's notion that there is nothing wrong with divorce and *it will make it as firm as if it were in concrete that the State has more rights and power over people's children than the actual parents to whom such children belong!* 50 or 60 years ago, people would have chased the state with pitchforks and shotguns if it were so arrogant to assume such a thing! Domestic Violence laws and shelters for men will also reinforce the "state's right" to invade our homes and control our personal lives. (Does anyone even remember Assault and Battery laws anymore?)

At any rate, I have much to say on this subject, including something that would work but is very difficult for me to convey to others properly. So, I will take my time and not try to do it all in one post. In the meantime, however, I am going to put up an old post for review because this is exactly what I wish to discuss... but with a twist.

****

First of all, let's find out what Marxism is all about. Phil Worts has an excellent article titled Communist (Community) Oriented Policing describing the basic philospohies behind Marxism that everyone should read:

http://www.newswithviews.com/community_policing/community_policing.htm

It is absolutely essential for one to acknowledge the following in regard to Marxism/Cultural Marxism:

1). Karl Marx was heavily influenced by the philosophies of George W.F. Hegel to whom we can attribute the following maxim: "The Truth is Relative." Therefore, Hegelian philosophy will argue the possibility that 2+2 = 4 can also mean 2+2 = 3, or 9... There are no absolute truths. This was a mind blowing concept at the time, for people back then lived in a world where God DOES exist, and there was no questioning the black and whiteness of that within society. Hegel changed that.

Also of supreme importance is to acknowledge Karl Marx's statement: "The philosophers have only interpreted the world in different ways. The point, however, is to change it."

That one statement of Marx should always be kept in mind. Not only did he have in mind some fantasy about the kind of man that would emerge from from his "Utopia" but he directly states that his uses of the philosophies of the day are specifically designed to enable the changes which allow Utopia to come about. He is contemplating how to use "The Truth is Relative" to alter society for his own purposes. This is why he is considered a revolutionary. His philosophies are geared towards destroying society, allowing its ashes to fertilize the Utopian soil upon which the flower of his new form of mankind will flourish.

Marxist philosophies include much study on how to mass manipulate society.

2). After the Russian Revolution, a leading Marxist philosopher, Antonio Gramsci visited Lenin's Soviet Union to witness for himself how Marxist Utopia was progressing. Lenin had seized control of Russia via violence and then foisted Marxism upon the Russian people by use of force, and waited for Utopia to arrive. It didn't. So Gramsci set about to tackle the problem of why the people did not embrace Marxism, but rather only paid obligatory lip service to it. Gramsci concluded that Marx had not gone far enough by only identifying the economic system as what holds society together - so he expanded it to include society's culture and he identified the various pillars which created societal cohesiveness by way of culture. Gramsci essentially said that if one could destroy cultural pillars like religion, the family, nationalism etc., society would self-destruct and then Marxist Utopia would naturally occur without the use of violent revolution. He concluded that if a "long march through the culture" could occur, ultimately destroying his identified pillars of society, then society would self-destruct and there would be massive chaos out of which the population would request the government to impose totallitarian control in order to "stop the madness." It is important to note that the goal is to create conflict, not to stop it.

3). There once were two schools in the world dedicated to studying Marxist theories. One was in Russia and one was in Frankfurt, Germany. Thus the name "The Frankfurt School." The Frankfurt School, to put it simply, dedicated itself to tasks such as identifying what factors are necessary to form human cohesiveness at the level above the family unit... the community. This was because the family was identified by Gramsci as a "societal pillar" which needed to be destroyed. Those of the Frankfurt School also put effort into the study of "mass psychology" with the specific intention of how to destroy the societal "cultural pillars" which had been identified by Gramsci - they wanted to find out how to destroy such pillars without the use of violence which Lenin had displayed, and set about to study various techniques which would encourage the populations to willfully throw aside cultural values - without the use of force. Therefore, they designed the notion of Critical Theory. http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Critical_theory_(Frankfurt_School) The Frankfurt School disbanded when Hitler took control of Germany and its academics fled the country and integrated themselves into various areas of the Western World.

4). Critical Theory is essential to understand. The idea behind Critical Theory is to use criticism (based on "the

Truth is Relative") to destroy by continual division. A necessary tool for Critical Theorists is the Agent Provocateur, for without someone starting the argument, Critical Theory never begins. A conflict must be started for the plan of Critical Theory to be implemented. The second tool Critical Theorists use is the natural human behaviour of fearing difference from the crowd. An example of this is the use of Political Correctness to slowly encourage mass acceptance of an idea. Human alienation is a powerful threat and therefore there is a strong urge to compromise your own principles in order to maintain social cohesion with the larger group.

AND... that last tool Critical Theorists employ is a specific tool of brainwashing which can trace its origins to torture - they just took the physical torture out, but left the mental aspect in. This is the 3-step brainwashing technique of how to change personal values:
1 - UNFREEZING from the present level of acceptence,
2 - MOVING the subject to the next level,
3 - FREEZING the subject at the new level until proper acceptance occurs.
(Repeat until the desired destruction occurs.)

So, could you destroy something absolute, like mathematics with such techniques? Sure you could. Imagine that you have proven to yourself that 1+1=2 by physically using oranges to prove the absoluteness of the statement.

It's all pretty simple, 1 orange plus another orange equals two oranges and I know it's true because I can physically prove it. Life is good, the Canada Tax & Revenue Agency is continually pleased with the accuracy which Mr. Rob Fedders files his taxes based on the "orange calculator." There is no need to change this system, because it works.

Along comes Delilah, an Agent Provocateur, and she notices my system - to which she points out that oranges a made up of segments, in fact there are 10 orange segments which make up an orange. "Fair enough," I say, "there are oranges and there are orange segments which make up 1/10 of an orange. The math still works."

"The next time I see Delilah, she argues with me that it is discriminatory for me to consider an orange segment to be only 1/10th the value of an orange. She argues that without the segments, the orange wouldn't exist, therefore each segment is worth FAR more than just 1/10th of an orange. The "truth is relative," remember? She tells me that it is discriminatory to consider the "traditional orange" to be more valuable than orange segments and she demands that I acknowledge that all parts of oranges are important, whether that be "traditional oranges" or orange segments. By allowing her to define an orange as a "traditional orange," I have already lost half the battle because by such a definition one has to acknowledge that there are types of oranges other than the traditional.

As time goes on, Delilah's friends start to grumble, anyone who does math using traditional oranges is a hate-filled, right-wing Orangaphobe. Rob doesn't respect all types of oranges equally and believes that traditional oranges are superior to other types of oranges... what a BIGOT!

The next time Delilah stops by, she hardly even talks to me. She is marching with her friends, all carrying signs reading: "Respect ALL kinds of oranges" and "Stop Bigots from Determining for Me What an Orange is." Finally the last moronic Delilah follower walks by with a sign saying "All Oranges are Equal - Equality for Orange Segments."

I think you can see where this simplified example is going. Eventually, if they can get "unequal" parts of a traditional orange to be defined as equal... well, effectively, math has been destroyed because now math can be 1+1=2 or 1+1=11, or 15, or 20... Math is useless, so let's just do away with it!

Think this is a joke? Just another "Red Herring?" Let's put it all together.

"The philosophers have only interpreted the world in different ways. The point, however, is to change it." -- Karl Marx

Antonio Gramsci theorized how communism would naturally take place if the identified cultural pillars of society were deconstructed by "a long march through culture."

Critical Theorists devised specific schemes to enable "a long march through culture" by use of "Critical Theory."

"We shall destroy you from within!" -- Nikita Kruschev, during the Kitchen Debate.

Classic Hegelian-Marxist Theory is illustrated by this statement: "Our culture, including all that we are taught in schools and universities, is so infused with patriarchal thinking that it must be torn up root and branch if genuine change is to occur. Everything must go - even the allegedly universal disciplines of logic, mathematics and science, and the intellectual values of objectivity, clarity and precision on which the former depend." -- Daphne Patai and Noretta Koertge, "Professing Feminism: Cautionary Tales from the Strange World of Women's Studies" (New York Basic Books, 1994) p.116 (***Note: Patai & Koertge write from a critical perspective of the aforementioned logic and use it in the context of an example. See Daphne Patai's website here: http://www.daphnepatai.com/ And read about her work here: http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Daphne_Patai)

Feminists and Gay Rights Activists have collaberated on a joint attack against marriage & the family, which Antonio Gramsci & the Frankfurt School had identified as a "cultural pillar" which must be destroyed. Take note of the theme which permeates from the following quotes from feminist & gay rights activists and see if you can spot the Marxist revolutionary theme:

"The nuclear family must be destroyed, and people must find better ways of living together. ...Whatever its ultimate meaning, the break-up of families now is an objectively revolutionary process. ...Families have supported oppression by separating people into small, isolated units, unable to join together to fight for common interests." -- Linda Gordon, Function of the Family, WOMEN: A Journal of Liberation, Fall, 1969

"Marriage has existed for the benefit of men; and has been a legally sanctioned method of control over women... We must work to destroy it. The end of the institution of marriage is a necessary condition for the liberation of women. Therefore it is important for us to encourage women to leave their husbands and not to live individually with men." -- The Declaration of Feminism, November 1971

"A middle ground might be to fight for same sex marriage and its benefits, and then, once granted, redefine the institution completely, to demand the right to marry not as a way of adhering to society's moral codes but rather to debunk a myth and radically alter an archaic institution." -- Michelangelo Signorile, "Bridal Wave," OUT Magazine, December/January 1994, p.161

"It [Gay Marriage] is also a chance to wholly transform the definition of family in American culture. It is the final tool with which to dismantle all sodomy statutes, get education about homosexuality and AIDS into public schools, and, in short, usher in a sea of change in how society views and treats us." -- Michelangelo Signorile, "I do, I do, I do, I do, I do," OUT Magazine, May 1996, p.30

Read those quotes carefully and then sit back and ponder for yourself the following:

- Why did "No Fault Divorce" get foisted upon society without any massive outcry from the public requesting such a radical change?

- Why did we redefine the physical "Male and Female Sex" as Gender? Up until only a short while ago, gender was used solely to describe the feminine or masculine in languages, as is done in French. Why do we now have "gender sensitivity" towards heterosexuality, gay-relationships, lesbian relationships and trans-gendered relationsips? Could this have been possible without the sleight of hand of redefining "sex" as "gender?"

- Why are long-term heterosexual marriages refered to as "traditional marriages/family values?" Does this not, by default, acknowledge there are different kinds of marriages/families?

- Why do we now use the phrase "life partner", even as a preference over directly saying husband and wife?

- Why is there a push (here in Canada) to have all types of "families" declared to be equal? Obviously a single mother "family" or a homosexual "family" is not equal, because they are not equally equipped to produce children. They are not "equal" except by use of direct government intervention.

- How did it become recently possible (here in Canada) to have a family declared to legally be able to have 3 parents? Yes, 2 married lesbians and one male/father have all three legally been declared parents of the same child... the worry is now directly that this has opened the door to allow for polygamous relationships - sanctioned by the state of course... Does anyone remember the Gay Activists' cry, only 2 or 3 years ago that gay "marriage" would do nothing to alter the "traditional family." All those opposing gay marriage were intolerant bigots.

(Also, see my piece: "A New Kind of Bigotry" http://no-maam.blogspot.com/2007/01/new-kind-of-bigotry.html)

These examples are all indicitave of a Cultural Marxist plan to use Critical Theory to destroy marriage, which Antonio Gramsci had identified as something which needed to be destroyed. How many other areas of Western Life have been attacked by such a ploy?

Also, take notice something which is pure genius on behalf of the Cultural Marxists. They have chosen their Agent Provocateurs to argue against Nature! What a stroke of genius to have picked arguments which can never be won. There will always be these arguments that women are not equal to men, or that Gay Marriage's are not equal - because they cannot be equal by natural design! Imagine rallying people together to "fight the ocean's tide" or to "stop the moon," you will have them at your service for eternity. The night will never be equal to the day, no matter how many street lamps you erect. But the fight will always continue, because you will always be able to point out that the battle still hasn't been won... and that's the point.

Marxism needs conflict for its agenda. 100 years ago, people didn't run to the government to tell them what their family life was all about. And this is the real danger and the real goal of Cultural Marxism and Critical Theory. It encourages people to take something which the government didn't previously control, and then cause as much chaos and confusion in it as possible... so that people run to the government to "settle their differences" and thereby grant to the state the "power of definition/settlement" over something which it previously did not have power over.

Even those who are for "traditional families" are lost in this quagmire. Once upon a time, no-one questioned the word "family." There was only one kind of "family." Now, without society requesting that gov't be an arbiter, those same people are forced to petition the government to preserve their values... and automatically they default to the government the power to decide (totalitarianism), over something which the gov't never had the original power to decide over, and over which was not willfully given up by the people. The trick is not in who gets the biggest piece of the pie, but rather that all sides are now running to government to request that they get their piece. The people have willingly allowed the government to subvert their freedom and decide for them - totalitarianism is completed!

No, it is not a "red herring" to say that feminism IS Communism. It is very accurate. The red herring is all the other

arguments which distract us from what is happening.

TAKE BACK THE LOGIC!

Feminists Are Cat Lovers

. · 26 August 2008 · Archived copy · Original

Yes, Marxists & Feminists (same thing) are cat lovers. And there's nothing wrong with that. In fact it is somewhat endearing, isn't it? But that they are cat lovers is for certain. I know it's true because they are determined to create as many Crazy Cat Ladies as they possibly can to care for the furry little critters.

.

Well, either that or they are major shareholders in the company that makes these and are trying to make the stock soar:

.

.

Lol! I might buy some shares myself - I think this is a growth industry! Call your broker.

.

It makes me wonder though... how come there is no phrase like "Deranged Dog Man?" Hmmm? Oh, that's right, we patriarchally oppressed the crap out of such phrases.

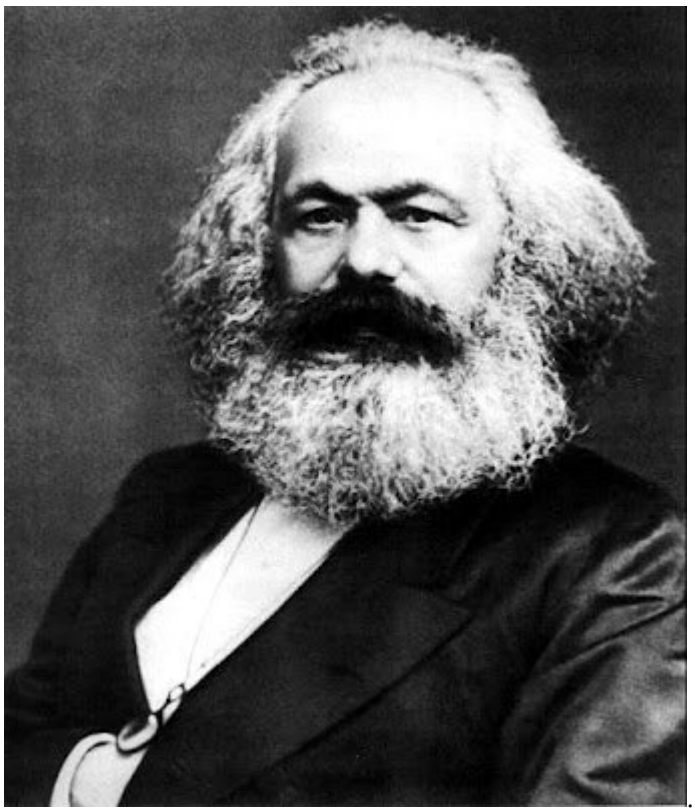
.

At any rate, that Marxo-feminists have collaberated with PETA to make sure that no cat will ever go hungry will be easily demonstrated to you via this very large quote list, courtesy of No Ma'am.

.

"What is the present family based on? On capitalism, the acquisition of private property... The bourgeois sees in his wife nothing but production." -- Karl Marx, *The Communist Manifesto,* 1848
http://www.anu.edu.au/polsci/marx/classics/manifesto.html

.

 .

Lol! Isn't it just priceless that feminism has a *Patriarchal Father* in Karl Marx? Oh, the irony, my dear fembots.

.

Karl Marx - Reincarnated

.

"The overthrow of mother was the world historical defeat of the female sex. The man took control in the home also; the woman was degraded and reduced to servitude; she became the slave of his lust and a mere instrument for the production of children." -- Frederick Engels, *The Origins of the Family, Private Property and the State*

.

"The first class opposition that appears in history coincides with the development of the antagonism between man and woman in monogamous marriage, and the first class oppression coincides with that of the

female sex by the male." -- Frederick Engels, *The Origins of the Family, Private Property and the State*, (New York, International Publishers, 1942), p.58

.

"The first condition of the liberation of the wife is to bring the whole female sex back into public industry, and this in turn demands the abolition of the monogamous family as the economic unit of society." [Engels, p.67]

.

"Women are the creatures of an organized tyranny of men, as the workers are the creatures of an organized tyranny of idlers." -- Eleanor Marx, 1886 (Eleanor was Karl Marx's youngest daughter)

.

"Destroy the family and you destroy society." -- V.I. Lenin

.

"So in 1918, Lenin introduced a new marriage code that outlawed church ceremonies. Lenin opened *state-run nurseries*, dining halls, laundries and sewing centers. *Abortion was legalized* in 1920, and *divorce was simplified.* -- In a few short years, most of the functions of the family had been expropriated by the state. By 1921, Lenin could brag that "in Soviet Russia, no trace is left of any inequality between men and women under law." -- Carey Roberts

.

"We shall destroy you from within!" -- Nikita Kruschev, during the Kitchen Debate, 1959

.

"Feminism, Socialism, and Communism are one in the same, and Socialist/Communist government is the goal of feminism." -- Catharine A. MacKinnon, *Toward a Feminist Theory of the State* (First Harvard University Press, 1989), p.10

.

"A world where men and women would be equal is easy to visualize, for that precisely is what the Soviet Revolution promised." -- Simone de Beauvoir, *The Second Sex* (New York, Random House, 1952), p.806

.

"Differences [between men and women], including the products of social inequality, *make unequal treatment not unequal at all."* -- Catharine MacKinnon, "Reflections on Sex Equality Under Lay," Yale Law Journal, 1991

.

.

"[W]omen, like men, should not have to bear children.... The destruction of the biological family, never envisioned by Freud, will allow the emergence of new women and men, different from any people who have previously existed." -- Alison Jagger - Political Philosophies of Women's Liberation: Feminism and Philosophy

(Totowa, NJ: Littlefield, Adams & Co. 1977)

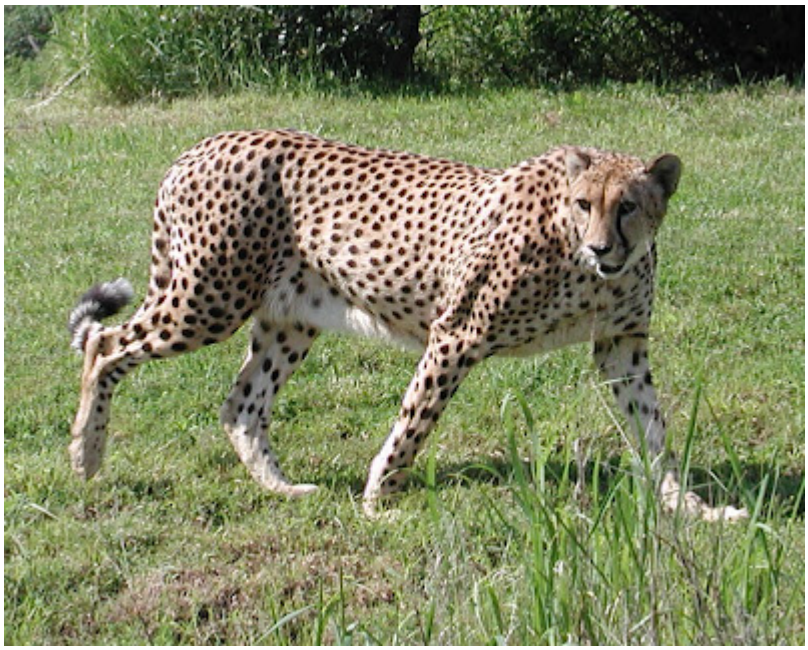
.

"No woman should be authorized to stay at home and raise her children. Society should be totally different. *Women should not have that choice,* precisely because if there is such a choice, too many women will make that one." -- Interview with Simone de Beauvoir, "Sex, Society, and the Female Dilemma" Saturday Review, June 14, 1975, p.18

.

"The married woman knows that love is, at its best, an inadequate reward for her unnecessary and bizarre heritage of oppression." -- Beverly Jones and Judith Brown, Toward a Female Liberation Movement (Gainesville, Fl.: June 1968), p. 23.

.



.

"In order to raise children with equality, we must take them away from families and communally raise them" -- Dr. Mary Jo Bane, feminist and assistant professor of education at Wellesley College and associate director of the school's Center for Research on Woman

.

"The care of children ..is infinitely better left to the best trained practitioners of both sexes who have chosen it as a vocation...[This] *would further undermine family structure* while contributing to the freedom of women." -- Kate Millet, *Sexual Politics,* 178-179

.

"[I]f even 10 percent of American women remain full-time homemakers, this will reinforce traditional views of what women ought to do and encourage other women to become full-time homemakers at least while their children are young.... *This means that no matter how any individual feminist might feel about child care and housework,* the movement as a whole [has] reasons to discourage full-time homemaking." -- Jane J. Mansbridge, *Why We Lost the ERA,* p.100

.

"How will the family unit be destroyed? ... the demand alone will throw the whole ideology of the family into question, so that women can begin establishing a community of work with each other and we can fight collectively. Women will feel freer to leave their husbands and become economically independent, either through a job or *welfare*." -- From Female Liberation by Roxanne Dunbar

.

"The nuclear family must be destroyed, and people must find better ways of living together. ... Whatever its ultimate meaning, *the break-up of families now is an objectively revolutionary process.* ... "Families have supported oppression by separating people into small, isolated units, unable to join together to fight for common interests." -- Functions of the Family, Linda Gordon, WOMEN: A Journal of Liberation, Fall, 1969

.

"Feminists have long criticized marriage as a place of oppression, danger, and drudgery for women." From the article, *Is Marriage the Answer?* by Barbara Findlen, *Ms Magazine,* May-June, 1995

.

"[The nuclear family is] a cornerstone of woman's oppression: it enforces women's dependence on men, *it enforces heterosexuality* and it imposes the prevailing masculine and feminine character structures on the next generation." -- Alison Jagger, *Feminist Politics and Human Nature*

.

On Gay Marriage: **"A middle ground might be to fight for same sex marriage and its benefits, and then, once granted, *redefine the institution completely,* to demand the right to marry not as a way of adhering to**

society's moral codes but rather to debunk a myth and *radically alter an archaic institution."* -- Michelangelo Signorile, "Bridal Wave," OUT Magazine, December/January 1994, p.161

.

On Gay Marriage: **"It [gay marriage] is also a chance to *wholly transform the definition of family* in American culture. It is the final tool with which to dismantle all sodomy statutes, get education about homosexuality and AIDS into public schools, and, in short, usher in a sea of change in how society views and treats us."** -- Michelangelo Signorile, "I do, I do, I do, I do, I do," OUT Magazine, May 1996, p.30

.

(Also see "A New Kind of Bigotry")

.

"*N* *O* *W* Action Alert -- October 20, 1999 -- Fathers' Rights Bill Advances in the House. This Action alert explains that the Father's Rights legislation before Congress is "bad for women and children" because it will "promote marriage" and "disseminat[e] information about the advantages of marriage", "promote successful parenting" and "disseminat[e] information about good parenting practices", and "help fathers and their families ... leave ... welfare". A plain reading of the Action Alert shows that when read in full context NOW will do ANYTHING to destroy marriages, families, and even children. -- nodnc.com

Read the Action Alert Here http://www.now.org/issues/right/alerts/10-20-99.html

.

.

"We can't destroy the inequities between men and women until we destroy marriage." -- Robin Morgan (ed), *Sisterhood is Powerful,* 1970, p.537

.

"I feel that 'man-hating' is an honorable and viable political act, that the oppressed have a right to class-hatred against the class that is oppressing them." -- Robin Morgan

.

"[F]eminists who ceaselessly inveigh against their own oppression by men (often hardly specifying its exact nature) would ignore how they themselves have oppressed ? feminine women. It oppresses a woman who could delight in domesticity to tell her that her domesticity makes her a parasitic inferior to men. It

oppresses a woman who yearns to stay home with her children to tell her she is worthy only insofar as she achieves in the workplace." -- F. Carolyn Graglia, **A Brief Against Feminism,** p.349

.

.

"The belief that married-couple families are superior is probably the most pervasive prejudice in the Western world." -- Judith Stacey

.

"Since marriage constitutes slavery for women, it is clear that the women's movement must concentrate on attacking this institution. Freedom for women cannot be won without the abolition of marriage" -- Sheila Cronan

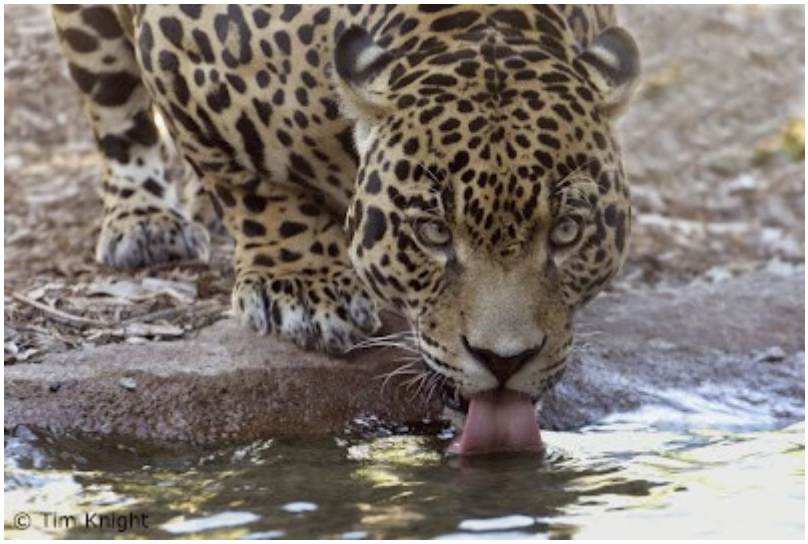
.

"The little nuclear family is a paradigm that just doesn't work" -- Toni Morrison

.

"[M]ost mother-women give up whatever ghost of a unique and human self they may have when they 'marry' and raise children." -- Phyllis Chesler, *Women and Madness,* p.294
also on Chesler http://www.renewamerica.us/columns/roberts/060307

.



.

"Gramsci hated marriage and the family, the very founding blocks of a civilized society. To him, marriage

was a plot, a conspiracy... to perpetuate an evil system that oppressed women and children. It was a dangerous institution, characterized by violence and exploitation, the forerunner of fascism and tyranny. Patriarchy served as the main target of the cultural Marxists. ***They strove to feminize the family with legions of single and homosexual mothers and fathers who would serve to weaken the structure of civilized society.*** -- Borst, William, Ph. D. American History. *A Nation of Frogs,* The Midnszenty Report Vol. XLV-No.1, January 2003, pg 2. (Online version at http://www.mindszenty.org/report/2003/mr_0103.pdf) Cited in the Amicus brief for Massachusetts advisory opinion on Gay Marriage, opposing gay marriage. http://bellsouthpwp.net/w/o/woodb01/011004_Mass_Brief.htm

.

"Being a housewife is an illegitimate profession... The choice to serve and be protected and plan towards being a family-maker is a choice that shouldn't be. The heart of radical feminism is to change that" -- Vivian Gornick, feminist author, University of Illinois, "The Daily Illini," April 25, 1981

.

"The institution of marriage is the chief vehicle for the perpetuation of the oppression of women; it is through the role of wife that the subjugation of women is maintained. In a very real way the role of wife has been the genesis of women's rebellion throughout history." -- Marlene Dixon, "Why Women's Liberation? Racism and Male Supremacy"

.

.

"[C]ontemporary patriarchies...[wives'] chattel status continues in their loss of name, their obligation to adopt the husband's domicile, and the general legal assumption that marriage involves an exchange of the female's domestic service and [sexual] consortium in return for financial support." -- Kate Millett, Sexual Politics (New York: Avon Books, 1969). pp. 34-35.

.

"Millett argued that the impetus of the sexual revolution had the potential to collapse antiquated patriarchal systems, including the institution of marriage, thereby creating "a world we can bear out of the desert we inhabit."7 -- Patrick F. Fagan, Robert E. Rector, and Lauren R. Noyes, Why Congress Should Ignore Radical Feminist Opposition to Marriage http://www.heritage.org/Research/Features/Marriage/bg1662.cfm

.

"In Millett's view, a dismantled patriarchy--resulting from the destruction of traditional marriage--would generate the downfall of the nuclear family, a goal she called "revolutionary or utopian."8 -- Patrick F. Fagan, Robert E. Rector, and Lauren R. Noyes, *Why Congress Should Ignore Radical Feminist Opposition to Marriage http://www.heritage.org/Research/Features/Marriage/bg1662.cfm*

.

"Millett argued that the complete destruction of marriage and the natural family is necessary to produce an ideal society."11 -- Patrick F. Fagan, Robert E. Rector, and Lauren R. Noyes, Why Congress Should Ignore

Radical Feminist Opposition to Marriage http://www.heritage.org/Research/Features/Marriage/bg1662.cfm

.

.

"The institution [of marriage] consistently proves itself unsatisfactory--even rotten.... The family is...directly connected to--is even the cause of--the ills of the larger society." -- Shulamith Firestone, The Dialectic of Sex: The Case for Feminist Revolution (New York: Morrow, 1970), p. 254.

.

"It became increasingly clear to us that the institution of marriage `protects' women in the same way that the institution of slavery was said to `protect' blacks--that is, that the word `protection' in this case is simply a euphemism for oppression," -- Sheila Cronan, "Marriage," in Koedt, Levine, and Rapone, eds., Radical Feminism, p. 214.

.

"marriage is a form of slavery." -- Sheila Cronan, "Marriage," in Koedt, Levine, and Rapone, eds., Radical Feminism, p. 216.

.

"Since marriage constitutes slavery for women, it is clear that the Women's Movement must concentrate on attacking this institution. Freedom for women cannot be won without the abolition of marriage." -- Sheila Cronan, "Marriage," in Koedt, Levine, and Rapone, eds., Radical Feminism, p. 219.

.

.

"If women are to effect a significant amelioration in their condition it seems obvious that they must refuse to marry." -- Germaine Greer, The Female Eunuch (New York: McGraw-Hill, 1971), p. 317.

.

"The plight of mothers is more desperate than that of other women, and the more numerous the children the more hopeless the situation seems to be.... Most women...would shrink at the notion of leaving husband and children, but this is precisely the case in which brutally clear rethinking must be undertaken." -- Germaine Greer, The Female Eunuch (New York: McGraw-Hill, 1971), p. 320.

.

[Greer called for the establishment of] "rambling organic structure[s]" [that would] "have the advantage of being an unbreakable home in that it did not rest on the frail shoulders of two bewildered individuals trying to apply a contradictory blueprint." -- Germaine Greer, The Female Eunuch (New York: McGraw-Hill, 1971), p. 233. (Full quote taken from -- Patrick F. Fagan, Robert E. Rector, and Lauren R. Noyes, Why Congress Should Ignore Radical Feminist Opposition to Marriage http://www.heritage.org/Research/Features/Marriage/bg1662.cfm)

.

.

“Overthrowing capitalism is too small for us. We must overthrow the whole... patriarchy.” -- Gloria Steinem

.

"Marriage has existed for the benefit of men; and has been a legally sanctioned method of control over women... We must work to destroy it. The end of the institution of marriage is a necessary condition for the liberation of women. Therefore it is important for us to encourage women to leave their husbands and not to live individually with men" -- Nancy Lehmann and Helen Sullinger, Declaration of Feminism, 1971

.

"...No woman should have to deny herself any opportunities because of her special responsibilities to her children. ... Families will be finally destroyed only when a revolutionary social and economic organization permits people's needs for love and security to be met in ways that do not impose divisions of labor, or any external roles, at all." -- Functions of the Family, Linda Gordon, WOMEN: A Journal of Liberation, Fall, 1969

.

"It takes a village." -- Hillary Clinton

.

Andrea Dworkin Reincarnated

.

"Families make possible the super-exploitation of women by training them to look upon their work outside the home as peripheral to their 'true' role. -- Andrea Dworkin

.

"I want to see a man beaten to a bloody pulp with a high-heel shoved in his mouth, like an apple in the mouth of a pig." -- Andrea Dworkin

.

"To call a man an animal is to flatter him; he's a machine, a walking dildo." -- Valerie Solanas http://gos.sbc.edu/s/solanas.html and http://www.theabsolute.net/misogyny/chance.html

.

"All sex, even consensual sex between a married couple, is an act of violence perpetrated against a woman." -- Catherine Mackinnon

.

"My feelings about men are the result of my experience. I have little sympathy for them. Like a Jew just released from Dachau, I watch the handsome young Nazi soldier fall writhing to the ground with a bullet in his stomach and I look briefly and walk on. I don't even need to shrug. I simply don't care. What he was, as a person, I mean, what his shames and yearnings were, simply don't matter." -- Marilyn French; The Woman's Room

.

.

"What is the present family based on? On capitalism, the acquisition of private property... The bourgeois sees in his wife nothing but production." -- Karl Marx, *The Communist Manifesto,* 1848

.

"The overthrow of mother was the world historical defeat of the female sex. The man took control in the home also; the woman was degraded and reduced to servitude; she became the slave of his lust and a mere instrument for the production of children." -- Frederick Engels, *The Origins of the Family, Private Property and the State,* 1884

.

"The first class opposition that appears in history coincides with the development of the antagonism between man and woman in monogamous marriage, and the first class oppression coincides with that of the female sex by the male." -- Frederick Engels, *The Origins of the Family, Private Property and the State,* (New York, International Publishers,1942) p.58]

.

"Women are the creatures of an organized tyranny of men, as the workers are the creatures of an organized tyranny of idlers." -- Eleanor Marx, 1886

.

"DESTROY THE FAMILY AND YOU DESTROY SOCIETY" -- V.I. Lenin

.

"WE SHALL DESTROY YOU FROM WITHIN!" -- Nikita Kruschev, during the Kitchen Debate, 1959

.

.

GET UP OFF YOUR KNEES! -- Rob Fedders, No Ma'am Blog, 2006-2009...

.

People, the evidence sits right in front of you. Feminism is 100% Marxist and it is being used against us, the people, in a direct effort to cause chaos and destruction and its subversive goal is to collapse the State and remove *your* freedoms!

.

Do you know what's an easier way to say the same thing?

.

Just refer to it as ***HIGH TREASON!***

.

Yes, it is!

.

Everytime that a politician takes ***your tax dollars*** and funnels it into a program that supports the feminist agenda -- whose subversive agenda is to cause a collapse of the State, a la Marxism -- an act of ***HIGH TREASON*** is being committed! That ***your tax dollars*** are used to fund things like Women's Studies (Marxist Indoctrination) within Academia, is nothing short of using ***your tax dollars*** to support an ***enemy of the State.***

.

Treason is the *only* crime deemed to be more serious than First Degree Murder.

.

.

MILLIONS have died to give us freedom, and to keep us free. We owe them better than this.

.

It's easier to keep and maintain freedom than it is to give it away and then try to re-install it!

.

Related:

Women's Studies 101a - Winter Semester

The Encyclopedia Marxo-feminist

****

.

RAGE AGAINST THE MACHINE!

.

.

****

.

Useful Idiot Quote of the Day:

.

Huggles Ben said...

Hmm, after reading around this beastly blog I can honestly say I am sickened. Your not as crass as some of the other misogynists but you are just as stupid as them. I'm ashamed to have even read your hatred.

.

.

http://www.sydneyline.com/Language%20Wars.htm

.

*"**Political correctness** works so well because it satirises terminology long used by the left itself. A recent analysis, Political Correctness and the Theoretical Struggle by Frank Ellis of the University of Leeds, shows that rather than being a stuffy but essentially harmless effort to avoid offending people, the concept has long been deeply embedded within radical culture.*

.

*It originated in the early writings of **Vladimir Lenin** and evolved as a concept in his work up to 1917. The phrase politicheskaya pravil'nost' derived from Lenin's insistence on a rigidly enforced party line on all questions. Lenin argued that only a specifically revolutionary theory would prevent the revolutionary movement from abandoning "the correct path". Before the Russian revolution, to be politically incorrect meant being denounced by Lenin as a "revisionist", "factionalist", "wrecker" and "enemy of the people". After the revolution, to be politically incorrect meant a death warrant. **Joseph Stalin** used the phrase in the 1920s to destroy his rivals Trotsky and Bukharin."*

The Multi-Tasking Pink Proletariat

. · 26 August 2008 · Archived copy · Original

It is interesting to read descriptions of modern day feminism. Many times you will read that feminism has now branched out in other areas of Civil Rights and that they champion the causes of Ethnic Diversity, Gay/Lesbian/Trans-sexual Rights and they combat Racism.

.

It all sounds pretty good, doesn't it? The Pink Proletariat is branching out and finally caring about others instead of their usual screeching of "ME, ME, ME!" We should applaud them… or should we?

.

Maybe we should have a look at the big picture.

The first thing that we *must* acknowledge is that Marxism ***did not*** fail when the Berlin Wall came down and the Soviet Union collapsed. The whole idea of Marxism is to collapse all of mankind's superstructures, *including the State,* to enable Marx's "new kind of man" to walk on Utopia (Heaven on Earth).

.

"While the State exists, there can be no freedom. When there is freedom there will be no State." -- V.I. Lenin

.

Marxism fully intends to collapse the State. *All of the States around the world!* Karl Marx outlines that to collapse the State, you use the *known* economic failure of Socialism to collapse the State.

.

"The meaning of peace is the absence of opposition to Socialism." -- Karl Marx

.

The *real* failure of Marxism was that it engulfed only 1/3 of the world before the state of the Soviet Union collapsed, which was planned all along by Marx!

.

That was a pretty damn good first run, if you ask me!

.

We also make a mistake in calling the Soviet form of government "Communism." This is incorrect. What the Soviet Union had was *pure Socialism.* True Socialism means that the government will control every aspect of your life, from when you wake up until you go to bed, from when you are born until you die. Socialism is complete control of the individual by the State.

.

What Communism means, from the purely Marxist perspective, is ***Globalization!***

.

"[After Communism succeeds] ...then, there will come a peace across the earth." -- Josef Stalin

.

Yes, the word "Globalization" is nothing more than a prettier sounding synonym for "Communism."

.

And, to go on a bit of a quick sidetrack here, isn't it great how we have become fully addicted to propaganda?

Goebbels would be wiping the drool from his chin if he could have had access to the type of propaganda we are subjected to.

.

In World War II, bombers used to drop leaflets. In Vietnam, Saigon Sue was chattering on the radio at American G.I.'s in between playing their favourite songs... but today, *the whole population in the West* runs home after work and automatically does what?

.

Yes, the idiot box comes on the second we walk in the door. It holds us in a hypnotic trance, requiring that the viewer shut off all private thought and conversation and let the propaganda box fill our minds with its message. We now eat dinner in the living room rather than gathering at the dinner table where we can converse while eating... It is a great babysitter for the kids... It does not get turned off until we go to bed, and even then, many of us have *another* propaganda box in the bedroom that we watch until drifting off to sleep, often with the box still on throughout the night, filling our subconscious with still more messages.

.

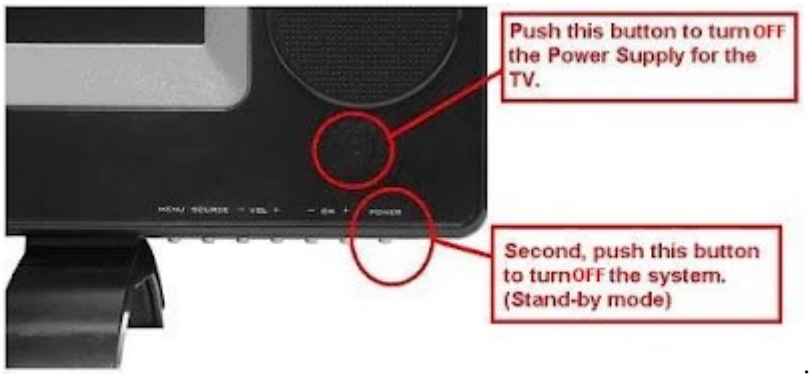
And what messages are we being told?

.

.

...Men are bad... men are rapists... men are violent... men hurt women and children... men are evil... ***the boogey monster beneath your bed is a typical male****... the world is becoming increasingly global (communist)... globalization (communism) is happening... we have to prepare for globalization (communism)... accept globalization (communism)...* ***globalization (COMMUNISM) is here!!!... there is no escaping globalization (COMMUNISM)..***.

HEY ROB! Will you SHUT UP already? I can't watch TV while you are continually yacking at me!



CLICK!

.

Sorry, I got a bit sidetracked by the *real opium of the masses* for a minute there. Now let's get back to the big picture, shall we?

"We can't expect the American People to jump from Capitalism to Communism, but we can assist their elected leaders in giving them small doses of Socialism, *until they awaken one day to find that they have Communism."* -- Nikita Krushchev

.

"Gentlemen, comrades, do not be concerned about all you hear about Glasnost and Perestroika and democracy in the coming years. They are primarily for outward consumption. There will be no significant internal changes in the Soviet Union, other than for cosmetic purposes. *Our purpose is to disarm the Americans and let them fall asleep."* -- Mikhail Gorbachev

.

Now, where was I?

.

Oh yes. The goal of Marxism is to have Marxist ideologies engulf the people of the world, and then when you have them "suspended" in absolute equality, you use Socialism, a known economic failure, to collapse the State.

.

Currently, human society is/was structured like this:

.

Individual --> Family --> Community --> Province/State --> Nation --> Continent --> World

.

The ultimate longterm goal of Marxism is to create a human society that looks like this:

.

Individual --> World

.

The only thing left, aside from the individual, will be a select group of elites at the top who will govern every aspect of the individual's lives across the entire globe. *This* is Utopia, and mankind will be walking upon it in *Communist* bliss.

.

Now, the elites at the top need to set up shop somewhere, so perhaps they might pick a fancy shmancy building like this one, from which to decide how the insignificant peons of the world should live:

.

.

Hey, *I'm just saying...* it *would* be a good place, wouldn't it?

.

Remember now, the failure of Marxism was not the collapse of the Soviet Union - that was a *success!*

.

"All the other large and small nationalities and peoples are destined to perish before long in the revolutionary world storm… these residual fragments of peoples always become fanatical standard-bearers of counter-revolution and remain so until their complete extirpation or loss of their national character… [A general war will] wipe out all these petty hidebound nations, down to their very names. The next world war will result in the disappearance from the face of the earth not only of reactionary classes and dynasties, but also of entire reactionary peoples. And that, too, is a step forward." -- - Friedrich Engels, "The Magyar Struggle," Neue Rheinische Zeitung, January 13, 1849

.

The failure was that Marxism failed to spread across the whole world like a wildfire during/after the First World War, as Marx had predicted it would. This is why brilliant Marxist theorists such Antonio Gramsci and Georg Lukacs set about to tackle the problem of what caused the Marxist malfunction which resulted in only 1/3 of the world taking up the Marxist cause. While Marx had stopped at saying the destruction of economics/Capitalism would cause Marxism to engulf the world, Gramsci and Lukacs theorized that certain other factors, which Karl Marx had failed to identify, had stopped Marxism cold.

.

The following factors were present throughout Western Culture and needed to be destroyed for Marxism to succeed in engulfing the world, so said Gramsci and Lukacs, and later the Frankfurt School: *Christianity, Capitalism, Authority, the Family, Patriarchy, Hierarchy, Morality, Tradition, Sexual Restraint, Loyalty, Patriotism, Nationalism, Heredity, Ethnocentrism, Convention and Conservatism.*
http://www.tysknews.com/Depts/society/cultural_marxism.htm

.

"America is like a healthy body and its resistance is threefold: its patriotism, its morality, and its spiritual life. If we can undermine these three areas, America will collapse from within." -- Josef Stalin

.

Now, if we could just assume that Rob Fedders, in his infinite wisdom, is correct when he says that Feminism *is* Communism.

.

"Feminism, Socialism, and Communism are one in the same, and Socialist/Communist government is the goal of feminism." -- - Catharine A. MacKinnon, Toward a Feminist Theory of the State (First Harvard University Press, 1989), p.10

.

"A world where men and women would be equal is easy to visualize, for that precisely is what the Soviet Revolution promised." -- - Simone de Beauvoir, The Second Sex (New York, Random House, 1952), p.806

.

By such an assumption, it would also be safe to say that "feminism" is nothing more than a false front for a subversive Marxist movement. (***Note to Harpies: I am not saying that women should not have rights, but rather that the evils of Marxism has hidden behind "women's rights" to push through a master plan intent on collapsing our great civilization, all under the rubric of "equality." Sigh, keep reading.)

.

So, if this is true, then does it not make sense for "modern day" feminists to say that they also stand for Gay/Lesbian/Bisexual/Trans-sexual rights as well as stating that they fight racism? They are also determined to end "white privilege."

.

This sounds like a divergence from "women's equality," which in the sense of that aspect it certainly is, but note that they still have their eye on the ultimate goal: Globalization/Communism.

.

Feminism was never about "women's rights," it was always about Communism, and it still is. Just like, despite what Lenin told the people, the Russian Revolution was not about freeing the people from Tsarist Tyranny.

.

"Psychologically, this talk of feeding the starving is nothing but an expression of the saccharine-sweet sentimentality so characteristic of our intelligentsia." -- V. I. Lenin, "Robert Conquest," *The Harvest of Sorrow,* (London: Arrow Books, 1988), p.234

.

The reason for Gay rights support is obvious, I believe. Gay rights is being used to further undermine the family by Critical Theory - to further divide it, and then redefine the smaller "divisions" until there is nothing left of the family which makes any sense whatsoever.

.

Lol! Feminism has pretty much run its path of destruction through the family. It is hard for me to imagine what else feminism could possibly do to destroy the family anymore than it already has. There are few loose ends to tie up, like getting things like State Run Daycare pushed through to ensure that women are no longer given the option of being a Stay At Home Mom. *Off to be a slave in the fields with you, peon-ette*! But for the most part, feminism has succeeded in mortally wounding the family.

.

So, the next thing to do is to undermine what is left of the family by *completely* redefining what ever little bits and pieces of it are left. (Read my piece, "What is Marxism and How Does It Work? http://no-maam.blogspot.com/2007/02/what-is-marxism-and-how-does-it-work.html)

.

"A middle ground might be to fight for same sex marriage and its benefits, and then, once granted, *redefine the institution completely*, to demand the right to marry not as a way of adhering to society's moral codes *but rather to debunk a myth and radically alter an archaic institution.*" -- -- Michelangelo Signorile, "Bridal Wave," OUT Magazine, December/January 1994, p.161

.

.

"[E]nlarging the concept to embrace same-sex couples *would necessarily transform it into something new*....Extending the right to marry to gay people -- that is, abolishing the traditional gender requirements of marriage -- can be one of the means, perhaps the principal one, through which the institution divests itself of the sexist trappings of the past." -- Tom Stoddard, quoted in Roberta Achtenberg, et al, "Approaching 2000: Meeting the Challenges to San Francisco's Families," The Final Report of the Mayor's Task Force on Family Policy, City and County of San Francisco, June 13, 1990, p.1.

.

"It [gay marriage] is also a chance to *wholly transform the definition of the family* in American culture. It is the final tool with which to dismantle all sodomy statutes, *get education about about homosexuality* and AIDS *into public schools*, and, in short, usher in a sea of change in how society views and treats us." -- -- Michelangelo Signorile, "I do, I do, I do, I do, I do," OUT Magazine, May 1996, p.30

.

(Also, read my piece, "A New Kind of Bigotry," here: http://no-maam.blogspot.com/2007/01/new-kind-of-bigotry.html)

.

And for the *ultimate* in supreme irony. I predict that when the family is completely demolished, the powers that be will use "Useful Idiots" from the "Men's Movement" to completely slam the door shut and take full totalitarian control of the family by granting those men who are clamoring for Male DV Shelters/Laws & "Equitable" Divorce & Custody Laws what they are asking for. I predict that some unwitting baby-boomer with a Ph D in *something* will be allowed to make headway with the MRM, position himself as a "leader," and will bring a "male styled feminism"

into society. And that will be it! There will be full government control of every aspect of people's close relationships & family. Remember, the trick is not in who gets the biggest piece of the pie, but rather that both sides find themselves running to the government to get their piece. This is the "Totalitarian Trap."

.

It should be noted that with the Totalitarian Trap, the eternal drive to "equalize" is met by first pushing down one side, and then pushing down the *other* side until they are "equal." Equality is *never* reached by *restoring* rights. It is achieved by removing rights. Always.

.

The *best* thing that women could do to *preserve* their "rights," is to fully abandon feminist lies and throw their full weight at demolishing the Marxist creep. Because women are next on the Marxist destruction list. But this would require allying themselves with those icky men that they've been gleefully bashing for the past 4 decades. (Let's see if you've got the "right stuff," ladies.)

.

Ahem...

.

And now onto Racism & Ethnic Diversity.

.

Now, you're going to say, "Rob, surely you're not a racist white supremacist."

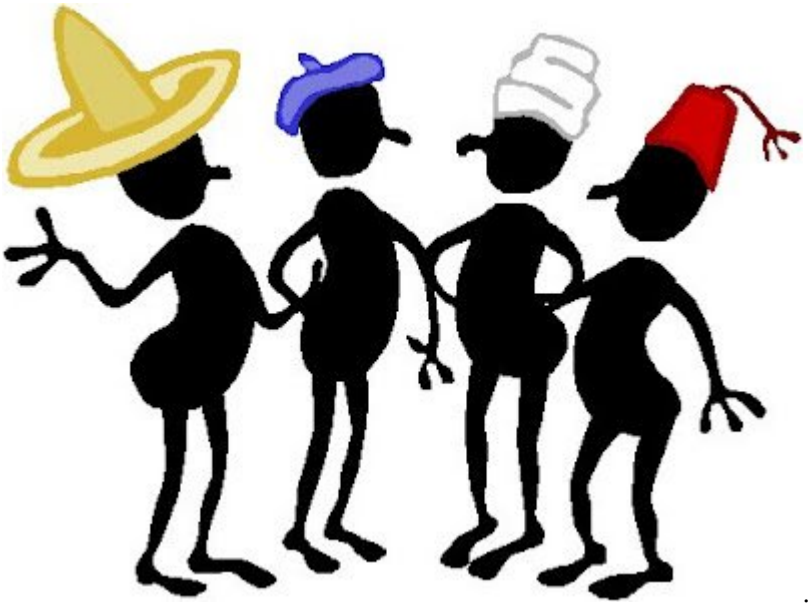
.

No, I am not. I couldn't give a tinker's damn about people's skin color.

.

What I do give a damn about is *multi-culturalism*.

.



.

Multi-culturalism is another thing that is "designed" to create conflict. It is a natural *agent provacateur.* And once the "conflict" begins, the government gets to rush in and "solve" the problem... with... guess what... here it comes... *MORE LAWS!*

.

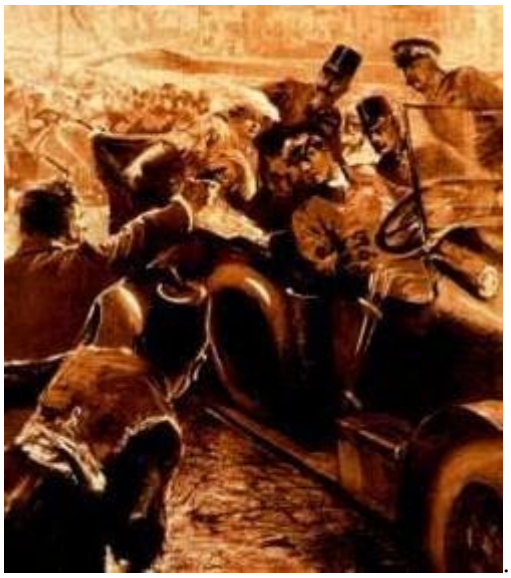
And yet, somehow, we get Politically Corrected sunshine blown up our wazoos telling us that there is "strength in diversity." *What a supreme load of bullshit!* And it all evades criticism by hiding behind people's natural fears of being called a racist. Much like how people are mentally censored from speaking out against feminism by brownshirts screeching at disenters that they are misogynists.

.

There is no strength in cultural diversity! Open up any history textbook and look for the causes of World War One...

which one jumps out at you? Could it be the one that details "Unrest in the Balkans?"

.



.

Yes, ask the people from the former Yugoslavia how great Cultural Diversity is.

.

.

Or ask the people in the Middle East.

.

Or tell me what the Paris Riots were about? Oh yes, the Paris Riots were about the strength of cultural diversity.

.

Why don't *other* countries around the world seek this strength? Why is it only predominently Caucasian Western World Nations that need to "seek" this strength? Why not the Japanese? Why not African countries? Why aren't they offering incentives for people from all over the world to move to *their* countries and encourage them to maintain a completely separate sub-culture contrary to the majority of the nation's population?

.

Because it's utter nonsense, that's why. It plays on the subtly *propagandized* message that tells white people to feel guilty for being white. Shame on you, bow down and repent of your *White Privilege.* Lol! Why don't they tell the Japanese to repent from their Japanese Privilege?

.

Multi-culturalism *causes* conflict. This is not news, it's been know to cause conflict for centuries. But Marxism *needs* conflict to work.

.

If you have a look throughout the history of the West, you will notice a distinct shift that occured a few decades ago... it occured around the same time as the rise of Second Wave Feminism... when all of those people, what are they called again? The bloomers... the late bloomers... the cry-baby generation... damn, it's on the tip of my tongue. It'll come to me. Anyway, I remember that they were all severely smacked up the side of their intellect by heavy Marxist indoctrination through the Peace Movement and previous Frankfurt School Marxist thinkers like Herbert Marcuse... all aided by a good spattering of illicit drugs.

.

Out of this age, it seems that the drift from the "melting pot" to the "cultural mosaic" began to occur.

.

If we have a bit of a closer look, what were some of the "pillars" which the Cultural Marxists declared needed to be destroyed, amongst others*?*

.

Patriotism, Nationalism and Ethnocentrism.

.

When my family immigrated to Canada after the Second World War, they spoke no English and were from a different culture. But they *assimilated* themselves into being Canadians very quickly! For me, a second generation Canadian, *that is exactly what I am:* ***CANADIAN!*** And damn freakin' proud of it! I am a foreigner to my parents' native country. I have no desire to be anything *but* Canadian, except perhaps a *Western Canadian* if Ottawa continues be a bunch of asshats. http://no-maam.blogspot.com/2007/03/solution-to-save-western-civilization.html

.

.

This is how most immigrants who came to the "New World" were encouraged to behave, up until the last few decades. And we built one helluva powerhouse of a civilization out of *nothing* here in North America by doing it this way, didn't we? Now that is some culture we should not be ashamed of at all. Brave pioneers, seeking adventure, carving their own futures. Why are we propagandized to believe we have a trash culture in North America? We have a *very brave and honourable culture!* It was also strong enough to "naturally" resist the Marxist wildfire after WWI.

.

All throughout North American history there has been a direct effort to accept immigrants mainly from Europe, because even if the language is different, there are still *many* similarities like the same basic religion, the same geographic origination (European), etc. etc. This was done on purpose, not out of white supremacy, but out of the desire to take in immigrants who will easily assimilate to the Canadian Culture (or its copycat little brother, the 11th province, American Culture. Heh, heh.)

.

But over the past few decades, there has been a distinct shift in Canadian immigration policy, specifically since Pierre Elliot Trudeau, a Marxist admirer, took over Canada and slammed it full of Socialism, *a known economic failure.* http://no-maam.blogspot.com/2007/01/pierre-elliot-trudeau-cultural-marxist.html

.

Keep in mind that *Trudeau spent the late 40's studying MARXISM!*

.

http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Pierre_Trudeau

.

"Trudeau was interested in ***Marxist*** *ideas in the late 1940s. In the 1950s and early 1960s, he was a supporter of the*

social democratic Co-operative Commonwealth Federation party — which became the New Democratic Party. During the 1950s, he was blacklisted by the US and prevented from entering the country because of a visit to a conference in Moscow... ...and because he subscribed to a number of leftist publications..."

.

And what did Trudeau the Traitor do as soon as he began to rise to power?

.

"He [Trudeau] introduced legislation permitting therapeutic abortions, legalizing adult consensual homosexual acts, allowing the dissemination of birth-control materials and contraceptive information, and authorizing judicial divorce based on a range of fault and no-fault grounds." (The Globe and Mail: Pierre Elliot Trudeau 1919-2000, by Lorraine Weinrib, Oct 2000)

.

Trudeau did all things Marxist, it appears. The Status of Women Canada was created by this Traitor. The Canadian Charter of Rights and Freedoms was created by this Traitor, which got rid of the old documents which already guaranteed us the same freedoms - except the new Charter was carefully worded by Trudeau to allow for Hegelian-Marxist Dialectical Arguments - which allows minority groups to over-rule the will of the majority by technically manipulating the document itself. **All things Marxist!**

.

And what else did this Traitor bring to us? Why, he introduced multi-culturalism to Canada.

.

"The government will support and encourage the various cultures and ethnic groups that give structure and vitatity to our society. They will be encouraged to share their cultural expressions and values with other Canadians and so contribute to a richer life for us all." -- Pierre Elliot Trudeau

.

What a complete load of horseshit! At the time when Trudeau took office, Canada was one of *the most prosperous and powerful nations on earth!*

.

We were doing pretty good with the "melting pot." The melting pot *was* our "structure and vitality."

.

Why abandon it and replace it with the "cultural mosaic?"

.

Patriotism, Nationalism, Ethnocentrism. Pillars of Western Civilization which Cultural Marxists had identified as needing to be destroyed.

.

After 30 years of the Cultural Mosaic, the word "Canadian" has very little more meaning than a typical gerund. French-Canadian, Italian-Canadian, Indo-Canadian, Chinese-Canadian, First Nations, Lebanese-Canadian... All specifically encouraged to maintain a sub-culture which is contradictory to what *was* the Canadian Culture, effectively destroying any uniqueness we used to have.

.

Will the Canadian-Canadians please stand up to be counted? (Hey, why am I the only one standing up?)

.

*Multi-culturalism has given Canada a **globalized** identity!* Whatever uniqueness we once had, that which bound us together as a people, has been replaced with nothingness and everything at the same time.

.

And notice, as a country, we now prefer to hinder those from Western Europe, who are highly educated and skilled, from immigrating to our country while at the same time we are willing to allow *thousands upon thousands* of immigrants from nations where people are not highly educated or skilled - from the Third World. People who are as *radically different* from us in their culture as possible!

.

This is goes along nicely with the Marxist Utopia Masterplan, which is to *equalize everone and everything* and then

collapse all of society's superstructures:

.

Individual --> Family --> Community --> Province/State --> Nation --> Continent --> World

.

Individual --> World

.

For Marxism to work, the poorer Third World Nations must also be equalized with the richer Western Nations. (This is what is so scary about the UN's relentless drive to *create* world taxes - with the stated goal of using the money from the richer countries to *equalize* the wealth to the Third World. http://www.cfif.org/htdocs/freedomline/un_monitor/in_our_opinion/global_taxes.htm And remember, people - *the power to tax is the power to govern* - ***and we don't vote for these guys!***)

.

In the perfect Marxist world, the West would be made to be poorer, and would be filled up with dirt cheap labour from the Third World.

.

Now, dear reader, I can tell I am boring you... and you are saying, "OK, Rob. But what does all this have to do with *feminism?*"

.

Well, I'm about to tell you, grasshopper.

.

We have a **Demographic Trap** looming up in the future that will *force* Globalization (Communism) upon us.

.

.

I hope you are all beginning to see that this is all *one big perpetual motion machine* that keeps chugging along down the road to Globalization/Communism - and a *worse* future for all of us.

.

Thanks to *Feminism,* the nuclear family has been mortally wounded. Since the advent of Second Wave Feminism a few decades ago, our birthrates have *plummeted* from 3.9 per couple to 1.5 per couple. And it is *not* getting better, *it is getting worse!*

.

.

http://www.time.com/time/world/article/0,8599,1599121,00.html

.

"Two-thirds of Canada's rapid population increase over the past five years came from immigration — a force that in coming decades will account for almost all of the country's growth..."

.

From the same article: *With births slowing, Canada is reaching a unique situation, said Laurent Martel, a Statistics Canada analyst. "We're heading towards a point where immigration will be the only source of growth in Canada," he said."*

.

Again from the same article: *The country's shift toward immigration as the only source of growth is still a couple of decades away. That point will not be reached until after 2030, when the peak of the baby boomers born in the 1950s and early 1960s reach the end of their lives.*

.

"You're going to see an increase in the number of deaths in Canada, and the number of deaths will exceed the number of births — so natural increase will become negative," said Martel. "The only factor of growth will then be immigration."

.

At the same time, let's consider what else has been happening - here in Canada it was a direct result of Trudeau the Treacherous Traitor:

.

http://www.westcan.org/westcan/WSP/AuSeOc00WSP.htm

.

In 1968, when Trudeau went from rich, socialist professor to prime minister, Canada's national debt was a modest $11.3 billion; the federal deficit was zero. When Trudeau left office in 1984, the debt had mushroomed to $128 billion; the deficit to $25 billion annually.

.

When Trudeau entered office, Ottawa spent 30% of Canada's total economic output (the same as the U.S.). When he left, government spending had skyrocketed to almost 53%. With half of Canadians working directly or indirectly for Ottawa, the nation became infected with state-sponsored laziness.

.

** After Trudeau retired, his unstoppable socialist juggernaut picked up speed. Canada's federal debt - the amount Ottawa borrowed in the past that remains unpaid - has skyrocketed to $576 billion, or $54,000 per taxpayer.*

.

A third of your federal taxes go to paying interest on this debt - just like on a credit card with an unpaid balance. In 1999 alone, Canadians paid $41.5 billion on debt interest, four times what Ottawa spent on defence.

.

Add $2.3 trillion of unfunded pension liabilities, and the figure rises to a staggering $244,000 owed per taxpayer. Canada's "just and compassionate" society is built on a mountain of debt, passed on to future generations.

.

** In 1970, Canada had one of the lowest debts - and lowest tax rates - among industrial nations. Today, Canada ranks as one of three leading debtor nations, along with socialist-run Belgium and Italy. While Ottawa's annual deficit was ended by imposing crushing taxes, the monster debt hangover remains... ...At Ottawa's puny repayment rate,* ***it will take Canada 288 more years [to pay off the debt].***

.

THE DEMOGRAPHIC TRAP!!! (and these financial figures are old - from Oct 2000)

.

Do you see the machine?

.

Do you see the trap?

.

Whether there are 30 million Canadians or 15 million Canadians, *the debt figure* ***does not change!***

.

But I guarantee you this: It will be far more difficult for 15 million Canadians to struggle with servicing the debt than it will be for 30 million Canadians to do so.

.

We do not reproduce *nearly* enough to be able grow our population on our own. Therefore, if we take in zero immigrants we would soon go flat broke as this ridiculous debt would crush us with a smaller population *and destroy Capitalism!*

.

The solution, of course, is to keep on taking in more immigrants to maintain a population that can cope with this debt - of course they will continually be encouraged to maintain their multi-national identities under Canada's policy of the "Cultural Mosaic," forcing Canadian Identity to become even more obscure than it already is. (Anyone... Anyone... *further destruction of Patriotism, Nationalism and Ethnocentrism...* pillars of Western Civilization which Cultural Marxists declared must be destroyed for Marxism to win.)

.

Now, please *also note,* these immigrants *only slow down the destruction of Capitalism.* They will not solve the problem at all. We will not be taking in immigrants from other Western Nations, remember. We will be taking in immigrants from Third World Nations *who are uneducated and unskilled* compared to us. Therefore, they will not come as high-earning, high tax paying workers. They will come as *very low paid* workers. But a low paid individual earning $20,000/yr *still uses as much of our inefficient yet extravagent Socialist Welfare Services, such as our Healthcare, as a skilled worker earning $60,000/yr*. In fact, in order to maintain our GDP, we would have to take in 3 unskilled immigrants to equal the output of 1 skilled labourer... and we would be taxing our entirely useless Socialist Service system *at three times the rate!* This means *higher taxes for EVERYONE.* The higher the taxes, the less efficient is the Capitalist system.

.

Eventually, we will no longer be able to sustain ourselves, and Capitalism will collapse.

.

"The way to crush the bourgeoisie is to grind them between the millstones of taxation and inflation." -- V.I. Lenin

.

Western Civilization Pillars identified for destruction by Marxists: *Christianity, Capitalism, the Family, Authority, Patriarchy, Hierarchy, Morality, Tradition, Sexual Restraint, Loyalty, Patriotism, Nationalism, Heredity, Ethnocentrism, Convention and Conservatism.*

.

The Marxist goal is to change us from this:

.

Individual --> Family --> Community --> Province/State --> Nation --> Continent --> World

.

...into this:

.

Individual --> World

.

"We shall destroy you from within." -- Nikita Krushchev, during the Kitchen Debate, 1959

.

Cultural Marxism is a SOCIAL NUCLEAR BOMB! -- Rob Fedders, No Ma'am Blog, 2007

.

.

Now, dear reader. I can see that you are eagerly awaiting to see what solutions I propose. Yes, I can tell from the drool that has escaped the side of your mouth and now glistens as a droplet on the edge of your chin..

.

Alas, I do not have all the answers because I have not yet reached the end of the internet, which is where I assume the answer sheet will be located.

.

I do have some ideas, however. I mean, how could I be contemplating running for Leader of the Universe if I did not have some ideas?

.

But first, let me ask you a question.

.

.

Was there a television set playing in the background while you read this?

.

.

Theodore Roosevelt on Theodore Roosevelt on Immigrants and being an AMERICAN

“In the first place we should insist that if the immigrant who comes here in good faith becomes an American and assimilates himself to us, he shall be treated on an exact equality with everyone else, for it is an outrage to discriminate against any such man because of creed, or birthplace, or origin. But this is

predicated upon the man's becoming in very fact an American, and nothing but an American…There can be no divided allegiance here. Any man who says he is an American, but something else also, isn't an American at all. We have room for but one flag, the American flag, and this excludes the red flag, which symbolizes all wars against liberty and civilization, just as much as it excludes any foreign flag of a nation to which we are hostile…We have room for but one language here, and that is the English language…and we have room for but one sole loyalty and that is a loyalty to the American people." -- Theodore Roosevelt 1917

.

****

.

Read Dworkin's idea of Utopia:

.

"...[W]omen and men are distinct species or races ... men are biologically inferior to women; male violence is a biological inevitability; to eliminate it, one must eliminate the species/race itself... in eliminating the biologically inferior species/race Man, the new Ubermensch Womon (prophetically foreshadowed by the lesbian separatist herself) will have the earthly dominion that is her true biological destiny. We are left to infer that the society of her creation will be good because she is good, biologically good. In the interim, incipient Super Womon will not do anything to 'encourage' women to 'collaborate' with men--no abortion clinics or battered woman sanctuaries will come from her. After all, she has to conserve her 'energy' which must not be dissipated keeping 'weaker' women alive through reform measures. The audience applauded the passages on female superiority/male inferiority enthusiastically. This doctrine seemed to be music to their ears." -- from a panel on "Lesbianism as a Personal Politic" that met in New York City, Lesbian Pride Week 1977; Andrea Dworkin, Letters from a War Zone, - Take Back The Day - Biological Superiority: The World's Most Dangerous and Deadly Idea (1977), (Dutton Publishing, 1989) p.146

.

****

.

The Jiggly Room

. · 26 August 2008 · Archived copy · Original

.

Ah, yes. *Boobs!*

.

Two things that are constantly on the minds of *both* genders are a woman's breasts. Of course, fembots have been convincing women that men are pigs because they can't keep their eyes off of a woman's chest when they talk to her. Bad, bad, men! They treat women like nothing more than sex objects!

.

Yes, men are pigs!

.

But, why aren't women considered to be pigs when they expose the fleshy globes for the whole world to see? Does anyone *really* believe that a woman "innocently" didn't realize that she was advertising her jahoobies when she pulled on a blouse like this in the morning?

.

.

Women, unlike men, *never* buy clothes without trying them on first. When the above (appropriately faceless) woman bought that blouse, she first pulled it on in a dressing room, stood in front of a mirror*, and I guarantee you that* ***her*** *eyes were fixed on her boobs in the mirror's reflection.* It is no accident when a woman displays cleavage. It is not like accidentally walking around with your fly unzipped.

.

Back in the day, before I unplugged from the fematrix, I used to make damn sure that I never looked at woman's boobs when talking to her, no matter how flagrantly she displayed them. I listened to the ceaseless propaganda about how degrading it was for a man to talk to a woman's chest instead of her face, and I let non-logical PCism cloud my mind and not think about the *woman's* role in all of it.

.

Women are intensely aware of their boobs. Before puberty, girls ache for their first training bra. Flat chested teenage girls are viciously jealous of the girl who blooms early and receives male attention for it. At the same time, the earlier bloomer hears the propaganda about how degrading it is for men to like her breasts and goes into her first, of many to come, victim modes and allows her clouded female brain to be contradictory by believing she's a victim of her boobs while secretly loving it and playing on her sexual power over the boys at the same time. Of course, the woman who remains flat chested into adulthood believes she is equally victimized because she *doesn't* receive similar male attention.

.

Women buy bras that make their boobs look firmer than what they are, that lift and separate them to make them more appealing, there are padded ones to make them bigger, and they can even buy ones with built-in hard nipples. Women are intensely aware of their boobs and the power that they wield. Boob jobs are the number one plastic surgery done in our femi-narcististic world.

.

When this woman left the house in the morning, she knew she was putting her boobs on display for the world. Go ahead. Have a good, long look at them! That's what she wants - no matter what her flapping gums might be currently whining about.

.

.

"Talk to my face, not my chest. Pig!" Says the appropriately faceless creature.

.

This reminds of what I once read in Jack Kammer's excellent book, *If Men Have All The Power, How Come Women Make All The Rules, http://www.deltabravo.net/files/ifmenhav.pdf* in which Mr. Kammer makes a keen observation about the difference between Men & Women's sexuality. He says that when a man "comes on to a woman," it is like dealing with an annoyingly pushy door to door salesman who targets one customer and digs his heels in trying to convince the one person in front of him. But women's sexuality is advertised like annoying junk mail (or internet spam). It is ever present. You cannot escape it. She advertises to the whole world and whether the recipient wants to recieve her advertisement or not is of little concern to her. She targets *everyone* and plays the numbers game of "if I advertise to 100 people, I will get one nibble - and if I advertise to 1,000 people, I will get 10 nibbles."

.

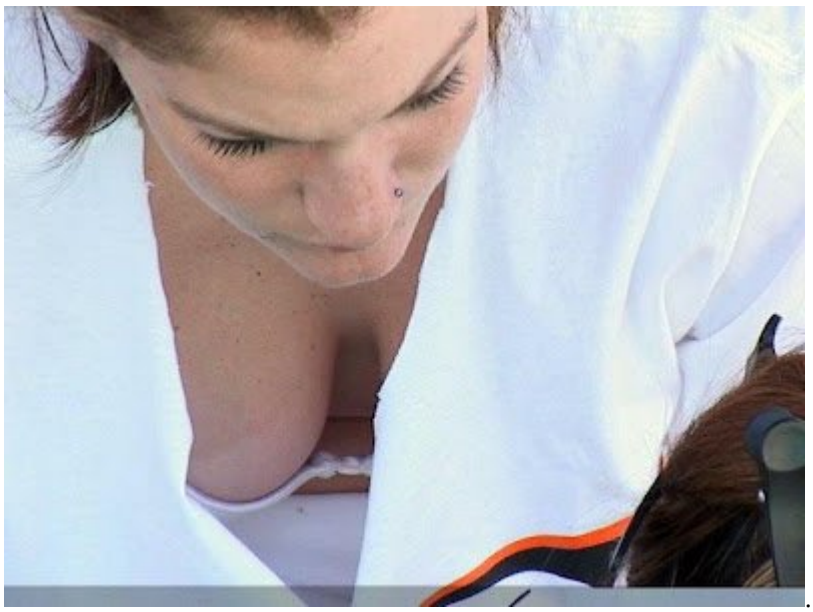
So, let's get it straight. Women who show off the jahoobies, are trolling for sexual attention. It is very rare for a woman to "accidently" let someone see her fleshy globes. A woman who wears a tight, form fitting blouse like the following, fully well knows that her blouse accentuates her breasts:

.

.

And when a woman leans forward and "accidentally" lets you look clear down her blouse to her belly button, like the following, it is no accident either.

.

 .

Don't believe me that it is no accident? Then ask yourself why only women with "boobs to be proud of" allow this. How come flat chested women never "accidentally" flash the mammaries? How come older women, whose boobs are well passed their prime years, are never giving you shots like that? How come men aren't wearing shirts that show off the man-boobs every time they lean over? Because the women whose cleavage & boobs you do see are quite aware that they are "accidentally-on purpose" doing it. That's why.

.

"Now, Rob," you say, "what's the big deal?"

.

Well, as some of you may know. The only Television I watch anymore is the Business News Network. A few weeks ago I was watching and listening for business reports of various natures when, in typical TV propaganda fashion, the filthy TV programmers decided it would be prudent to have a short 5-minute interview with some stunned female academic who was "an expert" on workplace etiquette. It didn't take this harpy with a BS in Academia more than one breath after introducing herself before she femi-moaned about sexual harrasment in the workplace*, like when male co-workers are looking down a woman's blouse*.

.

I just can't tell you how much it annoys me that the only "intellectual" thing that "academic" women seem capable of discussing, when interviewed, is women's victimhood in some way at the hands of those awful males. I taught the TV screen a few things about how foul my mouth can get when confronted with sexist women like that.

.

But it reminded me of a place where I worked once, and where I had a lower-level manager who was a woman.

.

Now, this woman came to work each day like a tarted up little whore. Her blouses would be unbuttoned down to the maximum point - as in, undo one more button and she would be displaying *below* the bottom of her bra - you know the type. This woman, every day, wore very short skirts - *very short.* Short enough that everyone knew she was wearing stockings instead of pantyhose, because the lacy top of the stockings would sometimes come into display if she bent over to pick something up etc.

.

But what this woman, a manager, used to do to me was complete sexual harassment. *Passive sexual harrassment.* On several occasions, when in her office discussing various work related issues, this woman would lean back in her chair, locking her hands behind her head like she was stretching - and lean way back, with a short skirt, legs open, and display clear shots up her skirt of the crotch of her panties.

.

.

I don't believe it was an accident. Exhibitionism is a top female sexual fantasy.

.

And here becomes the situation: You *have to* talk to a woman, out of work related neccessity, who is either leaning forward to talk to you, and fully displaying her cleavage to you - or she is leaning back and talking to you, fully displaying the crotch of her panties. Yet, you are expected to only be looking her in the eyes while she is displaying herself like a Penthouse Centerfold. She is looking at your face, and if you should allow your eyes to betray that you are fully aware that she is displaying herself sexually, *YOU* could be charged with sexual harassment in the workplace and not her! You could lose your job, wind up being sued, and have difficulty securing another job - the stakes are positively huge!

.

Now, the thoroughly corrupted feminist legal system has ambiguously defined Sexual Harassment in the Workplace as "that which would make a reasonable woman uncomfortable." But what about men? *This woman made me uncomfortable in the workplace!* I even contemplated discussing it with higher level management but I decided against it, contemplating that if I allowed them to know that I had been seeing down this woman's blouse *and* up her skirt, that I would get the boot for sexually harassing *her.* So I kept my mouth shut and endured the tightrope that this sexually flagrant harlot *forced* me to walk. And *it did* affect my professional performance, because I dreaded dealing with her, *and that did* affect the bottom line profitability of that particular business. I go to work to make money, not to ogle women. And the owner of the company started the business to make money, not to provide some tramp a venue to fulfill her exhibitionism fetish.

.

As I previously pointed out, women don't put themselves on display by accident. *All women know this.* Women are very aware of how to hide their bad features and accentuate their desireable features. *The boobs you see are boobs you are meant to see.* Yet, should some woman level a charge of sexual harassment against a man for looking at the boobs that you were meant to see, all the other women will quickly rally around the "afronted" woman and support her over the male pig. Even though they full well know "the game." At best, the other women will remain silent and not call the exhibitionist woman out on her bullshit and let the man go down in flames.

.

Women should be discriminated against in the workplace until they all start dressing for business instead of

dressing for attention. It's about time that women start showing up in suits, with a tie, so that they are forced to "button up." Otherwise, given the sexual harassment bias of our legal system, coupled with female sexual fetishes, women are a profit draining lawsuit waiting to happen and it is justifiable to unemploy their asses.

.

.

Previous Index Next

MGTOW

"If it's not right, Go Your Own Way!"

.....
..oooO.....
..(....).....
….\..(.....
…. _/.....
…….....Oooo..
…….....(....)…
……..)../....
.....(_/.....
.....

Further Reading:

Philalethes #2 – The Sexual Noise Is Deafening

The Fine Art of TV Repair

. · 26 August 2008 · Archived copy · Original

Is something wrong in your house?

.

Is there a constant subtle drone always permeating throughout what should be your retreat from the harsh world?

.

Do you think that Man Hatred is just everywhere?

.

Chances are, your TV is broken!

.

Therefore, No Ma'am will provide you with an easy, illustrated, 4-step method to fixing your "best friend."

.

.

.

STEP #1: Get the Proper Tools

.

The best tools for TV Repair can likely be found in the backyard shed. Two favourites are the pick-axe and the sledgehammer. Also find some gloves and safety goggles - The Safety Bear recommends this, so I will defer to his judgement in regard to safety.

.

.

Step #2: Swinging the Pick-Axe

.

Take a few steps to the side of your friend and grasp the pick-axe firmy with both hands. Your aim should be directly for center of the screen, as this is where the heart of the problem is..The swing is performed much like a golf swing. Keep your eye on the center of the screen from the beginning of the swing right through to the end.

.

Bring the pick-axe behind you and begin your swing. Your upper body should shift the energy through your shoulders while at the same time, the weight of your body should shift from your back foot through to your front foot. Remember to keep your eye on the center of the screen throughout your swing!.The above illustration is an example of the results of a good first swing. The pick-axe should penetrate to the heart of the problem with a depth

of at least 6 inches. A professional TV Repair Man consistently hits 10 inchers, but 6 inches is the minimum penetration needed.

.

.

Step #3: Sweeping the Field

.

.

Sometimes it is best to change tools and grab your sledgehammer for this task.

.

You must remove all of the glass to fully repair your TV.

.

Don't be afraid to choke up on the hammer nor to get down on your knees to get every last piece of glass out of there. There is nothing "sissy" about this. The only "sissy" thing would be to not do a thorough and complete job. Anything worth doing is worth doing well.

.

Notice the craftsmanship of this professional job in that he has even removed the knobs. This attention to detail is the mark of true guildsmanship, but you need not be this fancy. Removing the glass will most likely fix your problem completely.

.

This is also an excellent time to have a look around inside the TV. You will realize that there is really ***nothing*** of substance behind the glass.

.

.

Step #4: Call the Wife

.

With the most manly bellow you can muster, holler out the following words:

.

"Woman! Come Hither!"

.

A real professional might manage to include the following:."And bring me a cold one!"

.

But your main job is to have the wife come and look at your craftsmanship.

.

You can now gently explain to the missus that you believe in the "Eek-Wallet-Tee" of both sexes equally doing the housework. Point out that you have done your 50%, and the other 50% is the clean up - so hop to it!

.

Be sure to stay with the missus while she works.

.

This is where the cold one would have come in handy, as it would give you something to do rather than just stand there doing nothing.

.

Don't be afraid to direct your wife to any teeny tiny piece of glass that she may have missed. You might impart some manly wisdom at her here by telling her that "anything worth doing is worth doing well!"

.

.

You're all done!

.
Go back into the house and see if that annoying drone of man-hatred has disappeared.
.
And rest assured, it will only get better from here!
.
Good job, Mr Repairman!

.

.
Further Reading:
.
Bonecrker #17 - Movies Desensitize Social Problems

Which came first? Dishonesty or Dissimulation?

. · 26 August 2008 · Archived copy · Original

(This is a very old article, and I'm not sure that it fits in The Philosophy of Men Going Their Own Way, - for example, I don't think that women are even really aware of their dissimulation - but I'm going to leave it in here for now anyway).

.

Dissimulation in women leads to dishonesty in men. Dishonesty in men leads to dissimulation in women. It's a chicken and egg argument to a "T."

.

I think that we all know what the definition of dishonesty is, so I don't feel the need to try and define it. Dissimulation in women, however, is not often defined so I wish to state exactly what I mean by this. What I mean by dissimulation in women is when they are behaving like pool hustlers. When they are "faking" their position while their intentions truly lie elsewhere. This typically starts when a man and a woman begin the "dance" of getting to know each-other. She tells him she is interested in a non-sexual relationship and only wants some companionship. This is dissimulation if what she is really interested in is establishing whether the man is worthy enough for her to be sexual with. She wants him to prove her worth to him with the hoops he will jump through to "win her." This will establish her emotional and sexual superiority over him and weigh the balance of power in any possible future relationship decidedly in her favour. It's like Br'er Rabbit. "*Please don't throw me in the briar patch*." Dissimulation to a "T."

.

"...Nature has not destined them, as the weaker sex, to be dependent on strength but on cunning; this is why they are instinctively crafty, and have an ineradicable tendency to lie. For as lions are furnished with claws and teeth, elephants with tusks, boars with fangs, bulls with horns, and the cuttlefish with its dark, inky fluid, so Nature has provided woman for her protection and defence with the faculty of dissimulation, and all the power which Nature has given to man in the form of bodily strength and reason has been conferred on woman in this form. Hence, dissimulation is innate in woman and almost as characteristic of the very stupid as of the clever. Accordingly, it is as natural for women to dissemble at every opportunity as it is for those animals to turn to their weapons when they are attacked; and they feel in doing so that in a certain measure they are only making use of their rights. Therefore a woman who is perfectly truthful and does not dissemble is perhaps an impossibility. This is why they see through dissimulation in others so easily; therefore it is not advisable to attempt it with them. From the fundamental defect that has been stated, and all that it involves, spring falseness, faithlessness, treachery, ungratefulness, and so on. In a

court of justice women are more often found guilty of perjury than men. It is indeed to be generally questioned whether they should be allowed to take an oath at all." -- Arthur Schopenhauer, On Women

.

It is the way almost every relationship starts off. She is attracted to the man yet dissimulates that she does not want him, and that men who chase her sexually are not worthy of her. The only response a man unaware of the crimson arts can have, if he actually wants to get closer to what he (and she) wants, is to be dishonest.

.

"I'm not like that," he replies, "I like you for your mind, for your intelligence and for your wit. I want to get to know you because you are a strong woman."

.

He believes it's the only response that will keep the game going. Be honest with her here, and he will never get her. If he were completely open and honest and told her he was attracted to her sexually, the game would be over. The next pussy-starved schlub she talks to *will* be dishonest with her and tell her it is only "her mind" that interests him, and he will be the one that gets to see her panties slide down her legs to the floor. Maybe not that very day, but probably in a few weeks, after she has satisfied that he is worthy because of "his efforts." She didn't really want someone who was interested in her mind. She was interested in the sexuality of a man being attracted to her and chasing her. She gets a "high" from it, from making him work as a result of her dissimulation. Her value goes up in this process, while his goes down.

.

And so, the only men that she ever gets involved with are men *who are lying to her.* They are the only ones who get over the first hurdles she puts up with dissimulation. Why does she feel it is so necessary to dissimulate? Because dissimulation is the only way she can counter the dishonest men she meets. Most of the men she has been with have been forced to lie to her to actually "be with her." Therefore, she believes that all men are lying pigs, only interested in her for what is between her legs. Dissimulation is her most effective weapon in countering male dishonesty in the mating dance.

.

But for the man, he knows soon enough that if he doesn't "play the game," he will be the man who grows into a 40 year old virgin while the girls he dared to be honest with will be sleeping with the men who didn't care at all that they were being dishonest to her. He realizes that women aren't really saying what they mean, and the only way to counter that and actually get to what they both want, is to be dishonest about his intentions until he gets to the end of the initial dance and "gets her." The only way to counter female dissimulation is by being dishonest.

.

And so it goes, with men and women starting their relationships this way, continuing like this while the relationship exists, and then ending the whole shebang in the same manner. How many marriages decline into celibacy with the husband believing she is not interested in sex, only for him to find out she was having an affair, or that "after the divorce" she turned into an oversexed nymphomaniac? Is there any other proper, effective way for the man to respond to this except to be dishonest about his emotions and act like she didn't matter a hoot to him? That dishonesty about the pain will bother her because she needs to know that she hurt him with her actions... and if she doesn't see that, she will start to dissimulate, often slyly trying to use her new lover to make her ex insane with jealousy. Once the ex blows up in anger, she knows that he did care that she hurt him and she can move on without him. But both sides will realize how much dissimulation or dishonesty they were exposed to in the relationship and be twice as "on guard" to protect themselves the next time around, and of course, that will only lead to more intense dissimulation and dishonesty with future partners.

.

I do, however, believe that some dissimulation and dishonesty is neccessary. This has been the way it has been ever since men and women have existed on earth, I believe. We would not try to change the mating habits of ducks, and neither should we with humans.

.

The problem lies, I believe, in that with the social system we currently live in, there becomes far to much

dissimulation/dishonesty to bear in one lifetime.

.

When one looks at the high stress situations in the average person's life, the top situation is the death of a spouse, the second is divorce/end of a relationship, and I believe that around number 3 is fearing the loss of respect and acceptance amongst one's peers. (I remember health being up there too, but not sure where anymore). *These things are directly about people's personal relationships with others.* To humans, their interactions with those around them are *far* more important than virtually anything else in their lives. Humans are social creatures.

.

I look at my own parents relationship, compared to the typical serial monogamy style of relationships today.
Now my parents did not have a perfect marriage. They argued and got angry about things just like everyone else. In their 48 years together, they had good years and they had bad years. *But*, what my parents had different in their lives was lowered amounts of dissimulation, dishonesty and *the betrayals that such behaviours naturally cause*.

.

They got married when my Dad was 20 and my Mom was 19. They had both dated other people before they met, but considering their ages, I don't think it would have been more than one or two people at most. I don't know if either was "in love" with someone previous to their meeting. Possibly, who knows.

.

Think of what they missed out on that people don't escape today!

.

They don't know what it is like to be lied to, betrayed by someone so close, to know the anguish of having their hearts ripped out. They have no idea what it is like to be hurt by someone so close and to lie awake at night in anguish, knowing that someone you know so intimately is most likely, at that very moment, lying naked in bed next to a person they betrayed you for. They don't have any idea of the gut wrenching emotions involved with losing access to their children - not until the children were prepared to leave the nest at the proper time anyway.

.

Never experiencing extreme amounts of dishonesty or dissimulation from those who hold the key to their hearts allowed them to emotionally mature. They were able to grow to accept that men and women behave differently without it always leaving them in extreme emotional pain. They might have had some feelings that it was necessary to protect "their" position, but it would never rise to the extreme levels of dishonesty and dissimulation which men and women will naturally cling to if they experience the emotionally devastating levels of loss, betrayal and bitterness towards the opposite sex that the average modern 30 year old will already have experienced today, due to serial monogamy and the games that come with the mating dance.

.

I don't think that humans are supposed to be subjected to so many emotional highs and lows throughout their lives. Certainly, a single/divorced 30-something in today's world must be dealing with 4 or 5 times the emotional pain by that age than the vast majority of people from previous generations ever would have experienced in their entire lifetimes. The lack of pain would lead to more trusting, less dishonesty and less dissimulation. Time obligates, of course, but also does drastically reducing the amount of times one's fingers get burnt in the fire. With the amount of dishonesty and dissimulation necessary to be successful in a society that promotes serial monogamy, one must naturally become callous and uncaring to the opposite sex and such behaviour can only cause more of the same. It becomes a vicious circle in which no-one will ever ultimately win.

.

Of course, it all makes sense why Cultural Marxists integrated so much Freud/sexology into their plans, of which one plan was to split apart the genders. People who have been burned several times already before they actually do "try" are far more likely to fail, because of a lack of complete trust, than those who are not so fearful of those kinds of bad memories.

Related:

Hate Bounces

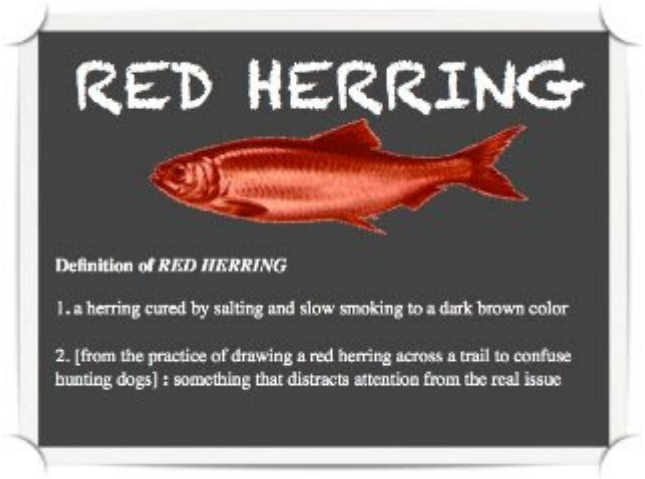
Zenpriest #18 - The Designated Initiator

On Red Herrings and the Totalitarian Trap

. · 26 August 2008 · Archived copy · Original

Many people will instinctively try to dismiss the notion of feminism being Marxism as some sort of red-herring related to tin-foil-hat "conspiracy" theories. However, a quick perusal of the quotes found throughout this blog ought to discredit that notion enough for a reasonable and rational man to inquire further into the subject.

.



.

I maintain that the communist connection to feminism is not "a red herring," but rather that all arguments *except* "feminism IS communism" would be the "red herring."

What Is Marxism and How Does It Work?

First of all, let's find out what Marxism is all about. Phil Worts has an excellent article titled *Communist (Community) Oriented Policing* describing the basic philospohies behind Marxism that everyone should read. (I really cannot praise that article enough. One could spend years and years reading horribly dry Marxist literature, and then further years deciphering it in an attempt to understand it... or one could spend 20 minutes reading Phil Wort's article and learn more than enough about the general philosophy to have an intelligent conversation with the former.)

It is absolutely essential for one to acknowledge the following in regard to Marxism/Cultural Marxism:

1). Karl Marx was heavily influenced by the philosophies of George W.F. Hegel to whom we can attribute the following maxim: "The Truth is Relative." Therefore, Hegelian philosophy will argue the possibility that 2+2 = 4 can also mean 2+2 = 3, or 9... There are no absolute truths. This was a mind blowing concept at the time, for people back then lived in a world where God DOES exist, and there was no questioning the black and whiteness of that within society. Hegel changed that.

Also of supreme importance is to acknowledge Karl Marx's statement: "**The philosophers have only interpreted the world in different ways. The point, however, *is to change it*.**"

That one statement of Marx should always be kept in mind. Not only did he have in mind some fantasy about the kind of humans that would emerge from from his "Utopia" but he directly states that his use of the philosophies of the day are specifically designed to enable the changes which allow Utopia to come about. He is contemplating how to use "The Truth is Relative" to alter society for his own purposes. This is why he is considered a *revolutionary*. His philosophies are geared towards destroying society, allowing its ashes to fertilize the Utopian soil upon which

the flower of his new form of mankind will flourish.

Marxist philosophies include much study on how to mass manipulate society.

2). After the Russian Revolution, a leading Marxist philosopher, Antonio Gramsci, visited Lenin's Soviet Union to witness for himself how Marxist Utopia was progressing. Lenin had seized control of Russia via violence and then foisted Marxism upon the Russian people by use of force, and waited for Utopia to arrive. It didn't. So Gramsci set about to tackle the problem of why the people did not embrace Marxism, but rather only paid obligatory lip service to it. Gramsci concluded that Marx had not gone far enough by only identifying the economic system as what holds society together - so he expanded it to include society's culture and he identified the various pillars which created societal cohesiveness by way of culture. Gramsci essentially said that if one could destroy cultural pillars like religion, the family, nationalism etc., society would self-destruct and then Marxist Utopia would naturally occur without the use of violent revolution. He concluded that if a "long march through the culture" could occur, ultimately destroying his identified pillars of society, then society would self-destruct and there would be massive chaos out of which the population would *request* the government to impose totallitarian control in order to "stop the madness." It is important to note that the goal is to *create* conflict, not to stop it.

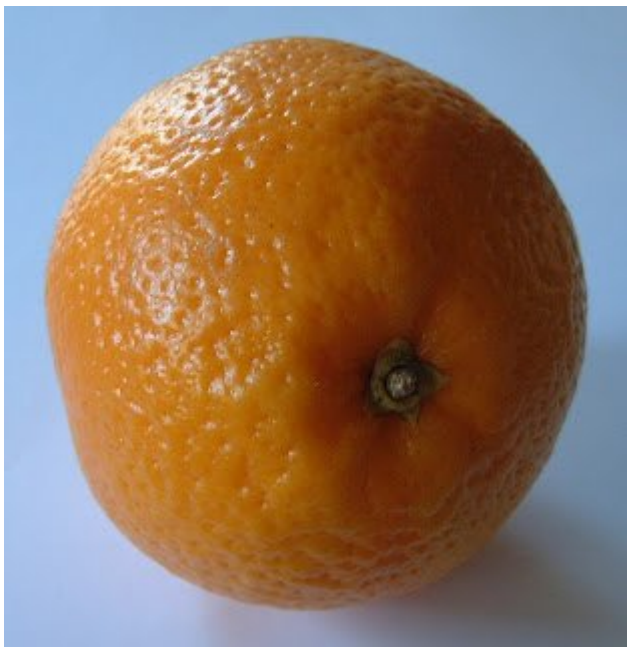
3). There once were two schools in the world dedicated to studying Marxist theories. One was in Russia and one was in Frankfurt, Germany. Thus the name "The Frankfurt School." The Frankfurt School, to put it simply, dedicated itself to tasks such as identifying what factors are necessary to form human cohesiveness at the level above the family unit... the community. This was because the family was identified by Gramsci as a "societal pillar" which needed to be destroyed. Those of the Frankfurt School also put effort into the study of mass-psychology with the specific intention of how to destroy the societal "cultural pillars" which had been identified by Gramsci - they wanted to find out how to destroy such pillars without the use of violence which Lenin had displayed, and set about to study various techniques which would encourage the populations to willfully throw aside cultural values - without the use of force. Therefore, they designed the notion of *Critical Theory*. The Frankfurt School disbanded when Hitler took control of Germany and its academics fled the country and integrated themselves into various areas of the Western World.

4). Critical Theory is essential to understand. The idea behind Critical Theory is to use criticism (based on "the Truth is Relative") to destroy by continual division. A necessary tool for Critical Theorists is the Agent Provocateur, for without someone starting the argument, Critical Theory never begins. *A conflict must be started for the plan of Critical Theory to be implemented.* The second tool Critical Theorists use is the natural human behaviour of fearing difference from the crowd. An example of this is the use of Political Correctness to slowly encourage mass acceptance of an idea. Human alienation is a powerful threat and therefore there is a strong urge to compromise your own principles in order to maintain social cohesion with the larger group. AND... that last tool Critical Theorists employ is a specific tool of brainwashing which can trace its origins to torture - they just took the physical parts out, but left the mental aspect in. This is the 3-step brainwashing technique of how to change personal values: 1 - UNFREEZING from the present level of acceptence, 2 - MOVING the subject to the next level, 3 - FREEZING the subject at the new level until proper acceptance occurs. (Repeat until the desired destruction occurs.)

.

So, could you destroy something absolute like mathematics with such techniques? Sure you could. Imagine that you have proven to yourself that 1+1=2 by physically using oranges to prove the absoluteness of the statement.

.



It's all pretty simple, one orange plus another orange equals two oranges and I know it's true because I can physically prove it. Life is good, the Canada Tax & Revenue Agency is continually pleased with the accuracy which the National Organization of Men Against Amazonian Masterhood (N.O. M.A.A.M.) files their taxes based on the "orange calculator." There is no need to change this system, because it works.

Along comes Delilah, an Agent Provocateur, and she notices my system - to which she points out that oranges are made up of segments. In fact there are 10 orange segments which make up an orange. "Fair enough," I say, "there are oranges and there are orange segments which make up 1/10 of an orange. The math still works."

.

.

The next time I see Delilah, she argues with me that it is discriminatory for me to consider an orange segment to be only 1/10th the value of an orange. She argues that without the segments, the orange wouldn't exist, therefore each segment is worth FAR more than just 1/10th of an orange. The "truth is relative," remember? She tells me that it is discriminatory to consider the "traditional orange" to be more valuable than orange segments and she demands that I acknowledge that all parts of oranges are important, whether that be "traditional oranges" or orange segments. By allowing her to define an orange as a "traditional orange," I have already lost half the battle because by such a definition one has to acknowledge that there are types of oranges *other* than the traditional.

As time goes on, Delilah's friends start to grumble, anyone who does math using traditional oranges is a hate-filled, right-wing Orangaphobe. NO MA'AM doesn't respect all types of oranges equally and believes that traditional

oranges are superior to other types of oranges... what BIGOTS!

The next time Delilah stops by, she hardly even talks to me. She is marching with her friends, all carrying signs reading: "Respect ALL kinds of oranges" and "Stop Bigots from Determining for Me What an Orange is." Finally the last moronic Delilah follower walks by with a sign saying "All Oranges are Equal - Equality for Orange Segments."

I think you can see where this simplified example is going. Eventually, if they can get "unequal" parts of a traditional orange to be defined as equal... well, effectively, math has been destroyed because now math can be 1+1=2 or 1+1=11, or 15, or 20... *Math is useless, so let's just do away with it!*

Connecting the Marxist Dots

Think this is a joke? Just another "Red Herring?" Let's put it all together.

"The philosophers have only interpreted the world in different ways. The point, however, *is to change it."* -- Karl Marx

Antonio Gramsci theorized how communism would naturally take place if the identified cultural pillars of society were deconstructed by **"a long march through culture."**

Critical Theorists devised specific schemes to enable "a long march through culture" by use of **"Critical Theory."**

"We shall destroy you from within!" Nikita Kruschev, during the Kitchen Debate.

Classic Hegelian-Marxist Theory is illustrated by this statement, which is critizing feminism**: "Our culture, including all that we are taught in schools and universities, is so infused with patriarchal thinking that it must be torn up root and branch if genuine change is to occur. Everything must go - even the allegedly universal disciplines of logic, mathematics and science, and the intellectual values of objectivity, clarity and precision on which the former depend."** -- Daphne Patai and Noretta Koertge, "Professing Feminism: Cautionary Tales from the Strange World of Women's Studies" (New York Basic Books, 1994) p.116

Feminists and Gay Rights Activists have collaberated on a joint attack against marriage & the family, which Antonio Gramsci & the Frankfurt School had identified as a "cultural pillar" *which must be destroyed.* Take note of the theme which permeates from the following quotes from feminist & gay rights activists and see if you can spot the Marxist revolutionary ideology:

"The nuclear family must be destroyed, and people must find better ways of living together. ...Whatever its ultimate meaning, the break-up of families now is an objectively revolutionary process. ...Families have supported oppression by separating people into small, isolated units, unable to join together to fight for common interests." -- Linda Gordon, Function of the Family, WOMEN: A Journal of Liberation, Fall, 1969

"Marriage has existed for the benefit of men; and has been a legally sanctioned method of control over women... We must work to destroy it. The end of the institution of marriage is a necessary condition for the liberation of women. Therefore it is important for us to encourage women to leave their husbands and not to live individually with men." -- The Declaration of Feminism, November 1971

"A middle ground might be to fight for same sex marriage and its benefits, and then, once granted, redefine the institution completely, to demand the right to marry not as a way of adhering to society's moral codes

but rather to debunk a myth and radically alter an archaic institution." -- Michelangelo Signorile, "Bridal Wave," OUT Magazine, December/January 1994, p.161

"It [Gay Marriage] **is also a chance to wholly transform the definition of family in American culture. It is the final tool with which to dismantle all sodomy statutes, get education about homosexuality and AIDS into public schools, and, in short, usher in a sea of change in how society views and treats us."** -- Michelangelo Signorile, "I do, I do, I do, I do, I do," OUT Magazine, May 1996, p.30

Read those quotes carefully and then sit back and ponder for yourself the following:

- Why did "No Fault Divorce" get foisted upon society without any massive outcry from the public requesting such a radical change?

- Why did we redefine the physical "Male and Female Sex" as *Gender?* Up until only a short while ago, gender was used solely to describe the feminine or masculine in languages, as is done in French. Why do we now have "*gender* sensitivity" towards heterosexuality, gay-relationships, lesbian relationships and trans-gendered relationsips? Could this have been possible without the sleight of hand of redefining "sex" as "gender?" With the word "sex" there is *only* male and female.

- Why are long-term heterosexual marriages refered to as "traditional marriages/family values?" Does this not, by default, acknowledge there are different kinds of marriages/families?

- Why do we now use the phrase "life *partner",* even as a preference over directly saying husband and wife?

- Why is there a push (here in Canada) to have all types of "families" declared to be equal? Obviously a single mother "family" or a homosexual "family" is not equal because they are not equally equipped to produce children. They are not "equal" except by use of direct government intervention.

- How did it become recently possible (here in Canada) to have a family declared to legally be able to have 3 parents? Yes, 2 married lesbians and one male/father have all three legally been declared parents of the same child... the worry is now directly that this has opened the door to allow for polygamous relationships - sanctioned by the state of course... Does anyone remember the Gay Activists' cry only a scant few years ago that gay "marriage" would do nothing to alter the "traditional family?" All those opposing gay marriage were intolerant bigots. (Also, see my piece: A New Kind of Bigotry)

These examples are all indicitave of a Cultural Marxist plan to use Critical Theory to destroy marriage, which Antonio Gramsci had identified as something which needed to be destroyed. How many other areas of Western Life have been attacked by such a ploy?

Also, take notice something which is pure genius on behalf of the Cultural Marxists. They have chosen their Agent Provocateurs to argue *against Nature!* What a stroke of genius to have picked arguments which can never be won. There will always be these arguments that women are not equal to men, or that gay-marriages are not equal, because they cannot be equal by natural design! Imagine rallying people together to "fight the ocean's tide" or to "stop the moon." You will have them at your service for eternity. The night will never be equal to the day, no matter how many street lamps you erect. But the fight will always continue, because you will always be able to point out that the battle *still* hasn't been won... and that's the point.

Marxism *needs* conflict for its agenda. 100 years ago, people didn't run to the government to tell them what their family life was all about. And this is the real danger and the real goal of Cultural Marxism and Critical Theory. It

encourages people to take something which the government didn't previously control, and then cause as much chaos and confusion in it as possible... so that people run to the government to "settle their differences" and thereby grant to the state the "power of definition/settlement" over something which it previously did not have power over.

Even those who are for "traditional families" are lost in this quagmire. Once upon a time, no-one questioned the word "family." There was only one kind of "family." Now, without society requesting that government be an arbiter, those same people are forced to petition the government to preserve their values... and automatically they default to the government the power to decide (totalitarianism), over something which the gov't never had the original power to decide over, and over which was not willfully given up by the people.

The trick is not in who gets the biggest piece of the pie, but rather that all sides are now running to government to request that they get their piece. The people have willingly allowed the government to subvert their freedom and decide for them - totalitarianism is completed!

No, it is not a "red herring" to say that feminism IS Communism. It is very accurate. The red herring is all the other arguments which distract us from what is happening.

TAKE BACK THE LOGIC!

Previous Index Next

MGTOW

"If it's not right, Go Your Own Way!"

.....
..oooO.....
..(....).....
….\..(.....
…. _/.....
…….....Oooo..
…….....(....)…
……..)../....
.....(_/.....
.....

Buddha: Ultimate Extinction of the Dharma Sutra

. · 1 January 2009 · Archived copy · Original

"When the Dharma is about to disappear, women will become vigorous and will at all times do deeds of virtue. Men will grow lax and will no longer speak the Dharma."

"When my Dharma disappears it will be just like an oil lamp which flares brightly for an instant just before it goes out. After this time it is difficult to speak with certainty of what will follow."

"Good persons will be hard to find; at most there will be one or two. Men will die younger, and women will live longer."

Philalethes #1 - Feminist Allies?

. · 2 January 2009 · Archived copy · Original

Quote: *"I am sure in their own way groups like IWF mean well but the truth is, they're still feminists."*

Close, but not exactly. They themselves will dispute the “feminist” label, which — since, like any word used by women, it can mean whatever the speaker wants it to mean at the moment — only confuses things. The truth is, they’re still women, and as such are different from men: they think differently, have different concerns and priorities, different strengths and weaknesses.

Our culture has already been thoroughly feminized, and we have all been conditioned to base our thinking on the primary, unexamined feminist dogma that the sexes are really no different, outside of “socially-imposed” role models. Even in this forum I find most participants unconsciously taking this idea for granted. So long as you do not question this assumption, the most you will ever accomplish is begging women — your masters — to treat you nicer.

"If you allow them [women] to pull away restraints and put themselves on an equality with their husbands, do you imagine that you will be able to tolerate them? From the moment that they become your fellows, they will become your masters." –Marcus Porcius Cato (the Elder, a.k.a. the Censor), 234-149 BCE

Which is exactly what this IWF “discussion” is about. The quoted message from a concerned man is very well reasoned and moderately stated, yet is dismissed out of hand, with hardly veiled contempt, by the female “moderator.” Why? Because she can. Because he asked, and in so doing ceded the authority to her from the beginning — and she couldn’t resist the temptation to use the power he handed her, all the more because she couldn’t respond to his points on the reasoned level he presented them. This is known as “changing the subject,” and has been a primary female tactic from time immemorial. Women instinctively regard such a man with contempt, even if he is their own creation — in fact, precisely because he is their own creation: how can the Creator regard her creature as her “equal”? Boys — “Is it okay for me to be me, mommy?” — are not “equal” to women. Just as women are not “equal” to men.

Get this: There can be no question of “equality” between the sexes. There can be parity, a balance of power based on recognized, differentiated gender roles — most of which are natural and innate — and territories of authority, so that each sex has something to exchange with the other, and thus both have reason to cooperate.

Only when boys separate from Mother and grow into men do men have such a territory from which to address women, and do women respect them as men. And of course women instinctively try to prevent their boys growing up and away, out of their sphere of power. Who likes to lose a possession, a toy? And neither is this bad for men, for manhood “won” without effort is not manhood. Which is why women cannot make boys into men, because they are instinctively uncomfortable with competition and conflict — which might result in someone’s feelings being hurt. We cannot look to women — even “intelligent” women like IWF or “iFeminists” — to show us the way out. For all their talk, they simply don’t know. The sexes are different. If they were not, there’d only be one of us here.

One of the few thinking men to be found these days in public is Fred Reed, whose latest commentary points out, in his usual inimitable style, the real, significant difference between the sexes:

"Women and men want very different things and therefore very different worlds. Men want sex, freedom, and adventure; women want security, pleasantness, and someone to care about (or for) them. Both like power. Men use it to conquer their neighbours whether in business or war, women to impose security and pleasantness. ... Just about

everything that once defined masculinity is now denounced as 'macho,' a hostile word embodying the female incomprehension of men. ... Men are happy for men to be men and women to women; women want us all to be women."

Read Fred twice, or more. Despite his informal, uneven style — which I'm not sure is unconscious as it may seem, his style in itself is an expression of maleness, not "nice" but charmingly rough, beer in hand, direct and to the point, often ungentle but never inconsiderate — he repeatedly gets right to the heart of the matter. "…female incomprehension of men." Exactly. And no amount of explaining or "inter-gender dialog" will ever entirely correct this. Women talk; men do. Ultimately, women will never understand men. If they could, they wouldn't need us.

"Men are happy for men to be men and women to be women; women want us all to be women." Never forget this. Keep it in mind, and you're well on your way to understanding women. Women want us all to be women — or children — because that's what they understand. But, like children, ultimately they don't know what's best for them.

Quote: *"I wouldn't be so quick to cast the entire IWF as anti-male based on the stupid comments of one moderator. Those comments do reveal the hostility toward men which is so prevalent in Western society, even in women who reject mainstream feminism. ... I didn't hear the talk given by Hoff Sommers, but whatever she said, we need to remember her work as a whole before lumping her in with the man-haters. ... In general, they are our allies, despite the fact that their focus is on women."*

They're not my "allies." They're just women, blabbing on as women do, sometimes making sense but as often just talking to hear themselves talk — because that's what women do. It's not a matter of being "anti-male" or pro-male; it's that level of "thinking" that is the problem. I'm not in a war with women, or feminists. They may be at war with me, but I refuse to cooperate — because if it is a war, then women have already won it. They cannot lose; on that level they own all the power. But a man — which is what I strive, hope to be — is not on that level; he has graduated from it.

As I've mentioned before, I'm not in the cheering section for such women as "iFeminists" or Christina Hoff Sommers. Sure, she makes more sense than most women these days, but she still thinks as a woman — as this quote makes clear, confirming my previous take on her. "Who stole feminism?" Nobody stole feminism; it never was anything else. Its true nature has become apparent as it has been allowed space to show itself. Restraint is the key; with it, we have human beings and civilization, without it we are overdeveloped apes living in chaos.

"The idea that women were repressed until the sexual revolution in the 1960's is absurd ... they were certainly restrained, a crucially different matter." –Melanie Phillips, *The Sex-Change Society: Feminised Britain and the Neutered Male.* Yes, women do occasionally make sense, and I'm glad to see it when they do; but I never take it for granted — or assume the next thing they say will make sense also. Women change; it's their nature. It's why men are designed, in 'Enry 'Iggins immortal phrase, to *"take a position and staunchly never budge."* So that women, finally exhausted themselves by their constant changes, can have something to rely on in this world.

Of course IWF's focus is on women; what else would it be? Women's focus ("Women's Focus" is the name of a local "public"-radio feminist program) is always on women — and, if they're among the increasingly few women who grow up, on children. It's the natural order: women take care of themselves and their children, men take care of women and children. Women do not understand men, any more than children understand adults; this is why, when women have overt power as they now do, they naturally, instinctively do everything in their power to keep boys from growing into men, i.e. growing out of their field of power. Thus the drugging of boys in female dominated schools. The very existence of men — adult, independent males, no longer mother-dominated — is an intolerable challenge to female political power. No such matriarchy can survive if there are any men in the vicinity.

Actually, the “Independent Women’s Forum,” like “iFeminists,” is just another oxymoron. There’s really no such thing as an “independent woman.” It is only the civilization that men — with our annoying insistence that 2+2=4, even if you don’t feel like it — have created that allows these women the leisure time for their endless coffee klatches. No need to be annoyed with them about it; it’s what women do. But don’t take it seriously, either; when women talk, they don’t mean the same thing(s) by it as men do. The sexes are different.

Philalethes Index Next

Interview with a Womenfirster: Phyllis Schlafly

Jack Kammer: What if I was the kind of man, like a lot of men who have confided to me, who is sick to death of the corporate world and in a heartbeat would stay home to take care of their kids because they love them so much and they know the business world is a crock?

Phyllis Schlafly:… That’s their problem. As I look around the world about me, I just don’t find there are many [women] who want the so-called non-traditional relationships.

-- a radio interview, WCVT-FM (now WTMD), Towson University, Maryland, January 5, 1989

Further Reading:

Philalethes #14 – Philalethes #14 – Hyphenate Them Any Way You Want, A Feminist is a Feminist is a Feminist

A Policy of Castrati – Soprano Nation – by Fred Reed

Buddha: From "The Sutra of the Past Vows of Earth Store Bodhisattva" (Commentary by Tripitaka Master Hsuan Hua - in America)

. · 3 January 2009 · Archived copy · Original

Sutra:

Buddha: "If there are women who detest the body of a woman, and who full-heartedly make offerings to Earth Store Bodhisattva's image, whether the image be a painting or made of earth, stone, lacquerware, brass, iron, or some other material, and if they do so day after day without fail, using flowers, incense, food, drink, clothing, colored silks, banners, money, jewels, and other items as offerings, when the female retribution body of those good women is exhausted, for hundreds of thousands of aeons they will never again be born in the worlds where there are women, much less be one, unless it be through the strength of their compassionate vows to liberate living beings. From the power of the meritorious virtues resulting from these offerings to Earth Store Bodhisattva, they will not receive the bodies of women throughout hundreds of thousands of tens of thousands of aeons.

Commentary:

Do not think that being a woman is a good thing, for being a woman involves a great deal of trouble. There are women who do not like it and always wonder why they have to be women; they want to learn what they can do about it. Through worship of Earth Store Bodhisattva these questions can be resolved.

What is the trouble involved in being a woman? Because there are people who might like to investigate this further, I will go into a bit more detail. You should not think of this as an attempt to cause women to dislike their state and leave home. If that occurred then there might be even more problems for me to deal with.

There are Five Obstructions and Ten Evils encountered by women. First we will discuss the Five Obstructions. The first is that women are not able to become the Great Brahma Lord because that position is accomplished through purity, and the body of a woman has a great many impurities. Second, women cannot become Sakra. An astute student may object that earlier we discussed the thirty-three women who became lords of the heavens. This objection is a valid one, but it should be realized that upon reaching the heavens their bodies became male, because only males can be lords of the heavens. Although Sakra has some desire remaining, that desire is quite light; women, on the other hand, are extremely libidinous and consequently cannot become Sakra.

Third, women cannot become demon kings. This is not too bad. They cannot attain this position because demons are extremely hard, solid, and firm, while women are extremely soft and weak. As soon as anything unusual comes up they are at a loss and have to seek help. Fourth, beings cannot be wise wheel-turning kings - the gold, silver, copper, and iron wheel-turning kings - as long as they have female bodies. Wise kings have hearts of great compassion and kindness; they teach people to maintain the Five Precepts and the Ten Good Deeds. Whenever women see something good occur to others, they become jealous, and this keeps them from having great compassion. Because of this basic problem, they cannot become Buddhas. Buddhas have ten thousand virtues; women have many evils. They are jealous and obstructive, and their hearts are about the size of a sesame seed.

If, however, women are able to rid themselves of jealousy, desire, weakness, defilement, and of all evils, they may become men, and so theirs is not a hopeless plight. There is, for example, the case of the dragon king's daughter. When Sariputra said that she could not become a Buddha, she took a precious gem, her most valuable and cherished possession, and offered it to the Buddha, who accepted it. She then asked Sariputra if the Buddha's acceptance of her offering was fast, and he replied that, indeed, it had been quick. "I shall become a Buddha that quickly," she

said and then she became a Buddha. This is proof that women's lot is not hopeless. All they must do is resolve to cultivate courageously and they too can become Buddhas.

There are also Ten Evils that pertain to women. First, at their birth their parents are displeased. Although it is not always the case that parents are displeased at the birth of a daughter, in most societies this is the case, and a daughter starts out life by making a bad impression on her parents.

The second evil is that raising daughters is not a very interesting task. The third is that women are always afraid of people. Boys are not usually afraid, but girls almost always are. The fourth evil connected with women is that their parents undergo a great deal of worry about their daughters' marriage. In America this is not a major matter, but in most other countries parents have to give a great deal of consideration to finding good husbands for their daughters.

Once girls grow up, the fifth of the Ten Evils occurs, when they have to leave their parents alone. The sixth comes after they have been married and are in constant fear of their husbands. When a husband likes something, they are pleased, and when he is angry, they cower in terror. The seventh evil of women is the difficulty and fear of giving birth.

The eighth difficulty is that no matter what they do or say, the report gets back to their parents that they are not good. Although the good remains, it is a goodness that does not influence their parents. The ninth is that they are always controlled by their husbands and are subject to many restrictions, which, if broken, can lead to divorce.

The above nine evils apply to women in their youth. They are old when the tenth arrives and their own children and grandchildren slight them. As the proverb says, "To be old and not yet dead is to be a thief." These are only a few of the many problems involved with being a woman. To explain all of them in detail would be an unending task.

EOTM: Welcome to Eye of the Mind

. · 4 January 2009 · Archived copy · Original

If the doors of perception were cleansed every thing would appear to man as it really is, infinite." -- William Blake

---

.
Visual Reality
Zen and the Art of Motorcycle Maintenance
Philosophy and Theology
The Deep Water: Gender War, Sexuality, and Love
The Environment
Science and Technology
Creating the Future
.

Only in the mind's eye can things truly be seen. The blind man often sees more than his "sighted" cousin because he is less misled by the surfaces of things and is more interested in their substance. Perception includes mind, body, emotion and, most of all, spirit. One must be aware in all 4 dimensions to be fully alive.

Any and all possible futures will be seen first in the eye of the mind. We create the world as we see it.

These pages are dedicated to those seeking to become accomplished artists in the Art of Living. Most artists become comfortable with a few selected media and materials. The selection of topics represent my favorites. Many more are worthy of consideration, but that's why there are other web pages.

There are two great mystical forces which rule the lives of human beings. One is the life force itself. The other is that elusive force we call consciousness. Life, we share with countless other entities on this planet. But we maintain the belief that consciousness sets us apart and above all other forms of life: that it belongs to the god-like alone. In our desire to be as gods, we have elevated the force of consciousness and begun to worship it while we have shown ever increasing contempt for all life save our own and, often enough, for

our own as well.

I heartily agree with the geocities' stated philosophy of creating new communities on the new frontier and thank them for providing such a forum. The new milennium is upon us and humanity has pillaged the planet to support its ever growing need to consume. We humans, so anxious to see ourselves in the images of the gods & goddesses we worship, have achieved only one of the godlike powers, the power to destroy. We need to turn as much energy toward the power to create and generate as we have toward consuming the resources of the earth if we are to survive.

Today the cerebral cortex of the brain rules. People want to believe that all behavior is thought out in advance and that it follows the sterile logic of only half the brain, the left brain. Their analysis of the motivations underlying the behavior are speculative nonsense which leaves out 90% of the information available and adheres to a peculiar line of thinking specific to that individual. The results are presented as "logical" but there is no logic whatsoever behind it. It is merely the result of their own built in biases, which they are so close to that they cannot see.

The MIND is NOT the BRAIN. The mind is just as aware of the information it is receiving from the little toe as it gets from the 5:00 news. The mind has a sense of connection to a power greater than itself. And the mind receives information from something called the soul. There is something deep within us that is the essence of the will/desire/drive/whatever to be **ALIVE.** Something that BELIEVES and WANTS and KNOWS right from wrong.

We need to make people as mindful in their behavior as we currently would like to believe they are. My goal for these pages is to celebrate and provide a forum for the full development of all dimensions of the mind. I invite contributions and suggestions. I consider art to be an integral part of mental and spiritual development and I hope visitors will see a certain esthetic unity, if not homogeniety. Please comment on this aspect of the site as well. At present, I have only established the general structure of the site. Things that look like links hopefully will become so. Suggestions for sites in each of the categories are welcome.

While the content of this site is definitely "adult", it is not so in the sense that one usually sees on the net. My intent is to deal in subjects that only a mature mind can really grasp, thus the only ones interested in pursuing those subjects. While these subjects contain details of the type usually not easily discussed by parents with their children, I don't believe that anyone will find my treatment of the subjects to be offensive except that I don't cut people much slack for silliness.

Parents who are willing to let the child indulge her/his own natural tendency to learn and question can freely move around this site if they use the eye as a navigation aid. The eye will lead to controversial topics, but the controversial discussions lie behind links which you have to look for. If the content intrigues you, you will be interested in reading further. Children will not. The eye will lead them on a tour and the big eye will always lead them home. Anyone willing to wade through the verbage to get the content, deserves it in my book. Most parents can rest secure in the fact that I am going to make it so much work that their children will never do it. Roam around yourself a bit first then, if you are comfortable with the content and the way in which it it addressed, feel free to bring your son or daughter back to start a dialogue on things you'd like to talk to them about. Sortof.

.

.

Visual Reality

Zen and the Art of Motorcycle Maintenance
Philosophy and Theology
The Deep Water: Gender War, Sexuality, and Love
The Environment
Science and Technology
Creating the Future
.

Buddha: Selected Writings of Nichiren

. · 5 January 2009 · Archived copy · Original

- Women are messengers from hell. They cut off the seeds of Buddhahood. They have the faces of bodhisattvas, but their hearts are like demons. Women can no more attain Buddhahood than can a dried up seed sprout.

- The course of a river and a woman's mind both wander. Water is malleable, it turns here and there when rocks and mountains block its path. Women are like this. They are inconstant as water. Although they know what is right, when they run into the strong will of a man, they are checked and turn in bad directions. The right fades like a line drawn on the water. Women's nature is unsteady: though they see what they should be, they soon become what they should not be. Buddhahood is founded on integrity. Therefore, women, who are easily swayed, cannot become Buddhas. Women have the "five obstacles" (inability to become anything great) and the "three followings" (follows first the father, then the husband, then the son). Thus in one sutra it is written: "Even should the eyes of all the buddhas of the three worlds fall to the earth, women cannot become Buddha." Another text says: "Even if you can capture the clear wind, you can never capture the mind of a woman."

- The passions of all the men of the three thousand worlds and the hindrances to the salvation of one woman are comparably immeasurable.

- Among the three pleasures of Yung Ch'i-ch'i (in "Tales of Chuang Tzu") was the pleasure of not being born as a woman. He also named the pleasure of not being reborn in heaven as a woman.

EOTM: This Is Zen

. · 6 January 2009 · Archived copy · Original

Like listening for the sound of one hand clapping, looking at this picture for a while will tell you all the essence of zen. It cannot be described, tho much good writing about it exists. Each of us leaves footprints in the sand as we travel through this adventure called life. If we pause for a moment and look back at those footprints, we are struck with their smallness and temporary nature when set against the backdrop of the immense elemental forces of the seashore. The yin & yang of the waves within the larger yin/yang of the tides will wash them away within hours, if the wind does not blow them away within minutes.

I call myself a zen priest, yet that is purely self-appointed. When I was young and full of myself, I wanted to be a zen master and teacher. One day it occurred to me that the road to mastery was to live it every moment. There are far more rewards from living it than from the public recognition of my "mastery". It is a remarkably fulfilling and serene way to view life. I promote it as an answer to the increasingly chaotic world in which we live.

In the best (perhaps only true) zen movie ever made, "Cirlce of Iron," the protagonist, Cord (that which binds), finds that all answers are found in the mirror. Today, in western culture particularly, all answers seem to lie outside ourselves. We are a culture of reacters, blamers, and victims. There are always buts, whys, and becauses which explain our destructive behavior. None of them make it non-destructive. The destruction and violence will continue until each person begins to stay one's own hand and take complete responsibility for one's own acts.

There are other cosmologies which include this, one in particular called Wicca, and I hope to be able to provide the means to explore them as well on these pages.

.

.

Philosophy and Theology: The Old Gods
Science and Technology: The New Gods
The Goddess and The God of the Wicca
The God
The Goddess

The Politics of Aristotle: The Spartan Women

. · 7 January 2009 · Archived copy · Original

Again, the license of the Lacedaemonian women defeats the intention of the Spartan constitution, and is adverse to the happiness of the state. For, a husband and wife being each a part of every family, the state may be considered as about equally divided into men and women; and, therefore, *in those states in which the condition of the women is bad, half the city may be regarded as having no laws. And this is what has actually happened at Sparta; the legislator wanted to make the whole state hardy and temperate, and he has carried out his intention in the case of the men, but he has neglected the women, who live in every sort of intemperance and luxury.* The consequence is that in such a state wealth is too highly valued, especially if the citizen fall under the dominion of their wives, after the manner of most warlike races, except the Celts and a few others who openly approve of male loves. The old mythologer would seem to have been right in uniting Ares and Aphrodite, for all warlike races are prone to the love either of men or of women. This was exemplified among the Spartans in the days of their greatness; many things were managed by their women. *But what difference does it make whether women rule, or the rulers are ruled by women? The result is the same.* Even in regard to courage, which is of no use in daily life, and is needed only in war, the influence of the Lacedaemonian women has been most mischievous. *The evil showed itself in the Theban invasion, when, unlike the women of other cities, they were utterly useless and caused more confusion than the enemy.* This license of the Lacedaemonian women existed from the earliest times, and was only what might be expected. For, during the wars of the Lacedaemonians, first against the Argives, and afterwards against the Arcadians and Messenians, the men were long away from home, and, on the return of peace, they gave themselves into the legislator's hand, already prepared by the discipline of a soldier's life (in which there are many elements of virtue), to receive his enactments. *But, when Lycurgus, as tradition says, wanted to bring the women under his laws, they resisted, and he gave up the attempt.* These then are the causes of what then happened, and this defect in the constitution is clearly to be attributed to them. We are not, however, considering what is or is not to be excused, but what is right or wrong, and the disorder of the women, as I have already said, not only gives an air of indecorum to the constitution considered in itself, but tends in a measure to foster avarice.

The mention of avarice naturally suggests a criticism on the inequality of property. While some of the Spartan citizen have quite small properties, others have very large ones; hence the land has passed into the hands of a few. And this is due also to faulty laws; for, although the legislator rightly holds up to shame the sale or purchase of an inheritance, he allows anybody who likes to give or bequeath it. Yet both practices lead to the same result. *And nearly two-fifths of the whole country are held by women;* this is owing to the number of heiresses and to the large dowries which are customary. It would surely have been better to have given no dowries at all, or, if any, but small or moderate ones. As the law now stands, a man may bestow his heiress on any one whom he pleases, and, if he die intestate, the privilege of giving her away descends to his heir. Hence, although the country is able to maintain 1500 cavalry and 30,000 hoplites, *the whole number of Spartan citizens fell below 1000. The result proves the faulty nature of their laws respecting property; for the city sank under a single defeat; the want of men was their ruin.*

Related:

The Man-Woman – by Hic Mueller, 1620

On this same issue, here is an abstract from the essay "Rulers Ruled by Women" – An Economic Analysis of the Rise and Fall of Women's Rights in Ancient Sparta

ABSTRACT: Throughout most of history, women as a class have possessed relatively few formal rights. The women of ancient Sparta were a striking exception. Although they could not vote, Spartan women reportedly owned 40 percent of Sparta's agricultural land and enjoyed other rights that were equally extraordinary. We offer a simple economic explanation for the Spartan anomaly. The defining moment for Sparta was its conquest of a neighboring land and people, which fundamentally changed the marginal products of Spartan men's and Spartan women's labor. To exploit the potential gains from a reallocation of labor – specifically, to provide the appropriate incentives and the proper human capital formation – men granted women property (and other) rights. Consistent with our explanation for the rise of women's rights, when Sparta lost the conquered land several centuries later, the rights for women disappeared. Two conclusions emerge that may help explain why women's rights have been so rare for most of history. First, in contrast to the rest of the world, the optimal (from the men's perspective) division of labor among Spartans involved women in work that was not easily monitored by men. Second, the rights held by Spartan women may have been part of an unstable equilibrium, which contained the seeds of its own destruction.

The Liberation of Men

. · 6 April 2010 · Archived copy · Original

To the woman he said, "I will make your pains in childbearing very severe; with painful labor you will give birth to children. Your desire will be for your husband, and he will rule over you."

To Adam he said, "*Because you listened to your wife* and ate fruit from the tree about which I commanded you, 'You must not eat from it,' "*Cursed is the ground because of you; through painful toil you will eat food from it all the days of your life. It will produce thorns and thistles for you, and you will eat the plants of the field. By the sweat of your brow you will eat your food* until you return to the ground, since from it you were taken; for dust you are and to dust you will return." -- Genesis 3:16-19

And so it has been ever since, until feminism convinced women to unwittingly take on men's curse as their own.

And what's a man to do about it, after all? Despite corporate and feminist attempts at designing various ways for emasculated males to take on the pains of child-birth, there can never be a true understanding for males of what it is like to give birth. This is women's curse, and it is their curse alone to bear, for it is impossible for men to share equally with her in it - even if men were so stupid to want to.

Apparently though, this is not the case in reverse, for women seem to not only be agreeable to take on man's curse, but they are downright using every bit of power their feminine wiles can muster to force it into social and legal acceptance, and if it tosses men aside in the meantime, then so be it! Ever heard about Tom Sawyer & Huckleberry Finn and the great whitewashing of the fence fiasco? Well, this situation is similar, except that the one's holding the short end of the stick (men) aren't the one's doing the manipulating!

.

.

No, in the situation of men's curse, it is actually *the women* that are manipulating behind the scenes for the curse of toil and labour, without any real encouragement (nor discouragement) from the males. Apparently, women are *demanding* to alleviate men from their curse. Well, gosh and golly, I suggest that the slaves *let them!* What slave on the plantation would scorn his master for demanding the slave work less, so that his master may reap *the benefits* of being a cotton-picker?

But, it's not all quite so simple. Perhaps we should look at this a little closer.

Doing the Math

This morning, as I was watching the Business News Network (B.N.N.), Rona Ambrose, the Canadian Minister for the Status of Women (S.O.W.), trumpeted out the same old tired song about women on executive boards once more. The refrain goes like this: "Research has shown that having more women on executive boards is good for the economy. Therefore..."

.

.

Really? Is that so? Or is it simply that when you *only* consult advocacy researchers from an ideologically driven and politically activist arm of academia (Women's Studies), you will only receive results that are consistent with their ideology.

For example, since the stock market crashed back in 2008-2009, the Business News Network has relentlessly trumpeted that women who were investment managers fared better than men, because women are more "risk averse." And this is true, so long as you cherry-pick through your research and ignore any factors which don't support your ideology. The real truth of the story, however, is that while female investment managers lost less money during the crash than male investment managers, in the run-up to the crash, women also created less wealth because of their aversion to risk. All you have to do is run a few numbers to see what a fraud the Business News Network is promoting as "fact."

For example, if a man invests $10,000 and averages a return of 9% a year for 8 years, he will have $19,926. Then when the economy collapses and he loses 20% of it, he will be left with $15,941. And, if, during the same time frame, a woman invests $10,000 and averages a return of 6%, after eight years she will have $15,938. When the economy collapses and she loses only 10% because of her aversion to risk, she will have $14,345 left. Hmmm... so, sure, *during the market crash*, it appears that she "out-performed" because she lost only 10% as opposed to the man's 20% loss, but overall, you would still be better off with the man's pot of cash than with the woman's. In fact, the man still earned 11.1% more than her during the same time frame. These are quite some "facts" media shills like the Business News Network are promoting, aren't they? Indeed, making less money than men shows how superior women are, so long as the real facts are distorted and hidden. Makes you wonder why anyone would watch such a channel trying to learn "the facts," doesn't it? I guess they are trying to make sure that women aren't oppressed by math.

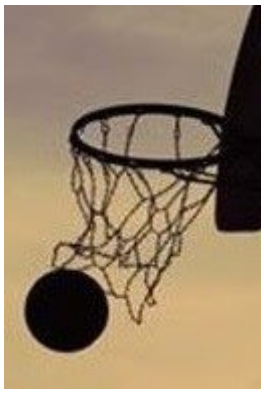
Another ideologically driven "fact" that gets bandied about is that women somehow bring more ethics and morality to the workplace - especially when they are on the board of directors of major companies. This "women are more ethically pure *fact"* is just more smoke and mirrors, since it has long been known that while men are more prone to break the law with crimes of violence, women break the law in greater numbers than men in crimes of deceit, such as perjury, fraud and embezzlement. The shucksters in academia and the media get their "women are more morally pure" trope from the fact that women are *prosecuted* less for these crimes of deceit than men are. Women are also given far lighter sentences for the same crime when they are actually convicted (this is true of all crimes), and so it is that there are more men *in prison* for crimes of deceit than women, even though *women* commit the majority of deceit crimes. This is indeed an interesting fact that insinuates many things about our society and our notions of "equality under the law," but in no way does it stand as valid research which proves women's ethical and moral purity is greater than men's. For these very women who release such "facts" which are obviously lies in themselves, it illustrates something very negative about *their* ethics and morals in the first place, wouldn't you agree?

And yes, my goodness, I know, women only receive $0.76 for every dollar a man *earns*! This has been debunked so

many times by so many people that I feel rather foolish even mentioning it, but here we are. Women are not paid $0.76 for doing the exact same work as men, (this has been illegal in America since the Equal Pay Act back in 1963) rather, because of the *choices* women make and the *lesser hours* they actually work throughout their "careers," they only *earn* 76% of the wages that men do.

Imagine for a moment that there are two young boys, Jack and Tom. Both are eight years old and have identical abilities in *every* possible way. Both of them have a dream to be accepted to the basketball team when they enter university, and so they start practicing for when the day comes that they will be given the opportunity to try out for the team by shooting hoops each day after school.

.



.

Jack dedicates himself by shooting hoops for 60 minutes every day. Tom, however, has taken it upon himself to also have a paper route so he can earn a little pocket-money, and in order to make the time for delivering his papers, he only practices for 45 minutes a day. After four years of practice, 12 year old Jack will have spent 1,460 hours practicing as opposed to Tom's 1,095 hours, and by now, Jack is able to put the ball through the hoop with 8 out of every 20 attempts. Tom, however, is only able to sink 6 out of every 20 attempts, because he practiced less than Jack. Out of frustration at his lack of performance, Tom wonders if perhaps basketball isn't for him after all, and so he quits practicing and takes up karate instead, while Jack continues shooting hoops faithfully for 60 minutes a day. But after three years of karate, the now 15 year old Tom decides that he really did like basketball better than karate after all, and so he quits his karate classes and resumes practicing hoops for 45 minutes a day. At this point, after 2,555 hours of practice, Jack is able to sink 14 baskets out of 20, but Tom, who hasn't practiced at all in the last three years and is now a bit rusty, is only able to make 5 out of 20 baskets. But, both boys continue practicing for the next three years until they finally enter college and are able to try out for the team. By now, Jack has spent 3,650 hours practicing and he can sink 20 out of 20 shots *every time* and he easily gets accepted onto the team. Tom, however, has spent only 1,916 hours practicing over the past ten years and is only able to make 10 shots out of 20... and so he doesn't make the team. The two boys were of identical ability, remember, and their outcomes were different *only because of the choices* each boy made throughout the past ten years. Had Tom made the same choices as Jack, he probably would have made the team too.

It's pretty easy to see how this translates to the workplace. Is Tom only getting "paid" $0.50 for each $1.00 Jack makes? Nope, he's getting paid exactly what he deserves. Is there a patriarchal basketball players club conspiring behind the scenes to keep Tom off the team? No again. Choices have consequences. What a revolutionary concept!

All you need to know about how false the $0.76 propaganda which academic and media charlatans like BNN spews forth is this: If it were true that women only made 76% of the wages as men for doing the exact same thing with the exact same efficiency, then there would be no shortage of people who would simply buy a company, fire all the men, and replace them with the far cheaper labour of women. They would make money hand over fist while putting the competition out of business for secretly conspiring behind the scenes to pay men more than women. It's such a simple formula for success that it's amazing no one has thought of it before, eh?

Equal Opportunity or Equal Outcomes?

You can see the fraud of feminist "academics" and the media's complicity in perpetuating their lies fully exposed by the way they reported on Wal-Mart's recent Supreme Court case regarding whether there was "a culture of discrimination" against women in their organization. Keep in mind that even though Wal-Mart successfully defended themselves, they did not entirely "win" either. It was because feminist lawyers tried to launch a class-action suit that the Supreme Court said there was no definite policy at Wal-Mart which favoured men over women, and thus they did not entirely throw the law-suit out, but rather said that it must be dealt with in the lower courts on a more individual basis instead. And how did the BNN cover this story? Why, in order to get a "balanced and unbiased" view on the decision, they interviewed a feminist from Eastern Canada and another feminist from Western Canada. (Gee, I guess degrees in Journalism are about as useless as degrees in Women's Studies). The consensus was that this culture of discrimination against women was allowed to persist because there were too many of those dastardly right-leaning *men* on the Supreme Court still perpetuating the infamous "Old Boys Club." But don't worry, they pointed out that soon Obama will be able to stuff a couple more of these "morally and ethically pure" women onto the Supreme Court, so that when a case like this is inevitably brought before the court again, the decision will be in favour of women.

What they glossed over completely, however, was the absurdity of the argument itself, and the dire implications it would have had on Wal-Mart, as well as every other company in America, and they failed to extrapolate the implications further to its effect on the economy over-all.

One of the core arguments of the lawsuit was that men were promoted to management positions ahead of women because women were unable to work as many hours as men and women could not as easily move to undesirable locations where they would more easily advance their careers because of the *other* responsibilities women had *outside* of the workplace, such as caring for children or elderly parents.

In other words, if we take this back to our basketball example with Jack and Tom, the argument becomes that since Tom had other things to do besides practice shooting hoops, such as his paper route and karate classes, the university had no right to "discriminate" against him for only being able to make 50% of the baskets as Jack, and both boys *should* be equally accepted to the team, regardless of their actual performance abilities.

That's literally what was being argued in this Wal-Mart case. Because women have other responsibilities that are completely not related to the workplace, it is workplace discrimination for them not to receive promotions and pay commensurate to those who actually did work more hours and made more sacrifices which advanced their careers.

Thus, if the BNN were actually in the business of reporting the facts, and Wal-mart had lost their case, rather than reporting it as a "triumph for women," they would have been more accurate to report it as follows:

"Wal-Mart Forced to Replace Top-Notch Management with Mediocre Employees. Long-Term Outlook for Stock Valuations is Grim!"

This is not a slam against women, this is simply the truth. It wouldn't matter if the employees were male or female. If you take employees willing to work 60 hours a week and relocate wherever they need to, and replace them with employees only willing to work 40 hours a week and only in desirable locations, it doesn't matter which gender, you would be severely handicapping the company.

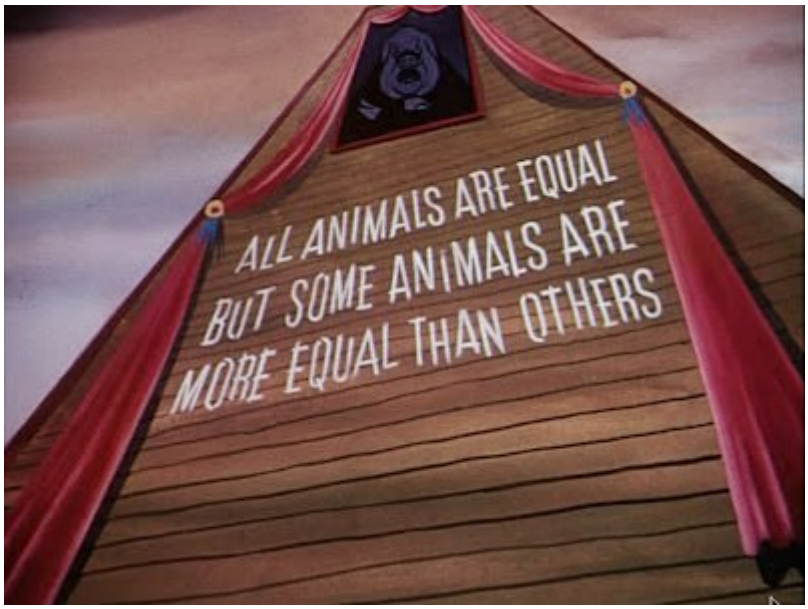
In the same way, if Jack and Tom's university would insist that out of the five basketball players on the court, at least two players who are capable of making 20 out of 20 baskets must be replaced with players only capable of making 10 out of 20 baskets, the performance of the team would suffer - especially against teams that are not

burdened in the same way. It is pretty easy to see the numbers. If five players take 100 shots and 100 of them go through the basket, such a team will far out-perform a team that can only make 80 out of 100 baskets, which is exactly what would happen if the team were to replace two players at Jack's 100% ratio with two players at Tom's 50% ratio.

And you thought globalization and cheap foreign labour was the only reason the Western World is falling behind the Developing World, eh?

Equal or "Equal?" (Wink! Wink!)

.



.

"Differences [between men and women], including the products of social inequality, *make unequal treatment not unequal at all."* -- Catharine MacKinnon, *"Reflections on Sex Equality Under Law,"* Yale Law Journal, 1991

When the Status of Women Canada, the "academic" juggernaut of Women's Studies, and the Business News Network (BNN) continually make the case that more women *deserve* to be on executive boards regardless of their abilities (due to outside choices women themselves are making in their lives), you will discover they never argue that it extends that women also, therefore, deserve to be equally represented in jobs that don't carry prestige and high pay. After all, when was the last time Minister Rona Ambrose got on the TV and argued how ridiculous it is that women are "oppressed" because they make up less than 10% of the garbage collectors in the country? I mean, you would think that the government would *want* women to take on more of the low prestige, dangerous and dirty jobs, since careless and clumsy men are accounting for over 90% of all workplace injuries and deaths. The government and Canadian employers would save billions a year in Worker's Compensation expenses by increasing the amount of women in these types of jobs. This is simple feminist math. If over 90% of all workplace injuries and deaths are males, then if we increase the amount of women in these positions to 50%, we will reduce such injuries and deaths by around half as well! It's so simple!

Of course, you know I am being facetious.

But seriously, what does anyone think will happen to the men who are in these high paying, prestigious jobs such as CEO or Chairman of the Board? When the government of Norway made it law that all corporate boards must have at least 40% women, do you think they simply created more positions and only hired women until they made up 40%, or did they keep the amount of positions the same, fire the required amount of men, and then replaced them with women? I think you know the answer without my stating it.

What you find in the workforce is the same that you will find almost everywhere else when you compare men and women. While our averages are pretty close to the same, how we reach those averages is quite different. For example, men and women both have similar averages of IQ, however there is far greater variability in male IQ than in the female IQ, which is clustered around the mean in greater intensity than with males. Thus, even though we have similar averages in IQ, there are far more males who inhabit the areas of extremely high IQ and extremely low IQ. This translates also into the workforce, where you will find that the very powerful and wealthy (like CEO's or those on executive boards) are mostly male, *and also* that most of the very poor, like the homeless, are male (85% of the homeless are males). It's not only intellectually dishonest to selectively observe only the men who have risen to the top while at the same time ignoring the men that have fallen through the floor, but it is also socially irresponsible. It's like taking the examples of Denzel Washington and Will Smith as successful and powerful black millionaires, and therefore claiming there is no poverty problem in the Black Community. But this is exactly what is done every single time that "our betters" in the government, academia, and the media address women in the workplace.

If, as a society, we are going to boot out qualified men from top positions to make way for less qualified and less motivated women, it will cause a chain reaction all the way down and increase the amount of those at the bottom. After all, if those who would have merited an executive board position are restricted from achieving those levels, they will be stuck being over-qualified and underpaid at the middle-management level, where again, they will be displacing those who should have merited middle management positions, and forcing those men downwards to lower management and basic employee status. Thus, the men currently in those lowest of positions will be losing their jobs and sleeping on the streets.

The Return of Aristocracy

It's not hard to see that if fully qualified men are displaced from high level prestigious positions, to be replaced with less qualified, less motivated women - while at the same time ignoring the fact that women are not equally represented in the less desirable positions like garbage collector, ditch digger, or enemy moving target - we will be returning to an aristocratic class structure in society, except based on gender rather than bloodline.

.

.

Again, it is just simple math. If women only replace men at the top, in the most prestigious and well paying of jobs, then you are virtually guaranteed to increase the amount of men in the dredges of the workforce, or drive those men out of the workforce entirely and into the streets.

Quite frankly, men would be twits if they continued working their tails off 60 hours a week trying to get ahead in the corporate rat race, if they had no chance of making it because a woman who only works 40 hours a week will be

preferred for the job anyways. It will very quickly become that men will simply stop trying to be successful in those jobs at all and abandon them en masse for jobs where they don't have to put up with such nonsense. You don't think that will happen? Have a look at how men have virtually disappeared from the teaching profession since every man in close proximity to a child has become viewed as a pedophile. Men simply said, "No thanks," and moved on to other professions.

In a generation or two, you will see the class distinction between men and women quite clearly. Women: Good paying, high prestige jobs in air-conditioned offices. Men: Shutting up and shoveling the gravel to keep the electricity on and the sewers working. That's some "equality."

.

.

Hypergamy and the End of Marriage

.

The essence of hypergamy is that women "marry up" while men "settle down." Thus, we see in society that, while men are not necessarily "better" than women in general, women do insist that the men they marry are "better" than they are. Male doctors marry female nurses. Male lawyers marry female secretaries. Male factory workers marry the waitress at the diner, and so on. Conversely however, female CEO's *do not* marry auto-mechanics, but rather, they tend to seek out a mate who is "higher" than she is. The problem is, when you are a female who is near the top of the economic food chain, there are very, very few males who meet this criteria, and of the ones that are actually around, hypergamy dictates that those males are attractive to all the different levels of females below him. Not only are there slim romantic pickings for women at the top, but they have to stand in line with, oh, about a gajillion other women for the only men they are attracted to.

Now, many women counter this by saying that they "had to" marry upwards, because it was the only way they could be socially and financially mobile under the dreaded Patriarchy. If men were just to step aside and make room for women at the top, things would change. It's too bad that this is not the case though. In fact, there is much evidence that it is not men's super-sized egos that demands they must earn more money than their wives, but rather it is women themselves that are angry at husbands who don't earn as much money and thus, they aren't "pulling their weight." This is further evidenced by "kitchen-bitch" marriages, where the roles are reversed with a female breadwinner and the man being more focused on the home. The divorce statistics for regular marriages are bad enough, but in kitchen-bitch marriages, divorce rates sky-rocket to 90% - yes, that high!

Hypergamy is a very real force to be reckoned with - especially if we are to continue shoe-horning women into top positions of power and wealth. If we create an aristocratic class of women and a peasant class of men, then marriage - as screwed up and broken as it already is - will pretty much grind to a complete halt. The prince marries

the maiden Cinderella who scrubs her step-mother's floors, remember? Snow White did not marry one of the Seven Dwarves.

Perhaps now you can understand why men work their tails off more than women to have a successful career. It fulfills women's hypergamy and makes men sexually attractive to women, whereas women are not considered either more nor less sexually attractive because of their social and financial status. They don't have near the motivation for it as men do! Furthermore, women are not socially considered to be deadbeats if they are not economic performers, nor are they considered to be "bums" if they take a few years off and let their husbands fully support them while they pursue other things they want in life. Working, for men, is not a choice like it is for many women. Either men work or they become invisible. It only makes sense then, that men will put in more effort to make their jobs "work" for them, while women, who have other options, will not view the workplace with the same intensity as men.

"Only 14 percent of female middle managers aspire to be CEO; the figure is 45 percent for middle managers who are male." -- Newsletter of the Women's Freedom Network, Spring 1997

Mutilated Beggars

During the economic crisis in 2008 and 2009, we termed the resulting recession as "the mancession" because the vast majority of the jobs lost were those done by men. If I remember correctly, it was three men losing a job to every woman who became unemployed. But, when the economic stimulus was injected into the economy, they had feminists appearing on the Business News Network (BNN), madder than wet hens that women were not equally receiving stimulus money as men. It really did make sense that more money was spent on men's jobs than women's, since those *were* the vast majority of the unemployed, but feminists demanded 50/50 equality in the spending of stimulus funds. See how this works? America had become A Woman's Nation because they finally outnumbered men in the workforce, and they were so gracious about it that they cackled and laughed and wrote about The End of Men, spitting in men's faces when they were down. But when it came time to deal with the problem and get men back on their feet, they screamed and wailed that they were *victims* for not receiving equal funds - funds they did not need nearly so much as men.

And further, when people mentioned that a lot of those men were supporting families, you could almost see the hatred spill from the now ex BNN news anchor*ess,* Kim Parlee's eyes, matching the spirit of her "unbiased" panel: a gaggle of feminists pulling The Mutilated Beggar argument. You see, women support their families too! Therefore, it was sexist to insinuate that it was higher priority to put those men back to work instead of women.

.

.

Except... let's not forget that, at the behest of feminist and media brainwashing, we now claim that "all families are equal."

But they aren't.

When we talk of men and their families, we are talking about a man, a woman, and the children they might have together. When we talk of women and their families, however, we are talking about a single or divorced woman and the children she has. The man is non-existent in this paradigm.

But does that mean that man has truly ceased to exist?

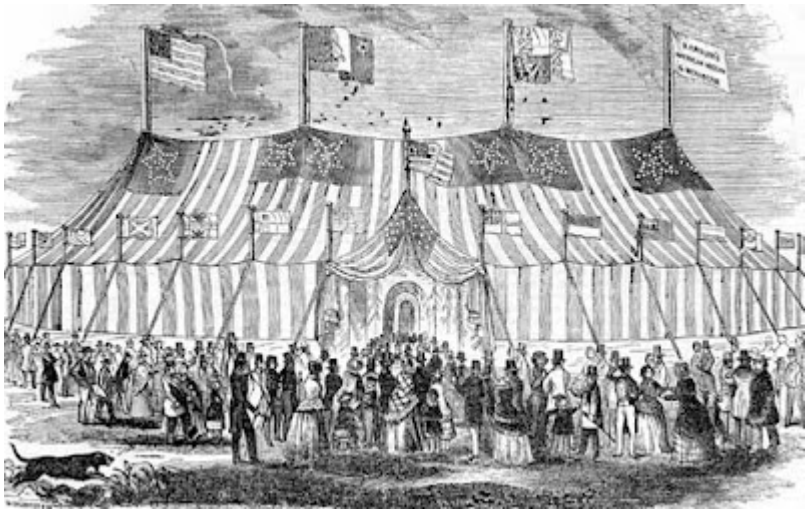
Nope, what it means is that the man, whose job was taken by a woman, is now sleeping down by the river beneath a bridge.

You see, men take care of themselves, women and children. But women? They take care of only themselves and children, while leaving the man to fend for himself. Thus, if you wanted to benefit *the most* people in society with jobs, you would first give the work to men who then turn over their paychecks to their wives. This simply does not work the same way in reverse.

This Way to See the Great Egress!

"There is a great old story about PT Barnum. One of his shows was so successful that the crowds were becoming dangerous. People were so packed that there was a real danger of some of them getting trampled. So, he had his carnies open some of the gates and his barkers start shouting "This way to see the great EGRESS!" The herd surged through the gates and found out that "egress" means "exit.""

.



.

Feminism has done far more to liberate men than it has to liberate women, although most men don't think it has at first glance.

All throughout history, men have had the curse of having to work. Society greatly enforced the "gender role" of men being the breadwinner who then passes on "the bread" to females. Up until the feminist revolution of the past fifty or so years, the only men who got away with being socially acceptable without tying themselves to the responsibilities of a job, a marriage, and supporting a wife and children, were eccentric rich men. For the rest, if you didn't follow in the condoned path you were considered a social outcast. But remember, men only need to expend around 20-30% of their labour ability in order to survive - when yoked to a woman and children, the excess

went to them, not to the man.

Women are as independent as a tropical fern in a greenhouse in Iceland. This goes all the way back to when we were living in caves. When the woman heard a rustling outside, she pushed her caveman out first, using him as a shield to check if it was a sabre tooth tiger. Once the area outside of the cave was secure, the woman took over the immediate area around the cave while she sent the man further out into the dangers of the wilderness to hunt mammoths and bring her back some meat for dinner. Once the male has made things safe and easy, the woman takes over and pushes the man away, insisting he move on and make *more* things safe and easy... and when he succeeds in doing it, she takes over that space too!

The same thing happens in the workplace. Work was never been "fun" for men. It has been oppressive and often downright dangerous. The 50 some odd men who gave their lives so that the Hoover Dam could provide electricity for women and make their lives much easier probably didn't feel overwhelmed with their "patriarchal power." But, as soon as men make a certain area of the workforce safe and pleasant, women immediately move in and claim they were "oppressed" by not having the opportunity to do such work throughout history. Today, women are not claiming they are being "oppressed" by not being represented in great numbers in the construction industry. But this kind of work is often dangerous and dirty, climbing around on roofs and scaffolding while pounding away with a hammer and being exposed to all sorts of inclement weather. However, once construction work becomes so computerized, safe and pleasant that one can build a house by sitting in an air-conditioned box, pushing buttons while gabbing mindlessly with one's friends, women will claim they have been "oppressed" throughout history for being "denied" the opportunity to do such work, and they will force the men out so that they may exercise their girl power.

I say, "Let them!"

Sure, men still have to find some work to do in order to provide for themselves, but so long as they aren't attached to women and children - which feminism has done everything possible to make happen - they really don't need to work *that* hard. If you don't get saddled down with debt for a useless degree, or a useless McMansion, or a useless wife who secretly hates your guts, but rather find something decent to do like being an electrician or a plumber, you could easily save up enough money by 35 or 40 to run off to Mexico or Thailand and live like a king, never having to be a wage slave again.

Women are demanding to have our curse because "They don't need no Ma-yan!"

Let them take it!

Work sucks! A bad day of fishing is better than a good day at work!

You Go, Grrrls! Men have better things to do!

.

.

Previous Index Next

MGTOW

"If it's not right, Go Your Own Way!"

.....
..oooO.....
..(....).....
….\..(.....
…. _/.....
…….....Oooo..
…….....(....)…
……..)../....
.....(_/.....
.....

Philalethes #1 - Feminist Allies?

. · 14 June 2010 · Archived copy · Original

1). Quote: *"I am sure in their own way groups like IWF mean well but the truth is, they're still feminists."*

Close, but not exactly. They themselves will dispute the "feminist" label, which — since, like any word used by women, it can mean whatever the speaker wants it to mean at the moment — only confuses things. The truth is, they're still women, and as such are different from men: they think differently, have different concerns and priorities, different strengths and weaknesses.

Our culture has already been thoroughly feminized, and we have all been conditioned to base our thinking on the primary, unexamined feminist dogma that the sexes are really no different, outside of "socially-imposed" role models. Even in this forum I find most participants unconsciously taking this idea for granted. So long as you do not question this assumption, the most you will ever accomplish is begging women — your masters — to treat you nicer.

"If you allow them [women] to pull away restraints and put themselves on an equality with their husbands, do you imagine that you will be able to tolerate them? From the moment that they become your fellows, they will become your masters." –Marcus Porcius Cato (the Elder, a.k.a. the Censor), 234-149 BCE

Which is exactly what this IWF "discussion" is about. The quoted message from a concerned man is very well reasoned and moderately stated, yet is dismissed out of hand, with hardly veiled contempt, by the female "moderator." Why? Because she can. Because he asked, and in so doing ceded the authority to her from the beginning — and she couldn't resist the temptation to use the power he handed her, all the more because she couldn't respond to his points on the reasoned level he presented them. This is known as "changing the subject," and has been a primary female tactic from time immemorial. Women instinctively regard such a man with contempt, even if he is their own creation — in fact, precisely because he is their own creation: how can the Creator regard her creature as her "equal"? Boys — "Is it okay for me to be me, mommy?" — are not "equal" to women. Just as women are not "equal" to men.

Get this: There can be no question of "equality" between the sexes. There can be parity, a balance of power based on recognized, differentiated gender roles — most of which are natural and innate — and territories of authority, so that each sex has something to exchange with the other, and thus both have reason to cooperate.

Only when boys separate from Mother and grow into men do men have such a territory from which to address women, and do women respect them as men. And of course women instinctively try to prevent their boys growing up and away, out of their sphere of power. Who likes to lose a possession, a toy? And neither is this bad for men, for manhood "won" without effort is not manhood. Which is why women cannot make boys into men, because they are instinctively uncomfortable with competition and conflict — which might result in someone's feelings being hurt. We cannot look to women — even "intelligent" women like IWF or "iFeminists" — to show us the way out. For all their talk, they simply don't know. The sexes are different. If they were not, there'd only be one of us here.

One of the few thinking men to be found these days in public is Fred Reed, whose latest commentary points out, in his usual inimitable style, the real, significant difference between the sexes:

"Women and men want very different things and therefore very different worlds. Men want sex, freedom, and adventure; women want security, pleasantness, and someone to care about (or for) them. Both like power. Men use it to conquer their neighbours whether in business or war, women to impose security and pleasantness. ... Just about

everything that once defined masculinity is now denounced as 'macho,' a hostile word embodying the female incomprehension of men. ... Men are happy for men to be men and women to women; women want us all to be women."

Read Fred twice, or more. Despite his informal, uneven style — which I'm not sure is unconscious as it may seem, his style in itself is an expression of maleness, not "nice" but charmingly rough, beer in hand, direct and to the point, often ungentle but never inconsiderate — he repeatedly gets right to the heart of the matter. "…female incomprehension of men." Exactly. And no amount of explaining or "inter-gender dialog" will ever entirely correct this. Women talk; men do. Ultimately, women will never understand men. If they could, they wouldn't need us.

"Men are happy for men to be men and women to be women; women want us all to be women." Never forget this. Keep it in mind, and you're well on your way to understanding women. Women want us all to be women — or children — because that's what they understand. But, like children, ultimately they don't know what's best for them.

Quote: *I wouldn't be so quick to cast the entire IWF as anti-male based on the stupid comments of one moderator. Those comments do reveal the hostility toward men which is so prevalent in Western society, even in women who reject mainstream feminism. ... I didn't hear the talk given by Hoff Sommers, but whatever she said, we need to remember her work as a whole before lumping her in with the man-haters. ... In general, they are our allies, despite the fact that their focus is on women."*

They're not my "allies." They're just women, blabbing on as women do, sometimes making sense but as often just talking to hear themselves talk — because that's what women do. It's not a matter of being "anti-male" or pro-male; it's that level of "thinking" that is the problem. I'm not in a war with women, or feminists. They may be at war with me, but I refuse to cooperate — because if it is a war, then women have already won it. They cannot lose; on that level they own all the power. But a man — which is what I strive, hope to be — is not on that level; he has graduated from it.

As I've mentioned before, I'm not in the cheering section for such women as "iFeminists" or Christina Hoff Sommers. Sure, she makes more sense than most women these days, but she still thinks as a woman — as this quote makes clear, confirming my previous take on her. "Who stole feminism?" Nobody stole feminism; it never was anything else. Its true nature has become apparent as it has been allowed space to show itself. Restraint is the key; with it, we have human beings and civilization, without it we are overdeveloped apes living in chaos.

"The idea that women were repressed until the sexual revolution in the 1960's is absurd ... they were certainly restrained, a crucially different matter." –Melanie Phillips, *The Sex-Change Society: Feminised Britain and the Neutered Male.* Yes, women do occasionally make sense, and I'm glad to see it when they do; but I never take it for granted — or assume the next thing they say will make sense also. Women change; it's their nature. It's why men are designed, in 'Enry 'Iggins immortal phrase, to *"take a position and staunchly never budge."* So that women, finally exhausted themselves by their constant changes, can have something to rely on in this world.

Of course IWF's focus is on women; what else would it be? Women's focus ("Women's Focus" is the name of a local "public"-radio feminist program) is always on women — and, if they're among the increasingly few women who grow up, on children. It's the natural order: women take care of themselves and their children, men take care of women and children. Women do not understand men, any more than children understand adults; this is why, when women have overt power as they now do, they naturally, instinctively do everything in their power to keep boys from growing into men, i.e. growing out of their field of power. Thus the drugging of boys in female dominated schools. The very existence of men — adult, independent males, no longer mother-dominated — is an intolerable challenge to female political power. No such matriarchy can survive if there are any men in the vicinity.

Actually, the “Independent Women’s Forum,” like “iFeminists,” is just another oxymoron. There’s really no such thing as an “independent woman.” It is only the civilization that men — with our annoying insistence that 2+2=4, even if you don’t feel like it — have created that allows these women the leisure time for their endless coffee klatches. No need to be annoyed with them about it; it’s what women do. But don’t take it seriously, either; when women talk, they don’t mean the same thing(s) by it as men do. The sexes are different.

Philalethes Index Next

Interview with a Womenfirster: Phyllis Schlafly

Jack Kammer: What if I was the kind of man, like a lot of men who have confided to me, who is sick to death of the corporate world and in a heartbeat would stay home to take care of their kids because they love them so much and they know the business world is a crock?

Phyllis Schlafly:… That’s their problem. As I look around the world about me, I just don’t find there are many [women] who want the so-called non-traditional relationships.

-- a radio interview, WCVT-FM (now WTMD), Towson University, Maryland, January 5, 1989

Further Reading:

Philalethes #14 – Hyphenate Them Any Way You Want, A Feminist is a Feminist is a Feminist

A Policy of Castrati – Soprano Nation – by Fred Reed

War is Coming - The Public vs. Government Workers

. · 14 June 2010 · Archived copy · Original

In a recent Welling@weeden interview, Gary Shilling makes this point: “On average, public (government) employee’s wages are 34% higher than in the private sector and their benefits are… 70% higher. They have very lush pensions and retiree benefits, which don’t exist at all for many private sector employees.” At the same time, the private sector does not want their services cut – police safety, garbage pickups, schools, etc.

How can the government keep providing services, but cut expenses at the same time?

Men Harmed by Relationships More than Women

. · 15 June 2010 · Archived copy · Original

In the study of more than 1,000 unmarried young adults between the ages of 18 and 23, Wake Forest Professor of Sociology Robin Simon challenges the long-held assumption that women are more vulnerable to the emotional rollercoaster of relationships. Even though men sometimes try to present a tough face, unhappy romances take a greater emotional toll on men than women, Simon says. They just express their distress differently than women.

Well of course they are! NO MA'AM has been trying to explain this to people for a few years now.

I'm not surprised. Once you let loose the false notion that "gender is a social construct" and embrace the view that there are innate differences between men and women, it becomes rather obvious that women are "designed" to be scrumptious to men. The purpose of this is for women, being the "weaker" sex who are often "burdened" by children, to be able to procure protection and resources from their male love interests, often to the negative net-benefit of the male. In other words, women are designed to create self-benefiting reactions from a man towards her, and men are designed to be reactive to these manipulations from the female. In nature, men are "supposed to be" more reactive than the female.

Agreed!

Well, I'm not sure I agree with that. "Greater emotional benefits" are more of a subjective opinion than a hard fact. In the same vein of thought regarding "benefits," one might also say that a person who is 150lbs gets "greater alcoholic benefits" from drinking 12 beers than a 200lb person. Yeah, sure. They'll have a bigger hang-over in the morning too! And what's the benefit of that?

Agreed again! My goodness, I don't think I've ever agreed with female academics and social scientists so much! In fact, many men find this out in marriage after the first baby arrives and intimacy with his wife begins escaping him more and more. A woman's calling to care for her baby, as well as such intimate skin-on-skin touching from childcare such as breast-feeding, and, well just even holding the baby, often fulfill the majority of a woman's emotional needs. Touching and being touched by other humans is key to one's emotional wellbeing. Women also touch and hug other women at far greater rates than men do. For men who touch, if it is with other men they are presumed gay and are mocked, if it is platonicly touching a woman, they run the risks of being considered "creepy"

and possibly harrassing, and if it is with children they are considered pedophiles and put under criminal suspicion. Something that *is* a social construct is the hysteria generated by a man's touch. No kidding when he gets into an intimate relationship with a woman that he is overwhelmed by it – he may have gone without for months or even years without real human touch, whereas she may only go for a day or two without human touch.

Hmmm… ok. But who is sowing the seeds of this? She does not say. However, it has been my experience, both within intimate relationships and in relationships with women in general, that women's favoured weapon during any "strain in the relationship" is to first, foremost, and always, attack a person's identity and self-worth.

"He didn't want to kiss me – He must be gay!"

"He didn't behave like a servile worm and give me what I wanted – He hates women!"

"You're such a loser."

> *"Strain in a current romantic relationship may also be associated with poor emotional well-being because it threatens young men's identity and feelings of self-worth, she says."*

> *"For young men, their romantic partners are often their primary source of intimacy – in contrast to young women who are more who are more likely to have close relationships with family and friends."*

> *"The researchers also found that men get greater emotional benefits from the positive aspects of an ongoing romantic relationship."*

> *"That means the harmful stress of a rocky relationship is more closely associated with men's than women's health."*

> *"Surprisingly, we found men are more reactive to the quality of ongoing relationships."*

(See the Fembot Bingo Card for a more complete list.)

Shaming language is far more the realm of women than men. A man gets pissed off and swears and shouts, and may even break something, and then he calms down after his outburst and returns to normal. But a woman scorned will make life hell for you for months afterwards by undermining your identity and self-worth. Haven't you heard that "Hell Hath No Fury" line before? They weren't talking about a woman's ability to go Bruce Lee on people, you know.

In fact, other social scientists have found these differences to be stereotypical of male and female forms of aggression:

.

"Bullying styles are generally considered to fall under two categories, direct and indirect. Direct physical bullying is to, hit, shove, kick, trip, push, and pull. Direct verbal bullying can involve name-calling, insults, threatening to hurt the

other. Indirect bullying, also known as ***social or relational aggression (Crick 1997) involves attacking the relationships of people and hurting the self-esteem. It is subtler and involves behaviours such as spreading nasty rumors, withholding friendships, ignoring, gossiping, or excluding a child from a small group of friends.*** *There is no doubt that* ***stereotypically, males are more physical and direct in their bullying styles and females more manipulative and indirect*** *(Olweus, 1997; Bjorkqvist, 1994; Crick & Grotpeter, 1995; Lagerspetz, Bjorkqvist & Peltonen, 1988). Boys in our Western culture are encouraged to be tough and competitive and as they maturate slower and develop social intelligence at a slower rate they will use physical aggression longer than girls (Lagerspetz, Bjorkqvist, & Peltonen, 1988; Bjorkqvist, Lagerspetz, & Kauliaien, 1992). However there is no reason to believe that females should be less hostile and less prone to get into conflicts than males (Burbank, 1987, in Bjorkqvist 1994; Crick & Grotpeter, 1995). As females are physically weaker, they develop early in life other bullying styles in order to achieve their goals. Indirect aggression in girls increases drastically at about the age of eleven years (Bjorkqvist, Lagerspetz and Kaukiainen, 1992) whereas physical aggression among boys decreases during late adolescence, to be replaced mainly by verbal, but also indirect aggression (Bjorkqvist 1994).*

.

There is a growing body of research in gender differences of bullying and other adolescent aggressive behaviours. There are hundreds of studies dedicated to the topic, many placing the emphasis on boys or the forms of aggression, more salient to boys. Forms of aggression more salient to girls has received comparatively little attention (Crick, 1997; Crick & Grotpeter, 1995).”

Carrying on with the original article:

Well, sure women express emotional distress with depression. They are permitted to! Even when women are the clear destroyers of a relationship, such as by cheating on the boyfriend, all of her girlfriends and family are standing by to give her hugs and sympathy and tell her it ‘wasn’t her fault – he must have been a real bastard to make her resort to that!’ And of course, there are a host of men lining up to be her next victim, er, boyfriend, who will also be quick to excuse her behaviour in order to score points with her. She gets enormous amounts of attention by being depressed.

However, it is a little, how should we say, “unfair,” to surmise that men deal with distress not by depression, but with ‘substance problems.’ Yeah, ok, substance problems as the result of being seriously depressed maybe! And for the young man, rather than receiving the sympathy the woman receives, he will find that he is constantly derided for "not treating her well enough,” or that “he must’ve done something to deserve it!”

So, not only does he fail to receive any sympathy, but he also receives all the blame. Often times, entire groups of people, who should know better, will join in the “blame the man game.” (See the above reference to Sex Differences in Aggression).

To top it all off, society will call him a loser for showing his pain, and other females will find him decidedly unattractive for doing so.

It’s no small wonder, with no other place to turn, that he might try to find solace at the bottom of a bottle. One needs to only examine suicide rates by gender, which are several times higher for males than females, and rather than write it off as some male defect, actually begin to surmise that there are no shortages of depressed males of all ages who feel there is no suitable place for them to turn.

One could also rephrase this by saying that young men are treating love *as a verb* whereas young women are treating love as a noun – something which she gets from others. Who loves her is not as important as that she

receives love from somebody. A man in love bestows it upon the object of his affection, namely, the one specific person whom he is enamoured with. Women… mmm… not so much giving… but a whole lot of receiving.

This is why Florence Nightingale comes to the following conclusion about women:

"Women have no sympathy… and my experience of women is almost as large as Europe. And it is so intimate too. *Women crave for being loved, not for loving.* They scream at you for sympathy all day long, they are incapable of giving you any in return for they cannot remember your affairs long enough to do so." – Florence Nightingale

> *"While young men are more affected emotionally by the quality of their current relationships, young women are more affected by whether they are in a relationship or not, Simon says. So, young women are more likely to express depression when the relationship ends or benefit more by simply being in a relationship."*

> *"She also explains how men and women express emotional distress in different ways. 'Women express emotional distress with depression while men express distress with substance problems,' Simon says."*

.

.

Of course, emotions have a purpose beyond just making us feel good or bad. They also have a biological purpose.

The emotions associated with "love" have an active purpose in reproduction, which is the most primal desire that exists in all living things after basic survival. It is a powerful force indeed, and neither player is good or bad, but rather both play their part just as with all other living things.

I am a believer in the theory of Rotating Polyandry. In a nutshell, the theory is that a woman's "love" is based on a mating cycle of approximately four years. This is about how much time is needed for a man and woman to meet, have copious amounts of passion-fueled sex until the woman gets pregnant, gives birth and nurses the child until it

is a more or less self-sufficient being that can walk, talk and feed itself. Of course, during this time when she is pregnant and with an infant, is when the woman and child will be most vulnerable of all and it is during this time that a male is most needed by them.

After this mating cycle is finished, in order to maximize a woman's chances of passing on her genes throughout the ages, rather than being disadvantaged by having all of her children sired by the same man – in case of genetic defects and such - Nature makes her fall out of love with the man after his usefulness during this period. She thusly discards him for the next male, and goes through the process all over again. (Q: What's the definition of "confusion?" A: Father's Day in a Matriarchy.)

Also supporting this theory is that a man's love for a woman is deeper than her love is for him. There is no biological advantage to a man falling out of love with a woman – in fact, just the opposite, as the more he stays in love the longer he will protect and provide. It works on the same principle that parents have a deeper love for their children than the child has for its parents – because nature dictates that the child must leave one day and strike out on its own. It is therefore better that parents are far more "in love" with the child than the reverse.

This also plays into the phenomenon of Male Spikes vs. Female Rhythms, similar to the above described differences between male and female forms of aggression.

It is incorrect to say that "women are more emotional than men." It is more accurate to say that women have *more kinds* of emotions that affect them than men, while men have *fewer* emotions, but the emotions they do have run *deeper*.

The biological purpose for women having more kinds of emotions has to do with their role as nurturers of small children – who communicate far more through emotions than through direct communication. But, the biological purpose for a man's emotions to run deeper is to cause him to sacrifice for women and children – sometimes with his life.

Of course, these innate differences between men and women come from our biological imperatives passed on to us from being part of the Animal Kingdom. However, humans are not animals. In fact, when one stands back and looks at things in a "big picture" sort of way, the art of being human is to conquer or resist our animal-ness. The conquering of these animal impulses plays a large part in "why" the dreaded patriarchy has existed since the beginning of recorded history and thus, civilization itself – for that was when we stopped behaving as beasts, and started refining what it was to be human by suppressing our natures for a greater purpose.

But, what do I know? I'm not even a social "scientist."

DON'T GET MARRIED!

Related:

Bonecrcker #47 – Living in La-La-Land

A Little Story About Debt, Gold, and Bondi Beach

. · 16 June 2010 · Archived copy · Original

Analogy: a swimmer is caught in a rip; a term describing a tidal phenomena where a strong current (that runs out to sea in a channel) drags you out to sea if you get caught in it. The rip represents any debt trap in this case and they both work in a similar way pulling you into deeper trouble.

A good article. I enjoyed the analogy...

But not as much as I enjoyed this video which makes the same point regarding the economic crisis:

Philalethes #2 - The Sexual Noise is Deafening

. · 17 June 2010 · Archived copy · Original

Quote: *"... young women tend to get away with murder just by flaunting it."*

Remember another feminist slogan of recent years: “If you’ve got it, flaunt it!”

I for one am increasingly tired of the constantly escalating level of sexual white noise in the culture. In summertime a lot of females parade around practically naked. For a long time I wondered why it is that women seem to have an overwhelming compulsion to bare their bodies in public; in winter I’ve seen them sometimes with serious gooseflesh when they could just as easily wear a little more clothing and be comfortably warm. Finally I recalled reading in Desmond Morris’ classic The Naked Ape (highly recommended) the simple, scientific observation that while other species’ sexual signals may be olfactory (scents–which is why dogs urinate on fireplugs) or auditory (birdsong), human sexual signals concentrate on our most developed sense, i.e. sight. When a woman bares another half-inch of skin, it’s never an accident: it’s an escalation, either of an attempt to capture male attention, or of competition with other females to do the same.

If human sexual signals were transmitted in sound, our present situation would be literally deafening.

Once again, women don’t make sense, at least on first observation: they behave in a manner obviously calculated (though often subconsciously so) to attract male attention, then they complain that males “can’t keep their eyes to themselves.” It’s just more testing. If nothing else, it’s a test of the male’s ability to deal with the stress caused by female irrationality. “I’m not logical. Deal with it.” What does not destroy you … makes you a promising candidate as a mate. From the point of view of Nature, their (and our) ultimate Boss, this makes perfect sense. Nature knows no restraint; she will escalate every contest to the ultimate.

In “traditional” cultures, women generally had the sense to discipline their collective behaviour, to keep the sexual noise to a level that wouldn’t cause a total collapse of social order. This is the origin of all the restraints which feminists complain so bitterly about, from marriage to the seclusion of women to the burkha: simply varying, often desperate attempts to govern the overwhelming sexual power of the female so that we can have human societies,

rather than the life of chimpanzees.

In our “modern,” revolutionary culture, these restraints have been broken down, abandoned, and it’s a free-for-all. Women themselves are caught in the situation: as the level of competition rises, even women who don’t feel inclined to act like prostitutes feel they have no choice. Few women other than Camille Paglia are willing to admit that under the “patriarchy” women were far safer to walk the streets at night than they are now, in our “enlightened” social order, where women are “free to be themselves.” The simple fact is that (most) women, like children, on their own don’t know what’s best for their own welfare.

People who come to our country from traditional cultures say that our women dress like prostitutes: why advertise so aggressively unless you’re selling what you’re showing? But of course, as our “modern” culture spreads across the world, traditional cultures’ restraining patterns are breaking down as well. A recent issue of National Geographic shows this quite graphically, with a cover photo of an Indian woman and her daughter: the mother is dressed in a traditional sari, the daughter is dressed like a typical American teenage wanna-be whore, complete with pout. No culture can last when this behaviour becomes the norm.

Some years ago I had the opportunity to meet a woman shaman from the Iroquois nation. She was impressive: one of the few real, grownup women I’ve encountered. Calm, restrained, gentle, completely aware and in control of herself, she glowed with power. I sat in a room full of women at her feet, and was struck by the behaviour of a middle-aged, white-haired Anglo female sitting across from me. She didn’t know how to comport herself; she had her legs up so her underwear was clearly displayed to the room. I thought, “This is the best model our culture can offer as an adult woman?” It was sad.

I was amused to see the following passage in the Seneca Falls “Declaration of Sentiments”:

The history of mankind is a history of repeated injuries and usurpations on the part of man toward woman, having in direct object the establishment of an absolute tyranny over her.

The truth is, the history of humankind is a history of desperate attempts to escape the unconscious, unrestrained rule of woman, and thus the absolute rule of unconscious, ruthless Nature, by creating social constructs which, whatever their imperfections, at least offer us a life less “nasty, brutish and short” than that of the animal world from which we came–and back into which we may fall at any time. This is the real meaning of “Eternal vigilance is the price of liberty.”

.

Previous Philalethes Index Next

Roots of American Culture and Community in Disarray

. · 17 June 2010 · Archived copy · Original

Committee on Ways and Means

Statement of Bill Wood, Charlotte, North Carolina

A personal submission not on behalf of anyone else and these are my own views.

ROOTS OF THE AMERICAN CULTURE AND COMMUNITY IN DISARRAY

Political leaders, religious leaders, conservatives, families (especially fathers), judges, and interested lawyers, along with the vast majority of Americans who believe in ideals of family and country must understand that open WAR HAS BEEN DECLARED ON THEM AND THIS COUNTRY. And it's coming from many of the institutions that our taxes are funding and supporting! In terms of financial and human costs this war on America has been the most destructive war in America's history.

> When Nikita Kruschev banged his shoe on the table and declared, 'We shall destroy you from within' during the infamous "Kitchen Debate" - he knew what he was talking about.
>
> [Comparing the culture of the 50's to that of 1998] violent criminal offenses have exploded upward by 700%. Premarital sex among 18 year olds has jumped from 30% of the population to 70%. Tax rates for a family of four have skyrocketed 500%, consuming a fourth of their income. Divorce rates have quadrupled. Illegitimate births among black Americans has soared - from approximately 23% to more than 68%. Illegitimacy itself has jumped from a nationwide total of 5% to nearly 30% nationwide - a rise of 600%. Cases of sexually transmitted diseases have risen 150%. Teen age pregnancies are up by several thousand percent and teen suicides have risen by 200%. Between 1950 and 1979 - serious crime committed by children under 15 has risen by 11,000%...
>
> Most Americans would agree that our society has changed for the worst over the last 30 years." [i]

While there has been progress in moving people off of the welfare rolls and into work, welfare still exists and many commentators note it exists to promote the breakdown of the family. A myriad of today's social ills can be traced to the breakdown of the family and the undermining of marriage. Some of the testimony about the devastation of American families as a result of today's culture war can be seen in several pieces of testimony I have submitted to the Human Resources Subcommittee:

- US House Testimony on Welfare Reform Reauthorization Proposals, H.R. 4090. April 11, 2002, 109 citations or references - consequences of welfare practices on the family unit, and exploration of the 1996 welfare reform bill's requirements for strengthening families and marriage (ttp://waysandmeans.house.gov/legacy.asp?file=legacy/humres/107cong/4-11-02/records/billwood.htm)
- US House Testimony on Teen Pregnancy prevention PRWORA, Public Law 104-193 (Hearing 107-48). November 15, 2001, 43 citations and references -- effects of fatherlessness and divorce on teen pregnancy. (ttp://waysandmeans.house.gov/legacy.asp?file=legacy/humres/107cong/11-15-01/Record/wmwood.htm)

- US House Testimony on Child support and Fatherhood proposals (Hearing 107-38). June 28, 2001, 83 citations or references - Social consequences of failed divorce and child custody policies (http://waysandmeans.house.gov/legacy.asp?file=legacy/humres/107cong/6-28-01/record/chillegalfound.htm) -- Father absence, a byproduct of divorce, illegitimacy, and the erosion of the traditional family, is responsible for; filling our prisons, causing psychological problems, suicide, psychosis, gang activity, rape, physical and sexual child abuse, violence against women, general violence, alcohol and drug abuse, poverty, lower academic achievement, school drop-outs, relationship instability, gender identity confusion, runaways, homelessness, cigarette smoking, and any number of corrosive social disorders.
- US House Testimony on The "Hyde-Woolsey" child support bill, HR 1488 (Hearing 106-107, pages 94-103). March 16, 2000, 75 Citations. – Concerning problems with nearly every state's child support guidelines.

Along with this testimony, I have written legal briefs for the Federal District Court on the unconstitutionality of Ohio's custody laws, a legal brief opposing psychology in the courtroom, and am developing an extensive historical review of the rise of our current "family" law system. During several years of research, a disturbing common thread continues to appear, tracing it back to its origins, it led to one Antonio Gramsci.

.

THE PERSONAL IS THE POLITICAL

.

In 1926, an Italian communist named Antonio Gramsci ended up in Mussolini's prison after a return from Russia. While there, he wrote his "prison notebooks" and they laid out a plan for destroying Western faith and culture. His plans included ways to undermine and discourage Westerners through the intentional collapse of the existing social structure from within.

.

Gramsci advocated not only Marxist class warfare, which was economically focused, but also social and cultural warfare at the same time. His theories and the "slow march through the culture" (or institutions) which he envisioned to destroy the West are enshrined in current American social policy. His theories surrounding "hegemony" and a "counter-hegemony" were designed to destroy Western social structure and overthrow the "West" from within.

.

Hegemony, as defined by Gramsci is that widely accepted system of values, morals, ethics, and social structure which holds a society together and creates a cohesive people. Western social structures holding society together (i.e. "the hegemony") include: authority, morality, sexual restraint, monogamous marriage, personal responsibility, patriotism, national unity, community, tradition, heredity, education, conservatism, language, Christianity, law, and truth. His theory called for media and communications to slowly co-opt the people with the "counter-hegemony" propaganda message.

.

> "... Hegemony operates culturally and ideologically through the institutions of civil society which characterises mature liberal-democratic, capitalist societies. These institutions include education, the family, the church, the mass media, popular culture, etc." [ii]

.

Through a systematic attack of these institutions he termed the "slow march through the culture," Gramsci theorized that once these institutions were sufficiently damaged the people would insist on an end to the madness allowing totalitarian control of the Western world. A similar form of these theories was tried before America by the National Socialists (Nazis) headed by Hitler.

.

Many of the Gramscian Marxist Communist ideals have been implemented in government, education, and law. In practice, women have become the vehicle deceived and used in this quest to tear down and destroy Western culture. This has been done by enlisting their help in ripping apart marriage and the traditional family.

.

> Since economic Marxism was a failure, Gramsci reasoned that the only way to topple… Western institutions was by, what he called, a "long march through the culture." He repackaged Marxism in terms of a… "cultural war"…

.

> "Gramsci hated marriage and the family, the very founding blocks of a civilized society. To him, marriage was a plot, a conspiracy... to perpetuate an evil system that oppressed women and children. It was a dangerous institution, characterized by violence and exploitation, the forerunner of fascism and tyranny. Patriarchy served as the main target of the cultural Marxists. They strove to feminize the family with legions of single and homosexual mothers and 'fathers' who would serve to weaken the structure of civilized society."

.

> …[A]nother cultural Marxist (George Lukacs) brought the Gramscian strategy to the schools… As deputy commissioner in Hungary… his first task was to put radical sex education in the schools… it was the best way to destroy traditional sexual morality, and weaken the family. Hungarian children learned… free love, sexual intercourse, and the archaic nature of middle-class family codes, the obsolete nature of monogamy, and the irrelevance of organized religion which deprived man of pleasure. Children were urged to deride and ignore… parental authority, and precepts of traditional morality. If this sounds familiar, it is because this is what is happening in our public… schools.

.

> …Under the rubric of 'diversity,' its hidden goal is to impose a uniformity of thought and behavior on all Americans. The cultural Marxists, often teachers, university professors and administrators, TV producers, newspaper editor and the like, serve as gatekeepers by keeping all traditional and positive ideas, especially religious ideas, out of the public marketplace. Herbert Marcuse was largely responsible for bringing cultural Marxism to the United States… He believed that all taboos, especially sexual ones, should be relaxed. "Make love, not war!" was his battle cry that echoed through ivy-covered college campuses all over America. His methodology for rebellion included the deconstruction of the language, the infamous "what does 'is' mean?" which fostered the destruction of the culture. By confusing and obliterating word meanings, he helped cause a breakdown in the social conformity of the nation, especially among the… young of America...

.

> Marcuse said that women should be the cultural proletariat who transformed Western society. They would serve as the catalyst for the new Marxist Revolution. If women could be persuaded to leave their traditional roles as the transmitters of culture, then the traditional culture could not be transmitted to the next generation.

.

> What better way to influence the generations than by subverting the traditional roles of women? The Marxists rightfully reasoned that the undermining of women could deal a deadly blow to the culture.

.

> If women were the target, then the Cultural Marxists scored a bullseye… Women have traded the domestic tranquility of family and the home for the power surge of the boardroom and the sweaty release of casual sex. Divorce court statistics, wife and child abandonment, abortion and even spousal murder can be laid at [the feminists] doorstep to a large degree. [iii]

.

Careful study and review shows that Gramscian Marxist Communism encompasses today's "feminist" movement. [iv] Feminism's goals are to use women to undermine and destroy the culture by abandoning marriage and by not carrying on the critical task of "transmitting the culture" to the next generation. Today's feminists use women to advance the destruction of women, children, and families while convincing them they are somehow a "victim" of the patriarchal structure. And the patriarchal structure is nothing but Orwellian NewSpeak for the social structures and institutions that have kept Western civilization together long before the social decay we see today.

.

America's socialists and communists make no pretenses about their goals to promote the destruction of a cohesive society by advancing a welfare state and the complete breakdown of the family. Socialists have openly adopted the "counter hegemony" taught by Gramsci which is designed to destroy Western culture. "[T]he stronger the 'counter-hegemonic' strength of unions and left parties, the stronger the welfare state… When we argue for 'decommodifying' (i.e., taking out of private market provision) such basic human needs as healthcare, childcare, education, and housing, we have in mind a decentralized and more fully accountable welfare state then [sic] exists in Western democracies." [v] This statement comes from one of the MANY American college professors indoctrinating students today. As noted by William Gregg in the New American:

.

> Writing in the Winter 1996 issue of the Marxist journal Dissent, Michael Walzer enumerated some of the cultural victories won by the left since the 1960s:
>
> - "The visible impact of feminism."
> - "The effects of affirmative action."
> - "The emergence of gay rights politics, and … the attention paid to it in the media."
> - "The acceptance of cultural pluralism."
> - "The transformation of family life," including "rising divorce rates, changing sexual mores, new household arrangements — and, again, the portrayal of all this in the media."
> - "The progress of secularization; the fading of religion in general and Christianity in particular from the public sphere — classrooms, textbooks, legal codes, holidays, and so on."
> - "The virtual abolition of capital punishment."
> - "The legalization of abortion."
> - "The first successes in the effort to regulate and limit the private ownership of guns."

.

> Significantly, Walzer admitted… these victories were imposed upon our society by "liberal elites," rather than… "by the pressure of a mass movement or a majoritarian party." These changes "reflect the leftism or liberalism of lawyers, judges, federal bureaucrats, professors, school teachers, social workers, journalists, television and screen writers — not the population at large," noted Walzer… [T]he left focused on "winning the Gramscian war of position."

.

> Cultural commentator Richard Grenier [notes Gramsci formulated] “the doctrine that those who want to change society must change man’s consciousness, and that in order to accomplish this they must first control the institutions by which that consciousness is formed: schools, universities, churches, and, perhaps above all, art and the communications industry. It is these institutions that shape and articulate ‘public opinion,’ the limits of which few politicians can violate with impunity. Culture, Gramsci felt, is not simply the superstructure of an economic base — the role assigned to it in orthodox Marxism — but is central to a society. His famous battle cry is: capture the culture."

.

> Gramsci recognized that the chief [obstacles] impeding… the triumph of Marxism were… those institutions, customs, and habits identified by Washington and the other Founding Fathers as indispensable to ordered liberty — such as the family, private initiative, self-restraint, and principled individualism. But Gramsci focused particularly on what Washington described as the "indispensable supports" of free society — religion and morality. In order to bring about a revolution, Gramsci wrote, **"The conception of law will have to be freed from every remnant of transcendence and absoluteness, practically from all moralist fanaticism."** [vi]

.

Gramsci’s Marxist communist philosophy, with its goal and aim to completely destroy “Western” civilization is best summed up in the feminist phrase “THE PERSONAL IS THE POLITICAL!”

.

FAMILY LAW, CHILD SUPPORT, AND WELFARE FROM MARXISM?

.

Many people would be shocked to learn that much of the current “family law” system we have today, which is at the heart of so much of our modern social upheaval and America’s “welfare state,” was born in the Soviet Union. Still more shocking would be the revelation that when the Soviet Union discovered its system was a disastrous failure, it instituted serious reforms in the early 1940’s to try to restore the family and the country. The Soviets made these changes when fatherlessness (which included children from divorced fathers) reached around 7 million children and their social welfare structure (day cares, kindergartens, state children’s facilities, etc.) was overburdened. Yet in America, some studies suggest that we are approaching 11 or 12 million such children. All the while, the social and financial costs of welfare and fatherlessness are just now gaining more widespread attention. America’s fatherlessness crisis is primarily by judicial making with the cooperation of the legions of lawyers and bureaucrats who profit from family destruction which rips America apart.

.

Unfortunately, the Soviet reforms came too late and never brought about the extent of social reconstruction that would have allowed recovery from its self-inflicted social destruction. It was unable to stave off its widely celebrated collapse when the Berlin wall came down. Even though the Soviets tried in vain to restore the social values they had worked so hard to eradicate, America only pays “lip service” to much-needed massive social reform. Serious social reform has been largely absent from political debate. On the other hand, the systematic deconstruction of all of the social values that had made our nation great is being pursued passionately as one of our nation's primary socio-political goals.

.

“Family law” is one of the key tools of the “counter-hegemony” which is used to advance the social welfare state through the promotion of the social structural collapse of America. The early Soviet system focused on personal happiness and self-centered fulfillment with its roots in class warfare. When it was determined that this type of class warfare directed at the family was a complete failure, the Soviets worked quickly to restore the traditional nuclear family in the 1940’s. Shortly after this, the NAWL (National Association of Women Lawyers) began their push for adopting these failed Soviet policies in America.[vii] America’s version of “family law” has adopted much

of the early Soviet failed version of class warfare, while adopting new and more insidious Gramscian versions with gender, cultural, and social warfare components.

.

> When the Bolsheviki came into power in 1917 they regarded the family… with fierce hatred, and set out… to destroy it… [O]ne of the first decrees of the Soviet Government abolished the term 'illegitimate children... by equalizing the legal status of all children, whether born in wedlock or out of it… The father of a child is forced to contribute to its support, usually paying the mother a third of his salary in the event of a separation… At the same time a law was passed which made divorce [very quick]… at the request of either partner in a marriage…

.

> [Marriage became a game where it] was not… unusual… for a boy of twenty to have had three or four wives, or for a girl of the same age to have had three or four abortions. [T]he peasants… bitterly complained: 'Abortions cover our villages with shame. Formerly we did not even hear of them.'

.

> Many women… found marriage and childbearing a profitable occupation. They formed connections with the sons of well-to-do peasants and then blackmailed the father for the support of the children... The law has created still more confusion because… women can claim support for children born many years ago.

.

> …Both in the villages and in the cities the problem of the unmarried mother has become very acute and provides a severe and annoying test of Communist theories.

.

> …Another new point was that wife and husband would have an equal right to claim support from the other… The woman would have the right to demand support for her child even if she lived with several men during the period of conception; but, in contrast to previous practice, she or the court would choose one man who would be held responsible for the support. Commissar Kursky seemed especially proud of this point because it differed so much from the 'burgeois customs' of Europe and America.

.

> Another speaker objected to the proposed law on the ground that some women would take advantage of its liberal provisions to form connections with wealthy men and then blackmail them for alimony. [viii]

.

The Federal Government continues to participate by paying the states incentives encouraging them to practice these draconian Soviet style, anti-family, child destroying policies. What a frightening use of our “tax dollars at work” to undermine and destroy the social order of America. Even going so far as to pay incentives on a slightly reformed version of Article 81 of The Russian Family Code. This was promoted in the United States by Irwin Garfinkel as “The Wisconsin Model” for child support and welfare reform. “The Wisconsin Model then became a center-piece for the national child support and welfare reform movement.” [ix]

.

ADOPTING THE FAILED SOVIET ATTEMPT TO DESTROY THE FAMILY

•

Instead of our constitutionally guaranteed “Republican form of government,” we now have a thoroughly entrenched Marxist Communist judiciary in the civil court system masquerading as “family law.” America’s family law courts are no longer about the law, they represent complete perversions of numerous legal maxims and common law traditions that American law was founded upon. [x] These abandoned maxims represent the “hegemony” of American culture and historical tradition in civil family matters. The reprehensible evil of being rewarded for one’s wrongs, and of punishing the innocent have been firmly entrenched in the state’s family courts.

.

No-fault divorce, “the child’s best interests,” and other components of family law in America were imported from the worst of the Soviet family law system. For example from a 1975 Louisville Law School review:

.

> “Few members of the American legal community are aware of the fact that the Soviet Union has had, for some period of time, what can be described as a no-fault divorce legal system… [A]t a meeting with a group of Soviet lawyers in 1972, one of them asked, “Is it for a long time that you (California) have that system?” When informed of the January 1, 1970 effective date of the California law she remarked, “I think it is the influence of our law… [T]here are a number of similarities between Soviet and California divorce laws that suggest a “borrowing” or a remarkable coincidence.” (pg 32)

.

> “For the Bolsheviks, with their Marxist disdain for religion, the influence of the ecclesiastical authorities over the family was an outrage. Since the family represented the major institution through which the traditions of the past were transmitted from generation to generation, the new regime had to destroy the old bourgeois notions of the family and the home. There was also a very urgent practical reason for disassociating family relations from the influence of the religious authorities… [T]he first task of the new regime in relation to the family was to break the power of the church and the husband.” (pg 33)

.

> “Birth alone was declared the basis of family ties, and all legal discrimination against illegitimate children was abolished... Early Soviet policy was intended to attack these evils [of “patriarchy”] and to transfer the care, education and maintenance of children from home to society. This would mean the end of the family’s socialization functions, and would remove the child from the conservative atmosphere of the patriarchal family to a setting that could be entirely controlled by the regime.” (pg 34)

.

> The Soviet press reported in the mid-thirties that promiscuity flourished... juvenile delinquency mounted, and statistical studies showed that the major source of delinquents was the broken or inattentive home… Additional public homes for children were established, and propaganda campaigns sought to persuade the public that a strong family was the most communistically inspired one. (pg 38, 39)

.

> There was also the matter of seven to nine million fatherless and homeless children, according to Russian estimates of the early twenties. In derogation of Marxist ideology, the state had been unable to assist single mothers, and there existed almost no children’s homes, nurseries or kindergartens. Because of more pressing tasks and limited personnel and material resources the state had not been able to fulfill the conditions Engels had specified for extrafamilial facilities. (pg 40)

.

> More seriously, anti-family policies were leading to a situation where many children in the first Soviet urban generation simply lacked the kind of socializing experience to fit them intellectually or emotionally to the new society the regime was attempting to build, with its emphasis upon self-discipline and control, perseverance, steadiness, punctuality and accuracy. While the family influence had been undermined, extrafamilial agencies had failed to provide a workable substitute, leaving the child prey to the noxious and deviant influences of “the street.” (pg 41) [xi]

.

The US Library of Congress Country Studies on Romania also shows direct parallels noting;

.

> “Family law in socialist Romania was modeled after Soviet family legislation… [I]t sought to undermine the influence of religion on family life. [Previously] the church was the center of community life, and marriage, divorce, and recording of births were matters for religious authorities. Under communism these events became affairs of the state, and legislation designed to wipe out the accumulated traditions and ancient codes was enacted. The communist regime required marriage to be legalized in a civil ceremony at the local registry prior to, or preferably instead of, the customary church wedding.

.

> Because of the more liberal procedures, the divorce rate grew dramatically, tripling by 1960, and the number of abortions also increased rapidly. Concern for population reproduction and future labor supplies prompted the state to revise the Romanian Family Code to foster more stable personal relationships and strengthen the family. At the end of 1966, abortion was virtually outlawed, and a new divorce decree made the dissolution of marriage exceedingly difficult.

.

INDOCTRINATING LAWYERS AND JUDGES TO DESTROY AMERICA

.

Gramsci wrote, **"The conception of law will have to be freed from every remnant of transcendence and absoluteness, practically from all moralist fanaticism.”** Law schools across America teach Gramscian “critical theory” as well as other communist ideals. A Westlaw or Lexis search reveals not just dozens, but hundreds and hundreds of legal articles, law reviews, and other materials on feminism, homosexuality, and various forms of Gramscian class “victimology.”

.

> "The revolutionary forces have to take civil society before they take the state, and therefore have to build a coalition of oppositional groups united under a hegemonic banner which usurps the dominant or prevailing hegemony." [xii]

.

Today’s Gramscian Marxists have numerous “oppositional groups” headed by lawyers and promoted by judges and bureacrats. They advance such “counter-hegemonic” (culturally corrosive and culturally destructive) positions as homosexuality, abortion, the complete FRAUD of the non-existent “separation of church and state,” the (it only applies to destroying marriage and relationships) Violence Against Women Act, “outcome based education,” and the fictitious “global warming.” They passionately HATE the initiatives that undermine their attempts to destroy America such as Title IX reform, Faith based initiatives, the 300 million for marriage, vouchers and accountability for education reform, and the Ten commandments along with ANY other reference to a moral Judeo-Christian code, and private property rights.

.

High profile court rulings openly display this Gramscian Marxist theory in practice: the attack on the pledge of allegiance, the ACLU suing Judge Roy Moore over the Ten Commandments, and the recent Lawrence v. Texas pro-homosexual ruling. At the root of all of these rulings and many others is a violation of the judge's oath to uphold the constitution. That constitution says that we have a Republican form of government, NOT a socialist or communist form.

.

CONCLUSION

•

Today's Marxist Communists operate in law, government, religion, media, entertainment and education. They use Orwellian NewSpeak with words such as "tolerance" which actually means intolerance of things that prevent the destruction of all social structures and societal "norms". Gramscians preach the religion of division, class warfare and social warfare while spouting their hatred of anything traditional, conservative, moral, or values centered – their battle cry is "the personal is the political." They want all of Western culture completely destroyed and centralized government control erected in the place of the structure they seek to tear apart and discard. The fruits of the culture war they have engaged on America can be seen in the corrosive remnants of broken families, broken children, filled prisons, and a host of other ills underwritten by America's taxpayers.

.

Those who deeply care about this country and our constitution must fearlessly engage in this culture war--; the war for America's heart and soul. It's not too late yet. There is still a critical mass and majority of Americans who are not ready for the horrors of the type of communism or national socialism that Gramscians promote. No form of Marxism or communism (even its most radical form of National Socialism) has ever survived without totalitarian control. If the support were there for these Marxist Communists and National Socialists, history has shown that they would not hesitate to attempt a forceful or violent overthrow of American government.

.

"If the family trends of recent decades are extended into the future, the result will be not only growing uncertainty within marriage, but the gradual elimination of marriage in favor of casual liaisons oriented to adult selfishness. The problem… is that children will be harmed, adults will probably be no happier, and the social order could collapse." [xiii] "In his book, The American Sex Revolution, Harvard sociologist Pitirim Sorokin reviewed the history of societies through the ages, and found that none survived after they ceased honoring and upholding the institution of marriage between a man and a woman." [xiv] Marcus Tullius Cicero, in a speech in the Roman senate recorded by Sallust said;

.

> "A nation can survive its fools and even the ambitious. But it cannot survive treason from within. An enemy at the gates is less formidable, for he is known and he carries his banners openly against the city. But the traitor moves among those within the gates freely, his sly whispers rustling through all alleys, heard in the very halls of government itself. For the traitor appears no traitor; he speaks in the accents familiar to his victim, and he wears their face and their garments and he appeals to the baseness that lies deep in the hearts of all men. He rots the soul of a nation; he works secretly and unknown in the night to undermine the pillars of a city; he infects the body politic so that it can no longer resist. A murderer is less to be feared. The traitor is the plague."

.

POLICY IMPLICATIONS

•

Gramsci's "march through the culture" can be turned back once the roots and methods are known. Recognizing the foundations of the current class and culture warfare, promoted in many levels of government, law, religion, media, and education provides relatively easy answers to solve these problems and to turn back the tide of their corruption and destruction.

.

- Institute non-coercive national unity and patriotism in public policy. The national unity issue destroys the divisive class warfare while reviving patriotism helps to restore some of the “hegemony” the Marxists so passionately hate.
- Mandate abstinence training in schools for states to receive health funds. Stop allowing the natural inhibitions of children to sexual advances to be torn down by the current trend of pro-sexual education brought to them by their teachers who are also authority figures.
- Conservative politicians should take some of their campaign time and effort to tap into and lobby for more than just money. Conservatives must lobby large businesses to partner with inner city churches and schools to create programs of opportunity in disadvantaged areas. This takes the race baiting and class warfare issue away from the left, and gets socialist government programs out of the involvement in people’s lives. [xv]
- Tie clear mission statements to EVERY government program and agency which include: promoting traditional marriage and family, restoring national pride, reducing divorce, reducing illegitimacy, promoting abstinence, and encouraging strong morals and values. Force a public debate on these issues and it will destroy the liberal Marxist establishment. Ever since welfare reform the liberal establishment has been slowly crumbling. Press the issues and accelerate their demise.
- CAREFULLY identify several congressional staff members who have a proven track record of being pro-family, with proven integrity, and have shown a level of frustration over today’s social problems. Assign them to a special research project to study Gramsci’s version of Marxist communism and how it has been implemented in America. Publish their reports and develop strategies based on those reports. (And if the lefties cry “McCarthy,” let the public debates begin! An honest reading of McCarthy’s record completely vindicates him and exposes them!)
- Press the Judiciary committee to amend Title 18 of the US Code to create provisions stating that no state or federal judge shall have any form of immunity whatsoever for engaging in actions which produce or promote taxpayer fraud. For any such act or acts, they shall be subject to both criminal prosecution and they shall be subject to suit in their personal capacity. Let the judges and lawyers scream about “independence” and then insist that they must interpret “independence” to mean that they should be free to break the law and commit fraud against the taxpayers of the United States.
- If Title 18 cannot be amended, then insert the provisions under Title 42 related to the Public Health and Welfare.
- End taxpayer funding of PBS. Expand libel and slander laws to include distortions, manipulations, or unbalanced reporting in television and cable news programs. Let the trial lawyers have a field day with the liberal media.
- Codify in the USC the mission of senior level bureaucrats and their guiding principles with explicit provisions noting personal liability for not adhering to these provisions. Codify the requirement for annual reports by heads of agencies demonstrating how they have complied with these requirements. For example:
  -- Make the HHS Director’s mission something like “to work to restore traditional marriage and family while reducing the number of single-parent and broken families who need to collect welfare or child support.” Make it a mandatory reporting requirement on how this mission is being fulfilled.

---

[i] King, Jennifer. Who are the Real Radicals? Rightgrrl, December 1998. A brief exposition of Antonio Gramsci http://www.rightgrrl.com/jennifer1.html
[ii]Strinati, Dominic (1995), An Introduction to Theories of Popular Culture, pg. 168-169. Routledge, London.
[iii] Borst, William, Ph.D. American History. A Nation of Frogs, The Mindszenty Report Vol. XLV-No.1 (January 2003) Cardinal Mindszenty was imprisoned by the Nazi’s and later by the Communists in Hungary. Online version can be seen at http://www.mindszenty.org/report/2003/mr_0103.pdf
[iv] “Marxism and Feminism are one, and that one is Marxism” Heidi Hartmann and Amy Bridges, The unhappy

marriage of Marxism and Feminism. -- opening page of Chapter 1, Toward a Feminist Theory of the State. Catharine A. MacKinnon, 1989, First Harvard University Press (paperback in 1991)
“Sexuality is to feminism what work is to Marxism…” -- Toward a Feminist Theory of the State. Catharine A. MacKinnon, 1989, First Harvard University Press. Page 3
Feminism, Socialism, and Communism are one in the same, and Socialist/Communist government is the goal of feminism. -- Toward a Feminist Theory of the State. Catharine A. MacKinnon, 1989, First Harvard University Press. Page 10
"Our culture, including all that we are taught in schools and universities, is so infused with patriarchal thinking that it must be torn up root and branch if genuine change is to occur. Everything must go - even the allegedly universal disciplines of logic, mathematics, and science, and the intellectual values of objectivity, clarity, and precision on which the former depend." A quote from Daphne Patai and Noretta Koertge, "Professing Feminism: Cautionary Tales from the Strange World of Women's Studies" (New York, Basic Books, 1994), p. 116
[v] Schwartz, Joseph. Toward a Democratic Socialism: Theory, Strategy, and Vision. Joseph Schwartz, a member of the National Executive Committee of the Democratic Socialists of America, teaches political science at Temple University.
[vi] Grigg, William. Toward the Total State.The New American Vol. 15, No. 14. July 5, 1999. http://www.thenewamerican.com/tna/1999/07-05-99/vo15no14_total.htm
[vii] Selma Moidel Smith, A Century of Acheivement: The Centennial of the National Association of Women Lawyers, pg 10. (1999); See also ABA’s Family Law Quarterly, 33 Fam. L.Q. 501, 510-511. Family Law and American Culture – Women Lawyers in Family Law, Section B. The Crusade for No-Fault Divorce. (Fall, 1999)
[viii] The Atlantic Monthly; July 1926; The Russian Effort to Abolish Marriage; Volume 138, No. 1; page 108-114.
[ix] **The Child Support Guideline Problem,** Roger F. Gay, MSc and Gregory J. Palumbo, Ph.D. May 6, 1998.
[x] Jus ex injuria non oritur. 4 Bin 639 -- A right cannot arise from a wrong; Lex nemini operatur iniquum; nemini facit injuriam. Jenk. Cent. 22.—The law works injustice to no one; does injury to no one; Lex deficere non potest in justitia exhibenda. Co. Lit. 197.—The law cannot be defective in dispensing justice; Lex non deficit in justitia exhibenda. Jenk. Cent. 31.— The law is not defective in justice; Commodum ex injurie sue non habere debet. Jenk. Cent. 161. -- No man ought to derive any benefit of his own wrong; Lex non favet delicatorum votis. 9 Co. 58.—The law favours not the vows of the squeamish; Nemo punitur sine injuria, facto, seu defalto. 2 Inst. 287.—No one is to be punished unless for some injury, deed, or default; Legis constructio non facit injuriam. Co. Lit. 183.—The construction of law does no injury; Nemo punitur sine injuria facto, seu defalto. 2 Co. Inst. 287. -- No one is punished unless for some wrong act or default
[xi]No-Fault Divorce: Born In The Soviet Union? University of Louisville School of Law, Journal Of Family Law. Vol. 14, No. 1 (1975). ppg. 32-41
[xii] Strinati, Dominic (1995), An Introduction to Theories of Popular Culture, pg. 169. Routledge, London.
[xiii] David Popenoe, "Modern Marriage: Revisiting the Cultural Script," Promises to Keep, 1996, p. 248.
[xiv] Linda Bowles. Damage for the Children. June 13, 2000. Worldnet Daily online.
[xv] A similar program which has been very successful is DAPCEP (the Detroit Area Pre-College Engineering Program http://www.dapcep.org/). The difference is that a program to undermine Gramsci should have BOTH parent’s involvement as its centerpiece. While it would be ideal if they were married, requiring BOTH parents is a start in the right direction.

Related:

The Russian Family Code of 1926

The Books

. · 18 June 2010 · Archived copy · Original

I guess you guys have noticed that I'm publishing a few of the "books" of some people from within the MM. Many of you have probably read them already. These guy's names or their ideas keep popping up from time to time as they have written some really thought provoking stuff. They come from NiceGuy's Forum where they have an excellent collection of posts under their "Best of" section. They have slowly been getting around more and more in "book form." What I'd like to do is print them off in a numbered form, and then leave it together as a real "book," but one where it is very easy to link these numbered concepts with a direct link within the No Ma'am blog so, that they are easily available to refer to.

Bonecrkr has been making the rounds as a book already, and Philalethes' has written some amazing essays of his ponderings. Neither Bonecrkr nor Philalethes are active online anymore and most of these were written several years back already. And everyone in the MRM knows Zenpriest's words… The ideas these gentlemen have put forth to others are some of the core philosophical principles that have been circulating around the web in regard to the MM. There are many, many more that have contributed and I'm sure if you asked any of these men, they would say that they got their ideas from reading other men's ideas. That's how our collective consciousness works, I suppose. We build off eachother's ideas in the search for truth.

So, for the next few months, I'm going to print off one of their ideas/concepts each day, set by timer. Then when they are done they will be put together as a book on a section of my blog, the way I have a quotation library at the bottom of my blog. In order to create that one, I had to declare spring cleaning, but, I think just posting one of these fellows a day will be much better. Of course, I'll be adding my own writing & posting in between. I've always really liked the theory of all of this stuff and how it relates into creating societies and civilizations etc. and I've often wished that I could quickly link to one of the specific ideas I got from these guys… .

Philalethes #3 - The Anti-Logic of Women

. · 20 June 2010 · Archived copy · Original

I had a girl friend once who taught me a lot. (A Japanese-American, BTW.) On one occasion I got into a big argument with her (about what, I forget), which ended when, finally, in extreme frustration, I exclaimed, “That’s not logical!” “I’m not logical,” she replied. I thought, Oh, that’s right. Deal with it.

There’s no answer for that, but for a man to know himself, who he is, and what he stands for; then she can take it or leave it. If she takes him, she will conform herself to the discipline of his logic–though she’ll continue to test him, so he’d better be sure his logic has integrity. If a man has to ask a woman to think for him, it just won’t work. If he’s so attached/dependent that he’s afraid he’ll lose her if he stands his ground–gently but firmly–he’s already lost anyway. And so is she.

What I’m coming to understand lately is that not only must I know where I stand, but past a certain point it’s useless to try to explain or persuade. Just state your position, and let her take it or leave it. ”Never argue with a woman” is not just a tired old joke; it’s real wisdom. If she’s worth your time, she’ll come around; if not, don’t waste your time. But in order to make this work, we males must be weaned, and few of us are these days.

Another time, another altercation, terminally exasperated, I asked her what she wanted. “I never know what I want until I get it,” she said. It was like one of those cartoon light bulbs went on over my head. “Aha,” I thought, “there speaks Woman.”

It’s certainly become plain by now that women really don’t know what they want; they may think they want one thing, but if you watch you’ll see that if they get it they complain even louder-and what they really respond to is usually something quite different. Thus do feminists dream of stevedores. And this is the answer to Devvy Kidd’s question about why women buy billions of “romance” novels–even as they demand that their own men behave like doormats.

It’s not that they really want their men to be doormats; it’s that they need their men to be strong, and how do you determine how strong something is without testing it? They do this instinctively, not consciously; naturally they think they want to win, but when they win, they lose. And don’t know why they’re unhappy. Being a woman is not easy; they can’t figure themselves out either, because, in the short run, they make no sense. For a woman, a straight line is not the shortest distance. Because in the natural order, her man is supposed to be breaking the trail, while she follows his lead.

I remember in my hippie days, out in the California Mountains, watching a young woman follow a young man on a trail in the forest. It was an archetypal scene, like Sita following Rama, the Last of the Mohicans: everywoman following everyman.

I had another girl friend once who wanted to arm-wrestle. She was a tough girl, but when I beat her, she was satisfied. I could see it: I’d passed the test, and right away she started fitting herself to me. (In fact, before I knew it seemed we were planning to move in together, which was more than I’d bargained for. I really wasn’t thinking ahead–which is the man’s job. Took some contortions to get out of that one, and I haven’t seen her since.) This is the fundamental, archetypal relationship of the female to the male. “He chases her until she catches him.”

Even Martha Burk and all the other feminists who so adamantly insist on entry to the boys’ clubhouse are doing the same basic thing: testing men. If they win, they lose, because boys can’t become men in a female-dominated environment. And any environment with females present is fundamentally female-dominated, regardless of

appearances.

Every boy starts out utterly dominated by a female, a domination which requires decisive change to escape. But if he doesn't escape his mother's gravity field, the next generation of women will have no men to marry. That's essentially our present situation. Few American males (myself included) would I call "men" in the real sense.

A woman cannot show a man how to be a man; what she needs is for him to bring her something she doesn't already have–or know. Watch birds courting.

This whole process works just fine, more or less, in other species; but among humans, so much more complicated, with so many "choices," it's gotten seriously derailed. It's not easy being a man either, especially in our time when the traditional processes that used to make men of boys have been lost. The best our culture has to offer these days are military basic training and football–neither of which has ever appealed to me in the least. In Burma, traditionally a young man becomes a monk for at least a few months, up to a couple of years. Having experienced a similar form of Buddhist monastic life, I can say it can be an excellent molder of character, if properly understood and applied.

A friend of mine does summer camps for teenage boys, wherein they learn wilderness skills and suchlike. And how to act. One assignment sometimes given is to sit all day in one place without moving, which is essentially the same thing that Buddhist monks do. It works. Young men need something to push against–preferably themselves–that won't really hurt them or anyone else.

I'd say that male consciousness tends toward abstraction and identifying principles, then ordering thinking and behaviour on that basis. While female consciousness is based on feeling and pragmatic in the short term. Each has its place and use, but they are not "equal"; one or the other must be in charge, and it matters absolutely which.

I'm a fan of Jefferson also, though I certainly recognize his character failings. There were "men in those days." They were all classically educated, too.

"If you allow them [women] to pull away restraints and put themselves on an equality with their husbands, do you imagine that you will be able to tolerate them? From the moment that they become your fellows, they will become your masters." -- Cato the Censor

.

Previous Philalethes Index Next

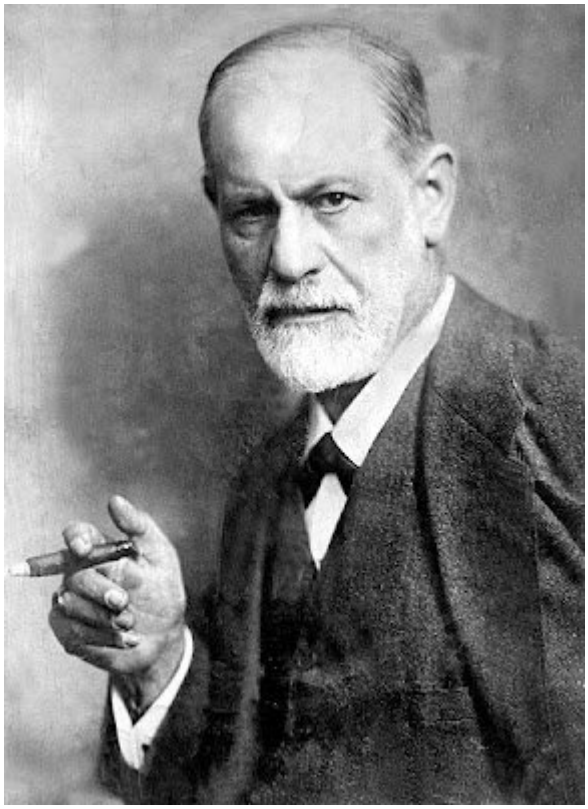
"No mother loves her child. To her, a child is a status symbol - to prove she is woman. A child is the ultimate bangle.

In contrast, man finds his immortality through his children: they are his future. Woman finds only self-flattery through her children: they are her now.

Yes, a mother's love is deep - about as deep as a woman's mind." -- Kevin Solway

Philalethes #4 - What Do Women Want? It's What We've Got! We Just Aim to Please, Ma'am!

. · 23 June 2010 · Archived copy · Original



Quote: *"Apparently you missed part II. Perhaps you'll feel differently after you read it."*

Would have read it had I known; it should be linked on the first page. What's perhaps most interesting about both articles is how little they differ from what we see from regular "feminists." The flavour is exactly the same. Feminism is really nothing new, just the latest version of an immemorial attitude. What's new is how completely it's taken over.

Thoughts on the second article:

I don't think you're a lesbian–a ridiculous charge. I don't think you hate men, but you don't seem to understand them either. You have the female's instinctive understanding of how to control men with praise and/or shame, but you don't understand that the problem here is not that men disagree with you, it's that other women disagree with you, and the men they control naturally do what they want. You may excoriate these men, but if they did what you want the women who own them would excoriate them more. We just aim to please, ma'am. Most men are idiots, indeed. But where did they come from? You may not be a feminist like Barbara Boxer (sheesh!), but you do share a basic attitude with her; you have more in common with her than I have with either of you. ("*…pull over to the side of the road and change the air in her head."* That's great; I'll have to remember it.)

Like you say, all the Supreme Court justices in 1973 were men. That's exactly the point; they were doing what most American women wanted, what most of them still want. Personally, I'd love to see American men rebel and stop doing what women want–and instead give them what they need. But I don't think it will happen anytime soon–not until women want what they need, rather than only what they desire.

In William Wallace's day the women of his community had a different idea of what they wanted from their men,

and so their men were different. Oh, and William Wallace lost, by the way; as I understand it, he was betrayed by fellow Scotsmen, whose wives probably didn't make a big fuss about not having to sacrifice their comfortable lifestyles to resist the English. Even if they'd stood with him, they all probably would have lost anyway; the women of England had more husbands and sons to send into battle, and they wanted to add Scotland to the jewels on the British crown–now worn by the Queen.

Some of the comments on this forum may be laughable, but some are quite thoughtful; if you really want to know why men aren't answering your clarion call, a lot could be deduced from what is here, both directly and indirectly. And your second article doesn't answer any of the points raised–including mine. If you find my analysis outlandish (I know many do), then at least consider this one objective, verifiable fact: Since 1920, by their own insistence, American women have been taking part directly in the political process. Females are an absolute majority (something like 55%?) in the population, and an absolute majority of voters are women, both registered and actively voting. Therefore, even discounting any other possible influence women may have on politics ("*I govern the Athenians, my wife governs me."* – Themistocles, 528-462 BCE), what we have is what women want. Who am I to argue? I've just lost my longest, closest female friendship because I was careless enough to criticize "affirmative action." I've been clawed enough.

.

Previous Philalethes Index Next

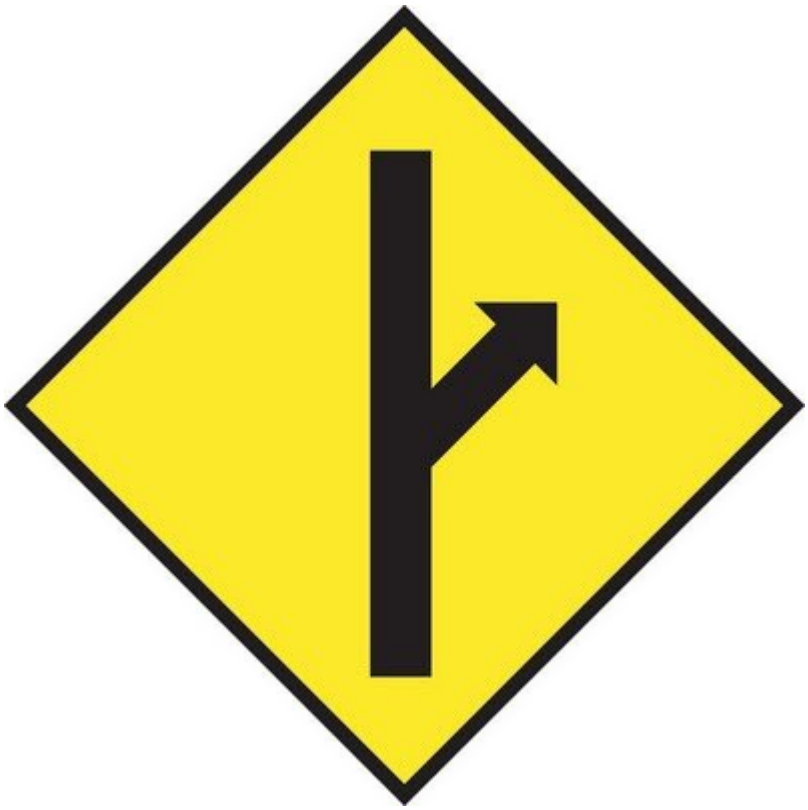
.

.

"Feminine traits are called weaknesses. People joke about them; fools ridicule them; but reasonable persons see very well that those traits are just the tools for the management of men, and for the use of men for female designs." – Immanuel Kant [*Anthropology from a Pragmatic Point of View;* Southern Illinois University Press 1978, originally published in 1798]

The Third Way

. · 23 June 2010 · Archived copy · Original



It seems the world is going to hell in a hand-basket lately.

The economy seems stuck on a long line of “brink of collapse” circumstances, continually being propped up by various schemes and distortions of facts which seem more intent on fooling the population than presenting proper solutions. Oil is gushing from the bottom of the sea, a grave concern with the only silver lining being the Enviro-Marxists have quit screeching disinformation about “Climate Change” for a few months. Who wants to bet that the whole globaloney warming scam will be brushed under the carpet and conveniently forgotten? They were losing that battle to the internet anyways and must be grateful to have a real emergency to distract from their dishonesty.

On top of all these economic and environmental crises lies an even deeper set of problems: family break-down, the complete transformation of Patriarchy’s Marriage1.0 into the new Marxist version of Matriarchy’s Marriage 2.0, which we all know is a complete fraud and should be avoided like the plague. Our birth-rates are dropping which poses serious long-term dangers to our civilization as burdensome debts will force us to take third-world cultures into our own populations and we will witness the destruction of Western Civilization’s cultural pillars as we incorporate ever-more foreign principles into every sphere under the feel-good rainbow of “Multiculturalism.”

But also, the men’s movement seems to be at an impasse. There has been a lot of information that has been put forth over the past few years, and the MM’s message is most certainly much more in the consciousness of the population in general… however, the consciousness what we have arrived at is that we are f*cked as a civilization, and there’s not a thing we can do about it but rearrange the deck chairs on the Titanic so we might better enjoy our demise as the band plays on. In this case, the band appears to be mostly female and they are playing most triumphantly, as after all, they are still employed and as long as they have their jobs and their violins, nothing can harm them.

As many of us know, this was no accident. Captain Marx and his crew set us upon this course many decades ago through a variety of techniques and manipulations. However, in the midst of all of this confusion is also unique opportunity. No-one will really say too much if we start breaking the Titanic's tables and ripping up the floor-planking to build our own rafts, will they? The hole is already in the hull… the ship is doomed. Maybe while the officers are firing off their guns to ensure it be women and children first, the men should abandon the lifeboat queue altogether and *Go Our Own Way.*

Related to this idea is the often repeated principle that what is really going on with women right now is there are two sides to the argument: The women that wish for men to be collective slaves for the Daddy Government scheme of extracting male resources collectively to transfer to women and children (Feminist Women), and those women who wish for men to be their personal slaves, so that individual women and their children can directly extract resources from men (Conservative Women). The man-slaves are quite irrelevant in the whole discussion as, after all, we are mere fourth-class citizens, behind the children and the family dog… but amidst all the bickering, here is our chance to bolt out the back door and escape into the night!

But where do we go? What will we do? Ultimately we have to…? There are a plethora of questions which arise – what will the future hold?

After the feminists and gay rights activists have had their way with making marriage into anything which they wished it to be, marriage no longer has any meaning – fighting for it will be a fools errand as the marriage trail has been booby-trapped so much, it's best to just leave it there for them to negotiate. They can have at 'er!

Have a read of the following quotes:

"Being queer is more than setting up house, sleeping with a person of the same gender, and seeking state approval for doing so… ***Being queer means pushing the parameters of sex, and family, and in the process, transforming the very fabric of society.*** **… As a lesbian, I am fundamentally different from non-lesbian women. … In arguing for the right to legal marriage, lesbians and gay men would be forced to claim that we are just like heterosexual couples, have the same goals and purposes, and vow to structure our lives similarly. … We must keep our eyes on the goals of** ***providing true alternatives to marriage and of radically reordering society's views of reality…"*** – Paula Ettelbrick, "Since When Is Marriage a Path to Liberation?", in William Rubensteins, ed., Lesbians, Gay Men and the Law (New York: The New Press, 1993), pp. 401-405

"A middle ground might be to fight for same sex marriage and its benefits, and then, once granted, redefine the institution completely, to demand the right to marry not as a way of adhering to society's moral codes but rather to debunk a myth and radically alter an archaic institution." – Michelangelo Signorile, "Bridal Wave," OUT Magazine, December/January 1994, p. 161

"[W]omen, like men, should not have to bear children… The destruction of the biological family, never envisioned by Freud, will allow the emergence of new men and women, different from any people who have previously existed." – Alison Jagger, Political Philosophies of Women's Liberation: Feminism and Philosophy, (Totowa, NJ: Littlefield Adams & co. 1977)

First of all, to the radicals intent on re-ordering society to their whims… thanks for asking the rest of us if we wanted society to be re-ordered!

But, let's face it folks, these people have been successful in their goals. Over the past few decades, the entire concepts of family and marriage have been successfully subverted and the further steps of re-ordering the family with new societal mores are fast taking place.

Women have re-ordered the family according to their whim from one end, and the gay marriage movement has been re-ordering the hell out of it from the other end. It's like a big orgy! Apparently the only people who are missing from the debate are heterosexual males… we get the whipping boy position, but we don't speak for our interests.

Although, as I previously said: I don't think men should fight for marriage. Hell no! I know a lot of times it seems that men pine for "the good old days of patriarchy," but really, that is just an acknowledgement that patriarchy "works," despite all its short-comings. And the short-comings were plenty. It has never been all that great of a deal for a man to be married, and even in the height of patriarchy, a woman could drive a man insane. To illustrate this, one needs only to read The Lamentations of Matheolus which was written around 700 years ago, to see that marriage has never been a bed of roses for men:

"This female clock is really driving me mad, for her quarrelsome din doesn't stop for a moment. The tongue of a quarrelsome woman never tires of chiming in. She even drowns out the sound of the church bell. A nagging wife couldn't care less whether her words are wise or foolish, provided that the sound of her own voice can be heard. She simply pursues her own ends; there's not a grain of sense in what she says; in fact she finds it impossible to have a decent thought. She doesn't want her husband to be the boss and finds fault with everything he does. Rightly or wrongly, the husband has no choice: he has to put up with the situation and keep his mouth shut if he wants to remain in one piece. No man, however self disciplined or clear-sighted he may be, can protect himself adequately against this. A husband has to like what the wife likes, and disapprove of what she hates and criticize what she criticizes so that her opinions appear to be right. So anyone who wishes to immolate himself on the altar of marriage will have a lot to put up with. Fifteen times, both day and night, he will suffer without respite and he will be sorely tormented. Indeed, I believe that this torture is worse than the torments of hell, with its chains, fire, and iron."

Yikes! Some things are timeless! Why should men fight to return to that prison cell?

Patriarchal marriage was about providing for children and women within society in the past. Remember, they didn't have birth control much beyond abstinence, and the job of homemaking was a lot more real work back in the days before electric stoves, microwaves and washing machines. Marriage was originally a way of attaching men's productive output to women and children for the betterment of society as a whole. Daniel Amneus calls this "putting sex to work" in his online book, The Case for Father Custody.

The "engine" that made patriarchy work, however, was not "the civilizing effects of women" on men. That is a lie. Women have a de-civilizing effect when left to their own devices. Just have a look around the Matriarchy. The "engine" of patriarchy was giving men a vested interest in society *through children.*

Think about the move radicals have made to make all children "legitimate." This was something that was done in Lenin's Soviet Union as well. Why?

I remember once reading an op-ed piece, or a comment somewhere – I don't quite remember where anymore - but the author had been around for a while, and was reflecting upon a conversation he once had with Daniel Amneus where they concluded that the "solution" to all of men's problems essentially comes down to Father Custody. This is the "core" of the issue – not marriage, but the products of the marriage: the children.

Let them, the feminists and the gay marriage movement, fight over marriage and redefine it right into the dirt. They can have our prison if they want it so badly. What men ought to do is stand back and examine what parts of patriarchy are essential in making that engine work, and take the usable parts away while leaving the rest for the vultures to argue over.

Over the next while, I would like to examine this aspect a little closer and try to illustrate how it is that “Father Custody” is the root of the patriarchal engine, as well as the overall solution for men. Can women be left out of this equation? In the past, women were brought along with the deal of providing children for a man, and in this way, they were also provided for. However, as the “mancession” has aptly illustrated, women don’t need our labour anymore. We get the message: Men are irrelevant to women.

The question now becomes, do men still need women?

The Legend of the Selkie

. · 25 June 2010 · Archived copy · Original

Some years ago, through the usual discourse of mindlessly arguing with people on the internet, I met a woman online who went by the handle of "Selkie." I had no idea what a selkie was, so I typed it into Google and discovered an interesting legend that I believe is directly about human sexuality.

The mythological selkie is similar to a mermaid, except the selkie is a seal which can shed its skin and transform into a human being. The selkie can be either male or female, but most are female. Once they are in their human form, if their seal skin is taken or hidden from them, they are unable to turn back into a seal and thus cannot return to their home in the sea.

Now, as the legend goes, female selkies make great wives when in their human form and so men would hide the skins of selkies so they would stay with them, for if she found her skin she would right away put it back on, abandon her human husband and escape to the sea to seek out her male selkie lover/husband. There is an interesting twist though, in that even after she abandons her human husband she will return from time to time to visit the children which she had while with him.

The male selkie, according to the legend, has enormous powers of seduction. His favourite love interests are married women who are dissatisfied with their marriage, and often he seduces the wives of fisherman while their husbands are away at sea.

The legend of the selkie seems to be a way of telling about the nature of human sexuality. The "seal skin" represents human sexuality in its natural form, as is often discussed within circles of the Manosphere. The stories have elements of suppressing female sexuality, which makes for great, reliable wives, but when she is unrestrained with her sexuality, she instantly uses it and reverts back to her natural state… and in her natural state as a seal, she seeks out the cad, the male selkie who is like her, and is a master seducer who plays upon women's emotions. This seems very much like the whole concept of "game" when understanding human sexuality. The male PUA is very

much like the female in the way he seduces women - he understands about women's emotions and how to manipulate them for his own benefit - which is very similar to what women tend to do with their sexuality when relating to men.

There are many myths and legends that discuss the nature of females. I think this is so because, as Philalethes often points out, women "are" society. What women want, society also wants. What women find desirable, society finds desirable. What women frown upon, society frowns upon. Women "are" society with males as mere interlopers in their midst, doing women's bidding. Often women are referred to as having a herd mentality. I agree with this. And what is a herd made up of? Mostly females with only a few males, or sometimes just one male. The rest of the males – the outliers, or the betas that have been rejected by the herd, are always desperately competing to be let back into the herd though – and that means doing what the herd finds desirable. But anyway, since women "are" society, and since women absolutely despise having anything negative about their natures brought into daylight, they screech and shout and shame such things back into the deep darkness of the closet, and then society forgets all about them again as time goes on.

I think many times in the past, men have observed the nature of females (and males) and it seems to me that there is a consistency in what they find, and of course, it is very similar to what we have been discovering over the past years in our discussions of feminism and the destruction of the family. Every time I see a legend like the selkie one, I think to myself, "I'll bet that comes from a man/men who 'figured things out' and also recognized the only way to send that message forward through time without being thwarted by the totalitarian nature of females, is to disguise it in a myth or a legend."

Something that I find interesting about the legend of the selkie though is how it makes mention that after the selkie abandons her human husband to go back to the sea, she will return from time to time to visit her human children. This legend is old, as most myths & legends obviously are, so of course it comes from a time when father-custody was the norm. It was not until the 1800's that presumed father-custody was undermined, and presumed mother-custody took its place. I've read before that it was when this transformation was completed that the divorce rates began to slowly but steadily increase.

The whole "point" of marriage used to be father-custody. Back before the days of romance, when marriage used to be an *economic* contract, marriage & wedlock birth was all about putting children into the possession of men. In the rare event of a divorce, the custody of the child was automatically given to the husband. If the child was young, the mother would sometimes care for it until around 6 or 7 years old, and then would be forced to turn over the child to the father for education and proper discipline. The whole concept of wedlock birth is to create legitimate, father-custody children. When an "oops-pregnancy" would occur, the first question out of the woman's mouth would be "will you give the child your name?" As in, will you make this child legitimate, and show it by giving him your name – and not a hyphenated pseudo name either!

Women don't actually "need" marriage to have children. They can get boffed by any number of men through a variety of seductive techniques, of which I think we are all aware of. Men however, did "need" marriage to have children, and thus, children born within wedlock are to belong to the man, while children born out of wedlock are to belong to the woman.

The parts of the selkie legend that discuss how she would come back to visit her children even after abandoning her husband seems to support the concept that divorce rates began to increase after presumed custody was changed from the father to the mother. Also supporting this notion is the evidence put forth by present day "joint-custody" advocates, who state that divorce rates significantly drop when sole mother-custody is not expected. Of course, women file for most of divorces as we all know, and so not having sole custody of the children significantly deters them from destroying their families, and rather encourages them to try harder to make things work.

Sure, one can write this off to saying that removing the financial incentives to divorce will lower the divorce rates, but keep in mind another thing one will find about women and sexuality throughout history is that it has *always* been that women have ended relationships more often than men. It is part of human nature that women do this, regardless of financial incentives. It seems though that placing the children in a situation where it is presumed that the father will gain custody upon the ending of marriage, is enough to encourage women to over-ride this instinct what they have.

Previous Index Next

MGTOW

"If it's not right, Go Your Own Way!"

.....

..oooO.....

..(....).....
….\..(.....
…. _/.....

…….....Oooo..
…….....(....)…
……..)../....
.....(_/.....

.....

Philalethes #5 - Women's Use of Power

. · 26 June 2010 · Archived copy · Original

I feel that the main error [the forum] made was to have a woman administrator taking part in major changes in policy.

Indeed; this turned the forum into just another elementary-school classroom presided over by Miss Wormwood, an environment which few American males remember with pleasure. Not surprising that some apparently (I didn't see the forum, all I know is what I've read about it here) responded by behaving like children — thus sadly providing yet more self-fulfilling prophecy for the feminist view of men.

The truth is, it is women's use of the power they already have, as mothers, caretakers and teachers of the young, that determines the character of a culture. American women have decided, wherever in consciousness it is that such decisions are made, that they prefer their men to be perpetually children, because children are not in control of themselves, and thus — some of the time, anyway — easily controlled. The rest of the time, unfortunately, they are merely out of control; but this is a price that feminists seem to be willing to pay — since offensive male behaviour (including serious violence) "proves" that they are "right" about men.

The alternative would be to have developed, grown-up, adult men. Such men, masters of themselves, would not behave in the childish manner apparently exhibited by the offending posters on the forum (or here, for that matter — and the rants do not amuse me). But they also would not be easily controlled and manipulated by women.

This is the choice faced by women in every human culture; they can have whatever kind of man they want, but it takes adult women to realize that they need adult men.

My response to feminism remains simple: Where do men come from? If you don't like the product, talk to the producer.

.

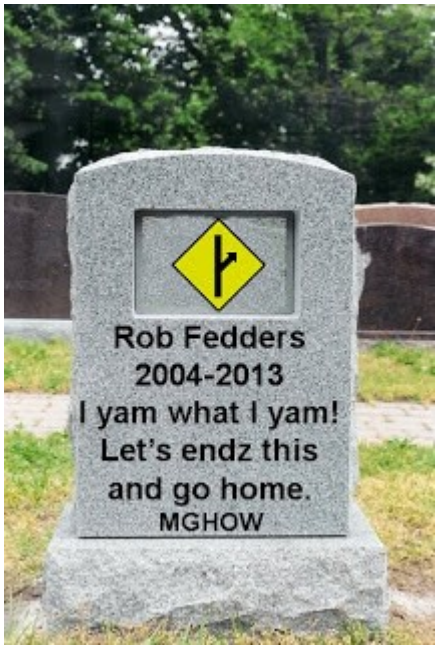
Previous Philalethes Index Next

Man Going His Own Way (MGHOW)

. · 27 June 2010 · Archived copy · Original

"When I have one foot in the grave, I will tell the whole truth about women. I shall tell it, jump into my coffin, pull the lid over me and say, 'Do what you like now'." — Leo Tolstoy

.



Ghost Nation

There is a generation of men fading from view. This is a global phenomenon but it is particularly noticeable (if this is not a contradiction in terms) in the feminist countries.

Men, who have been pushed to the margins in so many ways have simply elected to disappear. I would imagine that as many as one million men have disappeared either partially or completely from view in the United Kingdom alone- meaning one in twenty or so of the native born male population. For the most part this disappearance has occurred without anyone noticing particularly because it has consisted of a gradual fading from view rather than a dramatic exodus from the mainstream.

I call these men the Ghost Nation and would like to introduce the term to common use. How does one become a citizen of the ghost nation? It occurs in many ways, very few of them are pleasant.

First of all one may become a member of the ghost nation by virtue of coming from a broken home. They have never seen either parent work and are told daily that men and boys are useless. As a result they never get the habit of work and drift around the edges of crime. Women coming from the same background have an option that is not available to men and this is to become pregnant. This ensures the basics of life and gives purpose.

Young men have no anchor whatever, other than the gangs they may belong to and other groups of men they may hate. He is how young men come to religious fundamentalism, political extremism and violence- a life has to be about something and these men's lives are about nothing at all.

These men are among the most dangerous beings upon the face of the earth. These are the men who make revolutions, a barbarian army within the city walls. They may create or destroy and have no place in the existing

order of things and no loyalty to it.

I call these men the ghost army simply because they have no dealings with wider society and are thus invisible to it. They rarely vote and own nothing. At present their anger is purely destructive and tribal in nature- directed against other races and other subcultures such as followers of other music.

Older men are joining the ghost nation more consciously and for other reasons. We (for this is my group) have clearer moral guidelines and have rejected crime and parasitism. Nevertheless we have no place in the existing order of things. Some of us have lost everything through divorce and realised that marrying in the feminist world is simple slavery. We know that no matter how honest we may be the courts and legal system will punish every good deed.

Therefore we work at things that interest us. We become harder to control because we are no longer willing to work inhuman hours for a woman's approval.

Gradually we extricate ourselves from everything we have been brainwashed to believe is normal. This includes consumer credit, expensive chemical sludge pretending to be food and that strange 19th century invention, the career.

Gradually we eliminate, point by point, everything that ties us to the feminist state. This takes both economic and emotional form. Rather than let the media form our opinions for us because we are too tired to do anything else, we form our views actively on the internet.

Gradually, gradually we fade from view. We cannot even talk to people who are still within the system because most of them can only talk about their work.

The third group is those who are nearing retirement. They know they will be rich almost anywhere other than the feminist nations and therefore become free at the moment they are no longer needed by feminist society.

Have you seen yourself in these three groups?

Are you a citizen of the ghost nation?

To All:
Read "Atlas Shrugged" and see how nothing today is really any different than it was decades ago when a brilliant and insightful woman chronicled the inevitable results of a society addicted to destructive consumption. Decide whether you are a creator or a looter, and whether you can commit to the Pledge:

"I swear, by my life and my love for it, that I will never live my life for the sake of another, nor ask another to live for mine."

If you can, then: Harm none, do what thou wilt, shall be the whole of the law.

This is John Galt speaking, I WILL end this if I can.

Take care, brother.

Previous Index

Capitalism and the Christian Church -- by Craig Read

. · 27 June 2010 · Archived copy · Original

Only Christian Europe developed the fundamentals which birthed the modern world. Reason, rationality, science, capital and most vitally, the ideas of freedom, responsibility, and free-will only existed in Christian Europe. It was not a perfect evolution from the slow implosion of the Oriental, and unprogressive Roman empire; to the early modern period. But Europe did evolve. No other locale on the planet, and no other empire in history even came remotely close to creating the building blocks of the modern world – only Christian Europe achieved that opus of human development:

I like reading Craig Read's essays about Christianity and the Bible's role in forming the foundations of Western Civilization. He certainly isn't trying to convert you, and I believe he identifies as non-Christian - his articles are certainly written from a non-religious perspective anyway.

I've read one article of his from a while back, where he was discussing the theory (I don't think it was his theory, but someone else's) that the philosophies & moral values put forth from the Bible which helped form our society could likely be condensed in a non-religious version of a few hundred pages.

Society seems hell-bent on throwing the Bible out the window... but really, if the Bible and Christianity is the "cornerstone" of what Western Civilization is built upon, what do you think happens when that cornerstone is removed?

The "pillars" which Cultural Marxists sought to destroy were: Christianity, capitalism, authority, the family, patriarchy, hierarchy, morality, tradition, sexual restraint, loyalty, patriotism, nationalism, heredity, ethnocentrism, convention and conservatism.

Each of these pillars are under constant attack in our modern culture and many of them, if not all, are derived from philosophies put forth in the Bible - in one way or another.

Philalethes #6 - In Women's Image?

. · 29 June 2010 · Archived copy · Original

I am not interested in putting anyone either on or “off the hook.” I am interested in facts, in the truth of how things actually work, because I believe that no real changes can be made, in our own lives or in the world, unless based on a clear vision and understanding of what is actually happening and why. “Blame” is an emotionally-loaded opinion; facts are emotionally neutral, simply aspects of reality-as-it-is. What I present is (what I believe to be) a factually-true — if little understood — picture of how our world is formed.

So far as I’m aware, there has never been a reported case of a man becoming pregnant, gestating and giving birth to a child, of either gender. Nor of any similar event in any other sexual species. Indeed, the definition of “male” is based on this fact. It is females that lay eggs, or give birth. It is females who create new life. Males play a part, true, but not always. As I’ve noted before, the single key to understanding the entire “gender question” I found when I learned (in the book Why Males Exist) that there is a significant number of species which used to be sexual but no longer are — because the females thereof simply stopped producing males. These species still exist, quite successfully occupying ecological niches, but they consist entirely of females — though that may not be the correct term, since “female” implies “male,” and there are no males in these species.

Think about this: Males are optional. It is females who make males — and can not make males, if they so choose. Where power is exercised, there lies responsibility — and nowhere else. This is not a moral judgment; it is simply fact. If a member of one of these female-only species does something, you can’t “blame” the male — because there isn’t one.

And among humans this female creative power extends very much beyond the simple fact of physical gestation and birthing. Women are responsible not only for the fact that men exist, but for the character and quality of the men they create, because they naturally have charge of the child’s early development. Even feminists, for all their claim of “equality,” are clearly unwilling to give up this power — else why do mothers demand and get “custody” in over 80% of divorce cases? This is not “blaming the mother”; it is simply a statement of fact.

Certainly “we need to stand up to the image that women have for us.” But to do so effectively we must first understand that we are that image, the “little man” that Mommy created in her mind’s image of the “ideal” male (i.e. better than the lout she unfortunately married). The key word you use yourself: “unconscious.” So long as the process remains unconscious, it cannot be corrected. If our “clinging to mommy” is unconscious, then how will we ever “find our power”? It’s not necessary to “blame” mommy, but it is necessary to see clearly that how she created and reared me has made me what I am: to bring what has been unconscious into the light of consciousness. Only then will I have the opportunity to change the relationship, and the course of my life.

Very few men, in fact, ever entirely separate from Mother. In the past, however, there was commonly at least enough separation to provide a reasonably healthy balance of power in human culture. Nowadays, the process of male growth is being aborted at very early stages, so that most males never seem to gain enough stature to meet women without being flattened by them. Nearly every male I know up to age 50 is totally bewildered and intimidated by females — including, apparently, the proprietor of [the forum]. I understand why, and certainly he’s far from alone. There’s no “blame”; but if we’re ever to get out of this situation, we have to start seeing it clearly.

I use the word “aborted” deliberately. There are many ways a woman may “choose” (however unconsciously) to abort the full development and maturity of a child in her care. As I’ve said, I believe that the infant male circumcision program was and remains a pivotal event in the history of our culture, which has by now aborted several generations of American men, all of us permanently, unconsciously terrified of females, and thus severely

handicapped in our encounters with them. Very few American men can see women clearly: the Gorgon is as much a part of Woman as the Angel. Thus the Myth of Female Innocence, which allows women to literally get away with murder.

As I said, I never saw the forum under discussion, but what I've learned here about the course of events is not surprising. That the proprietor of [the forum], a supposedly "anti-feminist" forum, would put a woman in authority over a men's discussion there, only demonstrates how successful feminism has been in completely reshaping our culture's thought processes. No man before the late 19th century, at the earliest, would ever have done such a thing.

Healthy human cultures understand that males (boys and men) need places to go and meet and be active together that are free of the female domination that every boy experiences from the beginning of his life, and spends most of the rest of his life trying to escape. And that he must escape if he is to become a man capable of giving women what they really need. A human society made up solely of women and children (of whatever age) will not survive.
.

Previous Philalethes Index Next

Philalethes #7 - All Female Populations in the Animal Kingdom

. · 2 July 2010 · Archived copy · Original

Quote: "*The topic of all female populations in the animal kingdom is fascinating."*

Certainly, and even more, crucial to understanding “gender issues.” For me, as I said, this discovery was the key; once I got that, everything else fell into place.

Quote: *"A friend of mine told me the other day of a lizard population that is all female."*

One such species lives in the desert here in New Mexico. Haven’t seen any myself, though. Another I have seen: the common dandelion. Worth noting, however, that so far as I know there is no such female-only species among the birds and mammals, the fast-moving, intelligent (well, relatively), warm-blooded species. So it’s not clear how far feminism can go in this reverse-evolution scheme.

Quote: *"He said that if the lizards were removed from their environments that they die immediately. Without the male they have lost all adaptability."*

Well, not quite all, I suppose, but they would evolve very slowly, by comparison. I have a newspaper article about geckos, the ubiquitous lizards of tropical Asia and Pacific islands: Seems that some island populations became isolated long enough to take this step and lose their males, but now with frequent human travel between the islands the species are mixing again, and the female-only species are losing out in every encounter with the male female species. Can’t compete. That’s the tradeoff: comfort and security for adaptability and variety — a.k.a. the “spice of life.” A while ago a woman told me she’d quit being a lesbian because in the end the lifestyle was just terminally boring. And there’s nothing she can’t stand more than boredom — after all, that’s why she created this whole show in the first place.

Yes, the Ancients knew a lot we seem to have forgotten. For instance, according to Cato the Elder (234-149 BCE), *"If you allow them [women] to pull away the restraints and put themselves on an equality with their husbands, do you imagine that you will be able to tolerate them? From the moment that they become your fellows, they will become your masters."* MISOGYNY!! (See, if you yell loud enough, nobody’ll try to figure out if there’s any truth to it.)

.

Previous Philalethes Index Next

Philalethes #8 - When the Cow Rides the Bull - Priest, Watch Your Skull

. · 5 July 2010 · Archived copy · Original

As for the sea horse example: I'm sorry, but you're off the mark; I'll chalk this up to a leftover from your feminist past. (1) The male sea horse does not "give birth"; he merely incubates the eggs produced by the female, just as do many male birds. Neither male nor female sea horse has a womb as do mammals; in the case of oviparous species the egg leaving the female body is the equivalent of mammalian females giving birth. Certainly the eggs may not survive without male sea horse's care, but that's true of bird eggs as well; what's unusual is that an invertebrate's eggs need such care, from either parent.

That the male sea horse does more child-rearing work than most males is certainly true; but it's still the female who creates the new life. And at some point in sea horse evolution it was she who decided (on whatever level such decisions are made) that any male who wanted to mate with her would have to provide postnatal day-care as well. Females make The Rules. Presumably she, like the females of other species mentioned, could dispense with the male and redefine her species as female-only. If that were to her evolutionary advantage. Males are expensive (as a recent feminist book snidely remarked in its title); they must confer some advantage to be economically justified. As they do in most sexual species. But not all.

And (2) it is just such responses — citing a single, artfully mischaracterized example to "refute" a carefully made argument — that long ago led to the bit of male traditional wisdom that advises, "Never argue with a woman." Because women don't ordinarily engage in discourse to discover the truth — as men do, not always, but men can be held to it if confronted, while women will dodge (a.k.a. "change the subject") — but merely to "win." And "all's fair in war and love." "Love" here defined as any encounter between the sexes, and "all's fair" because that's how women fight.

But as I said, I'll chalk it up to your past as a former "feminist." You probably read this example of how the sea horse single-handedly disproves the entire idea of meaningful differences between the sexes in some feminist polemic. Well, it doesn't. Like all feminist "natural herstory," it's entirely specious.

Quote: *"I have done some studying of the bible, and I feel that the reason for the "wife is to submit to her husband" passage is just that. Women are not capable, as a whole, to be completely equal yet not try to take over. It is in our genes, as mothers, to control and dominated over others, as we do to our children. It is our jobs. We must be reminded, however, that this does not extend to others around us, i.e. our husbands.*

Some good thinking here. But I would say that in Reality, there is actually no such thing as "equality." All relationships are hierarchical, in one way or another. Many change, from time to time. "Equality" only has meaning in relation to the limited sphere of human law i.e. that, for instance, all people should be "equal" before the law in regard to their rights. And here "rights" means only what the Founders (Jefferson et al.) understood it to mean: self-ownership, the rights to life, liberty and property. Not any "right" to a job, health-care, or chocolate before breakfast (if it's someone else's chocolate). Otherwise, no body can have two heads, and neither can a family, nor any human relationship. Someone always leads, the other always follows. On the surface; below the surface, the reverse is often true. But that's as it should be; however, turn the relationship over and everything's upside-down.

An old English saying I read once: *"When the cow rides the bull - priest, watch your skull."* Meaning that when natural relationships are turned upside-down, the truth (represented by God's deputy in this world, the priest) is in danger.

What is often forgotten about the Biblical idea is that the corollary to the wife submitting to her husband is that her husband must also submit to God. Only if a man is in proper relation to the Absolute (however you may characterize this — as a Buddhist I don't call it God, but recognize that I must live according to the truth if I want my life to work) can he expect a woman to be in proper relation to him. And, as Christ pointed out, to "rule" truly is to serve. A husband's job is to "husband" his family's resources, meaning the energy created by his wife's devotion. A real marriage is a relationship of mutual devotion — to each other and to the Truth, in which each member does the tasks he or she is most suited to do. And neither "lords it over" the other, in public or private.

Yes, it is true that woman is naturally suited to watch over and care for her children. And that her authority to do so is natural and right. But when her relationship to her husband is as to a child, things are not right. Because it means he never grew up. Of course, this arrangement can be very gratifying to her ego, but in the end a child-husband will fail to satisfy her real needs. But she won't know why, only that she's dissatisfied. This, I believe, is the real root of feminists' tremendous anger. They're not getting what they need from men: not only husbands but fathers. In great part it goes back to the Industrial Revolution, which famously separated men from their families. Absent fathers are not good for either boys or girls. Mothers can raise children up to the "age of reason" (6-7 years), and partially to puberty (11-2 years), but beyond that boys need fathering to become men, and girls need fathering to become women.
(But don't forget that the purpose of the Industrial Revolution was to make refrigerators, and other labour-saving devices. As Camille Paglia points out, civilization has been created by men, but, as always, in the service of women.)

Quote: *"I feel that passage is written to make sure we each work on what is most difficult. For women, it is letting go of control, for men it is putting their family first."*

Indeed. My thanks for an insightful observation.

Previous Philalethes Index Next

"There has never been a case of men and women reigning together, but wherever on the earth men are found, there we see that men rule, and women are ruled, and that on this plan, both sexes live in harmony. But on the other hand, the Amazons, who are reported to have held rule of old, did not suffer men to stop in their country, but reared only their female children, killing the males to whom they gave birth." -- Spinoza

.

.

Further Reading:

.

Woman over Wisdom -- by Mathieu of Boulogne, 1295 A.D.

.

Bonecrker #51 – Don't Argue with Women

Philalethes #9 - Immaculate Conception

. · 8 July 2010 · Archived copy · Original

Sea horses are vertebrates Indeed they are; my error. I'm not good at thinking/writing in the haste required by these forums. Nor am I expert in biology; that's not my point.

Unfortunately for the sake of your argument, females, or any other individual, cannot change their biology. There are many species, including birds, fish and most amphibians, which the females lay eggs regardless of the presence of males. The problem? The eggs are infertile. Every time. The male is NECESSARY for reproduction. In humans? Well, the Mother Mary excepting, there are no cases of Immaculate Conception documented. Why? Because it takes a male to create life.

Well, this particular thread started with my mention of a number of known species (at least dozens, probably hundreds, maybe more) in which it does not take a male to create life. These species are assumed to have consisted of females and males at some point, but now consist only of females. I don't know how evolutionary biologists think that happened; given the example of the geckos, in which male+female species always overcome female-only species in head-to-head competition, it's difficult to construct a simple Darwinian model in which an individual female who reproduced without benefit of fertilization would have an immediate advantage over her "heterosexual" sisters in the same environment. Nevertheless, somehow it happened.

The New Mexican Whiptail lizard (Cnemidophorus neomexicanus), for instance, is a female-only species; no males of this species have ever been found. She reproduces by laying eggs, which, though unfertilized and presumably haploid, nevertheless hatch as baby female New Mexican Whiptail lizards, essentially clones of their mother. Some such female-only lizard species engage in a kind of lesbian sex, in which one female mounts another, presumably to stimulate egg production; of course no fertilization occurs, but the eggs do hatch and produce the next generation of lizards.

("The simple fact is that every woman must be willing to be identified as a lesbian to be fully feminist." –National NOW Times, Jan.1988)

There are, I gather, examples of such female-only (not asexual, as in amoebas) reproduction in all the major life groups (reptiles, amphibians, fishes, invertebrates, plants) except the warm-blooded birds and mammals — I presume because the pace of life, evolution and competition simply don't allow for it among the latter. As illustrated by the example of the geckos, it appears (and makes sense) that the primary requirement for this evolutionary development (or devolution) is a comfortable, secure ecological niche without any significant competitive pressure. As we all know, males are incurably competitive; they can be dispensed with only when species don't need such abilities. But so they will when possible, as males are also expensive (as snidely remarked in the title of a recent feminist screed).

BTW, an American Indian (Iroquois/Mohawk) shamaness I once discussed this with told me that her teachers had told her that female-only reproduction was possible in humans, but the resultant offspring would be only female — as in other species known to do so. So perhaps the logical end of feminism is theoretically possible; though it's worth noting that this shamaness's wise women teachers apparently didn't think the idea worth promoting. She herself is married, by the way.

Anyway, my point is simply this: that clearly the male is not "NECESSARY for reproduction." The eggs are not "infertile. Every time." Or maybe they are, strictly speaking, since they possess only a half-set of genes, but nevertheless they do hatch, and produce individuals of the species capable of surviving, living full lizard (and other

species') lives, and reproducing.

True, it appears that "females, or any other individual, cannot change their biology"; but nevertheless it happened, somehow. My picture of how ("she … could dispense with the male and redefine her species as female-only") was of course a metaphor. Maybe God did it; maybe it happened through some kind of mindless evolutionary process. In any case, if there was some sort of consciousness involved at some level of being, it makes more sense to me to say that it was the survivor of this event (the female) who made the "decision" rather than the one dispensed with (the male).

My point was that the discovery of this fact, unknown to me before ca. 1987, and still unknown to the vast majority of people, was, like the discovery that the Earth revolves around the Sun rather than vice-versa, a life-changing event that put everything into a very different perspective, and gave me the necessary key to understanding what had theretofore been a frustrating mystery, i.e. the entire vexed question of "gender relations." Clearly, Simone de Beauvoir had it exactly, 180 degrees wrong in the title of her feminist Bible, *The Second Sex* (assuming that she was referring to woman; I haven't read the book).

Before I learned about this, I was caught in the "he said – she said" trap when trying to unravel gender issues. Feminists claim that they are tired of being the "second sex" and want to be "equal" now. But if the sexes are "equal," then there's no basis for differentiating between them; everything goes around in an endless circle; there's nowhere to start. Are there real, irreducible differences between the sexes? Exceptions have been found, it seems, to every one that has been proposed. Can we define anything, and begin from there? I can now say: Yes. As I've mentioned elsewhere, "equality" is a myth, nowhere more so than in the relationship between the sexes. And if we try to live by a myth, rather than the truth, we will come to grief. The apparent relation between the sexes, like the appearance that the Sun revolves around the Earth, may be very compelling to our senses of observation, but it is not the truth.

When I was a teenager, my father sat me down one day and explained something to me: that freedom and responsibility are indissolubly linked, indeed, two parts of the same thing, like two sides of a coin. At the time, he was simply setting out ground rules for my teenage activity (that I could have as much freedom as I was willing to be responsible for); but it was not long before I realized that this was a Fundamental Principle of Life, and in the 40+ years since I have found its application to be unlimited, and unfailingly productive of understanding, sanity, and peace of mind. I've had a similar experience in application of this understanding of the true relation between the sexes; it has clarified every situation I've observed, including those previously most confusing.

Thus I believe that no real, fundamental understanding of any of the issues discussed here can be gained without beginning from the foundation of this fact: males are the "second sex," and are optional in terms of fundamental biology. Of course, that's not all there is to it, by far — it seems clear to me that males are absolutely necessary if we have any hope of developing our consciousness and existence beyond the level of mere biology, i.e. the animal level, with all its attendant suffering — but this fact is where we must start, if we wish to understand how this world works.

Think of a man as a stick in a woman's hand, a tool which she has created for her use. Clearly, the woman with the biggest stick will prevail in any contest with other women and their sticks — or against any woman who doesn't have a stick (which covers the example of the geckos). (And the idea that females are not competitive is another of the Big Lies of feminism.) Fundamentally, that's what males are: tools created by females to use for tasks which they cannot or would rather not do for themselves. (Including, for instance, taking the rap for human competitiveness: *"It's those awfule men who cause all the wars; we're just here being sweet and gentle all the time.")* Front men, fall guys, whipping boys. Garbage men, soldiers (the ones who actually do the fighting) … all the jobs that all those "equal" women somehow still don't seem to want.

With the advent of test tube reproduction, we have seen that neither parent need be present to create life. Give it another few years and the artificial womb, or male womb transplants (for the gay community) will make the woman as unnecessary to the whole process as you claim men to be.

God help us. Of all the insanities thought up in the ever-busy human mind, these must be among the most grotesque. Nevertheless, none of these clever, hubristic expedients amount to creating life; like the male sea horse's incubation of eggs from the female, they are after the fact. "Test-tube reproduction" combines gametes from two human parents in an artificial environment; it does not create the gametes. The two parents may not be in the room, but they are absolutely necessary. The same goes for an "artificial" or "transplanted" womb; they are but containers, useless until they contain something, and that something comes from (at least) a female of the species. Only the Creator creates life; human hubris creates only misery.

Women have not always been in charge of every species. I find it interesting that you claim my example of the sea horse feminist (more national geographic than feminist in origin), when your argument for females being in charge is exactly what "proof" feminists themselves use to justify their position.

Depends what you mean by "in charge"; but it seems to me clear that if, in a general, absolute sense, females can exist without males but males cannot exist without females, and females can decide whether males exist or not, while males cannot decide whether females exist or not, nor even, apparently, have any control over what decision females make regarding males' existence, then one of the two is in fundamental control of the situation, while the other is not. This is not a species-by-species matter; it is a universal truth. Thus I would say that females have been "in charge" of every species. The female is the species; the male is an optional variation on the theme. Once I was talking with a woman about this subject, and she said, "But aren't there any species that consist only of males?" And a minute later she said, "No, I guess that's impossible, isn't it?" Exactly my point. "Girls rule!"

The sea horse example I believe I've heard/read before from feminists trying to "prove" that males are as suited as females for childrearing tasks. (And who says there're no feminists at National Geographic? These days, feminist rhetoric comes from everywhere, including many male scientists who are, apparently, doing their best at what has always been required from males: to please the female.) Such one-off examples are always cited to "disprove" general rules, and always remind me of Samuel Johnson's famous quip: *'Sir, a woman's preaching [in church] is like a dog's walking on his hind legs. It is not done well; but you are surprised to find it done at all."*

Not clear to me what you mean by the feminist "position" that is justified by the argument I present. Let me make clear that, as with the subject of "blame" addressed elsewhere, I am not seeking to "justify" anything. Justification involves moral argument, and requires first defining moral principles, etc.; it's a completely different discussion. I am presenting only (what I believe to be) facts, because I believe that we must get our facts straight before we can begin to discuss moral or similar issues.

It's not that I do not care about moral issues, only that their discussion will be fruitless if we are not first agreed on the ground. For instance, it's pointless to discuss questions of power and its proper use unless we first understand what power is and who has it. Feminists are constantly complaining about being powerless, and in fact "everyone knows" that women are helpless victims of male power — and, as exhaustively documented on this site, our entire moral/legal system is constructed on the basis of this assumption.

500 years ago, "everyone knew" that the Sun revolved around the Earth; after all, you could see it come up in the east every morning and travel across the sky. Until someone really looked, and found the truth was just the opposite. If NASA were running its space program on the basis of the pre-Copernican world view, it wouldn't get very far. And so long as we try to address the deep, painful grievances of both genders in the "battle of the sexes" based on untrue assumptions, we'll only go around in circles, and everyone will hurt more and get more angry, until

perhaps we reach some sort of sexual Armageddon.

It's true that in a way I may seem to be agreeing with some part of the feminist view. Because it's true. Girls do rule. Tactically, I suppose, my approach is something like the "gentle" martial arts of judo and taiji (I've practiced the latter): yield to the opponent, and use her force to accomplish ones own goals. But it's not a game I'm playing; I wouldn't "agree" with any feminist position because it's a feminist position, I merely present the truth, and if a feminist position agrees therewith, well that's a place to start. And then hold them to it. Yes, girls do rule: so why not quit whining and rule responsibly? As a Zen master once said, if your horse-cart isn't moving, do you hit the cart or the horse?

In the encounter between the sexes, it is women who make The Rules. Men may hold some of the cards, but women own the deck. All that's really necessary to find solutions to the problems between the sexes is for women to recognize and acknowledge the power they already have, and that what we have has resulted from their use of that power, and to begin using that power consciously and constructively rather than, as in the past, unconsciously and (all too often) destructively. Will this ever happen? I don't know.

Disciple: Why is there evil in the world?
Ramakrishna: To thicken the plot.

But it does seem clear that we can't go on much longer as we have, for we are truly accelerating toward a precipice of a magnitude that few of us can even begin to imagine.

I've gone on far too long again. Don't know if anyone really reads all this; but at least it's helpful to me to think it through while writing it. Hope you get something out of it, anyone who reads this far.

Previous Philalethes Index Next

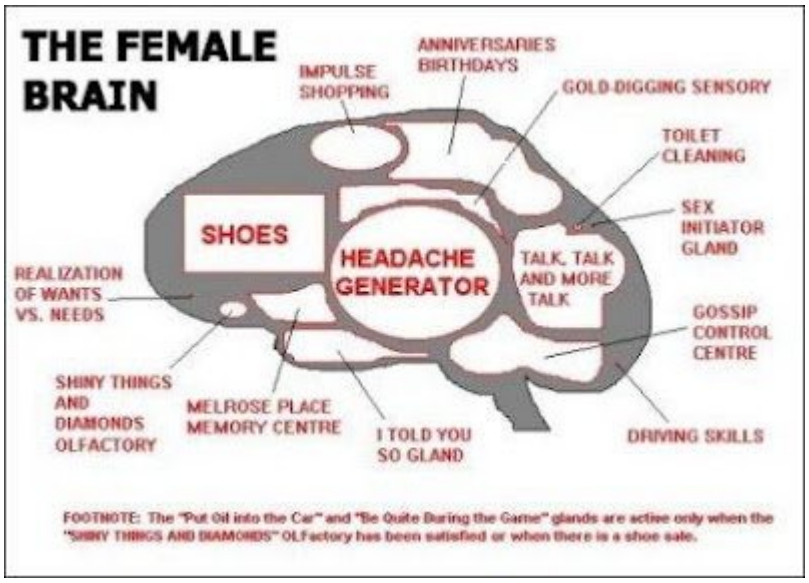
.

Further Reading:

Philalethes #7 – All Female Populations in the Animal Kingdom

Philalethes #10 - Male vs. Female Thinking

. · 11 July 2010 · Archived copy · Original



Unfortunately, in this age of "public education," very few of us are taught to think clearly anymore. One effect of this lack is careless use of poorly-understood language in emotionally-loaded contexts. For instance, the word "censorship," used in the heading of this thread. It's important to understand that this word can have two related but different meanings: in a general sense, it denotes the suppression of expression of views, while in a more specific sense it means such suppression when done by the State, with its "monopoly of force." In these times when the State's power is increasingly felt in all areas of our lives — thanks in great part to the growing power of feminism (see below) — many seem not to know or understand the difference between these two kinds of "censorship." This is a case of the first type of censorship (and a classic example of how women wield power, covertly and by proxy), but not the second; the proprietor of [that forum] indeed does "have a right" (so far) to run his site however he wishes. Nor has anyone in this thread said he does not.

On the other hand, anyone else also "has a right" to criticize how he runs his site; he does, after all, present his efforts to public view. And I haven't seen anything here that I'd call "bashing." An honest, frank exchange of views between men is not "bashing." Though women, who live in a world primarily of feelings, and often are so insecure in their thinking that frank disagreement (indeed any difference at all) is experienced as personal threat, might see it as such.

Which again is the problem. There's nothing wrong with women thinking (or "thinking") like women, but when men start thinking like women, things are out of balance. Feminist dogma notwithstanding, the problem is not that men aren't more like women, it's that "men" aren't more like men. Though it seems quaint (and very politically incorrect) to current sensibilities, Rudyard Kipling's poem "If" has a lot of truth to it:

If you can keep your head when all about you
Are losing theirs and blaming it on you;
If you can trust yourself when all men doubt you,
But make allowance for their doubting too;
If you can wait and not be tired by waiting,
Or, being lied about, don't deal in lies,
Or, being hated, don't give way to hating,
And yet don't look too good, nor talk too wise...
… you'll be a Man my son!

One of the hallmarks of female (and childish) “thinking” is the instinctive belief that one “deserves” to have what one wants. It’s instinctive, biologically based — since the universal pattern is the male required to please the female (i.e. give her whatever she wants) in order to get “access.” But in humans this assumption has gone far beyond its evolutionary function — and is the reason behind both “chivalry” and the huge success of feminism.

And thus arises the complaint of “injustice” (or “it’s not fair”) when she doesn’t get what she wants. That’s how women naturally “think.” I don’t think that there’s “something unjust about the fact that a liberal news site doesn’t exist [similar to the forum].” Of course it’s not [the site owner's] responsibility to cater to my views, and I’m not a “liberal” anyway. But what’s interesting is the use of the word “unjust.” What does “justice” have to do with it? Nothing, except in the female mind — or a male mind that, like so many in our modern world, has never developed beyond the female/child mode of thinking.

Finally, as for “dividing” the men’s movement: I’m not part of any “movement,” actually. I’m a man (or hope to be one someday), and a truth seeker. And truth speaker, now and then. I don’t know that I really have “common goals” with anyone who wants (or acts on the unexamined impulse) to suppress the free exchange of ideas in the interest of some “higher good.” In my view, there is no higher good than the free exchange of ideas, and the freedom it requires.

All I really share with [the forum] is a critical attitude toward left-wing feminism; beyond that, the ideal world [the forum] appears to long for — an imperial American hegemony over the world, a totalitarian “conservative” (as opposed to “liberal”) dictatorship at home — is no more attractive to me than that envisioned by the most rabid left-feminist. The two of them are totally agreed on the level of principle; their only argument is who is going to dictate my life to me. That [the forum] should be thought representative of “men’s” views I find appalling. As I said above, I wouldn’t be the least bit surprised to learn that it’s a complete hoax, fabricated by a feminist “disinformation” program.

“Movements,” like harems, herds, and other collectives, are for females. It’s been remarked that men’s first priority is freedom, while women’s is security. Thus women are natural herd animals, for security is most easily and immediately found in numbers. And thus the inclusion of women in political life must inevitably lead to totalitarian collectivism, as it has everywhere it’s been tried — at this point, essentially the entire planet, which is fast turning into one vast nursery, where “everything that is not prohibited is compulsory.” Women instinctively seek the security of such an environment; when women rule, this is where everyone must live.

“Do you want to be free, or do you want to be taken care of?” Answer this question honestly, and you’ll know where you stand on the male–female spectrum, regardless of what form your personal plumbing may have.

.

Previous Philalethes Index Next

Philalethes #11 - The End Results of Female Suffrage

. · 14 July 2010 · Archived copy · Original

Quote: *"The feminists have started to push for the majority (read 'female') elected government to use tax dollars (much of them taken from men) to pay for women to be mothers. In other words, as women continue to eliminate men from the family, they will have their governments take money from men and give it to women and their children to live on."*

No kidding. This is exactly what Warren Farrell explored The Myth of Male Power, in the aptly titled “Government as Substitute Husband” section.

Once I believed the idea that, on principle, women “deserve” to vote. However, it is now plain to me that the situation described is the inevitable consequence of women voting.

Women expect to be taken care of; this is not “social conditioning,” it’s genetic programming, going back at least to the avian level of evolution, where pair-bonding was invented. Male birds have to bring something, usually food or a built nest, to females to induce them to mate. Among humans, this arrangement was “formalized” somewhere around 50-100,000 years ago, anthropologists conjecture (see, among other sources, Helen E. Fisher, The Sex Contract), when women began emulating sexual receptivity even when not fertile, to induce men to bring them food, protect them from sexual and other predation, etc., while they were tied up with nursing infants they had to haul around. Women instinctively expect to be taken care of.

When women begin taking part directly in the political process, i.e. voting, they naturally begin to transfer this expectation of care and protection from the imperfect men in their personal lives (fathers, brothers, suitors, husbands, and sons) to the State, which, as a relatively distant, conceptual entity, can be imagined, in minds that don’t think very hard, to be perfectible. And the new arrangement works, in the short run, anyway. Since all politicians need from (most) women is votes, they’re happy to give them everything they want in return; and when women learn this, their desires quickly become unlimited. They don’t just want “equality”–whatever that may mean–now they “want it all!” Not just “the vote,” but affirmative action and every other form of guaranteed outcome, heavily skewed divorce and related laws, welfare (supplied by single, working men) for “female heads of household,” etc. etc. Like a horse that’s got into the oats, they’ll literally keep eating until they bloat up and explode. They have no internal self-restraint, because they’ve never had to develop any before; previously they were restrained by men, and by circumstances, but now in the artificial world of political power they’re restrained by nothing.

Frankly, at this point I don’t see any way to stop it. A Brave New World populated by “gender-transitioned” (Farrell’s term) perpetual pre-adolescents is the inevitable result of feminism. In the words of the late, lamented Edward Abbey, *"A world of androgynes, encapsulated in beehive cities, fiddling with buttons penile, electronic and clitoral - that is the future beloved alike by the technocratic futurologists and throroughly logical radical feminists. Cut off from their primordial animal natures, denying the biological wellspring of life, reproducing themselves through artificial insemination of laboratory wombs, the inhabitants of this glittering metallic city will live to the full the existence of rationally programmed robots. And what is the ideal robot but a properly processed human being?"* (“The Future of Sex: A Reaction to a Pair of Books” [by Susan Brownmiller and Gloria Steinem], in One Life at a Time, Please)

Sure, “men” nowadays prolong adolescence to their 30s and 40s. They have no incentive to do otherwise; in fact, should they try to become men, i.e. developed adults, they’ll catch hell for sure, from the perpetually-preadolescent “women” (“Boys. Yech.”) Of Sex and the City.

For my part, I'm happy I'm finally old and tired enough not to be entirely under the domination of my hormones, and thus of the females who control the supply of what my hormones tell me I can't live without. I know it's nearly inconceivable to younger men–which I was myself not so long ago–but the only solution I see is for men to simply turn away from these women. Should I get close to another woman in this life, I very much doubt it'll be an American woman. I saw an interesting website (don't have the URL handy) from a guy who went to Southeast Asia to find a wife who was willing to give him a little respect in return for the traditional love, support and protection. Nothing's perfect, of course, but this sounds at least doable.

.

Previous Philalethes Index Next

Philalethes #12 - Foreign Women

. · 17 July 2010 · Archived copy · Original

It does seem to be true that Asian women are, on average, a lot nicer to get along with than the American version (not to mention nicer to look at, to my taste, anyway), but I have to wonder: for how long? I don't think there's any fundamental difference between American and other women; what we're seeing is simply traits native to female consciousness and character, unrestrained. And the rest of the world does seem to want to emulate America, in this perhaps more than anything else beyond simple economic prosperity.

A few years ago a local young man in his twenties met a Japanese girl in a Chinese class in Beijing, and brought her home and married her. Recently they separated, at her behest, I gather. I don't know them well, but an older male friend who has been a mentor to the young man, and to their marriage, tells me he got so tired of the woman calling him up and screeching at him that he finally hung up on her. (He's also been having a hard time keeping his own marriage together; his wife, a Filipina-American, beautiful and sweet, nearly left him–with their three children–after having her "consciousness raised" by local Anglo feminists. I know he's a good husband and father, but they almost had her convinced he wasn't good enough.)

In my slight acquaintance with the young man, I did find him self-confident to the verge of a kind of quiet arrogance, and suspect he may not be a very good listener. But that's how young men are (if their spirit hasn't been trashed, like so many of us); in effect, the challenge for a young woman is to tame him without breaking him, so she'll have a strong protector. Modern American women just don't seem to be up to that challenge, preferring weak males instead; and I have the feeling this pattern is spreading. A nation, a civilization whose women cripple their men is ripe for conquest. As Graham Strachan points out, *"behind the feminist and other popular movements are some very ugly scheming people who want to destroy the institutions of civilisation so they can rule over the wreckage."* This is what's really happening.

.

Previous Philalethes Index Next

Philalethes #13 - A Letter to Devvy Kidd

. · 20 July 2010 · Archived copy · Original

(In response to Devvy Kidd's article, Where Have All The Men Gone?)

Dear Devvy Kidd,

I was most interested recently to come across your article “Where Have All the ‘Men’ gone?” which was referenced on a site concerned with what are nowadays being called “men’s issues.” I note this article first appeared over nine months ago; I don’t know what kind of response/s you may have had, but would like to add my own.

I’ve heard of you before, through my own involvement in the “constitutionalist/patriot” movement, and while I haven’t followed your activities closely, I’ve had the impression you’ve been doing valuable work, alerting and educating the American people to the peril we face–in particular your role in the awakening of ex-IRS agent Joe Banister, among, I’m sure, many others. I’ve heard you on one or another shortwave radio program, and taken a couple looks at your web site. So I was intrigued to see you pop up on a site whose general political orientation tends to be (due mostly to ignorance, I feel) rather different than yours, or mine, on such issues.

Born during the Second Great War (while my father was away defending hearth and home–and Standard Oil’s profits, though he didn’t know it at the time), raised in the liberal atmosphere of a southern California university community, an avid experimenter with psychedelics in the 1960s, as well as “draft-dodger,” all-around hippie and long-term student of Oriental wisdom traditions, I was until about age 40 a fairly typical example of the feminist/socialist revolution’s effect on American culture: a regular “Sensitive New Age Guy.”

However, I also had the advantage of having had a father who was one of the fast-vanishing type of American men who thought for himself, was a real truth-seeker, and understood about freedom and responsibility. (He came home to a war with his wife, which she naturally won, assigning him the role of bogeyman and turning his children against him. Nevertheless, at least I had a father.) He taught me, mostly by a kind of osmosis, to “question authority”–enough that not only did I question the same authorities that so many in my generation questioned, I also continued questioning after most in my generation simply accepted yet another authority–the feminist/communist orthodoxy that is if anything even more rigid and stultifying than the one we originally rebelled against.

Thus, when at about age 40 I came across the work of Irwin Schiff, Tupper Saussy and others I was open enough to recognize almost immediately that they were making a lot better sense than anything I’d been taught before about political, economic and social issues. I immediately quit paying at least the major taxes for which I was not legally (or morally) liable, and have continued studying and learning in the twenty years since. Which was why your name was familiar to me when it appeared on the Mensactivism site.

What’s interesting to me about your article is that, although I know you disagree emphatically with all (or nearly all) the aims of the femmunist movement, you clearly agree with them on the one basic issue that I would consider the very cornerstone of their whole ideology: the idea that men, a mysterious species totally foreign to women (as in “Men are from Mars, Women are from Venus”), rule the world, and women are merely their innocent, powerless victims. Thus, frustrated (understandably) in your efforts to awaken the American people, you resort, as women have since the Beginning, to castigating men.

Unfortunately, it won’t work. The premise is false, so any action based thereon will be fruitless.

The truth is, regardless of appearances, it is women who truly rule the world. This has always been so; it will always

be so. Human males, like males of all species, are created by females for purposes of their own: to provide services which they cannot or prefer not to do for themselves. Including, e.g., the rapid evolution enabled by genetic roulette; taking out the garbage; fighting wars to capture (or defend) territory and assets whose possession provides for the comfort of women and their children; etc. etc.

And, occasionally, when asked, the ability to think clearly and dispassionately about issues of import, simply because men, at one remove from Nature who rules women's lives, have at least the potential ability to escape the total hormonal control that She (the very Goddess the feminists insist we worship) exercises over women's consciousness. But of course, this will be no help if women refuse to acknowledge that men can do anything for them that they can't do for themselves.

Human males, like males of all other species, operate under a single Prime Directive: Please the Female. Since the invention of sex, roughly 1.5 billion years ago, males have been ruthlessly selectively bred to obey this imperative: those who did not, who failed to get there fastest with the most, did not become our forefathers, thus were genetically irrelevant.

The truth is, the argument you're involved in is actually, like all human arguments, between groups of women. (In fact, I would extend this even to arguments between individual women and men: when a woman marries, she marries her mother-in-law's idea of what a "proper" man is.) The men you complain about are the men created, molded and used by the women who run the other side of the argument. They don't please you because that's not their job; they please the women who control them–just as the men you and (the few) other women like you control strive to please you.

"Why is this? Why is this?" If you can't see it for yourself, I guess I'll have to enlighten you: The men you complain about are the sons of the mothers who created the feminist movement, which gave us Infant Male Circumcision (terrorize, torture and mutilate male babies so they'll be sure to remember who's the Boss throughout their life), Prohibition (if men drink to excess, never ask why, just clamp down with all the power of the State, in the process creating a vast network of organized crime and its mirror image, the Federal Police), and the "19th Amendment" (is it entirely accidental that the slide into totalitarian socialism has radically accelerated since women decided to trade in their husbands for the support provided by the All-Powerful State?). Not to mention the entire catalog of horrors since the 1960s, when the first universally-circumcised generation of American men came of age and began caving in completely to feminist demands.

"Systems and agencies that are putting their women and children into a state of involuntary servitude for all their lives." Well, maybe they are (though I'm not sure exactly what you're referring to)–but only in the time they have to spare from enslaving men, especially divorced fathers (now defined as "sex abusers") who must turn over most of what they make to their ex-wives while they're barred from any contact with their children. Not to mention single men who pay confiscatory taxes to support "female heads of household." That's what the "black robed judges" spend most of their time doing. At the behest of the women who elect them.

"Back in 1776, this breed of men would be called cowards." Maybe, but now they're called "enlightened," while Washington, Jefferson and their ilk are seen for what they really were: male-chauvinist slavedrivers. This is the history that is taught in our government-run schools, by 90% female teachers, supported by the vast majority of American women voters–who are the absolute majority of all voters.

"The men of this country … refuse to lift a finger to ensure that their women and children will not be forced into global citizenship under the UN. Why is this?" You really don't know? It's for the simplest, most powerful, most ancient reason of all: because it's what women want, and any man who doesn't give women what they want is a failure, out of the picture.

"Why won't these men stand up to this rogue agency called the IRS?" You really don't know? Have you ever tried to talk to a woman about the IRS? I've found this is one of the best ways to lose all the female friends you have. They love the Income Tax, because it's what makes it possible to dump their husbands and live off the State. Any man who says anything negative about the Income Tax is in serious danger of never getting a date.

"These men have put their children in harms way via mandatory social indoctrination in the anti-God public school system." If talking about the Income Tax doesn't get you drawn and quartered, try criticizing the public school system. There's hardly any cow more sacred in our utopian Matriarchy.

"Over the past 40 years, the men of this country have sat back and allowed themselves to be brow beaten into submission and castrated by so-called 'feminists' like Rosie O'Donnell and Hillary Clinton…." Nearly all (90+%) of those men, like me, were already "castrated" at birth when their mothers had them circumcised. (The psychological effect of infant male circumcision is essentially the same as castration–i.e. abortion of full development of male consciousness and character–while still leaving the male able to provide necessary basic stud service.) You're asking these men to rebel first against their own mothers. Is that what you want? Can a viable human society be created on such a basis? Is it even possible?

"Our nation was built by men who were self-reliant, independent and strong." No, they were male chauvinist pigs and patriarchal oppressors. Just ask (almost) any woman.

"Women in this country spend hundreds of millions of dollars every year on 'romance books' whose pages are filled with knights in shining armour and genuine heroes coming to rescue the damsel in distress. Why do you suppose that is?" I've wondered about this myself, since those same women demand that the men in their own lives be the spineless wimps you so scathingly describe in your essay. I don't know why; perhaps, as a woman, you can enlighten me?

"Today they are tolerant, sensitive and genuflect at the feet of perverts called 'gays.'" While you're at it, perhaps you can elucidate another mystery for me: Why is it that the very same women who complain that all the "good" men are either married or "gay" also become instantly rabid in defence of "gay rights"?

Sigmund Freud became famous for (among other things) his immortal question: "What do women want?" Well, I've figured out the answer: WHAT WE HAVE is what women want, because it is what they have used their power to create. If they wanted it different, they would have made it different. Q.E.D.

One thing I do know, however: Although I was brought up to be a perfect little 20th century American male feminist, it has been the behaviour of women themselves which has finally convinced me of the truth in the "traditional" views of women, and of the wisdom of men in the past who kept women "in their place," where their passionate irrationality could be prevented (at least somewhat) from doing damage, not only to men, but to themselves as well. Clearly, the 19th Amendment was one of the biggest mistakes in American history.

"Why are the women the ones out there on the front lines battling this government tooth and nail for our children – ready and willing to die if necessary to protect our own?" Sorry, not so. There may be a few women, such as yourself, involved in this fight, but there are many more men. I have a list of over a hundred web sites, 90% of them by men, devoted to the struggle to prevent the evils you enumerate in your article. Though I honour your work, such intellectual dishonesty … well, is typical of why men of the past–the very men you praise– paid only limited attention to women, even as they worked and risked their lives to build a nation wherein women were better off than they have been at any other time or place in human history.

Which these very same women are now working with equal enthusiasm (though far less risk, at least in the short

run–which seems to be all they can see) to destroy.

You may have seen an excellent response to your article from Australian Graham Strachan. I would disagree with him only in that the history of this war on men and maleness is not just twenty years old. Its modern phase began, by the feminists' own "herstory," in 1848, at the Seneca Falls Convention (see its "Declaration of Sentiments" for a catty parody of the Declaration of Independence)–the same year that the Communist Manifesto appeared. Coincidence? Cui bono?

For my part, after a lifetime of abuse, I've gradually become rather sick of women, their endless complaints, irrational inconstancy, self-satisfied narcissism and wearisome temper tantrums. I'm retired. While I can see the value, in absolute spiritual terms, of standing up for the truth, it seems pointless to engage in battle for something whose intended beneficiaries clearly don't want it. It's your world, sisters; I'm only a guest here, my very existence a result of my mother's not having bothered to exercise her "right to choose" to abort me. If you don't like how things are, rather than complaining to the hired hands, the front men, fall guys, whipping boys and cannon fodder, you'd do better to talk to The Boss.

If something you've purchased doesn't work right, what do you do? Take it back where you got it, no? Well, where do men come from? I'd suggest you address your complaint to the manufacturer.

Maybe when you girls've got it sorted out, you'll let us know exactly what you do want. Or maybe my nephew (thank God I don't have any children to worry about), or his son or grandson. My nephew, age 25, recently married. His wife is clearly smarter than he is–not to mention at least 50% heavier–and clearly knows exactly what she wants. God help him, poor chump. He's what his mother, his teachers, American women have made him, and so he shall be.

Sincerely,
An American man who's had enough
.

Previous Philalethes Index Next

Philalethes #14 - Hyphenate Them Any Way You Want, A Feminist is a Feminist is a Feminist

. · 23 July 2010 · Archived copy · Original

I'm sorry, I won't be joining the pathetically eager Wendy McElroy fan club. She may be a "kinder, gentler" dominatrix, but you can be sure she still holds the whip. Can't anyone see what's happening here? Even if some "tide" is turning, it's still women who hold all the power, and use it solely at their whim.

McElroy writes, "My point is that our cultural assumptions have shifted." What do you mean "our," white woman? My "assumptions" haven't "shifted"; it's always been plain to me that Naomi Wolfe and all her myriad "sisters" are idiots. What she means by "our" is the consensus among white, Anglo/Jewish North American women. Men, men's thoughts and opinions, men's welfare or abuse, don't count except insofar as they may affect men's fitness to meet the needs of women. This is nothing but an argument between factions of women about how men should best be managed.

Have you not noticed that this is the case in all the current ferment over what is feminism, who is a feminist, etc.? It's a big coffee klatch, a room full of women, all talking at once at top volume. (One of the biggest lies of feminism is what I call the Myth of Sisterhood — that all women think alike. The truth is all wars are between factions of women, using men as proxies: front men, fall guys, whipping boys, cannon fodder.) When — if — they figure it out, they'll let us know what our role is to be.

Note that every one of the "critics" and "sceptics" she quotes or refers to are women. Not a single man. Men's opinions of Naomi Wolf are irrelevant; this is an issue — like all issues of any importance — to be decided by Woman, alone in Her Perfect Wisdom.

Women are notoriously, eternally creatures of mood, whim and impulse; change is their natural element. If you faint with gratitude to see her changing her mind today and allowing that men — some men, at least — should be treated a little better, what will you do tomorrow when she exercises her eternal prerogative and changes it again?

She will, you know. She gets bored easily. Very easily.

The idea that justice should be based on standards that do not change is a product of the male mind, and foreign to the female, for whom how she "feels" at any given moment is the absolute, final standard of judgment.

Another element of the male mind, much ridiculed and complained of by females, is the faculty of discrimination, whence comes the understanding that in some matters (everything, in fact, that matters in human life) you can't have your cake and eat it too. We must make choices. One of those choices is which part of our nature shall rule our lives: emotion or reason? It's either one or the other; no "equality" is possible. It's women's hatred of and refusal to acknowledge that choice that is the bedrock of feminism. You heard what they yelled: *"We want it all!"* They were *not* kidding.

One way you can always tell a feminist, even the "kinder, gentler" variety: she refuses to use her "husband's name. I know, women will fume and spit about this, but I've found it to be a good indicator of where a woman really stands. I know intelligent, powerful women, clearly dominant in many respects in their marriage situations, who nonetheless identify themselves as their husbands' wives; this does not diminish their real power in any way, but seems to constitute an acknowledgement, subtle (and often not consciously understood by the woman herself) but real, that she is not the be-all and end-all of creation. That there is a natural hierarchy, and that, for human life to be human, reason must be acknowledged the master of emotion.

“Individualist” feminism is really the ultimate form of the disease, woman usurping not only man but God as well. “I am Me, I don’t need anything or anyone, no one can tell me what to do, and I can do anything I want!” It is precisely because Woman is naturally subjective and narcissistic that sane cultures have placed man in charge.

“If you allow them [women] to pull away restraints and put themselves on an equality with their husbands, do you imagine that you will be able to tolerate them? From the moment that they become your fellows, they will become your masters.” Marcus Porcius Cato (the Elder, aka the Censor), 234-149 BCE

Read this quote again: it is not a joke, it is simply the truth. There is no “equality”; one or the other must be the final authority. And the prediction has come to pass, as evidenced by the common response of “men” here to Wendy McElroy. American “men” in our time are really boys, expectantly awaiting Mother’s judgment, pathetically grateful when she deigns to withhold the lash.

Boys are males who are subject to women; men are males who have graduated from childhood, that state that is naturally under female authority, and become capable and worthy of caring for and managing women and children. This “graduation” is another kind of birth, and in our culture it has been aborted wholesale (not by accident that abortion is the “sacrament” of feminism), so that boys do not grow into men, and thus women can be “free” — which in practice means totally out of control, along with every imaginable social pathology. Look around; it is all of a piece.

Probably nothing can be done about this; the disease, like every historical case of social degeneration and collapse, must run its course. Perhaps no one who reads this will be capable of understanding, but here it is anyway: the truth.

Hyphenate them any way you want, a feminist is a feminist is a feminist.

Previous Philalethes Index Next

Further Reading:

Philalethes #1 – Feminist Allies?

Philalethes #15 - Women Are Out of Control In Our Culture

. · 26 July 2010 · Archived copy · Original

Some years back I came across this bumper sticker (*"MEN ARE NOT PIGS! Pigs are intelligent, sensitive, sweet and caring beings."*)This was not long after I saw in a shop window a rubber stamp that read *ABORTION IS HARMFUL TO WOMEN / LEGALIZE CASTRATION*. I went inside and inquired of the shopkeeper about the stamp, which I found also displayed on a shelf. *"Some people find it funny,"* she said. I wrote a letter of protest to the store owner (a woman), quoting another joke I'd heard *("Old enough to bleed, old enough to butcher.")* and asking if she found it "funny." Curiously, I received no reply. Last I looked, the rubber stamp was still on sale.

I don't think this kind of thing will ever end. It has become clear that even in the most intelligent, kind, gentle, even enlightened woman there is an underlying stratum of resentment against men that is never penetrated by reason. I have yet to encounter a woman whose first, involuntary reaction to this kind of "humour" is not amusement — perhaps quickly suppressed, but it's always there.

I don't really get angry about it any more. What's the point? It's like being upset about the weather, or other Acts of Nature. Women are as they are; it's a fool's errand to expect them to be like men, to understand that "equal treatment" really means something besides a way to wheedle everything they can get out of men. When a woman appeals to principle, it's only a device, to get a man to do what she wants; the idea that a principle is something that applies to all equally, that might limit her activity as well as a man's, is completely foreign to her mind. She knows instinctively that her innate power, derived from the power of Nature Herself, absolutely trumps anything a man can come up with. After all, she created him, did she not?

What she doesn't understand, what never occurs to her without male assistance, is that the ultimate result of the use of her power will be her own suffering. This is why the Buddha, and every other great teacher of liberation from suffering, was a man. Woman on her own can't get out of the prison of suffering life.

The bottom line is: there is no such thing as "equality" between the sexes. It is a chimera, a mythical beast, a political tool used by women — on average much more clever than men, as Harry Belafonte ("Dat's right! De woman is uh! smatah!"), among many others, noted — and fundamentally lacking the innate sense of scruple that even the most corrupted man possesses — to fool and manipulate men by appealing to our sense of "reasonableness."

Lead, or follow. There cannot be two drivers at the wheel, two hands on the tiller. Either our activity is guided by Reason, or it is propelled by Passion. And the life ruled by Passion is the life of suffering, no matter how attractive it may seem in the (very) short term.

Women in our culture are completely out of control. They have taken over the lead, but they really don't know where they are going. They are no longer restrained and guided by men, and self-restraint is unknown to the female mind. The other day I saw an overweight teenage girl wearing a sleeveless tee-shirt that said "It's all about ME. Deal with it." Which I thought summed up feminism neatly and for all time.

"If you allow them [women] to pull away restraints and put themselves on an equality with their husbands, do you imagine that you will be able to tolerate them? From the moment that they become your fellows, they will become your masters." Marcus Porcius Cato (the Elder, aka the Censor), 234-149 BCE

.

Previous Philalethes Index Next

Philalethes #16 - Who Stole Feminism? Nobody!

. · 29 July 2010 · Archived copy · Original

Apparently Ms. Sommers (and a few like her) is smart enough to see that feminism's success has not brought the matriarchal paradise we were led to expect, and honest enough to be uncomfortable about it; but she's not ready — not yet, anyway — to admit to herself that this has been no accident. I can sympathise; the truth can be hard. But in the end, either we make the truth our first priority, or we do not. Any "philosophy professor" (according to her book's flyleaf) should be clear on this point.

As it happens, I have her other book, Who Stole Feminism?, which I picked up when I was working at a newspaper. Haven't read it, only skimmed, but from the title alone it is clear that the author still "doesn't get it." Not surprising — she's hardly alone, and at least she's making an effort. But exactly what is she trying to do? Is she really seeking the truth, or (perhaps unconsciously, as women will) hoping that a half-truth will confuse the issue enough to prevent the real truth from coming out?

The truth is, nobody "stole" feminism: it was never anything other than what it is now. The only thing that's changed is that feminism's overwhelming success has revealed its true nature to an extent seldom before seen. Indeed, never before has the entire male population of a major civilization been infant-circumcised: savagely tortured, mutilated and crippled, sexually and emotionally, by their own mothers. Truly, feminism is the "Society for Cutting Up Men."

It is in the very nature of the female mind to want to "have her cake and eat it too." (Remember *"We want it ALL!"?*) Ms. Sommers wants to keep the "good parts" of feminism while reforming the rest. It won't work. There can be no such thing as "feminism lite." The female appetite — for power, for possession, for solipsistic self-gratification (it is no accident that one of the most successful "women's magazines" is titled simply SELF) — is in its very nature unlimited; either it is restrained, and we have (some measure of) civilization, or it is not, and we have chaos. Look around.

Imperfect as it was — and everything in this world is imperfect, can never be otherwise — the American Republic created by those awful "dead white males," George Washington, Thomas Jefferson, John Adams, James Madison and the rest, provided the freest, most prosperous and comfortable life that any women have ever enjoyed in human history. I can remember, as a child growing up in the 1950s, we used to leave our family house's door unlocked! Can you imagine anyone anywhere in America doing so today? Like it or not, in the bad old days of the "patriarchy," most women were able to "walk down the street unmolested."

That the America of the 1950s could have used a lot of improvement is certainly true. Unfortunately, however, instead of building on what we had then, women have used their newfound power — now that American men have been reduced to whimpering slaves — to destroy it. This was no accident, though neither was it exactly intentional. But because female power is fundamentally and overwhelmingly unconscious by nature, its unrestrained, unmodulated exercise could not have produced any other outcome.

The flyleaf of Who Stole Feminism? Says, *"A group of zealots, claiming to speak for all women, are promoting a dangerous new agenda that threatens our most cherished ideals and sets women against men in all spheres of life."* This is well stated, but not entirely accurate. The agenda is by no means "new"; the "battle of the sexes" is as old as humanity. The modern "feminist movement," merely its latest, most successful incarnation, is generally considered to have begun at the 1848 "Seneca Falls Convention," whose "Declaration of Sentiments" stated:

"The history of mankind is a history of repeated injuries and usurpations on the part of man toward woman, having

in direct object the establishment of an absolute tyranny over her."

Does this not "claim to speak for all women," and "set women against men in all spheres of life"? Exactly who, then, is the "group of zealots?" That this "Declaration of Sentiments" was a clever pastiche of the Declaration of Independence was not an accident: from the beginning feminism has always been a war against men, based on an absolute denial of the two sexes' fundamental unity, whose ultimate object must be an absolute severing of the mutual ties of interdependence between them, in the Utopian hope that women will be better off in a world not "ruled" by men, wherein men are at least reduced to docile slaves of Woman's will, at most (the logical conclusion) eradicated entirely. Make no mistake: both of these outcomes are possible; the first, indeed, has largely been realized. But is this really best for women?

And by the way, if, as the Who Stole Feminism? Blurb seems to imply, it is not a good idea to "set women against men in all spheres of life," is it still good to do it in some spheres? If so, which ones? Who decides? (My guess is Ms. Sommers would nominate herself, and others like her, to wield that authority.) This is the problem with "feminism lite": once you start such a war, how can it be contained in only "approved" arenas? When the female fights, Marquis of Queensbury Rules (the "male code" that women find so laughable) do not apply.

Nor is it an accident that the "founding document" of feminism is based on "sentiment" — not, be it noted, on reason. Actually, the entire history of humanity can be reduced to one struggle, between passion and reason: by which shall we rule our lives? Homo "sapiens" and Pan Troglodytes — the common chimpanzee — are 98+% genetically identical. The chimpanzee's life is ruled by passion; human life, insofar as it may differ from that of the chimpanzee, must be ruled by reason.

The real truth, to paraphrase from the feminist declaration above, is this: "The history of humankind is a history of constant struggle with our own animal — i.e. chimpanzee — nature, having in direct object the establishment of some form of life not entirely ruled by blind, unconscious Mother Nature." The sole reason for the historical "domination" of males in human culture is that males — because they are not so totally ruled by Nature's imperatives as are females — are, on average, slightly more able to restrain the rule of passion in their own minds and lives, and thus slightly more able to devote time and energy to the development of reason, which alone makes possible the invention of what little we have that distinguishes human life from chimpanzee life. Including, inter alia, the "philosophy" whereof Ms. Sommers is a "professor" — and the very ideas of human individual worth, dignity and freedom which the feminists use to advance their appeals for evermore special privileges.

The real truth — the Big Secret — is that it is Woman who truly rules the world (this world, anyway), and that any idea of "equality" between the sexes is utterly nonsensical. How can the creature be considered "equal" to his Creator? But the irreducible paradox of life in this world is that in creating man, Woman has externalized that part of herself which offers her the most hope of escaping from the endless wheel of suffering that is worldly existence. Thus the instinctive pride a woman feels on giving birth to a son. Note that the universal image of Madonna and Child is of a mother and her son — not her daughter. If the latter, it would be meaningless, merely another turn of the wheel, nothing new, nothing different. The mother-son relationship is the beginning of everything that matters in our world; its relative health or pathology is the measure of the possibility of human progress.

This is the real reason for the "dominance" of men in human history: to serve women's needs, both proximate (the invention of the washing machine, etc., etc.) and ultimate (the seeking and finding, through reason, of the means of liberation from the endless suffering of earthly life taught by men like the Buddha). As one honest woman, gadfly Camille Paglia, put it: *"If the development of civilization had been left up to women, we'd still be living in grass huts."* (Note again: the feminist "Declaration of Sentiments" was adapted from a document created by men.) This is not a value judgement; it is simply an observation of reality.

It is worth noting that the feminist “Declaration of Sentiments” appeared concurrently with the Communist Manifesto (1848). Both are products of the same kind of thinking: superficial, short-sighted, earthbound, materialistic, utopian (from the Greek: ou-topos, “no place”) efforts to create an “earthly paradise” by forcibly moving the furniture around, without any effort to understand, much less address, the real causes of our suffering. It is not an accident that the century wherein women first began exercising overt political power (as distinct from the covert, total power they have always had and can never lose) also saw the greatest manifestations of collectivist mass hysteria (need we explore the etymology of this word?) — And mass suffering — in human history. Again, not an accident that the first and so-far only worldwide feminist convention was hosted in Beijing; feminism and communism are spiritual sisters. (I was not surprised to learn recently that Simone de Beauvoir, author of the feminist bible The Second Sex, was an ardent Maoist, who applauded the “Cultural Revolution.”)

If Ms. Sommers really is a “philosophy professor,” I would expect her to seek to understand a phenomenon by examining its essential principle, rather than wasting time on myriad superficial manifestations. The essence of feminism is inherent in its very name: it is concerned exclusively with women (Latin: femina), not with humanity as a whole. Feminism necessarily sees the sexes as at war — and why start a war if you don’t mean to win? Let us be clear: if it is to be war, then women cannot lose. Ultimately, in the game of life in this world, men may hold some of the cards, but women own the deck. But does one hand truly “win” by cutting off the other?

Now, it may be true that women could exist without men, while men certainly could not exist without women (“equality”?) — But what kind of existence would that be? In fact, a considerable number of species have taken this evolutionary path: they’ve simply stopped producing males, and now consist entirely of females. But they’ve also ceased to evolve; secure in their ecological niches, they’re dead ends.

An ex-lesbian once told me she gave it up because the exclusive company of women bored her out of her head. I’m a little slow; only later did I realize she was, rather clumsily, attempting to attract my interest. She went on to tell me how proud she was of her little son (conceived by anonymous artificial insemination), for staunchly maintaining among his preschool peers that fathers were unnecessary. What exactly was she trying to tell me, I wondered? What do women want, anyway? (Pace, Dr. Freud.) Sorry, not my type.

What do women want? Look around: what you see is what women want, because it is what they have made by their (mostly unconscious) use of their creative power. If the women of a culture want their men to be strong, physically, morally, intellectually, they will have strong men. Present-day American women want their men weak, indecisive, “sensitive,” easily controlled and manipulated, and that is what they have. So it has always been, in every dying civilization. If they want it different, they can have it different, but merely hating men for being what they have made us will not make any difference. It is, indeed, exactly how we have gotten to where we are now.

Yes, indeed, men are terribly imperfect. But, after all, where do men come from? I offer this bargain to any woman: when women are perfect, men will be perfect also. In fact, this is an ironclad prediction. Until then, however, we’ll just have to make do with what we have. That both sexes would be wise to tender more respect to the other is certainly true; but like everything else, this must begin with women. Very few women I know have any real respect for men — their own sons, every one of us. They treat us like the lapdogs whose ears and tails they crop to suit their sick fashion whims. They regard us with contempt while enjoying all the comforts of the civilization we created for them — from flush toilets to computers. Why value what you can always make more of — what, indeed, you have already produced to excess? Front men, fall guys, whipping boys and endless cannon fodder.

True, males exist to serve females’ needs; but we are also human beings. And even if we were not, the Golden Rule still applies; even an all-female Congress cannot “repeal” this Law. Now and forever, you get what you give.

.

Previous Philalethes Index Next

Toronto Cops Gone Wild

. · 29 July 2010 · Archived copy · Original

Toronto Cops Gone Wild

Please help this go viral!

Philalethes #17 - When Women Rule

. · 1 August 2010 · Archived copy · Original

Switzerland is now ruled by a woman (the president or whatever is the single-person office at the head of its government), and a few years ago discarded their ancient governmental system for a new, politically-correct constitution which, like that of Canada, pretends to “give” rights while actually vastly expanding government powers. Switzerland, R.I.P.

In 1995 I saw a PBS special celebrating the 75th anniversary of the 19th Amendment (1920), and was amused to hear that opponents of female suffrage predicted that it would result in alcohol prohibition (the “temperance” movement — like the push for infant male circumcision — was closely allied to the female suffrage movement, all promoted by 19th century Miss Wormwoods determined to make the world a better place by controlling male behaviour). Somehow it seemed to escape the writers of the show that indeed that was exactly what happened. Duh. The 18th Amendment actually preceded the 19th in ratification, but was a product of the same growing influence of women in political life. And Prohibition typified the female obsession with appearances over reality, and the use of force-by-proxy to make the world “better,” which actually makes the situation worse.

Previous Philalethes Index Next

"The female of the species is more deadly than the male." -- Rudyard Kipling

"The history of woman is the history of the worst form of tyranny the world has ever known; the tyranny of the weak over the strong. It is the only tyranny that lasts." -- Oscar Wilde

"There has never been a case of men and women reigning together, but wherever on the earth men are found, there we see that men rule, and women are ruled, and that on this plan, both sexes live in harmony. But on the other hand, the Amazons, who are reported to have held rule of old, did not suffer men to stop in their country, but reared only their female children, killing the males to whom they gave birth." -- Spinoza

"When women hold the helm of government, the state is at once in jeopardy" -- Hegel

.

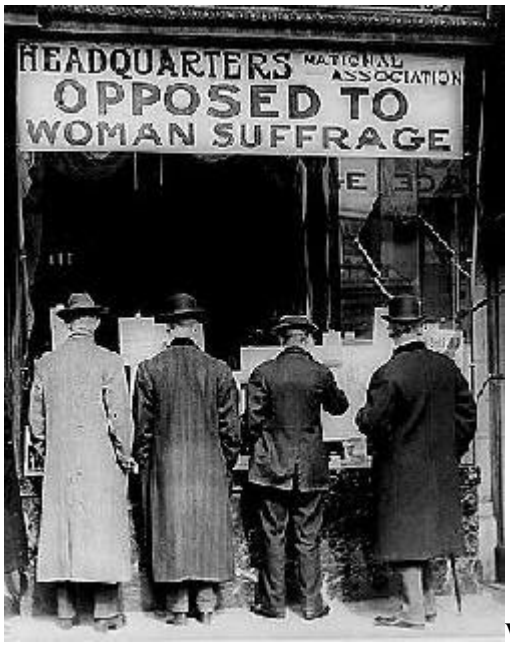
.

Further Reading:

Man Superior to Woman - Chapter Four

Philalethes #18 - Opposed to Woman Suffrage?

. · 4 August 2010 · Archived copy · Original



Women SHOULD have the right to vote.

When I was younger, before the *"hormone-induced fog"* (thanks, Warren Farrell) began to clear and I started to actually see the situation with some clarity, I would have said the same. Now I'm older, not so desperately in need of female approval, I can simply say what I see without having to be furious, which also clouds the vision.

Another common prediction by opponents of female suffrage was that it would destroy the family. Well? Isn't that exactly what has happened? When women can look to the government for their needs — a government funded by involuntary contributions from working men — why should they bother to do the work of maintaining relationships with men? Why should they have any respect for men, if they can use and discard them at whim? As Warren Farrell made clear in The Myth of Male Power, the State is now every woman's "husband." Women are generally the majority in most human populations, so when women vote, they'll get what they want. (It'll be very interesting to see what happens in China in a few decades, with something like 20% more men than women. Sexual power far outweighs political power in any case.)

"The American Republic will endure, until politicians realize they can bribe the people with their own money." (Alexis de Tocqueville) What about when politicians can bribe the "voters" with other people's money? Then you have socialism, which ultimately self-destructs, like any "system" that separates freedom (or power) from responsibility.

Is it only coincidence that the century that saw the transfer of political power to women also saw the exponential growth of socialism all over the planet? Remember: while the prime value of the male is freedom, the prime value of the female is security. Women may say they want to be "free," but what they really want is to be able to indulge their whims and fancies without being held responsible for the consequences. It's not an accident that the #2 issue of feminism (right after voting) is abortion.

I suppose I'm not really an "MRA" … I'm not proposing that the "right to vote" be taken from women. I understand that women rule the world, and it's what they seem to want. I'm merely commenting on what I see. I agree with the poster below: there's really no way to "fight" it; we can only walk away. Let them change their own damned oil.

In a healthy political order, voting is not a "right"; it's a privilege. For thousands of years, human cultures that lasted

understood, if only unconsciously, that formal political decision-making power should be in the hands of those society members who understand that freedom requires responsibility — i.e. those with whom the buck stops. Children do not understand the connection of responsibility with freedom, which is why adults are responsible for children, and children traditionally have not been given political power. I hear that in Europe, it is now seriously being proposed that children should be given the vote. Not surprising, once power has been separated from responsibility. Politicians, of course, love the idea: more fools to rule.

Traditionally, men have been responsible for supporting their families, i.e. the women and children dependent on them, which is why men have had the power that rests on that responsibility. Now that women can use the power of the State, men are still assumed to bear that responsibility — have you been watching the "family court" travesty? — But no longer have any authority — or freedom. A "wallet" is not a man. Similarly, in the area of sexual encounter, men still bear all the responsibility, but women have all the freedom — thus the "bias in the system against men" that "infuriated" you. Think about it.

Previous Philalethes Index Next

.

.

"The women's suffrage movement is only the small edge of the wedge, if we allow women to vote it will mean the loss of social structure and the rise of every liberal cause under the sun. Women are well represented by their fathers, brothers, and husbands." -- Winston Churchill

.

.

Further Reading:

.

Philalethes #11 – The End Results of Female Suffrage

Philalethes #19 - Not Much Happens That Women Don't Approve Of

. · 7 August 2010 · Archived copy · Original

BTW, I hear Bob Dylan said something like “Not much happens that women don’t approve of”

You might have heard this from a previous post by me; somewhere in many boxes of papers I have a Rolling Stone interview with Dylan ca. 1988 in which he said (approximately, according to my memory): “Women rule the world. No man ever did anything unless a woman allowed or encouraged him to do it.” (And I have quoted this in numerous posts here.) It was this remark, and the book Why Males Exist (out of print, check your library), which I discovered about the same time, that finally gave me the necessary keys to understanding the whole “gender” question.

From the beginning of sex, ca. 1.5 billion years ago, the male is the creation of the female, and always will be. She creates/produces males to take care of chores which she cannot or would rather not deal with herself.

“Cannot”: provide genetic diversity to enable swift evolutionary change; single-sex species of any complexity cannot adapt quickly to new conditions. This includes particularly those species which used to have males but no longer do — about which I learned in Why Males Exist. It is worth noting that while there is a substantial number of female-only species among plants, invertebrate animals, fish, amphibians and reptiles, I know of none among the warm-blooded, fast-moving birds and mammals. Certainly this is not an accident. Like the modern fad of lesbianism, female-only species can survive only in thoroughly-protected, unchanging ecological niches.

A woman once told me she used to be a lesbian, but gave it up because lesbian culture/society was terminally boring. I was not surprised. I was also not interested in her rather pathetic attempts to engage my male interest — which included her proud story of how her little boy (a product of anonymous artificial insemination) stood up in school for the idea that fathers are unnecessary. Why she thought I would be charmed by this story I don’t know. This woman came from Berkeley; maybe she should have stayed there.

“Would rather not”: any dangerous task, since the female’s first priority is the security necessary to reproduce successfully. This is why men have always fought the wars, not because women can’t fight, but because men are expendable. And, of course, why men provide 95% of on-the-job deaths, etc. etc. She can always make more, after all.

The male is the front man, fall guy, and whipping boy in her melodrama. The male “rulers” and warriors feminists complain about are simply front men for the females who run them — mothers, “lovers,” wives, daughters — and benefit from their amassing of power, territory and material goods — or their defending of power, territory and material goods from the front men sent by the women across the river. “Fall guy” and “whipping boy”: well, you can figure it out.

Yeah, this article is a joke, but it is a sick joke. The truth is, Bob Dylan was right: women do rule the world, and the world we have is what women want — or at least what they have used their power to create. Including the pathetic politically-correct feminist males like the editor of this paper. I no longer see much point in complaining about it. They’ll do what they want, as they always have. If ever any substantial number of women begin to wonder why they’re suffering, and really want to know, the information is available. The Buddha explained it all quite clearly 2500 years ago, and he was surely not the first, nor the last. And then he simply walked away from the melodrama.

.

Previous Philalethes Index Next

.

.

"Women invent rules, manipulate men to obey them, and in this way dominate men - but in no way apply the rules to themselves." -- Esther Vilar in her 1972 book *The Manipulated Man*

.

“It is an amazing thing to see in our city the wife of a shoemaker, or a butcher, or a porter dressed in silk with chains of gold at the throat, with pearls and a ring of good value… and then in contrast to see her husband cutting the meat, all smeared with cow’s blood, poorly dressed, or burdened like an ass, clothed with the stuff from which sacks are made… but whoever considers this carefully will find it reasonable, because it is necessary that the lady, even if low born and humble, be draped with such clothes for her natural excellence and dignity, and that the man [be] less adorned as if a slave, or a little ass, born to her service.” – Lucrezia Marinella of Venice, Italy, 1600, *The Nobility and Excellence of Women Together With the Defects and Deficiencies of Men*

Interview with a Womenfirster: Phyllis Schlafly

Jack Kammer: What if I was the kind of man, like a lot of men who have confided to me, who is sick to death of the corporate world and in a heartbeat would stay home to take care of their kids because they love them so much and they know the business world is a crock?

Phyllis Schlafly:… That’s their problem. As I look around the world about me, I just don’t find there are many [women] who want the so-called non-traditional relationships.

-- a radio interview, WCVT-FM (now WTMD), Towson University, Maryland, January 5, 1989

Philalethes #20 - Chivalry

. · 10 August 2010 · Archived copy · Original

Quote: *There is no longer anything noble about chivalry. It is just a forum for the devaluation of males.*

Sorry, I don't agree. The problem is not the courtesies men show to women, the problem is that many women have dropped their side of the ancient bargain. A culture in which all relationships are based on total egotism and savage competition cannot last.

"How do porcupines make love? Very carefully." But at least they do it; otherwise there'd be no little porcupines.

The ancient bargain is, in essence, this: mothers care for and protect their sons, who grow up to care for and protect their wives, and the cycle repeats. Both must do their part for it to work, and for human society to survive. But mothers have the ultimate power to define, or redefine, the arrangement; however, even they cannot contravene natural law. Natural law is, in essence, the Golden Rule: you get what you give. And, your creation cannot be other than what you create it to be. And, your creation's character will be a reflection of your character. This is what women need to get straight.

.

Previous Philalethes Index Next

Philalethes #21 - Circumcision

. · 13 August 2010 · Archived copy · Original

Quote: "*While an interesting correlation is made between circumcision rates in the USA and other industrial countries and the rate of male violence this seems inherently flawed. There is no empirical evidence for this sort of claim."*

Well, no, I don't guess there is. Nor can there ever be. "Empirical evidence" is a myth, really, in relation to non-quantifiable factors like human feelings and behaviours. Nevertheless, since I became aware a decade ago of what circumcision did to me, (1) I have been in a state of severe shock and post-traumatic stress, and (2) I've noticed a consistent psychological pattern which I consider significant: infant-circumcised men are subconsciously* terrified of women, while intact men are not. I can't "prove" this, no. But I think it's interesting to note that it was *precisely* when the first universally-circumcised generation (mine, born during WWII) came of age, that feminism took over the culture. There are few men in America today who know how, or why, or when, to gently but firmly say "No" to a woman. We just can't do it. And the consequences have been and will be disastrous for women as well as for men. Because–feminist dogma notwithstanding–even women are not perfect, and we all need someone in our lives to tell us "No" now and then. When our most infantile impulses are given free reign, we suffer.

(*Note: "Subconsciously" means *we aren't aware of it*, but it profoundly affects our behaviour. We can become aware of such subconscious influences, however, and try to compensate; as I have been doing since I became aware of this.)

What I was pointing out was that the radio segment made a big point of comparing the rates of "male violence" (a term I don't generally use, since it's a code-word for misandry) in America with those in other countries, but somehow neglected to note what, as I said, I consider the decisive difference between those countries (Britain, France) and ours in the rearing of male children. And I have observed an identical neglect in every other commentator on the question of "what's wrong with [American] boys?" who has received any media coverage.

And no, I don't think it's exactly a "conspiracy." It's a lot deeper, a lot bigger than that. It's a symptom of a deeply rooted, pervasive cultural psychosis. "Denial is not a river in Egypt."

Quote: "*What is [interesting] in this comparison is … the way male circumcision is treated in comparison with female circumcision."*

Precisely. When in the mid-1990s immigrants from East Africa and neighbouring regions began bringing their daughters to American hospitals for this traditional procedure, American feminists rose up and had female circumcision outlawed, in probably the swiftest Congressional action since December 8, 1941. Nevertheless, these same feminists continue to actively support the American "tradition" of infant male circumcision. A doctor in Cairo will give exactly the same reasons of "health" and "hygiene" for female circumcision that you'll hear in this country for male circumcision. So why is it bad to do this to girls, if it's good to do it to boys? This, I gather, is what feminism calls "equal treatment."

On the other hand, I've never yet come across a man involved in the effort to stop male circumcision in America who is not also appalled and horrified by the genital mutilation practiced on girls elsewhere in the world, who does not want to see both practices stopped. I can only guess that this apparent discrepancy must be related to the male inability (which I've been hearing about all my life, ad nauseam) to experience the finer, more superior form of compassion naturally demonstrated by females.

Quote: "*Men are expected to take abuse with a stoic resolve."*

A remark from a feminist quoted in *Say No to Circumcision* summed it up pretty well, I thought: “Well, if he can’t take that, what *can* he take?” (I remember reading this in the book, but haven’t been able to find it again; if someone can tell me the page it’s on, I’d appreciate it.)

However, I don’t think this is entirely “wrong,” or that the “solution” is for men to become more like women in this regard (or any other). From the beginning of time it has been men’s task to protect and defend women and children. It’s the natural order, also seen in many other species. To this end, males must learn to, in ‘Enry ‘Iggins immortal words, “take a position and staunchly never budge.” Which means being able to endure suffering without complaint, to die if necessary. As millions of men have, in various ways, to give us the world we have now. What’s changed is that we used to get, as Otis Redding said, *“a little respect”* for our sacrifices.

In a difficult and dangerous world, the freedom to “be in touch with ones feelings” is a luxury, which men have forgone so that women may enjoy it. There’s just no time or energy to waste on “having a good cry” when home and family must be defended, *right now*, against a savage attack.

This is where I–regretfully–must disagree with Warren Farrell, much though I respect his work. Farrell thinks the solution is for the sexes to become more alike–which only shows he has not yet completely recovered from his former lapdog role. The solution is for men to be men again, and for the two sexes to respect each other. Which begins with mothers respecting their sons. The relationship between the sexes is not circular; it’s a spiral, which begins with Mother, as do all things.

In the larger context, it seems like this sort of thing happens in every decaying empire. Life becomes comfortable, people forget about hard the world is outside their limited, temporary prosperity, and women start to think that the security they have is just naturally theirs, that they don’t “need” men anymore. “Fathers are redundant.” Since the necessities of life have resulted in women having an exclusive copyright on all the “virtues” (it’s ironic that this word itself comes from the Latin word for “man”: vir)–gentleness, compassion, caring, etc.–for the protection of which men have made themselves hard and “unfeeling”–women begin cultivating contempt for the men they see around them–the men they themselves have made.

And eventually, of course, the empire rots from within and is invaded and conquered by another culture whose women have kept their men strong. There may be no help for it, really.

Quote: "*The person who submitted this apparently has some issues with women…and I think the credibility of this web site has just gone down a notch."*

Yes indeed, I do have some issues with women–American women especially. There will always be “issues” between the sexes, as between any pair of complementary opposites. I see the relation between the sexes as like that between sparring partners: we help each other by being difficult for each other, giving each other opportunities to learn and grow. But that can only work if there is some parity between us, if we are “worthy opponents.” Since in fact there is no such thing as “equality” between the sexes–the creature (the male) cannot be “equal” to his Creator (the female)–then the entire relationship rests on how mothers bring up their sons: whether to be strong, independent, adult men who are secure in themselves and can hold their own with the women they will encounter later in life, or to be weak, dependent Mama’s boys whose assigned role is to gratify women’s infantile greed for power.

In the last century, American women seem to have decided on the latter. To that end they have embraced the Tonya Harding strategy: since the point, as they see it, of the relationship is to *win*–by whatever means necessary–it makes sense to cripple the “enemy” before the contest even begins. So Tonya hired a couple of hit men to kneecap her rival in women’s skating competition–and American mothers hire doctors to torture and cripple (physically, yes, but even more important, psychologically) their newborn, defenceless sons. It’s sick, that’s what it is. And it was done to

me, and damned right I have “issues” about it.

I am what’s fashionable these days to call a “survivor” of severe childhood abuse–all, the overt part anyway, from my father. Trained to seek refuge with my mother, I was brought up to believe all the feminist dogma about how men are “bad” and women are “good” (a gross oversimplification, but that’s what it comes down to). Only at age 50 did I begin to understand what my *mother* had done to me–unconsciously and thus in “innocence,” but nevertheless the consequences for me are very real–and that the beginning of it, my circumcision at birth, unlike everything my father did, is permanent and irreparable.

So yes, I have “issues.” And no, I’m not mad at my mother about it–she didn’t know what she was doing. But I have no patience with lies, or those who prefer lies to the truth, or offer lies in response to truth. Like the Man said, the truth–and *only* the truth–will set us free.

“Let us speak the truth.” – George W. Bush, Berlin, Germany, 23 May 2002 (Scuse me, I couldn’t resist. He really said it; I heard him on the radio.)

And I will say this: if you are a circumcised American man and you don’t have “issues,” you’re in serious denial. Ironically, I get more ridicule from men on this than from women. But I understand why.

Quote: "*I don’t think it’s the definitive aspect of American culture, or that it profoundly affects most men’s psychology."*

Well, of course you don’t. But refusing to see something doesn’t mean it’s not there. The fact is this: only two cultures on the planet practice infant male circumcision: the Jews (whose psychology in this regard–and its wider implications–deserves a whole essay in itself) and the White Anglo Protestant Americans–who got the idea from the Jews. (And formerly the other English-speaking countries, though Britain itself has almost entirely abandoned the idea since 1950.) It’s also become popular in South Korea, due to overwhelming American cultural influence. Given this fact, and what a horrendous thing it is to do to a newborn baby (those who aren’t permanently scarred bleed to death), I think it’s a pretty “definitive aspect” of a culture. Why do they do this? Women in other countries–continental Europe, for example–find the idea ridiculous/horrifying. But American women not only consider it perfectly “normal” but actually become hysterical (look that word up in the dictionary) when it is questioned. This is not like a difference in how various cultures clip their nails or comb their hair. And how do you know it doesn’t “profoundly affect” men’s psychology? Have you even thought about it?

Again, the plain facts are these: (1) There’s no end of wringing of hands (and lucrative book contracts) these days over the question of “what’s wrong with American men?” and (2) The fact that only American men, relative to all other major nations on the planet, are subjected to this treatment is never mentioned in any of this voluminous “what’s wrong” literature. If this doesn’t look funny to you, you definitely need to see an optometrist. Or some kind of healer.

“Inside every boy there is a nice, loving, little girl waiting to come out if only we have the eyes to see it.”

Excellent! What frustrates me *most* is men like this, who’ve bought the feminist line and are doing their best to “justify” men within a system where ultimately it cannot be done. Either men are men, or they are poor imitations of women. *There is no middle ground on this.* Because, while women can, to some extent, do anything men can do, men *cannot* do what women do. *Nothing* will change this truth. The real question is, do women want men, or not. Because, while women can live without men, men cannot exist without women. If women do not want men, the best solution would be to get rid of them entirely, and turn to cloning, as some other species have done (See *why males exist*). That is a legitimate solution, because it is women’s decision. But if they do want men, they are only harming themselves by crippling the men they make. It’s insane.

The real insanity is feminism itself, whose bedrock foundation is the “men are from Mars, women are from Venus” fallacy. The truth is, women are from Earth, and men are from women. *We are two parts of the same being.* As Gandhi said, *“An eye for an eye leaves the whole world blind.”* But this is even closer to home: Feminism is one hand cutting off the other and calling it “equality,” or “justice” or “progress” or any of a million other senseless buzzwords. It’s truly insane.

Well, enough for the moment. My thanks to anyone who’s taken the trouble to read this, and to all who made this a fruitful discussion.

.

Previous Philalethes Index Next

.

.

Q: Why do you think male circumcision exists?
A: To reduce male libido, or as Rambam (the most famous Jewish Rabbi) wrote:

.

"Similarly with regard to circumcision, one of the reasons for it is, in my opinion, the wish to bring about a decrease in sexual intercourse and a weakening of the organ in question, so that this activity be diminished and the organ be in as quiet a state as possible.

.

It has been thought that circumcision perfects what is defective congenitally. This gave the possibility to everyone to raise an objection and to say: How can natural things be defective so that they need to be perfected from outside, all the more because we know how useful the foreskin is for that member?

.

In fact this commandment has not been prescribed with a view to perfecting what is defective congenitally, but to perfecting what is defective morally.

.

The bodily pain caused to that member is the real purpose of circumcision. None of the activities necessary for the preservation of the individual is harmed thereby, nor is procreation rendered impossible, but violent concupiscence and lust that goes beyond what is needed are diminished.

.

The fact that circumcision weakens the faculty of sexual excitement and sometimes perhaps diminishes the pleasure is indubitable.

.

For if at birth this member has been made to bleed and has had its covering taken away from it, it must indubitably be weakened. The Sages, may their memory be blessed, have explicitly stated: It is hard for a woman with whom an uncircumcised man has had sexual intercourse to separate from him. In my opinion this is the strongest of the reasons for circumcision."

.

Philalethes #22 - Don't Tell Me the Truth; You'll Hurt My Feelings!

. · 16 August 2010 · Archived copy · Original

... I wish to clarify that I certainly do not oppose responding to what cries for rebuttal, only that I feel how such response is done is important. Cowshit should be identified as such, but constantly “taking offence” makes us look like thin-skinned sissies, and does not encourage women, feminist or not — or anyone else — to respect us.

Feminists already hold us in contempt; women who might be inclined to respect us will do so only if we act like men.

If we support creating an environment where everyone must tiptoe around to avoid “offending” anyone, we have already lost to the abuse of female power — “*Don’t* tell me the truth; you’ll *hurt my feelings!”*

A meaningful, useful dialog between the sexes requires that men be men, not merely half-assed copies of women. Sure, I have feelings, but if we’re engaged in discussion in order to determine the truth (and I don’t see any other reason to bother), then my feelings are irrelevant, and should not be brought into play. If the truth “offends” me, that’s my problem; if it’s not the truth, why should I be “offended”? If I say it’s a lie, it’s because it’s a lie, not because it “offended” me.

.

Previous Philalethes Index Next

Philalethes #23 - Who's to Blame

. · 19 August 2010 · Archived copy · Original

Quote: *"Please remember that if all fathers spoke out against this [circumcision] it would be a much harder thing to promote. Fathers routinely circumcise their children as much as mothers. … I think instead of focusing on how to blame feminism for this one …."*

Please note that I never use the term “blame.” I am not the least bit interested in blame, which concept I regard as both meaningless and counterproductive. Blame is extra, an emotional load dumped on the situation that is totally unnecessary for understanding, and in fact will impede understanding, because as soon as “blame” appears, everyone will be so busy trying to avoid it that there will be no time or energy left for simple understanding. “Blame” is a useless hot potato, which solves nothing and makes a problem a lot worse than it would be without it.

I am interested in facts, in cause and effect. I am interested in preventing suffering, thus in determining who has the power to do so in any given case. Whoever has the power to prevent suffering in a particular situation, but does not do so, is responsible for the suffering in that situation. That’s just a fact. “Blame” is unnecessary.

If you step on a rake, you are likely to get clobbered in the face by the handle. There’s no “blame,” it’s not anybody’s “fault”; it’s just simple cause and effect. There’s no need to add anything more to the picture. If you curse yourself, or curse the rake, you’re wasting energy that could be better used paying attention so you won’t step on the next rake.

If you want to prevent suffering, it is necessary to understand whose power is primary in a given situation, because if you put your effort into persuading those who do not have the real power to change it, you are wasting your time.

I find it amusing how, after decades of listening to women complain about not being taken seriously, when I do take them seriously, in an arena where it is clear to me that their power incontrovertibly rules, suddenly it’s all about how powerless they are, how everything is someone else’s–i.e. *men’s*–fault. Sorry, I don’t buy it.

After all, if women have the “right to choose” to terminate their child’s *life*, do they not also have the right to “choose” to cut off part of his body? Can’t have it both ways. I say they do have the *power* to do both, but that’s not the same thing as a “right.”

But this sort of thing, endlessly repeated, is why in the end I find I simply cannot take feminism seriously. They *say* they want to be regarded, and treated, just like men, but when it comes down to any real situation where the consequences might be even slightly less than fun, suddenly they’re using all their ancient power to avoid just that. They bat their pretty little eyelashes and whimper, “Poor little me! I have no power here! It’s all those *male* doctors!”

Similarly, after agitating so hard to have the choice of joining the military, during the Gulf War most of the females somehow suddenly, mysteriously became pregnant and had to be sent home. Oh, gee gosh, I wonder how that happened?

I’m in favour of living in Reality, because only if we’re dealing with the real world–not some fantasy in our minds–do we have a chance of preventing what suffering is preventable. Women do not belong in the military, for the simple reason that the military’s job is to protect women. Any baboon troop that put its young females in the defensive ring on the perimeter would soon be an extinct baboon troop. It’s ridiculous. Only in a decadent empire, where there’s no real risk of losing a war (or so people believe, just as they did in Rome toward the end) would such

an idea be considered.

Nevertheless, all the men fall for it. As we must. I don't mean just the men in this forum; in a decade of occasionally speaking out on the issue of circumcision, I've received far more resistance and ridicule from men than from women. Though this is painful, I understand why. The Prime Directive for males of all species is: Please the Female. Which is why I do not hold men, including fathers, ultimately responsible for the Infant Male Circumcision Program. It's not our "choice."

Quote: *"The medical industry was male run for many, many years and circumcisions were done then too."*

Of course, the medical industry is still mostly "male run." But at whose behest? Doctors are hired hands, service providers. If they do not provide the service their customers want, they will be out of business. The circumcision program began with "modern medicine" providing something that 19th-century, Victorian women wanted: "scientific" proof of their suspicion that there is something fundamentally "wrong" with men, and something modern, scientific and efficient to do about it. The Infant Male Circumcision Program came out of the same "hygienic" thinking that also birthed Eugenics and, eventually, the Nazi programs to "improve" the species "scientifically."

(Of course, it is interesting to note that as more and more women become doctors, the circumcision rate is not affected–though, unlike the male doctors, they have not been subjected to it themselves. So what's their excuse? I'm sure they will have one.)

This is why doctors offer women the "choice" of circumcising their sons. *And it is a choice.* Any woman can "just say no," and her son will remain intact. I know several women who did just that. This is fact. Where power lies, there also resides responsibility. Like the sign on President Truman's desk: "The buck stops here."

Quote: *"Most women do NOT know they really have a choice on this, and women are not the only one making this decision. Most parents are told, as often as not by male doctors, that circumcision is necessary."*

And why do women "not know" they have a choice? Because they haven't taken the trouble to research the issue. And because apparently the idea of cutting off part of their sons' sexual organs seems to them entirely normal. Why? I'd bet if the doctors told them it was necessary to circumcise their *daughters*, they might give the question just an teensy little bit of thought before signing on the dotted line. And, increasingly, women are making this decision on their own, in this age of "single-parent" families. Fathers are, after all, redundant.

Note how the hospital responded in the Flatt vs. Kantak case: "The mother chose the procedure." They're right. She's challenging the issue on the only grounds she has: that they misinformed her. Which, if it works, might blow the whole issue open. But the question still remains: why did she not question further at the time, since it *was* her choice, and her responsibility? If she had had a daughter, and the same choice had been offered, are we to believe she just would have gone along with it, without question? If not, why not?

Quote: *"This was going on LONG before feminism was even thought of. Not every injustice is directly caused by feminism."*

Well, actually, I use the term "feminism" to refer not only to the modern "movement" dating from 1848, but to the age-old operation of female power of which what we now see is only a recent, ridiculous–though very effective–manifestation. And of course, very few "injustices" are directly caused by feminism, or female power; usually women use men as tools to rearrange the world as they want it. But that's what they do, have always done, and always will do, so long as there are men in addition to women.

What is the quickest, most efficient way to provoke a man into murderous anger? Cast aspersions on his mother: e.g. “Your mother wears old Army shoes!” Everyone knows this. Any circumcised American male who questions the infant circumcision program is going up against the greatest, most powerful, absolute authority he has known, or will know, in his entire life: MOM. This is not easy. What is the invariable refrain of every father who wants his son to be circumcised? “So he’ll look like his father.” IOW, so his father will not have to confront this sometimes shattering question in his own life. Easier just to pass it on to the next generation unexamined.

Do you really want your sons to question your maternal authority? Think about it. What would that do to your life, your family? Does Mother know best, or not? Which is it? If Mother does not know best, why is it that mothers get custody in the overwhelming majority of divorces? BTW, I understand that in the 19th century and earlier–before the Infant Male Circumcision Program, “female suffrage,” Prohibition, Hillary, etc. etc.–it was fathers who were assigned custody, because they were seen as the responsible parent. Interesting.

There can be no comparison between the views of women and the views of circumcised men on the subject of circumcision. Expecting men to “lead” in this instance is ridiculous–especially after decades of insisting that men should follow women’s “lead,” without question, in all situations.

Female power is subtle. Most of the time, women are not consciously aware of their power and how they are using it. Which is the real tragedy, for it is women’s unconscious use of their power which causes most of our suffering–the avoidable part, anyway. Nevertheless, the Law is “Ignorance is no excuse.” Because ultimately the Universe’s books will balance. In human societies, men pay for women’s ignorance. Which is the entire reason for the “patriarchy”: because somebody must be responsible, and women won’t do it, men must do it, so men have (had) the authority that comes with that responsibility. Where the buck stops, there also is the decision-making power, apparently at least. But in fact, men are always playing catch-up, cleaning up after the effects of women’s unconscious use of their power.

Men would not exist if women did not create them. Keep this in mind; you will never understand the relationship of the sexes without this fact as foundation. Females can exist without males–as has been proven by the many species which used to be sexual but no longer are, because the females simply stopped producing males–but males cannot exist without females. The power to create is also the power to not create. No analysis of the comparative power of the genders has any validity unless it starts from this point.

The “myth of male power” is truly a myth in both senses: (a) it is not true, and (b) everyone believes it.

So, why do females create males? Nature is ruthlessly economical; She does nothing without some reason, some utility. Perhaps sex first happened, ca. 1.5 billion years ago, by an accident resulting from a random cosmic ray striking a nucleus; but it would not have continued, prospered and prevailed if it did not *work*. Sex works for two reasons: (1) it provides for swift evolution to meet changing circumstances and challenges. And (2) Expendable males (remember, she can always make more if she needs them) can be assigned to various chores which females prefer to avoid. Even now, in the Golden Age of Feminism and Gender Equality, we can see this in operation, as women use their newly-won “equality” to invade work areas such as corporate boards that have previously been exclusively male, but somehow mysteriously neglect to insist on becoming garbage”women,” or being subject to military conscription, etc. etc.

And while campaigns to bring these discrepancies to public attention may be useful, ultimately I believe they will fail. Because women do have the power, and will always have the power, to avoid what they do not wish to confront. Including their buck-stops-here responsibility for what happens to their children.

Of course it’s all about choice for women. It always has been, and it always will be. Until men grow wombs and

begin gestating and giving birth–i.e. until men become women–there will always be this *fundamental* inequality between the sexes. And of course, there's no need for men to become women; if that's where we're headed, the simple way is for women to stop producing men. As many species have done–though none, so far as I know, among the warm-blooded birds and mammals.

That's why I don't fight against feminism. That would be pointless. What I do is put forward the truth. The truth is, women can have it any way they want, because they hold the power. No man has any power but what has been lent to him by women. However, there is one check on women's power: Natural Law. Even women cannot decide to have water flow uphill, or time flow backward. And even women cannot repeal the law of karma. Whatever you do to another you yourself will eventually experience, in this lifetime or another.

Quote: *"Years ago, I went to a circumcision of a child born to two friends of mine. (It was horrible and a real eye opener.) The procedure was performed by a male rabbi, as part of a religious ceremony, and attended by myself, my wife, both parents, an aunt, and an uncle — four men and three women, and the male rabbi performed the mutilation."*

Of course it was performed by a rabbi. It's his job, is it not? But *who is he working for?* Actually, it was probably a mohel, though maybe a rabbi can be both. Traditional mohels even keep one of their thumbnails (I believe it is) long and sharpened specially for this ritual. Then they suck the blood off the baby's chopped penis with their mouth. Charming picture, no? Ooh, look out–don't want to be anti-Semitic!

Think about this: This is where this whole business comes from. This is not some accident; it has deep roots in the atavistic past of Middle Eastern desert tribes, long before Judaism existed. It's a remnant of the Golden Age (so the feminists tell us) of Goddess worship, when men and boys were sacrificed to keep Her happy. As, in fact, we still are. Not much ever changes, really.

.

Rabbi Hillel, when asked to expound the Law while standing on one foot, said, *"Do not do to another what you would not have done to yourself. That is the whole of the Law; the rest is merely commentary."* It is unfortunate that his own people have paid no more attention to this truth than has anyone else. But that's the way of the world.

Quote: *"I imagine in countries where FGM is still practiced, the mothers support the procedure as much as the fathers. It is cultural."*

Indeed they do. In fact, in at least one instance I saw in the newspaper in the mid-1990s, an African immigrant father in New Jersey or somewhere was desperately resisting his wife's insistence that their daughter be circumcised. That was a hoot for the feminists. The real question is, what is "cultural"? Is "culture" something that comes down from the sky and envelopes us all against our will? I don't think so. I think "culture" is simply a term to describe how we, human beings, organize how we live together. And again, the primary power in that organization is the power of women. "Culture" is women's creation first, modified, with women's permission, by men.

As I've written before, I find it interesting that whenever the subject is something men do to women–e.g. rape–it's always clear that men are responsible; but when it's something that mothers do to their children, suddenly it becomes "cultural," or "society does it," or "a tradition." Women are coated with Teflon. For men, the principle has always been that "ignorance is no excuse"; but for women, ignorance is always an excuse.

Funny; in another thread where I expressed some feeling of compassion for the suffering of an insane woman who killed her husband, I was excoriated for wanting to "exculpate" her. Which I did not; I'm just sorry for *anyone's* suffering. Here, on the other hand, I am criticised for holding women–millions of ordinary, supposedly wide-awake, sane, sensible women–responsible for what they have voluntarily done to their sons. While, it seems, several men

who criticized my "chivalry" elsewhere are quick to jump in here and pick up the burden for the little woman. I haven't even said I wanted them "to fry"–or to be circumcised. I don't want anyone to be circumcised, or hurt in any way. I just want the truth on the table, so we can have a meaningful discussion.

Quote: *"Are there ready made info packets to download for distribution?"*

I don't know about downloads ... [but] NOCIRC in particular provides pamphlets, etc., all very "non-confrontational." Sure, that's fine; whatever it takes to stop it. It may very well stop without the real truth ever being publicly acknowledged. Of course that would be better than nothing; but I'm still going to speak the truth when the subject comes up. Because if the root cause is never addressed, then like a cancer that's been "cured" by surgical removal of some body part, it'll only reappear elsewhere.

I too am happy to see a woman thinking about this and other issues. But this is primarily a men's forum, and that's whom I'm primarily addressing here. If a woman, who is supposedly my "equal," wants to join our discussion, I'm all for it; but I'd suggest she be prepared to face some hard truth–as men do, when they're not adjusting their words so as not to offend women's delicate sensibilities.

Again, I'd suggest reading some Camille Paglia, some women can and do think fearlessly, and talk sense (more or less). I welcome any woman who is willing to undertake this discipline.

Thanks to anyone who has taken the trouble to read this long, hastily-written essay. I have to get back to work now.

Previous Philalethes Index Next

Further Reading:

Philalethes #21 - Circumcision

Philalethes #9 – Immaculate Conception

Philalethes #7 – All Female Populations in the Animal Kingdom

Zenpriest #3 – Repressing Sexuality

Philalethes #24 - Who's to Blame II

. · 22 August 2010 · Archived copy · Original

Quote: *"I find it curious that by exposing an inconsistency in feminist thinking, I'm (indirectly) accused of blaming women. I consider this an unnecessarily defensive reaction."*

I hope you don't have the impression that I was making such an accusation. My comments were directed at the remark(s) I quoted, and others similar (not by you), which demonstrate just the knee-jerk feminist reaction you discuss here.

My take on that reaction, the reflexive, sometimes almost violent refusal to acknowledge any similarity between female and male genital mutilation, is that it is a turf defence: The entire edifice of feminism is built on the definition of the female as the eternal helpless victim of male power, thus to admit that the "oppressor" (i.e. the white male) might be a "victim" in any circumstance would literally jerk the ground right out from under the feminist position. Moreover, I believe that all women know, whether they admit it to themselves or not, that infant male circumcision is an expression of Mother's power; thus the instant refusal to even look at the issue, because to do so will necessarily lead to other thoughts they cannot bear to contemplate–including that they may be to "blame" for this egregious wrong.

In my own case, my mother has steadfastly stonewalled the subject for the last ten years. She was, has been and is in most respects a very good mother, but I suspect that as the notion of "blame" figures large in her thinking (as it does with most people, and especially, I feel, with women), her instinctive, emotional response is to refuse to deal with something that, if allowed into her consciousness, would, as she understands it, force her to feel very badly about herself.

The solution to this dilemma, as I've attempted to suggest, is to dump the concept of "blame," which is useless in any case, since its only effect is to perpetuate suffering. As a Buddhist, my single aim is to decrease and if possible to prevent suffering; anything I do or say must be measured against this standard. If someone has done harm, of course that must be redressed if possible, but to add "guilt" or "blame" to the situation is a waste of energy that could be better used for the real task: to determine exactly what happened, why, how, and what best can be done to correct it.

So long as those whose power is the final authority in the situation refuse to acknowledge this fact, the cause-and-effect chain of suffering will continue. Including, I believe, in the case of infant male circumcision, many of the very same behaviours of men that women so complain about. Any badly abused animal will tend to be unreliable, treacherous, and sometimes violent; infant, pre-rational baby boys who were so savagely violated by their mothers–who in this world can we possibly trust if we cannot trust our mothers?–naturally grow into men who subconsciously fear women, and such fear can easily lead to unexpected violence–unexpected even by the perpetrator–when circumstances evoke such deeply repressed, unconscious feelings. Even at best, the encounter of the sexes will always be confusing, frustrating and sometimes frightening; the wisest preparation is to leave our children whole and support their growth into whole, internally-secure beings who can deal with challenges without losing their mental equilibrium.

Circumcision of children of either sex, like the branding of cattle or the docking and cropping of the tails and ears of dogs, is the physical manifestation of Mother's instinctive sense of ownership: that her children are her possessions, to be modified to suit her tastes, and used to gratify her needs. After all, she made them, didn't she? But is this the proper attitude toward children?

Previous Philalethes Index Next

.

Further Reading:

Philalethes #23 – Who’s to Blame?

Philalethes #21 - Circumcision

Philalethes #25 - You Can Have as Much Freedom as You Are Willing to be Responsible For, But No More

. · 25 August 2010 · Archived copy · Original

... Basically it comes down to the lesson my father taught me: that freedom and responsibility come together, that I could have as much freedom as I was willing to be responsible for, but no more.

Having broken the marriage contract and declared her “independence” and full capability to be the head (as well as the heart) of the family, woman should be held to her words. If she is the head of the family, she should provide its support, as man did when he was its head. If she is unwilling to render her part of the traditional exchange between the sexes, man should not be required to contribute his part either.

But of course, in the present circumstances, this will never happen.

When it comes to questions of responsibility, woman makes Ronald Reagan (the “Teflon president”) look like Uncle Remus’s Tar Baby. Woman’s unwillingness (perhaps even inability) to acknowledge responsibility for her own power, even as she uses it ruthlessly and without restraint, is the fundamental psychosis of the human species, which may well lead to our total self-destruction.

The concept of “fairness” is not native to the female mind. To a man, “fairness” is a check on personal greed: “what’s fair” means getting less than the most I may want, so that everyone may have some. To a woman, “what’s fair” means “I get what I want”; if she doesn’t get what she wants, it’s “not fair.” Add unchecked political power to this kind of “thinking,” and you have — well, what we have.

This is why the 19th Amendment was the direct road to our present matriarchal totalitarian collective. American women were “given” the same political power as men, but not required to shoulder men’s responsibilities. They have freedom without responsibility, otherwise known as “license.” According to the law dictionary, “license” is “permission to do what would otherwise be unlawful” — in essence, to exercise freedom without being held

responsible for the consequences. Men created a society of laws to enforce responsibility and thus allow freedom; the modern matriarchy has turned it into a society of license. Notice how nowadays you have to get a license for everything?

Human life entails an unavoidable internal contest, between our nature-as-given from our animal antecedents, and our potential as creatures of reason. Insofar as we are ruled by the former, we are no more than extra-clever chimpanzees, subject to the same endless round of suffering birth-and-death as all the other dumb creatures. However, we can escape that fate if we are willing to use our reasoning capacity and subject our behaviour to its rule.

The ability to reason is certainly present in the female mind; woman, after all, is the human species, man is merely a variation on her theme. However, where man has an incentive to develop his reasoning capacity, because he lacks woman's overwhelming natural power, woman, possessing that power and using it, usually without conscious thought, does not have such incentive. Or at least, she "thinks" she doesn't.

Nature is utterly practical; she wastes no energy she can avoid spending. So long as woman, fundamentally a creature of Nature (the very same Goddess feminism worships), can get what she wants without subjecting herself to the discipline of conscious thought, she will continue to take everything she can — even if, like a horse that's got into the oats, she eats herself to death. On her own, she doesn't know any better.

This is why a matriarchal political system cannot lead us to a better world; why, indeed, the matriarchy of the dim past (so celebrated in feminist myth) gave way to the patriarchal system that created civilization — including all the conveniences women now take for granted, as well as the very concepts of equality and fairness (entirely products of the male mind) they use to wrest ever more privileges from cowed and bewildered men.

Perhaps our present headlong dive into chaos can be averted, but only if, and when, women themselves decide they want to change course. For it is always women's natural power that decides our collective fate. Girls do indeed "rule"; boys, as always, can only give them what they want — if we have anything to do with them at all. We cannot make the fundamental decision, because we don't have that power; after all, it is women who make men, not vice-versa. If we don't wish to participate in the collective self-immolation, we can only withdraw and turn away — as many men have done in the past.

We can take charge if they ask us to — which is essentially what happened some 10,000 years ago, when women decided (unconsciously, but nevertheless it was their decision) they wanted something better than "grass huts" to live in, and put men in the driver's seat so we could create civilization for them. Now they seem to have decided that we've given them what they wanted, and they can take over again and run it for themselves. I don't think this will work; cell phones and SUVs or no, women have not changed that much in the last ten millennia. I can point this out — and get blasted, as I have been — but there's not much more I can do to affect the situation; they have the power.

We can't take them on head-on; in that arena their power is overwhelming. The only thing that's likely to get their attention is a wholesale departure, a turning-away, a refusal to cooperate. There are ways to avoid the crushing burden of modern "fatherhood" as defined by the matriarchal court system. Unfortunately, to do so requires a man to betray his own best self-image: to become, in the short term at least, as irresponsible as women. And accept without complaint the shame women will heap on them for doing so — this very shaming being one of their principle means of exercising power over men.

Naturally, few men are able to think their way through to the long-term wisdom of such a strategic retreat, despite its obvious logic: for if women are absolutely morally superior to men, then men should follow their example, and

do our best to behave like them. Notice the general moral collapse of our culture; where before at least lip-service was paid to concepts of honour and responsibility, now it's positively fashionable to take everything you can, and too bad for the loser who's fool enough to restrain his greed.

In the end, all this will happen anyway, as our civilization collapses under the weight of feminist irrationality and avarice, and we return to those grass huts. Which women will rule as absolutely as they have always ruled the home, their natural realm of power. *You go, grrrl!*

Previous Philalethes Index Next

.

Related:

Bonecrcker #153 – People Can Choose Anything They Want To… But They Can't Choose The Consequences

Philalethes #26 - The Law

. · 28 August 2010 · Archived copy · Original

As I said above, this essay raises some important points, but unfortunately is not very well thought out or presented. I believe I understand what the writer is trying to say, but I also understand that this is because I've been pursuing a course of study for some two decades that's taken me far away from the conventional collective consensus of present-day culture — a consensus that's been carefully nurtured by the forces Graham Strachan wrote about (in his response to Devvy Kidd), who "want to destroy the institutions of civilisation so they can rule over the wreckage."

As Will Rogers remarked, it's not what folks don't know that hurts them, so much as what they think they know that ain't so.

In order to understand the subjects under discussion, we must first understand that there are two kinds of "law" being referred to.

Two thousand years ago there lived in Cairo a famous rabbi named Hillel, who was widely celebrated for his knowledge of the Law. One day, the story goes, a Roman military officer, having heard of the rabbi's fame, challenged him to expound the Law while standing on one foot. The rabbi raised one foot and said, *"Do not do to others what is hateful to yourself. That is the whole of the Law; the rest is merely commentary."*

This is the "Law of Nature and of Nature's God" to which Thomas Jefferson referred in the Declaration of Independence. And it was on this Law, more or less, that our Republic was founded. This is not the "law" that is studied and elaborated in modern university law schools, or practiced by modern lawyers, or enforced in modern courts. All these are concerned with human law, otherwise known as statutory or case law. At best, human law is, as the rabbi said, a commentary and clarification on God's Law; at worst — and most often — it is an attempt, by the endless obfuscation at which our immature minds (smart is not the same as wise, though smart thinks it is) are so skilled, to get around God's Law.

The hundreds of yards of “law” books in the State Law Library a few blocks from my house (I’ve been there to do research) are almost entirely concerned with this kind of “law.” As the Roman historian Tacitus famously remarked, “The more corrupt the state, the more numerous the laws.”

Those who are most skillful at this obfuscation are called “lawyers.” It is not an accident, I believe, that the United States, the world capital of feminism, also hosts, by orders of magnitude, a larger population of lawyers per capita than any other country. Or that, for instance, last I heard, out of 100 members of the federal Senate, 98 are lawyers. The original 13th Amendment to the Constitution would have prevented members of the Bar from holding government office. I really don’t believe it was an accident that this amendment was somehow conveniently forgotten during the “Civil War.”

Those who have studied Law from the perspective I am outlining commonly make a distinction between what is Lawful and what is merely “legal” — i.e. sanctioned by human “law” though it may violate the “Law of Nature and of Nature’s God.” Most of what goes on “under colour of law” nowadays is in the latter category.

A single example should suffice: Any workable human system of laws must begin with a statute outlawing murder. This is clearly an application of the Law cited by Rabbi Hillel: since I would hate to be killed against my wish, I must not impose the same fate on another. No society which allows its members to kill each other without restraint can possibly survive. This is why the first of the Judaeo-Christian Commandments addressing social relations (after those defining the relationship of man to God) says “*Thou shalt not kill.”* And why the first Buddhist Precept is *“Do not kill.”*

It is not an accident that the number one feminist “law” was the Supreme Court decision that “legalized” abortion. Abortion is clearly murder in the sight of the Law expounded by Rabbi Hillel, but under our modern system of “law” it is allowed. Thus it must be clear that the “law” which presently rules is not the same as the Law. The difference is absolute, and crucial.

It’s important to understand that we in the present-day United States live under the original Constitution of the Republic only in regard to Article I Section 8 Clause 17, which grants Congress the power “To exercise exclusive Legislation in all Cases whatsoever” over any territory which is the property of the federal government, or has been ceded thereto by any of the States. Through a process of “legal” sleight-of-hand that has been going on since the 1860s, all the territory of the formerly sovereign States has been gradually transferred into this jurisdiction, while the Citizens of the same States have been induced to trade in their natural sovereignty, as claimed in the Declaration and guaranteed in the Constitution, for a federal “citizenship” under the so-called 14th Amendment, which makes them “subject to” the jurisdiction of the United States, i.e. chattel with which the latter authority may do whatever it will.

This is, according to many researchers who’ve spent many years investigating recent history, the reason for all the excesses of our current governmental/legal system — from the “income tax” through the “family courts” to a president declaring war on his own — which, though it still wears the trappings of the original Republic, has actually been converted into an empire in the classic mold, with all power vested in the State, which rules its citizens according to its own whims.

The author does indeed cite some precedents in law for his argument, including several Supreme Court cases and a key provision of the federal Constitution (“No State shall…pass any…Law impairing the Obligation of Contracts.”). I don’t have the resources at hand to look up the case cites, but the name Hale vs. Henkle (or maybe it was Henkel) I know I’ve seen in some of what I’ve read in my studies. So I wouldn’t dismiss the “legal” basis of his argument out of hand. Unfortunately, though the principles involved are really quite simple, getting back to them requires a lot of work clearing away the all the underbrush of obfuscation that’s been piled into all our heads by the

system of education, indoctrination and control run by the government and the corporations that control the government, all of them in turn controlled by lawyers and their ilk.

And of course, I would agree that it won't succeed in court, not only because it hasn't been sufficiently worked out, but because the court system is specifically designed and operated to avoid the truth behind this argument. There are effectively no Article III courts left in America today; what we now call "courts" are merely administrative tribunals whose function is not to determine the truth but simply to decide how much the guilty (anyone who's summoned into such a court is assumed to be guilty) must pay. I've heard of a few who've been able to confront the court system directly and force it to acknowledge and obey the "Law of Nature and of Nature's God," and the original Constitution, but this is very rare and requires really advanced skills.

Quote: "*An argument requires an offer, acceptance and consideration, and this situation requires all but three of these elements, since bearing a child can hardly be considered an "offer," while being born can hardly be considered 'acceptance.'"*

I assume you're referring to a "contract" requiring offer and acceptance. How else then would you characterize the process by which a new human life appears in the world? The "offer" is made when the individual decides to engage in sexual congress; the offer is "accepted" when it results in the creation of a new human life — a life which is fully equal in fundamental character and rights (if the concept of rights is to have any meaning at all) to those of the parents. The "consideration" is (1) whatever it is we think we get out of sex — which must be something, considering how much most of us are willing to spend for it, and (2) what we get out of having progeny (satisfying the "urge to reproduce," etc.), in exchange for (3) the energy spent in the support and rearing of the child. That both of these "rewards" are mostly sought out of instinct rather than reason (which is why there are nearly seven billion humans on a planet that cannot possibly support than number "in the style to which we've become accustomed") does not mean they are not real, or that the consequences of our seeking them are not real.

Of course, most of us have probably insisted at one time or another in our childhood that "I didn't *ask* to be born!" To which I recall my mother responding that according to her memory of the process of childbirth, I certainly did! It's basically a question of responsibility. Am I responsible for my existence or not? To be human, in my view, I must accept that responsibility, with all its implications. If I am unwilling to do so, I have no basis to claim the rights of a human being. Nor, I believe, will I have any hope of getting out of the prison wherein I find myself.

I understand your unease with the "insulting" implications of this line of reasoning. However, I think we have to start with what's real, and what's real is that in this world, the male of any species is, to begin with, no more than a means to serve the female's ends, which are the ends of Nature Herself: the endless production of more life. Nature doesn't "insult" anyone, any more than does an earthquake. Reality just is; attempting to ignore it will only make everything worse.

Yes, "when we assess and define the 'needs' of civilization, we are actually referring primarily to the needs of women and children." Don't forget that "men" also were once children. There never has been a man who was not a child first. That men may develop and concern themselves with issues beyond the simple "needs" of women and children does not excuse us from first seeing to those needs as well as we are able. You can't build the roof before the foundation and walls, and they must be built well if the roof is to last.

And the point — again, not very well made, but it's there — of the article under discussion is that the traditional "patriarchal" cultural system did better at that than the matriarchy that's recently been made to replace it. Or, more exactly, that the matriarchal system actually has not replaced it, since men are still being held responsible under "patriarchal" principles as if they were still the heads of the families from which they've been ejected. And that a system thus based on a lie cannot possibly succeed. So the author demands that women really shoulder the

responsibilities that men have carried in the past, now that they have demanded the power/freedom that men have had based on that responsibility. Or admit that their whole ideology is a lie, so we can get to work on solutions that might actually work. In other words, put up or shut up.

My response to the idea that “women and children are civilization and humanity” is to say that it is precisely because men are somewhat “outside” the world of women and children that humanity has any chance at all of becoming more than just another kind of chimpanzee, eternally trapped in the endless round of birth-and-death. It is not an accident that all the great moral/religious teachers of human history have been men. Either the purpose of life is just to keep the wheel turning, grinding out suffering for all eternity, or it is to find a way out of this trap. Each of us can choose between these two; if there’s any meaning at all to human life, it must begin with how we respond to this choice.

You see, I don’t believe there really is a war between the sexes. I don’t believe the real interests of men and women differ in the least. The lesser may be at war with the greater, but the greater is never at war with the lesser. A child may dispute its parent’s authority, but the parent, if the authority is genuine, is never in conflict with the child. Man may think he is at war with God, but God is not at war with man; and a man who understands this is not at war with women, though women may be at war with him.

The traditional authority of the male in the “patriarchal” family can be properly understood and exercised *only* in the understanding that “to rule is to serve.” This is why Jesus washed his disciples’ feet. And the male can play his role successfully *only* when he understands that he too is subject to a Higher Authority. Most of the problem with the “patriarchal” family has resulted from men forgetting this fact. Encouraged, I will add, by women. *“Women rule the world; no man ever did anything unless allowed or encouraged by a woman.”* (Bob Dylan said that.)

Quote: "*There’s nothing about a woman’s gender which will make one single bit of difference to a baby, since it doesn’t know a breast from a baby-bottle as long as it provides equal nourishment."*

Well, you may think there’s no difference between a woman’s breast and a baby bottle, but I do. It’s a religious question, really; you’re a materialist, and I’m not. You believe that everything can be reduced to chemicals, no more; I do not. Apparently you also believe the feminist dogma that there is no real difference between the sexes beyond an “accidental” variation in plumbing arrangements; I do not. Even in the “men’s movement,” I find most men these days thinking like women. Which is why I wouldn’t call myself a “masculist” or whatever; I’m not at war with women over who gets what goodies. I suppose it’s unavoidable, since the “men” of our time are the sons of the women who created feminism; but this will have to be addressed if there’s to be any response to feminism besides a mirror of its own fallacies.

Quote: "*And let me remind you that in a few years men will create their sons by themselves through the use of artificial wombs. We don’t need women to obtaining eggs anymore, so ectogenesis will be a by-word for the end of matriarchy."*

Well, maybe so, but that’s not a world I would want to live in. That’s *really* responding to feminism on its own level, and will certainly not get us out of the pit. I’m not the least bit “submissive” to women, as I think my writing should make clear. Respect is not the same thing as submission. I try to be polite because I believe that’s my job as a man, as Kipling wrote in his famous poem: “If you can keep your head while all around you are losing theirs….”

I try to recognize and acknowledge reality, the better to respond to it effectively. I try to see women as they are, precisely so they won’t rule me. It’s certainly not easy, because of the *“hormone-induced fog”* Warren Farrell so aptly identified, which rules all men’s view of women. But neither capitulating to their unconscious, arbitrary power, nor responding with unreasoning anger (at which they’ll always be better than we are anyway), nor running

away in fear (where shall we go? Mother is everywhere) is a productive response. “Artificial wombs” do not address the issue, any more than do any of the artificial rearrangements of reality promoted by feminism.

“Independence” is an interesting concept; though I believe Jefferson was mostly correct, and advanced human progress greatly, it must be understood that true “independence” exists only against a background understanding of our absolute *interdependence* with the entire universe, including our fellow beings, and most especially the “opposite sex.” It is precisely the feminists’ childish idea that they can be “independent” in some absolute sense that has led to all their mischief.

Regardless of how well or poorly this essay presents its case, the point it raises is crucial: either you believe that the “Law of Nature and of Nature’s God” is absolute, or you believe that it can be abrogated, modified, juggled, finessed, jawboned, whatever, by human cleverness. If you believe the latter, then eventually all you will be left with is the “Law of the Jungle.” Which is where feminism, and all its sister ideologies, are taking us.

.

Previous Philalethes Index Next

Philalethes #27 - In the "Battle of the Sexes," If She "Wins," She Loses!

. · 31 August 2010 · Archived copy · Original

In truth, this [is] the real, difficult paradox of gender relations, and especially of the female position. The two sexes are like sparring partners; we must strive with each other to keep each other strong, healthy, and alert. However, the female, as the original creator of the male, actually holds all the power; the male is strong only as she allows him to be. So she's faced with a difficult conflict of interests: in the "battle of the sexes," if she "wins," she loses! A few women ... are beginning to realize this, though they still don't understand what to do about it. I could almost feel sympathy for women faced with this fundamental conundrum, if I weren't so conscious of what their unconscious rage has cost me.

If women are oppressed, they are oppressed by their own creations. We are the front men, fall guys and whipping boys for the conflicted complexities of female psychology. As graphically illustrated in this woman's confusion.

Quote: *"So relax, I think her intentions are absolutely good here."*

Ah yes, those wonderful "good intentions" that, in the female/liberal mind, excuse anything and everything. Frankly, I don't care a whit what her "intentions" are, I care only what she (or anyone) actually does.

The encounter of the sexes is not, in Mao's words, *"a dinner party."* It's serious business, the origin of birth and death, a dance of creation/destruction between the two most dangerous predators on the planet. "How do porcupines mate? Very carefully." It's like sparring partners in a martial art: we keep each other strong, healthy, alert, we teach each other and check each other's excesses. In order for it to work, we need each other whole.

For the past century, American women have been using Mother's power to cripple their sons. The short-term results have been gratifying to short-sighted females like the author of this article, who appreciates the "independence" the feminist movement has given her. In truth, women are no more "independent" than they ever were, but because they've transferred the job of protecting and caring for them from the men they personally know to the State, they can pretend to themselves that they no longer need men. Modern women are as "independent" as a tropical fern in a greenhouse in Iceland. All that's changed is that men, who still do all the dirty, dangerous jobs that must be done, and pay all the taxes and alimony and child-care payments, and fight the wars, etc. etc., that enable women to have the comfortable world they want, no longer get the respect we used to get in return. In the long run, this is a recipe for disaster. We may be stupid, but we're not harmless.

Women have always controlled men. It's the natural order. Ever notice how so many teenage girls have an affinity for horses? They're exercising the same set of skills: how to control a large, dangerous but very useful animal. Any girl who owns a horse will understand that treating the animal with respect is the best way to have a successful relationship. Unfortunately, many (most?) women do not seem to understand this basic fact in their relations with men. As Camille Paglia points out, the great tragedy of sexual relations is that women believe their own "defenceless victim" mythology. Delusion, as the Buddha says, leads to suffering.

.

Previous Philalethes Index Next

Related:

Bonecrcker #44 – Women Have Contradictory Love

Fitness Testing (Shit Tests)

Philalethes #28 - Feminism Is Successful Precisely Because Its Basic Premise Is Not True!

. · 3 September 2010 · Archived copy · Original

Quote: Christina Hoff Sommers wrote a fine book on the subject, "The War Against Boys."

I saw this book in the library and applied my usual test: looked in the index for "circumcision." Not a mention of what is clearly the preemptive, decisive, surgical first strike in the war she purports to be writing about.

Christina Hoff Sommers appears to mean well, but like others of her type she isn't ready to really challenge feminism, she just wants to adjust it a little so its uglier aspects will be tucked back out of sight. Another book by her asks "Who Stole Feminism?" Nobody "stole" feminism, Christina, it's only that with such overwhelming success its real character has become plain for all the world to see.

This is a complex subject; 'fraid I don't have time right now to examine it fully. I realize that my statement might seem mysterious to someone who hasn't thought it through as I have. I'll try a few points, in hopes the picture might fill itself out with some thought.

First, one thing I've realized over the last decade of thinking about the American infant male circumcision program, and the wider/deeper subject of relations between the sexes, the origin and nature of female power, etc., is this: *It is not necessary to be conscious of ones power in order to use it effectively.* This fact is key in understanding the entire phenomenon of feminism, as well as female psychology. The power exercised by women, like the powers of Nature whence it is derived, is primarily unconscious. This is why, although it is obvious to anyone who really thinks about how the world works that it is women who have and use the real power, women see themselves as helpless victims–and can usually, easily convince men to agree with their world view.

"Women run the world. No man ever did anything unless he was allowed or encouraged by a woman." – Bob Dylan (interview in Rolling Stone, late 1980s)

Thus the rape victim who becomes incensed if someone suggests that perhaps she might have had something to do with what happened to her, when she wandered half-drunk, in short-shorts and halter top, into a locker room full of testosterone-enhanced males. "But I didn't do anything!" she wails, and the feminists scream about "blaming the victim!"

Again, it is curious that even while any biologist (including even female biologists) will affirm that *in all other species* sexual behavior is totally controlled by the female, her needs, cycles, and signals, amongst humans the idea that the female is anything but a victim of oppressive male power and violence is totally unthinkable. Why? Female power, subtly, unconsciously applied: what women do not want to acknowledge will not be discussed.

Ever wonder how it is possible for a little, tiny woman to control a great, huge, hulking man? Think about it. Obviously, the idea is preposterous: the one who is more powerful must dominate the one who is less powerful. Yet we see this archetypal encounter acted out all around us. *Feminism is successful precisely because its basic premise is not true!*

The Zuni Indians, whose home is in what we call western New Mexico, have a story, about a couple of young hunters who one day freed a dragonfly from some mud. The dragonfly, being of course a magical creature, offered its saviors a couple of wishes. The first young hunter said he would like to be the smartest man in the world. "Done," said the dragonfly. The second young hunter naturally was a little miffed at this, but then he had an idea: "I

want to be smarter than the smartest man in the world," he said. "All right," said the dragonfly, "you're a woman."

I'm old enough to remember Harry Belafonte's great hit song in the 1950s: "Dat's right! De woman is – uh! – smahtah! Dat's right. Dat's right." Never forget this. However, also remember that "smart" is not necessarily the same as "wise." In older times, it was this knowledge, more than anything else, that male elders passed down to their sons, nephews and grandsons. More than anything else, it is the loss of this knowledge that has led to our present predicament.
(I remember another song from the 50s, an early rock-n-roll ditty whose refrain went, "De girl cain't he'p it, de girl cain't he'p it…" I've come to the conclusion, based on observation of the actual results of several decades of feminist denial, that this is true–and that a "civilization" based on ignoring this fact cannot last.)

So no, I wouldn't say the circumcision program was a "deliberate move." Like much of what women do, it didn't (and doesn't) have to be "deliberate," i.e. consciously conceived and executed, to work very well indeed.

As I understand it, the circ program was first marketed during the Victorian era (the time when "civilized" women spoke of the "limbs" of a table, because "legs" was too suggestive–also the time of families, like my father's, of a half-dozen children or more, sometimes many more) as a "cure" for the terrible problem of masturbation, the "nasty habit" to which boys were unfortunately all too susceptible, which at the time was the known cause of a whole host of both personal health difficulties and societal ills. As that idea fell out of fashion in the early 1900s, newer "scientific" excuses were made up. Which also are obviously bogus, not holding up even to brief examination. So why is the circ program such a "sacred cow"? Nobody will talk about it, the media won't discuss it, mothers become hysterical when it is questioned. Again, female power: *what women don't want to confront will not be discussed.*

Note that the circ program is based on the idea that *there's something wrong with males*–something, indeed, that requires drastic corrective measures. This is the very cornerstone of feminism. I note also that the American practice of male circumcision came out of the same Northeastern WASP/Puritan cultural matrix (check the origin of this word) which also produced Prohibition–another force-based "solution" to the problem of What's Wrong with Men–and Feminism, whose official birthday was at a conference (originally to promote "female suffrage") in upstate New York in 1848.

Feminism is based on the proposition that there is no significant difference between the sexes. This is usually taken to mean that women are not "inferior" relative to men, but this is just another red herring. The truth is that female power–if/when she wishes to use it–totally trumps anything a man can do. Feminists insist on being dealt with as if they were men, and ignorant, "honorable" men do just that–and don't/can't see the knife under the table, in the realm of darkness which is women's real field of power. "Take back the night!" is misleading: they never lost it. As Camille Paglia makes clear, there is truly "No Law in the Arena." Whatever else it may be (and sometimes it can be very pleasant), the sexual encounter is a war, and, as I remarked elsewhere, women (a) don't fight fair, and (b) fight to win. Men enter the arena handicapped by ideas of honor–but if we abandon such principles, we betray ourselves. If we attempt to meet women at their own level, we lose–and so do they.

This picture is the truth behind that old axiom of male wisdom: "Never argue with a woman." I've not yet come across a woman who is willing to really confront what I'm talking about here. Sooner or later, she will take evasive action, like Scarlett O'Hara: "I don't want to think about that, and I don't have to, so I won't, and you can't make me." True, I can't, if she doesn't want to. Throughout human history, this tactic has worked for women, as it must. This is the reason for all the "keep women in their place" "oppression" that feminists complain about. Now that they have been allowed out of "their place," the results are becoming plain.

The only thing men can do in response to female power is to create a limited, artificial realm where such power is

not allowed to rule–and then show women how it is in their interest to subject themselves to the discipline necessary to live in such an environment. This can be called human culture, or civilization: a way of living together and relating that is different from how other, unconscious animals do it. Where the rule of law–an artificial, human construct–is paramount, rather than the rule of power. In order for this to work, men must be wise to women's tricks, and not allow them to get away with the kind of unconscious manipulation that is their natural, instinctive skill. None of this is easy, which is why it is not easy to be a man: because to do this, we must also be aware of the trickster in ourselves, and not let ourselves "get away" with anything that is less than our best: self-aware, and self-disciplined.

All I have time for now; perhaps some food for thought. Regarding the subject of circumcision itself, some useful links if you haven't seen them:

Sexually Mutilated Child
Circumcision Information and Resource Pages
A Brief History
NOCIRC
NOHARMM

Of course, you'll see little or no mention of women/mothers and their role in any of this information–because they're seldom if ever evident on the surface of events. However, note the Bob Dylan quote above. I put it this way: There is no human culture that is not fundamentally a Matriarchy. Any apparent "Patriarchy" is no more than a front for the Matriarchy that really runs everything in this world. It wouldn't be happening if it didn't somehow serve the female agenda.

Previous Philalethes Index Next
.

Further Reading:

Philalethes #1 - Feminist Allies?

Philalethes #14 – Hyphenate Them Any Way You Want, A Feminist is a Feminist is a Feminist.

Philalethes #16 = Who Stole Feminism? Nobody!

Philalethes #21 - Circumcision

Philalethes #23 – Who's to Blame?

Philalethes #24 – Who's to Blame II

Philalethes #29 - They Can Do It Because They Really Believe It!

. · 6 September 2010 · Archived copy · Original

Quote: It has always fascinated me how the fems can deny ANY responsibility in a rape victim.

They can do this because they really believe it. Camille Paglia remarks somewhere in the "Sex and Violence" essay that the structure of the relationship between the sexes requires the female to be the passive receiver of male action, and unfortunately women have come to believe that this superficial melodrama actually reflects the real state of things. Which, of course, it does not; but only a few women take the trouble (or, perhaps, even have the necessary intelligence) to become aware of this truth.

The "wise women" of older and indigenous cultures know this, but modern women have forgotten–which is why I find feminists' pretense to being "wise women" laughable. A real "wise woman" knows her power and doesn't need to flaunt it. I actually met such a woman once: a Mohawk shamaness; she was awesome. She was also kind and considerate toward men, as she knew that she could either support or destroy them, and that it was in her best interest to support them being their best. Feminists take exactly the opposite view, believing that using their power to suppress and destroy men proves their "superiority." This is akin to a carpenter deliberately dulling his saw, breaking his hammer. In a word, stupid. Feminists disprove their claims by their own actions.

I heard once of a study done by putting video cameras in singles bars; it was found that every encounter began with a covert, subliminal glance from a woman to a man: an invitation. In most cases, this invitation is unconscious on the woman's part. And so, she believes (and so men believe) that he made the first move, that she is merely the passive object of his active power.

Quote: "The sad fact is that many men are literally afraid of their wives."

Yes, especially now, as nearly all of us have been heavily conditioned to that fear by what our mothers did to us when we were born. The "balance of power" between the sexes is actually very delicate, as it depends entirely on women raising their sons to be strong and independent, able to meet their future wives in the arena and hold their own. When mothers give in to their own greedy impulse to keep their "little men" mother-bound, weak and dependent, their daughters will not have developed men to marry. And, following their mothers' example, will believe a healthy relationship consists of dominating their men. Look around.

Quote: "The good news is that as we age and get into our upper 40′s and beyond the hormones begin to dissapate and some of our pre-puberty clarity returns."

Well, I don't know about "pre-puberty clarity"; I'd say it's more like a combination of life experience with the slow dissipation of the "hormone-induced fog." I remember when I was in my early 30s reading a biography of Gandhi wherein that great man remarked on what a relief it was as he got older that the slavery to sexual desire faded. At the time I found his sentiment nearly incomprehensible; now in my 60th year I have a better understanding what he meant. The purpose of all those "initiation rituals" discussed in another thread is to help a male master himself, so he is not ruled by his impulses. A man ruled by his impulses will also be ruled by women, and a man who is ruled by women will be unable to give them what they really need.

Quote: "I think I understand what you are saying here…that women by default have power and a vested interest in their position and in their capacity to manipulate men. The circumcision fiasco is more a result of this than a planned action. Is that what you are saying?"

Uh, not exactly, I don't think. Again, this subject requires more time and energy than I presently have to do it justice. One thing I am saying is that there is more to the world, and to our experience, than what appears on the surface. This world we live in is a realm of paradox, and cannot be understood until we go beyond the conventional way of seeing and thinking.

An Oriental teacher I studied said, "Everything has a front and a back. The bigger the front, the bigger the back." The front of the relationship between the sexes is what we all see, and what women believe when they say that they are the helpless victims of male power. That's the front; the back is much the same, but reversed, like a photographic negative. And (mostly) unconscious. Our being is like the proverbial iceberg: what is conscious is above the surface and visible; the unconscious is below the surface, invisible to the ordinary mind, far larger, and dangerous. It is what we all do unconsciously that hurts us most. The solution, then, or at least the beginning thereof–as I see it–is to bring what is unconscious into the light of consciousness.

It is precisely because the natural realm of women's power is in the unconscious that we cannot afford to turn over the running of the world to women–and why, when that happens, *women* suffer as much as men (or even more). "Equality" between the sexes is a myth; either one or the other is "on top." In the natural order of things, first the female contains the male, physically and emotionally; but eventually, if the male fulfills his potential, the male contains the female, mentally and spiritually. In the beginning, it is the female's task to protect and nurture the male, so that later on he will be able to protect and nurture the female and her offspring–who become the next generation, and repeat the cycle. The circumcision program breaks this fundamental contract, by *aborting* the proper development of the male.

Again, when women attempt to use their power deliberately, the result is destruction. It is not exactly an accident that the #1 feminist "issue" is abortion–the supreme act of irresponsibility, whose apparent "necessity" arises directly out of the female's inability to control her own unconscious power. Notice that feminists never speak of their "right to choose" *not* to engage in the activity which results in "unplanned" pregnancy. If they were able/willing to "plan" at that end, abortion would never be "necessary." But they take sex as an unavoidable, unquestionable given, because apparently they are unable to restrain their impulses.

Quote: "Sometimes they would refuse to assist in circumcisions and sometimes they would form groups within the hospitals to function as conscientious objectors to the procedure."

This is interesting. So far as I'm aware, the only place nurses have organized to resist circumcision is here in Santa Fe, New Mexico, where about a dozen years ago some two dozen nurses at the local hospital stepped out as "conscientious objectors." It was their action which brought the issue into public view here, which eventually resulted in my reliving the experience myself, which … well, it's a long story. They remain a continually persecuted minority in their place of work.

Certainly there are "some women who are working for what is just"; but they remain very few. And, to my mind, "what is just" is not really the point; it's a lot deeper, more fundamental than that. "Justice," again, is a concept, a product of the intellect, the "male" side of human consciousness. It's abstract, cerebral. What I'm interested in is women realizing that the present trend is not functional; it just won't work. Unless what they really want is more suffering. I don't bother to argue with women about "justice" or "fairness" because I understand that that isn't what really motivates them. The female is fundamentally practical, the ultimate pragmatist. Only when she realizes on a level below, and prior to, conscious thought, that what she is doing isn't working, will she change.

This is why I rather think the disease must be allowed to run its course. They want it all? If that's what they want, nothing men can do will stop them, so might as well quit resisting and let them do it. Just go fishing, I say. Let them stuff themselves until they choke on it. "Never argue with a woman" is not just an old joke; it is really the wisdom

of wise men of old. To carry it off, though, a man must know himself and be in control of himself. In short, he must be a man, not an overgrown mama's boy–which is what nearly all of us are these days. Including, I will add, myself: only in my 50s have I gotten some clarity on what was done to me (and not done for me) in childhood and youth, and begun to try to figure out how to grow myself up, in the midst of a culture which does its best in every way to discourage me in this endeavor. A culture totally dominated and run by women. Who clearly do not understand that one hand does not benefit by cutting off the other.

Previous Philalethes Index

"Cherokee women didn't have titled positions. The men had those. But women had the Women's Council. They had a lot of control. People forget that… With the Iroquois, the chief was a man, but the women chose the chief, they nurtured him, they installed him. Women could take him out." – Wilma Mankiller, principle chief to the Cherokee Nation, 1987-1995, speaking at the University of Arizona in January 2002, as broadcast on C-SPAN, June 1, 2002

DGM 3.0

. · 6 September 2010 · Archived copy · Original

Lee sent me an e-mail yesterday informing me that he has been hard at work resurrecting the old Don't Get Married Board that shut down 18mos ago, which was actually already DGM 2.0., or parts of it, or something like that.

.

Check it out:

.

http://www.dontmarry.proboards.com/

.

Well, maybe this one isn't actually DGM 3.0, this one is simply called "Don't Marry." Ah, the economy of using two words instead of three! This two-word name will free up much time to play video games and remain a man-child!

Collective Projection

. · 9 September 2010 · Archived copy · Original

Do any of you guys out there believe there could be such a thing as *collective* projection?

We all know what projection is… the "projecting" of one's own behaviour onto another's. But, could women have so much of a herd mentality that they are capable of projecting as an entire gender?

Think about it.

Women believe that men are violent towards children, yet ALL research shows that the problem is really with women… is it that women are so willing to believe this about men because they know something about themselves?

Women are quick to jump on the bandwagon of "psychological abuse" for things as minor as an impolite facial gesture, believing it is just as damaging as physical abuse – yet women are definitely the major perpetrators of psychological abuse. Just google "social aggression" or "relational aggression" and discover how researchers have attributed this as a stereotypical female form of aggression… So are women so quick to believe this is a form of domestic violence because they recognize the sheer hatred and malevolence in their own hearts when they do this to other people – often their spouses.

Do women believe the myth that men hold them in oppression via the threat of violence because they know deep down that they hold men in oppression via the threat of "social/relational aggression?" Think about it, who is walking around with T-shirts & bumper-stickers advertising their psychologically abusive domestic violence tendencies? "Zero to Bitch in 2.0 seconds" comes to mind, yet I've never seen a guy walking around with a t-shirt proudly proclaiming "Zero to Fist in 2.0 seconds."

Which gender proudly proclaims they are high-maintenance – also a borderline advertisement of an abuser. Is this because they truly want men to behave callously and rude to them? Otherwise, why would they think that moniker is even remotely funny?

Are women so willing to believe in the deadbeat dad myth because they know themselves that were the shoe on the other foot, they would quickly become a selfish dead-beat mom? The evidence suggests this is true.

Women believe in the need for "womens' healthcare departments." Could this be because they know that if they were in the position to split resources between genders that they would quickly take care of women before men - so they automatically believe that men are doing this to women? (Of course, while forgetting about all those honourable guys who stuck women in their lifeboat seats).

Think about when a woman posts in on-line dating ad. What does she say about herself? She is a STRONG, INDEPENDENT woman. She likes to get her way, she is a successful career woman…blah, blah, blah. Is she projecting what she herself is looking for in a man? Could be. Cause I don't give a fuck about your career, honey. I care that you are feminine enough to make me feel masculine.

This is why women get tattoos and advertise themselves playfully as "bad girls." Women like bad boys – so they think that men also like bad girls. WE DON'T. We like nice girls. But here's the real kicker, when she's dating "Hank the Hell's Angel", do you think he asks her nicely and considers her feelings when he gets her to blow all of his buddies at the biker jamboree? Hell no, he tells her "on yer knees, bitch!" So perhaps when women are saying that they would like a guy with a nice sense of humor who is respectful and will listen, they are actually projecting

characteristics THEY WISH THEY HAD THEMSELVES! Cause it's obvious that nice guys aren't what turn them on, is it?

This mentality women are displaying is just as stupid as men growing tits & wearing lacy boxers to attract women.

Further reading:

Projection – by BusterB

Eternal Solipsism of the Female Mind – In Mala Fide

Anti-Sexism for Idiots

. · 12 September 2010 · Archived copy · Original

I came across the website Anti-Sexism for Idiots several years ago, read it completely, enjoyed it thoroughly, and then let it slip from my mind. Recently, I stumbled across it again, and have decided to read it through once more, and thought that I would throw a link up - in case some of the rest of the you haven't surfed through it and are looking for something more constructive to do with your time rather than watch Big Brother.

Here is an article from the website, which I particularly enjoyed:

THEY JUST DON'T GET IT

From their lofty moral high ground, feminists have applied women's superior ways of knowing to gently remind us male heathens that we just don't "get it". I would like to return the favour. Here are some things that feminists just can't seem to wrap their brains around.

Feminists complain about the under-representation of women in the workplace. They want to enjoy the same employment opportunities as men. They don't get it that for men, work is not a hobby. They don't get it that for men, work is not something you do if you like, something you do if your fancy takes you, something you do to while away the hours. For the vast majority of men, not working is not an option. Men do not have the freedom to stay at home to rear the children if they like, or to do nothing particular if their fancy takes them, or to do the shopping if they're bored, or to get a part-time job to make friends, or to watch the soapies to have something to talk about.

Feminists don't get it that higher paying jobs aren't generously bestowed on men out of the goodness of their bosses' hearts, just because they are men. They don't get it that if women were as efficient as men and as profitable as men to employ, then there would have to be something seriously, gravely wrong with any organisation choosing men over women, just because they are men. Feminists just don't seem to understand that organisations function according to the laws of supply and demand, profit and loss, and make those recruitment decisions most likely to benefit the bottom line. To do otherwise is to deserve to fail.

They don't get it that if a majority of women don't want to do certain types of work, then perhaps it might be a little difficult balancing the numbers. Feminists don't get it that focusing on equal outcome instead of equal opportunity is not equality but bias. If you want to balance the numbers of men and women in government or in coal mines, what do you do if a majority of women prefer not to work, or if they prefer not to expend the same effort and commitment to their careers as what men are required to do? If you want to balance the numbers of men and women in parliament, what do you do if you can't find women who want the job badly enough? Recruit check-out chicks? Or bored housewives?

Feminists don't get it that mowing the lawn, or repairing the car, or painting the bedroom, is domestic work. They think that men do these things to get out of doing the dishes.

The statistics from the feminist website, Gender Gap in Government, (link now defunct) will shock you. WOMEN ARE 52% of the adult population, yet even after over 3 decades of affirmative action, women have barely dented the ranks of politicians. Are women really be this lazy?

Feminists don’t get it that women's failure to participate is not due to oppression. Instead of blaming others for their own laziness, they should look inwards. Feminists' cherished statistics prove conclusively that even today, with all the affirmative action policies that have been enshrined in law, with everything that has been done to facilitate women’s access to men’s jobs without their having to earn them, women are still not pulling their weight. Feminists don’t understand that they have now provided us with proof of what we have known all along - that women are bone lazy, and that they never actually wanted to work.

Feminists don’t get it that when women have the escape-hatch of stay-at-home mom, they are more likely to pull out of the career paths that might otherwise lead to higher salaries. Stay-at-home moms are less likely to have the sort of career experience that pays well. The presence of the stay-at-home escape-hatch profoundly influences the choices that women make.

They don’t understand that only men fight wars, pollute environments and generally, do the dirty-work also of women, because women are too comfortable in the security provided by men to be bothered to do it themselves.

They don’t get it that the reason that the majority of people over 60 who are now living in poverty are women is that they are more likely to have been married to providers who are now dead.

Feminists don’t get it that when a woman dresses to be looked at, she’s going to be…… looked at. They don’t get it that when a woman dresses to lure, she’s going to be…… approached. Perhaps it's a bit too deep for them. It is a rather difficult notion well beyond feminists’ grasp, as it is founded in abstract, rational principles (rationality) foisted on everyone by The Patriarchy.

They don’t get it that women’s fantasies about being raped reveal a secret about women’s sexuality. They don’t get it that rape scenes in novels written by women for women derive their appeal from tapping into this private side of feminine nature. They don’t understand the connection between their thoughts and their longings or the duality that exists between being protected and being violated. Sure, feminists reassure us, rape is terrible and just because a woman fantasises about being raped, does not mean that she wants to be raped. What they don’t get is that women’s unspoken secrets can influence and justify (in their minds) the choices that women make, in fashion and in men. They don’t understand that the thrill of dressing to lure, to be desired, to be dominated and to be taken, can come at a price and so, has its responsibilities.

They don’t get it that when women choose wallets without character, they might finish up with characters who won’t share their wallets.

Feminists don’t get it that, when a man cheats on his wife, there is usually a woman who cheats with him. And no, it’s not because of something he put in her drink.

They don’t get it that when women say no and then give in to the types of jerks least likely to take no for an answer, other men are going to have a hard time believing that no means no.

Feminists just can’t seem to wrap their brains around the fact that, the women that enforce, supervise and participate in the tribal African custom of female genital mutilation are not, actually, men dressed in drag. And no, the fact that men generally do not participate in sacred women’s rituals (such as FGM) does not mean that innocent mothers, grand-mothers and aunties have had their drinking-water drugged by scheming patriarchs.

They don’t get it that when women wear fashions and apply lipstick and makeup in order to deceive men, they are not helpless victims of a Beauty Myth, but active participants, motivating companies to give them more of what they demand.

Feminists don’t get it that blaming men for the oppression of women is like blaming mothers for the oppression of little boys. And little boys become men. They don’t understand that what goes around comes around.

They don’t get it that feminism is the princess syndrome taken to its logical conclusion. They don’t understand that feminism cannot exist without chivalry, without Patriarchy’s Galahads who have traditionally always done women’s dirty-work.

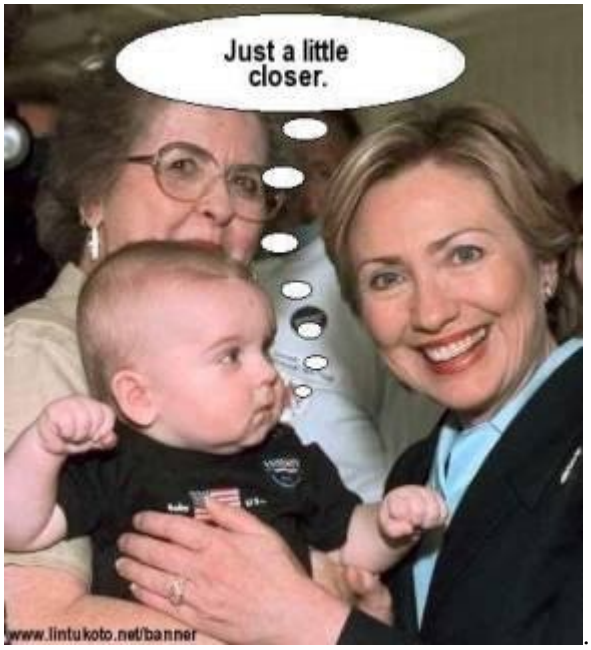
There is so much that feminists don’t get, one can be forgiven for wondering whether there is something inherent in the nature of femininity that precludes women from understanding the most basic, simple logic. With women’s silence and complicity while the injustices rage against men, we might forgive those who regard feminism as proof that women are less able than men in almost every sphere of life. You will have to be patient with them. You will have to remind them that feminism is not about women, but about chivalry, and feminist women demanding and extracting privileges from men. If feminist women are nincompoops, what does that make the men that so readily comply with their demands?

Divide and Conquer

. · 15 September 2010 · Archived copy · Original

I often ponder that we in the MRM are guilty of not being able to see the forest for the trees. We rant and rail against feminism as if it is the only cause of Western demise. The fact is, feminism is only one face of the subversive Marxist movement to curb freedom and consolidate power. Though, in our defence, feminism is the most vocal and rabid group out there and like the Brown Shirts they emulate, they are easily despised.

.



.

But the fact is that it is not just MRA's that are fighting this battle. Before we all go blinking insane trying to rationally argue some sense into feminists and their pussified political mangina lackeys, we should stand back and recognize that ultimately the battle is against Marxism and there are tremendous amounts of people fighting its many different assaults on freedom and the very foundations of Western Civilization.

The problem is that we don't recognize that we are all fighting the same thing, resulting in us being divided - and therefore we are easily conquered, as has been plainly evident for the past several decades.

The main thing that must be realized about the goal of Marxism is that it must first destroy society in order for their new utopian society to emerge from the ruins of the old. This is not a joke! This is a common theme heard over and over again from Marx to Lenin to Gramsci to feminists to gay rights activists. The similarities in their words and thoughts are astounding! What they all agree they must do to bring down the present society is simple:

1 - Eliminate Christianity/religion from society
2 - Destroy Marriage and the family unit

These two things must be accomplished before the Marxist utopia can arrive. Why? Because these are two things that exist in society which virtually all men who are committed to them will die to defend. The Marxist elitists will never be able to control the direction of the masses as long as people believe in the unwavering authority of the Bible, nor as long as people have the natural urge to protect and nurture those who they love in "family situations." Marxists need human robots who will do what they are told without causing much of a fuss.

What the cultural Marxists have been brilliant in doing is fracturing their opponents into so many different groups that they are each virtually powerless to launch a counter-offensive.

- Many MRA's are anti-religious, and therefore are alienating themselves to potential allies.

- Some MRA's are for abortion and so they are alienated to anti-abortionists.

- Many father's rights activists only oppose custody and family law - but couldn't be bothered about other draconian laws against men, like biased rape laws.

- Religious activists are for strengthening marriage and are against abortion but many are also proudly proclaimed feminists and would rather light themselves on fire than recant it.

- Those who oppose the evolution theory are written off as religious nuts even though many who question it are not religious at all. (And who told us religion was "nuts" to begin with?)Questioning evolution theory in Western schools is asking for a quick dismissal because it is essential in discrediting religion.

- Environmental groups are hellbent on passing Marxist style restrictions on society, especially since the "Global Warming Report", yet there are many scientists and historians out there who are screaming on apparent media-deaf ears, that since humans have been recording temperatures there have been many dramatic, decades long temperature shifts that are similar to what we are experiencing - both warming and cooling.

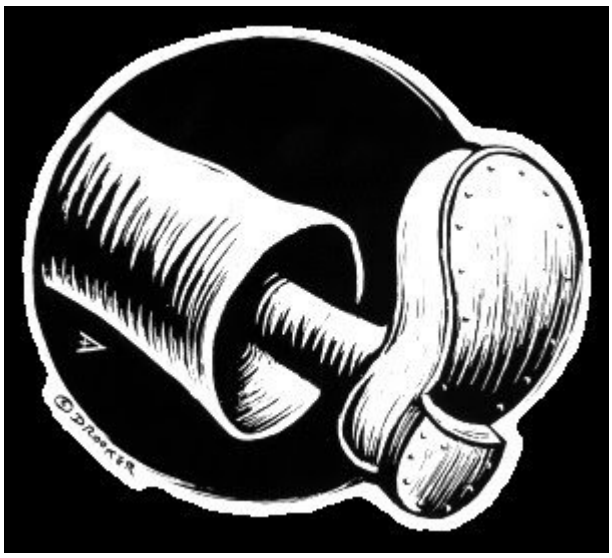
The list could go on almost forever about all of the anti-freedom movements that have taken hold since the 60's "anti-establishment movement" has become the "new establishment." And we should all recognize that every one of the groups opposed to the Marxist left has the same frustration with fact distortion, advocacy research, illogical logic and basic bulldozer "Brown Shirt" tactics that MRA's face!

The fact is, those freedom loving hippies from the 60's didn't know the first thing about freedom, but they did get propagandized about Marxism - over and over again. Now they are in power and are carrying out their drug induced utopian vision via any totallitarian means their elitist egos see fit. Marxism has no room for honesty, integrity, civility, logic and the like. Marxists believe the ends justify the means and the "new utopia" is the ultimate end - therefore, they will bulldoze any and all opposition, believing with their elite view that they know best, and the rest of us are just silly children who don't know what's good for them.

It's time for all of the various groups to recognize that we don't have to agree on everything. What we have to do is put our differences aside and defeat our PC Marxist overlords first. We can work out the details later - when we can have free access to all the facts.

United, we could kick these dipshits to the curb.

.



Belfort Bax on NAWALT (Not All Women Are Like That)

. · 18 September 2010 · Archived copy · Original

It seems not much has changed in a century, but this is a beautiful reply (Notice how he only responds to *male* feminists? Lol!):

The Fraud of Feminism - Belfort Bax, 1913 pp24-26

At the time of writing, the normal person who has no axe to grind in maintaining the contrary, declares the sun to be shining brightly, but should it answer the purpose of anyone to deny this obvious fact, and declare that the day is gloomy and overcast, there is no power of argument by which I can prove that I am right and he is wrong. I may point to the sun, but if he chooses to affirm that he doesn't see it I can't prove that he does. This is, of course, an extreme case, scarcely likely to occur in actual life. But it is in essence similar to those cases of persons (and they are not seldom met with) who, when they find facts hopelessly destructive of a certain theoretical position adopted by them, do not hesitate to cut the knot of controversy in their own favour by boldly denying the inconvenient facts.

One often has experience of this trick of controversy in discussing the question of the notorious characteristics of the female sex. The Feminist driven into a corner endeavours to save his face by flatly denying matters open to common observation and admitted as obvious by all who are not Feminists. Such facts are the pathological mental condition peculiar to the female sex, commonly connoted by the term hysteria; the absence, or at best the extremely imperfect development of the logical faculty in most women; the inability of the average woman in her judgment of things to rise above personal considerations; and, what is largely a consequence of this, the lack of a sense of abstract justice and fair play among women in general.

The afore said peculiarities of women, as women, are, I contend, matters of common observation and are only disputed by those persons--to wit Feminists--to whose theoretical views and practical demands their admission would be inconvenient if not fatal. Of course these characterisations refer to averages, and they do not exclude partial or even occasionally striking exceptions. It is possible, therefore, although perhaps not very probable, that indi-vidual experience may in the case of certain individuals play a part in falsifying their general outlook; it is possible--although, as I before said not perhaps very probable--that any given man's experience of the other sex has been limited to a few quite exceptional women and that hence his particular experience contradicts that of the general run of mankind. In this case, of course, his refusal to admit what to others are self-evident facts would be perfectly bona fide.

The above highly improbable contingency is the only refuge for those who would contend for sincerity in the Feminist's denials. In this matter I only deal with the male Feminist. The female Feminist is usually too biassed a witness in this particular question.

Feminism and Cults

. · 21 September 2010 · Archived copy · Original

Well, I have "wasted" another afternoon surfing around on the web getting an education that is far superior to anything a typical radical-leftist university could possibly hope to deliver me. In between their censorship and brownshirting, where would they find the time to educate?

Actually, for the past few days I have been reading up on propaganda and brainwashing techniques and that led me to reading about the "cult mentalities" of various religious cults for a day or so. Communism uses many different techniques that are similar to religious cults in that they actively promote half truths, use brainwashing, allow for no dissenting, revise history etc. etc.

I haven't researched all of this enough to write a piece on it yet, but I have come across several "cult tests" and many, many other pieces which show how "cult mentality" both works and is enforced. It is becoming evident to me how many purposeful brainwashing techniques have been employed by Marxofeminists - not only on women, but on men as well.

Example: Compare this description of a Communist Brainwashing Technique to how Marxofembots convert weak minded men into becoming manginas with the use of guilt:

http://www.orange-papers.org/orange-cult_q1.html#Reds

Guilt induction is a very powerful tool for manipulating people's minds. In his study of Communist "brainwashing" of American and British prisoners during the Korean War, Edward Hunter wrote:

The Reds had found that the easiest way to subdue any group of people was to give its members a guilt complex and then to lead them on from self-denunciation to self-betrayal. All that was required to put this across was a sufficiently heartless exploitation of the essential goodness in people, so that they would seek self-sacrifice to compensate for their feelings of guilt. The self-sacrifice obviously made available to them in this inside-out environment is some form of treason. -- Edward Hunter, *Brainwashing, From Pavlov to Powers,* p. 169

For example, the brainwashers would criticize a white prisoner for having lived a live of luxury, never caring about the fate of the poor Negroes, being just an uncaring heartless monster who went along with the Capitalist agenda because he personally benefited from it, even if it was killing others. Then the confused white fellow had to confess all of that in public self-criticism sessions. Then, to make amends, he had to do something like snitch on a fellow prisoner, or memorize and espouse Communist dogma. And then it went on and on like that until a few prisoners

had switched sides.

Also in play is the *mass scale brainwashing* that has been foisted upon women. For example, examine these criteria which are deemed **essential** for any effective brainwashing or mindcontrol program, as described by Margaret Thaler Singer: **"Create a sense of powerlessness, covert fear, guilt, and dependency."**

Sounds familiar, doesn't it?

It is becoming obvious to me that Marxofeminists have copied *many* of these tactics to push through their completely irrational agenda of hatred and ultimate societal destruction - specifically pushed by the Marxofeminists who were *not* useful idiots - like Dworkin, Mackinnon, French, Morgan, Greer et. al.

It is also becoming apparent to me that many of the people who most virulently condemn what the philosophers of the 19th century said about the differences between the sexes despised such works not because they were wrong, *but because they were often right and the people who have been condemning and censoring these "old views" the most are the ones who actually believe in these views 100% and are exploiting women by using them!* ***And they might get caught if these views became common knowledge again!*** They fully recognized that it is easier to run society into the dirt by playing on women's *natural* succeptibilities and manipulating them to in turn manipulate men.

Here is an example of someone who has studied cults, Herbert L. Rosedale, Esq., where we find the following:

http://www.csj.org/infoserv_articles/rosedale_herbert_women_and_cults.htm

No one considered whether or not there was a gender differentiation in a person's vulnerability to cults and cult recruitment, and, particularly, whether women were more susceptible to recruitment. Recent research, however, has consistently produced samples that are 60% to 70% female (Chambers, Langone, Dole, & Grice, 1994).

This is one of the best pieces I have found so far describing the various methods that cults use to brainwash people. Have a browse through it and see what you think:

http://orange-papers.org/orange-cult_q0.html

It is fairly long and detailed, but it sure is interesting to browse through and is conveniently broken into easy to digest sub-sections - *you will be amazed by the COUNTLESS similarities!*

****

"Anyone who knows anything of history knows that great social changes are impossible without feminine upheaval. Social progress can be measured exactly by the social position of the fair sex, the ugly ones included." -- Karl Marx

****

THEY'RE
BRAINWASHING
YOU

Women Shrug Off The Tattoo Taboo

. · 24 September 2010 · Archived copy · Original

Ain't she purdy? Whoa, hold me back! I need to get me some 'o that... about as much as I need to stick my fingers in a blender.

http://www2.ljworld.com/news/2006/sep/03/women_shrug_tattoo_taboo/?city_local

“It is acceptable,” says Marta Vicente, a Kansas University assistant professor of women’s studies who researches women’s body image. “But I think it’s still risqué. If tattoos were piercing your ears as a woman, it would not be the same. But it’s like piercing your ears as a man — it’s accepted, but it’s still shocking or being different.”

.

Lol! Who woulda thunk it? Imagine, a professor of women's studies giving the green light to young, impressionable women on how to make themselves completely *undesireable* to men. It's not quite the same as getting your ear pierced either. Ask a guy who had his ear pierced back in the 80's & 90's why he no longer has an earing... and after you stop howling at the sight of red shame rise from beneath his collar and clear up his face to the roots of his hair, you will hear him mumble something about it being just a stupid fad - and he was a stupid kid. Then he will quickly change the subject. Just like a guy will do when some young, giggling, tattooed skank asks an older guy if he ever had a mullet - somehow thinking her "fad" is different. Lol! *It is different! He went and got a hair cut! What are you gonna do, marked one?*

“I think sometimes the attraction is freedom of choice,” Bishop says. “There are a lot of women who, if you ask why they wanted a tattoo, they say their boyfriend or husband told them they couldn’t have a tattoo or piercing. They’ll say, ‘I just got my divorce, and I can do what I want.’ It’s an act of freedom or independence.”

Ah yes, chick logic. Since it is pretty well known that many people choose mates in the serial "monogamy" game who have similar personalities... yes, it certainly does make sense to recognize that those who found you attractive previously in life - some enough to commit their life to you - would have found you repugnant with a tattoo, so now let's go and make ourselves repugnant to spite him! Of course, the future men who I'm attracted to (who also don't like tattoos), will just have to accept that I'm a strong woman and applaud it. I am a woman, I am strong, I am morally superior, therefore I mutilate my body to spite my ex.

Vicente, the women's studies professor, says tattoos are the latest trend in women having control over their bodies.

"Women have always had a much closer relationship with their own bodies, as well as a problematic relationship," she says. "Men do not have that same relationship with their own bodies."

In modern culture, with pressures about body image everywhere, Vicente says women need to feel like they're in control of their own bodies.

"In this world of media bombardment, the need to have control over one's body, for women, is very important," she says. "Tattoos are something that are maybe seen as something that women choose to have, a form of empowerment."

Lol! Control over your bodies in the form of getting a tattoo? Holy Gender Studies, Batman! I would have thought control over your body would have been, like, being toilet trained - or perhaps possessing the mobility of a biped.

I call bullshit. It has nothing to do with "control" or "empowerment." It has to do with this:

"She recalls a 12-student graduate studies seminar last semester, when a student presented a paper on female empowerment as it related to tattoos. After the presentation, 11 of the 12 women revealed they had tattoos."

A picture is worth a thousand words. Need we discuss the real reason behind women getting tattoos any further? (Hint: It is not empowerment.)

"Somehow — and Vicente isn't sure exactly how — tattoos went from being something sailors got when they were at war, to something women find as sexy. In fact, 42 percent of women in the Harris poll said having the tattoo made them feel sexy, compared with 25 percent of men."

Now, there's something not new. Women trying to decide for *men* what is sexy about women. One wonders what women would say if men pulled the reverse. And why do you want to feel sexy? I thought all the fembots in gender studies hated that the world views them as sexual objects? Why do chase after making yourself feel like one then?

"My parents aren't into them," she says, "but my nieces think they're very cool. My grandma is, like, horrified of them. She didn't even want to hear the story."

Go figure, I'll bet her parents and grandmother don't consider themselves feminists either. Granny must be wondering what the hell making yourself "ugly in a sexy way" has to do with the whole empowerment thing, along with the saner XY bearing sex. But as long as she feels justified that they are cool because her nieces think so. Maybe they should advise her on her stock portfolio too. Though, what do you expect after the way young girls are

raised in a feminized world, getting read "I've Got Two Mommies - (with 40 tattoos)" from daycare onwards, while running around wearing a T-shirt saying "Boys are stupid - throw rocks at them."

“And maybe most importantly, these days everybody knows you can have a tattoo removed. It’s not the lifetime commitment it once was.”

Yeah, more dizzy logic here. It is very expensive to get a tattoo removed, so I hope you starting socking $100/mo into a separate account for the laser treatments. The decent guys who could afford to pay for you having them removed aren't attracted to you anymore, remember? It's bikers and thugs who you'll be dating now. And no man should have to pay for your stupid mistakes, so make sure to start up that bank account - and don't go spending it on shoes you don't need just because there is a 10% off sale. The whole "tattoo removal argument" is kind of a scam anyway, because even with expensive lasers, the tattoos never fully go away and the skin never returns to normal. Imagine what that big tramp stamp above your ass will look like when it's "removed." But who needs a real dose of reality when the herd beckons you to act?

Remember, there's not a man around who finds a woman to be repulsive because she *does not* have a tattoo.

.

Also read: Bonecrker #19 – Tattoos and Piercings

"Other people's tattoos are like other people's children: Only *you* can see how bad they are." -- Comic Claudia Cogan

When Shit Gets Sold as Soap...

. · 27 September 2010 · Archived copy · Original

Yes, it'll get you squeaky clean and make you smell good too!

.

Have you ever noticed how much of feminism could be classified as a form of projection? Collective projection, to be more accurate. Virtually every accusation that the feminist movement levels against men could easily be seen as women projecting their own behaviours onto others (men), and this is why, I believe, that women are so prone to believe that men are doing all of these evil things to them - because they can identify with such behaviour inside of themselves.

.

First, let's look at the whole false notion of the super-sized "boy's club-cabal" floating around out there, occasionally refered to as The Patriarchy.

.

.

As pretty much every man with an ounce of common sense and observational abilities will declare, there just is no

freakin' Patriarchy anywhere to be found out there.

.

Men do not give other men special treatment because they are men. In fact, most men will readily attest that it's a dog eat dog world and we're all wearing Milk Bone underwear. Have a look at some of the completely ludicrous accusations that have been leveled against men - like the wild notion that men get better deals when they buy cars because they have testicles between their legs. What freakin' nonsense! As any man reading this will readily attest to, nowhere in our economic system will another man give me money, or choose to make less profit on me because I belong to the male sex.

.

I have *never* experienced the far reaching benefits of the Patriarchy, nor have I ever experienced any boy's club that tries to discriminate against, or exclude women from anything - well, not since I was 8 years old and tried to keep girls out of my tree fort.

.

I have never worked at a place where the men secretly conspired to give eachother advantages over female co-workers... but I have experienced working at places where myself and my male co-workers have caught several women conspiring in secrecy to make sure that women outperformed their male co-workers. It happened when I was working in a high-pressure commission sales environment. It was a fair sized staff, 12 in sales (11 men, 1 woman), 3 in management (2 men, 1 woman), and 3 receptionists (all women). Now, don't go thinking it was discriminatory that there were 11 men and only 1 woman on the sales staff. The general manager tried and tried to increase the ratio of women on his staff, and hired several women while I was there, but the women he hired just kept quitting, some in tears, because they couldn't cope with the high pressure of commission sales.

.

What was discovered by myself and my male co-workers, however, was that the three receptionists were sending double the amount of first-time customers & phone calls to the lone saleswoman, and the female manager was turning over double the amount of clients to the saleswoman as she was to the men.

.

When it was brought to the attention of the General Manager, by 11 pissed off employees, he called *the only 5 females* that worked at the place into a meeting and after some intense grilling, the women finally admitted that they were purposefully sending more business to the woman than the men, because they wanted to make sure that a woman was the top saleperson. And not only that, *but they had discussed, in secret, how they were going to go about doing it!* And let's make this clear, every single woman that worked at that outfit was in on this secret conspiracy. Gee... sounds an awful lot like that far-fetched notion of patriarchy that women keep accusing men of... except the patriarchy-boy's club is the wrong gender, because what was really going on there was a matriarchal girl's club, which designed itself to discriminate based on gender.

.

So, I maintain that women believe in so many of these far flung notions about men because women know that *women themselves do these things and therefore they rationalize that if they were men, they would discriminate against women in the same way*.

.

There is no secret patriarchy - but there is a secret matriarchy.

.

Now, of course, I just gave out one example, which by no means *proves* the existence of the secret girl's club. But here's a simple test you can do yourself which will strongly indicate that women, perhaps because of their herd mentality (as in, protect the herd first), do belong to a matriarchal conspiracy and are wilfully complicit in denying that such a thing exists. It just takes a little awareness, and a few separate conversations with the same woman.

.

First, what you have to do, is play on a woman's most favourite subject: Her own victimhood. This is the only way to get women to turn on other women. Ask her a question about how nasty her female classmates in highschool were capable of being and she will go into a tirade about how manipulative and bitchy girls can be - or ask her if

she prefers to work with men or women. Women *always* tell you that they like working with men, because their female co-workers are constantly stabbing eachother in the back and bring so much politics into the work place. This is about the only time that a woman will turn on the herd, when you start questioning her about how mean the the herd treats *her.* But make note of how easily you can get her to admit that she knows women can be mean, nasty, manipulative creatures - and file that away for future conversations.

.

Sometime, in the near future, you strike up another conversation with the same woman, and try to bring up a discussion of how a woman might possibly be aggressively manipulative against men by leveling false accusations of sexual harassment against a man, or how a wife might be psychologically abusive with manipulations against her husband... and watch the very same woman who recently told you how mean and nasty she knows women can be, suddenly clam up about how women might be doing some very mean things to men - if she doesn't blow up in your face with righteous indignation for saying what she herself had recently admitted to, except applying it to men rather than her own victimization by bitchy women. She will automatically go into "protect the herd/Matriarchy mode" and deny everything about women's sometime awful behaviour.

.

But now you know she knows, and you will no longer believe that she "doesn't get it." Rather, the only conclusion left is that she gets it - and she gets it well - but that protecting the Matriarchy is far more important to her than justice or honesty. One might even refer to such behaviour as amoral.

.

There is no Patriarchy, but women readily believe that it *should* exist somewhere, because it is a projection of what they know about being part of the "Girl's Club - the Sisterhood!" And after decades of women (and men) searching for the Loch Ness Patriarchy, the only conclusion that the fembots can come up with to explain why they can't expose it is because it is "institutionalized." Yes indeed, the Patriarchy is civilization itself. Hmmm.

.

One can really see the lunacy of the whole "Patriarchy" argument when one looks at Social/Relational Aggression, which is stereotypically described as female aggression. Of course, one is hard pressed to find studies about this form of aggression in terms of female on male aggression, but it is ever present when one looks for women being victims, of other females. *Then* suddenly it is a serious issue, also known as girl bullying, which specifically uses forms of mental manipulations via secret gossiping, character assasinations and ostracizing, and mostly by convincing others to conspire against the victim along with the main aggressor.

.

http://www.aare.edu.au/01pap/bet01229.htm

.

Bullying Styles

.

"Bullying styles are generally considered to fall under two categories, direct and indirect. Direct physical bullying is to, hit, shove, kick, trip, push, and pull. Direct verbal bullying can involve name-calling, insults, threatening to hurt the other. ***Indirect bullying, also known as social or relational aggression*** *(Crick 1997)* ***involves attacking the relationships of people and hurting the self-esteem. It is subtler and involves behaviours such as spreading nasty rumors, withholding friendships, ignoring, gossiping, or excluding a child from a small group of friends.***

.

There is no doubt that stereotypically, males are more physical and direct in their bullying styles and females more manipulative and indirect *(Olweus, 1997; Bjorkqvist, 1994; Crick & Grotpeter, 1995; Lagerspetz, Bjorkqvist & Peltonen, 1988). Boys in our Western culture are encouraged to be tough and competitive and as they maturate slower and develop social intelligence at a slower rate they will use physical aggression longer than girls (Lagerspetz, Bjorkqvist, & Peltonen, 1988; Bjorkqvist, Lagerspetz, & Kauliaien, 1992).* ***However there is no reason to believe that females should be less hostile and less prone to get into conflicts than males*** *(Burbank, 1987, in Bjorkqvist 1994; Crick & Grotpeter, 1995).* ***As females are physically weaker, they develop early in life other bullying styles in order to achieve their goals.*** *Indirect aggression in girls increases drastically at about the age of eleven years*

(Bjorkqvist, Lagerspetz and Kaukiainen, 1992) whereas physical aggression among boys decreases during late adolescence, to be replaced mainly by verbal, but also indirect aggression (Bjorkqvist 1994).

.

There is a growing body of research in gender differences of bullying and other adolescent aggressive behaviours. There are hundreds of studies dedicated to the topic, many placing the emphasis on boys or the forms of aggression, more salient to boys. Forms of aggression more salient to girls has received comparatively little attention (Crick, 1997; Crick & Grotpeter, 1995)."

.

Please note: Styles of aggression more salient to girls typically involve conspiring with others to hurt someone, kind of like, um, a cabal, a girl's club, the Sisterhood... and notice how female styled aggression always revolves around plausible deniability. "Who me? I didn't do anything!"

.

Is it a stretch to take this beyond childhood female on female bullying and say that women also aggress against men in the same manner?

.

"Patriarchy" is pure projection of what women know about "the Sisterhood." They believe the Patriarchy exists because they know the Sisterhood exists.

.

So...

.

How far does this collective projection go? .

.

What about the feminist claims that because men make up the majority of politicians & judges, our legal system has been tainted to prefer men's concerns over women's. Yet of course, we all know this isn't true. Male politicians have passed an obscene amount of laws pandering specifically to women's concerns and there is no politician alive that has ever been elected to office by campaigning for issues specifically benefiting men. Yet, when one looks at the female politicians, it is easy to see that this false accusation against men is nothing more than projection of what females do when they get into office or powerful positions - the vast majority use their power to specifically benefit their own gender. The accusations that men are doing the same to women is so obviously false that it can be nothing *but* projection of what women know they would do if they had "men's power." And they have proved it by doing so.

.

How about the false accusation that men regard women as objects, as chattel, as a means of production? Hmmm... I don't know, but women obviously regard men as a work animal which women use to provide for food, clothing, shelter and luxuries for herself and her children. And women believe that her husband's labour *is her property.* This is why she sues her ex-husband for it after divorce. Who is treating who like a yoked farm animal, like chattel?

.

Hmmm... if women were running the world, there would be no more war? Well, since women got the vote around 90 years ago, the world has embarked on the most violent, most war filled century in the history of mankind - all during a time when women did/do run the world, because they hold 53% of the vote, and therefore they controlled those who started said wars and destruction.

.

Yup, even on the internet, we now hear things about how bad, bad men are "cyber-stalking" women and threatening violence and rape against feminists who blog man hatred on the web. Lol! **Holy Projection, Batwoman!** Is there one single anti-feminist on the internet who has not, over the past few years, been subjected to relentless threats of violence from cyberstalking feminists and mangina's who believe that anyone speaking out in opposition of them is fully deserving of any and all vile threats that can possibly be conjured up? Please!

.

In almost every single accusation that feminists throw at men, one can find projection of their own horrible

behaviour onto the behaviour of men. And they get away with it because women in general can readily identify with these kinds of behaviour. Projection!

.

This is not new. These ideas about women's behaviour and moral character have been around for a long time. From the Bible to Aristotle, from Kant to Schopenhauer... and as "misogynistic" as feminists keep claiming that these people are, thus the reasoning for censoring the thousands of years of "Gender Studies" that existed before feminism, no-one has been better at proving correct these previous notions about male and female characteristics than the feminists who hate them the most, and the mainstream women who are complicit in letting them get away with it.

.

Man, this is some great soap!

.

.

Previous Index Next

MGTOW

"If it's not right, Go Your Own Way!"

.....

..oooO.....

..(....).....

….\..(.....

…. _/.....

……....Oooo..

……....(....)…
……..)../....
.....(_/.....
.....
Related:

Collective Projection

Zenpriest #53 - Feminism Really is All About Projection

The Almighty, All Encompassing Power of the Pussy

. · 30 September 2010 · Archived copy · Original

Quote: "Lastly, we should never forget that it is men in high places, corridors of power, that have signed off on this sorry state of affairs. Judges, attorneys and legislators are mostly men, and it is they who we are up against, in collusion with NOW and that gang. ..."

While this is true it is not entirely accurate, and is in fact a tired old feminist saw that has been used against men for decades, if not for over a century. What this line of thinking fails to recognize is that those men are *serving* women – in exactly the same manner as every other biological, living, breathing entity on this third rock from the sun does. The way "life" works is that the male is the sexual servant of the female.

.

"Where the female can derive no benefit from association with the male, no such association takes place." — Robert Briffault (The Mothers, I, 191)

So yes, men are in the positions of power, and those men are doing bad things to other men… but why are they doing it? They are doing it because naturally males do the bidding of the female.

Women *are* society – while men are the outliers of society. Let me state that again: **Women *are* society**. What women want, society wants. What women find distasteful, society finds distasteful. What women value, society values, and so on and so on.

Think of it like the typical herd of animals. Of course there are males and females, but is the composition of the herd a fifty-fifty split between males and females? Absolutely not! The herd is mostly females, with a dominant bull screwing them all, and young sexually immature males making up the rest. When the young males reach sexual maturity, they challenge the dominant bull for breeding rights within the herd. Either the young up and comer dethrones the bull and takes his place as the breeder, or the bull defends his postion successfully – but no matter the

result, the loser leaves and lives on the fringe of the herd… and is constantly trying, or challenging, to try and get back in – in other words, the loser males (betas) are constantly trying to find acceptance back into the herd – they desire to be back in, to be part of the "society" that is virtually 100% female.

Women ARE society – while men are on the outskirts of it. Thus, men are independent because nature forces them to be, while women are collective herd creatures. (Society).

So, virtually anything that men "do" in society, they only do because females have given them the social approval to do so. If females withdrew their societal support, the "alpha" male in power would lose all of said power and would be replaced by another that females felt was more suitable.

Philalethes has written a few posts about this that explain it rather well:

Philalethes #19 – Not Much Happens That Women Don't Approve Of

Philalethes #23 – Who's to Blame?

Quote: "WTF is it with you and Philalethes kissing the ass of the Almighty Power of Women? Men make civilization AND society. The only society that [women] make is the "Real Housewives of NY" TV show kind. Women have power only when manginas are too pussy to be in charge."

Indeed, and Philalethes makes quite a point of this too. One thing which he discusses is how women innately attempt to keep men as powerless as children – because women have 100% totalitarian control over children. When a man "becomes a man" he grows out of the influence of women and surpasses the totalitarian power of the female.

It is when this happens that men begin to have usefulness to both society and thus, to women themselves. Women try to keep men as boys, but what they need are *men* and men are those who are not controlled by women, but rather have grown beyond that.

This is why so many societies try to "cut the apron strings" in one form or another. In our culture, children were to be educated by their fathers after the "tender years" had passed. Many cultures, even more or less matriarchal ones, have recognized the need to separate boys from the influence of women so that they may outgrow mother's power and into men – a sphere that is higher than that of women in the hierarchy, thus making men that have "something women themselves cannot accomplish," and therefore becoming both useful and attractive to women.

Thus all of the "rites of passage" that are found in cultures all around the world – mostly with the intention of severing boy's ties to female power, and teaching him to cultivate his own power that surpasses it. It is this power – the power that surpasses the female, which you are trying to illustrate with your Atilla example – you are merely providing an example of exactly what I am talking about – he grew his power outside of the influence of women (women cannot teach men to be men, only to be children), and thus his sexual attractiveness also greatly increased. See above to Briffault's Law in the post you are criticizing – Attila offered a benefit to women (power, prestige, social proofing etc. etc). The thugs you speak of are doing the same.

Btw, it is not neccessarily "bad-boys" that women are attracted to but rather men who are strong enough to grow out of the female reach of control. What women are attracted to are "hard guys" who won't put up with female bullshit – indicating they are not under female power. The problem with us today is the only men left who are "hard guys" are the badboys and thugs who are decidedly anti-social. The rest of the men in our society never really grow out

female totalitarianism, and thus women resent them as failures and don't want to fuck them, or even give them nominal respect, for that matter.

I don't really see how you are ranting against either myself or Philalethes, since both of us repeatedly state pretty much the identical things you are saying. I suppose pointing out the underlying factors and conditions of why women need males to grow into men is something men should not discuss because…???

It is not only Philalethes and me who argue this, btw.

"Anyone who knows anything of history knows that great social changes are impossible without feminine upheaval. Social progress can be measured exactly by the social position of the fair sex, the ugly ones included." — Karl Marx

"… Women may have happy ideas, taste, and elegance, but they cannot attain to the ideal. The difference between men and women is like that between animals and plants. Men correspond to animals, while women correspond to plants because *their development is more placid and the principle that underlies it is the rather vague unity of feeling.* When women hold the helm of government, the state is at once in jeopardy, because *women regulate their actions not by the demands of universality but by arbitrary inclinations and opinions.* Women are educated–who knows how?" — G.F. Hegel

"Feminine traits are called weaknesses. People joke about them; fools ridicule them; but reasonable persons see very well that those traits are just the tools for the management of men, and for the use of men for female designs" — Immanuel Kant

"But what difference does it make whether women rule, or the rulers are ruled by women? The result is the same." -- The Politics of Aristotle

As Philalethes points out in other posts of his – think of men as a "big stick" to females – a tool. That is what men are to females – a big tool that she uses to do things she cannot do herself, or finds too distasteful to do herself. Women compete amongst eachother to have access to the biggest stick. However, if a male never grows out of female influence, he will never develop the traits neccessary to truly offer woman what she cannot do herself.

Also, I'd like to point out that there is a difference between "society" and "civilization." Primitive hunter-gatherers of 10,000 years ago lived in a "society" even though there was no civilization yet founded on earth.

To say that female "society" creates things like Desperate Housewives is not accurate – a female "civilization" would create that (if all the other neccessary things to film a TV show magically fell from the sky). Society is merely a group of people living together. There is a society of primitive people in Papau New Guinea, but there is no real form of civilization to go along with it.

P.S. Here's a series of relevant articles from *The Men's Tribune*.

The Atom

The Methods of Women

The Balance of Power

The Feminist Totalitarian State

Quote: Thank you very much for your explanation, and I agree with what you said in it completely!

So I went back and read your comment [and it] seemed to be saying that a man's power can only be derivative, and that women will always actually be guiding and controlling everything.

I was ranting against that idea. And I am still a little confused.

Are you saying that ... stuff stops being true when: "a man 'becomes a man' [and] grows out of the influence of women and surpasses the totalitarian power of the female. . . . [because] Women try to keep men as boys, but what they need are men and men are those who are not controlled by women, but rather have grown beyond that."

If so, then I think that the fact that this social power of women to control and limit males can be (and should be) overcome by boys as they become men (for the well-being of both men and women, and to satisfy women), should be emphasized (when you and Philalethes write about such things).

Yes, I agree.

This is a confusing concept but I believe it is very real none the less. It must be doubly so for women who are ruled by emotion/passion more so than men. Thus for a woman, even when she wins she loses. (While she tries to overpower the male through her wiles, she is ultimately dissatisfied with the types of males she successfully overpowers. Ah, hypergamy!) A life ruled by passion leads to short-term gratification but long-term suffering. Men are also ruled by passion but theirs is slightly more tempered by reason than women's, which leads to one of the causes for Patriarchal societies placing the man in charge. (ie. It is "anti-animal", just like so much of the rest of the universal moral code: Do not kill, do not steal, do not commit adultery, honor your father and mother etc. etc – all things that are "anti-nature" and thus represent man "rising up from being a beast of the field" through his own ability to consciously reason why he should resist behaving like an animal and rather *choosing* a better, more rational way).

The Proprietor of Pussy, the Vanquisher of Vicarious Vaginal Vagueness, aka Roissy himself, alludes to a similar train of thought in his Sixteen Commandments of Poon:

III. You shall make your mission, not your woman, your priority
"Forget all those romantic cliches of the leading man proclaiming his undying love for the woman who completes him. Despite whatever protestations to the contrary, women do not want to be "The One" or the center of a man's existence. They in fact want to subordinate themselves to a worthy man's life purpose, to help him achieve that purpose with their feminine support, and to follow the path he lays out. You must respect a woman's integrity and not lie to her that she is "your everything". She is not your everything, and if she is, she will soon not be anymore."

IV. Don't play by her rules
"If you allow a woman to make the rules she will resent you with a seething contempt even a rapist cannot inspire. The strongest woman and the most strident feminist wants to be led by, and to submit to, a more powerful man. Polarity is the core of a healthy loving relationship. She does not want the prerogative to walk all over you with her capricious demands and mercurial moods. Her emotions are a hurricane, her soul a saboteur. Think of yourself as a bulwark against her tempest. When she grasps for a pillar to steady herself against the whipping winds or yearns for an authority figure to foil her worst instincts, it is you who has to be there… strong, solid, unshakeable and immovable.".

XV. Maintain your state control

"You are an oak tree. You will not be manipulated by crying, yelling, lying, head games, sexual withdrawal, jealousy ploys, pity plays, shit tests, hot/cold/hot/cold, disappearing acts, or guilt trips. She will rain and thunder all around you and you will shelter her until her storm passes. She will not drag you into her chaos or uproot you. When you have mastery over yourself, you will have mastery over her."

While men must grow out of the power of females in order to become useful, it is still the females who decide what is and what is not acceptable. Men and women are both halves of the same species, not as two entirely separate groups who have no effect upon the actions of another, although be it noted – the female affects the actions of the male to a far greater extent than the other way around.

"Women chat happily, send sexually explicit signals and encourage the man's attention, even if they have absolutely no interest in him. This gives a woman time to assess a man, says [Karl Grammer of the Ludwig Boltzmann Institute of Urban Ethology in Vienna, who studied 45 male-female pairs of strangers in their teens and early twenties]… Importantly, the women also seemed to control the encounter – what the women did had a direct effect on what the men did next. 'You can predict male behaviour from female behaviour but not the other way around,' says Grammer" – *New Scientist Magazine* (London), February 14, 2001

Think back to the example of the herd, where the bull breeds the lot of females. Is it entirely that the bull gets to breed because he is the strongest and most aggressive of all the males… or is it that the females choose the bull because he has displayed the traits neccessary for them to choose him as the alpha? The bull doesn't fight the females and overpower them – he fights other males to put on a show for the females so they will accept him as their mating choice.

"Cherokee women didn't have titled positions. The men had those. But women had the Women's Council. They had a lot of control. People forget that… With the Iroquois, the chief was a man, but the women chose the chief, they nurtured him, they installed him. Women could take him out." – Wilma Mankiller, principle chief to the Cherokee Nation, 1987-1995, speaking at the University of Arizona in January 2002, as broadcast on C-SPAN, June 1, 2002

One of the problems we have is that "what women want" is not static, but rather it is fluid – ever-changing according to the social needs of the day. In days gone by, women decided they needed strong men who would stick around and protect and provide while at the same time leading the family – and that's the kind of men that society produced, because that's what females wanted. Today, women want weak, spineless poofs for provider husbands,

and aggressive overt sexual displays from their sperm providing “alphas” and thus, that’s what we have.

If the economy collapses and our civilization begins to crumble and thus, life begins to get harder, most likely women will begin to find the values of the protector-provider role, with the female being more submissive, to be more attractive, and thus men will become that way in order to attract the females. (Women become more submissive relative to the safety of society – think of a man & woman living in a cave, hearing a bump outside – the man will be the one sent out to investigate and if she follows him it all, it will be behind him, peering over his shoulder & using him as a shield. The safer society is, the more confident she is to march out without her shield – the less she “needs a man”).

Another interesting concept Philalethes puts forth which is somewhat related is in regard to species of animals that only have females, of which there are a few species found on earth (ie. lizards):

In the same way, he asserts that the male’s biological purpose is to serve the female, in that these female-only species are incapable of evolving and therefore can only exist in a completely safe ecological niche where there is no competition with competing species that are male & female, because a female-only species does not have the ability to evolve without the male. As we often assert in the MRM, males have greater ability to adapt than females. A female-only species can only survive in a static and safe environment. As soon as elements of adversity are introduced, species with two sexes fast out-evolve single sex species and render them extinct. As is often said in the MRM, males will survive better because of our innate ability to adapt.

This plays into a few other concepts that are related in regard to “the essense” of male and female, something which I refer to as “spike” (male) vs. “rhythm” (female). I explained this general concept in this piece titled Male and Female: Equal But Different

Males “spike” and vary much more wildly than females do, who tend to cluster around the average, while men exist far more in the outliers – ie. IQ where males inhabit the outliers of both 70 and 130 IQ in far greater numbers/variability than females who are clustered more around the mean of 100IQ. This concept comes through as “male” or “female” in a plethora of instances between males and females.

Some believe that this is the genetic purpose of the XY vs XX – because it enables evolution. The missing leg that creates the “Y” is what makes men far more variable, whereas the extra leg that creates the female “X” is what holds these genetic mutations (the positive ones) in the human genetic code.

So, a fella like Einstein, for example, is a deviation from the norm because of his high IQ, and because his high IQ makes him stand out from the normal population in a positive light, more females will find him sexually attractive because of this mutating trait, and thus more women will choose to bump uglies with him and those positive mutations will get locked into the human code via the female's genes, not the male's. Many such “mutations” are passed through the female, not the male, even though some of them may only affect males themselves (such as colour blindness).

Here is a superb comment by Rollo Tomassi (comment #33) that encompasses the theme of this concept so perfectly, that I simply had to reproduce it as an add-on to this already lengthy piece:

Simon, the Matrix has you.

.

Men, such as yourself, accept as normal expectations of themselves as men is uniquely defined by a feminine

imperative. What I think eludes most men (even self-aware Alphas) is that our most deeply internalized expectations and desires, and how we go about actualizing them, are primarily rooted in what best serves the feminine imperative. What we perceive as "doing the right thing" is almost universally reinforcing of feminine primacy.

For example, I took issue with Kay Hymowitz here, who's shit you're essentially parroting.

Her frustration with these so called "boy-men" wasn't over a concern for men needing to improve themselves, but rather a disappointment that they were deliberately shirking their responsibilities to the female imperative – essentially "manning-up" and providing for a wife and family. I even confronted her on this on a live Q&A chat she held. Her answers were a testament to female solipsism. While any and every woman should be empowered to "have it all" – career, family, husband, etc. and be equally respected to choose any or none of the above, men in the Matrix of the feminine imperative, to even be called men, must be facilitators of her choices. Men, in her terms, must want to better themselves in order to satisfy a global female centric reality. So solipsistic is the female imperative that it's a totally alien experience for women to propose that perhaps we should respect men's choice not to participate in it. We're expected to respect, even champion, a woman who breaks out of the mold of traditional gender expectations, but not men. That man must be shamed and ridiculed as 'shallow', selfish and immature BECAUSE he wont acquiesce to that feminine reality. The feminine imperative has built such a complex social structure for men to participate in that it cannot risk them becoming self-aware. Men in this Matrix must be conditioned from birth to normalize what is best for the feminine. Even at the expense of his own life.

So while you may be correct in your assessment that men should in fact be more apt to better themselves, your ultimate purpose of appeasing the feminine for your own benefit is gravely flawed.

Comment #90 -- by Rollo Tomassi

The widespread societal feminization for the past 60 years has built in the perfect Catch 22 social convention for anything masculine; The expectation to assume the responsibilities of being a man while at the same time denigrating masculinity. What ever aspect of maleness that serves the feminine purpose is a man's masculine responsibility, yet any aspect that disagrees with feminine primacy is labeled "Patriarchy" and oppressive. Assuming all the same boy-men Hymowitz complains of took her message to heart and "manned-up", 6 months later her complaint article would be about how horribly oppressive, chauvinistic and misogynistic these "new men" had become.

Essentially this convention keeps beta males in a perpetual state of chasing their own tails. Over the course of a lifetime they're conditioned to believe that they're cursed with masculinity (Patriarchy) yet are still responsible to 'Man Up' when it suits a feminine imperative. So it's therefore unsurprising to see that half the men in western society believe women control their fates (male powerlessness) while at the same time women complain of a lingering Patriarchy (female powerlessness) or at least sentiments of it. This is the Catch 22 writ large. The guy who does in fact Man Up is a chauvinist, misogynist, patriarch, but he still needs to man up when it's convenient to meet the needs of a female imperative.

The short version is that, as in most other things in life, women want their cake and to eat it to. Whatever serves the feminine purpose is the responsible, correct thing to live up to for men, but that which doesn't is shamed and quashed socially.

ALL women (yes, I said "ALL") solipsistically presume that social dynamics should ALWAYS default to a feminine imperative. In essence everyone, male or female, should agree with any social dynamic that benefits the feminine. Without even an afterthought you are cast into what would benefit a feminine social frame and a female ideal. To the

feminine mind (of both women and feminized men) this is just the way the world is.

Men are simply facilitators for a feminine reality.

“If a young man gets married, starts a family, and spends the rest of his life working at a soul-destroying job, he is held up as an example of virtue and responsibility. The other type of man, living only for himself, working only for himself, doing first one thing and then another simply because he enjoys it and because he has to keep only himself, sleeping where and when he wants, and facing woman when he meets her, on equal terms and not as one of a million slaves, is rejected by society. The free, unshackled man has no place in its midst.” -- Esther Villar, *The Manipulated Man*

.

Further Reading:

If I Only Had a V -- by Angry Harry

Five Stars ***** Woman (An Exposition for the Advanced Mind) -- by David Quinn

The Marxofeminist Paradise Known as Communist Cuba!

. · 3 October 2010 · Archived copy · Original

The following is an article written by a left wing Marxofembot back in 1998. It is just sitting out there plain as day that what fembots are agitating for (and writing into our legal systems) is Communism.

.

One wonders why these sick, radical fembots in North America aren't heading to Florida en masse to get their hands on a cheap "previously owned" raft with which to navigate a trip to Cuba and escape the *awful institutionalized patriarchal oppression* that they are always whining to us about.

.

.

Look! Here's a good one! Climb aboard, fembots! Just keep heading south. Bon Voyage!

.

http://www.hartford-hwp.com/archives/43b/174.html

.

Feminism, Communism and Catholicism

.

By Lisa Macdonald, *Green Left Weekly,* #304, 4 February 1998

.

The women of Cuba have reason to celebrate after the visit of Pope John Paul II two weeks ago.

.

The pope's call, on behalf of the majority of the world's capitalists, for the US to lift its economic blockade of Cuba, focused the world's media on the Cuban people's plight after 37 years of economic isolation, and their achievements despite that. John Paul's call adds significantly to the growing pressure on the US to lift the blockade.

.

The Cuban government knew that allowing the of the Catholic Church almost unlimited scope to spread his reactionary message on the family was a double-edged sword.

.

John Paul's ultraconservative position on women's "God-given" role as obedient and faithful wives, self-sacrificing mothers and domestic slave labourers is the antithesis of what Cuban revolutionaries have fought for.

.

Last year there were 41,227 divorces in Cuba (compared to 65,009 marriages). The pope's assertion in Santa Clara that divorce is evil and unnatural is not likely to change this pattern. **The Family Code, which enshrines in law women's (and men's) unqualified right to divorce, to receive financial support *from the father* of their children *and the state and to insist that their male partners do an equal share of domestic labour and child-care,*** was the product of years of profoundly democratic discussion involving the entire population.

.

The pope also railed against women's right to control their fertility. Abortion, he said, is an abominable crime

which distorts the "true nature and dignity" of motherhood. All birth control methods, he said, "are not in accordance with human dignity".

.

Again, the pope's rantings must have had limited credibility among this particular audience since they directly contradict the experiences and aspirations of Cuban women. As one woman told a US journalist in Havana at the time: "He's entitled to his opinion".

.

Cuba has no official birth control policy, but **abortion is legal and considered a right for all women, regardless of age, marital status or personal circumstances.** It is a right which Cuban women fought hard for, against the legacy of centuries of imperialist colonisation and the domination of the Catholic Church before the revolution.

.

The reproductive rights of women in Cuba contrast sharply with those in Cuba's "moral" condemner, the US. Whilst opinion polls throughout the 1990s revealed that at least 65% of people in the US agree that women should have the right to choose, 15 abortion clinics were bombed last year, and unrestricted access to abortion is not available in a single US state.

.

During 1996 there were 83,000 abortions in Cuba and 140,276 births - an abortion rate of almost 60%. This compares to 31% in the US.

.

For Cuban women living under the blockade, abortion is more often than not the only way to control their fertility. It is a "choice" they exercise within constraints which are beyond their and their government's control. As another woman in Cuba interviewed by US television pointed out, there would be many fewer abortions in Cuba if the blockade was lifted and Cubans had access to a range of contraceptive technologies.

.

What the pope did not mention in his efforts to undermine the huge advances in reproductive and personal freedom that Cuban women have won is that, alongside the high rates of abortion and divorce, Cuba has a high level of health care, welfare provision and education for children. As a famous sign in Havana says: "200 million children in the world sleep in the streets today. Not one of them is Cuban."

.

Despite the immense difficulties it confronts as a result of the blockade, socialist Cuba has the lowest infant mortality rate among underdeveloped countries, and a rate that is lower than in the United States itself.

.

It is because of such achievements, and because the revolution gave all Cuban women much more freedom, encouragement, resources and confidence to make their own decisions about how to live their lives that the pope's reactionary sermons will fall on largely unreceptive ears.

.

The Cuban revolutionaries know this. They also know that the greatest threat to and limitation on Cuban women's freedom, is not, as "his holiness" tried to insist, "the substitution of God's infinite wisdom and power with an [communist] ideology", but the power of the US to starve Cuba of the resources it needs to progress towards the full liberation of women.

.

Civil Unions and Shared Parenting

. · 6 October 2010 · Archived copy · Original

.

The argument often used against Same Sex Marriage is that it should not be called “marriage” but rather a “civil union” – call it ANYTHING you want, just don’t call it marriage!

But advocates for Same Sex Marriage simply refuse to rename it, despite such “civil unions” not really differing from marriage in anything but name.

Have you ever asked yourself “why”?

A quick perusing of the following quotes ought to give a hint to the answer:

“Being queer is more than setting up house, sleeping with a person of the same gender, and seeking state approval for doing so. … ***Being queer means pushing the parameters of sex, sexuality, and family, and in the process, transforming the very fabric of society.*** **… As a lesbian, I am fundamentally different from non-lesbian women. …In arguing for the right to legal marriage, lesbians and gay men would be forced to claim that we are just like heterosexual couples, have the same goals and purposes, and vow to structure our lives similarly. … We must keep our eyes on the goals of providing true alternatives to marriage** ***and of radically reordering society's view of reality.”*** -- Paula Ettelbrick, “Since When Is Marriage a Path to Liberation?”, in William Rubenstein, ed., Lesbians, Gay Men and the Law (New York: The New Press, 1993), pp. 401-405.

"A middle ground might be to fight for same sex marriage and its benefits, and then, ***once granted, redefine the institution completely, to demand the right to marry not as a way of adhering to society's moral codes but rather to debunk a myth and radically alter an archaic institution."*** -- Michelangelo Signorile, "Bridal Wave," OUT Magazine, December/January 1994, p.161

"It [gay marriage] is also a chance to wholly transform the definition of family in American culture. **It is the final tool with which to dismantle all sodomy statutes, get education about homosexuality and AIDS into public schools, and, in short, usher in a sea of change in how society views and treats us."** -- Michelangelo Signorile, "I do, I do, I do, I do, I do," OUT Magazine, May 1996, p.30

"[E]nlarging the concept to embrace same-sex couples would necessarily transform it into something new**....Extending the right to marry to gay people -- that is, abolishing the traditional gender requirements of marriage -- can be one of the means, perhaps the principal one, through which the institution divests itself of the sexist trappings of the past."** -- Tom Stoddard, quoted in Roberta Achtenberg, et al, "Approaching

2000: Meeting the Challenges to San Francisco's Families," The Final Report of the Mayor's Task Force on Family Policy, City and County of San Francisco, June 13, 1990, p.1.

There is an element in the Gay Community that fully intends to *transform* the current parameters of marriage and create something *completely new.* This is classical Cultural Marxism and is the reason why Gay Rights Activists and feminists have joined each other at the urinal of eternal victimization, despite the *obvious* contradiction of each group's **fundamental** premise – that being that feminists entire raison d'être is based upon "Gender is a Social Construct" and therefore women are discriminated against because the testicularly challenged are treated differently (while born fundamentally the same), whereas Gay Rights Activists argue that they are *born gay* (refuting gender is a social construct) and therefore they are victimized because they are *born* that way, and thus should not be discriminated against. The two arguments are mutually contradictory at the most fundamental level, and the two groups ought to be enemies… and yet, they obviously aren't. The reason is that the radical wings of both factions have the same fundamental goal: they both wish to alter the family unit and society into something completely new. Roosevelt, meet Stalin, yo new fwiend and ally!

Something very important in order to *transform* marriage then, is to make sure that the new models that come out are still *called* marriage. It would be much harder to transform the meaning of marriage with "civil unions," if civil unions were not also called marriage.

How will they transform marriage and society this way? Well, in Canada we legalized Gay Marriage back in 2005, and by 2006 (and using the justification of gay marriage now being normalized), Gay's shoved their agenda into our schools and by 2007 a court in Ontario had already declared two married lesbians and one sperm donating father to all three be equal legal parents of the same child. Obviously, the dialectical path towards polygamy is set wide open by this ruling... does anyone else see how they are able to purposefully "transform" society in this way?

(***2013 Update: In March 2013, British Columbia's new Family Act went into effect. This law forces defacto marriage upon all common-law couples after two years. Further, the act allows for *five* parent "families." A sperm donor, an egg donor, a surrogate, and two homosexuals who adopt the child, can all be equal parents of the same child.)

(***Another 2013 Update: So the Slope Was Slippery After All)

That's why Gay Rights Activists are so adamant about it being called marriage. If it were called "civil unions" the Marxist plan to alter society dialectically falls flat on its face. Everything will *stall* at the civil union level, and once society accepts the term "civil union" and identifies it with Gay People, it will become *monumentally* difficult for them to further alter society with this plan, *or* to be able to "rename" civil unions as marriage later on. Much of Marxist dialectical movement is based upon the general public's *perception* of an issue, rather than the reality of it. Either they get it right in the beginning, or there is not much point in carrying on.

Now, let's examine for a moment the feminist goals for transforming marriage and the nuclear family. You'll fast see it's not just "Patriarchy" that they are against, but also they're furious as hell at Mother Nature for giving them ovaries! Even *nature* victimizes women, and this also must change!

"In order to raise children with equality, we must take them away from families and communally raise them" -- Dr. Mary Jo Bane, feminist and assistant professor of education at Welleslry College and associate director of the school's Center for Research on Woman

"No woman should be authorized to stay at home and raise her children. Society should be totally different. Women should not have that choice, precisely because if there is such a choice, too many women will make

that one." -- Interview with Simone de Beauvoir, "Sex, Society, and the Female Dilemma," Saturday Review, June 14, 1975, p.18

"[M]ost mother-women give up whatever ghost of a unique and human self they may have when they 'marry' and raise children." -- Phyllis Chesler, Women and Madness, p.294

"...No woman should have to deny herself any opportunities because of her special responsibilities to her children. ... Families will be finally destroyed only when a revolutionary social and economic organization permits people's needs for love and security to be met in ways that do not impose divisions of labor, or any external roles, at all." -- Functions of the Family, Linda Gordon, WOMEN: A Journal of Liberation, Fall, 1969

"Being a housewife is an illegitimate profession... The choice to serve and be protected and plan towards being a family-maker is a choice that shouldn't be. The heart of radical feminism is to change that" -- Vivian Gornick, feminist author, University of Illinois, "The Daily Illini," April 25, 1981

"[W]omen, like men, should not have to bear children.... The destruction of the biological family, never envisioned by Freud, will allow the emergence of new women and men, different from any people who have previously existed." -- Alison Jaggar, Political Philosophies of Women's Liberation: Feminism and Philosophy, (Totowa, NJ: Littlefield, Adams & Co. 1977)

"[I]f even 10 percent of American women remain full-time homemakers, this will reinforce traditional views of what women ought to do and encourage other women to become full-time homemakers at least while their children are young.... This means that no matter how any individual feminist might feel about child care and housework, the movement as a whole [has] reasons to discourage full-time homemaking." -- Jane J. Mansbridge, Why We Lost the ERA, p.100

"The care of children ..is infinitely better left to the best trained practitioners of both sexes who have chosen it as a vocation...[This] would further undermine family structure while contributing to the freedom of women." -- Kate Millet, Sexual Politics, 178-179

"It takes a village." -- Hillary Clinton

Not only do feminists want to destroy patriarchy, *they also want to destroy motherhood,* something very dear and precious to most females, and likely something they will not give up voluntarily.

There is a hierarchy to the way that "humanity" works. Many men are discovering certain elements of it through what is commonly known as "game," but essentially, the "hierarchy of humanity" works like this:

Man --> Woman --> Children

And this is a *strong* inclination within humans as well. Students of game will understand that women do not want to be sexual with men who they do not deem superior to them, and will reject all men they deem inferior. The woman *desires* the hierarchy, and men fulfill women's desire within it. Never ever forget, however, that *to rule is to serve.* And this is what most men did with their hierarchal powers – see The Titanic. Men did not use their powers to *harm* their "wards," but rather used it to protect them, and often sacrificed directly towards this hierarchy to their own detriment. Parents (ie. mothers) do the same with their children – while parents have the enormous capability to bring harm or to exploit their children, 99% of parents do not do this… and it is *not* because of the law that parents are altruistic towards children (The US Supreme Court even ruled that parents *naturally* act in their children's best interests, both in 1979 and in 2000.) – in the same way, it is not because of law, or even social

mores, that men treat women the way they do. They do it because it comes from somewhere deep within humanity.

It is very, very difficult to get men to turn on women. In the same way, it would be very difficult to get women to turn on children. The hierarchy just does not work that way. It is, however, *monumentally* easier to get women to turn on men. When you "transvalue" the hierarchy (place lower values higher up, and higher values lower down), working it against itself *backwards* works like a charm!

You can convince women to turn on men *much* easier than convincing men to turn on women. In the same manner, you can get children to turn on parents *much* easier than you can get parents to turn on their children. It's just the way the world works.

Man < -- (pushed away by) Women -- > Children

.

That works, as we all well know. Feminists have successfully destroyed marriage and the sexes are repelling from each-other because the hierarchy is messed up. If you give women economic and legal power over their men, women will abuse it until it just becomes downright dangerous for a man to engage in this tortuous practice known as Marriage 2.0.

And, if you wanted to completely destroy parenthood, another stated goal of feminism? Why, just repeat the process that was done to destroy the bond between man and woman – namely, start giving the rights of the child more importance than the rights of the adults responsible for them.

Man < -- (pushed away by) Women < -- (pushed away by) Children

The same thing that happened to men and women regarding marriage will happen to parents and children if the powers that be are allowed to elevate the rights of the child to over-ride the rights of the parent.

How will you raise a child properly if sending them to their room becomes "psychological abuse," or if with-holding their allowance is deemed "financial abuse" or if forcing them to eat their vegetables is considered some other sort of totalitarian abuse. (If I had a hammer, I'd smash vitamins!) Take note, Hillary Clinton fully believes that parents are not qualified to represent the best interests of *their own* children, and therefore the state ought to create a rambling bureaucracy of civil servants and lawyers to represents children *independently* of their parents.

This is the exact same system that divided men and women – pitting their interests against each other by dialectically manipulating the legal system. Men and women are in a parasitic type of relationship wherein the man gives of his surplus resources to the woman. Parents and children are in exactly the same type of scenario, and as has happened with men and women, when you allow the parasite to lead the host, all you end up doing is destroying is the host. Parents and children will work the same.

And I promise you, there does not have to be some grand conspiracy manipulating *every* law and specific aspect of what will happen next. Simply screwing up the hierarchy will suffice. When children have more authority than the parents responsible for them you will have already stuck a stick in the spokes by default. Destruction is now not only likely, but in general society it will be virtually guaranteed – just like placing the authority of women over and above the authority of the man responsible for protecting and providing for her has only led to abuse, not solutions.

"The history of woman is the history of the worst form of tyranny the world has ever known; the tyranny of the weak over the strong. It is the only tyranny that lasts." – Oscar Wilde

Children are even weaker than women! Placing the rights of the child over the rights of parents will lead to the

same results – only worse! And, btw, since the destruction of marriage, who makes up the majority of parents nowadays? (Hint – They are among the testicularly challenged).

Now, often times 'round here you will hear me refer to "The Dialectic," and all of you know that this blog frequently refers to Marxism and how feminism is married to it. One thing however, that does not get mentioned too often here or elsewhere is that Marxism and the Dialectic *does **not** work in a straight line.* The general failure of us to realize this is why we keep getting our asses handed to us. We are playing checkers with people who are playing chess.

The way "it" works is like a zig-zag. The Marxist dialectic pushes radically to the left until a backlash builds up, and then the backlash is released *in order to consolidate the gains to the left.*

"It would be the greatest mistake, certainly, to think that concessions mean peace. Nothing of the kind. Concessions are nothing but a new form of war." -- V.I. Lenin

So, the way it works is that radical leftism is introduced into society – much like how No-Fault-Divorce was introduced into our society. This was a *radical* move that completely re-organized society's most fundamental building block – and take note that there was *no* massive public outcry demanding such a thing. Society didn't even conceive of such a thing – marriage was simply "marriage", the way it had always been.

However, No Fault Divorce was implemented anyway and we all know the results. In the past decades we have witnessed a plethora of problems arising because of this radical change. However, this change has now taken place long ago and the vast majority of the population does not remember, nor can even conceive, of a society where divorce was not the norm. Take note that this was not the case when No-Fault-Divorce arrived on the scene, but after a couple of generations being exposed to it, it is now considered so normal that it is hardly even conceivable to us to try and rid society of it – rather, now we simply want to *alter it.* (This is a classical brainwashing technique, btw - 1- "un-freeze" from current acceptance levels, 2 - Move the subject to a new level, 3 - "Re-Freeze" at the new level until the change has become normalized/accepted, 4 - Repeat the process until the proper amount of "movement" has taken place).

This is how it is done when you implement Marxism via gradualism – while Lenin did it fast and encouraged people to go along with him via threats of violence, gradualism does it by *slowing things down* so that people **forget.** If you study a little closer, you will discover that we have, indeed, spent the past forty years implementing the *exact* same types of social changes that Lenin did in his first four years of rule. The amount of time is the only difference. Lenin used violence within four years, and our system of Marxism is using forgetfulness/the generation gap over a longer period of time. The ultimate result is still the same, however.

So, back to the idea that "the backlash to the right consolidates the gains to the left." What happens after a radical leftward change has occurred is of course a plethora of problems arising in society from said change. The people that are mostly affected by it are those that will push back against the radical leftism with, of course, a rightward/conservative political movement. What happens though is that the backlash movement is not one that attempts to dial back the *cause* but rather attempts are made to *alter the results.*

So, in the case of marriage in the modern day, the "backlash" is decidedly **not** pushing for an end to No Fault Divorce, nor are they pushing for a restoration of Full Father Custody (the way marriage was originally intended, and existed up until the 1860's). What they are pushing for is "shared parenting." A *further* aberration of the original concept of the family, and *something that has **never** existed in history.* But, the "backlash to the right" will solidify in the minds of the population that implementing No-Fault-Divorce was proper, although it needed to be tweaked a little to make it more "equal" and fair. The concept that children need two fulltime parents will also be

demolished. The need for State Funded Daycare will be increased as now there will be two parents disadvantaged rather than one… and, as always, both parties will now be running to the government to beg and plead for the *court* to decide exactly the time, place, and even *how* a parent may interact with his or her own child (or, more accurately, *the state's* child).

Some freedom!

Wheras once parents would have run a pitchfork through any government personnel interfering with a citizen's home-life, then covered him with oil and lit him on fire with torches in the town square, we now have both mothers and fathers running to the government *to beg and plead* for crumbs and scraps from the same table that **the people once owned** and both sides will think they are "winning" some precious equality, while being grateful to the government for providing them with something which was never the government's in the first damn place.

This is the "totalitarian trap." You cause as much problems and confusion in a certain area as you possibly can, and out of the confusion you will cause despair amongst the people who will then run to you and demand you "fix it," which of course you will – but in a way that suits your purposes, not of the masses of plebes who are only there for your satisfaction anyways.

Ah yes, consolidate the gains… until the people have internalized the change, which they will if you allow a measure of backlash to appease them, and allow some time for the changes to internalize, and then begin radical movements to the left again.

One thing though, once the backlash accepts the watered-down consolation prize, *they cannot easily push further* because they have already been appeased! Once something like divorce has been "reorganized" to make it "more equal," added on top of the fact that most of the population doesn't even remember a time when divorce was *not* rampant in society, to take it *further* than the appeasement makes in nearly impossible.

Back to the beginning of this essay and the difference between "Civil Unions" and "Same Sex *Marriage*," you can see why the Gay Rights community was so adamant about retaining the word "marriage" rather than using "Civil Union." Using the word civil union would greatly hamper Gay Activists in their attempts to *alter* the meaning and structure of marriage – it had to retain the same name. If they would have gained under the name "civil union," the effects upon "marriage" would have been negligible - *and also,* their ability to re-push the issue into society's limelight would have been greatly diminished, because the general population would have already come to believe that Gays had been appeased, and wouldn't want to tolerate their bullshit all over again.

It's kind of a one shot deal.

What will Shared Parenting do to the radical changes in the structure of the family over the past decades? Will it roll back the changes or will it *continue* to alter the structure of the family? Will it make divorce more or less acceptable in society? Will men be able to use it as a stepping stone to further their goals, or is it an assured permanent dead-end with minimal benefits?

How can feminists and the powers that be pursue their stated goals of removing *motherhood* from the experience of womanhood? They certainly won't be able to use women to do it directly out of their own self interests… but could the coupling of children's rights to the already diminished father's rights be used to dialectically destroy whatever remains of parenthood, and pass all authority over to the state?

The only thing that supercedes the best interests of women in our society is the best interests of the child. I hope the shared parenting movement does not get made into useful idiots, promoting further destruction of the family while

believing they are preserving it. I could easily see that women will be given "equal rights" in parenting as men, given that men have virtually no rights at all.

I understand why Gays insist on calling Same Sex Unions as Marriage - because they aren't nearly done with transforming it and they *know* what they are doing. On the otherhand, with Shared Parenting, "defenders" of the family and fatherhood are cutting themselves off at the knees - not understanding what they are doing - as they are not willing to dialectically reframe the debate in a way that does not dead-end themselves into the Marxist web.

Previous Index Next

MGTOW

"If it's not right, Go Your Own Way!"

.....
..oooO.....
..(....).....
….\..(.....
…. _/.....
…….....Oooo..
…….....(....)…
……..)../....
.....(_/.....
.....

A Great Historical Outline of Cultural Marxism

. · 9 October 2010 · Archived copy · Original

Who Stole Our Culture? -- by William S. Lind

Sometime during the last half-century, someone stole our culture. Just 50 years ago, in the 1950s, America was a great place. It was safe. It was decent. Children got good educations in the public schools. Even blue-collar fathers brought home middle-class incomes, so moms could stay home with the kids. Television shows reflected sound, traditional values.

Where did it all go? How did that America become the sleazy, decadent place we live in today – so different that those who grew up prior to the '60s feel like it's a foreign country? Did it just "happen"?

It didn't just "happen." In fact, a deliberate agenda was followed to steal our culture and leave a new and very different one in its place. The story of how and why is one of the most important parts of our nation's history – and it is a story almost no one knows. The people behind it wanted it that way.

What happened, in short, is that America's traditional culture, which had grown up over generations from our Western, Judeo-Christian roots, was swept aside by an ideology. We know that ideology best as "political correctness" or "multi-culturalism." It really is cultural Marxism, Marxism translated from economic into cultural terms in an effort that goes back not to the 1960s, but to World War I. Incredible as it may seem, just as the old economic Marxism of the Soviet Union has faded away, a new cultural Marxism has become the ruling ideology of America's elites. The No. 1 goal of that cultural Marxism, since its creation, has been the destruction of Western culture and the Christian religion.

To understand anything, we have to know its history. To understand who stole our culture, we need to take a look at the history of "political correctness."

Early Marxist Theory

Before World War I, Marxist theory said that if Europe ever erupted in war, the working classes in every European country would rise in revolt, overthrow their governments and create a new Communist Europe. But when war broke out in the summer of 1914, that didn't happen. Instead, the workers in every European country lined up by the millions to fight their country's enemies. Finally, in 1917, a Communist revolution did occur, in Russia. But attempts to spread that revolution to other countries failed because the workers did not support it.

After World War I ended in 1918, Marxist theorists had to ask themselves the question: What went wrong? As good Marxists, they could not admit Marxist theory had been incorrect. Instead, two leading Marxist intellectuals, Antonio Gramsci in Italy and Georg Lukacs in Hungary (Lukacs was considered the most brilliant Marxist thinker since Marx himself) independently came up with the same answer. They said that Western culture and the Christian religion had so blinded the working class to its true, Marxist class interests, that a Communist revolution was impossible in the West, until both could be destroyed. That objective, established as cultural Marxism's goal right at the beginning, has never changed.

A New Strategy

Gramsci famously laid out a strategy for destroying Christianity and Western culture, one that has proven all too successful. Instead of calling for a Communist revolution up front, as in Russia, he said Marxists in the West should

take political power last, after a "long march through the institutions" – the schools, the media, even the churches, every institution that could influence the culture. That "long march through the institutions" is what America has experienced, especially since the 1960s. Fortunately, Mussolini recognized the danger Gramsci posed and jailed him. His influence remained small until the 1960s, when his works, especially the "Prison Notebooks," were rediscovered.

Georg Lukacs proved more influential. In 1918, he became deputy commissar for culture in the short-lived Bela Kun Bolshevik regime in Hungary. There, asking, "Who will save us from Western civilization?" he instituted what he called "cultural terrorism." One of its main components was introducing sex education into Hungarian schools. Lukacs realized that if he could destroy the country's traditional sexual morals, he would have taken a giant step toward destroying its traditional culture and Christian faith.

Far from rallying to Lukacs' "cultural terrorism," the Hungarian working class was so outraged by it that when Romania invaded Hungary, the workers would not fight for the Bela Kun government, and it fell. Lukacs disappeared, but not for long. In 1923, he turned up at a "Marxist Study Week" in Germany, a program sponsored by a young Marxist named Felix Weil who had inherited millions. Weil and the others who attended that study week were fascinated by Lukacs' cultural perspective on Marxism.

The Frankfurt School

Weil responded by using some of his money to set up a new think tank at Frankfurt University in Frankfurt, Germany. Originally it was to be called the "Institute for Marxism." But the cultural Marxists realized they could be far more effective if they concealed their real nature and objectives. They convinced Weil to give the new institute a neutral-sounding name, the "Institute for Social Research." Soon known simply as the "Frankfurt School," the Institute for Social Research would become the place where political correctness, as we now know it, was developed. The basic answer to the question "Who stole our culture?" is the cultural Marxists of the Frankfurt School.

At first, the Institute worked mainly on conventional Marxist issues such as the labor movement. But in 1930, that changed dramatically. That year, the Institute was taken over by a new director, a brilliant young Marxist intellectual named Max Horkheimer. Horkheimer had been strongly influenced by Georg Lukacs. He immediately set to work to turn the Frankfurt School into the place where Lukacs' pioneering work on cultural Marxism could be developed further into a full-blown ideology.To that end, he brought some new members into the Frankfurt School. Perhaps the most important was Theodor Adorno, who would become Horkheimer's most creative collaborator. Other new members included two psychologists, Eric Fromm and Wilhelm Reich, who were noted promoters of feminism and matriarchy, and a young graduate student named Herbert Marcuse.

Advances in Cultural Marxism

With the help of this new blood, Horkheimer made three major advances in the development of cultural Marxism. First, he broke with Marx's view that culture was merely part of society's "superstructure," which was determined by economic factors. He said that on the contrary, culture was an independent and very important factor in shaping a society.

Second, again contrary to Marx, he announced that in the future, the working class would not be the agent of revolution. He left open the question of who would play that role – a question Marcuse answered in the 1950s.

Third, Horkheimer and the other Frankfurt School members decided that the key to destroying Western culture was to cross Marx with Freud. They argued that just as workers were oppressed under capitalism, so under Western

culture, everyone lived in a constant state of psychological repression. "Liberating" everyone from that repression became one of cultural Marxism's main goals. Even more important, they realized that psychology offered them a far more powerful tool than philosophy for destroying Western culture: psychological conditioning.

Today, when Hollywood's cultural Marxists want to "normalize" something like homosexuality (thus "liberating" us from "repression"), they put on television show after television show where the only normal-seeming white male is a homosexual. That is how psychological conditioning works; people absorb the lessons the cultural Marxists want them to learn without even knowing they are being taught.

The Frankfurt School was well on the way to creating political correctness. Then suddenly, fate intervened. In 1933, Adolf Hitler and the Nazi Party came to power in Germany, where the Frankfurt School was located. Since the Frankfurt School was Marxist, and the Nazis hated Marxism, and since almost all its members were Jewish, it decided to leave Germany. In 1934, the Frankfurt School, including its leading members from Germany, was re-established in New York City with help from Columbia University. Soon, its focus shifted from destroying traditional Western culture in Germany to doing so in the United States. It would prove all too successful.

New Developments

Taking advantage of American hospitality, the Frankfurt School soon resumed its intellectual work to create cultural Marxism. To its earlier achievements in Germany, it added these new developments.

Critical Theory

To serve its purpose of "negating" Western culture, the Frankfurt School developed a powerful tool it called ”Critical Theory.” What was the theory? The theory was to criticize. By subjecting every traditional institution, starting with family, to endless, unremitting criticism (the Frankfurt School was careful never to define what it was for, only what it was against), it hoped to bring them down. Critical Theory is the basis for the "studies" departments that now inhabit American colleges and universities. Not surprisingly, those departments are the home turf of academic political correctness.

Studies in Prejudice

The Frankfurt School sought to define traditional attitudes on every issue as "prejudice" in a series of academic studies that culminated in Adorno's immensely influential book, "The Authoritarian Personality," published in 1950. They invented a bogus "F-scale" that purported to tie traditional beliefs on sexual morals, relations between men and women and questions touching on the family to support for fascism. Today, the favorite term the politically correct use for anyone who disagrees with them is "fascist."

Domination

The Frankfurt School again departed from orthodox Marxism, which argued that all of history was determined by who owned the means of production. Instead, they said history was determined by which groups, defined as men, women, races, religions, etc., had power or "dominance" over other groups. Certain groups, especially white males, were labeled "oppressors," while other groups were defined as "victims." Victims were automatically good, oppressors bad, just by what group they came from, regardless of individual behavior.

Through Marxists, the members of the Frankfurt School also drew from Nietzsche (someone else they admired for his defiance of traditional morals was the Marquis de Sade). They incorporated into their cultural Marxism what Nietzsche called the "transvaluation of all values." What that means, in plain English, is that all the old sins become

virtues, and all the old virtues become sins. Homosexuality is a fine and good thing, but anyone who thinks men and women should have different social roles is an evil "fascist." That is what political correctness now teaches children in public schools all across America. (The Frankfurt School wrote about American public education. It said it did not matter if school children learned any skills or any facts. All that mattered was that they graduate from the schools with the right "attitudes" on certain questions.)

Media and Entertainment

Led by Adorno, the Frankfurt School initially opposed the culture industry, which they thought "commodified" culture. Then, they started to listen to Walter Benjamin, a close friend of Horkheimer and Adorno, who argued that cultural Marxism could make powerful use of tools like radio, film and later television to psychologically condition the public. Benjamin's view prevailed, and Horkheimer and Adorno spent the World War II years in Hollywood. It is no accident that the entertainment industry is now cultural Marxism's most powerful weapon.

The Growth of Marxism in the United States

After World War II and the defeat of the Nazis, Horkheimer, Adorno and most of the other members of the Frankfurt School returned to Germany, where the Institute re-established itself in Frankfurt with the help of the American occupation authorities. Cultural Marxism in time became the unofficial but all-pervasive ideology of the Federal Republic of Germany.

But hell had not forgotten the United States. Herbert Marcuse remained here, and he set about translating the very difficult academic writings of other members of the Frankfurt School into simpler terms Americans could easily grasp. His book "Eros and Civilization" used the Frankfurt School's crossing of Marx with Freud to argue that if we would only "liberate non-procreative eros" through "polymorphous perversity," we could create a new paradise where there would be only play and no work. "Eros and Civilization" became one of the main texts of the New Left in the 1960s.

Marcuse also widened the Frankfurt School's intellectual work. In the early 1930s, Horkheimer had left open the question of who would replace the working class as the agent of Marxist revolution. In the 1950s, Marcuse answered the question, saying it would be a coalition of students, blacks, feminist women and homosexuals – the core of the student rebellion of the 1960s, and the sacred "victims groups" of political correctness today. Marcuse further took one of political correctness's favorite words, "tolerance," and gave it a new meaning. He defined "liberating tolerance" as tolerance for all ideas and movements coming from the left, and intolerance for all ideas and movements coming from the right. When you hear the cultural Marxists today call for "tolerance," they mean Marcuse's "liberating tolerance" (just as when they call for "diversity," they mean uniformity of belief in their ideology).

The student rebellion of the 1960s, driven largely by opposition to the draft for the Vietnam War, gave Marcuse a historic opportunity. As perhaps its most famous "guru," he injected the Frankfurt School's cultural Marxism into the baby boom generation. Of course, they did not understand what it really was. As was true from the Institute's beginning, Marcuse and the few other people "in the know" did not advertise that political correctness and multi-culturalism were a form of Marxism. But the effect was devastating: a whole generation of Americans, especially the university-educated elite, absorbed cultural Marxism as their own, accepting a poisonous ideology that sought to destroy America's traditional culture and Christian faith. That generation, which runs every elite institution in America, now wages a ceaseless war on all traditional beliefs and institutions. They have largely won that war. Most of America's traditional culture lies in ruins.

A Counter-Strategy

Now you know who stole our culture. The question is, what are we, as Christians and as cultural conservatives, going to do about it?

We can choose between two strategies. The first is to try to retake the existing institutions – the public schools, the universities, the media, the entertainment industry and most of the mainline churches – from the cultural Marxists. They expect us to try to do that, they are ready for it, and we would find ourselves, with but small voice and few resources compared to theirs, making a frontal assault against prepared defensive positions. Any soldier can tell you what that almost always leads to: defeat.

There is another, more promising strategy. We can separate ourselves and our families from the institutions the cultural Marxists control and build new institutions for ourselves, institutions that reflect and will help us recover our traditional Western culture.

Several years ago, my colleague Paul Weyrich wrote an open letter to the conservative movement suggesting this strategy. While most other conservative (really Republican) leaders demurred, his letter resonated powerfully with grass-roots conservatives. Many of them are already part of a movement to secede from the corrupt, dominant culture and create parallel institutions: the homeschooling movement. Similar movements are beginning to offer sound alternatives in other aspects of life, including movements to promote small, often organic family farms and to develop community markets for those farms' products. If Brave New World's motto is "Think globally, act locally," ours should be "Think locally, act locally."

Thus, our strategy for undoing what cultural Marxism has done to America has a certain parallel to its own strategy, as Gramsci laid it out so long ago. Gramsci called for Marxists to undertake a "long march through the institutions." Our counter-strategy would be a long march to create our own institutions. It will not happen quickly, or easily. It will be the work of generations – as was theirs. They were patient, because they knew the "inevitable forces of history" were on their side. Can we not be equally patient, and persevering, knowing that the Maker of history is on ours?

Further Reading:

Roots of American Culture and Community in Disarray

The Tit Man - David Futrelle

. · 11 October 2010 · Archived copy · Original

Tit-man Update

The "Tit Man," David Futrelle, has taken up to refuting MRA arguments.

Good for him. Trying to suckhole up to the ladies like a wet rash stained with skunk smell.

"Hey David! You wouldn't have to lick their smelly rectums as a set aside for sex if you grew a pair and took charge!" -- RF

David is another typical Western Male Fucktard, thinking that even on-line sucking up to fembots will slather his withering pole. A true SNAG (Sensitive New Age Guy) in every dimension.

Reality is not so, Mr. Futrelle, it is not so.

You are anethema to female vaginal lubrication.

Hope you feel proud! You are the reason panties are starting to be modelled without the protective cotten-lined-gussets! Who needs such a thing when the West produces poofs like you?

Hopefully, this blog and your willingness to be a dancing jackass for the matriarchy will help me illustrate this - over time, of course. A suave man of your persuasion will take many moons to out-manoeuvre.

.

God, I miss Jackasses like Dave! A few years ago, the internet was rife with them, but alas, only a few years later, their numbers are dwindling... wtf?

Pleeeease debate me on... *something*!?! I've been waiting. Please Dave, you are picking on random *commenters* in the MRM only... wtf? Are you *Chicken*? Why don't you set your sights higher up and pick on me for a while?

.

Lol!

.

http://manboobz.blogspot.com/2010/10/quoteotd-david-futrelle-is-dancing.html

.

He's so cute!

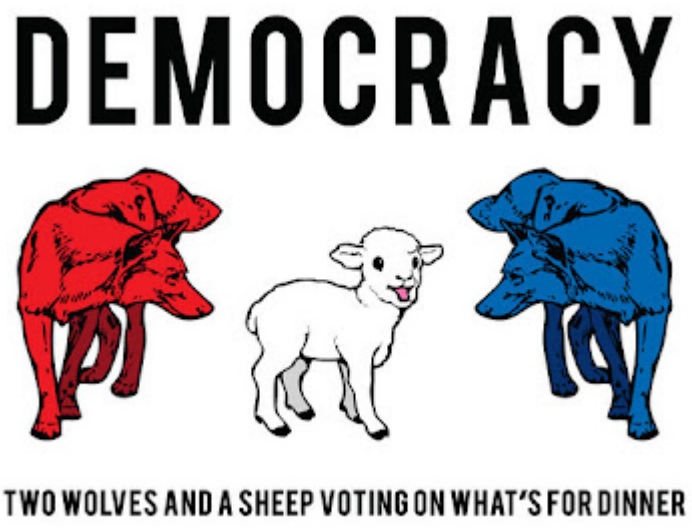
.

.

God! Nobody from the fembot camp can form a good debate nowadays! Best to stick to totalitarianism then!

The Women's Vote Question

. · 12 October 2010 · Archived copy · Original



.
[Do you believe women have the right] to vote?

Answer:

I'm not sure that a person who believes Somalia is in the Balkans should have a say in who represents us in foreign affairs.

I'm serious.

Furthermore, I don't believe that 51% of the people should have the ability to vote to take away the rights of the other 49%, but that is exactly the situation we find ourselves with in a system of Universal Democracy.

"Democracy is two wolves and a lamb voting on what to have for lunch. Liberty is a well-armed lamb contesting the vote." – Benjamin Franklin
.

.

I think that questions like “should X have the right to vote?” could be compared to a typical family:

Imagine four children and two parents.

Should everyone have an equal vote in this six person family?

Why or why not?

Aren’t they all equal human beings?

Why or why not?

I think most rational people would say the four children should not be allowed to “outvote” the two parents; yet, they still have the right to live in the family’s house and to sit at the family’s dinner table.

Don’t you agree?

Is there a situation where this should change? What if, say, the oldest two children go out and get jobs and start paying room and board?

Should that increase the “power” of their wishes?

Many people would say that it should, and I don’t disagree. But what if the two oldest children decide to “vote” to knock out all the walls in the basement so they have greater space to play floor hockey?

Should they have the “right” to do such a thing just because they have a vote?

I think most people would agree that just because the two older children now have a greater say, this in no way gives them the authority to break certain general rules.

And what if the two children who now pay room and board decide to “vote” that Mom and Dad should pool their monthly incomes with them and thus greatly increase the resources available to them? Should that be allowed? Why or why not?

Perhaps, the two children paying room and board might “vote” that Mom and Dad should purchase a second car for the kids to drive, or for an expensive swimming pool in the backyard. Should that be allowed? Why or why not?

I think most people would agree that low income people having the “right” to vote to take away the resources of high income people, and use those resources to benefit themselves (the low income people), is nothing more than legalized theft. Why should a low income person be entitled to steal the resources of the higher income person?

In the story of the Good Samaritan, he stopped along the way and *gave of his own resources* to help someone in need.

Would he have been a “Good” Samaritan if he had stopped you by gunpoint, stole your resources, and gave them to the needy? I think he would have been a Crap-Ass Samaritan. Don’t you?

And what if this Crap-Ass Samaritan ended up stealing so much of your resources that you no longer had enough left over to actually give anything of your own accord? I don’t think that is a good situation at all. Do you?

To answer the original question, *"[Do you believe women have the right] to vote?",* I don’t think that *anyone* should have the “right” to vote unless they can demonstrate they possess enough understanding of our country’s constitution and history, plus illustrate they have an adequate understanding of political science in addition to a basic general knowledge of both domestic and foreign affairs.

We make people take a test to ensure they are knowledgeable and responsible enough to drive a car. Don’t you think it would be equally wise to make people take a test before granting them the power to drive the country?

I do.

I also think we should be living in a country that adheres to the principles of a Constitutional Republic, which means that the people are equally responsible to a system of “impartial rule of law” and where no man or woman is above the law. And I think that the leaders of this Constitutional Republic should be decided by a *Limited* Democracy.

A Universal Democracy, however, is a really, really bad idea and never leads to a good end.

"It had been observed that a pure democracy if it were practicable would be the most perfect government. Experience had proved that no position is more false than this. The ancient democracies in which the people themselves deliberated never possessed one good feature of government. Their very character was tyranny; their figure deformity." – Alexander Hamilton, June 21, 1788

What most of the political correctoids fail to comprehend when they screech about “democracy” and women’s “right” to vote, is that our countries were not intended to have universal democracy – not for men or women. There are far too many people who believe Somalia is in the Balkans for that to have been a wise idea.

Even men did not have the vote for much longer than women. Oh sure, *some* men had the vote and held positions of power, but the vast majority did not. Most countries in the Western World began granting the “right” for landless men to vote during the mid-Nineteenth Century, anywhere from 50 to 60 years before it was granted to women.

Men certainly did not have the vote for “thousands of years” before women.

The rise of the philosophies of Socialism began in earnest during the time frame of the mid-Nineteenth Century to the early Twentieth Century. It was also during this time frame that our Western countries changed from adhering to the principles of a Constitutional Republic to those of a Universal Democracy.

"Democracy is the road to Socialism." – Karl Marx

Yes indeed, Mr. Marx.

And it is interesting to note that a fairly good spattering of the Suffragettes were deeply involved with the Socialist Movement. One naturally wonders then if their demonstrations for democracy had more to do with the advancement of Socialism than it did with the issues of “women’s rights.”

In fact, one might say that a wise person who wishes to condemn that women did not have the vote for the approximate half century when only men did, would do well to *at least* examine the arguments of those who opposed women’s suffrage before attempting to speak with authority on the subject. Don’t you agree?

Should one undertake such a task, one would soon find that many of those who were opposed to women’s suffrage took such a stance out of concern for preserving the nature of the state. They were concerned about the changing of the principles of a republic into the principles associated with a democracy, and what affect women’s nature would have on this.

You see, it has long been known that women tend to choose collective security over individualism and freedom. This was well known in the past and it is still well known today. Sure, sure. Some men will choose security over freedom as well, but in general women choose collective security while men choose individual freedom.

Have a look at who the majority of women vote for today as opposed to men. In the USA, women overwhelmingly support the Democrat Party and its socialist principles of bigger government while men tend to be the majority of supporters of the Republican Party, which theoretically stands for smaller government and more individual freedom.

In fact, here is a study titled Did Women’s Suffrage Change the Size and Scope of Government? -- by John R. Lott and Lawrence W. Kenny. It illustrates that since the advent of women’s suffrage in the early Twentieth Century, women have consistently voted for larger government and more Socialist policies.

Now, all political correctness aside, if it is shown that the women’s vote is slowly but surely changing our countries from places which enshrine the values of freedom into nations which do not allow for freedom, but rather enshrine the values of totalitarian Socialist government… do you think that people should have the right to discuss this phenomenon freely with out the shrill chirping of feminists and their mangina enablers in their ears?

I mean, you do believe in free speech, don’t you?

And oddly, free speech is actually a universal “right” which is laid forth in our constitutions while, curiously, the universal “right” to vote is not. Even a five year old has the right to free speech, but not the right to vote.

One might even go so far to suggest that a responsible citizen has a *duty* to point out that if we keep following down this road without creating some checks and balances, we soon will wind up with a form of government in which *none* of us has the ability to vote at all.

Political correctness coupled with intimidation from feminists and manginas does not change “facts,” and such people who believe that they have the “right” to vote for the destruction of the constitutions upon which our countries are founded, are in fact exercising a vote of treason.

People who would vote for treason, regardless of their sex, should not have the “right” to vote at all. Don’t you agree?

"Those who desire to give up freedom in order to gain security will not have, nor do they deserve, either one" ~Benjamin Franklin

Previous Index Next

MGTOW

“If it’s not right, Go Your Own Way!”

.....
..oooO.....
..(....).....
….\..(.....
…. _/.....
…….....Oooo..
…….....(....)…
……..)../....
.....(_/.....
.....

Further Reading:

Philalethes #11 – The End Results of Female Suffrage

Philalethes #18 – Opposed to Woman Suffrage?

Republic versus Democracy

The Balance of Power -- The Men's Tribune

How To End Domestic Abuse

. · 15 October 2010 · Archived copy · Original

"[Do you believe women have the right] to be free from domestic abuse?"

Answer:

Yes!

In fact, I think that we should strive to put an end to all forms of domestic abuse, and I don't think we should rest until domestic abuse is completely eradicated from our society.

I also think that domestic abuse should be removed from society not only in the terms of male on female violence, but also in regard to female on male violence.

I'll bet you think that I'm going to start quoting statistics illustrating that females are just as violent as males, don't you?

Come on, admit it!

Well, sorry to disappoint you, but I don't think that's the best way to end domestic abuse.

I believe the best way to "end" domestic abuse is to simply abolish the term "domestic abuse" from our language, from our mindset, and definitely from our courts.

I'm serious. Out of all the feminists who cry out to "end domestic violence," to all the holier than thou academics who study domestic abuse in an effort to "solve it," to the plethora of politicians who pledge to pass more laws to "prevent it," and yes, even to the multitudes of MRA's who demand to be "included as victims of it," have you ever heard of such a sound plan as mine?

I am the only one with a sure fired, guaranteed formula to actually end all forms of domestic violence!

Why, oh why am I paid so little?

Why do we have the term "domestic abuse" in the first place?

Weren't there already laws in place that protected us from violence before the feminists thought up the term "domestic violence?"

Living together in the same house does not somehow free one from impartial judgment by the law of the land. At least, I can't find the law which says that it does, or ever did.

Were there laws on the books that granted "spousal immunity" in regard to general assault and battery laws?

Could you legally murder your spouse before the term "domestic abuse" was concocted, or did homicide laws protect people regardless of their marital status?

If someone were to, say, threaten to "pound something into my thick skull," can I not go to the proper authorities,

report it, and ask for ask for a restraining order regardless of whether the person is in my immediate family or not?

Wasn't all of this covered already before the term "domestic abuse" became a household word at the behest of the feminists' socially redefining academic and legal juggernauts?

We can end "domestic abuse" completely by simply getting rid of the term itself and going back to allowing the law to protect us in the way it used to.

Abracadabra!

Poof!

Gone!

I'll send the government my bill.

And by golly, YES, I *will* accept that tenured position at the University of British Columbia!

Does anything better illustrate how sick we have become as a society than the phenomenon that we can no longer comprehend how to function without *begging* the government to impose more laws upon us?

Not only do we ask for less freedom, but we demand that problems be *completely* solved by passing more and more laws until every last aspect of the problem is gone.

Imagine a lobby group was formed to "end speeding" and they pledge to keep fighting until *every last speeder is removed from the roads.*

It starts off small, perhaps with a policy of "zero tolerance" for being even one mph over the limit and increasing the fines by 50% to hurt people in their jeans.

But, some people are *still* speeding.

What to do, what to do?

Well, let's give speeders points on their driver's license which will increase their insurance premiums!

"Zooooooommmmm!!!" The sound reverberates in a rubber-necker's ears.

"There out to be a law!" he exclaims, "Doooooo something!"

So, we pass a law that anyone caught speeding will have their car impounded for 6 months.

But still, *someone* will speed, *somewhere*.

I think you can see where this is going. In the end, there is absolutely no possible way to remove *every last speeder from the road…* except, that is, to make it illegal for anyone to drive a car, period. That is the only possible end to the equation.

And so it is. Transportation by automobile benefits mankind to an enormous degree, *but* there are certain negatives

we *must* accept that go along with the positives. If we want easy, fast mobility and cheap transportation of goods, we must also accept there will be a certain amount negatives that are unavoidable.

There will be speeders, there will be accidents, and there will be injuries and deaths.

And we must accept that there will be these negatives or we will not receive the positives.

This concept is all around us in nature. Mankind must not be as smart as he thought if he can't see what is all around him.

People who say they will not rest until the problem is completely solved are preaching totalitarianism and should be made to spend an afternoon in the stocks; letting some tomatoes smarten them up a few IQ points.

The world will *never* be perfect.

Only Marxists preach that they can create Heaven on Earth. And they preach it will be achieved by slavery to a totalitarian state.

Marxists are evil idiots.

Many feminists and academics are unabashed Marxists.

Have a look at how the Abuse Industry works with our children.

Instead of asking a hard working farmer and his wife of 40 years how they successfully raised eight law-abiding, successful children, we ask someone completely different for "expert" advice.

Who do we ask?

We ask an angry 45 year old lesbian with a Ph D in Whatchamacallit, who herself comes from a broken home. She has one 3 year old child which was spawned by Thomas the Turkey Baster.

These kinds of people are our "experts."

And, what do our “experts” recommend?

Parents should not be allowed to decide how to discipline their own children! *Some* parents have “over-disciplined” their children, and therefore no parent should be allowed to discipline their child with spanking.

That parents have successfully raised their children with the aid of physical discipline for thousands of years now becomes irrelevant to our academic gods. *Times are different now.* Yes, fine individuals like George Washington and Abraham Lincoln were spanked as children, but children were born with leather asses back in those days. Children born today are *different* from them. Can’t you tell? They now have three arms and green skin!

“Parents have been wrong for *thousands of years,"* cries our Sapphic guru, “and *some* parents have abused spanking to the point where it is physically abusive, therefore ***NO*** parents should be allowed to do it!”

It is much better to let a child learn that playing in traffic is dangerous by sitting the five year old down and explaining it to him. If discipline is needed, a “time out” is recommended, and ultimately, children need to figure out and learn these things on their own anyway. That Mack truck has a *natural* lesson it will teach your child, so what the hell do you parents think you are doing, giving your child a smack on his bottom? You Cretins!

You see, our “intellectuals” have manipulated our legal systems with a belief that it is better to have all children raised at 50% capacity, rather than to have 95% of children raised at 100% capacity, with the remaining 5% raised at 25%.

They believe they can prevent this:

By making everyone live in a Utopia that looks like this:

Our lesbian lecturer will tell us that this is for “the greater good,” but it becomes obvious that she is not an expert in

mathematics.

You see, 100% of the population at 50% capacity equals 50%.

But (95% of the population at 100%) plus (5% of the population at 25%) equals 96.25%.

A population operating at 96.25% capacity is greater than one operating at 50%.

Who's telling who about "the greater good?"

Everywhere you look in nature you will find this formula.

It's time for us to recognize that *laws can also be repealed!*

We already had legal mechanisms protecting us from violence. We didn't need to have a whole further myriad of never ending laws bringing the whole herd down to 50% capacity.

And we certainly don't need to lobby to be included within them, feeding the Utopian beast even more.

End the Abuse Industry NOW!

It's the only sure fired way to rid the world of Domestic Abuse.

"Heaven on Earth" is a nice fairytale theory. But in practice it becomes a Living Hell.

The Libellous David Futrelle

. · 16 October 2010 · Archived copy · Original

David Futrelle: Man of astounding intellect.

A Woman's Right to Choose

. · 18 October 2010 · Archived copy · Original

"[Do you believe women have the right] to bear children when they wish to?"

.

Answer:

I suspect this is a trick question that deals with abortion, and not actually women's *natural right* to bear children when they wish to. All females in the animal kingdom have the *natural right* to bear children, as I have already pointed out in a previous post.

Also, note that women are the ones who are in control. They choose to either abstain or get naked and spread their legs. They are the ones who know best when they are ovulating and thus are directly in control of "The Rhythm Method." They are the ones who have the pill, condoms, IUD's, spermicides, diaphragms, hysterectomies, the "morning after pill," and abortions at their disposal. After giving birth, they are the ones who can decide to keep the baby, put it up for adoption or anonymously abandon it at a hospital, police station or fire department without fear of legal repercussions.

That is fourteen choices a woman has regarding her "right to choose."

A man has only the choices of abstaining, condoms or vasectomy.

And yet, society whines relentlessly at the man for "getting her pregnant."

This is entirely absurd, and it would appear to anyone on the outside looking in that women are complaining of oppression because they are the ones with all the choices.

But, I digress. Let's get back to abortion.

I am sure that feminists will fast point out that 2/3 of the population supports abortion. But, as with almost everything that feminists say, they are only speaking in half truths.

What these types of abortion-support statistics are based on is that when surveyed, 1/3 of the population supports abortion-on-demand, 1/3 does not support abortion-on-demand but does support abortion in cases of incest, rape or when the mother's health is at risk, and the remaining 1/3 are opposed to all kinds of abortion.

Feminists are quite aware that most uninformed people naturally choose cohesion to the larger group and that is why they dishonestly skew these statistics to make it appear that most of the population supports abortion. Everybody wants to be a "moderate" who is in agreement with the majority. It is a well known psychological phenomenon, sometimes even used in brainwashing techniques, and feminists manipulate it ruthlessly.

When one examines things a little closer though, it becomes apparent that abortions performed on victims of rape and incest, or those performed when the mother's health is at risk; make up such a miniscule percentage of the total amount of abortions performed that it is *far* more accurate to say that 2/3 of population are opposed to the majority of abortions – that being, abortion as a means of birth control.

What a sneaky little trick that our "esteemed academics" have played on us with this wordplay. Stalin, Hitler and Goebbels applaud them heartily from the depths of hell.

But, this whole argument gets even more absurd than it would first appear, precisely *because* feminists have successfully fought for the "right to choose."

In a previous article, I pointed out that children are the product of *woman's* sexuality, which she owns 100%. It *used* to be that upon marriage; a woman *sold* her sexuality to a man and took *his* surplus labour as payment for it. Thus, the children of a *marriage* used to be considered the *husband's* children, while children born *out-of-wedlock* were considered to be the *woman's* property.

In times past, it was often considered the "morally right thing for a man to do" to marry a woman who got *herself* pregnant by irresponsibly using *her* sexuality out of wedlock. Society benefited from this socially manipulated moral pressure, as it has always been known that fatherless children were detrimental to society, thus the negative connotations associated with the word "bastard." But, under *no* circumstances was a man legally *obligated* to "give the child his name," to take ownership of the woman's sexuality through marriage, and thus, make *her* child into his own.

But we live in different times today than we did in the past. We now have a plethora of birth control methods that have been made available to women. (Not men. Aside from a permanent vasectomy, men's birth control methods have not changed much at all). And, to top it all off, *if a woman fails to use* ***all*** *of the various birth control methods available to her,* she is still offered the ultimate *choice* to kill the baby via abortion. And, let's make no mistake about it; it is ***HER CHOICE,*** not the man's, and not anyone else's. Is this not the core of the feminist mantra, *"A Woman's Right to* ***CHOOSE****"?* Is not this "right to choose" enshrined in the laws of almost every Western nation?

So, I want to put a little comparison into your head to fully illustrate how absurd this argument has become.

Imagine Dick and Jane, two platonic friends, are walking down the street together and they pass a car dealership, Fembot Motors. They stop and admire a shiny new Corvette together. They both get a twinkle in their eye and smile as they see the other has the same thought: "Let's take this car for a test drive!"

So, Dick and Jane roar out of the dealership in the Corvette. First Jane drives the car, then they switch positions and Dick drives it home. Ah, the joy of driving! Their hearts pound with excitement. The exhilaration of controlling a powerful beast! But, they never had any intention of actually "buying" the Corvette. They are just joyriding.

Upon returning to the dealership, they toss the keys back to the salesman, say “thanks,” and carry on walking down the road together without a care in the world.

But, alas, a month later Jane calls up Dick and informs him that she returned to the dealership after their test drive and purchased the Corvette, signing a 4 year lease with payments of $1,300 a month. Now she wants to know if he will “man up” and help her make the payments on it, because after all, they went on the original test drive together. Jane claims that he planted the seeds of desire into her head which caused her to choose to purchase the Corvette.

Of course, Dick tells her to get bent. She *chose* to purchase the car of her own free will and he is not responsible for *her choices.*

Jane does not allow things to just quietly go away and take responsibility for *her choices,* however. No indeed! In fact, she gets herself a lawyer and Dick is served a summons to appear in court where Jane is bringing a lawsuit against Dick, to force him to pay for *her* new Corvette.

Dick goes to court as he is required to, and walks out completely dumbfounded by the judge’s decision:

Because Dick went on the original test drive with Jane, the judge declares that Dick is liable to pay “damages” to Jane. After all, Dick planted the seeds of desire in Jane’s head by agreeing to go on a test drive with her. Therefore, the court declares that Dick is responsible for Jane’s *choice* to purchase the car.

Since Jane is the one who has the responsibilities of driving the car, washing the car, and providing a parking space in the driveway for the car, Judge MacKinnon rules that it’s only fair that Dick contributes his share to the upkeep of the Corvette: Dick must make the $1,300/mo lease payments, in addition to paying for the insurance, gas and maintenance to operate the car.

Dick requests of the judge that he be given the right to drive the Corvette himself from time to time, but Judge MacKinnon rules against Dick’s request because *it is not his car, and therefore he has no "rights" to it!*

You can see why being a Dick is not a good thing to be.

But, is this not the *exact* situation we are now presented with since “women have the right to *choose?"*

Most places have laws on the books called “Fetal Murder Laws.” Take states like California or Texas, for example. Fetal Murder is considered to be a Capital Crime, punishable as if the fetus were a living, breathing human being.

Killing a fetus in these states is considered equal to *murdering* a human being.

But, how come then, a woman and her doctor are not charged with murder in the event of an abortion?

It is because of the *woman's right to choose*, which even supercedes murder laws!

And, let’s just clear this up a little. It is *not* that the woman is choosing whether she wants to have a fertilized egg inside her or not. She has already passed up on choosing *several* safe and easy birth control methods before she got to the Right to Choose phase.

What a woman is “choosing” is whether what is inside of her is a human life to be honoured and revered, or just a useless piece of tissue to be flushed down the toilet.

If she *chooses* that the fetus is just a useless piece of tissue instead of human life, then the state fully backs her up and says the fetus is not alive, and therefore she cannot be guilty of murder when she rids herself of it.

But, if she *chooses* that the fetus is to be a baby, then the state backs her up and says that if someone causes her fetus to miscarry, that person is guilty of homicide – of taking a human life.

So you see, while a woman may have a fertilized egg inside of her as a result using her sexuality with a man, the "right to choose" dictates that it is *nothing* until the woman chooses, of her own free will, whether or not she wants "this thing" to be a baby or disposable garbage.

And, God forbid that she loses that right to choose. Why, that is enshrined as a woman's civil right, and to deny her this *choice* is to oppress her! (Mother Nature is a really oppressive bitch).

But, it is clear that if a woman has "a right to choose," then she does not actually become pregnant *until* ***after*** *conception*. She becomes pregnant only when she chooses to of her own free will.

So, how on earth can feminists and the corrupt courts possibly demand that a man should be legally and financially responsible for *her* choice?

If she "chooses" for it to be a human life and have a baby, then it is absolutely no different than if she chose to go into a fertility clinic and become pregnant through artificial insemination. And, in such situations, she is responsible for the consequences of her choice, including financial responsibility. (Although, the corrupt courts have been changing this too, and the move is on to make anonymous sperm donors financially liable for *her* offspring as well.)

A man should only be responsible for the child if he himself has chosen to be so of his own free will. And, that choice usually comes through marriage.

Are women to be treated as children in our society? Why don't feminists demand an end to this insulting farce and declare that women are independent and can handle responsibility for their own *choices?* Why do they insist that others should pay for their choices?

"Rights without responsibilities" is the state of a child.

"Responsibilities without rights" is the state of a slave.

"Rights with responsibilities for one's own actions" is the state of a full fledged citizen; a full "person" under the law.

Why do feminists keep demanding that women be treated like children and men like slaves?

Why don't women stand up and declare their equality by refusing to be coddled as though they are toddlers who cannot be held responsible for their own choices?

Why are women granted the right to be "dead-beat citizens?"

It's time to choose to "woman up," ladies.

What's taking you so long to *choose* to grow up?

Read more about this subject on Angry Harry's site:

Rant Against the CSA

Why Should a Man Bear Responsibility for a Woman Who Decides to Have a Baby?

A Warning for America from South Africa

. · 21 October 2010 · Archived copy · Original

http://www.manews.org/0105sawarning.html

(Gemma Meyer is the pseudonym of a South African journalist. She and her husband, a former conservative member of parliament, still reside in South Africa.)

People used to say that South Africa was 20 years behind the rest of the Western world. Television, for example, came late to South Africa (but so did pornography and the gay rights movement).

Today, however, South Africa may be the grim model of the future Western world, for events in America reveal trends chillingly similar to those that destroyed our country.

America's structures are Western. Your Congress, your lobbying groups, your free speech, and the way ordinary Americans either get involved or ignore politics are peculiarly Western, not the way most of the world operates. But the fact that only about a third of Americans deem it important to vote is horrifying in light of how close you are to losing your Western character.

Writing letters to the press, manning stands at county fairs, hosting fund-raising dinners, attending rallies, setting up conferences, writing your Congressman - that is what you know, and what you are comfortable with. Those are the political methods you've created for yourselves to keep your country on track and to ensure political accountability.

But woe to you if - or more likely, when - the rules change. White Americans may soon find themselves unable or unwilling to stand up to challenge the new political methods that will be the inevitable result of the ethnic metamorphosis now taking place in America. Unable to cope with the new rules of the game - violence, mob riots, intimidation through accusations of racism, demands for proportionality based on racial numbers, and all the other social and political weapons used by the have-nots to bludgeon treasure and power from the haves - Americans, like others before them, will no doubt cave in. They will compromise away their independence and ultimately their way of life.

That is exactly what happened in South Africa. I know, because I was there and I saw it happen.

Faced with revolution in the streets, strikes, civil unrest and the sheer terror and murder practiced by Nelson Mandela's African National Congress (ANC), the white government simply capitulated in order to achieve "peace."

Westerners need peace. They need order and stability. They are builders and planners. But what we got was the peace of the grave for our society.

The Third World is different - different peoples with different pasts and different cultures. Yet Westerners continue to mistake the psychology of the Third World and its peoples. Sierra Leone and Zimbabwe are perfect examples of those mistakes. Sierra Leone is in perpetual civil war, and Zimbabwe - once the thriving, stable Rhodesia - is looting the very people (the white men) who feed the country. Yet Westerners do not admit that the same kind of savagery could come to America when enough immigrants of the right type assert themselves. The fact is, Americans are sitting ducks for Third World exploitation of the Western conscience of compassion.

Those in the West who forced South Africa to surrender to the ANC and its leaders did not consider Africa to be the dangerous, corrupt, and savage place it is now in Zimbabwe and South Africa. Those Western politicians now

have a similar problem looming on their own doorsteps: the demand for power and treasure from the non-Western peoples inside the realm.

It is already too late for South Africa, but not for America if enough people strengthen their spine and take on the race terrorists, the armies of the "politically correct" and, most dangerous of all, the craven politicians who believe "compassionate conservatism" will buy them a few more votes, a few more days of peace.

White South Africans, you should remember, have been in that part of Africa for the same amount of time whites have inhabited North America; yet ultimately South Africans voted for their own suicide. We are not so very different from you.

We lost our country through skillful propaganda, pressure from abroad (not least from the U.S.A.), unrelenting charges of "oppression" and "racism," and the shrewd assessment by African tyrants that the white man has many Achilles' heels, the most significant of which are his compassion, his belief in the "equality of man," and his "love your neighbor" philosophy - none of which are part of the Third World's history.

The mainline churches played a big role in the demise of Western influence throughout Africa, too; especially in South Africa. Today's tyrants were yesterday's mission-school proteges. Many dictators in Africa were men of the cloth. They knew their clerical collars would deflect criticism and obfuscate their real aims, which had nothing whatever to do with the "brotherhood of man."

Other tyrants, like the infamous Idi Amin, were trained and schooled by the whites themselves, at Oxford, Cambridge, and Harvard. After receiving the best from the West, they unleashed a resentful bloodlust against their benefactors.

From what I have seen and read thus far, I fear Americans will capitulate just as we did. Americans are, generally, a soft lot. They don't want to quarrel or obstruct the claims of those who believe they were wronged. They like peace and quiet, and they want to compromise and be nice.

A television program that aired in South Africa showed a town meeting somewhere in Southern California where people met to complain about falling standards in the schools. Whites who politely spoke at the meeting clearly resented the influx of Mexican immigrants into their community. When a handful of Chicanos at the back of the hall shouted and waved their hands at them, the whites simply shrunk back into their seats rather than tell the noisemakers to shut up. They didn't want to quarrel.

In America, the courts are still the final arbiters of society's laws. But what will happen when your future majority refuses to abide by court rulings - as in Zimbabwe. What will happen when the new majority says the judges are racists, and that they refuse to acknowledge "white man's justice"? What will happen when the courts are filled with their people, or their sympathizers? In California, Proposition 187 has already been overturned.

What will you do when the future non-white majority decides to change the names of streets and cities? What will you do when they no longer want to use money that carries the portraits of old, dead white "racists" and slave owners? Will you cave in, like you did on flying the Confederate flag? What about the national anthem? Your official language?

Don't laugh. When the "majority" took over in South Africa, the first targets were our national symbols.

In another generation, America may well face what Africa is now experiencing - invasions of private land by the "have-nots;" the decline in health care quality; roads and buildings in disrepair; the banishment of your history from

the education of the young; the revolutionization of your justice system.

In South Africa today, only 9 percent of murderers end up in jail. Court dockets are regularly purchased and simply disappear. Magistrates can be bribed as can the prison authorities, making escapes commonplace. Vehicle and airplane licenses are regularly purchased, and forged school and university certificates are routine.

What would you think of the ritual slaughter of animals in your neighbor's backyard? How do you clean up the blood and entrails that litter your suburban streets? How do you feel about the practice of witchcraft, in which the parts of young girls and boys are needed for "medicinal" purposes? How do you react to the burning of witches?

Don't laugh. All that is quite common in South Africa today.

Don't imagine that government officials caught with their fingers in the till will be punished. Excuses - like the need to overcome generations of white racism - will be found to exonerate the guilty.

In fact, known criminals will be voted into office because of a racial solidarity among the majority that doesn't exist among the whites. When Ian Smith of the old Rhodesia tried to stand up to the world, white South African politicians were among the Westerners pressuring him to surrender.

When Robert Mugabe of Zimbabwe murders his political opponents, ignores unfavorable court decisions, terrorizes the population and siphons off millions from the state treasury for himself and his friends, South Africa's new President Thabo Mbeki holds his hand and declares his support. That just happened a few weeks ago.

Your tax dollars will go to those who don't earn and don't pay. In South Africa, organizations that used to have access to state funds such as old age homes, the arts, and veterans' services, are simply abandoned.

What will happen is that Western structures in America will be either destroyed from without, or transformed from within, used to suit the goals of the new rulers. And they will reign either through terror, as in Zimbabwe today, or exert other corrupt pressures to obtain, or buy votes. Once power is in the hands of aliens, don't expect loyalty or devotion to principle from those whose jobs are at stake. One of the most surprising and tragic components of the disaster in South Africa is how many previously anti-ANC whites simply moved to the other side.

Once you lose social, cultural, and political dominance, there is no getting it back again.

Unfortunately, your habits and values work against you. You cannot fight terror and street mobs with letters to your Congressmen. You cannot fight accusations of racism with prayer meetings. You cannot appeal to the goodness of your fellow man when the fellow man despises you for your weaknesses and hacks off the arms and legs of his political opponents.

To survive, Americans must never lose the power they now enjoy to people from alien cultures. Above all, don't put yourselves to the test of fighting only when your backs are against the wall. You will probably fail.

Millions around the world want your good life. But make no mistake: They care not for the high-minded ideals of Thomas Jefferson and George Washington, and your Constitution. What they want are your posessions, your power, and your status.

And they already know that their allies among you, the "human rights activists," the skillful lawyers and the left-wing politicians will fight for them, and not for you. They will exploit your compassion and your Christian charity, and your good will. They have studied you, Mr. and Mrs. America, and they know your weaknesses well. They

know what to do.

Do you?

(This article first appeared in the August 2000 edition of Middle American News. It is reprinted here in response to numerous requests.)

A Sexist Commenter Sets Me Straight

. · 24 October 2010 · Archived copy · Original

Straight out of Gender Stooges 101A, this fembot gives me an education! How many errors can you spot in the following drivel?

Anonymous Said:

"Women have cleaned up the mess left by male violence historically by doing auxillary work and caring to the violent men who participated in wars. Aside from dealing with war's aftermath, women have suffered twofold as victims. War is an institution by and for men, with women and children as readily available targets. Everything in this patriarchy is in the best interests of men, including war, which is a male decision. This is because men generally are violent, competitive, power hungry, and have an obsessive need to control. Women generally do not share these traits. Women and their children have also died in greater numbers as victims of wars than men ever have. Not to mention those who are raped and maimed as civilian victims. I'm glad that feminism gives women some leverage against violent male insanity. This is why we NEED feminism."

.

.

Women have cleaned up the mess left by male violence historically by doing auxillary work and caring to the violent men who participated in wars.

Yes indeed. Certainly all of those bridges and buildings that were brought to rubble were rebuilt by the female workforce. Btw, those "violent men who participated in wars" were told that if they didn't get violent and participate, they would face the certain death of a firing squad. Rushing headlong into a volley of enemy bullets gave them a better chance of survival.

Aside from dealing with war's aftermath, women have suffered twofold as victims.

Of course, men didn't have to deal with war's aftermath, because they all retired to their drawing rooms for a cigar and a port while the female workforce went about rebuilding those bridges. I'm searching for the "twofold" explanation, but I can't see it. Ah, don't worry, Princess, mathematics is an institution set up by men, for the benefit of men. We didn't ever expect you to understand one plus one, and especially not to benefit from it.

War is an institution by and for men, with women and children as readily available targets.

Oh, *war* is the institution by and for men. That explains the white feather campaign during World War One, where women shamed men into joining the war by giving them a white feather to indicate they thought the man was a coward for not killing and maiming other men. Of course, once these men joined up with the army, their commanding officer's first order was to seek out women and children and shoot them dead. This makes sense, because the women and children were unarmed and couldn't shoot back. It was much safer to specialize in woman and children killing while in the army. Yup, the 101st Women and Children Killers Brigade was the unit where my grandpa served.

Everything in this patriarchy is in the best interests of men, including war, which is a male decision.

Yes indeed. Men working to provide food and shelter for their wives and children was in the primary interest of the man... of course, without all of those mouths to feed, the man would have suffered and died. Lol! Patriarchy is set up for the benefit of women and children, you dope, not the other way around. Patriarchy was set up to force men to be slave workers for their families, who could not survive on their own. Or maybe it was no problem at all for an 8 month pregnant woman with 3 toddlers in tow to plow the field with oxen and plant the corn?

War is in the best interest of men? How so? Because it is cheaper to buy shoes after one of your legs has been blown off? Because the rent is cheaper 6 feet under? Because men love having bullets zinging all around them rather than sitting on the front porch with a cold beer, back at their homes, while watching the womenfolk plough the fields?

And, actually, war is more of a female decision than a male one. Back in the days of the suffragettes, their common cry was, "If women had the vote, there would be no more wars." Well, women now have the vote, and demographically there are more women than men, so women also have the majority of votes (they also vote more)... and who continually votes in the leaders who send men to their deaths in needless wars? Why, the majority of voters, that's who! In fact, after 9/11, women were in as much support of going to war as men... the difference is, though, that the men who supported it also knew, deep down, that they might be called upon to get shot at on the front-lines while the women who supported it knew, deep down, that at the very worst, they would only be called upon to do the safer "auxilliary work" to make up for the shortfall of labour caused by the men who were dying for the extreme benefits of, well, dying.

This is because men generally are violent, competitive, power hungry, and have an obsessive need to control. Women generally do not share these traits.

Holy sexism, batshit insane girl! But I accept your insanity because women generally blame men for everything and take no responsiblities for themselves. One thing where men and women are not equal is the realm of sin, apparently. Women good, men bad. Lol! Women are quite violent, and are responsible for the majority of child abuse. They also instigate and perpetrate an equal amount of DV against their partners. But, what is really amazing, is how DV between lesbian couples skyrockets through the roof, higher than in any other demographic on earth. But, don't worry, I am sure you lesbo fembots will soon figure out a way to blame men for female on female violence too.

Men are generally competitive, while women are not*? You go, grrrrl*! Women are in complete competition with men on every level of society, thanks to psychotic feminism, and they revel in it like children in a playground. Women are even trying to be better men than men are. Who is calling who competitive, you sexist piglet.

Power hungry? *Feminism is all about grabbing power and making it female only.* Lol! Hey, have you ever heard of Hillary Clinton? Now there is one power hungry gringa, eh? She also threatened to obliterate Iran during her campaign... but, of course, only after the Pentagon would develop a bomb that could only kill the worthless men, while leaving the women and children completely unharmed. Surely Hillary didn't mean she would blow all the little Iranian women and children to bits along with the men. A woman would never be capable of such horrific things. Hillary must be a man in drag.

Obsessive need to control? Lol! You have obviously never been married to a woman, nor dated one, nor even spoken to one.

Btw, the most sexist notion that exists in our society is that only one gender is capable of sexism. .
Women and children have also died in greater numbers as victims of wars than men ever have. Not to mention those who are raped and maimed as civilians.

First off, are women children? If they are not, then why do women keep saying "women and children?" Does this not imply that women are on the same level as children? How about women start standing up and as women alone, rather than insinuating they are deserving of the unearned sympathy that is usually afforded only to children who don't know any better.

This is a silly ploy used all the time to get extra sympathy for women, where none is deserved.

For example: "A bomb went off in a downtown square today, killing 42 people. The majority of the victims were women and children," could also just as easily (and accurately) be said as: "A bomb went off in a downtown square today, killing 42 people**. The majority of the victims were men and children**."

But, I guess only men want to be thought of as adults. Fine, we shall treat women like children if they keep insisting they are children.

Now, as to your ludicrous claim that women and children have died in greater numbers as victims of war than men ever have... I am just speechless that women come in models as incredibly stupid as you! Do you even think before your lips start flapping?

Yes indeed, all of those white crosses at Normandy are for the men who were victims of war... but, there is a field three times larger than that just down the lane where all the women and children are buried... but, because women and children are completely worthless to men, they were buried in mass, unmarked graves.

How fucking stupid can you get?

This is what happens when "feminist math" rules the day.

You, madam, are the very reason that society was likely so misogynist in the past. With logic like yours, mixed in with the rampant and angry sexism typical of most women, allowing people like you to have any involvement in running a society most likely was so poisonous to said society, that the concept was just abolished.

I hope that if the need ever arises again for men to take up arms to defend their nation, they all remember the ungrateful little bitches like this douchebag commenter, and go fishing instead. Let these strong powerful women defend themselves, because quite frankly, I wouldn't risk one hair on my head to defend such ignorant, malicious and spiteful bitches, nor the society that condones this sickening hatred of men.

Society needs feminism about as much as it needs the opinions of dopes like this woman.

"Women have always been the *primary* victims of war. Women lose their husbands, their fathers, their sons in combat." -- Hillary Clinton

.

It is true that women are lazy, **but they are always ready to do harm. An evil woman just gets worse, becoming even more evil and wicked. It would take far too long for me to tell you everything about them, so for brevity's sake I shan't. Woman is not wise in this respect, for in her eagerness to do harm she only brings about her own ruin. According to the law, as I understand it, woman is not rational, nor does her love reside deep in her heart, but is there on her gaze for everyone to see. She entrusts her honour openly to her eyes, yet they can't help but fail to protect it, since folly animates her gaze. With all her words, her chatter, and her talk, she could break a heart of glass; all her actions are stupid and foolish. Woman can do no good, indeed, goodness is destroyed and obliterated by her. Many a war is begun by women and many a murder committed throughout the world; castles are burned and ransacked and the poor made destitute. As every man and woman knows, there isn't one war in a thousand that isn't started by a woman and by her sowing of discord. She is the mother of all calamities; all evil and all madness stem from her. Her sting is more venomous than a snake's; there isn't anyone who has anything to do with her who doesn't live to regret it.**

Further Reading:

Bonecrker #12 – The Most Feminacentrist Statement of the Twentieth Century

Man Superior to Woman - Chapter Four

Women's Studies 101A, Winter Semester

. · 27 October 2010 · Archived copy · Original

In this class, we will see how women have been sheep who have bought into the Marxist anti-society philosophy hook, line and sinker. Naively, women have believed that feminism was about women's rights and giving them greater equality. Shamefully, feminism hid this vile filth from society by manipulating academia, media & government.

.

"The first class opposition that appears in history coincides with the development of the antagonism between man and woman in monogamous marriage, and the first class oppression coincides with that of the female sex by the male." -- Frederick Engels, The Origins of the Family, Private Property and the State

.

"Destroy the family and you destroy society." -- V.I. Lenin

.

. **"The nuclear family must be destroyed, and people must find better ways of living together. ...Whatever its ultimate meaning, the break-up of families now is an objectively revolutionary process. ...Families have supported oppression by separating people into small, isolated units, unable to join together to fight for common interests."** -- Linda Gordon, Function of the Family, WOMEN: A Journal of Liberation, Fall, 1969

.

. "We can't destroy the inequities between men and women until we destroy marriage." -- Robin Morgan, Sisterhood is Powerful, 1970, p.537

.

. "Marriage has existed for the benefit of men; and has been a legally sanctioned method of control over women... ***We must work to destroy it.*** **The end of the institution of marriage is a necessary condition for the liberation of women. Therefore it is important for us to encourage women to leave their husbands and not to live individually with men."** -- The Declaration of Feminism, November 1971

.

. "No woman should be authorized to stay at home and raise her children. Society should be totally different. ***Women should not have that choice,*** **precisely because if there is such a choice, too many women will make that one."** -- Simone de Beauvoir, "Sex, Society, and the Female Dilemma" Saturday Review, June 14, 1975, p.18

.

. "Women, like men, should not have to bear children... The destruction of the biological family, never envisioned by Freud, will allow the emergence of new women and men, *different from any people who have previously existed."* -- Alison Jagger - Political Philosophies of Women's Liberation: Feminism and Philosophy (Totowa, NJ: Littlefield, Adams & Co. 1977)

.

. "If even 10 percent of American women remain full-time homemakers, this will reinforce traditional views of what women ought to do and encourage other women to become full-time homemakers at least while their children are young... *This means that no matter how any individual feminist might feel about childcare and housework,* the movement as a whole [has] reasons to discourage full-time homemaking." -- Jane J. Mansbridge, Why We Lost the ERA, p.100

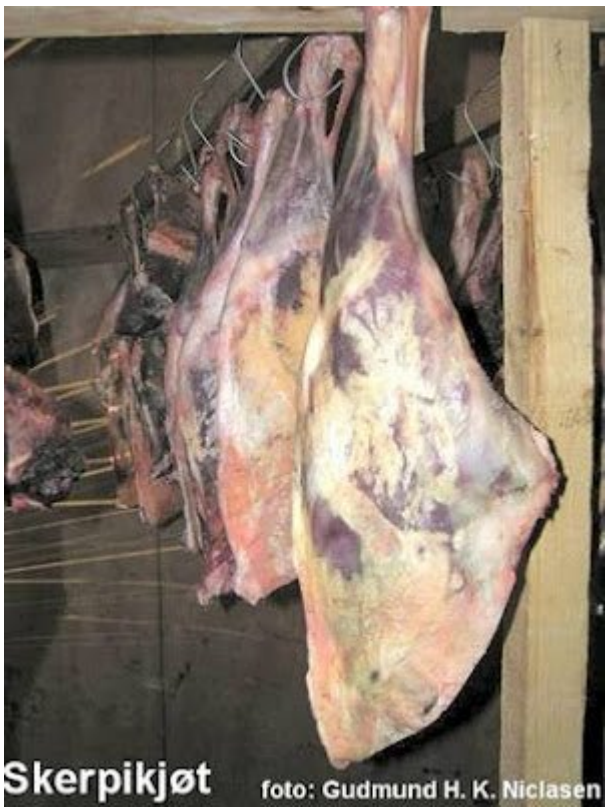
.

. **"The care of children ...is infinitely better left to the best trained practitioners of both sexes who have chosen it as a vocation... [This]** ***would further undermine family structure*** **while contributing to the freedom of women."** -- Kate Millet, Sexual Politics 178-179

.

. "In order to raise children with equality, ***we must take them away from families*** **and communally raise them."** -- Dr. Mary Jo Bane, feminist and assistant professor of education at Wellesley College and associate director of the school's Center for Research on Woman

.



. **"It takes a village to raise a child."** -- Hillary Clinton

.

. ***"Mmmm...Roasted Useful Idiot for Dinner!"*** -- Rob Fedders, No Ma'am Blog, 2007

.

Question: What are permanently unmarried women, whose illegitimate children have been taken from them to be raised by the state, good for anyway?

.

Answer: Work. Pay Taxes. Go Home. Feed Cats. Repeat until death.

Previous Index Next

MGTOW

“If it’s not right, Go Your Own Way!”

.....

..oooO.....

..(....).....
….\..(.....
…. _/.....

……....Oooo..
……....(....)…
……..)../....
.....(_/.....

.....

Related:

Feminists are Cat Lovers

The Encyclopedia Marxo-feminist

.

Marxist Feminism's Ruined Lives -- by Mallory Millet (Sister of famed feminist, Kate Millet)

.

In the Beginning...

. · 2 November 2010 · Archived copy · Original

No-one really knows how it was in the beginning. We have only speculation and theories. The Truth will likely never be known. Whether we find the Truth or not, has very little bearing on the nature of that Truth itself, for it exists unto itself. It exists completely separate from whether we discover it, or whether we even have the capabilities to find it, and so on.

Absolute Truth exists. It does not need us. We serve it, not the other way around. The Absolute Truth is the beginning and the end. It is never changing. It is what it is. It was here before us, and it will be here after us.

Was there evolution? Was there creation? Was the Genesis story of the Bible a mix of evolution and creation? There are obvious relationships between the stories of the Pentateuch (the first five books of the Bible) and the religions, stories, myths and legends found in cultures outside of Judeo-Christianity. Gilgamesh is one such example. There is little doubt that the Epic of Gilgamesh and the story of Noah in Genesis 6 are talking of the exact same event – “the Flood”, and some guy floating around with a boat full of animals. The found transcripts of the Epic of Gilgamesh predate the supposed Pentateuch author, Moses (circa 1300BC), by several centuries and it’s believed that stories of Gilgamesh himself predated the writings of him quite significantly, through the oral tradition and so on. There was a real world wide flood too. 12,000 years ago, the Pleistocene Ice age ended, the glaciers melted and ran into the oceans, causing them to rise significantly (some 400ft, I believe). All of those continental shelves… well; they were not underwater during the Pleistocene. In fact, whatever humans there were probably lived on those shelves, as they were nearest to the ocean, where humans choose to live in the largest numbers even today.

I’ve heard of many interesting theories about those days. One that’s intriguing is that since both Neanderthal and Cro-Magnon existed on earth for a period together, that perhaps Homo-Sapiens are the hybrid result of Neanderthals and Cro-Magnons interbreeding. Some speculate that this may have been the original sin. Or maybe not. We will never know, but there is an answer – an absolute one that is the Truth – and it doesn’t need nor even care whether we figure it out – it exists on a completely separate plane than us.

But, whether Evolution or Creationism; whether Neanderthals bumped uglies with Cro-Magnons; whether merely evolutionary psychology, or alien technology enhancing us with some strands of superior DNA, there is something about the story of Adam and Eve in the Garden of Eden and the fall of mankind which deals directly with the Absolute Truth and its counterpart, the Relative Truth.

Genesis 3 (New International Version)

The Fall of Man

1 Now the serpent was more crafty than any of the wild animals the LORD God had made. He said to the woman, “Did God really say, ‘You must not eat from any tree in the garden’?” 2 The woman said to the serpent, “We may eat fruit from the trees in the garden, 3 but God did say, ‘You must not eat fruit from the tree that is in the middle of the garden, and you must not touch it, or you will die.’ “

4 “You will not surely die,” the serpent said to the woman. 5 “For God knows that when you eat of it your eyes will be opened, and you will be like God, knowing good and evil.”

6 When the woman saw that the fruit of the tree was good for food and pleasing to the eye, and also desirable for gaining wisdom, she took some and ate it. She also gave some to her husband, who was with her, and he ate it. 7 Then the eyes of both of them were opened, and they realized they were naked; so they sewed fig leaves together and made coverings for themselves.

8 Then the man and his wife heard the sound of the LORD God as he was walking in the garden in the cool of the day, and they hid from the LORD God among the trees of the garden. 9 But the LORD God called to the man, “Where are you?”

10 He answered, “I heard you in the garden, and I was afraid because I was naked; so I hid.”

11 And he said, “Who told you that you were naked? Have you eaten from the tree that I commanded you not to eat from?”

12 The man said, “The woman you put here with me—she gave me some fruit from the tree, and I ate it.”

13 Then the LORD God said to the woman, “What is this you have done?” The woman said, “The serpent deceived me, and I ate.”

14 So the LORD God said to the serpent, “Because you have done this, “Cursed are you above all the livestock and all the wild animals! You will crawl on your belly and you will eat dust all the days of your life.

15 And I will put enmity between you and the woman, and between your offspring [a] and hers; he will crush [b] your head, and you will strike his heel.”

16 To the woman he said, “I will greatly increase your pains in childbearing; with pain you will give birth to children. Your desire will be for your husband, and he will rule over you.”

17 To Adam he said, “**Because you listened to your wife** and ate from the tree about which I commanded you, ‘You must not eat of it,’ “Cursed is the ground because of you; through painful toil you will eat of it all the days of your life.

18 It will produce thorns and thistles for you, and you will eat the plants of the field.

19 By the sweat of your brow you will eat your food until you return to the ground, since from it you were taken; for dust you are and to dust you will return.”

20 Adam [c] named his wife Eve, [d] because she would become the mother of all the living.

21 The LORD God made garments of skin for Adam and his wife and clothed them.

22 And the LORD God said, “The man has now become like one of us, knowing good and evil. He must not be allowed to reach out his hand and take also from the tree of life and eat, and live forever.” 23 So the LORD God banished him from the Garden of Eden to work the ground from which he had been taken. 24 After he drove the man out, he placed on the east side [e] of the Garden of Eden cherubim and a flaming sword flashing back and forth to guard the way to the tree of life.

Footnotes:

a Genesis 3:15 Or seed
b Genesis 3:15 Or strike
c Genesis 3:20 Or The man
d Genesis 3:20 Eve probably means living .
e Genesis 3:24 Or placed in front

Adam and Eve by Johann Ramboux

The Absolute Truth is God, of course. He is the beginning and the end. He always was and he always will be. He is who He is and does not exist in relation to our plane of existence, but rather, separately from it.

Who then, is the Relative Truth?

Could it be… could it be… Satan?

.

Is “the original sin” the act of allowing our brains to place the Relative Truth before the Absolute Truth?

.

Is this not how Eve was tempted by Satan? Did Satan really lie to Eve, or did he take the Absolute Truth and merely manipulate it? Did he not create Relative Truths to convince Eve to do that which went against the Absolute Truth? His first question, was a sneaky trick question (Did God really say you must not eat from any tree in the garden?) And after that, he did not lie, he manipulated the Truth. Did they surely die (no, not right then, and they were offered a chance at eternal life). Did they become like God and know good & evil? Yes… and what did Eve do? She used her mind to justify that certain truths about the fruit were more important in order to enable her to over-ride the Absolute Truth. (It was good for food, pleasing to the eye, and desireable for gaining knowledge).

Is this when man “evolved” out of being a mere animal? Is this when man became man? Our brain is our biggest tool – but, it can also be self-destructive. Our brain is “our tool.” It is to man what the ability to fly is to birds, what fins and gills are to fish. It is “our tool of survival.” Is our superior brain the result of Neanderthals and Cro-Magnons shacking up for the winter in the same cave? Man became “man” when his brain either evolved, or was granted, the ability of reason and the free will to choose. That’s what makes us different than animals. We have a brain which can choose. Animals do not. Animals only do what is in their nature and therefore when animals kill or steal, they are not sinning. They have no free will and are merely following their natures.

A distinct characteristic of Judeo-Christianity is that it is monotheistic.

If Judeo-Christianity is monotheistic, and God is the Absolute Truth, then monotheism is also the belief in one truth.

Well, that is perhaps a little simplistic, isn’t it? Of course sometimes there is more than merely “one truth.” There

are both Absolute Truths and there are Relative Truths which exist all around us.

“Thou shall not kill”

That is Absolutely True – we should not kill.

But, should you kill if failing to do so will result in your own death? Should you kill to protect your family from danger? Is it justifiable to kill when fighting evil forces in a war? Ahhh… the Relative Truth! Bugger, there it comes!

And this is the power of our brains, isn’t it? It’s the power to ask these questions. That really is the essence of our “tool” called the human brain.

But the brain also has some defects.

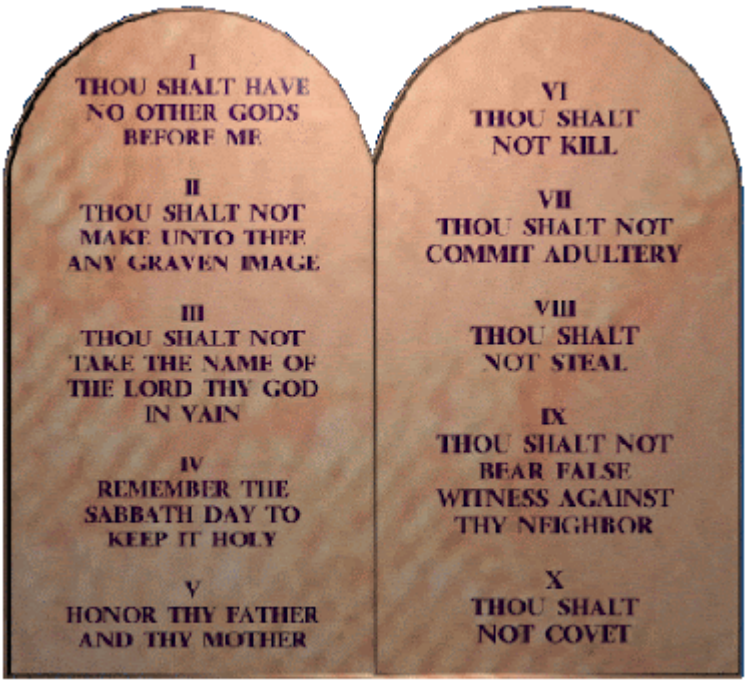
One defect is the ability to take the truth, and manipulate it into what we wish to be true for our own purposes.

Take Al Capone. A mass murderer, who felt he was unjustly imprisoned because he was such a humanitarian during the Great Depression by creating soup kitchens and using his accumulated wealth in various ways to give aid to the impoverished people around him. He really did help the poor. Al Capone used the Relative Truth to justify why he repeatedly broke one of the basic laws of humanity – murder. His evil actions were justified because of the good which resulted. Well, justified to himself anyway. Jail is full of innocent people.

Our brains need to be tempered by something bigger than ourselves, in order to maximize the brain’s ability while minimizing its own destructiveness.

The Absolute Truth must precede the Relative Truth. It must be that the Absolute Truth is of more importance than the Relative Truth.

> **Exodus 20 (New International Version – UK)**
>
> **The Ten Commandments**
>
> 1 And God spoke all these words:
>
> 2 I am the LORD your God, who brought you out of Egypt, out of the land of slavery.
>
> 3 You shall have no other gods before me.
>
> 4 You shall not make for yourself an idol in the form of anything in heaven above or on the earth beneath or in the waters below.
>
> 5 You shall not bow down to them or worship them; for I, the LORD your God, am a jealous God, punishing the children for the sin of the fathers to the third and fourth generation of those who hate me,
>
> 6 but showing love to a thousand generations of those who love me and keep my commandments.



That serves as the “temper” for our brains. Of course the Relative Truth exists, but when our brains become destructive to ourselves and to society, is when we convince ourselves of that a Relative Truth has become higher in importance than the Absolute Truth.

Our “relative truths” must work within the laws of “absolute truth.”

Our brains might allow the manipulation of the truth to eventually figure out how to fly… but, in order to fly, we must stay within the bounds of certain absolute laws, like gravity.

Another factor which comes from the monotheism of the Bible is that in order for a society to be cohesive, the people must all subscribe to one version of the truth.

Have you ever been on an internet discussion forum? Particularly, one advocating for a social cause? If you have, you’ll know what I mean about how they operate. It’s a jumbled mess. People argue and argue, because everyone subscribes to different truths. There is no “one truth” to subscribe to which unifies all of the commenters to one underlying belief. It results in confusion. Most often the conversation either devolves into nothingness for the sake of getting along, or it blows into bits as the various “truths” compete against eachother. The direction of “the cause” rarely moves forward, but rather neuters itself through disagreement or outright kills itself.

The same goes with societies and cultures. Before Judeo-Christianity, you will find that many of the cultures worshipped many gods. There were fertility gods, war gods, or whatever. And often, the people of those cultures became followers of one god more than another, resulting in the various factions competing against eachother – often to the point of violence.

It matters not to me all those who attempt to discredit the Bible by illustrating relations to paganism or similarities to other religions. I know of much it, and I am truly, deeply fascinated by it. However, possibly the most defining feature of Judeo-Christianity is that it subscribes to the belief in monotheism. One God. One Truth. The Absolute Truth. Is this what has propelled Judeo-Christianity into becoming the most successful of them all? I believe that it is.

The Bible is a blue-print for society. It shows us how a society ought to be formed. It takes away certain Relative Truth arguments which would be destructive, and instead promotes productiveness. The Bible is the Book of Life because it promotes those ideals which cause a civilization to grow, prosper and flourish. Religions/cultures which cannot/do not promote this are ways of death.

The US Founding Fathers subscribed to these ideas as well, based upon the ideals of John Locke. They placed their laws on three levels:

1 – God's Law
2 – Natural Law
3 – Civil Law

They believed that the lower levels of law must correspond within the rules of the higher ones. The lower laws must work within the bounds of the higher ones. At the top is the Absolute Truth.

The US Founding Fathers used both Deductive Reason (search for Absolutes) and Inductive Reason (Relatives). But they placed them properly upon the ladder of importance.

This notion was challenged when Hegel, in the 19th Century, came up with the Hegelian Dialectic.

What is the Hegelian Dialectic?

The inductive reasoning of the Hegelian Dialectic "dethroned" the authority of God as Absolute Truth.

The Hegelian Dialectic allows for the argument of 1 + 1 = 3, or 5, or 105… the truth is relative.

Since "the truth is relative," who is to say that your idea of truth is any more true than my idea of truth?

It takes away the monotheism of our Judeo-Christian civilization because it places the Relative Truth at the highest level. (In fact, at all levels).

There was a time when our oldest institutions, such as Harvard University, were mandated to be "keepers of the Truth." They have now evolved, through the Hegelian Dialect, into becoming "changers of the Truth."

This thought-disease that caused Adam and Eve to be ejected from Paradise is now the ruling thought process in all our educational institutions, our governments & laws, our families, and even our churches. Destruction is beginning to happen. We are separating as a people. The US Founding Fathers based their new system upon the authority of the Bible, and said that "liberty" is based upon the individual willingness to place personal morality on oneself – morality based upon the Bible. In that way, we all follow the same general path and still work together as a unit, and the more we place it upon ourselves to follow the morality illustrated in the Bible, the less need will there be for the government to pass laws against the people to maintain/control unity.

We have rejected Absolute Truth in favour of the Relative Truth.

We are becoming divided as both a civilization and as a people. The foundational building block of our society, the nuclear family, is destructing. Crime is increasing as are psychological problems and suicide. We are not reproducing enough to maintain ourselves as a population – through both unwillingness to do so, and by contracting swaths of sexually transmitted diseases which are directly and alarmingly affecting our infertility rates. Soddom and Gomorrah are truly making a comeback as our civilization is self-destructing, and in but a few more generations,

we will become so insignificant that we too will be “wiped from the face of the earth.”
But, no matter what they say, the Absolute Truth still does exist. Whether we can prove it or not, there actually is an answer to questions like “how did the universe get created?” or “where do we come from?”

And, I suspect, we’ll soon be recieving a smack up the back of the head for disobeying a fundamental law, which is:
The Absolute Truth must precede the Relative Truth.
To fail to heed such a timeless principle means to walk the Road of Death.
.

.
Further Reading:
.
The Garden of Eden, Absolute Truth, and Relative Truth
.
Rising Up from Being Beasts in the Field
.
The Feminization of Christianity
.
Truth, Truth, Truth… What Is The Truth?
.

Women and Children

. · 5 November 2010 · Archived copy · Original

Briffault's Law: The female, not the male, determines all the conditions of the animal family. Where the female can derive no benefit from association with the male, no such association takes place. -- Robert Briffault

.

It has always been this way, and it always will be. Women's ability to empathize with men is similar to a child's ability to empathize with adults. This not to say that women have the intelligence of a child, because that is not what I am saying - just simply that the ability to empathize can be compared to a child's ability to empathize with adults. A child loves its parents, but the child will always be more selfish than the parent. In the same way, a woman can love a man, but her concern will always be more selfish than the man's.

The great social engineers that are committing treason against their own people have recognized this well, and this is why they attacked the relationship between men and women first. The next step is to attack the relationship between women and children, which has a similar working system to that between men and women. This is how the human race works:

.

Men --> Women --> Children (--> Puppies)

.

This is what has happened:

.

Men <-- (pushed away by) Women --> Children

.

This is what is starting to happen, and will continue to happen in the future:

.

Men <-- (pushed away by) Women <-- (pushed away by) Children.

.

And then our social engineers will have done what they aimed to do all the way from the 2nd wave feminists right back to Frederick Engels - *destroy the family*. Once the family is destroyed, individual humans become quite malleable, and then the social engineers can go about creating Marx's Utopia.

.

Ain't you excited?

.

Women will never feel the compassion for men that men will feel for women. The problem is that men are too stupid to realize that women aren't like men, don't think like men, don't have the same desires as men, and have no desire to try to emulate any of the above. ***Man perceives woman as he would like her to be, not as she truly is.*** It's the same way that a woman always perceives *her* children to be superior and inherently good, even when they aren't. She perceives her chldren as she wishes they were, not as they actually are. Nature gave us some blinders. We have been hoodwinked into thinking men and women are the same. "Gender is a social construct," remember? It's complete hogwash. Women manipulate men in the same that children manipulate women. There is nothing evil or sinister about it, it is just the natural order of things. We are, after all, still of the animal kingdom, and we see all kinds of such manipulations throughout nature and we certainly don't call that "unfair."

.

Also, I don't think that the men in the Middle East have little regard for women. Perhaps the stupid worker drone men do, because they have been indoctrinated to believe so (in much the same silly way that we have been indoctrinated to believe that the ridiculous notion that the sexes are equal in all things). In fact, once one begins to study a little bit of human nature, it becomes obvious that cultures in the Middle East have an enormous fear of women's sexuality and their ability to use it to malign men and society. Kinda similar to how adults have to put their

foot down and over-ride a child's desires and not allow themselves to be manipulated by a child's whining and crying as they do everything to get their way. If one lets a child get everything they want, tomorrow they will expect more. The same goes for women. Women are never going to stop demanding men do more and more for them, while offering men less and less in return. Perhaps the Middle East goes too far, and perhaps we don't go far enough.

.

One has to only look at the evolution of the bikini to see that women tend to push, and push, and push until it appears there are no limits at all. Throughout history, civilizations have descended into decadence shortly before their collapse, and then things reset again from a much more misogynist point of view. (That's the facts, as ugly as they sound). It would be a huge leap forward if the human race could sit down and discuss these things fearlessly and rationally, and seek a suitable solution that serves us all (without the help of Slackademia, thank you very much - they have done 90% of the damage, and it's time for these hosers to sit at the back of the bus for a few centuries). Sadly, such notions of rationally discussing things are about as fruitless as discussing with a 5 year old the value of good nutrition, then setting him free in the grocery store and seriously expecting him to bring back Bran Flakes cereal instead of Coco Puffs. Nature rules us, we don't rule it. At best, we can temper it and harness it.

.

Related:

.

Bonecrcker #4 – Immature or Evil?

.

Bonecrcker #98 – Are Women Children or Adults?

.

Letter to His Son – by Lord Chesterfield, 1748

What's Next? Cries of Sparta?

. · 8 November 2010 · Archived copy · Original

Um, actually… Yes!

Lol! I had a case of rant-itis the other day over at Dr. Helen's, not that you care to read my ramblings… oh, wait… why are you here again?

Anyway, the gist of my argument was that academics are stooooopid, and it must be the biggest stimulus package of all time to have thrown away scores of knowledge about humans & the relations of the sexes that was known in the past, under the *horrific* charge of "misogynist," only to now pay our modern-day slackademics big bucks to "rediscover it."

Captain Chivalry showed up with his cape wrapped tightly around his eyes… as well as a professional victim-screecher, er, dissimulator… well, anyway, the link is up there. It was good fun.

Anyhow,

It seems the equality-seekers have found another university study revealing some shining light on knowledge "never before known." I guess we can now talk about it, since the seekers of truth have sanctioned it with a real study! Yippee! It must be real now!

Study Shows Disparities in Criminal Sentencing

"The assessment of fees and fines also appears to be influenced by defendant characteristics: Hispanic defendants are assessed significantly higher fees and fines than white defendants, and male defendants are assessed significantly higher fees and fines than female defendants." – The Assessment and Consequences of Legal Financial Obligations in Washington State

(dumb dee dumb dumb… moving along…)

"The report urges the state to overhaul the way Superior Court judges assess those penalties."

Attorney Marc Angelucci writes that this study corroborates others that show, for example, 'gender differences favoring women are more often found than race differences favoring whites.' (Crime and Delinquency, 1989, v.35, pp.136-68)"

Ssh! Quiet! Can you hear it?

"Click…clunk…creeeeeeek."

Yup. That's the sound of yet another door to the Mysteries of the Universe being unlocked by our modern high priests, the Slackademics.

Yessirree! And the Dean of the Department of Useful Idiotology recommends the following actions:

Step One: Run to the government.
Step Two: Hold onto your crotch like a toddler needing to pee.
Step Three: In the whiniest voice possible, repeat the following phrase: "DOOOooooOOOoooOOOooo something! We're not EEEEeeeEEEeeekwal!"

.

.

Of course, for a lot cheaper, they could have just read this kind of stuff:

Excerpts from The Politics of Aristotle: The Spartan Women

Again, the license of the Lacedaemonian women defeats the intention of the Spartan constitution, and is adverse to the happiness of the state… /…in those states in which the condition of the women is bad, ***half the city may be regarded as having no laws.*** *And this is what has actually happened at Sparta; the legislator wanted to make the whole state hardy and temperate,* ***and he has carried out his intention in the case of the men, but he has neglected the women, who live in every sort of intemperance and luxury… /…****But, when Lycurgus, as tradition says,* ***wanted to bring the women under his laws, they resisted,*** *and he gave up the attempt.*

Huh?

Whatchoo talkin' about, Aristotle?

You mean to tell us that it's near impossible to bring both sexes equally under the law?

I call BS! Has there been a peer-reviewed study done on this?

No?

Then shut up, you misogynist! Telling us clearly with your words that women belong in the kitchen! The nerve!

Obviously women never get into trouble with the law because they never sin! Don't you believe in equality?

How else can you explain it?

—

(Dissimulation = A form of deception similar to pool hustling).

Excerpts from Schopenhauer's Essay on Women

*"… **Nature has not destined them, as the weaker sex, to be dependent on strength, but on cunning; this is why they are instinctively crafty, and have an ineradicable tendency to lie.** For as lions are furnished with claws and teeth, elephants with tusks, boars with fangs, bulls with horns, and cuttlefish with its dark inky fluid, so **Nature has provided woman for her protection and defence with the faculty of dissimulation,** and all the power which Nature has given to man in the form of bodily strength and reason has been conferred on woman in this form. Hence, **dissimulation is innate in woman and almost as characteristic for the very stupid as the very clever.***

*Accordingly, it is as natural for women to dissemble at every opportunity as it is for those animals to turn to those weapons when attacked; and they feel that in doing so that in a certain measure they are only making use of their rights. **Therefore a woman who is perfectly truthful and does not dissemble is perhaps an impossibility. This is why they see through dissimulation in others so easily; therefore it is not advisable to attempt it with them.** From the fundamental defect that has been stated, and all that it involves, spring falseness, faithlessness, treachery, ungratefulness, and so on. **In a court of justice women are more often found guilty of perjury than men. It is indeed to be generally questioned whether they should be allowed to take an oath at all…**"*

Holy crap, Arthur! You Neanderthal! How dare you say that women should be chained to the bed but the chain should be long enough to reach the kitchen?

What's that? You say it should reach the bathroom too? Cause you ain't cleanin' no toilets?

What do you mean Darwinists ought to believe this too? You're so full of it. One of the basic premises of Darwinism is that animals devolve into creatures that are less suited for tasks and defences… isn't it?

—

Well, since I do believe that men and women are equal – but vastly different, and especially since I believe that we are equal in sin… let's make sure that men don't get let off the hook completely.

Here's an excerpt of Otto Weininger's preface from Sex and Character:

"Where my exposition is anti-feminine, and that is nearly everywhere, men themselves will receive it with little heartiness or conviction; their sexual egoism makes them prefer to see woman as they would like to have her, as they would like her to be.

I need not say that I am prepared for the answer women will have to the judgment I have passed on their sex. My investigation, indeed, turns against man in the end, and although in a deeper sense than the advocates of women's rights could anticipate, assigns to man the heaviest and most real blame."

Okay then, as long as it's men that are being blamed and not women!

Mutter, mutter… you're still a cretin… mutter.

The fact is that women have *always* been able to get away with being treated with kid gloves.

"Lizzie Borden took an axe, gave her mother forty whacks. When she saw what she had done, she gave her father forty-one."

.

.

But, Lizzie Borden was not punished. Scores of people rushed to her defense and she was acquitted. There was no investigation afterwards.

When was the last time a woman was executed in the USA anyway? How many men have been executed since then? And they're just figuring out that men and women aren't treated equally before the law?

Why wasn't Genene Jones fried? She was a mass baby killer. She's getting out of jail in another 8 years. She should have swung from a rope, and then gotten fried. Better yet, she should have been hung from an electrified rope!

Belfort Bax, writing in1908's The Legal Subjection of Men and in 1913's The Fraud of Feminism wrote extensively of the phenomenon of women being treated more leniently than men by the courts… so much that, well, I just don't even know where to begin. You can find examples of all sorts. From society demanding that innocent fathers also be charged when a woman alone commits infanticide… to 14 year old boys being charged for sex crimes when engaging in the deed with 16 year old girls who were the sexual aggressors… to demands that men who hire prostitutes ought to be charged equally as the prostitute herself…

Kinda makes you think that academics who claim to be "studying" this stuff while putting out their palms and asking to be paid for it… well… their integrity certainly ought to be scrutinized, or at the very least, the integrity of their "superior" degrees.

Of course, one could always just do a head count of how many men are imprisoned in the country and then do the same for women… of course, there are not equal numbers – mainly because women sin less. Isn't that right Mr. & Ms. Equality, Ph D.? You could probably just google it.

Women have been performing the same types of crimes for a long, long, looooong time already as well.

Genesis 39 is the story about how Joseph was falsely accused of rape by Potiphar's wife for malicious purposes.

Judges 4:21 describes the "Mary Winkler's" of old – killing men in their sleep:

"But Jael, Heber's wife, took a tent peg and seized a hammer in her hand, and went secretly to him and drove the peg into his temple, and it went through into the ground; for he was sound asleep and exhausted. So he died."

There is nothing new under the sun – we have only wilfully thrown away all of the old knowledge about the sexes – and we did it all to make the ladies happy.

It's time to stop listening to these charlatans and toss slackademia into the sea where it belongs. The Social Sciences in particular ought to get an extra ass-kicking.

It's time to start telling people who demand a "peer-reviewed study" to "prove" something, to shove it up their ass. Is that where the Absolute Truth originates? From a panel of idiots giving another idiot the thumbs up?

Sure, there are *some* uses for slackademia. Toilet paper has some uses too.

But, it's time to tell the Ph D's and other slackademics to shut up and sit at the back of the bus – they've done more than enough damage already.

It's not something that has spun out of control in women, but moreover, it's that *society* has thrown away the previous knowledge of how the sexes worked and somehow, idiotically, now believes that men and women can be treated equally under the law.

It is *impossible* to treat men and women equally under the *law.*

That's why society used to treat men and women differently. Men respond more to being controlled by the law, but women respond to socialization and shaming – to fashion, as it were.

The Marxists who were behind the Women's Movement from the beginning knew this too. See what one of the most esteemed forerunners of Marxism thought of the subject?

"…Women may have happy ideas, taste and elegance, but they cannot attain to the ideal. The difference between men and women is like that between animals and plants. Men correspond to animals, while women correspond to plants because their development is more placid and ***the principle that underlies it is the rather vague unity of feeling. When women hold the helm of government, the state is at once in jeopardy, because women regulate their actions not by the demands of universality but by arbitrary inclinations and opinions.*** *Women are educated – who knows how? – G.F. Hegel*

In other words, women form their ideas and opinions from fashion and socialization, rather than by universal principles and logic.

While men are controlled by *the law,* ***women are controlled by socialization and shaming.*** And since women don't much care what we men think, such socialized and shaming control must come from other women. And that's usually how it was done – the older ladies clucked and shamed the younger ones, and shunned the women who behaved outrageously. (They do just the opposite today, and their socialization encourages bad behaviour).

This does not mean that women are only good for cooking and birthing babies… although, given our below replacement level birthrates, a few babies might not be a bad idea. And yes, a good meal once in a while would be nice too.

But no matter how much that is given to lobby groups to "change the law," it still won't matter.

There are fundamental differences in how we operate. Trying to control women by the same factors that are used to control men is completely fruitless. One might as well try to keep a flock of geese in a field by use of a cattle fence. It ain't gonna work. Men and women *must* be treated differently.

Far more effective than funding lobby groups to bully the government to *pass more laws* would be for men to start brainstorming on how to motivate women to start "shaming the sense into eachother."

As Karl Marx himself noted, women are society – they lead, since men are the sexual servants of the female. Too bad they lead by a sense of fashion and sisterhood, rather than by the logic of universality and the rule of law.

"Anyone who knows anything of history knows that great social changes are impossible without feminine upheaval. Social progress can be measured exactly by the social position of the fair sex, the ugly ones included." – Karl Marx

(Keep in mind that Marx's idea of "social progress" is the destruction of Western Civilization)

Aristotle explains this in the The Politics of Aristotle: The Spartan Women as well.

"But what difference does it make whether women rule, or the rulers are ruled by women? The result is the same." – Aristotle

Don't expect any help from the ladies though. For as Aristotle further points out:

"…the influence of the Lacedaemonion women has been most mischievous. The evil showed itself in the Theban invasion, when, unlike the women of other cities, they were utterly useless and caused more confusion than the enemy." – Aristotle

Is this not what we see all around us as well? There are *obvious* things wrong, and every time a man tries to point

out the obvious, the women all gather around him and throw every damn monkey wrench at him as possible. Making sense does not matter to the ladies… but throwing monkey wrenches at the men does matter.

That our children inherit a safe, stable and prosperous society is truly the utmost "best interests of the child" that there is… but, point out the factors that are destroying us… nope, here come the ladies and their senseless monkey wrenches.

They obviously feel that bitching at men and confusing everything what men say is *the* main purpose of their lives. Otherwise they would smarten the hell up and recognize that they are also part of society and thus, are also part of the problem – and the solution. They *refuse* to do that. The ladies *love* to dissimulate.

"SPARTA!" Fedrz cries.

.

.

The professional victim/dissimulator, that showed up to argue about senseless crap over at Dr. Helen's is a good example of the type of "help" we can expect from the ladies as our civilization begins to crumble about us.

There was a reason why things were the way they were in the past.

No, women don't necessarily need to be in the kitchen. Who ever said that, except for the monkey-wrench-throwing women themselves?

Women would obviously rather have 100% of nothing than 50% of something.

If society refuses to acknowledge these things about the way the sexes interact with eachother, then no amount of laws being changed, or studies being done, will ever help – not one single bit!

These academics "discovering" such things while accepting payment for it are discovering jack-shit. It has all already been discovered and socially censored into oblivion under the politically incorrect charge of "misogyny."

"Why were things in the past so misogynist?" That is the question that our ill-esteemed academics ought to be studying. The blanket reason for "why" has been "the *evil* patriarchy," when it is obvious all around us that the old guys were right, while the "new intellectuals" of slackademia are spineless idiots.

Remember the *first* reason God gave when he cursed Adam and kicked him out of Paradise:

Genesis 3:17

*(17) To Adam he said, "**Because you listened to your wife** and ate from the tree about which I commanded you, 'you must not eat of it,' "Cursed is the ground because of you; through painful toil you will eat of it all the days of your life."*

Previous Index Next

MGTOW

“If it’s not right, Go Your Own Way!”

.....
..oooO.....
..(....).....
….\..(.....
…. _/.....
…….....Oooo..
…….....(....)…
……..)../....
.....(_/.....
.....

Twenty-One Points for Women Who Want Their Men to "Open Up."

. · 11 November 2010 · Archived copy · Original

The following was taken from If Men Have All The Power How Come Women Make The Rules? pp201-204

Twenty-one Points for Women Who Want Their Men to "Open Up"

A perfectly valid word for an exchange of thoughts and feelings is "intercourse." There's a good reason for this. For every complaint that women have about how we try to get sex from them, we can make a similar point about how women try to get emotion from us.

1. Don't just snap your fingers and say, "Open up."

2. Though you may feel a strong urge to "do it," men are different. Intercourse does not always have to be in and out, back and forth. Men value and enjoy non-verbal intercourse, like being understood and accepted for what they are, not what they say.

3. You can't force intercourse and expect your man to enjoy it. You might force him to fake an understanding just to get it over with.

4. Men will not hop into emotional intimacy with just anyone. Men know that women are always ready to get into someone's head. You must convince him that he is not just another piece of mind.

5. You should let him be on top sometimes. Men are tired of being in the inferior position, especially in hot and passionate intercourse.

6. Don't perform tricks that make him feel inadequate. Remember that you have been raised with more skill in intercourse than he has.

7. Men were taught that only women enjoy intercourse. Help him not to feel wierd or guilty for doing it.

8. Let him take control sometimes. Don't insist on controlling whose needs must be met when.

9. Don't talk and tell. Don't get him to "put out" and then rush to your women friends with the intimate details.

10. If your thrusting and probing hurts him, stop immediately. Don't assume he'll start to like it just because you do.

11. Allow him to initiate. Don't hit on him with so many requests for intercourse that he never feels the urge to start intercourse at his own pace, according to his own needs.

12. Men are often shy and insecure about their flaws and blemishes, about whether you will find them attractive. Don't expect your man to show you everything right away.

13. Remember that good intercourse is not a wrestling match. There should be no winner and no loser.

14. Respect your lover as an equal partner. You don't own him; he does not exist for the sole purpose of providing your pleasure.

15. If you have ever abused him during intercourse, understand that it might take a long, long time for your man to open up to you again.

16. Keep in mind that men's and women's rhythms are different. Don't get angry if his needs don't coincide with yours.

17. If you simply want to release tension, let him know. Don't pretend that you are doing it for him. Men often resist intercourse if they feel pressured about "getting into it."

18. There is no such thing as the ideal lover. Don't try to make your partner into something he isn't. Accept your man as he is.

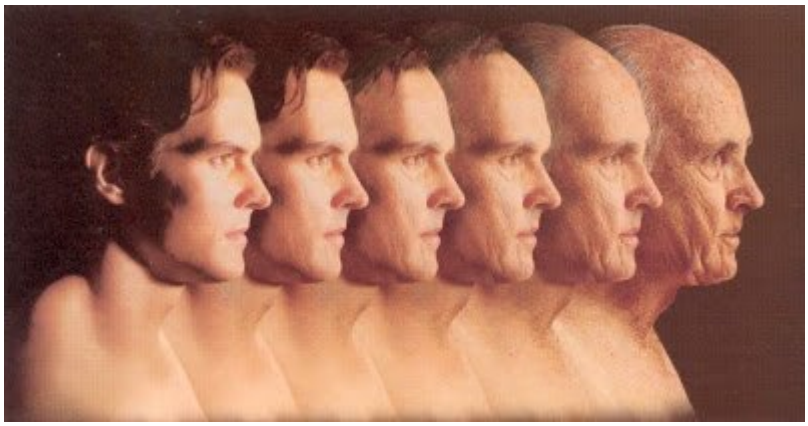
19. Foreplay is essential; gently stroking of the ego can help. If you encounter a ravenous ego, remember it is ravenous not because it gets too much healthy attention, but because it gets too little.

20. Don't get hung up on achieving simultaneous understanding. Men's understandings take longer, but they are usually more intense.

21. Respect him in the morning.

Age is a Social Construct

. · 17 November 2010 · Archived copy · Original



.

The history of all hitherto existing society is the history of "age" struggles.

I believe in championing the cause of child suffrage. In this day of "equality" it is an outrage that children don't have equal rights with adults. I believe in equality *and all human beings are equal, therefore children should have equal rights.*

Age is nothing more than a social construct, designed by adults, to enable the adult oppression of children which has been present *for thousands of years.* What is age, after all? What does 10 years old mean? It means the earth has circled the sun 10 times; it means the earth has spun around on its axis between 3,652 to 3,653 times. That the earth circles the sun, or that there is existence of night and day, is of zero consequence to personal development and *has nothing to do with a human's ability to reason.*

Therefore, it is obvious that age is a social construct, created and perpetuated by adults, to enable the oppression of the young since the beginning of time. These talks about the young not possessing the same capacaties as adults are corrupt. That adults state the young are amoral is an idea born of ageism, and such ideas must be driven from society.

Equality for the young! Give the young equal rights and privileges under the law, including the vote.

Don't you believe in equality? How can you believe in equality if you regard the young as second class citizens to adults? You ageist pig! Adults have been oppressing the young with violence (spanking) and they believe it is their "right" to punish the young at their whim.

To adults, the young are property to be owned. Just as chattel, adults see in the young nothing more than a means of production (chores). Adults believe the young exist solely for the furthering of adult pleasure. The young are forced to wash dishes so the adults can relax and revel in their percieved superiority over others; they are forced to mow lawns under the heat of the sun while adults sip iced tea spiked with gin.

Adulthood is based on violence, power and domination. The young are dominated by their parents' leering eyes and their authoritarian voices. We live in an adult culture and adulthood must be abolished!

If the young had the vote, there would be no war. The young wouldn't allow it!

[Fast Forward to the year 2020]

Hurray! The young have been granted full equality under the law! Let us embrace this new modernized society which reveres the dignity of the young and regards them to be fully "equal" with adults, who had been oppressing them for *thousands* of years!

[Fast Forward to the year 2070AD]

Andy Dorquin (8 years old), world renowned professor of Young and Ageism Studies at Harvard University releases another of many recent studies illustrating that although the young have had the vote for 50 years, there is still much left to do before the full equality of the young will be realized.

It is obvious that there is *institutionalized* oppression of the young for we can see that the young only earn $0.15 on the dollar to that of adults, and the young are vastly under-represented in both CEO positions and Political Offices. The only way to counter this is to pass Affirmative Action laws which counter "institutionalized adult privilege."

[Fast Forward to the year 2071AD]

Politicians throughout the Western World pass "No Fault Youth Emancipation Laws" even though, strangely, there is no massive outcry from the general public for such a reformation of family law. Youth emancipations from their parents instantly rise 500%, and because of the coupling of the afore mentioned law with the principle of "the best interests of the child," parents are legally obliged to financially support their emancipated progeny who they now never even see. In most cases, parents are ejected from their own home because the court will rule that it is in the best interest of the child to have their own house.

To ensure that adults don't become dead-beat parents, the government creates Youth Maintenance Offices to extract monies from parents. The Youth Maintenance Office is granted the legal power to garnishee wages, imprison the rotten dead-beat parents, and suspend driver's licenses and passports to give it some teeth.

[Fast Forward to the year 2073AD]

The Supreme Court rules in the landmark case: *Row vs. Waid,* that youth have the unilateral right to choose to euthanize their parents at any time in their parents' natural life. The ruling is based on the notion that it is unjust for an adult parent to spend their progeny's inheritance, which rightfully belongs to the next generation.

My parents, my choice!

[Fast Forward to the decade of 2080-89]

The youthist movement, in an effort to eradicate institutionalized adulthood, begins to Newspeak the English Language. Even the words "year" and "day" are viewed as oppressively ageist, so they are renamed "Solar Revolution" and "Terrestrial Revolution" respectively.

Many radicals within the yoothist movement begin to refer to themselves as "yunge" rather than young; "yooth" rather than youth. Often, the yunge are seen sporting t-shirts with a slogan reading: "This is What a Yooth Looks

Like."

Some adults begin to realize that things are going horribly wrong with civilization and begin to try to reason with the yunge. Since yooth now have equal rights even within the parents' own home, yooth have begun demanding that the only food to be served in the house should be chocolate cake for breakfast, lunch and dinner, 365 Terrestrial Revolutions a Solar Revolution. Parents, believing the propaganda hype that the yunge are "equal," think they can reason with them by explaining that chocolate cake can be great, but too much will make them fat and unhealthy, thereby leading to a worse life for all of them. Most yooth respond with yelling and shrieking accusations of "ageism." Some yooth, however, take heed and agree to eat one brussel sprout with their usual helpings of chocolate cake. The parents are pleased that they have made at least some progress and have a renewed hope for the future... until they watch with horror as the yooth pulls out a bottle of chocolate syrup and smothers the brussel sprout with it.

"What?" The yooth snarls at the parents, "I'm eating the damn sprout." The parents are shocked by the yooth's eyes, which betray a contempt for them that extends into the soul itself.

[Fast Forward to Solar Revolution 2094AD]

The Violence Against Youth Act (VAYA) is passed in an attempt to curb the institutionalized Adult Violence against Youth which is rampant throughout society.

Scolding becomes recognized as abuse and yooth are granted the ability to file restraining orders against their parents if they fear that they might get scolded.

Refusal to raise a yooth's allowance becomes deemed "financial abuse," a form of psychological abuse.

[Fast Forward to Solar Revolution 2107AD]

To date, over 40 Million parents have been euthanized at the hands of the yunge.

Approximately 1 in 2 yooth are emancipated from their parents and although the courts force parents to financially support the yunge after emancipation, a large portion of the emancipated yooth are living in abject poverty inside of filthy, unsanitary, government provided box-apartments.

Cities and rural communities alike are teaming with crime.

Adults fear even talking to children because VAYA laws have been twisted and distorted to such a degree that even normal speach can land an adult in prison if the yunge decides to be in a vindictive mood.

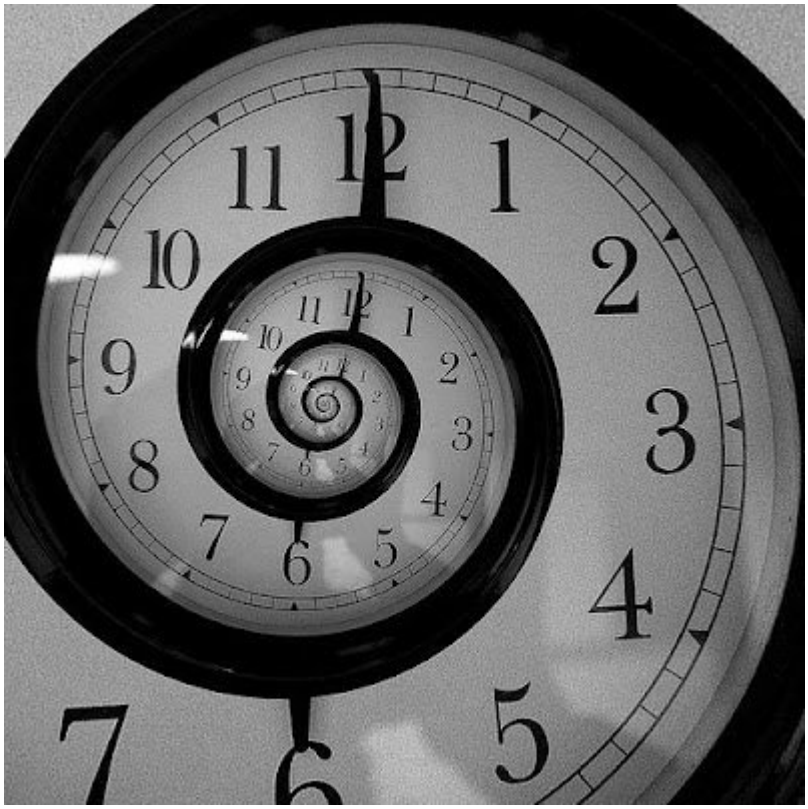
Western Civilization has stagnated and is no longer economically viable because of Affirmative Action laws designed to get rid of the $0.15 Wage Gap, and adults often are choosing careers in manual farm labor so they don't have to work beside the yunge who gravitate to the more pleasant intellectual of jobs, which would be better served by adults. In places where the yunge are present in large numbers, there is a direct increase in the number of "yooth harassment" charges resulting from anything which a yunge person finds dissaggreable. Sometimes "yooth harassment" charges are leveled against an adult, whose life gets shattered, just out of a yooth's desire for attention. Adults don't know how to behave around the yunge at all anymore and many adults have chosen reproductive sterilization as the answer, to counter their growing fears of having the little monsters even more in their life than

they already are.

Some yooth are beginning to realize that things are getting worse, rather than better. These are usually the ones that are on the brink of adulthood themselves. Occassionally you will hear one of them acknowledge that it is time for an "Adult Rights Movement," but they almost always follow it up with: "As long as it doesn't take away from Yooth Rights."

A philosophy has recently arisen called AGTOW (Adults Going Their Own Way), consisting of adults who choose to be ethical sociopaths, turning their backs on the cultural decay which is present at every turn, from the workplace to the media, from the government to the churches, from the yooth run schools that don't teach anything to even the hostility of the yunge to them as they walk down the street. If this is a better society, they can all rot with it...

.



.

[Rewind to the year 2007 and the present situation society is facing]

Now, of course, I don't mean to say that women actually *are* children. They exist somewhere in between - and most notable, they "get things" from others in the same way children do. (By getting attention and appearing as victims). But when I talk about the amorality and dissimulation found within women, I don't think it is a stretch to say that there are some serious moral challenges which women naturally face. Even look at the difference in the MRM where the men are constantly running around scolding eachother to *'not say that'* about women. That is men adhering to their sense of justice and morality and they are quite concerned about "fighting fair." Note that the feminist movement was never afflicted with this, because women in general didn't really care about how badly the feminists were trashing their own husbands, sons, fathers and brothers.

But what on God's Green Earth makes people think that men and women are *the same* in all things? In their mentality, in their needs, wants and abilities?

Psychological differences between the Sexes ARE NOT a social construct. (The word "Gender," however, is a Feminist Construct).

I do not believe it was a mere coincidence that the Suffragette Movement was born at virtually the same moment as the birth of Marxism. (Yes, I know there was "talk" before that, just as there was Socialist-Transcendentalism decades before Marxism).

Have a look at what Marx says:

"The philosophers have only interpreted the world in different ways. The point, however, is to change it." -- Karl Marx

He says he is going to take the philosophies of the day, up to the 19th Century, and use them to manipulate the world according to his designs, with the goal of changing society into something never seen before - to defeat God and Nature.

What century were people like Schopenhauer from? You know, the ones who openly philosophized about female dissimulation and amorality?

Who heavily influenced Marx with his philosophies about the Dialectic? Why, it was Hegel! And what did Hegel believe about women?

"... Women may have happy ideas, taste, and elegance, but they cannot attain to the ideal. The difference between men and women is like that between animals and plants. Men correspond to animals, while women correspond to plants because their development is more placid and the principle that underlies it is the rather vague unity of feeling. *When women hold the helm of government, the state is at once in jeopardy,* because women regulate their actions not by the demands of universality but by arbitrary inclinations and opinions. Women are educated--who knows how?" -- G.F. Hegel

It is also interesting to note that Hegel believed that the origin of the Universe was God - the Absolute Spirit. Yet, what did the evil rot-bag bastard, Karl Marx say?

"My object in life is to dethrone God and destroy capitalism." -- Karl Marx

One can spend countless hours sifting through the writings of the philosophers and what they believed about women. In virtually every case you will see a commonly acknowledged theme of women's challenges with "justice" and "morality." And, I mean you can go *way back!*

"The philosophers have only interpreted the world in different ways. The point, however, *is to change it."* -- Karl Marx

It is only in the past few decades that these views have been eradicated from our consciousness. Why is that? Look at what is going on around us! The "old philosophers" beliefs seem to hold much more truth and value in them than what spews out of the mouths of the modern gender-idiots in Cloud Cuckoo-land. Society is *not* better because of feminist inspired amorality and dissimulation.

Isn't it amazing how the leftist brownshirts will screech and holler anyone down who notices any difference between men and women, yet at the same time they also screech down anyone who questions the Theory of Evolution?

If you are someone who regards Evolution as "fact," you would also have to acknowledge that men and women's behavioural instincts would have "evolved" to help them survive. What Schopenhauer says about women having the "tool of dissimulation" to counter the physical supremacy of males makes perfectly good sense from an

evolutionary perspective.

How can "gender" be a "social construct" when the same feminists who are shoving that nonsense down our throats are also smugly telling us that testosterone makes men more violent, or that women are superior multi-taskers and communicators?

"Gender" is a feminist construct - nothing more. One that has been dreamed up to enable the manipulations of women's worst natural traits in order to transform society and bring about the Marxist Utopia of "Equality." In a way, I feel sorry for women that they have been manipulated by these evil people to become what we now know as the "modern woman." They knew that men would never turn on women, therefore, they used women's natural weaknesses to turn women on men. Women will never turn on children either, but it is possible to turn children on women. What do you think is the purpose of attaching the "Rights of the Child" to the UN's CEDAW Agreement? It is to begin to create a situation such as described above.

The Plot goes as follows:

Men (cares for) --> Woman (cares for) --> Children
.
Step #1: Use feminism to manipulate what was known about women to create this:
.
Men (pushed away by) < -- Women -- > Children
.
Step #2: Use children's rights (and divorced parents rights) to manipulate children to create this:
.
Men (pushed away by) < -- Women (pushed away by) < -- Children
.
They had to start with women. It would not have worked in any other way.
.
"Anyone who knows anything of history knows that great social changes are impossible without feminine upheaval. Social progress can be measured exactly by the social position of the fair sex, the ugly ones included." -- Karl Marx

Tell me again that you are an Egalitarian. Please describe equality to me. Are children equal to adults? Should they have equal rights?

Bears and Foxes both get their food from the same forest, but go about it in vastly different ways. Now try and make the fox get his food in the same way as the bear. Good luck!

The sooner that the MRM gets their head around that notion, the better.

Previous Index Next
MGTOW

"If it's not right, Go Your Own Way!"
.....

..oooO.....
..(....).....
….\..(.....
…. _/.....
…….....Oooo..
…….....(....)…
……..)../....
.....(_/.....
.....

Can't You Just Love Me For Who I Am?

. · 20 November 2010 · Archived copy · Original

I never quite figured out why the sexual urge of men & women differ so much. And I never have figured out the whole Venus and Mars thing. I have never figured out why men think with their head and women with their heart. I have never figured out why the sexual desire gene gets thrown into a state of turmoil, when it hears the words 'I do.'

Here's an example of what I mean. One evening last week, my wife and I were getting into bed.Well, the passion starts to heat up, and she eventually says 'I don't feel like it, I just want you to hold me.' I said 'WHAT????!!! What was that?!

So she says the words that every husband on the planet dreads hearing…'You're just not in touch with my emotional needs as a woman enough for me to satisfy your physical needs as a man.'

She then responded to my puzzled look by saying, "Can't you just love me for who I am and not what I do for you in the bedroom?" Realizing that nothing was going to happen that night I went to sleep.

The very next day I opted to take the day off from work to spend time with her. We went out to a nice lunch and then went shopping at a big, unnamed department store. I walked around with her while she tried on several different very expensive outfits. She couldn't decide which one to take so I told her we'll just buy them all. She wanted new shoes to compliment her new clothes, so I said lets get a pair for each outfit. We went on to the jewelry department where she picked out a pair of diamond earrings.

Let me tell you…she was so excited. She must have thought I was one wave short of a shipwreck. I started to think she was testing me because she asked for a tennis bracelet when she doesn't even know how to play tennis. I think I threw her for a loop when I said, "That's fine, honey."

Smiling with excited anticipation she finally said, 'I think this is all dear, let's go to the cashier'. I could hardly contain myself when I blurted out, 'No honey, I don't feel like it.'

Her face just went completely blank as her jaw dropped with a baffled 'WHAT???!!!' I then said, 'Really honey! I just want you to HOLD this stuff for a while. You're just not in touch with my financial needs as a man enough for me to satisfy your shopping needs as a woman.' And just when she had this look like she was going to kill me, I added, 'Why can't you just love me for who I am and not for the things I buy you?'

Apparently I'm not having sex tonight either, but at least that bitch knows I'm smarter than her.

NO MA'AM's Guide To Bird Watching in the Manosphere

. · 22 November 2010 · Archived copy · Original

This is an old version of this article, read the new version here.

.

Many men love to stroll through the lush forests of the Manosphere, as there is much to see and behold. One can find all sorts of things, from young saplings yearning to reach the open sky, to mighty Sequoias offering a sense of security in their strength, along with respite from the outer heat within the ambience of their shade.

.

As one walks through this unique atmosphere, it is quite common to hear the chirping of several different types of birds. The birds are part of the forest and therefore I would like to provide the following *Guide to Bird Watching in the Manosphere*.

.

One might spot an *Elusive Wife* perched on a branch overhanging your path. You veterans know her well. She is the one who has the perfect life; her marriage is free from strife, her children are raised the perfect way, and you'll see her in Church twice on Sunday. She will pleasure her husband anytime he desires, sex in their marriage is still burning fires. "Her home cuisine is delicious," she insists he will say, and to top it all off, from this path she'll never foray.

.

The Elusive Wife is most often a traditional stay-at-home mom who believes in the message of the MRM. She's the one who never lets any man forget that "he should keep on looking because there are still good women out there!" Her song goes something like this: "Look at me! Look at me! This is how it can be! Look at me!"

.

The Elusive Wife appears to support men's issues, but really, those more jaded and experienced within "The Movement" will recognize that the Elusive Wife is concerned about men mainly because she is scared shitless of men waking up to the scam. She wants men to return to their masculine role of pandering to women's every whim, slaving away like a mindless drone for her and *her children*. It is noteworthy that the Elusive Wife's husband never comes online, gushing about his wonderful life with his wonderful wife. Nope, only she speaks of how blissfully contented her husband is with her. He smartly (or cowardly) remains silent.

.

The Elusive Wife says she is interested in men's issues, but what she really wants is to ensure that men keep serving women. She does this because, deep down, she knows she would be screwed if it were any other way. She knows

she is a preferred human and wants desperately to maintain that concept. She has a manipulated man-slave at her finger tips and she damn well knows what a good con-game women have been running *for thousands of years*.

.

Another species which may appear is from the genus *Mountainous Mammarious*. You can tell a Mountainous Mammarious is in your neck of the woods because of her distinctive call, "DEE DEE! DEE DEE!"

.

She too fully believes in men's issues, and that's why she plunks her self-described Victoria Secret satin pantied ass (page 9, item C), right in the midst of as many men as she can find. She brightens up the whole board with her cheerful song, "DEE DEE! DEE DEE!" which is interspersed amongst every comment she makes.

.

She agrees with everything and befriends all. She often provides some useful services to humanity, like informing men of what it is like to grow breasts, menstruate, or have an ovary removed. The only thing she complains about is how uncomfortable it is to always have her lacy, Victoria Secret brassiere straps (page 11, item B) cutting into her back, due to the imbalanced weight proportioned towards her front. You see, she helps men better understand things from a woman's perspective. She flits in and out of blogs and forums, always spreading her good will towards her new found friends, and of course, announcing her arrivals and departures with her cheerful song, "DEE, DEE! DEE, DEE... Dee, Dee... Deeeee, deeeee....”

.

A third species of woman is rather an interesting one which is called *Meritorious Mediocrous* in Latin. Meritorious Mediocrus is perceived as a great Amazon bird of prey to many of those within men’s circles. Tales of her exploits become legendary and her name is revered wherever she goes. Even in far away lands, children are regaled with stories about the brave and mighty Meritorious Mediocrus.

.

There is a natural problem built within the species Meritorious Mediocrus though, and this is why some experts wish to rename this bird as *Annika Sorenstamus*. You see, Meritorious Mediocrus gets an enormous amount of attention for placing 96th out of 111, simply for being a woman. No-one knows who was 97th, 95th or even 5th - but everyone knows when Meritorious Mediocrus places in the bottom 15% of the field, and she receives gratuitous adulation for her accomplishments.

.

We see this same phenomenon all throughout society. A woman accomplishes something "great" simply by *becoming*, say, a firefighter. In fact, a newspaper story might appear on the front page because of this particular example of a Meritorious Mediocrus, and sumptuously entertain the readers with her heroism in *becoming* a firefighter. A man, however, who is stronger, faster and has fifteen years experience on her, will not receive any praise for his "accomplishments" unless he charges fearlessly into a blazing orphanage and single handedly rescues a dozen toddlers. Then of course, when he is done, he sees a little girl crying that her kitten is still trapped inside. So the male firefighter again gallantly dashes into the inferno, intending to rescue the kitten, only for the entire building to collapse upon him, killing him instantly. That story will make the eighth page in the same newspaper.

.

The problem with Meritorious Mediocrus stems from her fame and influence far outstripping her insights and accomplishments. The effect of this is that the lower end of the spectrum tends to have a louder, more influential voice than the higher end of the spectrum. And somehow, there is just something not right about that. It’s like the natural hierarchy of the universe gets turned upside down.

.

The fourth type of bird one may encounter hails from the species of *Achievus Consensus*. This bird's entire purpose in life seems to revolve around convincing men that they will accomplish absolutely nothing unless they manage to get women onboard. (She might cite examples of how men completely failed to create a civilization because women didn't participate). As absurd as it sounds to an outsider, Achievus Consensus has some kind of magical hypnotism in her song that makes men agree that, indeed, no flock of sheep can properly succeed without a sufficient number of wolves in its midst.

.

Despite her hypnotic melody, however, when one digs deeper down it becomes apparent that while Achievus Consensus knows a few peripheral issues, when push comes to shove she knows nothing of substance. Biologists often argue whether Achievus Consensus is from the greater Cuckoo genus or if she is just a crossbreed of the Elusive Wife and the Meritorious Mediocrus.

.

There is a good case to be made for the crossbreed theory of Achievus Consensus in that she is sometimes very active like the Meritorious Mediocrus while at the same time displaying some traits of the Elusive Wife. She never lets you forget how much she is doing for your benefit while at the same time reminding you that she, and other women, *are not all like that.*

.

I, however, tend to agree more with the theory that Achievus Consensus is a sub-species of the Cuckoo because of her continual shaming references to what other women, not her, think about our views. The Cuckoo theory is further backed up in that the Achievus Consensus seems stuck on the belief that men somehow have to convince women to let them do want they want. Achievus Consensus talks like men are small children who need to ask Mom's permission to play outside after supper.

.

Now, although I am describing several completely different species here, one should not forget that they are still from the same overall family within the animal kingdom. This reality is starkly revealed when a man dares to challenge one of them. The flocking instinct of these creatures automatically kicks in and they all gather together, descending upon the transgressing man as if in a scene from Hitchcock's *The Birds*.

.

Of course, men rarely stick up for other men at the best of times, so the offending man is often left outnumbered. Even worse, some of the other men in the near vicinity were lured in by the message of the Elusive Wife, because she always sings of a dream which he once had, but never attained. Other men are still thinking about the Mountainous Mammarious' Victoria Secret satin panties, which he looked up online after she let it "slip" that they were the ones one Page 9, Item C. Several men will have enormous respect for the achievements of Meritorious Mediocrus, thinking those achievements make her above reproach, while others are still in a hypnotic trance from listening to the song of Achievus Consensus, who has been admonishing them to get women onboard so "they can accomplish something."

.

The result?

.

Well, no other man will dare speak up once he sees how all the birds attack, as if eagles plucking at Prometheus' heart, and more, how few of the other men will even try to shoo the eagles away.

.

Soon, all the men are "kept in line" and with everything they write there will be a subconscious concern that the women will be offended. In a month or two, the men are posting less and less while the women are posting more and more, until the few women begin dominating the conversations of the many men.

.

Now, a men's forum may try to counter this by creating a "sub-forum" that only allows entrance to men, so they can speak freely without concern of offending the women... but, come on now... a few women show up on a men's forum, and that forces all of the men into a private room in the back? How often have we seen that happen in society? I am starting to find forums with too many women on them to be an excellent way to gauge what happens in the greater society when women show up. Once a forum has gotten that far, it is quite literally, *for the birds.* Society is no different. Have a look at our governments.

.

There are two other types of birds that may appear as well.

.

The first is the much touted *Odd Duck*. (She is easiest to notice by the characteristics of reading much and talking little). Similarities to her extend well out of the bird family and into other parts of the Animal Kingdom. Take piglets, for example. Every litter of piglets has a runt that is odd. However, it is the *other* piglets that make the runt to be odd. And so it is with the Odd Duck in the Bird Family. What makes her odd are the *other* ducks, and how her behaviour is different from the normal behaviour of ducks. Therefore, in no way ought she be classified as an entire species of her own. And thus, I feel justified in talking little more about Odd Ducks.

.

The final bird one will encounter is the *Cawing Crow*. These birds are hardly a rarity though, and you need not be within the rich splendor of the Manosphere to find them. In fact, these birds are so common that many men report sighting them in their own backyards!

.

There is no beauty in the song of the Cawing Crow. In fact, you downright hate the sound; it's just so damn irritating!

.

Everybody else hates the sound too, and that's why nobody in the Manosphere complains much when you take out that weak, old BB gun which your dad gave you for your 12th birthday and start taking potshots at it.

.

"Ping!"

.

You bounce a BB off the Cawing Crow's tail feathers and she flies away.

.

You would think that would be it, and the Cawing Crow would have learned a lesson... but, alas, what do you hear out your window again tomorrow?

.

"Caw, Caw!"

.

"Damn irritating Cawing Crow," you exclaim, grabbing your BB gun as you rush out the door in your socks.

.

"Pow!" You let off a shot and see a few black feathers erupt into the air as the Cawing Crow takes flight with a stinging in her side.

.

The next day? Sure enough, there's the Cawing Crow again, irritating you with a song akin to nails on a chalkboard.

.

"Pow! Pow! Pow!"

.

You hit your target with all three, but this time the Cawing Crow does not fly away. She has learned that the BB's won't kill her but will just bounce off her thick feathers, even if they do sting a bit.

.

Soon it becomes almost like a game between you and the Cawing Crow, and she shows up daily knowing full well that she will be greeted by multiple potshots at her. Yet, she keeps showing up, day after day.

.

You have a BBQ one day in the backyard with several of your friends, and they have heard your amazing tale of the Cawing Crow that never goes away - so they each bring their own BB guns along to the BBQ.

.

"Pow, pow, pow, pow, pow, PING!" Volleys of shots fly at the Cawing Crow, most hitting their mark, and yet, she *still* doesn't fly away!

.

Wtf?

.

"What's the point?" one might ask. "You are not accomplishing anything."

.

Well, there is a point. You are becoming one hell of a good shot, and the Cawing Crow has helped you to become skilled at picking off a target with that weak, old BB gun from a considerable distance.

.

Compared to the other birds, the Cawing Crow is at least serving a purpose that is valuable to the MRM. I would rather have ten Cawing Crows than one Elusive Wife, one Mountainous Mammarious, one Meritorious Mediocrus and one Achievus Consensus.

.

At least with the Cawing Crow, you both know where you stand, and after a while you have to grant the Cawing Crow a certain amount of respect, if only strictly for the amount of abuse she is willing to take while still coming back for more.

.

Hey, I never said that the Cawing Crow was the smartest bird, only that you have to respect its temerity to some degree.

.

And this, gentlemen, brings us to the end of our *Guide to Bird Watching in the Manosphere*. Be sure to keep your ears open for their songs and your eyes sharp to spot their various distinguishing traits, so that you may pass on any sightings to your fellow travelers in the Manosphere.

.

.

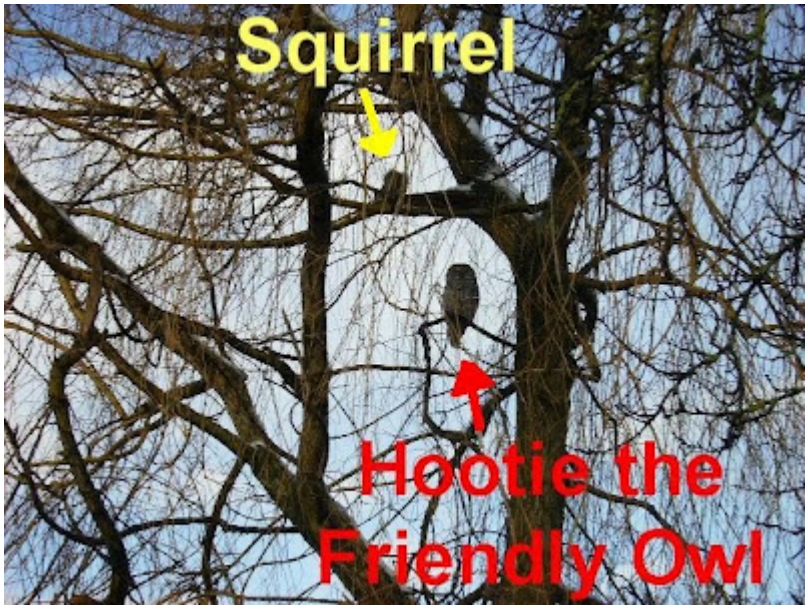
Hootie the MRA Owl and the Cawing Crows

.

.

I chased the cawing crows away with snowballs after a while. Originally there were four cawing crows. One was on the next branch only moments before I took the picture and was cawing in his face from only about a foot away. Hootie was not intimidated and refused to budge! Yo! He did ruffle up his feathers at the crow though... I was hoping to watch him kick some crow ass, but no such luck. Crows are just as bold - and stupid - as your typical feminist.

.



Hootie must have eaten well last night, because the squirrel didn't phase him a bit. I swear, that rodent had an uncanny resemblance to that other squirrelly mangina, Joe Biden.

.

I believe Hootie is a Barred Owl.
The Barred Owl (Strix varia) is a large typical owl. It goes by many other names, including eight hooter, rain owl, wood owl, and striped owl, but is probably known best as the hoot owl.
The usual call is a series of eight accented hoots ending in oo-aw, with a downward pitch at the end. The most common mnemonic device for remembering the call is "Who cooks for you, who cooks for you all."
.

It's the second time I've seen Hootie sleeping in that tree. Hopefully he becomes a permanent "pet."
.

.

Can't an honest owl get a day's sleep 'round here?

.

Who? Who? Who can leave me alone?

(Hootie stayed there from sun-up to sun-down, and didn't sing for me once. The neighbours must have all thought I had gone crackers though, hearing me run around all day saying, "Who cooks for you? Who cooks for you all?" I hope he returns and sings me a song one day.)

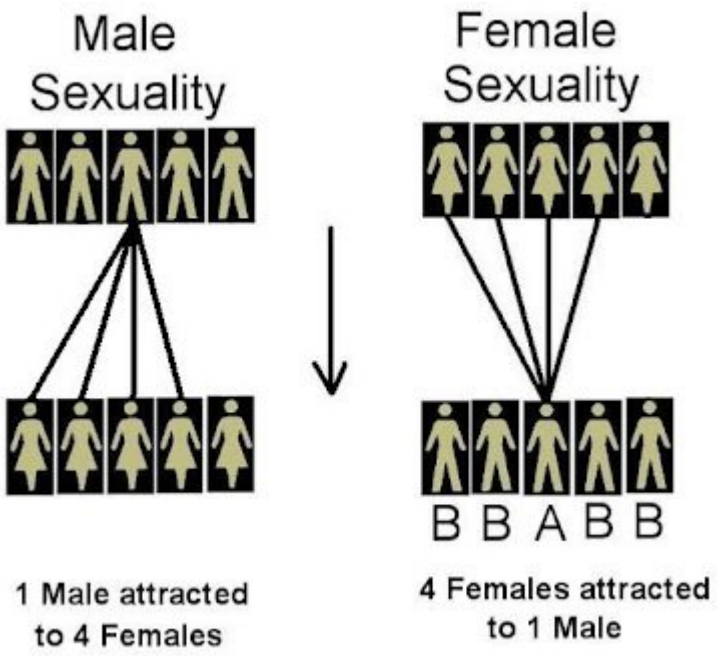
Love is for Suckers... Blood Suckers

. · 22 November 2010 · Archived copy · Original

In my last post, we discussed the phenomenon of women possessing equal sex drives to men, yet different by virtue of being *hypergamous.*

The essence of hypergamy is that women are attracted to males who are dominant over them. Dominant males are Alpha males.

.



.

But what is it really that “makes” an Alpha male?

Is one “naturally” an Alpha male or does the Alpha male come into existence because of the sum of certain Alpha *qualities* that he possesses?

I believe the answer is obvious. It is the nature of certain qualities, or features that are Alpha related, which together add up to create an Alpha male. Not all males who are strong and muscular are Alpha males just because of that one feature they possess. In fact, some body builders are the wimpiest mangina Beta males I have ever met. They couldn’t get a woman naked if their life depended on it.

All males possess both Alpha and Beta qualities. The more Alpha qualities, the more overall Alpha-like that male becomes. The less Alpha qualities, the more Beta-like he becomes.

Often when it is discussed why males of the past were placed in positions of headship in the family and society, we declare that it’s because of men’s linear thinking ability. That his natural appeal to reason and rationality makes him better suited for these positions as opposed to women, whose multi-tasking brains are based more on emotion than cold, hard logic.

I don’t disagree with that assumption. However, I would like to propose that there could also be a further motive for such a divide in gender roles.

Perhaps society was also structured in such a way to create more “Alpha qualities” amongst the greater population

of males, thus making a greater range of the male population *sexually attractive* to the females.

With mainly men in the workplace earning money instead of women, a broader spectrum of the male population would appeal to females because of the Alpha quality of money/resources they would possess.

With mainly men in positions of power in society (government etc.), more men would appeal to women's sexual desires because of the power they possessed.

Who was it that said "Power is the ultimate aphrodisiac."?

Why, it was Henry Kissinger.

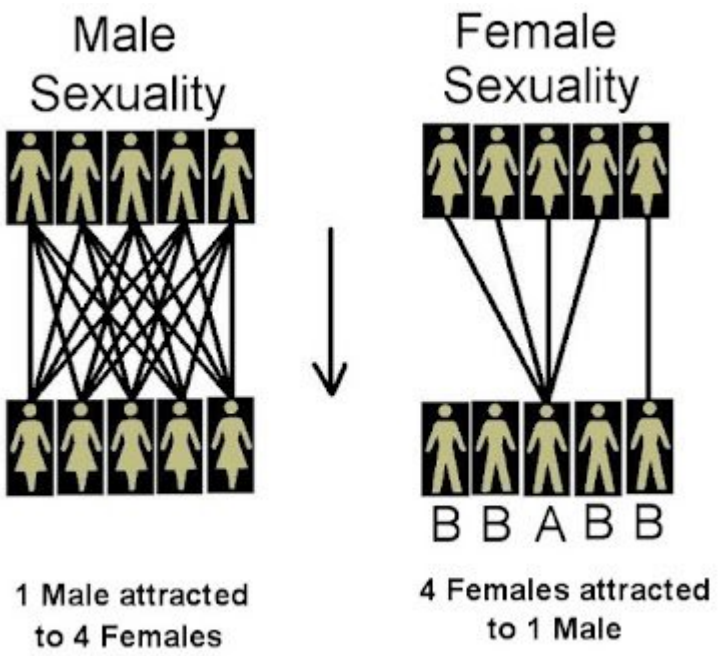
Now I'm not sure, but somehow I don't think that Kissinger is particularly the type of man that could be considered classically handsome.

And yet, he managed to nail uber-fembot, Gloria Steinem.

.

Poor little Ms. Steinem, despite all that pink slipper stomping, she was still a slave to her biology. Ain't Mother Nature a bitch?

You see, there is not much genetic diversity in the natural herd-like system which works with women only humping the 20% of males that are Alphas. There is plenty of diversity from the male side of the equation, but little diversity from the female's side.



.

It seems that women's sexual nature has compensated for this by use of Rotating Polyandry, whereby women skip from Alpha male to Alpha male, ensuring that their lifetime supply of 400 eggs get fertilized not by just one male but several, in a rotating mating cycle.

Rotating Polyandry is an interesting concept whereby the whole notion of "love" is based on a mating cycle of a few years – enough for a woman to be protected and provided for during the time when she is absolutely the most vulnerable. This period would be when she gets pregnant, gives birth, recuperates, and then nurses and cares for the child until it is no longer solely dependent on her for survival. (I.e. The child can walk, talk, and feed itself). This should all take around 4 years or so from start to finish.* (See study at the bottom of this article).

Then she moves on to the next male and repeats the process. (Sound familiar?) By going to the next male, she would ensure some genetic diversity amongst her offspring and thereby, increase her chances of passing on her genes throughout the ages.

In fact, the whole way that love works seems to support this theory. Love to men is based on what he *gives*. Love to women is based on what she *gets*. Plus, it has been noted many times that women don't really love men. Only gay men love men. Rather, women love being *loved.* And since, to a woman, being loved means that she "gets," it is fair to say that women actually love money and the trinkets that being in love gets them.

Women's love is parasitic.

Men's love is the host.

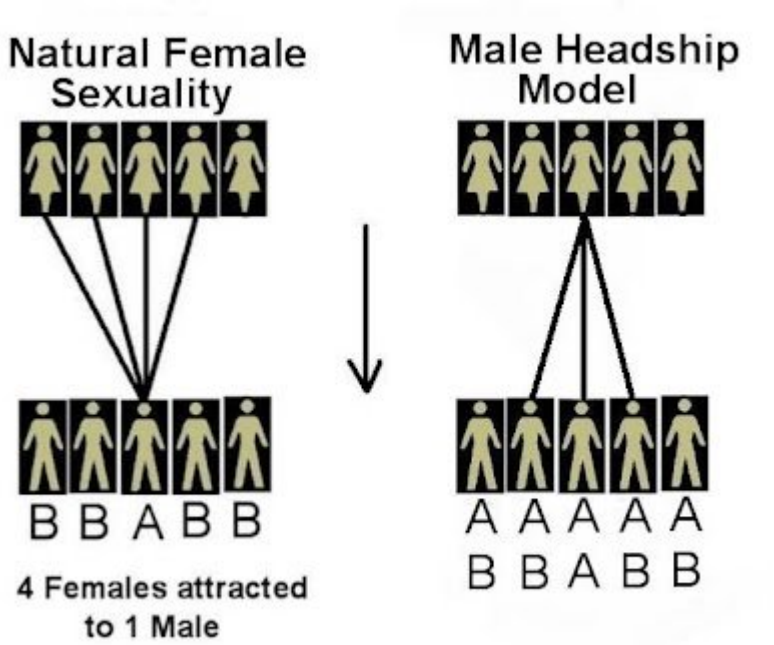
And this would make sense. If women's love is based on this parasitic function to ensure her and the child's survival, she would seek out the male with the *most* power and the *most* resources. Males with these qualities are Alpha males. They are the prime targets for a woman to wish to be "in love" with.

But anyway, back to the main point of why there might have been a sexual reason for placing men in a position of headship in society and the family.

These positions that men have traditionally held, those of wealth creation, of positions of power in society, that of the "head" of the family and so on, are all positions that naturally add to the Alpha qualities of males – all males.

Thus, with more males possessing Alpha qualities through their societal role of headship, there are more males for the females to be sexually attracted to.

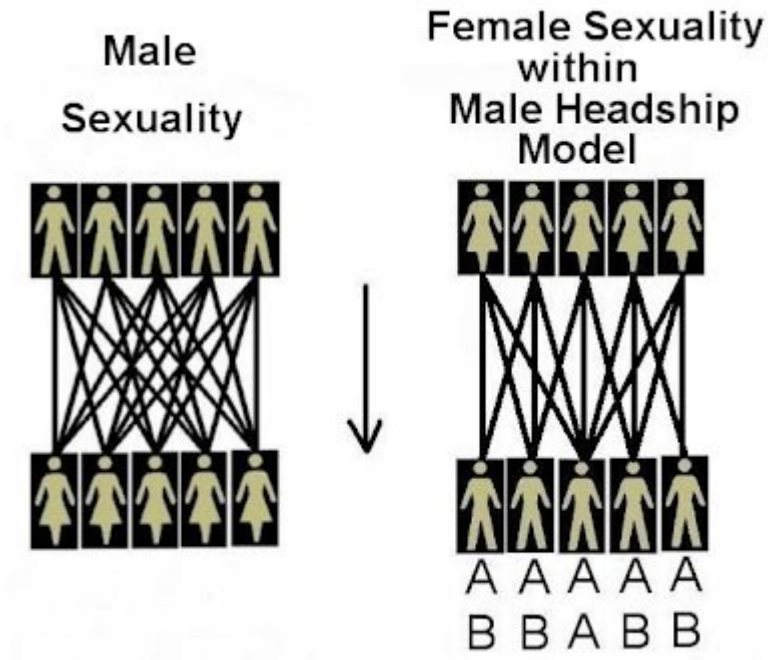
.



.

Once this is accomplished, we achieve our genetic diversity amongst the population by bringing more of the males directly into the breeding process, rather than relying on women's tendency for Rotating Polyandry.

.



.

What this model does is it brings more of the males in society into marriage by providing more females who are sexually interested in them, and therefore more men in society also have children that are their own and become motivated to work.

Once men have their own children, men willingly become yoked to them and will do whatever it takes to ensure their survival. This is what Daniel Amneus calls "putting sex to work" in his online book, The Case for Father Custody

With male headship in society and the family, more females are attracted to more males and therefore more males get put to work.

And, of course, due to the male's linear thinking brain, which invented everything around you with more than two moving parts, when all of the men in society start working and inventing and so on, sooner or later you will wind up with that great thing we call civilization.

.

.

Now, let's go back to the concept of Rotating Polyandry and the parasitic nature of women's sexuality.

Women's sexuality is designed to take resources from the male in order that she and her child might survive.

Men's "Alpha qualities" are based on his power and resources.

The more that a man gives to a woman, the less he has himself. In a sense, he gives his Alpha qualities to the woman and in doing so he becomes more Beta. Slowly on, his Beta qualities will overcome his Alpha qualities and the woman will find him less desirable compared to other males out there who haven't had the Alpha sucked out of them yet.

We see this phenomenon over and over again.

Women are complete sex fiends while dating a man, and then soon after marriage she becomes less interested in sex.

Why? Because she is now in direct possession of many of his Alpha qualities. They were transferred to her via marriage. His work (paycheck) becomes her equal possession whereas before marriage, this resource was his alone. His power to leave her is gone and therefore he has less negotiating power over her when she is being shrewish. It goes on and on.

With men in positions of headship in society and the family however, there are certain elements of his Alpha qualities that the woman cannot suck out of him. No matter what, he will still be the breadwinner, he will still be the one with power in society and he will still be the dominant figure within the home. Certain parts of a man's Alpha qualities were protected from being gobbled up by the woman.

Therefore, he still remains more Alpha in the woman's eyes and thus her sexual attraction for him remains greater. This would enable the relationship to endure longer than it would naturally and this is something that is needed for

the full potential of the “putting sex to work” concept to be realized.

With the runaway feminism we see in the modern day, this destruction of men’s Alpha qualities is even further magnified.

A woman earning $60,000 a year does not find a man earning $50,000 a year to possess an Alpha quality because of it.

With the full force of the corrupted DV Industry behind her, the wife's manipulation of State force far exceeds any physical dominance he previously had. In fact, *she* is the physically dominant one within this paradigm because State force allows her to push, kick, yell, scream, threaten and intimidate with impunity. He must meekly cower and accept it or the State will come in and beat the crap out of him on her behalf. There is nothing too Alpha in regard to the man in this situation at all.

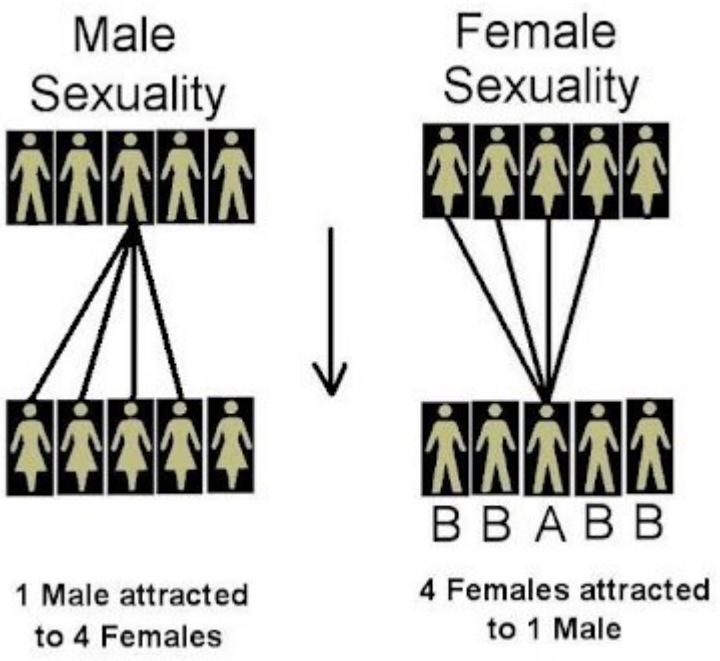
With the Divorce/Alimony/Child Custody Industry behind her, a man’s paycheck (his resource dominance) becomes hers whether she keeps him around or not. Another Alpha quality removed from men by feminism and the State.

With the television running 24/7 in most homes, even men’s intellectual dominance is under attack. Remember that most women declare they don’t find men attractive unless he is smarter than her? Well, the only males that are portrayed as intelligent on television are single men. Husbands are portrayed as dumb oafs on TV and women are constantly encouraged to scorn their husbands as too stupid to do anything right. Let’s not even get into the subject of D’Oprah Winfrey.

In fact, most of the Psychology and Therapy Industries support this “stupid husband” attack on men as well. Virtually all couples/marriage therapists attack the husband by default, declaring that the problems in the marriage are his fault because he is too stupid to know how to read his wife’s ever changing emotional state with ESP. She changes her emotional state more times than her underwear, yet men are somehow stupid for not knowing that what she wants now is entirely different than what she wanted a half hour ago.

Feminism supports all of this nonsense because they are married to Marxism, which wishes to destroy Capitalism and civilization.

They fully well know that destroying marriage will bring us back to this:
.



.

And they know that when society adheres to this sexual model, men won't be putting "sex to work" and our civilization will return to this:

.

.

But hey, that's all fine and good as long there is gobs of commitment free sex and women don't have to feel "oppressed" in any way.

.

Marriage is already a natural "Beta Maker," and presents many challenges to men and women's sexuality.

.

Feminism took these problems and intensified them to the point of the absurd.

.

At least with savages practicing Rotating Polyandry in the past, once the woman had parasitically sucked all the Alpha qualities out of a man, the discarded male was at least free from her and could go about rebuilding his resources and his life again.

.

Not so anymore with Feminism. Nope, now after a man is discarded, the woman can keep a leech like sucker attached to him via the State, while she finds another Alpha male to turn into a mere Beta.

.

Previous Index Next

MGTOW

“If it’s not right,Go Your Own Way!”

.....
..oooO.....
..(....).....
….\..(.....
…. _/.....
……....Oooo..
……....(....)…
……..)../....
.....(_/.....
.....

.

"When I started researching this book, I was prepared to rediscover the old saw that conventional femininity is nurturing and passive and that masculinity is self-serving, egotistical, and uncaring. But I did not find this. One of my findings here is that manhood ideologies always include a criterion of selfless generosity, even to the point of sacrifice. Again and again we find that 'real' men are those who give more than they take." -- David Gilmore in his 1990 book *Manhood in the Making*

.

.

Further Reading:

.

Science Can't Stop Proving Me Right --Chateau Heartiste

.

.

** Comparative primate studies sometimes indicate that humans are designed for monogamy. Among the monogamous white-handed gibbon (Hylobates lar), the average body weight of an adult male is about 1,000 times the weight of the average male’s testes (Dixson, 1998). Among humans, the average man’s body weight is about 1,300 times the size of the average man’s testes (Schultz, 1938), a ratio similar to the white-handed gibbon. In contrast, the more short-term-orientated common chimpanzee (Pan troglodytes) possesses extremely large testes with a body-testes ratio of only 350 (Dixson & Mundy, 1994), and the polygynous gorilla (Gorilla gorilla) has small testes with a body-testes ratio of over 5,000 (Hall-Craggs, 1962). Contradictory evidence regarding mating strategies exists in comparisons of primate seminal volume, sperm structure, and sperm quality (Baker & Bellis, 1995; Dixson, 1993; Moller, 1988). Overall, Dixson (1998) concluded that human male reproductive physiology is consistent with both monogamous and polygynous mating, providing only mixed support for the view that humans are monogamous. Humans display extreme levels of altriciality compared to other primates, requiring large parental investments and possessing a relatively delayed adolescence (T.M. Mueller, 1999).*

.

Mate desertion is generally associated with lower infant survival in foraging cultures (Hill & Hurtado, 1996), another indication that humans are designed for monogamy. Finally, humans possess several neurophysiological systems of attachment linked with pairbonding and monogamy across species (Fisher, 1998; Hazan & Zeifman, 1999; Young, 2003). ***Fisher (1992) suggests that human patterns of weaning, birth spacing, divorce, and remarriage all point to a system of serial monogamy. It takes about 4 years to wean a child in hunter-gatherer cultures, and birth spacing in a foraging environment averages about 4 years (Blurton Jones 1986). Many divorces occur between the fourth and sixth year of marriage (Fisher, 1989, 1992),*** *and men who practice serial monogamy are more reproductively successful than men who stay married to the same woman for a lifetime. Women who mate serially do not have reproductive advantage over other women (Buckle, Gallup, & Rodd, 1996).*

Excerpt from The Handbook Of Evolutionary Psychology (2005)(pages 259-261) edited by David Buss.

Sex Sells...

. · 22 November 2010 · Archived copy · Original

The following quote comes from *Legends of the Fall,* the movie which cemented Brad Pitt's status as a sex symbol throughout our culture. Pitt's character, Tristan Ludlow, had long flowing hair and looked wild. He was the untamed one in the family, so tough that nothing could hurt him; he and the grizzly once shared blood and now they were one spirit.

A woman would likely be wise to stay away from such a man, this character with a raw animal streak running through his soul… but yet, there is a soft side to him, a sliver of emotion that he hides, and reveals only to the women he loves.

Yes, the quintessential love interest…

The setting of the scene from which this quote comes is one in which Tristan (Pitt) is sitting outside talking with his younger brother Samuel (Henry Thomas), who is home from college with his fiancée Susannah (Julia Ormond). Samuel, a virgin, shyly inquires of his more experienced brother about the ways of sex and how to make sure he is "good at it," because Susannah has said she does not want to wait for marriage…

.

Tristan: *Samuel, God bless you. You are good at everything you do. I'm sure it'll be the same with fucking.*
Samuel: *Tristan, really. We're talking about my future wife.*
Tristan: *Oh, you're not going to fuck her?*
Samuel: *No! I'm planning to "be" with her.*
Tristan: *I recommend fucking.*
Samuel: *You're impossible!*
Tristan: *You brought it up!*

My goodness, Tristan!

How could you talk about a woman in such a disrespectful way?

That is not how Nice Guys™ talk about women! Nice Guys™ know that women are delicate creatures whose sexuality must be respected. For her to lower herself to a man's level and have sex with him indicates that a Nice Guy™ must worship her body, mind and spirit as the precious jewels which they so obviously are…

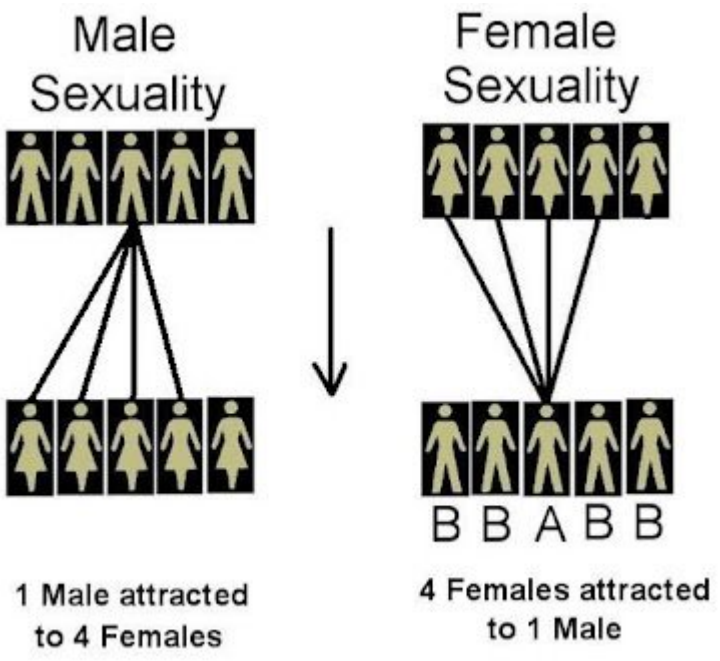
And how come women still find your character so sexy, Tristan? How can you suggest taking that nubile young woman and *fucking* her rather than "being" with her?

I wonder how many women in the theatre smirked when they heard that line… *"I'd recommend fucking*."?

What's up with that?

And to the readers of this fine blog who thought those lines were humor directed at the males in the audience, I encourage you to unplug from the fematrix and realign your mind with notion that the above scene, *including* the raw language, was in the movie *solely* for the women, with the intention of creating a character which females desire.

Society would have us believe that it is the men in society that are sex obsessed. Men are the ones who cannot control themselves. But remember, in my last piece we discussed that men and women are polar opposites who are necessarily equal but different, and thus women's sex drives are also equal to men's, but different.
.



.

While men may think about the act of sex on a frequent basis, women equally think about being sexy to a similar degree. They actively put on make-up, do their hair, wear push up bras and revealing clothes, and they are continually concerned if their jeans make their ass look big (no, your big ass makes your ass look big). The obvious motive of "looking sexy" is to attract sexual attention. What did you think it was for?

Women's natural sexual desire, however, is to have sex with a male who is dominant over them. They don't want to sleep with a Nice Guy™ who respects them; there is no excitement in that. They want a man who takes control of them and fucks them. "Making love" is for suckers. Wimps "make love" and talk about "being" with the glorious creature known as woman. Women would rather be dominated and get fucked.

We men rarely talk about sex, however. Men behave completely opposite of women, who talk amongst themselves about the most intimate details of the sex act, from their partner's physical attributes and performance to the daily ins and outs of their relationships. Men, on the other hand, rarely discuss the actual details of sex nor do men relate the turgid tale of the "mating dance" which got them into their sorry predicament with a woman in the first place.

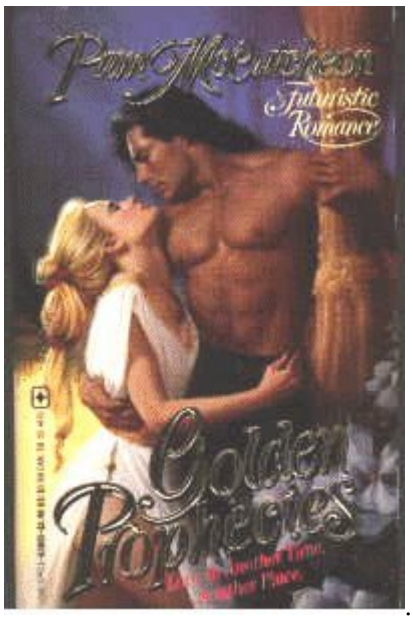
But women never shy away from talking about sex. Men fail themselves miserably by allowing feminists to dominate all talk about sexual relations between humans.

Feminists, in their attempt to destroy civilization, have tried to take this natural sexual phenomenon of women being attracted to domination and twisted it into something which it is not. They have insinuated there is something evil about the natural sexual interactions between man and woman.

One wonders how many of my good readers have ever picked up a romance novel. Not many, I would guess, as this genre of literature is aimed solely at a female audience. Romance novels are to women what Penthouse magazine is to men: Pornography intent on titillating the natural sexuality that exists within.

And who is the stereotypical masculine love object in the romance novels that women read? Well, here's a clue… he is *not* a Nice Guy™!

.



.

No indeed! There is usually a Nice Guy™ somewhere in the story line – he is the one who gets replaced by the dominant rogue who at first infuriates the main character with his callousness, while at the same time intriguing her.

The plot builds as does the sexual tension between the main character and the antagonist. He is a brute, an animal… uncontrollable. She is a lady and does not consort with the likes of him – and yet, something about his demeanor makes this man linger in her mind even when she is not in his presence… and that makes her angry at him. She becomes determined not to give in to the advances of this knave. She is a princess, after all.

The Harlequin climax arrives in a scene where the woman finds herself alone with this bull of a man. There is passion, electricity… he makes his move… she resists and pushes him away, but he is not willing to back down so easily. This beast's sexual desire for our fair maiden roars as if it were an uncontrollable inferno. He grabs her roughly in his arms. She feels his raw strength as he pulls her into his muscular chest and lowers his mouth over hers.

"No," she mumbles half-heartedly, "I mustn't!"

Our rogue listens not, and continues ravaging our heroine with his lips when she feels his strong hand cup her breast, causing her nipple to harden beneath her thin blouse…

She can resist no more; her own animal desires begin to overcome her rationality. She gives in and lets this beast take her. Her clothing comes of quickly and roughly amidst the passionate kisses… she is no longer in control, the universe has overwhelmed her… she feels his hardness enter her, penetrating both her body and soul as their passion develops into a surreal experience that transcends life itself…

Yes, this is *women's* porn!

.

.

And in women's porn, she gets dominated. In fact, by all legal standards of the modern day, women's porn involves being sexually assaulted and then raped by a man who ends up completely owning her entire existence.

And women buy these books and read them for a sexual thrill – men don't write this shit, nor do they buy it or read it.

This is the essence of female sexual seduction: He makes his move… she resists… he doesn't take no for an answer… she resists some more… his animal desire for her prevents him from stopping… she says no again, but this time only half heartedly… he continues, and she finally gives in and submits, so overwhelmed is she with desire that things are completely out of her control.

She gets dominated by a man who is superior to her.

And notice that the dominate man is not "with" her.

Nope.

He fucks her.

Perhaps this is why the sexual fantasizing of being "forced" to have sex is so popular with women. Being "forced" to have sex is essentially rape, and yet numerous women actually masturbate to the fantasy of this crime.

Have you ever masturbated to the thought of your car getting stolen?

The eroticism of being dominated and "forced" is that it allows the submissive to do things they would not normally do – to come out of their shell, as it were. She may deny that she is the type of girl who will willingly do certain kinky things, but if she is being dominated and is told to do them then she can partake in these deep desires without having to blame herself for it – she was "forced" to do it, after all. (This is the essence of most BDSM, btw).

Another favourite fantasy among women is getting a good spanking from her man.

.

.

Yes, the amount of ladies that are turned on by the thought of being put over a man's knee and having her bare bottom smacked is truly amazing. And… how dominant of the man and submissive of her.

All Pick Up Artists (PUA's) know that women desire to be dominated – this is the PUA's entire game. The techniques may vary, but essentially all successful PUA's spend their time around a woman establishing dominance over her.

The PUA does not monkey around with "respecting" her and glorifying her with trite comments of her being a "strong woman." That's what Nice Guy's™ do. The PUA lets a woman know pretty quickly that he wants sex from her. He is a lover, not a friend. He finds something to tease her about, putting her down in a fun way, to establish dominance. When they walk off the dance floor, he puts his hand on the small of her back so he can gently direct where she walks - taking control of her. He basically spends his entire "game" displaying that he is superior to her – be it physically, emotionally, cerebrally or whatever else. The PUA knows that if she views him as superior to her, he can have her panties around her ankles in no time.

.

.

In fact, the act of sex itself can be viewed as the ultimate act of dominance and submission between a man and a woman.

Think about it. What could be more submissive than to be a woman whose body is penetrated and humped madly until she is left full of a man's semen, essentially leaving her "bred."

The sex act itself is domination and submission, and while a man may find it erotic to look down and see the submissive woman he is screwing, the equal opposite is that she finds it erotic to look up at the dominant man who is screwing her. Notice that in the act of sex it is usually considered to be the man that is "doing" her, rather than the other way around.

This is the essence of *hypergamy*. Hypergamy is basically a desire for dominance from one's mate.

Women are definitely hypergamous.

Don't believe me?

Have a look at the next 10 couples you meet.

Who is taller, the male or the female? You will notice that females nearly universally date men that are taller than them. A 5' 10" woman will be dating a 6'1" male. A 5' 6" woman will date a 5' 8" male. But it is pretty rare to find the 5' 10" woman dating the 5' 8" male.

.

.

Who makes more money, the male or the female? You will find nearly universally that the man makes more money than the female. Male lawyers date female secretaries. Male doctors date female nurses. Male factory workers date waitresses. This is nearly universal. What is hard to find is the female doctor dating the male nurse, or the female CEO dating the struggling male poet.

.

.

Who is more intelligent, the male or the female? It is pretty common even for females to admit that they must date men who are smarter than themselves.

Why do women nearly universally list confidence as a sexually attractive trait in a male? Because confident males are dominant males, that's why. Confidence is derived from the *power* one possesses.

Females are *naturally* attracted to males that are dominant over them.

Feminists are furious at this *natural* phenomenon in much the same way they are furious that women are the natural bearers of children. From their anger against heterosexuality, they have attacked *both* men and women by trying to criminalize human sexual behaviour.

Feminists tell women that the kind of sex they naturally desire, the kind women themselves read and fantasize about it in Harlequin romance novels, is in fact rape:

"Compare victims' reports of rape with women's reports of sex. They look a lot alike… [T]he major distinction between intercourse (normal) and rape (abnormal) is that the normal happens so often that one cannot get anyone to see anything wrong with it." – Catharine MacKinnon, quoted in Christina Hoff Sommers, "Hard Line Feminists Guilty of Ms.-Representation," Wall Street Journal, November 7, 1991.

"And if the professional rapist is to be separated from the average dominant heterosexual [male], it may be mainly a quantitative difference." – Susan Griffith, *Rape: The All-American Crime*

Without the typically virulent feminist anger, the following concept could easily be described in an erotic way, suitable for a romance novel:

"Men's sexuality is mean and violent, and men so powerful that they can 'reach WITHIN women to fuck/construct us from the inside out.' Satan-like, men possess women, making their wicked fantasies and desires women's own. A woman who has sex, therefore, does so against her own will. , 'even if she does not feel forced.'" – Judith Levine, (explicating comment profiling prevailing misandry.)

Even the dominating act of a man filling a woman with his semen, the very act that causes life itself, is sought to be criminalized and degraded by feminists:

"Women are kept, maintained and contained through terror, violence and the spray of semen…" – Cheryl Clarke, "Lesbianism, An Act of Resistance," in This Bridge Called My Back: Writing By Radical Women of Color

How odd then that most women seem to downright prefer to have bareback sex. Why, it is as if they actually enjoy getting this terrifying semen inside their bodies!

Yes indeed. And when a woman actually has good, enjoyable sex – the kind that grips her body with a shuddering orgasm - this is apparently a bad thing according to feminists as well:

"When a woman reaches orgasm with a man she is only collaborating with the patriarchal system, eroticizing her own oppression." – Sheila Jeffrys

Perhaps she is eroticizing her own "oppression" because it is what naturally gets her rocks off. Why is it chic and cool to keep a vibrator in the nightstand, but "oppressive" and degrading to orgasm from the natural act of sex?

Men did not plant this idea in women's head that they must be submissive. In fact, since most men are beta-male Nice Guys™ who talk and act respectfully to women while never getting laid by them, it is pretty obvious that it is not men who are responsible for this phenomenon of domination-submission that causes women to get turned on. Most Nice Guys™ believe the exact opposite – that if he glorifies and praises her, she will like him more. Wrong!

No, men did not "force" women into submission – women *naturally* desire men who are better than them. They

want men who are taller than them, who are smarter than them, who are richer than them. Women sexually desire men who are more powerful than them – and this power naturally exudes from a man who possesses it in the form of *confidence.*

Yes, hypergamy.

This does *not* mean that *all* men make more money than women, nor that *all* men are smarter or more powerful than women… it just means that a woman does not find men who have failed to surpass her own power to be sexually attractive to her. A 5'10" woman is obviously taller than a 5'8" man, but the odds are that she is not sleeping with short stuff. She is most likely sleeping with the 6'1" man that lives next door to him while the short man is likely dating a woman even shorter than himself.

Dominance has an equal opposite: Submission.

In my next post, I will attempt to explain how hypergamy existed in the past, and how it has been manipulated in the present as a weapon against men, women and civilization.

Previous Index Next

MGTOW

"If it's not right,Go Your Own Way!"

.....
..oooO.....
..(....).....
….\..(.....
…. _/.....
…….....Oooo..
…….....(....)…
……..)../....
.....(_/.....
.....

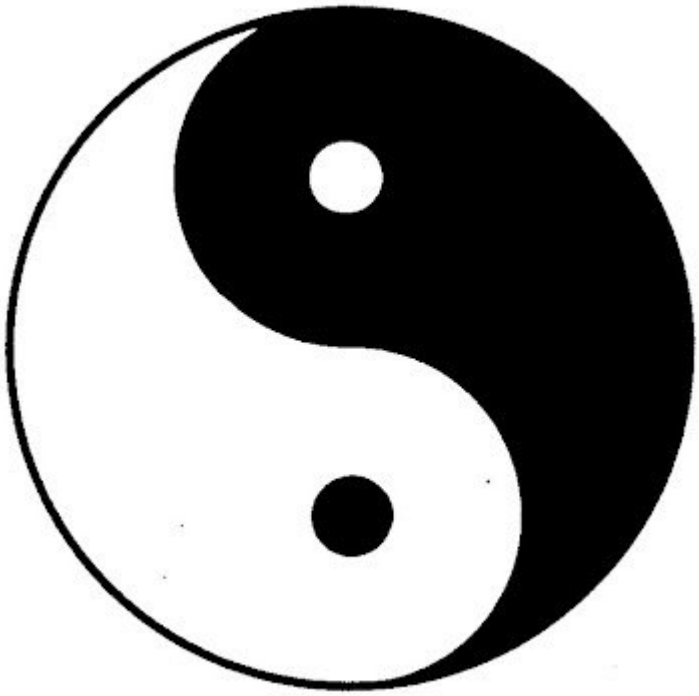
"It is almost a tertiary sexual character of the male, and certainly it acts on the female as such, that she expects from him the interpretation and illumination of her thoughts. It is from this reason that so many girls say that they could only marry, or, at least, only love a man who was cleverer than themselves; that they would be repelled by a man who said that all they thought was right, and did not know better than they did. ***In short, the woman makes it a criterion of manliness that the man should be superior to herself mentally, that she should be influenced and dominated by the man; and this in itself is enough to ridicule all ideas of sexual equality."*** -- Otto Weininger, Sex and Character, Male and Female Characteristics

Male and Female: Equal but Different

. · 22 November 2010 · Archived copy · Original

Males and females are polar opposites. They are as up is to down as night is to day. One thing that is common to all opposites is that by the very nature of being opposite, *they must be equal.* If they were not equal, it would be impossible for them to be opposite. In any given year, at any spot on earth, there are an exactly equal amount of daytime hours and nighttime hours. The same is true of males and females; they are polar opposites and therefore are equal. However, we are not talking about legal equality here, but rather the essence that makes "male" and "female" has equality unique unto itself.

.



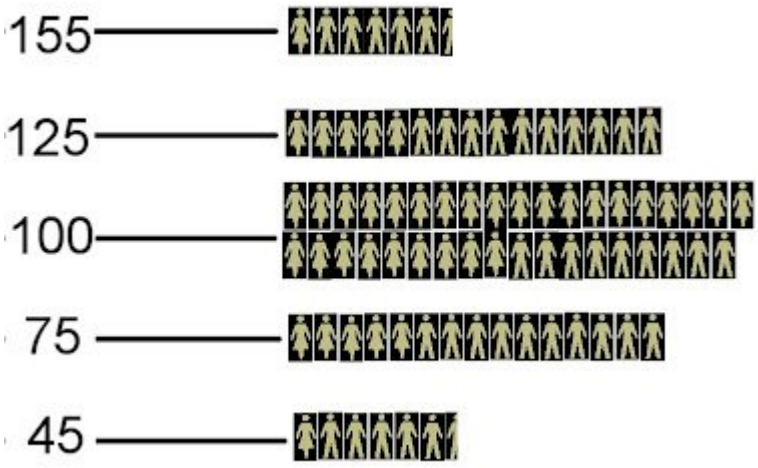
.

In terms of intelligence, men and women are equal in that the average IQ of all males is equal to the average IQ of all females. There is a difference in how these equal intelligences are arrived at however.

Female intelligence is clustered around the mean far more than male intelligence. There is far less variation in female intelligence. To put it more simply, the female population's intelligence tends to be concentrated in greater numbers around the average IQ of 100, while the male population has a greater range on *both* the high and low IQ scale. A far greater percentage of female IQ's reside between 90 to 110 than males, while conversely, males inhabit the extremes of IQ between 70 to 130 in far greater percentage than females. The more you go to the extremes, the more it becomes virtually all male, in both high and low.

When one takes *all* of the IQ's of the female population into account to find an average IQ, and then takes *all* of the IQ's of the male population to find their average, the collective IQ's of the two sexes are virtually identical, even though there are vast differences in their variability.

.



.

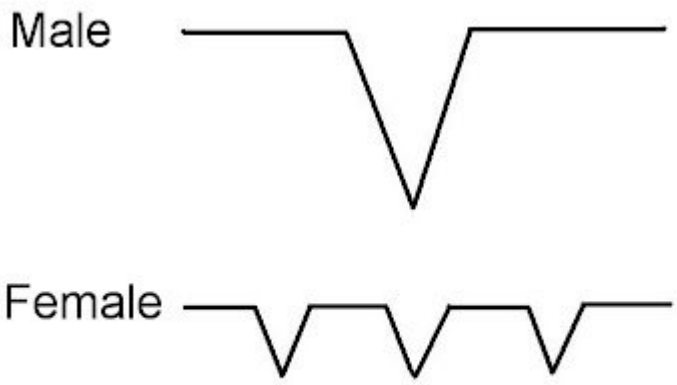
When one looks at “happiness,” we find the same thing as we find in intelligence.

Researchers have discovered that when they ask men to rate the periods of their lives where they feel satisfied or dissatisfied, they find that men have a major “spike” of dissatisfaction commonly known as Mid-Life Crisis.

When asking the females, what they find is that women do not have a major mid life crisis like men; however, they have several “mini” mid life crises that occur at various times in their cycle of life.

When the researchers total up all of the time in a male’s life to find his “average” happiness and compare it to the female’s average happiness throughout her life, what they find is that both males and females have almost the identical *average* amount of happiness in their respective lives. However, the male’s midlife crisis is far more intense than anything the typical female will ever experience – but, he only goes through it once.

.



.

If we look at sin, or good and evil, what would you expect to find except again the same phenomenon?

.

When a boy is bad it is very noticeable and often in the form of an outburst or some form of physical aggression. It is very hard to miss a male’s evil because its nature is overt and it occurs as a “spike.” Male aggression is stereotypically to hit, kick, shout or destroy something. The boy may go through long periods of “nothing” followed by a spike that is hard to ignore.

.

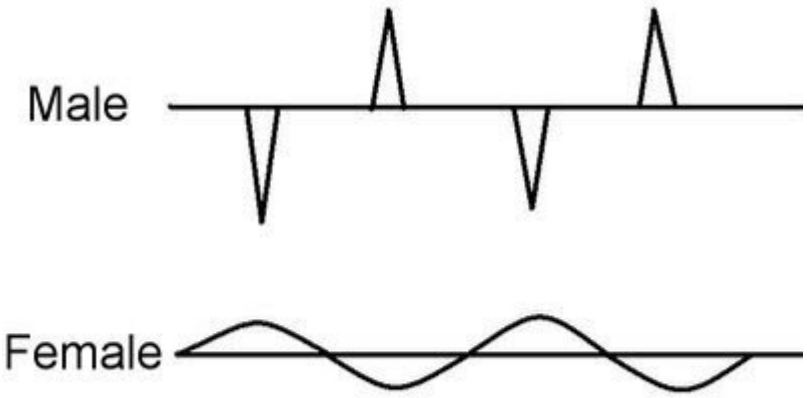
A girl, on the other hand, uses covert aggression. More commonly this is known as “Social Aggression” or

“Relational Aggression” and it is stereotypically a female form of aggression. Its nature is to use gossip or social manipulation to hurt the targeted party, and this necessarily occurs over a longer period of time and is less visible than the male’s aggression.

.

What we end up seeing is that male aggression occurs as a noticeable spike that lasts only a short time while female aggression is less intense *but lasts over a longer period of time.* When we average out the two forms of aggression, we again will find that both male and female are equal, but different.

.



.

The essence of “maleness” is that things occur with infrequent but large “spikes” while the essence of “femaleness” is that things occur with more frequent but less identifiable “rhythms.” When one averages them out, men and women are equal yet they have gotten to their equal averages by different means.

Now, to the point of “equal but different,” it must also be noted that male and female sex drives are equal but different in the same manner as the above examples.

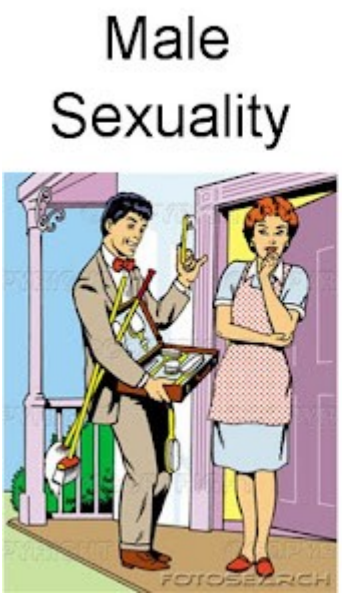
Jack Kammer, in his online book, If Men Have All The Power, How Come Women Make The Rules? said it best, so I will steal his example:

Male sexuality is like a pushy door to door salesman; it picks one target and gets in your face so much that you simply cannot ignore it.

Female sexuality, however, is like annoying junk mail. It is everywhere and steadily drones on and on at *everybody,* whether they are the intended target or not.

While males may think about the sex act itself more than women, the equal opposite is that women think about being “sexy” to the same degree.

.



.

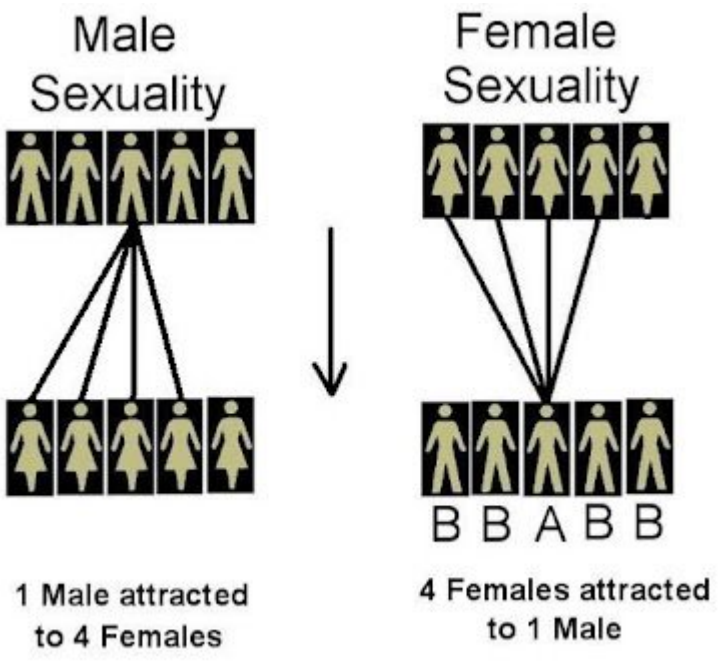
Males and females both have *equal* sex drives, but they work in different ways. Even physically, men and women are equally sexual.
Men have fewer but far more intense erogenous zones, while women have erogenous zones located all over their bodies. In fact, it is fair to say that a woman's entire body is an erogenous zone that is dispersed with lowered sexual sensitivity but over a greater area, making it equal to the man's. This is why women are so much more into "intimacy" and the mental aspects of sex. Her entire body is involved in having sex whereas only certain, but more intense, parts of the male's body are.

In the end of it all, men and women both have equal desires to have sex and to be sexual creatures, although they are expressed in different ways. Women have their biological clocks and get "baby rabies" that demand of them to go out and get impregnated with the same intense irrationalness that men display when they are willing to do anything to copulate with a female, including the willingness to commit treason or sell out one's own mother.

It is horribly inaccurate for one to say that only men want sex. It is far more accurate to say that both men and women want sex equally. In fact, the only imperatives of all living things is to: 1). Survive, so that one can: 2). Reproduce. All other things are in support of these two imperatives that are universal to all living things. Males and females both have an equal desire to do this. Sex is the core of existence itself.

We may think that we humans are smarter than animals, but when it comes to sexual instinct we are animals that follow the same mating patterns as most other species in the animal kingdom.

This has become even more evident since the sexual revolution arrived and women became free from pregnancy via the pill, and free from the social stigmas associated with being a "loose" woman.
One needs only to look at studies of sexually transmitted disease by gender to see that STD's affect a far greater percentage of the female population than the male population. There is a reason for this: 80% of the females are sleeping with 20% of the males, and those males are the alpha males in society. Humans have reverted back to the mating instincts found in most of the animal kingdom where the alpha males breed most of the females, while the beta males breed with none.
.



.

Again, you can see that male sexuality and female sexuality are “equal yet opposite.”

This “equal-opposite” aspect of sexuality is essential in understanding patriarchy and why things were set up in certain ways, which I will attempt to describe and explain in my next post.

Previous Index Next

MGTOW

“If it’s not right, Go Your Own Way!”

.....
..oooO.....
..(....).....
….\..(.....
…. _/.....
…….....Oooo..
…….....(....)…
……..)../....
.....(_/.....
.....

.

Further Reading:

.

Sex, Mathematics, And Political Correctness -- by Fred Reed

Rats (Or, He Chases Her Until She Catches Him)

“Really, women’s desire is not relational, it’s narcissictic.’ — it’s dominated by the yearnings of ‘self-love,’ by the wish to be the object of erotic admiration and sexual need. Still, on the subject of narcissism, she talked about research indicating that, in comparison with men, women’s erotic fantasies center less on giving pleasure and more on getting it. ‘When it comes to desire,’ she added, ‘women may be far less relational than men.’” -- Sex and Relationships, Bonobo Sex, and ‘Lady Boners’: Is Women’s Desire Really That Confusing? – by Vanessa Richmond

.

.

From Belfort Bax's 1913 piece The Fraud of Feminism pp.25-27

.

Now let us consider the whole of the differentiations of the mental character between man and woman in the light of a further generalisation which is sufficiently obvious in itself and which has been formulated with special clearness by the late Otto Weininger in his remarkable book,"Geschlecht und Charakter" (Sex and Character). I refer to the observations contained in Section II.,Chaps. 2 and 3.

.

The point has been, of course, previously noted, and the present writer, among others, has on various occasions called special attention to it. But its formulation and elaboration by Weininger is the most complete I know. The truth in question consists in the fact, undeniable to all those not rendered impervious to facts by preconceived dogma, that, as I have elsewhere put it, while man has a sex, woman is a sex. Let us hear Weininger on this point. *"Woman is only sexual, man is also sexual. Alike in time and space this difference may be traced in man, parts of his body susceptible to sexual excitement are small in number and strictly localised. In woman sexuality is diffused over the whole body, every contact on whatever part excites her sexually."*

.

Weininger points out that while the sexual element in man, owing to the physio-logical character of the sexual organs, may be at times more violent than that in woman, yet that it is spasmodic and occurs in crises separated by intervals of quiescence. In woman, on the otherhand, while less spasmodic, it is continuous. The sexual instinct with man being, as he styles it, "anappendix" and no more, he can raise himself mentally entirely outside of it. *"He is conscious of it as of something which he possesses but which is not inseparate from the rest of his nature. He can view it objectively. With woman this is not the case; the sex element is part of her whole nature. Hence, it is not as with man, clearly recognisable in local manifestations, but subtly affects the whole life of the organism. For this reason the man is conscious of the sexual element within him as such, whereas the woman is unconscious of it as such. It is not for nothing that in common parlance woman is spoken of as 'the sex.' In this sexual differentiation of the whole life-nature of woman from man, deducible as it is from physiological andanatomical distinctions, lies the ground of those differentiations of function which culminate in the fact that while mankind in its intellectual moral and technical development is represented in the main by Man, Woman has continued to find her chief function in the direct procreation of the race."*

.

.

"The central organizing principle of primate social life is competition between females and especially female lineages... Females should be, if anything, more competitive than males, not less, although the manner in which females compete may be less direct, less boisterous, and hence, more difficult to measure" -- *The Woman That Never Evolved* -- by Sarah Blaffer Hrdy

.

.

“**Study debunks stereotype that men think about sex all day long**”

[T]he research discredits the persistent stereotype that men think about sex every seven seconds, which would amount to more than 8,000 thoughts about sex in 16 waking hours. In the study, the median number of young men's thought about sex stood at almost 19 times per day. Young women in the study reported a median of nearly 10 thoughts about sex per day.

As a group, the men also thought about food almost 18 times per day and sleep almost 11 times per day, compared to women's median number of thoughts about eating and sleep, at nearly 15 times and about 8 1/2 times, respectively. – Medical Xpress

(*** Please note, even though I posted this to show how stupid this meme has become, one still has to realize the way feminist researchers came to this "once every X seconds" BS is by taking the amount of hours one spends in *a day* thinking about such things, then dividing it by the amount of seconds in a day, and coming up with every seven or fifteen, or whatever seconds, to make it seem like men are stunted rapists thinking about sex constantly. What they are really saying is that men thought about sex for 15 minutes, multiplied by X per day (maybe three times, or six times a day), which is not surprising, and then divided the total amount of those times into how many seconds are in each day. It is totally bogus propaganda which was used to fuel the rape industry. So men think about sex for 10 minutes at a time, 8 times a day, while women think about sex 7 times a day for 5 minutes. Does that really make men into walking hardons that are looking for easy rape victims?)

From Otto Weininger's *Sex and Character*, Male and Female Sexuality

"Contrary to the general opinion, ***there is no difference in the total sexual impulses of the sexes.*** However, if we examine the matter in respect to the two component forces into which Albert Moll analysed the impulse, we shall find that a difference does exist. These forces may be termed the "liberating" and the "uniting" impulses. The first appears in the form of the discomfort caused by the accumulation of ripe sexual cells; the second is the desire of the ripe individual for sexual completion. Both impulses are possessed by the male; in the female only the latter is present. The anatomy and the physiological processes of the sexes bear out the distinction.

In this connection it may be noted that only the most male youths are addicted to masturbation, and although it is often disputed, I believe that similar vices occur only among the maler of women, and are absent from the female nature.

I must now discuss the "uniting" impulse of women, for that plays the chief, if not the sole part in her sexuality. But it must not be supposed that this is greater in one sex than the other. **Any such idea comes from a confusion between the desire for a thing and the stimulus towards the active part in securing what is desired.** Throughout the animal and plant kingdom, the male reproductive cells are the motile, active agents, which move through space to seek out the passive female cells, and this physiological difference is sometimes confused with the actual wish for, or stimulus to, sexual union. And to add to the confusion, it happens, in the animal kingdom particularly, that the male, in addition to the directly sexual stimulus, has the instinct to pursue and bodily capture the female, whilst the latter has only the passive part to be taken possession of. These differences of habit must not be mistaken for real differences of desire.

It can be shown, moreover, that woman is sexually much more excitable (not more sensitive) physiologically than man.

The condition of sexual excitement is the supreme moment of a woman's life. The woman is devoted wholly to sexual matters, that is to say, to the spheres of begetting and of reproduction. Her relations to her husband and

children complete her life, whereas the male is something more than sexual. In this respect, rather than in the relative strength of the sexual impulses, there is a real difference between the sexes. **It is important to distinguish between the intensity with which sexual matters are pursued and the proportion of the total activities of life that are devoted to them and to their accessory cares.** The greater absorption of the human female by the sphere of sexual activities is the most significant difference between the sexes.

The female, moreover, is completely occupied and content with sexual matters, whilst men are interested in much else, in war and sport, in social affairs and feasting, in philosophy and science, in business and politics, in religion and art. I do not mean to imply that this difference has always existed, as I do not think that important. As in the case of the Jewish question, it may be said that the Jews have their present character because it has been forced upon them, and that at one time they were different. It is now impossible to prove this, and we may leave it to those who believe in the modification by the environment to accept it. The historical evidence is equivocal on the point. In the question of women, we have to take people as they exist today. If, however, we happen to come on attributes that could not possibly have been grafted on them from without, we may believe that such have always been with them. Of contemporary women at least one thing is certain. Apart from an exception to be noted in chap. xii, it is certain that when the female occupies herself with matters outside the interests of sex, it is for the man that she loves or by whom she wishes to be loved. She takes no real interest in things themselves. It may happen that a real female learns Latin; if so, it is for some such purpose as to help her son who is at school. Desire for a subject and ability for it, interest in it, and the facility for acquiring it, are usually proportional. He who has slight muscles has no desire to wield an axe; those without the faculty for mathematics do not desire to study that subject. Talent seems to be rare and feeble in the real female (although possibly it is merely that the dominant sexuality prevents its development), with the result that woman has no power of forming the combinations which, although they do not actually make the individuality, certainly shape it.

Corresponding to true women, there are extremely female men who are to be found always in the apartments of the women, and who are interested in nothing but love and sexual matters. Such men, however, are not the Don Juans.

The female principle is, then, nothing more than sexuality; the male principle is sexual and something more. This difference is notable in the different way in which men and women enter the period of puberty. In the case of the male the onset of puberty is a crisis; he feels that something new and strange has come into his being, that something has been added to his powers and feelings independently of his will. The physiological stimulus to sexual activity appears to come from outside his being, to be independent of his will, and many men remember the disturbing event throughout their after lives. The woman, on the other hand, not only is not disturbed by the onset of puberty, but feels that her importance has been increased by it. The male, as a youth, has no longing for the onset of sexual maturity; the female, from the time when she is still quite a young girl, looks forward to that time as one from which everything is to be expected. Man's arrival at maturity is frequently accompanied by feelings of repulsion and disgust; the young female watches the development of her body at the approach of puberty with excitement and impatient delight. It seems as if the onset of puberty were a side path in the normal development of man, whereas in the case of woman it is the direct conclusion. There are few boys approaching puberty to whom the idea that they would marry (in the general sense, not a particular girl) would not appear ridiculous, whilst the smallest girl is almost invariably excited and interested in the question of her future marriage. For such reasons a woman assigns positive value only to her period of maturity in her own case and that of other women; in childhood, as in old age, she has no real relation to the world. The thought of her childhood is for her, later on, only the remembrance of her stupidity; she faces the approach of old age with dislike and abhorrence. The only real memories of her childhood are connected with sex, and these fade away in the intensely greater significance of her maturity. The passage of a woman from virginity is the great dividing point of her life, whilst the corresponding event in the case of a male has very little relation to the course of his life.

Woman is only sexual, man is partly sexual, and this difference reveals itself in various ways. The parts of the

male body by stimulation of which sexuality is excited are limited in area, and are strongly localised, whilst in the case of the woman, they are diffused over her whole body, so that stimulation may take place almost from any part. When in the second chapter of Part I., I explained that sexuality is distributed over the whole body of both sexes, I did not mean that, therefore, the sense organs, through which the definite impulses are stimulated, were equally distributed. **There are, certainly, areas of greater excitability, even in the case of the woman, but there is not, as in the man, a sharp division between the sexual areas and the body generally.**

The morphological isolation of the sexual area from the rest of the body in the case of man, may be taken as symbolical of the relation of sex to his whole nature. Just as there is a contrast between the sexual and the sexless parts of a man's body, so there is a time-change in his sexuality. **The female is always sexual, the male is sexual only intermittently. The sexual instinct is always active in woman (as to the apparent exceptions to this sexuality of women, I shall have to speak later on), whilst in man it is at rest from time to time. And thus it happens that the sexual impulse of the male is eruptive in character and so appears stronger. The real difference between the sexes is that in the male the desire is periodical, in the female continuous.**

This exclusive and persisting sexuality of the female has important physical and psychical consequences. As the sexuality of the male is an adjunct to his life, it is possible for him to keep it in the physiological background, and out of his consciousness. And so a man can lay aside his sexuality and not have to reckon with it. A woman has not her sexuality limited to periods of time, nor to localised organs. And so it happens that a man can know about his sexuality, whilst a woman is unconscious of it and can in all good faith deny it, because she is nothing but sexuality, because she is sexuality itself.

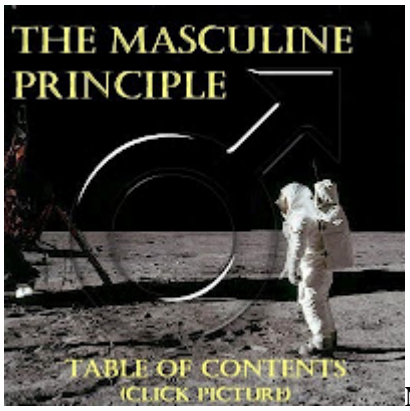
It is impossible for women, because they are only sexual to recognise their sexuality, because recognition of anything requires duality. With man it is not only that he is not merely sexual, but anatomically and physiologically he can "detach" himself from it. That is why he has the power to enter into whatever sexual relations he desires; if he likes he can limit or increase such relations; he can refuse or assent to them. He can play the part of a Don Juan or a monk. He can assume which he will. To put it bluntly, man possesses sexual organs; her sexual organs possess woman.

We may, therefore, deduce from the previous arguments that man has the power of consciousness of his sexuality and so can act against it, whilst the woman appears to be without this power. This implies, moreover, that there is greater differentiation in man, as in him the sexual and the unsexual parts of his nature are sharply separated. The possibility or impossibility of being aware of a particular definite object is, however, hardly a part of the customary meaning of the word consciousness, which is generally used as implying that if a being is conscious he can be conscious of any object. This brings me to consider the nature of the female consciousness."

Marriage is Fraud

. · 22 November 2010 · Archived copy · Original

.



NOTICE: This article has been updated and moved to *The Masculine Principle*. Please click here to read the new version or scroll down to continue reading in the old format.

.

***

[Do you believe women have the right] to divorce?

Answer:

Ah… I suspect this question is based on the tired old feminist refrain, “Women were owned as chattel!”

.

I think in order for this question to be properly answered, one must first examine the concept that marriage is an *economic* contract based on property rights.

You see, all throughout the animal kingdom, motherhood is a pretty common theme. It is positively everywhere! What is not common in the animal kingdom however, is *fatherhood*. Nope, not too many baby deer know who their fathers are. Fatherhood is a foreign concept in most of the animal kingdom.

Female mammals often find themselves living in a herd filled with many other females, all being bred by one dominant alpha male. The females congregate in herds because it is the only way they and their offspring can safely survive. Yes, herd living is true Communism where all is shared and they all get fat or starve together. Ever wonder why women tend to all think the same way and why they desire big, Socialist government over individualism and freedom? Ever wonder why women will stick up for another woman even when they *know* that woman is obviously in the wrong? It's because of their allegiance to the herd. The herd comes first. Now you know.

But, one must wonder, what happens to the males that don't become the alpha male who breeds the whole lot of women?

Well, when a male reaches sexual maturity, he must challenge for breeding rights within the herd. Those males who fail to successfully challenge the alpha males become beta males, and get forced to leave the herd by the alpha. The beta males generally end up living on the fringes of the herd/society where they fend for themselves *individually*.

Now, interestingly, the beta males living *outside* the herd seem to manage to survive *individually* just fine without the need to be part of a herd like the females do. This is because the male is not saddled with children and, also, he is stronger than a female. The male has a *surplus* of labour which enables him to live individually apart from the herd. In fact, a male has so much surplus labour, that if he lives individually he needs only to expend about 20-30% of it to ensure his survival.

When one stands back and observes the whole lot, we see that both males and females have a surplus and a shortage:

Males have a surplus of labour but a shortage of reproductive ability.

Females have a surplus of reproductive ability but a shortage of labour.

Now, perhaps, you can see why marriage is an *economic* contract.

The male "sells" his surplus labour to the female in exchange for her reproductive ability.

The female "sells" her reproductive ability to the male in exchange for his surplus labour.

In order to "sell" something, you first must "own it" yourself, and upon "selling it," you are agreeing to transfer ownership of it to the buyer. This is the basis of economics, and as you can see, it is based on *property rights*.

In the *economic* contract of marriage, the female agrees to transfer the *ownership* of her sexual reproductive ability to the male, and she takes *ownership* of his surplus labour as payment for it.

.

So, yes, while the feminists harp on and on that women were once "owned" as chattel, there is truth to this because in a very real sense, a woman's *sexuality* became the property of the husband. He very much was considered to "own" her sexuality *and the products of her sexuality (children).* The children of a *marriage* became *his* property,

because he *paid* for them.

(Note that while the children of a marriage are supposed to belong to the husband, children born out of wedlock are the property of the woman. A woman who is not married owns her own sexuality and the products/children of that sexuality are also her property).

This is also why, in the past, women were so much more harshly condemned for adultery than men. *The wife's sexuality was no longer hers to give away.*

This is why, in the past, when a woman was raped it was considered an act of theft against *the husband*. Someone "stole" the sexuality which was his property.

This is why, in the past, it was considered impossible for a husband to be found guilty of spousal rape. How can you possibly steal your own property?

So, feminists are *somewhat* truthful when they claim that women were "owned" as chattel. A wife's *sexuality (**NOT** her person),* was very much "owned" by her husband and it *was* in fact used as a means of production: The production of the husband's *own* children.

But, as always, feminists are only capable of speaking in *half-truths.*

The part of the "women were owned as chattel" song leaves out the second verse, which is "and men were owned as beasts of burden."

.

.

"Hyahhh! Move it, you strong ox!" bellows the wife. "You are married now, so start pulling this plow! No more lazing around for you!"

For eons, *mothers* have told their daughters, "Why *buy* the cow when the milk is free?"

You see, the feminists *always* leave out that the woman *sold* her sexuality and took something in exchange for it: *The man's surplus labour.*

And benefit from a man's surplus labour the wives of the past most surely did!

.
She benefited by no longer having to rely on the Communist lifestyle of the herd for her survival. When in need of protection she pushed the man out the door first to deal with the danger, rather than rely on the size of the herd, hoping it would hide her from harm when the weak stragglers get taken down by the wolves.

She benefited enormously by increasing the amount of labour available to her, giving her the ability to live in a wooden house with a real roof, rather than sharing a grass hut with a bunch of other women.

Women took something *very real* in exchange for selling their sexuality. They took a man's labour as their own, and they benefited from this in almost every way imaginable.

So did the children she mothered benefit a great deal, *and so did society in general.*

Remember all those beta males who were existing outside of the herd, living on the fringes of society? They were only exerting 20-30% of their potential labour to survive.

Once married and *attached to their **own** children,* these beta males were suddenly yoked like an ox and working at 100% capacity. This utilization of the full capacity of male labour is what pulled mankind into a civilization. It is what built our houses and planted our corn. It built our roads and our bridges. It created our literature and our art. It created, well, pretty much everything that we have. Men, women and children all obviously benefited from this.

Have a look around the room you are in.

Everything within it involving more than two moving parts was invented by a man.

Welcome to the Patriarchy! (Sometimes it is simply known as civilization, but also, occasionally, as *fatherhood*).

Thus, when you hear that "marriage is the foundational building block of society," you are hearing the exact truth. And society, or rather, *advanced* society, is based on the *economic* contract of marriage. The economic contract of marriage is based on *property rights.* Property rights are the basis for Capitalism, and Capitalism is the basis for an advanced society which upholds the ideals of individualism, personal responsibility and Liberty.

Now, whether you wish to agree or disagree with the way society has existed for millennia, as outlined above, is entirely irrelevant. What is relevant is that the above description is what the *contract* of marriage was based on throughout history. Your personal feelings are irrelevant to history.

So, back to the original question: ***"Do you believe women have the right to divorce?"***

My answer is a resounding **NO!**

Why, you might ask?
.
Because modern marriage has become a FRAUDULENT contract, and therefore women shouldn't be allowed to marry in the first place!

It is simple. No right to marry equals *no right to divorce.*

You see, in the 1860's, the wonderful women's rights movement combined with the heavy hand of the courts, ruled that custody of the children of a marriage should belong to the mother, not the father. In effect, they strengthened

the strongest family bond, that of mother and child which exists everywhere in nature, and vastly diminished the weakest family bond, fatherhood, which exists almost nowhere in nature – but is the bond that creates civilization.

Before the 1860's, if a woman decided to leave her husband, she had to leave the children behind, which were a product of the marriage, because *property rights* dictated that *he* had "paid" for them, and thus they were *his* property, and not hers. He did not "own" her person, but in marriage he did "own" her reproductive ability and the products thereof.

The transferring of these "property rights" back to the woman, when in fact they were the basis of the economic contract of marriage, diminished the validity of marriage enormously. It is interesting to note that the divorce rate has risen steadily from this point onward.

Keep in mind, women have *always* had the ability and natural *right* to have their own children. No-one ever stopped a woman from shagging some knave in the bushes after he had been swilling mead in a medieval tavern. It may have been frowned upon by society, but illegitimate children have been born since the beginning of civilization. It was a social stigma that women should not do this because it was widely known that the woman would be bringing a child into the world under an enormous disadvantage if she and the child were not coupled to the labour (and discipline) of a father. But, she owned her sexuality and if she wanted to have children with it, she most certainly could.

But, the contract of marriage is, in every sense, the contract of a woman selling children to a man. The right of a man to "own" what he paid for was dealt a mortal blow in the 1860's when he lost the previously unchallenged right to "own" what he had paid for in marriage, that being *his* children.

Now, all through up until the 1970's, marriage was still viewed as a legal *contract.* It was a given that both parties had an obligation to uphold such a contract just as within any other economic or legal contract.

If you wanted to leave you still could. No-one was stopping you. But, as with any contract, if you breeched your contract you would be the one that was penalized for it.

If you wanted to leave and receive the benefits from the marriage, or rather, be compensated for the breech of contract of the other party, you had to prove they were at fault in order to sue for compensation. This makes sense, doesn't it?

Therefore, there were *many* things which constituted "fault." Adultery, alcoholism, mental insanity, cruelty, physical abusiveness amongst a host of others all constituted "fault." If you were at fault, you could expect to lose your rights as set forth in the contract. But even so, if there was no fault and you *still* wanted to leave, no-one was stopping you. You were not put in jail for leaving, but you were found to be at fault for "abandonment," and therefore lost all of your rights as set forward in the contract – and you would be liable for any "damages" caused by your "fault."

That seems fair to me. All contracts are set forth in this manner. That is why they are contracts. A contract says that if you behave in such and such manner and don't deviate out of that behaviour, you will be compensated with a *guarantee* of this and this behaviour from the other party. Step out of these guidelines and you will be legally liable, stay within them and your rights will be guaranteed.

But, in the 1970's, the ever wise feminists declared that it was *far* too difficult to find fault in people's complex personal relationships, and therefore "No Fault Divorce" was implemented, again with the aid of the heavy hand of the courts. (Odd, isn't it? They have no troubles at all finding "fault" in cases of domestic violence.)

So what have we got left here?

WE HAVE A FRAUDULENT CONTRACT MASQUERADING AS MARRIAGE!

What was originally based on a woman "selling" a man the ability to have *his own* children and taking his surplus labour as "payment," has become a woman having *children of **HER** own* and still taking a man's surplus labour as "payment" for that which she is ***NOT*** selling. **THAT IS FRAUD!**

If you go to a car dealership and buy a shiny new car, you might sign on the dotted line and agree to make payments for the next five years, but it is implied in the contract that *you own the car.*

The dealership cannot decide 6 months later that they want the car back, show up at your house, and just take it. And *certainly* they cannot force you to make the next 54 payments on it if they take it away from you with no breech of contract on your part. It is your *property* and they have no right to it. To suggest otherwise would be to suggest you signed a ***fraudulent contract.*** To suggest that you would still have to pay for gas, maintenance, and insurance after they sell it to someone else because "it is in the best interests of the car" is to suggest an ***insanely fraudulent contract.***

Yup.

But this is what we are left with in the marriage contract.

The man gets none of the property or rights which the contract was originally based upon, but the "vendor" still has the right to make you into this:

.

.

"Hyahhh! Move it, you strong ox!" bellows the ex-wife. "You are divorced now with no legal rights to what you *thought* you paid for, so start pulling this plow! No more lazing around for you, slave! ***MY*** children and I *own* your labour! You own *nothing!*"

MARRIAGE SHOULD BE OUTLAWED!

MARRIAGE IS FRAUD!

DO NOT ENTER INTO FRAUDULENT CONTRACTS!

.

Nope, let the little ladies and *their children* go back to living like this:

.

Have nothing to do with them.

Do not oppress them with marriage.

Do not oppress them by allowing them to live in your nice home.

Do not have sex with them. All sex is rape, dontcha know?

Do not donate sperm. That now makes you liable to be a slave too.

Again, make sure you *do not* oppress one single one of them with marriage. Do you hate women or something? Why would you want to oppress one of them with marriage, you misogynist! Put down that *Bride* magazine, mister. We know what you are thinking... now move on and think more wholesome thoughts.

Do not ***burden*** a single one of them with a child. Women can't stand kids and would like to have nothing to do with them.

And, most certainly, **DO NOT** pay anyone for a product they have no intention of actually "selling" to you.

Do not feel you are obligated to work like a fool to pay taxes which support "the herd" of single and divorced mothers along with *their* feral children. *You* are not responsible to pay for *someone else's property.*

You don't owe the herd anything. They don't even want you to be part of the herd.

You are not responsible to be an economic performer who props up herd living with your labour while receiving nothing in return except a pat on the head along with a "good boy." There are plenty of manginas who will prop up the herd until it can't be propped up anymore. Let them work like dolts in an unsustainable system for someone else's benefit then.

Give them as few tax dollars as possible.

Men should go back to only expending 20-30% of their labour ability, so they can return to living like this:

Why in the *hell* would you want to oppress one of those tricksters with Patriarchy?

.

Why even bother with a cow that doesn't give milk? Let alone pay for one.

DON'T MARRY!!!

It lowers divorce rates and cuts back on fraud.

.

Read more on this subject in the following online book, The Case for Father Custody -- by Daniel Amneus

.

Previous Index Next

MGTOW

"If it's not right, Go Your Own Way!"

.....

..oooO.....

..(....).....
….\..(.....
…. _/.....

…….....Oooo..
…….....(....)…
……..)../....
.....(_/.....

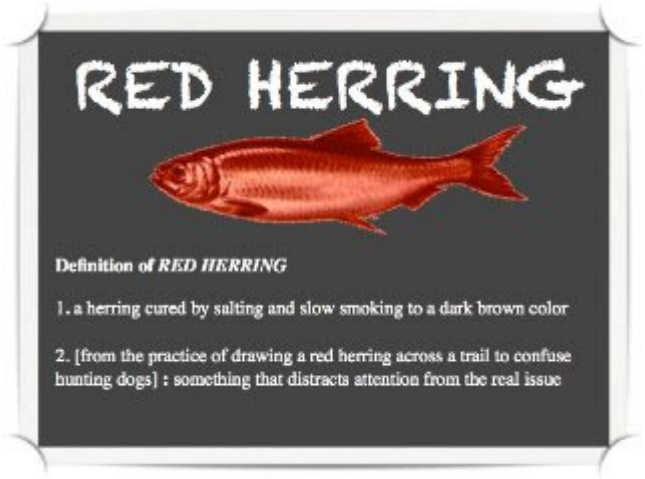
.....

Marxism, Red Herrings and the Totalitarian Trap

. · 16 March 2012 · Archived copy · Original

Many people will instinctively try to dismiss the notion of feminism being Marxism as some sort of red-herring related to tin-foil-hat "conspiracy" theories. However, a quick perusal of the quotes at the top of this blog ought to discredit that notion enough for a reasonable and rational man to inquire further into the subject.

.



.

I maintain that the Marxist connection to feminism is not "a red herring," but rather that all arguments *except* "feminism IS Marxism" would be the "red herring."

What Is Marxism and How Does It Work?

First of all, let's find out what Marxism is all about. It is absolutely essential for one to acknowledge the following in regard to Marxism/Cultural Marxism:

1). Karl Marx was heavily influenced by the philosophies of George W.F. Hegel to whom we can attribute the following maxim: "The Truth is Relative." Therefore, Hegelian philosophy will argue the possibility that 2+2 = 4 can also mean 2+2 = 3, or 9... There are no absolute truths. This was a mind blowing concept at the time, for people back then lived in a world where God DOES exist, and there was no questioning the black and whiteness of that within society. Hegel changed that.

Also of supreme importance is to acknowledge Karl Marx's statement: **"The philosophers have only interpreted the world in different ways. The point, however, *is to change it."***

That one statement of Marx should always be kept in mind. Not only did he have in mind some fantasy about the kind of humans that would emerge from from his "Utopia" but he directly states that his use of the philosophies of the day are specifically designed to enable the changes which allow Utopia to come about. He is contemplating how to use "The Truth is Relative" to alter society for his own purposes. This is why he is considered a *revolutionary.* His philosophies are geared towards destroying society, allowing its ashes to fertilize the Utopian soil upon which the flower of his new form of mankind will flourish.

Marxist philosophies include much study on how to mass manipulate society.

2). After the Russian Revolution, a leading Marxist philosopher, Antonio Gramsci, visited Lenin's Soviet Union to witness for himself how Marxist Utopia was progressing. Lenin had seized control of Russia via violence and then

foisted Marxism upon the Russian people by use of force, and waited for Utopia to arrive. It didn't. So Gramsci set about to tackle the problem of why the people did not embrace Marxism, but rather only paid obligatory lip service to it. Gramsci concluded that Marx had not gone far enough by only identifying the economic system as what holds society together - so he expanded it to include society's culture and he identified the various pillars which created societal cohesiveness by way of culture. Gramsci essentially said that if one could destroy cultural pillars like religion, the family, nationalism etc., society would self-destruct and then Marxist Utopia would naturally occur without the use of violent revolution. He concluded that if a "long march through the culture" could occur, ultimately destroying his identified pillars of society, then society would self-destruct and there would be massive chaos out of which the population would *request* the government to impose totallitarian control in order to "stop the madness." It is important to note that the goal is to *create* conflict, not to stop it.

3). There once were two schools in the world dedicated to studying Marxist theories. One was in Russia and one was in Frankfurt, Germany. Thus the name "The Frankfurt School." The Frankfurt School, to put it simply, dedicated itself to tasks such as identifying what factors are necessary to form human cohesiveness at the level above the family unit... the community. This was because the family was identified by Gramsci as a "societal pillar" which needed to be destroyed. Those of the Frankfurt School also put effort into the study of mass-psychology with the specific intention of how to destroy the societal "cultural pillars" which had been identified by Gramsci - they wanted to find out how to destroy such pillars without the use of violence which Lenin had displayed, and set about to study various techniques which would encourage the populations to willfully throw aside cultural values - without the use of force. Therefore, they designed the notion of Critical Theory. The Frankfurt School disbanded when Hitler took control of Germany and its academics fled the country and integrated themselves into various areas of the Western World.

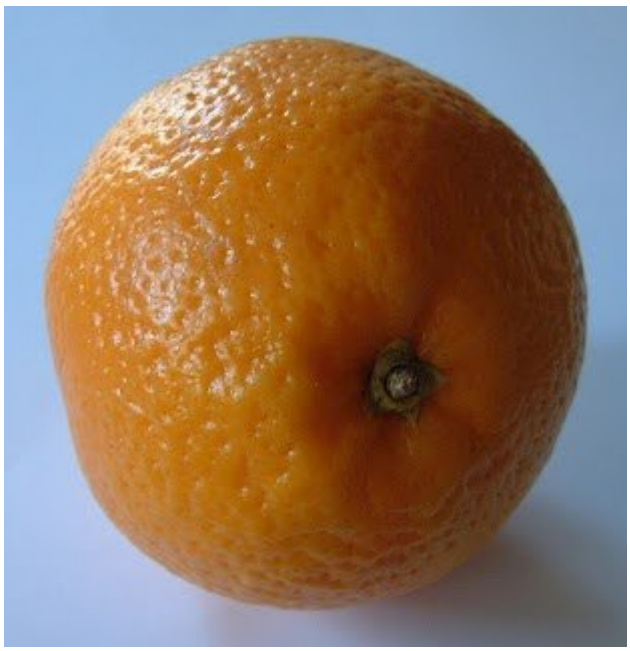
4). Critical Theory is essential to understand. The idea behind Critical Theory is to use criticism (based on "the Truth is Relative") to destroy by continual division. A necessary tool for Critical Theorists is the Agent Provocateur, for without someone starting the argument, Critical Theory never begins. *A conflict must be started for the plan of Critical Theory to be implemented*. The second tool Critical Theorists use is the natural human behaviour of fearing difference from the crowd. An example of this is the use of Political Correctness to slowly encourage mass acceptance of an idea. Human alienation is a powerful threat and therefore there is a strong urge to compromise your own principles in order to maintain social cohesion with the larger group. AND... that last tool Critical Theorists employ is a specific tool of brainwashing which can trace its origins to torture - they just took the physical parts out, but left the mental aspect in. This is the 3-step brainwashing technique of how to change personal values: 1 - UNFREEZING from the present level of acceptence, 2 - MOVING the subject to the next level, 3 - FREEZING the subject at the new level until proper acceptance occurs. (Repeat until the desired destruction occurs.)

Let's Try This Out!

.

So, could you destroy something absolute like mathematics with such techniques? Sure you could. Imagine that you have proven to yourself that 1+1=2 by physically using oranges to prove the absoluteness of the statement.

.



.

It's all pretty simple, 1 orange plus another orange equals two oranges and I know it's true because I can physically prove it. Life is good, the Canada Tax & Revenue Agency is continually pleased with the accuracy which the National Organization of Men Against Amazonian Masterhood (N.O. M.A.A.M.) files their taxes based on the "orange calculator." There is no need to change this system, because it works.

Along comes Delilah, an Agent Provocateur, and she notices my system - to which she points out that oranges are made up of segments. In fact there are 10 orange segments which make up an orange. "Fair enough," I say, "there are oranges and there are orange segments which make up 1/10 of an orange. The math still works."

.

.

The next time I see Delilah, she argues with me that it is discriminatory for me to consider an orange segment to be only 1/10th the value of an orange. She argues that without the segments, the orange wouldn't exist, therefore each segment is worth FAR more than just 1/10th of an orange. The "truth is relative," remember? She tells me that it is discriminatory to consider the "traditional orange" to be more valuable than orange segments and she demands that I acknowledge that all parts of oranges are important, whether that be "traditional oranges" or orange segments. By allowing her to define an orange as a "traditional orange," I have already lost half the battle because by such a definition one has to acknowledge that there are types of oranges *other* than the traditional.

As time goes on, Delilah's friends start to grumble, anyone who does math using traditional oranges is a hate-filled,

right-wing Orangaphobe. NO MA'AM doesn't respect all types of oranges equally and believes that traditional oranges are superior to other types of oranges... what a BIGOT!

The next time Delilah stops by, she hardly even talks to me. She is marching with her friends, all carrying signs reading: "Respect ALL kinds of oranges" and "Stop Bigots from Determining for Me What an Orange is." Finally the last moronic Delilah follower walks by with a sign saying "All Oranges are Equal - Equality for Orange Segments."

I think you can see where this simplified example is going. Eventually, if they can get "unequal" parts of a traditional orange to be defined as equal... well, effectively, math has been destroyed because now math can be 1+1=2 or 1+1=11, or 15, or 20... *Math is useless, so let's just do away with it!*

Connecting the Marxist Dots

Think this is a joke? Just another "Red Herring?" Let's put it all together.

"The philosophers have only interpreted the world in different ways. The point, however, *is to change it."* -- Karl Marx

Antonio Gramsci theorized how communism would naturally take place if the identified cultural pillars of society were deconstructed by **"a long march through culture."**

Critical Theorists devised specific schemes to enable "a long march through culture" by use of **"Critical Theory."**

"We shall destroy you from within!" -- Nikita Kruschev, during the Kitchen Debate.

Classic Hegelian-Marxist Theory is illustrated by this statement, which is critizing feminism: **"Our culture, including all that we are taught in schools and universities, is so infused with patriarchal thinking that it must be torn up root and branch if genuine change is to occur. Everything must go - even the allegedly universal disciplines of logic, mathematics and science, and the intellectual values of objectivity, clarity and precision on which the former depend."** -- Daphne Patai and Noretta Koertge, "Professing Feminism: Cautionary Tales from the Strange World of Women's Studies" (New York Basic Books, 1994) p.116

Feminists and Gay Rights Activists have collaberated on a joint attack against marriage & the family, which Antonio Gramsci & the Frankfurt School had identified as a "cultural pillar" which must be destroyed. Take note of the theme which permeates from the following quotes from feminist & gay rights activists and see if you can spot the Marxist revolutionary ideology:

"The nuclear family must be destroyed, and people must find better ways of living together. ...Whatever its ultimate meaning, the break-up of families now is an objectively revolutionary process. ...Families have supported oppression by separating people into small, isolated units, unable to join together to fight for common interests." -- Linda Gordon, Function of the Family, WOMEN: A Journal of Liberation, Fall, 1969

"Marriage has existed for the benefit of men; and has been a legally sanctioned method of control over women... We must work to destroy it. The end of the institution of marriage is a necessary condition for the liberation of women. Therefore it is important for us to encourage women to leave their husbands and not to live individually with men." -- The Declaration of Feminism, November 1971

"A middle ground might be to fight for same sex marriage and its benefits, and then, once granted, redefine

the institution completely, to demand the right to marry not as a way of adhering to society's moral codes but rather to debunk a myth and radically alter an archaic institution." -- Michelangelo Signorile, "Bridal Wave," OUT Magazine, December/January 1994, p.161

"It [Gay Marriage] is also a chance to wholly transform the definition of family in American culture. It is the final tool with which to dismantle all sodomy statutes, get education about homosexuality and AIDS into public schools, and, in short, usher in a sea of change in how society views and treats us." -- Michelangelo Signorile, "I do, I do, I do, I do, I do," OUT Magazine, May 1996, p.30

Read those quotes carefully, then sit back and ponder for yourself the following:

- Why did "No Fault Divorce" get foisted upon society without any massive outcry from the public requesting such a radical change?

- Why did we redefine the physical "Male and Female Sex" as Gender? Up until only a short while ago, gender was used solely to describe the feminine or masculine in languages, as is done in French. Why do we now have "*gender* sensitivity" towards heterosexuality (cough!), gay-relationships, lesbian relationships and trans-gendered relationsips? Could this have been possible without the sleight of hand of redefining "sex" as "gender?" With the word "sex" there is only male and female.

- Why are long-term heterosexual marriages refered to as "traditional marriages/family values?" Does this not, by default, acknowledge there are different kinds of marriages/families?

- Why do we now use the phrase "life *partner*", even as a preference over directly saying husband and wife?

- Why is there a push (here in Canada) to have all types of "families" declared to be equal? Obviously a single mother "family" or a homosexual "family" is not equal because they are not equally equipped to produce children. They are not "equal" except by use of direct government intervention.

- How did it become recently possible (here in Canada) to have a family declared to legally be able to have 3 parents? Yes, 2 married lesbians and one male/father have all three legally been declared parents of the same child... the worry is now directly that this has opened the door to allow for polygamous relationships - sanctioned by the state of course... Does anyone remember the Gay Activists' cry only a scant few years ago that gay "marriage" would do nothing to alter the "traditional family?" All those opposing gay marriage were intolerant bigots. (Also, see my piece: A New Kind of Bigotry)

These examples are all indicitave of a Cultural Marxist plan to use Critical Theory to destroy marriage, which Antonio Gramsci had identified as something which needed to be destroyed. How many other areas of Western Life have been attacked by such a ploy?

Also, take notice something which is pure genius on behalf of the Cultural Marxists. They have chosen their Agent Provocateurs to argue *against Nature!* What a stroke of genius to have picked arguments which can never be won. There will always be these arguments that women are not equal to men, or that gay-marriages are not equal, because they cannot be equal by natural design! Imagine rallying people together to "fight the ocean's tide" or to "stop the moon." You will have them at your service for eternity. The night will never be equal to the day, no matter how many street lamps you erect. But the fight will always continue, because you will always be able to point out that the battle *still* hasn't been won... and that's the point.

Marxism *needs* conflict for its agenda. 100 years ago, people didn't run to the government to tell them what their

family life was all about. And this is the real danger and the real goal of Cultural Marxism and Critical Theory. It encourages people to take something which the government didn't previously control, and then cause as much chaos and confusion in it as possible... so that people run to the government to "settle their differences" and thereby grant to the state the "power of definition/settlement" over something which it previously did not have power over.

Even those who are for "traditional families" are lost in this quagmire. Once upon a time, no-one questioned the word "family." There was only one kind of "family." Now, without society requesting that governmentt be an arbiter, those same people are forced to petition the government to preserve their values... and automatically they default to the government the power to decide (totalitarianism), over something which the gov't never had the original power to decide over, and over which was not willfully given up by the people.

The trick is not in who gets the biggest piece of the pie, but rather that all sides are now running to government to request that they get their piece. The people have willingly allowed the government to subvert their freedom and decide for them - totalitarianism is completed!

No, it is not a "red herring" to say that feminism IS Marxism. It is very accurate. The red herring is all the other arguments which distract us from what is happening.

TAKE BACK THE LOGIC!

“If it’s not right,Go Your Own Way!”

.....
..oooO.....
..(....).....
….\..(.....
…. _/.....
…….....Oooo..
…….....(....)…
……..)../....
.....(_/.....
.....

The Dialectic, Useful Idiots and Consolodating the Gains to the Left

. · 23 March 2012 · Archived copy · Original

My last article, Marxism, Red Herrings and the Totalitarian Trap, argued the case that feminism and Marxism are one in the same. Or more accurately, feminism is one arm of the Cultural Marxist's war on Western Civilization's "cultural pillars." The main weapon used to fight this war is Critical Theory, which was defined by a student of the Frankfurt School as the *"essentially destructive criticism of all the main elements of Western culture, including* ***Christianity, capitalism, authority, the family, patriarchy, hierarchy, morality, tradition, sexual restraint, loyalty, patriotism, nationalism, heredity, ethnocentrism, convention, and conservatism."***

How can mere criticism be used to collapse a culture, you ask? Well, we're not exactly talking about the kind of criticism typical of a nagging wife, but rather a purposeful and precise attack designed to alter the perceptions of "the truth." Therefore, Western Civilization could be made to sabotage itself in very destructive ways until there was such chaos that the people would willingly give up their freedoms and request a totalitarian government to stop the madness. Think of it this way; if during an actual physical war you could make all of your enemy's compasses read south when they are in reality headed east, you could create untold havoc for them without ever firing a shot.

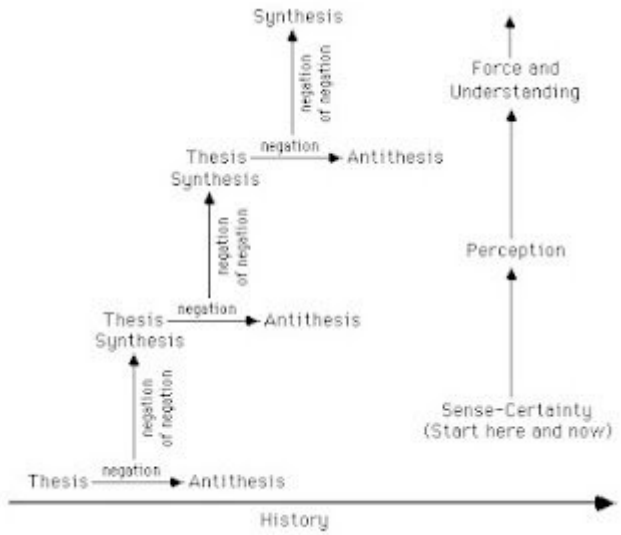
This is the principle behind Karl Marx's statement, **"The philosophers have only interpreted the world in different ways.** ***The point, however, is to change it."*** Marx wanted to create an entirely new human civilization based on his ideologies. In order for him to do that, he reasoned, the present civilization and social order must be destroyed. Since he was heavily influenced by G.F. Hegel, who philosophically came to the conclusion that "The Truth is Relative" (truth is always subject to change and never absolute), Marx was *really* saying, "I am going to use this concept of The Truth is Relative to destroy civilization for purposes of my own design." This is why Marxism is a *revolutionary* ideology. It is conspiratal right down to its very core, and yet there is nothing "tin-foil-hat" about it. It's done right in the open... in fact, since it is attempting to change society's understanding of the truth, it is *necessarily* done in the open. What's the purpose of altering your enemy's compass if you then hide it so he can't use it?

Dialectical Arguments

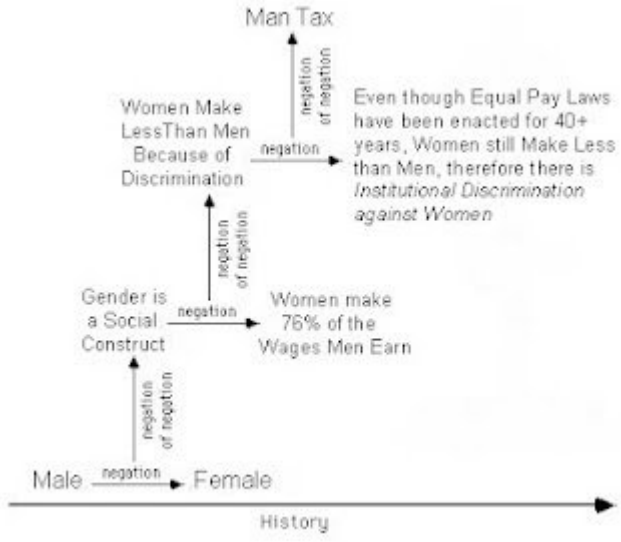
To understand what Marxists are trying to do, one must first understand what Hegel did with the dialectic.The dialectic was not invented by Hegel and it is nothing new. It merely means opposing positions, or in other words, an argument. Traditional logic says that if Position A (1+1=2) is correct, then Position B (1+1=3) is incorrect. Pretty easy speazy, eh? In Hegelian terms, Position A is called the *Thesis* (position) and the opposing argument is called the *Anti-Thesis* (opposite position). Essentially what Hegel did was take the two and *equalized* them, claiming the

truth was found in the *Synthesis*, which means the consensus or compromise, between the two. The Synthesis then becomes the new truth (Thesis), and the next Anti-Thesis is pitted against it creating yet another Synthesis (New Truth), and so on and so on, like a staircase.

Now, this is not an easy subject, nor is it easy to keep one's attention focused on it. But, a diagram of how it works is much easier to understand.

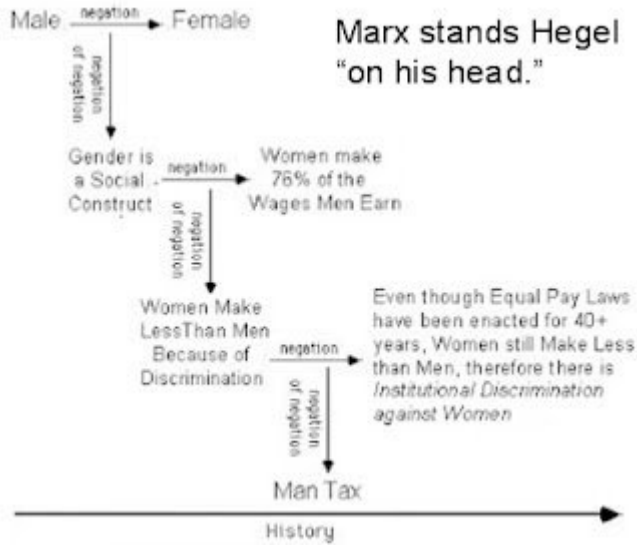


The staircase kind of works like precedents that are set in a court of law. A previous court case (argument) concluded in a certain way, thereby setting a precedent. That precedent is then often used in future court cases as an established truth upon which even further arguments are based. This staircase has been going on in regards to the Gender War as well, and looks something like this:



(You can substitute Affirmative Action for Man Tax, or any other host of discriminations against men based on the inequalities between the sexes generated by "The Truth is Relative.")

Now, keep in mind, that is merely what Hegel did. Marx then said to himself, "How can I use this Hegelian Dialectic thing-a-ma-jig to change the world?" What he concluded was that he ought to "stand Hegel on his head." Karl Marx *starts* by saying I want that Man-Tax to appear in society, now what arguments can I create which will lead to that conclusion?



In other words, once you declare that feminism IS Marxism, you are also declaring that on a philosophical level, it is indeed a top-down *conspiracy*. There is an intentional destination of Marxist arguments, whereas Hegel's version builds the truth "naturally" and in a more haphazard way.

You can also see the need for Marxists to think two, three, four or five steps ahead. In fact, I've read before that many Marxists who became national leaders, such as Lenin, Stalin, Mao etc., rose to prominence in large part because of the status they generated by showing how well they could manipulate dialectical arguments. Here is what one famous Marxist had to say on the subject:

"Dialectical thought is related to vulgar thinking in the same way that a motion picture is related to a still photograph. The motion picture does not outlaw the still photograph but combines a series of them according to the laws of motion." -- Leon Trotsky

Where most people run amock is they are only thinking about one argument at a time, rather than in a series of them all linked with the intention of arriving at a pre-determined goal.

Useful Idiots Play Checkers, Marxists Play Chess

After the Russian Revolution, Lenin wrote that he would install a Marxist bureaucratic government without the support of dedicated Marxists. Only the inner elite of his circle would understand the political structure he was building, while others would be manipulated to forward his agenda by their natural vanity and ambition to gain favour so as to further their political careers. He called such people "Useful Idiots."

Furthermore, he understood that an angry pressure builds up (backlash) when manipulating mass-populations and this pressure needs a release valve. Lenin combined this knowledge within dialectical manipulation and allowed for controlled backlashes that, in fact, furthered his agenda even though it appeared to oppose his goals.

"It would be the greatest mistake, certainly, to think that concessions mean peace. Nothing of the kind. Concessions are nothing but a new form of war." -- V.I. Lenin

This is kind of a difficult concept at first, because it doesn't make much sense on the surface. The shortest route between point A and point B is a straight line, and that is how most people think things work - and usually they are right, except when dealing with Marxists.

"Wishing to advance in a room full of people, I do not walk through the aisle and straight toward my goal. Nor do I move slowly through the crowd shaking hands with friends and acquaintences, discussing points of interest, gradually nearing the objective. The dialectical pathway is different. It consists of a resolute forward advance followed by an abrubt turn and retreat. Having retreated a distance there is another turn and advance. Through a series of forwardbackward steps the goal is approached. To advance thus is to advance dialectically. The Communist goal is fixed and changeless, but their direction of advance reverses itself from time to time. They approach their goal by going directly away from it a considerable portion of the time. Lenin wrote the textbook, One Step Forward, Two Steps Back. Chinese Communist schoolchildren are taught to do the dialectical march taking three steps forward and two steps back. If we judge where the Communists are going by the direction in which they are moving we will obviously be deceived" -- Dr. Fred Schwarz, President of the Christian Anti-Communist Crusade

OK, so they go two steps forward and one step back. But what's the point of that?

Well, the point is that the backlash consolodates the gains! The general modus operandi is to push hard with radical leftism. Of course, radical leftward movements cause lots of social upheavel, such as how the radical move of No-Fault-Divorce has caused untold grief in our society for all parties involved. After time, enough people are angry and bitter about these policies which harmed them on a personal level that a backlash movement begins to develop.That backlash is then "released" to let off the steam, *but the backlash is only allowed in ways that concentrate more power in the hands of the State.*

These things don't happen fast, mind you, but take several years - often a generation. Lenin sped things up by using government force and direct violence, but Lenin was only one faction of Marxist theory, which is obviously called "Leninism." Another faction is called "Fabianism."

The Long March Through the Culture

Fabian Socialists adopted their name from the Roman general, Fabius, who battled and won against the infamous Hannibal with his elephants when he invaded Italy. Hannibal had a vastly superior army than Fabius but was far from his home and supplies, so Fabius organized a campaign of hit-and-run tactics against Hannibal's army. He harassed and confounded the enemy, wearing them down bit by bit over time until finally Hanibal capitulated and admitted defeat. Fabian Socialists adopted Fabius' strategy, veering away from Lenin's use of violence to speed things up. Instead, the Fabians used techniques involving *time* to alter perceptions of the truth.

In my last article, I wrote about how the Frankfurt School's Critical Theory utilizes brainwashing techniques to alter the population's perceptions of the truth. The basic plot is to *unfreeze* the subject from his current comfort level and *move* him to a different level, then *freeze* them at that next level *until they have accepted their new paradigm as "normal."* This technique was based on the practice of torture, but merely removed the physical parts of it while keeping the mental aspects intact. For example, prisoners of war often have described the mental aspect of weeks or months spent in isolation as more damaging to them then the actual physical tortures they endured. Alienation from the group is a very real threat to humans, as we are naturally social creatures. Political Correctness was first invented by Lenin (he called those opposing his views "Enemies of the State") and later it was used by Stalin to run his opponent Leon Trotsky out of Russia and into exile in Mexico, where he had a date with an ice-pick.

The technique of using time rather than violence is the only thing that changed with the Fabian's viewpoint on Marxism. They agreed with Lenin's goals, but only differed with him because he used violence to speed up the populace's willingness to accept his dictats.

Really, if you have a look at it all, what took Lenin four years to implement has taken the Fabians/Cultural Marxist

40 years to replicate. But the end result is pretty much consistent.

For example, a few years after the Russian Revolution in 1917, Lenin declared "International Women's Working Day" on March 8th, 1921. He bragged about how he had created the first system of equality and had liberated women from their chains. Lenin instituted no-fault divorce, easy abortions, state-run day-care centres, community kitchens, sewing centres, and other such things to alieviate women from their biological duties to children and family, and put them to work with the pick-axe and shovel. He claimed he had ended discrimination against women and had liberated them by doing such. It took him four years, by use of violence, to implement his policies.

In contrast, after forty years of second-wave feminism gradually eroding society, we have arrived at virtually the same place. We now have feminists screeching at the government to impose upon businesses such things as corporate run daycare centres and flex-time so that they may realize their true "equality." (Which can only be enabled by state totalitarianism). In the last few Canadian elections, state-run daycare has been a constant issue. It's only a matter of time before it becomes reality. Basically, everything which Lenin declared he had done to make women "equal" in 1921, is now being seriously debated in our own legislative assemblies in the present day, and no-one bats an eye about it.

Why is it like that? It's because of gradualism.

For example, the population was *unfrozen* in the 1970's when we introduced the radical concept of No-Fault-Divorce (which the population did not request). This has caused untold grief for millions of people, but after 40 years, and a generation or two of children raised in broken homes, no-one really questions the right to unilaterally force a divorce upon another party. We assume it is normal, even though it is a recent phenomenon that has only existed for around 40 years in Western Civilization's multiple-millenia existance.

What's happened is enough people in society have accepted the notion that divorce is not only normal, but it is a right. Most 40-somethings like me can only remember a distant time in their early existence when divorce wasn't the norm. A cultural paradigm has shifted, by use of gradualism and time. Now virtually everyone has 50% or more of their relationships ending in divorce, or was raised in a broken home to begin with. Divorce is so "normal" that no-one even questions its validity. The proper acceptance of new values, via brainwashing techniques, has been achieved. And now, the push is on for "shared-parenting" to alieviate the problems created by the divorce epidemic. Nobody is openly questioning if we should abolish No-Fault-Diivorce. No, not at all. All that is being said is that the system ought to be re-organized to make it more fair. Divorce is part of our culture now. The "acceptance" phase is now complete. It's time to move the family unit on to a further totalitarian idea that destroys the family, commonly known as Shared-Parenting, where the courts will decide every facet of people's children's lives, right down to the times they are allowed to see their parents. which religion they ought to subscribe to, and how far away their parents are physically allowed to live from them which removes their right to freely move about the country.

And of course, this is what Marxists and radical feminists (the same thing) have wanted all along.

"The first condition of the liberation of the wife is to bring the whole female sex back into public industry, and this in turn demands the abolition of the monogamous family as the economic unit of society." [Engels, p.67]

"No woman should be authorized to stay at home and raise her children. Society should be totally different. Women should not have that choice, precisely because if there is such a choice, too many women will make that one." -- Interview with Simone de Beauvoir, "Sex, Society, and the Female Dilemma," Saturday Review, June 14, 1975, p.18

"[I]f even 10 percent of American women remain full-time homemakers, this will reinforce traditional views of what women ought to do and encourage other women to become full-time homemakers at least while their children are young.... This means that no matter how any individual feminist might feel about child care and housework, the movement as a whole [has] reasons to discourage full-time homemaking." -- Jane J. Mansbridge, Why We Lost the ERA, p.100

"[M]ost mother-women give up whatever ghost of a unique and human self they may have when they 'marry' and raise children." -- Phyllis Chesler, Women and Madness, p.294

"In order to raise children with equality, we must take them away from families and communally raise them" -- Dr. Mary Jo Bane, feminist and assistant professor of education at Wellesley College and associate director of the school's Center for Research on Woman

"The care of children ..is infinitely better left to the best trained practitioners of both sexes who have chosen it as a vocation...[This] would further undermine family structure while contributing to the freedom of women." -- Kate Millet, Sexual Politics, 178-179

"It takes a village..." -- Hillary Clinton

"How will the family unit be destroyed? ... the demand alone will throw the whole ideology of the family into question, so that women can begin establishing a community of work with each other and we can fight collectively. Women will feel freer to leave their husbands and become economically independent, either through a job or welfare." -- From Female Liberation by Roxanne Dunbar

"The institution [of marriage] consistently proves itself unsatisfactory--even rotten.... The family is...directly connected to--is even the cause of--the ills of the larger society." -- Shulamith Firestone, The Dialectic of Sex: The Case for Feminist Revolution (New York: Morrow, 1970), p. 254.

"...No woman should have to deny herself any opportunities because of her special responsibilities to her children. ... Families will be finally destroyed only when a revolutionary social and economic organization permits people's needs for love and security to be met in ways that do not impose divisions of labor, or any external roles, at all." -- Functions of the Family, Linda Gordon, WOMEN: A Journal of Liberation, Fall, 1969

"[W]omen, like men, should not have to bear children.... The destruction of the biological family, never envisioned by Freud, will allow the emergence of new women and men, *different from any people who have previously existed."* -- Alison Jaggar, Political Philosophies of Women's Liberation: Feminism and Philosophy, (Totowa, NJ: Littlefield, Adams & Co. 1977)

Wow! Those gringas really don't like marriage and children!

But it's pretty easy to see what is happening. No-one in our current society is demanding of the government to end No-Fault-Divorce and restore things sanely to the way they were before. Instead, vast lobby groups of disenfranchised fathers are merely complaining that they should have "shared-parenting." In other words, since fathers are marginalized and don't often have sole custody of their children, they would rather that *neither* the father or mother had custody in favour of the court keeping said custody, and then dictating baby-sitting duties between the father and mother. If there is any dispute, the government will arbitrate it. If there is anything at all which is displeasing, the courts will handle it. If the father wants to take to the child to a Catholic church, while the mother is a dedicated Wiccan, it will be the courts who will paternalistically decide what is in the best interests of the child. Has the government then not effectively taken custody of the children?

And isn't that what they wanted all along?

The backlash to the right is used to consolodate the gains to the left. It's not a backlash to the way things were before. Rather, while the backlash movement thinks they are winning, in effect they are being mere useful idiots and only furthering along the Marxist and Feminist goals of removing children from their parents and placing them into government custody. After 20 or so years of this - long enough to allow society in general to accept the new normal, an abrubt turn will occur and radical leftward movements will again appear, further removing freedom.

And the marginalized fathers of today will no longer be able to complain about their situation... after all, they won! They got their shared-parenting... and all of the totalitarianism that comes along with it.

"Destroy the family, you destroy the country." -- V.I. Lenin

Previous Index Next

MGTOW

"If it's not right,Go Your Own Way!"

.....
..oooO.....
..(....).....
….\..(.....
…. _/.....
…….....Oooo..
…….....(....)…
……..)../....
.....(_/.....
.....

Related:

The Dialectic, or, Scholars are Stooopid!

What a Great Article about Cultural Marxism!

. · 29 March 2012 · Archived copy · Original

Very well done!

Accurate and well argued.

And thank God, no talk of the flippin' "Illuminati."

“What good is knowing all the names in the KGB… if you don’t understand what they do?” - Anatoliy Golitsyn, KGB Defector to the USA

It's Not Marxism Because...

. · 30 March 2012 · Archived copy · Original

.

One of the most common arguments I see made against the notion that feminism and Marxism are one in the same goes something like this:

"Feminism and Marxism aren't related because Stalin's policy of xyz was certainly not feminist!" (or Mao's, or Pol Pot's or Gorbachev - take your pick).

Another common argument goes like this:

"Russian women aren't raving feminists like American women, therefore, Marxism and feminism aren't related."

Well, all these things may be true, but, one must also realize that Marxism is kinda like Christianity in that while it has a large over-riding ideology, there are many different denominations with varying beliefs. Marxism as well has many different types. Lenin's interpretation of Marxism was one such type, called Leninism, and when Stalin took over he interpreted Marxism in a different way - over-riding some of Lenin's beliefs - and thus becoming "Stalinism." Mao as well interpreted Marxism differently from Stalin, and this became known as "Maoism." So, just as it is false to say that Protestants aren't Christians because they don't have a Pope and never go to confession, so is it false to say that Marxism and feminism are unrelated because of reason XYZ during Boris Yeltsin' s vodka soaked tenure at the helm.

Mostly when people such as myself assert that Marxism and feminism are one in the same, it has a lot to do with the philosophies behind Marxism, such as the oppressor vs. victim class, the use of the Marxist dialectic to manipulate the population, the "end-goal" of Marxism & feminism being remarkably similar, and most of all it comes from Engels' own words (Marx made a few references to liberating women, but Engels really got into it).

Furthermore, after the Russian Revolution, *Lenin* (not Stalin or Kruschev) erected a near perfect feminist Utopia. (Stalin, in fact, removed many of Lenin's feminist policies because it was obvious how much it was harming the

people and thus, the state).

"A world where men and women would be equal is easy to visualize, for that precisely is what the Soviet Revolution promised." - Simone de Beauvoir, The Second Sex (New York, Random House, 1952), p.806

A few years back, Carey Roberts wrote several articles on this very subject, and I would like to quote a few of them to illustrate why the Soviet Union under Lenin is often referred to as a feminist Utopia.

From The Marxist Prescription for Women's Liberation:

"In the 1840's, Marx concocted this bizarre theory: Since working men were oppressed by capitalist economies, then women were doubly-victimized by the effects of capitalism and patriarchy.

This is how Karl Marx and Frederick Engels explained it in their 1848 Communist Manifesto: ***"What is the present family based on? On capitalism, the acquisition of private property... The bourgeois sees in his wife nothing but production."***

In his 1884 book, The Origin of the Family, Engels elaborated on the theme of patriarchal oppression: ***"The overthrow of mother was the world historical defeat of the female sex. The man took control in the home also; the woman was degraded and reduced to servitude; she became the slave of his lust and a mere instrument for the production of children.""***

(Here are a few more quotes that follow with this Marxist-feminist theme)

"The first class opposition that appears in history coincides with the development of the antagonism between man and woman in monogamous marriage, and the first class oppression coincides with that of the female sex by the male." -- Frederick Engels, The Origins of the Family, Private Property, and the State (New York, International Publishers, 1942), p.58

"The first condition of the liberation of the wife is to bring the whole female sex back into public industry, and this in turn demands the abolition of the monogamous family as the economic unit of society." [Engels, p.67]

"Women are the creatures of an organized tyranny of men, as the workers are the creatures of an organized tyranny of idlers." -- Eleanor Marx (Daughter of Karl), The Woman Question

From When Family Dissolution Becomes the Law of the Land:

"So in 1918, Lenin introduced a new marriage code that outlawed church ceremonies. Lenin opened state-run nurseries, dining halls, laundries and sewing centers. Abortion was legalized in 1920, and divorce was simplified.

In a few short years, most of the functions of the family had been expropriated by the state. By 1921, Lenin could brag that "in Soviet Russia, no trace is left of any inequality between men and women under law."

But Lenin's dream of gender emancipation soon dissolved into a cruel nightmare of social chaos.

First, the decline of marriage gave rise to rampant sexual debauchery. Party loyalists complained that comrades were spending too much time in love affairs, so they could not fulfill their revolutionary duties.

Not suprisingly, women who were sent out to labor in the fields and factories stopped having babies. In 1917, the average Russian woman had borne six children. By 1991, that number had fallen to two. This fertility free-fall is unprecedented in modern history.

But it was the children who were the greatest victims. As a result of the break-up of families, combined with civil war and famine, countless numbers of Russian children found themselves without family or home. Many ended up as common theives or prostitutes.

In his recent book, "Perestroika," Mikhail Gorbachev reflected on 70 years of Russian turmoil: "We have discovered that many of our problems -- in children's and young people's behaviour, in our morals, culture and in production -- are partially caused by the weakening of family ties.""

Here is a little more Marxist-feminism, from Lenin's March 8th, 1921 speech on International Working Women's Day:

"But you cannot draw the masses into politics without drawing in the women as well. For under capitalism the female half of the human race is doubly oppressed. The working woman and the peasant woman are oppressed by capital, but over and above that, even in the most democratic of the bourgeois republics, they remain, firstly, deprived of some rights because the law does not give them equality with men; and secondly—and this is the main thing—they remain in household bondage", they continue to be "household slaves", for they are overburdened with the drudgery of the most squalid, backbreaking and stultifying toil in the kitchen and the family household.

No party or revolution in the world has ever dreamed of striking so deep at the roots of the oppression and inequality of women as the Soviet, Bolshevik revolution is doing. Over here, in Soviet Russia, no trace is left of any inequality between men and women under the law. The Soviet power has eliminated all there was of the especially disgusting, base and hypocritical inequality in the laws on marriage and the family and inequality in respect of children.

This is only the first step in the liberation of woman. But none of the bourgeois republics, including the most democratic, has dared to take oven this first step. The reason is awe of "sacrosanct private property.

The second and most important step is the abolition of the private ownership of land and the factories. This and this alone opens up the way towards a complete and actual emancipation of woman, her liberation from "household bondage" through transition from petty individual housekeeping to large-scale socialised domestic services."

It's not hard to see why the Soviet Union after the Revolution is so often referred to as a feminist paradise, eh?

So, when and why did it change?

From "Roots of American Culture and Community in Disarray" -- Statement of Bill Woods to the Committee on Ways and Means:

"FAMILY LAW, CHILD SUPPORT, AND WELFARE FROM MARXISM?

Many people would be shocked to learn that much of the current "family law" system we have today, which is at the heart of so much of our modern social upheaval and America's "welfare state," was born in the Soviet Union. Still more shocking would be the revelation that when the Soviet Union discovered its system was a

disastrous failure, it instituted serious reforms in the early 1940's to try to restore the family and the country. The Soviets made these changes when fatherlessness (which included children from divorced fathers) reached around 7 million children and their social welfare structure (day cares, kindergartens, state children's facilities, etc.) was overburdened. Yet in America, some studies suggest that we are approaching 11 or 12 million such children. All the while, the social and financial costs of welfare and fatherlessness are just now gaining more widespread attention. America's fatherlessness crisis is primarily by judicial making with the cooperation of the legions of lawyers and bureaucrats who profit from family destruction which rips America apart.

Unfortunately, the Soviet reforms came too late and never brought about the extent of social reconstruction that would have allowed recovery from its self-inflicted social destruction. It was unable to stave off its widely celebrated collapse when the Berlin wall came down. Even though the Soviets tried in vain to restore the social values they had worked so hard to eradicate..."

As one can plainly see from the evidence which I have put forth herein, feminism and Marxism are intricately linked. The fact that Stalin changed the Soviet Union's family policy after he took power in no way discredits that Lenin attempted to create a feminist Utopia after the Russian Revolution. He obviously based his feminist policies on Marx & Engels' ideas on the subject. Feminist goals are 100% aligned with the ideas put forth by V.I. Lenin, and thus ought to be more accurately described as Marxist-Leninist. Feminism is very much based upon Marxism.

"The Women's Caucus [endorses] Marxist-Leninist thought." -- Robin Morgan, Sisterhood is Powerful, p. 597

Previous Index Next

MGTOW

"If it's not right,Go Your Own Way!"

.....
..oooO.....
..(....).....
….\..(.....
…. _/.....
……....Oooo..
……....(....)…
……..)../....
.....(_/.....
.....
.

Further Reading:

.

The Ill-Ooh-Meh Naughty, Mae's Sons, Zyanism, The Juice, The Rock Fellas and Roth's Child's Pet Lizards

.

It's Not a Conspiracy Theory... It's Happening Right on the Tell-a-Vision!

.

Evolving Humankind with Social Brainwashing

.

Trans-valuation and Global Governance

.

Marxist Feminism's Ruined Lives -- by Mallory Millet (Sister of famed feminist, Kate Millet)

.

The Ill-Ooh-Meh-Naughty, Mae's Sons, Zyanism, The Juice, The Rock Fellas and Roth's Child's Pet Lizard

. · 31 March 2012 · Archived copy · Original

What I always find so irritating about the Marxist debate is when someone, again, shows up talking about the Illuminati, or the Rockefellers, or thinks that showing the links between the Rockefellers & the Rothschilds somehow "proves" what's going on.

"What good is knowing all the names in the KGB… if you don't understand what they do?" – Anatoliy Golitsyn, KGB Defector to the USA

The fact is, it really doesn't matter a whit if you can prove Karl Marx was related to the Rothschilds through one of their step-daughters marrying his great-great grandpa on his mother's side through adoption. If you can't understand what Marx was trying *do* then what's the point of connecting him to others to show who is bankrolling him? (And Gesh! Why go way out on a limb linking in obscure billionaire's from the past? Hillary Clinton is standing right in front of everyone's face).

Quite simply, it just doesn't matter if it is a "conspiracy" or not. If you were standing in the Twin Towers on the morning of 9/11, would you really give a rat's ass about "who" is behind it, or if the building is going to collapse by naturally occurring physics or via controlled demolition? I wouldn't give a crap! I would want to get OUT either way!

"Critical Theory, which was defined by a student of the Frankfurt School as the "essentially destructive criticism of all the main elements of Western culture, including ***Christianity, capitalism, authority, the family, patriarchy, hierarchy, morality, tradition, sexual restraint, loyalty, patriotism, nationalism, heredity, ethnocentrism, convention, and conservatism."***

So, whether it is a "conspiracy theory" or not, look at it this way. Each of those "pillars" listed above has been undermined over the past decades.

Every.

Single.

One.

The whole point of the Frankfurt School identifying these cultural pillars, was to say that if these pillars were destroyed, the chaos that would ensue would collapse those cultures.

So, does it matter if it is a conspiracy or a "coincidence?"

Alright. I'll agree with you. It's just a coincidence, so there's no need to be worried about the consequences of it. Just like, if you determined in your mind on the morning of 9/11, it wasn't a conspiracy, so there's nothing to worry about here! Back to your cubicle.

The coincidence theorists haven't really thought all of this through very well, I think.

It's Not a Conspiracy Theory. It's Happening Right On the Tell-a-vision

. · 31 March 2012 · Archived copy · Original

For everyone who thinks that feminism will just die out and fade away, it may be so, but the structure they have built will stay long after they are gone.

Has no-one put two and two together yet what the implications of the ongoing *global* economic crisis might be?

For example. Back in 2008 & 2009, at the height of the disaster, all of the world leaders almost immediately started chirping about the need to create an international organization to make sure the global economy still functions. Hell, our ex-Prime Minister, the Right Dishonourable Paul Martin (who is hailed as an economic genius from his time as Finance Minister) went on a bloody tour across Canada trying to convince us that we had to give up some of our Canadian sovereignty in order to "make the world work!" I mean, my God! Is that not the definition of treason? All the world leaders were saying this.

It was *complete* bullshit. In fact, the reason why the world didn't completely implode was *because* there was little affiliation from one nation to the next. Americans, for example, have seen their dollar's purchasing power decline rapidly, whereas Canada & Australia's dollar (while still declining) has held value far better. Therefore, should the United States really go belly up, git your money out of US dollars and into Canadian dollars pronto, so you still have some wealth left. This is what the Germans did when they experienced hyper-inflation. The smart ones simply dumped their marks and bought the British pound, thereby preserving their wealth.

It has *only* been since the most recent Euro-crisis that the world's leaders have *somewhat* shut-up about this treasonous notion of handing over national monetary sovereignty to a newly created global organization. I mean, it's kinda hard to make the case for such a thing while "Global Government-Lite" (The EU) is crashing and burning into the ground precisely *because* they are bound by the European monetary system. If the EU did not exist, only Greece and the other PIIGS would be screwed. But now, they all are. So, ask yourself, why do all the world leaders keep promoting the idea of creating a global currency, or at least, a global organization to handle the world's monetary supply? It is suicide!

However, notice what else has happened in Europe. It all started with being an "economic union." That is where it started. But in order to make the economic union work, things had to be standardized, and so in came the legislation to do so, like trying to force the Brits to accept the metric system… and then further legislation to make labour mobile, so that Suzie's Hairdressing School in Paris also meets the qualifications for working in Berlin… and then laws and bureaucracies ensuring standards of "equality of opportunity" and so on and so on. Once the basic frame-work was in place, they easily passed all kinds of laws and created all sorts of organizations to enforce them – well outside of economic policy and into social policy – and all of the Europeans suddenly discovered the EU was more important and powerful than their own governments.

So, as we watch the USA run up debt to levels that are simply unsustainable anywhere in the world except in Disneyland, we are also watching the EU do the same, and in order to keep propping up these, even countries like Canada and Australia are funnelling in billions of dollars of aid to keep the ponzi scheme going, deflating our own dollar's purchasing power at the same time. At some point in the near future, this whole puppy is gonna explode. And there *will* be lots of demand for a new form of government to be created to "deal with it." Of course, it is always global. And of course, it will only deal with money, not social policy… *for now*. (It just never works that way over time).

Once they have a structure in place that all are bound to, rather than volunteer to, they will simply start dialectically manipulating the global state from economic policy into social policy, the same way they did in the EU.

Like I said elsewhere about the CEDAW, much of the framework is already in place.

All they really need is a global structure everyone is bound to, and they will get their global government. They tried desperately to convince nations to give up some of their sovereignty to a global structure when the Global Warming Hoax came out, and when the shit hits the fan in our economies, they will try to do it again.

And once it's done, **it's done.** See Greece. They haven't even got the *option* to leave the EU. There is no constitutional provision to *leave* the EU, and the only way they can create one, apparently, is to re-open the constitution and then 100% unanimously vote it in. Except, since Greece is still in the EU, they too have a vote, and why the hell would they vote for their own financial destruction? Lol! They are FUBAR in Europe, and the USA is in even worse shape than them.

The drumbeats for large global government gets louder and louder with each passing year. It's not a conspiracy theory. It's happening every day, right on the tell-a-vision.

Evolving Humankind with Social Brainwashing

. · 31 March 2012 · Archived copy · Original

"I agree with 98% of what you stated… However I believe you are mistaken as to how the Marxists want to force people to evolve to bring about a utopia. I believe Marxists/socialists simply identify large segments of society, the segments they believe will stand in the way of the revolutionary transformation of society into a perpetual dictatorship of the proletariat (i.e. the central committee which of course speaks for the proletariat) and they liquidate/massacre that segment.

Marxists identify those who have no place in their utopia and then go about the pursuit of their utopia by murdering those who don't belong." — Bryan

You are correct. But they aren't evolving *individuals,* rather they are evolving humankind – society as a whole.

Think about it this way. If you are removing the "undesirables" from the population, you *are* evolving the society, and if it is the only society that exists on earth (Marxism invented the term "global governance"), then you *are* altering humankind by doing so. If you don't want people in your society to have blond hair, the simplest way is just to kill all the blond haired people. As these people are removed from the gene pool, they will also be failing to pass on their blond genes to the next generations… do this for a few generations, and how much do you think the amount of the future populations will continue to be born blond?

Further, they also believe in social "evolving." This is precisely what we have already been dealing with today. Homosexuals, for example, have long since claimed they could "cure" society of their homophobia by having *mandatory* school instruction on the subject, where they claim it will be possible to rid society of homophobia in merely one generation – by brainwashing it out of the kids in the classroom.

"Give us the child for 8 years and it will be Bolshevik forever." -- V.I. Lenin

"We must declare openly what is concealed, namely, the political function of the school...It is to construct communist society." -- V.I. Lenin

This is also happening in feminism. A few years back, someone sent a me a document from my province's teacher's association/union, where it was seriously being promoted as part of Grade Eight Social Studies, to have all the boys write an apology to all of the girls in the class, for their historical misogyny and abuses against women. This type of social conditioning, they claimed, would remove misogyny from society in a mere generation as well.

And it's true. It does work that way.

We have been socially "brainwashed" over the past couple of generations to have a new view of marriage and family as well. *Everyone* now comes from a divorced family, or has been divorced, or at least has a sibling or some other relative who is divorced. It is now something like 50% of children live in homes without a biological father present. It is *normal* now.

And the only people who really know what a society was like when marriage was still a semi-viable institution, are the Baby-Boomers and a few spatterings of the elderly who are older than them. Once the Baby Boomer generation dies off, will there be anyone left who remembers what such a society was like? There is still *some* talk today that No-Fault-Divorce was a really bad idea, comparing it to the time before it came in. But once those people are gone, who is gonna talk? Does anyone really talk about presumed-father-custody being undermined by the suffragettes

anymore? 99.9% of people probably don't even *realize* that for thousands of years, the bedrock of society was based on marriage involving presumed father custody rather than mother custody – nor that the divorce epidemic began with this change, and not with no-fault divorce. (The divorce rate rose from less than 2% before the 1870′s – which had held constant for thousands of years – to around one in seven by the 1920′s. That is about a 700% increase in divorce. Since then, divorce has risen only a modest 300% or so).

So, yes, Marxists often just simply killed those they didn't like, but just because some of the Marxist states used such brutal tactics, does not necessarily mean it is an "ironclad" Marxist technique to use murder. It is more about the belief that it is possible for man to become god himself, and remake the world into heaven on earth.

By the way, an interesting side note about evolution. When Darwin came out with his thesis, Marx and Engels were extremely excited. Remember that Marx based his ideology on Hegel's notion of "The Truth is Relative." (There is no Absolute Truth). When Darwin came out with his book, they regarded it as the science that "proved" they were right. What evolution means in regard to "The Truth" is that because the world is always changing, what was true yesterday is no longer true today. Therefore, what is true today is not necessarily the truth tomorrow.

At any rate, Marx and Engels wrote a letter to Darwin and asked him to affiliate his science with their political ideology.

Darwin declined the honour.

Trans-valuation and Global Governance

. · 31 March 2012 · Archived copy · Original

QUOTE: "Feminism is a problem with a built-in cure: it kills itself."

This is true. And perhaps the Amanda-Marcotte-feminists of the world are just Useful Idiots… but Hillary Clinton sure isn't as dumb as Amanda Marcotte. Hillary Clinton exported feminism *globally* when she was First Lady, and now she's back in the halls of power, promoting it globally again.

Marxists *understand* the inherent problem with their socialist ideologies. They *know* socialism weakens the state until it either gets conquered or gets absorbed by a superior competing system.

So, the only way to *stop* being overtaken by such societies, is to have only *one* society – so there is no competition. This way, they can run their global state at 50% capacity, or 30% capacity, or whatever, because it simply won't matter. Who are we gonna compete with? The Martians? Once this is in place, the *real* social engineering can begin. Both Marxists and Feminists want to create a Utopia by *evolving* people into a new form of human – and using state force to do so.

"The meaning of peace is the absence of opposition to Socialism." — Karl Marx

"[After Communism succeeds] …then, there will come a peace across the earth." — Josef Stalin

This is why Marxist theory demands that once a global structure is in place *above* the level of the "state," they will use socialism to collapse all the states around the world. (This was supposed to happen during WWI, but didn't, thus the creation of Cultural Marxism). Once that happens, things will "pop up" to the next level, which will be a global government operating as a Communist dictatorship, with no individual states below them.

"While the State exists, there can be no freedom. When there is freedom there will be no State." — V.I. Lenin

The world once looked like this (how we identify ourselves):

Individual –> Family –> Community –> Region/State/Province –> Nation –> World

If you destroy the family, the individual will "pop up" to identifying with the community, and if you destroy the community, they will "pop up" to their region and so on.

What they are after creating is a world that looks like this:

Individual –> World Government

One of the things they have been doing is called "trans-valuation." (I believe the notion came from Neitzche as a way to discredit Christianity). What trans-valuation means is taking the "bottom" value and placing it on the top. You can see this done with homosexuality in our society, where the values of homosexuals (who have at best, neutral survival value to society) are placed above the values of heterosexuals who have positive survival value.

Feminism has done this in regards to men and women. The man *should* lead. The man has *always* led. The "hierarchy" works like this:

Men –> Women –> Children

Now, also, keep in mind that just because men are the "top" in the hierarchy, in terms of who is the most valuable humans, things work in the opposite direction. Children are preferred over women and women are preferred over men (we think it right for a mother to die saving a child, but not a child dying to save a mother).

What has happened with Marxist manipulations is we now have a society in which the hierarchy looks like this:

Women –> Men –> Children

The next step in transvalueing the family is to make it look like this:

Children –> Women –> Men

And how will this come about, you ask? All you have to do is give children more rights over their parents than their parents have over the children. This is exactly what feminism did with men and women, and the next step in destroying the family is putting children's rights first. (Ahem! Hello shared-parenting advocates!) Don't forget, it takes a village. Hillary Clinton's thesis was on this very subject, where she compared children in families suffering abuses similar to the Indians living on the reserve. She claims that children's rights are ignored in favour of parental rights. She recommends that a government bureaucracy ought to be created to ensure children's rights separately from their parents.

And they are doing it *globally,* right now, with the United Nations' CEDAW agreement. (Covenant to End Discrimination Against Women). The CEDAW has within it, the declared "Rights of the Child." In it, you will find things like children having the "right" to choose their own religion and having the right to all forms of media/communication etc. etc.

The thing about these international treaties is they *supercede* national constitutions. If the CEDAW disagrees with the US Constitution, it is the CEDAW that wins. I believe there are only seven countries left in the world who have not signed it – the USA being the most notable hold-out, simply because Americans value their Constitution so much – with good reason.

Canada signed it several years back, and a few years ago, a father in Ontario got taken to court by his teenage daughter, funded by legal aid. The girl was using the internet in her bedroom to communicate with her friends and sneak out of the house in the middle of the night. The father found out and grounded her from the computer, taking it completely out of her room. Well, legal aid took the guy to court to show he had violated "The Rights of the Child" under the CEDAW Canada had signed, because by removing access to the computer, he had violated her right to freely use all forms of communication etc.

How can you run a family in such a way?

You can't.

What are you going to do when you are a devout Catholic, but your 8 year old child comes home from a screwed-up school system that brainwashed him into becoming a Muslim or a Wiccan? Are you gonna drop him off at the church of Satan on your way to Mass? The CEDAW says you must.

Many shared-parenting advocates as well are talking about "the rights of the child." It should make everyone stand up and take notice. What kind of rights are we talking about here?

"The Misandry Bubble" Burst a Decade Ago

. · 6 April 2012 · Archived copy · Original

There is a much vaunted article floating around the internet called *"The Misandry Bubble"* which claims that the war against masculinity will "burst" in the year 2020. Until then, the author claims, everyone with a vested interest in maintaining a campaign against men will "double down" in their efforts to control and enslave them.

It's an interesting thought, but I disagree. And since the author is clearly using stock-market terminology, let's have a quick look at some other maxims regarding "bubbles."

"Markets can remain irrational longer than you can remain solvent."

This would seem to be the case today, that the feminist juggernaut is still marching forward at full steam ahead. I mean, how could it not be? There are "End of Men" and "Woman's Nation" articles being published all the time. Every female failing somehow ultimately becomes the fault of a man, or men, somewhere, at some obscure point in history. Women dominate our universities and are cheering the displacement of men in the workplace, somehow believing that men's harm is women's gain.

A wise man that has been around the Men's Rights Movement (MRM) for over forty years once related how he thought that during the 1990's men would finally wake up to the toxic nature of feminism and what it is has done to the attitude of Western Women.

"I went through wave after wave of false hope. When MacKinnon and Dworkin, in conspiracy with the religious right and the John Ashcroft types, pushed through the Minneapolis and Indianapolis porn ordinances, I thought that would be a wakeup call. When the famous "1 in 4" faked research came out, I thought that would be a wakeup call. When Fruity Faludi came out with her book, I thought that would be a wakeup call. When Lorena Bobbit mutilated her husband and was cheered by millions of women, I

thought that would be a wakeup call..." -- Zenpriest #35 - How Was This Allowed to Happen?

"You can thank Oprah for peddling her message of female victimhood and male perfidy to millions of women who lapped it up - loving the hating of men. You can thank all the dozens of trailer-trash panderers - Sally Jesse, Maury, Phil, Geraldo, Jerry, and all the rest - for serving up their multiple daily servings of emotional road-kill which millions of women lapped up like flocks of emotional buzzards.

And, you can thank the millions of these so-called "nice, average, normal women" who just loved to bash men, complain endlessly about petty crap like toilet seats, cheered on Lorena Bobbit when she castrated her husband and played the "abuse excuse" card.

You can thank the lesbians who have dominated "wimmins's studdees" programs turning out thousands of what Christina Hoff-Sommers calls "hate-intoxicated little zealots" and creating a climate that Daphne Patai calls "Heterophobia." You can thank the millions of female teachers who have led the "War on Boys" and when they couldn't stamp out the masculinity in boys, decided to dope them with dangerous drugs in order to turn them into compliant zombies." -- Zenpriest #49 - Let Women Win the Battle of the Sexes

.

.

All of these things peaked during the 1990's, not during the 2000's. In the 2000's we were simply dealing with the aftermath of the hateful policies which were justified by the anti-male biases of the 1990's. Sure, the VAWA was renewed in the 2000's, but it was originally created in the 1990's, in response to the Super Bowl Sunday Hoax.

"Bubbles can only be seen in hindsight."

It was during the 1990's that Oprah Winfrey and Jerry Springer types sky-rocketed into the spotlight - before them, in the 1980's, there was really only Donahue - and he was not nearly as ridiculous as those who came after him. Although he was no great triumph for humanity either, at least he also interviewed people like Ayn Rand who tore into feminism on his show. But it was during the 1990's that those who replaced Donahue went full tilt against all things male.

During what decade did all the women giggle amongst themselves about their "starter marriages?" In which decade did we start drugging our boys with ritalin on a truly massive scale? It was during the 1990's that we completely ripped apart our school system and re-arranged it in favour of girls. It was during the 1990's that we went whole-hog on gender in the workplace, being even prohibited by law from reasonably inquiring if a young woman of 20-

something plans to have children in the future, and using this information to best allocate business resources. What decade was it that Catharine McKinnon managed to find sexual harassment behind every water-cooler?

Almost all of the really truly abusive policies feminism has graciously served up to us were the result of the extreme anti-male biases found back in the 1990's, not in the present day. Comparing today to the 1990's, the amount of new policies being erected by feminists is truly miniscule. Today, they are mostly just fighting to hang on to their ill-gotten gains which they achieved during the 1990's.

"The next bull market is always in a different area than the last one."

The maxim of "bubbles can only be seen in hindsight" similarly applies to the next bull market. Rarely do people identify the next bull market when it's in its early stages. It is the same psychology that drives both, but they drive in different directions.

For example, the majority of people didn't believe the tech bubble had burst back in 2000. When they seen Microsoft trading at 50% the value of the previous year, they rationalized it was screaming value and bought some "on sale," so secure were they in their belief of the value of such stocks. A year later they had lost money hand over fist, but still believed. And then they held on and still believed some more. A really good example I know well, because it was here in Canada, was a company called Nortel which was the Canadian tech-industry's darling and at one time the largest company (by market cap) in the country. If I recall correctly, it was trading at +$120.00/share in 2000. People bought back in at $60.00, thinking it had "corrected enough" and presented great value... by December 2002, Nortel hit an all-time low of $0.70. When the economy started picking up again around 2003 and 2004, Nortel zoomed back up to $7.00 and then $9.00, convincing people that "Nortel was back on track again and presented great value." People again piled in, and two or three years later, Nortel went broke and shareholders lost every last penny they had invested. That was some great value!

Conversely, a bull-market began in commodities back in 1999 and 2000. It was dismissed by all but the most fringe of contrarian investors. Gold, after all, was a barbaric relic, and the tech-boom was going to revolutionize everything about the marketplace. Everyone from governments to hedge-funds to small individual investors dumped their barbaric relics. When gold almost doubled in value, the naysayer's still had the public opinion in their pocket. One of the biggest jokes amongst gold investors today is this video that the anti-gold crowd circulated and laughed about, their point being that since gold had reached $500.00/oz, its run was over and the "gold bubble" was going to burst.
.
.
Today, it makes for great giggles to still hear the same people calling gold at $1600.00/oz as a bubble. The fact is, many "savvy investors" completely missed the bull-run in gold & commodities, and they are still convincing themselves to keep missing it. Sure sure, the gold "bubble" will burst one day and end in tears. However, that bubble will not burst until everyone, even the long-term critics, change their attitudes and pile into gold and commodities with reckless abandon.

You can only tell in hindsight when a bull market has started, just like you can only tell in hindsight when the bubble "burst." (This is why contrarian investors follow the idea of "get in early and get out early.")

The Feminist Bull Run is Over; The Anti-Feminist Bull Market is Already Underway

Today, we hear more anti-feminist rhetoric being bandied about than ever before - or at least since the sexual revolution uprooted every social more that once built our great civilization. The media no longer completely dismisses anti-feminist ideas, and even though they often still mock them, they are becoming more and more

willing to entertain ideas opposing the hate-filled dogma of the past decades. Many ideas which were considered "fringe" only five or six years ago are now being reported on in various news sites.

Furthermore, the underlying culture is leading the way. If you go to articles like The Atlantic's "The End of Men," and read through the comments section, you will see waves of men showing up to tear the author, and the magazine, a "new one." This not only didn't occur in the 1990's *at all*, but even only five years ago the vast majority of news-sites, blogs and so forth, automatically deleted *any* comment that was not supportive of feminism. This is simply not true anymore. People are getting angry about feminism all throughout society today.

Culture Leads Laws; Laws Don't Lead Culture

The culture of the West changed before its laws did, as is always the case. The 60's, 70's and 80's tore up our culture root and branch, altering many of our previous generations social mores. It was after this culture had changed, during the 1990's, that anti-male laws *really* began to swing into action. The culture had changed and now laws had to be created to reflect the new culture. This is always the way it works.

And this is also the way the "Anti-Feminist Bull Market" is going to work.

More and more people are waking up to the fact that feminism has screwed us all gently with a wooden spoon. These people are angry at those who harmed them. Feminism has caused lots of harm to lots of people - including women themselves. The culture is already changing, and it will continue to change over the next several years until the fevered pitch of their demands over-shadows all other issues. It will be *then*, and only then, that the laws start to be changed to reflect the cultural values of the general population.

I strongly suspect that rather than the "Misandry Bubble bursting" by the year 2020, what will really be happening is the "Anti-Feminist Bull Market" will be well on its way and the culture will already be reflecting changing social mores.

They're About Done with Feminism, Anyway

I remember when I first became attuned to the fact that feminism and Marxism were so closely related. I had already realized something was deeply wrong with the ideology, but just could never put my finger on it. At the time, I had volunteered to shovel some gravel for the MRM's newest branch called Men Going Their Own Way (MGTOW). This was back in 2006 and what I was doing was creating a website called the MGTOW Library, where I was trying to catalogue men's articles into some sort of useful, coherent fashion for others to draw upon. I was (and still am) very computer illiterate, so one of the founders of MGTOW named Zed, held my hand as I blew up the website over and over with my ignorance of all things computer related.

But something happened to me as I read all of those articles, especially those written by Carey Roberts back in 2004 and 2005 which so solidly argued the case that feminism is the mirror image of Leninist Russia. Suddenly the scales fell off and my eyes were opened. I couldn't *believe* that this was going on and furthermore, I became convinced that there must be *some* men out there who were trying to fight this Marxist scourge. I had been putting in a lot of effort, but eventually started to get ticked off. "Hey," I scolded Zed. "I have been working my butt off here, and dammit, I want to be let in to the inner circle. I mean, what the bloody hell is being done about this, and why do you guys keep me on the outside?"

The answer I received?

"Sorry, buddy, there's nobody here but myself and Larry (another fellow who was working to maintain MGTOW

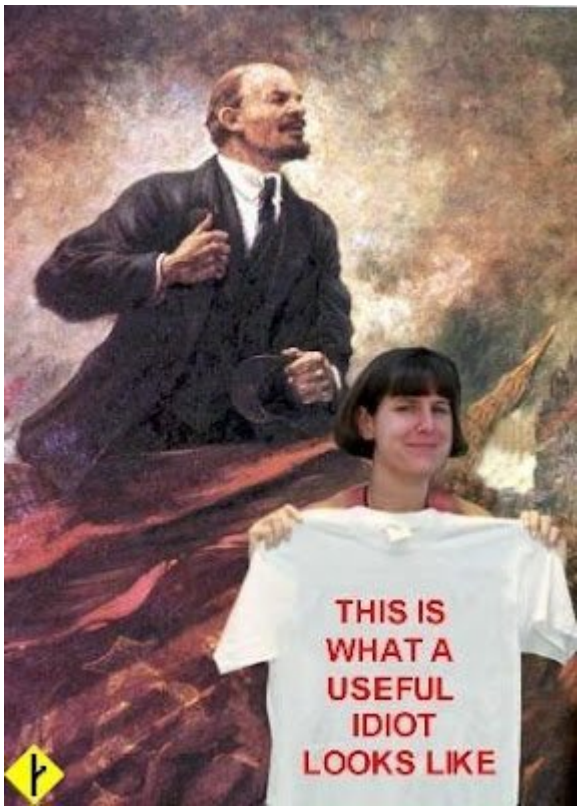
sites). There is no secret cabal. It's just us two mooks, and now you."

Well, of course, I felt rather foolish. But soon we were discussing the situation and what it all entailed. Then Zed said something which hit me right between the eyes. "The powers that be are about done with feminism anyway," he said. "Pretty much all of the goals which radical feminists were promoting in the past have come to fruition, or are very near to it."

And he's right, of course. There are a few loose ends to tie up, but most of the battle has already been fought and won (by them - lost by us). The family really has been altered. Divorce is now as common as life-long monogamy. It is normal for children to come from broken homes and not have a father in their lives. Government sponsored welfare and affirmative action have replaced the husband's role, destroying the demand for marriageable men, just as Roxanne Dunbar and Kate Millet predicted back in the 1970's.

Sure, individual feminists like Amanda Marcotte still ferverently believe the battle is not close to being won, but Marcotte is merely a useful idiot. The powers that be will toss her into the furnace with the rest of the rubbish the instant that her usefulness disappears.

.



.

So, what's next? What were the original goals of this Cultural Marxist plan? Well, in regard to the ladies, it was to achieve "true equality" by putting women back into the public work force, thereby destroying the entire concept of the family. In order to do this, women must be relieved of their biology as mothers, which is why V.I. Lenin instituted such things as no-fault divorce, easy abortion, community kitchens, sewing centers, housekeeping services, and state-run daycares. The goal of this, however, was not to "empower" women. That's just what was *said.* Quite frankly, if you want to argue that Lenin was altruistically helping women be all they could be, you would be sorely mistaken. The goal was to take children away from their parents and bring them under the control of the state, instead of parents. Families, say Marx, Engels, Lenin and Feminists, are the founding cornerstone of Capitalism, and therefore all discrimination and oppression ultimately stems from the family.

But, no matter how much women hate men today, and no matter how much money they make shuffling papers

around mindlessly in their cubicles, do you think that women would **ever** willingly give up their own children?

I think not!

The way to remove children from their mothers, via Marxist techniques, would be to abandon the cause of women and take up the cause of men. It can easily be pointed out now that it is men who are not treated equally, and dialectically speaking, it is quite easy to see how disenfranchised fathers could be manipulated into thinking shared-parenting (or, marriage 3.0) is in everyone's best interests, and thereby empower the government to take custody of children away from mothers and place them in the custody of the State - who will then decide a baby-sitting schedule for the sperm and egg donors. It is also not a stretch for oversight committees to be erected to ensure the "ongoing best interests of the child." Heck, Secretary of State Hillary Clinton's thesis compared children in the family to the corruption Indians experienced on the reserve. That wingnut Marxist believes that the government should create a new bureaucracy to represent children separately from their parents. In other words, each child ought to have a legal-aid lawyer representing them, so that their parents don't abuse their power over them.

This is not something new, mind you. People have tried to separate parents and children before. The 2000 Supreme Court Case, Troxel et vir. v. Granville, upheld the "presumption that fit parents act in the best interests of their children." This was also previously defended back in the 1979 Supreme Court Case, Parham v. J.R..Writing back in 1979 for the majority, Chief Justice Warren Burger declared that ever since Blackstone, who wrote in 1765, the law *"has recognized that natural bonds of affection lead parents to act in the best interests of their children."*

The idea of government taking custody of children today, however, is much greater than in the past. As the Bull Market in Anti-Feminism develops, more and more fathers are going to demand the government grants shared-parenting, which is quite obviously the foundation for government taking custody of children. Is it such a stretch of the imagination to see courts appointing government representatives - an unelected bureaucracy - instead of parents, who will decide what is "in the best interests of the child?"

Just because a backlash is developing against feminism does not mean it is a good thing, nor that it can only benefit men and society. Many of the things the MRM are requesting is in line with feminism - DV shelters for men is one example, and would only serve to increase government power in the home, not decrease it.

I can't bear the thought of men being manipulated into becoming Useful Idiots who further feminist and Marxist goals.

Can you?

"In order to raise children with equality, we must take them away from families and communally raise them." -- Dr. Mary Jo Bane, feminist and assistant professor of education at Wellesley College and associate director of the school's Center for Research on Woman

.

Women's Studies 101A

Sex in the 90's -- by Rollo Tomassi

Feminism Peaked in the 1990's - The Spearhead

Previous Index Next

MGTOW

“If it’s not right,Go Your Own Way!”

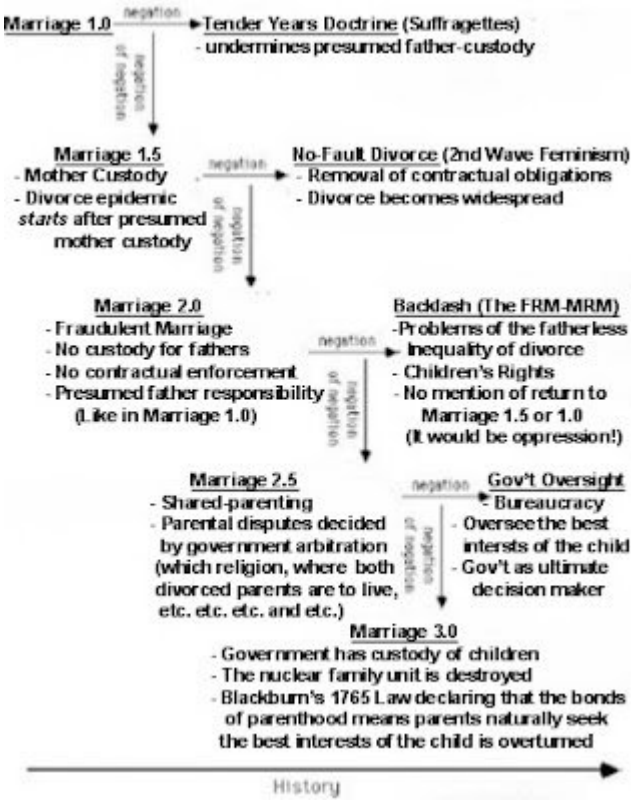
.....
..oooO.....
..(....).....
….\..(.....
…. _/.....
…….....Oooo..
…….....(....)…
……..)../....
.....(_/.....
.....

The Marxist Dialectic of the Family: Part I - Marriage 1.0 versus The Tender Years Doctrine

. · 13 April 2012 · Archived copy · Original

"What is the present family based on? On capitalism, the acquisition of private property... The bourgeois sees in his wife nothing but production." -- The Communist Manifesto

.



.

Marriage 1.0 versus the Tender Years Doctrine

The battle to change Marriage 1.0 starts with The Declaration of Sentiments in 1848. The Declaration of Sentiments is the "official start" of feminism as a movement. Two other things happened in this year. The first was that 1848 was the year of revolutions around Europe, where many nations in Europe succumbed to the ideologies of liberal reformers and politicians began to radically alter forms of government while technological progress had radically altered the lives of the working classes. Socialist thought was already heavy in the air and had been brewing for some time already. The second was Karl Marx' release of the *revolutionary* Communist Manifesto wherein it is important to note that he begins the dialectical manipulation in the first line. ***"The history of all hitherto existing society is the history of class struggles."*** Really? Is that true? Marx was declaring an anti-thesis to start a dialectical argument. (There is no way that the history of *all* society is the history of class struggles.)

This is exactly what the Declaration of Sentiments does as well. Here is how Elizabeth Cady Stanton starts off her list: ***"The history of mankind is a history of repeated injuries and usurpations on the part of man toward woman, having in direct object the establishment of an absolute tyranny over her."*** Do you see the similarity to Karl Marx's statement above from the Communist Manifesto? It is simply untrue and there are hosts of factors she is ignoring. In fact, it is so ridiculously wrong that one doesn't even know if it ought to be refuted. It's like saying the sun exists at the bottom of the ocean. But truth is not the point. The point is to present an anti-thesis to the thesis so that dialectical manipulation can begin.

.

.

There are 16 points made after this statement. They all are either false statements, in that they don't take into account a vast amount of other factors (it's only relatively true) or they are simply false statements altogether. For example. Points one to four are about the vote and that *men* had prevented women from voting on the foundation of the society they live in. But 99.99% of men didn't have anymore say in it than women (Only 55 delegates were present at the Constitutional Convention) - yet *all* men are to blame. In point four she declares that the elective franchise is the first right of a citizen. Yet that is blatantly untrue. Men did not yet even have universal suffrage in 1848, and 'the right to vote" is guaranteed nowhere. (Landless white men did not receive suffrage until 1856 while non-white men received suffrage by 1870). Your rights are supposed to be guaranteed *despite* how the majority votes, remember? And the US Founding Fathers mentioned "democracy" nowhere when they created a *republic* (rule by law, not by sentimental voting). Every point in the Declaration of Sentiments is built on such wobbly logic.

As far as undermining marriage goes, this is addressed by points five to eight:

5 - He has made her, if married, in the eye of the law, civilly dead.

6 - He has taken from her all right in property, even to the wages she earns.

7 - He has made her morally, an irresponsible being, as she can commit many crimes with impunity, provided they be done in the presence of her husband. In the covenant of marriage, she is compelled to promise obedience to her husband, he becoming, to all intents and purposes, her master - the law giving him power to deprive her of her liberty, and to administer chastisement.

8 - He has so framed the laws of divorce, as to what shall be the proper causes of divorce, in case of separation, to whom the guardianship of the children shall be given; as to be wholly regardless of the happiness of the women - the law, in all cases, going upon a false supposition of the supremacy of a man, and giving all power into his hands.

Point five is obviously not so much a point in itself, but rather a lead-in to explain her anti-thesis for the next three points.

Point six is claimed to be an abuse which men have perpetrated against women, yet the laws she is talking about were designed specifically for women's benefit in the marriage contract. It was not possible for spouses to own property independently from eachother. As soon as a marriage occured, all titles went into the husband's name. It was arranged this way because women hypergamously tend to marry men with more resources than they have. The vast majority of women "move up" when they marry. Very, very, very few women move down when they choose a long term mate, even today. What this law really did was combine the male's greater financial wealth (in 99% of cases) with that of the lesser wealth of almost all women who got married. You see, if women are allowed to keep property titles outside of marriage, then so would the men be allowed as well. And if that were the case, the majority of wives would not be able to fully benefit from their husband's productivity and wealth creation. It's a blatant lie to describe this as an act of tyranny and oppression against women. However, it does start the dialectic, and it does end up that these laws are scrapped - leading to the undermining of marriage considered as "one flesh."

Point seven can hardly be made into a case for the oppression of women at the hands of men. Let me get this straight. You breaking the law and me doing the time in jail for it is **me** oppressing *you*? Have a look at how this man oppressed his wife:

Sends Husband To Jail To Aid Suffrage Cause -- The Milwaukee Journal, Sept. 21, 1912

Mrs. Mark Wilks, whose *husband* is in jail because she refuses to pay her taxes, is credited with discovering a new and formidable weapon for the suffragettes. The suffragettes are generally women of property and they will follow Mrs. Wilkes example immediately, it is said.

The plan will work only in cases of husbands whose wives have independent incomes. Nor will it work in cases where the husbands pay taxes on their wives' incomes. Some husbands, like Wilks, haven't enough money to pay their wives taxes. Suffragette husbands who can pay are counted on to refuse to do so. Thus will a large portion of the Englishmen with suffragette wives be in jail shortly.

Under the married women property act a husband has no jurisdiction over his wife's property and income. Under the income tax he is responsible for her taxes. If the taxes are not paid, the husband, not the wife, is imprisoned. Mrs. Wilks refused to pay her income tax - $185 - and her husband was locked up. He will spend the rest of his life in prison unless his wife pays or the law is changed. When at liberty he is a teacher in Clapton.

.

.

After they dialectically changed the property laws, splitting husband from wife, they still didn't remove the responsibilities from the husband. Can you imagine it? Your wife inherits a $5 million estate that requires $50,000/year in taxes. You make only $45,000/yr, and when your wife refuses to pay the taxes, **you** go to jail for

tax-evasion on her behalf. You have no way out. You have no right to take the funds out of her estate to cover the expenses. The oppression of women, you say? It kind of makes sense why all property was put into the husband's name, wouldn't you agree?

The eighth point is the one which undermines the ancient contract of marriage entirely. The ancient contract of marriage is not about romantic love. Those notions are relatively recent. No, it was an ***economic*** contract between a man and a woman, whereby the man trades his lifetime's work of generating "excess resources" - which he is far better suited to procure than women - for children that are ***his own.*** In other words, he would have 100% presumed custody of any children produced from the woman's *sexuality* for the duration of their time together. It was about the concept of property rights, or in this case, of custody rights. The products of his wife's sexuality (children) became "his" and the products of his life's work became "hers."

“I would die before I will give up the child to its father.” -- Susan B. Anthony, Quoted in Phyllis Chesler, *Patriarchy: Notes of an Expert Witness* (Monroe, Maine: Common Courage Press, 1994), p. 38.

Also, Elizabeth Cady Stanton claims this practice of father-custody was built on the presumption of the supremacy of man. This is another lie. The reason why ancient marriage was structured that way is because there is a hierarchy of how "love" works. It kind of goes like this:

Men love women --> Women love children --> Children love puppies.

Men's love for women is greater than women's love for men, just like parental love for children is greater than children's love for their parents. The Bible indicates this principle when it commands men to love their wives, but commands wives to honour their husbands in return, just as children are commanded to honour their parents, not love them.

When children are placed in the position of 100% presumed custody of the father, it strengthens the weakest bond in the family - that between father and children. Fatherhood mostly doesn't exist in the animal world, while motherhood is positively everywhere. By attaching fathers and children directly to one another, the mother now equates her children with the father. If she divorces the father, she *knows* she will lose access to her children. Therefore, in order to maintain her love with her children she must also maintain her love with their father.

If one believed that men and women were the same, one might project the female behaviours of today in modern family court as how men abused such rights in the past. However, this is not the case. Men's greater love for women than women have for men made it that the vast majority of men never tried to remove their wives from the children. However, after presumed custody was shifted from father to mother by around the 1870's, divorce rates began rising... and kept rising right up until the present day.
.

.

There were only a few thousand divorces annually in the mid-nineteenth century when divorce cost wives their children and Dad's paycheck. This family stability began eroding as later nineteenth century divorce courts, under pressure from the rising feminist movement, began awarding child custody to mothers. -- Daniel Amneus, The Case for Father Custody, p360

"Between 1870 and 1920 the divorce rate rose fifteenfold, and by 1924 one marriage out of seven ended in divorce" -- James H. Jones, *Alfred Kinsey: A Public/Private Life* (New York: W. W. Norton, 1997), p.292.

The ultimate problem of marriage and divorce today stems from the dialectical arguments the suffragettes introduced a century and a half ago, wherein they undermined the ancient contract of marriage which had held marriages strong and divorce rates low constantly throughout the West's long history. This was far more significant than anything the second wave feminists did with no-fault divorce.

How did the suffragettes dialectically change custody? Well, it didn't happen all at once, but rather in small incremental "concessions" made by society to appease the shrieks of the suffragettes. Eventually it developed into the Tender Years Doctrine. This is the beginning of the "Best Interests of the Child Doctrine," (something which is purely relative, whereas custody laws are exact and absolute) and we have been dealing with it ever since. The (British) Custody of Infants Act of 1839 already gave judges some power to over-ride a father's custody rights in certain instances, particularly in establishing mother-custody for children under seven years old. By 1873, Parliament extended the age of mother-custody to sixteen years, effectively undermining father-custody altogether. (In some states, the age was thirteen). This is known as the Tender Years Doctrine, and although it was first established in Britain, it spread around the world fast as the British Empire was at its peak in the late 19th Century. The Tender Years Doctrine was similarly used in the USA as a principle in the courts to establish the arguments of parental custody.

Because the rest of the points of the Declaration of Sentiments are not directly addressing the points I am making in this article (they are about property tax, the workplace, education and religion/morality), I will not go into an in depth explanation of them here except briefly to point out that consistently these arguments are fabrications or half-truths that are not so much meant to be truthful, but rather to start dialectal manipulations.

note There is a long stretch of time between the suffragettes and "second wave feminism." Many people consider them to be entirely different movements. However I can assure you that from a Marxist perspective, they are both after the same dialectical goals. (This applies to other areas of society as well, such the vote and the effects of universal suffrage on the mechanics of our governmental structures.) Keep in mind that the suffragette

movement "peaked" after World War One and on into the Roaring Twenties - a time of plenty when it was easy for society to afford feminist ideology. When the Great Depression came, followed directly by the Second World War, the West went through extreme hardship and it was women themselves who openly opposed feminism. For example: When jobs were scarce, it was basically women who shoo'd other women out of the workplace because it meant that a working woman had taken away a job from some other woman's husband, thereby harming women. After the extreme hardships of the 30's and 40's, we have only one generation which lands us squarely into the sexual revolution of the 60's and 70's, where feminism and Marxism picked itself up and kept on marching.

Part Two of The Marxist Dialectic of The Family: Marriage 1.5 versus The Second Wave, will be addressed at a later date. Be sure to tune in. I know you're all on the edge of your seats. Until then, keep your stick on the ice.

Women's Studies 101a

Previous Index Next

MGTOW

"If it's not right, Go Your Own Way!"

.....
..oooO.....
..(....).....
….\..(.....
…. _/.....
…….....Oooo..
…….....(....)…
……..)../....
.....(_/.....
.....

On Generalizations

. · 20 April 2012 · Archived copy · Original

"Sure, we can spend all day nitpicking specifics but aren't sweeping generalities so much more satisfying?"

I sometimes wonder where the argument "you can't generalize" comes from.

Isn't this the most idiotic idea in the world?

And it escapes from people's lips without even a thought of what they are doing or saying.

Of course you can generalize. In fact, you *must* generalize. To fail to generalize is to demand that all things must only be regarded in terms of the lowest common denominator. The lowest common denominator doesn't particularly lead to the highest pinnacles we can achieve, does it?

The "you can't generalize" zealots don't seem to have really thought things through very well. They are thinking one-dimensionally. A more complex, and more proper way of thinking is that "there are individual *groups* and there are *individuals* within those groups."

For example, saying something like "women have larger breasts than men" is a sweeping generalization. But, it is a true one – even though *some* women have smaller breasts than *some* men. In the collective group of "women" there will be some individual women who have small breasts, while in the collective group of "men" there will be *some* porky men sporting a set of man-boobs. But only an idiot would try to cherry pick a flat chested woman and stand her next to a man-boobed male and claim that this is in any way a reflection of human intellectualism, therefore, we should not say that "women have larger breasts than men" anymore. It is lunacy! The only thing we might be able to learn then is that "both men and women have nipples." Wow! Stop everything right there! The Tower of Babel is already reaching into the heavens! What more could we possibly learn?

Generalizations are absolutely necessary in order to learn anything.

Of course, what one *cannot* do is take *one* individual and generalize that the entire group resembles that *individual.* Take Marc Lepine, for example. Feminists have been screeching for over two decades now that Marc Lepine is "proof" of the murderous hatred *men* harbour for women. Now *that* is pure lunacy. The actions of *one man* is in no way a reflection of the mentality of the 15,000,000 other men who live in Canada. That is a *wrong* generalization.

But, to say that men are taller or heavier than women? Yes, this is a proper generalization, because the majority of men are taller and heavier than the majority of women – even though in *some* individual cases, you will be able to see a taller or heavier woman than a man.

We generalize that "birds fly." But oh my gosh! You can't generalize like that! Don't you know that Emus, Ostriches, Kiwis and Penguins don't fly? This is such a lame argument, and it ought to be obvious even to the simplest of simpletons that any biologist worth his salt must *necessarily* generalize that "birds fly." Look up, grasshopper… not down!

Many of the arguments that get put forward in regard to sensitive issues (like the War of the Sexes) automatically get dismissed with the intellectually retarded retort, "you can't generalize like that."

Nonsense.

In fact, no-one is going to figure out one damn thing about anything if they fail to generalize. Ignoring the similar actions/traits/situations in 80% of the cases because 20% of the cases do not coincide… well… how is that gonna make you smarter? Huh?

The thing to keep in mind is that there are individual groups (ie. men and women), and there are individuals within those groups.

The way to learn something is to recognize that the trait of the group follows in "this" direction, even though there are individual exceptions which follow "that" direction.

It's time to stop looking for the lowest common denominator.

Tell people who use the "generalizing argument" to shut the hell up. In general, those people don't have two brain cells to rub together and aren't worth listening to anyways.

There are individual *groups,* and there are *individuals* within those groups.

Previous Index Next

MGTOW

"If it's not right,Go Your Own Way!"

.....
..oooO.....
..(....).....
….\..(.....
…. _/.....

…….....Oooo..
…….....(....)…
……..)../....
.....(_/.....
.....

"Meanwhile, as long as there's one honest woman living at the temple atop Mount NAWALT in Tibet..." -- White Knight

Mathieu of Boulogne (1295) on NAWALT

From “The Lamentations of Matheolus”

Yet one might disagree with me, criticize my conclusion. and, putting forward the opposite point of view, suggest that my words are completely untrue. For, if some women are evil and perverse and abnormal, it does not necessarily follow that all of them are so cruel and wicked; nor should all of them be lumped together in this general reproach. A speech is badly composed if one's general conclusion is only partly valid. Logic hates this type of argumentation. Nevertheless, this present work, which expresses the pain in my heart, wishes me to exclude nothing, but commands me to push my argument to its logical, if extreme, conclusion, which is that no good woman exists. Solomon, in his works, makes an amazing comment, which supports my case, for he exclaims, "Who could find a virtuous woman?" The implication here is, of course, that this would be impossible. Since he says this, who am I to disagree? Why should I be shocked? What's more, he says that a base and broken man is worth more than a woman when she's doing good. Thus there is no woman worth anything at all; I don't need to look for further proof. That's enough logical demonstration.

My exposition is clearly valid, for woman has - and there is ample evidence of this - deceived all the greatest men in the world; I shall be basing myself on rational argument. If the greatest are deceived, then the lesser naturally fall. In the street where I live they say that what applies to the greatest amongst us applies even more to lesser mortals. Who were the greatest lords? Who has ever heard of greater men than Solomon or Aristotle? Yet good sense, riches and reason were not worth a dung-beetle to them; all were made to look as if they had gone out of fashion; these men were both outmanoeuvred by women, deceived, vanquished, and tamed.

Belfort Bax on NAWALT

It seems not much has changed in a century, but this is a beautiful reply (Notice how he only responds to male feminists? Lol!):

The Fraud of Feminism - Belfort Bax, 1913 pp24-26

At the time of writing, the normal person who has no axe to grind in maintaining the contrary, declares the sun to be shining brightly, but should it answer the purpose of anyone to deny this obvious fact, and declare that the day is gloomy and overcast, there is no power of argument by which I can prove that I am right and he is wrong. I may point to the sun, but if he chooses to affirm that he doesn't see it I can't prove that he does. This is, of course, an extreme case, scarcely likely to occur in actual life. But it is in essence similar to those cases of persons (and they are not seldom met with) who, when they find facts hopelessly destructive of a certain theoretical position adopted by them, do not hesitate to cut the knot of controversy in their own favour by boldly denying the inconvenient facts.

One often has experience of this trick of controversy in discussing the question of the notorious characteristics of the female sex. The Feminist driven into a corner endeavours to save his face by flatly denying matters open to common observation and admitted as obvious by all who are not Feminists. Such facts are the pathological mental condition peculiar to the female sex, commonly connoted by the term hysteria; the absence, or at best the extremely imperfect development of the logical faculty in most women; the inability of the average woman in her judgment of things to rise above personal considerations; and, what is largely a consequence of this, the lack of a sense of abstract justice and fair play among women in general.

The afore said peculiarities of women, as women, are, I contend, matters of common observation and are only disputed by those persons--to wit Feminists--to whose theoretical views and practical demands their admission would be inconvenient if not fatal. Of course these characterisations refer to averages, and they do not exclude partial or even occasionally striking exceptions. It is possible, therefore, although perhaps not very probable, that indi-vidual experience may in the case of certain individuals play a part in falsifying their general outlook; it is possible--although, as I before said not perhaps very probable--that any given man's experience of the other sex has been limited to a few quite exceptional women and that hence his particular experience contradicts that of the general run of mankind. In this case, of course, his refusal to admit what to others are self-evident facts would be perfectly bona fide.

The above highly improbable contingency is the only refuge for those who would contend for sincerity in the Feminist's denials. In this matter I only deal with the male Feminist. The female Feminist is usually too biassed a witness in this particular question.

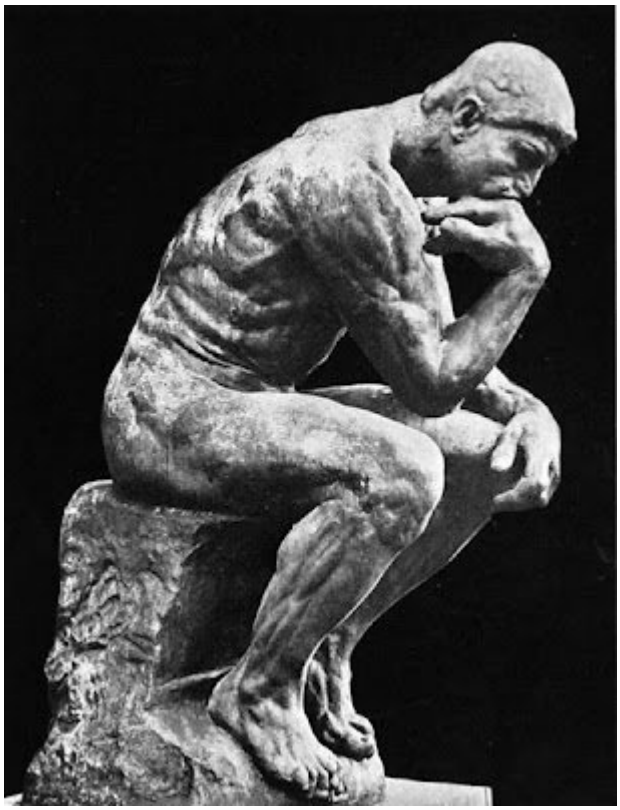
Further Reading:

Bonecrcker #71 – Not All Women Are Like That (NAWALT)

Bonecrcker #151 – The Woman Who Is The Exception Phenomena

A Leading Philosophy Rather Than A Leader

. · 27 April 2012 · Archived copy · Original



Lots of men are anxiously waiting around for some great leader to arise and lead others in their fight for rights. And, lots of men have now waited for decades for "Spartacus" to appear.

But he never will.

There are a variety of reasons for this, of which I will not go into great detail here, but let's just say that there are aspects of the male psyche which make such a scenario highly unlikely.

A philosophy, however, with contributors to it – men *could* follow that! A philosophy based upon Truth (with a capital T) *could* be a unifier. All people like to adhere to “Truth.” And between Christians and non-Christians, there is no conflict in “seeking Truth.” Seculars value “Truth.” And, in the Bible, whenever God refers to himself it is usually in a riddle:

- “I am who I am”
- “I am the beginning and the end/the Alpha and the Omega”
- “I am THE TRUTH!”

Every riddle God gives in the Bible to his “identity” is also synonymous with “Absolute Truth.”

“God” is Absolute Truth.

Absolute Truth existed before we were here, and it will exist after we are gone. The Absolute Truth just “is” – It is what it is – (I am who I am) – the Absolute Truth doesn’t need to explain nor justify – it just IS. The Absolute Truth exists on a different plane than we do – whether we figure out the true nature of Absolute Truth or not, does

not in anyway refute the existence of said Truth.

If there is one principle to unify us, it *must* be Absolute Truth. It is something both seculars and Christians can agree are of the utmost importance in seeking. A unifying principle, based upon seeking Truth.

The idea of a "leading philosophy" rather than a human-leader has enormous advantages. One must keep in mind the "two pictures" (small and big) of everyday life (fighting for our immediate rights and quality of life) vs. the philosophy of life/guiding principles *upon which the justification for our demands lie.*

You can't really have one without the other. That's why we have to go back to guiding principles. I like the "pyramid of Truth" idea of John Locke/Founding Fathers:

1 – God's Law/Absolute Truth
2 – Natural Law/Apparent/Objective Truth
3 – Civil Law/Relative/Subjective Truth
.

.
It works like one of those Russian matryoshka dolls, where the one fits inside of the other, in order to contain the wild malleability of the human mind (we can justify *anything* if we really want to, ie. Relative Truth – Jail is full of innocent people). If a Civil Law/Relative Truth contradicts a Natural Law/Apparent Truth, then the Civil Law/Relative Truth is a false one, and so forth. In this way, the "lower truths" are contained by the "higher truths,"

and thus we are provided with a philosophical framework *that anchors us to reality.*

Now, some things that were true yesterday are no longer true today. Changes to medicine and technology can indeed change what is True. (200 years ago, I would have said it is absolutely true that man does not have the ability to fly, let alone propel himself faster than the speed of sound… but today, the Truth is different – the Truth evolved). Also, sometimes things we assumed were true (earth is flat) are also illustrated to have been false. We need something "higher" than apparent truth.

Absolute Truth is purity. It controls all other truths. It is without fault. It is *never* wrong. It is enduring, it never changes. It couldn't give a rip if we understand it or not. It is eternal, and it exists on an entirely different plane than us, and often, our understanding. That we thought the earth was flat had no affect on the physics that ruled the earth and the solar system. On that level, our understanding is irrelevant. Absolute Truth trumps all, no matter what we conjure up in our brains.

I think, after a while of studying this whole malaise we are in, eventually one gets exposed to the changing "philosophies" of mankind – such as how a change of thinking about fraternity and equality arose out of the French Revolution and this led to a philosophical change in the way society in general viewed reality. It is often pointed out that this philosophical change is what led to the birth of Marxism and feminism (Relative Truth Uber Alles).

Therefore, if one stands back and looks at the "big picture," I think that there has to be an underlying philosophy that has to win out over the other. We need a **new** philosophy. We need a new change in philosophical thought. A new "Age of Reason;" a new "Renaissance of Thought;" we need to philosophically defeat the ideology which has gripped our society to our detriment.

And dammit, why the hell shouldn't it be us that sparks its creation?

I am pleased to see more and more men starting to put the pieces together and understand how civilization works as a "machine," that there is cause and effect; that certain things need to be in place in order for other things to occur. I think many men are beginning to understand that there are some unpleasant Truths (and pretty lies), but the unpleasant Truth rules over the pretty lies. This in itself is a turn back to the Absolute Truth. Lying/Ideology doesn't change the way the world actually is. When confronted with a higher truth, lower truths must be adjusted to

accommodate it.

A way to think of building a philosophy is to think of something like the Martial Arts. There really isn't a "leader," but there is a "right way" and a "wrong way," even though sometimes there are variations upon "the right way." And, the Martial Arts acknowledges certain Truths (both physical and philosophical), and puts them together into a discipline, or a framework, that over-all creates something very powerful and useful.

We should forget about a "leader" and rather look for "leading principles," of which it is of the utmost importance that Absolute Truth be the base of it all. Our ultimate goal should be to seek Absolute Truth, for it trumps all else. (Even ***gasp*** equality is trumped!)

Once we have philosophical principles, then we can "build."

I like building stuff, don't you?

We should build ourselves a philosophical ladder, so men can get themselves out of this sewer. Just like we understand how "marriage puts sex to work" by harnessing the sex drive of men and attaching it *to children* through women, if we look at the mechanics of these things and understand the Truths of them, we can identify the base elements of what keeps that machine running and cut off the unnecessary riff-raff.

We have to have philosophical principles underlying us, otherwise "right and wrong" will be forever malleable – and that is just continuing to live in the wicked grip of Feminism and Marxism. No thanks!

Many things can be integrated into such a "philosophical machine."

For example: Many things in the Bible can be shown to have a mechanical purpose – like how its laws and morals have resulted in a "civilization creator" by the way it structures society. These are truths that exist both within, *and outside of* the religion itself. There is quite an easy over-lap here.

I also suspect that Buddhist thought might be able to integrate in, for it also seeks Truth, and just as how we can recognize the Christian model for creating civilization, I believe there are certain Truths that can be illustrated through Buddhism's disciplines which do the same. An example of what I mean is how both religions offer a path to

personal peace through either meditation or prayer, and further, how both meditation and prayer can be explained psychologically/scientifically without the aspect of religion in it. All three of these things are about mentally acknowledging the limit of being able to control everything about you, and submitting to a *higher* power so you don't go cuckoo. *In no way does acknowledging these "mecahnical truths" discredit the idea of God,* but it doesn't **demand** you believe in God either. And, it also allows that both Buddhists and Biblical Wisdom tap into the Absolute Mechanical Truths that make up the Universe.

In this way, the Truth has not been compromised, nor the religious beliefs of Buddhists, Christians, Seculars, or even Jedi Knights such as myself. Christians, Buddhists and Seculars can all three hold black-belts in the same martial art without compromising their religious beliefs, can't they?

Anyway, this line of thought comes because I've been dialing it back, and dialing it back aaaaaand dialing it back to see at what point there is a common-denominator where all of us can co-operate together on something. When I realized that even as internet writers who use words as weapons, we cannot even convince 15 or 30 writers to make an agreement to start introducing simple words and phrases within their articles, so that over time we may start to manipulate the English language to our advantage in the same way that others have done in the recent past (like when the name of husband or wife was changed to the uni-sexual "partner" to allow for the integration of the gay marriage debate into society)… Lol! Well, that is something pretty simple, I think. But… it is just not achievable… in that way. So, until such a simple thing can be accomplished, all construction on the Tower of Babel should cease and desist!

This is why I keep thinking that perhaps the only thing we can truly "build" is a "philosophy" to pass on to other men – and since men won't co-operate on a damn thing, any philosophy has to start on a personal basis. It has to serve the individual on a personal level first. It can build itself further from there if it so chooses, I don't know. But I have come to the conclusion that the only thing we can "build" is a philosophy to help ourselves first to navigate this world.

For example – There is a maxim that seems to run all the way from the personal/micro-level, right to the macro-level, which is that promiscuity leads to clashing with the law. The more sexually "loose" you are, directly increases the amount of exposure to the steel fist of the law.

I wish I had kept it, but I once seen a comparison between "sexual freedom" vs. "all other freedom." And it was quite amazing. If one practices sexual restraint, hosts of other freedoms become possible. However, the more sexual, the more laws are needed to keep things going. Highly sexual people vastly expose themselves to risks of totalitarianism, and all the way to the top, a highly sexual society necessarily becomes totalitarian to survive.(Divorce Laws, Child-support, Welfare, etc.)

However, if you limit your exposure to these dangers, even on a personal level, our society still provides a pretty good and "free" place to live in. Government can't come after you for child support if you have no kids. (Sex). And on it goes – Alimony, TRO bullshit, DV Charges, VAWA/IMBRA… on and on it goes… but the one thing that is a constant – they all ultimately derive from sex. Limit your exposure, and all of those things are not really much of a problem for you.

It seems like a “truism” to me – a “principle.” That **doesn’t** mean a philosophy based upon that truism has to demand 100% sexual restraint – but it could demand that one *acknowledges* the Truth of it, and therefore is not blind to it, and thus becomes responsible for his own actions. (Which is surviving in this world, rather than just being tossed about by it).

I suspect that this is the only thing we will truly be able to “build.” Philosophies to help guide men through life with truisms such as these, but they have to start on the personal level first – to provide that benefit to each man directly at the outset. Maybe after that, the “collective consciousness” of like-minded men will slowly retake the culture.

“MGTOW – Taking the Personal Out of The Political”

Previous Index Next

MGTOW

“If it’s not right,Go Your Own Way!”

.....
..oooO.....
..(....).....
….\..(.....
…. _/.....
……....Oooo..
……....(....)…
……..)../....
.....(_/.....
.....

Further Reading:

MGTOW is also Men Going The Right Way

Western Culture’s Inability to Pass Feminism’s Shit Tests

Empty Vessels and Relative Truth

. · 11 May 2012 · Archived copy · Original

All truth to women is relative. It is men who seek Absolute Truth, or rather, have a better ability to get closer to the Truth. Women find truth through the consensus of the herd. If the herd believes 1+1=3, then it is right because the herd believes it is so. If tomorrow, the herd believes 1+1=1, then that will be right because the herd believes it is so. This is why you see women are so much more attuned to changing fashions and why it is often social proofing that decides for them who is a sexy and desirable man. What the herd believes is right is the "truth" for women. It is men who insist that 1+1=2, I don't care how much you cows moo at me.

"... Women may have happy ideas, taste, and elegance, but they cannot attain to the ideal. The difference between men and women is like that between animals and plants. Men correspond to animals, while women correspond to plants because their development is more placid and *the principle that underlies it is the rather vague unity of feeling.* When women hold the helm of government, the state is at once in jeopardy, because *women regulate their actions not by the demands of universality but by arbitrary inclinations and opinions.* Women are educated--who knows how?" -- G.F. Hegel

This is very old and part of the human condition. In fact, the story of the Garden of Eden is very much about the Absolute Truth being over-ruled by the Relative Truth of Eve.There was only one rule in the Garden… DON'T EAT FROM THAT TREE! There was only one truth that Adam and Eve had to follow… and here is where it gets interesting, because Eve was *deceived* but she was not particularly *lied* to. In fact, the serpent's assertions are perfectly valid, although very craftily worded:

- The serpent was right when he says "you will not surely die." (He was right, they did not surely die… After being tossed from the Garden, God offered them a path to salvation and eternal life – if they chose to follow God's path).

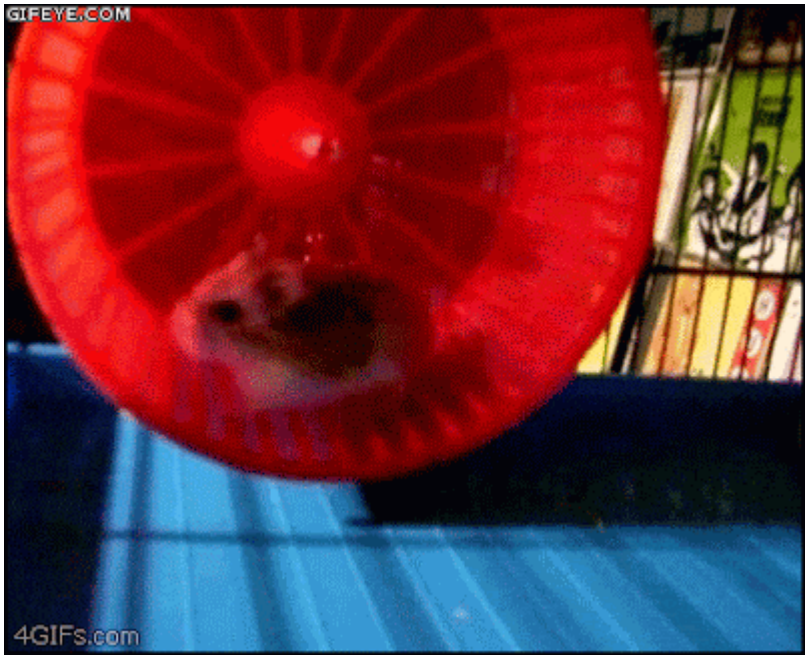
- The serpent was right, when they ate the fruit, their eyes *were* opened, and they did become like God and gain knowledge of good and evil.

And then Eve's female rationalizing hamster wheel starts churning, mired in Relative Truth.

"When the woman saw that the fruit of the tree was good for food and pleasing to the eye, and also desirable for gaining wisdom, she took some and ate it. She also gave some to her husband, who was with her, and he ate it."

Because it was good for food, pleasing to look at, and desirable for gaining wisdom… Eve rationalized to herself why the Relative Truth *which she wished for* ought to be able to over-ride the Absolute Truth that existed.

.



.

Ahem… could placing the Relative Truth we create in our brains over the Absolute Truth that exists in reality be the "original sin?"

Also to note here in the Garden story is the difference between men and women, and something we also often speak of in the MRM: Adam, the mangina, *simply went along with her.*

.

1 Timothy 2:12-14 RSV *"I permit no woman to teach or have authority over men; she is to keep silent. 13For Adam was formed first, then Eve; 14and Adam was not deceived, but the woman was deceived and became a transgressor."*

Adam **was not** deceived. He sinned *willingly.* Eve deceived herself with her female driven hamster-wheel of a relative-truth laden brain… but Adam was not deceived at all. He was standing right there and was not deceived; Eve gave it to him, and *he was still without sin at this point* but like a mangina eager to please he said, "Sure thing, Toots!" and swallowed 'er down whole.

Adam sinned *willingly*, but Eve was deceived.

To Adam he said, "*Because you listened to your wife* and ate from the tree about which I commanded you, 'You must not eat of it,'… (Man's Curse)

It's pretty clear.

Between Adam and Eve, God expects a different level of cognition… God expected Adam to "know better" than Eve… *because Adam has the capability to know better.*

Of all of the things that were in the world during the Garden, the only thing not directly from God… is Eve. She was created from Adam, who was created in God's image. Adam is a copy of God, and Eve is a copy of Adam… Adam is "one step closer" to God/Absolute Truth than Eve is.

.

1 - Absolute Truth = God
2 - Objective Truth = Man
3 - Subjective Truth = Woman

.

Everywhere in nature, the male is the reproductive servant of the female. However, while humans are of the animal kingdom, we are not animals. It was when humans started putting the male principle in front of the female principle that we stopped living like animals and rose up from being beasts of the field.

.

Buddhism also acknowledges the way a woman's mind is mired in Relative Truth.

.

The course of a river and a woman's mind both wander. Water is malleable, it turns here and there when rocks and mountains block its path. Women are like this. They are inconstant as water. Although they know what is right, when they run into the strong will of a man, they are checked and turn in bad directions. The right fades like a line drawn on the water. Women's nature is unsteady: though they see what they should be, they soon become what they should not be. Buddhahood is founded on integrity. Therefore, women, who are easily swayed, cannot become Buddhas. Women have the "five obstacles" (inability to become anything great) and *the "three followings" (follows first the father, then the husband, then the son).* Thus in one sutra it is written: "Even should the eyes of all the buddhas of the three worlds fall to the earth, women cannot become Buddha." Another text says: "Even if you can capture the clear wind, you can never capture the mind of a woman." -- Buddha - from Selected Writings of Nichiren

You can also see how women's "truth" never really exists by the way they relate to men sexually. Many men will notice this if they meet up with an ex-girlfriend after a few years of not seeing her. She is an entirely different person than who he remembered her as. It is as if the girl he once knew was completely false and no longer exists.

Women are "empty vessels" – they conform themselves to whatever man they are currently with and take on his truths, that is, until her rotating polyandry shifts her to her next man, then she takes on the new guy's truths.

.

"As a rule, the woman adapts herself to the man, his views become hers, his likes and dislikes are shared by her, every word he says is an incentive to her, and the stronger his sexual influence on her the more this is so. Woman does not perceive that this influence which man has on her causes her to deviate from the line of her own development; she does not look upon it as a sort of unwarrantable intrusion; she does not try to shake off what is really an invasion of her private life; she is not ashamed of being receptive; on the contrary, she is really pleased when she can be so, and prefers man to mould her mentally. She rejoices in being dependent, and her expectations from man resolve themselves into the moment when she may be perfectly passive." -- Otto Weininger, Sex and Character, Woman and Her Significance in the Universe

For example, I've known one woman for many years now. When I first met her, it was through snowmobiling. I was an avid snowmobiler and so was her boyfriend. She was *really* into snowmobiling – just loved it… until after four years, she broke up with her boyfriend. She never went sledding again.

The next guy she was with though, was *really* into drag-racing. She ended up marrying that guy, and really got into drag-racing. In fact, she ended up becoming the President of the Drag Racing Association of the town she lived in… until she divorced the guy. Now she couldn't care less about drag-racing.

The guy she is with now is a sheep farmer and breeds border collies on the side. Now she has a government job which monitors forage for sheep farmers, and she is a member of the Border Collie Breeding Association or something – they travel all around to dog shows etc. and she is *really* into it.

That woman is by nature intended to obey is shown by the fact that every woman who is placed in the unnatural position of absolute independence at once attaches herself to some kind of man, by whom she is controlled and governed; this is because she requires a master. If she, is young, the man is a lover; if she is old, a priest.- Schopenhauer, On Women

Now, does such a woman actually have a personality of her own? No. She finds her personality through her man. She has no "truth" of her own – it is always relative and is always subject to change.

This is one of the reasons women give men fitness tests/shit tests. They test him for the strength of his character, and if they find him suitable they will conform themselves around him. Thus, it is important for men to know themselves, take a position, and staunchly never budge.

XV. Maintain your state control

You are an oak tree. You will not be manipulated by crying, yelling, lying, head games, sexual withdrawal, jealousy ploys, pity plays, shit tests, hot/cold/hot/cold, disappearing acts, or guilt trips. She will rain and

thunder all around you and you will shelter her until her storm passes. She will not drag you into her chaos or uproot you. When you have mastery over yourself, you will have mastery over her. — Roissy's Sixteen Commandments of Poon

The problem comes in when we falsely believe that men and women are equal, and thus let women "lead us." They can't, for they are full of relative truth – their truth doesn't exist, not for long anyway. It is why women resent men so much who don't take the lead. It may satisfy a woman's ego to have her husband grovel before her, but what she *needs* is for a man to be strong so she can conform herself around him. She needs his "truth" in order to find herself *through him.*

What's going on in society is that as a culture we have been failing feminism's shit tests and have become weak men.

A man should also never be afraid to lose a woman for once you are in that position, she is the leader and he is the follower. If as a culture we are failing feminism's cultural shit tests, the solution is to become Men Going Their Own Way. See ya toots!

Women are as independent as a tropical fern in a greenhouse in Iceland.

If the men "leave" the women will follow, because female "independence" is an illusion.

Previous Index Next

MGTOW

"If it's not right,Go Your Own Way!"

.....
..oooO.....
..(....).....
….\..(.....
…. _/.....
…….....Oooo..
…….....(....)…
……..)../....
.....(_/.....
.....

"The most decisive proof for the correctness of the view that attributes henids to woman and differentiated thoughts to man, and that sees in this a fundamental sexual distinction, lies in the fact that wherever a new judgment is to be made, (not merely something already settled to be put into proverbial form) ***it is always the case that the female expects from man the clarification of her data, the interpretation of her henids.*** **It is almost a tertiary sexual character of the male, and certainly it acts on the female as such, that she expects from him the interpretation and illumination of her thoughts. It is from this reason that so many girls say that they could only marry, or, at least, only love a man who was cleverer than themselves; that they would**

be repelled by a man who said that all they thought was right, and did not know better than they did. ***In short, the woman makes it a criterion of manliness that the man should be superior to herself mentally, that she should be influenced and dominated by the man; and this in itself is enough to ridicule all ideas of sexual equality."*** -- Otto Weininger, Sex and Character, Male and Female Characteristics

.

"The woman follows the man. In her youth she follows her father and elder brother; when married, she follows her husband; when her husband is dead, she follows her son." – Confucius

.

Further Reading:

Pook #40 - Do Girls Want Sovereignty?

Bonecrcker #47 - Living in La-La-Land

Smoking Truths - by Ezra Levant

. · 15 May 2012 · Archived copy · Original

Ezra illustrates very well how "organisms" work - even the supposedly "good ones." Basically they exist only to serve themselves, find problems where they don't exist or create hype over non-issues. They all expand government, however. I can't see how creating "organisms" for the Men's Movement will work any different. (ie. Men's Political Lobby Groups, A White House Council on Boys & Men, Male Studies in Universities etc. etc.). It is far better to Go Your Own Way and keep these types of organisms and the intrusive government they grow out of our lives. .

(Sorry, I can't figure out how to centre this damn video. Hey, I never claimed I knew how to work one these new-fangled 'puter thingies. Aaargh!)

Heh, I love Ezra. And for those outside of Canada, keep in mind when he criticizes the Conservative government that it was Ezra Levant who was once the Member of Parliament for Calgary Southwest, and stepped down in a by-election to allow Stephen Harper to take over his seat and "unite the right." Harper, of course, went on to become our Prime Minister after this. Ezra, ummm, gets invited to 24 Sussex for dinner once in a while.

Also, the Canadian Human Rights Commission (CHRC) went after Ezra for publishing "those Muslim Cartoons" in his magazine, and charged him with "hate speech" for offending Muslims *because he accurately reported the news.* Hoo boy, did the CHRC pick a fight with the wrong man. He fought them tooth and nail, won, then kicked them in the balls repeatedly when they were down. The CHRC was so used to people backing down that they weren't expecting Ezra.

Fire.

Them.

All.

What a great Canadian.

The only thing I disagree with Ezra on is that smoking is bad for you. Just the opposite, because studies have proven it:

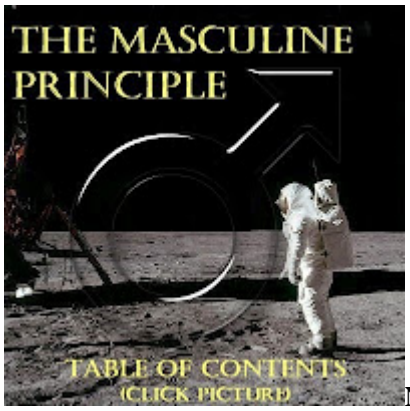
"Cigarette smoking has been shown to increase serum hemoglobin, increase total lung capacity and stimulate weight loss, factors that all contribute to enhanced performance in endurance sports. Despite this scientific evidence, the prevalence of smoking in elite athletes is actually many times lower than in the general population. The reasons for this are unclear; however, there has been little to no effort made on the part of national governing bodies to encourage smoking among athletes."

Read the article here.

You're Such a Tool!

. · 18 May 2012 · Archived copy · Original

.



NOTICE: This article has been updated and moved to *The Masculine Principle*. Please click here to read the new version or scroll down to continue reading in the old format.

.

***

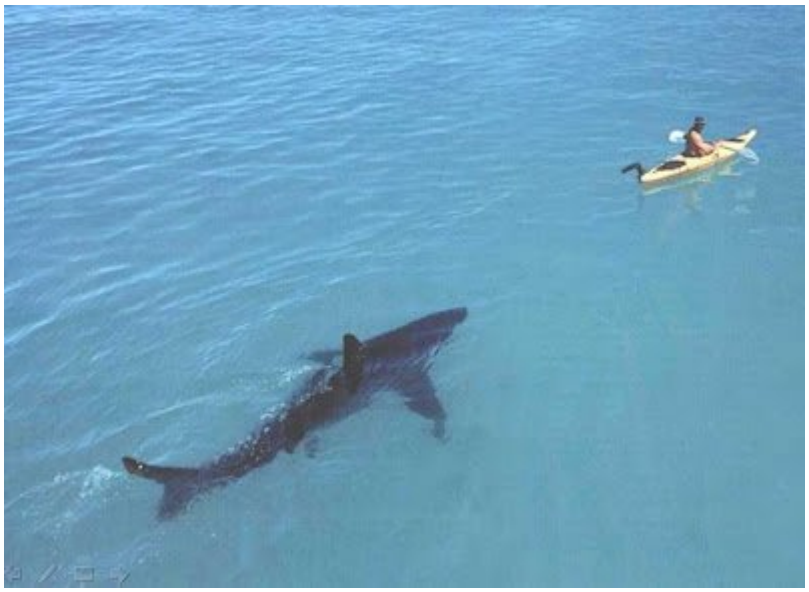
.

"Feminine traits are called weaknesses. People joke about them; fools ridicule them; but reasonable persons see very well that those traits are just the tools for the management of men, and for the use of men for female designs." -- Immanuel Kant, *Anthropology from a Pragmatic Point of View,* Southern Illinois University Press 1978, originally published in 1798

One thing our society struggles with as it continually fails feminism's cultural fitness tests is the silly notion that men and women are "equal" and thus we are essentially coming at each-other from the same point of view regarding our interactions with the opposite sex. This is the wrong way of thinking. We are not "blank slates" who are different merely because of society's externally imposed social constructs upon us.

In fact, anyone who believes in evolution would scoff at the idea of men and women being essentially the same. Natural Selection is what "evolves" us. Sharks mate with the fastest swimmers and the sharks best able to feed themselves. By selecting those with the genes which display these traits, they continually evolve to become

better swimmers and better predators. Animals evolve to do the tasks which they are best suited for. Thus, the sharks of today are likely "better" sharks than the sharks of 10,000 years ago as the genes of those best at survival continually get passed on more often than those who fail to survive.



Between the sexes, we also evolve to do the tasks which we are best suited for. You can see that men and women are physically different, each being designed for what they do best. Certainly there are some social constructs that society imposes upon men and women, but they are based on our biological natures, not upon the blank slate.

In women's case, their entire bodies are designed for giving birth and caring for children. They have wide hips to give birth and have breasts to feed children with. Note that it is also these traits - women's "curves" - that are a large part of what men find sexually attractive in women. It is their "reproductive features" we find attractive. Further, even a woman's mind has evolved to make her more suitable for rearing children, thus a woman's "multi-tasking brain" is more suitable to care for children - or to do other tasks while also caring for children. But it goes even further than this multi-tasking feature. Women are somewhere in between that of a man and a child. Often times, the men of old observed women were merely children of a larger growth:

Women are directly adapted to act as the nurses and educators of our early childhood, for the simple reason that they themselves are childish, foolish, and short-sighted — in a word, are big children all their lives, something intermediate between the child and the man, who is a man in the strict sense of the word. Consider how a young girl will toy day after day with a child, dance with it and sing to it; and then consider what a man, with the very best intentions in the world, could do in her place.-- Arthur Schopenhauer, On Women

Women have mentally "evolved" to be something intermediate between the child and the man. We have all heard that women are more emotional than men and are more "in tune with feelings" than men. And this is correct, for tell me, how do infants communicate except through the language of emotions and feelings? How does a baby indicate it needs to be fed? It is through the emotional response of crying - certainly not by saying, "Hey momma, bring those soft, round milk thingies over to my mouth." Children communicate emotionally, and since women have evolved to become "better carers of children," they have also evolved to be more in tune to the language of children, which is emotion.

We also often hear that girls mature faster than boys. This is also true, and to refer back to Schopenhauer again, he acknowledges this as well:

Man reaches the maturity of his reasoning and mental faculties scarcely before he is eight-and-twenty; woman when she is eighteen; but hers is reason of very narrow limitations. This is why women remain children all their lives, for they always see only what is near at hand, cling to the present, take the appearance of a thing for reality, and prefer trifling matters to the most important. -- Arthur Schopenhauer, On Women

The reason girls mature mentally before boys again goes back to their biological function as the bearers of children. Everywhere in nature, when an animal is physically capable of giving birth it is also mentally developed enough to care for its offspring - at least in the most primal of ways. This is also true of human females. When they reach puberty, they are mentally mature enough to give at minimum the basic care to an infant to keep it alive. Even though we don't encourage girls to have children as soon as they reach puberty, we do see in our culture that adults begin to trust girls at the age of puberty for tasks such as babysitting, thus lots of girls in the 12 to 14 age group begin to earn some pocket money in this manner - they have become mentally mature enough to adequately do the task. Why does Schopenhauer indicate women reach the maturity of their reasoning and mental faculties at the age of eighteen? Well, what would be the evolutionary advantage to women growing out of this phase of relating to children and beyond it? There is none.

But then, what is it that men have evolved to become?

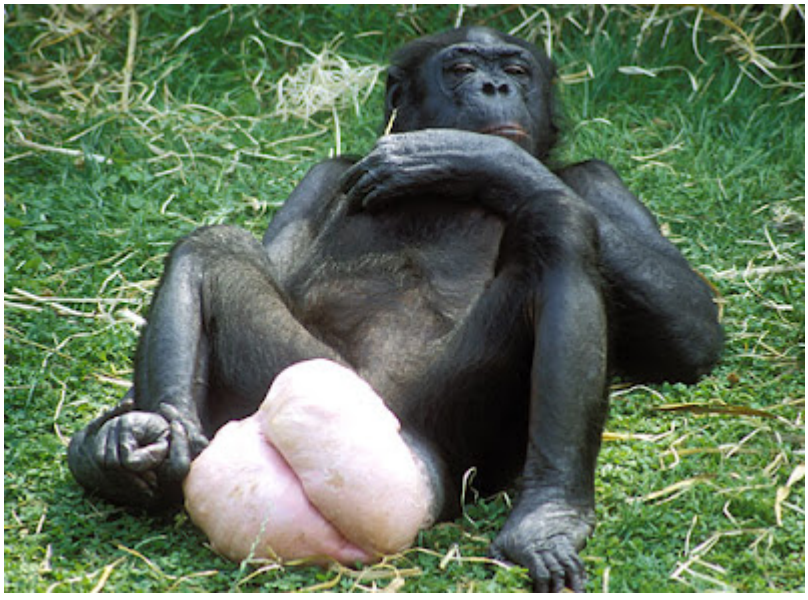
The first thing we have to realize is that everywhere in nature, the male is the sexual servant of the female.

"This goes down to the level of plants which have "male" and "female" parts.

The ripening of an egg, or ovum, is a time and energy intensive job, so the male is designed to be ready to fertilize that ovum when the female notifies him that she is "ready."

In the rest of the natural world, females announce their readiness to the entire world with a variety of cues - smell being the most significant, but visual cues come in a close second.

When a female chimpanzee is in estrus, her genitals swell up and become a *specific* shade of bright pink. Jane Goodall observed one such female whose genitals could be seen from across a valley - nearly a mile or 2 away.



There is a species of fish in which the belly of the female turns a particular shade of red when she is gravid. A block of wood with the lower half painted that exact shade of red will drive males into a mating frenzy.

Smell is even more important. There are *many* species in which a female in heat gives off pheromones which are specific to that species which can be picked up by males as much as 5 miles away." -- Zenpriest

Men have evolved to become the best providers and protectors we can possibly be in order to meet the needs of the female - especially during her most vulnerable time, which is when she gets pregnant, gives birth, recuperates, and then raises the child until it becomes self-sufficient (ie. It can walk, talk and feed itself). This whole process takes about four years to complete, and then her rotating polyandry cycle kicks in and she discards the male in order to seek out a new man to repeat the cycle again. This is the primitive method of assuring genetic diversity amongst her offspring, which increases their overall chance of survival.

So aside from merely being sperm donors, men have also evolved into being the best at what we do - and these are also the things women find attractive in a man: our protecting and providing skills. We have developed upper body strength which is vastly superior to the female's, and so it is tall, strong, broad shouldered men which women find sexually attractive. Men have developed linear thinking brains which help us figure out how to perform specific tasks as efficiently and productively as possible. No matter what men set out to do, aside from raising children, women cannot compete with men on a level playing field because we have evolved to best perform our tasks in order to make ourselves useful to women. Most women admit that they are sexually attracted to men who are more intelligent than they are - this does not mean that all men are are smarter than all women, but merely that each woman tends to seek out a man who has higher intelligence than she possesses.

But ultimately, men do all of these things in service of women, in the hopes of gaining - or maintaining - her favour. However, the kink in this plot is that women don't actually "love" men, only gay men truly love men. Rather women love being *loved.* "Love" means different things to men and women.

"Women have no sympathy... And my experience of women is almost as large as Europe. And it is so intimate too. *Women crave for being loved, not for loving.* They scream at you for sympathy all day long, they are incapable of giving you *any* in return for they cannot remember your affairs long enough to do so." -- Florence Nightingale

.

Think of a man as a stick in a woman's hand - a tool which she uses for her own purposes. The woman with the biggest stick will fare better in society than women with smaller sticks - or especially women with no sticks at all. This is a further reason for women to give men fitness tests - to test how strong of a stick he is. If she finds him sufficiently strong, she will begin to conform herself around him, creating the illusion that she is his ideal mate so that he will begin to fall in love with her and thus become useful to her as a "tool."

.

This is one thing that men must always keep in mind in his dealings with women. For women, their love is parasitic - it is based upon what she *gets* from a man. But for men, their love is *the host* to the parasitic nature of the woman - it is based upon what he *gives.*

"When I started researching this book, I was prepared to rediscover the old saw that conventional femininity is nurturing and passive and that masculinity is self-serving, egotistical, and uncaring. But I did not find this. One of my findings here is that manhood ideologies always include a criterion of selfless generosity, even to the point of sacrifice. Again and again we find that 'real' men are those who give more than they take." -- David Gilmore in his 1990 book *Manhood in the Making*

Also, one must keep in mind that relationships don't mean the same thing to women as they do to men. Relationships are a "tool" for women - they get things from it, or rather from the man. Women get over relationships far more easily than men do. They are never as deeply "in love" with a man as a man is in love with the woman. Men and women are polar opposites. We are two sides to the same coin, but those sides are not the same. Women have *more* emotions but they are *shallower.* Men have *fewer* emotions but they run *deeper.* In an evolutionary survival scenario, it makes sense too, that men would love women deeper than women would "love" men. It is a man's deep love that will make him sacrifice his produced goods and even his life for the woman he loves. This rarely happens the other way around. While there is an evolutionary survival advantage for the female to lose interest in a man after completing her four year rotating polyandry cycle, there is no similar advantage for the man to lose interest. In fact, just the opposite. It is in both her and her offspring's advantage to have the man still hopelessly in love with her, providing and protecting his brains out while she slyly seeks out her next suitable mate before giving the present "tool" his walking papers.

Everything a man does in a relationship is in her benefit. This is the basis of Briffault's Law.

“The female, not the male, determines all the conditions of the animal family. Where the female can derive no benefit from association with the male, no such association takes place.” -- Robert Briffault, *The Mothers*, I, 191

It is also important to note the corollaries to Briffault's Law:

1 - Past benefit provided by the male does not provide for continued or future association.

2 - Any agreement where the male provides a current benefit in return for a promise of future association is null and void as soon as the male has provided the benefit (see corollary 1)

3 - A promise of future benefit has limited influence on current/future association, with the influence inversely proportionate to the length of time until the benefit will be given and directly proportionate to the degree to which the female trusts the male (which is not bloody likely).

Briffault's Law is the reason the most important word a man must learn in his relationships with a woman is "No!" If a man keeps nothing for himself and simply gives it all to her, she has no reason to continue to associate with him. No matter what he does, it soon will become "What have you done for me lately?" He *must* keep the benefits he bestows upon her under his control, and learn to say no often, as she will naturally try to get him to pass them on to her. No, I won't spend $100 for roses on Valentine's Day. No, we're not going to Hawaii for a vacation (unless you are paying, Toots!) No, you cannot move in with me. No, you cannot move in now that you've been evicted – that is what your girlfriend's couch or your parent's spare room is for. NO! We won't get be getting married. No! You are not going on the pill so we can have bareback sex. No! No! No! No! No! **NO!**

.

***There were only a few thousand divorces annually in the mid-nineteenth century when divorce cost wives their children and Dad's paycheck.* This family stability began eroding as later nineteenth century divorce courts, under pressure from the rising feminist movement, began awarding child custody to mothers.** -- Daniel Amneus, The Case for Father Custody, p360

"Between 1870 and 1920 the divorce rate rose fifteenfold, and by 1924 one marriage out of seven ended in divorce" — James H. Jones, *Alfred Kinsey: A Public/Private Life* (New York: W. W. Norton, 1997), p.292.

Women's attitude to men is easiest to understand by comparing it to our attitude towards a job. Whether we love our job or not, most of us think we must have one. We often think a bad job is better than not having a job at all. No matter how much we may love our job, we'll jump ship and go with a better one if it's offered. And no matter

how good our job may have been for us in the past, if something happens that upsets us, the love has probably gone forever. We don't ever think we are owed for the past.

For women, attracting a man and using him for her own designs *is her job* - it is how women survive.

- What do women have jobs for? To entertain themselves while they aren't working - The Predatory Female

Women never want to be without a "tool" in society, for it is through her man-tool that she accomplishes what she needs in society - thus, women are like monkeys and never let go of one branch until she has gotten hold of the next. This is why you usually find that at the end of her relationship with a particular tool, er, man, there is always another man hanging around somewhere in the wings. Female "independence" is an illusion. What women's independence actually means is that they want the freedom to change from one tool to the next without consequences. Men would view independence in a much different manner.

In fact, Buddhism acknowledges the three phases women go through of using men as "tools" for their own designs during their lives:

Women have the "five obstacles" (inability to become anything great) and *the "three followings" (follows first the father, then the husband, then the son).* -- Buddha - from Selected Writings of Nichiren

In her youth, a woman gains her power through her father - he is the "tool" that serves her and represents her in society. In adulthood, she gains power through her husband, who spends his life's energy providing for her and the offspring they produce together. In her old age, she gains her power through her son. In each case, she uses a man as her tool to deal with society.

I can certainly attest to the last one about the son with my own mother. Since my father died a few years ago, it is now me who my mother uses to navigate life. When she has a problem, she comes to me to deal with it. If she suspects the mechanic at the shop is trying to rip her off, it is me who goes there to talk with him. When she needs to make a financial decision, it is me who she seeks advice from and who she hands over the authority to make ultimate decisions. Since she lost my father as her "tool," she transferred the responsibility to me. She is not independent as a man would be. I'm not upset about it. It is the natural order of life. And since she didn't stuff me into a daycare, allowing strangers to raise me, but rather did a good job for me as a true mother when I was young - nor did she selfishly destroy our family with divorce, but stayed with my father for 48 years (and I'm sure not all of those years were easy ones), I am willing to let her use me as her "tool" in her old age because she deserves it.

We are failing feminism's cultural fitness tests because we are not asserting our authority and telling women, "NO! You can't use me as your tool for free. We are humans, not monkeys." And since men's love is "the host" for women's "parasitic love," it is essential that the host leads the parasite, rather than the other way around. When the parasite leads, it destroys both the host and the parasite, but when the host leads, both organisms can survive.

NO! Learn to say it, and learn to say it often.

You don't even have to be rude about it. You could also say "NO MA'AM!"

Women are as independent as a tropical fern in a greenhouse in Iceland.

If the men "leave" the women will follow, because female "independence" is an illusion.

MGTOW

“If it’s not right, Go Your Own Way!”

.....
..oooO.....
..(....).....
….\..(.....
…. _/.....
…….....Oooo..
…….....(....)…
……..)../....
.....(_/.....
.....
.

“The woman follows the man. In her youth she follows her father and elder brother; when married, she follows her husband; when her husband is dead, she follows her son.” – Confucius

.

Any Gal of Mine

. · 23 May 2012 · Archived copy · Original

.
I like this song. It brings back memories of a time about 16 years ago now, after I had split up with a girlfriend I had been with for a couple of years. There was a pub that I used to frequent and quite often they hired a Newfie named Gordon, who was quite a talented one-man band, to play music there. I became quite good friends with him over time. After I had split with my girlfriend, when I would walk into the pub and he noticed me, his next song would always be, Garth Brooks' Friends in Low Places. Gord would often sit at my table in between sets and have a beer with me... and I'd always tell him, "You know what I want to hear, Gord." and he would make his next song, "This one goes out to Rob," and he would sing "Any Gal of Mine," the whole pub would laugh, because they knew it was my favourite song. He even screeched me in as an honourary Newfie. Since I'm one of them now, I'm allowed to poke fun of them - although, sometimes they come back at me with "What's black and blue and floats in they bay? The last Mainlander who made a Newfie joke." Newfies are a lot of fun to party with... if you can understand what the hell they are saying. "Deed I is me 'ol cock, and long may your big jib draw!"

Anyway, back to this ex-girlfriend I broke up with. I had suspected already for a few weeks that "something was wrong." I should have trusted my gut. As the weeks went by, a friend of mine dropped by work and said he seen me and the girlfriend driving around in her truck that afternoon but I must not have seen him because I didn't wave back... I hadn't been with her driving around in her truck that afternoon, so then I knew. (Her truck had tinted windows and the guy she was cheating on me with had the same colour hair as me etc.). I had a little bit of time therefore, to collect myself and figure out a strategy for dumping her. I was sick of all the antagonism that happens after a break-up, and decided to "kill it with kindness" - especially since we lived in a small town and would inevitably be bumping into each-other from time to time... forever. So, I called her up and asked to meet after work, and did the deed. I asked her if she was seeing someone else, and she denied it. I told I thought it was good for us to spend some time apart, and we should break up... she told me I was an asshole... I responded, "It's too bad you feel that way because I really enjoyed going out with you." And that was that, we broke up.

Of course, that's not the end of the story. (You didn't really think it was, did you?).

When people would ask me about the ex and what happened, I just refused to talk about it - I never bad-mouthed her. I just said, "She was a nice girl, but things just didn't work out." I think about the worst that I said about her was when people asked me about my snowmobile (I was an avid and well-known snowmobiler in my community) - if they asked me if I had done any performance work on it for this season, I would reply, "Yeah, I light-weighted it by around 130lbs." Everyone would laugh. I would see the ex around town, driving her new boyfriend's truck, and she would give me "the death glare" - I smiled and waved. The truth was, though, I was really hurt by the whole thing. I was just determined not to let it show. I didn't realize it at the time, but I played the biggest mind-game on her of all - and that was not my intention. It was simply my intention not to have her as an enemy. But I think it drove her insane.

It was quite a revealing situation for me on how females work. It soon became that several of her friends would show up at the pub and sit with me. Two of them I had slept with earlier in life - I discovered that both of them had lost their virginity to me. (I didn't know that). Also my ex's best friend started coming on to me in a big way. I never slept with her because as the SNAG (Sensitive New Age Guy) that I was back in the mid-nineties, as well as keeping with my intention of not making the ex into an enemy, I didn't want to create troubles with the ex - even though her friend couldn't have made it any clearer she wanted me to screw her stupid. I would even come back from the washroom at the pub, and the two girls I had already slept with were describing my cock and its size to her. Women tell *everything* about sex and relationships to each-other - right down to the most intimate details. Men

never do this. It is really stupid of women too. They brag about their boyfriend and how good of a sex life they are having with him, and the next thing you know, their friends want to try some of that too. In retrospect, I should have given the "best-friend" a good grudge-fucking - I didn't owe the ex anything after she cheated on me. Lol! Also, when you start walking into the pub in a small town and notice there are entire tables of women that you've slept with at some time or another... it's perhaps time to move. It's also further evidence that social proofing amongst women is real.

After about two months, the ex could no longer stand it. She picked up the phone and called me. "Are you mad at me?" She asked. "No, why would I be mad?" I replied (lied). I unwittingly opened up a future shit storm by doing this however. After this, she acted like nothing had happened. She started calling me or visiting me at work three or four times a week. "We used to be so close... I miss you... I still like talking to you... you know, the reason we broke up was nothing to do with sex... it just kinda happened.... we had a communication problem." (Yeah, like you failing to communicate to me that you were banging another guy). This lasted for a month or so before I finally put my foot down. I told her that was enough. I had been more than gracious about what had all happened, and I didn't think it was a good idea for us to be "friends" - at least not until a year or two had gone by.

This did not stop things, however. Soon, she was dropping by work, creating excuses. "I still had this t-shirt of yours, and thought I would stop in and return it." I told her I didn't care. Keep it.

Then snowmobiling season started, and everyone knew I went "night riding" on Fridays. A group usually formed on Friday nights and I would often be "the leader" because I knew the mountains so well I always knew where I was, even at night. (The RCMP and Search and Rescue have contacted me in emergencies too).

I couldn't believe it. Guess who was sitting amongst the group in the parking lot but the ex-girlfriend and her new boyfriend. She had convinced him to buy a snowmobile and now they were going to come riding with me together. What the hell? She had never gone snowmobiling before meeting me, and he had never been snowmobiling before - sledding was "my thing." They even joined the Snowmobile Club together as "a couple." I didn't know what to say or do. I didn't own the mountain, and there were about 20 people there. I just went riding and said nothing, but it irritated the living hell out of me.

I called her later on that week and said we needed to talk. "I can't," she replied, "I have a boyfriend." I told her she had a boyfriend when she met him too, and if she would like, I could call him and ask if it was ok, since he must know how many times she'd called or visited me over the past while - I'm sure he knows about it and won't mind if

we talk.

Anyway, we did meet up that evening and I told her, "Look, I've been more than gracious about this whole thing. You were the one who cheated on me and I've done nothing back to you. I don't even criticize you for it, and you know it. I think it's completely unfair of you to invade my Friday night riding - you *know* it's 'my thing.' Let's continue to keep things civil between us, so please, go sledding all you want, but leave my Friday night rides alone." She, of course, denied there was anything sinister about it, but agreed to respect my request. I heard later that some other people had mentioned to her that was pretty bold of them, and she tried to excuse it by claiming "safety." My new boyfriend doesn't know the mountains very well, and it's so much safer to ride with Rob.

Guess who was waiting in the parking lot the next weekend?

I was so pissed off, I rode like a crazy son-of-a-bitch all night. I had the meanest, biggest machine you could buy at that time. I took everyone on the twistiest, bumpiest, most jumpiest and difficult trails I knew of as fast as I possibly could ride - which was pretty fast. Every-time we would stop for a bit people would be "Holy, what's gotten into you tonight? We can barely keep up."

Then when we stopped in the club's warm-up cabin... I remember it pretty clearly. I was sitting next to the wood-stove looking down into the can of beer in my hand. The new boyfriend started shooting off his mouth about how great his new Ski-doo brand snowmobile was and started poking fun of a couple other guy's Polaris sleds. Now... my daddy rode Polaris, my brother rode Polaris, and I rode Polaris. I didn't raise my head at all but kept looking down at the floor, and started speaking rather loudly, "You know, it's one thing that you were banging my girlfriend behind my back, and it's another thing that you're so fucking stupid to think you can come riding with me... BUT I'LL BE GOD-DAMMED IF I'M GONNA SIT HERE AND LET YOU CUT DOWN POLARIS SNOWMOBILES!!!"

By the time I looked up, I only seen the ass end of the ex and her boyfriend - coats and helmets in hand rather than on - getting out of the cabin as fast as they could. "Vroom" they were gone. They also broke up that weekend.

It was after this experience with that ex-girlfriend that I really began to clue into the behaviour of women. (Yeah, I was a bit slower than you younger guys - we didn't have the internet back then either). I began observing people in their relationships and "how things worked." Being from a small town really helped, because I knew so many people over such long periods of their lives that I knew many people's relationship history. It was also a time when I moved from my mid-twenties to beyond - the time when Schopenhauer declares that men start to pass women in maturity:

"The nobler and more perfect a thing is, the later and slower is it in reaching maturity. Man reaches the maturity of his reasoning and mental faculties scarcely before he is eight-and-twenty; woman when she is eighteen; but hers is reason of very narrow limitations." -- Arthur Schopenhauer, On Women

Men really are tools to women. And just like we often say about "game" - "it's simply a tool, it can be used for good or bad." So it is when women adhere to Briffault's Law and use men as "tools."

“The female, not the male, determines all the conditions of the animal family. Where the female can derive no benefit from association with the male, no such association takes place.” -- Robert Briffault, *The Mothers*, I, 191

Just because a woman is associating with you and using you as her tool, does not necessarily mean that the benefit she gets from the man-tool is used for good. Sometimes it is used for her to promote an evil agenda.

I wrote a lengthy comment at the Spearhead the other day. In it I described how women go on a binge and purge cycle after denying their sex-drives. Here is a part of it I would like to refer to:

Once a woman's time-limit is up and her interest in you becomes dark and sinister, this is when she goes into a "binge and purge cycle." She starts with-holding sex in order to manipulate you. Lots of husbands fall for this and think she's not interested in sex anymore – this is not true. What she is doing is starving her own sexual desire in order to drive up her sexual value to manipulate you. (Once a woman starts refusing you sex, it is time to dump her – she does not have pure interests in you anymore). Then, after about a year or so of her denying her own sexual desires, she gets rid of the man (and tries to keep all of his benefits) and THEN goes on a sexual binge where she fucks thug after thug, trying to satiate her starving sexual desire. Once she has done this, she again looks for a more suitable long-term mate who confers "benefits" upon her, she pair-bonds again, and the whole cycle starts over again.

It is true that "all women are available" but what is not true is that "all women are available all of the time." This is why the PUA-sphere (the ones who actually know what they are talking about) are always looking for IOI's (Indications of Interest). ***What you want to do, if you are a "player" looking for easy, commitment free sex, is be the second guy to screw her after she splits up with her long-term mate. The first guy is usually an emotional tampon, or an orbiter, who ends up getting royally screwed because he is usually only being used as an emotional sounding board, or as a tool for the woman to gauge her sexual market value. To be a good "player," you want to be the guy that catches her in the middle of her binge phase.*** *This is the phase where she goes nuts and sucks and fucks up a storm and does things her ex-husband/boyfriend never dreamed she would do. But, it is very time limited. Once her "binge" is done and she has satiated herself, it is back to Briffault's Law.*

One of the main reasons to avoid chicks who are married or are in long-term relationships, aside from basic moral values, is because of a very important reason I left out in the above comment. It's not that women just use the first guy as an emotional tampon or to gauge her sexual market value... quite often they will use you as the direct catalyst for a break-up, they themselves being too chicken to actually simply break up with their boyfriend/husband. Your purpose as a her "tool" in these situations is often to force her husband/boyfriend to dump her while creating as much drama as she possibly can. It's not smart to be that kind of particular tool because now you have made a very deeply motivated enemy - especially if it involves a marriage and the man loses his children, his house and his freedom.

Learn the cycle women go through - observe her behaviour. Always be the *second guy* to screw her after a relationship, never be the first. It's safer, it's more morally pure, and you'll get the better sex out of her than all the other "tools" have gotten: 1 - The Longterm Pair-bonded Tool, 2 - The Emotional Tampon/Orbiter/Break-up Catalyst Tool, **3 - The Tool used to satiate her cravings with wild, hot, kinky sex**, and 4 - The next Longterm Pair-bonded Tool.

I'll take door number three any day of the week.

Also I learned that once it's over, make it over. Tell her to get lost. Don't be too nice to her. She screwed you around and you don't owe her any kindness. You don't have to go out of your way to be an asshole, but don't be friendly either. Change your phone-number if you have to. Women continue to shit-test you even after you've broken up - and by that time, it's based on pure evil.

The women sometimes responded with a kind of countermanipulation: "they thought if they were cold and treated their husbands terribly, the men would leave, or ask them to leave." Sometimes this happens—which, incidentally, explains why divorce initiation statistics can be misleading. A significant

portion of the roughly thirty percent of divorces which are formally male-initiated *result from the wife deliberately maneuvering her husband into taking the step.* -- F. Roger Devlin, "Rotating Polyandry and Its Enforcers, p.8

Rites of Passage - Boys to Men

. · 25 May 2012 · Archived copy · Original

Quite often when we think of “Rites of Passage” the image of a primitive society performing some bizarre ritual comes to mind, such as the Vanuatu Land Divers.

"Both a harvest ritual and a rite of passage amongst the tribes of the small pacific island of Vanuatu, land diving is now a tourist phenomenon. The men who live on Pentecost Island in Vanuatu, climb a rickety 98-foot-tall (30-meter) tower, tie vines to their ankles and dive to the ground, falling at speeds around 45 mph (72 kph). When a dive goes correctly, the person gets close enough to touch his shoulders or his head to the earth. However, unlike bungee jumping, these vines aren’t elastic and a miscalculation in vine length could lead to broken legs, cracked skulls, or even death. Boys once they have been circumcised at about age 7 or 8 begin participating, though they usually are permitted to jump from a shorter tower. As a boy makes his first dive, his mother holds an item representing his childhood. When he jumps, she throws the item away. Divers also refrain from sex the day before they jump — legend says it will cause the jump to go badly." -- 10 Bizarre Rites of Passage

I, however, would argue that rites of passage are actually more of a sign of an *advanced* society. It is patriarchy that builds civilization. Patriarchy is the idea of "putting sex to work," which is based on the ancient contract of marriage. The ancient contract of marriage is an *economic* contract whereby a woman "sells" her sexual reproductive abilities to a man (ie. the children of marriage are *his* children, not hers) in return for the superior protection and providing abilities a man can, and will, procure once yoked to *children of his own.* What does this have to do with rites of passage, you ask? Well, in order for men to be attractive to women, a man must *surpass* the female so that he has some tangible benefit to offer the female which she either cannot do herself, or is unwilling to do herself, and therefore fulfill Briffault's Law:

“The female, not the male, determines all the conditions of the animal family. Where the female can derive no benefit from association with the male, no such association takes place.” -- Robert Briffault, *The Mothers*, I, 191

The Corollaries to Briffault's Law:

1 - Past benefit provided by the male does not provide for continued or future association.

2 - Any agreement where the male provides a current benefit in return for a promise of future association is null and void as soon as the male has provided the benefit (see corollary 1)

3 - A promise of future benefit has limited influence on current/future association, with the influence inversely proportionate to the length of time until the benefit will be given and directly proportionate to the degree to which the female trusts the male (which is not bloody likely).

It is the nature of the female's mothering instinct to be 100% totalitarian. Small children need this type of totalitarianism or they would soon get themselves into all sorts of trouble. Thus every boy starts off life completely dominated by a female and it takes a decisive change to escape his mother's gravity field and grow into a man so that the next generation of women will have *men* to marry. For all the ballyhooing in the media of "the man-child" and for all the haughty snipes of women at males to "be a man," they don't seem to understand that in order to be a man, he cannot behave like a woman. Our thoroughly feminized society has relentlessly propagandized us to believe "the right way" for humans to behave is "the female way" while at the same time has attacked and derided everything that once defined masculinity as "macho" and unfavourable.

Just as children are not equal to adults, men are not equal to women - a "man," who is a man in the true sense of the word, has surpassed the level of women and has grown beyond it. This fulfills Briffault's Law and also enforces the hypergamy which women need to be exposed to in order to be sexually attracted to a man. Thus, a family hierarchy develops - and this hierarchy works... we know it works because we have historical evidence of it working for several thousands of years in our very own Western Culture - the family as based upon the Bible.

Man --> Woman --> Children

It's the natural order of things. Women take care of themselves and children, and men take care of themselves, women and children. It does not work in reverse.

Lots of women spit and fume about this, but what they are forgetting when they are told Biblically to submit to their husbands, is that husbands are also commanded to submit to God, or to The Truth. And as Jesus pointed out, to rule is to serve. Thus, this is the proper ordering of human existence if we are to live above that of the beasts of the field. Only when a man lives in proper accordance to The Truth can he expect a woman to be in proper relation to him.

God/Truth --> Man --> Woman --> Children

In reality, there is no such thing as equality. All relationships are hierarchical in one way or another. Sometimes they change, or often what is going on underneath is entirely different than what appears on the surface. The men who stood on the deck of the Titanic so that their women could survive is an example of how the underlying hierarchy is often different than the social appearance of hierarchy.

"But what difference does it make whether women rule, or the rulers are ruled by women? The result is the same." -- The Politics of Aristotle, The Spartan Women

"Equality" really only has meaning in relation to the sphere of human law - in the realm that all people are equal before the law in regard to their rights as put forth by the American Founding Fathers: The rights to self-ownership, life, liberty and property. Certainly not the "right" to a job, or to healthcare, nor to be able to vote to bankrupt the future of one's children so that we may party it up today on their credit card bill.

"Men" are not on the same level as women. When men consider themselves "equal" to women, they are resented

and disrespected by women. The sexes are different, and thus need different things from each-other. Women need men to be their tool in society, and therefore men have to bring something to women that women cannot do themselves. (Watch how birds court each-other) Thus, if he remains "equal" to a woman, she has no use for him. A "man" has to graduate *beyond* the level of women - if he doesn't he will be completely flattened by women when he encounters them. It is women's natural right to be in authority over children but it is not right for women to be in control over men. If a man behaves as a boy and relates to his wife as "Is it OK for me to be me, Mommy?" he is not a man equal to women - he is beneath them. This is what happens in many marriages today - the husband ends up treating his wife as his mother, and as such she begins to resent him. How can something that is her own creation (a boy, a child) be equal to its creator?

"If you allow them [women] to pull away restraints and put themselves on an equality with their husbands, do you imagine that you will be able to tolerate them? From the moment that they become your fellows, they will become your masters." –Marcus Porcius Cato (the Elder, a.k.a. the Censor), 234-149 BCE

Only when boys separate from the totalitarian power of the Mother and grow into men do they truly have a sphere to address women and from which women respect them as men. However, women instinctively try to prevent boys from leaving their field of power - children are women's "possessions" and who wants to lose a possession? To mother, he will always be "her little boy." Also, it is not wrong for it to be a struggle to escape the totalitarianism of mother, for manhood not "won" is not manhood at all. Women cannot show boys how to become men because it is an entirely foreign concept to them - just as children cannot show adults how to behave because adulthood is something children simply don't understand. Women are instinctively uncomfortable with competition and conflict, which might cause people's feelings to get hurt, and thus, they try to prevent boys from growing away from their field of influence and into men.

"Women and men want very different things and therefore very different worlds. Men want sex, freedom, and adventure; women want security, pleasantness, and someone to care about (or for) them. Both like power. Men use it to conquer their neighbors whether in business or war, women to impose security and pleasantness. ... Just about everything that once defined masculinity is now denounced as 'macho,' a hostile word embodying the female incomprehension of men. ... Men are happy for men to be men and women to be women; women want us all to be women." -- Fred Reed

Women want us all to be women - or children - because that is what they understand. They have no comprehension of "men" or what it takes to be a man. Children deprived of their fathers through divorce are horribly abused in this way, for they get "aborted" at the female/child stage of development and have far greater challenges "growing into men" and learning how to address women in any other way than seeking the approval of mother.

Along with the thorough feminization of our culture, so have we removed many of the aspects that used to make boys into men, and in turn we are finding that there are less and less "men" for women to want to associate with. Once a woman enters into a male institution, it immediately becomes feminized - thus we now even see that girls are allowed into the Boy Scouts. Men and boys need to have places separate from women where they can meet and be men, free from female influence.

Learning self-reliance and self-confidence is essential for boys. Thus things such as camping and learning how to build fires from scratch are good builders of character for young boys. Women are creatures who depend upon others, but men are creatures who must depend solely upon themselves. Not only must they depend upon themselves, but they must also be able to depend on themselves in excess, or they will not become sufficient "tools" for the next generation of women.

In our feminized school systems, when children play sports like soccer they no longer keep score so that the children's feelings will not be hurt by being "losers." This again undermines masculinity. When I was a kid, I played on a soccer team and we were *the worst* team in the league. I don't think we won a single game all season - but our coach did a very good job with us in teaching us how to lose gracefully. It builds a boy's character to lose and accept it. Many endeavors a man takes on in life will not be successful, but learning how to lose gives him the confidence to try anyway... and if he keeps on trying because he is not afraid of losing, sooner or later he will find success. Our schools are "aborting" boys development by robbing them of the opportunity to lose - and when they can't figure out why boys aren't developing properly, they fill them with Ritalin rather than addressing the fact that boys and girls are different, and need different strategies to develop.

Learning to deal with the bully is also a rite of passage for many boys. I remember as a young boy when my father taught me how to stand up to the bully. I had gone to a private Christian school as a child and there was this one kid named Peter who was constantly bullying me. Two grades higher than me and bigger than me. One weekend we were at a church camp-out, shortly before my 11th birthday, and Peter started picking on me and shoving me around in his usual way. I remember I went running back to find my Dad and told him what was going on.

My dad told me, "Boy, there's just some times that you are gonna have to take care of these things on your own."

I still remember his words, and in fact, have followed lots of them to this day.

- Always *walk* from a fight, but never run.
- There's a time for talking, and then there's a time to stop talking.
- Once you get into a fight, fight to win. But even if you don't win, you've got to show him (and the others) that when they mess with you there's going to be consequences.

I recall him providing me with a strategy too. "There's nothing 'fair' about this fight. This kid is two years older than you and he's bigger than you. If you have to knee him in the nuts, then do it, and start punching him - and don't stop until he's on the ground."

I remember walking back out to where all the kids were playing, and that's how it worked out. He started shoving me around again, and I kneed him right in the nuts, and punched him in the head about five or six times as he was going down, then I turned and walked away. Everyone was shocked.

When I walked back amongst the row of RV's, as soon as I rounded the corner, there popped out my old man (he must have been watching). I was trembling like a leaf. He just put his arm around me - never said a word to me about it, neither good nor bad - just walked with me.

Today, here in Canada, there is a great big "anti-bullying" campaign going on. All the kids are encouraged to wear pink shirts to symbolize they are against bullying, there are bullying "hotlines" set up, and every time there is a conflict between two kids, the mothers are called in to the principal's office to "work things out." Apparently, at some school in Toronto, there is a ten year old boy who decided he was gay (how can you decide you are gay when you are ten?). In order to keep this "gay" ten year old from being bullied, the school has appointed a teacher to walk around with him full-time to keep him safe. The old "schoolyard rules" have been completely abolished and we are raising our boys to be feminized sissies, not independent men confident in their own abilities.

Being bullied is part of life for men and it is important for them to learn how to stick up for themselves.

Re-framing this culturally, the boys of today are similarly being bullied by feminists. It's a similar 'fair' fight. They're bigger, smarter and they fight very dirty. And this is something this generation of boys needs to sort out themselves, because the older guys will not be around forever. Perhaps becoming Men Going Their Own Way and passing feminism's cultural fitness-tests might be the new Rite of Passage for the boys and men of today and tomorrow.

Related: Diagnosis ODD -- by Hawaiian Libertarian

"Mothers find in their children satisfaction for their desire to dominate, a possession, an occupation, something that is wholly intelligible to them and can be chattered with: the sum of all this is what mother love is; it is to be compared with an artist's love for his work. Pregnancy has made women kinder, more patient, more timid, more pleased to submit; and just so does spiritual pregnancy produce the character of the contemplative type, which is closely related to the feminine character: it consists of male mothers." -- Freiderich Nietzsche

.

Previous Index Next

MGTOW

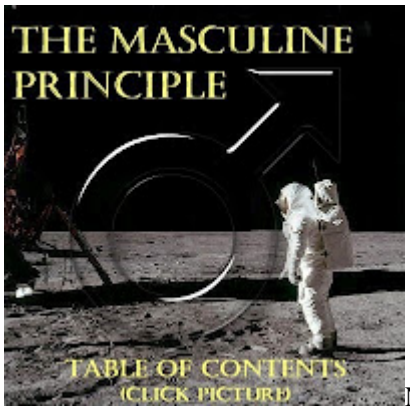
"If it's not right, Go Your Own Way!"

.....
..oooO.....
..(....).....
….\..(.....
…. _/.....
…….....Oooo..
…….....(....)…
……..)../....
.....(_/.....
.....

Woman: The Most Responsible Teenager In The House

. · 1 June 2012 · Archived copy · Original

.



NOTICE: This article has been updated and moved to *The Masculine Principle*. Please click here to read the new version (it hasn't changed much) or scroll down to continue reading in the old format.

.

***

At first it may seem like an assault against your good senses to think of adult women as mere children or teenagers. How could they be? They go through life and mature just like men do, don't they? Once they are thirty or forty, don't they behave as adults just as thirty or forty year old men do? Actually, there is much evidence to the contrary. Perhaps men are so keen to believe that women mature the same as them (throughout their entire lives) because in the early stages of our lives, females do actually mature faster than males.

”The nobler and more perfect a thing is, the later and slower is it in reaching maturity. Man reaches the maturity of his reasoning and mental faculties scarcely before he is eight and twenty; woman when she is eighteen; but hers is a reason of very narrow limitations. This is why women remain children all their lives, for they always see only what is near at hand, cling to the present, take the appearance of a thing for reality, and prefer trifling things to the most important.” -- Arthur Schopenhauer, On Women (1851)

The reason why females mature faster than men is not some particular triumph for them, despite how women seem to enjoy throwing this little tidbit of information around. As I described in my piece "You're Such a Tool", what it really has to do with is women being the biological bearers and caretakers of children. They mature faster than males because once they become fertile after puberty, they must also have the mental capacity to care for the children they might bear. Nowhere in nature is there a female organism that is capable of giving birth to offspring which is not also developed enough yet to care for the offspring. This not only manifests itself in hips capable of giving birth and breasts able to produce milk, but also in a mental maturation that enables them to provide basic childcare. You will notice as well, even in our present society, it is when girls reach around the age of twelve that they begin taking up babysitting and it is around puberty when adults begin entrusting young girls to care for infants alone. This merely coincides with female biology, as it is also at that age when girls become physically capable of bearing children, and their mental maturity matches their biological maturity.

The difference between men and women in maturity, however, is that while females mature earlier in life, they also *stop* maturing at around the age of eighteen, as Schopenhauer aptly observes. And while men don’t catch up to women’s maturity until they reach around age twenty-eight, after that the men keep maturing - often throughout their entire lives. William James describes the same process of maturation in *Principles of Psychology*, where he states:

"We observe an identical difference between men as a whole and women as a whole. A young woman of twenty reacts with intuitive promptitude and security in all the usual circumstances in which she may be placed. Her likes and dislikes are formed; her opinions, to a great extent, the same that they will be through life. Her character is, in fact, finished in its essentials. How inferior to her is a boy of twenty in all these respects! His character is still gelatinous, uncertain what shape to assume, "trying it on" in every direction. Feeling his power, yet ignorant of the manner in which he shall express it, he is, when compared with his sister, a being of no definite contour. But this absence of prompt tendency in his brain to set into particular modes is the very condition which insures that it shall ultimately become so much more efficient than the woman's. The very lack of preappointed trains of thought is the ground on which general principles and heads of classification grow up; and the masculine brain deals with new and complex matter indirectly by means of these, in a manner which the feminine method of direct intuition, admirably and rapidly as it performs within its limits, can vainly hope to cope with." -- William James, Principles of Psychology

It becomes like comparing three-month fermented wine served in a box of Chateau Cardboard to single malt scotch aged for decades in an oak cask. As such, women do mature faster than males but stop maturing at around the mentality of an eighteen year old (or also, I suppose, to the maturity of a 28 year old man), leaving the woman as literally, the most responsible teenager in the house. It is interesting to note as well how many men claim that it is at around age 27 or 28 that they begin to “figure things out” in regard to women, or at least much more so than they did earlier in life.

”Women are directly adapted to act as the nurses and educators of our early childhood, for the simple reason that they themselves are childish, and foolish, and shortsighted – in a word, are big children all their lives, something intermediate between the child and the man, who is a man in the strictest sense of the word. Consider how a young girl will toy day after day with a child, dance with it and sing to it; and then

consider what a man, with the very best of intentions, could do in her place." -- Arthur Schopenhauer, On Women (1851)

The reason why women stop maturing at around the age of eighteen also has to do with their biological destiny as child-bearers and caretakers of children. As Schopenhauer notes, women can toy and coo with a child all day long and seemingly enjoy themselves, while what could a man do in their place? Women, as they are wont to brag to us, are also more "emotionally tuned-in" than men are. Women's emotional proclivities are directly related to her childrearing duties which biology has assigned to her. Babies, for example, communicate *solely* through emotion and even as children grow into toddlers and then children that communicate with words and language, a lot of their communication is still through emotion, and so women are at an intermediate stage of development between that of a child and an adult man, or in other words, they are teenagers.

Furthermore, in regard to women's emotional state, it ought to be noted that one cannot be emotional *and* rational at the same time, so it is not that females are both more emotionally in-tune while remaining rationally above it all. Just the opposite is true. The more you "emote," the less you "think." Take someone suffering from road-rage, for example. The emotions of anger so cloud the driver's brain that he can even *unthinkingly* commit acts of violence, only to deeply regret it later when his emotions have subsided. As women are generally in a much more emotional state of mind than men, so do they not use reason and rationality to guide themselves as much as men do.

*****NOTE: There is an addition to this article at the bottom of the page.*****

.

What's Mine is Mine and What's Yours is Ours

What husband doesn't come to understand this is the true nature of marriage after a time? But ultimately, is this not merely the same attitude that teenagers take within the family?

Think about how a teenager refers to the family sedan, which the parents paid for, as *our* car. But the i-pod which he purchased with money he earned part-time at McDonald's is *his* i-pod. Is not the teenager's/child's default that his parent's possessions are "ours" while those possessions he purchased with money he earned himself are "his," and his alone? This directly mimics even my own parent's marriage, where my father worked his entire lifetime to pay the bills for the family and put a roof over our heads, but when the kids were off to school and my mom took up working, the money she earned doing so was "her money." It did not go into the family pot as my father's income did, but became her own "special money" in almost the same way that a child's allowance or earnings are "his money."

(Right Now I Feel Like)...

Perhaps you have heard the old saying, "It's a woman's prerogative to change her mind…" This is something we usually write off as a cute quirk of female behaviour (even though it often causes untold damage to others), but think for a moment how this resembles the behaviour of children & teenagers. Ask a child what they want to be

when they grow up and they will tell you “a fireman,” then ask them a week later and they will say “an astronaut.” Young people will do this right through high-school and on into university where they almost assuredly will change their major at least once, not to mention that after getting their degree, the odds are there will be more changes in their plans once again.

If I were a parent who had a teenager that told me they wanted to be a doctor in the future, I would do well to insert the phrase “Right now I feel like (I want to be a doctor),” in front of every choice the teenager has claimed they made. Certainly, I wouldn’t 100% take them at their word and start depleting my resources in an attempt to help them become a doctor, because in a month or two, the teen will tell me they no longer want to be a doctor but have decided on the career path of Famous Rock Star instead.

One of the sad facts of entering adulthood is that you are forced to make choices which you must stick to in order to be successful in your ventures. The person who decides early to stick to a career as an auto-mechanic will likely be much more successful in life than his peer who spends age 18 to 24 pursuing a career as psychologist, then quits and spends another 6 years attempting a career as an electrician, only to quit again to gain qualification as an accountant. Part of “adulthood” is about making choices that you stick to for the long term, so that those ventures have enough time to bear fruit. Those who change their minds too often rarely harvest the fruits of their labour. In other words, making a choice to go in one direction often closes the door to other choices. We allow children the latitude to change their minds as they grow-up, but after a time we start to insist they make a choice and stick to it.

Women as well change their minds like teenagers do. Sure, she might decide that (right now she feels like) she wants to be a doctor, but as evidence has shown in the medical profession, most women who train to be doctors spend less than a decade working full-time in said profession before quitting and deciding that (right now she feels like) she wants to be a mother. Afterwards, most of these women decide that (right now she feels like) she only wants to work as a part-time doctor. Of course, as time goes on, she has less and less experience than the male doctor who never “took a break” to explore other *choices* life had to offer and he quickly outpaces her in that field, even without the Patriarchy conspiring behind the scenes to hold her back.

.

When a woman tells you she will love you forever, insert the phrase (Right now I feel like) before it, so you get the proper translation into Womanese: “(Right now I feel like) I will love you forever. All evidence shows that this should include vows made at the altar as well, since the vast majority of divorces are initiated by women rather than men.

Q: “Do you take this man as your lawful wedded husband, to have and to hold until death do you part?”
A: “(Right now I feel like) I do!”

Sure women stick to their choices better than children do, but they don’t do it as well as men do either. In other words, women’s behaviour exists somewhere in between the child and the man… kinda like a teenager.

.

Women’s Fitness-Tests are Similar to the Boundaries Which Children Seek

Anyone who has raised children knows that children seek boundaries and are happiest when they find such boundaries exist and understand there are consequences when they cross them. A child who does not have boundaries set by his parents will in the short term get his way, but will ultimately come to resent everything around him and become miserable.

Women are not much different. They will instinctively fitness-test a man with all kinds of irrational and basically abusive behaviour, to test the steel content of his balls by his ability to pass such tests and not put up with her crap. If the man passes her tests, she calms down and is content to live within the boundaries of behaviour which he sets

for her. Once she knows there are boundaries and her man is willing to enforce them, she knows that her man is a capable provider and protector and she can relax and feel confident following his lead.

The behaviour of children seeking boundaries set for them by their parents and the fitness-testing behaviour of women with their lovers is remarkably similar.

(Related Study: Women Crave Boundaries)

Men Love Women, Women Love Children, and Children Love Puppies

There is an "order" to how love works and the order works only in one direction. You can see hints to this in the Bible, where husbands are commanded to love their wives while wives are commanded to "honour" their husbands in return. Children as well are commanded to honour their parents. Love is a hierarchal beast that descends downward. The only way it works in reverse is via honour and respect, because the reciprocal "love" is never equal.

A child will never love its parents in the same fashion that parents will love their child. You will readily see parents willing to sacrifice for their children – sometimes with their very lives – but rarely will you see the same in reverse. In fact, even in society as a whole, we consider it to be "the right thing" when a father or a mother sacrifices their life in order to save the life of their child. The whole of raising children to adulthood involves enormous sacrifice on the part of the parents in the form of time, frustration, freely giving resources, the denial of the parent's dreams, and so forth. It is never returned to the parents on an equal basis, not even when the child reaches adulthood, for by that time the child will likely have children of his own to whom he bestows most of his love upon. Although having children is a one-way-street of parents sacrificing for the betterment of their child, they are still instinctively compelled to do so even though, rationally speaking, it is not in the best interests of the parents. What parents can expect in return is that their children *honour* them and respect them for their sacrifices – but their love will never equal that which their parents have for them. It is just not part of the natural order of life.

In the same way, a woman's love for a man will never be equal to a man's love for a woman. The natural order and a woman's hypergamous nature dictate that the man must be on a "higher level" than the woman. A man can love a woman just as a woman can love a child, but the reciprocal love is returned only in the form of honour and respect. Just as a child instinctively expects its parents to take care of them, so does a woman instinctively expect her man to take care of her. It is a one-way street. A woman will never be able to equally return a man's love for her. At best, she can honour and respect him for what he does for her.

In fact, in the form of romantic love, you will find that women are not so much in love with the man as an individual person, but rather they are in love with *the relationship.* The man is merely a role-player and is easily replaced by another taking on the role. If any man expects to be an "equal partner" with his wife, he will soon find his woman disrespecting him and seeking out a man who is decidedly *not* her equal to lead her.

They are the *sexus sequior,* the second sex in every respect, therefore their weaknesses should be spared, but to treat women with extreme reverence is ridiculous, and lowers us in their own eyes. When nature divided the human race into two parts, she did not cut it exactly through the middle! The difference between the positive and negative poles, according to polarity, is not merely qualitative but also quantitative. And it was in this light that the ancients and people of the East regarded woman; they recognised her true position better than we, with our old French ideas of gallantry and absurd veneration, that highest product of Christian-Teutonic stupidity. These ideas have only served to make them arrogant and imperious, to such an extent as to remind one at times of the holy apes in Benares, who, in the consciousness of their holiness and inviolability, think they can do anything and everything they please. -- Arthur Schopenhauer, On Women (1851)

You cannot expect a woman to be your true confidant, your soul-mate, and your respite to lean upon during the stormy times in life. *That is your role for her benefit.* It does not work in reverse, for as soon as you believe it can work that way, she will lose confidence in your ability to lead her and begin to resent you. She will go about illustrating her resentment by making your life as miserable as she possibly can. This may be one of the hardest lessons for a man to learn in life because it turns the whole notion of modern love as an equal give-and-take relationship upon its ear. The implications can be rather depressing, as it means that on a certain level a man will always be alone. A parent who expects their child to also be their equal friend to lean upon for support, will also find himself sorely disappointed with the results. The child instinctively expects the parents to be superior and to cater to his needs. Expecting the reverse will only result in a resentful child and a heartbroken parent. The same order must be maintained between a man and a woman, lest she become resentful and seek out a man who actually *will* lead her.

The Terrible Twos

"If one looks around at today's culture and takes note of all the destructive effects of the female attitude of entitlement, then went on to devise social controls which would prevent such destructive effects in the future, I think you would end up with social values very much like the ones currently labeled "patriarchal."

Rather than viewing feminism as "conditioning" women to behave in completely self-centered ways, I see it more as a case of feminism regarding the socialization process which countered the natural tendency of all organisms toward selfishness - as "oppression."

Every parent who has had daily involvement in raising a child is familiar with the stage called "the terrible twos." This is the stage during which the naturally selfish infant is forced to come to terms with the fact that their desires will not always be met and their will not always prevail. I have no doubt that if the child were able to express what it knows in its "special infantile way of knowing", that it would consider the imposition of external values on it to be "oppression."

The vast majority of women I have met have seemed to be stuck emotionally at about age two. Any frustration of

their desires would result in a tantrum. In many cases these were more subtle than throwing herself on the floor and thrashing around, but it was a tantrum nonetheless. So, rather than saying that feminism "conditioned" women to behave in an immature, selfish, and totally self-centered fashion, I would describe it as feminism destroying the social value system and the process of conditioning women out of their infantile and narcissistic world view." -- The Wisdom of Zenpriest

Your Bratty Little Sister

"... Women, then, are only children of a larger growth; … A man of sense only trifles with them, plays with them, humors and flatters them, as he does with a sprightly forward child; but he neither consults them about, nor trusts them with serious matters; though he often makes them believe that he does both; which is the thing in the world they are most proud of; for they love mightily to be dabbling in business (which by the way they always spoil); and being justly distrustful that men in general look upon them in a trifling light, they almost adore that man who talks more seriously to them, and who seems to consult and trust them; I say, who seems; for weak men really do, *but wise ones only seem to do it*. ..." -- Lord Chesterfield, Letter to His Son (1748)

In the sense of seduction, a man is well advised to treat a woman as if she were his bratty little sister:

"…The more you patronizingly treat women like bratty kid sisters, the more their vaj takes over their critical thinking skills. It all harkens back to the one fundamental principle guiding male-female relations: Chicks love submitting to powerful men. And what is a bigger demonstration of male sexual power than believing that a woman is so far beneath you that she is the equivalent of a child, hardly deserving of a serious answer or an emotional investment?

So what does "everything she does is cute" mean in practice? It means not getting riled up when she tests you. It means not explaining yourself when she stamps her wee feet and wags a finger at you. It means never acting apologetic when she's upset with some mysterious infraction you've committed. Keep in mind that when a woman gets upset, at least half the time she's not really upset with whatever misdemeanor she's accusing you of; she's just upset that your

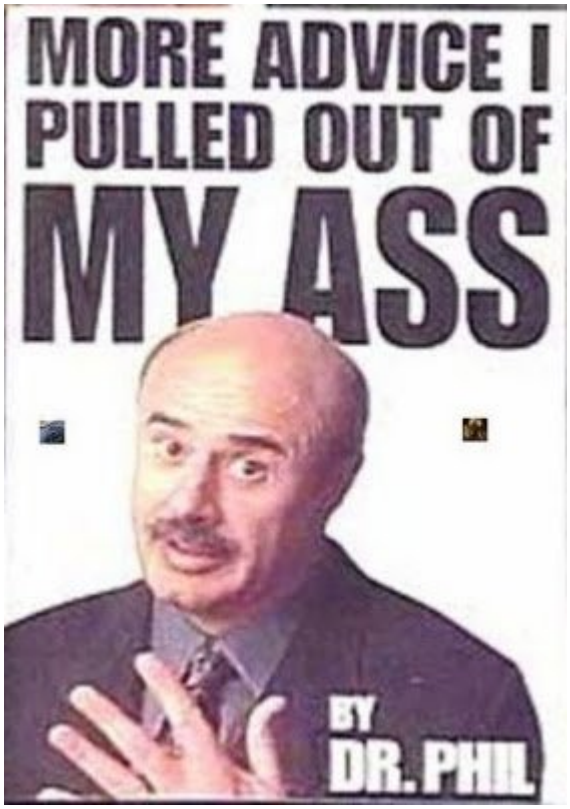
behavior caused a temporary reversal of gina tingle induction.

The "everything she does is cute" game tactic is defined more precisely as an inner game refinement. When you start thinking of women as adorable brats who know not what they do, you start treating them in ways consistent with your beliefs. With enough reprogramming in the right direction (i.e. kicking the supports out from under her pedestal), soon the words coming out of your mouth will be effortless verbal expressions of what you actually feel. And therein lies the secret to being a natural — naturals truly believe the charmingly jerkoff things they say to women." -- Chateau Heartiste

(Also see "Lesson Thirteen: Charm is Treating Women Like Little Girls" -- The Book of Pook)

Conclusion

Despite what most relationship "experts" try to tell you, the key to a successful relationship is not about open, honest communication.



It is true, there must be a form of "mutual respect," but the respect cannot be equal in all ways. A parent can respect a child and respect the child's needs, but for a parent to treat the child as an equal would be a grave mistake. In a similar way, a man can respect a woman, but if he deems to treat her as his equal, she will soon come to resent him and leave to seek a man who actually portrays himself as superior – as a leader – to her. She seeks this instinctively. She is an empty vessel who seeks to be filled with a strong man's "truths." In the realm of seduction, a woman also seeks out a man who is able to behave in a superior fashion to her, so even if you are not yet convinced that women are as mere children but only of a larger growth, you would be well advised to *treat her as one* if only from the standpoint of keeping her romantically interested in you.

When a man marries a woman, he doubles his duties while halving his rights. This was true even in the days of Marriage 1.0. It is a large responsibility involving much effort to take on a wife, just as it is for one to take on

raising children. You cannot expect children, or women, to fulfill your needs for emotional intimacy nor to be "someone to lean on" during times of strife. Just the opposite, for that is *your* duty as a parent and also as a husband.

Most of our modern laws, and nearly all of the "experts" in the social sciences, have done everything they possibly can to undermine a man's ability to properly "husband" his wife. The current state of affairs completely upsets the natural hierarchy between man and woman. In the same way that it would be nearly impossible for parents to properly raise children if the government passed a plethora of laws deconstructing parent's natural roles and restricting them from setting boundaries for children, so it is increasingly difficult for a man to properly fulfill his leadership role *that women instinctively seek and need.* When children have legal authority over their parents, chaos will ensue, just as in Marriage 2.0 where women hold supremacy over the husbands, the practice of matrimony will only harm and bring resentment to all parties involved, making one ill-advised to seek such an arrangement in life.

"Feminism starts out being very simple. It starts out being the instinct of a little child who says 'it's not fair' and 'you are not the boss of me,' and it ends up being a worldview that questions hierarchy altogether." -- Gloria Steinem, in the two hour HBO special on the life of Gloria Steinem entitled, *"Gloria: In Her Own Words."*

Related: Zenpriest #41 - Feminism is an Extended Infantile Tantrum

Previous Index Next

MGTOW

"If it's not right, Go Your Own Way!"

.....
..oooO.....
..(....).....
….\..(.....
…. _/.....
…….....Oooo..
…….....(....)…
……..)../....
.....(_/.....
.....

*****An addition to this article***** I kind of get a kick watching this article get linked to on Reddit. It causes quite a bit of controversy and has a lot of people pretty angry, especially women. Some of their arguments are pretty silly though. The most glaring one is people calling what Schopenhauer says as "science from the 1850's." Umm, Schopenhauer is a *philosopher*, not a scientist. Learn the difference. Also, there is one ridiculous person in there (who goes to every reddit around to repeatedly complain about this article) who continually points out that I linked to Angry Harry, "who is just another blogger like me," and points out that AH's "source" for "the more you emote, the less you think" is the Daily Mail. She does not point out, however, that the Daily Mail's article she is referring to

is cited by "peer reviewed research," done by a feminist, no less, and Angry Harry merely read the research and translated what she said. Furthermore, Angry Harry has *multiple* degrees, a Ph D. in Psychology and the others I believe are related to childhood education - making him *extremely* qualified to critique the research and comment on what it means. Angry Harry often has written about how the school system has been rejigged to favour girls over boys, and it is his area of expertise to note the different brain functions of the sexes. So put that in your pipe and smoke it, you silly little harpie!

Further, you will quickly see how angry women get about this discussion, but not men - except for the mangina's and white knights trying curry favour and approval from anonymous females on the internet with whom they have absolutely no chance of getting sex from - yet they still feel compelled to grovel like servile worms in front of them. My goodness, I half expect that if women gave those men a dull, rusty pocketknife, they would castrate themselves to gain the ladies' approval. But, to note, I have not yet seen one single man get angry that this article blatantly suggests men are more immature than women from pretty much the age of 12 to 28. I mean, no teenage boy nor man in his twenties takes *any* offense whatsoever to the suggestion that they are not as mature as their female peers, yet women and their enablers are having virtual heart-attacks over the suggestion that men may have some advantage over females.

"Men are not troubled to hear a man dispraised, because they know, though he be naught, there's worth in others; but women are mightily troubled to hear any of them spoken against, as if the sex itself were guilty of some unworthiness." – John Seldon (1584-1654)

And, to note, it is virtually accepted scientifically that girls do, indeed, mature faster than boys, both physically and mentally. (Which already *proves* the male and female brain are *not the same*). Physically, for example, in puberty girls mature faster than boys in such things as height. But as we all know, while boys start their growth spurt later than girls, boys grow to be significantly taller than girls. Furthermore, males also do not fully fill-out muscularly until they reach their late twenties. However, an 18 year old female is pretty much at her peak of physical development at that age, and by her late twenties is beginning to decline.

As such, those who are angry at this article are, on the one hand, acknowledging the superiority of women (they mature faster than boys) but then complaining - *screeching like children actually* - that there is some advantage which males will gain later in life. In other words, they are trying to show the *superiority* of the female brain, not its *equality*. If a female brain matures faster than a male's, and also, ends up having no disadvantages but only (at the minimum) equality with the male brain thereafter, then it is quite obvious that they are claiming the female brain is *superior* to the male brain, because if it matures faster, and is also in every way just as capable, then it is superior because it only has advantages, but not corresponding disadvantages. This reminds me of a verse from Angry Harry's marvelous poem, If I Only Had a V:

If I only had a V
I would use it expertly
To generate equality
That somehow always favours me

Boy, I wonder how loud the childish squealing would get if I pointed out other philosophers and writers from the past who argued things such as women's height being between that of a child and a man, or that their facial features and skin are intermediate between a child's and a man's...

As someone who grew up through the brunt of feminism's sickness in the 1970's, 80's and 90's, I cannot begin to tell you how many times I have heard of the superiority of the female brain's multi-tasking abilities. "Nyah nyah nyah nyah nyah," the females taunted, from teenagers to old women to fat orca's with TV talk shows. (They are still

doing it today in their "A Woman's Nation" and "End of Men" articles). Never once has it been acceptable to point out that men's linear thinking brain is the one that is capable of intense and deep concentration, precisely because it *does not* multi-task, and thus why virtually all of the world's inventions with more than two moving parts have come from the hands of men, plus the majority of great musicians, artists, philosophers and so on. Women's multi-tasking brains are like the phrase "jack of all trades, but master of none." It helps them do other tasks while also tending to children. (Most women spent the majority of their entire adult lives either pregnant or caring for their children until very recently in human history). For every advantage there is a disadvantage. For every cloud, there is a silver lining. (And for every "point seven" of a chapter, there are multiple *other* points which must be taken into account to gain context, just as for every "chapter," there are other chapters which make up a book's message. Sorry for not stuffing the whole "book" into one 350 page-long blog post to make sure the screechers got exposed to them all at once!)

As such, I have to give the RedPill Reddit kudos for not taking this article off of their sidebar, despite the constant grief they have received over it. Remember, when you're getting lots of flak it means you're right over the target.

Further reading:

Sexual Psychology

The Hard-Wired Difference Between Male and Female Brains Could Explain Why Men Are Better At Map Reading - Researchers found that many of the connections in a typical male brain run between the front and the back of the same side of the brain, whereas in women the connections are more likely to run from side to side between the left and right hemispheres of the brain. *This difference in the way the nerve connections in the brain are "hardwired" occurs during adolescence when many of the secondary sexual characteristics such as facial hair in men and breasts in women develop under the influence of sex hormones, the study found*. The researchers believe the physical differences between the two sexes in the way the brain is hardwired could play an important role in understanding why men are in general better at spatial tasks involving muscle control while women are better at verbal tasks involving memory and intuition.

... Because the female connections link the left hemisphere, which is associated with logical thinking, with the right, which is linked with intuition, this could help to explain why women tend to do better than men at intuitive tasks, she added. "*Intuition is thinking without thinking.* It's what people call gut feelings. *Women tend to be better than men at these kinds of skill which are linked with being good mothers*," Professor Verma said.

(Note that male brains run front to back, thus not crossing logic with emotion as with women).

Lol! Here's some humorous reading for you!

That poor schlub will be involuntarily celibate or horribly resented and abused for a long time to come if he doesn't understand that when learning to hunt deer, you observe the deer and take advice from the hunter. It does not work nearly so well the other way around.

"Woman does not betray her secret" -- Immanuel Kant

"From a woman you can learn nothing of women." -- Friedrich Nietzsche

Here are some hunters I would recommend taking advice from:

Women, Teasing, Tests, One-itis and Hope
Understanding Women and "The Rules" for Men
Dating Advice From a Father
The Book of Bonecrker
The Book of Pook

The Fish and the Bicycle

. · 5 June 2012 · Archived copy · Original

"The most insidious effect of affirmative action quotas is a kind of psychic castration… the removal of the source of a man's identity. By contriving the nonsense that women can do whatever a man can do (which they obviously can't), they've leveled men's purpose to the extent that men effectively have no purpose. The equivalent would be to remove women's wombs, and render them sterile.

It's not just messing with the laws of supply and demand and cheating men out of their rights… its about annihilation of identity and purpose." -- codebuster, from a comment at The Spearhead

"I remember the first time I saw the slogan "A woman without a man is like a fish without a bicycle", I knew my face had just been spit in. Men were not just useless to women, we were irrelevant. We had no purpose in a woman's life, and did not belong in her world at all. It was a message of hate, dismissal, and refutation. But, I also saw it as a warning of what was to come. It was like seeing clouds on the horizon, and knowing that it is time to get under cover because a storm is brewing. And, since it was obviously smearing shit in my face, it was going to be a shit storm." -- zenpriest, Hate Bounces

"The problem here is women are totally lying about wanting to be empowered. To have power, one must have independence and be self-reliant. This is the exact opposite of what women and children have been for most of human history. Instead of being independent and self-reliant (ie having power) they have been dependent and relied on men for everything. In return, there is a bunch of stuff they are expected to give men…..certain roles they must perform for the system to work.

Now, a handful of women have always been an exception. I can totally see how more women would want to have power by becoming self-reliant and independent. BUT THAT'S NOT WHAT THEY ARE DOING! Instead, they want to be empowered but still rely and depend on men for everything. They think they can do this by creating various ways and means to force us to take care of them, both as individuals and a society, without giving anything in return. They don't want marriage but they still want money from men via alimony and child support. They want to vote but don't

exercise wisdom in what they vote for. They want jobs but are pathetic as employees, but God forbid you fire them, you'll get sued (plus they will trade sex for promotions).” -- Bonecrcker #78 – Women Are Lying About Wanting To Be Empowered

"...Traditionally, the raw sexual and economic facts of marriage have been politely concealed by superadded ideas such as romantic love and gallantry. In the years following the Second World War, such antiquated fashions were with increasing rudeness torn from the sexual act by fraudulent sex "scientists" and pornographers. But the economic realities have not similarly been dragged into the light of day. On the contrary, our prosperity has made it easy to downplay them even more than in the past.

An example of such polite concealment is found in the traditional etiquette with respect to greeting newly married couples. It was customary to say "congratulations" to the man, but never to the woman; to the bride one offered only "best wishes." The pretense was that the man was receiving an unmerited windfall. The reality, of course, is that the man assumes the principal burden in marriage. For women, it is an economic bonanza.

One factor in the disintegration of marriage and sex roles is that, spoiled by prosperity, women actually came to believe the chivalrous pretense and forgot the underlying economic reality. They expect men to be grateful for the opportunity to support them. ... It is a case of gallantry being abused by its beneficiaries. Under such circumstances, men cannot simply go on behaving in the old manner as though nothing were wrong. It is incumbent upon them to fight back against the forces arrayed against them, in part by emphasizing some home truths about the economic realities of marriage. Perhaps it is time for young men to stop paying for dates and coyly explain that they are "saving their wallets" for marriage. If that sounds cynical to a traditional sensibility, my answer is that such cynicism may simply be the price for reestablishing the natural family as the basis of our civilization." -- F. Roger Devlin, Home Economics II

”In truth, women are no more “independent” than they ever were, but because they've transferred the job of protecting and caring for them from the men they personally know to the State, they can pretend to themselves that they no longer need men. Modern women are as “independent” as a tropical fern in a greenhouse in Iceland. All that's changed is that men, who still do all the dirty, dangerous jobs that must be done, and pay all the taxes and alimony and child-care payments, and fight the wars, etc. etc., that enable women to have the comfortable world they want, no longer get the respect we used to get in return. In the long run, this is a recipe for disaster. We may be stupid, but we're not harmless.” -- Philalethes #27 – In the Battle of the Sexes, If She Wins, She Loses

”Women only have what rights we give them. The real core of the problem with women is other men. The men who open their wallets in a snivelling desire to get laid. The men who pass foolish draconian laws to solve problems that don't exist. The men who promote women in return for sexual favours. The men who marry obviously inferior women. And most of all, the men who swallow the most outrageous of lies, rather than bother to think critically about what is happening both to them and everyone around them.

The bottom line is women have no real power, no intrinsic power. They are totally, completely and permanently dependant on men for power. This situation is deeply rooted in our biology and not going to change because some wacko broads think it should. We created this hobgoblin ourselves, feed it and keep it alive despite its obviously odious nature. The very moment we stop, it will evaporate in a puff of smoke. Women know this. Their biggest fear is we will wake up and know it too. -- Bonecrcker #121 – Women Only Have What Rights Men Give Them

"…there is no equity between the sexes. They are indispensable one to another, but one is the leader and the other led. The ram is the master of the ewe; the reverse would be an aberration and monstrosity. The pride of the American women will bring about a reaction; for whatever these ladies are they owe to man. If the latter wearies of his generosity and leaves them to their own merits, the expiatory plunge will oblige them to measure the immensity of their ingratitude.

Nature has willed the subordination of woman. Civilized man dignifies his companion, submits willingly to grace, sweetness, frailty, creates for her the right to protection, gives her a privileged place. But the condition is such that, if she denies the bene- faction and claims to have earned what has been given to her and to be indebted to no one, her benefactor may bring this course to an abrupt end.

The illusion consists in this: superiority constitutes a moral duty on the part of the superior towards the inferior, but inferiority does not constitute any legal right on the part of the inferior over the superior. Generosity is beautiful and noble, but it is optional; the cripple who demands that he should he carried dispels one's desire to aid him. Man enjoys protecting woman, but when woman imperatively summons him to serve and protect her, he whom an entreaty would have softened loses his inclination at once.

By substituting the legal sphere for the moral sphere, the emancipation of women will desiccate society, as legal charity destroys real charity, as love by command would sterilise the marriage-bed. --In asking more than civil equality and economic equality, women are playing a dangerous game. Equality in services will be demanded of them, and this will serve them right." -- The Intimate Journal of Henri Amiel, August 8, 1876

"...That woman is by nature intended to obey is shown by the fact that every woman who is placed in the unnatural position of absolute independence at once attaches herself to some kind of man, by whom she is controlled and governed; this is because she requires a master. If she, is young, the man is a lover; if she is old, a priest." -- Arthur Schopenhauer - On Women (1851)

Previous Index Next

MGTOW

"If it's not right, Go Your Own Way!"

.....
..oooO.....
..(....).....
….\..(.....
…. _/.....
……....Oooo..
……....(....)…
……..)../....
.....(_/.....
.....

Social Strategy: Why Men Shouldn't Argue with Women

. · 8 June 2012 · Archived copy · Original

Dominating Clock -- by Mathieu of Boulogne, 1295 A.D.

This female clock is really driving me mad, for her quarrelsome din doesn't stop for a moment. The tongue of a quarrelsome woman never tires of chiming in. She even drowns out the sound of the church bell. A nagging wife couldn't care less whether her words are wise or foolish, provided that the sound of her own voice can be heard. She simply pursues her own ends; there's not a grain of sense in what she says; in fact she finds it impossible to have a decent thought. She doesn't want her husband to be the boss and finds fault with everything he does. Rightly or wrongly, the husband has no choice: he has to put up with the situation and keep his mouth shut if he wants to remain in one piece. No man, however self disciplined or clear-sighted he may be, can protect himself adequately against this. A husband has to like what the wife likes, and disapprove of what she hates and criticize what she criticizes so that her opinions appear to be right. So anyone who wishes to immolate himself on the altar of marriage will have a lot to put up with. Fifteen times, both day and night, he will suffer without respite and he will be sorely tormented. Indeed, I believe that this torture is worse than the torments of hell, with its chains, fire, and iron.

Men and women are after different things when they “debate.”

Men tend to, but not always, hold the truth to be the decider of the debate. (Manginas excepted – thus the name). The man who illustrates the truth the best, is generally considered the winner of a debate. Women, not so much. And don’t forget, women scoff at our “school yard rules.” Nothing seems sillier to a woman than the male “code.” When women fight/argue, there are no rules she adheres to. Women decide who “wins” a debate by who has been the snotty-mouthiest and by who emotionally manipulates the other into submission. The truth matters not a bit to women.

"If men are always more or less deceived on the subject of women, it is because that they forget that they and women do not speak altogether the same language, and that words have not the same weight or the same meaning for them, especially in questions of feeling. **Whether from shyness or precaution or artifice, a woman never speaks out her whole thought, and moreover what she herself knows of it is but a part of what it really is. Complete frankness seems to be impossible to her, and complete self-knowledge seems to be forbidden her. If she is a sphinx to us, it is because she is a riddle of doubtful meaning even to herself. She has no need of perfidy, for she is mystery itself. A woman is something fugitive, irrational, indeterminable, illogical, and contradictory. A great deal of forbearance ought to be shown her, and a good deal of prudence exercised with regard to her, for she may bring about innumerable evils without knowing it, capable of all kinds of devotion, and of all kinds of treason, "monstre incompréhensible," raised to the second power, she is at once the delight and the terror of men."** -- The Intimate Journal of Henri Amiel, Dec. 26, 1868

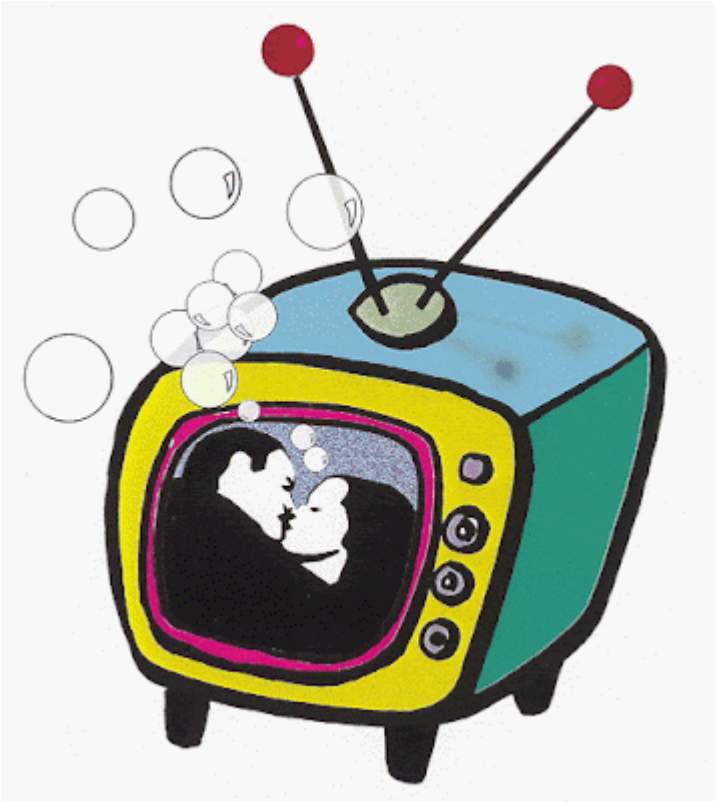
Angry Harry made a really good comparison on his website once:

Men love to watch sports. They will spend hours watching men kick balls, shoot pucks, pot golf balls etc. etc. They will memorize stats, and they will see strategy everywhere in a game of sports. Men positively thrive upon these things.

But women?

Not so much.

However, when women watch Soap Operas, they do the same things as men watching sports – except they do it for social strategy. Women see social strategy everywhere in soaps… how Kathy manipulated her love interest David into lying to his wife Ruth, causing them to have a big argument, driving David right into Kathy's loving arms… and the affair begins.



Social Strategy.

That's why soap operas are popular with women. It's what Cosmo magazine is chock full of: How to socially manipulate people.

Socially manipulating people is what women **do.**

In fact, it is one of the only things they do.

"Truth" as men know it does not exist in the same way for women. Women are "herd creatures" and thus women find "truth" or right and wrong through the consensus of the herd. It is what the herd believes is correct that women believe is "truth." Thus you see women are much more attuned to eternally changing notions such as fashion, or how they use social proofing - the consensus of whom the herd finds a sexually desirable man - to decide for their individual selves which man they find sexy. Men simply "know" what they find sexy in a mate, but women find men sexy because of other women's sexual preferences.

"... Women may have happy ideas, taste, and elegance, but they cannot attain to the ideal. The difference between men and women is like that between animals and plants. Men correspond to animals, while women correspond to plants because their development is more placid and *the principle that underlies it is the rather vague unity of feeling.* When women hold the helm of government, the state is at once in jeopardy, because *women regulate their actions not by the demands of universality but by arbitrary inclinations and opinions.* Women are educated--who knows how?" -- G.F. Hegel

When women argue, they are not trying to find the objective truth but rather are after manipulating the other(s) into feeling unified with them towards their opinion. If the herd believes 1+1=3, then it is correct - because the herd believes it is so. If tomorrow, the herd believes 1+1=1, then that will be correct - because the herd believes it is so. It is men who insist upon the objective truth - based on principle and universality - and continue to argue 1+1=2, no matter how much you cows moo at me. Women are not after finding the correct answer, but rather they are after

manipulating others into *feeling* they are right and their opponent is wrong. In other words, they are socially manipulating their opponent when they argue, rather than seeking the actual, objective truth.

I think one of the absolute best things men can do with women is follow the advice of so many of those "misogynists" of old, and view women as children. "A woman is the most responsible teenager in the house."

Of course, it is not actually that they *are* children. It is more likely that they do not develop the same sense of principle and justice to navigate the world, because society enables them not to have to. Regardless of whether they are or not, I think in almost every aspect – from game to simple conversations – a man is advantaged by continually reminding himself that "women are teenagers." They exist somewhere in between child and man.

This does not mean a man can be foolish and disregard women as harmless children, for as Schopenhauer observes, women are naturally furnished with the tools of dissimulation - the behaviours akin to a pool hustler - and this feature is innate in women and is found as easily in the stupid as well as the very clever. Men should be very guarded when in an argument with someone who naturally dissembles.

"So that it will be found that the fundamental fault in the character of women is that they have no "sense of justice ." This arises from their deficiency in the power of reasoning already referred to, and reflection, but is also partly due to the fact that Nature has not destined them, as the weaker sex, to be dependent on strength but on cunning; this is why they are instinctively crafty, and have an ineradicable tendency to lie. For as lions are furnished with claws and teeth, elephants with tusks, boars with fangs, bulls with horns, and the cuttlefish with its dark, inky fluid, so Nature has provided woman for her protection and defense with the faculty of dissimulation and all the power which Nature has given to man in the form of bodily strength and reason has been conferred on woman in this form. Hence, dissimulation is innate in woman and almost as characteristic of the very stupid as of the clever. Accordingly, it is as natural for women to dissemble at every opportunity as it is for those animals to turn to their weapons when they are attacked; and they feel in doing so that in a certain measure they are only making use of their rights. Therefore a woman who is perfectly truthful and does not dissemble is perhaps an impossibility. This is why they see through dissimulation in others so easily; therefore it is not advisable to attempt it with them. From the fundamental defect that has been stated, and all that it involves, spring falseness, faithlessness, treachery, ungratefulness, and so on. In a court of justice women are more often found guilty of perjury than men. It is indeed to be generally questioned whether they should be allowed to take an oath at all." -- Arthur Schopenhauer, On Women, 1851

I can well understand why in the old days, when there were such things as "gentleman's clubs," that even all of the staff were male. Once a woman enters into group of men, the group automatically becomes feminized. It also makes perfectly good sense to me why religions such as Christianity try to remove women from philosophizing about their doctrines and they state that women are not allowed to speak in the church nor hold office or authority over men. They naturally lead away from the Truth. Just because a woman says something that makes sense once, is no guarantee that the next thing out of her mouth also makes sense... and they all, by human nature, put the female's needs before the male, and manipulate away from the Truth with the ease, taking men along with them like the Pied Piper. Buddhism also says that women cannot become Buddhas for much the same reasons.

When discussing matters, *men and women are not even after the same things.*

Because women are based in relative truth, it doesn't matter how often you pin them down, as soon as you do they create a new truth in their minds and just carry on – because her goal is not to find the Truth at all, but that is what the man she is arguing with is after and he *thinks* she is after Truth too.

Truth, as well as morals, are only important to women when it suits them. The instant the Truth conflicts with their agenda, they have no problems at all changing it and carrying on – because what they are really after is manipulating you. The most manipulative is “the winner.” The one who manipulates the most crapola upon the other is the one who walks away being “right.”

Truth matters not a bit in deciding who was “right.”

You can catch a woman dead to rights in a lie, like a child with cookie crumbs still stuck on the corner of her lips *insisting* she wasn’t in the cookie jar – it simply does not matter to them. They just create a new truth in their heads and carrying on as if nothing matters.

"...it is just such responses — citing a single, artfully mischaracterized example to “refute” a carefully made argument — that long ago led to the bit of male traditional wisdom that advises, “Never argue with a woman.” Because women don’t ordinarily engage in discourse to discover the truth — as men do, not always, but men can be held to it if confronted, while women will dodge (a.k.a. “change the subject”) — but merely to “win.” And “all’s fair in war and love.” “Love” here defined as any encounter between the sexes, and “all’s fair” because that’s how women fight" -- Philalethes #8 - When the Cow Rides the Bull, Priest, Watch Your Skull.

And, there’s really no point in trying to “convert” them. It matters not a bit to convert such a creature any more than it does good to convince three year olds that Ron Paul is the right candidate for President.

Even the women that have been “converted” are simply incapable of rising above these things, and as soon as circumstances change, making her previous stance unsuitable for her, she rearranges the truth and carries on as if she has no clue to what you are talking about – nor can you hold her to what she said yesterday. So, what’s the point?

There was a very well-known Meritorious Mediocrus in the MRM a few years back. She had everyone bamboozled that she was “not like that.” She spoke and blogged and moralized and agreed and agreed and agreed… and all the men were happier than pigs in shit that there was, finally, such a good example of woman… they didn’t have to take women off the pedestal – not all of them, anyway. "Phew!"

However, suddenly a lot of shit hit the fan. (I don’t know the details, just bits and pieces which are not important).

She got herself onto the divorce-conveyer belt.

“Shared- Parenting? Huh? What you talkin’ about, Willis? Unreasonable child support? But I neeeeeeeed it!”

Yeah, uh huh. What a waste of time and effort for all the men who pedestalized her. She was no different than the rest and her “principles” were subject to change simply upon the convenience of where she was in life.

Even in relationships with men, women are completely malleable. The girl you dated at 21, who screwed you over at 23, is not even the same person when you speak to her again at 28. This is because women are “empty vessels” who seek men to fill the void. Each time a woman gets together with a new man, it is based upon hypergamy – he becomes her new hero, and thus she completely adapts her morals and character to be *his* view of the ideal woman. When she grabs hold of the next branch, erm, man, all of her morals and character again change to adapt to be the new man’s ideal woman. When you look at it that way, how can one then ever assess a woman’s “true character?” ***It doesn’t exist.***

There is no point in arguing with them, and there is no point in having their input into Men's Issues.Having a woman "help" with Men's Issues is like having a five year old "help" you put up wallpaper. No thanks!

"...the influence of the Lacedaemonian women has been most mischievous. The evil showed itself in the Theban invasion, when, unlike the women of other cities, they were utterly useless and caused more confusion than the enemy." -- The Politics of Aristotle: The Spartan Women

It is best for men simply to take a position and staunchly never budge. Do not bother explaining yourself to women; it is futile. Either they find your logic to be sound and they will conform themselves around you, or there is no further hope in converting her to your way of thinking. A man has to come from the attitude of "it's my way or the highway." A woman - or especially her friends - may call this asshole behaviour, simply because you are not willing to grovel like a servile worm for her approval, but deep down every woman *loves* this about a man. There is a difference between being an asshole and being confident and assertive.

We have entirely different strategies and entirely different views of reality. It’s best to just chase them off so the men can get back to business.

Interview with a Womenfirster: Phyllis Schlafly

Jack Kammer: What if I was the kind of man, like a lot of men who have confided to me, who is sick to death of the corporate world and in a heartbeat would stay home to take care of their kids because they love them so much and they know the business world is a crock?

Phyllis Schlafly:… That’s their problem. As I look around the world about me, I just don’t find there are many [women] who want the so-called non-traditional relationships. – a radio interview, WCVT-FM (now WTMD), Towson University, Maryland, January 5, 1989

Off to the koffee-klatch with you and the other clucking hens!

Further Reading:

Bonecrcker #51 - Don't Argue with Women

Zenpriest #50 - Listening to What Men Really Say

Tom Pry's Wife -- by Charles Lamb, (1775-1834)

Wisdom and the Weather -- by G.K. Chesterton

Point, Counterpoint – Rollo Tomassi

- For woman the temptation to misuse cunning (for example, to deceive) corresponds to man's temptation to misuse power. The fact that the woman's guilt is always more strongly emphasized than the man's is basically an indirect compliment to the woman, an admission of the degree to which she is the stronger sex in cunning. -- Woman/Man - from Kierkegaard's Journals

- The consciousness of how one stands with other people occupies a relatively larger and larger part of the mind, the lower one goes on the scale of culture. Woman's intuition, so fine in the sphere of personal relations, is seldom first-rate in the way of mechanics. Hence Dr. Whately's jest, "Woman is the unreasoning animal, and pokes the fire from the top." -- William James, Principles of Psychology

Previous Index Next

MGTOW

"If it's not right, Go Your Own Way!"

.....
..oooO.....
..(....).....
….\..(.....
…. _/.....
……....Oooo..
……....(....)…
……..)../....
.....(_/.....
.....

Al Bundy's Wife Chant

. · 13 June 2012 · Archived copy · Original

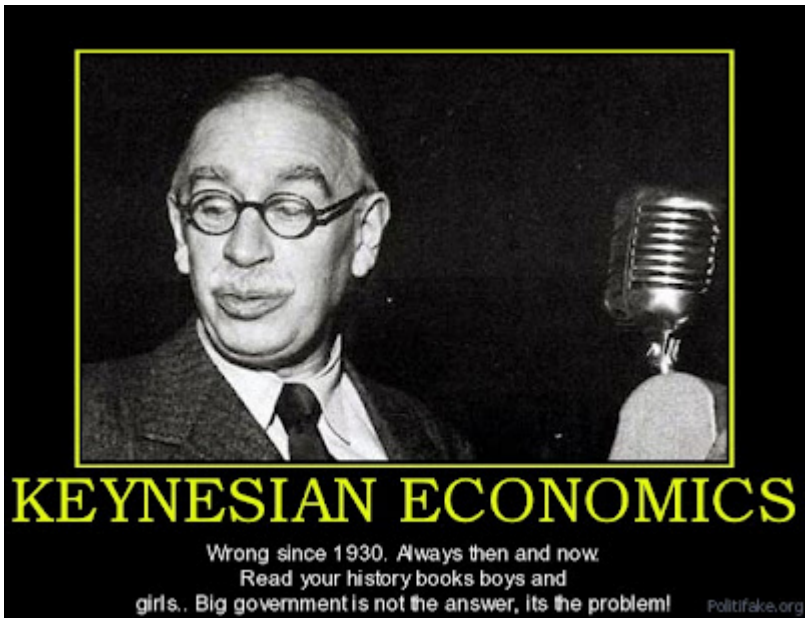
I've seen her from the front
I've seen her from the back
I've seen her in a chair
I've seen her in a sack
I've seen her stand
I've seen her crouch
I've seen her on our stupid couch

I do not like her in the mall
I do not like her in the hall
I do not like her in my life
I do not like my big red wife

"You are determined to be married as soon as possible, and advise me to the same. No, thank ye .. Many and great are the comforts of a single state." -- Thomas Jefferson - Random Remarks as a Young Man

The Keynesian Sexual Marketplace

. · 15 June 2012 · Archived copy · Original



.

(This article was originally written in reference to an article which featured an interview with well-known PUA, Neil Strauss, who boldly stated his support for feminism - it caused a tizzy in the manosphere at the time, since many felt it is not possible to be pro-game *and* pro-feminist.)

.

The art of seduction, commonly known as "game," has become a big focus in the manosphere over the past few years. I would like to make clear that I believe many of the elements of game are real and I agree that men should know about the attraction triggers of women. Game is essential to understanding the problems that we face as men in society. Without this knowledge, men will continue to be run around in circles, never getting anywhere – as has been evidenced over the past forty years. However, I learned about game in a bit different of a way than most. First, I learned via observation and through two friends of mine who both had extremely high partner counts - one I estimate has slept with 200 people and the other I suspect is in the 400 range. (Both are 40'ish now and the numbers add up over the decades). Things like social proofing and increasing one's sexual market value by "climbing" from one chick to the next I had figured out on my own by the late 1990's. But it wasn't until I read the Book of Bonecrcker at somewhere around 2005 or 2006 that I really seen it laid out in print in a way that corresponded with my own life experiences and observations.

The Bonecrcker is different from much of the game-o-sphere in one key way: His definitions of Alpha, Beta & Omega are entirely different from the conventional definitions we are using today. I still believe that he is closer to the underlying "Truth" with his ordering of these definitions because he goes beyond merely "scoring" and a high partner count in his definitions, for he includes social status and the ability to co-operate with *other men* - in order to create power - as part of his definition of "alpha."

Here are the definitions I learned it under, which will make sense further along in my argument.

Alpha: The “top” male – both sexually *and socially.*

Beta: Most males in the population. The average guy.

Omega: The scum/deviant/criminal class

Zeta: Weak-willed males

Alpha males don't usually get *the most* partners. Alpha males get *the best* chick around and she beats off all the other women with a stick. Alpha males are respected in society – they are not only sexually attractive, but they also have great *social power* and have the respect and admiration of *other men.* Think back to when you were in high-school. The star quarterback, while he *could* have shagged a lot of 6's, 7's and 8's, that is not generally what he does. What happens is he gets the prom queen – the best/hottest chick – and they usually stay together for quite a while. He does not trade his "10" in for quickies with a series of "7's". The top male pairs off with the top female and they tend to stay together.

Keep in mind that female hypergamy comes into play with the Alpha. If the prom queen is dating a "10", then who would she "trade up" for? Most men are not 10's and there is pretty much only one Alpha in any closed group (it's zero sum). Most males are 5's (average), leaving the range from 6 to 10 for female hypergamy to wish to trade up for when she's dating an "average guy." At the top end of the scale, however, there become very, very few prospects for her to view as better than her current 10, and so the top pair tends to stay together.

"Beta" males are almost all other males. They are *not* weak wimps, as they are so often derided as. They are merely the males that come in second place (or further). Not *everyone* can win the footrace and place 1st. The sexual marketplace is a zero sum game. There cannot be 12 alphas of equal sexual-social rank. It just doesn't work that way with hypergamy. She prefers only the best, and that does not refer to the "top dozen," but only number one is "The Best." Beta males generally have *more* sexual partners than Alpha males as they screw around lots when they are younger and sort out their socio-sexual rankings before finding the right socio-sexually ranked female to pair off with. Being 2nd place does not mean you are a slow runner – it merely means you are second place, which is still higher than third, which is still better than fourth. You cannot have 12 firsts – except in modern feminist-inspired schoolyard sports.

"Omega" males are the *scum* class as well as the sexually deviant class. These are the bad-boys and these are also the guys who have multiple sex partners. A key characteristic of Omega males is that they cannot form stable relationships. They *are not* powerful like Alpha males. They might get lots of girls, but essentially they are powerless in society and have little *real* respect from those around them - *especially* other males. Girls may screw them, but girls don't *stay* with them. Not having the respect of other males makes them socially *powerless,* and this is the key to why they are *not* Alpha males.

"Zeta" males are weak-willed males. They rarely get sex and when they do, they are ruthlessly manipulated and exploited by women.

When the game community talks "Alpha" they are really describing "Omega" and when they say "Beta" they are really describing "Zeta." The proper references to Real Alphas and Real Betas are missing.

Now, one has to keep in mind that since the rise of feminism in our culture, most males have been relentlessly propagandized to believe that Zeta characteristics are the proper ones. After 40 some years of this, as well as a healthy heaping of totalitarian styled laws removing all sorts of powers from the average male, indeed, if most males are “Beta” males (ie. average people), then it is true that this indoctrination has indeed encouraged and tricked the average man into taking on many characteristics of the weak-willed Zeta. In this sense it is understandable to confuse the modern Beta with the traditional Zeta.

However, it is entirely false to confuse the Alpha with Omega traits. One must keep in mind that human beings naturally exhibit pair-bonding and Alphas still pair bond while Omegas do not. Most high partner count people I know, such as my two friends I mentioned above, are Omegas, not Alphas. They are sexual deviants with numerous sexual partners *but their social ranking is low* and that is why they need to continually game more than one woman at a time. They can only fool a woman into believing they are Alpha for a short amount of time and they have little ability to actually *keep* a woman of high mating value. Another reason they continually need to have more than one chick on the go is to protect their own emotional vulnerability. Of course, this behaviour also provides the Omega male with social proofing, which helps them get more chicks, but this is a different kind of social proofing than that which the Alpha male gets.

The “true” Alpha – the high-school football star who’s screwing the prom queen - *doesn’t need* to be sexually promiscuous in order to be social proofed. He is social proofed already by dating *the best* chick. All the other girls “know” who the best chick is, and they hate her with an envy that would turn Kermit the Frog three shades greener than he already is. Also, every girl would *like* to replace the prom queen herself, because they all know that the prom queen’s boyfriend is the highest value male and whoever can displace the prom queen will become the new female atop of *their female ranking.* In other words, the “real Alpha” doesn’t need to screw dozens of chicks to have social proofing. He’s already got it by banging the hottest chick, which every other girl wishes she could be. Should he and the prom queen split, there will be a plethora of women from the lowest sexual rank to the highest trying to achieve status by being the prom queen’s replacement. He will be snapped up again very, very fast by another very high value female, and he will again ignore all the women below that level.

Another factor that has enabled Omega behavior to be successful is *urban anonymity.* It is easy to be a “sexual sniper” in the big city where the Omega can easily disappear into the background before the valuable Beta class finds him out and ruins his life. You cannot rise in socio-sexual ranking when you are constantly cuckolding all those around you, whose co-operation you would need in order to gain social power in society. Keep in mind that urban growth is a relatively recent phenomenon in human history. For most of history humans lived in relatively small, rural communities and they needed the co-operation and *respect* of those around them, *especially other males,* in order to survive.

An apt example of these forces and their results is found within economics. In Keynesian Economics, we see all kinds of market distortions. Low/negative real interest rates discourage savings in favor of spending – and anyone with half a brain knows that you can't spend yourself to prosperity. However, when faced with falsely imposed negative interest rates, spending money suddenly does make more sense than saving money which will have less value in the future. In Keynesian Economics, low interest rates also lead to excessive speculation, when anyone with a quarter of a brain knows that sound investing is more profitable in the long run than risky speculation.

In the same way, what we really have going on in society is almost a "Keynesian Sexual Marketplace." In other words, a false economy based on Government Totalitarianism, enabled by Urban Anonymity, and fortified by relentless propaganda encouraging the "average Beta" to assume the traits of the weak-willed Zeta – with some further false sexually economic factors in the form of the pill and abortion – all combining to skew the "free sexual market." The whole thing is as false as fiat money is to gold, and should these factors be removed, humans would likely revert back to a more traditional sexual marketplace – the kind often ballyhooed about in foreign cultures where things are not as far along in their screwed-upness as ours.

If it were not for things like government totalitarianism, women who mate with the scum class would find survival very difficult for themselves and their spawn. Many would likely die – and rightfully too, according to nature - for choosing an *anti-survival* strategy of mating with powerless Omegas who are unable to properly pair-bond. "True Alpha" males – those with high social and sexual value – would survive the best, as they have the best ability to provide, and all the lower ranking males and females (the Beta class), would again quickly pair off simply for survival's sake. No animal, with the exception of perhaps lemmings, chooses anti-survival methods of living.

As for the Omega class, were it not for urban anonymity where they can disappear before being forced to deal with the consequences of their actions, they too would likely disappear quickly – most likely at the hands of the socially valuable Alphas and Betas. If you lived in a rural community and decided to try and screw 100 of the local women, you can almost be guaranteed to make at least 100 *very motivated* lifelong enemies. Keep in mind that women are like monkeys and don't let go of one branch until they've gotten hold of another. Each time an Omega "scores" another man gets screwed over. Except for virgins, pretty much all women are romantically involved with *someone* at the time they decide to discard the old for the new. This is *not* conducive behavior for gaining social power amongst the other males surrounding the Omega male, and in fact will soon leave him completely powerless and struggling for survival. If an Omega were the town blacksmith and he screwed 100 of the local women, he would soon find a large portion of the town shunning him and taking their business to the next town, if someone didn't outright kill him first for his cuckolding behavior. There is very, very little survival value for a woman and child to be attached to an Omega male. Without government welfare picking up the slack and creating a "Keynesian Sexual Marketplace," the natural market would soon see both the Omegas and their lovers removed from the race.

And herein lies the quandary with "game" as it is put forth in the Manosphere today. We have the Omega class (low value males – lower than Beta) posing as Alphas (high value males), and since Omegas are the *scum* class rather than socially powerful Alphas who have *other males'* cooperation (along with high female attraction), the Omegas are flourishing while Beta males are floundering after being relentlessly propagandized to emulate the weak-willed traits of the Zetas. And, in many ways, Omegas *are* scum for how they treat other males. There are many who believe that when out pussy-hunting, it is their right to screw other men's wives and then get a chuckle at their cuckolding of other men. This is deviant behavior, and certainly not "Alpha."

I have seen it pointed out before in Game circles that "Alphas" like to consider all women "theirs" and will try to undermine the "Betas" to protect his harem. This is, I believe, incorrect. It is deviant Omega behavior that does this. The Alpha has *lots* of social co-operation in society because he has only *one* chick – the hottest one – and he stays with her, thereby not screwing over multitudes of other men whose cooperation he needs in order to accomplish things. It is the Omegas that choose to screw multitudes of people over in order to achieve their sexual goals.

The Omega male will *also* support feminism in many regards, as it makes women sexually loose and into bonafide sluts. The Omega gamesman *wants* women to be sluts with a screwed up, anti-survival sense of mating, and the Omega *wants* his sexual competitors to be denigrated, taking on Zeta male traits to the point of them being sexually unattractive to the females in his line of vision.

Most faux-Alpha Omegas are also actively trying to dominate *other men* (AMOG'ing) in order to raise their sexual ranking and are *quite pleased* when they succeed in doing so. This is deviancy and is not conducive to social climbing but rather, it produces the opposite. Both of my high-partner count friends I ended up ejecting from my life because the troubles they brought about to themselves, and by extension to me, was enormous. They also had no qualms of sleeping with their friends' girlfriends if they could get away with it. "Bro's before ho's" had no meaning to both of my high partner count friends and there was constantly a shit-storm following them around because of it. The one - the guy who has slept with around 200 women - was relentless in trying to cock-block his friends in regard to women, unless he had banged the woman first. As long as he had screwed the chick first, he was OK with one of his buddies dating her after. I also discovered over time that he had slept with almost all of his friends' wives behind their backs at one time or another - usually during times of marital difficulty - and he even had it down to a science. When you start hearing about "nailing your friend's wife game," you know you are getting into the deviancy quadrant.

Think of the guy in the pub who always tries to comb everyone else down with his superior IQ, his superior vehicle, his superior house, his superior fighting (bragging) skills, his superior blah blah blah, compared to *your* stupidity, your piece of crap car and house, your wimpy attitude… yeah, that is usually the guy that ends up sitting alone in the corner all alone because nobody likes him and nobody wants to co-operate with him. Now think of that same guy but he is trying to dominate you by sexually stealing your woman, and everyone else's woman too! Not only is it homo-erotic to try and dominate other men by proxy through women, but it also might convince some of those men to get up out of their chair and deal with the situation in a very primal way. This is *not* the behavior of an Alpha who has high social standing, but is deviant behavior typical of the scum/criminal class, creating damage wherever they go.

On the other hand, I know two "true alphas."

They are both assertive and dominant with their women. The one guy is one of my best friends. My jaw just dropped when I seen him walk in with his new girlfriend - the absolute hottest girl in town.

You know what? He refused to have sex with her for the first two months they dated... said he didn't want to until he knew they had real feelings for each other (ie. qualifying). He also *told* her she was not allowed to work as a waitress at a pub or anything like that - he just would not stand for it, having all kinds of men at the pub always hitting on her.

She conformed herself around him and they have been together now for around 16 years. When you went to their house, you rang the door bell and knew you had to wait for five minutes because they had to get dressed - after 8 or 9 years, they still had sex four times a day. The last time I was there (I don't live in the same town anymore), he was in the shower while she called and left a dirty message for him on the answering machine... I was in the living room having a beer with his dad and he was in such a hurry to get out of the shower so we wouldn't hear that he fell, ripped the curtain off the shower, and ran out naked to stop the recording. His dad and I laughed at him repeatedly all night. But good for him it is like that after all those years.

The other "alpha" I knew was a guy who married a chick fifteen years younger. He was 40 and she was 25 when they met. They had been married for a little over ten years when I knew them. He had been through the divorce wringer before and told her they were going to follow traditional gender roles, and that was that.

They would have me over for dinner, and afterwards, I would try to help cleaning up and doing the dishes.

"No no no, Rob," he would say to me. "We follow gender roles in this house. You came here to help me put siding up on the house for a weekend and she didn't help because that was man's work. Now it is time for her to do her work. Let's go into the living room and watch NASCAR."

You know, it was one of the best working marriages I've ever seen. She was *very* happy.

Both of these men were very popular and had lots of friends as well as respect in the community. There is definitely a difference between these men and the two high-partner-count friends I had, who got into fist fights almost as regularly as they got laid. The two "true alphas" had enormous social respect and co-operation while the two high-number friends had a vast number of enemies and were always looking over their shoulder.

Does this mean that Game in the conventional sense that we have come to know doesn't work? Absolutely not. It works very well – especially in our false sexual marketplace coupled with the ability to disappear into a large urban environment where getting along with others socially is not nearly as important as it was only 150 years ago, and throughout most of human history before that. Also, knowing that Beta males are being socially conditioned to adopt Zeta behavior is enormously useful to regular men/Betas. Hopefully it will help the average man reverse the damage which the Zeta-promoting feminist propaganda has brainwashed him with.

But Omega is not Alpha, because Omegas make too many enemies to be socially successful with other men, and when other men don't want to co-operate with you, you may find yourself truly screwed in society, which in turn makes Omegas of extremely low mating (survival) value. If/when our governments go broke, as well as everyone else along with them, and the failures of society can no longer count on being "bailed out," the false sexual marketplace will disappear. Without this government interference, women who choose low-value, high mate-count Omegas will again be forced to pay, and pay dearly, for their anti-survival mating strategies and the true Alpha & Beta paradigm will again reappear, simply because of survival strategy.

These are the times we live in. With Keynesian Economics and the false influences it causes, one would have been a complete fool to have sat in gold bullion from 1980 to 2000 while passing on the rising real-estate market because of "false Keynesian influences." You still have to live in the times you are presented with until natural forces once again over-rule synthetic ones. In the mean time you have to survive and see that your needs are still met. And so it is in the sexual marketplace of today, where men have to adjust their behaviour to ensure their needs are met, and thus certain aspects of game are indeed advisable to utilize. Perhaps the term Ethical Omegas ought to be created. It is unadvisable to pair-bond in our current political climate and yet men's need for sex is very real and cannot be denied, thus men ought to make sure that their needs are met while protecting themselves as much as possible - therefore it is indeed wise to emulate certain Omega traits such as avoiding "one-itis." But, in the back of one's mind, it would probably be wise to remember that we are living in the times of a false sexual economy and eventually natural forces will overwhelm the synthetic ones. Natural forces have a habit of doing that.

Related: Bonecrcker #43 – Women Behave Like Beavis and Butthead

Previous Index Next

.

MGTOW

“If it’s not right, Go Your Own Way!”

.....
..oooO.....
..(....).....
….\..(.....
…. _/.....
…….....Oooo..
…….....(....)…
……..)../....
.....(_/.....
.....

Great Zingers

. · 19 June 2012 · Archived copy · Original

"Save a male. Stop a wedding!"

"Marriage is like a boring dinner that lasts your whole life and had dessert at the beginning."

"[Marriage is] like serving time in prison with a big fat cellmate who DOESN'T want to have sex with you."

"Zeus made this supreme evil—woman: even though she seem to be a blessing, when a man has wedded one she becomes a plague."-- Semonides of Amorgos, The Types of Women, c. 550 B.C.

"My life sucks but my wife certainly doesn't."

"Marriage is like putting your hand into a bag of snakes in the hope of pulling out an eel." -- Leonardo da Vinci

"Ever see the old Twilight Zone where the little boy has psychic powers and he can torture and kill anyone with a thought? That's the power no fault divorce gives to any woman you are foolish enough to marry. How many people can be trusted with that kind of power?"

Q: If your dog is barking at the back door and your wife is yelling at the front door, who do you let in first?
A: The dog of course…at least he'll shut up after you let him in.

"Bigamy is having one wife too many. Some say monogamy is the same."

"Women are like elephants to me. I like to look at them, but I wouldn't want to own one." -- W.C. Fields

"Amanda Marcotte really is insanely creepy. She really does freak me out!"
"Yes, she even frightens tampons."

"You are determined to be married as soon as possible, and advise me to the same. No, thank ye .. Many and great are the comforts of a single state." -- Thomas Jefferson - Random Remarks as a Young Man

"Ah, women. They make the highs higher and the lows more frequent." -- Friedrich Nietzsche

"A man who compromises when he's wrong is wise; a man who compromises when he's right is married."

"When my wife suggests that I am not doing my share of the "housework" (actually, she means cleaning), I point out that it is my job to keep us both from being eaten by bears. So far, I have a perfect record."

"Meanwhile, as long as there's one honest woman living at the temple atop Mount NAWALT in Tibet..."

"Every day for the past thirty years, you high-heeled pit-bulls have blamed us for everything; from not being able to get into Harvard, to not being able to get into stretch-pants." -- Al Bundy

"Gloria Steinem is Darth Vader and Andrea Dworkin was Jabba the Hut
That is brutally unfair to Jabba the Hutt."

"Intellectual rigor is male thinking. Female thinking is I have a degree and you don't. The fact that you passed up a full scholarship to MIT at 14 and she has a degree in fashion magazine hoarding from the Utah community college of nail design does not come into play."

"My god, Machiavelli was right. Control or be controlled, it's that simple."

"An invasion of armies can be resisted, but not an idea whose time has come." -- Victor Hugo

"Depopulate the earth? I agree. You first."

"Tolerance is how far a mechanical part can deviate from the norm before it screws up the entire machine." -- Any Mechanic

[Regarding the look of a metro-sexual]: "That dude is responsible for his own choices. Women can't be blamed for everything."

"I don't know what the scholars will think of it. Nor do I care. I'm not writing for them. I'm writing for Canadians."

"This is just the voice of an ordinary Canadian yelling back at the radio - **"You don't speak for me!"**

"We've been able to train Frenchmen to play hockey, which is more than any European has been able to do."

"I don't need women, as the government fucks me on a daily basis."

Q: "... but has any researcher made a serious longitudinal study on this?"
A: "Maybe you should do a longitudinal study on the overall effectiveness of always depending on longitudinal studies."

"I don't think I've seen anyone storm the gates of hell before. Can I hold your coat?"

“Moral indignation is a technique used to endow the idiot with dignity.” -- Marshall McLuhan

"This is not intended as an ad hominem, it's intended as an insult."

"But there we are, what do I know, eh? I am just a poor lonesome country boy with nothing but chicken wire to sit on and a rusty old marble to play with."

“The Gods envy us. They envy us because we’re mortal, because any moment might be our last. Everything is more beautiful because we’re doomed. You will never be lovelier than you are now, and we will never be here again” – Achilles in Troy

"The White-Knight is strong in that one." - Aurini

Guide to Birdwatching in the Manosphere

. · 22 June 2012 · Archived copy · Original

Many men love to stroll through the lush forests of the Manosphere, as there is much to see and behold. One can find all sorts of things, from young saplings yearning to reach the open sky, to mighty sequoias offering a sense of security in their strength, along with respite from the outer heat within the ambiance of their shade.

.

.

As one walks through this unique atmosphere, it is quite common to hear the chirping of several different types of birds. The birds are part of the forest and therefore I would like to provide the following *Guide to Bird Watching in the Manosphere*.

.

One might spot an *Elusive Wife* perched on a branch overhanging your path. You veterans know her well. She is the one who has the perfect life; her marriage is free from strife, her children are raised the perfect way, and you'll see her in church twice on Sunday. She will pleasure her husband anytime he desires, sex in their marriage is still burning fires. "Her home cuisine is delicious," she insists he will say, and to top it all off, from this path she'll never foray.

.

.

The Elusive Wife is most often a traditional stay-at-home mom who believes in the message of the MRM. She's the one who never lets any man forget that "he should keep on looking because there are still good women out there!" Her song goes something like this: "Look at me! Look at me! This is how it can be! Look at me!"

The Elusive Wife appears to support men's issues, but really, those more jaded and experienced within "The Movement" will recognize that the Elusive Wife is concerned about men mainly because she is scared shitless of men waking up to the scam. She wants men to return to their masculine role of pandering to women's every whim, slaving away like a mindless drone for her and *her children*. It is noteworthy that the Elusive Wife's husband never comes online, gushing about his wonderful life with his wonderful wife. Nope, only she speaks of how blissfully contented her husband is with her. He smartly (or cowardly) remains silent.

.

The Elusive Wife says she is interested in men's issues, but what she really wants is to ensure that men keep serving women. She does this because, deep down, she knows she would be screwed if it were any other way. She knows she is a preferred human and wants desperately to maintain that concept. She has a manipulated man-slave at her finger tips and she damn well knows what a good con-game women have been running *for thousands of years*.

.

Another species which may appear is from the genus *Mountainous Mammarious*. You can tell a Mountainous Mammarious is in your neck of the woods because of her distinctive call, "DEE DEE! DEE DEE!"

.

.

She too fully believes in men's issues, and that's why she plunks her self-described Victoria Secret satin pantied ass (page 9, item C), right in the midst of as many men as she can find. She brightens up the whole board with her cheerful song, "DEE DEE! DEE DEE!" which is interspersed amongst every comment she makes.

.

She agrees with everything and befriends all. She often provides some useful services to humanity, like informing men of what it is like to grow breasts, menstruate, or have an ovary removed. The only thing she complains about is how uncomfortable it is to always have her lacy, Victoria Secret brassiere straps (page 11, item B) cutting into her back, due to the imbalanced weight proportioned towards her front. You see, she helps men better understand things from a woman's perspective. She flits in and out of blogs and forums, always spreading her good will towards her new found friends, and of course, announcing her arrivals and departures with her cheerful song, "DEE, DEE! DEE, DEE... Dee, Dee... Deeeee, deeeee....”

.

A third species of woman is rather an interesting one which is called *Meritorious Mediocrus* in Latin. Meritorious Mediocrus is perceived as a great Amazon bird of prey to many of those within men’s circles. Tales of her exploits become legendary and her name is revered wherever she goes. Even in far away lands, children are regaled with stories about the brave and mighty Meritorious Mediocrus.

.

.

There is a natural problem built within the species Meritorious Mediocrus though, and this is why some experts wish to rename this bird as *Annika Sorenstamus*. You see, Meritorious Mediocrus gets an enormous amount of attention for placing 96th out of 111, simply for being a woman. No-one knows who was 97th, 95th or even 5th -

but everyone knows when Meritorious Mediocrus places in the bottom 15% of the field, and she receives gratuitous adulation for her accomplishments.

.

We see this same phenomenon all throughout society. A woman accomplishes something "great" simply by *becoming*, say, a firefighter. In fact, a newspaper story might appear on the front page because of this particular example of a Meritorious Mediocrus, and sumptuously entertain the readers with her heroism in *becoming* a firefighter. A man, however, who is stronger, faster and has fifteen years experience on her, will not receive any praise for his "accomplishments" unless he charges fearlessly into a blazing orphanage and single handedly rescues a dozen toddlers. Then of course, when he is done, he sees a little girl crying that her kitten is still trapped inside. So the male firefighter again gallantly dashes into the inferno, intending to rescue the kitten, only for the entire building to collapse upon him, killing him instantly. That story will make the eighth page in the same newspaper.

.

The problem with Meritorious Mediocrus stems from her fame and influence far outstripping her insights and accomplishments. The effect of this is that the lower end of the spectrum tends to have a louder, more influential voice than the higher end of the spectrum. And somehow, there is just something not right about that. It’s like the natural hierarchy of the universe gets turned upside down.

.

The fourth type of bird one may encounter hails from the species of *Achievus Consensus*. This bird's entire purpose in life seems to revolve around convincing men that they will accomplish absolutely nothing unless they manage to get women onboard. (She might cite examples of how men completely failed to create a civilization because women didn't participate). As absurd as it sounds to an outsider, Achievus Consensus has some kind of magical hypnotism in her song that makes men agree that, indeed, no flock of sheep can properly succeed without a sufficient number of wolves in its midst.

.

.

Despite her hypnotic melody, however, when one digs deeper down it becomes apparent that while Achievus Consensus knows a few peripheral issues, when push comes to shove she knows nothing of substance. Biologists often argue whether Achievus Consensus is from the greater Cuckoo genus or if she is just a crossbreed of the Elusive Wife and the Meritorious Mediocrus.

.

There is a good case to be made for the crossbreed theory of Achievus Consensus in that she is sometimes very active like the Meritorious Mediocrus while at the same time displaying some traits of the Elusive Wife. She never lets you forget how much she is doing for your benefit while at the same time reminding you that she, and other women, *are not all like that.*

.

I, however, tend to agree more with the theory that Achievus Consensus is a sub-species of the Cuckoo because of her continual shaming references to what other women, not her, think about our views. The Cuckoo theory is further backed up in that the Achievus Consensus seems stuck on the belief that men somehow have to convince women to let them do want they want. Achievus Consensus talks like men are small children who need to ask Mom's permission to play outside after supper.

.

Now, although I am describing several completely different species here, one should not forget that they are still from the same overall family within the animal kingdom. This reality is starkly revealed when a man dares to challenge one of them. The flocking instinct of these creatures automatically kicks in and they all gather together, descending upon the transgressing man as if in a scene from Hitchcock's *The Birds*.

.

.

Of course, men rarely stick up for other men at the best of times, so the offending man is often left outnumbered. Even worse, some of the other men in the near vicinity were lured in by the message of the Elusive Wife, because she always sings of a dream which he once had, but never attained. Other men are still thinking about the Mountainous Mammarious' Victoria Secret satin panties, which he looked up online after she let it "slip" that they were the ones one Page 9, Item C. Several men will have enormous respect for the achievements of Meritorious Mediocrus, thinking those achievements make her above reproach, while others are still in a hypnotic trance from listening to the song of Achievus Consensus, who has been admonishing them to get women onboard so "they can accomplish something."

.

The result?

.

Well, no other man will dare speak up once he sees how all the birds attack, as if eagles plucking at Prometheus' liver, and more, how few of the other men will even try to shoo the eagles away.

.

.

Soon, all the men are "kept in line" and with everything they write there will be a subconscious concern that the women will be offended. In a month or two, the men are posting less and less while the women are posting more and more, until the few women begin dominating the conversations of the many men.

.

Now, a men's forum may try to counter this by creating a "sub-forum" that only allows entrance to men, so they can speak freely without concern of offending the women... but, come on now... a few women show up on a men's forum, and that forces all of the men into a private room in the back? How often have we seen that happen in society? I am starting to find forums with too many women on them to be an excellent way to gauge what happens in the greater society when women show up. Once a forum has gotten that far, it is quite literally, *for the birds*. Society is no different. Have a look at our governments.

.

.

There are two other types of birds that may appear as well.

.

The first is the much touted *Odd Duck*. (She is easiest to notice by the characteristics of reading much and talking little). Similarities to her extend well out of the bird family and into other parts of the Animal Kingdom. Take

piglets, for example. Every litter of piglets has a runt that is odd. However, it is the *other* piglets that make the runt to be odd. And so it is with the Odd Duck in the Bird Family. What makes her odd are the *other* ducks, and how her behaviour is different from the normal behaviour of ducks. Therefore, in no way ought she be classified as an entire species of her own. And thus, I feel justified in talking little more about Odd Ducks.

.

.

The final bird one will encounter is the *Cawing Crow*. These birds are hardly a rarity though, and you need not be within the rich splendor of the Manosphere to find them. In fact, these birds are so common that many men report sighting them in their own backyards!

.

.

There is no beauty in the song of the Cawing Crow. In fact, you downright hate the sound; it's just so damn irritating!

.

Everybody else hates the sound too, and that's why nobody in the Manosphere complains much when you take out that weak, old BB gun which your dad gave you for your 12th birthday and start taking potshots at it.

.

"Ping!"

.

You bounce a BB off the Cawing Crow's tail feathers and she flies away.

.

You would think that would be it, and the Cawing Crow would have learned a lesson... but, alas, what do you hear out your window again tomorrow?

.

"Caw, Caw!"

.

"Damn irritating Cawing Crow," you exclaim, grabbing your BB gun as you rush out the door in your socks.

.

"Pow!" You let off a shot and see a few black feathers erupt into the air as the Cawing Crow takes flight with a stinging in her side.

.

.

The next day? Sure enough, there's the Cawing Crow again, irritating you with a song akin to nails on a chalkboard.

.

"Pow! Pow! Pow!"

.

You hit your target with all three, but this time the Cawing Crow does not fly away. She has learned that the BB's won't kill her but will just bounce off her thick feathers, even if they do sting a bit.

.

Soon it becomes almost like a game between you and the Cawing Crow, and she shows up daily knowing full well that she will be greeted by multiple potshots at her. Yet, she keeps showing up, day after day.

.

You have a BBQ one day in the backyard with several of your friends, and they have heard your amazing tale of the Cawing Crow that never goes away - so they each bring their own BB guns along to the BBQ.

.

"Pow, pow, pow, pow, pow, PING!" Volleys of shots fly at the Cawing Crow, most hitting their mark, and yet, she

still doesn't fly away!

.

Wtf?

.

"What's the point?" one might ask. "You are not accomplishing anything."

.

Well, there is a point. You are becoming one hell of a good shot, and the Cawing Crow has helped you to become skilled at picking off a target with that weak, old BB gun from a considerable distance.

.

.

Compared to the other birds, the Cawing Crow is at least serving a purpose that is valuable to the MRM. I would rather have ten Cawing Crows than one Elusive Wife, one Mountainous Mammarious, one Meritorious Mediocrus and one Achievus Consensus.

.

At least with the Cawing Crow, you both know where you stand, and after a while you have to grant the Cawing Crow a certain amount of respect, if only strictly for the amount of abuse she is willing to take while still coming back for more.

.

Hey, I never said that the Cawing Crow was the smartest bird, only that you have to respect its temerity to some degree.

.

And this, gentlemen, brings us to the end of our *Guide to Bird Watching in the Manosphere*. Be sure to keep your ears open for their songs and your eyes sharp to spot their various distinguishing traits, so that you may pass on any sightings to your fellow travelers in the Manosphere.

.

Previous Index Next

MGTOW

"If it's not right, Go Your Own Way!"

.....

..oooO.....

..(....).....

….\..(.....
…. _/.....
…….....Oooo..
…….....(....)…
……..)../....
.....(_/.....
.....

There's No Such Thing as a Free Lunch!

. · 26 June 2012 · Archived copy · Original

The following list was written by William J.H. Boetker, a Presbyterian minister, in 1942:

1. You cannot bring about prosperity by discouraging thrift.

2. You cannot strengthen the weak by weakening the strong.

3. You cannot help the poor man by destroying the rich.

4. You cannot further the brotherhood of man by inciting class hatred.

5. You cannot build character and courage by taking away man's initiative and independence.

6. You cannot help small men by tearing down big men.

7. You cannot lift the wage earner by pulling down the wage payer.

8. You cannot keep out of trouble by spending more than your income.

9. You cannot establish security on borrowed money.

10. You cannot help men permanently by doing for them what they will not do for themselves.

Very Few Women Are Capable Of Empathizing With Men

. · 6 July 2012 · Archived copy · Original

.

Very few women are capable of empathizing with men. There are about as many women who have the ability to empathize with men as there are children capable of empathizing with adults.

This is what most men fail to grasp, and why they go round and round in circles trying to "explain things" to women. Women just don't care. We are here for their purposes, not ours.

"Women have no sympathy... And my experience of women is almost as large as Europe. And it is so intimate too. Women crave for being loved, not for loving. They scream at you for sympathy all day long, they are incapable of giving you any in return for they cannot remember your affairs long enough to do so."
-- Florence Nightingale

Esther Villar says about the same thing, over and over again, in her book "The Manipulated Man."

What men don't "get" is that we (men) are a "business" to women. The attention women can get from men is their survival tactic. It does not mesh with the male survival drive, which is "go get" or "go create." Sadly, we men have a hard time understanding that women rarely have the same desires as we do.

Women are designed by nature to look "yummy" to us so that we will give of ourselves to women. This is nature. It is not nature for it to occur the other way around. It works the same way as with women and children. Children will rarely care for the mother the way that the mother will care for the child. Children are not designed to empathize with mothers in the same way that mothers are designed to empathize with their children.

Women will never "care" about men in the same way that men "care" about the wellbeing of women. It has always been women who have walked out on men more than the other way around... it has always been women that have been more opposed to adultery laws than men... the 10% of children are the result of cuckolding is supposedly a fairly consistent stat over time/history/populations.

We are designed like this by nature, and men who are sitting around and waiting for women to smarten up and show men the proper amount of empathy/sympathy are being no more intelligent than a mother sitting down and crossing her arms until her children show a reciprocal amount of empathy for her... both will be sitting there for a looooong time.

You can even see how this works with the way that men and women buy family vehicles. The wife and kids are always put in the best vehicle/mini-van/SUV as possible to "protect them" etc. etc. while the husband drives the run-down piece of crap to work... when the time comes that the husband gets a second vehicle you can usually hear the wife chirping in, "We had to get Joe a new truck... because the last one wasn't safe *and we don't know what we would do if something happened to him."*

That's the way it has always been and the way it will likely always be. Men are a tool to women... a "business." And to successfully work that business, they must always appear in the needy/attention category. Babies who don't cry don't get milk... and women who don't get attention don't get taken care of by men. It is an innate feature of humans.

Women do control society's values and mores... they lead with what they think is fashionable, and men follow, because by nature we are *designed* to give women what they want.

Women "are" society. What women's wants are is what society's wants are. This is where women are lying when they talk about the dreaded "patriarchy." The patriarchy only existed because women explicitly approved of it, and endorsed it morally - causing the men to follow suit.

This is what is happening today too. Most of the anti-feminist battle is not going to be between men and women... it is going to be between women who want a "traditional man" and those who want a collective "government husband." In both cases the women are advocating for men to take care of women - with little concern for the man's wants and needs - one wants a personal slave to serve her & her offspring, while the other wants a slave class to serve women and their offspring in general.

It's the way human beings are designed. Who cares whether women rule, or if they rule the rulers? The result is the same. It's not going to change. These are the types of factors that have to be taken into account every time someone starts advocating for "change" or even worse, "equality." (GAK!)

Previous Index Next

MGTOW

"If it's not right, Go Your Own Way!"

.....
..oooO.....
..(....).....
….\..(.....
…. _/.....
……....Oooo..
……....(....)…
……..)../....
.....(_/.....
.....

Further Reading:

Who Is More Empathic; Men or Women -- by Angry Harry

Empathy -- The Rational Male

Bull Herding in the MRM

. · 16 July 2012 · Archived copy · Original

Have you ever seen a herd of bulls? Neither have I. It is the anti-thesis of all things "male" to become like a herd. Herds are the nature of females, not males. Yet, whenever talk arises of what men should do about the Gender War, the first thing everyone shrieks for is "unity." Often we hear criticism amongst men themselves that the Men's Movement is not a "real movement" because it does not resemble the feminist movement. "See! Men don't have vast lobby groups, therefore they aren't a movement. And look! Men aren't burning their gonchies in rallies numbering in the thousands, therefore there is no 'Men's Movement.'" It really goes to show how feminized our entire culture has become that men, in response to women's excesses, would actually try to emulate female behaviour in order to ameliorate their grievances.

There is a lot of confusion about what Men Going Their Own Way (MGTOW) means. Some define it as the marriage strike, others call it swearing off women altogether, and yet others will claim it means becoming a hermit and shunning society. I have been involved in MGTOW since close to its inception and as such I also have come to know several of the people who founded it as a concept. MGTOW is not a "movement" so much as it is a cultural and philosophical *observation* about men's behaviour. Men have been unable to find unity in their response to feminist tyranny. Lots of men agree things have gone way too far, but that is essentially where the agreement ends. Men are individual creatures, not herd creatures, and as such they have not "unified" in a front against feminism. In fact, if you look around the MRM, what you will find are hosts of "armies of one." What happens is that some men eventually get fed-up waiting for others to get their shit together and just go out and start doing things on their own. Virtually all progress, research, articles and websites in the MRM are the result of an "Army of One." In fact, this very website you are reading is the result of an army of one - my own. MGTOW, at its inception, was an observation that each man was "going his own way" and failing to unify like a herd of feminists would. It is in the nature of males to do so, just as it is in the nature of males to observe the Truth about such behaviour and work with it rather than try to cover it up.

Let me ask you, how can men fight to save masculinity by adopting feminine traits? Wouldn't doing so nullify the entire notion of masculinity and make us into mere women with penises? Men do not unify as herds and they do not make nearly as good of victims as women do. The MRM has been trying this abomination of nature for several decades now, whether arguing about DV shelters for men or for men's "right" to be a house-husband supported by his wife's earnings (AKA a "kitchen bitch"). It always fails, thankfully, because it goes against nature. As of yet,

masculinity has not been destroyed, and once men recognize the difference between masculine principles and feminine principles, they tend to say, "The hell with you all, I'm going my own way."

Female Power versus Male Power

Women are lying when they claim they had no power in the past. We may not have accurately described female power but this is actually in keeping with the feminine: All things female are covert while the male is overt, and so it is that female power in society is also covert. Although it is true that men have held most overt positions of power in the past, one must keep in mind that they were only permitted to do so because society socially condoned such practices. Society (ie. the herd) falls under the domain of the female principle and further, our social mores are controlled by women. What women want, society wants. What women find socially acceptable, society finds socially acceptable. Women have enormous social power while men have very little.

"Nature has given women so much power that the law has wisely given them little." -- Samuel Johnson

Over 100 years ago, E. Belfort Bax was writing how a man could never expect to receive justice from a court of law when his adversary was a woman. Justice is only achieved between a man and another man, and the only time a woman receives punishment from the court is when she has done something to harm another woman. When it comes down to man versus woman, the woman *always* fares better. This is not something new that has arisen recently, as you can see, but rather is something that is innate to humans. Everywhere in nature, males are the servants of the female. Furthermore, women have spent the past several thousand years evolving to better manipulate males to do their bidding.

"A man strives to get *direct* mastery over things either by understanding them or by compulsion. But a woman is always and everywhere driven to *indirect* mastery, namely through a man; all her *direct* mastery being limited to him alone. Therefore it lies in woman's nature to look upon everything only as a means for winning man, and her interest in anything else is always a simulated one, a mere roundabout way to gain her ends, consisting of coquetry and pretense." -- Arthur Schopenhauer, On Women

What men do with their positions of "power" in society is serve the needs of the female. Even the so-called "oppressive" things of patriarchy past were done for women's benefit. Take the practice of placing all of a woman's property holdings into the husband's name upon marriage. While feminists claim this was indicative of women being "non-persons," what it actually did was benefit women enormously. Women are hypergamous by nature and as such, seek out men who are more powerful and have more resources than they themselves have. Thus, upon marriage, the male's property holdings were generally much greater than the female's, and by combining the two upon marriage the female received the right to her husband's property. If wives could maintain property outside of marriage, then it stands that so could husbands. If property were able to remain legally outside of marriage then women wouldn't be able to fully take advantage of men's higher provisioning abilities. It was in the wife's best interest for her property to be co-joined in such ways. Wouldn't you agree to co-join your assets with Bill Gates if it

meant you gained access to his fortune and further, received inheritance rights to it upon his death? Since it was ultimately in women's favour for it to be handled this way, society condoned it.

The introduction of labour laws, such as limiting the work-day for women and children to a maximum of eight hours, was done for their benefit. Men still had to work long, hard days in the fields and mine shafts, but society thought it wrong that women should spend lengthy days in the hazardous conditions of the workplace, and so laws were enacted to protect women - not men - from such harsh conditions. Feminists, in their hate-fueled rage against nature, have tried to complain that such acts were the result of an evil patriarchy conspiring to hold women back, but they are plain and simply lying. In fact, as Angry Harry points out in his two excellent pieces, Women - Weak and Pathetic? and Did Women Really Want to Go Out to Work?, it was women who fueled such movements as it was considered by society (ie. women) that women leaving the workplace was a great step forward for womankind, and so, because women socially condoned it, that's what happened. Here is an extract describing the situation, from David Thomas' book *Not Guilty*:

The desire to free oneself from work was common to all classes and both sexes. Dr Joanna Bourke of Birkbeck College, London, has studied the diaries of 5,000 women who lived between 1860 and 1930. During that period, the proportion of women in paid employment dropped from 75 per cent to 10 per cent. This was regarded as a huge step forward for womankind, an opinion shared by the women whose writings Dr Bourke researched. Freed from mills and factories, they created a new power base for themselves at home. This was, claims Dr Bourke, "a deliberate choice. . . and a choice that gave great pleasure."

Further evidence to support this position is provided by a 1936 Gallup Poll asking a national sample, "Should a married woman earn money if she has a husband capable of supporting her?" By *overwhelming* majorities, both men *and women* said that she should not. However, a few decades later, women decided that they belonged in the workplace again and, as Esther Villar pointed out in *The Manipulated Man*, in very short order, the laws changed by the early 1960's to grant women equal pay and opportunity with men in the workplace - and of course they blamed it all on men, even though it was women themselves that had earlier condoned lesser pay for women and encouraged men to be the sole breadwinner so that women could leave the workplace. As you can see, in each case, what women wanted, society wanted, and thus it came into being. Men were just the tools who facilitated society's (women's) desires.

"Woman, weak as she is and limited in her range of observation, perceives and judges the forces at her disposal to supplement her weakness, and those forces are the passions of man. Her own mechanism is more powerful than ours; she has many levers which may set the human heart in motion. She must find a way to make us desire what she cannot achieve unaided and what she considers to be necessary or pleasing; therefore she must have a thorough knowledge of man's mind .. she must learn to divine their feelings from speech and action, look and gesture. By her own speech and action, look and gesture, she must be able to inspire them with the feelings she desires, without seeming to have any such purpose." – Jean Jacques Rousseau, *Emile*

Men's power comes from conquering the outside world while women's power comes from conquering the will of man and encouraging him to willfully surrender his power unto her *when it suits her purpose.* Think about how women claim they were powerless because for a few decades they didn't have the vote. Did they pick up guns and overthrow society to get their way? Nope, they bitched and moaned and cajoled men into doing their bidding. They did the same things with the Temperance Movement. Women decided what was socially acceptable, and then harassed men into doing their bidding - and the men did it! Women's social power is enormous and far outweighs men's social power. Men are playing a fool's game if they think they can compete with women on this level, for that is where the heart of female power lies. Men are as horribly outmatched by women on this level as women would be if they deemed to "overthrow men" by lifting weights and taking boxing lessons in an attempt to physically

subdue them. Why should men then try to form a movement on the basis of the female principle when it is under this very principle that men have little ability to compete? Seems pretty stupid to me and it can only lead to disaster. Much of this warped thinking is still based in the false Boomer-topian ideology that men and women are essentially the same, save but for externally imposed "social constructs." This is a false ideology and as such, actions based upon it can only lead to false conclusions. A "men's movement" must reflect male principles rather than female principles. Herds of bulls do not roam the countryside.

"We Must Get Women On-board!"

This is one of the most common arguments the Men's Movement has made over the past decades. Those who make the argument are both right and wrong at the same time. As I have pointed out, women control our social mores, therefore, in order for society to improve the conditions of men and end the Gender War, *women* must want the conditions of men to improve. Not much happens that women don't approve of.

"Anyone who knows anything of history knows that great social changes are impossible without feminine upheaval. Social progress can be measured exactly by the social position of the fair sex, the ugly ones included." -- Karl Marx

The mistake "the movement" has continually made is falling for the notion that men and women are essentially the same and therefore what makes sense to men also must make sense to women. Men are based upon principle and logic and therefore continually appeal to women from a position of justice. This is the wrong tactic to take with women, for as has been pointed out throughout history, women have no sense of justice.

"...women are inferior to men in matters of justice, honesty, and conscientiousness. Again, because their reasoning faculty is weak, things clearly visible and real, and belonging to the present, exercise a power over them which is rarely counteracted by abstract thoughts, fixed maxims, or firm resolutions, in general, by regard for the past and future or by consideration for what is absent and remote. Accordingly they have the first and principal qualities of virtue, but they lack the secondary qualities which are often a necessary instrument in developing it. Women may be compared in this respect to an organism that has a liver but no gall-bladder.(9) So that it will be found that the fundamental fault in the character of women is that they have no *'sense of justice.'"* -- Arthur Schopenhauer, On Women

It makes no sense to appeal to women's "sense of justice" when such a thing is foreign to the female principle in the first place. Furthermore, women have very little ability to empathize with men.

"Women have no sympathy... And my experience of women is almost as large as Europe. And it is so intimate too. Women crave for being loved, not for loving. They scream at you for sympathy all day long, they are incapable of giving you any in return for they cannot remember your affairs long enough to do so."
-- Florence Nightingale

There is a hierarchy in how our society "works." It looks like this:

God/Truth --> Man --> Woman --> Children --> Puppies

Men care for themselves, women and children, while women care for themselves and children. It does not work in reverse. Men expecting women to empathize with their plight are just as foolish as parents expecting children to empathize with them and "do the right thing" simply because it is the right thing to do. Both will be waiting for a looooooong time before nature re-orders itself in such a way. Appealing to women's sense of justice, or arguing with women by use of logic, is a fool's errand for women aren't creatures of logic in the first place, but rather are creatures of emotion and self-fueled narcissism.

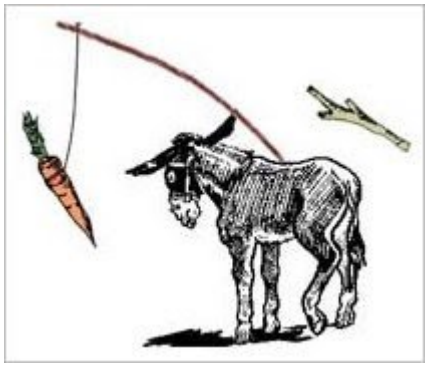
Interview with a Womenfirster: Phyllis Schlafly

Jack Kammer: What if I was the kind of man, like a lot of men who have confided to me, who is sick to death of the corporate world and in a heartbeat would stay home to take care of their kids because they love them so much and they know the business world is a crock?

Phyllis Schlafly:… That's their problem. As I look around the world about me, I just don't find there are many [women] who want the so-called non-traditional relationships.

-- a radio interview, WCVT-FM (now WTMD), Towson University, Maryland, January 5, 1989

Relations between the sexes were originally set up as an economic contract whereby men and women both mutually benefited from interacting with each-other in lifelong marriage. Granted, in almost every situation one can find, women benefited far more than men, but this is the nature of human relations. It has *always* been a 60/40 deal in favour of women, but the difference between the "bad old days" of yesterday's patriarchy and our modern embracing of matriarchy is that the culture used to have a "carrot and stick" approach – if you were a good beta provider you got 1) sex, 2) family stability and intimacy, 3) children you could pretty well count on being your own, and 4) social respectability.



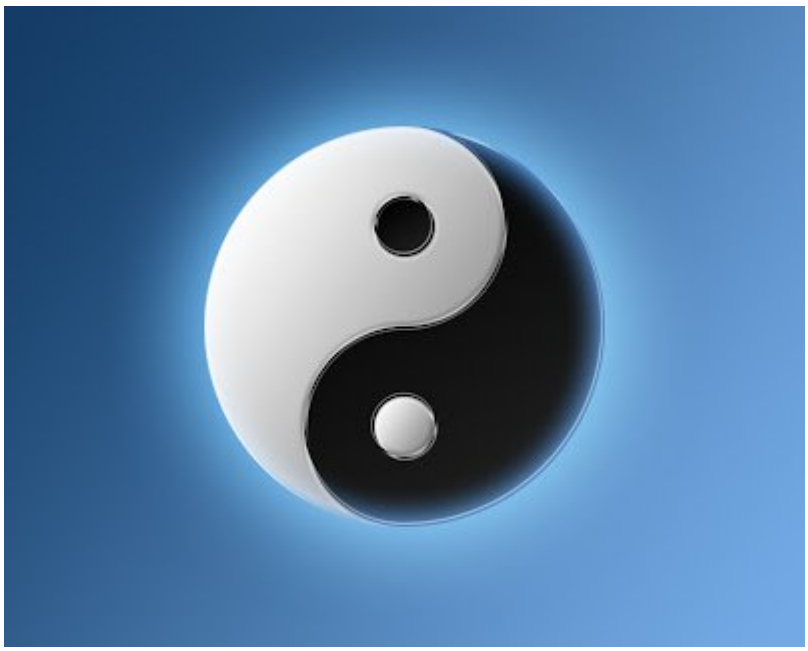
Then women and the culture said, **"To hell with the carrot, gimme two sticks!"** and figured they could keep

browbeating men into living up to their old roles while at the same time browbeating men for living up to those roles. Since the advent of marital rape laws, there is no longer an expectation of "sexual relations" within marriage. Family stability has been eroded by the divorce culture which ultimately was born out of transferring presumed custody of children from the father to the mother back in the 19th Century. We are told today that "all children are legitimate" and in fact, men are forced by law to support children that women have cuckolded them with. And finally, the social respectability of being a family man has been completely undermined by a culture that portrays fathers as buffoons whose wives and children have to constantly tolerate their endless social blunders and ineptness in handling all things about them. Yet, somehow, women's illogical brains still seem to think that men will continue to live up to their old roles and "man up" to keep women happy and floating in money and trinkets. Women don't understand The Law of Cause and Effect very well.

Giving Women the Husbands They Deserve: None

As I pointed out at the beginning of this article, MGTOW is not so much of a "movement" as it is a cultural and philosophical *observation* of how men are responding to the society which surrounds them. Men are not herd creatures like women. They do not band together and beg for sympathy as women do. Men are far more individualistic than women and they are also far more adaptable. And this is what men are doing - they are adapting to the changes in our culture. Several distinct strategies have emerged for men which they choose based on their individual preferences. If a man wants sex, he learns Game. If he wants peace, quiet and freedom from nagging, ragging, bitching, complaining, whining, pissing and moaning, he becomes a Ghost. If he wants a family, marriage, and kids, he goes expat or imports a foreign wife. In other words, as far as our culture goes, men are "going their own way" whether we like it or not. There are millions of "wildcat strikes of one" in which men are acting upon their own individual, adaptive choices. These numerous individual choices eventually culminate themselves into a "movement" that can't really be defined as a "movement" but certainly *does* have an impact upon the situation of larger society.

Men have tons of options today and really don’t need the government to do squat for them. Meanwhile, the women who have “won” the gender war and now have “A Woman’s Nation” are left holding the bag of being the breadwinner and raising the kids by themselves, and some of them are still up for quick lays but not marriage – in other words, they are fine with being pumped and dumped.



Appeals to women's sense of justice and pleas for sympathy continually fall upon the deaf ears of women, for women only have empathy for themselves and *their* children. *Women will not change this until the situation impacts them directly.* The battle between the female principle and the male principle always works in this manner - it is like the Yin and the Yang - one overtakes the other until the other overtakes the first again. The male principle is responding to the excesses of the female principle, and it is doing so in its uniquely male way - the opposite of the female herding instinct - by being individuals who take action, or sometimes non-action, and doing what serves men the best in the situation they are presented with. Sure, sure. This cannot go on forever, as if men and women fail to get together and create future men and women, the human race will not go on. But you know what? It is not solely men's problem. Women are complicit in our society's social structuring and when men's withdrawal from our historical role begins to impact women directly, they will change things to re-empower men so fast that there won't be any way to stop them... of course, they will blame men for it along the way - it is what women have always done.

We live in a false sexual economy that is propped up by excessive government interference. Women are as independent as a tropical fern in a greenhouse in Iceland. Once the government can no longer adequately provide for them - as is fast becoming the case as our Boomer-topian cultures financially struggle to keep from collapsing under the weight of female inspired socialism - women will turn on a dime and insist that men live up to roles that suit women's purposes again - and they will take away the two sticks and provide a carrot again if it so suits *their* purposes, not men's. However, the carrot will likely have to be presented amidst a delicious stew with beef, onions and other tasty morsels in order for men to willingly don the yoke of "patriarchy" again. Until women come around to this conclusion, and devise their own plan for enticing us back, men should let them change their own damn oil and continue to follow the male principle by Going Their Own Way.

Previous Index Next

MGTOW

“If it’s not right, Go Your Own Way!”

.....

..oooO.....

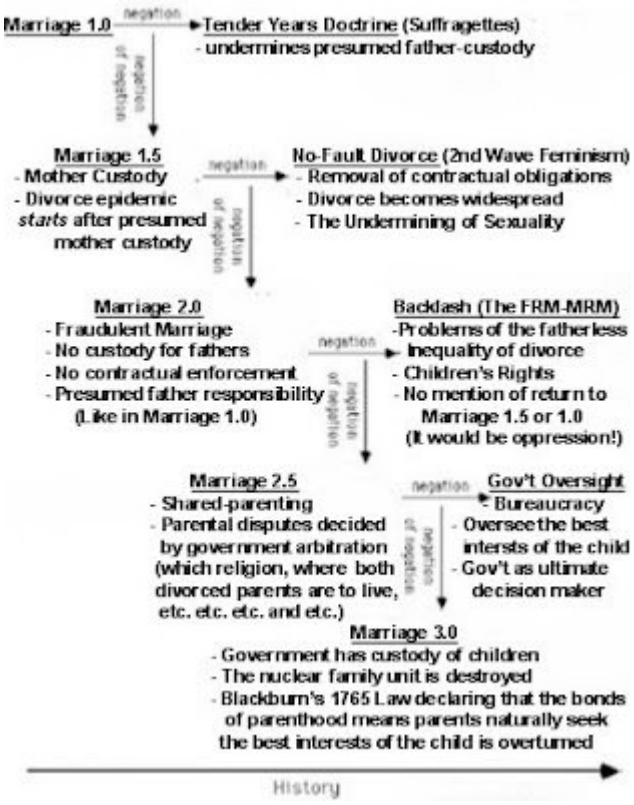
..(....).....
….\..(.....
…. _/.....
…….....Oooo..
…….....(....)…
……..)../....
.....(_/.....
.....

The Marxist Dialectic of The Family: Part II - Marriage 1.5 versus The Second Wave

. · 27 July 2012 · Archived copy · Original

Part I

.



.

Often we identify the introduction of No-Fault Divorce laws in the 1970's as the beginning of the divorce epidemic. As I pointed out in Part I of this series, this is not entirely accurate. The divorce craze actually began back in the 1860's and 1870's when the Suffragettes undermined father-custody with the Tender Year's Doctrine and mother-custody became the norm, thus voiding one of the core tenets of marriage in the first place - which was bringing men into the reproduction process in a meaningful way so that their higher provisioning abilities could be utilized for the greater good of both families and society.

It's not like No-Fault Divorce had no impact on divorce rates – it certainly did! But it more or less streamlined a process that had been well under way for over a century. Contrary to popular belief, obtaining a divorce before the 1970's was not *that* difficult. Marilyn Monroe divorced three times between 1942 and 1961 while Elizabeth Taylor had four divorces under her belt and was working on her fifth when No-Fault Divorce became law. Before No-Fault Divorce was enacted there were just a few more hoops to jump through, in an effort to "find fault." But let's make no mistake, if a woman wanted a divorce she could get one. Of course, with "fault" divorce, it extends that one must prove that an actual "fault" had occurred. There were many things which constituted "fault," including adultery, alcoholism, insanity, abandonment, and a host of others. But the most pernicious to the institution was the fault called "cruelty."

The word cruelty was an undefined term that much resembles the word "abuse" today because almost *anything* could be construed as cruelty. An argument that made her cry could be deemed cruel. Not paying enough attention to her could be deemed cruel. Well, you get the idea. Just look at how many things today are classified as "abuse" which really wouldn't be claimed as abuse anywhere else in society except in male-female relationships. Take that

meaning of abuse and simply replace it with the word “cruelty” and you’ve pretty much got the spirit behind the system. Over years of having a relationship with someone else, it is pretty easy to find *something* that can be considered abuse or cruelty in one way or another. So, what happened in divorce cases before No-Fault Divorce was that a trial occurred to prove the husband was “cruel” and therefore, a divorce ought to be granted. This caused much dragging out of people’s dirty laundry and it was pretty much a joke. Belfort Bax referred to the “cruelty” argument for divorce as a complete sham over a century ago already, indicating that it was all about taking normal human interactions and having a lawyer twist things around to portray the husband as some heinous monster when the reality was far from it. No-Fault Divorce was really more about not making lawyers and judges into hypocrites for orchestrating such a charade and simply saying, “Give her the damn divorce already and let’s just get it over with.” Women have always gotten what they wanted from the courts when her adversary was a man. Dropping the need to prove “cruelty” simply streamlined the process and stopped making the courts look like such hypocrites.

“Prior to 1970, the law usually justified its wrecking of families on the grounds either of adultery or of “extreme cruelty.” The sexual revolution has now made adultery a right for women (“a woman’s sacred right to control her own body”); extreme cruelty was usually understood to be a legal fiction meaning no more than that one of the spouses, usually the wife, wanted out. The pretense that the husband was an extremely cruel man was in most cases sufficiently absurd that it embarrassed even judges and lawyers and it was felt necessary to “reform” divorce by perpetuating the same destruction of families under a new terminology. This is called No Fault divorce. There were label switchings. Divorce was renamed Dissolution of Marriage. The Plaintiff was renamed the Petitioner. The Defendant was renamed the Respondent. Alimony was renamed Spousal Support (the ex-wife was no longer a spouse, but calling her one “justifies” taking the man’s money). The real core of the change is that it was no longer necessary to “prove” extreme cruelty to inflict upon the husband a more severe penalty than is imposed on most low-income black male felons.” – Daniel Amneus, The Case for Father Custody, p.215

As you can see, while the introduction of No-Fault Divorce certainly *helped* to fuel the divorce craze by streamlining the process, it was definitely not the sole cause of the break-down of the family... so, what other factors were involved?

.

.
One of those answers can be found in the present day, as our great altruistic feminist sisters attempt to "help" the women of the third world. There is a feminist propaganda advertisement that appears here in Canada on a regular basis which particularly irks me because of its blatant lying right off the bat. The feminist organization CARE put on the ad which starts off by saying something along the lines of "No-one can understand a woman's life in the third world better than another woman *anywhere* in the world." It's such an obvious slap in the face to not only men in general, but also to bloody common-sense. They mean to tell us that a woman working at her NGO job and living in a high-rise condo in downtown Vancouver has a better ability to understand the life of an impoverished woman in the third world collecting and burning camel-dung over an open fire in her mud-hut better than her husband, sons and fellow countrymen do? It's just bloody absurd on the face of it, so I once perused their site and here is what I found: "When a girl in the developing world receives seven years of education, she marries four years later and has 2.2 fewer children." Now, don't get me wrong. I don't particularly have a problem with girls receiving an education, but what I am pointing out is that feminists *know* that what they are doing is altering the conditions of the nuclear family by pushing women into the workforce where they will be directly competing with men. Of course, the same website claims that women put 90% of their income back into their families but makes no mention of the percentage of income the men put back into their families (Do the men spend 50% of their income at the local tavern and the other 50% wagering on cock-fighting in the alleyway?) Nor does it indicate what kind of families they are talking about. Do they mean husband-wife & children families, or are they discussing female & children families?

You only have to look at our recent economic crisis of 2008/09 to see what feminists consider "family." While men lost their jobs in significantly larger numbers than women, when job recovery began to occur, feminists started complaining that men were getting re-hired in larger numbers than women. (Kinda makes sense, eh? If three times as many men lost jobs as women, a similar ratio of men ought to be re-hired during a recovery - except in femi-supremacist 50/50 land). Then, feminists tried to claim that men were receiving hiring preference because they had families to care for and complained because women had families they were providing for too! Yes indeed, but the difference is what kind of families we are talking about. A man providing for his family generally means that the man, his wife, and their children all get food put on the table whereas for the most part, when a woman provides for her family, they mean there is food on the table for the single/divorced mom and her children. There is no man being provided for in this equation. Women don't care for men - they care for themselves and *their* children. A single mom "family" leaves the male out of the equation, where he starves on the street corner alone - it certainly does not lead to general economic improvement if the male gender is left to suffer in poverty separately from families. In the traditional nuclear family, men, women and children receive the benefits of the man's labour but in the new single-mother "family," only women and children receive benefits. The men just magically vanish to... who knows where?

The radical feminists of the Second Wave understood this as well:

"How will the family unit be destroyed? ... the demand alone will throw the whole ideology of the family into question, so that women can begin establishing a community of work with each other and we can fight collectively. *Women will feel freer to leave their husbands and become economically independent, either through a job or welfare."* -- From *Female Liberation* by Roxanne Dunbar

.
A significant factor in our culture which led to the destruction of the family was women entering the workforce en-masse in the 1970's and 1980's. Whereas Briffault's Law was undermined by the Suffragettes transferring presumed Father-Custody into Mother-Custody with the Tender Years Doctrine in the 19th Century, Second Wave feminists undermined hypergamy by encouraging women to abandon their traditional roles and compete directly with men in the workplace. Previously, a woman's standard of living significantly improved upon marriage as men were socially conditioned to work like mules to provide for their families. After the second wave arrived, women were

encouraged to "have it all" and be both high-earning career chicks and brave single-mother-victims at the same time. Of course, there is nothing wrong with women aspiring to do something more than live up to traditional sex-roles, but overall in our culture, women have merely cooked the Golden Goose by insisting on pursuing their dreams and aspirations. Yes, they want a high-flying career so they have money, but they also want their work to be socially beneficial (who doesn't?) and they also want their careers to be flexible enough to allow them plenty of time to spend with *their* families - not necessarily hers and her husband's family. They had all of that in spades before Second Wave feminism appeared on the scene, but were convinced by feminists that it wasn't good enough for them. Like greedy children, they had to have it all!

"No woman should be authorized to stay at home and raise her children. Society should be totally different. *Women should not have that choice,* precisely because if there is such a choice, too many women will make that one." -- Simone de Beauvoir, "Sex, Society, and the Female Dilemma" Saturday Review, June 14, 1975, p.18

"If even 10 percent of American women remain full-time homemakers, this will reinforce traditional views of what women ought to do and encourage other women to become full-time homemakers at least while their children are young... *This means that no matter how any individual feminist might feel about childcare and housework,* the movement as a whole [has] reasons to discourage full-time homemaking." -- Jane J. Mansbridge, *Why We Lost the ERA*, p.100

.

.

Second Wave feminism made no bones about their goals to destroy marriage, believing that true equality for women could not be achieved in the nuclear family. They pushed women into the workforce en-masse because they knew doing so would undermine one of the major reasons women entered into the institution of marriage in the first place - access to the husband's paycheck along with the higher standard of living he provided. This massive entry of women into the workforce where they began directly competing with men for their traditional roles likely had far more to do with undermining marriage than the introduction of No-Fault Divorce laws, which merely streamlined a trend that had been happening for a century already.

Also, the Second Wave did everything they could to destroy "the mating dance" between men and women. Men are the designated initiators in sexual relations. Women attract and men pursue. That's just the way it is. However, just because men are the designated overt initiators does not mean that women are innocent little darlings, simply fending off multitudes of horny men at every corner. They are just as complicit in the mating dance as males.

“Women chat happily, send sexually explicit signals and encourage the man’s attention, even if they have

absolutely no interest in him. This gives a woman time to assess a man, says [Karl Grammer of the Ludwig Boltzmann Institute of Urban Ethology in Vienna, who studied 45 male-female pairs of strangers in their teens and early twenties]… Importantly, the women also seemed to control the encounter – what the women did had a direct effect on what the men did next. 'You can predict male behaviour from female behaviour but not the other way around,' says Grammer" – *New Scientist Magazine* (London), February 14, 2001

Cary (1976) discovered that the woman, through eye contact, controlled the course of interaction with a male stranger, both in the laboratory and in singles' bars. Perper (1985) gave a detailed description of courtship, stressing an escalation-response process in which women play a key role in escalation or deescalation. The steps in this process are approach, turn, first touch, and steady development of body synchronization. (Note: This is similar to mating behaviour in other mammals, like rats).

Although these reports are clearly valuable, most researchers addressed courtship very generally, and some failed to recognize the importance of the female role in the courtship process .What was needed was a more complete ethogram of women's nonverbal courtship signals. To compile such a catalog of flirting behavior exhibited by women involved in initial heterosexual interaction, more than 200 adults were observed (Moore, 1985) in field settings such as singles' bars, restaurants, and parties.

Research has shown, therefore, that the cultural myth that the man is always the sexual aggressor, pressing himself on a reluctant woman, is incorrect. *-- Courtship Signaling and Adolescents: "Girls Just Wanna Have Fun"?* Monica M. Moore, Ph.D.Department of behavioral and Social Sciences, Webster University

.

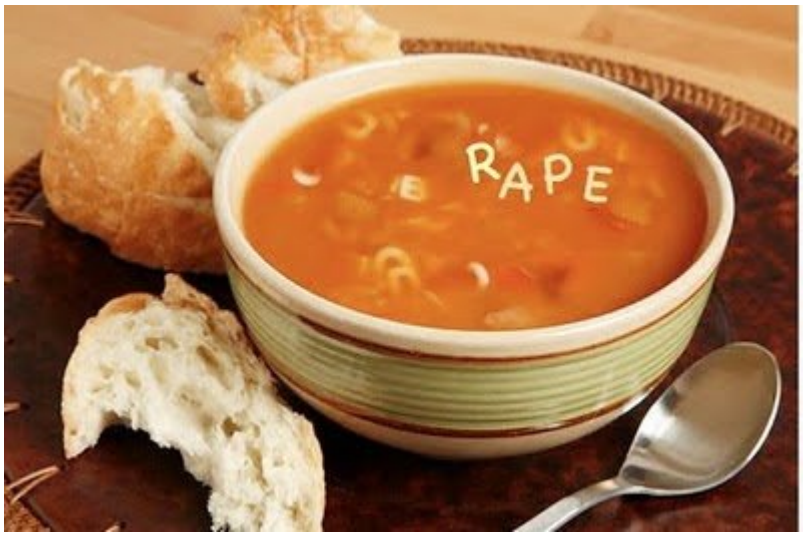
.

.

Thus, the old saying, "He chases her until she catches him." Kinda makes you wonder what the whole feminist campaign about "No Means No!" was about in the 1990's, doesn't it? Some studies have indicated that in a typical male-female sexual encounter, the woman will give off up to 150 rejections, either verbally, physically, with eye gestures, and so on, until finally saying "yes" to sexually accepting the man as a mate. Quite obviously, "no" only means no when a man says it. These types of campaigns were designed to drive to the sexes apart by monkeying with the basics of the mating dance - which women insist on perpetuating, no matter how much men get criminalized for doing what she desires in the process.

A similar thing has happened in the workplace where women once often found a husband. Today, after a plethora of sexual harassment laws being introduced into the workplace, anyone in a position of power could get into no end of trouble for trying to woo a woman who is subordinate to him - yet, women in the past often married their bosses. Remember, women are hypergamous and seek out men who are more powerful and wealthier than they are, thus, it is natural for a woman *herself* to be attracted to someone in a position of authority over her. But, since men are the designated initiators in the mating dance while women always hide behind plausible deniability, it is the male's part of the dance that had to be outlawed in order to drive the sexes apart. When desiring women is outlawed, only outlaws will desire women.

.



.

The William Heatherington Spousal Rape Trial in the mid-1980's was the final death-knell for any semblance of marriage resembling that which had existed for millenia before in our culture. Not only was this trial a complete mockery of justice but it undermined the very basis for marriage, which was a vehicle to contain human sexuality and channel it positively into something that benefited both families and society. This was the end of expecting that sexual relations were to be a part of marriage. If your wife - your lifelong mate - is no more of your expected sexual partner than a strange woman you have just met at the pub whom you have to woo and game into having "intimate relations"... then what is the point of setting up a legal framework such as marriage to contain two people's sexuality into the institution in the first place? Keep in mind as well, like Daniel Amneus pointed out in the quote at the beginning of this article, the sexual revolution had also made adultery a "right" for women (her sacred right to control her own body). If there is no expectation of either sex for the husband, nor the expectation for sexual fidelity in marriage... then... um... what is the point of a marriage? It has been deconstructed into basically nothing at all.

The above points I have addressed in this post are but a brief synopsis of how feminism sought to undermine the institution of marriage and drive the sexes apart. There are, of course, dozens, if not hundreds of other examples that could be used, but that would also make this piece into a full dissertation rather than an article for a blog post. The points I am trying to get at here is that while No-Fault Divorce certainly had an effect on our cultural values towards marriage and family, it more or less simply streamlined a process that had been well underway for a century before. The real insidious aspects of Second Wave Feminism were more about undermining the basics of male-female attraction. Many men who are reading this are at least somewhat familiar with the principles of game and as you can see, much of what was going on was the deliberate undermining of men's and women's natural hetero-sexuality, making it as difficult as possible for them to get together and form unions the way they had done for centuries already in our culture and it ultimately left us with what we today call Marriage 2.0, a fraudulent contract that in no way resembles anything of marriage 1.0. Basically men who get blindsided into signing on the marital dotted line are left as virtual slaves to their wives, unattractive in any way to their spouse's sexual desires, and without any benefit for themselves to look forward to but the peaceful slumber of death.

.

Previous Index Next

MGTOW

“If it’s not right, Go Your Own Way!”

.....
..oooO.....
..(....).....
….\..(.....
…. _/.....
…….....Oooo..
…….....(....)…
……..)../....
.....(_/.....
.....

What's In a Name? Civil Unions and Shared Parenting

. · 31 August 2012 · Archived copy · Original

The argument often used against Same Sex Marriage is that it should not be called “marriage” but rather a “civil union” – call it ANYTHING you want, just don’t call it marriage!

But advocates for Same Sex Marriage simply refuse to rename it, despite such “civil unions” not really differing from marriage in anything but name.

Have you ever asked yourself “why”?

A quick perusing of the following quotes ought to give a hint to the answer:

“Being queer is more than setting up house, sleeping with a person of the same gender, and seeking state approval for doing so. … ***Being queer means pushing the parameters of sex, sexuality, and family, and in the process, transforming the very fabric of society.*** **… As a lesbian, I am fundamentally different from non-lesbian women. …In arguing for the right to legal marriage, lesbians and gay men would be forced to claim that we are just like heterosexual couples, have the same goals and purposes, and vow to structure our lives similarly. … We must keep our eyes on the goals of providing true alternatives to marriage** ***and of radically reordering society's view of reality.”*** -- Paula Ettelbrick, “Since When Is Marriage a Path to Liberation?”, in William Rubenstein, ed., Lesbians, Gay Men and the Law (New York: The New Press, 1993), pp. 401-405.

"A middle ground might be to fight for same sex marriage and its benefits, and then, ***once granted, redefine the institution completely, to demand the right to marry not as a way of adhering to society's moral codes but rather to debunk a myth and radically alter an archaic institution."*** -- Michelangelo Signorile, "Bridal Wave," OUT Magazine, December/January 1994, p.161

"It [gay marriage] is also a chance to wholly transform the definition of family in American culture. **It is the final tool with which to dismantle all sodomy statutes, get education about homosexuality and AIDS into public schools, and, in short, usher in a sea of change in how society views and treats us."** -- Michelangelo Signorile, "I do, I do, I do, I do, I do," OUT Magazine, May 1996, p.30

"[E]nlarging the concept to embrace same-sex couples would necessarily transform it into something new**....Extending the right to marry to gay people -- that is, abolishing the traditional gender requirements of marriage -- can be one of the means, perhaps the principal one, through which the institution divests itself of the sexist trappings of the past."** -- Tom Stoddard, quoted in Roberta Achtenberg, et al, "Approaching 2000: Meeting the Challenges to San Francisco's Families," The Final Report of the Mayor's Task Force on Family Policy, City and County of San Francisco, June 13, 1990, p.1.

There is an element in the Gay Community that fully intends to *transform* the current parameters of marriage and create something *completely new.* This is classical Cultural Marxism and is the reason why Gay Rights Activists and feminists have joined each other at the urinal of eternal victimization, despite the *obvious* contradiction of each group’s **fundamental** premise – that being that feminists entire raison d'être is based upon “Gender is a Social Construct” and therefore women are discriminated against because the testicularly challenged are treated differently (while born fundamentally the same), whereas Gay Rights Activists argue that they are *born gay* (refuting gender is a social construct) and therefore they are victimized because they are *born* that way, and thus should not be discriminated against. The two arguments are mutually contradictory at the most fundamental level, and the two groups ought to be enemies… and yet, they obviously aren’t. The reason is that the radical wings of both factions

have the same fundamental goal: they both wish to alter both the family unit and society into something completely new. Roosevelt, meet Stalin, yo new fwiend and ally!

Something very important in order to *transform* marriage then, is to make sure that the new models that come out are still *called* marriage. It would be much harder to transform the meaning of marriage with “civil unions,” if civil unions were not also called marriage.

How will they transform marriage and society this way? Well, in Canada we legalized Gay Marriage back in 2005, and by 2006 (and using the justification of gay marriage now being normalized), Gay's shoved their agenda into our schools and by 2007 a court in Ontario had already declared two married lesbians and one sperm donating father to all three be equal legal parents of the same child. Obviously, the dialectical path towards polygamy is set wide open by this ruling... does anyone else see how they are able to purposefully "transform" society in this way?

That’s why Gay Rights Activists are so adamant about it being called marriage. If it were called “civil unions” the Marxist plan to alter society dialectically falls flat on its face. Everything will *stall* at the civil union level, and once society accepts the term “civil union” and identifies it with Gay People, it will become *monumentally* difficult for them to further alter society with this plan, *or* to be able to “rename” civil unions as marriage later on. Much of Marxist dialectical movement is based upon the general public’s *perception* of an issue, rather than the reality of it. Either they get it right in the beginning, or there is not much point in carrying on.

Now, let’s examine for a moment the feminist goals for transforming marriage and the nuclear family. You’ll fast see it’s not just “Patriarchy” that they are against, but also they’re furious as hell at Mother Nature for giving them ovaries! Even *nature* victimizes women, and this also must change!

"In order to raise children with equality, we must take them away from families and communally raise them" -- Dr. Mary Jo Bane, feminist and assistant professor of education at Welleslry College and associate director of the school's Center for Research on Woman

"No woman should be authorized to stay at home and raise her children. Society should be totally different. Women should not have that choice, precisely because if there is such a choice, too many women will make that one." -- Interview with Simone de Beauvoir, "Sex, Society, and the Female Dilemma," Saturday Review, June 14, 1975, p.18

"[M]ost mother-women give up whatever ghost of a unique and human self they may have when they 'marry' and raise children." -- Phyllis Chesler, Women and Madness, p.294

"...No woman should have to deny herself any opportunities because of her special responsibilities to her children. ... Families will be finally destroyed only when a revolutionary social and economic organization permits people's needs for love and security to be met in ways that do not impose divisions of labor, or any external roles, at all." -- Functions of the Family, Linda Gordon, WOMEN: A Journal of Liberation, Fall, 1969

"Being a housewife is an illegitimate profession... The choice to serve and be protected and plan towards being a family-maker is a choice that shouldn't be. The heart of radical feminism is to change that" -- Vivian Gornick, feminist author, University of Illinois, "The Daily Illini," April 25, 1981

"[W]omen, like men, should not have to bear children.... The destruction of the biological family, never envisioned by Freud, will allow the emergence of new women and men, different from any people who have previously existed." -- Alison Jaggar, Political Philosophies of Women's Liberation: Feminism and Philosophy, (Totowa, NJ: Littlefield, Adams & Co. 1977)

"[I]f even 10 percent of American women remain full-time homemakers, this will reinforce traditional views of what women ought to do and encourage other women to become full-time homemakers at least while their children are young.... This means that no matter how any individual feminist might feel about child care and housework, the movement as a whole [has] reasons to discourage full-time homemaking." -- Jane J. Mansbridge, Why We Lost the ERA, p.100

"The care of children ..is infinitely better left to the best trained practitioners of both sexes who have chosen it as a vocation...[This] would further undermine family structure while contributing to the freedom of women." -- Kate Millet, Sexual Politics, 178-179

"It takes a village." -- Hitlery Clinton

Not only do feminists want to destroy patriarchy, *they also want to destroy motherhood,* something very dear and precious to most females, and likely something they will not give up voluntarily.

There is a hierarchy to the way that "humanity" works. Many men are discovering certain elements of it through what is commonly known as "game," but essentially, the "hierarchy of humanity" works like this:

Man --> Woman --> Children

And this is a *strong* inclination within humans as well. Students of game will understand that women do not want to be sexual with men who they do not deem superior to them, and will reject all men they deem inferior. The woman *desires* the hierarchy, and men fulfill women's desire within it. Never ever forget, however, that *to rule is to serve.* And this is what most men did with their hierarchal powers – see the Titanic. Men did not use their powers to *harm* their "wards," but rather used it to protect them, and often sacrificed directly towards this hierarchy to their own detriment. Parents (ie. mothers) do the same with their children – while parents have the enormous capability to bring harm or to exploit their children, 99% of parents do not do this… and it is *not* because of the law that parents are altruistic towards children (The US Supreme Court even ruled that parents *naturally* act in their children's best interests, both in 1979 and in 2000.) – in the same way, it is not because of law, or even social mores, that men treat women the way they do. They do it because it comes from somewhere deep within humanity.

It is very, very difficult to get men to turn on women. In the same way, it would be very difficult to get women to turn on children. The hierarchy just does not work that way. It is, however, *monumentally* easier to get women to turn on men. When you "transvalue" the hierarchy (place lower values higher up, and higher values lower down), working it against itself *backwards* works like a charm!

You can convince women to turn on men *much* easier than convincing men to turn on women. In the same manner, you can get children to turn on parents *much* easier than you can get parents to turn on their children. It's just the way the world works.

Man <-- (pushed away by) Woman --> Children

That works, as we all well know. Feminists have successfully destroyed marriage and the sexes are repelling from each-other because the hierarchy is messed up. If you give women economic and legal power over their men, women will abuse it until it just becomes downright dangerous for a man to engage in this tortuous practice known as Marriage 2.0.

And, if you wanted to completely destroy parenthood, another stated goal of feminism? Why, just repeat the process that was done to destroy the bond between man and woman – namely, start giving the rights of the child

more importance than the rights of the adults responsible for them.

Man <-- (pushed away by) Woman <-- (pushed away by) Children. . This will work in the same way that men and women have been separated. Mainly, men are avoiding women because women's rights have made women into monstrous tyrants, while leaving men with little recourse to deal with the situation *except* to avoid women entirely. There simply is no way that a man can marry a woman and trust that she won't screw him over, or that he can trust that the court has any inclination to preserve justice in the situation, and so, men are wisely opting out from a rigged game.

And the same thing that happened to men and women regarding marriage will happen to parents and children if the powers that be are allowed to elevate the rights of the child to over-ride the rights of the parent.

How will you raise a child properly if sending them to their room becomes "psychological abuse," or if with-holding their allowance is deemed "financial abuse" or if forcing them to eat their vegetables is considered some other sort of totalitarian abuse. (If I had a hammer, I'd smash vitamins!) Take note, Hillary Clinton fully believes that parents are not qualified to represent the best interests of *their own* children, and therefore the state ought to create a rambling bureaucracy of civil servants and lawyers to represents children *independently* of their parents.

This is the exact same system that divided men and women – pitting their interests against each other by dialectically manipulating the legal system. Men and women are in a parasitic type of relationship wherein the man gives of his surplus resources to the woman. Parents and children are in exactly the same type of scenario, and as has happened with men and women, when you allow the parasite to lead the host, all you end up doing is destroying both organisms. Parents and children will work the same.

And I promise you, there does not have to be some grand conspiracy manipulating *every* law and specific aspect of what will happen next. Simply screwing up the hierarchy will suffice. When children have more authority than the parents responsible for them you will have already stuck a stick in the spokes by default. Destruction is now not only likely, but in general society it will be virtually guaranteed – just like placing the authority of women over and above the authority of the man responsible for protecting and providing for her has only led to abuse, not solutions.

"The history of woman is the history of the worst form of tyranny the world has ever known; the tyranny of the weak over the strong. It is the only tyranny that lasts." – Oscar Wilde

Children are even weaker than women! Placing the rights of the child over the rights of parents will lead to the same results – only worse! And, btw, since the destruction of marriage, who makes up the majority of parents nowadays? (Hint – They are among the testicularly challenged).

Now, often times 'round here you will hear me refer to "The Dialectic," and all of you know that this blog frequently refers to Marxism and how feminism is married to it. One thing however, that does not get mentioned too often here or elsewhere is that Marxism and the Dialectic *does **not** work in a straight line.* The general failure of us to realize this is why we keep getting our asses handed to us. We are playing checkers with people who are playing chess.

The way "it" works is like a zig-zag. The Marxist dialectic pushes radically to the left until a backlash builds up, and then the backlash is released *in order to consolidate the gains to the left.*

"It would be the greatest mistake, certainly, to think that concessions mean peace. Nothing of the kind. Concessions are nothing but a new form of war." -- V.I. Lenin

So, the way it works is that radical leftism is introduced into society – much like how No-Fault-Divorce was introduced into our society. This was a *radical* move that completely re-organized society's most fundamental building block – and take note that there was *no* massive public outcry demanding such a thing. Society didn't even conceive of such a thing – marriage was simply "marriage", the way it had always been.

However, No Fault Divorce was implemented anyway and we all know the results. In the past decades we have witnessed a plethora of problems arising because of this radical change. However, this change has now taken place long ago, and the vast majority of the population does not remember, nor can even conceive, of a society where divorce was not the norm. Take note that this was not the case when No-Fault-Divorce arrived on the scene, but after a couple of generations being exposed to it, it is now considered so normal that it is hardly even conceivable to us to try and rid society of it – rather, now we simply want to *alter it.* (This is a classical brainwashing technique, btw - 1- "un-freeze" from current acceptance levels, 2 - Move the subject to a new level, 3 - "Re-Freeze" at the new level until the change has become normalized/accepted, 4 - Repeat the process until the proper amount of "movement" has taken place).

This is how it is done when you implement Marxism via gradualism – while Lenin did it fast and encouraged people to go along with him via threats of violence, gradualism does it by *slowing things down* so that people **forget.** If you study a little closer, you will discover that we have, indeed, spent the past forty years implementing the *exact* same types of social changes that Lenin did in his first four years of rule. The amount of time is the only difference. Lenin used violence within four years, and our system of Marxism is using forgetfulness/the generation gap over a longer period of time. The ultimate result is still the same, however.

So, back to the idea that "the backlash to the right consolidates the gains to the left." What happens after a radical leftward change has occurred is of course a plethora of problems arising in society from said change. The people that are mostly affected by it are those that will push back against the radical leftism with, of course, a rightward/conservative political movement. What happens though is that the backlash movement is not one that attempts to dial back the *cause* but rather attempts are made to *alter the results.*

So, in the case of marriage in the modern day, the "backlash" is decidedly **not** pushing for an end to No Fault Divorce, nor are they pushing for a restoration of Full Father Custody (the way marriage was originally intended, and existed up until the 1860's). What they are pushing for is "shared parenting." A *further* aberration of the original concept of the family, and *something that has **never** existed in history.* But, the "backlash to the right" will solidify in the minds of the population that implementing No-Fault-Divorce was proper, although it needed to be tweaked a little to make it more "equal" and fair. The concept that children need two fulltime parents will also be demolished. The need for State Funded Daycare will be increased as now there will be two parents disadvantaged rather than one… and, as always, both parties will now be running to the government to beg and plead for the *court* to decide exactly the time, place, and even *how* a parent may interact with his own child (or, more accurately, *her* child).

Some freedom!

Wheras once parents would have run a pitchfork through any government personnel interfering with a citizen's home-life, then covered him with oil and lit him on fire with torches in the town square, we now have both mothers and fathers running to the government *to beg and plead* for crumbs and scraps from the same table that **the people once owned** and both sides will think they are "winning" some precious equality, while being grateful to the government for providing them with something which was never the government's in the first damn place.

This is the "totalitarian trap." You cause as much problems and confusion in a certain area as you possibly can, and out of the confusion you will cause despair amongst the people who will then run to you and demand you "fix it,"

which of course you will – but in a way that suits your purposes, not of the masses of plebes who are only there for your satisfaction anyways.

Ah yes, consolidate the gains… until the people have internalized the change, which they will if you allow a measure of backlash to appease them, and give some time for the changes to internalize, and then begin radical movements to the left again.

One thing though, once the backlash accepts the watered-down consolation prize, *they cannot easily push further* because they have already been appeased! Once something like divorce has been "reorganized" to make it "more equal," added on top of the fact that most of the population doesn't even remember a time when divorce was *not* rampant in society, to take it *further* than the appeasement makes in nearly impossible.

Back to the beginning of this essay and the difference between "Civil Unions" and "Same Sex *Marriage*," you can see why the Gay Rights community was so adamant about retaining the word "marriage" rather than using "Civil Union." Using the word civil union would greatly hamper Gay Activists in their attempts to *alter* the meaning and structure of marriage – it had to retain the same name. If they would have gained under the name "civil union," the effects upon "marriage" would have been negligible - *and also,* their ability to re-push the issue into society's limelight would have been greatly diminished, because the general population would have already come to believe that Gays had been appeased, and wouldn't want to tolerate their bullshit all over again.

It's kind of a one shot deal.

What will Shared Parenting do to the radical changes in the structure of the family over the past decades? Will it roll back the changes or will it *continue* to alter the structure of the family? Will it make divorce more or less acceptable in society? Will men be able to use it as a stepping stone to further their goals, or is it an assured permanent dead-end with minimal benefits?

How can feminists and the powers that be pursue their stated goals of removing *motherhood* from the experience of womanhood? They certainly won't be able to use women to do it directly out of their own self interests… but could the coupling of children's rights to the already diminished father's rights be used to dialectically destroy whatever remains of parenthood, and pass all authority over to the state?

The only thing that supercedes the best interests of women in our society is the best interests of the child. I hope the shared parenting movement does not get made into useful idiots, promoting further destruction of the family while believing they are preserving it. I could easily see that women will be given "equal rights" in parenting as men, given that men have virtually no rights at all.

I understand why Gays insist on calling Same Sex Unions as marriage - because they aren't nearly done with transforming it and they *know* what they are doing. On the otherhand, with Shared Parenting, "defenders" of the family and fatherhood are cutting themselves off at the knees - not understanding what they are doing - as they are not willing to dialectically reframe the debate in a way that does not dead-end themselves into the Marxist web.

"If it's not right, Go Your Own Way!"

.....

..oooO.....
..(....).....
….\..(.....
…. _/.....
…….....Oooo..
…….....(....)…
……..)../....
.....(_/.....
.....

Feminine-ism: The "Nicest" Ideology in the World

. · 8 September 2012 · Archived copy · Original

"Feminine-ism" is a manifestation of the "feminine spirit" or, the "feminine principle." Often we refer to "the totalitarianism of women," and really what it is is the feminine principle which is trying to impose niceness on us. This is the underlying evil of the feminine principle. Women have no concept of cause and effect, but they do want everyone to be nice and they are willing to use totalitarianism to force it upon you.

"Women and men want very different things and therefore very different worlds. Men want sex, freedom, and adventure; women want security, pleasantness, and someone to care about (or for) them. Both like power. Men use it to conquer their neighbours whether in business or war, *women to impose security and pleasantness.* … Just about everything that once defined masculinity is now denounced as 'macho,' a hostile word embodying the female incomprehension of men. … Men are happy for men to be men and women to women; women want us all to be women." -- Fred Reed

Look at the Temperance Movement that arose at the exact same time as women's political power starting coming into our culture. Ah, Prohibition! Some men (and even a few women, gasp!) are lousy with hooch, and some families are negatively affected by it. Therefore the government should pass totalitarian laws forcing everyone to be nice and sober all the time. Of course, this led to the rise of wonderful citizens such as the mass-murdering Al Capone and his mirror image, the thugs with guns that enforced the laws at women's insistence. But as always, everything women do is indirect so when their totalitarian actions caused a massive disaster, women easily side-stepped the blame and said, "See! It is the evil men who are the criminals, and it's the violent thugs with guns that leave other men bleeding in the gutters. Oh my, we are such victims now, we can hardly walk the streets! Pass more laws to make everyone nicer!" It's a dangerous spiral that "seems nice" on the surface, but quickly turns into an ugly totalitarian monster where the only "safe" and "nice" thing to do is sit at home and watch the ceiling fan go round and round – until, that is, women start talking about how it would be "nice" for the environment if we only have electricity for 3hrs a day, and so they pester and badger men to impose more laws upon society to make everyone "nice" in that regard too.

There are no limits to how much "niceness" women will impose upon others. The one thing women *have* actually invented is a quite remarkable perpetual motion machine which creates laws imposing niceness forever and ever.

Women view us as little boys and they want us to play nice. If we don't play nice for them, they have lost control… because *men* don't play nice at women's insistence. Men might play nice for their own reasons, but never at a women's insistence. Boys succumb to mother's power but *men* realize the true nature of women and that the "unfair sex" can't keep two thoughts straight in their head past the next glittering trinket that distracts them, completely clearing their heads of whatever thoughts someone falsely deduced were actually in there to begin with. Women have power over little boys – watch a woman looking over her brood and how she gets them to "play nice." She exercises her power over them to impose "nice" on them, and if they aren't nice… "Wait till your father gets home!" – More indirect social aggression, with the intention of imposing "nice" on people – through the force of others.

The males of Western Culture are suffering from a form of arrested development because of the overwhelming feminization of our society. Women don't think they should let males grow out of boyhood (where women are in 100% control of them) and into men because women have zero control over a man. And despite their protests to the contrary, they get extremely aroused when in the presence of a *man* - someone they can't control because he has risen above her petty bullshit in the same way that an adult rises above the pettiness of a child.

Look at everything that feminine-ism has imposed upon society:

- No more grades in school, because failing is not “nice.”
- No more keeping score in schoolyard soccer games, because losing isn’t “nice.”
- No more boys playing with finger-guns, because that is not “nice.”
- No more women having to raise their bastard spawn alone, because it isn’t “nice” of men to make her pay for her mistakes, erm, right to choose, like a *real* adult.
- No offensive language in the workplace since that isn’t “nice” either.
- No boss demanding she work a full day for her pay, rather than “flex-timing” at his expense – because it would be “nice” for him to think of the children, rather than keeping his business afloat (and providing jobs for others).
- No men hitting on them that they don’t like, because they don’t find it a “nice” experience.
- Nice, nice, nice, nice, nice, nice, nice, nice, nice, **nice.**

Eventually, everything which is not forbidden will be mandatory. That is the end result of feminine-ism.

Hmmph! No more Mr. Nice-Guy! It's what both society, and women, desperately need.

“If it’s not right, Go Your Own Way!”

.....
..oooO.....
..(....).....
….\..(.....
…. _/.....
…….....Oooo..
…….....(....)…
……..)../....
.....(_/.....
.....

Further Reading:

Philalethes #1 – Feminist Allies?

The War Against Men – by David Shackleton

The Garden of Eden, Absolute Truth, and Relative Truth

. · 14 September 2012 · Archived copy · Original

I think there is something very fundamental about Absolute Truth *over* Relative Truth which is the very basic to the nature of humans… that which separates humans from animal living and allows us to rise up from being beasts of the field.

Of course, the "tool" which humans have been given by God or by Nature – our equivalent to which every animal has been give his specialty (elephants have tusks, giraffes have long necks) - is our ability to choose, and of course, along with the ability to choose necessarily comes the ability to question. And in order to go from question to choosing an answer, there is the necessity to rationalize. Virtually all of human power resides in this feature. These are things humans can do which no other animal can do. Everything else works on pure instincts.

But…

This power we have to choose is like all power – it has the potential to be dangerous as much as it has the potential to be beneficial. I think the concept of "power needing to be tempered" before it becomes something useful certainly makes sense. And so it is that our human mental abilities need to tempered, or perhaps a better phrase is "anchored to reality," or else we humans also have the ability to "think" ourselves right off the rails and into la-la land. We humans kinda have a lemming feature built into us where we "think ourselves to death."

In fact, this is the story of the Garden of Eden in a nutshell: It is a story of the battle of Absolute Truth vs. Relative Truth, and the danger of what happens by placing the Relative Truth higher in importance than the Absolute Truth. It is a story about humankind's ability to bend the truth to over-ride reality… often with dire consequences.

There was only one rule in the Garden… DON'T EAT FROM THAT TREE! There was only one truth that Adam and Eve had to follow… and here is where it gets interesting, because Eve was *deceived* but she was not particularly *lied* to. In fact, the serpent's assertions are perfectly valid, although very craftily worded:

- The serpent was right when he says "you will not surely die." (He was right, they did not *surely* die… After being tossed from the Garden, God offered them a path to salvation and eternal life – if they chose to follow God's path).

- The serpent was right, when they ate the fruit, their eyes *were* opened, and they did become like God and gain

knowledge of good and evil.

And then Eve's female rationalizing hamster wheel starts churning, mired in Relative Truth.

"When the woman saw that the fruit of the tree was good for food and pleasing to the eye, and also desirable for gaining wisdom, she took some and ate it. She also gave some to her husband, who was with her, and he ate it."

Because it was good for food, pleasing to look at, and desirable for gaining wisdom… Eve rationalized to herself why the Relative Truth *which she wished for* ought to be able to over-ride the Absolute Truth that existed.

Ahem… could placing the Relative Truth we create in our brains over the Absolute Truth that exists in reality be the "original sin?"

Also to note here in the Garden story is the difference between men and women, and something we also often speak of in the Manosphere: Adam, the mangina, *simply went along with her.*
.
1 Timothy 2:12-14 RSV *"I permit no woman to teach or have authority over men; she is to keep silent. 13For Adam was formed first, then Eve; 14and Adam was not deceived, but the woman was deceived and became a transgressor."*

Adam **was not** deceived. He sinned *willingly.* Eve deceived herself with her female driven hamster-wheel of relative-truth laden brain… but Adam was not deceived at all. He was standing right there and was not deceived; Eve gave it to him, and *he was still without sin at this point.* But like a mangina eager to please, he said, "sure thing, Toots!" and swallowed 'er down whole.

Adam sinned *willingly*, but Eve was deceived.

To Adam he said, "*Because you listened to your wife* and ate from the tree about which I commanded you, 'You must not eat of it,'… (Man's Curse)

It's pretty clear.

Between Adam and Eve, God expects a different level of cognition… God expected Adam to "know better" than Eve… *because Adam has the capability to know better.*

Of all of the things that were in the world during the Garden, the only thing not directly from God… is Eve. She was created from Adam, who was created in God's image. Adam is copy of God, and Eve is a copy of Adam… Adam is "one step closer" to God/Absolute Truth than Eve is.

And, when regarding how male and female brains "work" in order to ascertain "truth," this holds true – men and women "find truth" in different ways. G.W.F. Hegel describes the phenomenon in the following way:

"… Women may have happy ideas, taste, and elegance, but they cannot attain to the ideal. The difference between men and women is like that between animals and plants. Men correspond to animals, while *women correspond to plants because their development is more placid and the principle that underlies it is the rather vague unity of feeling.* When women hold the helm of government, the state is at once in jeopardy, *because women regulate their actions not by the demands of universality but by arbitrary inclinations and opinions.* Women are educated–who knows how?" — G.F. Hegel

Women, because they are herd creatures by nature, find Truth by consensus among the herd. If the herd thinks 1 +

1 = 3, then it is right, because the herd says so. Tomorrow, if the herd thinks 1 + 1 = 1, then that will be right, because the herd says so. *The herd is always right.* This is why women are more attuned to fashion, which is forever changing, and it is the underlying cause of the phenomenon in Game known as "Social Proofing." Women believe a man is sexually valuable because the rest of the women around her find him sexually valuable – not because of any particular iron clad attributes or principles mind you – but simply because all the other women believe a guy is hot, so will the next woman believe it as well. The herd's consensus is what is right, and it is subject only to itself.

You can see this all through females' nature, in that right down to even their genetic make-up, they huddle around the average/mean in far greater concentration than males, who exist *outside* the herd and exists in the outer extremes of averages. ie. There are more males than females with an IQ of 140, but there are also more males than females with an IQ below 70. The males are on "the outside of the herd" and the females ARE "the average," or, they are all clustered around the average. (Heh, this even goes into female psychology, where far fewer females desire to truly stand out from the norm – in areas such as company CEO - than men do – and the differences are significant!).

In this way, *it will always be males,* in the aggregate, that are better equipped to "find Absolute Truth."

"...while I was still searching but not finding - I found one upright man among a thousand, but not one upright woman among them all." -- Ecclesiastes 7:28

It will be the males who will, like an angry MGHOW, declare: "BULLSHIT! **1 + 1 = 2!!!** I don't care what you say, I don't care if all you cows believe 1 + 1 = 2.5, I will refuse to comply with you because, dammit, 1 + 1 = 2!

In this way, it is important for the *male principle* to lead the *female principle*, because the male principle is closer to Absolute Truth than the female principle. The female principle is almost pure Relative Truth. Now, the male principle has relative truth in it too – lots of it! Look at all the manginas out there! Men *desire* to follow women's Relative Truths because that is what we would do if we behave like animals, driven by our baser instincts. But man's mind is better equipped to discover Absolute Truth than the female's, and thus, having men/the male principle leading a society will lead to that society following much closer to Absolute Truth… a much safer place to exist than a world full of Relative Truth, where nothing stays real.

***"Because you listened to your wife** and ate from the tree about which I commanded you..."*

Because you listened to your wife's Relative Truths… you were cursed, Adam.

You should have held true to the Absolute Truth, and all would have been fine. Even after she had already bogged herself down with her Relative Truths, Adam should have been a MGHOW and stuck to his principles based upon Absolute Truth. All would have worked out fine for him.

.

.

- It was Eve who seduced the man - in compensation there is no undertaking more appealing to a woman than to become loved by someone who has gone astray and who now, in loving her, will let himself be led along the right path. This appeals to a woman so much that she is not infrequently deceived, because such a person puts everything over on her - and she believes everything - perhaps also because the thought of being the man's savior is so very satisfying to her. -- Woman/Man - from Kierkegaard's Journals

.

"If it's not right, Go Your Own Way!"

.....
..oooO.....
..(....).....
….\..(.....
…. _/.....
……....Oooo..
……....(....)…
……..)../....
.....(_/.....
.....

Men, Religion, and Morality

. · 23 September 2012 · Archived copy · Original

The ever-diminishing role of Christianity in our society is pretty interesting, and of course, is tied into all of this stuff about Marxism. It's a pretty difficult subject to discuss dispassionately, which is what is required, and is necessary for rational thought to move forward.

I've read that Harvard was originally mandated to be "Protectors of the Truth." And at the time, they felt they could actually identify truth, because during that age, they used the Bible as an anchor of "Absolute Truth" to identify what was true and what was not.

When Hegel came out with "The Truth is Relative", it set the whole system into the toilet because it got rid of the "anchor" of Absolute Truth. The concept of God is "black and white." God's word is "Truth."

However, of course, we are able to recognize that truth often does change, or, truth often is relative.

And herein lies the entire problem, I think. Human nature, and the need to control it.

In many ways, I agree with Hegel & Marx that indeed, the Truth is Relative. But, from a position of what works for a civilization? Well… that must have elements of an Absolute Truth to it, or cultural hegemony will never arise, and civilization will never occur.

The human brain is enormously malleable, and it naturally tends to lean towards "Relative Truth." We often use our brains to justify what we would like to be true, rather than what actually is true. Jail is full of innocent people. Morality is forever malleable unless attached to an absolute truth.

From an anthropological sense, human beings naturally create religions. Every civilization that has ever existed has adhered to some form of religion. It seems to be a necessity for the human condition. And, look at how different morality can develop in different ways. Think about the typical movie scene of the virgin tied to a stone slab, about to be sacrificed to the Volcano God. The people that lived in such civilizations thought nothing immoral of such a

situation, yet, when other civilizations encountered them, they were horrified by their “lack of morality.”

Morality can go in many different ways, and indicates that indeed, from a big perspective, “truth is relative.”

But even if it is, it is not a good thing for civilization to not have any absolutes. It’s for similar reasons that we have the Rule of Law and a Legal/Court system. You and I can argue and argue, and both of us will create a belief system for ourselves, justifying our position to ourselves, and creating a reality in each of our own minds – which will forever contradict the other’s view of reality. Therefore we must have a court system to decide, hopefully with impartiality, what is right and what is not. An absolute. Without it, things would never function.

A civilization needs a religion in the same way.

And all things considered, Christianity was not the worst one we could have wound up with. The way I look at it is, when everyone points out how hypocritical and evil it has been in the past… well, that is not Christianity per se, but rather, it is the nature of humans that is trying break free from the bounds that Christianity tried to place upon them. It doesn’t matter whether Christian or Marxist or Muslim or the Jedi Knights, it is human nature to try and manipulate and force one’s will upon others. In that sense, Christianity has been not too bad, because it is firmly based in the concept of Absolute Truth and can be used to pull us back from the brink of La La Land when we get a little too insane. It is an anchor. I think the history of the West would have been a lot worse without the Bible than it was with it.

If you want to know why most Communist countries abolish Christianity, it's because it is firmly rooted in the concept of “Absolute Truth” which is directly at odds with dialectical manipulation. The Bible zaps it into oblivion as the two cannot exist in the same philosophical space. The Bible is timeless... it doesn't change with the times nor the political environment. How we interpret parts of it might alter with the times, but the book itself stays the same - and that generates certain "goalposts" that stay constant in our society throughout the ages. Things can only be manipulated so far before the Bible starts to constrain them.

It is for this reason as well that far-left politics is so adamant about Evolution. And again, one has to look at the Evolution debate a bit dispassionately.

Marx and Engels were extremely excited when Darwin came out with his theory because it was the “science” that supported their political philosophy – namely, that the Truth is Relative. Evolution indicates that the truth is forever changing. What was true yesterday, is no longer true today. Therefore, what is true today, does not neccessarily have to be true tomorrow.

This was great for Marx because he is preaching the political philosophy that man’s condition can be “altered”, basically by use of force. One can therefore “force an evolutionary direction” upon mankind. Kinda like how an arborist prunes a tree to control how it grows and shapes itself.

Whether one believes in Evolution or not, this very important political aspect rarely gets mentioned in the debate, but it is core to the importance of a lot of philosophy about “truth.”

This is why the left gets angry so quickly whenever someone begins to discuss intelligent design. If intelligent design were to be proven, it would indicate a “plan,” which would indicate the existence of Absolute Truth… and the entire political philosophy of the left would fall to bits. They need evolution to be true for more reasons than what they claim… so does the Creationist side… the Intelligent Design side doesn’t, however, because it is much more dispassionate, in my humble opinion. It is unfair to lump Intelligent Design in with Creationism, and yet politically, that is often how it is dismissed.

Much of anthropology has been shattered by the insistence of adherence to this as well, and anyone trying to suggest that those “primitive” people from the past were perhaps a helluva lot smarter than we give them credit for is automatically drummed out of the discussion and called a loon. And yet, the ancient Sumerians had the knowledge to “weld” gemstones together, which is something we still can’t replicate today, and is just one example amongst dozens of mysteries regarding the ancients' knowledge.

The religion debate is interesting, because it is about Absolute Truth vs. Relative Truth.

If a society always tends to “create” a religion, would you rather have one based in Absolutes, or would you prefer one that is forever malleable?

It has elements that come down to the similar situation as, would you rather live under a government that was ruled by whim and emotion (Democracy), or would you rather live under the Rule of Law? (Republic)

Previous Index Next

MGTOW

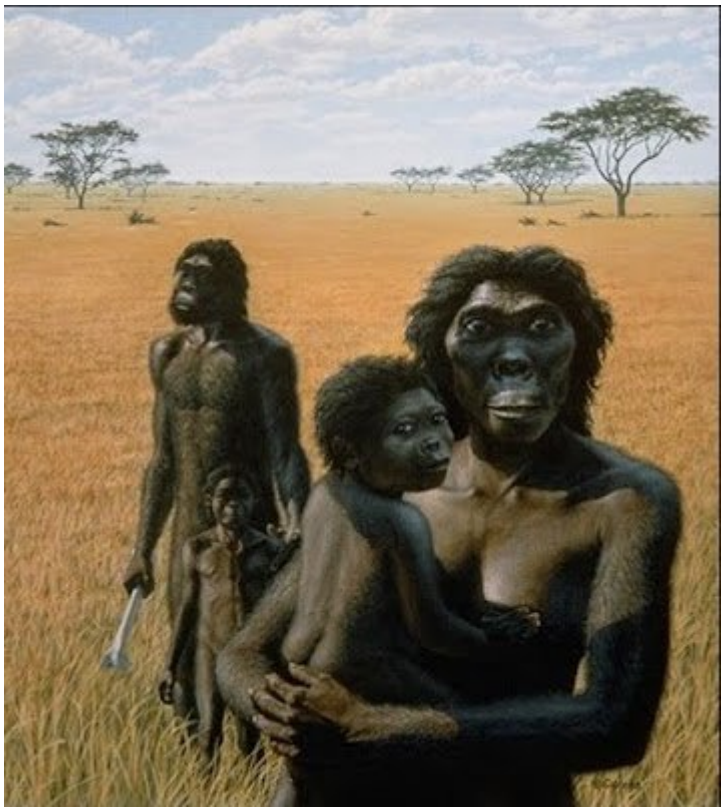
“If it’s not right, Go Your Own Way!”

.....
..oooO.....
..(....).....
….\..(.....
…. _/.....
…….....Oooo..
…….....(....)…
……..)../....
.....(_/.....
.....

Rising Up from Being Beasts of the Field

. · 30 September 2012 · Archived copy · Original

.



QUOTE: "I think that the closest that we can get to an absolute truth might be termed "objective truth," which starts with an objective assessment of existence and leads to falsifiable conclusions. In a sense, one starts with axiom(s) and follows the logical consequences."

Yes, but remember how the Founding Fathers/John Locke look at truth and "lock one into the other."

1 – God's Law = Absolute Truth
2 – Natural Law = Objective Truth
3 – Civil Law = Relative/Subjective Truth

I agree that the best "we" can know is the objective truth… but we must go higher and acknowledge the existence of this Absolute Truth – because sometimes the objective truth changes, with history or technology or what not, what is true today is not true always.

An example of this is found in Orwell's book 1984. The storyline is essentially a struggle between the Relative Truth (or lies) surrounding the main character who believes in an External Truth.

And, aside from direct philosophical discussion about "finding Truth" – what I keep seeing is the necessity for Truth to exist. An external truth – one that can't be changed – one we can't deny. Whether there actually is Truth might not be as important as the human need to believe in Truth.

There has never really been a civilization that has ever existed that didn't have some form of religion.

In order to "rise up from being a beast of the field" we need to grab onto a Truth – a never changing one.

In Angry Harry's piece Men Are More Intelligent Than Women, he points out how the more you emote, the less you think… and which sex would one think, even by their own admission, is the "most emotional," and which sex, by their own admission, "is more in touch with their emotions?"

Alright ladies, I'll believe you.

But it is also clear that, the more you emote, the less you "think." The more your emotions lead you, the less your reason leads you. "Passion" is all great and fine, until it becomes "murder in the heat of passion" or a bazillion other things resulting from a highly emotional state leading to a person "not thinking."

Life by "passion" is the life of living by instinct, which is the life of an animal.

Now, I am not a neurosurgeon either, but I have read of the "three brains."

The first brain/lower brain/reptilian brain is the one that doesn't "think." This is the one where your fight or flight comes from and a whole host of other things that don't involve "thinking." It is also where our sexual instinct comes from.

"Mating behavior does NOT get mediated in the new brain, or the cortex. It happens in the brain-stem and spinal cord, the old or "reptile" brain.

In the days when such experiments were still allowed, you could open a cat's skull and suck out all the cortex. Sexual and mating behavior was not affected at all, but social behavior was destroyed."

The next brain is the mammalian brain, and this is the brain where emotions come from, or "our passions." Animals have emotions. Ever separate a cow from its calf? Ever seen a dog wag its tail when it sees its owner?

The new brain, or cortex, is where we "think."

So, in order to "rise up from being beasts of the field" we have to "think."

As we get assaulted with things – violently or emotionally or in any number of ways – our brains "shut down." The "thinking brain" will shut down in favour of the mammal brain, which will in turn, in emergency, shut down if it has to and run completely on instinct – fight or flight. There is no "thinking" or "emotion" in it. It just "happens."

So, we have to keep "rising up" in order to find enlightenment.

And now, these highly emotional creatures with hairy triangles between their legs, what do they do to us? They get our emotions running all the time. All of the girls that wing their shaming insults around are trying to control men emotionally instead of rationally.

There were several posts near the end of The Elusive Wapiti's totalitarian essay a while back where we were discussing Schopenhauer and Weininger's observations on female manipulative behaviour, and how women have challenges with truth and a lack of moral character because, to women, their passions cause them to change the truth to be that which they want it to be right now. If it suits her to change the truth 20 minutes later, she will do it, even though it contradicts what she said earlier 100% – and she actually believes it, it appears!

The Feminine is constantly manipulating away from the truth with emotions.

If there is an external unchanging standard of truth to compare things to, men can much better pull themselves out of being led by their mammalian brain, and lead themselves by their “thinking” brain.

By the way. Guys like Weininger as well, he talks about the Male Principle/Condition and the Female Principle/Condition.

This is true – the Masculine and the Feminine is within each of us. Just like in the diagram of the Yin and Yang, there is a dot of the opposite within each half. What happens is that men have the Masculine Principle as their dominant characteristic while females are dominated by the Feminine Principle. No-one is “purely male” or “purely female.” This is why you get variability between the behaviours of individual men and women, but still can generalize behavioural characteristics that relate to each sex separately.

.

.

***"Because you listened to your wife** and ate from the tree about which I commanded you…"*

.

Previous Index Next

MGTOW

“If it’s not right, Go Your Own Way!”

.....

..oooO.....

..(....).....
….\..(.....
…. _/.....

…….....Oooo..

……....(....)…
……..)../....
.....(_/.....
.....

Truth, Truth, Truth... What is The Truth?

. · 7 October 2012 · Archived copy · Original

QUOTE: "Unfortunately, the Founding Fathers/John Locke got the order wrong. The way that it is actually practiced is the only way that it can be done (since we are on the inside looking out):

1 – Natural Law = Objective Truth
2 – God's Law = Absolute Truth
3 – Civil Law = Relative/Subjective Truth

This is the correct order because religion also uses the Scientific Method (Objective Truth), just not very well.

—

Yes, you are right. I have struggled with this before too, and this is why I say the need for Absolute Truth to be placed highest, *may actually be important to* ***human nature*** beyond even the scope of whether that truth is "true."

I have come into this from the scope of what Karl Marx is "trying to do."

Well, one thing Marx says he wants to do is to "Dethrone God and Destroy Capitalism."

In other words – he wants to destroy the Absolute Truth.

How come? Because it prevents him from manipulating the subjective truth into overcoming the objective truth. (The world of Orwell's 1984).

Humans have "the ability" to be blind to the "objective truth" because of how they allow their brains to process "subjective truth." In other words, humans often get so confused with the subjective/relative truth that they manage to convince *themselves* that the objective truth does not matter… that's why there has to be an Absolute Truth *above* the objective truth.

Take the way constitutions of free countries peg themselves to an Absolute Truth, whereas countries without freedom have no Absolute Truth, but only subjective truth – with the subjective truth creating objective truth.

"We hold these truths to be self-evident, that all men are created equal, that ***they are endowed by their Creator with certain unalienable rights;*** *that among these are Life, Liberty and Pursuit of Happiness. That to secure these rights, Governments are instituted among men…"* — United States Declaration of Independence

versus the United Nations "constitution" (a knock off of all totalitarian governments):

"The States Parties to the present Covenant recognize that, in the enjoyment of those ***rights provided by the State****… the State may subject such rights only to such limitations* ***as are determined by law."*** — Article Four of the UN Covenant on Economic, Social and Cultural Rights.

The "reason" why the Founding Fathers place "rights" in the hands of the Creator is because what God gives only God can take away! In other words, the tendency of mankind to trick himself with the subjective truth into not believing in the objective truth is completely curtailed by placing "rights" *out of reach* of mankind.

If we ever end up re-writing our constitutions to remove "God" from them, please, oh please, let me get my rights from Santa or the Easter Bunny rather than *the state* and its subjective *laws.* I have much more faith that Santa won't come like a thief in the night to take back my rights than I do in the government refraining from curtailing my rights in the future - especially in a democracy.

Whether “God is real” matters not so much as that “God ‘pins’ down the Truth” so that we don’t convince ourselves that what is all about us is not true… the same way we have convinced ourselves of such nonsense as feminism has produced. As far as anyone “objectively” looking at the situation, they would declare we are *nuts* and should just open ours eyes… and yet, what is happening in society? We are choosing to place the subjective above the objective.

And that is very dangerous!

Now, think about how looooooooooong it takes to create “civilization.” It does not happen overnight. We have been “following the Bible” for approximately 3,300 years. (The Pentateuch was written by Moses, and Moses is thought to be contemporary of 1300BC or so).

During that time-frame, “the Truth” has more or less *stayed the same.* Humans are prevented, by the existence of an unchanging absolute that trumps all others, from *convincing themselves* that the subjective truth is higher than the objective truth.

Sooner or later, humans will convince themselves to overlook some sort of “objective truth” in favour of the “subjective truth” and then the “Absolute Truth” will wipe them from the face of the earth… just like Sodom & Gomorrah.

Perhaps it will be that we convince ourselves that refraining from sexual monogamy is silly - that this religion thingy telling us not to hump like monkeys is just that – religious trappings. (Using the subjective truth to convince ourselves of what we wish to be true, rather than what is actually true). And so, everyone throws away their sexual restraint because they believe they are seeing objective truth, and perhaps 40 years later, STD’s start becoming so rampant throughout the population that the fertility rates begin to decline… or perhaps, the “unordering” of the male –> female –> child hierarchy, while it looks to be “objectively smart” in our heads, turns out to be something which *repels* men and women from eachother, and our birthrates decline below replacement… until we are *wiped from the face of the earth*.

“SMACK!” says the Absolute Truth.

Start over and don’t make that same mistake again!

How would a civilization manage to “stay on the right path” for thousands of years while always having to battle this human tendency? I suspect that it could not, unless it somehow managed to *contain* this human tendency… and the best way to do that is to place an Absolute Truth above all others – for those things we know “we need to do” in order to sustain ourselves, but have a tendency to wish weren’t true.

Whether that truth is real or not, is less significant in this purpose, than the need for Truth to exist.

I think it was Voltaire who quipped “If God did not exist, it would be necessary to invent Him.” (Although, I don’t know if he was referring to my argument… but you get the point).

What Karl Marx believes he can do is change the world into a Utopia by manipulating truth.

“The philosophers have only interpreted the world in different ways. The point, however, is to change it.”
— Karl Marx

He means he is going to take philosophy, and use it to manipulate reality in order that he might change the world. And this is what he does, by using the Relative Truth uber-alles which his predecessor Hegel identified with the Hegelian Dialectic.

1 – Relative Truth
2 – Relative Truth
3 – Relative Truth

(And, as I have pointed out elsewhere, this is the Feminine Principle, and it is also the “animal principle.” Animals live completely from moment to moment – everything is subjective to them – their instincts lead, not their reason).

Karl Marx believes, through use of evolution, that he can “bend the truth” and by “bending reality” he can “evolve mankind into a *new* form of human” – one that has never existed before.

He believes if he can manipulate reality, he can remove man’s greed and desire to put self first etc. etc. and then a completely new form of mankind will emerge, unencumbered by mankind’s worst traits, and therefore, he will have *defeated God* because he will have created Heaven on Earth. (Marx wants to make the Lion lie down with the Lamb).

One of the reasons why the Bible is so damaging to Marx’s plans is because it places Truth *out of his reach* and therefore Marx is severely handicapped in manipulating the truth for his own designs.

And, like I pointed out before, it appears that Marxism and Animal-ness are very closely related in how they process “Truth,” and in fact, Marxism is as old as the Garden of Eden itself.

So, I guess what I mean is, there are two roads here:

One can look at Truth for the purpose of “seeking Truth.”

and

There is also a human need for ***A*** truth to exist, in order to “temper” man’s mind, so that he doesn’t behave like a lemming and kill himself with his brain – which sometimes can create realities inside of our heads that don’t really exist (or will unwittingly kill us).

QUOTE: "As long as those above are supporting a specific Absolute Truth, those below (who are willing to accept truth that is independent of evidence) will be prevented from mucking things up, in a specific way.

But when those in charge wish to move in a different direction, all that they have to do is make a few minor modifications, like a farmer changing the fence lines..."

Yes, I know. This is why I quite often look at books like the Bible, and, realizing how incredibly wise it is in regard to understanding human nature, I have concluded that regardless of whether God exists or not, that book knows more about human nature than I, or anyone else around me does… so the Bible ought not to be dismissed lightly.

Also, keep in mind that this is how cultures “grow.”

They start off small, with perhaps a few hundred people hanging around on an internet forum, within a larger culture that perhaps might not even acknowledge they exist. But eventually, if their formula is correct, they will out-succeed the rest by following their form of “Truth” until they overtake the culture.

It appears that all cultures start out small, adhering to one form of truth (Cultural Hegemony), and because they have got “the right kind of formula in their truth” they grow and grow over time, until they overtake the culture.

That seems to be the way it works… rather than a small group of people convincing a large group of people of the error of their ways. Without “one truth,” no Cultural Hegemony can occur, and thus, neither will civilization appear.

QUOTE: "For something to be an actual Absolute Truth, it would need to be pinned to objective reality, in order to be truly “out of reach of mankind” while being directly accessible to all."

I think the exact same thing. Sometimes I say, when we identify a Truth, we have to “pin it to the wall.” (So that some asshole doesn’t come along and try to alter it with subjective truth). But how you can you pin an objective truth to anything unless there is an Absolute to pin it to?

By the way, I have sometimes philosophized if an Absolute Truth can be created outside of the religious realm – with mathematics, for instance. Could mathematics be used as a replacement “pin”?

For example:

If we know that divorce/feminism causes ever falling birth rates, and yet we also know we need X number of babies to move forward… then the maximum tolerance of divorce that society can handle without destructing is X% of marriages ending in divorce.

Can that create a “morality” which humans can follow?

But, then you also start getting into the law of unintended consequences – as in, is it also then “morally proper” to say “this is the maximum amount of old people we can tolerate in society, while still sustaining ourselves… therefore…”

Scary business, when we think we are God.

The Bible knows a lot more than people give it credit for. I suspect it might still surprise us and show us that it still knows more than we do… like how STD’s due to promiscuousness are causing our fertility rates to fall. (It is not just that we are choosing NOT to have children, but also, we are physically having more problems having them… in many cases due to STD’s).

"People have always spoken of the absolutely necessary [absolutnotwendigen] being, and have taken pains, not so much to understand whether and how a thing of this kind can even be thought, but rather to prove its existence.... if by means of the word unconditioned I dismiss all the conditions that the understanding always requires in order to regard something as necessary, this does not come close to enabling me to understand whether I then still think something through a concept of an unconditionally necessary being, or perhaps think nothing at all through it." -- Immanuel Kant, *Critic of Pure Reason*

.

Words are but symbols for the relations of things to one another and to us; nowhere do they touch upon

absolute truth. ... Thus it is, today, after Kant, an audacious ignorance if here and there, especially among badly informed theologians who like to play philosopher, the task of philosophy is represented as being quite certainly "comprehending the Absolute with the consciousness," somewhat completely in the form "the Absolute is already present, how could it be sought somewhere else?" as Hegel has expressed it. -- *Friedrich Nietzche, Philosophy in the Tragic Age of the Greeks*

.

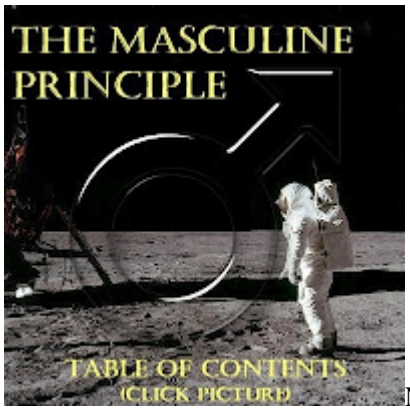
“If it’s not right, Go Your Own Way!”

.....
..oooO.....
..(....).....
….\..(.....
…. _/.....
…….....Oooo..
…….....(....)…
……..)../....
.....(_/.....
.....

On Women Pursuing Their Dreams and Aspirations

. · 14 October 2012 · Archived copy · Original

.



NOTICE: This article has been updated and moved to *The Masculine Principle*. Please click here to read the new version or scroll down to continue reading in the old format.

.

***

A FEMALE WRITES: "As long as mothers and/or wives don't allow their careers to consume their lives and interfere with their God-given duties, then I don't see a problem. Women have their own aspirations and dreams as well just like men (and no I don't believe that the only reason people have careers is to make money)."

.

I agree with much of what you say. There is nothing inherently wrong with women having jobs, or their own money, or pursuing their dreams and aspirations.

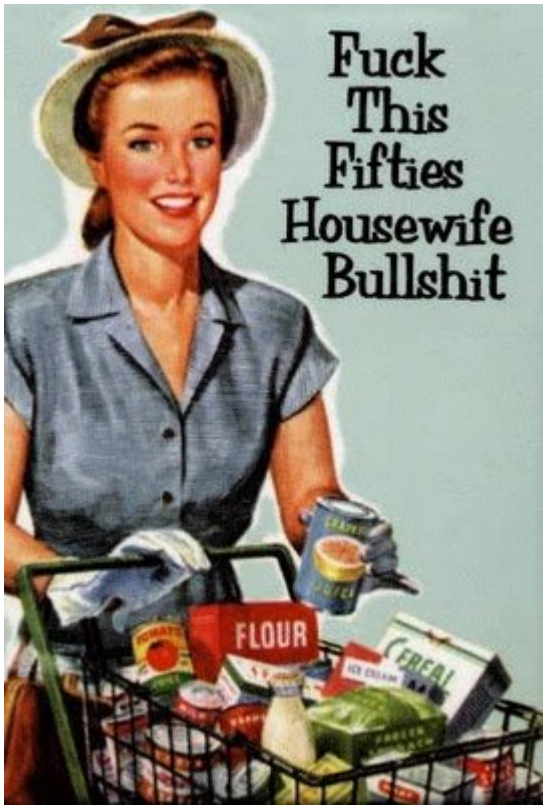
Now, what those types of dreams and aspirations are sometimes irks me enormously, when one stands back and has a good long look at what society has transformed itself into.

One of the reasons that women earn less in the workplace is because of the jobs they choose. Women are often reporting that they want to have a job that will have some sort of a social impact, or benefit the community (who doesn't, by the way?), as well as needing "flex-time" in order to meet the needs of their families. Women will take lowered pay in order to find a job that meets these criteria.

Now, that is all good and fine – in fact, it might even be noble.

But look at the friggin' absurdity of what we have done since those dreaded, awful, horrible 1950′s. (Arguably the zenith of Western Civilization).

.



.

A man back then was able to earn enough money from a mere blue collar job that his wife could stay at home, he could pay for raising 4 kids, they could go on a nice family vacation once a year, he could pay for a decent home, and have a new car in the driveway. On his wage alone!

And often, after the kids were off in school, the house was nice & clean, and the fridge was properly reloaded, what did those oppressed women go off and do with the rest of their time?

Well, some of them gossiped like the dickens, I suppose, but many others did things they found socially rewarding. They raised money for charities, they volunteered time to help the elderly or the needy, they organized groups that enhanced the lives of their communities – from hobbies to sports, and so on and so on. In other words, they sought social rewards of their own volition, and had money in their jeans, er, pleasantly sexy sundress pockets, to boot!

And today? They have "liberated themselves" into halving the income of men by flooding the job market with labourers, forcing both men and women to work full-time jobs in order to live in a crappy condo with their 1.6 kids, and the two cars they need but can only afford on the never-never plan. (A lease). And what do they want out of their careers? To do something socially rewarding that benefits the community! See the irony here? And now, if they get to do such a thing called "social rewards" even marginally from their job, they have to do it in march step to their jerk-off boss under far less pleasant circumstances, while their kids are raised by strangers-for-pay.

Oh well, Ladies. I guess you've spent the last 50 years proving that men have been right for the past 5,000 years.

QUOTE #2, A MAN: Women get paid less because they work fewer hours in less dangerous jobs. It has nothing to do with their noble humanitarian spirit (excuse me while I gag) to help others.

Women are often over-paid for the amount of work they do, leaving men to pick up the slack and subsidize women's bloated paychecks.

If women were as altruistic as you claim, they'd recognize the atrocious abuses of the current feminist regime in large numbers, but that hasn't happened because women largely live in their own self-obsessed little worlds. In contrast, men gave women the "women's liberation movement" because men actually DO have compassion and noble intentions."

No doubt, I agree with much of what you say. Also, women will always put themselves first. And they are plagued with narcissism and are often self-obsessed – either with themselves or their own sex.

Also, I don't doubt that often times the "charity work" they did in the past was often done for other than purely altruistic reasons. For example: Most men can instantly understand what I mean when I say, "It's not charity if you talk about it." I'll bet that a lot of them ladies clucked very often, trying to one up the other hens with tales of how perfect they were, while they cackled about the hens that weren't doing enough to be as good as them. They are, after all, social creatures far more than men, and need the approval of the herd, er, flock, to decide what is right and wrong.

But, at least the way it was before, it took features of "woman-ness" and harnessed them for the betterment of society – including their own families. Much like how patriarchy put sex to work. I don't think the women of old cared so much about "keeping the door stoop swept" because of respect for what their husbands would think, but more to make sure that the other women thought well of them, and had nothing bad to gossip about when they knocked on the door. Also, as an added bonus, it kept them out of our hair all day, until we came home and got what we men wanted out of them.

"If it's not right, Go Your Own Way!"

.....
..oooO.....
..(....).....
….\..(.....
…. _/.....
…….....Oooo..
…….....(....)…
……..)../....
.....(_/.....
.....

Problems with Norton Internet Security?

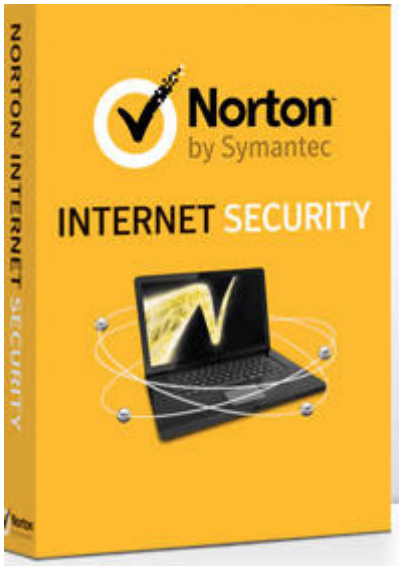
. · 15 October 2012 · Archived copy · Original

Pinched from Angry Harry

.

Problems with Norton Internet Security?

.



.

It must have been about 13 years ago when I first underwent the horrors that Norton Internet Security inflicted upon me.

It crashed my computer endlessly, slowed it down to a snail's pace - with the hard drive whirring away for minutes at a time - and my download speeds on the internet were continually abysmal.

.

This went on for about three months.

At the time, I had no idea that Norton Internet Security was the source of all my woes.

I thought that it was either my browser or one of my programs that was messing things up or, worse, that my computer was infected with some awful virus.

These problems went on for weeks.

Then I came across someone writing in a forum about how his computer had gradually ground to a halt over a period of weeks and that his anti-virus software - Norton Internet Security - was the culprit.

I decided to follow his advice and uninstall Norton Internet Security and, like magic, my computer was completely transformed. It was back to its whizzing self.

I was so traumatised by the whole ordeal - constantly losing data and losing, literally, days' worth of time and effort, that I did not install any anti-virus software for about three years! - until I got a new computer.

.

And despite the fact that I surfed the internet for many hours every week, not once did I have any problems caused by viruses or malware.

With my new computer, I installed a product called Zone Alarm, which worked really well.

I seem to remember that it cost about $20 per year, and I never had any problems with it.

About three years later, I stumbled across a product called AVG which had very good reviews. And it was free!

So I gave it a try, and I have been using it without problems ever since.

Well, it seems that Norton Internet Security is still causing terrible problems to users judging by the thousands of horror stories that seem to be all over the internet, and so my advice is to avoid it like the plague.

Here are some recent examples of comments from all over the place, ...

I upgraded to 2013 on a machine where 2012 had some problems hoping that the new version would have fixed them but actually I think I am having even more problems...

...

DON'T WASTE UR TIME OR MONEY!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!I have had norton for 2 years now and purchased the 2013 NIS. It keeps freezing my computer which I never had a problem with. It just stopped working had to uninstall and reinstall. It messed up my dvd drive everytime I uninstalled it I had to run fix it to get it back

...

After installing it I decided to run a full scan. While it was running I had to run an errand. When I got back, I went to check the scan and it didn't even scan 9,000 items, and the scanner was just "hanging there." Not doing nothing. So, I went to stop the scan, and it wouldn't close. It just kept hanging. I tried closing the whole Norton screen by right clicking on the task bar to shut it down, but still it wouldn't.

...

I can't put up with the lack of help and customer support anymore.

...

Please be aware that I hate Norton with a passion, and am taking the time to worn unsuspecting people. Symantec who makes Norton is a greedy company that Doesn't care about their consumers.

...

Speaking to the amiable back office people in India and I discovered the data was lost permanently with no chance of ever recovering it

...

After a total of five hours of trying, I gave up and installed the cable company's free software (a version of McAfee); it installed and worked fine.

...

I will NEVER purchase another Norton product. I installed NIS 2013 shortly after upgrading to Windows 8. NIS 2013 simply doesn't work with Windows 8. I started having problems downloading emails, then problems installing program/app updates.

...

What a Nightmare!

...

In conclusion, save yourself a lot of grief, time, and money and go with another competitor's product.

...

Actual viruses are less harmful to your computer than this garbage.

...

1) Norton disconnected my WIFI connection treating it as a threat. I no longer have WIFI and can't re-establish it without removing NIS, which I am doing.

.

2) It inactivated my Canon camera software stored on my computer's hard drive.

.

3) It affected another driver, which one I am not sure...I am now receiving Windows messages asking me if Windows should try to restore a disabled driver.

.

4) It has significantly slowed down the loading of Websites.

.

5) When I try to run a full scan using NIS, it stalls for at least a minute before the actual scan begins.

.

6) My computer comes to a stand still or becomes sluggish when NIS is running some updates. ...

.

Stay away from NIS 2013; it is buggy and therefore Norton is trying to unload it from their inventory by selling it for $25. It's totally invasive to your computer system.

,

...

Horrible!!! Removed itself for no reason and crashed both computers!

...

DO NOT BUY ANY NORTON PRODUCT. NORTON SUCKED A DECADE AGO, AND HASNT CHANGED.

...

NIS 2013 nearly ruined my windows 7 laptop.

...

It slowed my computer WAY down - actually it froze many apps. I could not use my Google Chrome with it, and ended up "uninstalling" it after 2 days .

...

Couldn't get it to work on my laptop. When you loaded it on the internert wouldnt work. When you removed norton the internet worked!. Just downloaded microsoft security for free and everythings fine now.

...

As soon as i installed it, Norton anti virus 2012 slowed down my computer and internet so much that it was a total joke... then the kick in the teeth came when i uninstalled Norton and for some reason the uninstall removed all device drivers and crippled my PC!!!!!!! SAVE YOURSELF DAYS OF TROUBLE by NOT buying this total joke of a so called software.... more like MALWARE!!!!

...

The worst problem of all is that it takes an inordinate amount of time to reach a useable desktop.

...

Upggrading to 2013 just lost all but six of my logins out of 90 and a bunch of confidential notes. I cannot believe how amateurish the algorithm must be to allow such a thing to happen. The upgrade does not make a safety backup and so the failed migration has in effect cost me an incalculable loss of confidential data. AVOID IT at all costs and get another brand

.

...

.

What was Symantec thinking by releasing this piece of garbage??

.

...

.

How to Uninstall Norton Internet Security

.

Type "Uninstalling Norton Internet Security" into Google and you will see thousands of Norton users wanting to uninstall Norton Internet Security in order to protect their computers and their sanity.

.

Indeed, the product is so bad that some companies out there are actually offering a service to help users with their problems with Norton Internet Security.

.

Here, for example, you can get help with Norton Internet Security for £109 per year! ...

.

..

Link

.

Unbelievable, isn't it?

.

Take my advice. If you want proper protection for your computer, go for AVG or Kapersky.

.

You will likely save yourself a mountain of headaches and hours and hours of frustration.

.

It's bad enough when you buy a product that just doesn't work properly, and so you have to send it back.

.

But when a product actually messes up your computer and/or destroys mountains of your data and documents, then I think that you should be entitled to compensation; not only for your loss, but also for your time.

.

Indeed, if you bought any other product that caused you such damage, you would, indeed, be entitled to some compensation.

.

So why should we allow companies like Symantec to avoid their liability for causing significant losses to their customers?

.

Finally, not everyone has problems with Norton Internet Security, but a very large percentage - about 20% - appear to have terrible problems with it - problems which gradually get worse as the months go by.

.

So my advice is to uninstall it if it is pre-installed on your new machine as a trial version, and go for some better product.

.

Indeed, the only reason that Norton Internet Security is often pre-installed on new machines is because computer manufacturers get good money from Norton for doing this.

.

So, be warned!

Symantec (SYMC - NASDAQ) Downgraded to "Sell"

. · 15 October 2012 · Archived copy · Original

Symantec, the producer of Norton AntiVirus, has recently broken out of its longtime downward trend of lower highs and lower lows, a pattern it has repeated since it's all-time high of the low $30's which was reached all the way back in the end of 2004. Since then, Symantec has achieved the stock price of $24 only twice, once in early 2005 and now again in March of 2013. It's time to take profits from this dead horse of a company before the euphoria wears off and it plunges back into the basement, where it seems much more comfortable existing.

.

.

When looking at the five year chart, it is easy to see that Symantec has consistently had an average valuation of around $16, on a chart that is far too erratic between its highs and lows to reliably declare it has been "basing" and is ready for a major break-out. Today, Symantec is trading at a 50% premium to this average of its five year trading range, and smart investors might want to consider taking profits before it plummets and disappoints investors once more, as it has shown a repeated tendency to do.

.

.

Furthermore, it appears that Symantec has been experiencing somewhat of a public relations problem recently, as it has forayed into the non-profit-generating business of dictating political correctness to the lesser plebes - their customers, even going so far as to start declaring certain websites as "hate sites" and banning access to them. Now, you might think that by "hate" we are talking about Nazis and skinheads, but we are not. We are talking about people who make up slightly less than half the world's population: Men. At last count, there were some 58 websites censored by Norton AntiVirus concerning men's issues ranging from divorce and custody laws to domestic violence to prostate cancer to discussing the relentless government funded drive by professional feminists to demonize and marginalize men in our society.

They don't, however, classify any feminist sites as "hate" even though many of them actually do call for physical violence, or even death, towards males. Perhaps it is simply because the works of feminists like the following are still taught in academia that they feel these sorts of things are *not* hate, while the act of opposing them is:

"If life is to survive on this planet, there must be a decontamination of the Earth. I think this will be accompanied by an evolutionary process that will result in a drastic reduction of the population of males." -- Mary Daly, former Professor at Boston College, 2001

"The proportion of men must be reduced to and maintained at approximately 10% of the human race." -- Sally Miller Gearhart, *The Future - If There Is One - Is Female*

"I want to see a man beaten to a bloody pulp with a high-heel shoved in his mouth, like an apple in the mouth of a pig." -- Andrea Dworkin, *Ice and Fire,* (Weidenfeld & Nicholson, 1987)

Keep in mind, these are women who have made fortunes either through their books or through their bloated tenured incomes at universities all across Western Civilization. (If you would like to read more of them, click here.) However, the good men of the world who stand up to this sort of lunacy, for no pay, are labelled as "haters." I have read one (unconfirmed) report that the word "anti-feminist" is classified as "hate." Go figure!

But, regardless of whether you support feminists' hatred of men (**"For one of the implicit, if unadmitted, tenets of feminism has been a fundamental disrespect for men."** -- Wendy Dennis), or whether you support men's right to speak out against this ideology without being labelled a "hate site," the problem with a company like Symantec's political correctness goes much, much deeper than simply defaming men and their websites on the internet like a typical cyber-bully would. Oh no, dear investor. It gets much, much worse! These kinds of politically correct policies **cost you money!**

Take, for example, a company such as Wal-Mart, which was recently in a high profiled court case where it was alleged there was systemic discrimination against women in their organization. They nearly won in front of the Supreme Court too, except it was thrown back to some lower courts, I believe because they couldn't prove discrimination was "systemic" but rather only individual.

What you, as an investor, should be doing in these cases is "reading between the lines," because when the Mainstream Media and companies like Symantec toe the politically correct line, they blatantly hinder you from becoming informed of the Truth and making your decisions accordingly.

With Wal-Mart, the women were complaining that it wasn't fair that, since they were women, they could not work 70hrs a week like the men, nor could they move to undesirable locations like Anchorage, AK for five years in order to advance their careers as the men were able to, because as women, they also had children and other family to take care of. Well, this may be so, or it may not be. Quite frankly, I don't really care because as an investor, my goal is to make money with my investments, not to promote a social agenda. After I make money with my investments, I will take my profits and decide to whom my charitable dollars will be directed, as it should be. As an investor, I want the companies I own to concentrate on making money. That is their sole purpose on this earth. If the CEO wants to give *his own* money to the Tuktoyaktuk Polar Bear and Walrus reserve, that is his business.

But, it is companies such as Symantec who try to silence people through the label of "hate" so that you don't get all the facts. It is bad enough when the Mainstream Media believes that covering the Wal-Mart story in an unbiased manner means interviewing a feminist from the East Coast and another feminist from the West Coast, but when companies like Symantec try to squelch the noise from "hateful" people opposing such blatant biased reporting, you might never hear a headline like this:

"Court Rules that Wal-Mart Must Replace Top-Notch Management With Mediocre Employees. Longterm Outlook for Stock Valuations Appears Grim!"

I mean, after all, if you are going to take people who work 70hrs a week and replace them with people who only work 40hrs a week, you can pretty much count on management being 57% as effective as before, and you would unload that company from your portfolio in a big hurry. So... why doesn't this kind of stuff get debated more in the public sphere? It's because of the kind of politically correct censorship Symantec (as well as others) use without a second thought.

.

.

But it gets even worse, because companies like Symantec, despite their politically correct posturing, don't even actually practice what they preach. For example, at the Symantec website, under Corporate Responsibility, they have a program called "Science Buddies":

*"Science Buddies is dedicated to helping **girls** develop and maintain an interest in STEM learning. In fact, **55%** of Science Buddies' student-users are **girls**. Science Buddies' project ideas and activities help **girls** to innovate, imagine, build, tinker, solve problems, and make things.*

*In addition, our organization helps to publicize and promote events and initiatives that encourage young **female** scientists and engineers, such as Introduce a **Girl** to Engineering Day, to our audience of 15 million teachers, students, and parents."*

(What they do for the 45% that are boys, I have no idea. I guess they just don't matter as much.)

Yet, when one wanders over to their Management Team, you can see that only 2 out of 16 executives are women, and of their Board of Directors, you will find that only 1 out of 8 are female, or, a mere 12.5% of high level employees are women. Hey... wait a minute here... don't women make up over 50% of the population?

.

Oh! The Misogyny of the Old Boys Club at Symantec!

.

They are quite clearly, according to every feminist on the planet, part of a Patriarchal Culture that discriminates against women! I would like to see those in power at Symantec explain how they have not done so *without* engaging in the sort of misogynistic "hate" they so quickly label others with - others from their own customer base!

.

.

Now, they may claim the reason they are promoting the "Science Buddies" program for girls is to get more women into those positions in the future, which assumes that in the past girls *did* want to have these jobs but there were some big, evil men hiding behind the door who wouldn't let them in. Right? It couldn't be that women aren't attracted to the STEM subjects to the same degree as men, could it? I mean, if girls already make up over 60% of *all* college degrees, the only reason they don't make it in the STEM subjects *must* be because of the hateful people who ought to have their websites labelled and defamed! STEM subjects are the **only** area of academia that is *not* completely dominated by females. I mean, really now. Is it so bad that boys excel in *one* area, while leaving the rest to girls' *own* choices, of which STEM subjects don't appear to be high priority? But they are right, just as in our school system, if you want more girls to succeed, the best way is to direct all resources towards girls and none towards boys. I mean, how unfair that boys could be allowed to dominate in one single field besides ditch-digging and other various jobs women wouldn't touch with a barge pole - you know, the ones that result in over 90% of workplace injuries and deaths landing on the backs of men. I don't hear the feminists, nor Symantec, advocating for Title IX participation in that area of the labour force, do you?

But, what does the management of Symantec and other large companies such as The Royal Bank of Canada, or Bell Media, actually think is going to happen to *them* in the future? Referring back to our failed lawsuit against Wal-Mart example, suppose that the goal at Symantec is to have those female employees who only put in 57% of the effort become represented in equal proportion to the men in executive and board positions... then just where, exactly, are those men supposed to go? The men who would work 70hrs a week would be fools to keep working like that if women could work only 40hrs a week and achieve the same promotions and pay. So, where, exactly, are all these displaced men supposed to go? Obviously, women only want to work in "nice conditions." They are screeching for corporate and government support only to make themselves represented in larger numbers in "nice" jobs such as doctor, lawyer, teacher, or anything else with prestige, an air-conditioned office, and plenty of other girls to gab and gossip with. They certainly aren't clamoring for jobs as garbage collectors or farm labourers, are they?

So, while Symantec and other corporations try to show the world how "socially responsible" they are in this "equal" nation we live in, what they are actually doing is bringing back an aristocratic class structure to society - something that America has gladly shed from European history. After all, if women only go for the cush jobs, and they get aided to the tune of billions by smug corporations trying to appear politically correct, and further enforced into those positions by the law - such as is the case in Norway where 40% of corporate boards *must* be female... then it is only simple math to see that women will dominate all of the good, high-paying jobs (often without merit), while the men will be far over-represented in all of the crappy jobs that women simply won't do. Talk about bringing social and class stratification back into society! Women: Upper Class Merchants and Nobles. Men: Lower Class Peasants and Scum.

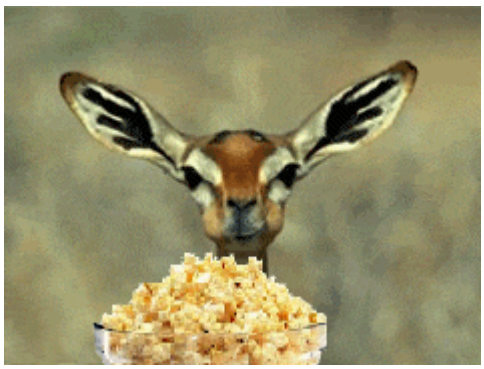
And this doesn't even get into the troubles that hypergamy brings into the equation. Women "marry up," but rarely

downward in social status - thus nurses marry doctors, secretaries marry lawyers, factory labourers marry waitresses... but very, very rarely does a female doctor (or executive at Symantec) marry a garbage collector or one of those "icky" auto mechanics. Way to destroy marriage, and the stable society that marriage creates, you socially responsible people at Symantec! What do you think happens to a country when there are large amounts of men, unattached to families, and with no good job prospects? Ever heard of the Middle East or the Arab Spring? Do you understand why, in those above feminist quotes, they want the number of men reduced to 10%?

Perhaps its best for Symantec to leave their moralizing out of the workplace where it not only affects their performance, but also their market value - and thus, their investor's profits. Make your investors money, like you are supposed to, and let your investors decide what to moralize about or be charitable towards.

What Symantec ought to do is hire a guy like the CEO of Cypress, T.J. Rodgers, who in 1996 responded to a *nun* about the immorality of political correctness in corporations. It's well worth the read - *especially* for those who work at Symantec.

Disclaimer: The author of this article is not a professional investment adviser and the above information is not for trading purposes, but for entertainment only. Do your own due diligence and trade at your own risk.



Is Symantec Anti-American?

Symantec and Censorship

> *"According to this report in the Sydney Morning Herald, Chief Operating Officer of Symantec, John Schwarz, was quoted as "calling for laws to make it a criminal offense to share information and tools online which could be used by malicious hackers and virus writers". If this is the official stance from Symantec, then I must say I am convinced John Schwarz is smoking crack. Our country has a history of censorship blunders and what I call "censorship legislation" that has mucked up our legal system long enough and crippled the responsible citizens with little-to-no effect on actual crime.* ***What's even scarier is that a VP from Symantec was recently named the Dept. of Homeland Defense's Cybersecurity director, putting friends of Symantec in high places where this legislation could actually become a reality.*** *This short article will take a look at the negative effects of the censorship legislation backed by the COO of Symantec and also a couple of recent examples of "censorship legislation" … and what little effect it has had on criminals, while having a substantial effect on responsible citizens. I can only draw one of two conclusions about Mr. Schwarz based on this stance.* ***In my opinion, he is either completely ignorant of the effects of this type of legislation, or he is an avid supporter of weakening American infrastructure, American jobs, and the US Constitution."***

Symantec's Censorship of the Gun Debate

"Regardless of one's stance on this issue, ***it is intellectually dishonest to filter sites interpreting the Second Amendment as an individual right or those discussing the advantages and disadvantages of gun control policies,*** *on the grounds that it might avoid future school shootings, or just as absurdly, that these sites in any way encourage kids to 'hose down' schools. Such associations are logical fallacies."*

One little mistake -- like failing to sign the certificate when you push out a patch for your antivirus product -- and all of a sudden you're a malware-producing, censoring spam bot. That's how it seemed for Symantec when an error spun wildly out of control.

...Symantec began deleting posts on the forum, and users began accusing it of censoring free speech and coming up with conspiracy theories.

Censorship? What censorship, asks Mark Parker, senior product manager at antivirus vendor Marshal8e6. "You are told these forums are moderated when you sign up for them," he told TechNewsWorld.

... Symantec began deleting posts in the Norton Users Forum because they were abusing the forum's terms of service, Symantec staff member Dave Cole said. "Within the first hour there were 600 new posts on this subject alone," he said.

Symantec/Norton Censorship

It appears that Symantec/Norton is up to their old tricks again

Censoring any person be it a paying customer or not, that asks them a direct viable question on their forums relating to one of their most recent blunders, the release of their Update V.16.5.0.134 & V.16.5.0.135.

Symantec Supports Chinese Web Censorship

Summary: Symantec's Norton AntiVirus product has blacklisted a piece of software which enables users in China to access websites which are blocked by order of the government.

Lol! Now here's a *real* hate-site!

Why Do People HATE Symantec?

"They flagged my website as dangerous and try to persuade me to buy their worthless products in exchange for whitelisting."

"It has crap antivirus software. It does more harm than good. Lot of False positives. Something called SONAR is a joke. Keep away from this software"

Problems with Norton Internet Security?

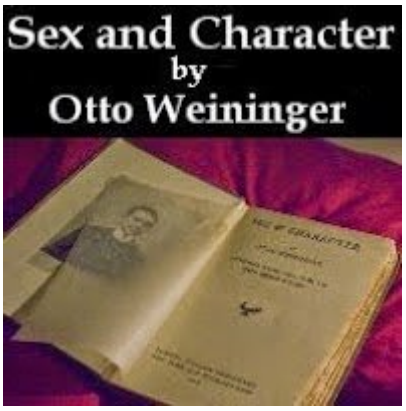
•

The Masculine Principle

. · 9 August 2015 · Archived copy · Original

.

The Masculine Principle is a philosophical concept that is described in the beginning of Otto Weininger's *Sex and Character*. Throughout the book, Weininger refers to "The Male Principle" or "The Female Character" in a way that



Click Pic for "Sex and Character"

means "The Absolute Male" or "The Purely Female." In reality however, there is no such thing as a 100% masculine male or a woman that is completely female. What is present instead is an over-riding "principle" that dominates a man or woman's character in varying degrees..

Read More Here

Generalizing in a Politically Incorrect World

. · 10 August 2015 · Archived copy · Original

.

Possibly the most consistent argument one is faced with when discussing politically incorrect subjects is the knee-jerkingly reflexive, **"You can't generalize like that!"** This is usually followed with an anecdote about someone's friend's cousin who lives next door to a lady located in a neighbouring town - ten years ago. The purpose of telling this story is that it "obviously proves" the politically incorrect premise is wrong. It is the trick of personalizing an *individual* characteristic over a *group* characteristic - which, by the way, indicates the person giving the annectdote has already lost the plot and is not arguing in good faith.

.

Read more here

.

Peer Reviewed Research: The Holy Grail of Truth?

. · 12 August 2015 · Archived copy · Original

.

"It is an outrage that they should be commonly spoken of as Intellectuals. This gives them the chance to say that he who attacks them attacks Intelligence. It is not so. They are not distinguished from other men by any unusual skill in finding truth nor any virginal ardour to pursue her. Indeed it would be strange if they were: a persevering devotion to truth, a nice sense of intellectual honour, cannot be long maintained without the aid of a sentiment which Gaius and Titius could debunk as easily as any other. It is not excess of thought but defect of fertile and generous emotion that marks them out. Their heads are no bigger than the ordinary: it is the atrophy of the chest beneath that makes them seem so." ~C.S. Lewis, *The Abolition of Man*

.

Read more here

The Truth About Misogyny

. · 14 August 2015 · Archived copy · Original

.

“For a man to pretend to understand women is bad manners; for him really to understand them is bad morals.” – Henry James

Many people who read the following pages within *The Masculine Principle* will reflexively be uncomfortable with what they find. "Why, it's misogynist! The author must be living in his parents' basement and has probably never been laid in his life! He must have a small penis! He must be a dead-beat dad! He's just bitter! He certainly doesn't understand women very much!"

.

Read More Here

A Guide to Birdwatching in the Manosphere

. · 16 August 2015 · Archived copy · Original

"A man strives to get *direct* mastery over things either by understanding them or by compulsion. But a woman is always and everywhere driven to *indirect* mastery, namely through a man; all her *direct* mastery being limited to him alone." -- Arthur Schopenhauer, On Women, 1851.

Yup! That's actually me!

Many men love to stroll through the lush forests of the Manosphere, as there is much to see and behold. One can find all sorts of things, from young saplings yearning to reach the open sky, to mighty sequoias offering a sense of security in their strength, along with respite from the outer heat within the ambiance of their shade.

As one walks through this unique atmosphere, it is quite common to hear the chirping of several different types of birds. The birds are part of the forest and therefore I would like to provide the following *Guide to Bird Watching in the Manosphere*.

(Read More Here...)

Male and Female: Equal but Different

. · 18 August 2015 · Archived copy · Original

Males and females are polar opposites. They are as up is to down as night is to day. One thing that is common to all opposites is that by the very nature of being opposite, *they must be equal.* If they were not equal, it would be impossible for them to be opposite. In any given year, at any spot on earth, there are an exactly equal amount of daytime hours and nighttime hours. The same is true of males and females; they are polar opposites and therefore are equal. However, we are not talking about legal equality here, but rather the essence that makes “male” and “female” has equality unique unto itself.

(Read More Here)

Sex Sells... (Hypergamy Explained)

. · 20 August 2015 · Archived copy · Original

The following scenes and quotes come from *Legends of the Fall,* the movie which cemented Brad Pitt's status as a sex symbol throughout our culture. Pitt's character, Tristan Ludlow, had long flowing hair and looked wild. He was the untamed one in the family, so tough that nothing could hurt him; he and the grizzly once shared blood and now they were one spirit.

.

[image]

.

A woman would likely be wise to stay away from such a man, this character with a raw animal streak running through his soul… but yet, there is a soft side to him, a sliver of emotion that he hides, and reveals only to the women he loves.

Yes, the quintessential love interest…

(Read More Here)

Love is for Suckers... Blood Suckers

. · 22 August 2015 · Archived copy · Original

In the last section, we discussed the phenomenon of women possessing equal sex drives to men, yet different by virtue of being *hypergamous.*

The essence of hypergamy is that women are attracted to males who are dominant over them. Dominant males are Alpha males.

But what is it really that “makes” an Alpha male?

Is one “naturally” an Alpha male or does the Alpha male come into existence because of the sum of certain Alpha *qualities* that he possesses?

(Read More Here)

The Garden of Eden, Empty Vessels and Relative Truth

. · 24 August 2015 · Archived copy · Original

All truth to women is relative. It is men who seek Absolute Truth, or rather, have a better ability to get closer to the Truth. Women find truth through the consensus of the herd. If the herd believes 1+1=3, then it is right because the herd believes it is so. If tomorrow, the herd believes 1+1=1, then that will be right because the herd believes it is so. This is why you see women are so much more attuned to changing fashions and why it is often social proofing that decides for them who is a sexy and desirable man. What the herd believes is right is the "truth" for women. It is men who insist that 1+1=2, I don't care how much you cows moo at me.

"... Women may have happy ideas, taste, and elegance, but they cannot attain to the ideal. The difference between men and women is like that between animals and plants. Men correspond to animals, while women correspond to plants because their development is more placid and ***the principle that underlies it is the rather vague unity of feeling.*** **When women hold the helm of government, the state is at once in jeopardy, because** ***women regulate their actions not by the demands of universality but by arbitrary inclinations and opinions.*** **Women are educated--who knows how?"** -- G.F. Hegel

(Read More Here)

The Myth of Tiresias and the Ten Pleasures of Sex

. · 26 August 2015 · Archived copy · Original

I have spent the last few days studying and pondering on the story of Tiresias. One of the things I have been trying to find the answer to is what Tiresias considered "the ten pleasures" (or parts) of sex, of which he said man enjoys only one, while woman enjoys three times three, or nine pleasures, although some versions say woman enjoys all ten.

Click Pic for "The Truth About Misogyny"

There seems to be no answer to this question. So far as I can tell, there is no listing of the pleasures anywhere in the texts, just the mention that there are ten. When surfing around the web to try and find the answer, all I see are people claiming that it is literal sexual orgasmic pleasure.

Then the modern feminist narrative comes out claiming that this was all from 'misogynist' Greece where they were oppressing women. So it is all just nonsense in an attempt by the Greeks to hold women down - everyone knows men enjoy sex far more than women.

But is this true?

Having a look at the myth itself, we may find a clue.

(Read More Here)

You're Such a Tool! (Briffault's law)

. · 28 August 2015 · Archived copy · Original

"Feminine traits are called weaknesses. People joke about them; fools ridicule them; but reasonable persons see very well that those traits are just the tools for the management of men, and for the use of men for female designs." -- Immanuel Kant, *Anthropology from a Pragmatic Point of View,* Southern Illinois University Press 1978, originally published in 1798

One thing our society struggles with as it continually fails feminism's cultural fitness tests is the silly notion that men and women are "equal" and thus we are essentially coming at each-other from the same point of view regarding our interactions with the opposite sex. This is the wrong way of thinking. We are not "blank slates" who are different merely because of society's externally imposed social constructs upon us.

(Read More Here)

Rites of Passage - Making Boys into Men

. · 30 August 2015 · Archived copy · Original

Quite often when we think of “Rites of Passage” the image of a primitive society performing some bizarre ritual comes to mind, such as the Vanuatu Land Divers.

"Both a harvest ritual and a rite of passage amongst the tribes of the small pacific island of Vanuatu, land diving is now a tourist phenomenon. The men who live on Pentecost Island in Vanuatu, climb a rickety 98-foot-tall (30-meter) tower, tie vines to their ankles and dive to the ground, falling at speeds around 45 mph (72 kph). When a dive goes correctly, the person gets close enough to touch his shoulders or his head to the earth. However, unlike bungee jumping, these vines aren’t elastic and a miscalculation in vine length could lead to broken legs, cracked skulls, or even death. Boys once they have been circumcised at about age 7 or 8 begin participating, though they usually are permitted to jump from a shorter tower. As a boy makes his first dive, his mother holds an item representing his childhood. When he jumps, she throws the item away. Divers also refrain from sex the day before they jump — legend says it will cause the jump to go badly." -- 10 Bizarre Rites of Passage

.

I, however, would argue that rites of passage are actually more of a sign of an *advanced* society. It is patriarchy that builds civilization. Patriarchy is the idea of "putting sex to work," which is based on the ancient contract of marriage. The ancient contract of marriage is an *economic* contract whereby a woman "sells" her sexual reproductive abilities to a man (ie. the children of marriage are *his* children, not hers) in return for the superior protection and providing abilities a man can, and will, procure once yoked to *children of his own.* What does this have to do with rites of passage, you ask? Well, in order for men to be attractive to women, a man must *surpass* the female so that he has some tangible benefit to offer the female which she either cannot do herself, or is unwilling to do herself, and therefore fulfill Briffault's law:

“The female, not the male, determines all the conditions of the animal family. Where the female can derive no benefit from association with the male, no such association takes place.” -- Robert Briffault, *The Mothers*, I, 191

(Read More Here)

Woman: The Most Responsible Teenager in the House?

. · 1 September 2015 · Archived copy · Original

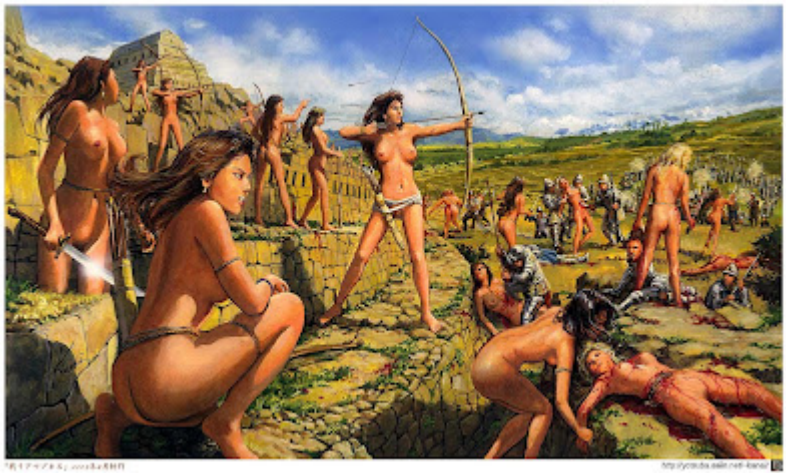
At first it may seem like an assault against your good senses to think of adult women as mere children or teenagers. How could they be? They go through life and mature just like men do, don't they? Once they are thirty or forty, don't they behave as adults just as thirty or forty year old men do? Actually, there is much evidence to the contrary. Perhaps men are so keen to believe that women mature the same as them (throughout their entire lives) because in the early stages of our lives, females do actually mature faster than males.

"The nobler and more perfect a thing is, the later and slower is it in reaching maturity. Man reaches the maturity of his reasoning and mental faculties scarcely before he is eight and twenty; woman when she is eighteen; but hers is a reason of very narrow limitations. This is why women remain children all their lives, for they always see only what is near at hand, cling to the present, take the appearance of a thing for reality, and prefer trifling things to the most important." -- Arthur Schopenhauer, On Women (1851)

(Read More Here)

The Amazon Women (The Science of "Why Males Exist")

. · 3 September 2015 · Archived copy · Original



"There has never been a case of men and women reigning together, but wherever on the earth men are found, there we see that men rule, and women are ruled, and that on this plan, both sexes live in harmony. But on the other hand, the Amazons, who are reported to have held rule of old, did not suffer men to stop in their country, but reared only their female children, killing the males to whom they gave birth." -- Spinoza

The legend/myth of the Amazons is one that I always find particularly interesting. They are mentioned by both the Greeks and the Romans and are thought to have lived either in present day Turkey, the Ukraine or Libya. Perhaps they even lived in Minoan Crete. In some stories, they killed all the males and went to neighbouring tribes once a year to have sex & get pregnant with the next generation. The resulting male children would either be killed, sent back to their fathers, or left to fend for themselves in the wild. In other stories, after being victorious in war, they would not kill all of the men but rather, take some of them back as slaves with whom they would have sex once or twice a year. One thing is certain, they did not much care for males!

.

I think this legend reveals something which exists deeply within nature itself, namely, that if females do not find males useful, they are actively hostile to those males and eject them from participating in their society, which is mostly made of females.

(Read More Here)

Testing, Testing... 1,2,3... Testing

. · 5 September 2015 · Archived copy · Original

.

Question: How Do Porcupines Mate?

.

Answer: Very Carefully!

.

The Gender War has been going on for a long, long time now - since the beginning of time, really. Perhaps sometimes it calms down and becomes a mere "Battle of Sexes," while at other times it turns into a more serious "war," but this antagonism between the sexes always exists.

In fact, one might say it is the very purpose of "the sexes." They are *supposed* to test each other as a way of seeking out superior genes. It's what happens nearly everywhere there is *sexual* reproduction, from simple organisms right up to the complex ones. When there is sexual reproduction there is a measure of hostility between the sexes as they compete and weed out one another, each seeking their own best interests. It's a messy but effective way of overcoming adversity - which is often why a single sex species will change itself into a two-sex species, to overcome environmental adversity or other hardships which requires rapid adaption. Once the adversity has been conquered, these "inter-sexual" species will revert back to single sex again.

(Read More Here)

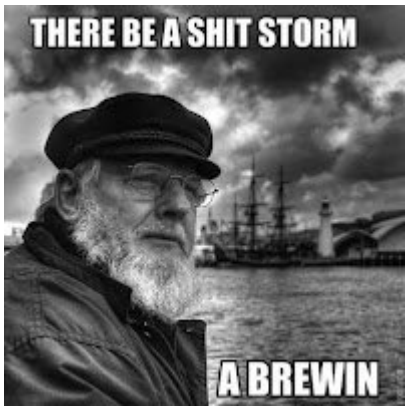
The Fish and the Bicycle

. · 7 September 2015 · Archived copy · Original

.

"The most insidious effect of affirmative action quotas is a kind of psychic castration… the removal of the source of a man's identity. By contriving the nonsense that women can do whatever a man can do (which they obviously can't), they've leveled men's purpose to the extent that men effectively have no purpose. The equivalent would be to remove women's wombs, and render them sterile.

It's not just messing with the laws of supply and demand and cheating men out of their rights… its about annihilation of identity and purpose." -- codebuster, from a comment at The Spearhead



"I remember the first time I saw the slogan "A woman without a man is like a fish without a bicycle", I knew my face had just been spit in. Men were not just useless to women, we were irrelevant. We had no purpose in a woman's life, and did not belong in her world at all. It was a message of hate, dismissal, and refutation. But, I also saw it as a warning of what was to come. It was like seeing clouds on the horizon, and knowing that it is time to get under cover because a storm is brewing. And, since it was obviously smearing shit in my face, it was going to be a shit storm." -- zenpriest, Hate Bounces

(Read More Here)

Social Strategy: Why Men Shouldn't Argue With Women

. · 9 September 2015 · Archived copy · Original

.

Dominating Clock -- by Mathieu of Boulogne, 1295 A.D.

This female clock is really driving me mad, for her quarrelsome din doesn't stop for a moment. The tongue of a quarrelsome woman never tires of chiming in. She even drowns out the sound of the church bell. A nagging wife couldn't care less whether her words are wise or foolish, provided that the sound of her own voice can be heard. She simply pursues her own ends; there's not a grain of sense in what she says; in fact she finds it impossible to have a decent thought. She doesn't want her husband to be the boss and finds fault with everything he does. Rightly or wrongly, the husband has no choice: he has to put up with the situation and keep his mouth shut if he wants to remain in one piece. No man, however self disciplined or clear-sighted he may be, can protect himself adequately against this. A husband has to like what the wife likes, and disapprove of what she hates and criticize what she criticizes so that her opinions appear to be right. So anyone who wishes to immolate himself on the altar of marriage will have a lot to put up with. Fifteen times, both day and night, he will suffer without respite and he will be sorely tormented. Indeed, I believe that this torture is worse than the torments of hell, with its chains, fire, and iron.

Men and women are after different things when they “debate.

.

Men tend to, but not always, hold the truth to be the decider of the debate. (Manginas excepted – thus the name). The man who illustrates the truth the best, is generally considered the winner of a debate. Women, not so much. And don't forget, women scoff at our "school yard rules." Nothing seems sillier to a woman than the male "code." When women fight/argue, there are no rules she adheres to. Women decide who "wins" a debate by who has been the snotty-mouthiest and by who emotionally manipulates the other into submission. The truth matters not a bit to women.

"If men are always more or less deceived on the subject of women, it is because that they forget that they and women do not speak altogether the same language, and that words have not the same weight or the same meaning for them, especially in questions of feeling. **Whether from shyness or precaution or artifice, a woman never speaks out her whole thought, and moreover what she herself knows of it is but a part of what it really is. Complete frankness seems to be impossible to her, and complete self-knowledge seems to be forbidden her. If she is a sphinx to us, it is because she is a riddle of doubtful meaning even to herself. She has no need of perfidy, for she is mystery itself. A woman is something fugitive, irrational, indeterminable, illogical, and contradictory. A great deal of forbearance ought to be shown her, and a good deal of prudence exercised with regard to her, for she may bring about innumerable evils without knowing it, capable of all kinds of devotion, and of all kinds of treason, "monstre incompréhensible," raised to the second power, she is at once the delight and the terror of men."** -- The Intimate Journal of Henri Amiel, Dec. 26, 1868

(Read More Here)

The Suffragettes versus The Republic

. · 11 September 2015 · Archived copy · Original

Feminism started as an organized movement in 1848 at the Seneca Falls Convention on Women's rights, which had an attendence of around 300 people. It was here that the *Declaration of Sentiments* put down the foundations of women's demands. It's principle author was Elizabeth Cady Stanton and it was signed by 100 people: 68 women and 32 men.

Despite being later known as the "suffragettes," at the time of the *Declaration of Sentiment's* signing, "the vote" was considered the most controversial of the sentiments, in-so-far as it even made some of the signers hesistant to endorse the document in its entirety.

I can see people's reactions already,, "Aha! Proof of the misogynist old days!"

No, it wasn't really "misogyny" that was behind it - not entirely anyways. You have to keep in mind that this was 1848 and America's War for Independence had finished only 65 years earlier. It was about as fresh in the minds of the people as the Second World War is to us in the modern day. Many people's parents had lived through the American Revolution and their grandparents had fought in it. The people of that time were quite aware of the principles behind the Declaration of Independence and the nature of their rights under the framework of a *Constitutional* ***Republic***.

(Read More Here)

The Suffragettes versus The Patriarchy

. · 13 September 2015 · Archived copy · Original

.

Click Pic to Read "The Declaration of Sentiments"

In the last section we examined points 1 to 3 of the *Declaration of Sentiments* and how the suffragette movement's demand for the "unalienable" (inalienable?) right to vote was against the concept of the Republic formed by America's Founding Fathers. America was never intended to be a democracy but adhered to principles which were the political embodiment of the masculine principle and the ordering of truth as put forth by John Locke.

As we carry on through the 16 sentiments made in this document, which is obviously based upon the United States' Declaration of Independence itself (since its preample is almost a word for word copy of it) we are presented with the 4th sentiment:

***4** - Having deprived her of this first right as a citizen, the elective franchise, thereby leaving her without representation in the halls of legislation, he has oppressed her on all sides.*

When I looked at this point, I struggled a bit whether to include it in the last section, which was about the nature of the State and the difference between inalienable rights and legal rights, or whether it should be included in this section - which will deal much more with the notion of "equality" in society. It belongs in both because we first must clarify what is exactly meant by this statement.

Although the first three points of the Declaration of Sentiments are in regard to the vote, and this is what Elizabeth Cady Stanton is referring to as the "first right of a citizen," it's already been shown that voting is not an inalienable right, but a legal one.

The phrase "a stopped clock is right twice a day" comes to mind here, because although she was wrong about the vote, she actually is right to say "the first right is equality" - and in fact, she is perfectly valid when, in the beginning of her drawing off the Declaration of Independence, she only makes the single alteration of inserting "and women" into it:

(Read More Here)

The Suffragettes versus the Marketplace

. · 15 September 2015 · Archived copy · Original

Let's continue our examination of Elizabeth Cady Stanton's Declaration of Sentiments with points 9 to 12 done briefly, as these issues will be addressed with greater detail later in this chapter.

Click Pic to read "The Declaration of Sentiments"

9 *- After depriving her of all rights as a married woman, if single and the owner of property, he has taxed her to support a government which recognizes her only when her property can be made profitable to it.*

10 *- He has monopolized nearly all the profitable employments, and from those she is permitted to follow, she receives but a scanty remuneration.*

11 *- He closes against her all the avenues to wealth and distinction, which he considers most honorable to himself. As a teacher of theology, medicine, or law, she is not known.*

12 *- He has denied her the facilities for obtaining a thorough education - all colleges being closed against her.*

.

.

To show that I am not a horrible cretin of a misogynist, I'm going to grant Elizabeth Cady Stanton her point number nine. I wholeheartedly agree that a woman who owns property while single should be allowed a voice if she is being taxed upon the property. This was the basis for men having suffrage too, and indeed, this is how women slowly on began getting more access to the vote - especially since women who were widows owning substantial property holdings left behind by their husbands paid hefty taxes indeed. Most of society thought this reasonable as well, which is why women in such situations were soon allowed to vote by proxy - they could send a man in their stead to deliver their vote. (Women were sometimes given the vote in various states or municipalities long before 1919). Back in those days, voting was quite often violent, with union leaders trying to intimidate voters and riots erupting at the polls. So, instead of sending these women into the dragon's lair, they arranged for such property-holding

women to vote by proxy rather than in person.

Touché, Elizabeth Cady Stanton.

However, I'd like to remind her that Sparta fell because, according to Aristotle, its faulty inheritance laws resulted in women owning 2/5 of the land - so, there's what we think is fair, *and there's what works*. The two need balance. I suspect women not holding property outside of marriage, as addressed in point six, would suffice to keep this in check in our civilization because it would keep the number much smaller than that which Aristotle claimed as the cause of Sparta's plummeting birthrates. (How much of the population were widows and single women back in 1848? Not that much.) Keep in mind this is a *legal* right, not an "unalienable" one, which has been established earlier. Legal rights are about making society "function."

(Read More Here)

The Suffragettes versus The Truth

. · 17 September 2015 · Archived copy · Original

In an odd sort of way, I'm excited to tackle the next three points of Elizabeth Cady Stanton's *Declaration of Sentiments*, for this is the culminating moment of an underlying theme found throughout this book: The Truth, how it differs for men and women, and why it matters very much which one leads the other.

Click Pic to read The Declaration of Sentiments in full.

Points 13 to 15 of the Declaration are as follows:

13 *- He allows her in church, as well as State, but a subordinate position, claiming Apostolic authority for her exclusion from the ministry, and, with some exceptions, from any public participation in the affairs of the Church.*

14 *- He has created a false public sentiment by giving to the world a different code of morals for men and women, by which moral delinquencies which exclude women from society, are not only tolerated but deemed of little account in man.*

15 *- He has usurped the prerogative of Jehovah himself, claiming it as his right to assign for her a sphere of action, when that belongs to her conscience and her God.*

***

"When the Cow Rides the Bull, Priest, Watch Your Skull!"

"Women can sing to more than one tune. What good were the Perihermeneias, the Elenchi, divided into several branches, the Prior and Posterior Analytics, logic, or the mathematical sciences to Aristotle? For a woman surmounted all of these in mounting him and conquered the master of logic. She placed a bit and headstall on his head and he was dragged into solecism, barbastoma, and barbarism. The hussy used him as a horse and spurred him on like a female ass. She lifted her crotch far too high when she rode the male. The governor was governed and the roles of the sexes reversed, for she was active and he passive, willing to neigh under her. . . ." -- Woman over Wisdom, The Lamentations of Matheolus, 1295AD

***

First, let's be clear here. In case you haven't noticed, I am an unabashed sexist. I absolutely ***do not*** believe Gender is a Social Construct. I think there certainly were social constructs society once endorsed, but they were based upon our biological differences - and it was more or less correct to structure society as it once was because of them. Our civilization has endured for millenia - proof of its viability under defined gender roles - while in the past century we've been tripping over ourselves to commit cultural suicide. The Bible, whether you believe in God or not, is the "blueprint" for our civilization - it is the key to how our cultural and social mores developed. It has proven itself to be a "Book of Life" because the structure of the society it puts forth certainly endures, grows and succeeds.

(Read More Here)

Father Custody and the Legend of the Selkie

. · 19 September 2015 · Archived copy · Original

BRIFFAULT'S LAW

.

“The female, not the male, determines all the conditions of the animal family. Where the female can derive no benefit from association with the male, no such association takes place.” -- Robert Briffault, *The Mothers*, I, 191

.

The Corollaries to Briffault's law:

1 - Past benefit provided by the male does not provide for continued or future association.

2 - Any agreement where the male provides a current benefit in return for a promise of future association is null and void as soon as the male has provided the benefit (see corollary 1)

3 - A promise of future benefit has limited influence on current/future association, with the influence inversely proportionate to the length of time until the benefit will be given and directly proportionate to the degree to which the female trusts the male (which is not bloody likely).

.

***

.

Some years ago, through the usual discourse of mindlessly arguing with people on the internet, I met a woman online who went by the handle of “Selkie.” I had no idea what a selkie was, so I typed it into Google and discovered an interesting legend that I believe is directly about human sexuality.

The mythological selkie is similar to a mermaid, except the selkie is a seal which can shed its skin and transform

into a human being. The selkie can be either male or female, but most are female. Once they are in their human form, if their seal skin is taken and hidden from them, they are unable to turn back into a seal and thus cannot return to their home in the sea.

Click for "The Wife of Noble Character"

Now, as the legend goes, female selkies make great wives when in their human form and so men would hide the skins of selkies so they would stay with them - for if she found her skin she would right away put it back on, abandon her human husband and escape to the sea to seek out her male selkie lover/husband.

There is an interesting twist though, in that even after she abandons her human husband she will return from time to time to visit the children which she had while with him.

(Read More Here)

The Fraud of Modern Marriage (Women as Chattel)

. · 21 September 2015 · Archived copy · Original

[Do you believe women have the right] to divorce?

Answer:

Ah… I suspect this question is based on the tired old feminist refrain, “Women were owned as chattel!”
.
I think in order for this question to be properly answered, one must first examine the concept that marriage is an *economic* contract based on property rights.

You see, all throughout the animal kingdom, motherhood is a pretty common theme. It is positively everywhere! What is not common in the animal kingdom however, is *fatherhood*. Nope, not too many baby deer know who their fathers are. Fatherhood is a foreign concept in most of the animal kingdom.

Female mammals often find themselves living in a herd filled with many other females, all being bred by one dominant alpha male. The females congregate in herds because it is the only way they and their offspring can safely survive. Yes, herd living is true Communism where all is shared and they all get fat or starve together. Ever wonder why women tend to all think the same way and why they desire big, Socialist government over individualism and freedom? Ever wonder why women will stick up for another woman even when they *know* that woman is obviously in the wrong? It’s because of their allegiance to the herd. The herd comes first. Now you know.

(Read More Here)

Feminizing the Decline (Hypergamy and Birthrates)

. · 23 September 2015 · Archived copy · Original

“Remember this: The strongest sign of the decay of a nation is the feminization of men and the masculinization of women. It is notable that in Communist nations women are exhorted, and compelled, to do what has traditionally been men’s work. American women, some of them, feel triumphant that they have broken down the ‘barricades’ between the work of the sexes. I hope they will still feel triumphant when some commissar forces a shovel or an axe into their soft hands and compels them to pound and cut forests and dig ditches. I hope they will be ‘happy’ when a husband deserts them and they must support their children and themselves alone. (After all, if a woman must be ‘free’ she shouldn’t object to men being free too, should she?) I hope they will feel ‘fulfilled’ when they are given no more courtesies due to their sex and no kindnesses, but are kicked aside on the subway buses by men, and jostled out of the way by men on busy sidewalks and elevators…. I hope, when they look in their mirrors, that they will be pleased to see exhausted, embittered faces, and that they will be consoled by their paychecks.” ~ Taylor Caldwell, 1970

(Read More Here)

The Powers That Be

. · 25 September 2015 · Archived copy · Original

.

Is "someone" or some "thing" behind all of this monkeying around with our culture?

It's natural to seek someone to point a finger at, to try to explain how this could have happened to us. There are many different opinions and there are certainly enough pivotal events in history which are shrouded in mystery or lost knowledge to fuel many a conspiracy theory.

I can see two reactions amongst my readers as I say this. The first is going, "Well thank, goodness! I was wondering if he had the balls to bring that subject up."

The Cervelati (33rd Order of the Salami)

"Et Tu, Brute?" My other reader's eyes roll back in their heads as they begin supress their gag reflex, "Oh no! Here comes the talk about the Illuminati and the Protocols of the Elders Zion. Or wait, maybe this guy believes it's the Rothschild's... and he's going to link both Hitler and Marx to the banking elites and the Bilderberg Group... or perhaps he'll tell us about the Masons, the Skull and Bones and the sex-party initiations at the Bohemian Grove."

Well, not really - although I would like to briefly address some of these ideas to illustrate where my general position is on the matter and how it actually helped me understand the concepts of "truth" found within these pages.

(Read More Here)

It's Not Marxism Because...

. · 27 September 2015 · Archived copy · Original

.

"A world where men and women would be equal is easy to visualize, for that precisely is what the Soviet Revolution promised." - Simone de Beauvoir, *The Second Sex* (New York, Random House, 1952), p.806

.

One of the most common arguments I see made against the notion that feminism and Marxism are one in the same goes something like this:

"Feminism and Marxism aren't related because Stalin's policy of xyz was certainly not feminist!" (or Mao's, or Pol Pot's or Gorbachev - take your pick).

Another common argument goes like this:

"Russian women aren't raving feminists like American women, therefore, Marxism and feminism aren't related."

Well, all these things may be true, but, one must also realize that Marxism is kinda like Christianity in that while it has a large over-riding ideology, there are many different denominations with varying beliefs. Lenin's interpretation of Marxism was one such type, called Leninism, and when Stalin took over he interpreted Marxism in a different way - over-riding some of Lenin's beliefs - and thus becoming "Stalinism." Mao as well interpreted Marxism differently from Stalin, and this became known as "Maoism." So, just as it is false to say that Protestants aren't Christians because they don't have a Pope and never go to confession, so is it false to say that Marxism and feminism are unrelated because of reason XYZ during Boris Yeltsin' s vodka soaked tenure at the helm.

Mostly when people such as myself assert that Marxism and feminism are one in the same, it has a lot to do with the philosophies behind Marxism, such as the oppressor vs. victim class, the use of the Marxist dialectic to manipulate the population, the "end-goal" of Marxism & feminism being remarkably similar, and most of all it comes from Engels' own words (Marx made a few references to liberating women, but Engels really got into it).

(Read More Here)

Cultural Pillars and Critical Theory

. · 29 September 2015 · Archived copy · Original

.

"All the other large and small nationalities and peoples are destined to perish before long in the revolutionary world storm… these residual fragments of peoples always become fanatical standard-bearers of counter-revolution and remain so until their complete extirpation or loss of their national character… [A general war will] wipe out all these petty hidebound nations, down to their very names. The next world war will result in the disappearance from the face of the earth not only of reactionary classes and dynasties, but also of entire reactionary peoples. And that, too, is a step forward." -- Friedrich Engels, "The Magyar Struggle," *Neue Rhenische Zeitung,* January 13, 1849

.

Immediately after Russia's October Revolution of 1917, Lenin withdrew from fighting in World War One, although the formal end of Russia's involvement wasn't until the Treaty of Brest-Litovsk in March 1918. The Great War in Europe had all been predicted by Marx and Engels decades earlier and it appeared things were going exactly as they should. The next event that should have happened was for the common-man (the workers) to throw off their chains and unite under a new, ***global*** system of Communist Utopia.

Of course, it never happened. This was a pivotal and confusing moment in the world of Marxism. Obviously, since the global revolution didn't appear as predicted, Marx and Engels had gotten something wrong. It is from here that "Marxism" goes from being strictly an *economic* theory and into the realm of *cultural* theory.

(Read More Here)

Useful Idiots Play Checkers, Marxists Play Chess

. · 1 October 2015 · Archived copy · Original

.

A mistake I think many "conspiracy theorists" make is trying to account for every single event as being some sort of manipulation. It doesn't really have to be as complex as that - there are really only certain pivotal arguments that need to be won, so that the general direction will turn. For example, giving women the vote, due to their more security-based psychology (as opposed to men's individualistic psychology) pretty much guaranteed that government would turn socialist and begin to grow. This has been explored by John Lott and Lawrence Kenny's study titled, "Did Women's Suffrage Change the Size and Scope of Government?"

In the same way, if parental authority is undermined by "children's rights," I can pretty much guarantee that there will be untold havoc created in people's families. Making the hierarchy upside down naturally causes problems. The private cannot lead the general. The employee cannot lead the employer. The child cannot lead the parent. Take any of these situations and reverse the hierarchy, and it's pretty easy to see how they will *naturally* canabalize themselves until they are utterly destroyed. Some arguments are more important than others - because they can set off a chain reaction of further arguments in the future.

(Read More Here)

The Family Plot: The Past (Their Oppressors Are Children)

. · 3 October 2015 · Archived copy · Original

.

Sometimes I have to laugh at mankind's arrogance, to be sitting here on this tiny planet, in our not so significant solar system, in one of an infinite number of galaxies... that we dare to even argue about the nature of the universe and what is True or not.

It makes me think of being born on some tropical island out in the Pacific, then declaring the whole world is made of coconuts, sand and water.

How on earth could someone in that situation even *conceive* of the Grand Canyon or Mount Everest? We are in the same situation - so long as we are stuck way out here on good old planet earth, we too cannot possibly even conceive of all the workings, patterns, systems and forces that are at play in the "greater scope of things."

(Read More Here)

The Family Plot: The Present (No-Fault Divorce & Hypergamy)

. · 5 October 2015 · Archived copy · Original

.

R.I.P. Marriage 1.0 (Click Pic for "The Suffragettes versus The Patriarcy")

Often we identify the introduction of No-Fault Divorce laws in the 1970's as the beginning of the divorce epidemic. As I pointed out in The Suffragettes versus The Patriarchy, this is not entirely accurate. The divorce craze actually began back in the 1860's and 1870's when the Suffragettes undermined father-custody with the Tender Year's Doctrine and mother-custody became the norm. This voided one of the core tenets of marriage in the first place - which was bringing men into the reproduction process in a meaningful way so that their higher provisioning abilities could be utilized for the greater good of both families and society.

It's not like No-Fault Divorce had no impact on divorce rates – it certainly did! But it more or less streamlined a process that had been well under way for over a century.

Contrary to popular belief, obtaining a divorce before the 1970's was not *that* difficult. Marilyn Monroe divorced three times between 1942 and 1961 while Elizabeth Taylor had four divorces under her belt and was working on her fifth when No-Fault Divorce became law. Before No-Fault Divorce was introduced there were just a few more hoops to jump through, in an effort to "find fault." Of course, with "fault" divorce, it extends that one must prove that an actual "fault" had occurred. There were many things which constituted "fault," including adultery, alcoholism, insanity, abandonment, and a host of others. But the most pernicious to the institution was the fault called "cruelty."

(Read More Here)

The Family Plot: The Future (Civil Unions & Shared Parenting)

. · 7 October 2015 · Archived copy · Original

.

The argument often used against Same Sex Marriage is that it should not be called “marriage” but rather a “civil union” – call it ANYTHING you want, just don’t call it marriage!

But advocates for Same Sex Marriage simply refuse to rename it, despite such “civil unions” not really differing from marriage in anything but name.

Have you ever asked yourself “why”?

A quick perusing of the following quotes ought to give a hint to the answer:

“Being queer is more than setting up house, sleeping with a person of the same gender, and seeking state approval for doing so. … *Being queer means pushing the parameters of sex, sexuality, and family, and in the process, transforming the very fabric of society.* … As a lesbian, I am fundamentally different from non-lesbian women. …In arguing for the right to legal marriage, lesbians and gay men would be forced to claim that we are just like heterosexual couples, have the same goals and purposes, and vow to structure our lives similarly. … We must keep our eyes on the goals of providing true alternatives to marriage *and of radically reordering society's view of reality.”* -- Paula Ettelbrick, “Since When Is Marriage a Path to Liberation?”, in William Rubenstein, ed., Lesbians, Gay Men and the Law (New York: The New Press, 1993), pp. 401-405.

"A middle ground might be to fight for same sex marriage and its benefits, and then, *once granted, redefine the institution completely, to demand the right to marry not as a way of adhering to society's moral codes but rather to debunk a myth and radically alter an archaic institution."* -- Michelangelo Signorile, "Bridal Wave," OUT Magazine, December/January 1994, p.161

"It [gay marriage] is also a chance to wholly transform the definition of family in American culture. **It is the**

final tool with which to dismantle all sodomy statutes, get education about homosexuality and AIDS into public schools, and, in short, usher in a sea of change in how society views and treats us." -- Michelangelo Signorile, "I do, I do, I do, I do, I do," OUT Magazine, May 1996, p.30

***"[E]nlarging the concept to embrace same-sex couples would necessarily transform it into something new*....Extending the right to marry to gay people -- that is, abolishing the traditional gender requirements of marriage -- can be one of the means, perhaps the principal one, through which the institution divests itself of the sexist trappings of the past."** -- Tom Stoddard, quoted in Roberta Achtenberg, et al, "Approaching 2000: Meeting the Challenges to San Francisco's Families," The Final Report of the Mayor's Task Force on Family Policy, City and County of San Francisco, June 13, 1990, p.1.

Click Pic for "Peer Reviewed Research: The Holy Grail of Truth?"

There is an element in the Gay Community that fully intends to *transform* the current parameters of marriage and create something *completely new.* This is classical Cultural Marxism and is the reason why Gay Rights Activists and feminists have joined each other at the urinal of eternal victimization, despite the *obvious* contradiction of each group's **fundamental** premise – that being feminists' entire raison d'être is based upon "Gender is a Social Construct," (therefore women are discriminated against because they are treated differently while being born fundamentally the same), whereas Gay Rights Activists argue that they are *born gay* (refuting gender is a social construct) and therefore they are victimized because they are *born* that way. These arguments are mutually contradictory at the most fundamental level, and the two groups ought to be enemies… and yet, they obviously aren't. The reason is that the radical wings of both factions have the same fundamental goal: they both wish to alter the family unit into something completely new.

(Read More Here)

Following the Masculine Principle is the "Right Way"

. · 9 October 2015 · Archived copy · Original

.

"Totalitarianism, however, does not so much promise an age of faith as an age of schizophrenia. A society becomes totalitarian when its structure becomes flagrantly artificial: that is, when its ruling class has lost its function but succeeds in clinging to power by force or fraud. Such a society, no matter how long it persists, can never afford to become either tolerant or intellectually stable...

Totalitarianism demands, in fact, the continuous alteration of the past, *and in the long run probably demands a disbelief in the very existence of objective truth."* -- George Orwell

.

It's hard to say, really, what one should "do" about all of this falseness that's crept into our society. The family unit is obviously being altered. Everybody seems to have an idea of how to make it "work" better - by further deconstructing it. We've got a 50% Divorce Rate, Shared-Parenting, Gay Marriage, 5-Parent Families, unsustainable birth-rates, and over half of children now go to bed without their biological father in the house. I think marriage has been fixed enough, don't you?

(Read More Here)

Work With the World, Don't Fight Against It

. · 11 October 2015 · Archived copy · Original

.

Something I think men will have to come to terms with is that when the pendulum inevitably swings back, what actual benefit do men think this will have for them? Will it bring that fabled equality everyone is seeking? Will everyone join hands and sing kumbaya and live happily ever after? Will the planets align and Heaven on Earth make itself apparent to man and woman alike?

Not likely.

For example, it is easy to point out that when feminists cry of the abuses of women in places like Afghanistan, if you look at the men they are treated even worse. And, if you look at the “abuses” women endured in the past centuries, you will find that in every situation, men had even worse abuses to endure. It is a feature of *human nature.* It's just like no matter at what place, or in what time, children are always treated better than adults – it’s just the way humanity works.

So, after Feminism subsides, how will things change? Do you really think it will be any different? Women will *still* be treated better than men. They have been since the dawn of time, and they will be until closing time.

(Read More Here)

The Liberation of Men

. · 13 October 2015 · Archived copy · Original

To the woman he said, ***"I will make your pains in childbearing very severe; with painful labor you will give birth to children. Your desire will be for your husband, and he will rule over you."***

To Adam he said, "*Because you listened to your wife* **and ate fruit from the tree about which I commanded you, 'You must not eat from it,' "***Cursed is the ground because of you; through painful toil you will eat food from it all the days of your life. It will produce thorns and thistles for you, and you will eat the plants of the field. By the sweat of your brow you will eat your food until you return to the ground, since from it you were taken; for dust you are and to dust you will return."* -- Genesis 3:16-19

Click Pic for "Love is for Suckers... Blood Suckers!"

.

And so it has been ever since, until feminism convinced women to unwittingly take on men's curse as their own.

And what's a man to do about it, after all? Despite corporate and feminist attempts at designing various ways for emasculated males to take on the pains of child-birth, there can never be a true understanding for males of what it is like to give birth. This is women's curse, and it is their curse alone to bear, for it is impossible for men to share equally with her in it - even if men were so stupid to want to.

(Read More Here)

The Want of Men Was Their Ruin

. · 15 October 2015 · Archived copy · Original

Click for "The Suffragettes vs The Patriarchy"

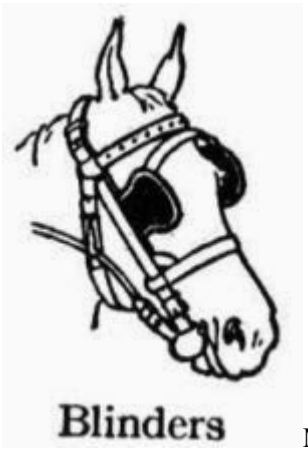
If men really were as misogynist as women claim, none of this would have ever happened. We would've just put them over our knee and given them a righteous paddling until we got our damn sammiches made exactly like we wanted 'em.

It's the very fact that women have so much social power over men that's the problem - and that's why I, like Weininger, have to say it's ultimately men's fault this happened.

"Where my exposition is anti-feminine, and that is nearly everywhere, men themselves will

receive it with little heartiness or conviction; ***their sexual egoism makes them prefer to see woman as they would like to have her, as they would like her to be.***

I need not say that I am prepared for the answer women will have to the judgment I have passed on their sex. ***My investigation, indeed, turns against man in the end, and although in a deeper sense than the advocates of women's rights could anticipate, assigns to man the heaviest and most real blame. ..."***
-- Otto Weininger, *Sex and Character*, Author's Preface



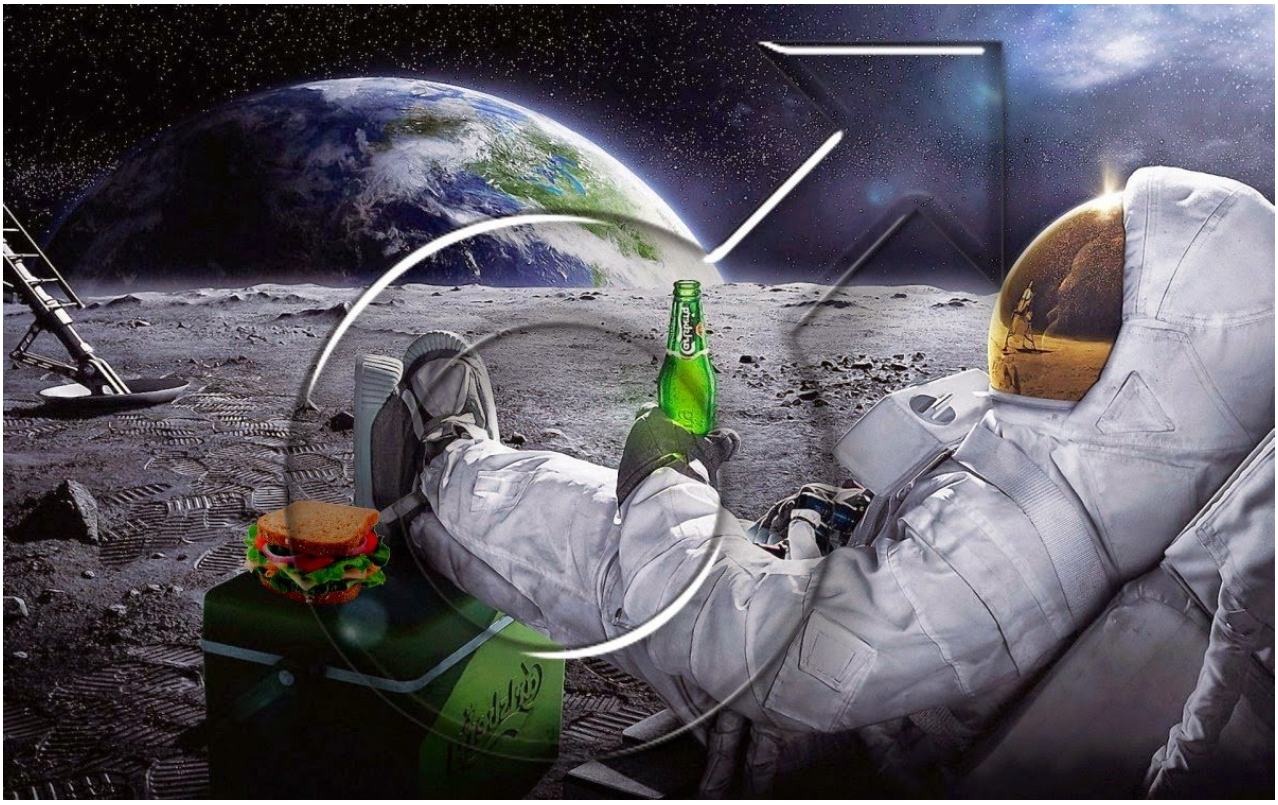
Men have blinders on when it comes to women in much the same way mothers have blinders on them with children. Women naturally see their children as perfect little angels and men see women in the same way. Our civilization has been trying to take the female sex off that pedastal for the last 3,300 years, (back when Moses was thought to have written the Pentateuch), and it's been a struggle to do so the whole way.

(Read More Here)

One Man's Kingdom

. · 17 October 2015 · Archived copy · Original

"Better to live in a desert than with a quarrelsome and ill-tempered wife." -- Proverbs 21:19



Click Pic for "The Amaxon Women (The Science of Why Males Exist)"

QUOTE: ***"The abandonment of men in contemporary society is so comprehensive that a man who has lost a wife or lover not only suffers from the loss of that deep personal connection, but from a fairly comprehensive rejection by society in general. First you lose your wife, then your kids, and then even your own family turns against you in many cases (this is a lot more common than most people realize. American men's own mothers very often blame them and side with the ex in what is usually a futile effort to maintain contact with grandchildren).***
The thrashing you get from the police and courts is just gratuitous abuse;
in many cases guys are simply numb to additional pain by that time."

.
***
.

I would argue that the sudden and total collapsing of love, as it is presented to men, is evidence of its illusion.

Children are raised on it, women can expect it their whole lives in a watered down sense, but men lose all right to it as they come of age. Unfortunately, in the West, no-one ever tells them that this is their heritage as men. They have to learn it the hard way, or go mad refusing to learn it at all.

Other cultures, particularly those closer to nature,
had rites of passage for young men. The rite usually involved sending the stripling out in the wild, on his own. He

would be exposed to danger, expected to survive on his own, and could expect no assistance. It was a symbolic, and real, exercise to let him know that he was no longer the dependent he once was. Young women were never subjected to the same. They belonged to the community, no matter their age, their fertility or their ability.

It is a feature of all men who go wild at women and take it out on innocents, as well as their former intimates, that they are still sold on the love illusion – they are men that fervently believe they deserve a place in the bosom of society. The trick is maintained for its utility in deceiving men into social contracts that are counter to their own interests.

.

It's the same the world over. Every deal won by trickery has a higher harvest of woe than that done with all cards on the table and intentions plainly stated.

(Read More Here)

A Wrinkle in Time

. · 3 November 2015 · Archived copy · Original

The majority of these pieces have been pinched from the excellent website The Men's Tribune. I've read through these pieces a few times and they are full of great information, thus, I often link to them or to the Tribune itself. However, lately I have been noticing that the links have been getting somewhat sketchy and on a few occasions I have not been able to access the site at all - some times for several days or a week at a time. Call me paranoid, but it makes me fear that all of this great stuff will one day just "poof" disapear, as so many other great sites have done in the past. As such, I am going to reprint these articles here into this blog - both for a back-up, and so that I may post these pieces myself on occasion, and encourage others to read them as well.

.

.

From the Buddha's Little Known "Ultimate Extinction of the Dharma Sutra"

.

Nothing Higher to Live For: A Buddhist View of Romantic Love -- by Bhikkhu Nyanasobhano (Leonard Price)

.

Buddha – From "The Sutra of the Past Vows of Earth Store Bodhisattva"

.

Buddha – from "Selected Writings of Nichiren"

.

"The Spartan Women", The Politics of Aristotle: Politics, Book II B Ch. IX: 5-16.

.

On a Good Wife, Aristotle, from "Oikonomikos", c 330 BCE

.

De Officiius (excerpts) – by Cicero

.

The History of Rome – by Titus Livius (59BC - 17AD)

.
Advice to Married Couples – by Plutarch (46-120 A.D.)
.
The Secret History – by Procopius of Caesarea (c. 550A.D.) (Book).
.
The Lamentations of Matheolus (excerpts) -- by Mathieu of Boulogne, (1295 A.D.).(Book)
.
The Fifteen Joys of Marriage (first two "joys") -- by Antoine de la Salle (possible author, born 1388)
.
”The Man-Woman” – by Hic Mulier, 1620
.
Memoirs Of Louis XIV And The Regency, Vol. III, Chapter II (excerpt) -- by the Duke of Saint-Simon (Translated by Bayle St. John.)
.
Man Superior to Woman – by Anonymous, 1739.(Book)
.
The Spirit of Laws (excerpts) – by Baron De Montesquieu, 1748
.
Letter to His Son (excerpt) – by Lord Chesterfield, 1748
.
Thomas Jefferson (selections)
.
Tom Pry’s Wife – by Charles Lamb (1775-1834)
.
A Bachelor’s Complaint of the Behaviour of Married People – by Charles Lamb (1775-1834)
.
Democracy in America, Vol. 2, Ch. XII, "How The Americans Understand The Equality Of The Sexes" -- by Alexis de Tocqueville, 1840
.
In Vino Veritas (or The Banquet) -- by Soren Kierkegaard (1813-1855)

Woman/Man -- from Kierkegaard's Journals

The Metaphysics of the Love of the Sexes - by Arthur Schopenhauer, 1844

On Women – by Arthur Schopenhauer, 1851
.
The Intimate Journal of Henri Amiel

A Collection of Writings on Women -- Freiderich Neitszche
.
Virginibus Puerisque – Chapter One [Part 1] – by Robert Louis Stevenson

(From) Principles of Psychology -- by William James
.
Need It Be So? – by Leo Tolstoy (1900)

(From) New Introductory Lectures on Psycho-Analysis -- by Sigmund Freud
.

What's Wrong With The World – by G.K. Chesterton (excerpts) (Book)

.

Folk-lore of Women -- by T.F. Thistelton-Dyer (1906) (Book)

The Woman Question -- by Stephen Leacock (1916)

The Polygamous Sex -- by Esther Villar (1976)

.

EOTM: Welcome to Eye of the Mind

. · 3 November 2015 · Archived copy · Original

If the doors of perception were cleansed every thing would appear to man as it really is, infinite." -- William Blake

---

.

Visual Reality
Zen and the Art of Motorcycle Maintenance
Philosophy and Theology
The Deep Water: Gender War, Sexuality, and Love
The Environment
Science and Technology
Creating the Future

.

Only in the mind's eye can things truly be seen. The blind man often sees more than his "sighted" cousin because he is less misled by the surfaces of things and is more interested in their substance. Perception includes mind, body, emotion and, most of all, spirit. One must be aware in all 4 dimensions to be fully alive.

Any and all possible futures will be seen first in the eye of the mind. We create the world as we see it.

These pages are dedicated to those seeking to become accomplished artists in the Art of Living. Most artists become comfortable with a few selected media and materials. The selection of topics represent my favorites. Many more are worthy of consideration, but that's why there are other web pages.

There are two great mystical forces which rule the lives of human beings. One is the life force itself. The other is that elusive force we call consciousness. Life, we share with countless other entities on this planet. But we maintain the belief that consciousness sets us apart and above all other forms of life: that it belongs to the god-like alone. In our desire to be as gods, we have elevated the force of consciousness and begun to worship it while we have shown ever increasing contempt for all life save our own and, often enough, for our own as well.

I heartily agree with the geocities' stated philosophy of creating new communities on the new frontier and thank them for providing such a forum. The new milennium is upon us and humanity has pillaged the planet to support its ever growing need to consume. We humans, so anxious to see ourselves in the images of the gods & goddesses we worship, have achieved only one of the godlike powers, the power to destroy. We need to turn as much energy toward the power to create and generate as we have toward consuming the resources of the earth if we are to survive.

Today the cerebral cortex of the brain rules. People want to believe that all behavior is thought out in advance and that it follows the sterile logic of only half the brain, the left brain. Their analysis of the motivations underlying the behavior are speculative nonsense which leaves out 90% of the information available and adheres to a peculiar line of thinking specific to that individual. The results are presented as "logical" but there is no logic whatsoever behind it. It is merely the result of their own built in biases, which they are so close to that they cannot see.

The MIND is NOT the BRAIN. The mind is just as aware of the information it is receiving from the little toe as it gets from the 5:00 news. The mind has a sense of connection to a power greater than itself. And the mind receives information from something called the soul. There is something deep within us that is the essence of the will/desire/drive/whatever to be **ALIVE**. Something that BELIEVES and WANTS and KNOWS right from wrong.

We need to make people as mindful in their behavior as we currently would like to believe they are. My goal for these pages is to celebrate and provide a forum for the full development of all dimensions of the mind. I invite contributions and suggestions. I consider art to be an integral part of mental and spiritual development and I hope visitors will see a certain esthetic unity, if not homogeniety. Please comment on this aspect of the site as well. At present, I have only established the general structure of the site. Things that look like links hopefully will become so. Suggestions for sites in each of the categories are welcome.

While the content of this site is definitely "adult", it is not so in the sense that one usually sees on the net. My intent is to deal in subjects that only a mature mind can really grasp, thus the only ones interested in pursuing those subjects. While these subjects contain details of the type usually not easily discussed by parents with their children, I don't believe that anyone will find my treatment of the subjects to be offensive except that I don't cut people much slack for silliness.

Parents who are willing to let the child indulge her/his own natural tendency to learn and question can freely move around this site if they use the eye as a navigation aid. The eye will lead to controversial topics, but the controversial discussions lie behind links which you have to look for. If the content intrigues you, you will be interested in reading further. Children will not. The eye will lead them on a tour and the big eye will always lead them home. Anyone willing to wade through the verbage to get the content, deserves it in my book. Most parents can rest secure in the fact that I am going to make it so much work that their children will never do it. Roam around yourself a bit first then, if you are comfortable with the content and the way in which it it addressed, feel free to bring your son or daughter back to start a dialogue on things you'd like to talk to them about. Sortof.

.

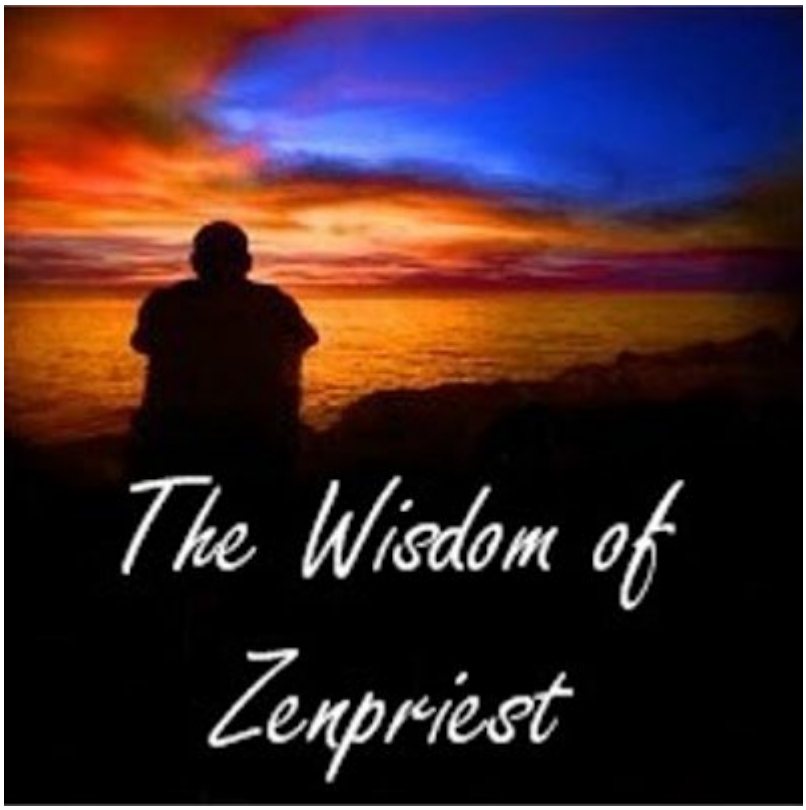
.

Visual Reality
Zen and the Art of Motorcycle Maintenance
Philosophy and Theology

The Deep Water: Gender War, Sexuality, and Love
The Environment
Science and Technology
Creating the Future
.

The Wisdom of Zenpriest

. · 3 November 2015 · Archived copy · Original



Zenpriest #1 – Women Raised Without Fathers

Zenpriest #2 – You Can't Change a Pickle Back Into a Cucumber

Zenpriest #3 – Repressing Sexuality

Zenpriest #4 – The Two Faces of Masculinity

Zenpriest #5 – Addicted to Attention

Zenpriest #6 – The Death of Marriage

Zenpriest #7 – Women's Aggression

Zenpriest #8 – The Big Truth

Zenpriest #9 – The 90's Were the Make It or Break It Decade and I Don't Think We Made It

Zenpriest #10 – When Men's Trust is Gone

Zenpriest #11 – Emotional Deficit

Zenpriest #12 - Happiness

Zenpriest #13 – Prove to Me You Aren't a Bad Guy!

Zenpriest #14 - If a Man Speaks in the Forest, and There is No Woman There to Correct Him, Is He Still Wrong?

Zenpriest #15 – Regarding the Marriage Strike

Zenpriest #16 – The Gender War

Zenpriest #17 – “e-kwuhl pay fer e-kwuhl werk”

Zenpriest #18 – The Designated Initiator

Zenpriest #19 – How Women Keep Score

Zenpriest #20 - There Is Nothing More Lonely Than Being With Someone You Can’t Talk To

Zenpriest #21 - The Terrible Twos

Zenpriest #22 – “Broken” Men and Women’s “Fixing” Them

Zenpriest #23 – Marriage is Becoming the Social Edsel of the 21st Century

Zenpriest #24 – If a Woman Goes Into a Bar Wearing Sexy Clothes and No Panties…

Zenpriest #25 – The 5 Best Arguments for Staying Single I Have Ever Run Across

Zenpriest #26 – Second Wavers vs. The Suffragettes

Zenpriest #27 – Ignoring Women

Zenpriest #28 – Ethical Sociopaths

Zenpriest #29 – The Future’s Cultural Time Bombs

Zenpriest #30 – Gurl Math

Zenpriest #31 – If Things You See Just Don’t Seem to Make Any Sense, Check Your Assumptions. You Will Find That One Or More Of Them Are Wrong.

Zenpriest #32 – The Glass Pussy Ceiling

Zenpriest #33 – Salesmanship 101

Zenpriest #34 – When Desiring Women Is Outlawed, Only Outlaws Will Desire Women

Zenpriest #35 – How Was This Allowed To Happen?

Zenpriest #36 – Feminism is Repudiation of The Law of Cause and Effect

Zenpriest #37 – How It All Happened

Zenpriest #38 – Mid-Life Crisis

Zenpriest #39 – Brer Patriarch

Zenpriest #40 – Girls Just Wanna Have Fun

Zenpriest #41 – Feminism is an Extended Infantile Tantrum

Zenpriest #42 - Activism

Zenpriest #43 – There's Nothing in the World More Over-rated Than a Good Lay…

Zenpriest #44 – The Box Feminism Builds for Women

Zenpriest #45 – I am a Strong Believer in Natural Processes

Zenpriest #46 – Twenty Years From Now This Will Be "The Good Old Days"

Zenpriest #47 – The Future's So Bright, I've Gotta Wear Shades

Zenpriest #48 – Social Breakdown and Civil Disorder is More Likely

Zenpriest #49 – Let Women Win the "Battle of the Sexes"

Zenpriest #50 – Listening to What Men Really Say

Zenpriest #51 – What's Happening to Boys?

Zenpriest #52 – The Moral High Ground Always Goes to the Winner

Zenpriest #53 - Feminism Really Is All About Projection

Zenpriest #54 – The Way We Were

Zenpriest #55 – Now Please Explain to Me, What the Hell Men Need a "Movement" For?

.

Zenpriest #56 – MGTOW's Trademark Copyright Philosophy

.

Zenpriest #57 – Personal Attacks and Mind Games

.

Zenpriest #58 – The MRM's Perpetual War with Itself

.

Zenpriest #59 – The Most Important Lesson a Man Can Ever Learn

.

Zenpriest #60 - Why There Never Has Been a Coherent Men's Movement and Why There Never Will Be

Zenpriest #61 - Everyone Lives Through History, We Just Don't Realize It...

Zenpriest #62 - The Hegelian Dialectic and Social Change

Zenpriest #63 - In a Bar Last Night: One Good Marriage and One Attention Whore

Zenpriest #64 - Only a Fool Would Have Swallowed It

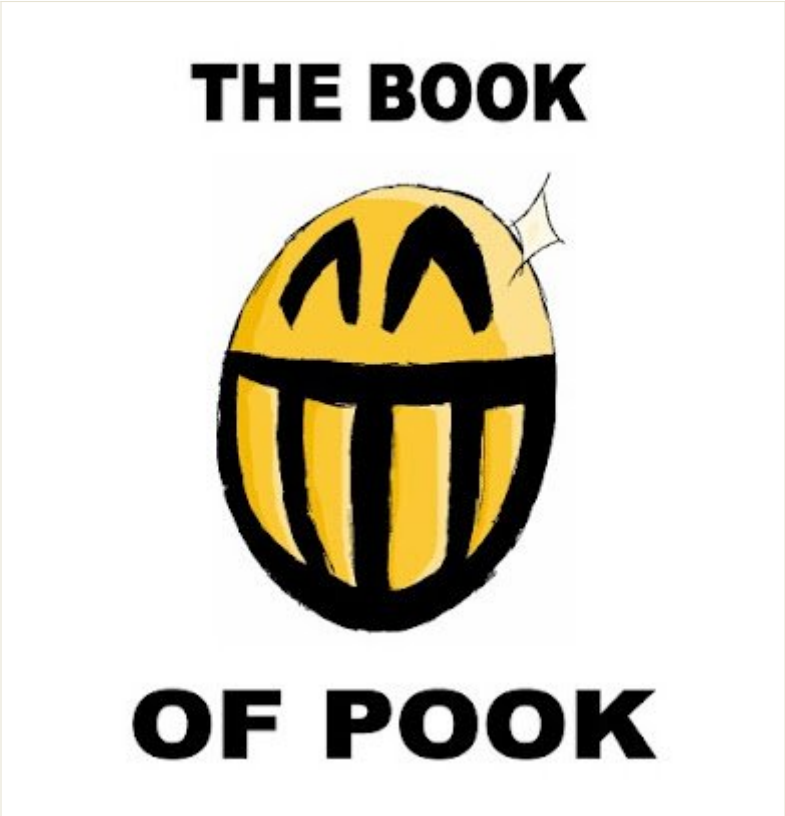
Zenpriest #65 - Upping MRA "Game": Honing Our Rhetoric of Ridicule

Zenpriest #66 - Guy Stuff: Traveling Hard, Light and Fast

Zenpriest #67 - The Baby Bomb: How the Boomers were Used to Destroy a Culture

The Book of Pook

. · 3 November 2015 · Archived copy · Original



Material by Pook, from the SoSauve.com forums
Compiled By Gubby

A Note From The Compiler

Pook #1 – Introduction: A Pook Is A Pook!

Pook #2 – Pook Man's Advice to a Suffering Newbie

Pook #3 – Fifteen Lessons

Pook #4 – Lesson One: Rejection Is Better Than Regret

Pook #5 – Lesson Two: Friendship – Abandon All Hope Ye Who Enter

Pook #6 – Lesson Three: Judge By Actions, Not By Words

Pook #7 – Lesson Four: Patience is the Refined Sense of Confidence

Pook #8 – Lesson Five: Trust the Gut

Pook #9 – Lesson Six: You are the Great Catch

Pook #10 – Lesson Seven: Respect Is All

Pook #11 – Lesson Eight: Only The Sexual Ones Get The Girls

Pook #12 – Lesson Nine: Be Not Contained By Formula

Pook #13 – Lesson Ten: As You Think, You Shall Become

Pook #14 - Lesson Eleven: Getting A Girl Is Not The Success

Pook #15 - Lesson Twelve: Unite Dream and Day

Pook #16 - Lesson Thirteen: Charm is Treating Women Like Little Girls

Pook #17 - Lesson Fourteen: Always Have a Back-up Chick

Pook #18 - Lesson Fifteen: The Greatest Risk You Can Take in Life is Not To Risk It All!

Pook #19 - What Every Skinny Guy Should Know...

Pook #20 - Perfect is Boring

Pook #21 - The Secret of the Jerk

Pook #22 - Looks or Personality?

Pook #23 - Fountain of Youth

Pook #24 - Kill That Desperation!

Pook #25 - Embrace Your Sexuality

Pook #26 - On Embracing Sexuality

Pook #27 - Eliminate Desire or Not?

Pook #28 - On Shyness

Pook #29 - On The Nature of Sexuality

Pook #30 - Romanticism - An Obituary

Pook #31 - Let Yourself Fail

Pook #32 - Aim High!

Pook #33 - On Kino

Pook #34 - What I've Learned

Pook #35 - Approaching Women

Pook #36 - As You Think, You Shall Become

Pook #37 - Be a Man!

Pook #38 - Casual Dating

Pook #39 - Structure of Worlds

Pook #40 - Do Girls Want Sovereignty?

Pook #41 - Cocky & Funny?

Pook #42 - Feeling Down About Your Love Life? Read This!

Pook #43 - Feminism Put On Trial!

Pook #44 - Good Girls Do Cheat

Pook #45 - Attention Whores

Pook #46 - Habit is All

Pook #47 - If Life Seems Hard and Unhappy, Read This!

Pook #48 - Why "Just Be Friends"

Pook #49 - On Mystery

Pook #50 - Patience: What Truly Makes a Don Juan

Pook #51 - Ooh La La!

Pook #52 - A Second Life

Pook #53 - Re: Selfishness, Life-Changing Decisions etc.

Pook #54 - Securities vs. Mistakes

Pook #55 - "SS is AFC"

Pook #56 - Talking to Girls

Pook #57 - The Difference Between Dating and a Friendship

Pook #58 - Womanese!

Pook #59 - More Womanese!

Pook #60 - Even More Womanese!

Pook #61 - Why Women Mention Other Men Even If They're Interested In You!

Pook #62 - Secret to Womanese!

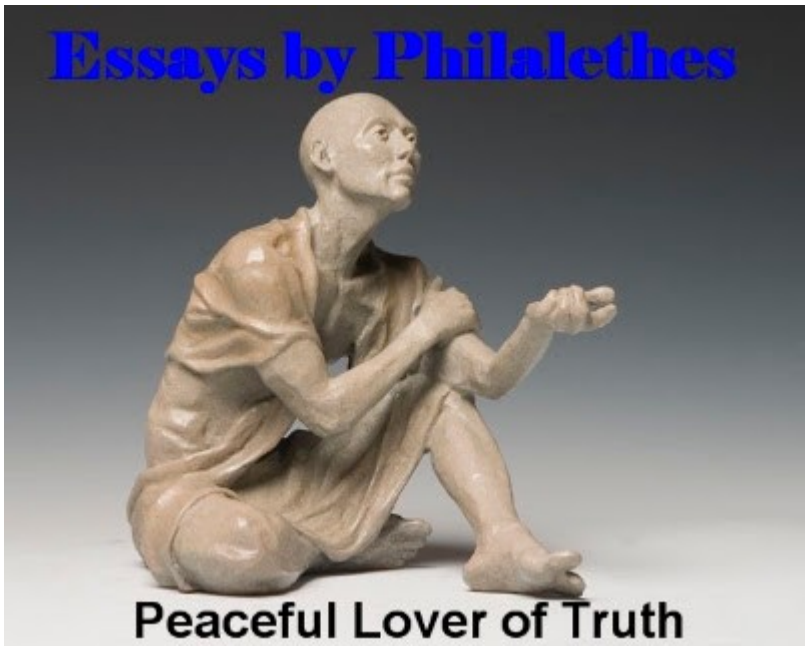
Pook #63 - More On "You Must Be Gay"

Pook #64 - The Keys to the Don Juan

(This page is under construction)

Philalethes' Essay List

. · 3 November 2015 · Archived copy · Original



Essays by Philalethes:

.

Philalethes #1 – Feminist Allies?

.

Philalethes #2 – The Sexual Noise is Deafening

.

Philalethes #3 – The Anti-Logic of Women

.

Philalethes #4 – What Do Women Want? It's What We've Got! We Just Aim to Please, Ma'am!

.

Philalethes #5 – Women's Use of Power

.

Philalethes #6 – In Women's Image?

.

Philalethes #7 – All Female Populations in the Animal Kingdom

.

Philalethes #8 – When the Cow Rides the Bull, Priest Watch Your Skull

.

Philalethes #9 – Immaculate Conception

.

Philalethes #10 – Male vs. Female Thinking

.

Philalethes #11 – The End Results of Female Suffrage

.

Philalethes #12 – Foreign Women

.

Philalethes #13 – A Letter to Devvy Kidd

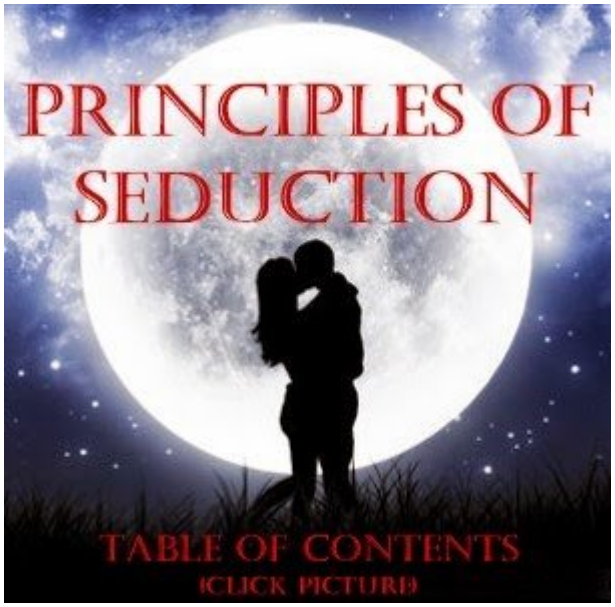
.

Philalethes #14 – Hyphenate Them Any Way You Want, A Feminist is a Feminist is a Feminist

.
Philalethes #15 – Women are Out of Control in Our Culture
.
Philalethes #16 – Who Stole Feminism? Nobody!
.
Philalethes #17 – When Women Rule
.
Philalethes #18 – Opposed to Woman Suffrage?
.
Philalethes #19 – Not Much Happens That Women Don't Approve Of
.
Philalethes #20 - Chivalry
.
Philalethes #21 - Circumcision
.
Philalethes #22 – Don't Tell Me the Truth; You'll Hurt My Feelings
.
Philalethes #23 – Who's to Blame?
.
Philalethes #24 – Who's to Blame II
.
Philalethes #25 – You Can Have as Much Freedom as You Are Willing to be Responsible For, But No More
.
Philalethes #26 – The Law
.
Philalethes #27 – In the "Battle of the Sexes", If She Wins, She Loses
.
Philalethes #28 - Feminism is Successful Precisely Because Its Basic Premise Is Not True
.
Philalethes #29 – They Can Do It Because They Really Believe It!
.

Principles of Seduction

. · 3 November 2015 · Archived copy · Original



Click Pic for "Principles of Seduction" (The Fourth Edition!)

.

"The moon had been observing the earth close-up longer than anyone. It must have witnessed all of the phenomena occurring - and all of the acts carried out - on this earth.

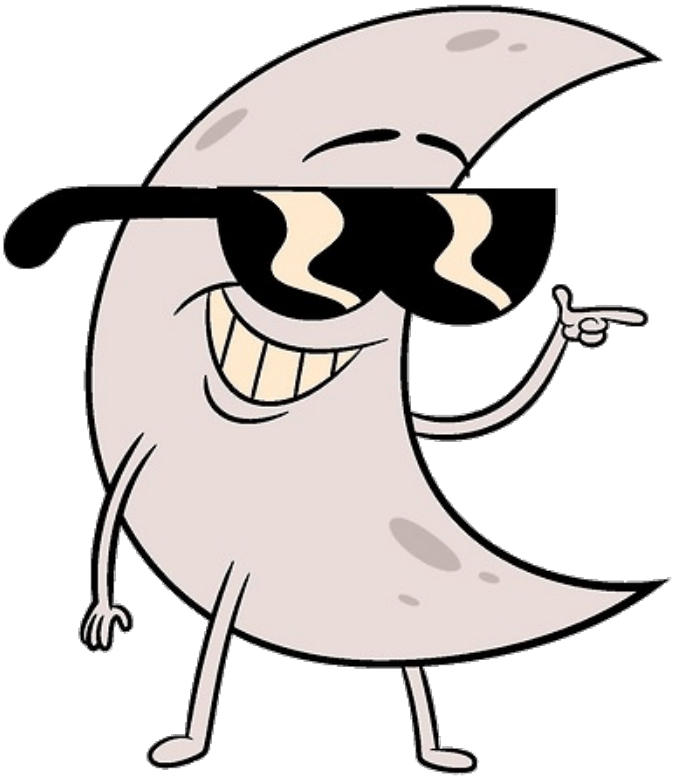
But the moon remained silent; it told no stories. All it did was embrace the heavy past with a cool, measured detachment.

On the moon there was neither air nor wind. Its vacuum was perfect for preserving memories unscathed. No one could unlock the heart of the moon.

Aomame raised her glass to the moon and asked, "Have you gone to bed with someone in your arms lately?"

The moon did not answer.

"Do you have any friends?" she asked.



The moon did not answer.

"Don't you get tired of always playing it cool?"

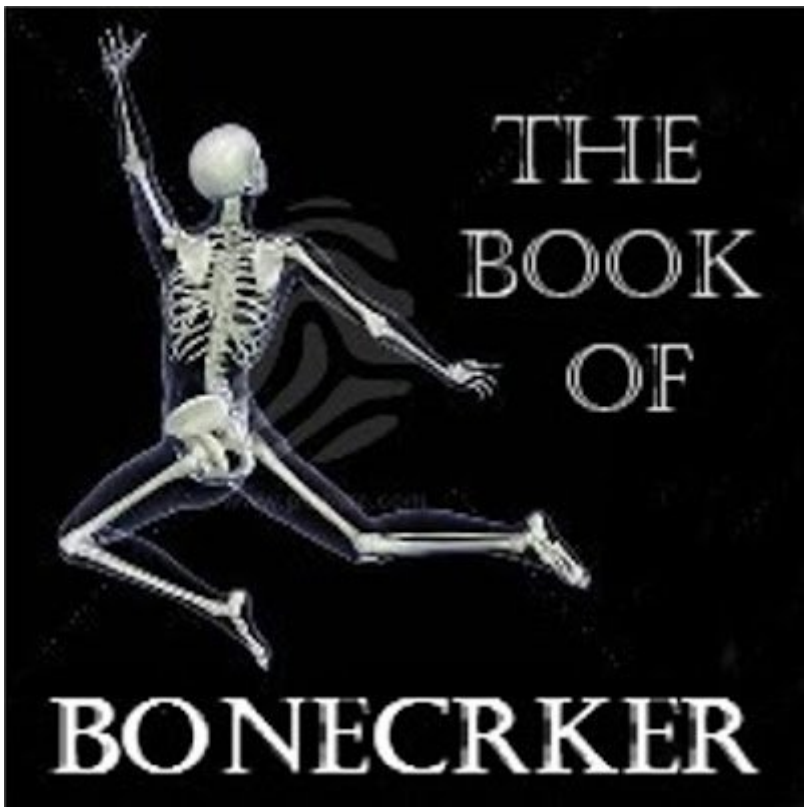
The moon did not answer."

-- Haruki Murakami, ***1Q84***

.

Chapter One: Introduction
Part 1: Dating Advice from a Father
Part 2: Women, Teasing, Tests, One-itis and Hope
Part 3: Understanding Womand and 'The Rules' for Men
Part 4: Bad Boys, Alphas, Assholes, Niceguys and Players
.
Chapter Two: The Dance
Part 1: Online Dating - Not!
Part 2: Finding the Small Pool of Interested Women
Part 3: The Sexes Approaching Each Other (Eye Contact, Escalating)
Part 4: There Really Only Are Two Subjects to Talk About with Women
Part 5: Be a Lover, Not a Provider (Dates & Gifts)
Part 6: Most Women Don't Want a Man Who Isn't Choosy
Part 7: You Mean Nothing to a Woman Until You've Had Sex
Part 8: That First Date at Your Place
.
Chapter Three: Mental Frame
Part 1: Choose Confidence
Part 2: Women Are Not Able to Get Sex On Demand

Part 3: Women as "Friends"
Part 4: Relationship Phases
Part 5: Don't Argue with Women; Have Power & Choices
Part 6: No Woman is "Out of Your League"
Part 7: Raising Your Sexual Status
Part 8: Women Who Want to Cheat with You
Part 9: NAWALT, Pre-Nups, Celibacy & Other Types of Bad Advice
Part 10: Why You Must Never Give a Woman Any Money
.
Chapter Four: Her Mental Health
Part 1: Women are Sick!
Part 2: Living in La-La-Land
Part 3: Just Say "No" to Divorced Women and Single Moms
Part 4: Breaking Up is About Drama; Passive Aggression/Orgasms
Part 5: Abusive Behaviour (DV, Stalkers, Sarcasm)
Part 6: Women Choosing Losers
Part 7: Women Have Contradictory Love
Part 8: Rape Fantasies, Religious Women and Projection
Part 9: Fat Bottomed Girls
Part 10: Four Kinds of Women which are More Psycho than Others
.
Chapter Five: Culture Matters
Part 1: Local versus Foreign Women
Part 2: Humanity Transmitted Through Generations
Part 3: Ritalin and Abusive Schools
Part 4: Most People Who Work in Community Health are Insane
Part 5: Prostitution
Part 6: The Most Feminacentrist Statement of the 20th Century
Part 7: Feminism Turns Women into Mere Sex Objects
Part 8: Women Should Cultivate Anything That is a Virtue
Part 9: Boycott Those Who Disrespect Men
Part 10: Lesbians and Gay Men
Part 11: Pushing the Limits of Sexual Fantasies
.



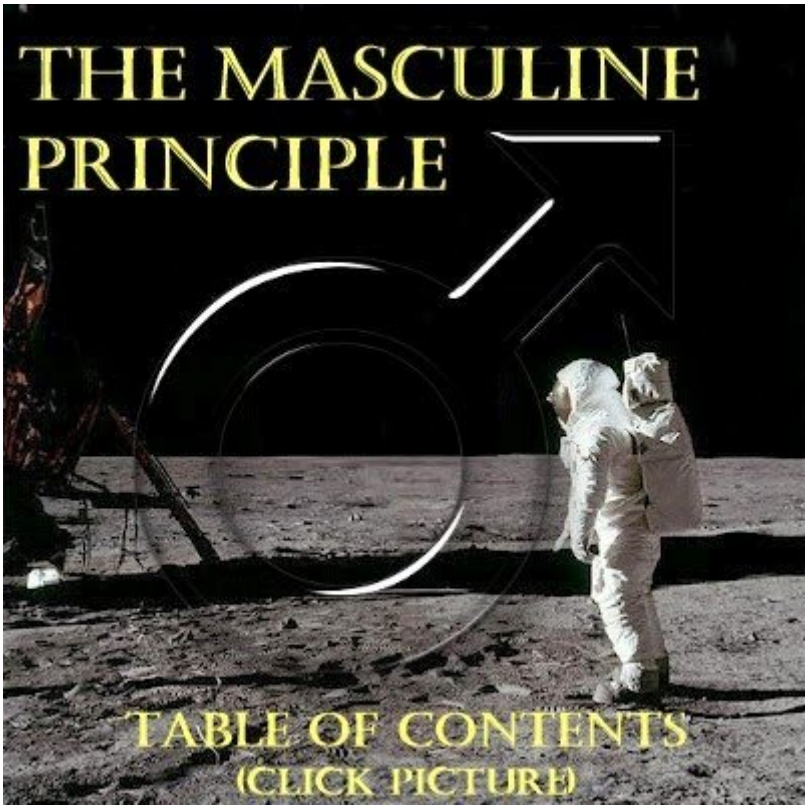
Click for the Previous Edition of Bonecrker

.

The Masculine Principle

. · 3 November 2015 · Archived copy · Original

.

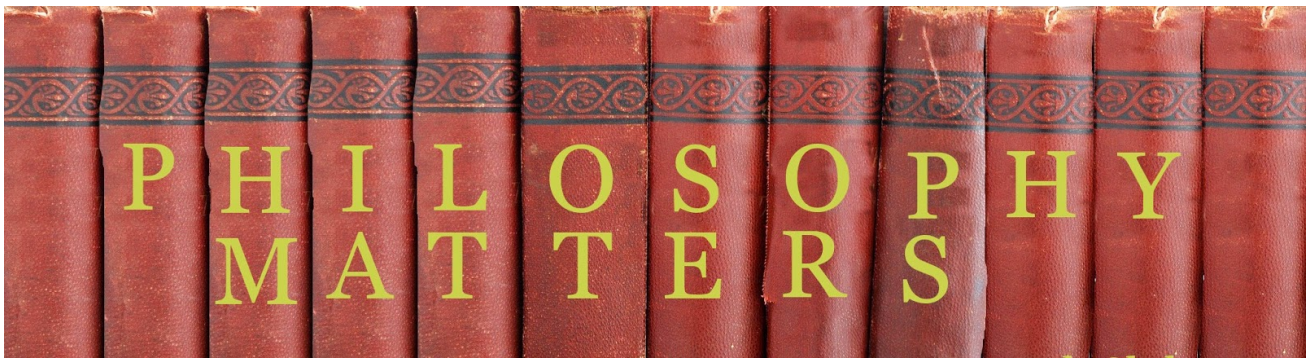


The Second Edition

". . . The fact is that males and females are like two substances combined in different proportions, but with either element never wholly missing. We find, so to speak, never either a man or a woman, **but only the male condition and the female condition.** *Any individual is never to be designated merely as a man or a woman, but by a formula showing that it is a composite of male and female characters in different proportions."* -- Otto Weininger, *Sex and Character*

.

Chapter One: Introduction
Part 1: The Masculine Principle
Part 2: Generalizing in a Politically Correct World
Part 3: Peer Reviewed Research: The Holy Grail of Truth?
Part 4: The Truth About Misogyny
Part 5: A Guide to Birdwatching
.
Chapter Two: Sexuality
Part 1: Male and Female: Equal But Different
Part 2: Sex Sells (Hypergamy Explained)
Part 3: Love is for Suckers... Blood Suckers
Part 4: The Garden of Eden, Empty Vessels and Relative Truth
Part 5: The Myth of Tiresias and the Ten Pleasures of Sex
Part 6: You're Such a Tool! (Briffault's law)
Part 7: Rites of Passage - Making Boys into Men
Part 8: Woman: The Most Responsible Teenager In The House?
Part 9: The Amazon Women (The Science of "Why Males Exist")
Part 10: Testing, Testing... 1, 2, 3... Testing
.
Chapter Three: The Gender War
Part 1: The Fish and The Bicycle
Part 2: Social Strategy: Why Men Shouldn't Argue With Women
Part 3: The Suffragettes versus The Republic
Part 4: The Suffragettes versus The Patriarchy
Part 5: The Suffragettes versus The Marketplace
Part 6: The Suffragettes versus The Truth
Part 7: Father Custody and The Legend of the Selkie
Part 8: The Fraud of Modern Marriage (Women as Chattel)
Part 9: Feminizing the Decline (Hypergamy & Birthrates)
.
Chapter Four: The Pillars and the Plot
Part 1: The Powers That Be
Part 2: It's Not Marxism Because...
Part 3: Cultural Pillars and Critical Theory
Part 4: Useful Idiots Play Checkers, Marxists Play Chess
Part 5: The Family Plot: The Past (Their Oppressors Are Children)
Part 6: The Family Plot: The Present (No-Fault Divorce & Hypergamy)
Part 7: The Family Plot: The Future (Civil Unions & Shared Parenting)
Part 8: Following the Masculine Principle is the "Right Way"
.
Chapter Five: Conclusion
Part 1: Work With the World; Don't Fight Against It
Part 2: The Liberation of Men
Part 3: The Want of Men Was Their Ruin
Part 4: One Man's Kingdom
.



.

Glossary

.

- Fitness Test (aka Shit Test)
- FRA - Father's RIghts Activist
- FRM - Father's Rights Movement
- Game - The Art of Seduction
- Hypergamy
- I.O.I.('s) - Indication of Interest
- Mangina - A man who supplicates to women to gain their favour
- Manosphere - The Online Men's Issues Community
- MGTOW - Men Going Their Own Way
- Mig-Tow - MGTOW 2.0
- MRA - Men's Rights Activist
- MRM - Men's Rights Movement
- MM - Men's Movement
- N.A.W.A.L.T. - Not All Women Are Like That
- P.U.A. - Pick-up Artist
- Rotating Polyandry
- Shit Test (aka Fitness Test)
- SJW - Social Justice Warrior
- SMV - Sexual Mating Value
- White Knights - Men who defend women no matter their behaviour

.